



ARCHIVES MICROFILM FLASH CARD

19 APRIL 48

STAIRS

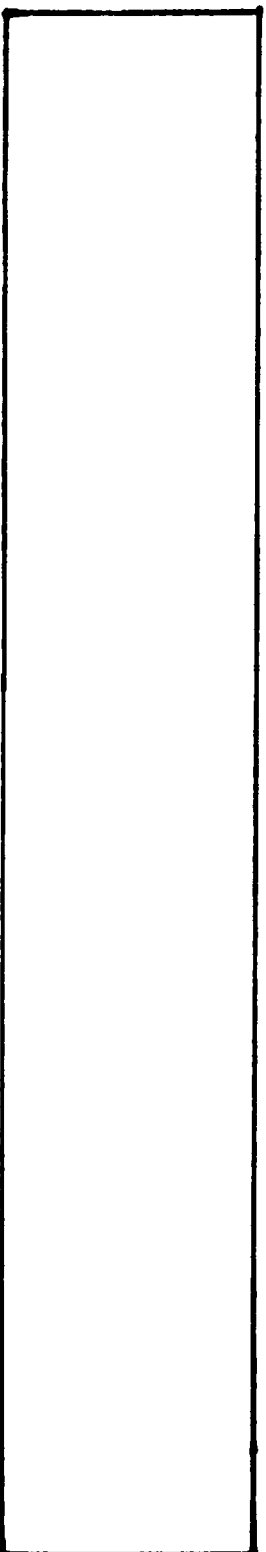
**UNITED NATIONS
ARCHIVES**

**security
microfilm**

PROGRAMME

1989

UNWCC



PAG - 3

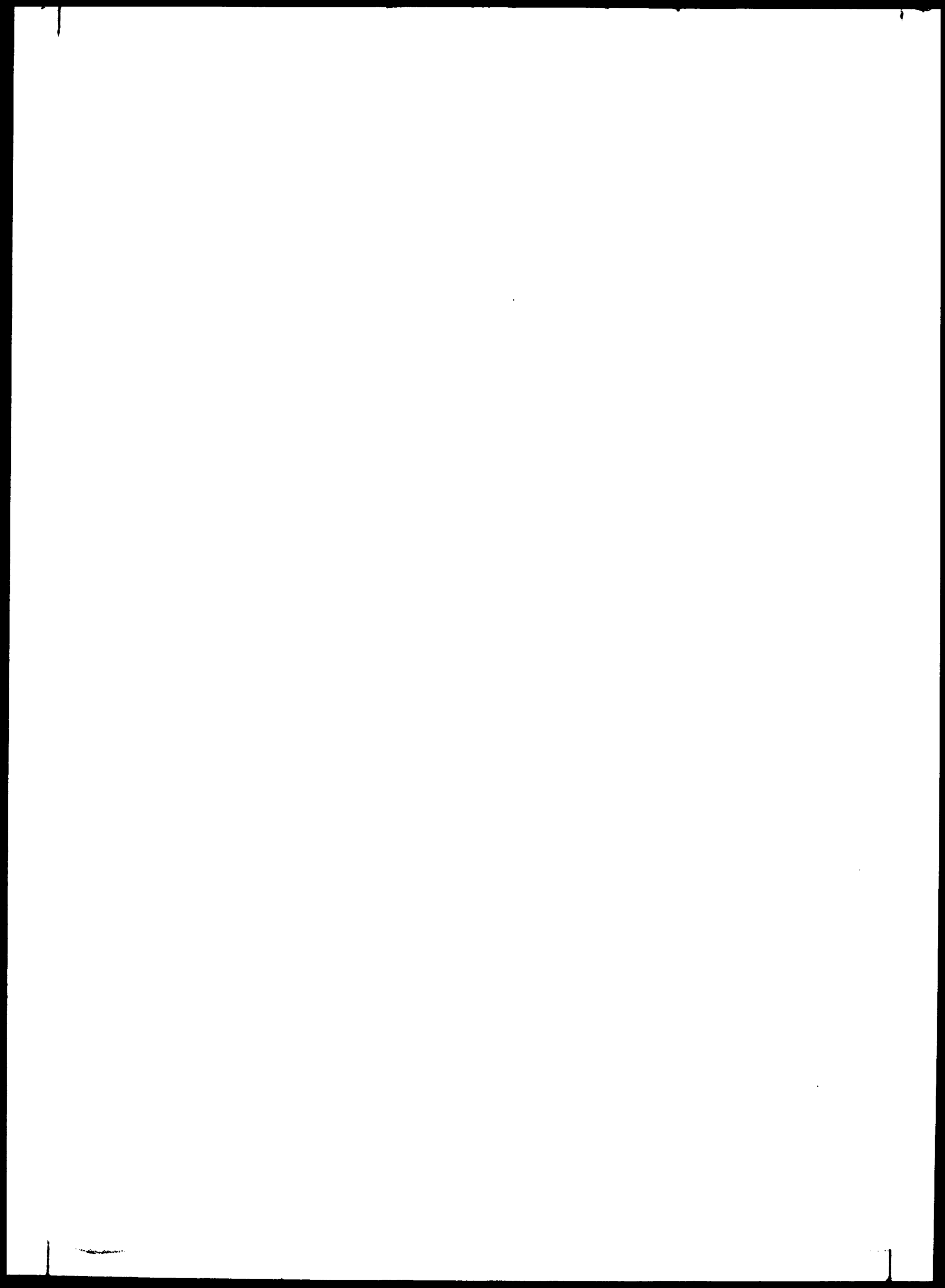
REEL

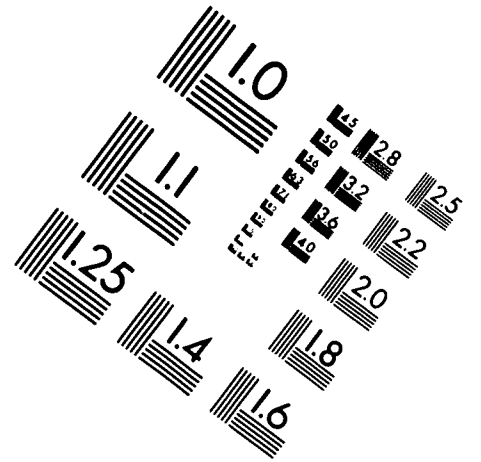
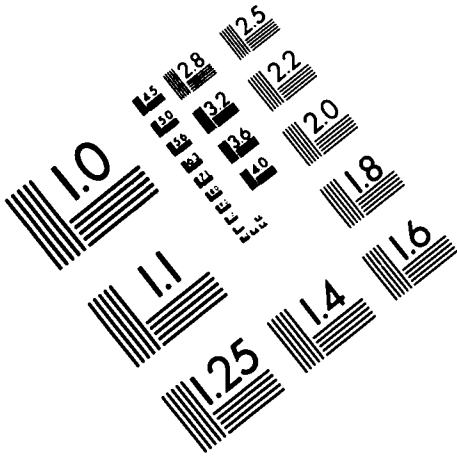
no.

1 4 7

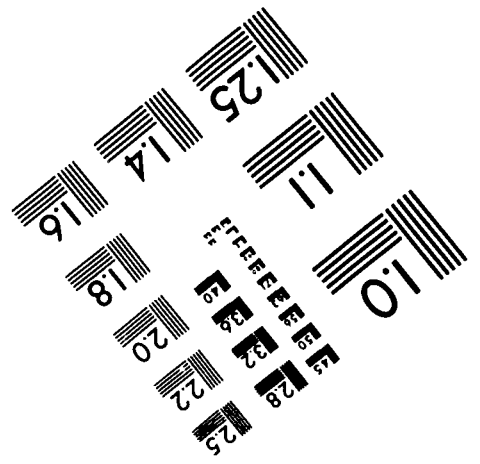
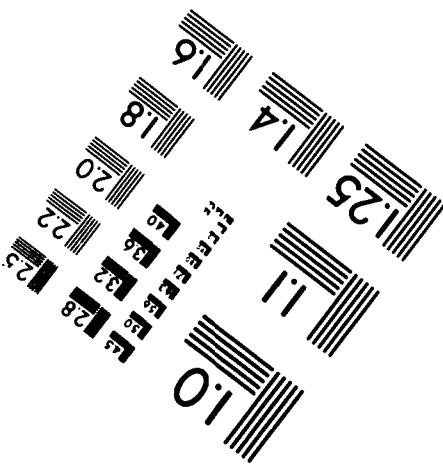
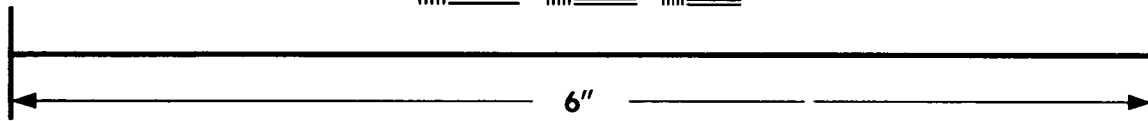
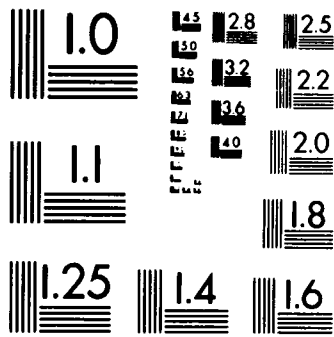
REDUCTION

26x



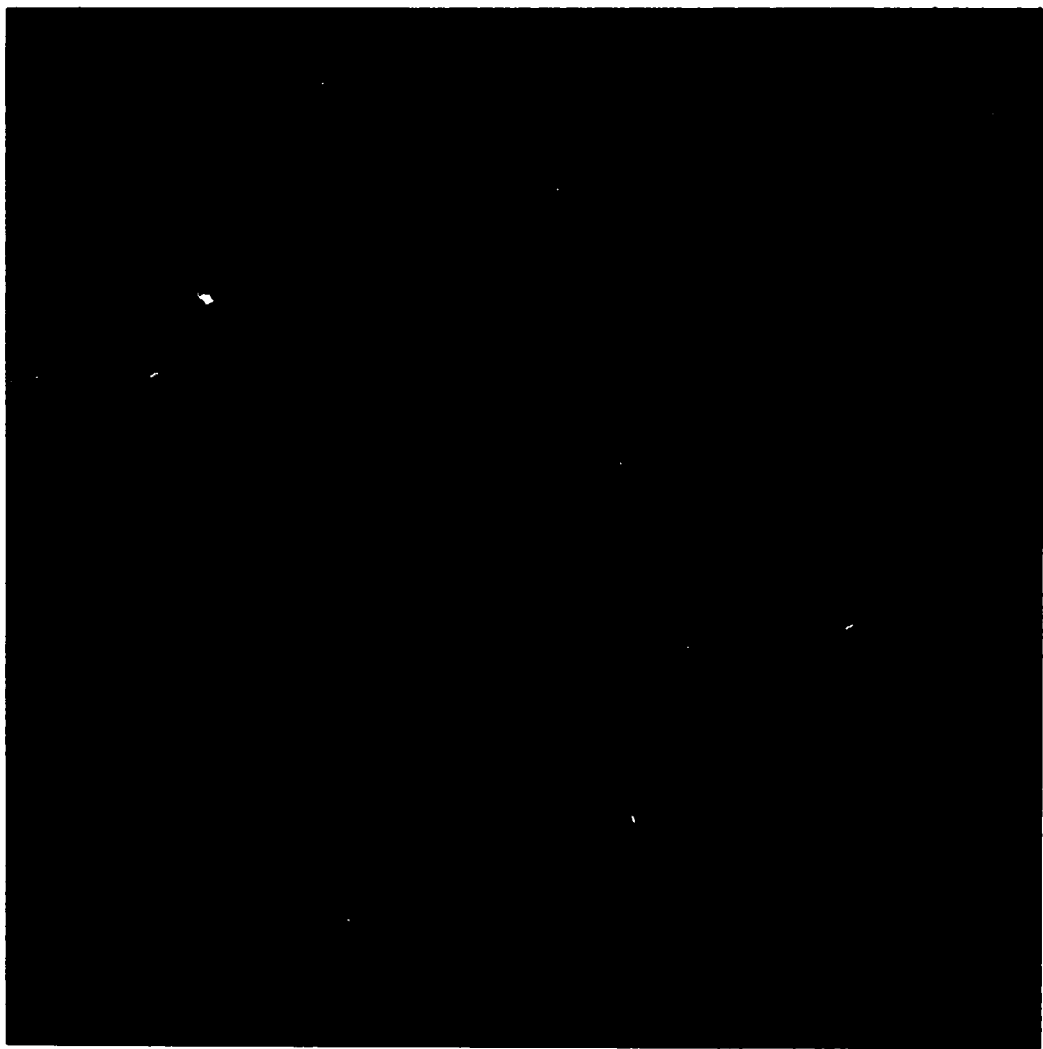


**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



PHOTOGRAPHIC SCIENCES CORPORATION
 770 BASKET ROAD
 P.O. BOX 338
 WEBSTER, NEW YORK 14580
 (716) 265-1600





I N D E X I N G D A T A

United Nations War Crimes Commission (UNWCC)
Member Governments, other National Authorities and
Military Tribunals -
PAG-3/2.3.3.: 395-397

Transcripts of Proceedings and Documents
of the International Military Tribunal for
the Far East (Tokyo Trials).
Court Exhibits

Court Exhibits of the International Military
Tribunal for the Far East (Tokyo Trials),
numbered consecutively. These documents, mainly
from United States and Japanese sources, are
arranged numerically, with some gaps.

Nos.: 1749 - 1813
1814 - 1934
1935 - 1995

--- END OF REEL No. 147 ---

I N D E X I N G D A T A

United Nations War Crimes Commission (UNWCC)
Member Governments, other National Authorities and
Military Tribunals -
PAG-3/2.3.3.: 395-397

Transcripts of Proceedings and Documents
of the International Military Tribunal for
the Far East (Tokyo Trials).
Court Exhibits

Court Exhibits of the International Military
Tribunal for the Far East (Tokyo Trials),
numbered consecutively. These documents, mainly
from United States and Japanese sources, are
arranged numerically, with some gaps.

Nos.: 1749 - 1813
1814 - 1934
1935 - 1995

--- END OF REEL No. 147 ---

I N D E X I N G D A T A

United Nations War Crimes Commission (UNWCC)
Member Governments, other National Authorities and
Military Tribunals -
PAG-3/2.3.3.: 395-397

Transcripts of Proceedings and Documents
of the International Military Tribunal for
the Far East (Tokyo Trials).
Court Exhibits

Court Exhibits of the International Military
Tribunal for the Far East (Tokyo Trials),
numbered consecutively. These documents, mainly
from United States and Japanese sources, are
arranged numerically, with some gaps.

Nos.: 1749 - 1813
1814 - 1934
1935 - 1995

--- END OF REEL No. 147 ---

Report on Torture by the Japanese Military Police (Kempei Tai)

I was arrested by the Kempei Tai at 15.00 hours on February 4, 1943.

Kempei-Tai investigations in Buitenzorg of the leading men of the underground organization with which I was connected had brought the Buitenzorg Kempei-Tai in the possession of my name and that of one of my helpers in Batavia, Miss T. Thierens.

Owing to a stupidity of the Kempei-tai officers my wife and I succeeded in destroying practically all evidence in my house, copies of telegrams and original reports of my informers, which afterwards helped to trouble the whole atmosphere and made all searchings of my house (which took place at least five times after my arrest) fruitless. In the afternoon of the same day Miss Thierens and I were taken into a room of the Kempei-Tai office at the Koninsplein in Batavia.

The Buitenzorg Kempei-tai sergeant (Major?) YOSHIDA then took a wooden club about three feet in length, the 'working-end' about three inches thick and tapering towards the handle.

The investigation centred upon two points: one was my being an active spy and/or leader of a spy-gang who gave their news to me after which I despatched it to Buitenzorg. The second point was the fact, that I knew the names of my best assistant and his address, which two facts the Kempei tai tried to get out of me.

In the Kempei-tai at the Koningsplein YOSHIDA questioned me about my Chinese helper and each denial of knowing a Chinese spy whose name started with a T (Thio) which fact was known to the Kempei-Tai when I was arrested, was followed by a blow with the wooden club at the back of the body near or approximately upon the kidneys. The beating was done systematically, each new blow being placed close to the preceding one. YOSHIDA in this way gave me between twenty and thirty blows, causing heavy subcutaneous haemorrhages and contusions. The beating caused big swellings and a blackish-blue discolouring of the skin which remained visible for at least two months.

After my interrogation was over YOSHIDA handled Miss Thierens in the same way until she too was suffering from severe pains and big swellings.

Miss Thierens until now suffers from kidney-trouble. The same holds for me, although I have the impression that Miss Thierens's case is much more serious than mine. After this examination was over we were put in the cells but towards the night I was handcuffed and Miss Thierens and I were transported by car to Buitenzorg, where we were jailed in the Buitenzorg Kempei-Tai.

On February 5, towards dusk, I was taken from my cell and once more questioned by YOSHIDA. I refused to admit that I was mixed up in espionage or that I knew a Chinese spy, after which YOSHIDA took me to another room, telling me that he was going to 'hang me'.

The system is quite simple and very effective. I was placed on a small wooden case, with the hands ropebound behind my back and the ankles bound. After this a thick rope was pulled under my armpits, lead through a wooden beam over the door so that when the wooden case was kicked away I was hung with my full weight from my armpits. By the pull of the weight of the body, nerves and bloodvessels were tied off, and gradually I felt my hands first, then my wrists and after that my arms 'die'. During the hanging, which may have taken any time from half an hour to one hour and a half (in my case as in all cases I know of it is very difficult to decide how long the torture took: all sense of time is lost) the torturer was sitting behind me, whispering his questions and trying to make me confess that I was a spy, which I denied.

When, after squeezing and pinching my arms and skin the torturer found out that I no longer reacted and did not feel pain or touch, he put the case back under my feet, questioned me again and then slowly lowered me. I found out that both my arms were paralysed completely.

The paralysis in the left arm lasted for only a fortnight and I was able to use the hand again, albeit not without a peculiar burning feeling in the fingertips, caused by the fact that the finer nerves were paralysed. The right arm was a much more serious case: it remained completely paralysed from some months after which life slowly began to return. First I was able to move the little finger and gradually life returned in the other fingers, the hand, wrist and arm. Up till now the arm is not completely normal, it hurts when I use it in heavy manual work meanwhile the fingers of the right hand quite often are more or less stiff. \

Miss Thierens also was hung, though not in my presence. Yet it seems, that the torturers have considerable anatomical knowledge and understand quite well how to bind their victims in such a way that they effect paralysis or do not effect paralysis at will. In Miss Thierens's case no paralysis developed and I know also of other cases in which no paralysis was originated. However: there are also cases in which the paralysis lasted much longer than in my case and in which the after-effects were even more serious.

On February 8, 1943 I was taken to YOSHIDA's room once more for an examination and when once more I refused to admit any espionage - activities whatsoever YOSHIDA took me to the bathroom, where, with the aid of a native assistant he gave me the so-called water-test (water-proof in Dutch). I guess that this proof lasted for some twenty minutes, after which YOSHIDA took me to his room again and there confronted me with Miss Thierens, who under severe torture (hanging) and had confessed that she had acted as a messenger and had taken telegrams, which I had composed, from Batavia to Buitenzorg, where she handed them over to the Buitenzorg-branch of the organisation, which arranged to transmit them from near Buitenzorg by wireless to Australia.

I succeeded in getting some information as about the extent of Miss Thierens's confession by pretending that I was very angry and shouting at her in Dutch after which she answered in Dutch, and gave me the information I needed. It was of no use to deny any longer that I had been doing spy-work and I confessed exactly the same things as Miss Thierens had confessed to have done. YOSHIDA then took her from the room, gave me several blows on the right arm with a wooden leg of a chair (according to the opinion of internment camp Kadung Badak the bad state of the arm may have been caused by these blows) and told me that now that I had confessed that I was a spy I would understand that this was a crime which would be punished by death.

After a final blow on my head with the chair's leg I was taken back to the cell. On February 21 I was taken from my cell and brought into the presence of sergeant-major BANG of the Kempei-tai (known among Kempei-tai prisoners as "Emperor King") who, together with the interpreter TAMAMINI, another Japanese, gave me the water-test for the second time. The general system of giving this water-test is always the same and it may have its purpose to describe it here more or less in details.

I was bound tightly and in a horizontal position on a wooden bench. There was no rope used but electrical wire of rubber with a copper kernel, which the torturers seem to prefer because it does not stretch. The wire is bound around the body from the feet upwards to the shoulders in such a way that the victim is unable to move at all. Over the throat a thin wire is bound so that the victim can not move his head without cutting his throat. After this was done a thick handkerchief was used to strap the mouth and prevent me from closing it.

In this case the torturers, BANG and TAMAMINI were trying to get information out of me about the Chinese assistant I mentioned before. but whose address nor name they knew. They only knew that the name started with a T and the name Thio was also known to them.

They asked me once more if I was willing to tell them the name and address of my Chinese and once more I played the innocent.

After some face-slapping (which was done so regularly that one forgets how many times it happened) they started the water-test by bringing a rubber hosepipe between my front-teeth and opening the tap. (there are several cases in which they used beer-bottles instead of the hosepipe). Water was in this way poured into my mouth, causing me almost to suffocate. It may be that the word is not right: they tried to drown me. As soon as I was on the verge of getting unconscious they stopped the water but opened the tap again at the very moment I tried to breathe. Sometimes they gave a few moments of relaxation by letting the water flow into the eyes, the nose or the ears and a trick to stop the water and get some breathing-space was to shout "I want to speak". Then they stopped the water, found out that I had to say nothing worth while after which they started again. Sometimes the question repeated if I already knew name and address of "that Chinaman" and as soon as I answered that I did not know anything about a Chinese they opened the tap again.

When they showed me photographs of Chinese, whom they suspected of being my helpers, I denied ever having seen them, which resulted in a heavy blow in the face by TAMMINI which I at that moment did not experience as very painful. How strong the blow had been was clearly shown by the fact, that the eye-socket remained dark blue for at least a week afterwards.

If my sense of time was right this water-test took about one hour and a half. Of course I did not mention the name and address of my Chinese helper. Many victims of the watertest told me, that usually after the torture with water the kempai-tai torturers amused themselves by burning the body of their victims with glowing cigarette-ends. I saw several victims of these tortures suffering from blisters and wounds caused hereby.)

One of these was a certain De Rooy, who was afterwards beheaded about 1 May 1943, but who was with me in the same cell in Feb-Mar 43.

Another one is Lie Bong Giok, sentenced to death on Aug. 16, 1943, but granted a pardon and sentenced to 15 years in prison. Freed from Tjipinang-prison on September 29, 1945. Address: Fetjenonganweg 48b, Batavia C.

Dr. OLAF MUNCK from Buitenzorg was hung by YOSHIDA until both arms were paralysed completely. They never recovered and when Dr. Munck was executed (beheaded) and June 1943 his arms still were paralysed according to a statement made to me by Lie Bong Giok. When I saw Dr. Munck last (on February 21, 1943 both his arms were still paralysed. He died in Tjimahi.

General remarks re torturing: It seems that the torturers of the Kempai-tai, at least those in Buitenzorg, specialised in their own branches. YOSHIDA was a specialist in hanging and kidney-beating. Apparently he was training in giving the water-test when he water-tested me on Feb 8, 1943. BANG was a specialist in beating people who were hand cuffed to their chair and a specialist in water-tests, in which he was so far as I know always assisted by TAMMINI.

There are cases known of BANG praftising electrization on his victims but it seems that such was nothing but experimental. The real expert for electrization was YAMADA who was known for his merciless electrization. I never was treated that way myself, but I saw several victims who told me that for this torture a telephone apparatus of the old type was used, in which an electric current is created by turning a handle. Two wires were laid on the victims: one on each ear, in the corners of the mouth, on the finger-joints, the nose-hobs or elsewhere) and the current was eased through the body of the victim.)

TAMAMINI whose official role was that of an interpreter always was a willing helper of the torturers. I always had the impression, both from my own observation and from talks with other victims, that Tamamini was a student of the Kempei tai who found quite a lot of amusement in kicking and beating the helpless victims during the different tortures they were subjected to. However: I never heard of a case in which Tamamini did the torturing alone: in all cases I know of he was second man.

Other cases of torturing. Other cases of torturing would be extremely easy to produce. I spoke to many victims of the Kempei tai investigation methods and will gladly furnish names of people who fell a victim to those to these methods. However: in most cases we always meet the same names of torturers where the Kuitenzorg Kempeitai is concerned.

(A. Zimmerman)

Major of Infantry Royal Neth. Indies Army.

Name	Water Test	Electrization	Mishandled	Hung	Paral	Dead
Capt. Vollenga	?	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Dr. Ir. Kramer	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	No +)
Ir. Coster	No	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
H. Drielsma	No	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Dr. O Munck	No	?	Yes	Yes	Yes	Beheaded
K. Welter	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Petri	No	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
De Rooy	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Bakhuis	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Slis	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Blusso	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Kooy	No	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Pieters	Yes	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
van der Veen	No	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Wernink	Yes	Yes	Yes	?	?	Beheaded
Tjoa Tek Swat	Yes (2 x)	Yes -	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Ong Tjang Kio	No	No	Yes	No	No	Alive
Mulder	No	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Ir. J.v. Beugen	Yes	No	Yes	No	No	Alive
Miss Thierens	No	No	Yes	Yes	No	Alive
Maj Zimmerman	Yes (2 X)	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Alive
Lio Bong Giok	Yes (2 X)	Yes (39 x)	Yes (1 x)	Yes	No	Alive
Ir. Willem Boer	?	?	Yes	Yes	Yes	No +)]

Water tests were given by BANG and TAMAMINI and YOSHIDA.

TAMAMINI whose official role was that of an interpreter always was a willing helper of the torturers. I always had the impression, both from my own observation and from talks with other victims, that Tamamini was a student of the Kempei tai who found quite a lot of amusement in kicking and beating the helpless victims during the different tortures they were subjected to. However: I never heard of a case in which Tamamini did the torturing alone: in all cases I know of he was second man.

Other cases of torturing. Other cases of torturing would be extremely easy to produce. I spoke to many victims of the Kempei tai investigation methods and will gladly furnish names of people who fell a victim to these methods. However: in most cases we always meet the same names of torturers where the Buitenzorg Kempeitai is concerned.

(A. Zimmerman)

Major of Infantry Royal Neth. Indies Army.

Name	Water Test	Electrization	Mishandled	Hung	Paral	Dead
Capt. Vollonga	?	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Dr. Ir. Kramer	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	No +)
Ir. Coster	No	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
H. Driolsma	No	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Dr. O Münck	No	?	Yes	Yes	Yes	Beheaded
K. Welter	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Petri	No	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
De Rooy	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Bakhuis	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Slis	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Blusso	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Kooy	No	Yes	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Pisters	Yes	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
van der Veen	No	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Wernink	Yes	Yes	Yes	?	?	Beheaded
Tjoa Tek Swat	Yes (2 x)	Yes -	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Ong Tjang Kio	No	No	Yes	No	No	Alive
Mulder	No	No	Yes	No	No	Beheaded
Ir. J.v. Beugon	Yes	No	Yes	No	No	Alive
Miss Thierons	No	No	Yes	Yes	No	Alive
Maj Zimmerman	Yes (2 X)	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Alive
Lie Bong Giok	Yes (2 X)	Yes (39 x)	Yes(1 x)	Yes	No	Alive
Ir. Willem Boer	?	?	Yes	Yes	Yes	No +)]

Water tests were given by BANG and TAMAMINI and YOSHIDA.

Electrization was given by YAMADA AND BANG

Manhandling was done by BANG TESHIMI YOSHIDA YAMADA and all others

Hanging was done by YOSHIDA

+) Died of natural causes (weakened by tortures etc.)

List is based on information given by Major Zimmerman and Lee Bang
Chok both of whom met most of the victims personally, saw them in the
Kompeitai-cells and received first hand information.

List is in-complete: there are many more cases. Earning with cigarette-
ends is left out of list, was a routine-question only; seldom left out of
an examination.

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

" Report on torture by the Japanese Military Police (Kempei Tai) drawn up by Major ZILBERMAN R.N.I.A., No. CM/235/E."

which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE:

(SEAL)

BATAVIA, June 7th. 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A. Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

(Signed) K. A. de Weerd

Ex 1749-A
Doc 5748

文書第五七四號

下記署名、和蘭軍情報部、戰爭犯罪課長
女一ル又、三六、一ル / CHARLES JONGENEEL / 蘭領印度軍陸軍中尉、
初、二、乙式、三言、警、行、三、添附書類、左記題名、書類原本、全文、具、實、
完全且正確ナル旨ヲ証明シ且陳述ス

記

蘭領印度軍陸軍少佐、女一ル又、三六、一ル / ZIMMERMAN / 三言、記述、
日本憲兵隊、三言、括弧、報告音、番号、OM / 三言、E
右書類、和蘭軍情報部、三言、記録、一部、ナリ、

署名
和蘭軍
情報部
印

BATAVIA
一九四六年、昭和二十一年、六月七日
CHARLES JONGENEEL
女一ル又、三六、一ル

余、蘭領印度、檢事總長並勤務、高級職員、

蘭領印度軍陸軍中尉、女一ル又、三六、一ル、上 / KA DE WEERD /
面、前、三、於、署名、三、且、三言、三、ナリ

女一ル又、三六、一ル、上 / 署名 /
K. A. DE WEERD

16
ALL COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5748

文書第五七四八号

私一九四三年昭和十八年二月四日午後時憲兵隊ニ逮捕サレタリ

審理次ニ至リ集会ナリ。第一私ガ實際ニ活動スルニ付テハルコト。及ビ又後ニ私ガ「ブイテンゾルグ」/ BUTENZORG /ニ発送シテ。情報ヲ提供セラル。團ノ團長ナルコト。第四ニ点私ガ最モ優秀ト助手ノ姓名及ビ住所ヲ知リ居テト言事案ナリ。此ニテ事案ヲ憲兵隊ノ手ニ引キ出サシ物ナリ。

「ヨシダ」/ KONINGSPLEIN /ニ於ル憲兵隊ニ於テ「ヨシダ」/ YOSHIDA /ニ私ト親人ト助手ト聞キ訊問シタリ。ソノ事私ガ逮捕サレタリ時ニ憲兵隊ニ知ラシ居テ事案ノ内容所ナリ(子言)「T.H.I.D」ニヨリ始ル事所ノ中國人ト云フヲ知ラシト否認スル度毎ニ木根様ト私ガ有テテ腎臓近ク々其ノ上ニ打テタリ。其ノ打テ方ニ新ニ打撃ガ前ニモ、ソノ側ニ當ル様組織的行ハル。斯クハ如キ方決テ「ヨシダ」/ YOSHIDA /ハ三三ノ打撃ヲ私ニ加テテ出テ出テ行撲傷ヲ蒙リタリ。其ノ後打テタリ大キク痛ガ出来又少クモ三月月跡ガ残テ居テ程ニ皮膚層ニ青ヤ黒ノ痕ガ付タリ。

私訊問ガ終ル後ニ「ヨシダ」/ YOSHIDA /ニ「トイヒテ又嬢」/ THIERENS /ヲ彼女モ亦劇痛ト痛テ甚クシテ同様ノ方志ヲ取取リタリ。...

三月五日自暮後ノ私監房ヲ離シ出サシ再ニ「ヨシダ」/ YOSHIDA /ニ訊問サレタリ。私ニ「味下」ル事ヤ私ノ中國人ト云フヲ知ラシ居テ事ヲ私確認スルヲ拒否シタリ。其ノ後「ヨシダ」/ YOSHIDA /ハ「私ヲ吊ルニテハ」積リテト言ヒテカク私ト他ノ室ニ送リ行ハル。

202

DOC 5748

文書第五七四八号

私一九四三年昭和六年三月四日午後一時憲兵隊逮捕せられた。

審理は三回集中された。第一私が實際活動スルスペースに於て及び又後私が「ブイテゾルグ」(BUITENZORG)に発せし情報提供を以て一團の團長に於て。第四回は私が最良の優待助手、姓名及び住所を知り居ると言ふ事案に於て。此の二事案を憲兵隊の和らげ出すに努めた。

ヨシダヨシタツト「KONINGSPLEIN」に於ては憲兵隊に於て「吉田」(YOSHIDA)に私を助する用を託問ひ、ソウして私が逮捕せられた時憲兵隊に知ら居る事案に於ては「子」(子)「上」(上)「下」(下)「中」(中)「人」(人)「ス」(ス)「ト」(ト)「全」(全)「認」(認)「ス」(ス)「度」(度)「母」(母)「木」(木)「根」(根)「ヲ」(ヲ)「斬」(斬)「リ」(リ)「テ」(テ)「其」(其)「上」(上)「ヲ」(ヲ)「打」(打)「テ」(テ)「其」(其)「打」(打)「方」(方)「モ」(モ)「新」(新)「ト」(ト)「打」(打)「撃」(撃)「ガ」(ガ)「音」(音)「モ」(モ)「ノ」(ノ)「ス」(ス)「側」(側)「ニ」(ニ)「當」(當)「ル」(ル)「様」(様)「組」(組)「織」(織)「的」(的)「ト」(ト)「シ」(シ)「タ」(タ)「ス」(ス)「。」「斯」(斯)「ノ」(ノ)「如」(如)「キ」(キ)「方」(方)「法」(法)「ヲ」(ヲ)「吉」(吉)「田」(田)「ハ」(ハ)「三」(三)「十」(十)「打」(打)「撃」(撃)「ヲ」(ヲ)「私」(私)「ニ」(ニ)「加」(加)「シ」(シ)「テ」(テ)「及」(及)「下」(下)「出」(出)「血」(血)「及」(及)「び」(び)「打」(打)「撲」(撲)「傷」(傷)「ヲ」(ヲ)「蒙」(蒙)「リ」(リ)「タ」(タ)「ス」(ス)「。」「其」(其)「銃」(銃)「打」(打)「多」(多)「ク」(ク)「大」(大)「キ」(キ)「傷」(傷)「ガ」(ガ)「出」(出)「来」(来)「又」(又)「少」(少)「ク」(ク)「モ」(モ)「三」(三)「月」(月)「モ」(モ)「跡」(跡)「ガ」(ガ)「残」(残)「リ」(リ)「居」(居)「る」(る)「程」(程)「ニ」(ニ)「皮」(皮)「膚」(膚)「ニ」(ニ)「青」(青)「や」(や)「黒」(黒)「ノ」(ノ)「痕」(痕)「ガ」(ガ)「付」(付)「キ」(キ)「タ」(タ)「ス」(ス)。

私の訊問が終つた後「吉田」(吉田)「ハ」(ハ)「三」(三)「十」(十)「日」(日)「ニ」(ニ)「テ」(テ)「天」(天)「嬢」(嬢)「(THIERENS)」(THIERENS)「ヲ」(ヲ)「彼」(彼)「女」(女)「モ」(モ)「亦」(亦)「劇」(劇)「痛」(痛)「ト」(ト)「福」(福)「ヲ」(ヲ)「甚」(甚)「ク」(ク)「施」(施)「シ」(シ)「、」「同」(同)「様」(様)「ヲ」(ヲ)「亦」(亦)「テ」(テ)「取」(取)「扱」(扱)「シ」(シ)「タ」(タ)「ス」(ス)「。」「.....」

三月五日日暮迄、私の監房を離れ出され、再び吉田に訊問せられた。私をスペースに於ける事や私を中国人に於ける居る事や私を確認せしめを拒否した。其の後「吉田」(吉田)「ハ」(ハ)「私」(私)「ヲ」(ヲ)「男」(男)「ニ」(ニ)「シ」(シ)「テ」(テ)「積」(積)「リ」(リ)「テ」(テ)「言」(言)「ヒ」(ヒ)「タ

202

私を他の室に移して行つた。

Doc 5748

其才志云云問津が非常二結果の、私二両手二皆出二懸三針二し
膝二結二小才二木箱二上二置力しと。其後太二繩二私二腋下二引二舉
た。之二上二木二梁二通下と云。小才其箱ヲ蹴トスト私二自命二全体重ヲ
腋下二吊二之ヲ二これ様ニナリ。体重二引二以二三神經二上二血管二が締二括二
之、私二最初二手二次二手首二其後二腕二段々二死又二一ニ感二。
吊二之ヲ二上ニ是二間、其二半時間二ラ二時間半二間二何時間カワカ
才(私場合二私二指二居ル凡二場合二同様ニ括二間時間カド、後
カハ決定スル其甚二困難ナル。即二時二感度二全ク失ルカヲ死)括二間
者二私二依二坐二居二小才二記二間二私二ス二介二下二上二白状二也二様二上二是
分二私二上二否二認二タ。
括二間者二私二腕二及二膚二握二握二執二之ヲ二私二最二早二反應カタク苦痛
感度二感二シトガ判二之ヲ、後二小指二私二足二下二置二直二直二再二記
間二シツテ餘二私二降二タ。私二腕二が完全ニ麻痺ニ居ルガ判二之。
左腕二麻痺二二週間ニカ續二力カシテ右ニ私二指二神經二麻痺二シヨ事
實ニ起二指二先二異二様ニ感度カタク誤二行二カタク再二其
片年ヲ依二コトカ出来タ。右腕二カシトノ状ニ居ルニ即二數日ニ全
麻痺ニ侵二シタ。其後生氣二段々ニ衰二初タ。最初私二小指二動二事カ
出来タ。ソレカラ段々ニ他二指二年二年首及二腕二生意二衰ニ来タ。現在ニ左
ノ腕二完全ニ半二絶二復二年下。重二手二事二ニ場合、腕二使二上痛ニ右
手ノ指二屢々多少硬直ニ年ル。……………

163

一九四三年昭和三十八年二月八日私記問、為二再二心二吾田ノ重造ニ行二タ
私二患二如何ナル二ノ行二事二認二之ニ上二拒二否ニ多ク好二吾田ノ其二為二私二場合ニ
行二タ。其然二後二ノ原地民助年三ナ年傳二七二所謂水責

Doc 5748

時、彼等、日、華、耳、水、注、行、地、線、教、令、子、女、の、心、水、を、其、
息、の、一、同、際、得、北、東、路、の、申、之、事、也、一、上、所、不、事、下、之、。其、如、手、被、
等、水、其、大、の、言、和、役、三、立、之、事、何、迄、話、す、と、利、ト、又、再、心、始、り、
彼、等、和、何、支、那、人、一、名、前、を、注、所、に、既、知、す、居、一、が、大、ト、一、壇、河、
標、張、し、の、言、和、中、國、人、何、名、に、云、下、後、事、之、は、否、や、役、等、の、體、
無、用、也、

彼、等、和、助、手、は、一、緒、疑、は、し、居、多、中、國、人、の、實、は、真、の、名、三、良、也、時、和、
以、前、二、役、等、之、是、之、事、を、下、一、否、認、之、也、其、事、の、ツ、マ、ニ、TAMAMINI
「顔、下、打、た、れ、上、の、結、果、上、也、二、其、時、間、於、三、和、の、こ、程、甚、痛、
三、處、之、力、也、其、打、撃、が、上、二、劇、々、に、云、事、ハ、眼、二、が、少、く、上、二、其、
一、週、間、三、者、思、之、と、極、下、二、事、案、三、言、明、二、ト、カ、レ、
若、三、和、時、間、之、感、受、が、正、二、ト、カ、レ、二、此、水、責、ハ、Water-test「時、間、半、程、之、力、也、一、勿、論、和、
中、國、人、助、手、名、前、を、注、所、に、言、す、カ、也、水、責、二、下、多、く、多、教、被、害、者、有、也、
話、す、所、二、保、レ、ト、水、張、河、Water-test「彼、之、兵、隊、張、河、者、ハ、大、ト、上、居、Water-test「卷、煙、草、之、類、
被、害、者、身、体、を、燒、Water-test「上、面、が、レ、ト、常、上、三、居、多、和、此、ハ、為、三、家、ハ、水、泡、傳、
告、二、字、屋、多、此、等、張、河、被、害、者、ヲ、見、之、Water-test」...

／ × × × × ×
!!!「張、河、關、之、一、般、意、見、

軍、兵、隊、張、河、者、ハ、少、ク、ト、モ、一、ト、ノ、ル、也、BUITENZORG「夫、ハ、館、事、門、之、
總、張、力、ノ、様、也、Water-test「吾、等、ハ、中、二、上、ノ、職、行、之、事、有、之、也、彼、ハ、三、四、年、
昭、和、十、年、二、月、八、日、Water-test「和、水、責、二、下、時、明、ク、二、彼、ハ、水、責、二、不、練、習、三、
也、ハ、一、BANG「二、橋、子、二、年、ヲ、結、Water-test「上、下、ノ、橋、Water-test「事、門、Water-test「之、事、ト、カ、レ、而、三、又、水、責、
事、門、之、事、ト、カ、レ、和、知、す、居、レ、ル、故、ハ、彼、Water-test「其、際、常、三、ト、カ、レ、TAMAMINI「三、年、也、

705

Doc 5748

公案

バン/BANG 三就言八被害者ニ電氣貫テ行ニク件ニ知ニシヤル。ナト長ノ單ニ
 実験的ナニニ過テナクニ録ニ思ハル。電氣貫ノ真ニ熱線ノ氣ハハ無意ニ
 ナ電氣貫テ其ノ名ヲ不ニシク此ノ由ニ示ス。私ハ自身下ノ様ニ取扱テ
 多事ハナク分和ノ念ヲ散テ被害者ハ此ノ際同ニハナク起テ電流ヲ
 起ニ用テテ電氣器ヲ使用サシト知ニ語ニク。
 一本ノ電線ハ被害者ニク行テテ即ニ左ニ耳ニ一本出ル口中、兩隣
 又ハ指ノ關節、小鼻、テ其他場所ニ再續ニテテ被害者ニ身
 ニ電流ヲ通シテ。

706

Doc 5748

... [(P. 4) x 2 (N)] A. ZIMMERMAN

蘭領印度陸軍歩兵少佐

姓	名	水責	電氣責	差侍	第三	痲痺	生死
ヴェレンガ	VELLENGA	?	有	有	無	無	打首
イェラム博士	Dr. I. KRAMER	有	有	有	無	無	無 (+)
イェルスター	Ir. COSTER	無	有	有	無	無	打首
ハイネ・ドリエスマ	H. DRIELSMAN	無	無	有	無	無	打首
ムンク博士	Dr. O. MUNCK	無	?	有	有	有	打首
ケー・ヴェルター	K. WELTER	有	有	有	無	無	打首
ペトリ	PETRI	無	無	有	無	無	打首
デ・ロイ	De ROOY	有	有	有	無	無	打首
バックハイス	BAKHUIS	有	有	有	無	無	打首
スリス	SLIS	有	有	有	無	無	打首
ブルッセ	BLUSSE	有	有	有	無	無	打首
クロー	KOOY	無	有	有	無	無	打首
パイテース	PIETERS	有	無	有	無	無	打首
ファン・ヴェーン	VanderVEEN	無	無	有	無	無	打首
ヴェルニク	WERNINK	有	有	有	?	?	打首
トジャテク・スワト	TJOATEK SWAT	有 ^(密)	有	有	無	無	打首
オンギヤン・キエ	ONG TJANG KIE	無	無	有	無	無	生存
ムルデル	MULDER	無	無	有	無	無	打首
イェ・ヴ・ベウゲン	Ir. J.V. BEUGEN	有	無	有	無	無	生存

No 7

208

一、自然的原因ヨリ死亡(携同 其他ヨリ衰弱爲)
 右、表ハ、イメルニ少佐、MAJOR ZIMMERMAN 及ヒリ、ニギヨク
 \ THE BANG GIOR \ ニヨクニ提供サレタ情報ニ基リ、兩人共被害
 者、大部分ニ直接會ヒ、又、憲兵隊、監房内ニ、彼等ヲ見
 而シテ直接ニ情報ヲ得クテアル。表、不完全ナル。即チ他ニ多
 シ事情ハ見

卷煙草、先火ヲ燒キ、幸ハ此、表ニ入リナシ。
 誘導詢問、認同、際、殆ド必ズ行ハシタ。

姓	名	水責	監獄ニ居待	罪上	癡痺	生死
マールニズ	Miss THIERENS	無	有	有	無	生存
マックス	MAJ ZIMMERMAN	無	有	有	有	生存
イムン	LIE BENQ GIK	有(無)	有(無)	有	無	生存
イムン	WILLEMBOER	?	有	有	有	無

Doc 5748

Q. #1750

Doc. No. 5747

Page 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Statement made by Lie Beng Giok, No. OM/236/E,"

which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE:

(SEAL)

BATAVIA, June 7th 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A.
Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney General N.E.I.

/s/ K.A. de WEERD

Statement made by Lie Beng Giok.
Address: 48b, Petjenongan, Batavia C.

I took part in an underground-organisation in Batavia with branches everywhere in Java and in which the leading roles were played by the late dr. ir. Kramer, who usually worked under the pseudonym "van Dam" and many others about whose activities I hope to report in a separate statement.

I was arrested by the Kenpetai at my house in Batavia, Petjenongan 48b in the early morning of December 14, 1942.

I was arrested by three Kenpetai officers in mufti, all of them armed with pistols. They took me to the office of the Kenpetai at the Koningsplein in Batavia and questioned me. They were very much interested to know whether I knew a certain Wernink or van Dam. A second question was, if it was true that I had transported a wireless transmitter from Buitenzorg to Batavia (which of course I had done but denied). When I said that I did not know Wernink or van Dam and that I had NOT transported a transmitter, a little Jap, whose name I think to be KOBAYASHI slapped me in the face with his open hand.

Then I was told to take place on a bench and to wait.

So I waited. A little later I saw Mr. Slis and Mr. Blusse van Oud-Alblas, both of whom I knew as members of our organisation, enter. They were questioned and then put on another bench near me, to wait.

At 1300 hours we were loaded into a truck (after we had been handcuffed) and transported to Buitenzorg, where we were taken to the kenpetai-office.

At about 1700 o'clock I was called into a room and questioned by a second lieutenant whose name I do not know. He asked me to tell him why I had been arrested he took my name and description, told me that it was better to confess because all of us would be questioned and that the Kenpetai was bound to find out the truth and when I once more repeated that I did not have the slightest idea about the reasons for my arrest he gave me a severe blow in the face with his fist, so strong that the blood sprang from my nose. He went on beating and jogging me until I fell. Next turn was for Blusse and Slis who were manhandled in the same way.

At about 1830 o'clock we were put into the cells. Passing the cell doors I saw several people I knew from Buitenzorg: I remember to have seen Bakhuis, Petri, Mrs. Bakhuis (who was expecting a baby over two months and who was lying all alone in one of the cells next to the one in which I saw her husband) and a few others whose names I don't remember at this moment.

In the morning of December 15 I was taken from my cell and questioned by the sergeant-major BANG (called Emperor Ming by the Kenpeitai-prisoners) about my name, family, if I had any decorations, if I spoke English and so on. The examination was done by BANG and translation from Malay into Japanese were made by the Chinese interpreter Tjing Sjiang. No manhandling or torturing took place at this examination.

In the afternoon the examination was resumed. BANG wanted to know if I knew any people in Buitenzorg, such as Bakhuis, etc. I said, that I knew nobody in Buitenzorg upon which statement BANG took a bambu-pole about three inches thick with which he started to beat me wherever he could: hands, face, head etc. After the bambu was broken into ribbons he put it into water and went on beating me with it, which caused terrific pain and wounds. Later on, in another examination, the bambu was replaced by an iron rod, and a rubber trunk.

This kind of examination went on for many days.

Day after day I was beaten by Bang. Every day I was taken from my cell twice, sometimes even three times, questioned on my relations and friends in Buitenzorg. To prevent monotony he gave me electrization. I could not exactly count the number of times that I was given electrization, but if I am not gravely mistaken it was altogether 39 times.

I was questioned upon almost every thing: my relations with Bakhuis, with Fernink (van Dam) with allied spies, spies from Chungking, in Batavia and Buitenzorg. I was shown three photographs of Chungking spies who were working in the Netherlands East Indies and when I denied having ever seen them, I was promptly given another trashing.

When Bang did not succeed in getting anything out of me, he gave me the water-test. This was done by BANG, assisted by TAMMINI and two other Japs, whose names I do not know. I was tied to the bench with my hands cuffed on my back. At a certain moment my agony was such that I broke the hand cuffs. A Jap stepped on my belly and tried to stamp so long that the water came out of my mouth. When he succeeded they started to jeer at me and burned me with their glowing cigarette-ends.

Immediately afterwards I was confronted with Bakhuis who told me, that he had confessed everything. I played my role of the innocent one and started to scold Bakhuis after which BANG slapped my face. Bakhuis said: "Lie forgive me, I could no longer stand it I have confessed everything".

My next torturer was YAMADA who once more gave me electrization to such an extent that I fell on the ground. It seems that YAMADA was some kind of secretary because he made an official report. Then I got one week of rest.

After that week I was handed over to YOSHIDA for another affair in which I was involved and which had to do with Mr. Mulder in Buitenzorg. Once more I denied all knowledge of the question after which YOSHIDA hung me by the arm pits. My arms were not paralysed by this torture. I know of different cases in which the torture resulted in paralysis of the arms of the victim, for instance Dr. Munck and Major Zimmerman.

I got the water-test twice. The second time it took place when I was in the hands of YAMADA, but he handed me over to BANG for this water-test.

These are the tortures I had to undergo when in Buitenzorg. Later on when I was transported to Batavia for the Court Martial there were not many more tortures. The guards at the Court Martial had the remarkable system of throwing people over their head by Jujitsu-grips and one of them broke my left arm, when doing so.

Other tortures I know about are:

Captain Vellenga, of General Staff Royal Netherlands Indie Army (Beheaded) was treated by YOSHIDA. I am not sure if capt Vellenga was hung by YOSHIDA but I know for sure that he has been severely beaten and electrization.

Dr. Ir. Kramer: Water-test given by BANG and TAMAMINI, electrization by BANG, many trashings by BANG and TAMAMINI. Never hung, died from dipentern.

Ir. Coster: Severely beaten by YOSHIDA, several times electrization, executed.

Drielsma: Trashings. No other tortures. Executed.

Dr. Munck: Hung by YOSHIDA. Complete paralysis of both arms. Often beaten. Executed.

de Rooy: Very badly trashed. Cigarette-ends burnings on his forehead and breast. Water-test by BANG and TAMAMINI. Several times electrization. Executed.

Bakhuis: Whole program, without hanging, Executed.

Zimmerman: Hung; both arms paralysed, water-test twice, badly beaten by YOSHIDA.

Elis: Water-test. Beatings, electrization. Executed.

Blusse: same. Executed.

Kooy: No water-test. Electrization, badly trashed, executed.

Pieters: Water-test. No electrization, many trashings, executed.

My cousin : Tjoa Tek Swat, badly trashed, often electrization, twice water-test. Afterwards beheaded.

Ir. J. van Beugen: Badly trashed.

Ong Tjang Kie: Badly manhandled. Is still alive. If needed as a witness I may produce him.

Van der Veen: Traitor of our cause. Gave every detail the Japs wanted to know and spied upon his fellow-prisoners in the cells. Was afterwards beheaded by the Japs.

Mulder: Very few tortures. Beheaded.

Wernink: as far as I know very badly handled. Lost consciousness eleven times during examinations. Beheaded by the Japs.

Many more cases.....to sum them up would take me too far: suppose that the foregoing is sufficient to give an impression of the way the Kempetai in Buitenzorg worked.

Sgd. Lie Beng Giek

Doc 5777

書類第五七四七號

CHOM / ...
「バタビヤ」
「ベクトシハノツガシ」

住所
「BAVARIA」
「BEI JENONGAN」

四日早朝、「バタビヤ」
「ベクトシハノツガシ」

私ハ一九四二年 / 昭和十七年 / 十二月十
日

四八B / 日給守憲兵隊ニ送附サレタ

「午後一時音々ハ一台ノトラツクニツミ送マ
ル」

「音々方手裏ヲカラレタ後」
「BAI THENGONG」

「午後三時音々ハ兵隊ヲ送リ入レラ
レタ」

「十二月十五日」
「BANG」

「午後三時音々ハ兵隊ヲ送リ入レラ
レタ」

「午後三時音々ハ兵隊ヲ送リ入レラ
レタ」

「午後三時音々ハ兵隊ヲ送リ入レラ
レタ」

「午後三時音々ハ兵隊ヲ送リ入レラ
レタ」

Doc 5747

袋茶々々ニテツテシマフト、彼ハソレヲ永ノ中ニ
 蓄ケ、尙モソレテ段リ蓄ケタ。ソノタメヒドク昔
 シンダリ侍ツイタリシタ。後日再び訊問ノ時ニハ
 ソノ竹ノ代リニ銀ノ樽トゴムノ尙ノ幹ガ使ハレタ。
 コノ様ナ訊問ハ幾日モ幾日モ蓄ケラレタ。
 進日私ハ「バングー」ニ置ラレタ。毎日私ハ自分ノ
 室カラニ度或ル時ハ三度モ退出サレ「BUHHEENZORG」
 ノ親戚、友人ニツイテ訊問サレタ。又イツモノ手
 フヲ變ヘルタメ彼ハ私ニ電氣ヲ仕掛タソシテ大シテ
 間違ハナイト思フガ全部テ三十元同ヤラレタト思
 フ。

私ハ始下凡テノ事ニツイテ訊問サレタ。門チ
 「BAHAWIA」ヤ「BUHHEENZORG」ニ於ケル私ト「バ
 クフワイズ」ノ關係、私ト「WERHEIN」(「ヴァン
 ダム」トノ關係、聯合國側ノスパイ、重慶ヨリノス
 パイトノ關係ニツイテデアツタ。私ハ首領東京印度
 テ備イテキタ重慶側ノスパイノ三叔ノ情報ヲ見セ
 ラレ、ソシテ一度モ見タコトガナイト否定スルヤ
 イナヤ又一ツ段ラレタ。

「バングー」ハ私ニテニカ吐出サセヨウトシテソ
 レニ失敗スルト今度ハ水費ニカケタ。コレハ「BANG」
 ニヨツテテサレ「FAHAMHEI」及ビ他ノ二名ノ日本

Doc 5747

呉方手筈ツタ。コノ二名ノ若ノ名前ハ辨ラナイ。
 私ハ後手ニ手筈ヲ掛ラレテ椅子ニ縛リ付ケラレタ。
 数ル時ニハ非常ニ苦痛ガ甚クシク爾エ手筈ヲ掛シテ
 シマフ程ヲ越テアツタ。又一日本兵ハ私ノ腹ニ匙ヲ掛
 ケ口カラ水ガ出テ來ル程長イ同躰ミツケヤウトシ
 タ。ソレガ成功スルト今度ハ私ヲカラカヒ始メ又
 彼等ノ火ノツイタツガレツトノ先デ私ニ火筒ヲサ
 セタ。

！！！ 次ノ長待者ハ「ヤマダ」チ彼ハモウ一度
 私ニ勇氣ヲ仕掛ケソノタメ私ハ地面ニ倒レタ程デ
 アツタ。「ヤマダ」ハ「ニカノ秘書デアツタ様ニ
 思ハレルト云フノハ彼ハ公武職管轄ヲ作ツタカラ
 テアル。次チ私ハ一連間ノ休暇ヲモラツタ。

其ノ道ガ終ルト私ガ其通申ニアリ且「バインゾル
 ー」ムルダ「氏ニ歸郷シテキル徳ノ一事件ノタ
 メ、私ハ「ヨシダ」ニ引渡サレタ。私ハ「キビコノ
 問題ニツキ全然知ラナイト答テスルヤ「ヨシダ」
 ハ私ノ腹痛ノ所ヲツリ上ゲタ。シカシ私ノ腹ハコ
 ノ苦悶ニヨリ不眠ニハナラナカツタ。シカシ私ハ
 苦悶ノ餘兵衛若ノ處ガ不眠ニナツテシマツタ様
 ナ動合ヲ知ツモ知ツテキル。

例ヘバ「エドモ」博士ヤ「ツインメル」少佐ノ如キ
 「ZIMMERMAN」

Doc 5747

デアル。

私ハ二度水責ニアツタ。二度島ハ私ガ「ヤマダ」

YAMADA

ノ手ニアル時デアツタ。シカシ彼ハコノ水責ヲヤ

ラセルタメ私ヲ「バング」ニ引渡シタ。

BANG

コレ等ハ「バインゾルグ」ニ居タ時私ガ受ケタ持

BHEINZORG

問デアル。其後私ガ「バタビヤ」ノ算術會議ニ送

BATAVIA

ラレテカラハ其處デハ最早余リ似合ナ持問ハナカ

ツタ。此算術會議ノ監視者ハ兼術ノ手ニヨリ彼等

ノ頭越ニ人ヲ扱ゲル奇妙ナ制度ヲ持ツテキタ。ソ

シテ彼等ノ一人ハ此手デ私ノ左ニ折ツタ。

Doc 5747

其ノ他私ノ知ツテキル疑問ハ次ノ如クデアル、
ロイアル／ROYAL／印軍参謀本部付「ヴェレンガ」
／VELLENGA／大尉（斬首サレタ）ハ「ヨシダ」ニヨ
リ取扱ハレタ。「ヴェレンガ」／VELLENGA／大尉ガ「
ヨシダ」ニヨリ吊検問ニアツタカドウカハツキリ知
ラスガ、「ヴェレンガ」／VELLENGA／大尉ガヒドク段
ラレタリ、電気ヲ仕掛ラレタリシタノハ確カニ知ツ
テキル。

「クラマー」／KRAMER／工學博士ハ「バング」／BANG
／及ヒ「タマシニ」／TAMAMINI／ニヨリ水責ニサレ
「バング」／BANG／ニヨリ電気ヲ仕掛ケラレ、「バン
グ」／BANG／及ヒ「タマシニ」／TAMAMINI／ニヨリ絞
モ殺ラル。吊検問ナク「テイペンタイン」／DIPEN-
FERN／ニヨリ死ス。

「コスター」／COSTER／技師ハ「ヨシダ」／YOSHIDA
／ニヨリヒドク段ラレ、私設電気ヲ仕掛ラレ、死刑
ニ處セラル。

「ドリールスマ」／DRIELSMAN／ハ毆打サレタルモ、
他ニ拷問ヲ受ケス。死刑ニ處セラル。

「ムンク」／MUNCK／博士ハ「ヨシダ」／YOSHIDA／ノ
吊り拷問ニアヒ、刑具完全ニ不固、累々殺ラレ、死
刑ニ處セラル。

「ド・ルイイ」／DE ROOY／ハ懸シクヒドク殺ラル。

Doc 57747

徳ト同ニ何箇所カツガレットノ火傷ヲ受ク。『バン
グ』／BANG／ト『タマシニ』／TAMAMINI／ニヨリ水責
ニ過フ、取扱電氣ヲ仕掛ラレ死刑ニ處セラル。

『バクハイス』／BAKHUIS／ハ生課程ニ處セラル。
吊シ拷問ナシ死刑ニ處セラル。

『ツインメルマン』／ZIMMERMAN／ハ吊シ拷問ヲ受ケ、
同處不随トナル。水責二度及ビ『ヨシダ』／YOSHIDA
／ニ依リヒドイ殴打ニアフ。

『スリス』／SLIS／ハ水責、際引、感電、死刑ニ處
セラル。『ブルツセ』／BLUSSE／ハ右ニ同シ死刑ニ
處セラル。

『クイイ』／KOOP／ハ水責ナシ、感電、ヒドイ殴打、
死刑ニ處セラル。

『ピータース』／PIETERS／ハ水責、際電ナシ、阪々
ノ殴打、死刑ニ處セラル。

私ノ従兄ハ『チヨア テク スリット』／TJOA FEK
SWAH／ヒドイ殴打、時々感電、水責二度、而ル後、
斬首サル。

『ジエーヴアン ボイゲン』／J VAN BEUGEN／技師
ハヒドイ殴打。

『オング チヤング キ』／ONG TJANG KIE／ハヒド
イ取扱ヲウク、尙生存ス。モシ誰ハトシテ必要ノ際
ハ、コノ男ヲ出頭サセルコトカ出来ル。

Doc 5747

8

「ヴァン デル ヴーレン」ハ吾々ノ目的ニ對スル云
越者、日本軍ガ知リタイト思ツテキタコトヲ一部始
終詰シ、監察サレテキル仲間ノ捕虜選ノ情報ヲ日本
側ニ報告セリ。倭日本軍ニヨリ斬首サル。

「ムルダール」/MULDER/ 拷問ハ極メテ少イ。斬首サ
ル。

「ヴェルンイック」/WERNICK/ ハ秘ノ知ツテ屠ル候
リテハ非常ニヒドク取扱ハル。

訊問中十二回失神ス。日本軍ニヨリ斬首サル

ソノ他多クノ場合 イチイチ懸へ上ダタナラ
限リガナイ。

不件コレ迄ノコトテ「バイアンソルグ」ノ魯兵隊カ
シタヤリ方カトシテモノデアツタカラ知ツテ貰フニ
充分デアルト思フ。

姓名

/LIE BENG GIOK/
リー・ベング・キイオック

...

Affidavit

Today, Friday 28 June 1946, appeared before me: Captain J.G. BENDERS, R.N.I.A., concurrently honorary police officer by appointment of the Minister of Justice, dated 25 June 1946, at The Hague, Plain 1, a person, who, on enquiry, declared to be:

Name: Professor Egbert de VRIES, D.Sc.

Civilian Occupation: Professor, Agricultural Faculty (T.N. Buitenzorg, Java)

Address: Goue, Wijngaartstraat 47.

Born on 29 January 1901

.....

Q. 5. Can you give any information concerning acts of violence committed against yourself, or others which you have witnessed?

A. I was brought to the Kempei-Tai, Buitenzorg (Java), charged with implication in the underground movement under the direction of Mr. Kramer, D.Sc.

.....

At Buitenzorg I was at once interrogated by sergeant-major Hamada and the Formosan interpreter Tanamine. The ill-treatment I experienced during the interrogations was moderate and consisted of kicking and beating with a stick as thick as a walking-cane; once, in December 1943, I had to suffer the "water-cure". I was then tied backwards to a bench in such a way that I could not move my head, while water was poured into my mouth and nose continuously. That was all.

.....

One of the worst cases concerns Captain Werninck. He has been tortured 47 times. I know this from his subordinates of the "Kramer organization", namely Sonnevile who afterwards together with Werninck and 12 others were beheaded at Antjol on 12 December 1944, having been sentenced by Court Martial. Sonnevile was one of those who shared my cell. Sonnevile knew this because he had shared a cell with Werninck for a long time. Werninck was beaten to unconsciousness fourteen times. I do not know further details about this.

Sergeant Habiboe, a Hondonese regular, was also a member of the organization. This sergeant has been tied to a kind of cross with his arms and legs stretched sideways as far as possible, for one week.

.....

It should be mentioned that the boards to which arms and legs were tied, were movable. This was in fact applied in order to stretch out arms and legs as far as possible. Habiboe was not given any food at all, only something to drink during these 7 days. The first four days he was not allowed to sleep, on the contrary, he was continuously beaten, kicked and interrogated. I do not know exactly what he was beaten with. All this I heard from Habiboe himself, who had been confined in the cell next to mine. Sonneville told me the same as an example of what Habiboe had to endure without giving away one word.

Captain - later Major - Kadzumura was responsible for the maltreatment.

.....

Yet to be mentioned is that Habiboe too was beheaded along with the twelve others. In my opinion Kadzumura is to be held responsible for all that took place at the Kempoi-Tai, Buitenzorg. I do not believe that Kadzumura acted in certain cases on orders from higher officials who, however, in my opinion were aware of this but left the various Kempoi-Tai commanders free in their activities. I was told by a Japanese guard of the Court Martial at Batavia, whose name I do not recollect, that the Kempoi-Tai was in possession of a booklet in which some 50 different ways of torture were described which were applied arbitrarily by the various Kempoi-Tai detachments.

.....

Further I can mention about the Kempoi-Tai, Buitenzorg, that the Rev. Jens of Sukabumi was ill-treated by the Kempoi-Tai in such a manner that he died in his house the day after his maltreatment.

.....

The Ambonese physician Kayadoc was also beaten to death here. I think that was in September 1943. I was not yet there. Tanaming told me this adding that this had not been done by a Japanese but by an Indonesian on their orders. He told me this to show that the Japanese - in contrast to the Indonesians - were expert beaters.

.....

I was further charged with being head of a large espionage-conspiracy, directed against Japan. For investigation in this case I was taken to Semarang. This charge was absolutely untrue. Some 5 persons had succumbed through tortures continuing for months which started in October 1943. They were said to have confessed that I was actually head of a conspiracy.

These persons were: Nuheim, a Norwegian major in the Salvation Army; Beissevain, mayor of Semarang; Boogcarit, deputy mayor of Batavia; Leud Loeijer, member of the Board of the Semarang Municipal Council and Hilverdink, employed by Batavia municipality. These gentlemen have been horribly tortured for months.

.....

Nuheim died in Tjipinang Prison as a result of the maltreatment suffered at Semarang. In this town he had been admitted twice to the C.P.Z. (Tr.note: Central Civilian Hospital) owing to internal injuries and a liver disease, all caused by ill-treatment. Nuheim told me this as representing the opinion of the physicians. He had to live on strict diet, was not given the food that he needed and died from hunger and exhaustion.

They told me further that they had been suspended by their arms and legs, beaten until they bled, electrified, and "water-cured" at the Kempoi-Tai, Semarang. Still food was refused to Boogcarit systematically, while his family was arrested and maltreated to make him confess. Even his 3 years old adopted daughter was confined in prison. I myself have suffered the water-cure some 20 times in April and May 1944, as a result of which I have contracted otitis media of a serious nature and I lost two teeth by being beaten.

.....

Experience has taught me that during the whole of 1944 the Kempoi-Tai at Java lived under a sort of sabotage-psychosis and behaved accordingly.

For instance, in February 1944, rope stored in a shed at the Semarang railway station caught fire. Seven Indonesians spontaneously extinguished the fire, but were arrested as incendiaries and tortured until they became weary of life. They were persuaded by the Kempoi-Tai, Semarang, in the well-known manner to confess that a Dutchman had given them 500 guilders to start the fire. One of them happened to know the name of Bastians, an employee with the N.I.S. (Tr.note: Netherlands Indies Railways) at Semarang, who was arrested along with 5 others and all 13 were sentenced and beheaded at Batavia. I knew this because Mr. Bastians was with me in the same cell at the Court Martial Building at Batavia and from this cell he was taken to the execution grounds, together with Hubrechts and Tsoewen (a former member of the People's Council) who had been arrested in connection with the same case and were also beheaded.

.....

Another example. On 20 May 1944 an ampas-shed (Tr.note: shed used for storage of residue) on the Djenkel Bendorodjo Estate in Kediri got overheated and caught fire. This was confirmed by the Japanese estate-manager whose name is unknown to me. The Kempoi-Tai at Kediri arrested 30 European and Ambonese employees of the estate. Six have been beheaded, among them the manager, Jaquet. Three others survived and the remainder died

in prison from disease and malnutrition. I know this because I have associated with a number of these people during the time spent at the Court Martial before their conviction. After their conviction I have seen a number of them die in Prisons Tjipinang and Soekamiskin.

.....

Among those convicted in this case, the following died in prison: ten Cate, Versteeg, Feldhor, Hamar de la Bretonniere, Bakhuis.

Further I can report about the Kempei-Tai at Semarang that at the end of June 1944, Chr. van Haeften, an engineer and Director of the Department of Public Works and Communications died there from maltreatment and malnutrition. Sergeant-major Kaneko is to be held responsible for this. He has committed suicide later, after the capitulation, when he heard that we were still alive.

.....

At the Kempei-Tai, Semarang we only had each a space of 1.40 meter long and 0.40 meter wide. The food was such that in the course of four months my weight went down from 84 to 49 kilogrammes. The sanitary condition was such that after I had asked for this for five weeks I was admitted to the C.B.Z. (Tr.note: Central Civilian Hospital) with scabies all over the body; twelve abscesses, a multiple furuncle, scurvy, night blindness and palpitations of the heart owing to emaciation. All this was partly a result of the bad and insufficient food.

There were no doctors available, neither were medicines or nurses. The number of deaths was comparatively small at Semarang; it was far higher in the prisons at Batavia. In the "Tjipinang" Prison with 4000 inmates, 500 were lying in the so-called "death-ward". The only two to come out alive were a Chinese, Tjoa Peng Kie of Magelang, and myself. In the first half of 1945 10 percent of the total died monthly.

With some pride the Indonesian chief nurse of the hospital told me that this was the best prison in the whole of Java. He knew this because he had made a tour of other prisons. According to him 3 prisoners died daily at Serang out of a total of 200. The cause of death was chiefly malnutrition and diarrhoea, for which no medicines were available.

DOCUMENT 5750

VERIFICATION BY THE WITNESS

I, the undersigned Egbert de Vries, mentioned above hereby declare that I was led in and heard on oath by the interrogator, who informed me that the oath taken by me was still binding upon me, and having heard my above sworn statement read to me in my native language and shown to me, I declare that it is a true and accurate statement.

28 June 1946

The witness abovenamed:

/s/ E. de Vries

.

The above statements have been signed in my presence and this official record has been truly drawn up and subsequently signed by myself, the interrogator.

On 28 June 1946 at The Hague

The abovenamed interrogator:

/s/ J. G. Benders

Certified a true copy

/s/ J. G. Benders

J. G. Benders, Captain

宣道口併書

清一九四六年龍王五月二十日會... 蘭... 爵...
 太尉兼一九四六年五月二十日會... 依... 察官...
 宿... 借... 如... 明...
 氏在 敬... 學士
 氏因... 敬...
 任...

自... 貴... 尊... 國... 暴...
 為... 情...
 祭... 博士... 揚... 力...
 廣...

公... 於... 真... 德... 國... 音... 各... 海... 會...
 別... 取... 關... 備... 備... 安... 產... 甚...
 三... 之... 疏... 步... 檢... 行... 之... 之...
 一... 三... 年... 昭... 公... 之... 首... 於... 來... 實... 二... 甚... 之... 之...
 六... 以... 時... 六... 頭... 之... 之... 之... 公... 之... 後... 自... 之... 之...
 附... 之... 同... 時... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之... 之...

最... 例... 以... 公... 元... 三... 之... 太... 尉... 國... 係... 之... 以... 彼... 四... 之... 四... 均... 均...
 之...
 受... 之... 五... 元... 三... 之... 甚... 德... 十... 名... 十... 九... 四... 年... 昭... 九... 年...

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT 5760.

Ex 1751-A

No 1

Doc 5750

十月五日、
知事、
松
是二因

又「心」
字架不
間

腕、
云「
此物
許
彼
私
カ
後

No2

尚
之
兵
カ

Doc J750

私信身方以上官の私考に依りて是を知悉する所多
多し、憲兵隊指揮官等、行動に敢任せず。私信は
軍法會議、一日本軍衛兵一ノ名前を思ひ出せし事一カ下
憲兵隊五。禮儀、携同法書等して小冊子ヲ所
有する事、一携同法の色々下憲兵分隊下階年二
用とらたト云フ事ヲ聞イタ。

更私信より之を以て憲兵隊二関し及カテ之を憲教師ト云
ハ憲兵隊ニ依り是待亦ト云待、理目叙、死亡ト云フ事ヲ
述ハル事亦出来ル。

了不人醫師カ云クモ亦此處に設ケテ死シ。一九四三年
昭和十八年九月ノ事ヲ以テ思フ。私未ダ其處ニ居テカク。
「多クモ此一日本人ニ依り行ハル事ハ六ノ彼等ノ命を
一ト下不レ」人ニ依リ行ハル事ヲ附ト加ヘカク是ヲ私語。
彼私信是月日本人ト云不レ人ト比シテ設ケト、逢人テ了
事ヲ亦不為ニ語シタリ。

私更ニ對日ノ不謀報陰謀ト云テトイフ罪ヲ認メタリ。
コノ事件ノ取調ノ為ニ私ハ不レ之ニ移テカク。コノ嫌疑ハ
金ノ無定、モノ事ヲツタ。一九四三年上昭和十八年十月ニ始リ數
月間繼續セシ携同ノ間ニ約五名ヲ殺シ、彼等ハ私ハ實際陰謀
ト云テ自白シタリ。

No

是等ノ人々ハ救世軍ノ佐ト云テ人々不レ之ヲ重キ事ト云
テ不レ之ハ急ニ代理市長ト云テ不レ之ヲ不レ之ヲ會議員ト云テ
不レ之ヲ急ニ不レ之ヲ中級幹部員ト云テ不レ之ヲ不レ之ヲ。是等ノ
紳士ハ幾月ニテ更ニ度ニトク携同セシタリ。

5750

ヤデ宣告ヲ受ケ首ヲ斬ラシ。私コシヨミスナリス、此ガミ
タビテ、軍法會議ニ同シ監房内ニ居タデ知ツ本ハ
ズル、彼ハコノ監房カラ同シる件ニ關係ニ捕ラシ同様
斬首セラシタル「ヒゴブシ」及前國民參議院議員「
空」ト共ニ處刑場ヘ連ラテ行タデテ。

今例、一九四四年(昭和十九年)五月二十日、「ケイリ」附
近ハケニコルビドレオ農園「ア」ハス小屋(認者誌、砂
糖茶残滓、貯藏用ニ用ヒラル小屋)ガ過熱ニ祭火
シタ、コノ「ア」ハス、私ハ知ラナイガ日本人農園(園)管理者
ニ依テ確證セラシタ。「ケ」ダリ憲兵隊ニ三十名、改羅巴「ヤ
ア」シ人、農園従業員ヲ逮捕シタ、六名ハ斬首セラシタ。
ソ「中」ニ管理人、「ア」ケ「ト」ガ入ツテ居タ、他「ニ」者ハ助カリ残
リ者、收容所「テ」柄ト栄養食不良、為死亡。私是ヲ知
テ「ル」ハ、彼等、断罪前ニ軍法會議「テ」送ツタ時期
ニ私此「人」ガ、多ク、者「一」編ニ居カデ「ル」彼等、断罪
後私「ケ」ビ「ナ」ニ及ビ「ス」カ「ニ」スキ「ノ」刑務所「テ」彼等「一
部」ガ死ヌ、ヲ見タ。

105

本事件「テ」有罪ヲ宣(告)シタ者、中次、者ガ刑務所内「テ」
死ガ即チ「ア」ニ「カ」ラ「フ」ル「ス」テ「フ」。「ア」ニ「ド」ホ「フ」。「ア」
「ル」「テ」「ス」グ「レ」ト「ニ」シ「バ」ク「ハ」イ「ス」。

5750

ナリ、宣旨ヲ以テ之ヲ斬ラシク。私ニコレヲヒスナリス、比ガミ
タビテ、軍法會議ヲ同シ監房内ニ居タリテ知ツテ本ハ
ナリ、彼ノコノ監房カラ同シテ件ニ関係ニ捕ラレ同僚
斬首セラレタルトヒテレヒシ、及前國民參議院議員ナリ
之ニト共ニ處刑場ヘ連ラレテ行ツタリ。

今一例、一九四四年(昭和十九年)五月二十日、ケデーリ、附
近ハケエニル、ベドレシオ農園ナリ、アハス小屋(誤着註、砂
糖奈残滓、貯藏用ニ用ラレシ小屋)ガ過熱ニ業火
シタ、コノ事ハ、私ニ知ラナシ、日本人農園(園)管理者
ニ依テ確證セラレタ。ケデーリ憲兵隊ニ二十名、改羅巴トヤ
アボシ人、農園従業員ヲ逮捕シタ、六名ハ斬首セラレタ。
ソノ中ニ管理人、エケイトガ入ツテ居タ、他ニ者ハ助カリ残
リ者、收容所ニ病ヒト栄養不良、為死亡。私是ヲ知
テナリ、彼等、断罪前ニ軍法會議ヲ送ツタ時期
ニ私此、人ガ、多ク、者ト一緒ニ居タガテ、彼等、断罪
後、之、ト及ビ、スカニスキ之刑務所ニ彼等、一
部ガ死ヌヲ見タ。

575

本事件、有罪ヲ宣(告)シテ者、中次、者ガ刑務所内ニ
死シ即チ「エニカー」アルステック、エルドホフ、ハ
エル、ラブレトニール、バクハイス。

5950

更ニ然「スラ之憲兵隊ニ関シ 九四年 / 昭和十九年 /
六月末、交通治承省長官「アリスナキニハアテシ」技師
ガ其處「虐待」染養「不良」タメ死ニシテ予「報告」スル事
ガ出来「金子」任「長」ガ此「責任」ヲ負「カ」ル「ヲ」テ「アル」彼「後」
降服「後」我「各」ガ尚「ホ」生「キ」テ「居」ル「事」ヲ「聞」ク「自」知「ス」。

「スラ之憲兵隊」於「テ」我「各」ガ「興」行「一」四「米」間「口」〇「四」
米「場」所「ヲ」持「ツ」過「ギ」ナ「カ」タ「食」テ「四」日「経」過「中」私「体」
重「ク」八「四」死「カ」ラ「死」ニ「進」ム「程」ノ「モ」ハ「ア」リ「タ」衛「生」状「態」ニ「五」
週「間」モ「向」要「求」ス「ル」後「ニ」テ「私」全「身」「疥」癬「十二」腫「物」
復「合」瘡「痕」壞「血」病「視」盲「症」及「ビ」衰「弱」ガ「為」ニ「慘」死「進」
患「ツ」テ「之」「ト」シ「セ」シ「ヨ」(認「許」註「中央」市「民」病「院」)「入」ル「コ」ト「許」
サ「ル」程「ヲ」見「且」時「候」テ「予」粗「悪」且「不」充「分」テ「食」テ「結」果「奉」リ「タ」
返「者」モ「居」ラ「シ」テ「薬」モ「無」ク「シ」テ「看」護「人」モ「居」ラ「ズ」死「者」數「ハ」ス「ラ」シ「
ニ」於「テ」比「較」的「シ」カ「ク「之」「ト」シ「テ」於「テ」各「收」容「所」ニ「於」テ「ハ」ス「ト」多「ク「リ」四
十「人」收「容」者「居」ル「中」ニ「收」容「所」六「丑」人「ガ」所「謂」「死」部「屋」ニ
樓「上」テ「居」ル「生」キ「テ」出「テ」来「タ」タ「タ」二「人」者「ハ」之「中」ニ「一」支「那」人
「ク」モ「上」キ「テ」私「自」射「テ」死「シ」タ「九四五年 / 昭和二年 / 最初「半」
年「間」三「月」間「全」体「一」割「ガ」死「シ」
病「院」「ハ」「下」不「中」人「看」護「人」長「ク」誇「ラ」シ「タ」處「ニ」全「ク」
「ハ」中「ノ」最「良」收「容」所「ニ」テ「私」ニ「語」リ「タ」彼「ハ」且「他」收「容」所

206

5750

607

観察旅行ヲ行ハシテ知ラセリ。彼ニ依ルニセラレテハ統計
ニ。名、中一日三名ゾク死亡シタ。死因ハ全トシテ深養不良
ト下劑ヲアリ、ソニ対シテ何レノ医藥モナク。

5750

207

観察旅行ヲ行ツタレド知リテモ、彼ニ倭兵ニヤラズテハ終計
ニ。名、中一日之名ゾシ死亡シタ。死因ハ生トシテ深養不良
ト下劑ニアリ、ソレニ對シテ何レノ医療ナカク。

5950

本證人の證明

上述、下記署名大兄余、エラベルト・フリース、に余が案内して
宣誓し、訊問者ニ依り審問せられたることを言明す。
訊問者ニ于て、大兄宣誓は尚余を拘束せず、大兄は余ニ告げ
たり、而して予、母國語を讀み且余に示したるに、余が宣誓は下
に大兄右陳述を聞き、其の眞實正確なることを言明す。

一九二六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 六月二十日

前記証人

署名 / エラ・フリース

右陳述に余、面前に署名せられたる調書に眞實ニ從つ
て調製せられたる訊問者タル余自身ニ依り署名せられたる

一九二六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 六月二十日 / 小島

前記訊問者

署名 / イエ・バグデルス

寫本、眞實なることを證明す。

208

署名 / イエ・バグデルス

大尉 / イエ・バグデルス

#1752

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned, CHARLES JONGENEEL, first lieutenant, R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed reports are full, true, complete and accurate copies of the original

1. letter of Dr. FLACHS, BANDOENG
2. 2 reports, attached thereto, nos 2 and 3 of the said Dr. FLACHS,

which letter and reports are part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE:

BATAVIA 11 June 1946

S E A L

/s/ Ch. Jongeneel

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K. A. de WEERD, first lieutenant R.N.I.A., Senior official attached to the office of the Attorney-General N.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

Doc. No. 5751

Page 2

Dr. R. FLACHS
Westerhof 24,
BANDOENG

209
PM 295/E

Dear Sirs,

Allow me to introduce myself.

I am R FLACHS, of Swiss nationality, born the 20th of May 1904 in Switzerland; profession: chemical engineer and doctor in technical science of the Swiss Federal Technical Highschool in Zurich.

Since June 1928 I am in the employ of the N.V. De Bataafsche Petroleum Maatschappij (Royal Dutch Shell Co.)

I arrived in the Netherland East Indies from the U.S.A. in October 1941 and stayed in this country during the whole period of occupation by the Japanese Army.]

I am married and have a boy of nearly 16 and a girl of 12 years old. I served in the Swiss Army as a young officer and on leaving Switzerland in 1928 I had the rank of first lieutenant.

In giving you all these details about myself, I hope to demonstrate that in view of my education and training, I may be considered a competent person to give an authoritative and truthful description of what happened to me while this country was occupied by the Japanese.

As a neutral I am further a witness to many incidents which happened to other people during imprisonment and internment.

During the occupation time I was arrested 3 times and have consequently collected all the facts in 3 reports, 2 of which may be of interest to you and which I have the pleasure to enclose herewith.

[I enclose reports Nos. 2 and 3, of which No. 3 of course is more important, with the view of informing you about the conditions and treatment, to which political prisoners were subjected. I understand of course, that similar things have happened also in other countries occupied by the Japanese and are wellknown to you, but I think it might be of value to you to have such a report from a neutral and competent witness, capable of reviewing such situations.]

I am of course not making any suggestion for punishment or measures to be taken against the people concerned, but mention only the names of the men connected with the happenings described in report No. 3. The numbers behind the names refer to the numbers in report No. 3:

Hashimoto	(1)
Kushimoto	(2)
Gastina	(3)
Socharójo	(4)
Soecaldar	(5)
Gedjali	(6)

These are only the names related to the incidents which I described, but there are of course others who were even worse or in any case not better than those mentioned above and I think it will be easy enough to find out the facts with regard to the following police-investigation officers:

Soekandi	(Gandi)
Dannono	
Moaassan	
Djamoeri	

Special mention deserve those individuals who took advantage of their positions in "Bantjeuj"-prison, to rob and swindle the poor prisoners in regard to food supplies, money, clothes etc. and they deserve to be searched for and severely punished for their nefarious activities which caused much mental agony to their victims.

One of the greatest criminals was no doubt the physician Soebowo, who wilfully condemned an unknown but certainly large number of men, including many Europeans to a terrible death, either through refusing to attend the sick or neglecting them in a criminal manner. Many witnesses can be produced to establish the facts mentioned in the report, amongst whom E.R. R. Linn, M.D., who has personal experience of many incidents.

You may regard the two reports enclosed as your property and do with it whatever you like, even to the extent of publishing them, but personally I wish to remain unmentioned.

Doc. No. 5751

Page 4

Eventually I beg to inform you, that the same reports have been sent by me to the N. V. Bataafsche Petroleum Maatschappij and a translation in the German language to the Swiss Consulate in Batavia on behalf of the Swiss Government.

Faithfully,

Yours

[w.s. R. FLACHS]



[Encl. Report No. 2]
Report No. 3]

R E P O R T No. 3

TITLE: The third arrest of Dr. R. FLACHS through the
Kempei Dai Nippon and the Bandoeng Police.

DATE: May 30th 1945

1. INTRODUCTION

2. DESCRIPTION

- A. Food
- B. Clothing
- C. Hygiene
- D. Sanitation
- E. Police investigations
- F. Indictments.

3. CROSS-EXAMINATION OF THE UNDERSIGNED BY THE POLICE

4. "BANTJEUJ" PRISON

- A. Hospital ward and medical service
- B. Food
- C. Punishments
- D. Personal experiences
- E. Submarines
- F. Spiritual life

5. COURT PROCEEDINGS AND SENTENCE

6. AT HOME

RESUME AND CONCLUSIONS: On the 2nd of June 1944 the undersigned was taken into custody by the Kempei Dai Nippon accompanied by the Bandoeng Police and for 10 months and one week he was detained under inhuman living conditions as described in report No. 3.

On the 16th of April 1945 he was condemned by the court to one year's imprisonment, with conditional remission of sentence and released. Evidence of guilt was missing, since the Radio in question had been sold in the meantime by the Radio authorities, which could only be done, provided the apparatus was in perfect order. This is the best proof of the innocence of the writer. Neither police nor the court considered this point and the undersigned finally only confessed to avoid being made a cripple or done to death.

R E P O R T No. 3

TITLE: The third arrest of Dr. R. FLACHS through the
Kempei Dai Nippon and the Bandoeng Police.

DATE: May 30th 1945

1. INTRODUCTION

2. DESCRIPTION

- A. Food
- B. Clothing
- C. Hygiene
- D. Sanitation
- E. Police investigations
- F. Indictments.

3. CROSS-EXAMINATION OF THE UNDERSIGNED BY THE POLICE

4. "BANTJEUJ" PRISON

- A. Hospital ward and medical service
- B. Food
- C. Punishments
- D. Personal experiences
- E. Submarines
- F. Spiritual life

5. COURT PROCEEDINGS AND SENTENCE

6. AT HOME

RESUME AND CONCLUSIONS: On the 2nd of June 1944 the undersigned was taken into custody by the Kempei Dai Nippon accompanied by the Bandoeng Police and for 10 months and one week he was detained under inhuman living conditions as described in report No. 3.

On the 16th of April 1945 he was condemned by the court to one year's imprisonment, with conditional remission of sentence and released. Evidence of guilt was missing, since the Radio in question had been sold in the meantime by the Radio authorities, which could only be done, provided the apparatus was in perfect order. This is the best proof of the innocence of the writer. Neither police nor the court considered this point and the undersigned finally only confessed to avoid being made a cripple or done to death.

R E P O R T No. 3

TITLE: The third arrest of Dr. R. FLACHS through the
Kempei Dai Nippon and the Bandoeng Police.

DATE: May 30th 1945

1. INTRODUCTION

2. DESCRIPTION

- A. Food
- B. Clothing
- C. Hygiene
- D. Sanitation
- E. Police investigations
- F. Indictments.

3. CROSS-EXAMINATION OF THE UNDERSIGNED BY THE POLICE

4. "BANTJEUJ" PRISON

- A. Hospital ward and medical service
- B. Food
- C. Punishments
- D. Personal experiences
- E. Submarines
- F. Spiritual life

5. COURT PROCEEDINGS AND SENTENCE

6. AT HOME

RESUME AND CONCLUSIONS: On the 2nd of June 1944 the undersigned was taken into custody by the Kempei Dai Nippon accompanied by the Bandoeng Police and for 10 months and one week he was detained under inhuman living conditions as described in report No. 3.

On the 16th of April 1945 he was condemned by the court to one year's imprisonment, with conditional remission of sentence and released. Evidence of guilt was missing, since the Radio in question had been sold in the meantime by the Radio authorities, which could only be done, provided the apparatus was in perfect order. This is the best proof of the innocence of the writer. Neither police nor the court considered this point and the undersigned finally only confessed to avoid being made a cripple or done to death.

The whole period of detention cost him more than Fl.6000 - Without this expenditure the wife of the undersigned as well as he himself might well have lost their lives.

REPORT No. 3

Concerning the third arrestation of Dr. R. FLACHS through the Kempei Dai Nippon and the police of Bandoeng.]

7. Introduction: The events hereafter described started in the early morning of the 2nd of June 44. At about 4.30 am, while still in bed a tremendous uproar arose in front of my house Westhoffweg 24, Bandoeng. On opening the door I was immediately seized by two officers of the Kempei and two officers of the Bandoeng police and handcuffed. Trousers and shirt were carefully examined for concealed weapons before I was allowed to put them on. I was promptly ordered to leave the house and mount the waiting lorry, while one of the officers recalled by whistle his men, about fifteen of them with carabines, who had surrounded my house during the arrestation.

After seizing two more persons in the same street in the same manner, the lorry proceeded to another part of the town where another 3 persons were fetched.

In my absence the house remained under guard and as I was told later by my wife, the family ordered to remain inside. A few hours later a thorough search of the house, lasting for hours took place. Since nothing was found to confirm the suspicions of the police, the "gentlemen" returned the next day to institute a further search. This investigation also proving futile, the police appeared again two days later and carried away with them a few articles such as film - and photocameras, binoculars, school atlases belonging to the children, photo albums, etc. To crown it all the police wanted to arrest also my wife after the last search. My wife suffers since years of nervous heart disease and owing to the shock of seeing me arrested she fainted. A friend of mine however managed to induce the police to abstain from arresting her and offered himself as guarantor.

↑ [2. Description: The lorry, eventually loaded with 6 persons, proceeded at last to headquarters, where we were brought to the office. Here the legitimation paper issued

by the Japanese (called "Pendaftaran") was taken from me and the handcuffs removed. Promptly however, were my hands tied behind my back and so tightly that the ropes lacerated the skin of the knuckles. Without asking a word I had to remain kneeling on the floor for about an hour, before, still bound, I was removed to a cell, which to my astonishment contained only two persons. This did not however remain so for long, because within 3 - 4 hours, the cell which had been sleeping space for 8 persons only, contained 14 occupants. I did not know any of the fellow prisoners, who were all convinced of their innocence and sure of being released in a few hours.

More and more prisoners arrived, the number amounting finally to 80, including also women with children of tender age and old men of about 70. Apparently new premises had been built to provide for mass arrestations as 8 cells meant for the newcomers appeared new and unused and free from bugs and lice.

Finally came noon, afternoon and the evening, without anyone of us having been called up or been given anything to eat.

A. Food: About 7 O'clock in the evening a little dry rice, weighing about 50 - 60 grams, was handed round in filthy and rusty enamel plates. The next meal was given out in the same unappetising form and quantity the next day at 10 O'clock and repeated at 4 O'clock. Thus the whole nourishment of one day consisted of 2 rations dry rice, totalling about 100 - 120 grams, with later often an interval of 20 or more hours. After 3 weeks it happened once that the kitchen was entirely without rice, so that we were 46 hours practically without any food, with the exception of half an "Oebi" (Indian potato) per prisoner and this after we had gone hungry for three weeks. From time to time we were given not more than a teaspoonful of vegetable soaked in water, but this happened irregularly. The prisoners were so famished that they began to eat tooth paste and the skins of the bananas thrown away by the guards.

After 35 days the relatives were informed, that additional food would be provided for those prisoners, for whom 60 cents per day would be contributed. This having been agreed to, we were given in reality slightly bigger portions with more vegetables and every day a banana, all this however still insufficient to satisfy the requirements of an adult. This additional food had therefore to

↓
be paid out of our own pocket, as the police did not provide any funds for this purpose. This favour was probably granted for fear that many of the prisoners, who were terribly weakened through sickness and want of sufficient food, would die on their hands.]

Suppose we look into the problem of nourishment somewhat closer and from slightly a scientific point of view and we come to the following conclusions:

a. A normal person while at rest, requires one caloric per kilogram weight and per hour, thus at an average weight of say 65 kg 1560 calories per day. Workers naturally require a higher number and heavy workers as much as 100% more.

b. A minimum of at least 0.5 grams of albumen per kilo weight is necessary or at least 30 - 35 grams per person per day. The biological value of animal - compared with vegetable albumen is considerably higher, if the former is taken at 100% the vegetable albumen ranks only at 40 - 75%.

However no food containing any animal albumen was served and we should therefore have been given daily 45 - 50 grams of vegetable albumen, but even this was unobtainable.

c. Fats can mostly be replaced by carbohydrates, but an absolute minimum is necessary to provide the essential fatty acids which act as solvent for vitamins A & D.

d. Vitamins needed by an ordinary person per day:

a. 3-4000 international units. F.i. 10 grams of cod liver oil, or 70 grams carrots or 100 grams spinach would be sufficient.

b. 200 international units per day.

c. 400-6000 international units. F.i. 100 grams of tropical fruits.

↑
[During the first 35 days the calories, contained in the food and calculated scientifically and optimistically, did not exceed 650, instead of the 1560 required. During the second period, during which the relatives contributed payments, they amounted to maximum 1120, fats and albumen being still practically missing.]

b. Clothing: Every Monday the relatives were allowed to send in fresh clothes, provided they did not send in more than one change. The dirty clothes could be given back to the family for washing. Soap, toothbrush and toothpaste were also allowed. The first change we were allowed arrived after about 15 days.

c. Hygiene: For all the prisoners, who finally amounted to about 100 in number, only one latrine and a tap for water was in existence. This tap was fixed at a height of about 1 meter and served as a shower. The condition of the latrine was filthy beyond description and the stench unbearable, especially after an outbreak of dysentery. The prisoners were only allowed to make use of the latrine one by one. Assuming a person needs only 6 minutes then the time required by all the prisoners would be 600 minutes or 10 hours. Permission to use the W.C. and facilities were however granted from 8 o'clock am till 8 pm., so that while allowing the ladies a little more time, each prisoner could use the W.C. only once in 24 hours. It is unimaginable what the feeling, under these abominable conditions must have been amongst those sick with dysentery, not mentioning the great danger of contamination in the cells. Especially those who were unable to obtain any change of clothing were in imminent danger of contamination and there were many. Owing to undernourishment and loss of blood due to dysentery they were so weakened, that, against the principle of the place, some at least were brought to the hospital, where many died of the consequences of the sickness and their generally enfeebled constitution.]

Most of the prisoners were Dutch of mixed blood with a sparse growth of hair. The few fullblooded Europeans, amongst them the writer, looked however after 2 months very much like St. Nikolas. There was no question of shaving or a hair cut and soon the beards were swarming with inhabitants.

d. Sanitation: In our cell a man suffering from T. B. was coughing continuously and spitting blood. Another though partly cured from T.B. through a pneumatorax and now no more infectious, was living on one lung only. He was so weakened by the 3 weeks in prison that he was unable to get up any more. Other cells also had their also had their T.B. patients. Jointly with 2 doctor prisoners I appealed to the police to summon the doctor of the prison in order to induce him to transfer these poor sufferers to

the hospital, thus reducing the possibility of contamination so dangerous when in a state of under-nourishment. The one spitting blood was after 2½ weeks finally brought to the hospital, but not the others. Apart from castor oil no other medicines were given. One T.B. patient however, was once only given cod liver oil and calcium.

As we shall see later the illtreatment of the prisoners by the police resulted in many festering wounds, which could not be healed owing to the shortage of vitamins and the refusal of the Chief of Police (1) to have them attended to by the doctor. Although a sick list was made daily no treatment was prescribed. For a prisoner to be sent to the hospital, was to be written off. Those few, who managed to smuggle privately some medicine into the hospital, which was guarded by the police, sometimes survived.

^ E. Police Investigations: All the prisoners, including myself, who were arrested on the 2nd of June, were given numbers. Mine was No. 30. Three days after the arrest, the first, with No. 51, was called out. This was done by an accomplice who called out the number from a chit signed by a police officer. No. 51 was equally convinced of his innocence as the others and presumed that after short investigation he would be set at liberty. He left the call at 10 am and failing to return by 6 in the evening everybody presumed that he had been released. An hour later however he appeared with blood congested face and hardly able to stand upright. Two Nippon Officers (1 & 2) and Two Indonesian officers (one, No. 3) had manhandled him at the same time. In such pitiable condition was he that he was unable to speak and we consequently heard of his martyrdom only next day, by which time No. 19 had also been called up. It would lead too far to enumerate separately each case and I shall here only describe the way the interrogations were conducted and the kind of persuasions used.

On being called up, the prisoner was asked: "Why have you been arrested?" to which most of the prisoners replied, that they did not know. This was usually followed by a flogging, varying from 50 - 300 strokes. The instruments used for this torture I shall describe below. Were the prisoners still obstinate, e.i. did not confess, then further corporal punishment was inflicted. These punishments can be classified as follows:

a) "The art of flogging". In this, a great variety was shown, starting with a single stick, then a rattan varying in thickness; followed a flogging whip with leather thongs the ends of which were weighted with metal balls. About the meanest instrument however was the whip, the leather thongs of which were provided with iron hooks, which simply tore the flesh to bits. To deaden the cries of the tortured prisoners, the worst ill-treatments took place in a cellar, which was also used as an airraid shelter by the police. The prisoner was usually tied to a post or manacled in a sitting position, to prevent him from attacking the police, which sometimes occurred in the beginning, when a prisoner went frantic under the punishment given to him.

b) The next punishment was by "electric current". Ordinary alternating current of 110 volt was used, one terminal being fixed f.i. with a clamp to the leg and the other left free. In the case of the men the second terminal was connected with the arm, or if still no confession was forthcoming to the nostrils. With the women the second terminal was sometimes applied to the nipple of the breast.

c) The third degree of punishment was "suffocation by immersions". A towel was fixed under the chin and drawn over the face. Then many buckets of water were poured into the towel so that the water gradually reached the mouth and rising further eventually also the nostrils, thus preventing him from breathing, which resulted in his becoming unconscious and collapsing like a person drowned. This procedure was sometimes repeated 5 - 6 times in succession. Did the prisoner not confess, he was mostly led back to the cell to pass the night in his wet clothes.

d) The next punishment consisted of the bandaging together of the fingers with a stick put between each, which were also fastened together and could be further tightened by means of a rope. This punishment, it appears, produced unbearable pains and the fingers remain for days very swollen and cannot be used for some time.

e) Another punishment with which one of the inmates of my cell was threatened, is the shaving of the head, after which a number of cuts are inflicted on the head with a razor. These wounds are then treated with tincture of iodine.

f) Putting out cigarettes and cigars on all parts of the body is a very common punishment. The prisoner is usually

a) "The art of flogging". In this, a great variety was shown, starting with a single stick, then a rattan varying in thickness; followed a flogging whip with leather thongs the ends of which were weighted with metal balls. About the meanest instrument however was the whip, the leather thongs of which were provided with iron hooks, which simply tore the flesh to bits. To deaden the cries of the tortured prisoners, the worst ill-treatments took place in a cellar, which was also used as an airraid shelter by the police. The prisoner was usually tied to a post or manacled in a sitting position, to prevent him from attacking the police, which sometimes occurred in the beginning, when a prisoner went frantic under the punishment given to him.

b) The next punishment was by "electric current". Ordinary alternating current of 110 volt was used, one terminal being fixed f.i. with a clamp to the leg and the other left free. In the case of the men the second terminal was connected with the arm, or if still no confession was forthcoming to the nostrils. With the women the second terminal was sometimes applied to the nipple of the breast.

c) The third degree of punishment was "suffocation by immersions. A towel was fixed under the chin and drawn over the face. Then many buckets of water were poured into the towel so that the water gradually reached the mouth and rising further eventually also the nostrils, thus preventing him from breathing, which resulted in his becoming unconscious and collapsing like a person drowned. This procedure was sometimes repeated 5 - 6 times in succession. Did the prisoner not confess, he was mostly led back to the cell to pass the night in his wet clothes.

d) The next punishment consisted of the bandaging together of the fingers with a stick put between each, which were also fastened together and could be further tightened by means of a rope. This punishment, it appears, produced unbearable pains and the fingers remain for days very swollen and cannot be used for some time.

e) Another punishment with which one of the inmates of my cell was threatened, is the shaving of the head, after which a number of cuts are inflicted on the head with a razor. These wounds are then treated with tincture of jodium.

f) Putting out cigarettes and cigars on all parts of the body is a very common punishment. The prisoner is usually

asked, whether he wants a cigarette and whether his reply is "Yes" or "No" burning cigarettes or cigars are put out behind his ears, on the nose, in the face and other parts of the body. This usually results in festering wounds, which cause the so punished intense pain.

g) The most recalcitrant, who even after all these punishments failed to confess, had his finger broken. I have personally seen the dislocated and broken finger of a fellow prisoner.

h) One of the meanest punishments were the kicks given with hobnailed military boots into the soft parts of the body while the prisoner was sitting bound on the floor. Internal bleeding was mostly the result. I have seen fellow prisoners, who for weeks passed blood and also suffered from severe bleeding of the stomach.

i) To remain standing for 4 days and nights without food and drink and to be tarashed every four hours by an accomplice was another penalty.

k) The 2 Nipponers (1, 2), chief of the police and his assistant took a special delight in indulging in Judo (Jujitsu - Jap. wrestling). A fellow prisoner, 50 years old, related how he was catapulted from one corner of the room to another, just like a ball and that only by the greatest dexterity and luck did he contrive to fall so, that no damage was done to arms, legs and neck. For a whole year afterwards he still had pains in his chest and recalls with trepidation, what these two wellnourished creatures had done to a crushed man, who was thrown about till he finally became unconscious.]

One of the Indonesian Police Officers (4) even went so far as to threaten the prisoners with criminal assault of their wives or children. Never in my life have I encountered a character as base as his.

[4-6 prisoners were usually called up at the same time, but as there existed only one subterranean room, which was used especially for the treatment of those considered dangerous, the other were maltreated in ordinary rooms of the police quarters. These rooms lying adjacent to the cells, the howling and moans of the tortured could easily be heard. These interrogations often lasted till 3-4 o'clock in the morning so that few of the prisoners had any sleep. The calling out of a number always caused trepidation amongst the prisoners, who thought their turn had come so that all lived in perpetual agitation, which was slowly but surely leading to a nervous breakdown.]

No. 5, a Menadonese, was most severely ill-treated; three times in one day he was called out and so severely thrashed with different instruments for flogging, that he was in no condition to stand or lie and was covered with bloodstains. The following day he was called again twice, thrashed, treated with electrical current and finally subjected to the water treatment. At the third call-up he received at the beginning of the interrogation such an unlucky hit on the head, that already after 15 minutes he was thrown down in front of the cell door unconscious. We had to pull the poor man into the cell and to wait till he recovered his senses. As I was the only one in the cell with a little medical knowledge, I slept next to him, but was unable to give him much help in the absence of medicines and instruments required. A few hours after his return to the cell No. 5 had cramps in the lower jaw, which prevented him from taking any nourishment and it was only with a great effort on the part of myself and a fellow prisoner that we succeeded in pouring a little water or cold tea through his slightly opened teeth. When (1) inspected the cell two days later he was still unconscious. On such an inspection all the prisoners were expected to stand to attention. The unconscious man naturally lay on the ground and seeing this (1) yelled at us to make him stand, so that he could see him in full. Then he shouted through the bars of the cell: "You have not yet received your full measure." (Koerang sadja!) The next day he was again called up for interrogation by (1) personally, but to no avail as he had not yet recovered consciousness. All requests for a doctor were negative and only on the 5th day the prison doctor appeared, who confirmed the insensibility of the man. On the 7th day the man regained consciousness for about 5 minutes and asked in a barely perceptible voice for his wife and children and then promptly fainted again. At last, in the evening of that day he was still unconscious, brought to the hospital. I personally carried him to the ambulance, when (3) asked me: "Has he perhaps fallen on his head?" I never heard anything more about him.

Due to the undernourishment and the continual screaming day and night, the prisoners became gradually extremely nervous, and above so, when the first cases of dysentery started to occur.

F. Indictments: Practically every prisoner was supposed to be guilty of the following misdemeanours:

1. To be in possession of one or two senders and thus to be in communication with the enemy.
2. To be a member of a secret organisation.
3. To be a forger of currency.
4. To have financed secret organisations.
5. To have listened to Radio broadcasts from abroad.
6. To have circulated false and genuine reports.
7. To be in possession of fire weapons, also tommy-guns and machine guns.
8. To have sent contributions to the relief of war and civil prisoners in camps.

3. Cross-examination of the undersigned by the police: About ten days after arrest, my number (50) was called and I was led into the cellar. On being asked the same question as the other prisoners, namely: "Why have you been arrested?" I replied that if I said "No" to that question, I would be thrashed at once. Addressing the police officer, I pointed out to him that I was a Swiss subject and not to be trifled with. I further commented on the shameful treatment of the prisoners and the fact that they were never allowed out of the cells for a breath of fresh air. To this he replied, that they were not brutes, but also human beings with their feelings for wife and children. Now I must confess that this officer (5) was the least objectionable of all, which was lucky for me. However, as I had nothing to confess, he ordered his accomplice to give me a hiding. Again my luck held, as the whip had been used upon the previous prisoner. Now they were going to proceed to some other forms of punishment, but I simulated a nervous breakdown, which was not difficult for me, as I really was near one. Subsequently I was led back to the cell and given one night to think things over. Three days later however, I was called up again and treated slightly better. Permission was even given to me to write a chit home asking for medicines which opportunity I seized to order the following: Neurotrasentin, Luminal, Cibelgin, Spasmocibalgin and Cibazol, which were all delivered to me the next day. In spite of the small quantities received, I was enabled to do a lot of good with it. Neurotrasentin and Luminal gave help to nervous patients, while Cibazol healed practically all of the festering wounds in the cell and greatly helped those suffering from bacillary-dysentery. A second simulated nervous breakdown put me into the position to requisition through the same police officer some more medicines which enabled me to help also some lady-prisoners.

At last I was charged with having committed the following offences: To have given financial support to BFM-families and women in the internment camps and civil-internees in Tanah and finally to have listened in to foreign stations on the radio and circulated news. Only to avoid being discharged later from prison a confirmed invalid, I confessed having to the French Radio from Saigon in the belief that this was allowed, since Saigon was under Japanese control. I also admitted to have discussed these reports with a few friends, but informed the police that the radio had been so badly sealed at the second control, that the blame lay with the authorities. As soon as it became known, that a third control of the radios would take place, I opened the lead seals and to avoid detection put back the wave length by 3 mm and then reclosed the seals.

After a further examination an official report in the Malay language was signed by me, which concluded the police investigations of my case. This was 18 days after my arrest. 23 months later photos and fingerprints were taken and then I was led with 40 other prisoners to the "Bantjeuj" prison.

4. "Bantjeuj" prison: In "Bantjeuj" we were brought to the men's ward and about 20 women to the women's department. 20 men were put in a cell meant for 13 prisoners and later 35. According to regulations each prisoner was entitled to two blankets. These were however never distributed by the Direction of prisons, we all had to sleep on the cement floor. Later we were allowed to provide ourselves with thin mattings at our own cost.

The hygienic conditions in "Bantjeuj" were abominable and worse than at police headquarters. The drinking water was brownish and taken from a hole about 6 metres deep. At the same hole the fear from bacillary dysentery were washed. Officially one was allowed to bathe once a day with this same water, but only in theory, as the occasion to do so presented itself only once every 4-5 days.

The food was still worse than in Police headquarters. At 8 in the morning we were handed on indescribably dirty plates a watery porridge made with rice and without any nourishment value whatever; at eleven o'clock seven finger-loads of dry rice mixed with still hard grains of maize and at four in the afternoon the same again as at 11 o'clock. A few watery vegetables were also issued, but these included

partly poisonous plants, such as leaves from "oebi" and "papaya". Possessing no cutlery to eat with even semi-liquid food, such as rice porridge, had to be transmitted to the mouth by the fingers, while all the time seated on the floor. The consequences did not fail to appear. Already after about 6 days the first of the fellow prisoners died of weakness and bacillary-dysentery. Only when he began to discharge himself where he lay, was he brought to a so called hospital ward, where he died 2 days later. The whole cell was contaminated and everybody infected with bacillary-dysentery, the imprisoned doctor included.

The value in calories of the food given to us, amounted to maximum 750 calories per day. As the prisoners had to work daily for 6 hours in the burning sun, the minimum number of calories should have been 1700.

A. Hospital ward and medical service: The medical service consisted of a prison doctor and a male nurse, apart from a few auxiliary male nurses and their help, who had been chosen from amongst the prisoners and so did not belong to the regular staff.

The doctor had at his disposal only two rooms inadequately equipped with medical instruments and the consulting hours were three times a week. To these scarcely any patients were however admitted and no medicines dispensed. No replies were given to the queries of the patients nor did the doctor make any inquiries, nor were diagnoses made. The only remedies issued were "djamoe", a kind of pulverized bark used for dysentery and the powdered bark of the Cinchona-tree for malaria.

A small narrow hall with about 12 iron cots with straw mattresses ranged along the two sides represented the sick ward. This room had a W.C. but no water for washing and, since it contained mostly dysentery patients, such an abominable stench prevailed, that with the best of will it was impossible to stand it more than 5 minutes. During my 8 months stay in "Bantjeuj" neither the doctor nor the nurse had been once in the sickroom. It often happened that 2 patients lay in one bed suffering from dysentery, they often discharge involuntarily either into the bed or next to it on the floor. The place was swarming with flies and new patients brought in with other sicknesses were also promptly infected with dysentery. Europeans and natives lay next to each other. It is easy to comprehend, why this ward was called by the natives the "Deathchamber", as few who entered it, left it alive.

partly poisonous plants, such as leaves from "oebi" and "papaya". Possessing no cutlery to eat with even semi-liquid food, such as rice porridge, had to be transmitted to the mouth by the fingers, while all the time seated on the floor. The consequences did not fail to appear. Already after about 6 days the first of the fellow prisoners died of weakness and bacillary-dysentery. Only when he began to discharge himself where he lay, was he brought to a so called hospital ward, where he died 2 days later. The whole cell was contaminated and everybody infected with bacillary-dysentery, the imprisoned doctor included.

The value in calories of the food given to us, amounted to maximum 750 calories per day. As the prisoners had to work daily for 6 hours in the burning sun, the minimum number of calories should have been 1700.

A. Hospital ward and medical service: The medical service consisted of a prison doctor and a male nurse, apart from a few auxiliary male nurses and their help, who had been chosen from amongst the prisoners and so did not belong to the regular staff.

The doctor had at his disposal only two rooms inadequately equipped with medical instruments and the consulting hours were three times a week. To these scarcely any patients were however admitted and no medicines dispensed. No replies were given to the queries of the patients nor did the doctor make any inquiries, nor were diagnoses made. The only remedies issued were "djamoe", a kind of pulverized bark used for dysentery and the powdered bark of the Cinchona-tree for malaria.

A small narrow hall with about 12 iron cots with straw mattresses ranged along the two sides represented the sick ward. This room had a W.C. but no water for washing and, since it contained mostly dysentery patients, such an abominable stench prevailed, that with the best of will it was impossible to stand it more than 5 minutes. During my 8 months stay in "Bantjeuj" neither the doctor nor the nurse had been once in the sickroom. It often happened that 2 patients lay in one bed suffering from dysentery, they often discharge involuntarily either into the bed or next to it on the floor. The place was swarming with flies and new patients brought in with other sicknesses were also promptly infected with dysentery. Europeans and natives lay next to each other. It is easy to comprehend, why this ward was called by the natives the "Deathchamber", as few who entered it, left it alive.

There was no discipline in the sickroom. The prisoner-nurses, consisting mostly of convicted thieves and other scum, did what they liked. The dead were hardly cold, before their miserable rags were torn from their emaciated bodies. One of these so-called male nurses possessed a glass three quarter full of gold filled teeth and gold bridges, which he most probably was going to sell for their gold value when the opportunity came. Such things could only happen, because there was no control at all by the prison doctor. My fellow prisoner, the doctor, endeavoured several times to get permission to go to the sickroom or the doctor's consulting room, but without success. Although he was a well known internist, he was strictly forbidden to give medical help to anybody, but as soon as the doctor and the nurse were out of the way we smuggled ourselves into the ward in order to extend as much help as was possible under the circumstances.]

It is no exaggeration to state, that the doctor is practically guilty of "mass-murder through neglect". Many patients having died through lack of attention or through being wrongly treated by the prison nurses.

[B. Food. The food situation was so bad, that physically strong and healthy prisoners soon looked emaciated and finally died of hunger, sometimes in so short a time as 1½ to 2 months. The cause of death was given by the prison authorities as "marasmus". I have personal knowledge, that with Beri-beri and hun eroeder were common sicknesses and as the place was infested with lice and bugs, itch and other skin diseases and serious infections were prevalent, but were not treated. In view of the existing undernourishment this resulted in purulent wounds, which would not heal, so that at least 30% of the prisoners walked about with festering wounds, innocent of any bandage or ointment, infecting others. Often the patients were not even brought to the hospital to die so that the poor emaciated wretches sometimes simply dropped dead where they were. Should one of these poor creatures in desperation try to grab a few grains of rice and was caught by the supervisor, then he was in for a severe drubbing and was put under those that died of "marasmus".]

It is impossible, when one has seen these living skeletons, scarcely able to stand upright, ever to forget this spectacle.

There was no discipline in the sickroom. The prisoner-nurses, consisting mostly of convicted thieves and other scum, did what they liked. The dead were hardly cold, before their miserable rags were torn from their emaciated bodies. One of these so-called male nurses possessed a glass three quarter full of gold filled teeth and gold bridges, which he most probably was going to sell for their gold value when the opportunity came. Such things could only happen, because there was no control at all by the prison doctor. My fellow prisoner, the doctor, endeavoured several times to get permission to go to the sickroom or the doctor's consulting room, but without success. Although he was a well known internist, he was strictly forbidden to give medical help to anybody, but as soon as the doctor and the nurse were out of the way we smuggled ourselves into the ward in order to extend as much help as was possible under the circumstances.]

It is no exaggeration to state, that the doctor is practically guilty of "mass-murder through neglect". Many patients having died through lack of attention or through being wrongly treated by the prison nurses.

[B. Food. The food situation was so bad, that physically strong and healthy prisoners soon looked emaciated and finally died of hunger, sometimes in so short a time as 1½ to 2 months. The cause of death was given by the prison authorities as "Marasmus". I have personal knowledge, that with Beri-beri and hun eroeder were common sicknesses and as the place was infested with lice and bugs, itch and other skin diseases and serious infections were prevalent, but were not treated. In view of the existing undernourishment this resulted in purulent wounds, which would not heal, so that at least 30% of the prisoners walked about with festering wounds, innocent of any bandage or ointment, infecting others. Often the patients were not even brought to the hospital to die so that the poor emaciated wretches sometimes simply dropped dead where they were. Should one of these poor creatures in desperation try to grab a few grains of rice and was caught by the supervisor, then he was in for a severe drubbing and was put under those that died of "Marasmus".]

It is impossible, when one has seen these living skeletons, scarcely able to stand upright, ever to forget this spectacle.

C. Punishment. At "Bantjeuj" there were also a few men of the Kempei dai Nippon and some Indonesian officers appeared occasionally for interrogations. Apart from the means of torture already described and used by the police, they showed here a partiality for "hanging". The same prisoner whose finger had been broken by the police, was hanged by his neck till he was unconscious, then taken down, revived with water and then hanged again. This was done five times in succession. This same man, who had been beaten nearly to death on several occasions and had suffered so much by other tortures already, was absolutely tired of life. Finally he was forced to drink the water of the latrine, so that he promptly contracted bacillary dysentery. Though half dead already it is believed that he was finally brought before the tribunal of war in Batavia. I have not seen him again.

[In the floor of block "B" of the prison a wooden cross was cemented in, on which prisoners were strung up by the wrists and with the legs bound to the cross for 24 hours or more. If after a few hours a confession was not forthcoming, they were thrashed while hanging on the cross. Many a poor devil have we seen hanging there in the hot tropical sun, till he was at last taken down.

Mass flogging was also indulged in, but only in the case of Indonesians. If f. i. some trouble occurred, and the culprit could not be found out, the famished prisoners were made to squat in 2 rows. Then they were by their own native supervisors beaten, mostly over the head, with every imaginable implement, viz. with rattan, stick, leather thongs, with the broad side of the sword (klewang), most of them were already unconscious after the first half hour of this beat-up which sometimes lasted for 1-1½ hours. Rarely was the guilty one betrayed, unless he happened to be unpopular.

D. Personal experiences: Having already lost 30 kilos in weight while in custody at Police headquarters and further weakened through undernourishment in "Bantjeuj", I became about the end of the August an easy prey to any infection and contracted a very stubborn bacillary-dysentery. 1½ days later I was unable to get up any more and was so weak, that I could no longer speak. My fellow prisoner, the doctor, could not do anything for me, but wait for my death. I still remember lying in the corner of the cell while my fellow prisoners prayed for me and how the lice swarmed up my legs and a rat ran over my face. To have me removed to the hospital was not even thought of and it is a wonder that I am still alive. Still, wonders sometimes happen, as in

my case, when a fellow prisoner managed to bribe one of the trustworthy prison warders to send for my house for Cibazol, which was smuggled in and arrived in the nick of time to save my life. Due to the severeness of the attack of bacilliary-dysentery which I had passed through I subsequently suffered from a heavy inflammation of the intestines of which I have not been able to cure myself to this day. After lying for about a fortnight on a stone floor and being so far, that I could sit up again, I was, supported on both sides, brought to the prison doctor. He did not even examine me, but ordered some milk which I never got. On this occasion I could weight myself in the room of the doctor and found that since my arrest I had lost altogether 50 kilos in weight. My recovery was however still doubtful, since I was in need of invigorating nourishment and the food of the prison was insufficient to enable me to acquire new strength. What happened afterwards is related in the next chapter:

F. "Submarines". Conditions in "Bantjeuj" being as they were, it was evident that we were slowly but surely doomed to death, what with having no soap to wash ourselves and the clothes, no toothpaste and no change of clothes and so the prisoners tried to find some means to relieve the situation.

Already previously, while at the police quarters, we had heard rumours of the so-called "submarines" and we were soon to make their acquaintance. The monthly pay of the personal of the prison per man amounted to not more than f20.-, which was quite insufficient, in view of the continually rising prices; consequently it was inevitable that the whole staff from the highest to the lowest was amenable to bribery. Those people, who from payment rendered unallowed services which if detected, were likely to be most severely punished, smuggled into the prison victuals, clothes, soap, etc., were called "submarines". Naturally most of them undertook these services only against exorbitant bribes, apart from robbing the prisoners at the same time. One of them however was a partisan of the allied cause and rendered such services gratis.

After one week's detention in "Bantjeuj" it became vital to us to obtain money and medicines, but being then ignorant of the ropes, we were charged extortionately. The first time a "submarine" worked for me and two of my friends, he stole a vitally needed tube of Cibazol of 20 tablets and fraudulently altered my letter, so as to make an additional fl.50.- for himself. This was all done so cleverly, that I only found it out three months later. At the same time this man succeeded in defrauding other

prisoners at least fl.1000.- Finally we knew most of the members of the organisation which while working well through expensively, enabled the Europeans to obtain much needed relief which saved their lives. Naturally not all the prisoners could dispose of the necessary funds, but these were helped by the other prisoners in a brotherly spirit which reigned in our cell. There were of course a few exceptions. Hereafter a few details of the services rendered by the "submarines".

Having obtained sufficient cash, a bank was formed, to which each prisoner contributed according to his means. The most ingenious of the prisoners was elected to do the ordering and buying. Drinking water from the so-called deep well was always brought to the cell in a wooden barrel which could take about 50-60 liters. A man was appointed by the prison management to act as buyer of the food for the prisoners. He also bought for us in the big market and all the provision so bought were brought at the same time into the prison and deposited in the kitchen, the personal of which had also been bribed. The food we had ordered was then sorted out, put into the barrel and thus brought into the cell. At least fl.100.- to fl.150.-worth of fruits, such as bananas, papayas, tomatoes, raw carrots and radishes as well as fried rice, etc., were daily smuggled in. Bread, however, not being supplied to the prison, had to be brought in a different way. Now, when an Indonesian dies, it is customary here to bury the body in a cloth and not in a coffin and the dead were usually carried to their last resting place on a stretcher, the head resting on a pillow. The stretcher carriers, also prisoners, usually returned from the funeral with the pillow slip filled with bread. As there were about 3 funerals a day, we had sufficient bread. After sunset "warm meals" from a Chinese restaurant came in. These were usually ordered in writing the evening before through the chief of guards, who looked after it. A tip of 50 cents per person was added, as these orders were rarely large and additional helpers were needed to bring in the food without danger and still fairly warm. Not only the men's ward but also the women's ward worked with submarines and as the number of European prisoners constantly increased the turnover of these orders rose sometimes to fl.750.- a day. Somehow however, the police became aware of this smuggling service and spies were placed near the Chinese eating houses and other places. The prisoners however boasted of an excellent counter espionage system and the move of the police was known before any victims fell. For a whole week nothing whatever was ordered, so that the spies were disappointed, then the Restaurant was changed twice. Finally we waited till the police investigators were withdrawn and then resumed fetching the food through the backdoor after closing hours from the first restaurant, which had proved to be the best.

Apart from this service, nearly every prisoner had his own personal "submarine" who fetched from his home such necessities as money, medicines, soap, knife and shaving apparatus as well as letters from the family. I also managed to keep in this manner in touch with my family. However, the increasing danger of war doubled the watchfulness of the police, rendering the working with "submarines" most difficult and increasingly expensive. For this reason and anticipating more tribulations, many prisoners asked for more funds and at one time there must have been about fl.10,000.- in the cell, all carefully hidden. I for one had fl.500.- concealed in the leather lining of my shoes and another fl.500.-concealed in the middle of a piece of soap. A sudden search of the cell never yielded anything, as even forbidden things such as knives, shaving sets, scissors, etc. were so well hidden, that none were found.

Owing to the tropical climate, food stuff could not be kept for long, we often ordered provisions, which we could prepare ourselves, such as pudding, "katjang-kidjo" (green peas), etc. We managed to procure a cooking stove (anglo) and charcoal from fire wood procured from the kitchen and in the night the cell sometimes resembled a soldier's campfire, with us cooking our soup, coffee, etc. However, during a sudden raid the stove fell into the hands of the police, who remarked: "here seems to be a whole factory here!"

F. Spiritual life: In order not to let the fellow prisoners fall into apathy and to keep alive their interest in life, lectures were held upon every possible subject. The doctor spoke over TB., malaria, problems of nourishment etc. and others over sport, voyages and on technical subjects, etc. I myself held over 30 lectures.

5. Court proceedings and sentence: On the 7th of March 1945 I was handed by one of my "submarines" a letter from my wife, in which she informed me, that the Swiss Embassy in Tokyo had advised the Consulate in Batavia that I would be given back my liberty. On the 11th of March I was brought manacled and with such a long beard, that nobody recognised me in the street to the court and before the judge. The process verbal from the police lay before the judge and after about 2 hours cross-examination, I had to sign a second process verbal, the context of which was about the same as the first one. Subsequently I was led back to "Bangjeuj" and heard nothing more. Brought again before the same examining judge on the 7th of April, intimation was given to me, that I was to be temporarily free, but would have to appear again in a few days in court in order to be sentenced. With 4 witnesses I re-appeared in court on the 14th of April and after a session of about 3 hours, one of the judges informed me and this can be corroborated by my witnesses,

that my guilt had not been proved and that the radio set would have to be examined again. Now comes the climax of this case. During my imprisonment the "corpus delicti" had been sold. No doubt the radio authorities, having found the radio in good order and fearing trouble from the court for their carelessness in the control of the radios disposed of it and handed the receipt to my wife, who is still in possession of it.

However to avoid falling again into the hands of the police, as it was likely to happen here, I did not withdraw my confession about the breaking of the seals, especially as I was convinced that I would in my case go free through the efforts of the Swiss Embassy in Tokio. Besides being thoroughly fed up with the whole affair, which had left me with a weakened and sickly constitution, I longed to return to my family. If my wife had enjoyed good health and not needed me at home, I would certainly have fought for my rights, but as justice is here enforced with thrashings and other tortures, I saw no point in doing so.

At the end of the sessions of the 14th of April I was informed that on the 16th I would have to reappear in court for judgment, this time without the witnesses. In the absence of proof, the Radio having not been recovered, I was sentenced to one year of imprisonment with provisional remission of sentence and 3 years on probation.

[Exactly 10 months and 1 week I was held prisoner by the police and in "Bantjeuj" before I was cross-examined, suffering severely in health and nearly losing my life.

And all this, because I had to be set free again, due to lack of sufficient evidence.

6. At home: Coming home I found my wife near death. Although I had, through the intermediary of the "submarines" had some news from time to time from her, she had refrained to disclose to me the true state of her health so as not to increase my worries. Her state of nerves had gone so bad, that in spite of treatment by specialists no improvement took place and it is doubtful, if she can ever be cured. On medicines which could only be bought in the black market at enormously inflated prices, my wife had spent about fl.3000.- including doctor, apothecary and transport.

Doc. No. 5751

Page 23

I myself had spent about the same amount for "sub-marines" and food, so that my imprisonment, apart from my ruined health cost me about fl.6000

↑
[w.s. R. Flachs]

Ep 1752
Evidentiary Doc. 5751

證明書

和蘭軍情報部戰爭犯罪部長、蘭領印度陸軍少尉、
上級官吏「K. A. テーワード」は先述の宣誓に、添付七
報若しくは物原文、十の五は真実、完全且正確に照本
事を書き添述す。
「ビント」博士、筆跡。
「添付七」前記「博士」報告書一通即ち第三
筆跡並に報告者、和蘭軍情報部、公文記録一部に
署名

一九四六年六月十一日「夕方」

和蘭軍情報部 捺印

C. H. ヨシヰール 署名

蘭領印度陸軍少尉、蘭領東印度検査総長事務所
上級官吏「K. A. テーワード」は本官、面前に署名且宣
誓す。

K. A. テーワード 署名

文書第五五号

「R. フロイツ」博士「ロニタホー」十四号

「ハント」

ニ。九 PM 九五/E

筆跡、米世下の自己紹介中より

社「R. フロイツ」博士一九四四年五月五日瑞西

生ラック

No. 1

職業ニ係る技師等「R. フロイツ」博士一九四四年五月五日瑞西

校、北米博士「K. A.」

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc. 5751

子用

一九三六年以來、私和蘭之合資社は滿六才ナリ又。

私一九四三年十月二十七日、合資國より南領某部役二到着ニ
シ、一日在陸軍、令其領期間中、~~私~~國密在ニナリ。

私報告書第一及第二、同封ニシテ、政治的立場是ナク極端
ニ「待遇」ニ就テ貴国ニ知ラセ、トテ見地カラ、兩局、中勿論即チ本
ガ重要ナリ又、言ハシ、私ハ同ニ様ト事、日本軍ニ志願ナ
リ、他國ニ毛起リ、且貴国ニ於テ毛起、知セ、此事ハ「解」ニ格ニ又、
然レ私斯、如キ状態、吟味ニ能力、ハ「中立」國人、自擊者ガ
ニ、様ト報告ニ貴国ニ送、トテ、ハ「才」儀ニ志、ト思、トシ、又。

証人署名「R. P. P. ...」
同封書類一報告書第一、第二、
報告書第三。

大日本憲兵及び「インド」ノ、警察ニヨリ「R. P. P. ...」之博士、第
ニ、四目、逮捕ニ就、イ、テ。

ニ、敘述

終ニ六人、人カ来、ニ貨物自動車、ニ「述」本部、ノ「誰」ニ行、イ、テ、
其、心、我、事務所、ヘ連、行、カ、リ、シ、此、處、ニ、自、本、人、ニ、ヨリ、行、カ、レ、
「ト」ニ、私、書、類、ヘ、~~「レ」~~「~~ク~~」ヲ、ラ、シ、ト、呼、ビ、レ、ル、私、ニ、取、上、テ、ニ、シ、キ、録、
取、リ、テ、ラ、シ、タ、然、レ、直、ニ、私、兩、年、ノ、荷、中、ニ、縛、リ、上、テ、ハ、非、常、ニ、ホ、ク、縛、
リ、ク、テ、絶、指、ノ、肘、ノ、根、皮膚、層、ヲ、裂、キ、ト、シ、タ、縛、ラ、シ、ク、僅、監、房、ニ

No. 2

Doc. 5751

楊前二私約一時間經一言之昇才及二床止三跪
以久、監房六獄、夕事六つ又三人力造入
三六長向統又三、四時間向二僕八人一人、
監房十四人、居住人が造入才三六つ、
x x x x

(A) 食物

名有七所、約五六十、少量、乾之米カ汚、
世々、順理、次、食事、翌日、十所、同、様、
不同、食、量、才、出、才、以、以、四、時、又、繰、
、食、食、糧、乾、米、配、給、二、回、合、計、約、百、
、序、二、十、時、間、又、以、上、間、隔、才、有、事、
、事、場、米、食、才、下、才、以、才、度、越、才、為、
、時、間、向、何、食、物、才、十、才、以、其、為、
、(即、是、監、獄、監、獄)才、米、食、才、二、外、
、才、以、之、三、回、向、向、才、食、才、後、才、
、才、野、菜、才、茶、匙、一、杯、程、才、
、序、場、達、非、部、二、飯、工、才、煉、
食、心、也、才、

No. 3

以下頁

Doc 5751

三十五日後ニ親類、若一人ニ付六十セント、金ヲ出
セバ仔虜達、供給食糧ヲ増スト言ハシタ。コノ事
ニ同意セシタガ實際ニ分量ハ僅カニ殖(野
菜)ガ余計ニツイテ、六十ガ一日一本アタ。

然ニ作ラコシハ依然トシテ成人、必要量ヲ滿
スニハ不充分デアツタ。警察ニ、爲ニ少ニ元金
ヲ異シカワタ、テコ、食糧ノ増加介、我及自
身、金ヲ支拂ハスバトナカワタ。コノ好意ハ
多介病氣ト充分ノ食糧、缺乏、爲ニ恐
ロク衰弱シタ澤山、仔虜ガ彼等、手
中ニアル中ニ死ヌ、ヲ決心シテ與ヘラシタ、デアツタ。

x x x x x x

No. 4

最初、三十五日間、食物ニ含マシテイル「カロ
リ」ヲ科學的ニ且樂觀的ニ計算シ、
ミルト一五六〇「カロリー」

Doc 575

必要量は之を「力なりしヲ越すカク」。親戚
者不交遊「ヲシテ」二期「程」に「力なりし」は「其」向
一二。迄「ハ」ツクが、ソレ「モ」向「實際」ニ「筋」上「至」
自「ガ」全「氣」ナ「カ」ク。

x x x x x

(c) 保健

逐「日」入「運」之「信」屬「全部」に「便」所「水」巻「口」に「タ」リ
「カ」ナ「カ」ク。此「巻」口「に」一「米」ノ「高」サ「所」に「取」リ「付」テ「シ」テ「リ」之「カ」
ト「シ」使「ハ」ス。便「所」ノ「状」態「筆」紙「ニ」書「テ」之「報」ヲ「送」リ「テ」其「真」ニ「誠」
ニ「報」ス。皆「赤」痢「に」起「ル」後「に」サ「ラ」テ「下」ス。信「屬」ニ「シ」テ「便」所
ヲ「使」用「セ」テ「ハ」ラ「ス」カ「ク」。人「人」が「タ」ツ「タ」ニ「分」向「テ」取「テ」置「キ」テ「モ」
全「信」屬「が」使「用」ス「ル」所「向」ニ「之」。「分」部「ヲ」十「部」向「ト」ス。然「レ」
「便」所「ヤ」リ「他」ノ「便」宜「ヲ」使「用」ス「ル」事「ハ」ハ「力」ノ「年」位
ハ「能」シ「テ」サ「シ」テ「居」リ。一「方」婦「人」ノ「モ」少「シ」者「ノ」時
向「ガ」許「サ」シ「テ」イ「タ」ノ「テ」各「信」屬「ハ」二「十」四「日」向「ニ」一「日」
「カ」便「所」が「使」用「ス」ル「事」ナ「カ」ク。臨「終」ノ「中」ノ「不」潔「カ」
非「常」ニ「危」険「ト」事「ノ」言「フ」ニ「及」バ「ズ」之「甚」シ「嫌」悪「ス」
ベ「ク」状「態」ノ「許」ニ「居」テ「赤」痢「患」者「ノ」ト「シ」テ「手」持「テ」ア
「タ」カ「ニ」想「像」モ「及」ガ「テ」イ「事」ナ「ル」。着「物」ヲ「換」エ「ル」事「カ」
お「来」テ「カ」コ「ノ」人「々」皆「ニ」不「潔」カ「ラ」ル「危」険「ガ」甚「シ」ク「迫」リ「居」リ、
サ「ウ」テ「人」ノ「汗」山「に」居「ル」。滋「養」不「足」ト「赤」痢「ニ」基「キ」テ「血」液、
衰「失」ス「ル」ニ「偽」善「ノ」非「常」ニ「弱」リ「テ」了「ス」ル「一」ノ「甚」也、
規則「ニ」反「シ」テ「タ」ラ「ス」者「ノ」病「情」ニ「連」シ「テ」行「カ」シ「テ」其「他」

70, 5

doc 5751

多く、若くは病氣上彼等、一般ニ衰弱シテ身体状態、結果死
シテ之ヲ。

(D) 衛生

外々、監房テ一人、狂核患者が絶エ不咳ラシテ血ヲ吐イ
タ。モウ一人、空業療法ヲ狂核ノ一部分直リシノ時ニ急病
早傳染ニシクナクシ共片脚ノミテ生キテイタ。彼、三週同
牢獄ニイタガ非常ニ衰弱シテ且早起キ上ニ事、土著ナカ
ク。他ノ監房ニモ亦狂核患者ガイタ。

x x x x x

(E) 警察、取調ニ

六月二日ニ逮捕サレタ私ノ合ハ信濃全部、番号ヲ與ヘラ
シタ。私ハ三十三ヲデアツタ。逮捕ノ三日後ニオ二ニ五十一号ノ
者が呼出サレタ。コノ一人、共謀者ニヨリテサレ彼、警察
官ニヨリ署名サレタ書状ニ依リ番号ヲ呼ビタ。五十一号ノ者
ハ他ノ人々ト同様ニ自身ノ無罪ヲ堅ク信シテイタ。ソノテ
短イ取調ヘカヌル自由ニナルデアリタト想像シテイタ。彼、牢
十時ニ監房ヲ出テタカノ時ハニツラモ帰リテ来ナカク
テ惟モが徳ガ釋放ニナラシメタラウト想シテイタ。然レド
ソノ方ニ一時尙後ニ彼、血ヲラケテ顔ヲシテ現ハタシタニ能
クド真直ニ立ツ事ガ出来ナカク。二人ノ月存人信枝(二番ト
二番)ト三人ノ「イビニシア」、信枝(一人ハ三番)トが同様に
彼ヲ牢ニドウ取リ扱ツタデアツタ。斯クシテ如キ可哀想ナ
ク情ニアツタガ彼、彼ノ事ガ出来ズ従フテ外々ハ一日ニ
ツラシメテ、彼ガ若シキラシ事ヲ聞イタデアツタ。ソ

No. 6

Doc 5751

アノ時迄ニハ十九年ノ者モ亦時ニ出サレテイタ。各々
ノ場合ヲ別々ニ列挙スル事ハ餘リニ長キナルカウ私
此処ニハ唯祝儀が行ハシタ方法ト用テラシメ得ル種類
ノミヲ記叙スル事ニスル。呼ビ出サレト信屬ハ何故
オホキ速報サシカシト尋ネラシタ、ソレニ答ニ、女使信
屬ハ知ラヌト答ヘタ。コウ答ヘルト大抵五十回カニ三百回
報ノ改訂が續キ起ツタ。コノ可責ニ用テラシメ道
具ヲ私ハ下ニ記叙シヤウ。若シモ信屬ガ向徳情ヲ
張ルト、即チ白状シヤイト更ニ懲刑ガ加ヘラシタ。之甚
罰ハ次ノ如ク類別サシ儼ン。

(a) 報訂ノ方法。之ニ多量アリ、唯下ノ種類

No. 7

Doc 5751

始マリソシカウ太井ノ異ナル籐トナリ。次ニハ矢ニ金鳥、球ノ重ニカツテアル草紐デノ鞭打ケトナル。然シテ最モ魚方ノ道具ニ就キテ云ハソシノ鞭ヲアツタ。其ノ鞭ニハ鉄、鉤ガ草紐ニ付キテ井ノ鉤ハ雜作モテウ肉ヲ小サク引裂ケイタ。拷問ニカケラシテイル浮屠ノ叫ビ聲ノ間エトイ様ニスル為最モ酷イ處待ハ、警察ニヨリ防空壕トシテモ使用サレタ地下室、中ニ行ハタ。普通浮屠ハ警察ノ者ニ牛向ハトイ様ニ柱ニ縛リツケラシルカ或トハ坐イタ場所デ手錠ヲ付ラタ。初メ頂ハ浮屠ガ罰ヲ加ヘコシテ狂氣ニツテ手向ツタ事ガアツタカラデアル。

(b) 第三、罰ハ「電流」ニヨルモノデアツタ。一。ポルト、普通ノ交流ガ用ヒラタ。ソシテ一方ノ電極ハ例ヘバ脚ノ所ニ緊金ヲ持ツテ本ニ動カナイ掃ニサシ他ノ端ハ自由ニツキイタ。男ノ場合ハ喉ニ電極ハ腕ニ接續サシ依然トシテ白狀ニナイ時ニハ鼻孔ニ接續サレタ。婦人ノ時ニハ屢々第二ノ電極ガ胸ノ乳頭ニ接續サレタ。

(c) 罰ノ第三段階ハ「水浸シ」ニヨル窒息トデアツタ。手拭ヲ頭ノ下ニオカシテ額、上ニ被セラタ。ソシカラバケツニ何杯モ、水ガ手拭ニツガルト水ノ殺々ニ口ニ達シ更ニ上ツテ最後ニハ鼻孔ニモ達シタ。カウシテ浮屠ニ息ヲサセタイ様ニソシ結果浮屠ハ人事不省ニナリ溺死人ノ様ニ倒レタ。コノ方法ハ時折五六回續キ行繰リ返サレタ。浮屠ガ白狀シタカウタラバ女林ノ場合監房ニ連シ戻サシ掃シタ儘ノ着物デ夜ヲ過ゴサネバナラナカッタ。

No. 8

doc 5751

(d) 次、罰に各々、指、間三棒ヲ挟ニテ指ヲ縛テ結び付ケ
テ了ラセテ、棒モ亦結び付ケテ了ラシテ、更ニ繩ヲ
用ヒテ膝メラシル事ニナリ。此等ノ罰ハ、耐エ難ク、苦痛
ヲ生ジタラシム。指ハ數日間腫レ、暫ク使ヘナカリ。

(e) 此ノ監房、同居人、又ガ苦シメルト、背カサシテ他ノ罰
ハ頭ヲ剃リ、後ニ剃刀ヲ頭ニ多ク傷ヲツケル事
ナリ。之等ノ傷ハ、ソノカクヨク、一生ヲ遺レル事ナリ。

(f) 巻煙草ヤ葉巻ヲ体ノ凡ソノ部令ニ指シテ消ス、ハ最
モ普通ト罰ナリ。通常抑留者ハ、煙草ガ欲シイカ
ドウカト尋ネテ、彼ノ返事ガ「ハイ」トアリモ「イヤ」ト
アリモ、付クニ、イル煙草ヤ葉巻カ耳、後ヤ鼻ヤ
顔ヤ、体ノソノ他ノ部令ニ突キ出サレ。此ハ通常タダ
ニ傷トナリ、此ノ様ト罰ヲ受ケタ者ニ列シ、苦痛ヲ惹キ
起スモノナリ。

(g) 之等ノ凡ソノ罰ヲ加ヘテ、後モ尚白杖ニナリ、最モ
不従順ト者ハ例ヘバ指ヲ折ラシム。此ノ親ヲ仲間、傷
ノ脱白ニタ、又折ラシム指ヲツギ直シタ事ナリ。

(h) 最モ卑劣極ムル罰ハ、抑留者ガ縛ルニ床、上ニ坐
ツテ、イル間ニソノ体ノ柔ラカイ部令ヲ底鉄ノ打ツテ、
用長靴ヲ蹴ル事ナリ。大抵ノ場合内出血ガ起ラシム。
此ノ仲間ノ抑留者達ガ數週間便通ニヨリ出血ニ、又
激シク胃ノ出血ヲ患ツテ、イルノ見タ事ナリ。

(i) モウソノ罰ハ、四日四晩食物モ水モナク、立々續ク、其謀
者ニ四時間毎ニ鞭打ラシム事ナリ。

No. 9

No. 10

家ノ取調ハ終イリコト。各ノ書ニ日報トカ。ト取調
公文報トカ。ト取調
後ニ取調
取調ノ書カ目書カ
取調ノ書カ目書カ

X X X X X

ノ取調ノ書カ目書カ

ノ取調ノ書カ目書カ

ノ取調ノ書カ目書カ

ノ取調ノ書カ目書カ

ノ取調ノ書カ目書カ

Doc 5751

カクシヨ後ヲツタニ月半後ニ海軍上預戒ヨトリシカク私他ノ
中人抑留者トシテ同シテ海軍連上ヲ行カス

同シテノ我々ノ男子用並府連上ニ奉テメクニ約三人ノ婦人ノ
婦人部ニ連上ニ奉テメクニ人男子ハ三人ノ抑留者ヲ收容スル母ニ作
シ並府ニ入リ候ハ三十五人ニシテ規則ニ依リ各抑留者ハ佳布ニ被
テ樂シムルニ上ニシテ中々然レ作レテ之ヲ並獄指圖ヲ全然配給
セシメ其ノ皆マニ上ニ床ニ敷テレトシテ後ニツテ我々ノ自費ヲ
基テ擔持ニ奉テ許サス

同シテノ於テニ衛生状態ノ嫌悪スルモノヲ警察本部ヨリ懸心カ
飲料水ハ褐色ヲ深ク染付テ穴カラ汲ミ取リテイタノ同穴ニテ
バケル赤刺テ死ニ奉ガ先ニテ當局ヲ各自ハ一日一回同
水ヲ浴スル事ヲ許シ中々ガソノ理論文ヲイタ何故ニテ浴
機會ハ四五日置キ一回ニカテカクカクテアル

食物ハ警察本部ヨリ更ニ懸心カ朝時ニ米ヲ作リテ全米供米
養價値トシテ米ボク粥ガ名杯ニ難ク汚ノ皿ニセリテ我々ニ渡
セタト時ニハ米ガ滓ノ玉蜀黍ノ粒ト混ツタ木ノ少々ノ乾米ガ渡
レ午後四時ニハ土時ノモト同物ガ南ニ出サス

僅カ許リノ水ガ野苺米毛出サレタガ之ヲ一部ハ同五六十分ノ
葉ノ如キ有毒ノ植物ガ含メテ中々粥ノ如ク米ノ液体ニシテ食物
トシテ食ル物類ガ中々指テ口ニ運ビテ食ラレタ

又一方我々ハ然レ始メ上ニ坐シテ中々ノ結果ノ果ニ現レタ
既ニ約ニ月半後ニ仲間ノ後席ノ中ノ者ガ衰弱トシテ赤刺テ死
タ彼ガ横タニシテ中々所ヲ排泄ニシテ始メテ彼ノ所請病院

No. 11

遊券連行券のヨリ彼の百餘元が遊券連行券のヨリ收得
中、患者も含み誰かがこれと赤痢と感得なり

D005751

然るに興六の食料、熱量(最高一日は七千。カロリ。アールの倍
唐の熱は太陽の下に一日六時間熱が又この下から最高、カロリ
數量ハ五。アールの倍なり。

A. 病院遊券及び医療部

医療部ハ入獄遊券ハ入庫看護人其の補修中から幾分か
正部員三員ナシ少數の補助看護人ハ助手ヨリナリナリ

患者ハ医療器具設備不充分部是れ僅カニシカレ僅カニ使
ツタニシテ診察時間ハ週回三回下ツタ然レバ之ハ如何ニ患者
モ激シクニ不満足ニ藥ヲ被ルナリ又患者眞向ニ役事モ
受ナカクシテ患者モ何モ言テ不満足ナリ又診察ニナリナリ
出ルル唯一藥ハアハムナリ其ハ木ノ皮ニシテモ、アザリニ
用ニラニ粉ニシテ規那樹ノ皮ハアハムニ用ニラリ

No. 12

兩側ニ糞瀉圈が並べテ約十二銭ノ糞台が附キ居ルコトナリ
然レハ病人遊券ヨリ此ノ部屋ニ便所在シタガ水洗
ノ水が無カクナリ其ハ生ニ赤痢患者が收容ナリ居テ予
テ予テ糞台が蔓延シ其ノ身銭ノ預備シテ全間以上糞
ノ事ハ不能ナリナリ私ハ同室ナリ居タガ一月、同患者モ看
護人モ在テトシ病室ニ居テ事ハ不満足ナリ病人モ赤痢ヲ病
テ糞台ニ糞ヲ無意ニ識シ糞台中カ又、床上ニ排泄シテ汚

本行が總行として、支店を各都府縣に設け、
 其の業務を擴張せしむるに努むる所なり。又、
 本行の業務は、銀行の業務に止まらず、
 倉庫、運送、信託、代理等の業務も兼ね、
 顧客の利便を期す。

本行の資本は、元金、準備金、留保金、
 未払金、貸付金、預り金、等より成り、
 其の運用は、慎重に經營せらる。又、
 本行の信託業務は、顧客の利益を第一とし、
 秘密を保持す。

以下次頁

doc 5751

言に監督の金を十カに力にタヤヌク起リ得^レニ云レ
私仲間信譽^ヲ以テ醫者數回病室^ニ醫者診察
室ニ入ル許可^ヲ得ヨト努力^シテ然^レ成功^シタカ^ク。
彼有名^{ナル}外科醫^ニテ^ハ少^クシト天^ノ人^ニ對^シテ
之醫療^的援助^ヲ與^ヘル事^ハ嚴禁^セサ^レル。然^レ醫
者^ト看護^人ガ居^テタ^ルニヤ^シ色^々我^々ノ甚^ク境^邊
下^ニテ^ハ得^レル限^リ援助^ヲ與^ヘルガ爲^ニ容^ニテ^ハ病室
ニ入^リ込^ス。

B 食物

食糧^{状態}、非常^ニ惡^カク^テ、^テ肉^体的^強
健康^ヲ停^止、^天問^テ、^テ衰^弱、^テ精^神ニ^是遂^ニ
ニ^飢餓^ニ死^ニ。時^ハ、^今月^半カ^ニ、^今月^ノ、^極
短^シ期^間ニ^死ス。死^因、^監獄^監局^ニヨ^リ
弱^弱症^トナ^リ。脚^氣、^飢餓^浮腫^ト、^凡般^的
病^氣、^テ、^一場所^ニ、^風ト^南京^中ガ^横
行^シテ^井、^テ、^疾癩^ヤ、^一他^ノ、^皮膚[、]、^病
會^傳染^疾、^病ガ^流行^シテ^イ、^タカ^キ、^テ、^廿
カ^ト、^イ、^一事^ヲ、^私、^見テ^知リ^テ、^井、^レ、^今、^マ、
榮^養、^不良[、]、^爲、^ニ、^コ、^レ、^ハ、^代、^膿、^傷
呼^ビ起^ス、^テ、^ソ、^ニ、^爲、^ニ、^少、^ク、^ト、^天、^傷、^傷、[、]、^三割[、]
天^ノ、^也、^人、^感、^染、^也、^作、^ラ、^步、^キ、^廻、^リ、^ニ、^井、^ル。

No. 14

doc 575/

屢々患者の死又ノニ病院ニ廿八日連日行カレ
十カウリノ哀ニモ衰弱ニシテ氣ノ毒十人々ハ
時折彼等ノ居ル場所ニ死ニタマハニナリテキル。
之等ノ憐レシキ者一人ガ女死ニナリテ米ノ二三
粒ヲ掴ミラトシテ監督人ニ見カレテモシタ
彼ノ心ノ毀レシテ衰弱症ニテ死ニタマハト
サシタ。

x x x x x

○ 罰

ノニシテハニハ日本ノ憲兵ノ少々居リ若干
ノドネシテノ將校ガ時折訊問ニタマハ
ナキ。

既ニ記叙サシ具警察ニヨリ用ヒテシテ拷問ノ手
段ハ廿八日オキ彼等ノ持テ首吊ガ好キナリ。
警察ニヨリテ首ヲ打ツシテ同ジ字樣ノ金
不有ニナリテ首ヲ吊サレシカラ降サレ水ニ蘇
生サレシテ又吊サレタ。元ハ續クテ同行シタ。
數回ニ亙リテ死ニド代ニ至ル位ニ打サレタ。既ニ
他ノ拷問ニヨリテ非常ニ苦シク此ノ男ハ全ク生
キテ井ルノ力無シタ。最後ニ彼ノ便所ノ水ヲ
飲シテ事ヲ逆制サレシ。爲直ニバチルス赤痢
ニ感染シタ。

No. 15

x x x x

Doc 575/

軍機守金堂、殊ニ本製ハ十六日保が女
ニドソウテアツタ。上テ囚人ハ二十四時開成
ハシ生天手頸ヤ脚ヲ十字架ニ縛リ付ル
若シ二三時間後ニ自裁スルハ十字架ニ付
シテ其ノ間報打アリ。陽我々多ク、哀シテ者ガソコニ着キ、熱指一本
下テ最後ニヤハト降サレテ、此ノ世ニ去リ
タリヲ見タ。

集団的報打ヲ天亦ヨク行ヒタ。然レハ
「ド不之ヤ」ハ場合々々アリ。若シハ天倒ハ
威喝ノ起シテ罪人ガ死見サレタド、死ニテハ
達ニ到ニ坐ラセシ。ソカラ彼等ハソノ
心付ク聲息即チ疎テ棒ヤ草ノ聲ヲ乃チ懼
面カシ「ク」テ彼等ハ土人ノ監視人ニヨリテ
主トシテ頭ヲ殴リ、口實多クハ此ノ世ニ去リ
主ガ後ハ既氣来ラテ、塔ニテソノ
カラ時間半天続イタ。

No. 16

刑カ反対訊サレ前、下度十月ト「週開開成」
抑留サレマシ、カ酷ク健康ヲ損ネテ此ノ生命
ヲ失ヒサレタリマシ。

証人署名 R. 7. 7. 2

Summary of examination of ; Mrs. H. E. ANGELEI OM, 9364 F
 Occupation : None
 Address : Palmenlaan 56, Soerabaia.

Euly sworn states, I am 30 years of age, of Dutch nationality and born at Tandjong Karang (Sumatra). I am at present living at Palmenlaan 56, Soerabaia, which is also my permanent address.

On January 8th 1943 two Indonesian officials from the P.I.D. came at my house, Palmenlaan 56 Soerabaia, to arrest me. I was immediately brought to the Welfstraat prison which was used by the P.I.D. and by the Kempeitai as well.

After my arrival there interrogation started at once. This was done by CRISILAMA and TAKAHARA, who were attached to the P.I.D. and by the Kempeitai members TAKAHASHI and IURA. This interrogation lasted for a long time, but no torturing took place. This day I got no food at all.

ORISHAMA
 TAKAHARA
 TAKAHASHI
 IURA

On January 9th 1943 I was again interrogated by the four abovementioned Japanese and some Indonesian P.I.D. officials, also on January 11th, both times without being beaten. They tried to make me confess that I belonged to a secret anti-Japanese organization, had listened to foreign broadcasts, had disseminated the news I had heard and had hidden several weapons and ammunition. I denied everything.

The next interrogation took place on March 23rd 1943, when I was brought in an interrogation cell, there were the four abovementioned Japanese and some Indonesian P.I.D. officials. I was told that I was a liar, my hands were tied together behind my back. I had to climb upon a bench, the rope with which my hands were tied was knotted together with a rope fastened to the wall and then the bench was removed so that I hung. During the period in which I was hanging I was cross examined by all the Japanese and Indonesian officials and because my answers did not satisfy them, they began to beat me upon all parts of my body with bamboo poles. I hung for about one hour and a half after which I became unconscious. When I became conscious again I found that they had put the bench again in its original position. I was then taken back to my cell.

The next day I got the water cure. I was tied to a ladder, a cloth was tied over my mouth and nose, water was then poured into my mouth. This torture lasted for about one hour and a half, after which I fainted and when I came round I found that I had been carried to my cell again. The cure gave the sensation of being drowned and gasping for breath.

About one week afterwards the Japanese called for me again and I was given to read 4 statements from other people belonging to the same organisation as I. These statements contained their confession and my name was mentioned in them. I was asked if I would admit all that was connected with me in the statements was true. I admitted this. That I have done actually however was far more than what was stated in the statements.

Thereafter I was interrogated by TAKAHASHI, IURA and SUTO, also a Kempeitai member, for three times. The interrogation lasted for a short time only and on one occasion I was hung again, also for a short period only.

TAKAHASHI
 IURA
 SUTO

During my imprisonment I was once forced to witness Mrs. BERTSCH being hung by SUTO.

Food in the prison was inadequate, in quantity as well as in quality. We were allowed however to receive food packages from home, but it was obvious that the people who had to search the packages stole many things.

Medical treatment in the prison was bad, because the Indonesian doctor was afraid of the Japanese to dare to give proper medical treatment.

On May the 6th 1943 I with six others were transported to Brijuni, handcuffed and with our elbows tied behind our backs. On our voyage we got hardly any food or drink.

(Signed) H. E. Engelen

Interpreter.

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in her own language, prior to her signature which appears above.

(Signed) (Illegible)
Interpreter.

Sworn before me (Signed) Earth, Capt.

This 21st day of May, 1946.

Detailed to examine the above by the Commander-in-Chief, Allied Land Forces, South East Asia.

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is an original document entitled:

"Sworn Summary of Examination of Mrs. H.E. ENGELEN, 30 years of age, born at Tandjong Karang (Sumatra) No. om/7564/E."

which document has been taken from the official records of NEFIS.

SIGNATURE: *Ch. Jongeneel*

(SEAL)

BATAVIA, June 7th, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A. Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney - General N.I.I.

(Signed) K. A. de Weerd

Doc 5754
EXHIBIT NO. 1783

H. H. エンダレン夫人ノ訊問概観

職 業 士 ン
 住 所 スラバヤ・バルメンライン五六
 正式ニ真實ツ録述ス、私ハ三十才、和蘭國籍テ、タ
 ンジョン・カミン(スマトラ)デ生レマシタ、
 私ハ現在スラバヤ・バルメンライン五六ニ居住シ
 其處ガ亦永續ノ任所デモアリマス、
 一九四三年一月八日 P I D カラ二人ノ「インドネ
 シア」官吏ガ私ヲ逮捕スル爲メスラバヤ・バラメンラ
 ーン五六ノ私ノ家ニ來マシタ、私ガ直グ P I D ト憲
 兵隊ニヨツテ使用サレテキタ「ウエルフストラ」上
 監獄ニ送ラレマシタ、
 私ガ其處ニ到着スルト直チニ
 訊問ガ始マリマシタ、ソレハ、
 P I D ニ屬シテキタ「オリシヤ 不リシヤマ
 マ」ト高原ノ音譯ノ及ビ憲兵隊 高原ノ音譯ノ
 員高橋(音譯)ト「イスラ」ニ 高橋ノ音譯ノ
 ヨツテ行ハレマシタ、
 ハレマシタ、
 全然食專ヲ與ヘラレマセザレタ
 一九四三年一月九日私ハ再ビ上述ノ四人ノ日本人
 及ビ數人ノ P I D ノ「インドネシア」官吏ニヨツテ
 訊問サレ、一月十一日ニモ訊問サレマシタ、兩回

EXHIBIT NO. 1753
Dec 5754

R. E. エンゲレン夫人ノ訊問要綱

職 業 士

住 所 スラバヤ・バルメンラ 一五六一

正式ニ島嶼ツ嶼渡ス、私ハ三十才、和原國籍テ、タ
ンジヨン・カキン(スマトラ)テ生レマシタ。

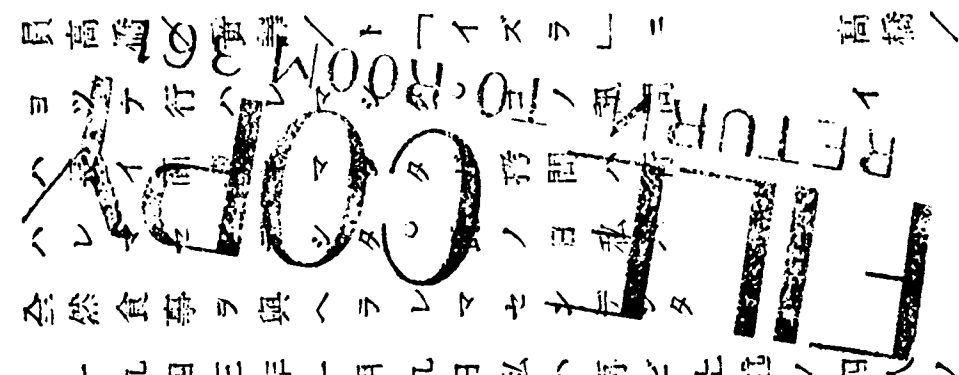
私ハ現在スラバヤ・バルメンラ 一五六一ニ居住シ
其處ガ亦永續ノ任所テモアリマス。

一九四三年一月八日 P I D カラ二人ノ「インドネ
シア」官吏ガ私ヲ逮捕スル爲メスラバヤ・バラメンラ
一五六一ノ私ノ家ニ來マシタ。私ガ直グ P I D ト憲
兵隊ニヨツテ使用サレテキタ「ウエルフストラ」上
監獄ニ送ラレマシタ。

私ガ其處ニ到着スルト直テニ
訊問ガ始マリマシタ。ソレハ、
P I D ニ屬シテキタ「オリシヤ オリシヤマ
マ」ト高原ノ音譯ノ及ビ憲兵隊 高原ノ音譯ノ
員高橋ノ音譯ノ「イスラ」ニ 高橋ノ音譯ノ
ヨツテ行ハレタ。其ノ日、
ハレシマシタ。訊問ハ行ハレタ。

全然食事ヲ與ヘラレマセザレタ。

一九四三年一月九日私ハ再ビ上述ノ四人ノ日本人
及ビ獄人ノ P I D ノ「インドネシア」官吏ニヨツテ
訊問サレ夏ニ一月十一日ニモ訊問サレマシタ。兩回



Doe 5754

トモ打タレマキンデシタ。彼等ハ私ガ反日秘密結社ニ見ツ、外國ノ無電線送ヲ瑞キ聞イタニユ！スラ流布シ又若干ノ武器及弾藥ヲ隠匿シテオルト自白サセヨウトシマシタ。私ハ總テラ否認シマシタ。

次ノ訊問ハ一九四三年三月二十三日、上述ノ四人ノ日本人ト獄人ノF I Dノ「インドネシア」人官吏ノ居ル訊問室ニ運行サレテ行ハレマシタ。私ハ嘘吐キダト言ハレ兩手ヲ背中ノ後ニ縛ラレマシタ。私ハ腰掛ノ上ニ登ラサレ私ノ手ヲ縛ツタ綱ハ紐ニ結び付ケラレタ綱ト結び次テ私ガブラサガル様ニ腰掛ガ移動サレマシタ。私ガブラサガツテキル間日本人トインドネシア人官吏ノ全員カラ交々審問サレ私ノ返事ガ彼等ヲ満足サセナカツタノテ彼等ハ竹竿テ私ノ身体ヲ所據ハズ打テ始メマシタ。私ハ殆ンド一時間半モ吊サレタ後氣ヲ失ツテ了ヒマシタ。私ハ正氣ニ還ツタ時彼等ガ腰掛ヲ元ノ位置ニ戻シテキタノニ氣付キマシタ。ソコテ私ハ自分ノ部屋ニ連れ戻サレマシタ。

翌日私ハ水療法ヲ受ケマシタ。私ハ梯子ニ縛リ付ケラレ口ト鼻ニ布片ガ縛リ付ケラレ次テ水ガ口ノ中ニ注ガレマシタ。此ノ拷問ハ約一時間半續キノ後私ハ氣絶シ氣ガ付イタ時ハ再ビ自分ノ部屋ニ運バレテキタノヲ知リマシタ。コノ療法ハ溺レテキル様ナ息ガ喘グ様ヲ感ジラサセマシタ。

Doc 5754

其後一週問程シテ日本人ハ私ヲ再ビ呼ンデ私ト同
シ結社ニ属スニ他ノ人達ノ口ツノ陳述替ヲ私ニ讀マ
セタ。此等ノ陳述書ハ彼等ノ自由ヲ含ミ、私ノ名前
ガソノ中ニ述ベラレテアツタ。私ハソノ陳述ノ中ノ
私ニ關スルモノガ皆眞實デアルト認メルカドウカ尋
ネラレタ。私ハ之ヲ承認シタ。ケレドモ私が實際ニ
ヤツタコトハソノ陳述ノ中ニ述ベラレテキタコトヨ
リズツト多カツタ。

ソノ後私ハ高橋ノ音譯ノ、イ
ズラ及ビ之モ憲兵隊ノ一員ノ佐藤ノ音譯ノカラ三度訊問サレマ
シタ。ソノ訊問ハ短時間ニ過ギ
ズ一度ハ又モ吊リ下ゲラレマシ
タ。ソレモ短時間丈ケデシタ。

監禁サレテキル間ニ私ハ一度ベルテユ夫人ガ佐藤
ノ音譯ノニ吊下ゲラレテキルノラ無理ニ見セラレマ
シタ。

監獄ノ食事ハ量モ質モ不充分デシタ。然シ我々ハ
家カラ食物ノ包ヲ受取ルコトラ許可サレテキマシタ
シカシ包ヲ調べルベキ人達ガ明カニ澤山ノ品物ヲ盜
ミ取りマシタ。

インドネシア人ノ醫者ハ日本人ヲ懼レテ適當ナ醫藥
ヲ施スコトラ憚ツテキタカラ監獄ニ於ケル醫藥手當
ハ惡カツタ。

Doc 5754

一九四三年五月六日私ト他ニ六人ノ人達ハ手焼シ
謝ケラレ背中ニ肘ヲ縛ラレテ「バタヴィア」ヘ送ラ
レマシタ。航海中我々ハ殆ド何ノ食物モ飲物モ與ヘ
ラレナカッタ

H. H. エンゲレン / 署名 /

通 譯 官

證人が右ノ自己ノ署名ヲ爲ス前ニ右稜柵ヲ證人ノ
自國語ニ余ハ正式ニ通譯シタルコトヲ證明ス。

通 譯 官

/ 署名判讀不能 /

一九四六年五月二十一日余ノ面前ニテ宣誓サル。

バートン大尉 / 署名 /

東南アジア聯合國軍總指揮官ニ依リ上記ノ調査ノ爲
派遣サル。

Doc 5754 (cont)

證書第五七五四號

證 明 書

署名者、和蘭軍情報部 (N. E. F. I. S) 戦争
犯罪課長、R. N. I. A 中尉 チャールズ・ヨンヘ
ネールハ先ツ正式ニ宣誓シ添附セル左記標題ノ報告
書。

「O M / 七五六四 / B 號 タンジョン・カラン (スマ
トラ) 生レ、年齢三十才、E. E. エンゲレン夫人
ノ宣誓セラレタル訊問ノ梗概」

ガ原本ナルコト及ビ該原本ハ和蘭軍情報部 / N. E.
F. I. S / ノ公式記録ヨリ採ラレタルコトヲ證言
陳述ス。

署 名 C. ヨンヘネール / 署 名 /

和 蘭 軍 情 報 部 / 印 /

於「バタヴィア」一九四六年六月七日

余、蘭領東印度檢事局附高等官 R. N. I. A 中尉
K. A. ダ・ウエールドノ西前ニテ記述サレ宣誓サ
ル。

K. A. ダ・ウエールド / 署 名 /

1754

PRO JUSTITIA

Government Office for the
Tracing of War Crimes.

560/R.

OFFICIAL RECORD

Today, February 4, 1946, appeared before me, HEINDERSMA,
ROBERT, ensign, charged with the tracing of war criminals
in the Netherlands Indies, the person of:

Mrs. A.D. van HOOK - MAUREAU,

who, after having been duly sworn by me according to her
religious convictions, to tell the truth and nothing but
the truth, stated as follows:

"In the Kempoi, Batavia (Building of the University of
Law), on July 21, 1942, after an interrogation, I had
to sit down in the Japanese way on five sharp little
beams, most similar to foot-scrapers, so that I came
to sit with my shins on the sharp edge.--- I sat
there from about 11 a.m. to 4 p.m. without food and
drink. This was repeated the next day from approx.
2 p.m. until 5 p.m.---The next morning the water
torture was applied to me, twice in succession. This
lasted one hour. The afternoon of the next day they
applied the water torture to me once more.

.....

After reading out, the witness persists in her statement and
subscribes same together with me,

The witness: signed A.D.van HOOK.

Of which this official record was made and subscribed to on
February 4, 1946.

The recorder,
signed: R. HEINDERSMA.

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned, CHARLES JONGENEEL, Captain R.N.I.A., head
of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE
SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and
states that the annexed original document (with English
translation), entitled:

Sworn statement by Mrs. A.D. van HOOK, born Maureau, dated
4th February 1946, No. 560/R,

has been taken from the official records of the NEFIS.

Signature: /s/ Ch. JONGENEEL

Batavia July 9th 1946

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K.A. de WEERD, first
Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the
Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. De Weerd

1754

PRO JUSTITIA

Government Office for the
Tracing of War Crimes.

560/R.

OFFICIAL RECORD

Today, February 4, 1946, appeared before me, HEINDERSIA,
ROBERT, ensign, charged with the tracing of war criminals
in the Netherlands Indies, the person of:

Mrs. A.D. van MOOK - MAUREAU,

who, after having been duly sworn by me according to her
religious convictions, to tell the truth and nothing but
the truth, stated as follows:

"In the Kempci, Batavia (Building of the University of
Law), on July 21, 1942, after an interrogation, I had
to sit down in the Japanese way on five sharp little
beams, most similar to foot-scrapers, so that I came
to sit with my shins on the sharp edge.--- I sat
there from about 11 a.m. to 4 p.m. without food and
drink. This was repeated the next day from approx.
2 p.m. until 5 p.m.---The next morning the water
torture was applied to me, twice in succession. This
lasted one hour. The afternoon of the next day they
applied the water torture to me once more.

.

After reading out, the witness persists in her statement and
subscribes same together with me,

The witness: signed A.D.van MOOK.

Of which this official record was made and subscribed to on
February 4, 1946.

The recorder,
signed: R. HEINDERSIA.

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned, CHARLES JONGENEEL, Captain R.N.I.A., head
of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE
SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and
states that the annexed original document (with English
translation), entitled:

Sworn statement by Mrs. A.D. van MOOK, born Maureau, dated
4th February 1946, No. 560/R,

has been taken from the official records of the NEFIS.

Signature: /s/ Ch. JONGENEEL

Batavia July 9th 1946

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K.A. de WEERD, first
Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the
Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. De Weerd

EX. 1754-A

Evidentiary

Document

5741

証明書

下記署名、和蘭軍情報部戦犯課長、蘭印軍陸軍大尉
カール・ヨングネー、先づ正式に宣誓し、左記標題、添附
原本(英語訳文附)に和蘭軍情報部、公式記録を得た
ことを証言す

九四六年/昭和三十年/二月四日附書姓「カール・ヨングネー」
夫人、宣誓口供書第五〇/R号

署名「カール・ヨングネー」

九四六年/昭和三十年/七月九日

「バタビア」に於て

余、蘭領印度検事総長事務局附高等官
蘭印軍陸軍中尉「カール・ヨングネー」面前
に署名宣誓せり
(署名)「カール・ヨングネー」

61

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5741

正義、卷三

戦争犯罪捜査局

五〇〇/R

調書

本日一九四六年/昭和二十年/三月四日、余即々蘭領印度ニ於テル
戦争犯罪人捜査班、津尉「ロルト、マイナルス」ニ、面前ニ
旧姓「ア、テイ、ア、ニ、モ、ク」夫人出頭シ、其ノ宗教的信仰ニ從
ヒ、眞實ヲ述ベ、其ノ眞實以外何事モ述ベ、ト旨宣誓シ、ト後次ニ通
リ述ベ、

一九四三年/昭和七年/七月三日「ロルト」憲兵隊(法科大学、建
物)ニ於テ、訊問後、私執泥落シヨリ以テ、五本ノ銃ヲ少サニ術
シ、三腔ノ銃ヲ用ニ此ニ標ニ日本流ニ坐セシメシ、

和ノ子所ニ、将頭カニ午後將迄ノ食物モ飲物モテ、其處ニ坐
シ居シ、之ノ翌日ニ午後ニ将頭カニ午後五時迄歸退セシメシ、

.....
翌日ニ夜深キ、水責、将頭カニ受テシ、之ノ一将頭退キシ、
翌日、午後九時一、水責、将頭カアリシ、.....
該了後出頭人、其ノ陳述ヲ圖録シ、和ト共ニ四者名スル、

証人(署名)「ア、テイ、ア、ニ、モ、ク」

本調書、一九四六年/昭和二十年/三月四日 作成

署名

調書作製人

(署名)「エ、ル、マイナルス」

102

Doc 5741

正義、為三
戰爭犯罪搜查局
調書

五〇〇/R

本日一九四六年/昭和二十年/三月四日、余、即々蘭嶼印度ニ於テル
戰爭犯罪人搜查担当者、準尉「ロベルト・マインデルス」ノ面前ニ
旧姓「マウリア」ノ「ア・ライ・ア・モ」ノ夫人出頭シ、其ノ宗教的信念ニ從
ヒ、眞實ヲ述ベ、且、眞實以外何事モ述ベズ、旨宣誓シ、ト、後次ノ通
リ述ベク。

一九四三年/昭和七年/七月三日、ハ、マ、ア、ノ「憲兵隊(法科大学、建
物)ニ於テ、訊問後、私ノ靴泥落シヨク、以テ、五本ノ靴、少クヤ行
ハ、上ニ腔ノ鏡ノ角ニ當リ、採ニ日本流ニ坐ラセシメ、.....

和ハ、午ノ所、一、時頃、カ、午、飯、時、迄、食、物、モ、飲、物、モ、テ、其、處、坐、シ、
居、リ、シ、之、ハ、翌、日、モ、午、飯、時、頃、カ、午、飯、五、時、迄、一、緒、に、居、リ、シ、

翌、朝、三、夜、演、言、本、責、務、問、ニ、受、ケ、シ、シ、之、ハ、一、時、間、演、言、シ、

翌、日、午、飯、モ、一、夜、本、責、務、問、カ、ア、リ、シ、.....

讀、了、後、出、頭、人、(其、陳、述、ヲ、圖、符、ニ、和、ト、共、ニ、寫、シ、タ、ル、

証人(署名)「ア・ライ・ア・モ」

本調書、一九四六年/昭和二十年/三月四日 作成

署名

調書作製人

(署名)「エ、ル、ノ、イ、ン、ゲ、ル、ス」

1/2

Q. #1155

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned, CHARLES JONGENEEL, Captain R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed original document, entitled:

Sworn statement of Mrs. S.F.J. IDENBURC, born van de Poll, dated 4th February 1946,

has been taken from the official records of the NEFIS.

Signature:

Charles Jongeneel

Batavia, July 9th 1946

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K. A. de Noord, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Noord

Q. # 1155

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned, CHARLES JOUENEEL, Captain R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed original document, entitled:

Sworn statement of Mrs. S.P.J. IDENBURC, born van de Poll, dated 4th February 1946,

has been taken from the official records of the NEFIS.

Signature:

Charles Joueneel

Batavia, July 9th 1946

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K. A. de Weerd, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

PRO JUSTITIA

Government Office for the
Tracing of War Crimes.

OFFICIAL RECORD.

Today, February 4, 1946, appeared before me H.P.L.A. L.J. VAN UFFEL,
2nd Lieut. (Res rvc), charged with the investigation for data concerning
war criminals, the person of:

Mrs. S.M. J. IDEBURG - van de POLI.

who, after being duly sworn according to her religious convictions, to
tell the truth and nothing but the truth, stated as follows:

On July 16, 1942, at 8 a.m. I was fetched from home and taken to
the Kempei building, at Keningsplein. Here I was ushered into a room,
where they started to interrogate me. It was intended to force from me a
confession that I attended meetings which had an anti-Japanese aim and to
state the names of other people of whom a list was shown me.

When I answered in the negative, they started to illtreat me. Then
I was made to kneel on a sort of foot-scraper made of rounded beams and
tied fast. The list of names was hung up in front of me. I was then beaten
with different things, mostly on my back, i.e. with a plaited bamboo stick,
rope, a cudgel. This lasted some time. My back was all open. Then I was
put on my back and the abovementioned scraper was tied on to my shins. Then
all available furniture was put down on this stool. A rope was fixed to the
stool and pulled to and fro. As a result of this my feet were completely
dislocated. All this lasted from morning until 17 hrs. My feet are still
troubling me, in spite of 3 years' of massage. The man guilty of this ill-
treatment was ONO, a Japanese officer, while there was also a Chinese inter-
preter present, who participated from time to time. In this way I was ill-
treated during five days, during which also other things were done to me,
for instance matches were knocked under my nails, I was kicked with shoes
on my rounded legs, cigarettes were extinguished on my arms and legs, etc.
They also threatened me to go and fetch my daughter if I did not confess.

.....

The last day ONO came into my cell, asking me the address of Mrs.
VAN MOOK. When I did not want to tell this he beat me to the ground
with the flat of his sword, dragged me through the cell by my hair and
kicked me several times. This broke one of my ribs. In the afternoon I
was taken to the Police Section in front of the Kempei. Here I remained
for sixty (60) days without clean clothes. At this Police Section purposely
all sorts of natives were interrogated and illtreated in front of my cell.

The perpetrators were other military personnel whom I did not know,

.....

After reading the statement to the witness she persisted in her declaration and signed the same together with me.

The witness, signed: S.M.J.IDENBURG - VAN DE ROLL

And I have therefrom drawn up, signed and concluded this Official Record on February 4, 1946.

The recorder, signed: VAN RUBEEL

ΣX 1755-A

Evidentiary

證

證明書

「... 蘭軍情報部戰犯課長蘭印軍八尉...
... 正式宣誓...
... 一九四六年二月四日附宣誓陳述書...
... 正式記錄...」

署名

於一九四六年七月九日

... 蘭領東印度檢事總長事務局附高軍官...
... 面前... 署名且宣誓...

...

止

國... 非搜查局

正式記錄

一九四六年三月四日... 關於... 調查...
... 師... 尉... 許...

「... 夫人...」

... 宣誓... 如...
... 一九四六年六月十六日午前...
... 證據... 此處... 其...
... 目的... 有...
... 他人...
... 在...」

秘
録
一

秘會之意上欲其秘者蓋始於此……
 乃是此書流傳之據也，上之秘也，其字坐於四，總
 之而論之，此書之秘，非獨此一秘也，其秘者，多矣
 其秘者，一曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難解也。其
 秘者，二曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難識也。其
 秘者，三曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難聽也。其
 秘者，四曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難看也。其
 秘者，五曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難說也。其
 秘者，六曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難寫也。其
 秘者，七曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難讀也。其
 秘者，八曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難傳也。其
 秘者，九曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難藏也。其
 秘者，十曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難顯也。其
 秘者，十一曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難滅也。其
 秘者，十二曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難生也。其
 秘者，十三曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難死也。其
 秘者，十四曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難變也。其
 秘者，十五曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難化也。其
 秘者，十六曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難壞也。其
 秘者，十七曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難成也。其
 秘者，十八曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難敗也。其
 秘者，十九曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難存也。其
 秘者，二十曰：此書之秘，在於其文字之難亡也。其

秘
録
二

吳後 三：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，一曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，二曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，三曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，四曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，五曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，六曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，七曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，八曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，九曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十一曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十二曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十三曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十四曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十五曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十六曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十七曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十八曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，十九曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其
 秘者，二十曰：此部之秘，在於其文字之長，天人之住所，其

No. 2

Doc. 5742

証人 署名 三ノ下イナ、イナノカサ、イナノカサ
三ノ下イナノカサ氏記録作成終結ノ一九四六年三月四日左記ノ
署名あり。

記録者 署名 三ノ下イナ

Q. # 1756

Doc. No. 5743

Page 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENIEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crime Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Summary of Examination of Frits Hendrik LOUATY, dd. March 11th, 1946, clerk, 26 years of age, born at Meester Cornelis, No. 07/5153/E

which document is a part of the official records of the Nefis.

Signature:

Batavia, 7th. June 1946.

SEAL

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A. Higher official attached to the office of the Attorney - General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

Summary of Examination of ERITS HENDRIK LOUAFY

Occupation: Clerk

Present Address: Ambonese Camp I. V. O.

Duly sworn states I am 26 years of age, of Dutch nationality born at Meester Cornelis.

Permanent address Ambonese Camp I. V. O.

On the 12th of May 1943 I was arrested by the Japanese Kempeitai Tandjong Priok and accused of underground activities also for hiding and assisting a Dutch soldier. I was locked in a cell and frequently taken out and interrogated by ONODERA and MAXIM. I was kicked and beaten with a bamboo. On the 22nd of June 1943 I was released, after I had been made to promise to locate said Dutch soldier who was still at large, and also to get any important information I could and report same to the Kempeitai. However, I neither located the Dutch soldier, nor gave any information. I also had to report to the Kempeitai once a fortnight in order that they could check up on me. I even evaded this as much as possible by asking my mother to report to them that I was sick. Early in November 1943 I had been at the Kempeitai, reporting myself, I saw a female standing in the corridor adjacent to the interrogation rooms. She was handcuffed and appeared to be waiting to be taken away somewhere. I did not know who she was but I did not notice anything wrong with her.

On or about the 13th of November 1943, ONODERA came to my home, but I was absent. However, he left a message that I was to report at the Kempeitai the following day as he wished me to act as interpreter.

Accordingly the following morning November 14th (?) I presented myself to the Kempeitai and I was ordered into an interrogation room and told to wait. After a few minutes a lady was brought in by an Indonesian policeman. I recognized her as the lady I had seen once before in the corridor, however, this time when I saw her, she was black and blue on many parts of her body which were visible, including her face. A few minutes later, about 10 am. ONODERA entered the room and ordered the lady to sit on the floor. He then ordered me to question her. I asked him the lady's name and what questions I was to ask her. He replied that she was Mrs. VAN WAVEREN and I was to ask her what she had done with some revolvers (she having been connected with these arms by a man named MANUHUTU, who had also been a Kempeitai victim). Before I had actually asked the question ONODERA started to beat Mrs. VAN WAVEREN about the legs with a bamboo. He then stood on her legs with the heels of his boots, still beating her. Mrs. VAN WAVEREN denied all knowledge of the revolvers. So I told her unbeknown to ONODERA that if she did know something it would be as well to admit same, and save herself punishment. However, she still denied all knowledge of the weapons. By this time ONODERA, still standing on her legs, was beating her on the back of the neck, arms and elbows. Eventually, Mrs. VAN WAVEREN stated the revolvers were hidden in a well near her house; ONODERA ordered a search to be made of the well. Whilst the search was on, Mrs. VAN WAVEREN was not interfered with. After a short time the search party returned saying that nothing had been found, which resulted in more beating for Mrs. VAN WAVEREN.

At 1 pm. there was an interval for food, then at 1.30 pm the interrogation commenced again. Mrs. VAN WAVEREN was laid on her back on the floor of the room. ONODERA was standing on her shins. Then, with the bamboo which he gripped with both hands, he prodded her on all parts of the body, especially her breasts, stomach and vagina. At other times he pressed hard on the bamboo, that at times she could hardly get her breath. He would also at intervals move his feet around on her legs in order to cause more pain. This method he kept up during the remainder of the interrogation. In order to be left alone for a while, Mrs. VAN WAVEREN said she had hidden the revolvers in a trunk in her house. ONODERA, an Indonesian and I then went to her house which I think was on Nieuw Guinea road, but found nothing. When we returned the same procedure was adopted. Mrs. VAN WAVEREN then stated she had sold the revolver to a Chinese (name unknown). By this time she was in a pitiful state. She spoke to me and said "why do they treat me

so; why don't they murder me and leave done". She was bleeding from various lacerations, and during the interrogation her clothes had become disarranged and I saw bruises and scars from previous beatings and her clothes were badly stained with blood. The Chinese whom Mrs. VAN LAVEREN had named was arrested and subjected to severe beating which lasted from 5.30 pm. to 7 pm.

During this time Mrs. VAN LAVEREN who was in another room was not questioned. at 7 pm. I was told that I was no longer required. So I returned home. I had nothing more to do with Mrs. VAN LAVEREN and did not know how she fared until about a month later. I was told by a servant employed with the Kempeitai that Mrs. VAN LAVEREN had died. I do not know the date she died, but it must have been some time in November 1943.]

The following are the names of Japanese who I know were attached to the Kempeitai: ONODERA, YASDA, MIYAMA, SUSUKI, FUKUDA, KURIHARA, KOBAYASHI, ARAI, IDEKI, SATO, IJROETA.

The Witness
was signed:
F.H. LOUATTY

Interpreter.

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

Sworn before me
Interrogator
was signed:
E. BURTON,
Capt. General List B.F.

Interpreter,
was signed: (illegible)

This 11th day of March 1946

Detailed to examine the above by Commander-in-Chief.
Allied Land Forces, South East Asia.]

Ex 1756-A EVIDENTIARY Doc. 5743

No. 1

書類第五七四三号
證明書

△

下名和蘭軍情報部戦争犯罪課長、R. N. I. A中尉「ギルズ、
ミンゲニール」に正当に宣誓を為したる上別紙添附の書類即ち「フリック、
ヘンドリック、ロウバティ、事務員、年齢三十六才、UM/五二五三/E
ミスター、コルネリス生レ、一九四六年三月十一日附、調査の要約」ナル
題名ノモノが該書類ノ原本ノ全文ニシテ真実完全及び正確ナル寫
ニナルコト並びニ該書類が和蘭軍情報部ノ公式記録ノ一部ナル
コトヲ證明ス。

和蘭軍情報部
ノ 印

バタビヤ一九四六年六月七日

ウ. ヨングニール / 署名 /

右公本職 R. N. I. A. 中尉 N.E.I 法務廳附高等官タル K. A.
「カ、ウナアード」ノ面前ニ於テ署名及宣誓ヲナシタリ。

K. A. 「カ、ウナアード」署名 /

「フリック、ヘンドリック、ロウバティ」
調査要約

職業 事務員

現住所 「アムボン」人「キャンプ」M. V. O.

正当に宣誓ヲナシタ上陳述ス。私ハ十六才、和蘭國籍ナリ。

「ミスター、コルネリス」ヲ生シマシタ。

永住地 「アムボン」人「キャンプ」M. V. O.

一九四三年五月十二日、私ハ「タンギオン、ブリオック」、日本憲兵隊ニ
逮捕サレ、地下運動ト、和蘭兵ヲ隠シ援助シタト罪ヲ問ハルニシテ。
私ハ監房ニ監禁サレ時々引張り出サレテハ小野寺 / 言語 / ト「マヤ」

Doc. 5743

ニ訊問サレタ。私ハ蹴ラレタリ竹ヲナグラレタ。一九四三年六月三日
釋放サレタ。 * * * *

一九四三年十一月十三日ヲ其頃ニ小野寺音譯ノ家ニ來リテ
私ニ留守テ之ヲ。併ニ彼ハ傳言ヲ置キ行キ、私ニ通譯、役割ヲ
シ貫ルタイカラ翌日憲兵隊ニ報告スルヤウトノコトデアリマシタ。

依ッテ私ハ翌朝、十月十四日(?) 憲兵隊ニ出頭シタトコロ訊問室ニ
入ルヲ命ゼラレ、待ッヤウニ言ハレタ。數分後一婦人が「インドネシア」
人、警官ニ連シラレテ入ッテ來マシタ。私ハ彼女が以前一度廊下ヲ見
タコト、アル婦人デアルトガ判リマシタガ私が見タコト時ハ顔及ビ体ヲ見
テ

トコ方々ニ澤山青黒イ痣ガアリマシタ。數分後午前十時頃ニ小
野寺音譯ノ部屋ニ入ッテ來テ、其婦人ニ床ニ坐ルヨウ命ジマシタ。
彼ハソレテ私ニ彼女ニ質問スルヤウ命ジマシタ。私ハ彼ニ「コノ婦人ノ名前
ヤ私ガ彼女ニドシテ質問ヲスベキカ聞キマシタ。彼ハ此ノ女ハ「ガア、

ワグエシ」夫人デ彼女ガ教授ノ拳銃ヲ何カシタカリ譯セルヤウ答ヘ
シタ。(彼女ハ「マフツトイフ男ニ依ッテ此、火器ニ關係ヲ持ッテナクモ
テ、此ノ男モ亦憲兵隊ノ犠牲トナッテナク)私ガ實際ニ質問ヲ行
ク

ク前ニ小野寺音譯ノ「ガア、ワグエシ」夫人ノ脚ノ邊ヲ踏
リ始メタ。ソレテ彼ハ長靴ヲ踵テ彼女ノ足ノ上ニ立ッテ、ナグリ續ケシタ。
「ガア、ワグエシ」夫人ハ拳銃ニ就イテ、何モ知ラナイト言ヒマシタ。ソレテ

私ハ小野寺音譯ノ知シヤウニ、甚シク彼女ガ何カ知ッテ居ルヲソレ
ヲ認め打タレルヲ免レク方が得テマシタト彼女ニ話シマシタ。然レ彼
女ハ尚モ武器ニ就イテ、全ク知ラナイト言ヒマシタ。此ノ時ニツテ小野寺

No. 2

音譯ノ未だ女ノ脚ノ上ニ立ッテ居テ、女ノ首ノ後ヤ腕ヤ肘ヲタキ續
ケテ居リマシタ。遂ニ「ガア、ワグエシ」夫人ハ拳銃ガ自分ノ家ノ側ノ

Doc. 5743

No. 3

井戸、中ニ隠シテアルト言ヒマシタ、小野寺(音譯)ノ搜索隊ニ井戸ヲ探
スル命ジマシタ。搜シテ居ル間中ハ「ガンワウ」ガエリシ夫人ハ何モサレセ
テシタ。暫ク経テ搜索隊ガ歸ツテ來テ何モ見付カラナカッタト言ヒマシタ
テ、「ガンワウ」ガエリシ夫人ハ一層ナクラシマシタ。

午後時ニ食事、休憩ガアツカテ、午後時半ニ再び訊問ガ開始サレマシタ。
「ガンワウ」ガエリシ夫人ハ部屋、床ノ上ニ仰向ケニ寝カサレマシタ。小野寺
(音譯)ハ彼女ノ向脛ノ上ニ立ツテ居リマシタ。ソレカラ彼ハ両手ニ握ツテ居タ
竹ノ棒ヲ女ノ体、到ル處ヲ特ニ胸ヤ腹ヤ脛ノトウ突キマシタ。外ノ時ハ
彼ハ竹ノ棒ヲ壓シタノテ彼女ハ時々呼吸ガ出來マセンデマシタ。彼ハ時折
モト柄ヲ感じサセル爲ニ、女ノ脚ノ上テ強イテ足ヲ動かシマシタ。殘リ、質
問ヲシテ居ル間中彼ハ此ノ方法ヲ續ケマシタ。シバラク一人ヲ遣キ去リサレ
タイタメ「ガンワウ」ガエリシ夫人ハソノ拳銃ガ自分ノ家ノトランク、中ニ隠
シアルト言ヒマシタ。ソレテ小野寺(音譯)ト人、「イントネヤ」人ト称
シ、女ノ家ヘ参リマシタ。ソノ家ハ「ヨウギヤ」街ニ下リ上思ヒマス。シカ
ニ何も發見シセマシタ。我々ノ戻ラ來タ時同ジ處置ガ採ラレマシタ。其時
「ガンワウ」ガエリシ夫人ハソノ拳銃ヲ支那人(姓名不詳)ニ賣ツテシマッタト言
ヒマシタ。此ノ時ニ至リ女ハ哀シナ状態ニテリマシタ。彼女ガ私ニ言ヒマシタ。

「彼等ハナゼ私ヲコナニ取扱フテスカ、彼等ハナゼ私ヲ殺シテシマハイゲスカ
ト。彼女ハ澤山ノ擦過傷カラ出血シテ居リマシタ又訊問シテ居ル間ニ着
物ハ取亂サレテシマツテ、其前ニ打タレタタメニ出來タ打撲傷ヤ傷痕ヲ見
マシタ。着物ハ血ヲヒトク汚シテ居リマシタ。「ガンワウ」ガエリシ夫人ガ名
指タ支那人ハ捕ラレテ酷クナラシ、ソレハ午後五時半カラ七時マテ無續キ
マシタ。

此ノ間中他ノ部屋ニ居タ「ガンワウ」ガエリシ夫人ハ訊問サレセマシタ。午後

Doc. 5743

其ノ中ニ隠シテアルト言ヒマシタ。小野寺(音譯)ノ搜索隊ニ井戸探
スル命ジマシタ。搜シテ居ル間中ハ「ガン・ワグエ」ニ夫人ハ何モサレセ
デシタ。暫ク経テ搜索隊ガ歸ツテ來テ何モ見付カラナカシタト言ヒマシ
テ「ガン・ワグエ」ニ夫人ハ一層ナクラレマシタ。

午後時ニ食事、休憩ガアツテカラ、午後時半ニ再ビ訊問ガ開始サレシタ。

「ガン・ワグエ」ニ夫人ハ部屋ノ床ノ上ニ仰向ケニ寝カサレマシタ。小野寺
(音譯)ハ彼女ノ向腰ノ上ニ立ツテ居リマシタ。ソレカラ彼ハ両手ニ握ツテ居
テ、棒デ女ノ体、到ル處ニ特ニ胸ヤ腹ヤ股ノドヲ突キマシタ。外ノ時ハ
彼ハ竹ヲヒトク厭ヒシタ。彼女ハ時々呼吸ガ出來マセデシタ。彼ハ又時折
モト痛ミラ感じサレル爲ニ女ノ脚ノ上ニ強イテ足ヲ動カシマシタ。残りノ質
問ヲテ居ル間中彼ハ此ノ方法ヲ續ケマシタ。シバク一人ヲ置キ去リサレ
タイタメ「ガン・ワグエ」ニ夫人ハソノ拳銃ガ自分ノ家ノトランクノ中ニ隠
シテアルト言ヒマシタ。ソレデ小野寺(音譯)ト人「イントネ」ト私
ノ女ノ家ヘ参リマシタ。ソノ家ハ「ミウ・ギニヤ」街ニツタト思ヒマス。シカ
ニ何も發見シマセデシタ。我々ハ戻ツテ來タ時同心處置ガ採ラレマシタ。其時
「ガン・ワグエ」ニ夫人ハソノ拳銃ヲ支那人(氏名不詳)ニ賣ラシマシタト
言ヒマシタ。此ノ時ニ至リ女ハ哀シナ状態ニナリマシタ。彼女ガ私ニ言ヒマシタ。

「彼等ハナゼ私ヲコナニ取扱フテスカ、彼等ハナゼ私ヲ殺シテシマハイデス
ト。彼女ハ澤山擦過傷カラ出血シテ居リマシタ。又訊問ニ居ル間ニ着
物ハ取亂サレシマシテ、其前ニ打タレタタメニ出來タ打撲傷ヤ傷痕ヲ見
マシタ。着物ハ血ヲヒトク汚シテ居リマシタ。「ガン・ワグエ」ニ夫人ガ名
指タ支那人ハ捕ラレテ酷クナラシ。ソレハ午後五時半カラ七時マテ元續キ
マシタ。

此ノ間中他ノ部屋ニ居タ「ガン・ワグエ」ニ夫人ハ訊問サレマシタ。午後

No. 3

No. 4

私ハ、右ニ記サレタ署名ヲ爲ス迄、證人ニ對シ證人ノ自國語ヲ右要約
正式ニ翻譯シタルコトヲ證明ス。

面前ニテ宣誓セリ

翻譯ハ署名セリ

訊問者ハ署名セリ

(判讀不能)

英國軍無兵科名簿

大尉・E・「バートン」

一九四六年三月十一日

東南アジア聯合軍陸軍總司令官ニヨリテ調査ノ爲派遣サル

Doc. 5743

七時 我ハモウ用ガナイト言ハシマシタノテ家ヘ歸リマシタ。我ハ、ウアン、フウエレン
夫人ト、コレ以上ノ關係ハアリマセンデシタ又其後約一ヶ月經過スル迄彼女
ガドウシテ暮シテ居タカ知リマセンデシタ。我ハ憲兵隊ニ雇ハレテ居タ召使
ヨリ「ウアン、フウエレン」夫人ハ死ンデシマツタト聞キマシタ。我ハ彼女ノ死ンカ日
附ハ知リマセンガ一九四三年十一月頃デアツタト思ヒマス。

證人ハ署名セリ

F. H. コウパツテイ

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENDEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crime Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Summary of Examination of Simon RATTINJIA, dd. March 8th. 1946
clerk, 33 years of age, born at Oma, Ambon, No. CM/5152/E.

which document is a part of the official records of the Nefis.

Signature

Batavia, 7th June 1946.

SEAL

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K.A. de WERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A.
Higher official attached to the office of the Attorney - General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

Summary of Examination of SIMON PARTINARIA
 Occupation: Clerk
 Present address: Mentengweg 2.

OM/5152/3

Duly sworn states I am 33 years of age, Dutch subject, born at Oma, Ambon.
 My permanent address is: Mentengweg 2, Batavia.

On the 23rd of October 1943 I was arrested by the Tandjong Friok Kempeitai. I was detained in a cell in the former Nautical Dept. Building K.P.I. on the main Zandvoort road near the first harbour. This building was being used by the Kempeitai as offices and detention house. I was accused of being concerned in underground activities. I was actually connected with a movement organised by Tanassale.

During my detention I was interrogated thirteen times in with interrogations I was subjected to such illtreatments as being beaten with bamboos, water-cure, bound and hung up and burning with cigarettes. The illtreatments were given by OYALIA, ONODERA, OSKA and occasionally, SUUMI. Through these illtreatments I still suffer with my knees which become very painful when I walk. ONODERA also stole my wedding ring.

A few days after my arrest I was informed that two ladies had been arrested, namely sister LODERSTEIN and Mrs. VAN WAVEREN; the former for making national flags, the latter for possession of arms. Whether the accusations against them were true I do not know. I was also informed that both these ladies had been interrogated and illtreatment, but how many times and the extent of their torture I did not know.

At about 9.30 am. on the 12th of November 1943, whilst I was washing myself at the water cock which was situated in the yard about 8 M. from the interrogation rooms, I saw a lady being led along the corridor and I learned it was Mrs. VAN WAVEREN. She was taken into an interrogation room and shortly afterwards I heard a voice coming from the room which I recognized as that of ONODERA, I being one of his victims, knew his voice well, although I had not seen him enter the room, I am sure it was he. The interrogation commenced at 9.40 am. During the interrogation I heard beating and screaming; the voice of ONODERA was so loud that I heard him say: "You lie", "admit" "Europeans are all scoundrels", "If you do not confess, death will be fine", "I will beat you to death". Judging from the thud of the blows which were being delivered I knew that the bamboo was being used. Mrs. VAN WAVEREN screamed with pain and I heard her ask for mercy. I was locked in my cell again at 10.40 am., but I could still hear the screaming and the thud of the blows. My cell was about 20 M. from the interrogation room, but the sound was quite audible. At about 1 pm. the interrogation stopped but was renewed at 2.30 pm. In the interim period Mrs. VAN WAVEREN was left in the interrogation room. At about 3 pm. the interrogation ended. I heard ONODERA say to Mrs. VAN WAVEREN "I have already proof against you if you will not confess you will be beaten to death."

During the interrogation period this day Mrs. VAN WAVEREN received 260 blows; I counted these myself and wrote it down on the wall of my cell. At the end of the interrogation Mrs. VAN WAVEREN was brought out of the room and laid in the corridor in front of my cell about 50 cm. away from the bars. She was in a semi-conscious condition; the parts of her body which were visible were black and blue; her clothes were disarranged, her dress being up over her body and her drawers were up and in such a way that her genital organs were exposed. Blood was coming from the vagina, but I do not know whether it was as a result of the illtreatment she had received. During the afternoon

ONODERA came and looked at Mrs. VAN WAVEREN and seeing the condition she was in said "fine". He then noticed the way in which her clothes were disarranged and with his foot attempted to straighten them; to a casual observer it would have been appeared as though he were kicking her on the genital organs, but this was not so. I suppose he was shocked at the exposure, and it being beneath his dignity to touch her with his hands, tried to straighten them with his foot.

Mrs. VAN WAVEREN laid in the same spot all that night and the following day and night. All this time she was in a semi-conscious condition. When spoken to she may or may not answer. On the morning of the third day I heard her ask to be taken to the lavatory. An Indonesian guard went away. I suppose to ask permission, and returned with three Japanese who ordered MUSTIMO, PATTY and NURSEPUY to be waken out of their cells to carry Mrs. VAN WAVEREN to the lavatory she being unable to walk. They picked her up, but after walking a few meters, I heard them say "she appears to be already dead. They brought her back and laid her in her original place, then informed the Indonesian guard, who went away and shortly afterwards returned with ONODERA. He looked at her and said what I think was "I am glad she is dead." Mrs. VAN WAVEREN's body was removed away out of my view, and later in the day straw wrappers were brought in and a little later something was wrapped in these wrappers and carried past my cell. I took it to be Mrs. VAN WAVEREN's body. I heard someone say "render the corpse to the superintendent". In my opinion it was to the Indonesian superintendent at Djambatan Tinggi. I am sure Mrs. VAN WAVEREN died on the 13th of November 1943 as I said before I made notes of the occurrence on the wall of my cell.

The following are names of Japanese I know at the Tandjong Priok Kempeitai. ONODERA, OYAYALL, SUIJMI. There were others but I do not know their names. As regards CASPERS, I was told that he was illtreated by OSKA, and that after he had been carried home he died. I remember PATTIASINA being arrested. He was interrogated by CSKA because I recognized his voice. He was interrogated the whole of the morning and part of the afternoon. I know he died later the same day, but I did not see him nor do I know what he looked like after the interrogation.

The witness
was signed
S. PATTINAJIA.

Interpreter.

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

Interpreter,
was signed (illegible)

Sworn before me
was signed:

E. Burton, Capt, General List, B.F. This 8th day of March 1946.

Detailed to examine the above by Commander-in-Chief,
Allied Land Forces, South East Asia. |

CNODERA came and looked at Mrs. VAN LAVEREN and seeing the condition she was in said "fine". He then noticed the way in which her clothes were disarranged and with his foot attempted to straighten them; to a casual observer it would have been appeared as though he were kicking her on the genital organs, but this was not so. I suppose he was shocked at the exposure, and it being beneath his dignity to touch her with his hands, tried to straighten them with his foot.

Mrs. VAN LAVEREN laid in the same spot all that night and the following day and night. All this time she was in a semi-conscious condition. When spoken to she may or may not answer. On the morning of the third day I heard her ask to be taken to the lavatory. An Indonesian guard went away. I suppose to ask permission, and returned with three Japanese who ordered MUSTAMO, PATTY and NUR-SEPUNY to be waken out of their cells to carry Mrs. VAN LAVEREN to the lavatory she being unable to walk. They picked her up, but after walking a few meters, I heard them say "she appears to be already dead. They brought her back and laid her in her original place, then informed the Indonesian guard, who went away and shortly afterwards returned with CNODERA. He looked at her and said what I think was "I am glad she is dead." Mrs. VAN LAVEREN's body was removed away out of my view, and later in the day straw wrappers were brought in and a little later something was wrapped in these wrappers and carried past my cell. I took it to be Mrs. VAN LAVEREN's body. I heard someone say "render the corpse to the superintendent". In my opinion it was to the Indonesian superintendent at Djembatan Tinggi. I am sure Mrs. VAN LAVEREN died on the 13th of November 1943 as I said before I made notes of the occurrence on the wall of my cell.

The following are names of Japanese I know at the Tandjong Priok Kempeitai. CNODERA, OYAYALL, SULLUM. There were others but I do not know their names. As regards CASPERS, I was told that he was illtreated by OSILA, and that after he had been carried home he died. I remember PATTIASINA being arrested. He was interrogated by CSKA because I recognized his voice. He was interrogated the whole of the morning and part of the afternoon. I know he died later the same day, but I did not see him nor do I know what he looked like after the interrogation.

The witness
was signed
S. PATTINAMA.

Interpreter.

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

Interpreter,
was signed (illegible)

Sworn before me
was signed:

E. Burton, Capt, General List, B.F. This 8th day of March 1946.

Detailed to examine the above by Commander-in-Chief,
Allied Land Forces, South East Asia.

ONODERA came and looked at Mrs. VAN WAVEREN and seeing the condition she was in said "fine". He then noticed the way in which her clothes were disarranged and with his foot attempted to straighten them; to a casual observer it would have been appeared as though he were kicking her on the genital organs, but this was not so. I suppose he was shocked at the exposure, and it being beneath his dignity to touch her with his hands, tried to straighten them with his foot.

Mrs. VAN WAVEREN laid in the same spot all that night and the following day and night. All this time she was in a semi-conscious condition. When spoken to she may or may not answer. On the morning of the third day I heard her ask to be taken to the lavatory. An Indonesian guard went away. I suppose to ask permission, and returned with three Japanese who ordered MUSTAMO, PATTY and NURSEPUY to be waken out of their cells to carry Mrs. VAN WAVEREN to the lavatory she being unable to walk. They picked her up, but after walking a few meters, I heard them say "she appears to be already dead. They brought her back and laid her in her original place, then informed the Indonesian guard, who went away and shortly afterwards returned with ONODERA. He looked at her and said what I think was "I am glad she is dead." Mrs. VAN WAVEREN's body was removed away out of my view, and later in the day straw wrappers were brought in and a little later something was wrapped in these wrappers and carried past my cell. I took it to be Mrs. VAN WAVEREN's body. I heard someone say "render the corpse to the superintendent". In my opinion it was to the Indonesian superintendent at Djembatan Tinggi. I am sure Mrs. VAN WAVEREN died on the 13th of November 1943 as I said before I made notes of the occurrence on the wall of my cell.

The following are names of Japanese I know at the Tandjong Priok Kempeitai. ONODERA, OYAYALL, SIKUMI. There were others but I do not know their names. As regards GASPERS, I was told that he was illtreated by OSKA, and that after he had been carried home he died. I remember PATTASINA being arrested. He was interrogated by OSKA because I recognized his voice. He was interrogated the whole of the morning and part of the afternoon. I know he died later the same day, but I did not see him nor do I know what he looked like after the interrogation.

The witness
was signed
S. PATTINALLA.

Interpreter.

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

Interpreter,
was signed (illegible)

Sworn before me
was signed:

E. Burton, Capt, General List, B.F. This 8th day of March 1946.

Detailed to examine the above by Commander-in-Chief,
Allied Land Forces, South East Asia.

ONODERA came and looked at Mrs. VAN WAVEREN and seeing the condition she was in said "fine". He then noticed the way in which her clothes were disarranged and with his foot attempted to straighten them; to a casual observer it would have been appeared as though he were kicking her on the genital organs, but this was not so. I suppose he was shocked at the exposure, and it being beneath his dignity to touch her with his hands, tried to straighten them with his foot.

Mrs. VAN WAVEREN laid in the same spot all that night and the following day and night. All this time she was in a semi-conscious condition. When spoken to she may or may not answer. On the morning of the third day I heard her ask to be taken to the lavatory. An Indonesian guard went away, I suppose to ask permission, and returned with three Japanese who ordered MUSTAMO, PATTY and NUR-SEPUNY to be waken out of their cells to carry Mrs. VAN WAVEREN to the lavatory she being unable to walk. They picked her up, but after walking a few meters, I heard them say "she appears to be already dead. They brought her back and laid her in her original place, then informed the Indonesian guard, who went away and shortly afterwards returned with ONODERA. He looked at her and said what I think was "I am glad she is dead." Mrs. VAN WAVEREN's body was removed away out of my view, and later in the day straw wrappers were brought in and a little later something was wrapped in these wrappers and carried past my cell. I took it to be Mrs. VAN WAVEREN's body. I heard someone say "render the corpse to the superintendent". In my opinion it was to the Indonesian superintendent at Djembatan Tinggi. I am sure Mrs. VAN WAVEREN died on the 13th of November 1943 as I said before I made notes of the occurrence on the wall of my cell.

The following are names of Japanese I know at the Tandjong Priok Kempeitai. ONODERA, OYAYALL, SULUMI. There were others but I do not know their names. As regards CASPERS, I was told that he was illtreated by OSKA, and that after he had been carried home he died. I remember PATTIASINA being arrested. He was interrogated by OSKA because I recognized his voice. He was interrogated the whole of the morning and part of the afternoon. I know he died later the same day, but I did not see him nor do I know what he looked like after the interrogation.

The witness
was signed
S. PATTINAMA.

Interpreter.

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

Interpreter,
was signed (illegible)

Sworn before me
was signed:

E. Burton, Capt, General List, B.F. This 8th day of March 1946.

Detailed to examine the above by Commander-in-Chief,
Allied Land Forces, South East Asia. |

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # 57744

證明書

下名、和蘭軍情報部 (N.I.S.)
戦争犯罪課長 R. N. I. A 中尉 カール・ヨハン・ホルム
正に宣誓言後、別紙報告書に左記標題文書、原本、完全
無缺真正、正確に宣誓するに専ら證言陳述す。

一九四六年三月令附。M. 五二五三 / E. P. 六六才
生三三三本書記 カール・ホルム、訊問概要
本文書、和蘭軍情報部、公記録一部である。

和蘭軍情報部
1 印

カール・ヨハン・ホルム 署名

一九四六年六月七日 在バタビヤ

本官、即ち蘭領東印度検査總長事務局付
高等官 R. N. I. A 中尉 K. A. グラウアー、面前
於て署名、宣誓せられたる。

RETURN TO ROOM 361 COPY

EXHIBIT NO 1757A

No. 1.

Doc 51744

書英番字ノ字五七四四号
「サイモ」ハツテ「マ」ノ「記問概要」
職業書記
現住所「メンテングエグ」ニ番地

正成ニ言ヒ書ニテ陳述スル。私ハ和蘭國人「アムボ」ノカ
生シ、三十三才ナリ。

永續地ハ「メンテングエグ」ニ番地「バク」ナリ。

一九四三年十月ニ至リ、私ハ「タジド」ヨリ「プリオク」ニ
後ニ逮捕サレタ。私ハ第一船着揚ニ近イ「ザンド」ノト大
通リナル。K. P. M. 元海軍省廳舎、監房ニ留置サレタ。
此ノ建物ハ憲兵隊ヨツテ「事務所」ニ留置所トシテ使用サ
レタナリ。

* * * * *

私が逮捕サレタ数日後、私ハ三人、婦人、即チ修道尼「ロレンスタ」
ト「ヴァン」ノ「グエ」ノ夫人ガ逮捕サレタ事ヲ知ツタ。

* * * * *

一九四三年十月十日、午前九時半頃、私ハ「訊問室」カラ約
八米高シテ「内庭」水道栓ノ所ニ身体ヲ洗ツタナリ。其時
一人、婦人が廊下ヲ通シラレタヲ見、ソレガ「ロレンスタ」
夫人ナル事ヲ知ツタ。彼女ハ「訊問室」ニ入リ、問ヒテ、ソノ部
屋方ニ「小野」ト覺シキ者ガ聞エテ来タ。私ハ彼ニ「居待」サレタ
トナリ、彼ノ「居」ヲ覺シテ「居」リ、彼ガ其部屋ニ入リ、見タ

No. 2

Doc 5744

訊問ハ十時、小野尋テアツク事ハ向選ナクト思フ。訊問ハ
 午前九時四十分迄ハ私ハ訊問中、殴打、吾ヤ悲鳴ガ聞エタ。
 小野尋、言ハ非常ニ大キク「嘘ツケ」自然ニ、歐洲人ニハ
 石ヲ奴唐ナシ、白狀ニナケリヤ殺シテシカソ、打殺シテヤルコト
 ト言フ、ガ聞エタ。彼女ガ殴ラレテキル殴打、音カラ判断シテ竹
 ヲ使用シテキル事ガ解ツタ。ウヰンワヰン夫人ハ痛サニ
 悲鳴ヲアケ、私ハ彼女ガ許シテ下サイト言ツテキルヲ聞イタ。
 午前十時四十分ニ私ハ再ビ監房ニ聞取込メタ。併シソレモ
 悲鳴ヤ悲訴、音ガ聞エタ。私ハ部屋ハ訊問室カラ約二米高シテ
 オクガ殴打音ハハッキリ聞き取レタ。午後一時頃、訊問ハ止
 ガ、午後一時半ニ又始メタ。其間、ウヰンワヰン夫人ハ訊問
 室ニ移シテオケタ。午後三時頃、訊問ハ終リタ。私ハ小野尋ガ
 ウヰンワヰン夫人ニ「証拠ハキヤント擧ガツテキルガ、白狀ニ
 ナケリヤ打殺シテヤルコト」言ツテキルヲ聞イタ。

7日、訊問中ニウヰンワヰン夫人ハ音六回殴打ヲ打ツタ。
 私ハコレヲ自命ヲ數テ監房ノ聲ニ言イタ。訊問、未ニウヰン
 ワヰン夫人ハ部屋カラ出サレ、廊下、柵カラ五センチメートル
 程高シク私ハ部屋ノ前ニ横タラシタ。彼女ハ半ハ失神状態テ
 アツタ。彼女ノ身体、露ハナツタ部分ハ痣ニナツタキタ。彼女、
 着衣ハ乱レ、服ハ身体ノ上ニタリ、ドロドロエガツテ生殖器ガ
 見エルヨウニナツタキタ。腫カラ血ガ流シテキタガソレハ彼女ガ受ケタ
 虐待ノ結果ヲアルカドウカ私ハ知ラナイ。午後小野尋ガウヰン
 ワヰン夫人ヲ見ニ来タガ彼女ノ状態ヲ見テ「イ、氣持ナゲ」ト
 言ツテ、ソレカラ彼ハ彼女ノ着物、乱レテ合ニ氣付イテ、足ヲ直シタ

203

Doc 5744.

トシタ。子見タラ、ソレハ恰度彼女、生殖器ヲ蹴ワテキル様ニ見
テダアラウガ、コレハソウデハナカツタ。彼ハ露出ニ激怒キ、手ヲ触レ
ハ、彼ハ威嚇ニ係ルモノ、足ヲ直ソウトシタ、ダト思フ。

ヴァン・ワウエン夫人ハ「魂中」ソシテ翌日、日中无夜モリ、場所
ニ様々シクナリタ。ズト彼女ハ半ハ失神状態ニ入ツタ。話シカケラ
ルト谷ハ心ヲモアリ、谷ハ心ヲモアツタ。三日目、朝彼女が便所へ
連レテ行ッテ下サイト類ニキルルヲ聞イタ。インドネシア人、守
衛ハ立去ツタが、ソレハ許可ヲ受ケル為ダウケラシタ。三人、長人、
連レテ戻リ、日本人達ハムスタモ、バッチナ、スールズグニ、ニ

VAN WAZEREN
ヴァン・ワウエン夫人が心ヲモアテ、彼女ヲ便所へ連レテ行ク為。
目ヲサマシテ監房カラ出ルヨウニ命ジタ。彼等ハ彼女ヲ抱ヘテ去ガ。
数米歩イタ後、彼等が「モウ死ニキルラシイソト言ウタヲ聞イタ。
彼等ハ引返シテ彼女ヲ元、場所ニ置き、インドネシア人、守衛ニ知
ラセタ。守衛ハ去ツテ聞セタ。小野等ヲ連レテ歸ッテ来タ。

小野等ハ彼女ヲ見ルト「死ニキル、氣味ダト言ウタト私ハ思フ。
ヴァン・ワウエン夫人ハ死体ハ私ハ自ラテ運ビ去ラレ、日遅ク
庭ガ運ビ込マレ、暫クシテ、何カリ、庭ニ包ンダモノガ私ハ監房、前ヲ
運ビ去ラレタ。私ハソレヲヴァン・ワウエン夫人ハ死体デアルト思フ。

私ハ誰ガ「死体ハ長官ニ渡シ、ト言ウテキルヲ聞イタ。私ハ、乃デハ
ジムバタン、チンギ、インドネシア人、長官、所ダト思フ。前述ベ
通り、私ハ出業等ヲ監房、壁ニ書イテ置イタ、タカラ、ヴァン・ワウエン
夫人ガ一九四三年十月十三日ニ死ニシタ事ハ確定デアルト思フ。

no. 4.

證人、署名

S. バッチナマ

De 5744

通訳

私公証人署名は先立、右概要証人、証人、自國
語下正堂に譯記を多し、証明不し。

通訳

署名

(判讀不能)

本官、宣明に於て宣誓。

署名

英國軍兵科名簿陸軍大尉

E. B. T.

一九四六年三月八日。

南東亞聯合軍陸軍總司令部より上記調査命令
也。

No. 5.

[A F F I D A V I T

Appeared before me Lt. Col. Dr. B. Damon in Changi Jail, Singapore this 29th day of May 1946, the person of

YAMAGOTO Moichiro

Who after having taken the oath to tell the entire truth and nothing but the truth, answered to the questions put to him as follows:

Q. State your name, birth, education and career.

A. I was born from an humble peasant family, living in the village of Ito near Osaka in Prefecture of Wakejama on the island of Honchu on the 8th of October 1898.

My religion is Buddhism and I am a Major General of the Imperial Japanese Army. When I was eight years old, I went to the elementary school in my village Ito and there I stayed till my 14th year. Then I went to the middle school in the Prefecture of Iara and after having completed my 18th year I became a Cadet of the Military Training School in Kyoto where I was attached as a Cadet to a Regiment being garrisoned there. I was in training here for a year in order to become an Officer and was enlisted in the Military Academy in December 1915. In December 1919 I had finished my Military Studies and got an appointment as a 2nd Lieutenant of the 38th Infantry Regiment, in garrison at Kyoto. I served in this Regiment till I was placed in 1923 in the Staff College at Tokyo. I left this school in November 1926 as a 1st Lieutenant. Then I was ordered to be an acting Commanding Officer of a Company. In this quality I served for 6 years. In 1929 I was transferred as a member of Staff in the Ministry of War. The Section Chief of the Department for Preparations was the then Colonel TOJO Hideki, and I was under his command for 1 year. He was a man who was not exactly harsh, but also not so mild, he was an ardent man who was very able and tactful to realize the plans he was bearing in mind in a proper way. I did not perceive any sign then of his political aspirations as he was always busy with his military professional work. In August 1928 I was promoted to be a Captain and remained in my new rank in the aforesaid Department of Preparations till October 1930. Then I was ordered to sail for Great-Britain in order to complete my military education there. I arrived in England in February 1931 and I was attached to several various Regiments. I was in England for 2 years. This is the reason I can understand the English language rather sufficiently. I do not speak it in a good way. Other languages beside my own Japanese language I do not understand. Now this is more than 10 years ago and I cannot say that I master the English language in a sufficient way now. In March 1933 I was ordered to be a Member of the Japanese Delegation for the Disarmament Conference at Geneva. I was a Member of Staff under the command of Admiral HASEGAWA. I had several chiefs there, but Admiral HASEGAWA was always in command. The leader of our Delegation was SHIMO, then Ambassador of Japan in Paris. I was standing under direct command of Col. SHIMOMURA who was a member of the Committee of Effectives. I did not take any part in the negotiations and the talks as such things were done by my Superiors.

Q. Do you know anything about the famous Crucifixion Speech delivered by MATSUOKA?

A. Yes, I know that he has made this speech before I had arrived in Geneva. I saw him several times in the League of Nations.

Q. You remember that in 1931 the Japanese Armies overran and seized Manchuria? What was the general feeling in your circles there about this matter?

A. We had the conviction that Japan had been compelled to do so in order to get some more living space, that this step had been taken, because it was necessary and we always hoped that a satisfactory settlement of this affair should be reached. We had many talks about it and we agreed all in this point that Japan must act in this way and that everything should be tried to get out of this impasse.

I stayed in Geneva till November 1933 and returned to Japan via America and I arrived in Japan in February 1934, when I was placed again in my former job in the Department of Preparations.

Q. What was the scope of this Department and what was its significance? What did you do there exactly? Were you making there some campaign schemes or other war plans?

A. No, that we did not do. The real job we performed was the preparation of armament, fouraging of the Army and that always in connexion with a possible mobilisation.

Q. Was this a preparation for the forthcoming campaign in China?

A. I did not know that. The only thing I knew was that the Staff Officers formed the plans and we the younger ones had to obey their orders.

Q. Do you know the famous Captain DOIHARA who was working in China before the war started?

A. Yes, I knew him by face only. When I returned from England he was a Major General already. He was a grand man. I never had a talk with him.

Q. Do you know anything about the Doihara-incident in China?

A. I do not know.

Q. When did they make you a Major?

A. I became a Major in 1934 and remained in my old job at the Department of Preparations. In August 1935 I was transferred to the Secretariat of the Ministry of War. In December 1937 I got the rank of Lieutenant Colonel. In August 1938 I was transferred to the Bureau for Military Affairs in Tokyo. In 1939 I became a Colonel and received the command of the 228th Infantry Regiment in Nagoya. I went then to China and acted there in Canton and Sam-Sui as commander of Occupation troops. I did not take any part in the real warfare. In October 1940 I was appointed to be a Staff Officer attached to the North-China Commander at Peiping. There I was partaking in the actual war operations.

Q. Had you to do also with the civilian population?

A. No, my work was merely of a military nature. In March 1942 I returned from China on my way to Tokyo where I was Section chief of the Military Bureau for Training and Education. In August 1945 I became a Major General. In this year, in the month of March, I was sent to Java as Leader of the Civil affairs of the Military Administration at Batavia. (Oranjeboulevard in the house of a former Dutch Medical Officer). I was acting in this quality till November 1944 when I became Chief of Staff of the Army and as such I was the Gunseikan, the Governor-General of Java, residing in Batavia. The Army Commander was then Lt. Gen. HARADA. I do not know where he is at the present.

Q. Who was the man who appointed you to be the Governor-General?

A. I was appointed by an Imperial Decree and such was told me by the Minister of War TOJO as far as I can remember. I do not know it for certain. I resided in the house of ISHIZAWA at Batavia. General HARADA was residing in the palace of the Dutch Governor General, Koningsplein.

Q. How was the command instituted?

A. The Supreme Commander of the Southern Areas was count Field-marshal TERAUCHI, who was residing in Saigon. General ITAGAKI Commander in Chief of the 7th Area of Command was functioning in Singapore. Till June 1945 Java was divided in two parts: East and West Java. The Army Commander of East-Java was General IWASE.

The Commander of West-Java was General KOEUCHI who was under direct command of HARADA. Then in June 1945 Middle-Java was created and the Army Commander was General YAMAMURA, headquarters at Megoland. After the Japanese Surrender West-Java was divided in two parts: The Cheribon, Priangan areas with General YABOUCHI as Commander and the Batavia, Buitenzorg and Bantam areas under General NISHIDA.

Q. When you were functioning as Governor-General, did you carry out the orders given to you by YAMADA or did you have a free hand?

A. The general leading rules were laid down in regulations and so I had to obey. But in smaller matters I had a complete free hand and I could act on my own authority. On any important matters not specified in the rules and regulations I always obtained the Army Commander's sanction. The important political lines were totally prescribed by TERAUCHI. I was responsible to Gen. YAMADA, who could make a proposal to Tokyo for my dismissal. He also was able to suspend me temporarily. I could only be dismissed by the Tenno Heika, who had appointed me. When in March 1945 the Lines of communication with Tokyo were cut off and it was very difficult to get into touch with Tokyo, it was agreed that Gen. YAMADA should be empowered to dismiss on his own authority practically all officials serving under him. I do not know if this measure was issued by the Emperor. I believe that this had been ordered by Gen. ITAGAKI who issued always all important decisions. Exceptions were to be referred to TERAUCHI and/or ITAGAKI.

Q. Had you any responsibility in matter of death sentences or did you act with absolute freedom?

A. I had nothing to do with death sentences given by Courts Martial. The death sentences given by a Civil Court were to be carried out according to the rules laid down by the Army Commander. These sentences had to be examined by the Chief of Preservation of Peace and Order, who was working under me and so normally I did not receive these sentences for examination.

Q. Were you empowered to stop an execution?

A. I think I was, but I never received a petition for mercy from Europeans, and this is the reason I do not know it for certain.

Q. After the Japanese surrender you sent a letter to Rear-Admiral Patterson aboard of the Cruiser Curberland, admitting that you had given your "fiat execution" for the killing of a number of Dutch subjects /and such after the surrender. /at Soerabaya.

A. Yes, but I did not write that letter myself, it was written by one of my subordinate officers. I have signed it. In fact the Chief of the Preservation of Peace and Order gave this "fiat" for the execution concerning a number of people in East Java, whose execution, when I remember exactly, had been delayed. They had been sentenced by a Civil Court in January 1945.

Q. So you were Lord of life and death in Java?

A. I cannot say that.

Q. Do you admit that you are responsible for all executions carried out during your Governor-Generalship?

A. Yes, I do. As Gunseikan I was responsible for all these executions not only for my own doings, but also for the activities of the Chief of the Preservation of Peace and Order, when I was aware of that. In so far I was responsible. If executions of death sentences were carried out without my knowledge then I do not hold myself responsible.

Q. Do you admit now your responsibility for your subordinates because you were their controlling chief?

A. Yes, I do now. I could stop an execution and I was empowered also to commute a sentence. And was done under the Army Commander's sanction and in his name I think. The legal rule was this that every death sentence when a petition for mercy had been sent in must be examined by the Chief of Preservation of Peace and order. That was a civilian MIYANO Shojo, now in G. Lang.

Q. Can you remember what these people were charged with?
A. I do not remember exactly and the only thing I can mention in connection with this case is that I think that the proposed execution has not been carried out.

Q. When you came to Java you were provided with special instructions concerning the government?
A. I had not received special instructions from Minister TOJO Hideki. I had no personal interview with him before I left for Java. I was instructed to obey and to carry out the orders of General WARADA who had outlined the principal rules of Government. I was responsible to him for the carrying out and realization of these rules. The practical application was for me and for that I had a free hand.

Q. Were you especially instructed to promote the Indonesian Independence Movement?
A. As far as I know, WARADA did not stimulate the Indonesian Independence Movement, led by SOEKARNO. I do not know of any special anti-Dutch measure taken by him or me. We had in mind to treat the population of Java as one body, although it consisted of various elements like Arabs, Javanese, Chinese and Dutch indo and totok. It was a very complicated problem.

Q. Was it your purpose to make Java a free selfsupporting country or a slave colony for Japan with no hope of freedom?
A. We had the outlined plan to liberate the Asiatic peoples from Western oppression and to bring them to freedom under the Japanese leadership. Japan was destined to play the leading role. In 1944 Sept. 19 Minister General KOISUA made a statement in Tokyo saying that no sharp measures were to be taken against the populations of the occupied areas. Nippon intended to give independence to Indonesia in future.

Q. And how did you do in Java, especially against the Dutch? Do you remember the internec camps, the POW camps, the expropriations of Dutch property, the confiscations and so on. Can you fit this in with a policy of appeasement?
A. Any confiscation of Dutch property that might have happened, was done prior to this declaration of KOISUA.

Q. Who was responsible for the looting of Java, for the shipping to Japan of products, industrial outillage and all things that could be of any use to Japan?
A. I do not know that such things have happened and I do not know who should be responsible for that. It happened perhaps especially in the former days of the occupation of Java. I know also the slogan: Asia for the Asiatics. I am fully aware of the Kanyo idea and I know that the principal plan was that Japan should lead Asia giving freedom to all populations.

Q. What was the role played by SOEKARNO?
A. SOEKARNO was used by us and paid by us f. 750 (seven hundred fifty guilders) per month for his activities as an advisor to the General Advice Department in Batavia.

A. Yes, I do now. I could stop an execution and I was empowered also to commute a sentence. And was done under the Army Commander's sanction and in his name I think. The legal rule was this that every death sentence when a petition for mercy had been sent in must be examined by the Chief of Preservation of Peace and order. That was a civilian HIYANO Shozo, now in G-lang.

Q. Can you remember what these people were charged with?
A. I do not remember exactly and the only thing I can mention in connection with this case is that I think that the proposed execution has not been carried out.

Q. When you came to Java you were provided with special instructions concerning the government?
A. I had not received special instructions from Minister TOJO Hideki. I had no personal interview with him before I left for Java. I was instructed to obey and to carry out the orders of General WARADA who had outlined the principal rules of Government. I was responsible to him for the carrying out and realization of these rules. The practical application was for me and for that I had a free hand.

Q. Were you especially instructed to promote the Indonesian Independence Movement?
A. As far as I know, WARADA did not stimulate the Indonesian Independence Movement, led by SOEKARNO. I do not know of any special anti-Dutch measure taken by him or me. We had in mind to treat the population of Java as one body, although it consisted of various elements like Arabs, Javanese, Chinese and Dutch indo and totok. It was a very complicated problem.

Q. Was it your purpose to make Java a free self-supporting country or a slave colony for Japan with no hope of freedom?
A. We had the outlined plan to liberate the Asiatic peoples from Western oppression and to bring them to freedom under the Japanese leadership. Japan was destined to play the leading role. In 1944 Sept. 19 Minister General KOISYA made a statement in Tokyo saying that no sharp measures were to be taken against the populations of the occupied areas. Nippon intended to give independence to Indonesia in future.

Q. And how did you do in Java, especially against the Dutch? Do you remember the internec camps, the POW camps, the expropriations of Dutch property, the confiscations and so on. Can you fit this in with a policy of appeasement?
A. Any confiscation of Dutch property that might have happened, was done prior to this declaration of KOISYA.

Q. Who was responsible for the looting of Java, for the shipping to Japan of products, industrial outillage and all things that could be of any use to Japan?
A. I do not know that such things have happened and I do not know who should be responsible for that. It happened perhaps especially in the former days of the occupation of Java. I know also the slogan: Asia for the Asiatics. I am fully aware of the Kanyo idea and I know that the principal plan was that Japan should lead Asia giving freedom to all populations.

Q. What was the role played by SOEKARNO?
A. SOEKARNO was used by us and paid by us f. 750 (seven hundred fifty guilders) per month for his activities as an adviser to the General Advice Department in Batavia.

Q. Was he a puppet or a real free-speaking Javanese leader?
A. SOKARNO had little influence, because he was under a strict censorship of which he had complained several times in a bitter way. All his speeches were examined before and he did not like this. We kept him under control but as time went on, the censorship slackened and about the Japanese surrender there was no more censorship at all. SOKARNO had no political power at all. He was allowed to deliver speeches and to hold meetings with his fellow-countrymen, but he had no power to issue rules and to take measures. He felt his uneasy position very clearly and complained about that. But he did not give in, although censorship was softened.

Q. Did you know, as we know all that SOKARNO abused and assaulted the Dutch and uttered threats against us by radio and press?

A. That must have happened in the last days of the censorship when we did not keep an eye on all these things in a sharp way.

Q. Do you know that SOKARNO paid a visit to General ITAGAKI at Singapore accompanied by WATTA and RADJIAN?

A. Yes, I know that these three men were ordered by Count TERAUCHI to be transferred to his HQ at Saigon for a conference. They left for Saigon by plane on 9 August 1945. They returned to Java on August 14. I presume that they paid this visit to General ITAGAKI returning from Saigon.

Q. Do you know the proceedings during the conference with TERAUCHI?

A. Yes, I know.

On the 15th of August I heard by radio that Japan had surrendered to the conditions of Potsdam. We kept it secret in behalf of law and order.

In the night between 16 and 17 August SOKARNO and WATTA had a conference with Admiral MAEDA as I heard afterwards.

In the morning of 17 August they set up and proclaimed their Republic. The proclamation was done by pamphlets distributed to the people from lorries. This proceeded in such a quick way that we were unable to prevent it. I heard that TERAUCHI granted them the following things:
1. They were permitted to form an Independent State and to set up the Government of it as soon as preparations should have been accomplished.
2. The territory of this State should include the former Dutch East Indies.

We kept the surrender secret till the morning of August 19th. Then I, not ordered by any Superior, ordered SOKARNO and WATTA, Chairman and Vice-Chairman of the Indonesian Preparation Committee, to see me and between 9 and 10 o'clock I told them the following points:

1. Japan has surrendered to the Potsdam conditions.
2. The Japanese authorities remain in command in Indonesia till they can hand over the powers and all weapons to the Allies.
3. Severe punishment for all persons who should attempt to disturb law and order.
4. From now the Japanese do not back any longer the Indonesian Independence Movement.
5. The Indonesian Leaders are requested to help in keeping quiet the population because we were afraid of losses of innocent lives.

One of the reasons of the Emperor's surrender was to save mankind from the havoc of atomic bombing.

Q. Who was responsible for the extradition of Japanese armaments?

A. I think the Indonesians themselves, because they took them by force. The Japanese had stored away all heavy armaments in order to hand it over to the Allies and their troops were armed with rifles only. So they could not prevent the Indonesians from capturing the arms.

Q. Was the capturing of the arms ordered or permitted by TERAUCHI on that conference?

A. I do not know that.

The interrogation was resumed on this 30th day of March 1946 by the same Interrogator Lt. Col. Dr. B. Lamen.

Q. How was the Romusha organization working?

A. The deportation of labourers outside of Java was always ordered by the Commander in Chief of the 7th Area of Command General ITAGAKI, residing in Singapore. I had nothing to do with that. But inside of Java the situation was another one. According to the needs of industry, irrigation, etc., the Japanese Government had started before my arrival a service known as the Romushas (romu-labour and sho-man). This organization was working already when I entered Java, although on a smaller scale. I was the Chief of it and under me was working the komu Kyoku in Java Affairs at Batavia with TAKIYASUJI, a civilian official, as leader. He is in Galang now. In my name he issued orders to obtain a sufficient number of labourers for the purposes mentioned. This labour was voluntary and was paid. TAKIYASUJI gave his orders to the civilian authorities who gave them through to the Wedanas and locals and they were obliged to collect as much manpower as was requested for certain industries. Work was done in factories, on railways, textiles, etc.

Q. Was this a labour to be performed by all classes and races of the population?

A. Everybody could get work, it was no forced labour. They were also working on defence works for the Japanese Army. But the system did not operate in a satisfactory way because the number of labourers was not sufficient and especially during the last months before our surrender things became rather confused and labourers were no longer engaged. I persist in asserting, that this labour was voluntary. The population was kindly asked to plant djersak beliki everywhere along the roads in order to get greasing oil for our planes. This planting was paid also. All orders issued by me were pointing out that this labour was a free one. There existed also a Labour Association which paid fees for excellent work.

Q. But we know that the population was forced to work and so I doubt if this labour was free indeed.

A. My orders were regarding a free labour, but I do not know if and it can have happened that my subordinates exceeded their faculties, but I do not know that.

Q. Were you content of that Romushas organization?

A. No. I think that better work should have been done.

There were two things annoying me:

1. The labourers were short of food, clothing and housing was insufficient.
2. The special abilities of the labourers for certain jobs were not enough scrutinized.

So I ordered improvements of food, clothing and housing. After all I cannot say that the Komusho affair was satisfactory. I repeat that I had issued orders for good treatment and therefore I inspected several times factories and shipyards in order to see the situation with my own eyes.]

Q. Did the Kempitai interfere with the Komushos?
A. Not that I know.

Q. Had you any connection with the Kempitai?
A. No I did not. The Kempitai was a Unit, standing apart from the Army and the Civilian Government. The Army commander General HARA was the Commander of the Kempitai, like he was the Commander of the Civilian Government. My Bureau was not working with the Kempitai and we could not issue orders to each other. The Commander General HARA left all the managing of the Kempitai to the leader General NISHIDA who was responsible to him. General HARA could correct the Kempitai and he could intervene when he wished to do so. This General NISHIDA is the same man I mentioned as Commander of the Batavia, Buitenzorg and Bantam Areas. He was a fine soldier and he is no harsh or cruel man.

Q. Did you ever hear of any atrocities, committed by the Kempitai?
A. No, Sir never.

Q. The whole world knows that the Kempitai has committed a mass of tortures, ill treatments etc. Did they keep this secret from you then?
A. I did not hear of any atrocities committed by the Kempitai in Java. I do not think that they kept this secret from me.

Q. Be reasonable and you will admit that the population of Java has suffered incredibly from the hands of the Kempitai. Of course you know that.
A. Yes, Sir, I understand it now. I heard of it afterwards.

Q. When Japan had surrendered, were the armament stores well guarded?
A. They were guarded, but the Indonesians stole the weapons in East and Middle Java. In West Java I did not hear of such a thing.

Q. Do you know about the sabotage by Japanese personnel near Leirbang, where a store was blown up and a kampong was destroyed?
A. I heard of that, but then I was in Batavia and this store was a Navy store, so I had nothing to do with it. I think that the Navy personnel were guarding the store.

The above statement has been read over to me by an interpreter and is a true and correct transcript of what I have said, to the whole of which statement I now append my signature.

Signed at C'angi Jail this first day of June 1946.

Signature /s/_____

(Name in Block Capitals) Yamamoto Ichiro

Sworn before me Lt. Col. Dr. B. Dren
Signature /s/ B. Dren Rank Lt. Col.
description R.I.A. this first day of June 1946

An officer detailed to examine the above by the
Commander-in-Chief, Allied Land Forces, South East Asia
(Authy ALFSEA War Crimes Instruction No. 1 2nd Edition,
para 19 (c))

Certificate of Interpreter

I Kim Ilsun make oath and say that I truly and correctly
translated to the witness Yamamoto Yoichiro the words of
the above caution and that he thereupon elected to make
a sworn statement, that he was duly sworn, and that he then
made a statement which I truly and correctly translated in
English and was taken down by Miss L. M. Schwab I read
over the whole of the above statement to the witness in the
Japanese language and he acknowledged it as correct and
has now duly signed it in my presence and in the presence
of Lt. Col. Dr. E. Demen.

/s/ Kim Ilsun 1

EXHIBIT NO. 1758A Doc. 5733

宣誓口述書

一九四六年五月二十九日、シンガポール、
ヤンキ監獄ニ於テ陸軍中佐 B デーメン博士ノ前ニ現
現ハレ、

山本 茂 一 郎

石ノ巻ハ、凡テノ眞實ヲ語リ眞實ナラザル事ハ
語ラザルト宣誓ヲ爲シタル後、彼ニ出サレタ質問
ニ對シテ次ノ如ク答ヘタ。

問、貴方ノ姓名、生年月日、教育及ビ履歴ヲ述
ベヨ。

答、私ハ一八九八年十月八日本州和歌山縣、大
阪近クノ伊藤村ニ住ンデキル貧シイ百姓ノ
家産ニ産レタ。

私ノ宗教ハ佛教デ私ハ日本帝國陸軍ノ少將
デアル。私ハ八才ノ時伊藤村尋常小學校ニ
行キ十才迄ソコニ滞在シタ。 ×××

問、貴方ノ仕事ハ何カ人ト關係カレタ
カ

答、否、私ノ仕事ハ全ク軍事國ナ性質ノモノデ

FILE COPY

RETURNS TO ROOM 361

Doc 5733

アツタ。一九四二年三月支那カラ東京へ歸リ
ソコデ私ハ陸軍軍事訓練教育局ノ課長トナツ
タ。一九四三年八月、私ハ少將ニナツタ。コ
ノ年ノ三月バタビアノ軍政部ノ民政長官トシ
テ爪哇ニ派遣サレタ。
ホランジ・ブルヴァードノ(前ホランダ軍醫尉
被ノ家)
私ハコノ資格デ一九四三年十一月迄在任シ次
私ハ實ノ參謀長トナリソノ資格デ爪哇時ノ軍政
官トナリ、バタヴィヤ、ニ任シテ居タ。當時
ノ陸軍司令官ハ原田中將デアツタ。彼ガ現在
何處ニキルカ知ラナイ。

×××××××

問、死刑宣告ニ關スル事ニ何等カノ責任ガアツタ
カ又ハ絶對ノ自由ヲ以テ行働シタカ

答、私ハ眞法會議ニヨル死刑宣告ニハ何等ノ關係
ガナカツタ。民事裁判所ニヨル死刑宣告ハ陸
軍司令官ノ定メタ規則ニ依ツテ行ハレル事ニ
ナツテキタ。此等ノ宣告ハ、私ノ下デ判イテ
居タ治安部長ニ管ツテ調査サレホベナラナカ
ツタノデ普通ニ私ハ調査ノタメニ此等ノ宣告
ヲ受理シタコトハナカツタ。

2.

Doc 5733

3.

固、 處刑ヲ止メル權限ハ貴方ニアツタカ

答、 アツタト思フ、然シ私ハ、ヨイロツバ人カラ
一 度モ助命真願ヲ受ケタコトガナカツタ、コ
レガ私ハ尋常ニ知ラナイ。

固、 日本ノ降伏後貴官ハ一スラバヤニ在任ノ若干
ノオランダ臣民ノ處刑執行ヲ而モ日本ノ降伏
後認許シタ旨認メラレル手紙ヲ、巡洋艦カン
バーランド號乗組ノ、パイターソン海軍少將
ニ送ツタ。

答、 サウデス、然シソノ手紙ハ私自身ガ読イタモ
ノデハナカツタ私ノ部下ノ將校ノ一人ニ依ツ
テ讀カレタモノデ私ガソレニ地名シタ。實際
ハ治安部長ガ更爪陸ニ於ケル若干ノ人團ニ關
スル處刑ノ認許ヲ行シタ、私ノ記憶ガ正シケ
レバ、彼等ノ處刑ハ延期サレテアツタ。彼等
ハ一九四三年一月民衆裁判所ニヨツテ宣告サ
レテキタノデアツタ。

固、 然ラバ貴方ハ爪陸デ生殺ノ權ヲ有スル長デア
ツタノカ。

答、 ソウデハナイ。

4.

Doc 5733

問、貴方ノ軍政官時代ニ施行サレタ凡テノ處刑ニ

對シ責任アルコトヲ認メルカ。

答、サウデス、私ハ認メマス。軍政官トシテ私ハ

此等ノ處刑ニ關シ管ニ私ノ行爲ノミナラズ、

私ガ知ツテキタ時ニハ、治安部長ノ活種ニモ

責任ガアツタ。ソノ限リニ於テ私ハ責任ガア

ツタ。若シ死刑宣告ヲ受ケタ者ノ處刑ガ私ガ

知ラズニ實行サレタトスルナラバ私ハ自ラ責

任アルトハ信ジナイ。

問、現在貴方ハ、自分ノ部下ニ對シ、彼等ヲ監督

スベキ上官デアツタガ故ニ、貴方ノ責任ヲ認

メルカ

答、然リ、私ハ現在認メマス。私ハ處刑ヲ止メサ

セル事ハ出來タシ且ツ刑ノ宣告ヲ減刑スル權

限ヲ持ツテキタ。凡テガ軍司令官ノ認許ノ下

及ビ彼ノ名義ニ於テ爲サレタ。法規ニヨレバ

助命嘆願ガ爲サレタ時ハ凡テノ死刑宣告ハ治

安部長ニ依ツテ調査サレネバナラナカツタ。

ソレハ目下「ガラソグ」ニキル宮野ノ審判ノ

デアツタ。

問、此等ノ者ガ何テ告發サレタカ記憶シテキルカ

答、私ハ正確ニ記憶シテ居ナイ、私ガコノ事件ニ關シテ言ヒ得

ル唯一ノ事ハ提議サレタ處刑ガ施行サレテキナト私ハ思
フト云フ事デアル。

Doc 5733

× × × × × × × ×

問、 勞務者組織ハ如何ニ活動シテキタカ

答、 瓜哇以外へ勞務者ヲ移送スルト云フ事ハ常ニ
 第七地區總司令官、シンガポール居住ノ板垣
 將軍ニ、依ツテ命令サレタ、私ハソレニハ何モ
 關係カナカツタ、然シ瓜哇内ニ於テハ狀況ハ
 別テアツタ、産業、植紙、炭素等ノタメニ、
 日本政府ハ私ノ到着以前ニ勞務者團體トシテ
 知ラレタ勞務機關ヲ開始シテキタ、コノ組織
 ハ、小規模デアツタケレドモ、私カ瓜哇ニ
 來タ時既ニ活動シテ居タ、私ハソレノ長テア
 ツテ私ノ下ニバタヴァイア、内政部ノ勞務局カ
 軍島高橋ヲ長トシテ活動シテ居タ、彼ハ目下
 カラングニ居ル、彼ハ私ノ名義テ前記目的ノ
 タメニ充分ナル勞務者ヲ調達スル爲ニ命令ヲ
 發シタ、勞働ハ自發的テ給料モ拂ハレタ、高
 橋ハ其筋ノ民間人ニ命令ヲ發シ次イテ彼等ハ
 「ウエダナス」及ビ「ロエラス」ヲ命ジテ特
 定産業ノタメニ要請サレタル人方ヲ集メル様
 強制サレタ、仕事ハ工場、鐵道、織物工場等
 テナサレタ

問、 コノ勞働ハ住民ノ凡テノ階級及ビ凡テノ民族
 ニヨツテ實施サレネバナラナカツタカ

Doc 5733

答、誰デモ仕事ニツク事カ出来タ、ソレハ強制労働
 働デハナカツタ、彼等ハ日本陸軍ノタメノ防
 務工事にモ働イテキタ、然シ勞務者ノ數カ不
 充分デアツタノデ組織ハウマク働イテキナカ
 ナカツタ、特ニ我々ノ降服前ノ數ヶ月ハ事情
 カ一層混亂シ勞務者ハ最早ヤ使用サレナカツ
 タ、私ハコノ労働カ強制デハナカツタ事ヲ斷
 言シテ憚ラナイ、我々ノ飛行機用ノ脂油ヲ得
 ルタメニ住民ハ道路ニ沿ツテ何處デモ一トヤ
 ラク、ケリキレヲ植エル様ニヤサシク依頼サ
 レタ、コノ栽培ニモ金ハ支拂ハレタ、私ニ依
 ツテ發セラレタ凡テノ命令ハ、コノ労働カ自
 由労働デアルト指示シテキタ、優秀ナ仕事ニ
 對シテ給料ヲ拂フ勞務協會モ存在シタ

問、然シ住民ハ労働ヲ強制サレタ事ヲ我々ハ知ツ
 テ居リ從ツテコノ労働カ實際ニ自由デアツタ
 カドウカ私ハ疑フ

答、私ノ命令ハ自由労働ヲ考ヘテキタカ然シ私ノ
 部下カ越權シタカドウカ、且ツソウイフ事カ
 アリ得タカ私ハ知ラナイ、トニカク私ハソシ
 ナ事ヲ知ラナイ

問、貴方ハPノ勞務者組織ニ對シテ満足シテ居タ

Doc 5733

7.

答、否、モツト仕事カヨクナサレルベキダト考へ
 ル、私ヲ悩マズニツノ問題ガアツタ
 ニ 勞務者ハ食事ガ不足シ衣服及ビ住居ガ不充
 分デアツタ
 ニ 一定ノ仕事ニ對スル勞務者ノ特殊技能ガ充
 分調査サレテ居ナカツタ
 ソコテ私ハ食物、衣服及ビ住居ノ改善ヲ命
 ジタ、結局勞務者問題カ満足スベキデアツ
 タトハ言ヘナイ、繰返シテ言ヒマスガ私ハ
 待遇ヲ好クスル爲ニ命令ヲ出シテキマシタ
 ソレテ自分自身ノ眼テ状況ヲ見ルタメニ度
 々工場及ビ造船場ヲ視察シマシタ

××××××××××××××××××

Doc 5733

7.

答、否、モット仕事カヨクナサレルベキダト考へ
 ル、私ヲ憫マスニツノ問題カアツタ
 一 勞務者ハ食事カ不足シ衣服及ビ住居カ不充
 分デアツタ
 二 一定ノ仕事ニ對スル勞務者ノ特殊技能カ充
 分調査サレテ居ホカツタ
 ソコテ私ハ食物、衣服及ビ住居ノ改善ヲ命
 ジタ、結局勞務者問題カ満足スベキデアツ
 タトハ言ヘナイ、繰返シテ言ヒマスガ私ハ
 待遇ヲ好クスル爲ニ命令ヲ出シテホマシタ
 ソレテ自分自身ノ眼テ状況ヲ見ルタメニ度
 々工場及ビ造船場ヲ視察シマシタ

×××××××××××××××××

Doc 5733

上記ノ原通ハ通譯ニヨツテ私ニ讀ミ送サレ且ツ、
私ノ言ツル事ノ良否ニツテ正確ナル點ヲ示スル、
ソノ原通ノ全文ニ對シ私ハ今書込ヲ添へル。

一九四六年六月一日　チヤンキ監譯ニテ書込セ
リ

署名

山本茂一郎

(即屬ニヨル氏行)

YAMAMOTO MOICHIRO

余、東京甲佐B・チーメン博士ノ旨ニテ寫書セ
リ

署名 ————— (轉者注・列讀不能)

附錄　山本甲佐

記述、R・E・H・▲　一九四六年(昭和二十一年)

六月一日

東南アジア、聯合軍國軍總司令部ニ送ツテ上記
ヲ轉送スル為ニ派遣セラレタ將校ナリ。

(A I E S E A / 東南アジア聯合軍山本甲佐等宛

新聞分第一、第二版一九(A)頁ノ柱限)

通譯者ノ監譯書

私、キム、イル、チンハ實際ツテ讀過ス。

私ハ監人山本茂一郎ニ對シ上記監譯書ノ言葉ヲ與

8.

9.

Doc 5733

...

貴且ツ正襟ニ備録シ彼ガソコテ正襟貫通シテスベ
 ク通ヒ正式ニ呈請シタル事、及ヒ彼ガ貫通シテス
 事ヲ私ハ長官且ツ正襟ニ呈請ニ加録シ、H. M.
 シユリアブはニ候ツテ着キトラレルノヲ見タル事
 及ヒ、私ハ日本語テ西人ニ對シ、可記宣通シテ式
 儀シテキカセ、彼ハソレガ正襟ナル事ヲ察メ私ノ
 目前及ヒ國算甲佐B・デ・イ・メ・ン博士ノ目前テ正式
 ニ呈請シタルモノデアル。

キム・イル サン / 長官 /

C. # 1139

Doc. No. 5734

Page 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant
R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS
FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NLFIS) being first duly sworn
on oath deposes and states that the annexed document,
entitled:

"Statement of Dr. C.H.O. van der Plas, Batavia, Political
Adviser to the Netherlands Indies Government, dated 22 June
1946",

has been taken from the official records of the NLFIS.

/s/ Charles Jongeneel

SEAL

June 25th. 1946

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. DE WEEED, LL.D.
First Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Senior official attached to
the Office of the Attorney-General N.I.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

[s t a t e m e n t]

of Dr. Ch. O. van der PLAS, Batavia, political adviser to the Netherlands Indies Government.

Lulij sworn, Dr. Ch.O. van der PLAS states:

I am 55 years of age, of Netherlands nationality.

My permanent home is Batavia, where I am living at present.

On September 15, 1945, I arrived on the British cruiser "Cumberland" at Batavia, in my function of representative of the Netherlands Indies Government with C.S.5 Rear Admiral Patterson, on which day Major General YAMAMOTO came on board as Chief of General Staff, in order to receive instructions concerning the Japanese preparations for internment as prisoners of war;

A few days later, the Red Cross, I think it was the British Red Cross at KANDY, requested British Rear Admiral PATTERSON, Chief Allied Officer in Command, to inquire into the execution at SOERABAYA, after Japan's capitulation on August 15th, of a number of Dutch and Chinese for political activities against the Japanese.

On a date between September 23 and 26 a letter was received from General YAMAMOTO in reply to the British request for information, in which, while enclosing a list of names, he admitted the fact of the execution, and stated to have granted fiat (order) for the execution on a date between August 22 and 25, which letter and list were shown to me and were read by me.

I have been informed, before September 27th, that General YAMAMOTO had claimed back his letter in order to make a few changes in same;

I have not seen the new letter from General YAMAMOTO, but heard from Admiral PATTERSON's secretary that only slight alterations were made in the list of names;

This communication was made to me on one of the last days of September, in any case before October 4th;

I remember that the list of names contained for the major part Dutch names and a minority of Chinese names and that on the first list one person appeared whose offence, had not been political action, but an ordinary offence, namely rape and manslaughter. This was a Chinese. The number of people executed I do not remember with positiveness, but I seem to remember there were 19.]

I presume that the Red Cross will have more details and that British Head Quarters positively must have them, as the relative documents went over to AFNLI.

Made out according to the full and complete truth, at Batavia, June 22nd. 1946.

/s/ van der Plas

Sworn and subscribed before me, K. A. de Weerd, 1st Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Senior official attached to the Office of the Attorney General, N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

I presume that the Red Cross will have more details and that British Head Quarters positively must have them, as the relative documents went over to A.F.N.I.

Made out according to the full and complete truth, at Batavia, June 22nd. 1946.

/s/ van der Plas

Sworn and subscribed before me, K. A. de Weerd, 1st Lieutenant R.M.I.A., Senior official attached to the Office of the Attorney General, N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

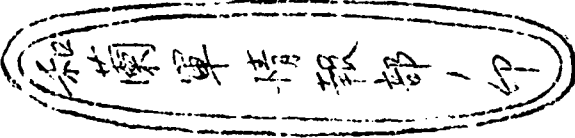
書目表 五七三四号

證明書

Sx 1759-A EVIDENTARY Doc. # 5734

下名 R. N. I. A. 中尉 和蘭軍情報部 (N E F - S)
戦争犯罪課長、チャールズ、ヨングニールハ正堂ニ宣誓
為シタル上別紙添附、書目表、即チ和蘭領印政府政
法顧問、バタヴィア、在任 Ch. O. ヴァン、デア、プラス博士、
陳述、一九四六年六月二十三日ニ題名、モ、右和蘭
軍情報部ノ公記録ヨリ探録セラレタルコトヲ証明ス
チャールズ、ヨングニール / 署名

一九四六年六月二十五日



右ニ本職 R. N. I. A. 中尉 N. E. I. 法務廳 附 上席官タル
K. A. ヴァン、アード、法学博士ノ面前ニ於テ署名ト宣誓シ
テ為シタル

K. A. ヴァン、アード / 署名

No. 1

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

書類 五七三四号

陳述書

蘭領印政府政治顧問「バタヴィア」在任

「Ch. O. ヴァン・デア・プラス」博士

Doc 5734

Ch. O. ヴァン・デア・プラス博士ハ正堂ニ宣誓ヲ爲シタル上、尤、
通リ陳述ス。

私ハ五十五才ヲ和蘭國籍ノ者デアリマス。私ノ永住ノ家ハ
「バタヴィア」ニ在リテ其処ニ現在住ンテ居リマス。

一九四五年九月十五日ニ私ハ英國巡洋艦「カバラド」
号ヲ「バタヴィア」へ蘭領印政府ノ代表タル職務ヲ以テ、

U.S.S. 「バタス」ノ海軍少將ト共ニ到着シマス。同日少將
陸軍少將ハ參謀本部長トシテ、日本側ガ停滯トシテ、
抑留ヲ受ケタル準備ニ因テ指示ノ受領、爲メニ右軍
艦ニ来リシタ。

数日後亦十字、多分「キアプテ」ノ英國赤十字ト思フ
ガ、聯合軍指揮官「バタス」ノ英海軍少將ニ日本ガ降伏
シタ八月十五日以後、日本側ニ反対シテ政治活動ヲ爲シ
多数、和蘭人及支那人ガ「スラバヤ」テ処刑サレタトニ蘭
ノ調査ヲ懇請シマス。

情報ヲ乘メタ英國側、要請ニ答ヘテ九月二十三日ト二十六
日ニ山本少將カラ一書ガ参リマシタ。ソレハ名簿ヲ同封シ

山本ハ処刑ノ事實ヲ承認シ、又八月二十日ト二十五日ノ期
ニ於テ、処刑ニ対スル正式認許(命令)ヲ與ヘタトヲ述
ベテアリマシタ。此ノ手紙ノ名簿トハ私ニ示サシ私ハ之ヲ讀
ミシタ。

No. 2

Doc. 5734

私ハ山本少將ガ其ノ名簿、以ニ多少ノ変更ヲ加ヘガ事ニ其ノ
半額ノ取戻ヲ要求シタルコトヲ九月二十七日以テ承認シテ申シタリ。

私ハ山本少將カラ、抄ラシイ名簿ヲ讀ミテ居リマセシ。
然シ、バタス之海軍少將、秘書カラ僅ノ変更ノミガ
名簿ニ加ヘラレタコトヲ聞キマシタリ。

右ノ通告ハ九月下旬、或ル日、鬼三角、十月四日以前ニ
私ニ対シテ爲サレマシタリ。

私ハ名簿ガ大部分ハ知蘭名ヲソシテ、少数ノ支那人ヲ
含ミテ居タコト、最初、名簿、甲ニハ其ノ犯行ガ政治
的動機ヲハタク、通常ノ犯行、即チ強姦ト不慮致死者
ガ一人現レテ居タル事ニ非ラス。之ハ支那人デアリマシタリ。
処刑セラレタ者ノ數ヲ私ハ確實ニハ知リマセシ。然シ九名
テアツタト憶ヘテ居ルヤウニ思ヒマス。

* * * * *

右ハ一九四六年六月二十日バタヤニ於テ完全な次ナル真
實ニ基キ作製セリ。

ザアン・デア・プラス署名

右ハ本職 R. N. I. A 中尉 N. E. I. 海務廳 附 上席官タル
K. A. ダウキアード、面前ニ於テ宣誓ト署名トヲ
爲シタリ。

K. A. ダウキアード署名

No. 3

Ex. #1760

Doc. No. 5756

Page 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS), being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed reports are full, true, complete and accurate copies of the original documents entitled:

- 1 Javint report 3106/3, 20 Oct 1945 (OM/232/E), containing statement of Kempei Major KATSUMURA,
- 2 Javint report 3106/1, 18 Oct. 1945 (OM/231/E), concerning case "Koo" officers concerned.
- 3 Javint report 3003/2, (OM/237/E), further interrogation of Kempei Major KATSUMURA and Sgt. Major HAMADA of Buitenzorg Kempei-tai,

copies of which documents are part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE: *C.H. Jongeneel*

SEAL

BATAVIA, June 7th 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. de WEEED, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher official attached to the office of the Attorney - General N.E.I.

/s/ K.A. de WEEED.

OC
4 Int Unit,
23 Ind Div.

CONFIDENTIAL

1401
OM 232/E
Javint 3106/3, 20 Oct 45

[Herewith translation of 15 page statement handed over by Kempei Major KATSUMURA on 20 Oct 45.]

1. Origin of the report from Sgt-Maj YABANA ()

Sgt-Maj YABANA is not here, and so it is not clear; but, at that time, in Hq, he was working with a number of other people and, if they could be collected, it would certainly be possible to discover the names of the spies.

The following were working with Sgt-Maj YABANA at the time:

- Lt. ONISHI ()
- Lt. OKUBO ()
- Sgt. Maj ICHIKAWA ()
- Sgt. Maj KAGIYA ()
- Sgt. Maj MORIWAKI ()
- Sgt. Maj YAZAKI ()
- Sgt. Maj KAWANISHI ()
- Sgt. Maj TAKAHASHI ()

Plus 5/6 others.

All are at present concentrated in BOGOR and neighbourhood. For Maj KATSUMURA to demand a direct explanation in reply would be quickest and simplest.

[II The reason for putting into effect KO KASAKU (TN Yellow operation -?)

At the beginning of 1943, in SUMATRA, every kind of anti-Japanese espionage organisation was discovered, and this order came out from the GOC SUMATRA Army. Investigators came from JAVA also to cover the case, and the Army, in order to clear everything up before the Allies counter-attack, and prevent any damage being done, set up the necessary internal defence.

With the Army in central control, the following investigation system was enforced:

Army

Mil Adm Dept of Army KEMPEI various def BEPPAN
Civil Peace Tai units

This operation was known as Operation 'JI', and took place between Aug 43 and Mar 44. At this time there were many suspects picked up and

held by each unit of the Kempei tai; in view of the number of suspects and the place, they weren't sent up to Court-Martial because otherwise the latter would not have been able to cope with the work; thus a speedy settlement was difficult. On the other hand the war situation was daily growing more unfavourable to us, and in view of the possibility of an Allied landing it was decided to deal with the criminals as quickly as possible. Consequently, where the crime was clearly proved, and the death sentence considered suitable, on the decision of Army the criminals were punished wherever they were.

This was carried out fortnightly by every detachment of every section, on the orders of Army / and in accordance with the regulations for Courts of Military Law and similar ceremonies.

On these occasions, we were ordered to preserve secrecy, and to this end chose a place remote from sight, and a time early in the morning, or in the evening.

III. Procedure after execution.

After execution, of the punishment, time and place were at once reported to HQ, who at once reported to Army.

IV. People actually employed on this KO (yellow) operation.

The people actually employed were Staff Officer MASUGI (), of Army, and Maj. MURASE (), Chief of Dept at Hq, Kempei Tai.

V. Assistants of the above.

Capt NOMURA (), attd Staff Officer MASUGI
Lt. ONISHI (), attd Maj MURASE

VI. Present whereabouts of above 4.

Staff officer MASUGI - Staff officer of a div in Malaya
Maj MURASE - Staff GHQ of KEMPEI TAI, TOKYO
Capt. NOMURA - JAPANESE troop concentration near BOGOR
Lt. ONISHI - BOGOR KEMPEI TAI

VII. Men responsible for 'KO' Operation.

The operation was begun and carried through by MASUGI and MURASE, so naturally the burden of responsibility rests with them. Except that, if any of the reports which they received in the course of their activities

were false, they are no longer responsible for them. All other persons acted on orders and are not responsible. For this reason it is essential for the clarification of the case to recall MASUGI and URASE to JAVA with the utmost despatch.

VIII. How to treat this case.

It is first of all desirable to call a committee for the investigation of Operation 'KC', consisting of Staff Officer OBANA (), who succeeded MASUGI, and Maj KATSUMURA, who succeeded Maj MURASE. This committee would investigate the items listed below, and then, together with a committee of Allied authorities, make necessary additions in order to establish the truth, after which action can be taken.

Following particulars about the accused:

Name, age, sex, nationality, date of execution, place of execution. (These particulars are already being prepared at the request of the Allied authorities, but they still have to be revised). Reason for execution in each case, proof used to convict, investigator, executioner, OC Section and Detachment (also present address of KEMPEI concerned).

IX. Items to be investigated regarding the KEMPEI.

If there are any items to be investigated regarding the KEMPEI TAI, Maj KATSUMURA, is responsible for them (as announced by Comd 'DENVER' of the British Navy about the middle of September, so please ask him about them, if Maj KATSUMURA postpones the investigation, or makes false reports, he should be punished by the Allies.

X. Career of Maj KATSUMURA in JAVA.

- 3 Jan 43. Arrived BATAVIA by plane (Lt)
- 19 Jan 43. Studying JAVA in BATAVIA Hq
- 20 Jan 43. Transferred to SOERABAYA KEMPEI Buntai (SEC) As Senior General Affairs Officer, studied actual operation of Kempei Tai.
- 1 Mar 43. Promoted KEMPEI Capt.
- 5 Mar 43. Transferred to BOGOR as OC KEMPEI Buntai there.
- 10 Mar 43. Reached BOGOR Buntai. In Apr, sent in reports of several cases already decided by my predecessor. When Army started Operation 'JI', began the following investigations:

KYUSAIDAN (Rescue Gp) - treated by civil adm as a minor case and not sent to court-martial. Investigated by Sgt. Maj KIBA. ()

WERNING Secret Organisation (this case NOT yet finished).

Activity in planning recapture of NEI (investigation nearly finished, but case NOT yet settled). Investigated by Sgt. Maj HAMADA.

'DEPOK' Secret organisation (anti-Japanese secret organisation by half-castles and ALBONESE). Investigated by Sgt. maj OGAMI ().

Reconstructed 'NETTER' secret organisation. Investigated by Sgt. Maj HAMADA

20 Dec 43. Transferred to SEMARANG KEMPEI TAI as OC succeeded by Lt. TANIGUCHI ()

23 Dec 43. Arrived SEMARANG. Took over 'Mayor of Semarang spying case' (Investigated by Sgt. Maj KANEKO () and finished about Dec 44, but the investigator was changed towards the end).

Railway sabotage case (Feb-Jul 44. But Capt KATEMURA was studying for an exam in the Army University, so not so much concerned in the case. Investigated by Sgt. Maj NEDACHI ().

'SUDERO' Communist Party case INDONESIAN Communists. Case closed by instructions from HQ. Investigated by Sgt. TANAKA ().

During the time in BOGOR and SEMARANG, there were also a few minor cases of rumour-mongering and violating the laws on radios.

1 Dec 44. Promoted KEMPEI Maj

15 Jan 45. Transferred to KEMPEI HQ

20 Jan 45. Arrived Hq. BATAVIA. Took over Chief of Trg. Dept.

20 Feb 45. present time. As Chief of Mil Affairs and Trg Depts. assisted Head of the Kempai Tai.]

XI. OCs of BOGOR KEMPEI Buntai

Mar 42 - May 42 Lt TANIGUCHI

May 42 - Mar 43 Capt CHO ()

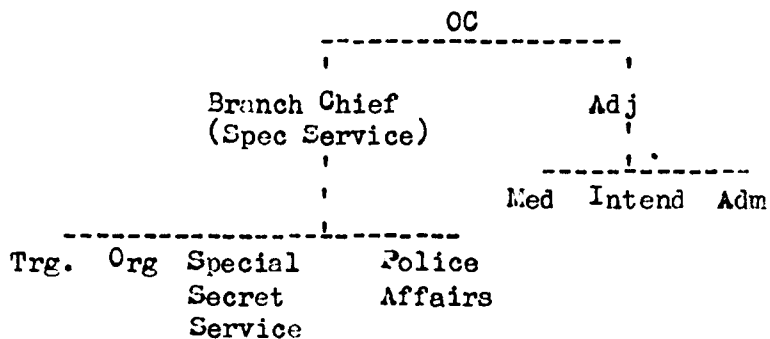
Mar 43 - Dec 43 Capt KATSUMURA
 Dec 43 - Feb 45 Lt TANIGUCHI
 Feb 45 - Capt IWANASA ()

XII. OCs of SEMARANG KEMPEI Buntai

Mar 42 - Apr 42 Lt KAMBARA ()
 Apr 42 - Mar 43 Capt YAJIMA ()
 Mar 43 - Dec 43 (TN - Capt deleted)
 Maj YONEJURA ()
 Dec 43 - Jan 45 Capt KATSUMURA
 Jan 45 - Capt WADA ()

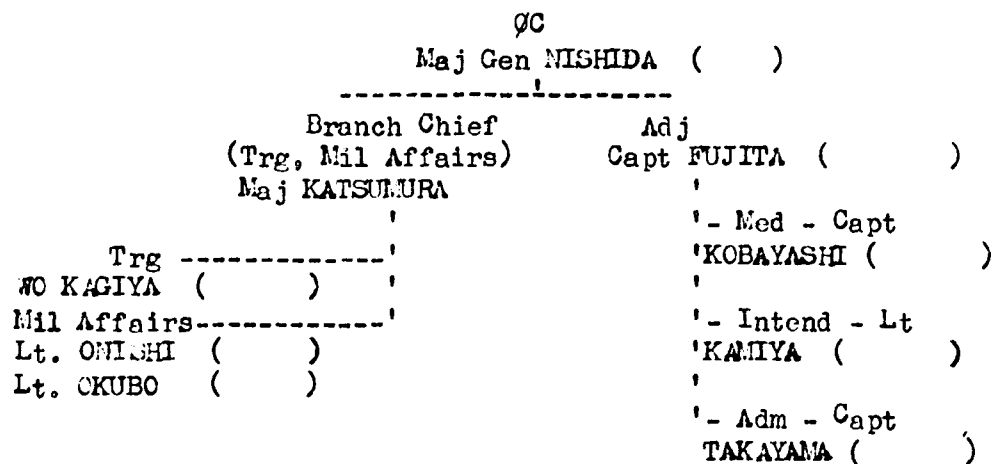
XIII. Organisation of HQ JAVA KEMPEI Tai

a. Formerly (up to about Mar 43)

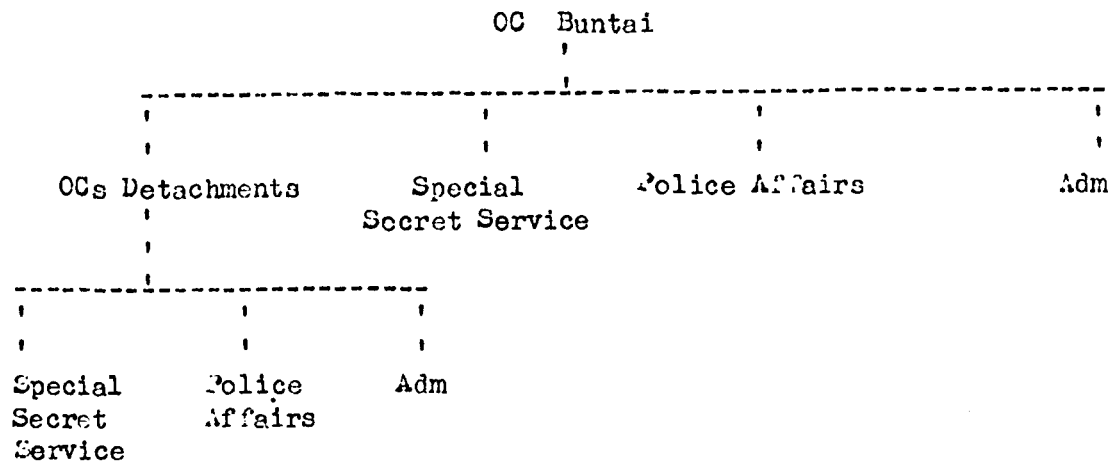


One officer responsible for each Han.

b. Present set-up.

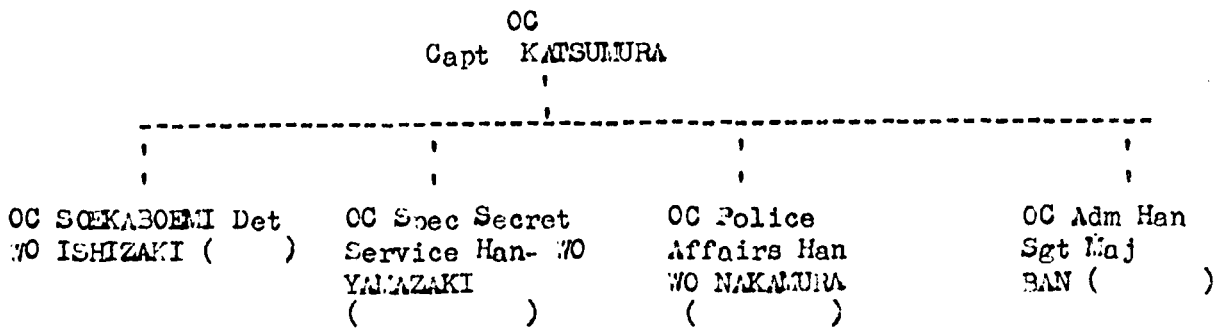


XIV. Organisation of Kempei Buntai (Sections).

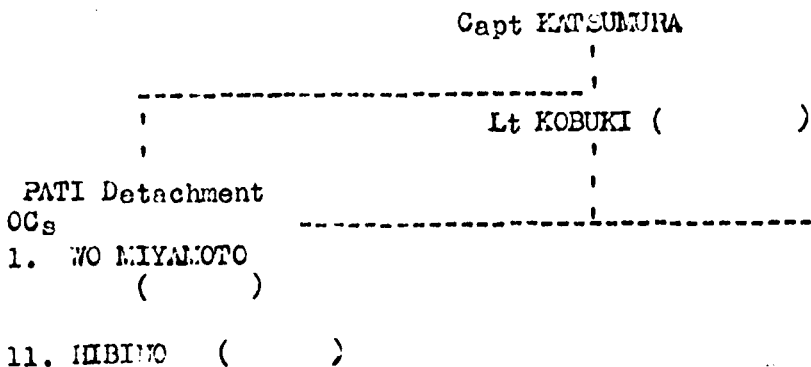


A WO or Sgt-Maj is responsible for each Han, and sometimes one Chief controls several han. In accordance with the changes in HQ, in the Sections too Mil Affairs and Adm have been divided.

Organisation of BOGOR Buntai (1943)



Organisation of SEMARANG KEMPEI TAI (1944)



Spec Secret Service Han	Police Affairs Han OCs	Adm Han OCs
1. WO KANDO ()	1. WO TAKAMIYA ()	1. WO KANDO ()
11. Sgt. Maj WAKIYAMA ()	11. WO AIZAWA ()	11. Sgt-Maj HASHIMOTO ()
111. WO HIBINO ()		

XV. General situation of civil peace in JAVA and operation 'KO'

At the time of the Japanese attack in Mar 42, all the people, especially DUTCH, half-castes, AMBONESE and MENADONESE, being strongly influenced by DUTCH propaganda, believed that the DUTCH would reconquer the island within 3 months. Accordingly, soldiers, government officials and civilians made preparations for the counter-attack, believing that without their help the DUTCH would not be strong enough to retain the initiative in a counterattack, and imbued with a strong feeling of patriotism. For this purpose, there were many schemes, utilising the former (TN - DUTCH - established) installation destruction groups, the administrative machinery, troops still at large, and native youths. In fact the organisations were legion. On the other hand, the Japanese army filled with the spirit of victory even the air-raid shelters were filled in, and nothing was done to conflict with the spirit of peace.

After Jun or Jul one or two espionage organisations were discovered and picked up one by one. There however were very local, in BANDOENG, BATAVIA, BOGOR and SOERABAYA, and were thought to be only isolated minor cases. With the discovery of these cases, and the realisation that the Allied counter-attack was to be delayed, the formation of espionage organisations ceased, and from Dec 42 to Apr 43 a period of real peace and quiet ensued. From about Apr 43, however, as the war situation in SWP grew more and more unfavourable to the Japanese, the people, especially DUTCH, half-castes, AMBONESE and MENADONESE, began to believe in the imminence of the Allied attack, and underground activity once again increased. At the same time the JAPANESE army awoke from their easy confidence, and began to prepare against a possible Allied landing. In other words, it was a time of crisis, in view of the dangers of trouble from within and of Allied action from without.

At this juncture a big espionage case was discovered in SUMATRA, and a wide organisation unearthed there. It was also considered that a very similar organisation probably existed in JAVA, and in order to investigate this, operation 'JI' was begun, and, to bring it to a speedy conclusion, operation 'KO'.

TN - the word operation has been used to translate 'KOSAKU' throughout, though it is not clear if KETSULURA is referring to the operation itself or to the operatives concerned in it).

CONFIDENTIAL.

JAVINT/3104/1

18th October 1945.

Concerning Case "Hoo"

Officers concerned.

Army HQ.

Staff Officer MASUGI (Chief of Judicial Affairs
Department)

MASUGI

Attache Capt. NOMURA

NOMURA

Kempeitai.

Major MURASE

MURASE

Attache Lt. ONISHI

ONISHI

Officers commanding all units and sub-units concerned.

Officers commanding all TOKKOOHAN (Special Secret Sections)

All investigating Kempei.

All Executioners.

SUMMARY.

1. In accordance with "OSAMU" plans, this case was dealt with on the spot at the decision of the military, so as to settle it as soon as possible.
2. The investigating Officer decided whether to inflict death sentence. The Hanchoo then approved it and after the Buntaichoo had approved it the documents were presented to HQ.
3. Firstly it was presented to several high officers at HQ, then to the Chief of the Department, then to the Chief of the Kempeitai, and finally to Army HQ, where it passed from Lt. NOMURA to the Staff Officer (MASUGI). After this, it is not clear how it was decided (But Capt. NOMURA may know something about this). Anyway, the order agreeing with the sentence was passed down.
4. This execution took place in strict secrecy, in the same way as after a Court Martial.

OSAMU

CONFIDENTIAL.

JAVINT/3106/1

18th October 1945.

Concerning Case "Koo"

Officers concerned.

Army HQ.

Staff Officer MASUGI (Chief of Judicial Affairs
Department)

MASUGI

Attache Capt. NOMURA

NOMURA

Kempeitai.

Major MURASE

MURASE

Attache Lt. ONISHI

ONISHI

Officers commanding all units and sub-units concerned.

Officers commanding all TOKKOOHAN (Special Secret Sections)

All investigating Kempei.

All Executioners.

SUMMARY.

1. In accordance with "OSAMU" plans, this case was dealt with on the spot at the decision of the military, so as to settle it as soon as possible.
2. The investigating Officer decided whether to inflict death sentence. The Hanchoo then approved it and after the Bun-taichoo had approved it the documents were presented to HQ.
3. Firstly it was presented to several high officers at HQ, then to the Chief of the Department, then to the Chief of the Kempeitai, and finally to Army HQ, where it passed from Lt. NOMURA to the Staff Officer (MASUGI). After this, it is not clear how it was decided (But Capt. NOMURA may know something about this). Anyway, the order agreeing with the sentence was passed down.
4. This execution took place in strict secrecy, in the same way as after a Court Martial.

OENJU

Reasons.

Owing to the civil and military situation, it was essential to deal with this case as quickly as possible and to prepare to repulse the Allied onslaught.

Officer who ordered the execution.

Name of C-in-C: Lt. General HARADA

HARADA

But the case was examined by Staff Officer MASUGI.

Method of dealing with case.

We first, within one week, investigated the following facts.

1. Name, age, and race of victim.
2. Investigating Officer. Hanchoo; Buntaichoo (Bunkentaichoo)
3. Name of executioner, place and method of execution.
4. Liaison carried on inside Army circles.

Sheet 2./

Period covering executions, July 1943 - March 1944.

Number of persons executed, (approx.).

Banjoewangi	150
Soerabaya	50
Madoera	20
Semarang	1
Djoekdjakarta	20
Soerakarta	10
Banjoemas (Proekoerta)	5
Chirebon	0
Bandoeng	10
Bogor	7
Serang	0
Djakarta	20

TOTAL	293

Doc. 5756

Ex 1760-A

No. 1

證明書

秘蘭軍情報部 (Z. I. S.) 駐英武官課長少佐記
署名、蘭印陸軍中尉、予、ル、三、ツ、ニ、ル、ハ、先、之、是
當ニ宣誓セリ後、別紙報告が左記表題ノ原文書、完
全、真実、無欠、正確ナル爲ナルトテ、證明ス

一、「ジエ、イ、ウ、エ、オ」報告書三一〇六ノ三

一九四五年、昭和二十年、十月二十日附 (OM) 三三三

(上) 勝村憲忠兵少佐、陳述書ヲ含ム

二、「ジエ、イ、ウ、エ、オ」報告書三一〇六ノ一

一九四五年、昭和二十年、十月十八日附 (OM) 三三一

(E) 「黄」將校等、關係セシ事件ニ関ス

x x x x x x

右文書ノ爲、秘蘭軍情報部公式記録、一部
ナリ

署名

秘蘭軍情報部

予、ル、三、ツ、ニ、ル

一九四六年、昭和二十一年、六月七日 於、倫敦

蘭領東印度揆事總長事務室附屬上級官吏、

蘭印陸軍中尉、ル、秘、K、A、「テ、ウ、ア、ト」、面

前ニ於テ署名シ、宣誓セリナリ

(署名) K、A、「テ、ウ、ア、ト」

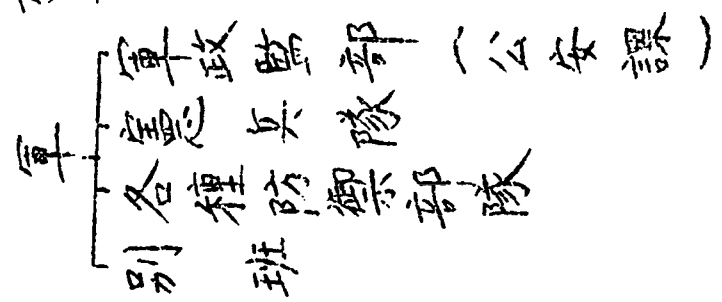
x x x x x

Doc. 5766

左記ハ一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ十月二十日勝村憲兵少佐ヨリ手交セララル十五頁ノ陳述書ノ録

× × × × × ×

ニ、黄工作（原記者註黄工作一？）実施ノ理由
一九四三年ノ昭和十八年ノ初メ「スマトラ」ニ於テ、對日諜報組織、一切ガ摘發サレ、本命令ガ「スマトラ」軍將官司令官等カラ来タ。「シヤング」ヨリモ本事件詳細報告、タメ調査員来リ、軍、聯合軍及警等ニ先立テ一切ヲ除去シ損害ヲ未然ニ防グタメニ、必要ナル内部的防備ヲ組織シタ。
軍ヲ中心統制カトシテ、左記ノ調査組織ガ実施サレタ



右工作ハ「シ」工作トシテ知ラレ、一九四三年ノ昭和十八年ノ八月ヨリ一九四四年ノ昭和十九年ノ三月ノ間行ハレタ。當時多數ノ容疑者ガ検束サレ憲兵隊ノ各部ニ留置サレテ来タガ、ソノ数ト場所トノ關係ニ鑑ミ軍法會議ニハ送ラレナカッタ。何故ナラ送ラ

No 2

1/04

Doc. 5756

三、裁判執行部、提議

死刑執行後、新聞、場所、が直々、司令部、報告、す、司令部、ハ、上、提、す、提、す、提、す、提、す、

10、「ミヤコ」三、勝村少佐、経歴

田三井一月三日、参謀「ミヤコ」者、(中略)

田三井一月十日、「ミヤコ」司令部、命令、部、ニ、ミヤコ、研究、ス、リ

田三井一月二十日、「ミヤコ」参謀、命令、部、ニ、参謀、将校、

ミヤコ、参謀、将校、家、地、主、性、研、究、

田三井二月十日、参謀、大、尉、ニ、進、級、

田三井三月五日、参謀、大、尉、ニ、進、級、

田三井三月十日、「ミヤコ」参謀、将校、ニ、決、定、増、加、

事件、二、箇、ニ、報告、書、送、附、す、

始、

救済、團、一、民、故、案、ニ、小、事、件、ト、シ、取、扱、ス、

致、サ、ル、

「ミヤコ」参謀、組、織、(本、件、未、了)、

活、動、(調、査、給、了、ス、

査、

「ミヤコ」参謀、組、織、(欧、印、混、血、人、及、ヒ、

秘、密、組、織)「ミヤコ」参謀、調、査、

再、建、ス、

田三井十一月二十日、谷、口、中、尉、ヲ、後、継、者、ト、シ、

隊長、ニ、轉、属、

Doc 5753

據定座、平和、精神、不慮、之、事、何、之、事、カ、
六月、七月、後、二、密偵組織、發見、之、夫、及、檢、察、カ、然、
シ、之、ハ、之、ハ、之、ハ、之、ハ、之、ハ、之、ハ、之、ハ、之、ハ、之、ハ、
タル、小、事、件、ト、見、ル、事、又、此、等、時、件、露、見、ト、聯、合、軍、及、攻、
進、ト、云、フ、事、實、ニ、リ、密、偵、組、織、ヲ、作、ル、事、ハ、四、三、年、十、二、月、カ、四、
三、年、四、月、迄、真、ニ、平、和、ト、警、報、時、期、ヲ、續、ケ、タ、然、シ、四、三、年、四、月、頃、カ、
南、西、太、平、洋、ニ、於、テ、戰、況、ガ、日、本、軍、ニ、取、リ、益、及、不、利、ト、ナ、リ、テ、敵、人、
民、特、和、蘭、人、混、血、人、ト、シ、人、及、シ、人、聯、合、軍、及、攻、切、迫、
信、之、初、メ、地、下、活、動、ガ、再、ビ、増、加、シ、タ、同、時、日、本、軍、ハ、彼、等、甘、自、
信、カ、醒、テ、豫、期、ニ、シ、テ、聯、合、軍、ト、對、シ、テ、準、備、ヲ、初、メ、
換、言、ス、ル、當、時、國、内、ニ、シ、テ、再、亂、危、機、ト、外、ニ、聯、合、軍、ニ、シ、テ、攻、勢、ト、
依、ル、恐、慌、時、期、ト、シ、タ、(NEW PARAGRAPH)

此、際、又、ト、シ、テ、大、カ、リ、テ、密、偵、時、件、ガ、發、見、セ、ル、廣、汎、ト、シ、組、織、
露、見、シ、タ、ハ、之、ハ、孤、立、ニ、於、テ、互、互、分、同、様、ト、組、織、ガ、此、レ、タ、リ、ト、考、
ヘ、ル、ト、シ、テ、調、ル、爲、ニ、シ、テ、作、カ、初、メ、ト、シ、テ、而、シ、テ、早、急、ニ、終、結、
セ、ル、爲、ニ、貴、工、作、ニ、シ、テ、

T.N. - ACCORDING TO JOINT REPORTS 3106/3 AND 3106/1, OPERATION
'KO'OR'KOD' SHOULD BE
速ニ作

1006

實事件關係
關係特校
陸軍司令部
參謀特校
副官野村大尉 (陸軍部長)

野村

Doc 5756

憲兵隊

村瀬少佐

副官大西中尉

関係セル部隊及び分隊指揮官

川テ、特高班指揮官(特別秘密班)

川テ、搜索憲兵

川テ、刑執行官

村瀬

大西

概要

一、治計畫ニ從ヒテ、事件ハ陸軍ノ決定ニ基キ、治ニシテ早急ニ處理スル為、現地ニテ取扱ハレタ

二、調査將校ハ死刑ニ處スベキカ否マラ決定シテ、班長ガソレヲ承認シ、分隊長、承認ヲ得テ、上テ、言類ガ司令部ニ提メサレタ

三、其言類ハ、初メ司令部ニ於ケル数人、高級將校ニ出サレ、次に課長ニ次ニ憲兵隊長ニシテ、最後ニ軍司令部ニ廻ワテ、野村中尉

ノ手テ、參謀將校(マズキ)ニ提メサレタ。ソノ後、シカドノ様ニ決定サレ、タカ判ラヌ、野村大尉ハ、コノ事ニソレテ、何カ知ワテ、居ルクラカ、何レニシ

テモ、宣告通、ニ用意スル旨、命令ガ下サレタ。

三、下、M、C、K、ノ、處刑ハ、軍法會議ヲ經テ、方、同様ニシテ、極秘裡ニ、執行サレタ

理由一般、治安及び軍事上ノ状態ニ鑑ミ、本件ノ可及的早急ニ處理シ、殺到ニシテ、聯合軍ノ、激撃ニ備フルコトガ、急務デアリテ、處刑ヲ命令セル將校

NO 7

總指揮官氏名 原田中將

原田

但シ此ノ事件ハ參謀將校、マズキガ、取調ベテ、シテ、タレル。

No 5756

事件處理方法

- 一 吾公最初適當內二次事實，調查之
- 二 受刑者，姓名年齡及七人種
- 三 調查將校班長，分隊長（分遣隊長）
- 三 受刑者，名前處刑場所及方法
- 四 軍內部於此連絡方法

處刑，執行期間——一九四三年七月——一九四四年三月

受刑者，數（概算）

バンビヨウギ	一五〇	人
スロバヤ	五〇	人
マドラ	一〇〇	人
セマリン	一〇〇	人
シヨウヤカルタ	一〇〇	人
スラカルタ	一〇〇	人
バンビヨウギ（ブコロタ）	五	人
クニホニ	〇	人
バンビヨウ	一〇	人
ボゴル	七	人
ヤラン	〇	人
シヤカルタ	二〇	人
計	九三	人

No 8

No 5756

事件處理方法

- 一 吾々最初ニ適當ニ内ニ次ニ事實ヲ調査ス
- 二 受刑者ノ姓名年齡及七人種
- 三 調査將校班長分隊長(分遣隊長)
- 三 受刑者ノ名前處刑場所及方法
- 四 年内内部ニ於ル連絡方法

處刑執行期間 一九四三年七月 一九四四年三月

受刑者數(概算)

バンビヨウギ	一五〇人
スラバヤ	五〇人
マドラ	二〇人
セマラン	一一人
シヨウヤカル	二〇人
スラカル	一〇人
バビヨマ(ブコル)	五一人
クニホ	一〇人
バンボン	一一人
ホコル	七人
ヤラン	〇人
シヤカル	二〇人
計	二九三人

No 8

Ex. # 1761

Doc. No. 5732

Page 1

STATEMENT

The undersigned, Charles JOHNSON ELL, Captain R.N.I., Head of War Crimes Section of Netherlands Forces Intelligence Service, Batavia, being first duly sworn on oath, deposes and states:

That the above mentioned War Crimes Section is in possession of lists made out by Japanese Administration authorities, covering 38 of the 104 prisons in Java and Madura, of deaths occurred during the Japanese occupation period among the persons incarcerated in those prisons.

That it has appeared from several random tests that these lists are not complete and that therefore in reality the figures were more unfavourable than those given in these lists.

That these incomplete lists state the names of 1717 prisoners who died in the said prisons during the years 1942 to 1945, of whom three in 1942, 21 in 1943, 452 in 1944 and 1241 in 1945, namely 35 people under 18 years of age; 1085 from 18 to 45, and 597 persons older than 45 years of age; being respectively 511 Europeans (23 - 197 - 291 of the three age groups), 1112 Indonesians (12 - 821 - 279), and 94 Chinese and Arabs (-67-27).

That in so far as the time has been mentioned between sentence and death (i.e. of 477 cases), it appears that 17 prisoners died within one week, 68 within one month, 75 after two months, 52 after three months, 34 after 4 months, 32 after 5 months, 48 after 6 months, 31 after 8 months, 10 after 9 months, 50 after one year, 17 after one year and three months, 18 after 1½ years, ten after two years, 18 after 2½ years, and 5 after three years - after being sentenced,

That therefore six months after the 477 cases mentioned already 326 or more than 68% had died

That only of 154 cases the cause of death has been mentioned, i.e. dysentery 49, scurvy one, tuberculosis 7, starvation oedeme 5, marasmus 13, beri-beri five, enteritis 9, malaria 22, asthma and pneumonia 12, anaemia 2, chacoia and cachexia 28, leprosy one;

That it is apparent from 1940 statistics published by the Head office of Penology (department of the Department of Justice of the N.E.I.), that in the 104 prisons of Java and Madura, on an average population per day of 46,348 only 843 deaths a year in 1940, being 18% of the prison population during the statistical year 1940 (present on January 1, 1940; 39,293, taken in during 1940 401,011 and liberated 398,594; present on Jan. 1, 1941: 41,710).

That among these 843 deaths, cause of death was e.g.: malaria 81 (9.6%), dysentery 28 (3.33%), beri-beri 7 (0.83%), while starvation, oedeme, marasmus, chacoia, and cachexia did not occur;

that it is clear, therefore, that under the Japanese domination the number of death cases as a result of insufficient food (scurvy, starvation oedoe, marasmus, beri-beri, anaemia, chacoia and cachexia) increased from 0,83% in 1941 to 35,06% of the total number of deaths, while the number of death cases as a result of insufficient hygienic care (dysentery, enteritis) increased from 3,33% to 37,66% of the total number of deaths,

that even if these figures are incomplete and although it is not known how many prisoners altogether died during the Japanese occupation period, and what was the total number of prisoners, still it is clear already from these meagre figures what mismanagement there was during that time and that we can speak of systematical starvation and neglect of hygienic requirements, as had already appeared from the many statements concerning the treatment of prisoners by the Japanese authorities,

that this is also evident from the annexed List of the convict goal Tjipinang (near Batavia), state of health and deceases, made up by Dr. Wijting, who, as a political prisoner, was interned in this prison and in charge also of keeping the administration up to date, which list covers the period from May 1, 1943 to May 1, 1945, and which especially as from April 1, 1944, indicate a terrible increase of the number of deaths (from May 1, 1943 - May 1, 1944: 167 deaths on an average of 4250 prisoners, i.e. approx. 4%; from May 1, 1944 - May 1, 1945; 2257 deaths on an average of 4400 prisoners, i.e. more than 51%),

Signature:

/s/ Ch. Jongeneel

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. deWerd, LL.D., first lieutenant R.N.I.A., senior official attached to the Attorney-General N.E.I., on this nineteenth day of August, 1946.

Signature: /s/ K. A. deWerd (SEAL)

Strength of the population of the Convict Goal Tjipinang, state
of health and mortality.

Year	Date	Total	Admitted into the hospital	Deceased	
1943	May 1	4564	158	8	
	June 1	4524	178	15	
	July 1	4189	167	19	
	August 1	4197	187	11	
	September 1	4194	171	19	
	October 1	4020	169	7	
	November 1	4038	161	17	
	December 1	4182	202	8	
	1944	January 1	4268	184	12
		February 1	4312	202	10
		March 1	4481	243	10
		April 1	4410	191	31
May 1		4560	297	43	
June 1		4562	326	58	
July 1		4474	670	151	
August 1		4487	771	167	
September 1		4342	701	177	
October 1		4233	632	107	
November 1		4226	649	83	
December 1		4317	600	125	
1945	January 1	4177	587	167	
	February 1	4220	527	222	
	March 1	4571	498	296	
	April 1	4721	448	315	
	May 1	4599	524	416	

Examination No. 1761
Doc 5732

供 通 警

下記者名ノ「バタビア」/ BATAVIA / 和官軍報隊
機警犯捕部長、印度印度軍大將「チャールズ」
ヨシダネール / CHARLES FONGHREN / ハ先ツ正式ニ
宣警ノ後種請願述べル。

竹子上述ノ戦争犯罪部ハ日本軍占領期間中百哩ノ
ジヤバ / 及ビ「マラ」 / MALAYA /

ノ益謀ノ中三十八ノ益謀ニ監察サレタムハ、中ニ發

生シタ死亡者ニ付テ、日本軍監獄局作票ノ券ヲ所有

シテ居ルコト以同ノ注意ノ副ニ依ツテ之等ノ券ガ

完全ナク徒テ實際ノ獄手ハ之等ノ券ヲ致望ヨリ更

ニ不良ナル様ニ見受ケラレタムコト之等ノ不完全ナ

ハ上記ノ益謀ニ於テ一九四二年ノ四種十七年ノヨリ

一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ返ノ同ニ死亡シタ一七一

七八ノ囚人ノ名目ヲ記シ天等ハ一九四二年ノ昭和十

七年ノ三、三八、一九四三年ノ昭和十八年ノ二、二十

一人、一九四四年ノ昭和十九年ノ三、四百三十二人

一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ三、千二百四十一人、門チ

十八才以下三十五人、十八才カラ四十五才迄一千八

十五人、四十五才以上五百九十七人アリ、又之等

ハ夫々歐洲人五百十一人（右三ノノ經令別テ二十三

人、百九十七人）ノ「インドネシア」

Handwritten text and stamps at the top of the page, including the word 'COPY' and some illegible characters.

Doc 5732

一人一千百十二人（十二人、八百二十一人、二百七十九人）、甲種人及び「アラビヤ」人九十四人（一
 百七十八人、二百七十八）デアアルコト判決ト死亡トノ間
 ノ期間ノ記載ノアルモノニツイテハ（即チ四百七十
 七件ニ付）判決言渡後、一週内ニ三十七人、一ヶ月
 内ニ六十八人、二ヶ月後ニ七十五人、三ヶ月後ニ五
 十二人、四ヶ月後ニ三十四人、五ヶ月後ニ三十二人
 六ヶ月後ニ四十八人、八ヶ月後ニ三十一人九ヶ月後
 二十八人、一年後ニ五十八人、一年三ヶ月後ニ二十七人、
 一年半後ニ十八人、二年後ニ十人、二年半後ニ十八
 人、三年後ニ五人死亡シタ様デアアルコト從テ前記四
 百七十七件中、三百二十六即チ六十八パーセント
 以上ガ六ヶ月後ニハ死亡シテキタ事。
 陸百五十四件ニ付テノミ死亡原因ガ記サレテ居ルコ
 ト、即チ赤痢四十九件、瘧疾病一件、肺結核七件、飢
 餓五件、衰弱十三件、脚氣五件、小腸炎九件、マ
 マラリア一十二件、喘息及び前欠十二件、貧血二
 件、
 及ビ惡血症二十八件、癩病一件
 刑務學本部（國印政廳司法部ノ一部）ニ依ツテ發表
 サレタ一九四〇年／昭和十五年ノ統計カラ「シヤ
 バ」／
 及マドウラ／
 ノ百〇

2.

Doc 5732

四箇ノ監獄ニ於テ、一九四〇年ノ昭和十五年ノ中一
 日平均在監者四六、三四八人甲償乃ニ八四三人ノ死
 亡、即チ一九四〇統計年度ノ昭和十五年ノ中ノ在監
 人員ノ一、八一パーセント（一九四〇年ノ昭和十
 五年ノ一月一日現在三九、二九三人、一九四〇年中
 収容四〇一、〇一一人、減免三九八、五九四人、一
 九四一年ノ昭和十六年ノ一月一日現在四一、七一〇
 人）デアアルコトガ明カデアアルコト。
 此等八百四十三人ノ死亡者中、死因ハ例ヘバ、マラ
 リヤルハ八十一件（九、六パーセント）、赤痢
 二十八件（三、三三パーセント）、脚氣七件（
 〇、八三パーセント）デアアルガ飢餓浮腫、衰弱
 。raconite 及ビ惡血症ハナカツタコト、從テ日
 本ノ支配下ニ於テハ食糧不足ノ結果（瘧血病、飢餓
 浮腫、衰弱、脚氣、貧血、encephalitis 及ビ惡血症
 ）トシテノ死亡ノ數ハ全死亡數ニ對シ一九四一年ノ
 昭和十六年ノ中ノ〇、八三パーセントカラ三五
 、〇六パーセントニ増加シ、衛生管理ノ不備ノ
 結果（赤痢、小腸炎）トシテノ死亡數ハ全死亡數ニ
 對シ三、三三パーセントカラ三七、六六パー
 セントニ増加シタ事ガ明カナコト之等ノ數字ガ不
 完全デアアルニセヨ、又日本ノ占領期間中全部テ何人

3.

Doc 5732

ノ囚人が死亡シタカ、又囚人ノ感嘆ハ何人デア
ツタカ分ラナイガ而モ之等ノ不完全ナ数字ニ依
ツテモ既に、其ノ期間中如何ニ管理ガ不當デア
ツタカト云フコト、又日本軍管局ニ在ル囚人ノ
取扱ニ關スル多クノ稟遞カラモ既に明カニサレ
タ如ク組織的飢餓ト衛生施設ニ對スル怠慢トガ
アツタト云ヒ待ルコトハ明カデアルコト亦政治
犯トシテ、同感嘆ニ收容サレ、又今日迄其ノ管
理ノ任ニ當ツテ居ラレル「ウイジチング」/
WICHING / 博士ニ依ツテ作ラレタ別紙「トジ
ピナシ」/ FUJIMIZO / 監獄（「バタビヤ」ノ
近ク）ニ於ケル健康状態及死亡ノ率、此ノ率ハ
一九四三年 / 昭和十八年 / 五月一日カラ一九四
五年 / 昭和二十年 / 五月一日迄ノ期間ノ統計デ
アルガ、此ノ率カラ特ニ一九四四年 / 昭和十九
四月一日以後ニ於テ死亡率ノ急ルベキ増加ヲ示
シテ居ルコトガ明カナコト、（一九四三年 / 昭
和十八年 / 五月一日カラ一九四四年 / 昭和十九
年 / 五月一日迄ハ平均四二五〇人ノ囚人中死亡
者一六七人、即チ約四「パーセント」、一九四
四年 / 昭和十九年 / 五月一日カラ一九四五年 /
昭和二十年 / 五月一日迄ハ平均四四〇〇人ノ囚

Doc 5732

5.

人甲死亡者二二五七八、即チ五十一「パーセント」
以上ニ上ル)

CHARLES JONGHVEL
者 名 「ケイ・エルス・ヨシケネール」

一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 八月十九日 余即チ印
發署總長附先任官製印監算甲級法学博士「ケイ・ユ
イ・デ・ヴェーデルト」 / K. A. DE WEERD / 印

前ニ於テ者名管轄セリ

者 名 「ケイ・ユイ・デ・ヴェーデルト」

印

Doc 5732

5.

人甲死亡者二二五七人、即チ五十一「パーセント」
以上ニ上ル)

著者名 CHARLES JONGHWEEL
「アヤールス・ヨシカネール」

一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 八月十九日 余即チ印
検察總長附先任官印 皇軍甲級海軍博士 「ケイ・ユ
イ・デ・ヴェールト」 / K. DE WEEERD / 直

可ニ於テ姓名管理セリ

著者名 「ケイ・ユイ・デ・ヴェールト」

印

TJIPINANG
 (トジピナン) 監獄收容人員・健康状態・及ビ死亡数

Doc 5732

年	月日	全人員	入獄者	死亡者
1943年	五月一日	4564	1548	8
	六月一日	4524	178	15
	七月一日	4189	167	19
	八月一日	4197	187	11
	九月一日	4194	171	19
	十月一日	4020	169	7
	十一月一日	4038	161	17
	十二月一日	4182	202	8
1944年	一月一日	4268	184	12
	二月一日	4312	212	10
	三月一日	4481	243	10
	四月一日	4410	191	31
	五月一日	4560	297	43
	六月一日	4562	326	58
	七月一日	4474	670	151
	八月一日	4437	771	167
	九月一日	4342	701	107
	十月一日	4233	632	107
	十一月一日	4226	649	83
	十二月一日	4317	600	125

6.

7.
Doc 5732

1945年一月一日	4177	587	167
二月一日	4220	527	222
三月一日	4571	498	296
四月一日	4721	448	315
五月一日	4599	524	416

C. #1762

Doc. No. 5740

Page 1

STATEMENT OF BRIGADIER ARTHUR SEAFORTH BLACKBURN

The witness duly sworn states

My name is Arthur Seaforth Blackburn; I was born at Woodville in the State of South Australia on 25th day of November, 1892.

I am of Australian nationality; my permanent home is Crafers in the State of South Australia.

The film "Nippon Presents" has been made from an original in Java during the Japanese occupation by Japanese cameramen under Japanese direction made film, which original film I believe was intended to give a faked impression of the treatment by the Japanese of their prisoners of war and of women-internees. English, Australian and Dutch prisoners of war and British and Dutch women and children were forced to play an act in this film in the way as is described by me in the introduction of the film "Nippon Presents".

The original film was captured after the liberation of Batavia, as I am informed and verily believe, and brought to Australia, where some of the players, who survived the ordeal of the Japanese camps, gathered at the instigation of the Netherlands Indies Film Unit to give an idea of the real occurrences and conditions in prisoner of war and women's camps in Java. This is to certify that the statements made by me and the other actors in the Australian part of the film "Nippon Presents", i.e. the parts made in Australia after the liberation, are given according to the truth as I and my co-actors experienced such truth ourselves.

I am informed and verily believe that the shots which were interpolated in Australia have partly been taken from other Japanese films (not intended to fake the real condition, but meant to show the Japanese public the might of the Japanese forces) and for the other part from films, which were made by Allied cameramen of the camps at Batavia after the liberation, when condition in these camps had already been slightly bettered. These last shots are not faked but given according to the truth as conditions were in the end of September, 1945.

/s/ Arthur S. Blackburn
Brig.

Subscribed and sworn to before me
on board
on this 21st day of October 1946.

/s/ S. H. Crawford
Commander R.A.N.R.
Commanding Officer

Doc 5740

1762

No /

書類番号 5740

進捗... 陳述

私証
Arthur Seaforth BLACKBURN
姓名... 陳述

Arthur Seaforth BLACKBURN
一九二九年... WOODVILLE 生

木... 國籍... 原籍... 南部

日本... Nippon Presents... 日本

監督... 日本... 制作

甚... 日本側... 待選... 就... 捏造... 印象

英... 濠洲... 和蘭... 係... 達... 英... 和蘭

介... 於... 私... 記... 述... 様... 概... 十... 亦... 法... 行... 此... 不... 紹... 述

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5740

(BATAVIA)

原アルムバタヴィア解放後ニ押收せしタト私ハ周キ且實際
ニシテ確信スル。ソレヲ濠洲ニ運ビ其所ヲ日本ノ收容所
苛烈ニ訓練シテ生キ残リテ出演者ノ内幾人カジャバ(JAVA)ノ俘
虜及婦女收容所ニ送テル真実、出来事及状況ニ就テ概念ヲ
興ヘル為ニ蘭領印度映畫隊、送演必ニ基キ集合シテシテ
此陳述ハ日本アトモシ、アルムバタヴィアニシテ濠洲編劇ヲ解放後
濠洲ニ送テテシテ私及他ノ出演者達ニ依リ
為サシテ陳述ガ私及私ノ共演者達ガ然レ自身ノ経験ニテ
トコノ真実ニ即シテ為サシテ、モシテ下ヲ証明セトス
ルモアリ。

濠洲ニ送テテ押収セシタ知、數部ハ部ハ實際ノ状態ヲ捏
造スル目的ヲ無ク日本軍ノ威力ヲ日本民衆ニ示スル為ニ作
ラシタ他、日本ノアルムバタヴィアヨリ取テ他ノ役ハバタヴィア(BATAVIA)

收容所、聯合國側キヤニシテ送テ依リ解放後ニ收容
所内ノ状態ガ既ニ多ク改善セサシタ時ニ作ラシタアルムバタ
取ツタモ、ト私ハ周キ且實際ニシテ確信スル。

其最後ノ數部ハ捏造ヲ行ハシテ五田五津部知ニ送テ其
當時ノ状態ノ真実ニ即シテ作ラシタモアリ

准将アーサー・ヘンリー・ブラックバーン(署名)

Arthur S. BLACKBURN

No 2

No 3

Doc 5740

西六月廿和二十日二十日
オーストラリア海軍艦 ^{KANIMBLA} カニムブラ号に於て
余ノ面前ニ署名スル旨誓ヒサル

/COMMANDING OFFICER/
司令オーストラリア海軍少将級機械科中佐
HX H4 201-1

/S.H. CRAWFORD/
署名

Q #1763

Doc. No. 5758

Page 1

Statement of J. SCHIM VAN DER LOEFF, Batavia.

The witness duly sworn states:

My name is J. SCHIM VAN DER LOEFF; I am of Netherlands nationality, my permanent home is Batavia, where I am living at present. I was born in Doesburg (Netherlands) on 25th September 1907.

In mid September 1945 I arrived in Batavia in the suite of Admiral PATTERSON as Captain RNIA (reserve), in charge of a detachment of Netherlands Indies Government Information Service (NIGIS), including several filmoperators.

Shortly after our arrival we captured several Japanese propaganda-films, made by the Japanese in Java during the Japanese occupation. Amongst these films was a film, named "Australia calling".

Afterwards I have read SEATIC translation reports JAVINT No. 3132/2 (translation of statement by Capt. YANAGAWA, dated 14 DEC 1945), from which I learned that said film was made from June to mid September 1943 under the direction of Capt. YANAGAWA of the "DEPPAN" (Special Intelligence Section of HQ 16th Army) as Chief Producer and that the film was meant to deal with the daily life of POWs with the purpose of creating anti-war spirit in Australia.

After many discussions it was decided by the NIGIS to send this film to Australia, to try and collect there the same (ex POW-) players whom the Japanese had forced to play in the film and to insert in the Japanese film cuts from films which showed the real conditions under which the POWs and internees had been living under the Japanese occupation. For these cuts were used the filmreels which the filmoperators from NIGIS and from other filmdetachments had taken on their arrival in the middle of September, 1945, in Java, especially in the POW-camps in the Xth Battalion barracks in Batavia, in the POW-hospitals "Mater Dolorosa" and "St. Vincentius" in Batavia, and in the women internmentcamps "Tjideng" and "kampong Makassar" in Batavia.

Also were used some cuts from captured Japanese newscasts, giving the "glorious victory" of the Japanese and to show off their POWs at the beginning of the war.

In this way the new film "Nippon presents" was made. I can state definitely that the cuts which have been inserted into the original Japanese film have not been faked like the Japanese film was, but show the real conditions in the POW and women camps in Batavia as I have seen them myself in the middle of September 1945.--

This statement contains the truth and nothing but the truth.

signature:

/s/ J. SCHIM VAN DER LOEFF

Batavia, September 3rd, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K.A. de WEERD, LL.D., Major Artillery RNIA, Senior Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

signature: /s/ K.A. de WEERD.
(SEAL)

一九四五年昭和二十年九月中旬、蘭印軍陸軍大尉（豫備）

トニテ PATTERSON 提督ノ隨員ニ加ハテ、映畫技師ヨ合ム、蘭印政

府情報部（NEWS）ノ分遣隊主任トシテ、ジャバニ到着シマシタ。

到着後、同キチノ吾々ハ、日本軍占領中、ジャバニ於テ、日本側ヲ製

作セシメ、日本ノ宣傳用映畫フィルムハ、イクラカヨ鹵獲シマシタ。

此等ノフィルムハ、中ニハ、オーストラリア、ヤハ招ク、Australia Calling

トイフ、フィルムハ、カアリマシク。

後ニ私ハ、東南（SEATIC）翻訳通訳部、翻訳報告（JAVINI）

第三一三ニ、ニ号（一九四五年）昭和廿年ノ十二月十四日附、ヤナガワ

大尉、陳述（翻訳）ヲ讀ミマシタガ、ソレヨリ私ハ、該フィルムハ、一九四

昭和十八年ノ六月カラ、九月中旬ニカケテ、總監督トシテ、ヤナガワ

BEPPAN（第十六軍司令部ノ特別情報課）ノヤナガワ大尉

ノ監督ヲ製作セシメ、モデアリ且、該フィルムハ、オーストラリアニ於ケル、反戦（心

想ヲ醸成セシムル目的）ヲ以テ、作務ノ日常生活ヲ取扱フ、意圖ヲ持ツ、モデ

アルトイ、コトヲ知リ、ミシタ。

權々論議ヲ重ネ、後、蘭印政府情報部ニヨリ、フィルムヲ、オーストラリア

ノヤナガワ大尉

Doc 5758

書類五七八

THE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

BATAVIA / SCHIM VAN DER LOEFF / 陳述書

證人ハ正式宣誓シタルニ次ニ通リ陳述ス

私ハ名ニ前ハ SCHIM VAN DER LOEFF / 現ニリマス

私ハ和蘭國籍ヲ本籍地ニバタヴィアニテ現在其處ニ住シテ居

リマス 和蘭國籍ヲ本籍地ニバタヴィアニテ現在其處ニ住シテ居

リマス 和蘭國籍ヲ本籍地ニバタヴィアニテ現在其處ニ住シテ居

Doc 5758

ニ送ル上ニ決意ナシテ之ヲソノノ地ニ日本軍ガ此ノル台ニ出陣ヲ極
制ニ之ノ同ニ出陣者(前ニ行陣)ニ集ル直日本軍ニ送ルニ集ル者
抑留者ガ生活ニ平ノニ集ル者ニ欲ニ明ニ之ヲノ此等ノ場面
數齣ヲニ、日本ノ此ノ地ニ人ニガクニ平ノニ、此等ノ場面ニ
對ニハ

蘭印政府情報部カ、映画技師ガ其他、映画合遣隊ガ
一四三年、昭和三年、九月半旬ニ^{出陣}ニ到着、上キ特ニ^{BATAVIA}
ノ第十大隊兵舎内、停務收容所、同ニ^{BATAVIA}ノ、停務病院
「マドロロサ」/Mater Dolorosa/及「聖^{出陣}」/St. Vincentius/
及同ノ^{BATAVIA}ノ、女子抑留所收容所「^{出陣}」
/Tjideng/及「カマカマ」/Kampong Makassar/ニ
撮影シタルノ此ガ使用サレタリ。
又日本、稱々タル勝利「^{出陣}」ノ不ノ戦事初期ニ於テ停務ニ送ル
多ク、函獲日本ニ「^{出陣}」ノ映画使用サレタリ。

90/2

Doc. 51759

警察の公日本記録 (Mikomo Presents) の
コト様ナ方法ヲ製作ナシタ。私原日本公ニ挿入
サレタ場面ガ日本フィルム、如ク捏造サレタモノナク一九四五年
昭和二十一年九月中旬私自身ヲ目撃シタ ^{BATAVIA} バタヴィア、
修屠並ニ女子收容所ニ於ケル現実ノ状態ヲ示シテ并ニ、
テアルコトヲハッキリト申上ケルコトガ出来マス。
本陳述ハ真実ヲ述ベ而シテ眞実以外、何物モ含
メテ居リマセン。

署名

/J. SCHIM VAN DER LOEFF/

ジエ・シム ヲアンデル ヲッフ 署名
バタヴィア 一九四六年 / 昭和三十一年九月

/K. A. de WEERD/

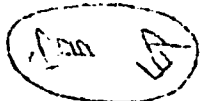
余々「エ」ヲ「エ」ルニ 法学博士
荷蘭印軍陸軍砲兵少佐 ^{Excellency R.N.I.A. Major} 荷蘭領東インド検査總長
室附高級職員、面前ニ於テ署名宣明セシタリ

署名

/K. A. de WEERD/ 署名

ケ・エー・デ・ウエルド

No. 3



C. #1764

DOCUMENT NO. 5759

DESCRIPTION AND TEXT OF THE FILM "NIPPON PRESENTS".

Explanation: Each scene is marked with: "(Japanese)", "(Japanese outside Java)", "(Australia Studio)" or "(Allied Batavia)".

"(Japanese)" means: Scene of the Japanese film "Australia Calling", made in 1943 in Java.

"(Japanese outside Java)" means: Scene taken by Japanese cameramen during the war outside Java.

"(Australia Studio)" means: Scene taken in Australia Studio by Allied cameramen after the Japanese surrender.

"(Allied Batavia)" means; Scene taken by Allied cameramen in and near Batavia in September 1945, showing conditions as they were a month after the Japanese surrender.

DOCUMENT 5759

" NIPPON PRESENTS "

On Screen: "Early in the Pacific War the Japanese who had over-run Java made a film for screening in a conquered Australia to show how well they treated their prisoners. This Japanese film fell into Allied hands. English, Australian and Dutch prisoners of war and internees were forced to play parts in it. Many of these prisoners are now dead, victims of starvation, ill treatment and disease. Some survived and a few of them have been brought together here to tell voluntarily and under a compelling sense of duty the true story of how the Japs made this film. To expose this pictorial evidence provided by the Japanese themselves of the inhuman duplicity of their gofers, you are now to see this Japanese film and on the screen and in the audience will be some of the survivors. They are:"

1 AUSTRALIA STUDIO: INTRODUCING OF THE ACTORS:

Unseen speaker:

Introducing: Brigadier Blackburn, Victoria Cross, AIF
Wing Cmdr. Davis, RAAF
Squadron Ldr. Shepard, RAAF DSC
Group Capt. Noble, RAAF
Capt. Dr. Kingma, RMAA
Mrs. E. J. Johnson, Dutch born English woman
F. O. Thomas, RAAF
Pvt. McNab, RAN
Pvt. Mickfield, AIF
Pvt. Reed, AIF
Pvt. Willard, AIF
Capt. Ellison, AIF
Sgt. Harrison, AIF and
Annemieke

2 AUSTRALIA STUDIO: The Scene shows a Film Auditorium of Allied Actors; on the 2nd screen is to be seen the end of the Japanese Film (faked memorial scene). Afterwards: Introduction by Brigadier Blackburn and Wing Cmdr. Davis.

BRIGADIER BLACKBURN:

"Well, gentlemen, you have once again seen this Japanese picture in which you played a part. We will now show it to the public but not as the Japanese intended. The Japanese film will be shown as they made it and as you have seen it but after each sequence will appear the truth -- scenes taken by Allied cameramen immediately after the liberation of Java. You will recognize most of these scenes and as the film unfolds your own comments will tell the true story.

DOCUMENT 5759

I have had full reports from Wing Cdr. Davis and others that the Japanese had forced you to make this film and that officers and men chosen had refused to take part in it. I know that you resisted to the limit; I know that they denied you food but still you did not yield. I know that then these cunning devils, the Japanese, applied the only form of pressure which could ever make you yield. They informed you that unless you gave way and took part in the film they would reduce the food ration to every man in camp and refuse any medical supplies. I know that your medical officers informed you that if they did that many of the prisoners under your command would die. I know that at one stage you, Wing Cdr. Davis, were threatened with death if you did not give permission to the members of your camp to take part."

COMMANDER DAVIS:

"Yes, sir, that is quite correct."

BRIGADIER BLACKBURN:

"I have investigated the whole matter fully and I know, gentlemen, that you have nothing to be ashamed of, that you were prepared to resist, even under the threat of death, so long as it only concerned you yourselves. These officers and men have been troubled in their mind about having had to take part in the preparation of this Japanese film. I told them they need not be so troubled. They put up an epic of heroic resistance; they gave way only to save the lives of their comrades, determined to make as many difficulties as possible and to turn the whole thing into a farce if they could."

COMMANDER DAVIS:

"I discussed it with the other officers and men. It was clear what the Japanese had in mind but we thought that the reduction of food and refusal of medicines would cause the deaths of many of our comrades, so we had to go on. The Japanese had to go over the personnel of the camp with a fine tooth comb to find enough fit men for the film. It was a tough job too. At least one camp was on starvation punishment for some trivial offense. The scanty rags of thousands were raked over and repaired to furnish a sufficient wardrobe to make the chosen men look decent and some of them even got a banana to eat."

DOCUMENT 5759

BRIGADIER BLACKBURN:

"So now, we will see the Japanese film and against it lies the real thing unfaked."

3 SAME SCENE AS 2 on the second screen, first: Cameramen shooting; afterwards: Swimming Scene. Ducks.

UNSEEN SPEAKER:

"Japanese cameramen made this film but this shot is intended to give the impression that our troops made it themselves, men who would be more at home shooting with a Bron gun than with a camera. Look at them, even the ducks were forced to act."

4 (Japanese) Farm Leeuwigadjah near Tjimahi (West Java), (which farm the Allied Officers - PWs were forced to run in 1943), ducks.

5 (Japanese) Faked Library

6 (Japanese) Faked Surgery office

UNSEEN SPEAKER: (Continuing)

"Ironical, isn't it, while these men of ours were in this Fake library and surgery, disease and sickness were riot throughout the camp but the Japs refused to supply the medicines which they were holding - - -"

7 (Japanese) Faked Pleasant Chat between PW Officers.

UNSEEN SPEAKER: (Continuing)

"And as for the pleasant chat between old friends, it lasted as long as it took the cameramen to shoot the scene."

8 (Japanese) Smoking Chimney of Xth Battalion PW Camp (so-called Cycle Camp) Batavia.

9 (Japanese) Kitchen of Hotel des Indes, Batavia.

UNSEEN SPEAKER:

"Food, the thing we dreamt and talked about, succulent beef, steaming bread. No, this is not the kitchen of a prison camp in Java. These scenes were taken in the kitchen of the luxury hotel des Indes in Batavia, the Japanese headquarters. One day a few Australians were taken out in the belief they were going on a work detail but were instead taken into the hotel kitchens. It was a rare sight for them. They saw the food, handled it, smelled it, but that was all - the Japanese ate it."

DOCUMENT 5759

10 (Allied Batavia) Kitchen Xth Battalion Camp, Batavia. (garbage)

UNSEEN SPEAKER:

"Food eaten by the prisoners was little better than garbage prepared in filthy conditions."

END OF REEL 1

REEL 2

- 11 (Japanese) Faked Womens Camp (re vera: Mountain Resort Selabintamah near Soekaboemi, W. Java)/ children playing games, singing, etc. women around table, acting as a jury:

UNSEEN SPEAKER:

"You will now see how the Japanese would have you believe the women lived in their camp."

Cries of (Dutch): "Loopen, loopen" = (run, run)

(Children singing around a tree)

"Ring around the rosy, pocket full of posies, ki chu, ki chu, all fall down," etc.

- 12 (Japanese) Board: Internment Camp for Women, woman sewing.

"Thank goodness, that's finished."

"Excuse me, I am going up to Mrs. Marsh with this dress. I won't be long."

"Faye, come here."

- 13 (Japanese) Drying Clothes.

"Fine weather today."

"I think the clothes will dry quickly."

"Would you like some tea?"

"No, thank you, not today, some other time."

(One line unintelligible)

- 14 (Japanese) Women before Hut G.

"It certainly is hard on me."

"What are you worrying about?"

"Well, when I came into this camp I did think I would be able to lose weight, instead of that I have been putting it on daily."

"What are you talking about?"

"Oh, it's (unintelligible), talking about her figure again."

5759

15 (Japanese) Woman entering with child's dress - Room with women.

"Hello, everybody, I finished this frock, Mrs. Snipe."

"Oh, thanks, it's very pretty."

"You did it so quickly."

"Well, you wanted it in a hurry. Come, let's try it on Joyce and see how it fits. Come on, Joyce, show everybody your nice new dress."

"Do you like these records?"

" can't get records any more, so from now on we cannot play any more."

16 (Japanese) FITTING DRESS JOYCE - ROOM WITH WOMEN

17 (Australia Studio)

MRS. JOHNSON SPEAKING.

MRS. JOHNSON:

"For the first few months conditions were really not so bad in our camp. It was pleasantly placed, the food was good enough, and we had reasonable freedom. We lived in fact in a fool's paradise. When the Japs had made the scenes you have just seen, well, that was the end. We were whisked off to the germ laden, rat infested, filthy, slummy, bugbreeding slums you see of Batavia, a forlorn mess of modern misery, of brutal beatings and indignities, of degrees of fever, weevils, lice, weevily rice, and utter hopelessness. That is what Java meant to us from then on."

18 (Allied Batavia) SCENES OF DIVERS WOMEN CAMPS IN OR NEAR BATAVIA:
TJIDENG CAMP, KAMPONG MAKASSAR CAMP, TJIDENG CAMP AGAIN -
FETCHING WATER (TJIDENG CAMP)

UNSEEN SPEAKER:

"Look at this little girl, where she gets the drinking water."

19 (Japanese) BATHING BEACH AND FISHING

UNSEEN SPEAKER:

"And now Hippon presents some delightful bathing scenes. Two hours the Japs spent taking these lovely bathing scenes. This was the only swim these boys had - two hours during three and a half years of monotonous misery."

DOCUMENT 5759

For the fishing, eleven men were given sticks with string to dangle in the water. That was all the fishing they got."

20 (Australia Studio) DAVIS SPEAKING:

"Allow me to introduce you to a camp's bathroom and showers. Look, no wonder that ulcers and skin diseases got most of us."

21 (Allied Batavia) PWs CAMP'S BATHROOM AND SHOWERS

22 (Japanese) PW OFFICERS SITTING IN A ROOM - Shepard is listening to radio-dialogue between officers. (FALED PW CAMP; re vera MOUNTAIN RESORT SELABINTARAH)

RADIO:

"The report of enemy losses in our previous announcement regarding the Third Solomons Sea Battle is revised as follows: Sunk 2 battleships, 11 cruisers, 3 or 4 destroyers, and 1 transport. Heavily damaged 1 battleship, 3 cruisers, 6 or 7 destroyers and 3 transports."

"Hey there, what about a cup of tea?"

"Thank you, we sure will."

(Visitors - PW's enter)

"Hello".

"Just got the news on the radio too".

"Pretty warm."

"Yes, it's warm all right."

"Thank you, Jack."

"Thanks."

"No, thanks."

"Hello, my friend, well, what's the news?"

SHEPARD:

"With reservations it was quite a news from Japan."

"Pretty tough on us when we hear that the American propaganda broadcast says most of us have been killed."

"Yes, it's sure hard on us."

LI 5759

23 (Australia Studio)

SHEPARD:

"Even as I heard the radio I realized the whole thing was faked. I was obviously listening to a voice transmitted from the nearby room. We had no radio in camp. After 1942 all religious services, concerts and educational lectures were forbidden."

24 (Japanese) SAME SCENE AS 22 - DIALOGUE CONTINUED.

"War surely makes live men dead, dead men alive."

"I'll make no monkey business, as long as my wife knows I'm alive, things will be all right."

"I can even see her."

(Officer Pw holding up dress) "What do you think of this, very nice, isn't it?"

"Do you think she'll appreciate that?"

"Well, maybe my taste is not the best but I am sure she'll appreciate the gesture. She's an A-I lass. That is proved by her letters."

"There he goes again - you married men."

"However, I was quite pleased to get a letter from home - - - it was an enjoyable moment. In the letter she said she was busy training for air raid guard." (One line unintelligible).

"By the time we get back I wonder what will have become of our homes."

"I sure would like to get home to try my luck at Pennington again."

"Well, you won't see me there, for once I am camping on the girl friend's doorstep."

"Yes, me too."

"I am going to make my wad then I will settle down on a nice little farm."

"Yes, the sooner it is the better."

25 (Australia Studio)

SHEPARD SPEAKING:

"Conditions of living declined as time went on until it was

DOCUMENT 5759

quite plain that we were of no account to the Japs. International agreements and humanitarian principles meant nothing to them. Most of us lucky enough to survive have suffered in health due solely to the conditions under which we were forced to live. Had the Japanese taken the slightest interest in our welfare, many of our comrades would have been alive today."

26 (Allied Batavia) DIVERS CAMP SHOTS AND SCENES OF EMACIATED PWs.

27 (Japanese) TENNIS GAME:

UNSEEN SPEAKER:

"One two, one two -

"Even this carefree happy game of tennis was merely another prisoner's drill under the orders of a guard."

28 (Australia Studio)

REED SPEAKING:

MICKFIELD - CUCKOO BIRD IMITATION

THOMAS - SPEAKING ABOUT CRICKET GAME:

REED:

"By Jove, Mick, you made the most of that funny face of yours. Remember when you used to imitate the cuckoo bird and had the Nips running around the camp looking for the bird? Can you still do it?" (Laughter)

MICKFIELD:

"I still can." (demonstrating cuckoo bird imitation).

THOMAS:

"What about the fancy cricket match I umpired? We certainly pulled their leg that time. They didn't know we were making up our own rules as we went along. I gave batsmen out whenever I felt like it and the boys played up to it. Never was cricket played as we played it that day."

29 (Japanese) CRICKET GAME: (ENGLISH CLUB, BATAVIA, AT THAT TIME JAPANESE CLUB)

"How is that?" "Out!"

END OF REEL 2

30 (Allied Batavia) SCENE OF DIVERS CASES OF HUNGER/EDEMA. THOMAS, afterwards DR. KINGMA (BOTH UNSEEN) SPEAKING.

UNSEEN SPEAKER: (THOMAS):

"Sure, we picked men had our fun that day but a few months later not many of us were even able to lift a cricket bat, let alone run, but let Dr. Kingma who was also interned tell you about it."

DR. KINGMA: (Unseen)

"Far from being able to play cricket or any other games, these poor men suffered from all the diseases resulting from starvation; beri-beri was only one of them. The hospital scenes you are about to see were faked from beginning to end. The Japanese took a group of Australians to this hospital in Batavia. Tragic to think that the men who posed for this mock treatment were then still healthy, while the really sick men in the camps could not get the treatment and the drugs they so urgently needed."

31 (Japanese) FAKED HOSPITAL SCENE, NUNS, PATIENTS - FAKED USE OF X-RAY PLANT: FAKED OPERATION.

NUN:

"How are you today?"

PATIENT:

"Fine, thank you."

32 (Australia Studio)

DR. KINGMA:

"Pretty, wasn't it? In fact, ideal. Yes, but the truth was quite different. In the prisoner of war hospital where I worked as a doctor the Japanese stole the X-ray plant, the radium and surgical instruments. How the hospitals really were, well, look for yourself."

33 (Allied Batavia) SCENES OF DIVERS CAMP HOSPITALS (HOSPITAL ST. VINCENTIUS, HOSPITAL MATER DOLOROSA, BOTH NEAR BATAVIA) AS TAKEN IN SEPTEMBER 1945, A MONTH AFTER THE JAPANESE CAPITULATION. THE DOCTOR AND ASSISTANTS ARE NEWLY ARRIVED.

34 (Japanese) TRAIN IN THE MOUNTAINS NEAR SOKKAPOMI:
TERRACE MOUNTAIN RESORT SELAPINTANAH
SWIMMING POOL "
BILLIARD ROOM "
GOLF COURSE "

DOCUMENT 5759

UNSEEN SPEAKER:

"This delightful mountain resort used by the Japanese Officers of the High Command was chosen as an occasion for the scenes of this Japanese film.

One day the Australian camp was gone over for men who still looked fit enough to act the party of happy sportsmen. They were told to be happy, that they could play billiards, swim, drink beer, play golf, and eat good food."

"Actually they did have a swim and played a game of billiards."

GOLF COURSE (PLAYER) (Unintelligible.)"----this sure keeps me fit."

35 (Australia Studio) DAVIS SPEAKING:

"Happy sportsmen indeed and then back to the barbed wire, the heat, the dirt, the weariness and worst of all to be herded and hounded by Japanese scum."

36 (Japanese outside Java) SCENES OF PWs herded by Japanese Soldiers (Scenes taken by the Japanese outside Java).

SPEAKER UNSEEN:

"Some of these particular scenes are from captured Japanese news reels made before the liberation of parts outside Java; they were exhibited with gloating pride through the one time Japanese Empire."

37 (Japanese) "WELCOME" SCENE: FAKED REUNION OF DUTCH PWs and THEIR FAMILIES, SELABINTANAH.

SPEAKER UNSEEN:

"You are about to see one of the most unnatural of all scenes - a faked reunion of Dutch prisoners and their sweethearts, wives, and children. Those who attempted to embrace in a natural way were pulled apart by guards and made to embrace to order in front of the camera."

38 (Japanese) SELABINTANAH. DUTCH CAPTAIN SEATS HIS FAMILY. DUTCH LIEUTENANT AND FAMILY, DIALOGUE IN DUTCH:

"Wat is't vandaag prettig, he! (What nice weather today)

"Ja, wat een fijne dag, zeg!" (Yes, what a fine day, isn't it?)

"Maar ik vind't zielig voor die Aussies" (But what a pity for those Anzacs).

"Ja, dat vind ik ook." (Yes, I think so too.)

DOCUMENT 5759

"Zullen we ze roepen?" (Let us call them)

"Hey, folks, come here!" (Australians join the family)

39 (Australia Studio) ANNEMIPKE SPEAKING:

"I am Dutch, my name is Annemieke. Mammy and I were in a camp in Java. But it wasn't really like that, it was more like this, only sometimes much worse."

40 (Allied Batavia) WOMEN INTERNMENT CAMPS NEAR BATAVIA: TJIDENG CAMP, KAMPONG MAKASSAR CAMP (PALM HUTS), AND AGAIN TJIDENG CAMP.

41 (Australia Studio) ANNEMIEKE (Continuing)

"I wasn't very naughty and I helped mammy as much as I could."

42 (Japanese) LOVE SCENE (DUTCH ENSIGN AND FIANCEE), SELABINTANAH - PRIVATE McNAB WRITING A LETTER.

43 (Australia Studio) McNAB SPEAKING:

McNAB:

"They gave me pen and paper and told me to write a letter. I started to write but not what I was thinking. An English speaking Japanese girl spoke the words you will hear and which I was supposed to be writing, but if I had been free to express myself this is what I would have described:"

44 (Allied Batavia) SEVERAL SCENES OF WHAT McNAB WOULD HAVE LIKED TO WRITE ABOUT. AMONGST THEM SCENES OF POW CAMPS, BATAVIA, OF WOMEN AND CHILDRENS CAMP KAMPONG MAKASSAR AND OTHER CAMPS.

ENGLISH SPEAKING JAPANESE GIRL (UNSEEN):

"Today is Visitor's Day - a day of joyous anticipation for the Dutch soldiers, and a day of sorrow for us as we have no one to call on us. Nevertheless looking at the happy families and sweethearts reunited in an atmosphere of love and happiness brings me closer to you in thought. As I sit writing I recall the happy times we had together. My first hour home will be (unintelligible) My thoughts are of home and you, of kangaroos and lovely beaches. - - - here amidst an atmosphere of - - - I wonder what you are doing now. Everything can be bearable as every facility is given us, but without you it is like a vain effort to keep body and soul together. My one wish is to get home and to you where nothing can make me leave you again."

45 (Japanese) SELABINTANAH, McNAB WRITING AND CRYING.

DOCUMENT 5759

"Even my tears were faked. They poured some kind of stuff in my eyes to make them water, pretty powerful stuff too, as I didn't stop crying for days."

END REEL 3

DOCUMENT 5759

REEL 4

47 (Japanese) FAKED RECREATION ROOM

a. PAY DAY

SPEAKER UNSEEN:

"Rich for a couple of minutes, only, the first two envelopes contained money which had to be given back of course. The others were just padded."

b. Drinking beer (MICKFIELD)

SPEAKER UNSEEN:

"The beer you see on the tables was tea. Tubby Reed and I had the only real beer."

48 (Australia Studio) DIALOGUE BETWEEN HARRISON AND REED

HARRISON: "The best beer I ever had. Remember the way I swigged the last of that? - - - - another bottle and before they could stop me that went too."

REED: "Yes, I remember and after seeing where it went I saw an ugly look on the Nip's face so I scrambled."

HARRISON: "That was your day all right, you also had that big steak. I only smelled it."

REED: "By gum, that was good. One of the Nips asked me if I could eat a beef. I told him I could eat two feeds instead of one. They took me in there and fed me a bit of steak and said "Eat it as if you enjoy it." Well, I did not - - - - - I tried to tell the camera with my eyes what was going on. I hope you got me. Anyway, I seemed to make a pretty good job of it, at least the Nip said 'Goto' which means 'very good' and let me finish the lot."

49 (Japanese) SAME AS 47: REED EATING STEAK.

50 (Japanese) FAKED CAM? SHOP.

"How are you, Doc.?"

"How much are these films?"

"How much for this sale?"

"Reminds me, I will have a toothbrush too."

"Cheerio."

DOCUMENT 5759

51 (Allied Batavia) PWs LINING UP FOR FOOD ISSUE

UNSEEN SPEAKER:

"Yes, it was a lucky day for a few; the rest of the prisoners carried on with their usual starvation rations.

52 (Japanese) STREET IN BANDOENG - WOMENS DRESS SHOP BALDOENG - Capt. Ellison and friend (Officer PWs) Entering.

"Good afternoon."

"Gray, do you think this will fit my kid?"

"What, the big one?"

"No, the new one."

"How many have you got?"

"Five."

"Five? Oh, no!"

"Yes."

53 (Australia Studio) CAPT. ELLISON SPEAKING:

"I was one of the men you have just seen strolling through the streets of Bandoeng. The joke is, my friend, Gracie Allen, who was buying the frock certainly had a daughter, but she was 18 years of age. We had no money so they gave us a fistful of Japanese invasion money which they took from us immediately after the transaction. The two shop girls were Dutch internees dressed up for the occasion and given special hairdo. During the whole of this farce our guards with fixed bayonets followed us just outside of camera range. Finally they replaced our prisoner of war badges and hustled us back behind the barbed wire."

54 (Japanese outside Java) PWs being herded behind barbed wire

55 (Australia Studio) NOBLE SPEAKING:

"At dawn one day 500 of us were assembled in the hospital grounds, where a large cross had been placed, its base inscribed 'Lest We Forget'. When General Saito and his staff came on, a religious ceremony commenced. It was impressive. We began to think that the Nips must have a grain of decency in them after all but when General Saito read his speech and the cameramen shooting and then re-reading it to let them get close ups and we saw the shoddy cardboard cross swaying in the wind, and we realized that the

DOCUMENT 5759

barbed wire had been camouflaged with broken branches and the machine guns trained on us were hidden in the distance, then we tumbled to the farce it was. The reverence with which we Christians observe our faith became no more than a mockery and an insult to our fallen comrades."

56 (Japanese) FAJFD MEMORIAL SERVICE.

SPEECH OF GENERAL SAITO: (JAPANESE), ENGLISH TEXT SHOWS ON SCREEN:

"We treat well our enemy soldiers

We protect them

May their spirits rest in peace in Heaven."

57 (Allied Batavia) CEMETERIES OF PWs NEAR BATAVIA, AMONGST THEM ANTJOL, BATAVIA, PLACE OF EXECUTION AND BURIAL OF ABOUT 300 PEOPLE: REBURYSING OF CORPSES IN SEPTEMBER 1945 UNDER ALLIED ORDERS

SPEAKER UNSEEN:

"Only under compulsion after the liberation did the Japanese provide even the simplest of burial decencies for our comrades who did not survive. Those we won't forget."

END OF REEL 4

I.P.S. DOCUMENT No. 5759

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Klaas A. de Weerd, Attorney-at-Law, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Head Office of the Attorney-General of the Netherlands East Indies with the special task of collecting such documents as would be needed for the preparation of the Prosecution of suspected Japanese Major War Criminals before the International Military Tribunal for the Far East at Tokyo and that as such I have received from the Netherlands Indies Government Information Service the four reels of the film, entitled "Nippon Presents", to which refer the statements of J. Schim van der Loeff, Batavia (Prosecution Document No. 5758) and of Brigadier Arthur Seaforth Blackburn (Prosecution Document No. 5740). Further I certify that I wrote down the descriptions of sequences as these appear in the attached script of said reels according to my best ability and knowledge from what I saw on these films. Signed at Tokyo on this eighteenth day of December 1946.

Signed: K.A. de Weerd.

No 1

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # J-7J-4

署名 LEONE L. WOODRUFF / 工本 工本

一九四六年十一月十八日 東京ニ於テ署名セリ

証人 証人
本署ニ於テ、私ガ「日本國總領事」ト題スル公標題
ニ関スル事、私ガ英語ニ充テ精通スル事、並ニ右ノ
遠記者、渡邊格ニ於テ國際檢察部ト公的関係
ヲ有スル事、工本 工本、余ガ和蘭部ニ於テ
LEONE L. WOODRUFF / 工本 工本

渡邊格ニ於テ、私ガ「日本國總領事」ト題スル公標題
本文並ニ英語台詞ニ附テ、添附ノ記録ヲ能ク限
真実ニ作製セシ事ヲ茲ニ證明ス

Ex 1764

575

DOC

No 2

證 明 書

余辯護士 *Klaas A. de Weerd*、
 極東國際軍事裁判所三所に日本主皇戦争犯罪
 容疑者、告發、準備、爲之必要、書類ヲ集ル特別
 仕事ヲ以テ、蘭領東印度、檢事、總長事務本局ニ公
 的ニ關係シ居ル事、並ニ之、資格ニ於テ、余、蘭印政府
 情報部ヨリ *Batavia* / *J. Schim van der Looff* /
 陳述書 (檢察部文書第百五十五号) 及 *Brigadier Arthur*
Seaforth Blackburn、
 下シ、*バタヴィヤ* 兵將、陳述書 (檢察部文書第百五十四号)
 ニ依リ言及サレタル「日本國紹介」ト題スル四卷、
 之ルヲ受テ取リ多ク事ヲ茲ニ證明ス。
 余、更ニ之、ニ添附サレタル該ノ不レ公ノ台本ニ觀ルニ場
 面、解説ス、余ガ是等ノ不レ公ニテ見ル所ヨリ、余、
 金力ト全知識ヲ以テ、書目トシテ事ヲ證明ス。
 本局一九四六年十二月十日東京ニ於テ署名

署名 *K. A. de WEERD*

5759

書類五七五九号

画映「日本」紹介として「NIPPON PRESENTS」

説明：各場面「JAPANESE」/「JAPANESE OUTSIDE JAVA」/「AUSTRALIA」

「JAPANESE」/「AUSTRALIA CALLING」/「ALLIED BATAVIA」

「日本製映画」に於て如き意味を以てし、

「JAVAI」に於ては一九四三年昭和十八年日本合作製映

「AUSTRALIA CALLING」に於ては日本製映りの場面

「JAPANESE OUTSIDE JAVA」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

「AUSTRALIA STUDIO」に於ては戦争中日本人撮影技師合作製場面

「AUSTRALIA CALLING」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

「ALLIED BATAVIA」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

「BATAVIA」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

「ALLIED BATAVIA」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

「ALLIED BATAVIA」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

「NIPPON PRESENTS」

「JAVAI」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

「ALLIED BATAVIA」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

「ALLIED BATAVIA」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

「ALLIED BATAVIA」に於ては如き意味を以てし、

203

5759

英国、濠洲、及和蘭、信房及其被擄留者ハ此ノ映画ニ出演
 ヲ強ヒラシメ、此等ノ信房、多クハ飢饉、虐待及疾病等、為
 現在ハ死亡シ若キ者、ミカ生存シテ居ル而シテ、彼等ノ中ノ多數
 ノ者ガ自發的ニ又ハ止ミ難キ義務感念ナリ、日本軍ガ此ノ事
 ヲドテ風ニ製作シタコトヲ告ゲル為ニ此處ニ連行サレタコト、日
 本軍自身ガ提供セル此ノ證據映画ハ獄囚ノ非人間的ナリ、倭
 作製セルタモノタトイフコトヲ觀取スル為ニ、諸君ハ今此ノ日本
 製フィルムヲ觀覽セントシテ居ラレ、抑テ銀幕面ニ於テモ、
 又此ノ觀象中ニモ出演者ノ中ノ生存者、幾人カラ発見サレド
 アロウ。ソノ生存者トハ左記ノ人々ナリ。

1. (濠洲撮影所映画) 俳優紹介。

画面ニ現ル又詔者、次ノ如ク紹介ス。

- 1/ BRIGADIER BLACKBURN, VICTORIA CROSS, AIF
 ブリックバーン准將 - 濠洲陸軍所屬、ヴィクトリア十字章佩用者
- 1/ WING CMDR. DAVIS, RAF
 デヴィス飛行中佐 - 英國空軍所屬
- 1/ SQUADRON LDR. SHEPARD, RAF, DSCI
 シーパード飛行中隊司令 - 英國空軍所屬、殊勳十字章佩用者
- 1/ GROUP CAPT. NOBLE, RAF
 ノブル航空大佐 - 英國空軍所屬
- 1/ CAPT. DR. KINGMA, RNIA
 キンガ大尉 - 蘭印陸軍所屬
- 1/ MRS. E. J. JOHNSON, DUTCH BORN ENGLISH WOMAN
 ジョーンズ夫人 - 和蘭生、英國女子
- 1/ F. O. THOMAS, RAAF
 フォーオーストマス - 濠洲帝國空軍所屬
- 1/ PVT. MCNAB, RAN
 マックナブ兵卒 - 濠洲海軍所屬
- 1/ PVT. MICK FIELD, AIF
 ミックフィールド兵卒 - 濠洲軍歩兵部隊所屬
- 1/ PVT. REED, AIF
 リード兵卒 - 濠洲軍歩兵部隊所屬

No 4

5759

1/DR. DAVIS

私、及我軍中位、私、或時、長官、若、救、答

時、有、遺、三、三、源、又、此、様、二、許、才、子、五、人、不、代、其、官、ヲ、殺

ス、ト、加、有、迫、ナ、シ、ク、コ、ト、ヲ、承、知、シ、居、ル、

1/COMMANDER DAVIS

不、可、及、申、位、：、然、り、金、々、其、自、通、リ、シ、ク、リ、マ、ス、。

1/BRIGADIER BLACKBURN

私、身、伴、金、鏡、ヲ、充、金、調、登、之、シ、ガ、。、諸、君、ヨ、!

私、死、ノ、勳、功、追、テ、受、テ、ト、カ、シ、モ、。、格、抗、シ、ヨ、シ、ト、覺、悟、サ、シ、ク、

ト、ト、個、人、ト、シ、テ、。、何、等、恥、シ、ベ、キ、コ、ト、ガ、ト、イ、フ、ト、ス、ヨ、ク、承、知

シ、テ、居、リ、マ、ス、。

將、校、及、兵、ハ、此、日、本、倒、リ、ル、ハ、。、製、作、ニ、際、シ、テ、参、觀、シ、ク、

コ、ト、シ、心、中、ヲ、煩、悶、シ、テ、居、テ、シ、マ、ス、。

私、級、等、ニ、命、リ、煩、悶、シ、ル、必、要、ハ、無、ク、ト、思、フ、マ、ス、。

級、等、ハ、英、雄、的、格、抗、。、敵、軍、誘、テ、言、フ、ト、モ、同、様、ナ、リ、ト、

即、チ、彼、等、ハ、一、脚、ニ、戰、死、シ、テ、生、命、ヲ、救、助、セ、ン、ガ、タ、ク、。、屈

服、シ、ク、テ、ア、ラ、ズ、。、出、来、ル、事、ヲ、多、ク、。、邪、魔、ト、シ、テ、。、映、畫

全、體、ヲ、一、個、ノ、笑、劇、ニ、シ、テ、。、シ、マ、ラ、シ、ク、決、心、シ、テ、居、リ、マ、ス、。

1/DR. DAVIS / 海軍中位

私、他、ノ、將、校、及、兵、ト、シ、テ、。、論、シ、ク、。、日、本、兵、何、ヲ、念、ニ

テ、不、出、ル、ハ、思、フ、タ、リ、ク、。、分、我、等、ハ、考、ヘ、ク、。、食、糧、ノ、削、減、

医、薬、ノ、拒、否、ト、シ、テ、。、作、間、ヲ、多、數、殺、ス、ク、シ、ト、

リ、シ、テ、。、我、等、ハ、公、演、シ、テ、。、シ、ク、シ、テ、。、ハ、約、キ、テ、カ、ツ、ク、。

日、本、兵、ハ、映、畫、ニ、公、演、出、来、ル、ハ、又、次、ヲ、希、フ、見、以、テ、ル、ト、

波、客、者、ヲ、綿、密、ニ、調、ハ、キ、マ、シ、テ、。、シ、ク、シ、テ、。、ハ、約、キ、テ、カ、ツ、ク、。

No. 6

575

何カ下ヲ又科、多クは絶食、副ヲ如ハラレテ并ム。
多数ノ者、之ヲイ層層ヲ撥キ集メ、修リ修リシテ
バシク人々が体感ヲ見ル様ニ十分ノ衣裳ヲ準備シテ
實際リト申シアルモ、トハ倉庫ノ様ニトバシテ置キテ

ブラックバーン / BLACKBURN / 准将

「ソノシヤ、今カラソノ日本、映畫ヲ見ルコトトシヨク。

其、嘘ツバチニ対シテ、エマカシノ十イ本堂、所ヲ見テミヨク。

三 (三上同シ場面) 一 再ニ銀幕ニ帰シテ、劈頭先ニ撮影中ノ

カメラマン次ニ游泳ノ場面ヲ鴨、群ル光景等が出テ
来ル。

声バカリノ辯士が話シ復テル——

「日本ノカメラマンが、此ノフィルムヲ作製セシムルガ、

此ノ映畫ハ我ガ軍隊が自分ヲ作製セシタモノト、

印象ヲ与ヘルコトヲ狙ヒニホル。 Bren Gun フレン銃ヲ射撃

スルガがカメラ廻ワシヨリ、餘ツ程手馴レタ荒武者

達ガ映畫ヲ作ツタヤラ見セカケクナ。ゴランナナ。

鴨アテガ芝居ヲサセラレタルヨクニ見エルテミヨク。

四 (日本製衣フィルム) 一 ナマヒ / JIMAH / (西ヤガ) 近傍トク

ガシヤ / LEUWIGADJAH / 農場 (本農場ハ九三年

聯合軍停戦時林が管理ヲ強ヒラシメ農場。

鴨ガ止場ナル。

五 (日本製衣フィルム) 一 偽物ノ圖書室

六 (日本製衣フィルム) 一 偽物ノ外科室

No. 7

5-7-59

軍需... 三十三... 收容所... 二... 男... 子... 達... 永... 泳... 獲... 得... 多... 僅... 此... 三... 時... 間... 於... 五... 日... 魚... 釣... 上... 言... 六... 十... 人... 人... 加... 釣... 竿... 上... 釣... 至... 五... 日... 止... 被... 收... 容... 者... 上... 言... 魚... 釣... 獲... 得... 多... 此... 攝... 影... 場... 合... 在... 五... 日... 止...

二. 濠洲撮影所... 以下... 不... 加... 語... 也...

皆... 三... 收容所... 浴場... 上... 三... 山... 中... 經... 介... 致... 又... 御... 醫... 生... 井... 下... 和... 道... 大... 部... 命... 命... 潰... 瘍... 及... 皮... 膚... 病... 等... 之... 患... 者... 無... 理... 无... 下... 之... 也...

(收頁=統々)

No. 13

575 9 (聯合軍のウイヤ映画) 倭艦隊各計、浴室又ハ「ヤ」
三 (日本艦隊画) 射屋中、倭艦隊各計、將校連が坐ラテ居ル
「エート君がコノウヲ聞イテ」

將校同志、對話(偽物、倭艦隊各計、實ハ高石遊覽地
セロビツター / SELABINTANAH /
「コノオ、走」オモ次、ロモ / SOLOMON / 海戦、固ル我亦前圓
「表、中、敵、損害ニ対スル報告ヲ次、如ク訂正改メテ、
即チ撃沈戦艦二隻、巡洋艦十一隻、駆逐艦三隻又ハ四隻
輸送船一隻、大損害ヲ与ヘタルニ、戦艦一隻、巡洋艦三隻、駆
逐艦六隻又ハ七隻、輸送船三隻」

「オ、オ、茶、上ラ」
「有難ウ、ワゴ馳走ニナラウ」
(訪問者一倭艦隊教令が入ラ来ル)

「ヤ」
「俺達モコノオテ、エースヲ聞イタ所カ」
「コノオ、茶、熱クテイニ」
「ウ、熱クテ結構カ」
「ヤ、有難ウ」
「有難ウ」

「ヤ、モウ沢」
「オ、君、ト、エースヲウエ?

NO. 14

「エート」コナリ遠慮勝ト放送ガ、日本コウ、エースト、相志
「モウ」
「アメリカ、放送ガ味方大部命戦死ヲ報スル、ヲ聞フ、ハツライニ」

5759

三 (濱洲撮影時映画)

シロート / SHEPARD

私がシロトチヲ聞キテ時ニ何カニ何カニ嘘ト上思ヒテシテ、私ハ確ニ近ク却テカク侍ハシテ来ニ放送ヲ聞キテシタガ、收信所ノ中ニシロトチハ無カク多クシテ、一九四三年以後ニ凡テ、宗教上、勤行、音楽會及ビ教育上、講演ガ禁止サレテ居タリ云々。

四 (日本撮影映画) 二二上閉場面一対話ガ継続ス。

戦争ハ確ニ生キテ居ル人ヲ殺シテ死ニテ人ヲ生カシリスルモノナシ。

オレノ家内ガ俺ガ生キテ居ルコトヲ知テ居ル中ニシテ無心戯ニタリテ、万幸都合ヨリ行クカラウ。

俺ノ家内ニ會フコトニ出来ルヨ。

(信條、將校ガ女トシテ見セテカ)

コレトノ思フカニ大變立派ニヤナカ。

君ハ細君ガシロトチヲ好ムト思フカ。

ソレハ僕ノ趣味ハ最上ニヤカモ知シテイガ僕ガ送ラヤルトイフ氣持ヲ喜ブト思フネ。彼女トテモ喜劇ノ女ヲ見シシハ彼女ノ手紙ヲ判ルヨ。

「マタ始マツタ— 既婚男子諸君、オ、ロケタ。」

「然レ僕ハ完カク子供ガ来ニハ大變嬉シイネ、...」ソレ時、

本妻ニ嬉シイネ彼女ハ防空訓練ヲ忙シト手紙ヲ書キテアルヨ。

(一行不明)

No. 5

5759

「我が帰ルニテニ我々、家庭ハトクナレド」
 安全ニ完ハスベニトシ/PENNINGTON/ニキル一度幸福ノ味ヲ
 見度モナク」
 「ウハヤ俺達ニモラ會ハナイヨウ。俺ニ「女友達、家階
 段、所ニ去ル迄ノタイト思フニカラス」
 「リヤイ、俺モ」
 「不金ヲ貯ナラホサテ良イ景園ニ浴有キタイモ」
 「ウハ、早クハ早イ程イイネ」

(次頁ニ続ク)

No. 16

Doc. 5759

五 (濠洲撮影映画)

シバート / SHEPARD /

時が経つに従つて生活状態が悪クナツテ行つた。遂に我々が日本人
を全ク顧みらナイトイフコトが判ツテ来た。国際條約も人道も原
則も彼等ニハドウデモイ、ハ。僥倖ニモ生キ残ツテ居ル我々、大
部分、モ、ハ、此、ヒドイ生活ヲ強イラシテイルバカリニ。可哀シニ
健康ヲ害シテシマツテ居ル。日本人が我々、厚生ニトイフコトニ就
テホシ、少しデモ関心ヲ持ツテ呉レタラバ、我々、同僚、多ク、
吾が今日生キテ居タチアラウト思フ。

六 (聯合軍バタヴィヤ映画) 若干、收容所、寫真及心算セウ
場、光景。

七 (日本製映画) テニス、試合。

声バカリ、辯士——

「ウィンテラ、ウィンテラ——」 「コノ氣樂ナ樂シソウナテニス、試
合テスラ監視人、命令ニ依ル俘虜訓練、一方法ニ過ギナイデア
リマス。」

八 (濠洲撮影映画)

リード / REED / 語り役

ミックフィールド / MICKFIELD / 一郭公鳥、擬声

タマス / THOMAS / クリケット、試合、コトヲ語ルテ居ル。

リード / REED / 語り——

「ミック / MICK / オオ、ヨウオカシナ願ヲシタス。オオが郭公
鳥、ニネヲシタ、デ日本人が鳥ヲ搜シテ收容所、周リヲ駈
ケスリ廻ッタトキノコトヲ想ヒ出シテ見ヨ。オオ、今デモシガ

No. 17

Doc. 5759

出来ルカイ」(大笑)

ミックフィールド/MICKFIELD/

今でも出来ルヨ」(部公鳥、マニヲスル)

トマス/THOMAS/

「僕がマニ事、クリケット試合、アニハイヤーハドウダッタ?
ア、時ニハ確ニアイツ等ニ一杯喰ハシテヤッタツケ。我々が勝手
ニクリケットノ規則ヲ作ツテ居タコトヲ彼等ハ知ラナカッタ、
ネ。俺ハ勝手ニ何時デモ打者ヲアウトニシタ。他ノ遵守モソ
ヲ容認シドシ、試合ヲ進行シタ。アニクリケットハ全ク
前代未聞ダ。」

二九(日本製映画)クリケット、試合(英吉利俱樂部、バタウィア
/BATAVIA/ 当時ハ日本人俱樂部)「コリヤドウダ?」
「アウト」
(第三巻終)

第三巻

三十一(聯合軍バタウィア映画)

ハシガロエデマ/T.N. 栄養不足、結果皮膚ニ出ル病氣

/HUNGER OEDEMA/、様々ノ患者、場面、トマス/THOMAS/

最初ニ次テ医者、キニグマ/KINGMA/博士ガ話ス(兩人トモ姿、現

ハサイ)

姿ヲ現ハサイ話者(トマス/THOMAS/)

「全ク、此、我々認シ出サシク者ハ其、日ハ面白ク過シタ、テス

數ヶ月後ハ我々、多ク、若ククリケット、打棒ヲ持テ

ルハサハ出来ズミシテ走ル、此テハアリマセンテ、久カマニ同

No. 18

Doc. 5759

No. 19

様柳留サトヲキタ/医者、キニダ博士ニシ、マニイテ話
テ頂キマセラ。

医者キニダ/KINGMA/博士(海、現、サト)

クリケットヤ他ノ遊戯ヲスルコトハオロカ、之等、可哀シ
人達ハ飢餓、結果トシテ起ル、アヲニル病氣ニ惱ニテキタ
脚氣ハ其、中、只一例ニスギマセ。貴方方が今、之カラ
ニル病院、場面、始メカラ終ルニテ描造サシタモ、デス。日本人、
バタヴィア/BATAVIA/、此、病院ニ一群、オーストラリア人ヲ連
テ来ニシタ。コ、真似、治療ニ出演シタ人々、其、時、未
ダ健康ヲアツタ、ニ一才收容以内、在、当、病人ハ治療ヲ受
ケルコトモ早急ニ必要トシタ。藥ヲ得ルコトモ出来ナカツト云
コトヲ考(合セルト全ク悲惨トコトデス。

5759
duc
19101

(三十二)日本側「ルン」捏造の病院場面「尼僧患者」入光線、装置
、使用、真似「履七」手術
尼僧「今日、如何？」
患者「良、其、有難、之、」

(三十三)オーストラリア撮影所映画
隨着「GINGNA」博士「綺麗」ニ「オ」實際理想的「ニ」ヲ「オ」本當ニ
然「事」寒、全「ヲ」連「ワ」キ「タ」ト「ス」 医「者」ト「シ」テ「私」ガ「働」キ「テ」キ「ク」得「屠」
病「院」ヲ「日」本「兵」ハ「入」光「線」、装「置」ヲ「テ」キ「ム」ヤ「外」科「、」器「具」ヲ「盗」ミ
ニ「ク」其「、」病「院」ガ「実」際「、」如「何」ヲ「テ」ワ「カ」ル「コ」ト「自」介「テ」御「覽」下
サ「イ」。

(三十三)聯合國側「ルン」バタヴィヤ「BATAVIA」様名、收容所病院、場面
(「マ」ト「ウ」ニ「セ」キ「、」シ「ク」 / 「ST. VINCENTIUS」 / 病院及「ニ」テ「ル」ト「ウ」ト「ウ」 /
「MATER DOLOROSA」 / 病院、兩方「ト」モ「ル」バ「タ」ヴィ「ヤ」 / 「BATAVIA」 / 「近」キ) 日
本降帳「ノ」月「後」即「チ」一「九」四「五」年「九」月「撮」影「医」員「助」手「等」新
ニ「到」着「ス」

19111

(三十四)日本側「ルン」

- 「ソ」エ「カ」ボ「エ」ニ「」 / 「SOEKABOEMI」 / 「近」キ「山」地「、」汽「車」ト「」
- 「ラ」ビ「ン」タ「ナ」ハ「」 / 「LABINTANAH」 / 「山」嶽「、」養「地」ト「」
- 「」 / 「」 / 「水」泳「場」
- 「」 / 「」 / 「撞」球「室」
- 「」 / 「」 / 「コ」ル「フ」、」コ「ー」ス

No. 20

「汝」ヲ「現」サ「シ」テ「話」者

「日」本「高」級「司」令「部」、將「校」ニ「依」ッ「テ」使「用」サ「レ」テ「キ」ク「此」ノ「氣」持「、」
良「ク」山「、」保「養」地「」此「ノ」日「本」ノ「ル」ン「、」場「面」ニ「良」ク「材」料「ト」シ「テ」

doc 5759

「選定」は、

或は日、ナーストラー人、收容所ハ愉快ニハナスホトクマニ、集メトシテ、
演習スルニ、大々ハナシ人々ヲ採ケウトニテ、謝ラセマシタ。彼等ハ、撞球
モ水泳モ、ビールヲ飲ムコトモ、ゴルフヲスルコトモ、又良イ食物ヲ取ルニ
モ、出来マシタ。彼等ハ、幸福カウナ、様子ヲセヨト言セバ、ヤラシク「ハハ」
「実情」ハ、彼等ハ、水泳ヲモシタ、又撞球ヲモシタ、
ゴルフコース（ゴルフヲシテ、人々）（不明瞭）確カニ、私情ニ良ク分シ

（不明）

三十五 ナーストラー撮影所映画

「デイヴィス / Davis」が話ス

「本当ニ幸福カウナ、運動家達、所ガ、ソカラ、戻ラテ、六、鉄
橋網、着カ、汚カ。 退屈ガ、待ワテ、ナク、テ、ス、一番、悪イ
事ハ、屑ナ、福ヲ、日本人、共ニ、追ヒ、集メ、ス、ラ、ト、駈リ、立テ、ラ、ル、ガ、。

三十六 日本側「ソノ」以外

日本兵ニ、追ヒ、集メ、ス、ラ、ト、中、ル、所、属、シ、場、面、（「ソノ」 / 「ソノ」 / 外、日
本人ニ、依、リ、テ、撮、ラ、シ、タ、場、面、）

迄、ヲ、現、サ、シ、テ、話、者

「此等特別、情報、数、場面、ハ、我方、首、獲、ニ、カ、ル、ジ、ヤ、ワ、（「ソノ」 / 「ソノ」 /
外、地方、解放、以前、ニ、日本、側、ニ、依、リ、テ、作、製、セ、ラ、シ、タ、ニ、テ、ス、映
画、カ、ラ、取、ツ、ク、モ、テ、ス、。

「此等ハ、カ、ワ、テ、日本、帝國、手、ニ、依、リ、テ、自、持、ク、テ、誇、示、マ、シ、タ、テ、
テ、ス、」

三十七 日本側「ソノ」

「歡迎」場面、座、稱、カ、ラ、シ、タ、人、所、属、建、シ、テ、一、家、族、建、シ、テ、

No. 21

No. 22

Doc 5759

再會セロニタナ / SELABINTANAH / 終止

子・娘サナト話著

「全場面中テ最モ本當ニシテイ場面」トテ貴方ノ御覽ニ
ナラズ。オラニテ、仔唐ノ彼等ノ愛人ヲ若キ子供等ト
虚構、再會ノ場面ナラズ。自然ノ情ニほメテ抱擁ニシテ
又ハ仔唐達ハ番兵ニ引キ離サレ、オラニテ命ヲ
「抱擁サセマシタラス」

三六(本側ヲ見ル)

セロニタナ / SELABINTANAH

オラニテ、大尉ガ家族ト一緒ニ腰ヲケテナル。オラニテ、中尉ト
家族、オラニテ語テ「對話」

(又下次頁)

doc 5754
19.12.1

「今日ハ何ント良イ天気デセウ。」

「ハイ。ナンド良イ日デセウネ。」

「ガソレニツケテモア、豫州、新西蘭、兵隊達ハ氣
毒ナモナラスネ。」

「ソウ。私モソウ思ヒマス。」

「アノ人達ヲ呼ビマシヨウ。」

「オハイ。皆ニテ此處へ來イ。」

(豫州兵隊達ハ家族ノモト一箇ニナル)

三九。(オーストラリア撮影所映画) アンネミーケ/ANNEMIEKE/ガ語ル。

「私ハ和蘭人。私ノ名ハアンネミーケ/ANNEMIEKE/デス。オカサ

サニト私ハジャバ/JAVA/ノ或ル收容所ニ居マシタ。

ケレドソコハホントウハアノ様ナ所デハカウタノデス。

寧ロコニテ風デアリマシタ。イヤ。時ニハモット

ズト悪イコトサヘアリマシタ。」

四。(聯合軍バタビア映画)

バタビア/BATAVIA/附近ノ婦女抑留者收容所。

チヂン/TJIDENG/收容所。カンボン。マカッサル

/KAMPONG MAKASSAR/收容所。(竹小屋) 及び再ビ

チヂン/TJIDENG/收容所。

No. 23

四一。(オーストラリア撮影所映画)

アンネミーケ/ANNEMIEKE/語之續ケル

「私ハ夫ニテ悪戯ハ致シマセシテシタ。ソレニテ

doc 5734

五来ルタノ母ナニテ守 既ケルニアヤマシク
田三 (日本側アイム) 恋愛場画 (和蘭、海軍少尉ト婚約者)

セラビニタナ / SELABINTANAH / 一 兵クナブ / PRIVATE MC NAB / 手紙ヲ書イテ来ル。

田三 (ホーストニア撮野所録画)

マクナブ / MCNAB / 語ル。

マクナブ / MC NAB /

『彼等ノ手紙ヲ私ニ與ヘテ、手紙ヲ書ケト云フ。』

私ニ書キ始メタ。之ガ私ガ思フテ来ル事ヲ示ハシ、英語ヲ話ス。又日本少女ガ、貴方達ガ御衛キニテ、又私ガ手紙ヲ書イテ来ルモノト思ハセル言葉ヲ語ツタノダ。タダ若シ私ガ自分ノ思フコトヲ言ヒ表ハス事ガ自由ニ出来タラツタラ、私ハ次ノ梯ニ書イテ来タ事ヲセウ。

田四 (聯合軍バタビヤ映画)

マクナブ / MACNAB / ガ手紙ト叙シタ事ニ就テノ数場面。

其ノ内ニ、^{1/BATAVIA/}バタビヤ所ニ在、俘虜收容所。

カニホシマカツサル / KAMPONG MAKASSAR / 婦女及ヒ若年者收容所、及ヒ其他ノ

No. 24

doc 5759

收容所、場面若干。

英語ヲ讀ム日本人少女(現シテオナ)

今日、詩問曰ラリマス——和蘭、兵士達ニトツテ、
樂ニイ期待、日、而シテ我々ニトツテ、誰モ詩ヲ書ク
ル人ガナイノテ、悲シイ日ダケド、後ト幸福線

「運」中ニ再ヒ結ビ合フ幸福ノ家族達、及本年
ト、ト、ラ見ルト私、心、中テ眞言ニモット身近カニ
接スル様ナ氣ガ致ニス。カウシテ坐ツテ書目イテ本ト私

達ガ一緋過テ、樂ニカク、打ツテ思ヒ出ニス。私
ガ家ヘカツタラ最初、時、(聴取不明略)私想ヒ
「家ト眞言ニ就テラス。カズガ、ト、快適」海辺、

シカラ美シイ、多クノ、街テス
而シテ、ト、私、数多ク美シイモノヲ見シ、ナイガ、淋ネ。
……此処テ……、血團氣、中テ、アタタ、今、ナラ、シテ

即イテ、ナゲヤウ。總テ、便宜ガ我々ニ興(ラシキ)又ス
「何ニテモ我慢」女奉ス、ケレド、アタタ、ナシテ、ハ、生キ

長ラ、テイル、モ、無駄、ナ、掃、ナ、氣ガ、ニス。私、唯一、願ヒ
「家ニ歸ルコト」テス。而シテ、アタタ、ノ、詩ニ。家ニ歸ル、何
モ、モ、モ、ワ、ニ、度、ト、私、ヲ、アタタ、カラ、引、離、ス、事、ハ、出来

No. 25 19.131

ナイ、デ、ニ、ヨウ。
四年(日本側ヲイル公)
又、シ、タ、ナ、I SELABINTANAH / N / MCNAB / 手紙ヲ書キ
ガラ、シ、イ、テ、本、ル。

doc 5759

田六(十人)ニシテ又(最)方(行)進(意)

マクナブ / MCNAB / 語

『私、涙(ハ)ノ(造)ニ(等)テアリマシタ。彼等(ハ)或(ハ)種(ノ)薬(品)ヲ私、眼(ニ)注(イ)テ涙(ヲ)出(サ)セマシタ。幾(日)モ、間(違)フ(ガ)止(マ)ラナカッタノ(デ)スカラ相(当)強(イ)薬(ダ)ツト思(ヒ)』

(等三卷終)

第(四)卷

第(四)卷(一)日本製(映)画(像)物(ノ)娛樂(室)

(四) 給料日

見(得)ザ(ル)話(手)

「ホ(シ)、暫(ク)、間(ミ)、金(持)、其(最)初(ノ)、二(箇)、封(筒)ニ(勿)論(返)却(シ)タケド、ナ(ラ)ズ(イ)金(が)入(リ)マ(シ)タ。他(ノ)封(筒)ハ(恰)モ

一杯(ノ)如(ク)膨(マ)リマ(シ)タ。』
(ニ)ツク(イ)ル(ト) ビールヲ飲(ム)。

見(得)ザ(ル)話(手)

机(上)ニ(在)リ(實)牙(ヲ)見(ル)ビ(ル)茶(ヲ)マ(シ)タ。

「TUBBY REED」ト(シ)テ(私)ガ(唯)一(ノ)本(身)ビ(ール)ヲ(飲)ニ(シ)タ。

第(四)卷(一) (豪)州(最)新(映)画(所)

(HARRISON) / REED / 村(話)

(HARRISON)

No 26

「木(ノ)實(ヲ)味(ク)タコト、ナ(イ)美(味)ニ(シ)ル。僕(ガ)最(後)一(杯)ヲ(ガ)ク(飲)ニ(シ)タ。掃(子)思(ヒ)出(ス)カネ。一(モ)ク一(本)復(等)ヲ(止)ム(前)ニ(飲)マ(シ)』

「REED」ト(シ)テ、思(ヒ)出(ス)ヨ、而(シ)テ(ソ)ノ(誰)ガ(飲)ニ(シ)タ

Doc 5759

の事知つた下、日本人、奴がカニを讀んで、之が俺、

進出する、
/HARRISON/

「日、君、良、日、の、タ、ネ。君、大、キ、の、下、キ、ヲ、食、ハ、シ、ス。
僕、唯、の、查、察、の、タ、リ、シ、ス、

/REED/

本堂、下、時、良、の、タ、下、日、本、人、奴、等、中、人、俺、二、手、肉、ヲ、食、
ハ、シ、タ、カ、オ、来、ル、カ、ト、言、フ、タ、。俺、一、人、前、下、下、下、二、人、命、ハ、食、ハ、シ、

下、カ、オ、来、ル、ト、答、フ、

彼、等、俺、下、下、下、連、下、行、行、行、口、口、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、
下、下、下、食、ハ、シ、タ、カ、。下、下、下、俺、食、ハ、シ、タ、カ、。...

和、日、合、團、下、下、下、起、下、下、下、オ、来、事、ヲ、撮、影、看、知、ル、カ、ト、下、
君、和、考、の、解、下、下、下、思、フ、

兔、角、俺、百、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、
良、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、

第九(日本製映画) 第五十同種の下を食下下 /REED/

第五十(日本製映画) 偽物、浮屠、收容所、賣店、

如何の下、下、下、下、如何程下、此賣店、價額、如何程
下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、

No. 27

第五十(聯合軍の下映画) 食料下下下取、下下下
居、下、下、下、

DOCUMENT 5685

Prosecution Document

5685

Class B and C Offenses

NETHERLANDS I. DIES

SURATEA

Synopsis

Netherlands Division I.P.S.

December 1946.

Lt.Col. J.S. Sinnighe Damste
R.I.A.,
Assistant Prosecutor.

Synopsis

I. PRISONERS OF WAR.

1. Murder.

Several murders of P.O.W. occurred after their surrender. Most of the executions were carried out in a very cruel way.

a. At Bangka Island, East of Sumatra, on 15 February 1942, a group of shipwrecked Australian servicemen was murdered by machine gunning after they had been driven into the sea; without any trial, even without any comprehensible reason. As appears from the report of the interrogation of E. A. LLOYD, R.N., Prosecution Document 5617.

The Prosecution enters this document 5617 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

b. At Kotaradja, North Sumatra, on 18 March 1942, a few days after their surrender, about 50 Dutch P.O.W. (European and Ambonese) were pushed into sloops, towed to the open sea and shot. As appears from the affidavit of Sgt. M. LATUFERISSA, R.N.I.A., Prosecution document 5619.

The Prosecution enters this document 5619 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

c. Major LEENHEER has already testified regarding the murder of 22 Dutch P.O.W. at Tiga Roenggo, North East Sumatra, on 15 March 1942.

2. Camps.

The conditions in the various P.O.W. camps in Sumatra have already been described by the witness Major RINGER, who has given evidence from his personal knowledge and from the results of his official investigation regarding the other camps. Additional evidence is presented now concerning two other camps.

a. The British Wing Commander P. S. DAVIS, in his sworn report, gives a summary of conditions of the P.O.W. camps at Pakan Baru.

Central Sumatra, where initially 2,000 Dutch and British P.O.W. were confined; Prosecution document 5604. Filthy surroundings and bad accommodation; heavy labor, started immediately after an extremely exhausting voyage and overland trip, with only very little and poor food provided. The labor consisted in the construction of a railroad and was conducted by a group of Japanese soldiers straight from the Burma railway P.O.W. gangs; which resulted in the same slave driving conditions and brutality as already shown to this Court by the testimonies of the late Colonel WILD and Lt.Colonel COMTES.

A dysentery outbreak was unavoidable because the P.O.W. on their way had been lodged in the overcrowded gaol at Padang, under dangerous sanitary conditions together with native coolies who almost all suffered from dysentery. Practically no medicines were supplied, and no dressings, although after the Japanese surrender large stocks were available. Consequently, dysentery and malaria along with the results of malnutrition - beri-beri, pellagra, other avitaminoses, tropical ulcers - made the number of sick rise to almost 40%. The less sick people were forced to do garden work because the camps had to grow their own vegetables.

Some 170 shipwrecked P.O.W. arrived in bad condition but were not given the necessary treatment and care, so that many of them died. The death rate rose to 80 and even more per month, due to lack of food and heavy work, but still the forced labour was increased. The Japanese Commandant showed no interest; several instances of brutality and cruelty in the treatment, even causing death, are given.

The Prosecution enters this document 5604 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

b. In the Kota Tjane area, North Sumatra, in October 1944 the P.O.W. were forced to march day and night over a distance of 90 miles in 68 hours. Each man who fell behind was beaten until he kept up with the main party. As appears from the affidavit of Pte. W. HAGEDOORN, R.N.I.A.; Prosecution document 5601.

The Prosecution enters this document 5601 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

3. Executions.

In May 1943 the Dutch P.O.W. at Lowe Segelagole-camp, Kota Thane, were forced to enlist in the Japanese Army, Four of these P.O.W. who had refused were executed, as is vividly depicted by the eye-witness K.F. KRINGSMA, R.I.I., in his affidavit, Prosecution Document 5623.

The Prosecution enters this document 5623 as an exhibit.

II. CIVILIANS.

A. Internees.

The Prosecution refers to the testimony of Major LEEMER who has given information from his personal experience and from the results of the official investigation carried out by him regarding the 70 odd civilian internment camps. Additional evidence is presented by the following.

1. Murder.

About the same time as the Japanese murdered a group of Australian servicemen at the beach of Banka Island, as stated before, they murdered by machine gunning and bayonetting a group of about 20 Australian nurses who were taken prisoner. Sister BULLWINKLE has given testimony regarding this murder.

They also murdered at the same place and time two captured civilians: Mr. GORDON BOWDEN, the official Representative of the Commonwealth of Australia in Malaya, and his political secretary. This appears from the affidavit by the Australian A. E. WOOTTON: Prosecution document 5645.

The Prosecution enters this document 5645 as an exhibit.

Major LEEMER has already given evidence about the murder of three British civilians at Pematang Siantar, in March 1942.

2. Conditions.

As already described by Major LEEMER in almost all camps conditions were utterly miserable.

/
In

In the women camp at Brastagi, North Sumatra, food conditions were terrible: in November 1943 the daily ration consisted of 140 grams of rice for adults and only 80 grams for children- (450 grams = 1 American lbs.) - ; in addition 20 grams of vegetables. These circumstances made hundreds of desperate women break out in order to find additional food in spite of the severe punishments to be feared. The Kempeitai investigated the matter and the two women camp commandants were severely ill-treated, including the threat of execution, as stated by one of them, Mrs. M. FRIE S-nee ROEBORN, in her affidavit; Prosecution document 5646.

The Prosecution enters this document 5646 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

3. Non-interned.

1. Romusha.

Not only Japanese were forced to hard labor and sent to other parts of the Greater East Asia Co-Prosperty Sphere, but also aborigines of Sumatra had to suffer this enslavement, as appears from the affidavit of MR. BIE SARODI, who was detailed to work at Singapore under the usual hopeless conditions; Prosecution document 5716.

The Prosecution enters this document 5716 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

It is brought to the Court's attention that several of the Romusha, whose affidavits have been dealt with when the area Java was presented, were also ill-treated when working on islands belonging to the Sumatra area.

2. Kempeitai.

The methods of the Sumatra-Kempeitai did not substantially differ from those applied by the Java Kempeitai, from whom they received assistance. Major MATSUJURI, in his report already introduced, exhibit _____ (Javint 3106/s, sub II) gives evidence about the "JI"-operation, in Sumatra, 1943. The / suspects

suspects were not sent up to Court Martial but a speedy way of dealing with them was adopted, in fact the same system was applied as with the "K" operation in Java. When the crime was clearly proved - in the opinion of the torturing investigators - and the death sentence was considered suitable, the criminals were executed, on the decision of the Army. These executions were carried out fortnightly by every detachment of every section, in secrecy. The executions were at once reported to Kempei Headquarters, who at once reported to the Army. Prosecution document 5755, already introduced as exhibit_____.

Personal experiences show the same pattern as in Java:

a. At Medan, North West Sumatra, the methods of torture applied were: watertest and severe beatings. The treatment of the victims was extremely bad and drove them to suicide. As appears from the affidavit of L. G. HILLES; Prosecution document 5625.

The Prosecution enters this document 5625 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

b. At Shibolga, North West Sumatra: beatings and manhandling, torture, infliction of injuries, watertest, exposure of naked victims to the local population; bad treatment of the prisoners. As appears from the affidavit of Police inspector ... Suyker; Prosecution document 5635.

The Prosecution enters this document 5635 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

c. At Tandjong Karang, South Sumatra; beatings, burning of moustache, and other ways of torture. Affidavit of J. C. TERLIJK; Prosecution document 5636. From this as well as from the case of SUYKER appears that the Kempei officers condoned the ill-treatment.

The Prosecution enters this document 5636 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

d. At Palembang, Central South Sumatra, a Chinese doctor was a victim of the Kempei and afterwards forced to cure the victims.

Here also: severe beatings, in several ways; watertest, with /

sometimes

sometimes more than 3 gallons of soapy water, incidentally resulting in death; hanging; burning; threat of beheading; playing ball with an Indonesian as the ball. Doctor LO DJIE SICE described these tortures in his affidavit: Prosecution document 5632.

The Prosecution enters this document 5632 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

3. Prisons.

In the gaol of Pematang Siantar, North East Sumatra, more than 300 out of the 550 prisoners died in two years time. The causes of death were invariably; dysentery, malnutrition and the consequences thereof. Prisoners who were expected to die soon were put into a special cell; the dying was speeded up by putting the patient outside the cell in the tropical sun. As appears from the affidavit of H. R. KRUMER, Head manager of the Deli Tobacco Company; Prosecution document 5634.

The Prosecution enters this document 5634 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

This completes the synopsis regarding the Japanese conventional war crimes and crimes against humanity committed in the area Sumatra.

No 1

EX 1766

Evidentiary Document 5885

又トテニ於テハ色々ト傳傳カ收容所ノ状態ハ既ニ証人リニガリ少征ニヨ
リニ述ビテ居ルニ彼ハ彼自身ノ個人ノ知識ト他ノ收容所ニ関シテ彼
職務上ノ調査ノ結果カライノ証言ニ異ナリト云ヒ今追加ノ証言ガ他ノ一
收容所ニ関シテ提出スルニ

又收容所

直ニ其ノ手文トシテ之ガ傳傳カ殺害ニ関シテ証言スルニ
リニ述ビテ居ルニ既ニ於東ニテトノノカロエトニ於テハ九四三年

ト提出ス
檢査側ハ之ノ書類五六ニ号ヲ檢証スルノノ檢査ヲ證據書類
傳傳カ口供書ニテハ如ク檢査國書類五六ニ号ヲ
ニコラ以外海ニ出カテテ射殺サレタニ蘭印王國軍、Mニシテ
又人、トシテ人ノ傳傳カ(ヨロツトノホト)カ星橋船三押
ヒ於テトシテ、コクニシテテ降ルニ後三日即チ九四三年三月十日ニ
檢査ヲ證據書類トシテ提出ス
又公ニ号ニテハ如ク檢査側ハ二書類五六ニ号ヲ檢証スルノノ檢査
理由トシテカク英海軍、E.A.O.トシテ傳傳カ報告檢査側書類
兵隊ハ海ニ追ヒ出サレテ後機關銃ヲ殺害サレテ裁断ニテテ理解シ
又トテ東部ノカ島ニ九四三年三月十五日ニ難船ニテ、トクニ
カクテテテ

Page 1
陸軍後ニ於テハ傳傳カ殺害ノ數同ノ行ハ、トシテ其書ハ(非傳傳カ)陸

トテトテ
傳傳カ
概略
殺害
略

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5685

NO2

1942/21

英國航空隊 P.S. 等の公報報告中ニ中央又上ノ一分
 心修養收容所ノ状況大略ヲ述ビ其處ニ最初ニ十人トシテ
 人ノ英國人修養所ガ監視ナリシヲ檢察圖書類ヲ六回汚穢ナ環
 境悪ク待遇非常ニ劣リ食料ニ供給サレズ船泊陸上
 林ニヒドク疲カレ切ツテ其直後ニ重労働が始マツテ労働
 鉄ノ建設ヲヒルノ鐵道修養隊カノ眞直ニヤツテ未タ日本兵
 隊ニ指導サレテ其ノテ故アルト陸軍大佐トコトテ陸軍中佐ニ
 ヲリ此法ヲ証言サテ様ニ奴隷使ノ状態ニ虐待ガ續ク
 赤痢ノ發生ノ難クモアツテ何故ナリシ宿中修養所ノ内ニ
 大會混テテ全隊ニ危険ヲ爲ス状況ニ知ラレテ全部赤痢ニカシキ
 長官共ト共ニ宿ヲセラレテ其ノ實際ニモ糧ノ供給サレズ日本
 降伏後澤山使ハレ在營中ノモ拘ラレテ衣服モツトニ供給サレズ
 ノ結果赤痢トアリヤノ栄養失調ノ脚氣ノ多リヤ癩病ノ他ニ
 ミ欠乏症ヤ熱帶潰瘍ト共ニ病人ノ數ヲ四〇パーセント迄ニ増ヤシ
 了リ比較的病氣ヒドクイモノ當件事ヲヤラサレテ何故ナリシ收容
 所ノ命令ノ野菜ヲ作ラセテラカシカシク
 百十人許リノ難船ニ修養所ガ修メテ林窟ニ到着シテが父等十手ヲ
 モ介抱モサレカシク其ノ者ガ死シ死シテ食物欠乏ニ依リテ
 死ニカシクシテ三モツク然レ強衛労働ノ高増サレタ日本ノ命令
 少シ關心ヲ持テカシク死ニ至リシニテ程殘忍残酷ト打テ加數同
 心ナリ

N03

DOC 5685

Page 31

檢事側ハコノ書類五六〇号ヲ檢証タメ又其拔萃ヲ
証據書類トシテ提出スル

北又トテノコトヲシテ地方ニ於テ一九四四年十月ニ修
虜達ハ六ノ時間夜畫ナニ九トイルヲ行進
シタ。後ニオクシタ人々ハ本隊ニ追ヒツク迄一人々
々打タシタ。

蘭印王國軍兵卒 W. (W. H. H. H.) 口供書ニアリ如シ

檢察團書類五六〇号

檢事側ハコノ書類五六〇号ヲ檢証タメ又其拔萃
ヲ証據書類トシテ提出スル (以下次頁)

N03

DOC 5685

Page 31

檢事側ハコノ書類五六〇号ヲ檢証タメ又其按察ヲ
證據書類トシ提呈スル

北スアトクノコトヲシテ未詳ニ於テ九四年十月ニ
虜達ハ六ノ時間夜晝ナニ九ナイルヲ行進セ
ラタ。後ニオクタ人々ニ隊ニ進ビツク迄一令
々打タタ。

蘭印王國軍兵卒 W. (G. H. D.) 口供書ニアル如シ

檢察團書類五六〇号

檢事側ハコノ書類五六〇号ヲ檢証タメ又其按察
ヲ證據書類トシ提呈スル (以下次頁)

Doc 1005

3. 死刑執行

一九四三年五月四日の七カガガの牧寮所トロトシ十天牧寮所ニ於テオホシク又モ
虐害、日本軍兵籍ニ入ルコトヲ強クシテ、ソコヲ拒ムル四人、死刑ニサレタ。ソノ
目撃者、蘭即王国軍トモ、ソノシテ、ソノコト、口供書、檢察團書類五
六三三、中テ目ニシテ、ハルコトニ敘述シテサレ。

檢察團、口供書類五六三三号ヲ證據書類トシテ提出ス。

II 一般市民

A. 被收容者

檢察團、陸軍少佐リーニヒヤ、証言ヲ参照スルコトヲ要請スル。

彼、彼自身、経験ト彼自ラオコナク、七十餘、市民拘留所ニシテ、
公務上、調査、結果カニ情報ヲ提供シテ、又、追加證據ヲ提出スル。
一、殺害。

前述、如ク、シカ島海岸ニ日本人カオーストリア兵一隊
ニ時ニ捕虜トナシテ、凡ソ二十人位、オーストリア、看護婦長
ハコトニ関シテ、証言ヲ與ケヌ。

彼、又同時ニ同シ島行テ二人、捕虜ニナリ、市民即チ三ツニ於テ
オーストリア共和政府代表者、オトシテ、A. N. カート、ニヨルコ

供書ニヨリ示サシテサレ。檢察團、書類五六四五号。

檢察團、當書類五六四五號ヲ書證トシテ提出致シタ。

リーニヒル / LEENHEER / 少佐、一九四三年三月、
ル三人、英国市民殺害事件ニ関スル證據ヲ既ニ提出致シタ。

110. 生活状態。

既ニリーニヒル少佐ニヨリ記述セラルル如ク、殆ド何、牧寮所ニ於テモ
生活状態、全ク悲惨ナルモ、テアリタ。

5685

北部
BRASTAGI | 婦人、牧畜者、食糧不足
...
A.W. ...

捜査團の當番類五七二六號ヲ檢査トシテ、技師ヲ檢査トシテ提出致シタリ。

B. 牧畜者
一 勞務者

凡そ、...
...
捜査團の當番類五七二六號ヲ明テトシテ...

捜査團の當番類五七二六號ヲ檢査トシテ、技師ヲ檢査トシテ提出致シタリ。

凡そ、...
...
捜査團の當番類五七二六號ヲ明テトシテ...

No. 5

二 隊員

...
...
...

2. スマトラ北東部ニアルメダンニ於テ行ハレタ拷問方法ハ水責メ及ビ苛酷ナル毆打デシタ。犠牲者ニ對スル虐待タルヤ極度ニヒドク遂ニ彼等ヲシテ自殺セシムルニ到ラシメマシタ。以上ハ、G、E、メルスノ口供書、檢察團書類五六二五號ニ依リ明カナル通りデアリマス。

檢察團ハ當書類五六二五號ヲ檢證トシ其ノ拔萃ヲ書證トシテ提出致シマス。

女 スマトラ北西部ノシホルガニ於テハ、毆打、荒々シキ取扱ヒ、拷問、肉體毀傷、水責メ、裸體ノ犠牲者ヲ其ノ土地ノ住民ノ前ニ曝シ物ニスル等ノ俘虜虐待カ行ハレタル事ハ A、サイケル / *Sunder* / 警部ノ口供書、檢察團書類五六三三號ニ明ラカナル通りデアリマス。

檢察團ハ當書類五六三三號ヲ檢證トシテ其ノ拔萃ヲ書證トシテ提出致シマス。

No. 6

Luc 50 AS

勝村ノ各課ノ少佐ハ既ニ紹介サレル彼ノ報告書書證

(ジャヴァント/JAVANT/三。六。三第二節)中ニ一九四三年スマトラニ於テ
ル「ジ」式處理法ニ關スル證言ヲ述ベテ居リマス。容疑者ハ軍法會議

ニ送ラレニ手ヲ取り早イ處理法ガ採用サレタ。即チ爪哇ニ於ケル「
式處理法」時ト同様ノ方法ガ採ラレタノデアリマス。拷問式訊問官

ノ意見ニ於テ犯罪ガ明ラカトナツタ場合而カモ死刑宣告ガ適當
リト思考サレタ時犯罪人ハ陸軍ノ決定ニヨツテ死刑ニ處セラレタノデアリ

マス。此ノ如キ死刑ハ全地區ノ全分遣隊ヨリニ週間置キニ極秘裡ニ執
行サレマシタ。死刑終了後ハ直ニ憲兵司令部ニ報告サレ、司令部ハ直

チニ陸軍ニ報告シタノデアリマス。之ハ檢察團書類五七五六號ニシテ既
ニ書證トシテ紹介サレテオリマス。個人的經驗モ亦爪哇ニ於ケルト同シ

型ヲ示シテ居リマス。

Doc 5685

c. スマトラ南部、タンジヨンカラニ於テ毆打ヤ口髭ヲ焼クコトヤ其他、拷問が行ハレタ。J. C. テールリク / TEERLINCK / ノ供述書、檢察團書類五六三六號。サイケル、場合ト同様之ニ依リテ憲兵將校ガ虐待ヲ大目ニ見タモノト思ハレマス。

檢察團ハ當書類五六三六號ヲ檢證トシ其ノ抜萃ヲ書證トシ提出致シマス。

d. スマトラ中南部、パルバンニ於テハ一支部人醫師、彼自身先少憲兵ノ犠牲者トナリ、其ノ後幾多犠牲者、治療ヲ強制的ニサセシマシタ。當地ニ於テモ數種ノ方法ニ依ル強烈ニ毆打、水責メ、或ル時ハ三ガロン以上モアル石鹼水ヲ飲マセシノ結果死ニ到ラシメタコトモアル更ニ又吊リ下ゲ、火焙リ、首ヲ斬ルト、脅迫、インドネシヤ人ヲボールニシテボール投ゲ遊ビ等ヲシタノデアリマス。醫師ロイ、ヂェニシヨハ之等ノ拷問ヲソノ供述書、檢察團書類五六三三號中ニ陳述シテ居リマス。

檢察團ハ當書類五六三三號ヲ檢證トシ其ノ抜萃ヲ書證トシ提出致シマス。

三、牢獄

スマトラ北東部、ペマタン、シアンタル、牢獄ニ於テハ二年間ニ五五〇人、俘虜中三〇人以上ノ死亡者が出マシタ。死亡ノ原因ハ種々アリ即チ赤痢、栄養不良及ビ深養不良、結果起ル病氣等デアリマシタ。死期差シ迫ツタ病人ハ特別ノ檻房ニスレ、更ニ、檻房カラ出シテ熱帯下、太陽ニ曝シ以テ死期ヲ早カラシメタノデアリマス。以上ハデリー煙草會社總支配人F. R. クレーマーノ供述書、檢察團書類五六三四號ニ依リ明ラカナル通りデアリマス。

No. 7

Doc 5885

檢察團(當書類五六三四號)ヲ檢證トシ其、拔萃ヲ書證トシテ提出致
シマス。

以上ヲ以テヌトテ地區ニ於テ犯サレタル日本軍ノ常習的戰爭犯罪並
ニ反人道的犯罪ニ關スル概略ヲ完了致シマス。

No. 8

COPY

W. R. CRIBBS

Interrogation of Ernest Alexander Lloyd, CKX 86448 RN.L/S. by
NX31499 Lt. K. H. Dixon, regarding atrocities by the Japanese against
Australia Nurses.

- (1) I was a member of the crew of the SS "Wynerbrook" which was sunk off
Bangka Island on 14th Feb. 42.
- (2) I reached the shore in the company with A/B. Coker and L/S. Noble,
some civilians and about 5 nurses.
- (3) We slept that night with other survivors on the beach. There were about
40 or 50 there including about 20 Australian nurses in charge of a Matron.
- (4) Next morning the First Officer of the "Wynerbrook" left to contact the
Japanese. A party of about 10 to 15 civilian women and children also Coker
and Noble left to go ahead.
- (5) The First Officer came back with a party of about 14 Japs, in charge of
an Officer or NCO, wearing a sword.
- (6) The japs separated us into three groups.
 - (a) Servicemen.
 - (b) Civilian men and women.
 - (c) Nurses.
- (7) I was with the group of servicemen and we were marched a short distance
along the beach. Just out of sight of the others.
- (8) The Japs set us a machine gun and clearly indicated that they intended
shooting us.
- (9) Several of us made a break for the water and were fired on. I was
wounded but was carried out to sea by the tide. I later struggled back
ashore and into the jungle in the early afternoon.
- (10) I passed out. On coming to later it was daylight. I walked along the
beach and came upon the bodies of the group of servicemen some of whom I
recognised.
- (11) Further along the beach-where we had left them-I came across the bodies
of the nurses (about 10) and after that the civilians. All appeared to have
bayoneted or shot.
- (12) I went back into the jungle and about ten days later I made my way into
Muntok and surrendered to the Japs.]

(13) I was placed in a P.I. hospital and there met:-

- (a) an Englishman whom I remembered as one of the servicemen's group on the beach.
- (b) an American whom I recognised as one of the main group on the beach.
- (c) an Australian nurse whom I did not recognise.

Questions by the Interrogating Officer.

Q. 1. Have you any means of indentifying any of the Australian nurses?

A. No.

Q. 2. Have you any means of indentifying any of the party of Japs or their units. Did you see any of them again?

A. No. But they were Army and not of the other services.

Q.3. Do you know the name of the Englishman.

A. Yes. KINSEY Pte. He died at Mantok.

Q. 4. Do you know the name of the American.

A. No. But I saw him about July or August 42. with the civilian internees in Palembang.

Q. 5. Do you know the names of any of the Jap Units in Bangka Is. in Feb. 42.?

A. No.

Q. 6. Before the Jap opened fire on you did you hear shots or other sounds from the area where you left the nurses and civilians?

A. No. But I heard shots after I was in the water.

Interrogation concluded.

To the best of my belief the foregoing particulars are correct.

WITNESS (Signed)

NX31499 K.M.Dixon, Lt.
Interrogating Officer,
2. Aust F.W. Contact & Inquiry Unit. AIF.

(Signed)

WITNESS (Signed)

NX53123 2/15 Field Art. Regt.

Interrogation conducted at Sungai Ron F.W.Camp, Palembang on 18th Sept. 45.

Certified true copy of original affidavit

/s/ R. B. Lumbe, Lt. Colonel
A.G War Crimes
H. Q. AIFSA.

18th April 1946

私信ナル限リ上述ノ詳細ハ正確デアル

證人(署名)

A1F 第二遠洲捕虜觸接及取内部隊認同將校

NXIII 田中カクム、ディクソン中尉

證人(署名) NX 五三三三三 ^ニ/_五 野戦砲兵聯隊

一九四五年九月十八日バシバンスンゲイ、ロン捕虜收容所ニ於テ記

同ヲ行ヒタリ

口供書原文ノ眞実ナル寫ナルコトヲ証明ス

東南アジア聯合軍陸軍司令部

AA G 戦争犯罪

署名判讀不能

一九四六年四月十五日

doc 56/17-

アリテアルトコロニ来シタ。

(カ) 吾々ノ甲ニハ海ノ方ヘ逃ゲテ射撃サレタモノマッタ。私ハ百傷シ
タガ潮ニヨリテ海ヘ流サレタ。後カラ私ハ懸命ニ岸ニ辿リツキ盡
過ギシヤレブルノ中ヘ入ッタ。

(キ) 私ハ氣絶シタ。後ニ意識ヲ回復シタ時ハ晝デアッタ。私ハ海岸
ニ沿ッテ歩イタ。ソシテ軍人ノグループノ死体ノアルトコロニ来タガ其
ノ中ノ數人ハ誰カウカッタ。

(ク) 吾々が彼等ヲ残シテ行ツタ海岸ニ沿ッテ走ノ方デ私ハム者護
掃ノ死体(約十名)ニ出ツワシ、ソレカラ非戦闘員ノ死体ニ出ツワシタ
ガ皆銃斃デ突カレタカ射殺サレシモノノヨウデアツタ。

(カ) 私ハ又シヤングルニ歸リ十日程後「ムントック」ニ行キ其處デ日本
側ニ降伏シタ。

* * * * *

記向終了

doc 56/17

- (一) リテアルニホシタリ
- (二) 吾ノ中ニハ海、大ク艦ヲ射撃セシメ、モラシ、私ノ負傷ノ多ク漸ニヨクテ流サシ、後カモ私ノ懸命ニ岸ニ近リツテ盡過ギシヤル、中ク入ツタ。
- (三) 私ノ氣絶シ、後ニ意識ヲ回復シタ時ハ晝ナリシ、私ノ海岸ニ出ツテ歩テ、ソノ中、人、グループ、死体、アルトコロニモタガ其中、數人ノ誰カロカ。
- (四) 吾カ彼等ヲ残シテ行ツタ海岸ニ出テ先、下テ私ノ意識ヲ辨、死体(約十名)ニ出ツコシ、ソノカモ非戦闘員、死体ニ出ツコシカ皆銃剣ヲ突カシタカ射殺シシモノ、ヨクナリ。
- (五) 私ノ又シヤルニ歸リ十日後「ソノ」ニ行キ其時日本側ニ降伏シタ。

* * * * *

証詞終了

私信ニル限リ上述、詳細ハ正確ナリ。

證人(署名)

A-F. 第三溪洲捕虜醫院及証問部隊証問將校

NX三三三三三、中尉。

證人(署名) NX五三三三 野戦砲兵聯隊

一九四五年九月十日、ロンドン捕虜收容所ニ於テ証問ヲ行ヒタリ。

口供書原文、譯文ナル部ナルコトヲ証明ス。

東南アジア聯合軍司令部

AA G 戦争犯罪 署名判讀不能

一九四五年四月十九日

No 2

Ex. # 1768

Doc. No. 5619

Page 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of the NETHERLANDS POLICE INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Sworn statement of Melkianus LATUPERISSA, Sergeant first class, section commander No. 1884 of the NI Red Cross organisation, Kota Radja, dated 11 April 1946; Signed H. Latuperissa." OM 8221/S.

which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE:

S E A L

/s/ Ch. Jongeneel

BATAVIA, June 7th 1946

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEERD, first lieutenant R.N.I.A. Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

S T A T E M E N T

SUMMARY OF EXAMINATION of Melkianus LATUPERISSA, civilian clerk at the military Hospital KOTA RADJA, at the time of the invasion, Sgt. 1st class, section commander No. 1884 of the NI Red Cross Organisation, district of KOTA RADJA:

who, duly sworn, states:

I am 38 years of age, of AMBONESE nationality, born at LHO SOEKORN, ATJEH. I am at present at MEDAN STORES HOUSE, MEDAN.

On 12 March 42 I stayed behind in the hospital at KOTA RADJA, after all the Dutch troops had gone South. A group of about 50 or 60 men, amongst whom was at least one officer, missed the train to the south and consequently was at KOTA RADJA when the Japanese entered. This group consisted of DUTCH, AMBONESE, MENADONESE and JAVANESE. Some of them were medical orderlies, wearing a red-cross armband, others were convalescent patients and further there were a few guards.

While gangs of ATJEHNESE were looting the town, the DUTCH soldiers hoisted the white flag on the Railway-station building and waited for the Japanese to capture them. I succeeded in persuading two JAVANESE and TWO AMBONESE, named SINAY not to wait any longer for the JAPANESE, because of the risk of being murdered by the ATJEHNESE. They followed me and I brought them safely to one of the nearby kampongs.

That same day, 12 March, I saw myself that the group of men was captured by the ATJEHNESE and brought to the KOTA RADJA club where they had to squat. The Oeloebalangs (ATJEHNESE district chiefs) were assembled in another room at the club. One of them, with whom I was acquainted, signalled me to go away.

Two days later a certain ALI, an ATJEHNESE with whom I often used to go out fishing, came to see me and I asked him to find out all he possibly could about the prisoners. In the meantime many Ambonese and Menadonese civilians were captured too by the ATJEHNESE. They were mishandled and several were forced to become MOHAMEDANS, before the Japanese stopped that on request of a certain Mrs. NOE. The plunder of the town went on for three days, before the Japanese put an end to that too and ordered the stolen goods to be handed in again.

On or about 18 March 42 Mrs. LECERG came to see me and told me, that her husband WO II LECERF, and the whole group of captured soldiers were brought by closed motor lorries from the local prison along the road to OLEH-LEH. The next day I met the aforementioned ALI, who told me that the day before he had seen at OLEH-LEH that about 50 Dutch and Ambonese PW., their hands tied behind their backs, barefooted, dressed in underpants only and well guarded by JAPANESE armed soldiers, had been unloaded from motor-trucks and had been literally kicked into three white painted boats of the KFM type, ALI had asked the Japanese officer in charge what was going to happen to these people to which that officer had made the gesture of shooting.

The Japanese boarded the boats too and then the sloops were towed to the open sea by the steamtug "LIE TJENG", manned by the Javanese crew. When the boats were still visible ALI heard shooting. After less than 2 hours the steamtug returned in halfhour, however, with the sloops.

The next day after ALI had told me this story I went to OLEH LEH, pretending to go out to fish. I heard from fishermen there that they had seen at sea parts of human bodies drifting, apparently bitten off by sharks.

Two days thereafter I went again to OLEH LEH and that time heard the story that the corpse of an EUROPEAN had drifted into a poekat (fishernet) near the beach of OLEH LEH. Mrs. LECERF is living at LEDAN now and also a Mr. KROON, who at that time was at KOTA RADJA and who might know something about the tragedy.

I remember as names of men, who belonged to that group:
LIANAIT, Ambonese sergt. Med. ord. His widow is living now at GLOEGCER.
METEKOHY, Amb. Sergt. Med. ord.
KASWYAN, Javanese sergt. cook
AMATRADJI, " corporal

Rumours at that time at KOTA RADJA said that all these men were executed, because the Japanese believed they belonged to a destruction unit, which had destroyed bridges and roads.

Signed M LATUPERISSA
Witness

Doc. No. 5619

Page 4

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

Signed J J A VAN DE LANDE
Translator

Sworn before me J J A VAN DE LANDE
for OC No 4 War Crimes Investigation Team

This 11th day of April 1946

Detailed to examine the above by the Commander-in-chief,
Allied Land Forces, South East Asia.

Authority: ALFSEA War Crimes Instruction No. 1 para 7.

EVIDENTIARY
DOC
5619

EX 176A

文書第六一九號

證明書

未尾署名之此方之文軍情報部 / NEFIS / 戰爭犯罪課長 蘭
陸軍中尉 查理·容尼爾 / CHARLES JONGNEEL / 之定訂正之
據：上添附報告左一如之表題之此蘭軍情報部公之記錄，一
部之原文書，全部，真實完全，正確，一被本此訂正之證
明書。

木、五、六、三、一 / H.K. / ON PZZI / S

H. LATUPERISSA / 署名

一九四五年四月十一日附、二、二、二、二 / KOTA RADJA / 蘭印赤十字社
第一八四番介隊長陸軍曹長 MELKIANUS LATUPERISSA / 之定訂正之
證明書。

查理·容尼爾 / CH. JONGNEEL / 署名 / 蘭軍情報部印

一九四五年六月七日之訂正之

余蘭印檢事總長部付高級事務官 蘭印軍陸軍中
尉 查理·容尼爾 / K.A. DE WEEED / 之定訂正之證明書。

K.A. DE WEEED / 署名

文書第六一九號 木、五、六、三、一 / H.K. / ON PZZI / S

證明書

之定訂正之 / KOTA RADJA / 之定訂正之 蘭印赤十字社第一八四番介
隊長陸軍曹長 個人當時二、二、二、二 / KOTA RADJA / 陸軍中
尉 查理·容尼爾 / MELKIANUS LATUPE-

RISSA / 取調概要

右之正規查據：上左一通，證明書。

96, 1.

Doc

5619.

サカハ下見ノ様様ニミタテ、中ニ多敷、アノホノ人ヤ、オトノ人、部
民達ヲ亦トトテ、人ニ捕ルミタテ。

彼等ニ尾侍サシ、^夫教人、者ノホトト教徒ニ人様限制サシマ
ス。後、^夫ノ人、要求ニ其全日本軍ガ、^夫ノ止メサ
ヤミタテ。

衛、掠奪ノ三日間ヲ経テ、^夫ノ亦日本軍ガ、^夫ノ止メサヤ、^夫ノ品
ヲ再ビ又ニ歸ス様命令ミタテ。

一九四三年三月十日カ、^夫ノ「セル」^夫ノ「LECERT」^夫ノ夫人ガ私ニ逢ヒニ来
テ、^夫ノ「オレ」^夫ノ「WOILLECERT」^夫ノ捕虜ニ、^夫ノ兵隊全
部ガ、^夫ノ「OLEH-LEH」^夫ノ運スル道路ノ地方利益所ニ、^夫ノ肉ヲ食
物自動車ニ乗ラシテ運ハシテ自活シタテ。

翌日私ニ逢ヒテ「^夫ノ」^夫ノ「ALI」^夫ノ逢ハシマ時假、^夫ノ様ニ話シテ、
^夫ノ前日、^夫ノ「OLEH-LEH」^夫ノ約五十名程、^夫ノ「^夫ノ」^夫ノ和
人、信厚ガ子ヲ捕申テ縛ラシ、裸足ニ、^夫ノ一枚ニテ武装
シテ日本兵ニ監視ニ守リ、^夫ノ食物自動車ニ下サシ、^夫ノ「^夫ノ」^夫ノ
^夫ノ「大工」^夫ノ「^夫ノ」^夫ノニ

(以下次頁)

Qz 5619

ノ自達リボートニ文字通り撃及ニシルノ目撃
シタ之等ノ人ニカク云フ目ニ合フカト指揮
井夕日ヲ將校ニ尋不タトコトノ將校ノ射撃
ノ真似ヲシヌ

ノ日本兵モ亦ボートニ乘リ込ミシカニ此ノスルー
型船ハシヤ人ノ乗組員ニ依リテ操縦サレタ或船
用汽艇「リ」キ「エ」/「LEH-LEH」ニ依リ沖ノ方
或カニ行クボートガ未ダ視界ニアル中ニ「ア」
ノ射撃ノ音ヲ聞ケタ併シ乍ラニ時間ト
経タヌ中ニソノ或船用汽艇ハスルー型船ヲ曳
キ港ニ歸シテ来タト

「ア」ガコノ物語ヲ料ニ語シタ翌日私ハ魚釣リ
ニ出掛ケル振ヲシテ「オ」/「OLEH-LEH」ニ行キ
マシタソノ時私ハ漁夫カク徳善ガ海ヲ明カニ鰻ニ
喰ヒテギコトト思ヘル人体ノ割片ガ漂ツテ来ルヲ
見タト云フコトヲ聞キマシタ

ソレカニ二日後ニ「オ」/「OLEH-LEH」ノ再ビ行
キマシタソノ時ノ歐洲人ノ死体ガ「ケ」ノ
「OLEH-LEH」ノ海岸近クノ漁網ニカカツテ来タト
話ヲ聞キマシタ

証人署名

エム・ラトゥペリッサ
/M. LATUPERISSA/

No. 4

202 5-619

ノ自達リボートニ文字通り躡込ニシテ目撃
 シタ之等ノ人ニカク云フ目ニ合フカト指揮言
 井夕日ヲ將校ニ尋不夕トコトソノ將校ハ射撃
 ノ真似ヲシタ
 ソノ日本兵モ亦ボートニ乘リ込ニシカニ此ノスレ
 型船ハヤハ人ノ乗組員ニ依リテ操縦サレタ曳船
 用汽艇「リーチエ」/LEH-JENG/ニ依リ沖方
 成カテ行ソクボートガ未ダ視界ニアル中ニ「アリ
 ハ射撃」ノ音ヲ聞イタ併シ作ニ二時間ト
 経タ又中ニソノ曳船用汽艇ハスレ型船ヲ曳
 井港ニ歸ソテ来タト
 「アリ」ガコノ物語ヲ料ニ語ンタ翌日私ハ魚釣リ
 ニ出掛ケル振ヲシテ「オレ」/OLEH-LEH/ニ行キ
 マタソノテ私ハ漁夫ガ「徳」ガ海ヲ明カニ鰻ニ
 喰ヒテギンタト思ヘル人体ハ割岸ガ漂ソテ岸ハ
 見タト云フニト聞キマシタ
 ソノカニ日後「オレ」/OLEH-LEH/ハ再ビ行
 キマシタソノ時ハ歐洲人ノ死体ガ「ケ」
 /OLEH-LEH/海岸近ク漁網ニカカツキタト
 話ヲ聞キマシタ

証人署名

エウニトカグリス
/M. LATUPERISSA/

No. 4

16. 5-

2002 5619

余八証人、在署署長安本 証人(二好)
左概要三、自國語三正式三辭証
用カセタニ、証明ス

辭証者署名 J.J.A. VAN DE LANDE

/ J. J. A. VAN DE LANDE /

一九四六年四月十日

東南ア中聯合軍陸上軍總司令部 爲
左取調ス、爲徵遺也、此、東日戰海犯罪
調査班指揮官代理也、余 J.J.A. VAN DE LANDE
ア、J.J.A. VAN DE LANDE / J. J. A. VAN DE LANDE /
西前ニ、証書也、此、

No. 5619

余八証人ノ右署名ニ先年 証人ニ對シ
左概要ニシテ自國語ニテ正式ニ辭訊
用カセラルニシテノ証明ス

荷蘭國有署名 一三二一・三三二一・三三二一・三三二一

/ J. J. A. VAN DE LANDE /

一九四六年四月十日

東南アジア聯合軍陸軍總司令部 係
左取調下ノ為依遣セラルル第 四戰事犯罪
調査班指揮官代理者ニ 余 一三二一・三三二一・三三二一
ノ一三二一・三三二一 / J. J. A. VAN DE LANDE /
ノ西前ニシテ自國語ニテ

No. 5

Q. # 1769

Document No. 5604

Page No. 1

LD/JAG/FS/JC/15(3A)

IN THE MATTER OF THE ILLTREATMENT OF BRITISH
PRISONERS OF WAR IN JAVA AND SUMATRA BETWEEN
1942 and 1945

[AFFIDAVIT

I, Wing Commander PATRICK SLANEY DAVIS, No. 39862, Royal Air Force (Pilot) at present on the strength of No. 106 P.A.C., R.A.F. Station, Cosford, and on 42 days repatriation leave at my permanent home address "Lyndhurst", 20 Cliff Parade, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex, make oath and say as follows:-

The Report which is now produced and shown to me marked "PSD1" is a report compiled by me on the 19th November 1945 relating to Japanese War Crimes in Java and Sumatra between 8th March 1942 and 20th September 1945.

The facts set out in the Report are true and are within my own knowledge except where the contrary is stated.

SWORN by the said PATRICK SLANEY DAVIS)
at 6 Spring Gardens in the City of)
WESTMINSTER this nineteenth day of) (Signed) PATRICK SLANEY DAVIS.
November 1945)

BEFORE ME:

G. BARRATT, Lieutenant-colonel,
Legal Staff.

Military Department,
Office of the Judge Advocate General,
LONDON, S.W. 1.

I certify that this is a true copy of the original affidavit.

/s/ G. Barratt, Lt. Col.,
Legal Staff,
Office of the Judge Advocate
General.]

"P.S.D.1."

This is the report marked "P.S.D.1" referred to in the Affidavit of Wing Commander Patrick Stanley Davis sworn this nineteenth day of November 1945 BEFORE ME

G. BARRATT, Lieutenant-colonel, Legal Staff,
Military Dept., Office of the Judge Advocate General,
London, S.W.1.

REPORT BY WING COMMANDER P.S. DAVIS, ROYAL AIR FORCE, RELATING TO THREE AND HALF YEARS PRISONER OF WAR CAPTIVITY UNDER THE JAPANESE IN J.V. AND SUMATRA. - MARCH 8th, 1942 to SEPTEMBER 20th, 1945.

I, Wing Commander Patrick Stanley DAVIS, No. 39862, Royal Air Force (Pilot) at present on the strength of No. 106 F.A.C., R.A.F. Station, Cosford, and on 42 days repatriation leave at my permanent home address - "Lyndhurst", 20 Cliff Parade, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex, report as follows:-

2. In January 1942, I was serving as the No. 2 Organisation Staff Officer to Air Headquarters Far East, Sims Road, Singapore, on the 2nd February, 1942, I was posted to the near Headquarters Royal Air Force, Palembang, Sumatra. After two weeks, Palembang was attacked by Japanese Forces and I proceeded to Royal Air Force Headquarters, Java, located at Soeka Boemi, under the Command of Air Vice Marshal MILBY. On 26th February, 1942, a new Allied Headquarters was opened at the military Academy situated on the Dergoveg, Bandoeng, under the command of Air Chief Marshal, Sir Richard HIERCE. After four days, I returned to Soeka Boemi and on the 3rd March, 1942 I returned to Bandoeng, when Air Vice Marshal MILBY took over as Allied Commander in Chief from General Maxwell and Air Chief Marshal Sir Richard HIERCE. On 8th March, 1942, the Japanese attack on Java had progressed to the extent that the aerodrome at Kalajati had fallen to their occupation and a serious aerial attack was in progress against MDL, the aerodrome south of the city of Bandoeng. Considerable confusion existed and it was decided to withdraw the present Headquarters to the Central Hotel, Tasik Malaja, where I proceeded on the 7th March, 1942, accompanied by Group Captain COGGER. On the afternoon of March 8th, 1942, we were officially informed by the Dutch that a decision to capitulate to the Japanese Forces had been reached. Air Vice Marshal MILBY decided to withdraw the British Forces located around Tasik Malaja and the Australian Forces located around Buitenzorg to the hills above Garoet and their dispose his forces to withstand the enemy. I was ordered by Air Commodore STATION to take command of the convoy of British troops from Tasik Malaja to Parmegaten, a tea estate situated in the hills above Garoet. On the afternoon of the 9th March, 1942, I reported to Air Commodore STATION the successful arrival of the whole convoy. The British force was disposed on the hills around PANGKALAN, the Australian Force being dispersed on the next range of hills lying to the right of the British position. On approximately 10th March, 1942, we were informed by Air Vice Marshal MILBY that the British Force had to surrender, together with the Dutch, under the terms of the capitulation by General ter MOORTEN, Royal Dutch Netherland East Indies Army.

3. On the 11th March, 1942, I proceeded to BANDONG with Air Vice Marshal MILBY and after spending the night in the Dutch Headquarters at BANDONG, visited the Japanese Staff who had established themselves in the PALINCA HOTEL, BANDONG. Air Vice Marshal MILBY and I proceeded back to GHOET with the Japanese terms. On approximately 16th March, 1942, I was ordered by Air Vice Marshal MILBY to form an Advance Headquarters at a Railway Station at TIBATU near GAROLT, where we were to work as Railway Control Officers to pass the entire British Force in groups of 600 through to the BANWIA area. On approximately 18th March, 1942, Air Vice Marshal MILBY was injured in a car accident and was taken to the Allied Hospital, Bandoeng, and that evening Air Commodore STANON and Group Captain BISHOP were ordered to the Japanese headquarters, Bandoeng, from which trip they did not return. The Japanese under a Major MITO were demanding much information which under the terms of my orders from Air Vice Marshal MILBY, I could not give and I sent a dispatch rider to Air Commodore SILLY, who was located at Tasik Malaja, with a force of approximately 2000 unarmed airmen. Air Commodore SILLY arrived that evening and took command. Two days later, I left with Air Commodore SILLY and proceeded to Tasik Malaja where we located in a house pending the arrangement that the Japanese said they would make under the terms of which Air Commodore SILLY and his Staff (of which I was a member) would co-operate with the Japanese Headquarters and the International Red Cross representatives for the general co-ordination of the Japanese plans in respect of the prisoners of war taken in Java.

3A. Two days later, I was taken ill with Malign Tertiary Malaria and sent by the Principal Medical Officer, Wing Commander C. COFFEY, R.A.F., to the Allied Hospital Bandoeng, at that time commanded by Lieutenant Colonel DUNLOP, Australian Medical Service. Two days later I was transferred by the Japanese to a hospital at TJIMAH, where I remained as a patient for two months.

4. I then returned to Tasik Malaja on or about the 15th May, 1942, remaining there for two weeks, accommodated in a hangar on the aerodrome and then proceeded with all other personnel by train to SOERABAYA, where 1500 officers and men of the British force were accommodated in extremely cramped conditions in the Soerabaya Grammar School. The Camp Commander, working under the Japanese, was Wing Commander VINES, Royal Air Force. Seven months later, the command having changed in the meantime to Wing Commander WEICH, R.A.F., I proceeded to the Dumbo Camp, also in Soerabaya, where conditions were extremely good. I remained there for six weeks and was then transferred to Yermart Camp, in central Soerabaya, under the command of Captain BLOOM, Royal Dutch Netherlands East Indies Army. I remained there until the middle of April, 1943, when I was transferred to the Tjimahi Camp, near Bandoeng, commanded by Commander HOOT, R.D.N.E.I.A. I remained there for six weeks and was transferred to the Bandoeng Camp under the Commander of Wing Commander NICHOLIS, R.A.F. On 28th December 1943, I was transferred with the whole of the personnel of the Bandoeng Camp to the Cycle Camp, Batavia, commanded by Lieutenant Colonel TANCLIFF, R.D.N.E.I. Army where I remained until my departure in May, 1944, as commander of the draft of 2000 men posted to an unknown destination.

5. The Japanese Officers who within my certain knowledge were personally responsible for bad living conditions and ill treatment were:- Colonel KAWABE, who had been commander of all P.O.s in the Soerabaya area and who had consistently refused the appeals of Allied Officers for medicine and food (See report of Wing Commander, C. COFFEY, R.A.F. Principal medical Officer Soerabaya Camps), and Lieutenant SONI, who was commander of the Cycle Camp, and who in my presence wilfully maltreated prisoners of war and who has a record of unparalleled cruelty in the Batavia area. (See report of Wing Commander NICHOLLS, R.A.F. and Lieutenant Colonel VANDEROST, Intelligence Corps, British Army). I cannot give further detailed reports on Japanese in Java as I was never in a position to obtain exact details, but the Allied Officers referred to above, especially Lt. Col. VANDEROST, have been in a position to obtain detailed facts of the whole area. A valuable report has been submitted to the Allied Headquarters, South East Asia, by Lt. Col. H. LLOYD, R.A.M.C. who was the doctor commanding the Allied Hospital Batavia for approximately three years.

6. Colonel KAWABE is a small, wizened Japanese Officer, approximately five feet tall and of typical Japanese appearance. Lieutenant SONI, on the other hand, is young, approximately 30 years old, and extremely smart in his appearance, but walks with a pronounced swagger. He is rather handsome and is about five feet nine inches, of athletic appearance and is decidedly non-Japanese in facial characteristics. I cannot remember the names of the Commanders of the individual Soerabaya Camps but KAWABE was Supreme Commander of the area for General S. ITO whose Headquarters were in Singapore. The Tjanahi Camp was commanded by 1st Lieutenant Y. M. GUCHI, another brutal officer on whom Major HOOT will report. The Bandoeng Camp by Captain TCHIKAGI, an officer who did not control his guards but who was not responsible for any atrocities as far as I know. (See report Wing Commander NICHOLLS and Lieutenant Colonel VANDEROST). The Cycle Camp was commanded by Lieutenant SONI (See para 5 above).

SUMMITRA DRAFT.

7. [On 1st March 1944, a draft was selected by the Japanese from personnel of the Cycle Camp, Batavia, consisting of 2 battalions of 1000 men each, comprising in total approximately 1750 Dutch and 250 English.] No. 1 Battalion was commanded by Wing Commander NIGHTWICK R.A.F., and No. 2 Battalion by Lieut. Col. I. BBEKOOIN, R.D.N.S.I. Army. The personnel of this draft was segregated from the rest of the Camp and placed on extra rations. Numerous dysentery tests were made (approximately one per week) and a very casual effort was made to re-kit personnel, but as nearly all the clothing issued was Dutch pattern uniforms intended for small native troops, very little could be utilised by the personnel on the draft. Towards the end of April, 1944, Wing Commander NIGHTWICK was admitted to the Camp Hospital suffering from dysentery, and I volunteered to take his place. I applied to Captain TCHIKAGI, the Japanese Commander of the draft, and when I explained that a large percentage of the British troops proceeding on the draft had previously been under my command, he accepted me as draft Commander.

8. On the morning of the 14th May, 1944, the party marched with full kit from the Cycle Camp to Pasir Sinan Station, Batavia and entrained for Tandjung Frick docks. There we embarked on a Japanese transport of approximately 5000 tons; 1000 men including all the British being accommodated in the forward hold and the remaining 1000 Dutch personnel in the aft hold. By application to Captain TCHAKOJI, I was allowed to bring the personnel of the forward hold on to the deck for Physical training in batches of 50 for 15 minutes at a time and I obtained permission to use one of the ships pumps for the men to bathe. Food and tea were available. The accommodation in the hold was extremely cramped, the men sitting upright with their legs round the men in front of them. Numerous cases of prostration had to be brought on deck, especially during the midday hours. The guards were not troublesome during the journey. The ship was in convoy with two other ships of approximately 5000 tons each, escorted by a Japanese corvette, with one Japanese bomber as aerial cover. Our sister ships were carrying approximately 5000 Javanese coolies under disgusting conditions. No incidents occurred during the voyage.

9. On the evening of the 17th May, 1944, we docked at P.D.M.G, Sumatra, and disembarked and marched approximately 12 kilometres to a disused cinema. No food was provided and no lavatory accommodation being available in the cinema. The following morning we marched a further 8 kilometres to the Padang Civil Gaol, where we were accommodated where normally 500 native prisoners were confined, we had 2000 of our draft and approximately 1500 of the Indonesian coolies that had arrived in our convoy. All these coolies were suffering from disease, mostly dysentery (both bacillary and amoebic) and a form of conjunctivitis. They were dying in large numbers. No lavatory accommodation was available and the drains of the gaol were full of blood from the defecation of the Indonesians. I called for volunteers to dig latrines and we attempted to clear the portion of the Camp that had been allotted to ourselves. A meal of approximately 200 grams of rice only was given to us at about 1800 hours, and at 2000 hours I was instructed to leave with my battalion (1000 men) for an unknown destination. We marched out, carrying with us approximately 200 grams of rice per man and marched about 6 kilometres to the railhead where we entrained in terribly crowded conditions and proceeded 124 kilometres to Paya Kombe. There we were met by Japanese motor transport and driven a further 150 kilometres to Pekan Baroe, where we were accommodated in a Camp which had contained Indonesians and which was indescribably filthy. I appealed to the Japanese Commander for food and was told that none was available. The following day the whole party were set to work to clean up the Camp and at approximately 1600 hours a meal of rice porridge (kind of porridge) was issued. The following day at 8 a.m. 900 men left the Camp and commenced work on the railway. They had to work extremely hard carrying sleepers, rails, and working with four pound hammers throughout the entire day, without food or shelter.

10. Although we were completely inexperienced in this type of work, our overseers were a group of Japanese soldiers straight from the Burma railway prisoner of war gangs and the same slave driving conditions and brutality was adopted. The men returned to Camp at approximately 9 p.m. and after the

...of the journey from Batavia, they were utterly exhausted but the Japanese explained that they could not give us any further food until our rations arrived. For the next five days, the situation remained unchanged. I personally experienced considerable trouble with the Japanese Adjutant (1st Lieut. TAJIKA) because of the rise in sickness. I explained that unless we received food, no improvement could be expected and the water that we were compelled to drink was extremely bad because it came from sulphur springs. At the end of the five days mentioned above, a Japanese Colonel whose name I never knew but who was completely responsible for the railway construction in Pakin Baroe at that time, visited the Camp. He was an old man with gray hair and had a pronounced stoop and he told me that I must do my utmost to promote the welfare of the men under my command. I explained the ration and water situation to him and told him that the working hours were much too long. The Interpreter stated that the Colonel could do nothing about these working hours but that he would look into the food situation. [That evening I heard that Lt. Col. SLABBKOOIN, with the remaining 1000 men had arrived at a Camp approximately three kilometres away. The following day our food supplies arrived and the day after, I moved with my men on a transfer of all the personnel from my Camp to Lt. Col. SLABBKOOIN's camp and Col. SLABBKOOIN, with his men, to my Camp.

11. The heavy working parties continued despite a dysentery outbreak which the Allied doctors attributed to the conditions in the Padang gaol.) On the 24th July, 1944, approximately 20 kilometres of rail had been completed and I was instructed to post the first five railway gangs, each comprising 50 men, to the Camp known as Camp three approximately 15 kilometres distant from my Camp in the direction of Padang. The draft left under the Command of Lieutenant DALLAS, 3rd Hussars, and was joined a few days later by an additional 150 British under the command of Captain ARMSTRONG, R.A.S.C., who took over command of the Camp on arrival.

12. By this time I had arranged for limited canteen facilities for the local purchase of extra food when available and I was responsible for Camp 3 as well as my own. Lt. Col. SLABBKOOIN's Camp being No. 1 Camp, mine No. 2 Camp and Captain ARMSTRONG's No. 3 Camp, all administered from my Camp. It was extremely difficult to administer these Camps as I was not allowed freedom of action by the Japanese and two thirds of the personnel under my command being Dutch with a very limited knowledge of the English language. The medium of expression with the Japanese was the Malay language and with the Dutch Malay, French or English in that order. I therefore formed a Camp Committee of the responsible Dutchmen to assist myself and my Adjutant Lieut. der HAAG, in administering the whole group.

13. At about this time, Captain TCHAKAGI, sent for me and explained that he was returning to Java, with our Korean guards, and that we would be handed over to the control of Japanese civilians and Japanese guards and would come directly under the South Manchurian Railway Company. Two days afterwards he handed over to Captain MIYASAKI, who arrived from Medan accompanied by Lieutenant DOI. MIYASAKI assumed command of all prisoner of war camps in the Pakin Baroe area and DOI was in command of No. 2 Camp. Towards the end of

July, 1944, a further draft of prisoners of war comprising approximately 150 Officers and 100 men arrived in No. 2 Camp from Singapore - these men being the survivors of the draft that left Medan, Sumatra, for Singapore and were torpedoed en route (See report Captain J. G. GORDON, R.A. an eye-witness to the incident.) In addition we were informed that further drafts had arrived ex. Singapore and had opened up two further Camps (Nos. 4 and 5) and these were also placed under my administration. At about this time, [I was informed that No. 2 Camp was to officially be the sick Camp, all fit men to be sent working on the railway from the up-country camps and all sick being returned to me until fit enough to act as replacements or to work from my Camp. Wing Commander COFFEY, Senior Medical Officer, and I made repeated appeals to the Japanese (Captain MIYAZAKI) for improved conditions, less work, more food and medicines, but all our appeals were of no avail as we were informed that food was not available and Doctor ISHII, the Japanese doctor in charge of P.O.W. Camps, told Wing Commander COFFEY that as medicine was not available we must grow our own herbs and make our own. The less heavy sick were forced to do garden work as Lieutenant DOI said that the ration situation would deteriorate due to lack of transport to convey the rations from BANGKILANG, the nearest town approximately 65 kilometres distant. The Allied doctors experienced extreme difficulty in dealing with the heavy number of sick, at this period about 800; mostly dysentery, malaria, beri-beri, avitaminotic diseases, pellagra and some tuberculosis, and in addition, a large number of tropical ulcer cases. Practically no medicine or dressings were available.] (See reports of Lt. Col. HANNESY, A.M.H.C. and Wing Commander COFFEY, R.A.F.)

14. [On about 17th September, 1944, I was ordered to anticipate the arrival of a further number of seriously sick cases and I heard from a Kerian guard that a further draft had been torpedoed between Java and Padang with very heavy casualties. On approximately the 19th September, 1944, two ambulances arrived with some 20 cases, most of whom died within a day or two. I was told that the remainder were in the gaol at Padang and in the Padang hospital. However, the remaining personnel were posted to Camps 4 and 5 and approximately one week later, 150 sick and dying men arrived in the middle of the night in my camp. At this period, although we had received no clothing for nearly three years, I was ordered by the Japanese to produce as much clothing as possible for the draft mentioned above as the Japanese explained that as the British had sunk this convey and as the Japanese could not produce clothing, we must provide it ourselves. This was done to the best of our ability but the conditions at Camp 4 were extremely bad.] The Commander of Camp 4 was Captain KNOWN, R.D.N.S.I. Army and Captain KOSIAT, R.D.N.S.I. Army was in charge of Camp 5.

15. [At the end of November, 1944, I was informed that a Camp 6 had been established with the personnel who had left Medan some eight months previously for road construction work in Atjeh, North Sumatra, where they had been commanded by a Japanese Officer, Lieut. MIKI, an English speaking Japanese, and in extremely bad type.] (See reports Captain GORDON, R.A. and Lieut. HADLEY, J.R. R.A.F.) [These men arrived in a very debilitated condition but nevertheless, were put on the railway construction work immediately.

Lieutenant MURA visited my Camp and asked me for a senior British Officer to command the British personnel in his Camp, the Dutch being under the command of Captain van der LANDE, an extremely efficient Dutch Officer now commanding Sumatra under British Administration. I posted Captain GORDON to command the British in No. 6 Camp and he left that day accompanied by Lieut. MUFA.

16. At this period, the general situation regarding prisoners of war was deteriorating rapidly and I again made repeated appeals to Lieutenant DOI for an improvement in the situation. The appeals were all refused. We produced statistical reports showing the increasing death rate rising to approximately 80 per month was entirely due to lack of food and heavy work, but Lieut. DOI merely informed me that he considered that all the Officers should be made to do more work and that I and my staff were merely trying to sabotage the Japanese war efforts. These conditions deteriorated further and the death rate rose due to the constant exchange of personnel from the up country camps who had fallen sick who were replaced by only semi-fit men from No. 2 Camp.

17. On approximately 16th June, 1945, I was informed that the railway must be finished by the 15th August, 1945, and that every available man who could walk must be sent out to work. Despite our protests, medical parades were held by the Japanese and the men were forced out to work. The health situation of the whole area was now deteriorating with great rapidity, no medicine was available and the whole group was utterly exhausted and all personnel were extremely depressed due to constant slave driving by the Japanese guards and railway officials. Increased supervision by the Kempeitai (Japanese Secret Police) was felt and all sorts of additional disciplinary pressure was brought to bear on us.]

18. At this point, the Japanese guards in Camp 2 were replaced by Korean guards and the illicit buying of foodstuffs increased and life inside the Camp became more bearable as the Koreans' attitude, although not pro-Ally, was definitely anti-Japanese. This state of affairs continued until our release.

19. I submitted a detailed report of war criminals to Major GLOUGH, attached to the Intelligence Branch, Force 136, SEAC Headquarters, Goodwood Park Hotel, Singapore, and [appended below are the names and description of the major criminals responsible for our condition in Sumatra during the 18 months that I commanded there.

CAPTAIN MIYASAKI. In charge of all Prisoner of War Camps in the Pakan Baroe Area. A fat officer of medium height with a pronounced squint. He showed no interest whatsoever in the welfare of the Camps and although fully aware of the situation, gave us no assistance and was in fact always insolent whenever approached.

1st LIEUTENANT DOI, Camp Commander No. 2 Camp and Captain MIYASAKI's Adjutant. Another fat officer of medium height. Aged approximately 38 and according to my information, a watchmaker before the war. He was solely responsible for the extreme pressure put upon the men. He visited the Camp on numerous occasions and when groups of sick men were pointed out to him, he merely laughed and said we were but prisoners of war. A bestial type who had no central whistles ever over his guards.

1st LIEUTENANT (DOCTOR) ISHII Medical Officer all prisoner of war Camps Pakin Baroe Area. A short Japanese Officer wearing glasses. A medical student before the war. Although fully aware of the critical situation expressed himself incapable of improving the conditions, and although he stated that no medicines or dressing were available, he had a large stock for Japanese consumption and after the capitulation produced a very large quantity of the drugs we had so urgently requested.

SERGEANT KATO. Camp Sergeant No. 2 Camp in January/February, 1944. He was a bestial slave driver who took extreme delight in forcing sick men out to work. He placed all possible restrictions on the Camps and severely punished any infringement of the most trivial order. He was responsible for stopping all mail issues to the Camp for a period of over five weeks. He was a heavily built country type of Japanese and was extremely powerful. (Last unit MINOTAI).

SERGEANT KITAGAWA. Camp Sergeant No. 2 Camp from March, 1944 to July, 1944. Was if possible worse than his predecessor. Was unapproachable and had a particular hatred for the sick and for Officers. He took great delight in forcing sick men out to work and his favorite form of punishment was to make a man hold an extremely heavy piece of wood above his head for a long period. He agitated his guards to punish prisoners severely for any infringements of the rules.] At times, he completely stopped all canteen purchases but at other times purchased large quantities of eggs and beef for the camp - his only redeeming feature. Another extremely powerful country type of Japanese, very heavily built and of medium height. (Last unit MIYASAKITAI).

1st Class Soldier KATO. (Last unit MINOTAI). A schoolmaster before the war. Slim, of medium height, wearing glasses and an extremely narrow face. Made a practice of beating prisoners of war and making them stand to attention in front of him for long periods each time he was on guard. Named: Four-eyes, Blue-Shirt.

KOREAN GUARD MATSUDA. (Miyasakitai) was in charge of transport in No. 2 Camp Headquarters. Was an extremely reckless driver who frequently injured POWs through his carelessness. On one occasion, threw four prisoners of war from his truck due to bad driving and immediately afterwards made all the occupants of the truck parade for check. As one of them could not stand properly to attention as he had been injured in the accident, MATSUDA struck him across the face with his torch causing a fracture of the jaw. The P.O.I. in question was I.A.C. Dr. Felt, R.M.F. MATSUDA was a tall, slim Korean with a long record of brutality towards prisoners of war.

1st LIEUTENANT DOI. Camp Commander No. 2 Camp and Captain MIYASAKI's Adjutant. Another fat officer of medium height. Aged approximately 38 and according to my information, a watchmaker before the war. He was solely responsible for the extreme pressure put upon the men. He visited the Camp on numerous occasions and when groups of sick men were pointed out to him, he merely laughed and said we were but prisoners of war. A bestial type who had no control whatsoever over his guards.

1st LIEUTENANT (DOCTOR) ISHII Medical Officer all prisoner of war Camps Pakin Baroe Area. A short Japanese Officer wearing glasses. A medical student before the war. Although fully aware of the critical situation expressed himself incapable of improving the conditions, and although he stated that no medicines or dressing were available, he had a large stock for Japanese consumption and after the capitulation produced a very large quantity of the drugs we had so urgently requested.

SERGEANT KATO. Camp Sergeant No. 2 Camp in January/February, 1944. He was a bestial slave driver who took extreme delight in forcing sick men out to work. He placed all possible restrictions on the Camps and severely punished any infringement of the most trivial order. He was responsible for stopping all mail issues to the Camp for a period of over five weeks. He was a heavily built country type of Japanese and was extremely powerful. (Last unit MINOTAI).

SERGEANT KITAGAWA. Camp Sergeant No. 2 Camp from March, 1944 to July, 1944. Was if possible worse than his predecessor. Was unapproachable and had a particular hatred for the sick and for Officers. He took great delight in forcing sick men out to work and his favorite form of punishment was to make a man hold an extremely heavy piece of wood above his head for a long period. He agitated his guards to punish prisoners severely for any infringements of the rules.] At times, he completely stopped all canteen purchases but at other times purchased large quantities of eggs and beef for the camp - his only redeeming feature. Another extremely powerful country type of Japanese, very heavily built and of medium height. (Last unit MIYASAKITAI).

1st Class Soldier KATO. (Last unit MINOTAI). Schoolmaster before the war. Slim, of medium height, wearing glasses and an extremely narrow face. Made a practice of beating prisoners of war and making them stand to attention in front of him for long periods each time he was on guard. Named: Four-eyes, Blue-Shirt.

KOREAN GUARD MATSUDA. (Miyasakitai) was in charge of transport in No. 2 Camp Headquarters. Was an extremely reckless driver who frequently injured POWs through his carelessness. On one occasion, threw four prisoners of war from his truck due to bad driving and immediately afterwards made all the occupants of the truck parade for check. As one of them could not stand properly to attention as he had been injured in the accident, MATSUDA struck him across the face with his torch causing a fracture of the jaw. The P.O.W. in question was I.A.C. DR. I. G. R. F. MATSUDA was a tall, slim Korean with a long record of brutality towards prisoners of war.

↑
 ↓
2nd Class SOLDIER FUJI. (Last Unit: MINOTAI). A very short, stocky, wide faced Japanese. By far the worst guard in my experience as a prisoner of war. He took an extreme delight in bestial actions and has a record of beating someone on every occasion that he came inside the Camp. In the case of Dutch soldier MOLENA, who suffering with an extremely large ulcer on the left leg which had just commenced to heal, was approached by FUJI, who demanded to know why he did not stand up when a Japanese soldier approached. MOLENA showed the ulcer on his leg and was immediately kicked upon it by FUJI. The result of this attack was the amputation some three days after and the death of MOLENA some three weeks later due to weakness and shock. The witness to this attack is Lieutenant (Doctor) KINGMA, Dutch Netherlands Medical Service. Nicknamed: Tiger of Pakai, Baron Flowerpot, Napoleon.

1st CLASS SOLDIER YUNDA (Last unit MINOTAI). One of the guard commanders of No. 2 Camp who assisted FUJI in most of his attacks. Like KITAGAWA delighted in making sick men hold large pieces of wood above their heads for long periods. A Japanese of above average height, heavily built and wore thick lens glasses. He was responsible for many totally unnecessary brutal attacks.

I have the honour to be,
 Sir,
 Your obedient Servant.

(Sgd) F. J. DAVIS

King Commander, K.A.F.]

↑
 ↓
 [19.11.1945.

No. 1

Ex 1769

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # 5604

書類第五六〇四号

口供書

余英國空軍(パイロット)第三九八六二号空軍中佐現任「コックフォード」
 英國空軍部隊第一〇六常設休養部所属にて「エセック」州
 「リレオンセー」^{「リレオンセー」}「クリフ」^{「クリフ」}「バート」^{「バート」}の番地「本籍地」^{「本籍地」}「リントハースト」^{「リントハースト」}
 四十日間、復員休暇中ナル「バトリック」^{「バトリック」}「スレイ」^{「スレイ」}ニ於テ「~~バトリック~~」^{「バトリック」}「~~スレイ~~」^{「スレイ」}ニ於テ「~~バトリック~~」^{「バトリック」}「~~スレイ~~」^{「スレイ」}ハ宣誓
 以上以下ノ事ヲ述ベル

今取去サレ、余ニ見セラレタリ
RETURNED TO SENDER
 「バトリック」^{「バトリック」}「スレイ」^{「スレイ」}「バトリック」^{「バトリック」}「スレイ」^{「スレイ」}ニ於テ報告書ハ一九四五年十月

十九日、余ニ依ッテ作ラレタリ、一九四三年三月八日より一九四五年九月廿日ニ至
 ル間「~~バトリック~~」^{「バトリック」}「~~スレイ~~」^{「スレイ」}ニ於ケル日本ノ戦争犯罪ニ関スル報告書ニテ
 「バトリック」^{「バトリック」}「スレイ」^{「スレイ」}ニ於テ報告書ニ述ベラレタリ事實ハ眞実ニ然ラザル旨ガ陳ベテアル所
 以外ハ余ノ直接ノ知識ニ依ル。

一九四五年本年十月十九日、「ウエストミンスター」^{「ウエストミンスター」}「~~バトリック~~」^{「バトリック」}「~~スレイ~~」^{「スレイ」}ガ「~~バトリック~~」^{「バトリック」}「~~スレイ~~」^{「スレイ」}ニ於テ
 地ニテ前述「バトリック」^{「バトリック」}「スレイ」^{「スレイ」}ニ依リ宣誓サレタルモノナリ。

(署名)「バトリック」^{「バトリック」}「スレイ」^{「スレイ」}「バトリック」^{「バトリック」}「スレイ」^{「スレイ」}

法律部員陸軍中佐「~~バトリック~~」^{「バトリック」}「~~スレイ~~」^{「スレイ」}ノ面前ニテ

「~~バトリック~~」^{「バトリック」}「~~スレイ~~」^{「スレイ」}「~~バトリック~~」^{「バトリック」}「~~スレイ~~」^{「スレイ」}陸軍省、法務長官事務所

余ハ本書ハ口供書原本ノ眞實、寫シタルコトヲ證明ス。

法務長官事務所法律部員

陸軍中佐「~~バトリック~~」^{「バトリック」}「~~スレイ~~」^{「スレイ」}ノ署名

Doc 5604

長官「ロンド」市「S」以上、陸軍省法務長官事務局長法律部員
「P.S.D」二ト「ロ」ニ「ル」報告書「下」ル。
空軍中佐「バ」リ「ク」ズ「ス」行「テ」イ「ウ」ズ、口供書「中」二「言」及「セ」ル

「心」マ「カ」ス「ト」シ、日本軍「六」二「年」九「月」三「年」半、停「留」英「治」二
自「不」英「國」空「軍」、空「軍」中「佐」「バ」リ「ク」ズ「ス」報「告」書
一「九」四「二」年「三」月「八」日「乃」至「一」九「四」五「年」九「月」五「日」

余空軍中佐、英國空軍「六」以上「第」三「九」六「二」号
現「在」ロ「ン」ド「上」英「國」空「軍」部「隊」第「一」〇「六」号「設」休「養」部
所「屬」ニ「テ」ハ「五」州「ノ」イ「ン」グ「リ」フ「バ」イ「ト」ニ「在」地
「本」籍「地」ノ「リ」ド「バ」イ「ト」テ「四」二「日」間、復「員」休「暇」申、
「ト」リ「ク」ズ「ス」行「テ」イ「ウ」ズ「ル」以「下」事「ヲ」報「告」ス。

一、九、四、四、年、三、月、日、三、日、日本軍「三」依「り」、ロ「ン」ド「上」市、河「邊」
收「容」所、人「員」中「ヨリ」總「數」約「千」七「百」五「十」名、和「國」人「百」五
十「名」、英「國」人「十」ヲ「包」含「ス」ル、各「千」名「以」上、二「大」隊「ヲ」成「ル」別「働」
隊「カ」撰「拔」セ「タ」シ。

一、九、四、四、年、五、月、十、四、日、朝、部「隊」自「身」運「出」品「全」部「ヲ」持「テ」中「立」
收「容」所「ヨリ」ロ「ン」ド「上」市「ノ」六「三」ノ「止」止「場」(行「進」シ「テ」
ア「リ」ク「ス」止「場」へ「汽」車「ヲ」送「リ」テ「シ」タ。其「處」ヲ「我」々「約」五「十」頃、
日「本」ノ「輸」送「船」ニ「乗」船「ス」。英「國」兵「全」部「ヲ」合「テ」千「名」前「部」、
大「尉」ニ「申」出「テ、余」前「部」船「艙」兵「隊」ヲ「五」十「人」宛、組「テ」四「十五」番
宛「体」保「ヲ」為「シ」甲「級」ニ「連」シ「テ」出「ス」コ「ト」ヲ「許」可「セ「シ」、兵「隊」ノ「水」浴、
船「艙」ノ「用」品、一「ツ」ヲ「使」用「ス」ル「許」可「ヲ」得「テ、食「物」ト「茶」ヲ「得」
「船」艙、宿「所」ノ「非」常「ニ」劣「弱」屬「テ、兵「隊」自「今」前「ニ」居「ル」兵「隊」
ノ「圍」リ「テ」其「足」ヲ「出」シ「テ」運「出」ス「ル」坐「子」七「六」十「七」ノ「力」ヲ「シ」。

No. 2

5604

No. 3

極度之疲勞ヲ患フ者ヲ甲板ニ度々運シ出サシムルコトアリ。之ニ應ジテ
 同様に多クハ航海中監視兵ハ之ヲ守リテ其船長約五千噸、他二
 隻、船長共ニ日本、海防艦ヲ護衛シ、日本暴撃機ヲ攔護シテ護
 送シ、居ル我々姉妹部ハ全様状態、丁約五千名、瓜哇人等力ヲ兼
 丁居ル航海中、何、事件ヲ起ラズカ。

九、一九四四年五月十七日、夕方、我々「スマトラ」ハ「バダギ」ニ入港。
 下船約十二料歩イテ使用サシ居テ映画館到着シ、食物
 與テ、映画館中、便所、設備、無カシ。翌朝、我々更ニ
 八料歩イテ「バダギ」一般入獄所ニ到リ、普通五百名、二人囚徒監
 禁所ニ收容セリ。我々我々別働隊二千名ト同様に護送船ニ到
 着シ約一千五百名ハ「ドネ平」人等カト有テ居リ。三年昔カ
 ハ此病氣、主ニ赤痢(細菌性及ビ「ドネ平」性共)ト一種、結膜炎ニ
 懸ツテ居リ。彼等多數死ニ行ツ。便所、設備、得ラズ監
 獄、下水溝「ドネ平」人、排泄物、血ヲ杯デテ。余、便所ヲ
 掘、為ニ有テ是等、我々等ガ「ドネ平」收容所、部分ヲ清潔ニシテ。夕
 八時頃約二百瓦許リ、米、食料が與ラレタリ。夕八時ニ「余
 隊部隊(千名)ヲ率テ不明、目的地、向テ出發スルヲ命ゼラシ。
 我々、六人約二百瓦、米ヲ持テ出發シ、六料程、末端停車場ニ到
 テ其處、我々、ヒドク混ニ合テ、汽車ニ乗セシ、「バダギ」ニ
 テ百二十四料進シ、其處、我々、日本、輸送自動車、迎ヘ、更
 ニ百八料「バダギ」ニ運シ、其處、我々、前「ドネ平」人
 ヲ入テ、形容、甚難、程、不潔、收容所ニ入リ、余、日本、指揮
 官、食物、給與、總願、シ、何、無、イ、ト云ハリ。

5604

NO. 3

極度疲勞を感ずる中、極度之連日、此方には、何れも、之、這、重
 同、時、多、く、航、海、中、臨、現、兵、に、お、か、り、其、船、各、約、五、十、噸、代、二
 隻、船、共、三、日、本、海、防、艦、護、衛、サ、レ、日、本、暴、撃、機、械、掩、護、兵、に、護
 送、シ、テ、居、ル、我、各、種、徒、部、全、員、兼、収、容、シ、テ、約、五、十、噸、瓜、分、人、苦、力、ヲ、兼
 テ、居、ル、航、海、中、何、レ、事、件、ヲ、起、ラ、ズ、ナ、リ、

九、一九四四年五月十七日、夕方、我、各、又、二、ト、ラ、ハ、シ、タ、ガ、一、人、港、
 下、船、約、十、二、料、歩、ヲ、テ、使、用、サ、レ、居、テ、映、画、館、到、着、シ、テ、食、物
 一、與、ラ、ズ、映、画、館、中、テ、便、所、設、備、無、カ、リ、現、在、朝、我、各、更、ニ
 八、料、歩、ヲ、テ、シ、タ、ガ、一、般、人、監、獄、刑、ヲ、普、通、五、百、名、ト、テ、人、囚、從、監
 禁、サ、レ、所、収、容、サ、ル、我、各、我、各、別、働、隊、二、十、名、ト、同、シ、護、送、船、到
 着、シ、テ、約、一、千、五、百、名、ト、シ、テ、居、ル、人、苦、力、ト、有、リ、居、ル、之、等、苦、力
 一、日、病、氣、主、シ、赤、痢、(細菌性及ビアメーバ性共)、ト、一、種、結、核、炎、
 患、シ、テ、居、ル、彼、等、多、数、死、ニ、テ、作、リ、テ、便、所、設、備、得、ラ、ズ、監
 獄、下、水、溝、ハ、イ、ド、ネ、テ、人、排、泄、物、血、ヲ、杯、デ、テ、シ、タ、リ、余、便、所、
 現、場、ニ、有、リ、テ、我、各、當、テ、ガ、リ、収、容、所、部、分、ヲ、清、潔、ニ、シ、タ、リ、
 十、時、頃、約、二、百、瓦、許、リ、米、食、事、が、與、ラ、ズ、タ、リ、シ、タ、リ、テ、二、十、時、ニ、余
 余、部、隊、(十、名)ヲ、率、テ、行、テ、不、明、目、的、地、向、リ、テ、出、發、シ、テ、命、ゼ、ラ、ル、
 我、各、二、人、約、二、百、瓦、米、ヲ、持、テ、出、發、シ、タ、リ、六、料、程、末、端、停、車、場、ニ、到、
 テ、其、處、我、各、ハ、ヒ、ト、リ、混、シ、合、テ、汽、車、ニ、乘、テ、シ、タ、リ、ハ、十、コ、ム、グ、
 テ、百、二、十、四、料、進、テ、其、處、テ、我、各、日、本、輸、送、自、動、車、迎、合、シ、更
 ニ、百、十、料、ハ、ハ、シ、テ、運、送、シ、タ、リ、其、處、テ、我、各、前、ニ、イ、ド、ネ、テ、人
 々、ノ、形、容、之、難、シ、程、不、潔、ト、収、容、所、ニ、入、リ、タ、リ、余、日、本、指、揮
 官、食、物、給、與、ヲ、總、願、シ、テ、ガ、何、モ、無、ク、シ、タ、リ、

5604

翌日全部隊の收容所を清掃せし、十六時頃病食事、食料が支給せし。翌日午前八時、三九百名の者が收容所から出掛ける。鐵道、仕事を始す。彼等の食物を遮護物も無く枕木線路を過す。終りに討慶、金程下仕事をスルト、非常ニ激シイ労働ヲサセラセタ。我々ハ此ノ様ニ仕事ニハ全く無經驗デアリタニモ拘ハラズ我々ハ監督ハヒルマ、鐵道係屬隊カラ直接来タ一群、日本兵デ同様ノ奴隷ヲ使フガ如キ苛酷ニ状態ト進行ガ採用セリタ。兵隊ハ午後九時頃收容所ニ歸リテ来タガ「バックヤ」カラ、旅行ノ艱難、後、彼等ハスツカリ被シ木ヲテ井マシタガ、日本兵ハ我々ノ食糧ガ来ルマデ、之以上食事を支給スル事ハ出来ナイト説明シタ。次ノ五日間、其ノ状態、其ノ續イタ。余自身モ疾病發生ノ為、日本人中尉(田中中尉)ト少カラズ争ヒマシタ。余ハ我々が食事を支給サシイ限り何等ノ改善ハ期待スルコトハ出来ズ、又我々ノ飲マシテ居ル水ハ硫黄臭カラ来テ、居ル為非常ニ悪イ事ヲ説明シタ。

其ノ夜、余ハ「スラベク」ノ中佐ガ残りノ千名ヲ連シテ約三軒隔ツタ所ノ收容所ニ到着シタ事ヲ聞イタ。翌日、我々ノ食糧ガ到着シ、其次自余ハ余ノ收容所ノ全員ト「スラベク」ノ中佐、收容所ノ全員ハ變リ、為余ノ部下ヲ連シテ移シタ。

No. 4

- 二 聯合軍醫師ガ「バンドク」監獄ノ状態、為「アルト」シタ赤痢ノ發生ニモ関ハズ、重労働部隊ハ續イタ。
- 三 ……オノ收容所ハ公武ニ病人收容所トナリ、働ケル者ハ皆奥地ノ收容所カラ鐵道ニ働キテラシ、病人ハ皆交代者トナリ得ル程度ニ恢復スルカ、又ハ余ノ收容所カラ働キニ行ケル程度ニテ、余ノ下ニ送り歸サルト云フ事ヲ通告セリタ。

5604

先任軍医將校トシテ、在軍中、佐ト余ハ、状態、改善、
 任事、軽減、食糧ト医薬、措置ヲ保リ返シ、日本兵(富崎
 大尉)ニ嘆願シテ、我々、又等、護照ハ何、甲斐モナク、
 食糧ハ得ラレトイハレ、又俘虜收容所担当、日本人医
 師、石井医師ハ、コソ、在軍中、佐ニ、薬ヲ手入ルコトハ出来
 ナカラ、自分ヲ藥材トシテ、裁量シ、自分、藥ヲ作ラセ、トイハレ、
 言ハレ、始末ガヤリ、
 新開ツク、一帯近イ町、バングク、カラ、食糧ヲ運テ、輸
 送機関、不足、為、食糧事情ハ悪化スルト云ハレ、
 重病ヲイフ者ハ、自は、子ヲセ、バ、ナラ、ナリ、
 師ハ、非常ニ多数、病人ヲ扱フニ、非常ニ困難ヲシ、
 当时八百名許、リ、其、大部分ハ、赤痢、マラリヤ、脚氣、
 「アウイト」ニ、テ、病、胃腸系、病、少数、結核患者
 デ、其、ニ、加、ル、ニ、多数、他、肺腫物患者ガ、ナリ、
 繃帶トカ、金、手、ニ、入、ラ、ナ、リ、

一四、一九四四年、九月十七日頃、余ハ、更ニ、多数、重病患者、
 到着ヲ豫期スル様ニ、命ゼ、レ、余ハ、朝鮮人監視兵カラ、
 瓜哇ト「バングク」向テ、後續別働隊ガ、急襲攻撃ヲ受ケ、
 多数、死傷者ヲ出シ、多ク、ナリ、一九四四年、九月十九日頃、
 二日、傷病兵運搬自動車デ、二十名バ、リ、患者ガ、到着シ、
 大部分、一日カ、三日テ、死、シ、
 「バングク」病院ニ、入、ラ、レ、タ、リ、
 第四、第五收容所ニ、送、ラ、レ、凡、リ、一週間後、百五十名、病人、
 死ニ、瀕、シ、タ、リ、其、夜中ニ、余、收容所ニ、到着シ、

No.5

5604

甚、頃、我々の船は三年間、衣服、交際を受たる者が十カツ
ニモ拘ハラズ。余ハ別述、別働隊、為ニ出来ルダケ、被服
ヲ出スルニ日本軍ニ命セラレタ。日本軍、説明ニ依レバ、
英軍が此、護送船ヲ撃沈シタリ。又日本軍ハ、被
服ヲ支給スルコトが出来タイカラ、我々ハ自分ヲ支給セネバ
ナラヌト云ツタ。我々ハ出来ルダケ、一ツツツツツが、第四收容
所ノ事柄ハ非常ニ悪カク。

No. 6

5604

甚、煩。我々ハ船中ト三年間衣服、支給ヲ受ケケルガナカシク
ニモ拘ハラズ。余ハ別述、別働隊、為ニ出来ルガナ、被服
ヲ出ス称ニ日本軍ニ命セラシク。日本軍、説明ニ依レバ、
英軍ガ此ノ護送船ヲ撃沈シタリ。又日本軍ハ被
服ヲ支給スルコトガ出来ナイカラ、我々ハ自分テ支給セネバ
ナラ又ト云ツ。我々ハ出来ルガナ、事ヲシクガ、第四收容
所ノ事情ハ非常ニ悪カラシク。

No. 6

5604.

十五九四年十月末余、北又トシテ道路構築作業に従事人爲
 八月程前、メダヲ立ツ者ヲ以テ第一收容所が出来テ事ヲ通共
 サシ。彼等、北又トシテ英語ヲ話シ極悪心、形、日本人將校、
 中尉指揮ヲ仰イテ居テ。
 之等、者、非常ニ狡猾、然ルニテヤツテ来テカソレニモ拘ハラス、
 建設作業ヲサセシメ、公ニ中尉、余ヲ訪問、彼、收容所、英國兵ヲ
 指揮スル爲、先任英國將校ヲ求テ、和蘭兵、非常ニ有能ナ和蘭
 將校、現在英國統治下ニ又トシテ指揮ニ中心ヲシテ居ル、
 大尉、指揮下ニシテ居ル。余、亦、收容所、英國兵ヲ指揮スル爲、
 大尉ヲ求テ、彼、其、自、公ニ中尉ニ伴ハテ去ツテ行ツ。

十六日頃、傷病兵ノ一般状況、急遽ニ悪化シテ居テ、余、再ビ、
 況、政、長ヲ繰リ返シ、嘆願シ、嘆願、全、拒否セシメ、我、
 トシテ死ニ至ル、上、昇、金ノ食糧不足ト過激ト労働ト、依、
 示、又、統計報、其、書ヲ提出シ、カ、上、院、中尉、唯、余、
 ヲサセ、キ、又、余、上、院、幕僚、
 定、者、其、中、
 羅、
 為、
 死、亡、率、高、

No.7

十七九五年六月十六日頃、余、一九四五年八月十五日迄、
 十、
 夕、
 理、
 依、
 兵、

5604

全地域、健康状態、今や急速悪化シツ、アリ。薬、全然キニ入ラス。全隊、全ク疲テ果テ日本監視兵ト鉄道官吏、絶エタル酷使、為ニ全ク、人々非常ニ意氣沮丧シテ居タ。憲兵隊監視、加重カ感ゼラシ。更ニ種々規律ヲ庄迫シ我々ニ加ヘラシタ。

五... 左、余カスミトシテ指揮シテ居タ八月間、我々、状態ニ関シ責任ヲ有スル事ル犯罪者、名亦及人相ヲ添ヘ。

宮崎大尉 「パカン、バル」地、全俘虜收容所、責任者、中背、肥ヲ將校テ、目立テ斜視デアッタ。彼、何等收容所、福祉ニ関心見エカッタ。ソノ其處、状態ヲヨク承知シテ居タカ。我々ニ少シ、援助ヲ與ヘカ。實際、彼ハ交渉ヲ持テ掛ケラシト、何時モ頼柄デアッタ。

土居中尉 第二收容所、收容所指揮官、宮崎大尉、副官、彼亦中背、肥ヲ將校。手ノ其後、余、聞き知ラシテ、戦時計畫アリト、事、隊対シ居タ全責任者。彼收容所、屢々詢問、病兵、群ヲ指示カレト、彼、唯答テ、我々、俘虜ニ過キト言ッタ。非道ト人同テ監視兵ニ対シテモ、我等、統制力ヲ持ッテ居タカ。

石井中尉(軍医) 「パカン、バル」地、全收容所、軍医、背、目、眼鏡カカタ日本人將校、戦時醫學生、危急事情ヲ知テ居タ。其、状態ヲ改善スルハ出来ヌト云テ居タ。ソノ運搬、繃帶等、手ノ業。イト、彼カ言ヒタモカ、ハ、日本軍、消費用トシテ、沢山持ッテ居リ、降服後、我々カ斯モ熱心ニ其處ヲ薬品ヲ非常ニ多量ニ出シタ。

NO. 8

加藤軍曹 第二收容所、一九四一年一月及二月、收容所附軍曹、彼ハ病人ヲ行ヒ追テ、好キト非常ニ酷使看テアッタ。彼ハ收容所ニ、凡ソ可能ト制限ヲ加ヘ、最モ細心命令、対シ違犯者、厳シク罰シタ。玉置、問、以テ收容所ニ、肉ヲ又給スルヲ差シ、止メ、其責任アリ。彼ハ重名ヲ作營、田舎風、日本今、非常ニ力アリ。最終、隊、部隊、(註)

北川軍曹 一九四四年三月ヨリ同年七月ヨリ第二收容所ノ收容
 所附軍曹。ソノテ事カアリ得ルトスル彼ノ前任者ヨリモモット
 悪クワシ。近ツキ難ク。病人及ビ將校ヲ特ニ嫌悪シタリ。彼ノ病人ヲ
 仕事ニ出ス事ガ好キテ、彼ノ好キナ刑罰ハ非常ニ重イ枝木ヲ長
 時間頭上ニ持タル事ヲアワリ。彼ノ規則ヲ破リテ作務ハ厳ク
 罰スルヤラト。監視兵ヲタキ付ケタリ。……

「フジ」二等兵（最終所屬部隊「ミ」隊）非常ニ脊低イ、ジジ

カリナリ。幅廣ノ顔ヲシテ日本兵。何處トシテ、私ノ経験ノ中

テ最も悪イ監視兵。彼ノ非道ナ行爲ヲスル事ヲ特ニ好ミ。收

容所ニ入ソテ来ル度毎ニ誰カヲ毆ルト云フ記録ヲ持ッテ居タリ。

和蘭兵「モレマ」ノ場合ノ如ク左足ニ非常ニ大キナ腫物ガ出来

テ苦シクテ居タリ。ソレガヤト泣リカケタ時、「フジ」ガ近付イテ

来テ、日本兵カ来ルニ何故立タナト其ノ理由ヲ要セシタリ。

「モレマ」ハ足ノ腫物ヲ見セタガ勿シク「フジ」ニ其処ヲ蹴ラレシマツタ。

此ノ暴撃ノ結果、三日程後ニ足ハ切断サレ、三週間程後ニ「モレマ」

ハ別頭衰弱ト激衝ノ爲、死ニテシマツタ。此ノ暴撃ノ目撃者ハ、

和蘭軍醫部「ケンケ」中尉（軍醫）ガアル。譯名「バン」

虎。植木健男尉、「ナホレ」

一九四五年十一月十九日

英國空軍一六三軍中佐

「ロー」・「エス」・「デイ」・「グイス」

（署名五）

No. 9

下告レシテ居リカ
 ソレガヤト治リカケタ時、「フジ」が近付イテ
 来テ、日本兵が来ルニ何故立タテイト其ノ理由ヲ要求シタ。
 「モレマ」ハ足ノ腫物ヲ見セタガ勿シク「フジ」ニ其処ヲ蹴ラレテシタ。
 此ノ襲撃ノ結果、三日程後ニ足ハ切断サレ、三週間程後ニ「モレマ」
 ハ刻限衰弱ト激衝ノ爲、死ニテシタ。此ノ襲撃ノ目撃者ハ、
 和南軍醫部「ケンケ」中尉（軍醫）ナル。澤名「バカン」
 虎、植木鉢男尉、「ナホレ」ト。

一九四五年十一月十九日

英国空軍一〇五軍中佐

「ピー」・「エス」・「デイ」・「グイス」

(署名)

Doc. 5604.

北川軍曹

一九四一年三月ヨリ同年七月ヲ第二收容所ノ收容

所附軍曹

ソノ事ガアリ得ルトスル彼ハ前任者ヨリモモット

悪クワタ

近ヅキ難ク

病人及ビ終校ヲ特ニ嫌悪ス。彼ハ病人ヲ

仕事ニ出ス事ガ好キテ、彼ノ好キナ刑罰ハ非常ニ重イ杖本ヲ長

時間頭上ニ持タル事ヲアワケ、彼ノ規則ヲ破リテ作務ハ最モ

四訓スルヤラント、監視兵ヲタキ付ケタ...

フジニ二等兵 (最終所属部隊「ミ」隊) 非常ニ脊低イ、ジ

カリナリ、幅廣・顔ヲシテ日本兵、作務トシテ私ノ経験ノ中

ヲ最モ悪イ監視兵、彼ハ非道ナ行爲ヲスル事ヲ特ニ好ミ、收

容所ニ入ソテ来ル度毎ニ誰カラ毆ルト云フ記録ヲ持ツテ居リ、

和蘭兵「モシ」ノ場合ノ如ク、左足ニ非常ニ大キナ腫物ガ出来

北川軍曹 一九四四年三月ヨリ同年七月まで第二收容所、收容
 所附軍曹。ソノ事がアリ得ルトスバ彼ハ前任者ヨリモモット
 悪クツク。近ヅキ難ク。病人及び終校ヲ特ニ嫌悪シク。彼ハ病人ヲ
 仕事ニ出ス事が好きデ、彼ノ好きナ刑罰ハ、非常ニ重イ。榎本ヲ長
 時間頭上ニ持タシム事アリ。彼ハ規則ヲ破リテ仔労働ハ厭シク
 罰スルヤウニト。監視兵ヲタキ付ケル。……

フジニ等兵 (最終所属部隊「ミ」隊) 非常ニ脊低イ。ジ
 カリシ。幅廣。顔ヲシテ日本兵。仔屬トシテ私ノ経験中
 ノ最モ悪イ監視兵。彼ハ非道ナ行爲ヲスル事ヲ特ニ好ミ。收
 容所ニ入リテ来ル度毎ニ誰カヲ毆ルトス。記録ヲ持ツテ居テ。
 和蘭兵「モレ」ノ場合、如ク左足ニ非常ニ大キナ腫物が出来
 テ告シテ居タカ。ソレがヤット治リカケタ時、「フジ」が近付イテ
 来テ。日本兵が来ルニ何故立タテト其ノ理由ヲ要セシテ。
 「モレ」ハ足ノ腫物ヲ見セタガ勿心ナ「フジ」ニ其処ヲ蹴ラシメタ。
 此ノ襲撃ノ結果、三日程後ニ足ハ切断セリ。三週間程後ニ「モレ」
 ハ刻限衰弱ト激衝ノ爲、死ニテシマリ。此ノ襲撃ノ目撃者ハ、
 和蘭軍醫部「ケン」中尉 (軍醫) ヲナル。譯名「バカン」
 虎。植木鉢男尉。「ナホ」。

一九四五年十一月十九日

英國空軍 空軍中佐
 「ピー・エス・テイ・グイス」
 (署名)

Q# 1770

Doc. No. 5601

Page 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NLFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Sworn Statement of WILHELM WEGEDOORN, regular soldier No. 94859, R.N.I.", signed: W. Wegedoorn, No. OH/8094/S,

which document is a part of the official records of the NLFIS.

SIGNATURE: /s/ Charles Jongeneel

SJL

BATAVIA, June 7th, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. de Weerd, first Lieutenant, R.N.I., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

Signature: K.A. de Weerd

G# 1770

Doc. No. 5601

Page 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I., head of the War Crimes Section of NEDERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NLFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Sworn Statement of WILFRIED WEGEDOORN, regular soldier No. 94859, R.N.I.", signed: W. Wegedoorn, No. OII/8094/S,

which document is a part of the official records of the NLFIS.

SIGNATURE: /s/ Charles Jongeneel

SML

BATAVIA, June 7th, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.H. de WEEED, first Lieutenant, R.N.I., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

Signature: K.H. de Weerd

STATEMENT

SUMMARY OF EXAMINATION OF:

No. 94859, WILLIAM H. GEDDGIN, Regular soldier 1 Bn. S.W.K.
Artillery, RMLA

duly sworn states:

I am 28 years of age, of Dutch nationality, born at
ZMOLLE Holland. At present I am living c/o - O.C. L.O.C.
BATAVIA.

I was taken prisoner in Padang by the Japanese on 17th
March, 1942 and was interned in PADANG BARRACKS.

We were moved to Medan, where we lived for 18 months
and left there in March 1944 for BLANGERDJERIN. We arrived
there on 11th March 1944. BLANGERDJERIN was the starting
point of a road 39 kms. long, which we had to build. At the
beginning the work was not too exacting and consisted in
widening the existing sand track. At this time we worked
a minimum of 12 hours per day. As we progressed the country
became rougher and the excavation was more difficult. During
the 7 months it took us to complete the task we had only
15 deaths. This was due to the fact that we had previously
had a comparatively easy time at MEDAN and that we were a
specially selected draft of young men.

Officer in charge of this party was Lt. KURA, who did
nothing to prevent the brutal treatment given us by the
Korean guards. Many times he witnessed beatings and never
interfered. Our clothing during the period consisted only
of a pair of shorts. We had no footwear.

Most brutal of the guards were:

IMTSUOKI
URUOTO
IMUOTO
KANIKI
ISIMU
OYAMA

On completion of the road in October 1944, we were
forced to march day and night from Kms 39 to KOTA TJANI, a
total distance of 145 KMS. The time taken was 68 hours.
The Korean guard in charge of this march was IMTSUOKI, who
judging from his behaviour seemed to have received orders

to take us back as quickly as possible. Each time a man fell behind he was beaten by MATSUOKA with a rattan cane until the man kept up with the main party.

Corporal CREWE R.A.F. a Welshman I believe, was one of our cooks and had a very difficult time on this march trying to prepare meals during the brief halts. At one stage Crewe collapsed and was beaten by MATSUOKA while he was unconscious. I and three others carried him for a time and we ourselves were beaten by MATSUOKA because we could not keep up with the main party.

There were many other beatings during the march but I was too exhausted to notice who the victims were.]

From KOTA TJANE we were taken by lorry to MEDAN, where we stayed for a month before being sent to work on the PEKAN BARU railway.

Matsuoka first took charge of us at Medan in August 1942. He came with us to ATJEF in March 1944 and took us back to Medan in October 1944. In about July 1945, when we went to LOGOS camp this guard was replaced by a Japanese regular soldier.

Others responsible for beatings during the march were

KANII OTO
and Y. NEGAMI.

[Sgd. W. WAGEDOORN]

Evidentiary Document Doc 5601

No. 1 1773

No. 1

書類第六〇(号)

證明書

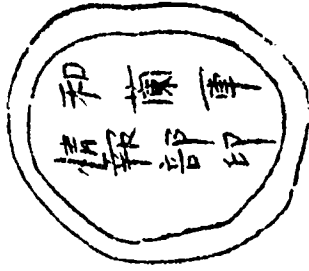
下名和蘭軍情報部戦争犯罪課長 R. N. I. A 中尉
「キールズ、ヨニゲニール」の正堂ニ宣誓ヲ爲シテ上列紙添
附書類

第〇M/〇九五/S号 W. HAGEDOORN 署名ル

正規兵才九八五九号 R. N. I. A. 宣誓陳述書

ト題名、モ、該書類、原文、全文ニテ眞実、完全
及正確ナル事ヲアット並ビニ該書類が和蘭軍情報
部、公文記録、一部ナルトヲ證明ス。

(署名) キールズ、ヨニゲニール



於バタヴィヤ 一九四六年六月廿日

右の本職 N. E. 上法務廳附官等官 R. N. I. A
中尉「K. A. グウナード」の面前ニ署名宣誓ヲ
シタリ。

(署名) K. A. グウナード

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Evidentiary Document Doc 5601

No. 1 1770

No. 1

書類第六〇一号

證明書

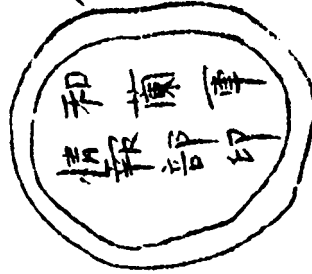
下名和蘭軍情報部戦争犯罪課長 R. N. I. A 中尉
ケールズ、ヨニゲニール、ハ正堂ニ宣誓ヲ為シテ上別紙添
附書類

第〇M/〇九三/〇三 W. HAGEDOORN 署名

正規兵才九八五九号 R. N. I. A、宣誓陳述書

ト題名、モ、該書類、原文、全文ニテ真実、完全
及正確ナル旨ヲ断ト並ビ該書類が和蘭軍情報
部ノ公式記録一部ナルヲ證明ス。

署名 ケールズ、ヨニゲニール



於バタヴィヤ 一九四六年六月七日

右ニ奉職 N. E. 上法務廳附官等官 R. N. I. A
中尉「K. A. グウアーント」ノ面前ニ署名宣誓ヲ
シタリ。

署名 K. A. グウアーント

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5601

陳述書

R. N. I. A. S. W. K. 砲兵第一隊 正煙兵六四
五元号「少中」の「下」の「部」の「内」の「概」兵
正式=宣揚書=陳述書。

私、和蘭人ヲ和蘭スオトニ生シ、二十一年出
現在私兵タガウシ、10.0%のシニ生シ、
私、一九四二年三月十七日、ハタニ、日本軍、ハタニ、
ハタニ、兵營ニ柳留サシ。

私達ハ「ハタニ」ニ福シ、其志ヲ十箇月ヲ過シ、
四年三月、ブリヂーニ出シ、同シ。私達、一九四二年
十日、其處ニ到着シ、ブリヂーニ入シ、延シ、三十九日、
道路ノ其点デアツテ、其道路ハ私達ガ建設シ、ハタニ
カツタ。始メ、仕事ハ、ハタニ、骨折ル、モノデアリ、ハタニ、
道路ヲ擴張スル事デアリ、当时私達ハ、最低、百五時間
働イタ。私達ガ進ムニ、随ヒ、ソノ、坑ノ、出、回、カ、下、ハ、ハ、
警、ハ、グ、ニ、
一、日、同、ニ、死者ハ、僅ク、十五人デアリ、私達ガ、前
「ハタニ」ニ、比較的、樂シ、ク、シ、タ、私達ガ、特別、
振、隊、ハ、ハ、タ、ニ、

No 2

監督、將校ハ、同、ニ、計、尉、ヲ、シ、テ、朝鮮人、衛、兵
私達ニ、行、ル、兵、行、ヲ、少、シ、モ、止、ル、ヲ、ハ、ハ、ハ、ハ、
ハ、改、行、ヲ、自、警、シ、タ、ガ、決、シ、テ、干、渉、ハ、シ、カ、タ、ハ、ハ、ハ、ハ、

Doc 5601

私達、衣服ハタタ下ズ不之ツテアツタ。私達、履物、
持ツタカシ。

米 米 米 米 米 米 米 米

一九四一年十月道路が完成スルニ、私達、二十九日夕方
コノニヤホリヲ全行程一四五キロヲ夜行進セシメタ。晝
夕時間、六十八時間テスル。コノ行進ヲ担ヒテ夕朝
鮮人衛兵、松岡ヲ彼ノノ行動カラ判断シテ出来ホ
ク早ク私達ヲ連レ帰ルヨリ命令ヲ受ケテキタニシタ。
誰カ後ルトソノ部度、本隊ニ追ヒ付クコト、松岡ニ懸
伏テ改ラシタ。

ウチルズ人ガト思ヒ、某空軍クル、隊長ハ私達、炊事
掛ノ人テスルガ、コノ行進ヲ短ク休止、間ニ食事
用意ヲスル為ニ非常ニ難儀ニシタ。或所テクル
ハ倒レタ、ソニテ氣絶シキル。尚私岡ニ改ラシタ。私ト他
ニハテ暫ク彼ヲ連シタガ、私達自身モ本隊ニ追ヒ付ク
ト言フデ松岡ニ改ラシタ。

ソノ行進中他ニモ多ク改打が行ハタガ私ハアリ疲労
シキタ、誰ガソノ犠牲者テスルカ又ガ付カシタ。

署名 W. A. G. D. 1-2

No 3

G. #1771

Doc. No. 5623

Page 1

C e r t i f i c a t e

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a fully true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

Sworn statement of Karel, Hendrik, Emile KRIJGSMAAN, concerning the execution of POW's who refused to enlist in the Jap army at Poibo (Lawe Segala Gale Camp - Kota Tjane jail, Sumatra,
-3946/R-

which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

Signature:

/s/ Charles Jongeneel

SMAL

Batavia, June 7, 1946

subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEEED, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General, N.I.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

S T A T E M E N T
SUMMARY OF EXAMINATION OF

Karel, Hendrik, Emile KRIJGSLIJN, no occupation, formerly of PADANG, SUMATRA, who, duly sworn states:

I am 42 years of age, of DUTCH nationality, born at BINROLLIN, SUMATRA. I have no permanent address; at present I am staying at ORANJESCHOOL, LIDJAN.

I was taken prisoner of war by the JAPANESE army at PADANG PANDJANG on 17 Mar 42 and eventually interned at LIWE SEGALA camp in June 42. In May 43, I cannot recall the exact date, the Japanese camp commander LIYASAKI told we prisoners of war that we would soon have to enlist in the JAPANESE army as HIPO. On 29 May 43 about 17.00 hours Lieutenant SUSUKI of the GURSEIEU KOTA TJANI, and a KEI PEI officer from BRISTAGI, whose name I do not know, arrived in the camp. All the prisoners had to parade. When we were lined up, the interpreter IMASAKI told us that we were given five minutes to decide whether we would enlist in the JAPANESE Army or not. When this period had elapsed the prisoners were divided in three groups: A. those rejected medically unfit. B. the volunteers. C. those who refused to enlist. I myself was with the second group. The names of the people in my group were recorded; after this everybody was allowed to return to their quarters. Amongst those who refused were

Sergeant CROES, R.N.I.A.

" STOLZ

Private WOLFF

Regular sergeant VOSS had also refused but had been arrested previously, I do not know why.

On 29 May 43 about 20.30 hours, those who refused to enlist were taken to KOTA TJANI by JAPANESE and INDONESIAN police. I know this because I was driven to LIYASAKI the camp commander, and had to drive him to KOTA TJANI with SUSUKI, the unknown KEI PEI officer and the prisoners. The prisoners were locked in KOTA TJANI jail. Sergeant CROES, sergeant STOLZ, sergeant VOSS and private WOLFF were bound hand and foot and taken to the village square (sloen-sloeu) and there publicly shown to the population who had been called there by the JAPANESE. They were executed at about 23.00 hours 29 May 43. The population had to look on by order of the JAPANESE. As LIYASAKI's driver I had to stand in the front line. VOSS was asked his last wish. He answered he wanted to die with the DUTCH national flag wrapped round his body. His request was granted. VOSS then addressed the audience in Malay, giving his opinion of the JAPANESE and abusing them. When he had finished the JAPANESE wanted to blindfold him but he declined saying: "I am a DUTCHMAN and not afraid to die."

The KEMPEI officer in charge of the firing squad then pointed his rifle at VOSS and fired twice. VOSS was not killed and cried out: "Long live the Queen!" The officer then put the rifle to VOSS' head and shot him dead.

The same KEMPEI officer then tried to behead Sergeant CHOLS with his sword. He missed however and hit CHOLS on the shoulder. He then drew his revolver and shot CHOLS in the head. After this WOLFF and STOLZ were shot by this same officer. I cannot remember exactly how this happened but this so called execution was in my opinion murder. To the best of my knowledge MIYASAKI and SUSUKI were also present.

K. V. F. KRIJGSMAAN

Signed

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

Signed

E. W. SAYERS Lt.
Translator

J. J. A. VAN DE LANDE 1st Lt.

SWORN BEFORE ME

No. 4 War Crimes Investigation Team (SE/C)

Doc 5623

No 2

陳述書

書類番号 五六一三 三九四六頁

正式に宿誓言の上、陳述セル無職元「スマトウ」バツグ、居住
「カール・ヘンドリック・エミール・クリスチアンスン」の訃聞要領
私「四十二番、國籍「オランダ」スマトウ」ベツケル、此等其
私「本籍地ヲ其ノ所ニ居ルモ、現在私「オランダ」ナラズニ
スルニ止ニ居ラス。

私「一九四二年三月廿七日「バツグ・バンデヤク」ニ於テ日本軍
戰時俘虜トナリ、最後「一九四三年六月「ウキヤカラ、カラ」
收容所ニ收容セラレタリ。正確ニ目附「思」ト出セセキガ
一九四三年五月、日本人、收容所指揮官宮崎「吾」戰時
俘虜ニ對シ、吾々「兵補」トシテ近ク日本軍ニ編入セシメ
ラヌト言ヒマシタリ。一九四三年五月十九日十七時頃、「ウ
ツギ」之軍政部、「スキ」少尉ト名前「知リ」セキガ
アラスキカラ、一憲兵將校ガ收容所ニ到着シマシタリ。全部
俘虜「整列」セバナリマシタリ。吾々が整列セセキ時
岩崎通譯「我々ニ日本軍上「ルカ」否カラキタル爲ニ吾等
與「ルト」言ヒマシタリ。此「時間」ガ終ツタ時俘虜達「三」班ニ
分ケマシタリ。A. 医学的ニ不適當トシテ許セラズモノ
B. 志願者。C. 餘「拒否」セラズモノ。私自身「第二」班ナリ。
私「班」者、名「記録」セマシタリ。ソ「レ」テ各自「宿舎」歸
事ヲ許サレタリ。拒否セラズ者、中「蘭領」印度軍軍曹
「乙」ス、同「下」ル「兵」ヲ「カ」居ラセマシタリ。

正現軍軍曹「オ」オ「亦」拒否シマシタリガ彼「前」以テ逮捕

Doc 628

「素」頭一ツヲ射殺シタリ。
同日憲兵射校ハソノカラ刀デ「素」ノ厚背ノ汗留ヲ削テ
トシタリ。然レ彼「素」ヲ損ネテ「素」ノ肩ヲ打テタリ。ソノ
後拳銃ヲ取去ル「素」ノ頭ヲ射テタリ。ソノ後「素」
ト「素」ト「素」ハ同じ將校ニ依テ射殺セタリ。私ニ事
カドテ「素」ニ起ラタリ、正確ニ想ヒ出ス事ハ出来マセガ、
此ノ所謂死刑ハ私ノ考テ「素」殺テタリ。
私、知ル限リテ「素」官崎ト「素」ト「素」ニ「素」合セタリ。

K. H. E. クリギグスマン 署名

予、右ノ署名ニ先立テ、上記要領ヲ証人ニ対シ彼、母國
語ヲ以テ正當ニ翻譯シタルヲ証明ス。

署名翻譯者陸軍中尉 E. W. ケンパー

予、右ノ刑ニ「素」合セタリ

以テ四戰争犯罪調査班 (SEAC)

陸軍中尉 J. J. A. アンダーソン

No 4

Ex. # 1772

DOMILEFF 5646

Page 1

OFFICIAL WRIT

2726/R

This day, Monday December 24, nineteen hundred forty five, appeared before me, Meester W. Beun, Substitute Public Prosecutor at the Court of Justice at Medan, in person:

A. E. PRINS-RÖHRBORN

to be heard as a witness in the case against a suspect, probably named DOBUTSJI and a second suspect not to be mentioned by name yet, suspect of Indonesian nationality.

After witness has declared to have known both the suspects before the deed of which they are now suspected, not to be related to them by blood, nor in law and not to be in their employment, witness answers the questions put to her as follows:

What is your surname and your Christian name?	Prins, born Röhrborn, Augusta, Eleonora
How old are you and what is your profession?	I am 43 years of age, without profession.
Where do you live?	Before Japanese invasion I lived at the rubber-estate Soengei Poetih, Galang, now I stay at Medan, 8 Mackaylaan.

As is supposed that witness will not appear at further investigations, she now swears the oath according to her religious principles, that, she will, as a witness speak the whole truth and nothing but the truth, and answers the questions put to her as follows:

In the mont. of September 1944, Mrs. Eikens and I still occupied the function of camp-managers. The supply of food which the Japanese gave us was extra-ordinarily bad. For two and a half months we had been given neither sugar nor fat. The official rations, so we were informed by the Japanese, contained: rice for grown up people, 200 grams per head daily and for children 100 grams. Vegetables, 50 gr. per head daily. In reality we got 140 gr. rice for grown ups and 80 gr for children. Vegetables 20 gr. We complained continuously to the Japanese commandant about this treatment and when we got no result, we asked for an interview with the officer, TANAKA, who was occupied with the food-supply. He said, however, that he could not do this. But one day, when Tanaka came to visit our camp, he talked to him about this. After he was gone /
our

E. # 1772

DOCUMENT 5646

Page 1

OFFICIAL WRIT

2736/R

This day, Monday December 24, nineteen hundred forty five, appeared before me, Meester W. Beun, Substitute Public Prosecutor at the Court of Justice at Medan, in person:

A. E. PRINS-RÖHRBORN

to be heard as a witness in the case against a suspect, probably named DCBUTSJI and a second suspect not to be mentioned by name yet, suspect of Indonesian nationality.

After witness has declared to have known both the suspects before the deed of which they are now suspected, not to be related to them by blood, nor in law and not to be in their employment, witness answers the questions put to her as follows:

What is your surname and your Christian name?	Prins, born Röhrborn, Augusta, Eleonora
How old are you and what is your profession?	I am 43 years of age, without profession.
Where do you live?	Before Japanese invasion I lived at the rubber-estate Soengei Poetih, Galang, now I stay at Medan, 3 Kachaylaan.

As is supposed that witness will not appear at further investigations, she now swears the oath according to her religious principles, that, she will, as a witness speak the whole truth and nothing but the truth, and answers the questions put to her as follows:

.
In the mont. of September 1944, Mrs. Eikens and I still occupied the function of camp-managers. The supply of food which the Japanese gave us was extra-ordinarily bad. For two and a half months we had been given neither sugar nor fat. The official rations, so we were informed by the Japanese, contained: rice for grown up people, 200 grams per head daily and for children 100 grams. Vegetables, 50 gr. per head daily. In reality we got , 140 gr. rice for grown ups and 80 gr for children. Vegetables 20 gr. We complained continuously to the Japanese commandant about this treatment and when we got no result, we asked for an interview with the officer, TANAKA, who was occupied with the food-supply. He said, however, that he could not do this. But one day, when Tanaka came to visit our camp, he talked to him about this. After he was gone /
our

our Japanese commandant was so furious that he struck both of us with his open hand. The discontentment about the shortness of food increased daily in the camp. The women threatened to break out of the camp to fetch it themselves. We proposed a hunger demonstration, whereupon the thinnest women accompanied by their division-leaders went to the Japanese guard. There we showed them to the Japanese commandant and said to him, that he could now see for himself the results of his hunger-system. We then demanded in the name of the whole camp for the supply of the official rations. The commandant promised us that he would go to Medan and see what he could do for us. When, however, there came no improvement we asked for permission to obtain food from people outside, by means of barter, but this was refused bluntly by the commandant. This went on until middle of November and the discontentment increased more and more.

In order to put off demonstrations which as we knew, could not be held in check much longer, we made a proposal to the inmates of the camp, to wait until November 25, 1944, before breaking out. We hoped vainly that on this date improvement should have come. The camp accorded with this and then we went again to the commandant. We informed him that we could not prevent the inmates from breaking out if no improvement came on the next supply of rations, which was due on November 20. We drew his attention to this: that he would certainly come into "Soesak" (trouble) with Medan, whereupon he replied that we were "Kapala Boesock" (bad heads) but when we asked that he should name other managers, he said that this was not allowed by Medan. At last he promised me that our request for more food would be answered on November 20. The rations arrived but the amounts were the same as before. Again we went to the commandant and ^{after that} visited him daily with our complaints. Each time he gave us promises for next day, each time without any result and so came November 25.

Then we agreed that from each block-division some women in total 40 persons leave the camp on Sunday-afternoon November 26. However, people did not abide by the agreement and thus the next day about 3 o'clock 386 women left out of camp. To be ahead of events we went to the Japanese commandant and we saw him looking at the departure. He asked what this meant, insulted us again as "Kapala Boesock" and ordered us to fetch the women back at once. If they would return at once he would not make a "pakara" (case). So we went out of the camp but each time we asked some women to go back we got the answer that they would not do this before they settled their business. The Japanese and Heiho's who had gone outside too, got no results. Later it appeared that someone had telephoned the M.P. at Kaban Djahs from the Japanese hospital situated across the road and from where the breaking out had

/ been

been observed. About nine o'clock in the evening all were back again. Before this the first and second suspect had arrived with a Japanese whom we know by name of TOKASE. Mrs. Eikens and I were called in, whereupon the first suspect interrogated us with the assistance of an interpreter who was a Jap. When we had told him the real cause of the breaking out, he accused us of having incited the women to it and he boxed our ears with his open hand which was not very painful. We had just been sent away to our block, when we were called again because, as the commandant informed us the M.P. from Medan had arrived. We were ordered to line up the women who had been away. Thereupon the whole camp came to the office. The Japanese understood that not all women could have been guilty of disobeying the orders so that what they saw was but a demonstration. One of the Japanese got so furious, I cannot remember who it was, that he struck with the iron of a golf club on the head so that a little wound occurred that bled slightly. After about a quarter of an hour the women were dismissed but they protested when they saw that Mrs. EIKENS and I had to remain.

Again we were asked for the reason of the breaking out and our part in this, whereupon we naturally answered as before. Meanwhile, the second suspect struck me with his open hand about ten times in the face and stumped us on the back which was very painful. Then we got the order to write down all names of the guilty women and to send him this list next day. At about 3:30 o'clock in the night the nerve-racking show was over and totally exhausted we went to bed after we had asked all the block-leaders to write down the names of the women who lived in the camp. We took these lists at 7 am the next day, 27th to the commandant. There were all persons who had been present the evening before; also the block-leaders had been called. The latter were heard in different rooms by the M.P. and from everywhere we heard cries of pain, while Mrs. Eikens and I together with the block leaders whose turn had not come yet sat waiting in a room next to that in which first suspect together with the second suspect led the interrogation.

When I was sitting in the waiting room I heard that a certain moment that Sister Schuddeboom a nurse of about 50 years old, was treated so cruelly in the next room that I wanted to enter that room but was prevented by a few Japanese who guarded the open door. When I heard Sister Schuddeboom leaving I asked permission to enter and to be heard by the first suspect. When I entered I saw on the table at which both of the suspects sat, a curtain rod of about 1 m. long and $2\frac{1}{2}$ cm. thick which I supposed was used on Sister Schuddeboom. This on enquiry proved to be true. I protested severely against this maltreatment, whereupon first suspect said that further investigations would be stopped if we would plead guilty on our own accord.

been observed. About nine o'clock in the evening all were back again. Before this the first and second suspect had arrived with a Japanese whom we know by name of TOKASE. Mrs. Eikens and I were called in, whereupon the first suspect interrogated us with the assistance of an interpreter who spoke English. When we had told him the real cause of the breaking out, he accused us of having incited the women to it and he boxed our ears with his open hand which was not very painful. We had just been sent away to our block, when we were called again because, as the commandant informed us the M.P. from Medan had arrived. We were ordered to line up the women who had been away. Thereupon the whole camp came to the office. The Japanese understood that not all women could have been guilty of disobeying the orders so that what they saw was but a demonstration. One of the Japanese got so furious, I cannot remember who it was, that he struck with the iron of a golf club on the head so that a little wound occurred that bled slightly. After about a quarter of an hour the women were dismissed but they protested when they saw that Mrs. EIKENS and I had to remain.

Again we were asked for the reason of the breaking out and our part in this, whereupon we naturally answered as before. Meanwhile, the second suspect struck me with his open hand about ten times in the face and stumped us on the back which was very painful. Then we got the order to write down all names of the guilty women and to send him this list next day. At about 3:30 o'clock in the night the nerve-racking show was over and totally exhausted we went to bed after we had asked all the block-leaders to write down the names of the women who lived in the camp. We took these lists at 7 am the next day, 27th to the commandant. There were all persons who had been present the evening before; also the block-leaders had been called. The latter were heard in different rooms by the M.P. and from everywhere we heard cries of pain, while Mrs. Eikens and I together with the block leaders whose turn had not come yet sat waiting in a room next to that in which first suspect together with the second suspect led the interrogation.

When I was sitting in the waiting room I heard that a certain moment that Sister Schuddeboom a nurse of about 50 years old, was treated so cruelly in the next room that I wanted to enter that room but was prevented by a few Japanese who guarded the open door. When I heard Sister Schuddeboom leaving I asked permission to enter and to be heard by the first suspect. When I entered I saw on the table at which both of the suspects sat, a curtain rod of about 1 m. long and 2½ cm. thick which I supposed was used on Sister Schuddeboom. This on enquiry proved to be true. I protested severely against this maltreatment, whereupon first suspect said that further investigations would be stopped if we would plead guilty on our own accord.

I retorted sharply that the Japanese were guilty themselves, which outraged first suspect so much that he struck me about six times with the wooden curtain-rod so hard on my back, shoulders and neck that the stick broke. Meanwhile, the hearing of the block-leaders was finished and about six o'clock we were sent away with many insults. I had to be supported because I could not walk without help. My body ached everywhere, but the stroke on my back of my neck had been the most painful. Under ordinary circumstances I should have been unable to do my daily work for some days.

In the evening the Japanese called me again, but I sent the message that I was unable to walk and could not come. Early next morning, 28 November, 1944, Mrs. Eikens and I were again ordered to come to the Japanese office together with the ladies: J. Vijzelman, D. ~~ten~~ Bloemendaal, Netty Hoets, Mody Claser, Hetty van de Lee and J. Scharenguivel. When we were all present Mrs. Eikens and I were driven by car and the others by bus to the Penitentiary at Kaban Djahe. When we arrived there our coats and hairpins if we had any were taken away, whereafter we were locked up. Mrs. Eikens and I each in a very small cell and the others together in a large one.

My cell and, as I was told later, Mrs. Eikens' also, was without light or ventilation; the floor was moist with urine, which former occupants had left and the walls were smeared with faeces. Afterwards I heard that these cells were destined for lunatics on transit. There was no bed and we had no sanitary toilet. Next morning November 29, 1944 I was taken by the jailor (toekang koentji) from my cell and taken to a room in the outer building at the back of the prison. First and second suspects were present. I saw lying on the table all kinds of cudgols, belts and whips and on the floor was a coal-fire with irons. Seeing these objects I understood this to be the torture-chamber. Very little light came through the window.

Again first suspect asked me the same questions as before. Indicating the weapons he threatened me to torture if I kept refusing to plead guilty. Finally, when he found that even his sweet words failed to bring results he made me stand on a chair, after he had tied my wrists tightly together behind my back. He tied a rope which ran over a pulley, right over my head to the cord round my wrists and pulled at the other end until I could hardly reach the seat of the chair with the points of my toes. Each time he saw that I lowered somewhat in the joints of my shoulders so that I could get a little more support for the seat of the chair with the points of my toes he drew the rope a little higher. Meanwhile, he stood before me and asked if I would plead guilty. Each time when I replied: "Nippon salah" (the Japanese are wrong), he beat me with a rubber stick very hard on my back which he did more than ten times. /

After

After about ten minutes I shouted to him "Officier blanda tida tahoe ini matjen" (white officers do not behave like this), he suddenly let me go and the jerk caused me unbearable pain. Directly after this my nose bled profusely. Two Indonesian policemen were called and these men supported me back to my cell, giving evidence of their pity and disapproval. When I came to the cell, the jailer opened the door and this brute pushed me so hard in my back that I fell forwards on the dirty floor. I could not get up and lay there for a long time, totally numbed.

At about 9 o'clock I was again taken by the jailer to the torture-chamber. Again I was suspended, standing on the chair and again first suspect put the questions he had asked me innumerable times before. He did not beat me and after some time, somewhat shorter than in the morning, he let go the rope, meanwhile, the head of the M.P. had entered. He stood before me and in a fierce voice asked if I had anything to say about the Japanese officers. I replied that I had not referred to them, but to Netherlands officers, whereupon he slapped my face and ordered me to follow him to his office.

On arriving there he ordered a typewriter to be brought and ordered me to type out the names of the women who had been out of camp some days before. I told him that I was unable to do this because of the awful swellings on my hands and the unendurable pain in my arms and body. Then he told me to dictate the names to an Indonesian guard who was also present. As well as I could remember I dictated all the names of the women who lived in the camp with which I was occupied until 3 o'clock in the night, then I was taken back to the cell. For the first time since our arrival we got some food. Concerning me this consisted of precisely counted 72 grains of maize. This I cried out to Mrs. Eikens, who informed me in the same way that she had counted 78 grains. We got no water. Early next morning, November 30, 1944, I was taken out of my cell to the office of the head of the M.P. By use of second suspect, who acted as an interpreter, first suspect interrogated me about the same points as before, in the presence of the head of the M.P. and a certain TAKASE. They did not maltreat me. After some time I was told that they could have me shot as this was the punishment for escape according to international agreement. Thereupon, I was brought back to the cell and I saw Mrs. Eikens being taken away. She also told me afterwards that she had been condemned to death.

About an hour later we were put on a bus together with the other ladies and taken back to the camp. On arrival there we had to wait, standing before the guardroom of the heiho's. Mrs. Eikens and myself could not keep upright, broken as we were, and at last we were allowed to sit down on the grounds. About one hour later Mrs. Eikens and myself, also

/
Mrs.

Mrs. ten Bloemendaal and I were transported to a bungalow of the Anglo-Dutch, "the Benteng". The other prisoners were taken back to the camp. We were taken to a large room where we expected to be shot. We were placed with our faces to the wall, Mrs. ten Bloemendaal between Mrs. Eikens and me and with our hands crossed behind our backs. I remarked to my companions that "I do not like it", to which Mrs. ten Bloemendaal replied that she wondered why we were not crying. Then we heard that three Japanese entered and standing behind us opened the locks of their rifles. A fourth Japanese entered and roared at the soldiers in a theatrical way a command to fire so we thought. Waiting for the end and nothing happened. Mrs. ten Bloemendaal could not withhold her curiosity and looked secretly back. "They cannot fire, because the dustcoats are still on the barrels", she whispered. The fourth Japanese gave another command, a soldier struck us once, we were ordered to turn and taken to a room where we saw the block-leaders. Then the three of us were taken back to camp, from where we were daily taken to the "Benteng" to be heard on the declarations of the block-leaders who were kept there for several more days.

During one month I kept the black bruises on my neck, arms, back and thighs. During ten days I could not move my arms, nor use my hands. Other people had to wash me. It was quite impossible to do my work as I was exhausted. When Mrs. Eikens told her story, it appeared that because of the same stubbornness she had met with the same treatment. She had also black bruises which she showed me. During three weeks she could not do anything as a result of the ill-treatment.

Read aloud, presented to, approved of, persisted in and signed.

The sworn witness

Signed

A. E. PRINS

The Substitute Public Prosecutor

Signed: Mr. J. Beun
and for certified true copy.

DOCUMENT 5643

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENCEL, Captain R.N.I.A., head of War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed statement is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original Dutch document, entitled:

Sworn statement of Mrs. A. E. PRINS, nee Röhrborn, drawn up by W. BEUM, LL.D. Judge-advocate MEDAN, dated 24th December 1945, No. 2796/R,

which original document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

Batavia, August 28, 1946.

(S E A L)
(/s/ Ch. Jongencel)

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K. A. DE WEERD, LL.D., Major Artillery R.N.I.A., Senior Official attached to the office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

()
(S E A L)

No. 1
TeX 1772

Evidentiary Document 5646

書類五六四六號

證

余朝倉純孝余が和蘭語及び日本語精進せし書也
並ニ和蘭語原文及び日本語原文ヲ對照シテ右ノ書類
ヲ真実及ニ且 正確ニ翻譯セシメタルヲ確證セシムルニ
シテ

朝倉純孝

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Document 5646

書類第六四六号

證明書

下記署名、和蘭軍情報部戦犯課長、蘭印軍大尉
キール・ヨランダ・ス・シ・ス・正式宣誓上、添附陳述書
左記標題、原本全文、真正完全且正確ナル旨ニ
シテ、尚右原本、和蘭軍情報部公式記録一部十
半ヲ證言ス

記

元四五年、昭和三年、五月二十四日附、タノ・法務官法澤博士
キール・ヨランダ・ス・シ・ス・タノ・キール・ヨランダ・ス・シ・ス・未
今宣誓陳述書、第三九六号

元四五年、昭和三年、五月廿六日

於同ノ日ヤ

キール・ヨランダ・ス・シ・ス・署名

(蘭印軍情報部官印)

余、蘭領東印度根拠地總長事務局附同僚官、蘭印軍砲兵
少佐、法澤博士、キール・ヨランダ・ス・シ・ス・タノ・キール・ヨランダ・ス・シ・ス・未
於予署名、宣誓セリ

モ、ナ

No. 2

キール・ヨランダ・ス・シ・ス・署名

(タノ・キール・ヨランダ・ス・シ・ス・根拠地總長官印)

Document 5646

書類第五六四六号

證明書

下記署名、和蘭軍情報部戦犯課長 蘭印軍大尉
至「~~...~~」に先づ正式宣誓し、添附標本書
左記標題原本全文真正完全且正確ナル旨ニ
言明右原本、和蘭軍情報部公式記録一部十
筆ヲ證言ス

記

五四年昭和三年十月二四日附~~...~~法務官法廷博士
至「~~...~~」に依り作成セラルル一丁ノ文書ニ於て夫
レ宣誓標本書才三枚ナク

五四年昭和三年六月三日

於同夕日

ナリト云フニ署名

(蘭印軍情報部官印)

余蘭領東印度根事總長事務局附同官 蘭印軍砲兵
少佐法廷博士カー・デー・ウィルトン面前於て署名宣誓セリ
トス

No. 2

カー・デー・ウィルトン署名

(タロヤセトム根事總長官印)

大
さ
り
の
文
の

調書(寫本)

本日一九四五年十二月廿四日、月曜日、「メダ」地方裁判所代理檢察官法學士「ウエー、ビエー」の、面前ニ

「ア、エー、プリンス、ルポ」ニ

自身ニ出頭シ、多分「ドブツ」ト呼バシ、嫌疑者及心差当リ姓名ハ明カデナイガ「インドネシア」國籍ノ今一名、嫌疑者ニ對スル事件ニ付證人トシテ陳述セシトセリ。

證人ハ嫌疑者トハ血族關係或ハ婚姻關係ナク又ハ双方ニ對シ事務上ノ關係モナク、兩嫌疑者ガ其ノ行為ニ對シテ目下嫌疑ヲ受ケ居ル以前ニ兩嫌疑者ヲ知り居ル事ヲ言明セタル後證人ハ訊問ニ對シ次ノ如ク答ヘタリ。

貴下ノ姓名ハ何ト云ヒマスカ。

舊姓「ルポ」ニ「プリンス、アウスタ、エ、エ、エ、エ」

貴下ノ年齢ハ何歳デ貴下ノ職業ハ何デマスカ。

年、四十三歳ニ、職業ハ有リマセン。

何處ニ住居スルヤ。

是等、侵メ前ニ「カラ」ニ「ア、ガイ、ア、ア、ア」ガ「我」國名位ニ今ハ「メダ」マツケイ街ハ番地ニ居マシ證人ハ今後更ニ取調ベテ受ケルコト並キモト思

100

doc 5048

No. 4

考セラレテ以テ、端ニ彼女ハ彼女ノ宗教上ノ信念ニ基キ、
 人トシテ總テ、ト眞實ヲ陳述ス、眞實以外、トトヲ陳述
 セルコトヲ宣誓之訊問ニ對シテ、如何ニ答ヘタリ
 「予ハ之ヲ夫人ト妾トガ收容所管理者ノ役目ヲ引續キ
 持ツテ、廿一年四月九日、九月二日、日本人ガ妾達ニウシテ食
 物ハ並外シテ悪クナリマシタ。約二十月半ノ間妾達ハ
 砂糖モ脂肪モ世具ヘマセシテ、日本人カノ間イタテ、
 公ノ配給糧食ハ大人一人ニ對シテ毎日米ガ二百グラム、
 二百グラムアリマシタ。野菜ハ一人一日五十グラムアリ、
 實際ニハ大人ニ對シテ、約百四十グラム、子供ニ對シテ、約十
 グラム、米ガ與ヘラ、野菜ハ約二十グラム受ケマシタ。
 妾達ハ絶エズ、取扱ニ付テ日本人收容所長ニ苦情
 ヲ言ヒマシタガ其ノ効果ガアリマセシテ、予
 食料配給ヲ受持ツテ、丹ルニ官田中ト、會見ヲ我
 タタメ、考慮シテ、願キタト所長ニ願ヒマシタ。
 之カ所長ハソノコトハ我々ニ許サナイト言ヒマシタ。之
 カ之或ル日、田中ガ妾達ノ收容所ヲ見廻シタ時ニ、我々道
 ニ彼ニ話掛ケマシタ。田中ガ行ツテ、之ヲ非カラ、日本人、收
 容所長ハソノコトニツイテ、非席ニ不氣嫌ニツイテ、妾達三人
 ノ顔ヲ平午、不ヒドク博ツタ程ナシタ。收容所ガ食
 物不足付テ、不満ハ日ニ高マリマシタ。妾達、自今、妾達食
 料得ルガ為メ、收容所カラ出ルニ威嚇シマシタ。妾達、提案ヲ絶
 食示威運動ガ行ハルマシタ。ソノ予最モ瘦セタ、妾達

5086
dac

其、班長ニ連シラテ日本ノ準備隊ニ出カケラマシ
 其處ニ日本ノ指揮官ニ瘦ヤクヤ達ヲ見セシ
 彼、飢餓手段ノ結果ガトシテモ、自分ヲ元キリ解
 夕ニトクコウト言ツテヤリマシ。ソコニ安達ハ全收容
 所ノ長見トシテ公、配給食糧ヲ供給シテクシホコ
 安ホシマシ。指揮官ハ「メダシ」ニ行キ安達、急下
 ナリトカ出来ハカ確メテアルト約束ニシタリ。何
 ラノ改善モナカシメテ、安達、物ヲ交換テ外部、
 人カノ食糧ヲ得ルコトヲ許可シテクシト頼ミマシガ
 指揮官ヨツテ素氣ク拒絶セシマシ。此ノ状態
 十月ノ中頃トナリ、ソコニ不満ハ益々募リマシ。
 結局ハ避ケ難イモノアルトテ我々が了解シテ非常
 手段ヲ取テ期ニ爲メニ收容所、同居者ニ安達ガ
 脱出ヲスルニ先キ一九四四年十月二十五日迄行タ
 ト云コトヲ提議シマシ。此ノ自ニ改善ガ爲メ
 テアラウト云フ無駄ヲ希望ヲ抱イテマシ。テス。
 收容所ノ人々ハ我々ノ提案ニ従ヒマシ。ソコニ安
 達ハ再ビ指揮官ヲ尋ネタノテス。安達ハ十月
 二十日ニ急又ケルニトニテマシ。次ノ食糧配給場合
 改善ガナサレナリト同居者達ガ脱出スルニトテ
 防止スルコトガ出来ナイコトヲ彼ニ告ケマシ。

40.5

No. 6

直 = 疾 ヲ ヲ ヲ 彼 ハ コトヲ 事 件

直ニ 疾ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

云ク 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

ハ 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

曰 疾ニ 命ヲ 傳レ 疾ニ 命ヲ 比 命

5646

Doc

ちり、たの、妻達、收容所、お、行、い、つ、ま、の、ま、重
 の、ま、子、女、共、一、歸、つ、つ、と、頼、い、度、彼、等、の、我、の、重
 此、應、の、前、彼、等、の、自、分、は、事、果、々、と、答、え、
 とい、時、一、緒、に、去、り、日、本、人、兵、補、を、亦、何、殺、さ、ま、
 三、子、之、我、の、收、容、所、の、向、の、側、に、在、る、日、本、病、院
 三、院、出、行、列、を、見、て、下、の、お、ま、ま、と、か、病、院、の、カ、ン
 ン、の、憲、兵、隊、電、話、ヲ、カ、ケ、テ、下、の、後、子、の、カ、リ、マ、シ、其、
 の、到、り、時、頃、は、皆、者、の、又、元、ト、コ、ロ、へ、歸、り、マ、シ、
 第一、及、第二、嫌疑者、ト、カ、セ、ト、シ、テ、去、り、妻、達
 の、知、る、后、に、日、本、人、一、緒、に、到、着、き、居、り、し、ま、エ、
 々、と、婦、人、と、和、の、呼、び、出、サ、レ、マ、シ、ク、ソ、レ、カ、ラ、第
 一、嫌疑者、が、我、の、記、問、を、ソ、レ、の、時、ト、カ、
 の、通、譯、者、に、役、ヲ、サ、シ、記、録、ヲ、ト、リ、マ、シ、ク、之、女
 達、の、脱、走、を、至、り、本、意、の、理、由、ヲ、告、げ、
 後、彼、の、女、共、ヲ、三、の、云、つ、三、は、瀧、島、の、
 三、の、三、子、妻、達、ヲ、非、難、に、平、手、子、衛、門、の、
 三、の、三、子、ヲ、ナ、カ、リ、マ、シ、カ、シ、比、較、的、の、痛、ク、
 三、の、三、子、ヲ、ス、テ、度、妻、達、の、我、の、班、長、サ、シ、マ、シ、
 三、の、三、子、の、時、の、女、共、の、憲、兵、の、指、揮、官、の、我、の、
 三、の、三、子、通、り、に、到、着、き、し、三、子、妻、達、に、又、招、き、出、サ、シ、
 三、の、三、子、妻、達、の、脱、走、を、女、共、一、緒、に、五、の、三、の、命、を、
 三、の、三、子、收、容、所、全、部、者、の、事、務、所、へ、
 三、の、三、子、の、日、本、人、全、部、女、共、の、規、律、ヲ、犯、し、
 三、の、三、子、人、有、得、ず、テ、下、子、彼、等、に、與、り、テ、唯、主

MAC 5848

戒運動會下の三見報行知三指下の、其誰のの覺
下居りの日本中、人、不學の婦三下下りりり、金物、松
頭下博下三、以の爲下、負傷下僅、以の出與下、約十念
下、後下共、放棄下三多の彼等、下下りり又下人下事下後幾下下り
下又下三下知下、明下抗議下三下下り下三下下り下下り
又下下事達下、復出下、理由下三下事件下、其下事下達下、
別下下訊問下三下下下下り下前下、通下、送答下三下下り下
三第一嫌疑者下、平下事下事下、顔下、同一下打下事下三下
事達下、消下、奉園下打下事下下下大層痛下、以、下下りり、
事達下、有罪下、其下、全部下、姓名下、書下、出下、翌日下、人為事下、彼
三、送理下、其下、命下、之、下、衣下、三、竹半頭下、神經下、若下、之、丸、硬、鐵
三、終下、下、下、下、下、三、事達下、收容所下、居下、其下、全下、姓名下、書下、
出下、下、各下、班長下、依頼下、後、全下、痕下、切下、腹下、就下、
下、事達下、翌朝下、九、四、年、十、月、廿、日、凡下、下、年、前、下、町下、指、揮、
下、下、名、簿下、持下、下、下、下、下、下、六、前、日下、刻、出、席下、之、居下、各
員下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、各、班、長下、又、下、全、部下、招、出下、下、下、居下、
下、下、後、者下、幾下、下、別、室下、下、下、下、取、調下、之、下、下、下、
下、第一及下、第二、嫌疑者下、訊問下、行下、下、下、室下、下、
室下、下、下、順、番下、其下、下、班、長下、下、下、下、下、下、又、下、下、下、
下、腰、掛下、下、下、下、下、下、問下、到下、下、下、下、下、苦、痛下、下、下、下、

No. 1
其の待合室下、腰下、下、下、下、下、五十歳位下、看護婦下、
下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、
下、或、瞬間、下、下、下、下、下、其、室下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、
下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、下、

上衣や又若し持て居たり。イヤロシヲ取りエテラシム上リニハ極
禁サレタリ。又イヤシ又夫人ト妻トハ各々非常ニ小サシ獄房ニ入り、他
者ハ一楯ニ大キシ獄房ニ入リタリ。

妻ハ楯房モ正イタシ又夫人ハ楯房モ後々彼女ヲ聞イタリ言ハカ、米謀
志モ逆風定モ設備ニナシモテ、床ハ前任者ノ尿ヲ濡シテ居リマシク、
壁ハ糞ヲ汚シテ居リマシク。人カラ聞イタリテハ此等、楯房ハ移動中
ノ精神病者、為メ設備サレタモトシタリ。寢台モ亦々、大小便器モ有リマ
シマシク。翌朝、一九四四年十月二十九日、妻ハ楯房カラ看守ニ連れ出サレ
テ監獄ノ附属建物ノ中ノ一室ニ入ラセマシク、ソコハ第一ノ第三ノ嫌疑
者ガ居リマシク。妻ハテーブルトモ各種ノ棍棒、ベルト、及ビ鞭ガ置キ
アリ、床ハ煤爐トアイロント一楯ニ置イテアルヲ見マシク。種々ノ事情
カラ妻ハ拷問室ニ米々ト云フコトガ解リマシク。幾ツカ、非常ニ小サシ
窓カシカスガナ光線ガハイリマシク。

再ビ第一ノ嫌疑者ト從前ト同様ノ質問ヲ妻ニ尋ネマシク。彼ハ其
ノ改道具ヲ指シテ、若シ妻ガ有罪ヲ認ムルコトヲ拒絶シ續ケルカラハ
拷問スルト威嚇シマシク。結局、彼ガ彼ノ甘言ヲ以ツテシテモ、殆末ニ
到着スルコトニ失敗シタリトヲ知ツテ、妻ハ両手首ヲ一楯ニ私ハ其ノ堅ク
縛ツテカラ椅子ノ上ニ立タシマシク。

彼ハ踏車カラ私ノ頭ノ真上ニ下ツキ井ノ綱ヲ、私ノ手首ノ綱ニカタク
結ビツケマシク。ソシテ妻ハ是ノ指先ガ椅子ノ坐席ニ殆下ツキトガ出来ナク
上ニ返、高ク綱ノ他ノ一端ヲ引キマシク。妻ガ肩ノ関節ヲ幾分下げテ、私
ノ足ノ指先ガ椅子ニ着クヲ見ル毎ニ彼ハ少ツシ高ク綱ヲ引キマシク。此間
彼ハ妻ハ并前ニ立ツテ、有罪ヲ申シ立ツテ、ハ如何カト尋ネマシク。日本人ガ
向達シタリルコトト妻ガ答ヘル度ニ、彼ハ一本ノ護謨棒ヲ妻ノ背中ヲ

No. 10

十四日六天翌日ヲ擧ぐり。 尚下命出 御
御前 將校 三ノ下訂りしカ以テ 御
此公突然 妻ヲ離し之ヲノミ 其ノ 妻 御
其痛字ヲ。 三ノ直後 妻ノ自昇ルヲ 烈シク 御
マシ。 二人ノ下ホシテ 人ノ 巡査ガ 御
此之御 怨ト 非難ノ 甚情ニシテ 妻ヲ 又ノ 御
此之ヲクシマシ。 妻ガ 監房ノ 床ノ 妻ノ 御
中ノ 所々ガ コノ 殘心ノ 男ノ 妻ノ 御
ソガ 為メ 妻ノ 前ノ 入りニ 汚ノ 床ノ 上ニ 御
感嘗テ 失シテ 長時間 横タシテ 井ノ
夜ノ 時頃、 妻ノ 鼻ノ 者ヲ 三ノ 携内 御
シ。 妻ノ 各 椅子ニ 上リテ 高ク 御
第六ノ 疑者ノ 以前 告知ノ 程何 回ニ 御
私ニ 無 疑ニ 云シマシ。 彼ノ 今度 妻ヲ 御
朝ノ 時ヨリ 三ノ 疑命 短時間 後 調ヲ 放シ 御
憲兵 隊長ガ 入ツテ マシ。 彼ノ 悪意 御
日本ノ 將校ニシテ 何ノ 言ヲカト 御
將校ニシテ 六ノ 和蘭 將校ニシテ 言ヲ 御
ハシ。 御
ソノ 時 彼ノ 平年ノ 顔ニ 打彼 德ニ 彼 妻 御
命ニシテ 言ノ 御 意ニシテ 彼ノ 言ヲ 御
奉ル 命ニシテ 數日 前 收 命 御 命ニシテ 御
命ニシテ 命ニシテ 命ニシテ 命ニシテ 御

alac 5646

い程掃くちソナニトハ出来ナト答ハミタ。
彼ハソコニソコニ井タノイトホシテ人ノ書記ニ姓名ヲ口授
セト妻ニ命ジタシタ。妻ハ收容所ニ住テ居タリ、
女共ノ名前ヲ出来ルタケニ男ニABC順ニ口授シタ。
ソコテ妻ハ其ノ衣ハ約三時迄カ、リタシタ。ソコテ
監房ニ戻ルタシタ。

妻達ハ此処到着シテカウ始メテ若干ノ食物ヲ貰ヒ
タ。妻タケ、ソコテスガコノ食物ハ玉蜀黍ヲ出来テ井テ
正確ニ算ルルト七十二粒シタ。ソコテ妻ハ子生ニ
大人ニ聲高ク叫ビタシタ。

「子生ニ夫ハ同様に、コトヲ彼女ノ監房カウ妻ニ知
ラセ七十八粒ヲ算ルルタト云ヒタシタ。妻達ハ水ヲ貰
ヒマセシタ。翌日早朝、一九四四年一月三日、

妻ハ監房カウ憲兵隊長ノ室ニ連シラレタシタ。
通譯、役シタ第一ノ嫌疑者ヲ通シテ第一、
嫌疑者ハ憲兵隊長ト高瀬音詮ト云フ者、
面前ニ、以前ト同要索ニ付テ訊問シタシタ。

其時彼等ハ妻ヲ定伴シセシタシタ。暫時シテ彼等
ハ妻ヲ射殺スルコトガ出来ルコトヲ己ノ國際協定ニ依リテ
脱出ニ対スル罰(以下省略)

No. 12

5646

デアルト言ヒシタ。ソコテ妾、監房ニ連シ戻サシタ。デスガ「アイトニス」
夫人外連シテニカシル、ヲ見コシタ。彼、妾ハ死刑ノ宣告ヲ受ケタト後
テ妾ニ告ケシタ。

一時間バカリ、後妾連シ他ノ夫人連ト一編「バス」ニ乗セテテ收容所
連シ戻サシタ。到着スルト、妾連ハ「兵補」ノ控室、亦ニ立ッテ待
タケルハナリマセシタ。アイトニス夫人ト妾自身ハ身作ヲ痛ムテ居
タテ、眞直ニ立ッテ井ルコトガ出来セシタ。ソレヲ遂ニ地上ニ生ルニキ
許サシタ。約一時間、後「アイトニス」夫人「デニブルメン、ガール」

夫人及妾ハ、英蘭人、バニガロ「保監」ニ移サシタ。他ノ捕ニシ
タ夫人ヲテ收容所ニ連シ戻サシタ。妾連ハ大キイ室ニ入ラシ
メシタ。ニテ射殺サレルモ、ト豫期シテ居リシタ。妾連ハ壁ニ面シ
置キ「デニブルメン、ガール」夫人ハ「アイトニス」夫人ト妾ト、同テシタ。ソ
レ妾連ノ身ハ、私連ノ背後ヲ組マシメシタ。妾ハ同僚ニ「結局妾ハ

運ガ悪クシト云ヒシタ。デニブルメン、ガール夫人ハ「我々が一応モ
泣キカクタ、ハ不思議ト答ヒシタ。ソノ室ヲ妾連、後ニ立ッテ井
三人、日本兵ガ銃ノ安全辨ヲ開ケタリ外シタリスルヲ聞キシタ。
第四人目、日本人ガ入ッテ妾連、思ッテヤラニソノ兵士ニ向ッテ

居シマ様子ヲ発砲ノ号令ヲ大声デカケシタ。最後ヲ待タシタ
ガ何事モ起リマセシタ。「デニブルメン、ガール」夫人ハ好奇心ヲ抑
ルコトガ出来ズ、視カニ振リカヘテ見シタ。彼等発砲出来マセシタ。
除ガマタ銃身ニ附イタス、テスリラト彼女ハ我々ニ尋キマシタ。

第五人目、日本人ヲ一度擲キマシタ。妾連ハ向ッテ、ハルヤラ命也
ニシテ一室ニ連シテカシタ。ソコテ妾連ハ班長連ヲ見カケシタ。
ソコテ妾連三人ハ收容所ニ連シ戻サシ、ソノカラ殆ニト毎日ト亦然

No. 13

C. # 1773

DOCUMENT 5716

Page 1
0

A F F I D A V I T

Today, Friday 25th April 1946, there appeared before myself:
 Evert van Essen, 1st Class Inspector of Police in the Netherlands Indies,
 Member of the Netherlands War Crimes Investigation Team,
 at: Neo Soon Camp at Singapore
 a person who, on enquiry, declares himself to be:
 Name: AMIR BIN SARODIN
 Civilian Occupation: Farmer.
 Address: Neo Soon Camp, Singapore.
 Future Address: Mandailing, Padang Sidempoean.
 (Sibolga Residency).
 Age: 21

5. Can you give any information concerning acts of violence committed against yourself or others, which you have witnessed?

After the capitulation of the Netherlands Indies, I worked as a farmer at Mandailing, Padang Sidempoean.

One day in the year 1942, I cannot remember the exact date, whilst I was sitting at a wayside stall having a drink, I was suddenly arrested by Japs, put on a lorry with three other coolies and taken to Sibolga. From there I was taken to Tandjong Balai, where I received training to become a carpenter. Since the food was so bad and we were suffering from hunger, after half a year, I along with ten others managed to escape to Belawan Deli. There I was recaptured and taken to Singapore as a coolie. At Singapore, Tandjong Pagar, I again received a three months' training in rope-making and ferrying Indian boats (tongkangs). Instruction was given by two Japanese instructors named: Funatshu and Tiutiia. One day they were angry because f.500 was alleged to have been stolen. Each took off a rubber shoe, and then all the pupils, - about 150, - were beaten. I, too, was hit several times with the shoe in my face by Funatshu, so that I had a great deal of pain and got a very swollen face. Furthermore, we had to remain kneeling from 3 o'clock in the afternoon until midnight.

.....

VERIFICATION BY THE WITNESS

I, the undersigned Amir bin Sarodin, mentioned above, hereby declare that I was led in and heard on oath by the interrogator, who informed me that the oath taken by me was still binding upon me, and having heard my above sworn statement read to me in my native language and shown to me, I declare that it is a true and accurate statement.

Neo Soon Camp 26th April 1946

The witness abovenamed:

Sd/ Amir bin Sarodin

The above statements have been signed in my presence and this official record has been truly drawn up and subsequently signed by myself, the interrogator.

On 26th April 1946 at Neo Soon Camp, Singapore

The abovenamed interrogator:

Sd/ E. van Essen

certified a true copy:

Head of the Netherlands War Crimes Investigation Team Singapore:

Sd/ J. G. Benders.

DOCUMENT 5716

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned, CHARLES JONGENEEL, Captain R.N.I.A., Head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed Dutch documents, entitled :

Affidavit of AMIR bin Sarodin, coolie, dated 26 April 1946.

concerning illtreatment of "romusha" (forced coolies) by the Japanese authorities in the coolie-camps in Malaya and neighborhood,

have been taken from the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE :

Sd/ Ch. Jongeneel

BATAVIA, 23 July 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K.A. de WERD, LL.D., first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Senior Official attached to the Office of the Attorney - General, N.E.I.

Sd/ K. A. de Werd

NO 1 EK 1773

Evidentiary Doc 5716

證明書

下署名者、和蘭軍情報部戦犯課長、蘭印軍
大尉「キールス・ヨングネー」は先づ正式宣誓の上
「身兼」及びその附近、苦々宿舎ニ於テ日本官憲(憲兵)
「勞務卷」(強制労力)虐待ニ関スル一九四六年(昭和
三十年)四月二十六日附言カスミルビニ、世「不」之、宣
誓口供書

ト題ニ添テ所蘭語文書、和蘭軍情報部、公文記
録ヨリ取リタルモノトシテ證言ス

署名「キールス・ヨングネー」

一九四六年首年言「ハタダヤ」

余、蘭印檢事總長事務局附、高等會
蘭印軍中尉法學博士「K.A.マウエー」ト、
面出則ニ於テ署名、宣誓ス

「K.A.マウエー」ト(署名)

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5716

宣誓口供書

本日一九四六年/昭和二十一年/四月二十日、金曜日、新嘉坡
 社ニ入リニキヤンプニ於テ、余、即チ和蘭對爭犯、非
 調査團員、蘭印一級警視「エニルト、フアニ、エツセニ、
 面刑ニ名、去名去頭セリ、而シテ同ノハ、評用ニ對シテ
 如ク言明セリ、

姓名 アニール、ビニ、サロテニ

職業 農夫

住居 新嘉坡「エニルト」ニキヤンプ

住居 新嘉坡「エニルト」ニキヤンプ

出生地 同前

年令 十六

五、君自身又、他、者ニ對シテ行ヒテ、自來行行為ニ
 テ思ガ目撃シテモ、何ノ情報ヲ誌セザル。

蘭領東印後降伏後、私ハ「エニルト」ニテ「エニルト」
 於テ農夫トシテ働キテ居ル。

一九四三年/昭和十七年、或日、私ハ「正確」日時、思
 七五七ニモガ、私ガ「踏傍」屋官店ニ「腰掛ケテ」一杯
 飲テサルト、私ハ突然日本人達ニ「逮捕」ヤ、他、
 三人、苦カト共ニ「台」貨物自動車ニ「乗」セ、「ホ」ル
 ニ「連」テ行カレタ、デス。

其処カラ私ハ「エニルト」ニ「連」テ行カ、其処テ私
 ハ「鐵」工ニ「成」ル「習」業ヲ「受」テ、私ハ「食物」ガ「非」常ニ「悪」ク「我」ガ
 「餓」ニ「苦」テ「居」テ「機」會ヲ「見」テ、其処テ「十」名ト共ニ「半」年後ニ
 私ハ「再」ビ「逃」ル「機」會ヲ「見」テ、其処テ「十」名ト共ニ「半」年後ニ
 新嘉坡「探」テ、苦カト「新」嘉坡「送」ラレタ、及
 何物「探」テ、苦カト「新」嘉坡「送」ラレタ、及
 郵津(音訳)及ビ土屋(音訳)ト云フニ一人

No. 2

Doc 5716

宣誓口供書

本日一九四六年（昭和二十一年）四月二十六日、金曜日、新嘉坡
 社会主義（共産主義）に於て、余、即ち和蘭戦争犯罪非
 調査団員、蘭印一級警視「エーニルト、ファン、エッセ」
 面会刑三名、去官去頭セリ、而して同人の評由ニ對シテ
 如ク言明セリ、
 姓名 アミール・ビン・サロテニ
 職業 農夫
 住居 新嘉坡「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」
 將來住居 「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」
 出生地 同前
 年令 二十一才

五、君自身又、他ノ者ニ對シテ行ハルイザ暴行行為ニ
 テ君が自警シタモノニ関シ何モ情報ヲ語ラズ、
 蘭領東印度降伏後、私ハ「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」ニ
 リニ於テ農夫トシテ働イタリ、
 一九四三年（昭和十七年）或日、和、正確、日時、思
 ヒセマセニ、私が懸停ノ屋台店ニ腰掛ケテ一杯
 飲シタルト、私ハ突然、日本人達ニ逮捕サレ、他ノ
 三人、苦力ト共ニ台ノ貨物自動車ニ乗セテ「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」
 ニ連テ行カレタデス。
 其処カラ私ハ「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」ニ連テ行ケル、其処テ私
 ハ「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」ニ習業ヲ受ケタリ、食物ガ非營ニ悪ク、我
 ハ「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」ニ居タリ、私ハ彼ノ十名ト共ニ半年後ニ
 「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」ニ逃ゲル機會ヲ見附ケタリ、其処テ
 私ハ再び「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」ニ連テ行ケル、
 新嘉坡「ア・ス・ニ・キヤニア」ニ連テ行ケル、
 何物船操縦ノ習業ヲ受ケタリ、
 船津（音訳）及び土屋（音訳）ト云フ二人、

No. 2

Doc 5716

日本人小學校 先生カラ教テ受テマシタ。或日 五。前記
マシタカノ理由、彼等が非常ニ怒リマシタ。兩人共是
ノ護謨靴ヲ脱キ、ソノカラ金生徒一約百五十人が毆打
サシマシタ。私モ亦、船津ニ靴ヲ履テ数回叩カシタノ事、
大妻ト痛ミテ感シ、顔ガ大妻腫シマシタ。更ニ我々八年
后三時カラ真夜中迄跪イテテラマシタナリマシタ。

本證人ニ依ル證明

私ノ署名、前記「アミル・パン・サロ」ノ訊問者ニ案内被シ宣
誓、上訊問セラルルニテ前記言明ス。而シテ同訊問者、私
ノ心ニ宣誓ガ尚亦私ヲ拘束スルモノナル旨私ニ告知
セリ。且又私ノ前記宣誓陳述ガ私ノ母國語ニテ私ニ通
讀セラルルヲ聞キ又私ニ提示セラルル上、私ノ之ガ眞実
且正確ナル陳述ナルコトヲ言明ス。

一九四六年四月二十六日 「ネエヌー・キヤン」

前記證人(署名) 「アミル・パン・サロ」

前記陳述書、余ノ面前ニ於テ署名セラルルモノニテ本調書
ノ余自身即チ訊問者ニ依リ眞実ヲ製セリ、然後署名セラルル事ナリ。

一九四六年四月二十六日 新嘉坡「ネエヌー・キヤン」

前記訊問者(署名) 「エ・ア・エ・ツヤン」

謄本正確ナルヲ證明ス。

新嘉坡和蘭戰爭犯罪調査團長

(署名) 「J. G. ヴンデルス」

N03

Q. #1174

Doc. No. 5625

Page 1.

CERTIFICATE

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, Captain R.M.I.A., Head of War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed statement is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original Dutch document entitled:

Sworn statement of L.G.FEMELS, drawn up by W.Beun, LL.D., judge-advocate MED/N, dated 20th December 1945,

which original document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

Signature:

Charles Jongeneel

(Seal)

Batavia, August 28, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de Weerd, LL.D., Major Artillery RNI, Senior Official attached to the office of the Attorney-General, N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

(Seal)

OFFICIAL WRIT

Copy

OM/8270/S

This day, Thursday, the 20th of December, nineteen hundred and forty-five, appeared before me, Mr. F. Raun, Substitute Public Prosecutor at the Court of Justice at Medan, the person of

L. G. EMMELS,

to be heard as a witness in the criminal procedure against some suspects, not yet known by name.

After the witness has declared not to have known the fore called suspects before the commitment of the deed, of which they are now suspected, not to be related to them in blood or in law and not to be in any way employed by them, witness answers the questions put to him as follows:

What are your name and Christian name? ---- EMMELS, LEONARDUS, GERARDUS.

How old are you and what is your profession? ----- 52 years, office clerk of Civil Administr.

Where do you live? ----- Before the invasion I lived at 38 Palistraat at Medan; Now 48 Poloniaweg, Medan.

As it is thought that the witness will not appear at further investigations he now swears the oath, according to his religious conviction, that as a witness, he will speak the whole truth and nothing but the truth and answers put to him as follows:

.....

On February 17, 1943 my wife and I were awakened at about three a.m. by some M.P. soldiers. They tied our hands behind our backs and we were taken to the H.V.A. building, where we were locked up in a large cell together with quite a number of others. After about a quarter of an hour I was fetched from the cell and questioned by a Japanese officer in a room on the upper story. I had to kneel down, with my arms still bound. I later heard this officer was the second in command of the M.P. at Medan.

.....

Because of this denial I was reportedly heavily beaten with a leather belt and rattan canes by the officer and the soldiers in turn. Meanwhile they kept asking me whether I would confess, but I persisted in answering that I had nothing to confess. Furthermore they said that the previous day, (February 16) I had been to meetings on a "ladang" (rice field) and in kampong Sidedadi (behind the Eux-clinic), and also that I had a ring as a recognition mark. I kept on answering in the negative to all this and they continued to beat me. To my idea this lasted for several hours.

.....

Immediately afterwards I was taken to a bathroom in the servant's buildings by the officer and the interpreter. With my hands tied behind my back they laid me on my back and tied my feet together. They put a rope around my neck which was in some fashion fastened to my arms, so that, I felt throttled whenever I moved my arms. They put a cloth over my face, after which they directed a stream of water on my nose and mouth. The officer held my head against the wall with his foot and every time I was nearly choking and endeavoured to free myself, the interpreter held me down with his foot on my abdomen. The cloth was removed now and then and they asked me whether I would confess. When I said "no," the cloth was put back on my face and the treatment started again. When this had been repeated 8 or 9 times I could not possibly stand it any longer and said I would own up. I was completely worn out after all this torture.

.....

The cell was overcrowded, we were guarded by Japanese soldiers and were not allowed to talk together. My wife was also present, but I could establish no contact with her. Only with Moosa, who lay next to me I was able to converse in whispers for a moment. I told him that I had admitted the charges as a result of the tortures I had undergone. The woman who had alleged knowing me in the first place, was also in that cell. At my question Moosa informed me that it was his daughter-in-law, "Annie." As I was desperate about the course of affairs and was terrified that I should be forced falsely to accuse others, the idea of suicide came into my head. From a pair of spectacles that happened to be lying next to me, I managed to detach one glass, wherewith I endeavoured to cut my throat. I remember hearing my wife screaming and that the glass was knocked from my hand. I felt the blood streaming from the wound I had inflicted on myself and must then have lost consciousness. I came to in the Municipal Hospital where the wound in my throat in the meantime had been treated by Dr. Pringadi. He also bandaged the wounds on my back in the region of my right side and diagnosed a contusion of the spine and swelling of the liver. Through this contusion I could not sit upright. Dr. Pringadi literally said: "They had better have killed you, old man!"

.....

I saw that Mrs. Kol van Kluijver returned with a broken lower jaw from her ill-treatment at the I.P. office. She told me, that she had been beaten by OKUDA, because she had placed crosses on the European church-yard at Maden.

Read aloud, presented to, approved of, persisted in and signed.

The witness.

Signed

L.G. EMELS

The Substitute Public Prosecutor.

Signed and certified a true copy

Mr. W. Deun.

EXHIBIT NO. 1324A Doc 5625

証 書 (寫本)

本日、即ち一九四五年ノ陽曆二十年ノ十二月二十
日、本館員「メダソン」氏萬國代表理事タル余、
法學士「ウエイ。ベヘー」ノ面前ニ延命未詳ノ真
實ノ各様者ニ對スル刑罰訴訟ニ於テ証人トシテ認
知スル事「エ。ヘ。エンメンス」ナル者出頭セ
リ。

証人ハ公衆ガ現ニ加被ヲ受ケラレタル行為ノ進行
以前ニハ前記各様者知ラザリシコト、直接ニ於
テモ續續ニ於テモ自認ナキコト、又續續ト職務上ノ
行為モナキコトヲ宣誓シタル後左ノ如ク証ニ對スル
証言ニ答答ス

余ノ氏名「エ。ヘ。エンメンス」ノ時ノ居住ハ何カ。「エ。ヘ。エンメ
ス。レ。オ。ナル。テ。ウス。ヘ。ラル。テ。ウス」

余ガ年令及職業ハ何カ。近丁二歳内海軍行政委員長
ニ任ズ。前長官「エ。ヘ。エンメンス」ノ「メダソン」。「ボロニア」街
ニ住ス。前長官「エ。ヘ。エンメンス」ノ「ボロニア」街

証人ハ余同目録ニ出頭セサルコトノ想像サ
ルルニ任リ、余ハ其ノ罪状ニ對シテ罪念ニ據リ、彼ハ証
人トシテ、全眞實ヲ語リ而シテ眞實以外ニハ何事モ
語ラズトノ宣誓ヲナシ、彼ニ對スル証言ニ左ノ如ク
答答ス。

RECEIVED
FBI
TO ROOM 367

Doc 5625

2.

一九四三年／昭和十八年／二月十七日私ノ發
 秘ハ午前三時頃若干ノ兵及平給ニ付ビ起サレタ。
 秘ハ皆タヲ行寺ニ結シタ。私ハ一ハ。ウエ。
 アハ。一ビルラングニ引致サレタ。其處テ皆々ハ
 積當トノ他ノ人々ト夫ニ穴キナ御上ニ監察サレタ。
 約十五分ハ、私ハ其御上カラ退出サレテ階上ノ一室
 於テ私ハ瓦礫ヲ結ラレタ儘記イテ日誌ヲ使ニ訊問サ
 レタ。私ハ後ニナツテ此ノ御上ハ一メダシニ兵隊
 ノ第二位ノ人デアルニ通イナイコトヲ聞イタ。一一一
 私ハ此ノ番達ヲナシタノテ兵隊ヲ其御上及兵
 平給ニ交互ニ見回モラレタ。其間私ガ自狀スルカ
 言カト私ハ訊問シ知ケタ。然シ私ハ何ガ自狀スベ
 キコトガ無イト引致キ執言シタ眞ニ彼等ハ其前日（
 二月十六日）午後、私ガ蔭箱ヲ又一ツドダテ一村
 テ（一エソマニ積院ノ後ノ）にサレタ宗倉へ行ツタ
 秘ヲ管メマツタ。又私ガ認取トシテ強盗ヲ所請シ
 テ居タコトヲ越ベタ。私ハ之氣ノ訊問ニ對シテ番定
 ノ卷ヲ知ケタ。ソコテ私氣ハ結シテ私ヲ打ツタ。
 私ノ感ジテハ此ノ事ハ其時同知知シタト思フ。一一一
 其ノ後テ直グニ私ハ、其ノ士官ヤ刺殺ニ進レラレテ
 附屬製藥廠ノ浴室へ行ツタ。私ノ両手ヲ背後ニ縛シ

Doc 56225

3.

多色、袋の私を傳へて私に歸せ私ノ下ニ歸ラシム。
 私ハ歸ラ私ノ真ニ行キツケタ。ソレハ何カノヤ
 リ方テ私ノ下ニ歸サレテ居タノテ百圓ヲ助カス度
 ニ與ラシムル私ニ應ジタ。私ハ私ノ心ニ荷片ヲ持
 ケタ。其後彼等ハ私ノ孔ヤ口ニ水ヲ注イダ。士官
 ハ片足テ私ノ下ニ歸シケタ。私ガ箱ニシテ息
 シカカツテ身体ヲ自由ニシヨウト努メル度等ニ表
 記ハ片足テ私ノ下ニ歸セテ私ヲ抑ヘツケタ。荷片
 ハ時折リ取リ歸ケラレタ。ソシテ私ニ白欺スルカド
 ウカト云ネタ。私ガ管定ノ管ヲナシタ時ハ荷片ガ心
 ニ歸ケラレ、此ノ度ガ又更ニ始マツタ。是ガ種カ
 八。丸島長細サレタ時ニハ私ハ急早ソレニ歸エルコ
 トガ出来ナクナツタ。ソコテ私ハ自決スルト管ヘタ。
 私ハ此ノ河間ノ私ハ身体ガ益ク衰弱シタ。！！！！
 ！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！！
 監房ハ起テ長テアツタ。管及ハ日必兵衛ニ歸サレ
 去ニ歸ルコトガ許サレナカツタ。私ノ妻モ監房ハセ
 タ。私ハ私ハ彼女ト結婚ラスルコトガ出来ナカツタ。
 唯私ノ隣リニ居テキタムサレ一守小屋テ監ルコ
 トカ出来タ。私ハ加エラレタ河間ノ管果トシテ鼻ニ
 脹シタト私ニ記ツタ。第一ニ私ヲ知ツテキルト斷言
 シタ女モ其ノ監房ニ居タ。ムサレ四歳ネタ處、ソ
 レハ彼ノ義理ノ娘ノ「ア」ニ「ア」テアルト管エタ。
 私ハ此ノ處リ行キニ歸シテ絶望的トナツタ。又他人

Doc 5625

ヲ發售スルコトヲ知ヒラレルコトヲ恐レタノ事
 知ラシヨウト云フ事ガ浮ンダ。信然ニ私ノ際リニ
 事ヲ幸々一割ノ上程カラ、片方ノレンズヲ取リ
 ハズスコトガ出来タ。ソレヲ以テ私ハ上臆ヲ切ラ
 ウト努メタ。私ハ昔ノ泣キ聲ゾ長ガ同エタコトヤ
 婦子ガ昔等カラ打撃サレタ事モ知エテキル。自カ
 ラノ事ヲ知ヘタ他口カラ血ノ流レ出ルノヲ感ジタ。
 ソコテ私ハ正氣ヲ失ツタニ知イナイ。私ハ市立病
 院へ來タ。ソシテ區ニ「ブリンガテイ」醫師ノ手
 テ咽喉ノ傷口ガ手管サレタ。醫師ハ背巾ノ右側ニ
 アル血ノ痕ヲ見シタ。醫師ハ又背巾ノ打撲傷ヤ肝
 臓ノ打撲ヲ斷シタ。私ハ背巾ノ血ノ打撲傷ノタ
 メニ、私ハ正氣スルコトが出来ナカッタ。「ブリン
 ガテイ」醫師ハ血ノ痕ニ文字類リ次ノヨウニ
 書ツタ。「オイ君、日本長崎ハ君ヲ殺シテ呉レタ
 ラ真カッタノニト。」「……………」
 ………………
 私ハ「アソクライベ」夫人ガ長電ヲ待テ歸來
 下アゴヲ打撃カレテ血ツテ來ルノヲ見タ。夫人ハ
 彼女ガ「メダン」ノ以テ人惡地ニ十字架ヲ立テサ
 セタト云フ理由ヲ問フ事タレタト私ニ語ツタ。

切斷シ、提示シ、認定シ、主張シ、而シテ署名ス。

代理人ヨル。へ。エンメルス君
 代理律師若君 長正ノ爲メナルコトヲ立証ス
 ウエ。ベエーン

Doc 5625 (cont)

監 賜 書

下記右名ノ部員軍報部員總隊長、前印軍大尉
「チャールズ。ヨングネール」ハ先ヅ正式ニ宣旨ノ
上、添附ノ原通書ハ左記如クノ原本全文ノ真正、完
全且正在ナル爲シニシテ、何右原本ハ和信軍報部員
ノ公式誌ニノ一部ナルコトヲ記書ス。

記

一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ十二月二十日附、「メ
ダン」ニ於テ宣旨、公与博士、「ウエイ。ベエー」
ニ依ツテ作成セラレタル「エル。ベ。エムメル」
ノ宣旨原通書

一九四六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ八月二十八日

於「バタビヤ」市

「チャールズ。ヨングネール」
（前印軍報部員印）

余、前東京印度兵總隊長兼務局附、高倉官、前印
軍總兵少佐、公与博士「カー。アー。ドウ。ウエイ
ルト」ノ目前ニ於テ右宣旨セルモノナリ。

「カー。アー。ドウ。ウエイルト」
（バタビヤ。セントルム軍報部長官印）

Doc 5625 (cont)

証 書

下記者名ノ和紙印身情報部員総隊長、前印年大尉
「テヤールス。ヨンゲネール」ハ先ツ正式ニ宣言ノ
上、添附ノ際適量ハ左記如クノ原本全文ノ真正、完
全且正ナル寫シニシテ、何右原本ハ和紙印身情報部
ノ公式記号ノ一部ナルコトヲ記言ス。

記

一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ十二月二十日附、「メ
ダン」公法官、和紙博士、「ウエイ。ペーション」
ニ依ツテ作成セラレタル「エル。ケ。エムメルス」
ノ宣紙如ク

一九四六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ八月二十八日
於「スタビヤ」市

テヤールス。ヨンゲネールノ
(和紙印身情報部官印)

余、和紙印身情報部員総隊長秘書局附、高等官、和紙
専修長少佐、和紙博士「カー。アー。ドウ。ウエイ
ルト」ノ目前ニ於テ右記宣紙セルモノナリ。

カー。アー。ドウ。ウエイルトノ
(スタビヤ。セントルム専修長官印)

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CARLES JONGENVEL, first lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true and complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

* Sworn report on atrocities committed by the Japanese M.P. at Sibolga, made by A. SUYKER, Superintendent of Police 1st Class, Assistant Public Prosecutor, dated 24 December 1945, signed SUYKER". 011/8057/S.

authentic copy of which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE

BATAVIA, June 7th 1946.

— SEAL

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K.A. De WEERD, first lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

PRO JUSTITIA

SUBJECT: Report on atrocities committed by the Japanese M.P. at Sibolga.

REPORT

The undersigned, A. Suyker, before the Japanese occupation, a Police Superintendent 1st class, Superintendent of the Country Police, and at the same time, Chief of the Residency preventive force, in the Residency of TAPANOEI, stationed at SIBOLGA, hereby declares to have suffered the following ill-treatment at the hands of the Japanese Sibolga Military Police personnel.

On 4 Aug. 1943, I was fetched from the SOENGEI SENGKOL Internment Camp in a car by the Commander and Sub-commander of the Sibolga M. P.

That night I was detained at the prison at MEDAN. Upon arrival at SIBOLGA on 5 August, I was locked up in the pantry of the E.M.S. Manager's house, then the M.P. office. This pantry had been rebuilt into a detention room. I was given a pillow and a mat. In the morning of the 7th of August I was interrogated by a M.P. Sergeant, who was assisted by a Japanese Interpreter who spoke Malay well. The M.P. wanted to know what secret instructions (perintah rahasia) had been passed on by me to the Native members of the Civil Service and to Police officials and to the Assistant Wedana of Police, active with the Residency preventive forces, before the Japanese occupation.

Furthermore they wanted to know for which secret reason (maksud rahasia) our army in SULTRA had made practically no resistance during the invasion of the Japanese Army, and also in which places our army had left secret radio-transmitters. I was considered to know this data.

As I answered these questions put to me in the negative the Japanese Sergeant, struck me a blow with the flat of his hand in my face, whereupon I stood up to ward off the next blow. Now this sergeant tried to throw me on the floor by means of pulling me at the collar of my shirt and lifting me over his hip, in which he did not succeed. He then ordered me to squat, at the same time holding a heavy arm-chair with stretched arms above my head. When I succeeded in doing so for some moments the Japanese interpreter pushed the chair, resulting in one of the legs hitting my face, and causing a heavy bleeding wound off the right jaw bone. A scar is still visible at the moment. Furthermore the interpreter kicked me on my right shinbone, causing a wound. As I was not strong enough to keep the chair above my head, the Sergeant thrashed me with a piece of rope and subsequently with a wide leather belt. After this I was brought back to my cell; my wounds were not given any attendance at all.

On Sunday 8 August in the morning, I was again interrogated by the same Sergeant interpreter. I was asked the same questions which I again answered in the negative. Hereupon I was ordered to strip. Both the Japanese also undressed except for their pants. In the bathroom my hands were tied on my back, whereas my feet also were tied just above the ankles. After being stretched out on my back, the Sergeant placed himself with his bare feet on my thighs, so as to prevent my turning over. A piece of cloth was then put on my face, after which the interpreter assisted by another M.P. Sergeant, who, in the meantime had entered the bathroom, commenced to continuously pour water on my head with a small bucket. During this illtreatment, called "Mandie" by the Japs, the Sergeant standing on my thighs, pressed my swollen belly with his foot, several times, as a result of which I vomited water and also food. Owing to the grating over the ribbed tiles, my elbows and knees were badly chafed and the skin stripped off. The above mentioned illtreatment continued until there was a knock on the bathroom's door probably from the M. P. Sub-commander. Hereupon my hands and feet were loosened and I was ordered to lie down on the tiles of the open back veranda of the M.P. office, entirely naked, and in full view of the natives present.

After a quarter of an hour (shivering on account of the cold) I was ordered to dress and was brought back to my cell. The wounds resulting from this illtreatment were not attended to.

On Tuesday, 10 August, I was again given the same treatment in the bathroom by the interrogating Sergeant with the assistance of the Japanese interpreter.

When I informed them in the course of this illtreatment of an instruction effected by the Assistant Medana before the Japanese occupation, my feet were untied and I was taken to the room in which I had been interrogated, my hands still tied upon my back and was forced to sit down on the stone floor entirely naked, beside the writing-table at which the interrogating Sergeant was sitting. After this interrogation I was brought back to the cell. On Monday, August 16, in the afternoon I was transported by car from the M. P. office to the prison at Sibolga and locked up in a cell (a 3 personsono).

On August 25 I was interrogated once more at the M. P. office concerning the presence of secret radio-transmitters in TAPANOEELI. During this interrogation the sub-commander of the M.P. present, threatened to have me "Mandied" once more. However, I was not ill-treated this time. After this date I was interrogated no more.

After having been imprisoned for about 3 months I was transported by bus to Medan and locked up in the prison together with the resident van der REYDEN and the Controller VISER, who had been brought to SIBOLGA in the month of August 1943 and who had been locked up in a cell next to mine.

During the trip from SIBOLGA to TARO ETOENG our hands were tied behind our backs. After having been untied for a short time we were again tied by means of a rope around both upper arms. This took place in front of the M. P. office at TARO ETOENG.

9 November 1943, we were transferred to the prison situated at the electricititsweg, Medan and from this place after no further questioning, were transported to the internment-camp BELAAN ESTATE on the 10th of November.

[It is worth mentioning:

1. That the illtreatments inflicted upon me took place on order of and with the permission of the Sub-commander of the M.P. at SIBOLGA.
2. That the wounds as a result of the illtreatment inflicted upon me, stated earlier in this report i.e. inflammation of the ear were attended only after repeated requests and only after some ulcerations had appeared.
3. That the food issued to us in the SIBOLGA prison was insufficient as regards both quality and quantity.
4. That no opportunity was given us during daytime to be aired.
5. That opportunity was given us during day-time only after repeated requests (once every 3 or 4 days) and then only after sunset.
6. That I will recognise the M.P. personnel, as mentioned in this report, when confronted with them.

I might add a statement of other atrocities committed by the Japanese Military Police at SIBOLGA viz:

During my internment in the SIBOLGA prison 3 Dutch military men were brought in by the Japanese soldiers in the afternoon of the 15th April 1942 and locked up together in one cell. Before entering the cell

After a quarter of an hour (shivering on account of the cold) I was ordered to dress and was brought back to my cell. The wounds resulting from this illtreatment were not attended to.

On Tuesday, 10 August, I was again given the same treatment in the bathroom by the interrogating Sergeant with the assistance of the Japanese interpreter.

When I informed them in the course of this illtreatment of an instruction effected by the Assistant Medana before the Japanese occupation, my feet were untied and I was taken to the room in which I had been interrogated, my hands still tied upon my back and was forced to sit down on the stone floor entirely naked, beside the writing-table at which the interrogating Sergeant was sitting. After this interrogation I was brought back to the cell. On Monday, August 16, in the afternoon I was transported by car from the M. P. office to the prison at Sibolga and locked up in a cell (a 3 personson).

On August 25 I was interrogated once more at the M. P. office concerning the presence of secret radio-transmitters in TAPANOELI. During this interrogation the sub-commander of the M.P. present, threatened to have me "Mandied" once more. However, I was not ill-treated this time. After this date I was interrogated no more.

After having been imprisoned for about 3 months I was transported by bus to Medan and locked up in the prison together with the resident van der REYDEN and the Controller VISER, who had been brought to SIBOLGA in the month of August 1943 and who had been locked up in a cell next to mine.

During the trip from SIBOLGA to TAROETONG our hands were tied behind our backs. After having been untied for a short time we were again tied by means of a rope around both upper arms. This took place in front of the M. P. office at TAROETONG.

9 November 1943, we were transferred to the prison situated at the electricitcitsweg, Medan and from this place after no further questioning, were transported to the internment-camp BELAAN STATE on the 10th of November.

[It is worth mentioning:

1. That the illtreatments inflicted upon me took place on order of and with the permission of the Sub-commander of the M.P. at SIBOLGA.
2. That the wounds as a result of the illtreatment inflicted upon me, stated earlier in this report i.e. inflammation of the ear were attended only after repeated requests and only after some ulcerations had appeared.
3. That the food issued to us in the SIBOLGA prison was insufficient as regards both quality and quantity.
4. That no opportunity was given us during daytime to be aired.
5. That opportunity was given us during day-time only after repeated requests (once every 3 or 4 days) and then only after sunset.
6. That I will recognise the M.P. personnel, as mentioned in this report, when confronted with them.

I might add a statement of other atrocities committed by the Japanese Military Police at SIBOLGA viz:

During my internment in the SIBOLGA prison 3 Dutch military men were brought in by the Japanese soldiers in the afternoon of the 15th April 1942 and locked up together in one cell. Before entering the cell

these men were ordered to take off their shoes which then were divided amongst the native personnel of the Japanese. The internees were forbidden to contact with these military men.

In the evening the above mentioned men were taken out of the prison for interrogation and brought back late that same night. On 16 April 1942 between 12 and 1 o'clock pm. (we internees at the moment were locked up in our cells) a number of armed Japanese entered the prison and had the 3 men put into iron transport-handcuffs by the native prison guards, who subsequently took them away with them. They were transported on an open freight truck in the direction of Padang Sidempelan. About half an hour later a Japanese soldier entered the prison and returned the iron transport-handcuffs. That same afternoon we learned from the prison personnel and from other reliable police constables who were in charge of our guarding, that these 3 military men were executed on the beach near the B.P.M. works at SIBOLGA.

It is said that afterwards the bodies were beheaded and thrown into the sea. According to a statement of the jailer the names of the above mentioned military men were:

RYKSEN (non-commissioned 1st. Lt.)
TILANISSEN and
VAN LEEUWEN

He stated that he had entered these names into the prison register. We have not come to know for which reason these military men were killed.

I did learn however that the native police officer JAMES HOETA CEROK at the same time engaged at the country-police detachment at SIBOLGA is said to have acted as an interpreter at the hearing of these men, which hearing took place on 15 April. The N.C. 1st lieutenant GERRIT RYK RYKSEN, who is still missing, I recognised from a photograph shown to me by Mrs. RYKSEN as a picture of her husband. He was one of those military men executed by the Japanese at SIBOLGA on 16 April 1942.

On a certain day between 20 and 30 April 1942, I do not recollect the right date, the 1st lieutenant (infantry) MATHES and the Army Medical Officer 2nd class DINGELINS were brought to the SIBOLGA prison, where I was also interned. Both officers who had come from ACHEN were caught by the natives in the neighbourhood of BAROES and handed over to the Japanese. On their arrival at the prison the above-mentioned officers had to take off their uniforms and these were kept by the jailer. After that they were clad in the well known brown prison clothes. First Messrs. DINGELINS and MATHES were interned together with us in one cell, but were taken out next morning and locked up in a cell in which were already present 5 British or Australian Military men, who at the occupation of Singapore had succeeded to escape to PADANG via RENGAT. Sailing along the coast these men were caught by the Japanese in the neighbourhood of SIBOLGA.

At 5 o'clock in the afternoon of the day on which Messrs. DINGELINS, MATHES and the 5 Britishers were locked up together, a number of Japanese armed with rifles appeared and took Messrs. DINGELINS and MATHES with them. They were dressed in prison clothes. Later on we learned that Messrs. DINGELINS and MATHES and also the 5 Britishers were put in a prau at SIBOLGA and were executed on the beach near ACHEN Residency in full view of the natives.

During my stay at the SIBOLGA prison (August 16 November 18, 1943) I learned from a police constable who had to guard me, but whose name I do not remember, that above-mentioned military men had been executed on one of the islands in the bay of SIBOLGA.

these men were ordered to take off their shoes which then were divided amongst the native personnel of the Japanese. The internees were forbidden to contact with these military men.

In the evening the above mentioned men were taken out of the prison for interrogation and brought back late that same night. On 16 April 1942 between 12 and 1 o'clock pm. (we internees at the moment were locked up in our cells) a number of armed Japanese entered the prison and had the 3 men put into iron transport-handcuffs by the native prison guards, who subsequently took them away with them. They were transported on an open freight truck in the direction of Padang Sidempcan. About half an hour later a Japanese soldier entered the prison and returned the iron transport-handcuffs. That same afternoon we learned from the prison personnel and from other reliable police constables who were in charge of our guarding, that these 3 military men were executed on the beach near the B.P.M. works at SIBOLGA.

It is said that afterwards the bodies were beheaded and thrown into the sea. According to a statement of the jailer the names of the above mentioned military men were:

RYKSEN (non-commissioned 1st. Lt.)
 THUNISSEN and
 VAN LEEUWEN

He stated that he had entered these names into the prison register. We have not come to know for which reason these military men were killed.

I did learn however that the native police officer JAMES HOETA OEROK at the same time engaged at the country-police detachment at SIBOLGA is said to have acted as an interpreter at the hearing of these men, which hearing took place on 15 April. The N.C. 1st lieutenant GERRIT RYK RYKSEN, who is still missing, I recognised from a photograph shown to me by Mrs. RYKSEN as a picture of her husband. He was one of those military men executed by the Japanese at SIBOLGA on 16 April 1942.

On a certain day between 20 and 30 April 1942, I do not recollect the right date, the 1st lieutenant (infantry) MATHES and the Army Medical Officer 2nd class DINGELIS were brought to the SIBOLGA prison, where I was also interned. Both officers who had come from ACHEN were caught by the natives in the neighbourhood of BAROES and handed over to the Japanese. On their arrival at the prison the above-mentioned officers had to take off their uniforms and these were kept by the jailer. After that they were clad in the well known brown prison clothes. First Messrs. DINGELIS and MATHES were interned together with us in one cell, but were taken out next morning and locked up in a cell in which were already present 5 British or Australian Military men, who at the occupation of Singapore had succeeded to escape to PADANG via RENGAT. Sailing along the coast these men were caught by the Japanese in the neighbourhood of SIBOLGA.

At 5 o'clock in the afternoon of the day on which Messrs. DINGELIS, MATHES and the 5 Britishers were locked up together, a number of Japanese armed with rifles appeared and took Messrs. DINGELIS and MATHES with them. They were dressed in prison clothes. Later on we learned that Messrs. DINGELIS and MATHES and also the 5 Britishers were put in a prawoo at SIBOLGA and were executed on the beach near ACHEN Residency in full view of the natives.

During my stay at the SIBOLGA prison (August 16 November 18, 1943) I learned from a police constable who had to guard me, but whose name I do not remember, that above-mentioned military men had been executed on one of the islands in the bay of SIBOLGA.

According to a narrative told by two I.I.F. boatmen who for a long time after the occupation were active as a commander on small cargo-ships sailing along SUMATRA's West coast, Messrs. DINGELNS, LUTHS along with the 5 Brits had been executed on the island of SIBOLGA.

During my stay at the SIBOLGA prison (16 August - 8 November, 1943) for interrogation by the Military Police, I learned from a police constable who had to guard me, that after our departure on the 4th of May to SIANTAR, another lieutenant of our army was caught by the Japanese, also coming from ACEH. The name of that lieutenant he did not know. This police constable however told me, that above mentioned lieutenant had behaved bravely during his hearing at the I.I.F.

He did amongst other things, adopt a threatening attitude and challenged the Japanese to fight him. According to the statement of this police constable this officer was taken away by prahoo and never seen again. It was suspected that he has been drowned by the Japanese or executed at one of the islands in the bay of SIBOLGA.

I have drawn up this statement under the oath of office sworn at the beginning of my service to my country, concluded and signed on the 24th of December 1945.

The Superintendent of Police 1st Class
Assistant Public Prosecutor,
Signed SUYKER

For copy conform

The Public Prosecutor to the Court of
Justice Medan.

Signed W. BEUN

Evidentiary Document 5635

FK 1775

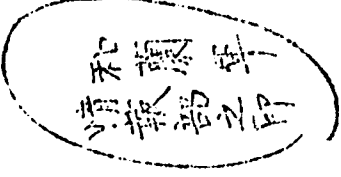
Nov 1

書類第五三五號

證明言

姓名和蘭軍情報部 (N.I.A.) 戦争犯罪課長 R.N.I.A. 中尉
 「ヤールズ・デール」正官宣誓を為すに別紙添附、報告を
 署名、一九四五年十月二十四日附一等警察部長補助検察官 A. S. C.
 一に依りて為されし、此が、於日本憲兵隊、絶えたる残虐行為、関
 不宣誓サタル報告、O.H. 令之七、S. 上題之原本全文、真実完
 全且正確に複寫され、及該書類、真正複寫ガ和蘭軍情報部
 公記録一部、此トテ證言陳述ス。

署名、O.H. 令之七 署名
 於一九四六年六月七日



本職蘭領東印度機務提長事務局附高等官 R.N.I.A.
 中尉 K.A. 「アイン・ド」 面前於署名之宣誓セリ。
 K.A. 「アイン・ド」 署名

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO ROOM 361

Tex 1775

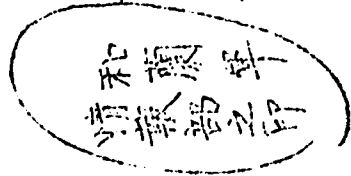
Evidentiary Document 5635

書類第六三五號

證明言

下
 和蘭軍情報部(以下)戰筆紀要課長 R.N.I.A 中尉
 「此レニテ「正式ニ宣言ニ為ル」ト別紙添附、報告ガ不カ
 署名、一九四五年十月二十四日附一等發給部長補助檢察官 A.ニカ
 「依テ為サレタル」ニ示ルガ「於テ日本憲兵隊、此レニテ行ハルニ関
 心宣言サレタル報告」O.N.ノ主ノト題スル原本、全文ニテ、眞實完
 全且正確ナル複為テ「此レ」ト反該類、眞正複為テ和蘭軍情報部
 「式記録」一部「此レ」ト證言陳述ス。

署名: 此レニテ「此レ」ト署名
 於ハ、此レ一九四六年六月七日



本職和蘭領東印度檢事總長事務局附高等官 R.N.I.A.
 中尉 K.A.「此レ」ト「此レ」ト、面前ニ於テ署名ニ宣言ス。

K.A.「此レ」ト署名

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO ROOM 361

Nov 1

Doc 5635

正義為三 吉瀨第立三三號 O.N. 公. 五. 八

主題 「シボルガ」ニ於ル日本軍

憲兵隊、行ハル殘虐行為ニ関スル報告

報告

下名日本軍、占領以前地方警察部長會、監警警察部長兼赤川
が駐劄スルニ、郡部防衛隊長、A スイカ、日本軍「シボルガ」憲兵
隊員、手ニ依リ下記、虐待ヲ受ケタリトテ此處ニ聲明スル。

一九四三年八月四日私ハ「シボルガ」憲兵隊司令官及副司令官ニ依リ
自動車ヲソシテ「シボルガ」海軍收容所ヨリ運ビ出サシメ其後私ハ
之ニ監獄ニ拘留サシメ。八月五日「シボルガ」到着後私當時憲兵隊事務
所ヲソシテ E. P. S. 文配人宅ノ食器室ノ中ニ監禁サシメ。

x x x x x x x x

私ガ幸ニシテ此等、訊問對シ否定的ニ答テ、日本軍、軍曹、共、
平手テ私、顔面ヲ打ツ、ソテ私ハ、平手打ラ遊ガ様トシテ立上ラ。
今度、此軍曹ガ私、ニツ、襟ヲ引カテ私ヲ地上ニ腰拔ニ投ゲ、ソトシ
テ其ハ不成功ニ終ラ。其トテ彼、私ニツ、同時ニ両腕ヲ延ビテ
專、臂掛椅子ニ頭トシテ差拳ガルトテ命令シテ、私ガソノ間、ソテヤ
遂テ時、日本軍、通譯官ガ椅子ヲ突飛ニ其、結果、其ハ本、脚ガ私
ノ顔ニ當ラ、右頬骨、外トシテ血、重傷ヲ負ハシ。其ハ傷、今テ元未、見
ル。其ハ通譯官、私、右、向腔ヲ蹴リ傷ヲ負ハシ。私、椅子ニ頭ト
シテ差拳ガテ居ル程頑強ヲテカクテ、軍曹、私ヲ一本、繩ト向テ其、
次ハ巾、履、皮ベルトヲ擲ツ。此ガ終テ私、自分、檻房ニ連テ
行カシ傷ハ少シモ手當ガ加ラシカク。

No. 2

八月八日曜、朝、私ハ丹同ニ軍曹、通譯官ニ訊問サシメ。

Doc 5635

No. 3.

私(向)ニ事ヲ訊問セシ共ニ私(丹)モ悉定的ニ答ヘタ其處ニ私(脱)ガ
命令セシタ二人日本兵ニ着物ヲ脱ガシテ裸ニシタ。浴室ニ私(手)ノ
後手ニ縛ラシ且私(足)モ亦テ束フルニ上リ縛ラシタ。

私(向)何ケニシテ後軍管ニ私(ガ)ニツリ返ラヌ様私(股)上ニ裸足テ坐シ
タ其ノカラ一枚ノ布ヲ私(顔)ニ被ケタ其後テ通譯官ニ其ノ中ニ浴室ニ
入リテ来タ。モウ一人ノ憲兵軍管ニテ停テ貫ク。小ヤイ馬穴テ立テ
續テ私(頭)ニ水ヲ注テ性々々日本人此所謂「三ノ」ト云フ處
待テ問私(股)上ニ立テ居テ軍管ニ其足テ幾度モ私(臍)ニ又股ヲ
押シ其結果私(水)上食物ヲ吐出シテ肋骨狀ノ見ル格ニ致
為ニ私(臍)ニ膝ニヒトク擦リテテ皮膚ヲ剥キシタ。

浴室ノ戸ガノクサシク是上記ノ虐待ガ繼續ニシテ其ノ心ヲ憂
兵隊副司令官テツラシ。此處ニ於テ私(手)足ニシテヲ解カテ
私(憲)兵隊事務所來テ明ク放シ「少シクテ」上テ丸裸体テ居合
テ上テ環視ニ横臥スル様命令セシタ (以下次頁)

Doc 5635

十月、後(寒氣、學=震命)私(着衣)命
私(櫥房=連)度。 此處待(受)多(負傷)
手(當)上(カ)。

八月十日、曙日私(再)日本軍運(送)官(後)助
ヲ(受)ク(多)評(問)係、(再)當(=)浴室(于)同(部)、取(扱)受
ク(多)。

XXXXXXXXXX

下記(述)ル(必)要(が)有(リ)ス

一 私(和)言(之)態(行)が(三)求(心)分(實)其(隊)副(司)令(官)、命(令)
許(可)三(于)行(ク)ト

二 此(報)告(テ)九(三)障(述)シ(私)加(シ)ク(卷)得、結(果)台(于)
傷(即)耳、疾(症)何(也)モ(要)裁(シ)テ(下)而(モ)幾(少)損
傷、個(所)が(現)ニ(于)カ(ラ)ハ(ト)手(當)ラ(セ)テ(下)。

三 (三)亦(ル)が(監)獄(ヲ)裁(ニ)提(供)セ(ル)食(物)質(的)
量(的)ニ(モ)上(ニ)不(充)分(ヲ)受(ク)ト。

四 晝(間)屋(外)散(歩)、機(會)が(裁)ニ(與)レ(セ)テ(カ)ク(ト)
五 何(回)モ(繰)返(シ)要(求)、後(三)由(日)間(ニ)度(セ)テ(晝)間
散(歩)、機(會)が(與)レ(セ)テ(カ)ク、其(六)日(没)後(分)テ(知)レ(ト)

XXXXXXXXXX

私(我)國(ニ)服(務)、最(初)補(任)宣(誓)シ(ク)就(任)、際(宣)誓
ニ(基)キ、此(陳)述(言)ヲ(依)制(表)三、一(九)四(五)年(十)二(月)二(十)四(日)迄

No. 4

成(三)署(名)三(シ)テ(下)ル、

一 年(答)官(察)部(長)補(助)檢(察)官
眞(正)複(寫) 署(名) 「アイカ」
裁(判)所 檢(察)官
署(名) W. 木(下)

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (N.F.I.S.) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Sworn Statement of JULIUS CORNELIS TEERLINK, Pensioned Official of the S.S. at Palembang, signed J.C. Teerlink." No. Om/6204/S.,

which document is a part of the official records of the N.F.I.S.

SIGNATURE

/s/ Ch. Jongeneel

S&L

B.T.V.L., June 7th., 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K... de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. ... de Weerd

STATEMENT

SUMMARY OF EXAMINATION OF TEEBINK, JULIUS CORNELIS,
Occupation: Pensioned Official of the S S at PELLEMBANG.
Address: 21, SOPHIELAN, PELLEMBANG.

who, duly sworn, states:

I am 60 years of age, of DUTCH nationality (EURASIAN), born at Meester CORNELIS, J.V.. I have no permanent address and I am now living at 21 SOPHIELAN, Palembang. I was on my estate (a small agriculture concession) at TANDJONG KARANG 14, May 44 - 8 June 44. On 8 July 44 I was put in prison of the PANGBU at TANDJONG KARANG. After three days I was interrogated by an officer of the GUNSEI KIN (the interrogator told me this name) I was suspected of espionage and anti-Japanese-propaganda. I denied this, because I was NOT guilty. The Japanese officer ordered four Indonesian policemen, who were in the room to tie my hands behind my back with a rope and to put iron handcuffs on my hands. I was laid down on a bench (22 inches wide) on my back, my handcuffed hands under my body. I was tied on this bench with a rope from top to toe. The Japanese interrogator and two other Japanese officers, who also were in the investigation room, pressed burning cigarettes upon my arms - the scars are still visible. They ordered the policemen to press a piece of cloth upon my nose and to pour water out of a container into my mouth. I had to swallow because I could NOT breathe. After approx. 10 minutes swallowing I fell unconscious. I was lying on this bench for four hours. The Japanese officers went away. I do not know their names but should recognise them from a photograph. One had cauliflower ears. More information about these officers could be given by the CHINESE driver employed by them, named KIE TJON, living at present at TANDJONG KARANG. When the Japanese went away, I was beaten for approx. 1/2 hour by the four Indonesian policemen. They used a rotten stick (1 inch diameter). They beat my left thigh in turn. The names of these policemen are M. CHELOED-PANDIOJ.COEB- S. MSOEDIN. M. CHELOED was the man in charge of all the Indonesian policemen in the prison. He was very cruel, was used by the Japanese as an interpreter, interrogator and when the Japanese were NOT present, he gave orders to the policemen to torture us. I should recognise the policemen of this prison from photographs. After this mistreatment, I was brought back to my cell.

In my cell were 8 Indonesian criminals. The cell was 2 x 4 metres. Many times I was called at 10 o'clock at night and brought to the interrogation room, where M. CHELOED interrogated us. I had to sit down on the floor. When M. CHELOED was NOT satisfied with my answers, he ordered the other policemen to pour a bucket in my mouth and I had to look for several hours at the bright light of an electric bulb (60 Watt). When the little stick dropped out of my mouth, M. CHELOED ordered the policemen to beat me, with a stick. Hereby a list of all the torturings which M. CHELOED ordered the other policemen to do to me during the investigations:

1. to beat me with a stick on my head
2. to burn my moustache with a burning cigarette
3. to put burning tobacco under my nose, so that the smoke came into my nose and I started to cough whereupon I was beaten
4. to beat my feet with a heavy stick many times
5. to make me kneel down for half an hour. In the hollow of my knees, the policemen put a heavy pole and pressed this pole downwards with the whole weight of their bodies
6. to tie me for 24 hours on my back upon a bench. I had to look in the light of an electric bulb. When I closed my eyes M. CHELOED ordered the policemen to pour water over my face, until I opened my eyes again.

The kempai Tai officers of this prison agreed with this torturing and came sometimes at night time when we were tortured by M. CHIOED and the other policemen, in the interrogation room. They looked at us and said to M. CHIOED "Go on" - or - "All right".

Signed J. G. TEERLINK

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his language prior to his signature which appears above.

L. K. van der HORST Interpreter

Sworn before me M. J. DUBSTIGUES
OC No. 4 for Crimes Investigation Team (S&C)

Doc 5636

其、日本人が去去に私ハソノ四人ノ下ニシテハ警道ニ對シテ
許リタカシマシタ。彼等ハ本(海)稜(樹)葉ノ鞭(直径二吋)ヲ使用
シタ。彼等(順)道ニ私ノ在リテハ、
× × × ×

取調期間中「マツモト」が他警道ニ命ジテ私ニシテ全ク
拷問、明細在記述ナシ

一頭ヲ杖ヲ毆打
二火ツク巻煙草ヲ口ニ燒ク
三鼻ノ下ニ火ツク巻煙草ヲ置ク、ソノ煙ガ鼻(伸)ニ入リ来テ
咳ヲ始メ、ソレ故ニ毆打セシタ

四両足ヲ大キナ杖ニ幾度モ毆打
五半時同跪カヌ、兩膝ノ血ニ警道達ハ大キナ棒ヲ置キ、此棒
ヲ警道ノ全体達ニ下(押)シタ

六「マツモト」上ニ仰向テ三十四時同縛ル。電球ノ光ヲ具クシテ、ソノ
マツモトが自ら困ルル「マツモト」ハ警道ニ命ジテ自ら困ル
ルヲ強ク水ヲカシタ

此ノ刑務所ノ裏ハ軍隊將校達ハ此ノ拷問ニ同意シテ、夜間訊
問室ニ「マツモト」ハ他警道ニ依リテ我ガ拷問ニカシテ、ソノ辱
辱ノヤシキ事ヲ、彼等(我ガ)眺メ、
「マツモト」ニ曰フ、ソノ
トカシクナリト記述シタ

署名 丁、〇、丁、〇

証人亦記述シテ、先立テ証人言語ニ右概要ヲ述ビ、
証人亦記述シテ、先立テ証人言語ニ右概要ヲ述ビ、
証人亦記述シテ、先立テ証人言語ニ右概要ヲ述ビ、

No. 3.

右ハ本職(中)由(中)非(中)調查(中) (SEA) MEDICAL
面亦三(中)子(中)官(中)長(中)ナリ

Ex. # 1777

Doc. No. 5632

Page 1

CERTIFICATE

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, Captain R.N.I.A., head of War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NLFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed statement is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original Dutch document, entitled:

Sworn statement of LO DJIEN SIOL, drawn up by J. G. BENDERS, Captain R.N.I.A., dated 6th May 1946 No. 5049/R

which document is a part of the official records of the NLFIS.

Batavia, 28th August 1946.

/s/ Charles Jongeneel

SEAL

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. DE WEERD, LL.D., Major Artillery R.N.I.A., Senior official attached to the office of the Attorney General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd.

SEAL

OFFICIAL RECORD OF INTERROGATION

A f f i d a v i t

Today, Monday May 6, 1946, appeared before me, Joseph Godfried Benders, Captain for Special Services of the Royal Neth. Indies Army, Head of the Netherlands War Crimes Investigation Team, Singapore, holding session at de Souza street 9, Singapore, a person who states to be:

Name: LO DJIEN SIOE
Grade: -----
Army No.: -----
Unit: -----
Civil Occupation: Private physician (practitioner)
Address: Singapore, 257 d Boekit Timah Road
Future Address: Sourabaya
Born at: Madioen on July 22, 1911.

* * * * *

Witness promises to tell the truth and nothing but the truth and replies as follows, after having declared that he persists with the data given above, to the questions put to him.

.

August 14, 1943, during my furlough at TJOEROLP I was arrested by Corporal YAMASHITA, Corporal SAZAKI and interpreter WEEDA.

.

Late at night we arrived at KERTOPATI, the station of PALEMBANG. By car I was taken to the Kenpei-Tai. Immediately upon arrival I got something to eat and a very amicable conversation started. After this I received the first blows from interpreter HAYASHI; this happened without any warning. He struck my head with his fist until I sank down on account of dizziness. ---

Next evening, August 17, 1943, I was again interrogated by Corporal YAMASHITA; blows were not lacking again. Like HAYASHI (this is a Formosan and as such is called LIEM SIK TJONG) YAMASHITA first struck me with his fist on the head, then with a horsewhip on my back. He stopped only when as a result of this I spat blood; he gave me something to drink, wetted my head and then left me lying the whole night on a cement floor without any cover. Next day I came into a cell where, to my astonishment, also the two Ambonese policemen who had been my transport-guards, were confined.

They were accused of participation in an anti-Japanese plot. For about seven days I lay there, ill with dizziness and continuously vomiting. YAMASHI did not seem to be able to tolerate lying down, for when he saw me he ordered me at once to sit up, giving me a kick at the same time. ---

The food may be described as bad and consisted of a helping of white rice and a few slices of cucumbers three times a day; certainly it was not more than a calory-value of 500 per man and per day. We had to drink jointly from a fingerbowl; often with more than 12 people. The cell was no larger than 2 x 4 meters and we were lying prettily like sardines one next to the other. Naturally the hygienic situation was extremely bad. When I had become more fit again, I was again beaten by YAMASHITA, i.e. with his wide linen belt with buckle, he struck me violet-blue from the buttock region until the ankles, so that sitting became impossible to me. Either I was standing or I was lying down on my belly in the cell.

At this time an Indonesian was brought in suspected of theft of a bicycle. The poor man was standing in the middle of a circle of Japanese and acted as a ball. I could see and hear it from my cell. In spite of many blows the man continued to deny and now the "water cure" was applied to him. This I could not see but I heard the vomiting behind my cell, while later, when he passed in front of the cell, he was all wet. Then the first ill-treatment was repeated. Now I heard the blows. Apparently this was too much for the poor man, for he collapsed. He was put down on the floor in front of my cell. Without having regained consciousness he expired during the night at about 2 o'clock. The corpse was quickly put into the luggage space of a car and a chauffeur drove off with it.

.....

Of the Dutch I saw there Mr. STEVENS, was treated worst. Time and again he was tortured: water cure, hanging head down and fire treatment: this consisted of burning the naked skin with cigars, mosquito-torches, etc. He told me all this himself and I saw the wounds. The wounds caused by the fire treatment STEVENS kept longest, for only after having been treated by me for about a month, he was rid of them.

For every prisoner these blows, given with a stick of five centimeters diameter with a horseship or with rolled rope, were part of the daily treatment. Every day, or rather, nearly every hour, one heard the groans and screams of the poor people.

There were several special torture chambers. The mildest treatment was standing in the sun a whole day. Only in the morning one got something to eat then. ---

During the months of August and September 1943 there was a raid among the Ambonese; somebody was said to have discovered a plot against Japan among them. Many were arrested and of the hundreds of Ambonese friends not many are left. However, this was not settled by the Kenpei-Tai alone, but also by the Keimobu. The Kenpei-Tai did participate and nearly all Kenpei-Tai members have on that occasion been guilty of severe torturings. ---

In the meantime things were not going so well with me either; several times I was interrogated, not only about my own case but also for the supplying of information concerning suspected Chinese and about all sorts of things. For instance I was interrogated about the doings, the connections of persons with whom I had hardly ever met. As I could not reply to this properly, I simply had to undergo these tortures. * * * *

Another time I was accused of owning a firearm. This was said to have been reported by a spy. However, I did not own a firearm, so that a search of the house did not yield anything. The last treatment I underwent probably was an effort to intimidation. In the evening I was brought by car to a distant plantation. The Indonesian chauffeur prepared a pit; I had to kneel in front of this pit, while SAZAKI put his sabre on my neck. Miraculously I escaped from this murder, because the gentlemen could not find fault with me.

.

About the end of September 1943 many prominent people were arrested. Most were treated by the Bunsuiubu.

In the meantime I had gradually won the confidence of the Kenpei Tai and I had regularly to attend to the prisoners. Not only wounds, etc. caused by ill treatment, but also ordinary illnesses like malaria, beri-beri, dysentery, etc. which I did to the best of my ability. ---

The first patient I had to treat was brought in more dead than alive. He had been so maltreated that he had one inflamed burn from the buttock region to the ankles. I treated him for six months, and then he walked around like a gorilla. This was the Chinese A. KOF from Djanbi. He was said to have acted as an anti-Japanese spy. Probably he shall never become quite normal again.

.

As far as I still can remember I will state hereunder the names of some people to whom I attended medically and who either died or who have come through alive (all arrested by the Palembang Kenpei-Tai). ---

1. A Chinese by the name of TAN, who under the Dutch Government had been working as inspector with the Political Intelligence service. I attended him for severe dropsy. He has now recovered. This happened around September 1943. ---
2. The Chinese LIEN SAM TIFAN, owner of toko Djoe Seng, Palembang; he also suffered from dropsy as a result of a liver ailment. This occurred in 1944. Later he died of this illness, also as a result of tortures suffered at the hands of the Kenpei Tai. He had come there for having been in possession of Chungking currency.
3. An Indonesian, name unknown, owner of toko Kenora, Palembang. I attended him for the results of tortures by the Kenpei-Tai. He had received many beatings. He could neither walk nor see after this ill treatment. In 1944 I treated him for about a month. He is cured. ---
-
6. A Javanese train mechanic, I do not remember his name, of the State Railways. He had been terribly maltreated and had died during those tortures. I ascertained personally the traces of many blows, because the body was brought to my house. He was beaten to death by Sergt. HUDA. The corpse I returned to his family. This also happened in 1944. ---

.

Very, very often I was called to the Kenpei-Tai office to attend tortured people of all nationalities. Generally the illtreatments were of a severe nature, mostly caused by beatings. ---

Treatment by the Kenpei-Tai in the first instance was not the same. Sometimes one was given good food before the interrogation, to be beaten to death afterwards. --- Instruments used most for torturing, were:

- a. a wooden stick of some 4 centimeter diameter, applied to the knuckles. ---
- b. a leather horsewhip or a rolled rope, ---
- c. burning with cigarets, mosquito torches, etc. ---
- d. a big kettle, contents about 5 liters, to overdrink. Sometimes this kettle, generally filled with soapwater, had to be emptied up to three times.

Hanging at first was done head down. Later this method was changed and the victims were hung feet down and hands bound on their back. ---

As for the water cure: the victim was held by some Kenpei-Tai members, and, as soon as the kettle was empty, the stomach region of the victim was pushed strongly so as to promote vomiting, for instance by dancing on his body, etc. ---

As stated, the meals were very scanty and consisted mostly of a small plate of rice and a few slices of cucumber. Sometimes a man who had just been tortured did not receive food for three days. In my time bathing was a rarity. --

For the dead, who all died as a result of torture undergone, I often had to sign a certificate, stating that the person in question had died of tropical malaria, a heart-disease or beri-beri. So these were all false certificates, of which I have signed about 17 in all.

As a revenge for the murder of the Kenpei-Tai Corporal MOCHIMOTTO, which was not solved, no less than 100 people from Aer Itan were arrested, of whom there remained no more than 20. The remainder disappeared without trace. ---

I estimate that in total many more than 100 people have died as a result of torturing by the Kenpei-Tai department Palembang. ---

Head of the Kenpei-Tai here was Major JALANI TAKASE. Sometimes he assisted personally at the tortures, for instance at nine, and then used to look on smiling. He certainly knew about everything that happened at the Kenpei-Tai.

.

Among the Ambonese whom I know personally and who died, are BAKARBESEY and TUWA PATENAJA, both working at the Neth. Indies Tax Office. They died two days after their arrest; this I know from their wives, who were called by the Gunseibu in order to take away the corpses of their husbands. The women told me this. They had died as a result of torturing.

.

W. S. Lo Djien Sioe
W. S. T. G. Benders

1.

FR 1111

Doe 5632

三類五六三二

宣口録

本日、一九四六年五月六日、新編「ソウ

ザ」第九巻第三於テ開庭中ノ新編「和蘭」等

罪罰空口長 宣口録特別大前余、「ヨセフ・

ホツドフリッド・ベントル」ハ左記ノ者ヲ余ノ

口前ニ出頭セシメタリ

名。一ロイ・ジエソ・ソイカ

業。個人開業

所。新編「ソウザット・テイマ」街三五七

住 業ノ住所。「ソラバヤ」

出 生。一九一一年七月二十二日「ソウタイカ」

生

種人ハ長官ノミヲ陳述スベキヲ約シ、前記諸事

ヲ確認スル旨言明シタル後、彼ニ為サレタル

ニ次ノ如ク答フ。

一九四三年八月十四日、「チユルイブ」チノ休

中、私ハ山下ノ音ノ佐長、佐藤ノ音ノ佐長、

道ノ上田ノ音ノ佐長ニ依リ述補サレタ。

Doc 5632

夜廻ク、我々ハ「バレムバン」ノ歸「ケルトバテ
 イ」ニ到着シタ。目動真テ私ハ營兵隊ニ進行サレ
 タ。到着スルヤ直ニ私ハ食物ヲ具ヘラレソレカラ
 極ク親シイ話ガ始マツタ。然ル後私ハ通譯ノ林カ
 ラ最初ノ殴打ヲ受ケネバテラナカツタ。即チ之ハ
 訊問ノ形式ナク行ハレタノデアツタ。彼ハ拳テ私
 ノ頭ヲ殴リ、私ハ脳脊ノタメ倒レタ種ダツタ。
 翌日ノ夕刻、一九四三年八月十七日、私ハ尋ビ山
 下伍長ニ訊問サレタ。コノ時モ殴打ハ続ジテハキ
 ナカツタ。林（之ハ台湾人デ、台湾人トシテハ「
 リエム・シイク・テヨシ」ト叫バレテキルト同
 様山下ハ先ヅ拳テ私ノ頭ヲ殴ツタ後、馬標テ私ノ
 背ヲ打ツタ。彼ハ私ガ殴打ノ結果、血ヲ吐イタ時
 ヤット止メタ。彼ハ私ニ少シ食物ヲ具ヘ、私ノ頭
 ヲ濕シタ後何ノ被ヒモナク、一夜中「セメント」
 ノ床上ニ私ガ横ハルマ、ニ寝上ツタ。翌日私ハ監
 房ニ入ラレタガソコニハ私ノ馬イカコトニハ、
 私ノ體邊護衛デアツタ二人ノ「アンボシ」人巡在
 キ亦監視サレテキタ。彼等ハ反日隊隊加ノ黨テ
 起訴サレタノデアツタ。紀七日間私ハソコニ横ハ
 ツテキタガ、血ニト違フ吐ノ病氣デアツタ。
 林ハ横臥シテキルノヲ寛容シ得アイ極子デアツタ
 何故ナラバ、彼ハ私ヲ見レバ、直ニ起キ上ツテ坐

2.

Doc 5632

ル様ニ私ニ命ジ、ナホ、オマケニ私ヲ監ルノデア
ツタ。

食料ハ蕨イト云フベキモノデアリ、一日三回一定
量ノ白米ト蕨切ノ胡瓜ヲ管ニ、一人一日五〇〇
「カロリー」ヲ出ザルモノデアツタ。我々ハ一ツ
ノ洗槽俵カラ一箱ニ水ヲ飲マホバナラナカツタガ
長々十二人以上モ一箱デアツタ。ソノ監房ハ二米
ニ四米ヨリ大キナモノテハナカツタガ、我々ハ偏
詰ニ一人一人並ンテ横臥シテキタ。湯カニ衛生状
態ハ悪度ニ悪カツタ。私ガ喜ビ幾分丈夫ニナツタ
時、私ハ喜ビ山下ニ散歩サレタ、即チ彼ノ市ノ民
イ帯金付麻帯ヲ彼ハ唇部ヨリ襟ニ掛ル迄私ヲ背負
ニナル種行ツタノテ、私ハ坐ルコトガ出来ナクナ
ツタ。監房内テ私ハ立ツテキルカ又ハ腹帯ヲ下ニ
シテ横臥シテキタ。

此ノ管時、一人ノ「インドネシア」人ガ自衛軍
制隊ノ隊長テ入ラレタガ、ソノ暮レナ男ハ一口
ノ白米ノ中央ニ立タサレ、「ボール」ノ様ニ敬
ハレテキタ。私ハ監房カラソレヲ見且ツ聞クコト
ガ出来タ。幾多ノ隊員ニモ拘ラズ、ソノ男ハ香煙
シ積ケタ、ソレテ今度ハ彼ニ「水兵メ」ノ刑ガ行
ハレタ。之ハ見ルコトハ出来ナカツタガ、私ハ監
房ノ後テ吐シテキルノヲ見イタ、又ソノ後、彼

Doc 5632

ガ臨房ノ前ヲ通り過キク時、彼ハ全身濡レテキク。
ソレカラ最初ノ辱待ガ幾遠サレク。今晨ハ私ハ腹
打ラ見イク。胸カニ疔ハソノ攻レテ男ニハ過言テ
アツク。即チ彼ハ打テ倒レテ了ツク。彼ハ私ノ臨
房ノ前ノ床上ニ倒サレク。意識ヲ恢復スルコトナ
ク、彼ハ夜中ニ時以息ヲ引取ツク。屍体ハ一台ノ
自動車ノ荷物入ニ手早く入レラレ、一人ノ器持手
ガ之ヲ運び出シテ了ツク。

.....

私ガソコで一緒ニ居ク御人ノ中テ「ステアエ
ンス」氏ハ環キヒドイ百ニアツク。ツマラナイ事
柄テ辱待サレク、即チ火雲メ、遊サ吊リヤ火雲メ
ヲ受ケク、火雲メトハ巻煙草、飲取標香等ヲ保ノ
皮膚ヲ焼クコトデアツク。彼ハ之ヲ凡テ自分テ私
ニ言シク、ソシテ私ハソノ傷ヲ見ク。火雲メニ依
ル傷ハ「ステアエンス」ニ致セ長ク言ツテキク、
即チ私ガ納一ヶ月間手管ラシク後ヤット彼ノ傷ハ
無クナツクノデアル。

各取置者ニ試シ、以打ハ直經五寸ノ棒又ハ馬頭又
ハ巻イタ「ロープ」テ行ハレクノデアルガ、ソレ
ハ奇際毎日ノコトデアツク。毎日、石、殆ンド毎
時哀レテ人々ノ呻キ、叫ビ耳ヲ見イク。.....

獄ケ所ノ特別汚同室ガアツク。獄モ手取カナ尺

Doc 5632

理ハ一日中日内ニ立ツテキルコトデアツタ。ソノ
 時ハ朝、行場ヲ少シ大ヘラレルダケデアツタ。・
 一九四三年八月、九月中ニ「アンボシ」人ノ同
 ニ手入レガアツタ。即チ「スバイ」ガ従等仲間ノ
 長日田部ヲ變遷シタト云フコトデアツタ。多量ノ
 着ガ懸捕サレ、數百ノ「アンボシ」人仲間ノ内通
 ツタノハ多クナカツタ。シカシ、之ヲ行ツタノハ
 憲兵隊ノミテナク、警備部ノ警備ノモ亦行ツタノ
 デアルガ、憲兵隊ガ正ニ加ツタノデアリ、殆ンド
 憲兵隊全員ガソノ場合ノ露地間ヲ諜シタ罪ヲ問ハ
 ルベキコトヲ行ツタ。・・・・・
 一方私モ亦万事都合ヨクハ行カテカツタ、即チ數
 回ニ亙リ、私ハ訊問サレタガ、單ニ私自身ノ件ニ
 關シテテハナク、嫌疑ヲ變ケテ守ル中口人ニ就テ
 ノ情報提供ノタメキ、凡ユル嫌疑ノ件ニ關シテテ
 アツタ。カクテ就中私ハ自分ガ承シテ言ツタコト
 ガアルカドウカモ知レヌ人々ノ行爲、關係ニ就テ
 訊問サレタ。私ガソレニ關シテ適當ニ答ヘルコト
 ガ出来ナカツタノテ、私ハ總テノソレ等ノ持問ヲ
 受ケネバテラナカツタ。私ハソノ氏名ヲ忘レタガ
 日正ノ一人ノ軍曹ニヨツテ、佐衛ノ警備ノ任長ニ
 ヲツテ、又私ノ記憶シテイ他ノ着ニヨツテ訊問サ
 レマシタ。今一長ハ私ガ火器ヲ所持シテキタ罪ヲ

5.

Doc 5632

理ハ一日中日間ニ立ツテキルコトデアツタ。ソノ
 時ハ朝、食朝ヲ少シ長ヘテレルダケデアツタ。
 一九四三年八月、九月中ニ「アンボシ」人ノ間
 ニ手入レガアツタ。即チ「ムバイ」ガ従軍仲間ノ
 長日長ヲ變免シタト云フコトデアツタ。多量ノ
 着ガ懸着サレ、数員ノ「アンボシ」人仲間ノ内通
 ツタノハ多クナカツタ。シカシ、之ヲ行ツタノハ
 憲兵隊ノミテナク、海軍部ノ着隊ノモ亦行ツタノ
 デアルガ、憲兵隊ガ正ニ加ツタノデアリ、殆ンド
 憲兵隊全員ガソノ場合ノ職務間ヲ謀シタ罪ヲ問ハ
 ルベキコトヲ行ツタ。
 一方私モ亦万急都合ヨクハ行カテカツタ、即チ數
 回ニ亙リ、私ハ訊問サレタガ、單ニ私自身ノ件ニ
 關シテテハナク、嫌疑ヲ受ケテキル中口人ニ爲テ
 ノ情報提供ノタメヤ、凡ユル種類ノ件ニ關シテテ
 アツタ。カクテ意中私ハ自分ガ呆シテ言ツタコト
 ガアルカドウカモ知レヌ人々ノ行爲、關係ニ爲テ
 訊問サレタ。私ガソレニ關シテ通告ニ答ヘルコト
 ガ出来テカツタノテ、私ハ總テノソレ等ノ持問ヲ
 受ケネバテラテカツタ。私ハソノ氏名ヲ忘レタガ
 出云ノ一人ノ軍官ニヨツテ、海軍部ノ着隊ノ任長ニ
 ヨツテ、又私ノ記憶シテイ他ノ者ニヨツテ訊問サ
 レマシタ。今一長ハ私ガ火器ヲ所持シテキタ罪ヲ

Doc. 5632

同ハレタ。之ハ「スバイ」ガ通報シタノダト云ハ
レタガ、私ハ火持ヲ得ツテキアカツタ、ソレテ家
宅捜索ハ何處ヲモセタカサテカツタ。私ガ私ツタ
以後ノ晨位ハ多クハ成程ニ寐ヘルコトデアツタ。
夕刻私ハ自動車ヲ送方ノ農田ヘ送レテ行カレタ。
「インドネシヤ」人ノ送付手が穴ヲ準備シ、此ノ
穴ノ前ニ掘カネバナラナカツタ。一方佐崎ハ毎月
ヲ私ノ頼ニ付テタ。彼等ハ私ニ送付ヲ發見スルコ
トガ出来テカツタ。テ奇蹟的ニ私ハ之ノ殺人カラ
免レタノデアル。

一九四三年九月ノ末頃多クノ若者ノ人々ガ送捕サ
レタ。大部分ハ軍政部ヲ脱走サレタ。
ソノ間、私ハ新次郎兵隊ノ信局ヲ得テキタソレテ
私ハ規則的ニ收監者ヲ治療セネバナラナカツタ。
處得ニ依ル傷等バカリテナク「マラリヤ」ノ脚氣
赤痢等ノ如キ一般ノ病氣ヲモ診タガ、之ニ私ハ接
管ヲ盡シタ。

最初私ガ治療シテケレバナラナカツタ患者ハ殆
ド死ンテ去レテキタ。醫部カラ戻進火傷シタ者
ト思ハレル程處待サレテキタ。私ハ彼ヲ六ヶ月手
管シタガソノ後彼ハ「ゴリラ」ノ様ニ歩キ廻ツテ
キタ。之ハ「ジャムビ」出身ノ中国人「ア・コロ」

Doc 5632

デアツタガ彼ハ反日「スパイ」トシテ行爲シタニ
ノト云ハレテキタ。恐ラク、彼ハ吾ヒ完全ナ情報
ニハナラナイデアラウ。

.....

私ガ未ダ記憶シ得ル限リ、私ハ自分ヲ巴探手當ヲ
施シタ者テ、我ハ死亡シ、我ハ生キ残ツテキタ人
々（凡テ「バレンバン」憲兵隊ニ逮捕サレタ者）
ノ姓名ヲ次ニ陳ベヨウ。.....

「ハント」ト云フ中国人テ彼ハ和南政府時政治
情報部ニ勤務シテ伺イテキタ。私ハ真造ノ水
直ノタメ彼ヲ治療シタ。彼ハ今ハ恢復シテキル

ガ、ソレハ一九四三年九月以ノコトデアツタ。
中国人「リエン・サム・チヨアン」、「バレン
バン」ノ「ジユ・セン」商店ノ店主

彼モ亦肝臓病ノタメノ水直ニ罹ツテキタ。一九
四四年ノコトデアツタガ、ソノ後彼ハ此ノ病氣
ノタメトス急長旅ノ手ヲ置ツタ時同ノ結果死亡
シタ。彼ガソコヘ運送サレタノハ重傷ニテ持
ツテキタタメデアツタ。

「インドネシア」人、姓名不明、「バレンバン」
ノ「クモラ」商店ノ店主、私ハ憲兵隊ノ時同ニ
ヨル結果ニ成シテ彼ヲ治療シタ。時ニ彼ハ多ク
ノ殴打ヲ受ケテキタ。彼ハ此ノ虐待ノ後、多ク

Doc 5632

8.

コトモ、見ルコトモ出来ナカツタ。一九四四年
 私ハ純一ヶ月ヲ治癒シタ。彼ハ恢復シタ。：

 * 「シヤリ」人デ、姓名ハ記憶シナイガ、口唇微
 細ノ顔面ヲ、彼ハ甚ダシク期待サレ持向中ニ死
 亡シタモノデアル。私ハ屍體ガ私ノ家ヘ送バレ
 タノデ、自分デ多量ノ打撲ノ跡ヲ確認シタ。彼
 ハ身口（首）ニ軍曹ニ似ツテ殺サレタノデ
 アル。屍體ヲ私ハ彼ノ家ヘ送シタ。之モ一九四
 四年ノコトデアツタ。

 管ニ戻タ、私ハ凡ユル口結ノ人ノ持向ヲ受ケタ人
 タラ診ニ兵隊ヘ送バレタ。病シテ期待ハ甚ダシ
 イモノデ主トシテ打撲ニ似ルモノデアツタ。 . . .
 兵隊ノ如一者ニ於ケル疑ハ同シテハナカツタ。
 時トシテハ、口結ノ前ニ兵隊イ食物ヲ与ヘ、後ニ殺
 リ殺サレルコトモアツタ。 . . . 持向ニ主トシテ
 戻ヒラレル事知ハ
 (イ) 口結ニアサガフ巨徑汚圓細徑ノ木ノ葉 . . .
 (ロ) 草製馬具ハ行イタ「ロープ」
 (ハ) 巻煙草、散球銀管等ニテ焼クコト
 (ニ) 人ニ似マセルタメ管積結立立ノ大型葉體ハ時ト
 シテ此ノ葉體ニハ病シテ石灰水ガ充満サレ、之ヲ

Doc. 5632

9.

三度道侯ミ干サネバナラアカツカ。
 最初ハ頭ヲ下ニ昂下ゲタガ、後ニハ之ノ方法ハ腹
 へラレ、機仕着ハ尾ヲ下ニ昂下ゲラレ、両手ハ後
 手ニ倚ラレタ。．．．永云メノ場合ニハ、右該機
 仕着ハ右長隊ノ隊長ニヨツテシツカリトオサヘラ
 レ、隊長カ望ニナルヤ否ヤ、機仕着ノ位置カ何ハ
 バ、ソノ体ノ上ヲ見シタリヌルコトニヨツテ腹
 吐ヲ促進サセル如ク思フサレタ。．．．
 能ニ通ズル通り、食料ハ味信ニ賞賜テ、主トシテ
 一血ノ似ト前瓜取物デアツタ。時トシテハ、同
 サレタバカリノ者ハ三日間セ食料ヲ貰ハナカツタ。
 私ガキタ當時ハ入浴ハ稀デアツタ。．．．
 死人ニ減シテハ、ソレモ凡テ受ケタ同ノタメニ
 死亡シタ者デアルガ、私ハソノ者ガ熱帯「マラリ
 ヤ」ノ心以病ヌル氣ヲ死亡シタト云フ體質ニ
 長ク着居セネバナラアカツタ。ソレ故私ガ着居シ
 タ病下七通ハ凡テ見付ノ體質デアツタ。．．．
 軍兵隊持込ノ智識ノ酋長ノ職務ニ就スル報復トシ
 テ、而シテソノ殺害ハ行ハレタノデハナカツタノ
 デアルガ、「アイル・イタム」ノ人々百名以上ガ
 送歸サレ、ソノ内男ツタノハ二十人ヲ出ナカツタ。
 遺余ノ者ハ行方不明トナツタ。．．．
 私ハ「バラムバン」兵隊ノ前同ノ結果死亡シタ

Doc 5632

10.

者ハ總計百在ヲ込カニ起セルモノト思フ。 . . .
 營場ノ駐兵隊ニハ山根義徳ノ管轄ノ少佐デアツタ。
 時トシテ彼ハ自ら海軍ニ手ヲ出シタ、側ハ私ノ
 場合デアルガソレカラ笑ヒテガハラ立ツテ見テキタ。
 彼ハ駐兵隊ヲ起ツタ事ハ何テモ種カニ知ツテキタ。

 「アンボシ」人ノ内、私ガ側人同ニ知ツテラリ、
 死亡シタノハ「バカルベセイト」ト「トウワ・バテ
 イナキ」テ、兩人ハ間島砲台塔ニ囚イテキタモノ
 デアル。彼等ハ遺體後二日テ死亡シタ。之ハソノ
 夫遺ノ屍體ヲ引キ取ルタメ軍医部ニ時ト出サレタ
 彼等ノ妻達カラ囚イテ知ツテキル。ソノ女達ハ死
 ラ私ニ証シタ。彼等ハ捕虜ノ結果死亡シタノデア
 ツタ。

署名 「ロー・ジエソ・シイタ」

署名 「J. H. マンデルス」

Doc 5632 (cont)

證 明 書

下記署名ノ和蘭算情報部職範課長、前印算大尉
「チャールス・ヨングネール」ハ先ヅ正式ニ宣誓
ノ上添附ノ陳述書ハ左記様式ノ和蘭語ノ原本全文
ノ真正・完全且正確ナル爲シニシテ、尙右三類ハ
和蘭算情報部公式記録ノ一部ナル事ヲ証言ス

記

一九四六年五月六日前印算大尉「イエ・ヘ・メ
ンデルス」ニ依ツテ作成セラレタル「ロ・ジン・
シュー」ノ宣誓原起書、第五〇四九ノR

一九四六年八月二十八日

於「バタビヤ」市

チャールス・ヨングネールノ署名ノ

(前印算情報部官印)

余、前印算情報部長事務局尉高等前印算砲兵少
佐、法學博士「カール・アー・テウ・ヴェールト」
ノ口頭ニ於テ署名宣誓セルモノアリ

カール・アー・テウ・ヴェールトノ署名ノ

(バタビヤ・センテウルム砲臺局長官印)

Doc 5632 (cont)

証 明 書

下記署名ノ和蘭算情報部職范謀長、前印算大尉
「チャールス・ヨングネール」ハ先ツ正式ニ宣誓
ノ上添附ノ陳述書ハ左記様式ノ和蘭語ノ原云至文
ノ真正・完全且正確ナル事ニシテ、尙右に類ハ
和蘭算情報部公式記録ノ一部ナル事ヲ証言ス

記

一九四六年五月六日前印算大尉「イエ・ヘ・ベ
ンデルス」ニ依ツテ作成セラレタル「ロ・ジン・
シユール」ノ宣誓陳述書、第五〇四九ノR

一九四六年八月二十八日

於「バグビヤ」市

チャールス・ヨングネールノ署名ノ
(前印算情報部官印)

余、前印算部職長事務局附高等官前印算砲兵少
佐、法学博士「カ！・アー・テウ・ヴェールト」
ノ口頭ニ於テ署名宣誓セルモノアリ

カ！・アー・テウ・ヴェールトノ署名ノ
(バグビヤ・センテウルクム職長官印)

Document No. 5034

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NMFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Sworn Statement of Ferppo Kense KRAMER, Headmanager of the Deli Tabaksmaatschappij, Medan, dated 30 March 1946, Signed F. R. Kramer". OH/8187/S

Said document is a part of the official records of the NMFIS.

SIGNATURES:

/s/ Ch. Jongeneel

SEAL

B.T.V.L., June 7th 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEEDE, first Lieutenant R.N.I., Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney General N.S.I.

/s/ K. A. de WEEDE

[S I R I S S A T]

Summary of examination of Popy Kense KALISA, Head-Manager of the "DELI TRANSKRIPSI", Medan.

duly sworn states:

I am 44 years of age, of Dutch nationality, born at GLETHOON. I am at present living at Sultanrejo, 29, Medan.

On 17 Nov 45 I arrived at PEITING SIMTAN-prison, sentenced to 15 years of imprisonment. There were there 34 Europeans, political prisoners including three females.

On 31 Aug 45, on which date we were released, only 12 persons had survived the miserable conditions in that prison.

Their names are:

KRIEER	AUGENSTEIN
REELICK	Mrs. TELLINGS
GILFAR	Miss SYMLI
TOOROF	VAN DER BERG
GREENE	VAN DER SCHIEF

[of whom VAN DER BERG and VAN DER SCHIEF died since.] The two other names I do not recall. I have handed in to the R.I. Red Cross Organisation at MEDAN a list of the names of those who died in prison.

[At the end of 1943 the total number of political prisoners (all nationalities incl.) amounted to approx. 550. At Aug 1945 more than 300 of them had died. After my release, at the estate LUKAS, I calculated the exact percentage of mortality being 62%. Causes of death were invariably dysentery, malnutrition, avitaminosis, beri-beri. In short all kinds of food-deficiency diseases.

If the Indonesian guards thought that a man was going to die, he was put into a special cell. Each morning a guard came, kicked at the cell-door and shouted: "Are you alive or dead?" On 12 April 45 Mr. KOEK was brought to such a cell to die. He suffered with dysentery and as he could not help himself, nor was taken care of by anybody else, his own cell of course was unspeakably dirty. That same date (12 April) I was moved into Mr. KOEK's cell, dirty as it was, on order of menteri POEBI, who did not take any notice of my strong protests.]

A few days afterwards I myself got dysentery.

Mr. KOEK lived for another 15 days in his "dying-cell" and passed away on 27 April 45.

[If a man was about to die, but lived too long to one of the guard's opinion, the man was put outside his cell or barrack into the sunshine to speed up his death. I have seen such thing happen myself.

Once it happened that a prisoner, whom the guards supposed to be dead, had been taken away and loaded upon the cart, used for funerals. After a time he was brought back because he was found to be still alive.

The Indonesian doctor MOHAMMAD acted as prison medicine Officer. This man visited the prison about once a month. The DOKTERAS were just nothing to him. Moreover there was a medical orderly, a Batak named LUKAS, who was not interested at all in the sick. The only medicine we ever got was now and again a spoonful of palm-oil and about once a month some kind of liquid belly medicine.]

The Japanese prison-administrator, ISHII, himself never visited us or inspected conditions. His second man, a Japanese, whose name I do not know, made his rounds through the prison daily. The only action he took, however, was beating up now and again the cookhouse-personnel when he states that they had stolen too much of the prisoners' rations.

The food was at first reasonable. From 6 Dec. 1943 already, meals became extremely bad and inadequate in quantity as well as in quality.

For about 40 days our meals consisted then of:

Breakfast: 3 very little pieces of sweet-potato
(weighing boiled certainly less than 100 grams)

Lunch: 4 or 5 little pieces of sweet-potato and a few leaves of
bad quality greens.

Dinner: same as lunch

Either at lunch or at evening-meal a very small piece of salted fish was issued, usually, however, consisting of the head of the fish only.

After 40 days we got every other day maize and rice for midday and evening-meal. Maize average 500 grams a meal (we have counted them!) and rice 7 spoonfuls.

At first we got a piece of boiled meat once a week and half an egg once or twice a week; this ceased, however, after 2 or 3 months. The hard-workers and those of us supervising the work got once a day a so-called foreman's meal in quantity about three times a normal meal. These extras were deducted from the food of the others. The total quantity issued remained the same.

From the very beginning we tried to smuggle our clothes out of the jail in exchange for food. After this had been detected all our clothing and other belongings were taken from us and we were only allowed one pair of shorts, one shirt, one blanket and one grass mat if we had any. We were not even allowed a spoon or a pillow.

Until 1 Jan. 45 Mr. KOEK and I slept together with 109 Chinese and Indonesian political prisoners in a barrack, marked for 44 persons.

[Signed F. R. HARTER

I certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

Signed VAL DE LAUDE

Translator

Sworn before me

VAL DE LAUDE
for JC No 4 War Crimes Investigation Team.

This 30 day of March 1946

↓ Detailed to examine the above by the Commander-in-chief,
Allied Land Forces, South East Asia.]

Authority: ALFSEA War Crimes Instruction No. 1, para 7.

101 EK 1778

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # 5634

書類才五六三四号

證明書

下是和蘭軍情報部(N.E.F.) 戰事犯罪課長

R.N.I.A 中尉「女」之「証言」(正式記録) 爲「之」之別紙添附
報告

「一九四六年三月三日附下 R.N.I.A 署名」之「市」之「之」之「之」
主交與今本「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」
而本「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」
情報部「正式記録」一部「之」之「之」之「之」

和蘭軍
情報部印

署名「之」之「之」之「之」
於「之」之「之」一九四六年六月七日

本職 蘭領東印度檢察官長事務局附屬官

R.N.I.A 中尉「K.A.」之「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」

K.A.」之「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」之「之」

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5634

書類不五六三四五

川久保

陳述書

記同要約
正式宣言書、上陳述又

私、和蘭國籍、有之キイ、ホ、ル、シ、ニ、生、シ、四、十、四、年、有、リ、マ、ス、現、在、不、幸
「ス、ル、シ、ニ、生、シ、マ、ス」ニ、九、番、地、ニ、住、シ、テ、居、リ、マ、ス。
一九四三年十月十七日私、十五年監禁、判決、受、テ、「ス、ル、シ、ニ、生、シ、マ、ス」
刑務所、到着、シ、タ、其、他、六、三、名、婦、人、合、シ、テ、三、十、四、名、
歐洲人政治犯が居、リ、マ、ス。
我、が、釈、放、サ、レ、タ、一、九、四、五、年、八、月、三、十、日、十、二、名、ニ、テ、收、容、所、悲、慘
ノ、状、態、耐、テ、生、キ、残、リ、マ、ス。

* * * * *

彼等、中「ス、ル、シ、ニ、生、シ、マ、ス」及「ウ、ア、ン、テ、ニ、シ、タ、ク」ニ、其、他、死、シ、タ、リ。

* * * * *

一九四三年、終、リ、各、國、人、合、シ、テ、政、治、犯、收、容、者、總、數、約、五、五、名
ニ、昇、リ、マ、ス。ソ、レ、一、九、四、五、年、八、月、迄、ニ、彼、等、中、三、百、名、以、上、が、死
ニ、シ、タ、リ、マ、ス。所、有、地、テ、釈、放、サ、レ、タ、後、實、際、死、亡、率、六、三、名、中、三、十、
計、算、シ、タ、リ。死、因、ハ、例、外、十、三、者、刑、罰、深、養、不、良、ノ、以、テ、生、立、症、
邪、氣、下、リ、要、ス、ル、總、ニ、種、類、食、物、缺、乏、症、ト、シ、タ、リ。

702

若、シ、イ、ド、ホ、シ、テ、人、守、衛、或、ハ、命、死、カ、リ、テ、井、ノ、上、に、思、フ、テ、シ、テ、其、人、

Doc 5634

將列監房(入)と云ふは、女朝子衛(ヤ)と云ふ、監房、病(及)是(獄)
「不(亦)生(ま)る(は)死(す)力(カ)」と怒(鳴)る(は)り。一(九)四(五)年(四)月(十二)日。
「ヨシ」氏(松)様(松)監房(死)と(進)し(て)云(は)る(は)り。彼(亦)謂(ひ)
忠(洋)居(り)三(三)分(自)命(一)人(下)ヤ(三)子(三)ト(元)出(来)ズ(又)他(誰)カ(ノ)モ(世)話(ト)ナシ
カ(タ)テ(彼)監房(言)權(無)了(不)察(言)下(リ)ア(三)テ。一(月)三(日)四(月)十(五)
未(汚)多(盡)「ヨシ」氏(監房)「エントリ」ホ(エル)テ、命(命)下(移)ト(シ)テ
彼(亦)強(硬)抗(議)三(何)注意(無)佛(レ)ト(セ)下(三)テ。

* * * * *

若(或)ル(命)死(力)ト(云)ハ(井)ガ(ノ)ニ(シ)キ(ハ)シ(テ)元(息)ガ(リ)エ(ギ)ル(ト)子(衛)
作(字)若(ニ)シ(ル)ト(其)ノ(人)死(テ)早(ク)ル(春)三(彼)監房(或)兵(舎)外
日(光)當(此)所(出)サ(レ)テ(三)テ。亦(自)身(其)様(光)景(亦)目(撃)ト(シ)テ(三)テ。
當(テ)次(様)下(事)件(ガ)アリ(ト)シ(テ)即(チ)子(衛)ガ(死)ハ(ニ)テ(思)フ(一)停
房(外)人(進)ト(云)ハ(レ)奉(儀)三(彼)ト(シ)事(三)積(重)ト(シ)テ。暫(ク)シ(テ)彼(未
タ)生(キ)テ(ヨ)ル(ト)ガ(判)り(為)進(ト)戻(サ)レ(ト)シ(テ)テ。
ト(ド)不(之)女(人)医(士)「ロ(カ)ン(テ)ー」ガ(收(容)所)軍(医)ト(シ)テ(働)ク(ト)ナ(シ)テ(三)テ。
此(男)ノ(收(容)所)ヲ(一)月(間)カ(リ)討(ト)シ(テ)テ。彼(ト)シ(テ)「歐洲(人)何
ノ(関)心(モ)ナ(リ)セ(テ)シ(テ)テ。其(上)ル(カ)ニ(ト)言(フ)「六(タ)ク」人(看(護)
兵(居)テ(シ)テ(テ)彼(病)人(付)テ(何)ノ(興)味(モ)持(テ)テ(シ)テ(テ)テ。
我(ガ)モ(昔)下(世)實(ク)ナ(シ)ト(言)フ(ハ)兵(時)々(一)度(採)桐(油)ト(月)三(約)
四(成)ニ(程)ノ(液)体(腸)ホ(ト)シ(テ)テ。

703

* * * * *

2006 5634

no 4

署名 F.R. ...

右、要約、右記証人署名ニ及テ、証人ニ証人、國語
正ニシテ、証人ニ及テ、証人ニ及テ、証人ニ及テ

署名 ... 署名

元四年三月三十日

本職、面會ニ於テ、宣誓書ナリ、

〇〇才四歳年犯罪調査團

陸軍少佐 ...

東南アジア聯合軍陸軍總司令部

ニヨリ上記調査、為 派遣書ナリ

東南アジア聯合軍陸軍、戰爭犯罪

訓令中一号 第七項ノ權能ニヨリ

Class B and C Offenses:

PROSECUTION DOCUMENT

No. 5682.

NETHERLANDS INDIES

TINOR and LESSER SUNDA ISLANDS

Synopsis

Netherlands Division I.P.S.

December, 1946.

Lt.Col. J.S.Sinninghe Damstè,

R.N.I.A.,

Assistant Prosecutor.

TIMOR and LESSER SUNDA ISLANDS

Synopsis.

Occupation by the Japanese Navy.I. PRISONERS OF WAR.1. Murder.

Captured troops were murdered in the most cruel way.

- a. At Oesapa Besar, Dutch Timor, about February 1942 eight Australian P.O.W. were shot after capture, without any trial. This appears from the affidavit by the Australian Pte. R.R. CROW, Prosecution Document 5571.

The Prosecution enters this document 5571 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- b. At Babaoe (Baboe), Dutch Timor, about February 1942, an Australian Medical Corporal, who was left in charge of the hospital, was hanged and had his throat cut. This is stated in the interrogation-report of the Australian Army Chaplain TH. W. BUNDEMAN, Prosecution Document 5573, who also affirmed the murder at Oesapa Besar, already mentioned.

The Prosecution enters this document 5573 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- c. At Babaoe, in February 1942 also three Australian P.O.W. were killed; they were tied to each other by string around their wrists and their throats were cut. This is stated by the Australian Lt. Colonel F.W. LEGGATT, Prosecution Document 5579.

The Prosecution enters this document 5579 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- d. At Tatu Meta, Portuguese Timor, in February 1942 seven Australian soldiers were captured. The Japanese bound their hands behind their backs by telephone wire which had been pierced through their wrists. Then they were bayoneted. The bayonetting lasted for twenty minutes before they were dead. This appears from the affidavit by S. GRACA; Prosecution Document 5802.

At Dilli, Portuguese Timor, in March 1942 a Dutch officer was tied to a tree and pricked by a Japanese officer with his bayonet for about twenty

/minutes;

minutes; chest and stomach were pierced many times; then he was stabbed to death. This is related by GRACA as well.

The Prosecution enters this document 5802 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- e. At Soeway, Portuguese Timor, in August 1942 the Japanese, commanded by a Captain, murdered the captured Dutch sub-lieutenant STIEFKENS by beheading. This is reported by M. AUGUSTINI, who acted as an interpreter. Prosecution Document 5585.

The Prosecution enters this document 5585 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

2. Camps.

Conditions were about the same as in the camps in the other areas.

- a. At the P.O.W. camp, Cesapa Besar, conditions were decidedly bad as regards food, drinking facilities, accommodation and sanitation. Medicines were not provided but the P.O.W. happened to have sufficient drugs of their own. This is contained in the affidavit of Lt. Colonel LEGGATT, exhibit ____.

- b. At Flores Island, West of Timor, conditions were terrible. In the first months no dwellings were provided, the P.O.W., also the sick people, had to stay in the open air. Sanitation, hygienic and medical conditions were appalling. In the ward of the seriously ill patients no bedpans were available, therefore a little hole was dug next to each bedplace and the patients had to roll over it. Because a stool of 30 to 60 times a day was not an exception, time and again new holes had to be dug round the patient until there was no place left and a new bed had to be found. In case the patient was too weak to roll over the hole next to his bed, one was dug under it and a hole made through his sleeping mat. Food was bad. Consequently health deteriorated and more than half were ill. Still the sick were forced to labour. Of these 2079 Dutch P.O.W. 211 died from illness within a year's time. Discipline was harsh; corporal punishments were frequent, causing injuries and even indirectly death. P.O.W. were not protected against air attacks.

This is the sad story told in the report of Captain A.C.J. DE THOUARS, R.N.I.A., the camp commandant; Pte. C.K. BRANTS, R.N.I.A., and 1st Lieutenant H.H.J. DE VRIES, R.N.I.A.; Prosecution Document 5578.

The Prosecution enters this document 5578 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- c. At Soemba Island, West of Timor, interrogations were held under beatings and threats. As is reported in the affidavit of the Australian F/Lt. L.L. McKEENZIE; Prosecution Document 5583.

The Prosecution enters this document 5583 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- d. At P.O.W. camp Koepang, Dutch Timor, P.O.W. were forced to an exhausting march under harsh beatings; food; sanitary conditions and medical care were bad; labour was exhausting. As appears from the affidavit of Sgt. CH. VAN DER SLOOT, R.N.I.A., Prosecution Document 5597.

The Prosecution enters this document 5597 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

3. Executions.

- a. At Oesapa Beger-camp an Australian P.O.W. who had struck a Japanese F.C.O. and escaped was killed. This was explained in a letter written on behalf of the C.O. by a Japanese corporal who states: "In Japanese forces when a person strikes an officer or F.C.O. of higher rank the penalty is always death." However this P.O.W. was executed without trial but only on instructions from Headquarters. This appears from the affidavit of Lt. Colonel LEGGATT, exhibit ____.
- b. At P.O.W. camp, Floras, two P.O.W. were executed without trial. As is stated in the report of Capt. DE THOUARS c.s., exhibit ____.

II. CIVILIANS.

A. Internees.

Most of the European population was interned, also in Portuguese Timor, and their conditions were not much different from those in the civilian internees camps in other areas.

- a. At Soemba conditions were bad, although there was only a small number of internees. Accommodation and food were inadequate; their property was looted; severe beatings occurred causing injuries. As appears from the affidavit of the Controller (civil servant) W.F.H. PLAS, Prosecution Document 5596.

The Prosecution enters this document 5596 as an exhibit.

- b. At Liquiça, Portuguese Timor, the Portuguese civilians were concentrated and interned. Conditions were as usual: bad accommodation, food, medical care; exposure to air attacks without protection, attracted especially by firing from a hospital. Particulars are given in the affidavit of GRACA, already introduced, exhibit _____, and the affidavit by C.J. SEQUEIRA; Prosecution Document 5803.

The Prosecution enters this document 5803 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

B. Non-Interned.

1. Murder.

- a. At Aileu, Portuguese Timor, in September 1942 the Japanese, disguised as natives, made an attack upon the Portuguese guards, who had been sent off duty, and killed most of them. This is stated by a survivor, the Portuguese Pte. E. SIMOES, Prosecution Document 5804.

The Prosecution enters this document 5804 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- b. At Ainaro, Portuguese Timor, in October 1942 two Roman Catholic priests were murdered.

At Atsabe, Portuguese Timor, in December 1942 the Japanese used, when attacking the Australian forces, 50 to 60 natives as a screen, of whom a number was killed.

The Japanese burned the native huts in the area of Mt. Katrai, Portuguese Timor, and shot the women and children as they ran from the huts. This was a regular practice.

These facts are related by the Australian F/C W.A. BEATTIE, Prosecution /Document

- a. At Soemba conditions were bad, although there was only a small number of internees. Accommodation and food were inadequate; their property was looted; severe beatings occurred causing injuries. As appears from the affidavit of the Controller (civil servant) W.F.H. PLAS, Prosecution Document 5596.

The Prosecution enters this document 5596 as an exhibit.

- b. At Liquiça, Portuguese Timor, the Portuguese civilians were concentrated and interned. Conditions were as usual: bad accommodation, food, medical care; exposure to air attacks without protection, attracted especially by firing from a hospital. Particulars are given in the affidavit of GRACA, already introduced, exhibit _____, and the affidavit by C.J. SEQUEIRA; Prosecution Document 5803.

The Prosecution enters this document 5803 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

B. Non-Interned.

1. Murder.

- a. At Aileu, Portuguese Timor, in September 1942 the Japanese, disguised as natives, made an attack upon the Portuguese guards, who had been sent off duty, and killed most of them. This is stated by a survivor, the Portuguese Pte. E. SIMONS, Prosecution Document 5804.

The Prosecution enters this document 5804 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- b. At Ainaro, Portuguese Timor, in October 1942 two Roman Catholic priests were murdered.

At Atsabe, Portuguese Timor, in December 1942 the Japanese used, when attacking the Australian forces, 50 to 60 natives as a screen, of whom a number was killed.

The Japanese burned the native huts in the area of Mt. Katrai, Portuguese Timor, and shot the women and children as they ran from the huts. This was a regular practice.

These facts are related by the Australian F/O W.A. BEATTIE, Prosecution /Document

- a. At Soemba conditions were bad, although there was only a small number of internees. Accommodation and food were inadequate; their property was looted; severe beatings occurred causing injuries. As appears from the affidavit of the Controller (civil servant) W.F.H. PLAS, Prosecution Document 5596.

The Prosecution enters this document 5596 as an exhibit.

- b. At Liquica, Portuguese Timor, the Portuguese civilians were concentrated and interned. Conditions were as usual: bad accommodation, food, medical care; exposure to air attacks without protection, attracted especially by firing from a hospital. Particulars are given in the affidavit of GRACA, already introduced, exhibit _____, and the affidavit by C.J. SEQUEIRA; Prosecution Document 5803.

The Prosecution enters this document 5803 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

B. Non-Interned.

1. Murder.

- a. At Aileu, Portuguese Timor, in September 1942 the Japanese, disguised as natives, made an attack upon the Portuguese guards, who had been sent off duty, and killed most of them. This is stated by a survivor, the Portuguese Pte. E. SIMONS, Prosecution Document 5804.

The Prosecution enters this document 5804 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- b. At Ainaro, Portuguese Timor, in October 1942 two Roman Catholic priests were murdered.

At Atsabe, Portuguese Timor, in December 1942 the Japanese used, when attacking the Australian forces, 50 to 60 natives as a screen, of whom a number was killed.

The Japanese burned the native huts in the area of Mt. Katrai, Portuguese Timor, and shot the women and children as they ran from the huts.

This was a regular practice.

These facts are related by the Australian F/C W.A. BEATTIE, Prosecution
/Document

Document 5805.

The Prosecution enters this document 5805 as an exhibit.

- c. The Japanese attacked and sacked also other native villages in Portuguese Timor, using indiscriminate machinegun fire, e.g. Kelicai and Nahareca, as appears from the affidavit by the Portuguese L.A.K. RODRIGUES Prosecution Document 5806.

The Prosecution enters this document 5806 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- d. At Koepang, two natives were killed without proper trial; as appears from the affidavit of VAN DER SLOOT, already introduced, exhibit ____.
- e. At Oosapa, a native was killed without trial, as stated in the report of Chaplain BIDEMAN, already introduced, exhibit ____.
- f. In September 1944 General TANAKA ordered a punitive action against the islanders of Loeang and Sermata, East of Timor, because some Kempeitai men had been murdered by the native population. The local Rajah of Loeang was ordered to search for the chief of the so-called mutiny and was executed because he could not find the mutineer. The chief of the rebels and two others were executed at Lautem, Portuguese Timor. Of the other Loeang rebels 34 were executed on Moa Island, and 60 of the 650 Sermata rebels were killed.

This appears from the report of Major General Y. TANAKA, Prosecution Document 5594.

The Prosecution enters this document 5594 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

A Japanese Lieutenant gives a further description of the killing on Moa Island. The natives were killed by bayonetting, three at a time by 21 Japanese soldiers. He himself organised a brothel in which he forced five native women to act as prostitutes as a punishment for the deeds of their fathers. Statement by Lt. S. O'HARA, Prosecution Document 5591.

The Prosecution enters this document 5591 as an exhibit.

2. Kempeitai.

The Military Police operating in this area applied the well-known Kempei methods of interrogation, torture, punishment and treatment. Burning with cigarettes, water test, hanging, kneeling upon sharp stones; severe beatings. Even killing.

- a. L.A.N. PODREIGNES describes instances of torture at Cssu, Portuguese Timor, in his affidavit, exhibit _____, and also mentions that the Japanese forced the local chiefs to provide girls for the brothels.
- b. The Chinese CHUNG HAI CHENG, or HA HOI, acted as an interpreter for the Kempeitai at Dilli. In his affidavit he relates several cases of ill-treatment; Prosecution Document 5807.

Conditions in the prison were very bad as may easily be understood by the statement of HA HOI, Prosecution Document 5807. The Australian prisoners in the gaol at Dilli were very weak and exhausted. Women prisoners were beaten as well as men.

The Prosecution enters this document 5807 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- c. At Manatuto, Portuguese Timor, the Portuguese Chef de poste (administrator) was murdered by the Kempei; his cut-up remains were put in a sack and sent to his wife. As stated in the affidavit by F/O BEATTIE, already introduced, exhibit _____.

This completes the presentation of evidence regarding the Japanese war crimes committed in the Timor area.

1

EX 1007

Doc 5682

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

一九四六年 / 陽曆二十一年 / 十二月
日印王日軍陸軍中佐
シテ・エニ・シニク・タタテ / s. Shinhinbe. Dams /

B 及び O 級記録
南 領 南 庭 記 録
チ モ 一 ル 水 マ ツ タ 記 録
日 本 領 察 自 領 買 郡
日 本 領 察 自 領 買 郡

Doc 5682

2.

テモール及ビ小スンダ諸島

艦隊概略

日本海軍ニ依ル占領

I 停戦

1 線談

停戦ニナツク軍隊ハ最も強忍ナ方法ヲ線談サ
レタノデアリマス。

(A) 占領テモールノウサバ・ベサー / 〇〇〇

P a B o o e / ニ於テ一九四二年 / 昭和

十七年 / 二月頃八名ノ浪洲人停戦ガ捕ハラ

レテカラ表列モタク射殺サレタノデアリマ

ス。此ノ事實ハ浪洲人兵卒アイル・ビー・

クロウ / R . B . O R O V / ノ直管管デア

ル秘文書第三七七一號ニ記述サレテ居リ

マス。檢察側ハ此ノ文書第三七七一號ヲ檢

査ノ爲ニ提出シソノ中ノ抜萃ヲ檢査トシテ

提出致シマス。

(B) 一九四二年 / 昭和十七年 / 二月頃、占領テ

モールノバプー / B a b a o o / ニ於テ強

ツテ病院ヲ預ツテ居タ浪洲軍醫伍長ハ檢

査サレ同様ヲ切斷サレタ。此ノ事實ハ檢察

文三五五七三號、浪洲軍從軍牧師 T H . W .

Doe 5682

ビソリアン / BINIDMAN / ノ凱閣
 動ニ記述サレテ居リマス。彼ハ統ニ遊
 ペラレタウサバ・ベサイ / Oeopa
 Bort / ニ於ケル後ヲモ確認シテ
 居リマス。
 偵察例ハ此ノ文書第百五十七號ヲ檢閲ノ
 爲ニ、ソノ中ノ旅費ヲ檢査書類トシテ提
 出致シマス
 (9) バブイ / B a b a o e / ニ於テ一九四二
 年 / 昭和十七年 / 二月又ニ三名ノ探洲兵
 停泊ヲ察知セタノテアリマス、彼等ハ
 燈子手類ヲ一カラゲニ縛リ合ハサレ、剛
 喉ヲ切斷サレタノテアリマス。此ノ事電
 ハ偵察文書第百五十七號ニ於テ、 W . W .
 レガット / EBGA型 / 中庭ニ依リ
 偵察サレテ居リマス。偵察例ハ此ノ文書
 百五十七號ヲ檢閲ノ爲ニ提問ソノ中ノ
 旅費ヲ檢査書類トシテ提出致シマス。
 (10) 福領テモイルタツ・メタ / Etum
 ta / ニ於テ一九四二年 / 昭和十七年 /
 二月ニ七名ノ探洲兵ガ停泊ニナリマス。
 日云人ハ電報線ヲ彼等ヲ後手ニ縛リソノ
 線ハ手類ニ深ク喰ヒ込シテ居リマス。

Doc 5682

ソレカラ彼等ハ銃剣ヲ刺サレマシタ。銃
 剣ヲ刺スノハ彼等ガ死亡スルマデ、二十
 亦同様キマシタ。此ノ事實ハ檢察文書第
 五八〇二號、エス・グラカ / S. GRA
 O A / ニ於テ記述サレテ居リマ。○
 福信子モ「ル島テリ」 / カイトリ /
 ニ於テ一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ三月、
 一箱同箱板ガ木ニ縛リ付ケラレ、一由云
 箱板ニ係リ銃剣ヲ宛テ二十券ノ間突キマク
 ラレタノデアリマス。同板處ヲ何圖トナ
 ク御キ道サレマシタ。ソシテ道ニ刺殺サ
 ゼタノデアリマス。此ノ事實ハ同様ニグ
 ラカ / G R A O A / ノ隙違シタモノデア
 リマス。檢察官ハ此ノ文三五八〇二號ヲ
 被體ノ寫ニ提出シ其ノ中ノ證據ヲ提出シ
 類トシテ提出シマス。

(B)

福信子モ「ルノスウエイ / Gooley / ニ
 於テ一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ八月一六
 日ヨリ被告ヲ受ケタ日云人ガ傍屋ノ和蘭
 人少尉ステイ / SPINKENS /
 ヲ斬首ニシテ殺害シマシタ。コレハ通譯
 ヲ劫メタム・ボイガスタ / AUGUSTIN /
 ニヨリ報告サレテ居リマス。コレハ檢察

Doc 5682

文書第五五八五號デアリマス。檢察官ハ
コノ文書第五五八五號ヲ檢査ノ爲、檢査
ヲ申出トシテ提出シマス

(以下次頁ニツヅク)

Doc 56822

2、回答所

ソノ範囲ハ他ノ地域内ノお客様ト箱ト同一ガ
リマセンデシク。

(A) ウツバ・ベサー / OOPSARA BESHAR / 本客所ニ

於テハソノ状態ハ食事、飲料水施設、待合及ビ荷

送ニシテ、決定的ニ紛惑ナモノデシク。道乗ハ給

與サレマセンデシクガ弊自體ハ自分自身ノ親ヲ十

分ニ宛テ合ハセテ置リマシク。此ノ事實ハ證據

書類、レガット / 五五五 G A T T / 中

佐ノ監督ニ記載サレテ居リマス。

(B) 直都チモール / フロイレス / F I O R E S / 高

ニ於テモ状態ハ悪シクヒドイモノデアリマシク。

最初ノ何ヶ月カハ何ノ位層モ長ヘラレズ感傷モ病

氣ノ者モ居ゾテ居マセバナリマセンデシク。精進

施設、健康設備ハソツトスルヤウナ勿病ナモノデ

シク。甚遠患者ノ室テモ便器ヲ隔ヒル等が出衆マ

センデシクノテ各病床ノ隣ニ小サナ穴ヲ掘リ患者

ハソコニ輪ガツテ居カネバナラカツクノデアリ

マス。一日ニ過十乃三六十回ノ便通モ珍シクナカ

ツタノテ度々新シク息室ノ隣ニ穴ヲ掘ラネバナ

ラズ、遂ニハ、モウ何處ニモ掘ル場所ガソツテ居

ラズ、新シク息室ノ隣床ヲ見付ケネバナラナイト

Doc 5682

云フ毒氣デアリマシタ。患者が非常に身體が弱
 テ居テ、ソノ眞床ノ脚ノ穴ニ入ガツテ行ケナイ程
 合ハ感傷ニ穴ヲアケ、スダソノ下ニ穴ヲ開ツタノデ
 アリマス。食事ハ悪イモノデシタ。ソノ結果健康
 ガ衰へ半分以上ノ者ハ病人デアリマシタ。正モ尚
 、患者ハ好調ヲ見ヒラレマシタ。之等和人管
 二千七十九名ノ中二百十一名が一年ノ間ニ病死シ
 マシタ。感傷ハ奇蹟ナモノデアリマシタ。肉體刑
 罰ハ屢々行ハレソノ結果傷ツケラレタリ、又ソレ
 ガ原因トナツテ死亡スル者サヘアリマシタ。任
 ニ對シ防禦設備ハ何モアリマセンデシタ。之ハ森
 察文書第五五七八號收容所長官印王國軍六野、コ
 イ・シ・ジエイ・デ・トウアール / A・O・J・
 DE・THOURS / 官印王國軍兵卒・ケイ・
 フランツ / O・K・BRAETS / 及ヒ官印王國
 軍少尉エツテ・エツテ・ジエイ・デ・フリース /
 H・H・J・DE・VERIBES / ニ付ル報告書ニ
 記述サレテ居ル真摯デアリマス。
 森察局ハ此ノ文書ヲ五五七八號ヲ添附ノタメニ送
 出シ其ノ中ノ抜本ヲ管轄トシテ提出シマス。
 (C) 西チモールノスンバ / SOEMBABA / 島ニ於テ
 野村、君達ノ下ニ訪問ガ行ハレマシタ。之ハ森察

Doc 5682

ノ件請ハ裁割モナク、本部ヨリノ指令ノミテ死刑
ヲ執行サレマツタ。コレハ、レガット / LEGGATT /
中位ノ宣旨口供替、卷證——ノ中ニ見エテ居リマ
ス。

(以下次頁ニ續ク)

Doc 5682

11.

B、御出されザル人々

1、姓

(A) アイリユイ / AILEU / 二於テ、一九四二年 / 昭和
十七年 / 九月、土佐民ノ被殺ラシタ日本人ガ、赤
香ヲ送ラレテ兼々ポルトガル軍兵ヲ被殺シ、
ソノ中大刀被殺シマシタ。コレハ生存者ポル
トガル人長平四。シムス / SIMOS / ニヨリ歸越サ
レ、被殺者第五八〇五ニ出テ居リマス。

被殺者ハコノ文書第五八〇五ニ出テ居リマス。被殺
者ヲ送ラレトシテ被殺シマス。

(B) ポルトガル兵チモールノアイナロ / AINARO /
ニ於テ、一九四二年 / 昭和十七年 / 二人ノロ
マン。カソリツク被殺ガ被殺サレマシタ。ポル
トガル兵チモールノアトサベ / ATOSABE / ニ於テ、
一九四二年十二月、日本人ハ被殺者被殺ノ被、
五十人カラ六十人ノ原住民ヲ被殺者被殺トシテ被
殺シ、ソノ中多クガ被殺サレマシタ。

日本人ハ、ポルトガル兵チモールノカトライ
山 / KATRAI / ノ原住民ノ小島ヲ被殺、被殺女子
ガ小島カラ逃ケ出ス所ヲ被殺シマシタ。コノ被
殺者ハ被殺者被殺シタ。

是ノ被殺者ハ、被殺者被殺中尉 W. A. ビア
テイ / BEATIE / ニ被殺者被殺ラレ、被殺者被殺
第五八〇五ニ出テ居リマス。

Doc 5682

12.

イ 家 備 ハ コ ノ 文 書 第 五 八 〇 五 號 ヲ 信 証 ト シ テ 提 出
致 シ マ ス 。

(O) ボ ル ト ガ ル 人 ル。A。ロロイドレイグス / ROD-
REIGUES / ノ 實 地 口 述 書 、 家 備 文 書 第 五 八 〇 六 號
ニ 見 ラ レ ル 如 ク 、 日 本 人 ハ 又 ボ ル ト ガ ル 領 事 モ
一 ル ノ 他 ノ 原 住 民 ノ 村 、 例 エ バ ケ リ カ イ / KEIHI-
OH / 及 ビ ナ ハ レ カ / HAHARECA / ヲ 無 差 別 機 銃 掃 射
シ テ 攻 撃 シ 、 掠 奪 シ マ シ タ 。

イ 家 備 ハ コ ノ 文 書 第 五 八 〇 六 號 ヲ 信 証 ノ 爲 、 披 示
ヲ 信 証 ト シ テ 提 出 致 シ マ ス 。

(D) 已 ニ 披 示 サ レ タ ヲ ア ン 。 テ ル 。 ス ル ー ト / VAN
DER SLOOF / ノ 實 地 口 述 書 、 信 証
ニ 見 ラ レ ル 如 ク 、 ク バ ン グ / KOEPALG / テ 二 人 ノ 原
住 民 ガ 正 式 ノ 裁 判 モ ナ ク 殺 サ レ マ シ タ 。

(E) 已 ニ 披 示 サ レ タ ビ ン デ マ ン / BINDEMAN / 從 軍 牧
師 ノ 報 告 書 、 信 証
ノ 中 ニ 述 ベ ラ レ テ
居 ル 如 ク ウ サ ベ / OLSAPE / ニ 於 テ 一 人 ノ 原 住 民 ガ
殺 害 モ ナ ク 殺 サ レ マ シ タ 。

Doc 5682

13.

ト 4 1 5 5

(F) 一九四四年 / 昭和十九年 / 九月 將軍田中ハチモ
 ルノ東部ノルアング / ルアング / 及ビセルマ
 タ / Sermata / ノ島人ニ對スル懲罰行爲ヲ命令
 シマシタ。トイツノハ幾ハカノ短兵隊員ガ原住氏
 ニ依リ私害サレテ居タカラテス。
 ルアングノ地方知事ラルジヤ / ルジヤ / ハ
 請暴動ノ頭ヲ殺スルヲ命令サレソレヲ發見スル
 等カ出来サカツタ爲ニ死刑ニサレマシタ。反抗者
 ノ首長ト他ノ二人カホルトカル候チモールラウテ
 ム / ルラウテ / ニ於テ死刑トナリ。
 ルアングノ他ノ反抗者ノ中三十四人ガモア島 /
モア島 / テ死刑トナリ、セルマタノ六五〇人ノ反
 抗者ノ中六〇人カ殺サレマシタ。
 コレハ田中少將ノ報告書、秘察文書第五五九
 四號ノ甲ニ見エテ居リマス。
 秘察例ハコノ文書第五五九四號ヲ秘證ノ爲拔萃ヲ
 秘證トシテ提出致シマス。
 一日本人中尉ハモア島 / モア島 / ニ於ケル殺
 ノ遺骸ヲ見ニ許シク遊ベテ居リマス。原住民ハ二
 十一人ノ日本兵ニ一屋ニ、三人ヅ、劍銃ヲ刺サレ
 テ殺サレマシタ。中尉ハ自身ヲ遊女屋ヲ作り五人
 ノ原住婦人ヲ彼等ノ父ノ行ノ懲罰ダトシテ無理ニ

Doc 5682

13.

(F) 一九四四年 / 昭和十九年 / 九月 將軍 田中ハナモ
 ルノ東部ノルアング / ラピダ / 及ビセルマ
 タ / ウヨヨ / ノ島人ニ對スル懲罰行爲ヲ命令
 シマシタ。トイフノハ幾人カノ憲兵隊員ガ原住氏
 ニ恨リ怒サレテ居タカラテス。
 ルアングノ地方知事ラルジヤ / ラピダ / ハ
 諸暴動ノ頭ヲ殺スルヲ命令サレソレヲ發見スル
 事カ出来ナカッタ爲ニ死刑ニサレマシタ。反抗者
 ノ首長ト他ノ二人カホルトカル領チモールラウテ
 ム / ラピダ / ニ於テ死刑トナリ。
 ルアングノ他ノ反抗者ノ中三十四人ガモア島 /
ラピダ / テ死刑トナリ、セルマタノ六五〇人ノ反
 抗者ノ中六〇人カ殺サレマシタ。
 コレハ又田中少將ノ報告書、被暴文書第五五九
 四號ノ甲ニ見エテ居リマス。
 被暴文書ハコノ又書第五五九四號ヲ被暴ノ爲採擧ラ
 ントシテ提出シマス。
 一日本人中尉ハモア島 / ラピダ / ニ於ケル殺
 ノ遺書ヲ更ニ詳シク述ベテ居リマス。原住民ハ二
 十一人ノ日本兵ニ一隊ヲ、三人ヅ、劍銃ヲ刺サレ
 テ殺サレマシタ。中尉ハ自身ヲ遊女屋ヲ作り五人
 ノ原住婦人ヲ彼等ノ父ノ行ノ懲罰ダトシテ無理ニ

Doc 5682

1000

淫賣婦トシマシタ。

S 本ハラ / O E A / 中尉ノ陳述、檢察文書第五
五九一號ニ出テオリマス。

檢察側ハコノ文書第五五九一號ヲ見證トシテ提出
致シマス。

2 舞臺

コノ地區ニ於ケル憲兵隊ノ任務ハ有在ナ憲兵派
ノ執向、防向、懲罰、ソノ他ノ範圍ヲ適用スル事
デシタ。知草ノ火テ焼イタリ水取メ待首、尖ツタ
石ノ上ニ地ガセタリ、ヒドイ極打ヲシタリンマシ
タ。時ニハ縦管サヘヤリマシタ。

(A) L. A. N. ロドリゲス / RODRIGUES / ハ彼
ノ宣誓口述書證 / 中ラガルトガル領チモ
ルノオツス / O'S / ニ於ケル執向ノ例ヲ述ベ
テ居リマス。又日本軍人ガ地方知事ニ女子ヲ遊女
屋ニ出ス事ヲ強要シタ事ヲ述ベテ居リマス。

(B) 又那人チユン・ハイ・チユン / CHUN HAI CHUN /
又ノ名ハ・ボイ / BOY / ガ、デイリー /
D. N. / ニ於テ憲兵隊ノ爲ニ追譯トシテ候キ
マシタ。彼ハ宣誓口述書ノ中テ辱待ノ幾ツカノ實
例ヲ述ベテ居リマス。檢察文書第五八三七號デア

14

Doc. 5682

淫賣婦トシマシタ。

○エハラ / ○エハ / 中尉ノ脚邊、檢察文書第五
五九一號ニ出テオリマス。

檢察側ハコノ文書第五五九一號ヲ檢閲トシテ提出
致シマス。

2 舞 兵 隊

コノ地區ニ於ケル憲兵隊ノ任務ハ有テハ憲兵
ノ執向、防向、懲罰、ソノ他ノ職務ヲ遂行スル事
デシタ。短草ノ火テ燃イタリ水攻メ待首、尖ツタ
石ノ上ニ陣カセタリ、ヒドイ敵打ラシタリンマシ
タ。時ニハ殺聲サヘヤリマシタ。

(A) エ・A・ロドリゲス / RODRIGUES / ハ彼
ノ宣誓口述書ニ於テ / 中ラポルトガル領チモ
ルノオツス / OUS / ニ於ケル捕虜ノ例ヲ述ベ
テ居リマス。又日本軍人ガ地方知事ニ女子ヲ遊女
屋ニ出ス事ヲ強要シタ事ヲ述ベテ居リマス。

(B) 支那人チエン・ハイ・チエン / CHEN HAI CHEN
又ノ名ハ・ボイ / BOY / ガ、デイリー /
DAILY / ニ於テ憲兵隊ノ爲ニ通譯トシテ働キ
マシタ。彼ハ宣誓口述書ノ中テ虐待ノ幾ツカノ實
例ヲ述ベテ居リマス。檢察文書第五八三七號デア

Doc. 50. 15

トマス。
陸軍部ノ申ノ状態ハハ、ホイノ陳述者、檢察文
第 五 八 〇 七 號 ナ 容 易 ニ 理 解 サ レ ル 様 ニ ヒ ト ク 惡
イモノナシム。テイリ一監獄ヲ該洲人何處ニハ非
常ニ執リ、衰弱シテ居リマシタ。婦人ノ侍康モ男
ト同ジニ打ツレマシタ。

檢察例ハロノ文第 五 八 〇 七 號 ラ 概 證 ノ 公 披 事 ラ
書 證 ト シ テ 提 出 珍 シ マ ス 。

(C) 、ホルトカル領ナモールノマナタト / Manatuto /
ニ於テホルトカルノ行政官ガ憲兵ニ殺サレマシタ。
彼ノ切ラレタ遺骨ハ獄ノ中ニ入レラレ彼ノ妻ニ送
ラレマシタ。已ニ提出シタビーテイ一空軍中尉ノ
直ニ口述者、第 五 八 〇 七 號 ニ 進 ベ テ ア ル 通 リ テ
アリマス。

コレヲナモール地區ニ於テ行ハレタ日本ノ兵爭犯
罪ニ關スル證據ノ提出ヲ終リマス。

G. # 1780

DOCUMENT NO. 5571

PAGE 1

TX. 2827 Private Roderick Bruce CROW, 2/40 Aust. Infantry Battalion, being duly sworn, states:

My home address is Montague Bay, Tasmania.

I was captured in Timor and was confined in Osapa Besar camp. I was captured in April 1942.

Prior to this, about 20 February 1942 I was captured by paratroops and handed over to the Marines. We were captive about 30 hours and they took us out three at a time to shoot us. Eight were shot and another got away. Our hands were tied behind our backs. I saw them shoot Private Hurd. The Japanese who was to shoot me was only young. I hit him and escaped; he was on his back when I left him.

I was then taken to Osapa Besar. There was very little meat or rice and the food was poor. I was engaged unloading boats but we did not do much work at all. We were not paid.

I was then sent to Java at Tanjoeng Prick, here I remained for three months. There was a big improvement in the food position there.

I was then sent to Singapore and to Thailand. I was confined in Kinsio camp; 350 soldiers were in our party. The food there was bad and there were very little medical supplies. Capt. Godley was our medical officer. Some of the men had malaria and some had dysentery. We lost about 60 men out of the 350 due to cholera, dysentery and malaria. We were at Kinsio for about six months. I do not know the names of any of the guards. I contracted beri beri there.

I then went to Chungki, which was a base camp. Conditions there were improved. We had an Australian doctor, Col. Dunlop, in charge.

We went to Japan by ship; there 1000 Australians and about 50 Dutch on board. We were confined in the hold and were very crowded. There was not sufficient room to lie down. We were on board for 70 days, and one Australian died. Our main diet was dried fish and rice.

I was confined in No. 13 camp, Fukuoka, where I did factory work; the factory was a copper refinery. Conditions there were fairly good. I then went to No. 1 camp, Fukuoka, where I remained for about two months. We were frequently beaten there. I was sick with malaria and diarrhoea. I do not know the names of the Japanese guards, but "Bucktoot" was the chief basher.

I was then sent to No. 17 camp, where conditions were fairly good. I spent eight weeks convalescing and received some Red Cross parcels in January 1945. I remained there until March 1945. I was then put to work in the mine but I did not do too much work as I had beri and malaria. Many of the men were forced to work when they were sick. I think about 100 died out of 1800 in the last six months I was there. Some were killed in the mine and many died from pneumonia. When the war finished I weighed 8 stone 2 lbs; I now weigh 12 stones 4 lbs. I cannot remember the names of the Japanese guards.

DOCUMENT NO. 5571

PAGE 2

I certify that the above evidence is true and correct.

Taken and sworn before me at Manila)
on the 1st day of October 1945)

R. B. Crow

Signature illegible

Commissioner

76

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

/s/ Peter G. Guduras
Peter G. Guduras
2nd Lt Inf

5571-1

ナイ、エックス 第二八二七號^{2/40} 派訓 歩兵大隊ノ兵「
ロドリック、ブルース、コロム」ハ正式ニ督ツテ次ノ擧ヲ
送ベテキル。

私ノ本籍ハ「クスマニア」島「モンテ」グ「ラ」ニ在リマス。
私ハ「チモール」ニ捕虜トナリマシタ。ソシニ「
オサバ、ベサール」ニ軟容所ニ收容サレテ唇リマシ
タ。私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）五月ニ捕虜ト
ナリマシタ。

此ノ以前、一九四二年二月二十日頃、私ハ落下傘
部隊ノ者ニ捕ヘラレ、海兵隊ニ引渡サレマシタ。
吾々ハ約三十時間停虜ニナツテヤクガ、其後射殺
ノクメ一時ニ三名宛引出サレマシタ。八名ヲ射殺
サレ、他ハ逃走シマシタ。吾々ノ手ハ後ヲ縛ラレ
ニ唇リマシタ。私ハ兵卒ノ「ハイド」ヲ日本兵ガ
射殺スルノヲ見マシタ。私ヲ捕ツ害ニナツテ居タ
日本兵ハ非道ニ若ク奴デシタ。私ハ彼ヲ撃リツケ
テ逃走シタノデシタ。彼ハ私カ逃グ出シタ時ハ仰
向ケニ倒レテ居マシタ。
其レカラ私ハ「オサバ、ベサール」ニ送レテ行カ
レマシタ。肉又ハ米ハ類ク少ク、ソシテ食物ハ貧
弱ナモノデシタ。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

5571-2

私ハ舟ノ荷降シ仕事ヲシマシタ然シ仕事ハタイシ
テアリマセンデシタ。賃金ハ仕拂ツテ呉レマセン
デシタ。

右記ノ事實ハ眞實ニシテ正確ナル事ヲ證ス
一九四五年（昭和二十年）十月一日「マニラ」ニ
於テ余ノ面前ニテ宣誓シテ陳述セルモノナリ。

アール、ビー、シロー

署名不明瞭（部長）

本寫ハ正確ナル認證原本ナル事ヲ証ス

歩兵少尉「ビクター、デー、グツデユラス」

（署名）

Evidence taken Manila 1/10/45
/s/ A.W. (?)

When COMPLETED this document must be classified as SECRET

AUSTRALIAN WAR CRIMES COMMISSION

QUESTIONNAIRE

NOTES:-

- (a) This questionnaire should be completed by:-
 - (i) All repatriated Australian prisoners of war (A.I.F., R.A.A.F., and R.A.N.).
 - (ii) All repatriated Australian civil internees.
 - (iii) All repatriated British civil internees in the Pacific Area (excluding Malaya and China).
 - (iv) All members and ex-members of the Allied forces who have actual knowledge of war crimes committed by the enemy.
- (b) It will be completed in the presence of an officer who will counter-sign the signature of the person making the statement.
- (c) It is important that a full statement on page 3 (carried on to page 4 if necessary) be furnished as well as the answer to 8 (f).

- 1. Army number WX11036 2. Rank Chaplain
- 3. Full name (in Block Letters) BINDEMAN: Thomas William
- 4. Unit at time of capture and/or place of capture Sparrows Force, Timor
- 5. Home address 1 Fortune Street, South Perth W.A.

6. At what enemy camps and hospitals were you confined and when were you at each?

- Oesapa Besar, Timor Feb. '42 - Sep. '42
- Tandjong Priok, Java Oct '42 - Jan '43
- Makasara, Java Jan '43 - Mar '43
- 10th Battalion, Java Mar '43 - Sep '43
- Singapore Sep '43 - Oct '43
- Streckawen, Formosa Nov '43 - Feb '45
- Fukuoka, Kyushu Feb '45 - Apr '45
- Mukden, Manchukuo Apr '45 - Aug '45

7. Do you have any information about any atrocities against, or mistreatment of, Allied soldiers, prisoners of war, civilian internees, or the civilian population for which you think the perpetrators should be punished? (Answer by stating YES or NO in the spaces provided below)--

- (a) Killings or executions Yes
- (b) Rape, torture, beatings or other cruelties Yes
Yes or No
- (c) Imprisonment under improper conditions Yes
Yes or No

- (d) Massacres, wholesale looting, pillage, or burning of towns or villages No
Yes or No
- (e) Use of prisoners of war or civilians on enemy military works or operations Yes
Yes or No
- (f) Exposure of prisoners of war to danger of gunfire, bombing, torpedoing, or other hazards of war Yes
Yes or No
- (g) Transportation of prisoners of war under improper conditions or deportation of civilians Yes
Yes or No
- (h) Public exhibition or exposure to ridicule of prisoners of war Yes
Yes or No
- (i) Failure to provide prisoners of war or internees with proper medical care, food or quarters Yes
Yes or No
- (j) Collective punishment of a group for offence of others Yes
Yes or No
- (k) Breaches of rules relating to the Red Cross Yes
Yes or No
- (l) Cannibalism No
Yes or No
- (m) Mutilation of the dead No
Yes or No
- * (n) Any other war crimes not specifically mentioned above for which you think the guilty persons should be punished Yes
Yes or No

If any question is answered YES then state the facts in 8 (f) and on pages 3 and 4.

8 Details of Atrocities -

- (a) Kind of crime killing
- (b) When and where it happened
- (c) Who was the victim? (Give complete description including name and whether military or civilian personnel)
- (d) Who was the perpetrator? (Give as complete description and as much information as possible
- (e) State if you saw it yourself, if you did not see it, who told you about it? (Give names and addresses of other witnesses)
- (f) Give brief story of crime. Full statement required on pages 3 and 4.

*Other war crimes not specifically mentioned include:-

- (i) Usurpation of sovereignty during military occupation.
- (ii) Compulsory enlistment of soldiers among the inhabitants of occupied territory.
- (iii) Attempts to denationalize the inhabitants of occupied territory
- (iv) Confiscation of property.
- (v) Exaction of illegitimate or of exorbitant contributions and requisitions.
- (vi) Debasement of the currency and issue of spurious currency.
- (vii) Deliberate bombardment of undefended places.
- (viii) Wanton destruction of religious, charitable, educational and historical buildings and monuments.
- (ix) Use of explosive or expanding bullets and other inhuman appliances.
- (x) Directions to give no quarter and refusal of quarter.
- (xi) Misuse of flags of truce.

FULL STATEMENT OF ATROCITY OR CRIME

This MUST be signed by the person making the statement and countersigned by the interrogating officer at the end of the statement.

- I Cpl Guthrie; W.C.(VX 23312) who was unarmed, wearing the red cross upon his arm, and left in charge of the hospital at Baboe, Timor, from which, fortunately, patients had been removed a few hours before, was hanged from a tree and had his throat cut. Troops of the Sparrow Force reported this incident. Personally, I verified the fact that Cpl Guthrie had met his end in this way by having to exhume the body from a slit trench in which it had been placed temporarily, in order to recover his identity disc and place his body in a place where it might not escape notice.
- II While traversing country where the Okabeti and Tjamplong roads cross in Timor, looking for dead to give them burial I came across the bodies of 8 Australian soldiers tied together by rope around their wrists. Each had been shot through the head at close quarters. Later it was related that 11 sick men were being removed to the Tjamplong Hospital when captured by the Japanese. After some time the Japanese decided to shoot all the prisoners but three men succeeded in breaking their bonds and escaping. One of the men, whose name I lost during a voyage, reached the Oesapa Besar Prison Camp and confirmed my theory formed from the evidence I had discovered.
- III Pte Terry, E.F. (TX3597) was taken from the Oesapa Besar Prison Camp to drive a truck for the Japanese. During one of his trips he suffered a breakdown to his truck. He was charged by his guard with sabotage, became angry and struck him. For this offence he was shot without trial. Lt. Hirada admitted this. Lt. Hirada was the second officer appointed to the Oesapa Besar Prison Camp succeeding Lt., later Captain, Fukada.

*Other war crimes not specifically mentioned include:-

- (i) Usurpation of sovereignty during military occupation.
- (ii) Compulsory enlistment of soldiers among the inhabitants of occupied territory.
- (iii) Attempts to denationalize the inhabitants of occupied territory
- (iv) Confiscation of property.
- (v) Exaction of illegitimate or of exorbitant contributions and requisitions.
- (vi) Debasement of the currency and issue of spurious currency.
- (vii) Deliberate bombardment of undefended places.
- (viii) Wanton destruction of religious, charitable, educational and historical buildings and monuments.
- (ix) Use of explosive or expanding bullets and other inhuman appliances.
- (x) Directions to give no quarter and refusal of quarter.
- (xi) Misuse of flags of truce.

FULL STATEMENT OF ATROCITY OR CRIME

This MUST be signed by the person making the statement and countersigned by the interrogating officer at the end of the statement.

- I Cpl Guthrie; W.C.(VX 23312) who was unarmed, wearing the red cross upon his arm, and left in charge of the hospital at Baboe, Timor, from which, fortunately, patients had been removed a few hours before, was hanged from a tree and had his throat cut. Troops of the Sparrow Force reported this incident. Personally, I verified the fact that Cpl Guthrie had met his end in this way by having to exhume the body from a slit trench in which it had been placed temporarily, in order to recover his identity disc and place his body in a place where it might not escape notice.
- II While traversing country where the Okabeti and Tjamplong roads cross in Timor, looking for dead to give them burial I came across the bodies of 8 Australian soldiers tied together by rope around their wrists. Each had been shot through the head at close quarters. Later it was related that 11 sick men were being removed to the Tjamplong Hospital when captured by the Japanese. After some time the Japanese decided to shoot all the prisoners but three men succeeded in breaking their bonds and escaping. One of the men, whose name I lost during a voyage, reached the Oesapa Besar Prison Camp and confirmed my theory formed from the evidence I had discovered.
- III Pte Terry, E.F. (TX3597) was taken from the Oesapa Besar Prison Camp to drive a truck for the Japanese. During one of his trips he suffered a breakdown to his truck. He was charged by his guard with sabotage, became angry and struck him. For this offence he was shot without trial. Lt. Hirada admitted this. Lt. Hirada was the second officer appointed to the Oesapa Besar Prison Camp succeeding Lt., later Captain, Fukada.

IV A native, familiarly known as Tommy "Broome", the latter name because he had engaged in pearling in Broome, West Australia and was the proud possessor of a discharge certificate which stated that he had rendered faithful service in his work, spoke to me as I passed him on my way to bury dead after capitulation. Hidashi Hioki, who claimed to be attached to the Tokyo Times in normal times but seemed to be a member of Japanese Intelligence Staff during the war on Timor, was acting as guard and immediately took Tommy into custody. He had him soundly beaten with a large piece of wood, upon his arrival in Tjamplong, I interceded on the native's behalf but my efforts were fruitless. He was taken into a building and a shot rang out. Hioki smilingly told me that Japanese soldiers were merely taking care of my native "friend." His death was confirmed by another native later.

To the best of my belief the above particulars ^{/s/ T. W. Bindeman} are correct.

Affirmed before me at Manila this 1st day of October 1945

/s/ A. Walker, Capt.
 (Signature of Interrogating Officer)

/s/ T. W. Bindeman
 (Signature)

EXHIBIT NO. 1781A

5573-1
Ex 1781

一、武装ヲ解除サレ、腕ニ赤十字章ヲ装束シ、「
 チモール」バライ一ノ病院勤務ノ任ニアツ
 タW.O.「ガスコ」一長(ノ三三三二二)
 ハ！幸キシテ、病院ヨリ感者ハ数時間前
 三ノサキガカ一病院ニ吊サレテ咽嚥ヲ切
 死ハ、彼ノ認識ヲ回復シ、分ラナクナラナ

(昭和十七年)二月一周年九月

チモール、ウサバ、アサ、一丸、一九四二年

六、收容セラレシ敵島收容所並ニ病院及ビソノ時

スバコウ部隊 チモール

四、停止ニナリタル時ノ部隊及ビ(又ハ)ソノ場所

三、氏名 イ・マ・カイヤム、ビンナム

二、階級 従軍收師

一、軍籍符號 W5-1-036

5573-2

イ様ナ場所ニ彼ノ屍体ヲ置クケメニ、一時屍
体ガ仁カレテキタル私イ墮壕カラソノ屍体ヲ己
ムヲ得ズ得シテ、「ガスリール」伍長ガ斯ノ
如キ以後ヲ送ゲタ事ヲ証立テタ。

二、

掘葬スベキ屍体ヲ探シテ「チモール」ノ「オ
カベナイ」ト「チャンブロン」階ガ交叉シ
テキル地方ヲ跋涉シテキル時、私ハ經テ屍首
ヲ一箱ニ裝ガレタ八名ノ捕虜兵ノ屍体ニ出會
シタ。

各人共頭部ヲ近距離カラ切貫カレアキタ。
十一名ノ捕虜兵ガ日本軍ニ捕ヘラレタ時ハ、「
チャンブロン」病院へ移送中デアツタト云フ
語ヲ後ニナツテ聞イタ。暫クシテ、日本軍ハ
ソレ等俘虜ヲ全部射殺スル事ニキメタガ、三
名ハ彼等ノ糧糈ヲ悉リ逃亡スルニ成功シタ。
名前ハ旅行中ニ失ツタガ、其ノ内ノ一名ハ「
ウサバ・ブザール」俘虜收容所ニ到着シ、私
ガ發見シタ證據カラ待タ私ノ調査ヲ確證シテ
クレタノデアル。

三、

馬・E。「テリール」兵卒 (TX三五九七)、日本
軍用ノ「トラツク」ヲ運轉スル爲ニ、「ウサ
バ・ブザール」俘虜收容所カラ進出サレタ。
彼ノ運轉旅行中、トラツクガ故障シタ。

5573--3

彼ハソノ番兵カラ意業タト言掛リラツケラレ
クノテ、信頼シテ番兵ヲ打ツタ。此ノ管テ、
彼ハ義理セナク羽殺サレタ。平庄（屋名不詳）
ガ之ヲ許可シクノテアツタ。
平田中尉ハ深田中尉ニ後ニ大尉ニ次イテ「
ウサバ。ブサール」停身收容所勤ミラ命ゼラ
レタ。次席將校デアツタ。

四、以前、日清戦「ブルーム」テ與殊深々業ニ従
事シテキタト云フノテ、慕シイ仲テハ「ブル
ム」ノ「トミ」トシテ知ラレテキタ。現地
人テ、彼ガ仕事ニ思動シタト云フ事ノ費ツテ
キル事赦証明書ヲ所持シテキルノヲ説リトシ
テキタ。勇ガ、陣屋後私カ身体ノ埋葬ニ行ク途
中、通り掛リニ私ニ語シ掛ケタコトガアツタ。
平時ニハ東京「タイムズ」ニ屬シテキタト言
ツテキルガ、戦守中「チモール」ノ日本情報
部長ノ一員デアツタト息ハレル。「ヒオキ」ヒ
テシ「ガ」番兵ノ後ヲシテキタガ、直チニ「ト
ミ」ヲ捕獲シタ。
「ヒオキ」ハ「チヤンブロン」ニ至差スルヤ
否ヤ彼ヲ大キナ木切テコツビトク叩クカセタ。
私ハ兵ノ現地人ノタメニ報成シタガ、私ノ務
力ハ絶駄デアツタ。

5573--3

四、

彼ハソノ管兵カラ息業タト書掛リラツケラレ
 ヲノテ、偵察シテ管兵ヲ打ツタ。此ノ管テ、
 彼ハ氣割モナク刎殺サレタ。平田（原を不説）
 ガ之ヲ許司シタテアツタ。
 平田中尉ハ深田中尉ニ後ニ天尉ニニ次イテ一
 ウサバ。ゾサール一停房收春所勸志ヲ命ゼラ
 レハ次席將校テアツタ。
 以前、百浪浦一ゾルムニテ與殊操算業ニ從
 事シテキタト云フノテ、慕シイ伸テハ一ゾル
 ムノ一トミ一トシテ知ラレテキタ一現地
 人テ、彼方住事ニ思動シタト云フ事ノ觀ツテ
 キル事叔証院醫ヲ所持シテキルノヲ證リトシ
 テキタ男ガ、降服後私カ房体ノ選擇ニ行ク送
 中、適リ摺リニ私ニ語シ摺ケタコトガアツタ。
 平田ニハ東京一タムズニ屬シテキタト言
 ツテキルガ、敗學中一チモ一ルノ日本情勢
 部員ノ一員テアツタト思ハレ一トヒオキ、ヒ
 テシ一ガ管兵ノ徳ヲシテキタガ、直チニ一ト
 ミ一トヲ柳留シタ。
 一トヒオキ一ハ一チヤソゾロシニ至差スルヤ
 否ヤ彼ヲ大キナ本切テコツビドク叩カカセタ。
 私ハ其ノ現地人ノタメニ執成シタガ、私ノ務
 カハ無事テアツタ。

5573-14

彼ハ我等ノ中ニ迎レ込マレタ、匪シア一發ノ
銃聲カシカ。

「ヒオキ」ハ彼笑シア、日本兵ガ私ノ娯地人
ノ「友人」ヲ單ニ世話シテキルニ遊ギナイノ
タト私ニ語ツタ。彼ノ死ハ、ソノ彼、他ノ現
在人ニモツテ稱讃セラレタ。

E. W. Binchman (署名)

一九〇五年十月一日「マニラ」ニ於テ、本
職ノ前ニテ之ヲ長認ス

..... (新聞官署名)

テイ・ダブリエウ・ビンチマン (署名)

5573-14

彼ハ其時ノ中ニ迎レ込マレタ、匪シア一發ノ
銃聲カシタ。
「ヒオキ」ハ彼笑シア、日本兵ガ私ノ聖地人
ノ「友人」ヲ單ニ世話シテキルニ違ギナイノ
タト私ニ詩ツタ。彼ノ死ハ、ソノ後、他ノ現
代人ニモツテ種々論セラレタ。

W. W. Binchman (署名)

一九〇五年十月一日「マニラ」ニ於テ、本
職ノ前ニテ之ヲ長認ス

..... (歌問自署名)

アイ。タアリエウ。Binchman (署名)

Ex. #1782

DOCUMENT NO. 5579

PAGE 1

AUSTRALIAN WAR CRIMES

BOARD OF INQUIRY

BEFORE HIS HONOR. MR. JUSTICE PHILL

WILLIAM WATT LEGGATT, Sworn and examined:

I am VX. 44907, Lieut.-Col. William Watt Leggatt.
C.O. 2/40th. My private address is Mornington, Victoria.

I was taken prisoner at TIMOR on 23rd February, 1942. Before I was captured we recaptured a village called Babaoe, which had been taken by the Japanese. While we were in possession of the village I saw three men of my battalion who had been tied each to each by string around their wrists. Their throats had been cut and there was evidence that they had also been shot. I was confined in Oesapa Besar.

Accommodation

No covering of any sort was provided at first, except a few native huts for the sick in a separate medical area. We built our own camp, in the manner of native huts.

Food

The only food at first was rice. No cooking utensils were provided and food was cooked in mess tins. Later we obtained some of our own kitchen utensils.

The only water available for any purpose at all, was from a swamp in the area.

Later on, about a month, we were placed on our own half-ration scale from our own rations which had been recovered from our base depot.

Medical and Hygiene

No drugs supplied at all, at first; but we had sufficient of our own drugs to carry on.

Latrines

No latrines were provided. We had to dig our own immediately and very few tools were provided for the purpose.

Work

P.O.W.'s. were employed unloading ships, mainly food.

Munitions

At one time we were asked to unload Munitions. I objected and that was stopped.

The general treatment by the Japanese of the P.O.W.'s was good and I saw only one incident of a man being struck, for stealing. The punishment administered to him was not very severe.

Canteen

Canteen There was no canteen but we were able to buy some food from the natives.

EXECUTION OF V.X. 3597, PRIVATE TERRY, E.F., 2/40th BATT.

A copy of a letter written by me on 14th June, 1942 to the Japanese Commandant of the camp at OESAPA BESAR is attached hereto and marked with a letter "A".

The reply of Corporal Sakakura, for Lieut. M. Harada (the Camp Commandant) dated 16th June, 1942 is attached hereto and marked with the letter "B".

A copy of letter dated 16th June, 1942 from me to the Camp Commandant is attached hereto and marked with the letter "C".

I have no personal knowledge as to who actually executed Private Terry but I have been informed by some of my men that he was executed by a Japanese Sergeant, Soramoto.

In July, 1942 I was taken to the Cycle Camp in Batavia.

ACCOMMODATION: Reasonable, but very overcrowded.

FOOD: Inadequate

MEDICAL & HYGIENE: Medical supplies were short but we were able to purchase some outside. Hygiene was fair.

WORK: Clearing up the town. Officers did not work except in charge of parties.

GENERAL: We were forced to salute all ranks.

The guards used to come through the camps several times a day beating up prisoners of war who did not stand strictly to attention.

I went to Changi on 12th September, 1942 and remained there until the end of hostilities.

This is the second and last sheet of the evidence of Lieut.Col. William Watt Leggatt C.O. 2/40th Batt., taken and sworn before me at Melbourne in the State of Victoria this 24th day of January, 1946.

/s/ W. Watt Leggatt.....
DEPONENT

/s/ G. Philip J.....
MEMBER

Australian Board of Inquiry
into War Crimes.

GIB/CR/lc

LIEUT. COL. W.W. LEGGATT
24/1/46

DOCUMENT NO. 5579

OESAPA BESAR

PAGE 3

"A"

14 Jun 42.

The Commandant
Australian Camp
OESAPA BESAR.

Ref. ALLEGED DEATH OF PTE TERRY E.F.

Information was received yesterday from a driver in KOEPANG that TX 3597 Pte TERRY E F who was driving a truck at SOE, was shot and killed a few days ago.

2. Please advise if this occurred and if so what were the circumstances connected with his death.

Lt Col.
(Sgd) W.W. Leggatt

"B"

Japanese HQ. Oesapa Besar,
16th June 1942.

The Commander,
Australian Camp.

The following message has been received from our HQ at Koepang:-

1. Driver Terry was killed under the following circumstances: Some days ago he was driving a lorry which broke down. He left the lorry by the roadside and went back to the barracks for his meals. One of our N.C.O.'s noticed him and told him he should have brought the truck back to the garage before lunch and ordered him to go out and get it. The N.C.O. again noticed him and repeated his order but he did not obey and struck the N.C.O. and ran away. The garrison in SOE commenced a search and found him and acting on instructions from HQ. in SOE he was killed.
2. In Japanese forces when a person strikes an officer or N.C.O. of higher rank the penalty is always death. This is the first time that a prisoner of war has committed an act of violence and we hope that it will not occur again.
3. We do not wish to show any lack of courtesy to a prisoner of war but it is the duty of a prisoner of war to conduct himself in a proper manner.

(Sgd) Sakakura Cpl
for M. Harada, Lieut.

GIB/CR/2c.

APPENDIX 1.

24/1/46
/s/ G Philp

"C"

OESAPA BESAR
16 Jun 42

The Commandant
Australian Camp
OESAPA BESAR

KILLING OF Pte TERRY

Reference your memo of 16 Jun 42 it seems hardly credible that the summary shooting of Pte TERRY is contravention of even the customs of civilized warfare apart from the rules of the GENEVA CONVENTION should be countenanced by the Japanese authorities.

2. This Force surrendered on the condition that they would be properly treated, according to the rules of Prisoners of War.
3. Apart from the unjustified severity of the penalty should be carried out without a proper trial.
4. Please supply details of the evidence of any witnesses of the occurrence.
5. In view of the fact that the drivers are liable to be subjected to such summary treatment it is requested that they be returned to the P O W Camp.

(Sgd) W Watt Leggett Lt Col

GIB/CR/3c

APPENDIX 2.

LT. COL. W.W. LEGGATT
24/1/46

/s/ G Philp J.

陸軍中佐 W. リゲット 氏宣誓供述ノ按奉。
「ウイリアム・リゲット」宣誓シ突恣セラル。

私ハ V. X. 四四九〇七、陸軍中佐「ウイリアム・
リゲット」リゲットニシテ第二ノ四〇大隊長テアル。
私人トシテノ住所ハ「ヴィンクリア」郡「モイニン」
グロウシップアル。

私ハ一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ二月廿三日「チモ
ル」ニテ艦尾トテツタ。私が捕虜トナル前ニ吾々ハ
「ババオ」ト云フ村ヲ奪ヒ返シタ。其ノ村ハソレ迄
ハ日兵ニ占領サレテシツタ。其ノ村ヲ吾々が占領
シテモツタトキニ私ハ其ノ大隊ノ三人ノ兵ガ擲テ手
裏ヲ縛リ上ゲラレテ唇々ノヲ見タ。彼等ノ咽喉ハ切
ラレテホリ其ノ上射殺サレタ證據モアツタ。私ハ「
カエカバ、ヒサイル」ニ於テ收容監禁サレタ。

宿所ニ於テ初ノ中ハ住ムベキ如何ナル種類ノモノモナ
カツタ。唯僅カニ隔檻病舎トシテ使用スル土人小
屋ガ二三アツタノミダ。吾々ハ自分辯テ土人小屋風
ノ寮舎ヲ築テタ。

食料ニ於テ初ハ唯一ノ食糧トシテ米シカナカツタ。料
理道具ノ設備トシテハ何モナク、食物ハ一切飯盒
ヲ料理シタ。後日ニナツテ吾々自身若干ノ料理

5579-1

1

5570-2

三得具ヲ入手シタ
 ドソナ巨額ニ費用サレルニモ、ヨ、入三ッ得ル水
 ト言ツテハ暗櫃カニ英鎊ニ在ル西物カラ持テ來ル
 モノダケラアツタ
 莫ノ従約一ナヨニツテ吾々ノ國富國給ハ自分ニ欲
 ラサレテアツタ、此ノ精管ヲモ吾々ノ業ヲニテ
 ル財源所カラ取戻シタモノテアル
 醫藥及衛生一初メノ甲ハ藥ノ供給ハ益弊ナカッタ、
 然シ吾々ハ吾々巨額ノ額ヲ充分ニキツテ行ケタ、
 價所一術等價所ノ設備ガナカッタ、吾々ハ自分達ノ
 價所ヲ早速買ラホバナラナカッタ、然シソレヲ獨
 ルニ違異ハ極メテ宜カシカナカッタ
 佐野一捕房宛ハ捕カラ荷物積御シニ復架サレタ、主
 トシテハソレハ食料品ナアツタ
 高橋品一取ル時吾々ハ高橋品ノ積御シラ合ゼラレタ、
 私ガ之ニ對シ異議申立テタノソレハトリヤメ
 ニナツタ
 第二ノ四〇天原V、X、三五九七兵卒R、P、一テ
 リ一ノ預備執行ニ對シ、
 一トオエサバ、ヒサ一ルニ於ケル敬徳寺ノ日本軍司
 令室ニ於テ私ガ一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ六月十四
 日取メタ誓信ノ稿シラ茲ニ添附スル、之レニ(A)ト註

55-19-3

ト記ス。城察所長原田中尉代通坂倉伍長一九四二年/昭和十七年/六月十六日附ノ回答文ヲ茲ニ添附ス、之レヲ(B)ト註記ス。

× × × × × ×

「フイルム」宛郵 (署名)

證人

W・W・「リゲット」(署名)

× × × × × ×

「ホエサバ・ヒール」日本軍司令部

(B)

一九四二年/昭和十七年/六月十六日

森洲人勲 城察所長 櫻

左記ハ「コイバシ」ニ於ケル司令部ヨリ送付~~付~~タルモノナアル。

(一)「テリ」一選擇手ハ左記事情ノ下ニ殺サレタリ

幾日ヲ前ノ暴テアルガ彼ハ貨物自動車ヲ選擇シテ居タガ其貨物自動車ガ攻撃シタ。彼ハ其ノ貨物自動車ヲ際傍ニ置キ放シニシテ倉庫ヲトル儀メ兵舎へ戻ツタ。我ガ下士官ノ一人ガ彼ヲ見ツケ、倉庫ヲトル以テ前ニ其ノ自動車ヲ牽引シテナケレバイハナト迷走シ、行ツテ自動車ヲ預テ來イト命令シタ、其ノ下士官ハ兵隊ヲ見カケ、彼ノ命令ヲ反復シタ、然ル

55.79-14

ニ被レハ命令ニ従モズンテ下士官ヲ毆打シテ逃走
シタ。ソノ一ニ於ケル守備隊ハ捜索ヲ始メ彼レ
ヲ発見シタ。而シテソノ一ニ於ケル司令部ノ指
令ニ逆キ彼ハ殺サレタ。

(二) 日本軍隊ヲハ何人ト雖モ上級將校又ハ下士官ヲ
毆打場合ノ罰則ハ必ズ死刑ナル。臨時捕虜ガ暴
力行使ヲ行ツタノハ之レガ最初ノ事ナル。新カ
ル尋ノ辱罵起ラナイコトヲ希望ス。

(三) 吾々ハ如何ナル場合ニテモ捕虜ニ對シテ任意ニ
欠ケタルコトヲヤリタクナイ、然シテ捕虜トシハ
捕虜ラシク扱フコトヲ~~望~~望シタル。

原田 M 中尉代理
坂倉 伍長 (署名)

Doc. 5802

Excerpts.

Summary of examination of SEBASTIAO GRACA.

Telephone Chief.

Dilli, PORTUGUESE TIMOR (permanent address).

being duly sworn states, I am a Portuguese subject, a Telephone Chief and live at Dilli, PORTUGUESE TIMOR. I was in DILLI when the Japanese first landed on 20th February 1942. I know Doctor OLIVEIRA.

On the 23rd February I was at my property at TATU META. I saw seven Australian soldiers who had been captured by the Japanese. One was a Sergeant. The Australians had their hands bound behind their backs by telephone wire which had been pierced through their wrists. About twenty Japanese were with the Australians. I was too far away to see if a Japanese officer was present.

The Australians were placed in a line and the Japanese commenced to bayonet them. They bayoneted them slowly at first a number of times. After twenty minutes of bayoneting, the Australians were killed by a last thrust of a bayonet.

The Australians were brought to the place in a truck.

The bodies of the Australians were thrown into ditches at the side of the road and the Japanese covered them partly with earth, leaving the legs and feet exposed. The Japanese then left and three days later as the bodies began to smell I informed Doctor OLIVEIRA. It was impossible to pass because of the smell.

The first Sergeant VICENTE of the Chief of Police, came with a party and buried the bodies in a proper manner two or three metres from the side of the road.

Later I went to near the graves and I found an Australian Paybook with a photograph of a soldier wearing sergeant's stripes. I do not remember the name in the Paybook. (Witness was here shown an Australian Paybook and identified it.) Later I took the Paybook to my place where an Australian officer was staying, at LAULARA, and gave him the Paybook. I do not know the name of this Australian officer.

The Australians were dressed in the usual Australian uniforms with Australian hats.

The bodies of the Australians were removed by the Australian Graves Commission in December 1945, after the remains had been exhumed by the Portuguese and placed in boxes.

In the beginning of March, I saw a Dutch officer brought by the Japanese to near the Post Office in Dilli. The Dutch officers hands were bound behind his back. It was about 6 o'clock in the evening. He was placed on the steps of the Post Office. He was left there all night. The next day the Dutch officer asked for water but the Japanese did not give him any.

I do not know the rank of the Dutch officer.

This is page one of the statement by SEBASTIAO GRACA.

[The Dutch officer was bound to a tree and a Japanese officer started to prick him slowly many times with a sword. This went on for ten to twenty minutes and then the Japanese officer killed the Dutch officer by thrusting his sword into the Dutch officers heart. His chest and stomach had been pierced many times.]

I then went away and when I returned at midday the body of the Dutch officer had been taken away.]

In January 1943, I was told that a Portuguese and his mother who was 70 years of age were killed by the Japanese near the garden on the sea front in DILLI. The name of this Portuguese, was ANTONIO AR. UJO who was Secretary of the Administration of ALLEU. They were killed inside a house.

A number of Portuguese prisoners were taken to this house and never came out. This house was the Headquarters of the Japanese Police or Ortori, and the Commandant of the Japanese Police was an officer named MITSUDA.

I do not know the names of any of the Japanese who were concerned in the murders of the Australians or of the Dutch officer.

I could recognize MITSUDA again, but I could not recognize the others as they all appeared alike in features.

The Secretary of the Administration was one that escaped when the Japanese attacked ALLEU.

When the Japanese occupied the East side of DILLI they were commanded by MITSUDA and another officer, Lieutenant MITSUYAKO, and they reached MINTUTO, they killed the Administrator, MENDES LMEIDA and the Chef de Poste P. DINHA.

A Chinese, LEMO FO, went with the Japanese to MINTUTO and saw the happenings. The Chinese later escaped to the Netherlands island. This was on 30th November 1942.

The Japanese with native troops then went to LAUTEM where they killed the Administrator, MANUEL BARRIOS and his wife and two other Portuguese, ANTONIO TEIXEIRA and MARIO CONSALVES. The Japanese also used natives of Dutch Island of ALOR and Dutch TIMOR as black troops in these attacks.

The Commandant of the Dutch native troops was PAULO of AMPBOEA, DUTCH TIMOR. The native troops were organised by natives of Dutch Timor who were taken in large groups to Portuguese Timor to fight for the Japanese.

[I was later put into the concentration camp by the Japanese.]

In September 1945 nine native Chiefs of the Poste of LAELUM were killed by the Japanese because the Chiefs had sheltered PATRICIA LUZ, who was a Portuguese Guerilla and worked with the Australians.

[In the concentration camp, the Japanese did not give sufficient food to us, only small quantities of potatoes and rice. There was a Portuguese Doctor there but he did not get any medical supplies. About fifty adult persons died in the camp through lack of food and through eating poisonous greens which they gathered through hunger. We were not allowed to write letters from the camp, nor were we allowed to receive letters.]

[The Dutch officer was bound to a tree and a Japanese officer started to prick him slowly many times with a sword. This went on for ten to twenty minutes and then the Japanese officer killed the Dutch officer by thrusting his sword into the Dutch officers heart. His chest and stomach had been pierced many times.

I then went away and when I returned at midday the body of the Dutch officer had been taken away.]

In January 1943, I was told that a Portuguese and his mother who was 70 years of age were killed by the Japanese near the garden on the sea front in DILLI. The name of this Portuguese, was ANTONIO AR. UJO who was Secretary of the Administration of ALLEU. They were killed inside a house.

A number of Portuguese prisoners were taken to this house and never came out. This house was the Headquarters of the Japanese Police or Ortori, and the Commandant of the Japanese Police was an officer named MITSUDA.

I do not know the names of any of the Japanese who were concerned in the murders of the Australians or of the Dutch officer.

I could recognize MITSUDA again, but I could not recognize the others as they all appeared alike in features.

The Secretary of the Administration was one that escaped when the Japanese attacked ALLEU.

When the Japanese occupied the East side of DILLI they were commanded by MITSUDA and another officer, Lieutenant MATSUMOTO, and they reached MINTUTO, they killed the Administrator, MENDES LMEIDA and the Chef de Poste P. DINHA.

A Chinese, LEO FO, went with the Japanese to MINTUTO and saw the happenings. The Chinese later escaped to the Netherlands island. This was on 30th November 1942.

The Japanese with native troops then went to LAUTEM where they killed the Administrator, MANUEL BARROS and his wife and two other Portuguese, ANTONIO TEIXEIRA and MARIO CONSALVES. The Japanese also used natives of Dutch Island of ALOR and Dutch TIMOR as black troops in these attacks.

The Commandant of the Dutch native troops was PAULO of ATIMBOEA, DUTCH TIMOR. The native troops were organised by natives of Dutch Timor who were taken in large groups to Portuguese Timor to fight for the Japanese.

[I was later put into the concentration camp by the Japanese.]

In September 1945 nine native Chiefs of the Poste of LAELUM were killed by the Japanese because the Chiefs had sheltered PATRICIA LUZ, who was a Portuguese Guerilla and worked with the Australians.

[In the concentration camp, the Japanese did not give sufficient food to us, only small quantities of potatoes and rice. There was a Portuguese Doctor there but he did not get any medical supplies. About fifty adult persons died in the camp through lack of food and through eating poisonous greens which they gathered through hunger. We were not allowed to write letters from the camp, nor were we allowed to receive letters.]

We were forced to work in vegetable gardens but the fields were not very suitable for vegetables. After the vegetables grew, the Japanese sent natives to take it away.

All my property was taken from me immediately after the Japanese landing. All other places were similarly robbed.

Native girls were forced to sleep with the Japanese. The Chef de Poste at the camp was ordered to bring Portuguese girls to the Japanese. The Chef de Poste, OLIVERIA, refused and he was held all night by the Japanese.

The Portuguese schools were all destroyed and the Japanese opened schools and forced the natives to attend to learn Japanese.

(Signed) Sebastiao Gzaca. .
Signature of Deponent

Taken and sworn before me at DILLI, PORTUGUESE TIMOR, this 25th day of June, 1946.

(Signed) N. F. Quinton -- Major,

being Officer appointed by Commander-in-Chief, S.E.A.S.C., to make this investigation

and

(Signed) H. Pas -- Capt
N.E.I. ARMY.

and

(Signed) -- Illegible --
Intendente, PORTUGUESE TIMOR

Interpreter

I, GIL FIRRIER, certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

(Signed) Gil Firriera --
Interpreter

641783
Doc 5802

「セバステイアノ グラカ」ノ執務局長

電 話 局 長

ポルトガル領「テイモール」、「デイリト」(不審地)

正當ニ宣書シタル後次ノ如ク陳述ス。私ハ電話局長ラシテリスポルトガル国民テポルトガル領「テイモール」ノ「デイリト」ニ住シテ居リマス。一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ二月二十日日本軍ガ最初ニ上陸シタ時私ハ「デイリト」ニ居リマシタ。私ハ僞者ノ「オリヂエラ」ヲ知ツテ居リマス。

二月二十三日「タツ・メタ」ノ自分ノ所有地ニ居リ日本人ニ捕マヘラレテユク七名ノオーストラリア兵ヲ見マシタ。一人ハ軍曹テシタオーストラリア人ハ電話線ヲ後手ニ縛ラレソノ電話線ハ手首ニ突キ通ツテホマシタ。約二十名ノ日本人ガオーストラリア人ニ附イテ居リマシタ。私ハ余リ懼レテホマシタノテ日本士官ガキルカ如何カハ分リマセンテシタ。

オーストラリア人ハ一列ニ並バセラレ日本人ハ後等ヲ銃剣ヲ突キ始メマシタ。最初ハユツクリト何處モ銃剣ヲ突キマシタ。二十分間銃剣ヲ突カレ

Dec 5802

2.

テ後オーストラリア人ハ遊ニ我々ノ一隊ヲ受ケテ
死ニマシタ。

× × × ×

三月ノ始メニ私ハオランダノ一士官ガ一デイト
ールノ郵便局ノ近クニ日本人ニ遊レテ來ラレルノ
ヲ見マシタ。ソノオランダ士官ノ手ハ銀手ニ飾ラ
レテアリマシタ。丁度夕方ノ六時頃ヲシタ。彼ハ
郵便局ノ階梯ノ上ニ立タセラレ一處中ソコニソノ
マ、ニサレマシタ。翌日ソノオランダ士官ハ水ヲ
飲望シマシタガ日本人ハ来ヘマセンデシタ。

私ハコノオランダ士官ノ位階ヲ知リマセン。

× × × ×

コノオランダ士官ハ木ニ登リツケラレ日本士官
ハ劍ヲユツクリト何回モ彼ヲ突キ刺メマシタ。コ
レハ十分カラ二下分位ノ間ニケラレソレカラ日本
士官ハオランダ士官ノ心臓ニ劍ヲ突キサシテ殺シ
テシマヒマシタ。彼ノ胸筋及ビ胃ハ何回モ劍ヲ突
カシマシタ。

Dec 5802

テ後ホーフトラリヤ人ハ遊ニ景後ノ一際ヲ受ケテ
死ニマシタ。

× × × ×

三月ノ始メニ私ハホラレダノ一士官ガ一ザイリ
一ノ島領局ノ近クニ日本人ニ遊レテ茶ラレルノ
ヲ見マシタ。ソノホランダ士官ノ手ハ銃手ニ歸ラ
レテシリマシタ。丁度夕方ノ六時頃デシタ。彼ハ
島領局ノ階段ノ上ニ立タセラレ一島中ソコニソノ
マノニサレマシタ。翌日ソノホランダ士官ハ水ヲ
所望シマシタカ日本人ハ答ヘマセンデシタ。

私ハコノホランダ士官ノ位階ヲ知リマセン。

× × × ×

コノホランダ士官ハ木ニ登リツケラレ日本士官
ハ劍デユツクリト何處モ彼ヲ突キ捕メマシタ。コ
レハ十分カヲ二十分位ノ間候ケラレソレカラ日本
士官ハホランダ士官ノ心慮ニ知ラ突キサシテ殺シ
テシマヒマシタ。彼ノ胸蓋及ビ胃ハ何處モ劍デ突
カレマシタ。

2.

Doc 5802

私ハソレカラ出カケマシタガ正午ニ歸ツテ参リ
マシタ時ニハソノオラレダ士官ノ死骸ハ取片附カ
ラレテラリマシタ。

× × × ×

日本人ハ私ヲ後テ停息収容所ニハレマシタ。

× × × ×

コノ停息収容所ニ日本人ハ幾々ニ十分ナ食料ヲ
與ヘズタゞ僅カテ馬鈴薯ト米僅ラクレタダケサシ
タ。ソコニハポルトガル人ノ醫者ガ居リマシタガ
醫療藥品ヲ供給サレマセンデシタ。五十八許リノ
成年者ガ収容所テ食糧ノ不足ヲ飢ノ爲メニ毒ノア
ル草ヲ採メテ之ヲ食シタ爲ニ死ニマシタ。収容所
カラ手紙ヲ出スコトハ許サレズ又手紙ヲ受取ルコ
トモ許サレマセンデシタ。

× × × ×

私達ハ野菜畑ヲ働カセラレマシタガ畑ハ野菜ニ

Doc 5802

4

大シテ適當シテ屠リマセシテシタ。野菜ガ出來ル
ト日本人ハ土民ヲ遊ツテ之ヲ持去リマシタ。

私ノ財産ハ全部日本軍ガ上陸スルト直ク取り上
ゲラレマシタ。他ノ接収モ同様ニ奪ハレマシタ。

土民ノ嫌疑ハ日本軍ト一掃ニ無遺ニ捜サセラレ
マシタ收容所ニ屠タ一シエフデボステルノ部長
ノハポルトガルノ娘ヲ日本人ノ所ニ送レテクル様
命令サレマシタ。一シエフデボステルノ一ホリベ
リアルガ所ハリマスト日本人ハ一院中彼ヲ監禁シ
マシタ。

× × × ×

証言者 署名 セバステイアノ グラカ

右ハ一九四六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ六月二十五日ポ
ルトガル領「テイモトル」「テイリト」ニテ私ノ
巨首ニ於テ証言シ宣誓セリ。

陸軍少佐 N・H・クキントン(署名)

Doc 5802

右ハ東南アジア軍司令官ニヨリコノ調任ヲナス爲
メ任命セラレタル士官ナリ。

領領東印度陸軍大尉 H. P. I. S. (署名)

ボルネオ領アモル知事 (署名)

通 譯 人

私即チ一ギル・アイリエラハ証人が上記ノ署
名ヲスル前ニ証人ニ對シ証人ノ自由語ヲ前記証
言録要ヲ正當ニ翻譯シタルコトヲ證明ス

通譯者 一ギル アイリエラ (署名)

Q. # 1784

Doc. No. 5585

Page 1

CERTIFICATE.

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, Captain RNIA, Head of War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS), being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed statement is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original Dutch document, entitled:

Statement by MALKIANUS AUGUSTIJN, drawn up by T. DE BREE, NCO RNIA, acting security officer, dated Koepang, 16th October 1945, No. OM/21/LI, 1456R, with annexed situation sketch, - which original document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

signature: /s/ CHARLES JONGENEEL.

(SEAL)

Batavia, 28th August 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K.A. DE WEERD, LL.D.,
Major Artillery RNIA, Senior Official attached to the Office
of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K.A. DE WEERD.

Translation of the Dutch original.

-STATEMENT-

Today, the 16th of October 1945, at 3 pm, a person, unknown to me appeared before me

T. DE BREE, J.O.I., in charge of security investigation at Koepang -
who, when questioned, gave as his name:

MELKIANUS AUGUSTUN, born at Kisar-Aboesoer, age 43 years, occupation none.

He stated as follows:

About the 13th or 14th of August 1942, I went together with the Japanese marines to Soeway (Portuguese Timor) under the command of a Japanese officer, with the rank of a captain. I was ordered to function as an interpreter.

On the second day at Soeway some Portuguese Timorese natives reported to the Japanese that they had discovered an European, who was hiding himself not far away in the bush. Immediately about 10 Japanese soldiers and about 10 Port. Timorese natives went to the bush to capture the mentioned European. I do not know any of the men who went on this patrol.

It was still before 12 am of this same day that the patrol returned with an European, dressed in the uniform of the N.I. Army, green trousers, puttees, green shirt, green forage-cap. Because of the distance (about 60 metres) I did not recognize him.

About 3 am. MURAKAMI, the Japanese interpreter, came to me and asked me whether I knew the sub-lieutenant SIEFKENS. I answered in the affirmative, because I knew sub-lieutenant SIEFKENS at Koepang where he lived in the ward of Mardeka. After that this MURAKAMI asked me whether I dared to behead an European. I answered that I did not dare to do that. He asked the same question to Kapipann and got the same answer. Then MURAKAMI said to me: "My sword has eaten already many persons and today my sword will eat another one." After that he left us.

At about 6 pm. of the same day I saw that sub-lieutenant SIEFKENS was brought to already dug hole. He had to step into that hole and after that he was blindfolded with a white cloth. Then 10 soldiers took their stand at one side of the grave while two officers stood at the other side. MURAKAMI came and took his stand between these officers, drew his sword, grasped it with both his hands and beheaded his victim with the cry of: "Tenno Heika." Head and body fell into the grave after which the Japanese left

the place and our patrol continued it's march.

I dare to affirm this statement on oath,

Koepang the 16th of October 1945.

Signed (T. de BREE)
W.O.I. in charge of security
investigations

The appearer signed
M. AUGUSTUN.

This statement is read to M.AUGUSTUN in a translation from the
Dutch in to the Malay language in the presence of S.SAUBAKI and
D. KENNING -

The witnesses:

Signed: S. SAUBAKI
Signed: D. KENNING

Doc. 5585

14

警務部 第五五八五號

通 告

私ハ、F. DE BREE 准尉ヲ KOEPANG ニ於ケル治安調査 (SECURITY INVESTIGATION) ヲ擔當シテキル。

本日一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ十月十六日午後三時一人ノ未知ノ男ガ自分ノ所ヘ來タ。質問サレタ時、彼ハ姓名 MELKIANUS AUGUSTUS、出生地 KISAR LABOESOER、當年四十三才、無職ト返答シタ。

彼ハ次ノ如ク叙述シタ。

一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ八月十三、十四日頃、私ハ海軍大臣ナル一日本人士官ノ指揮下ニアツタ日本陸隊ト共ニ SOEWAY (ホルトガル領ノチモール) へ行ツタ。私ハ通譯トシテ何クモ命ゼラレタ。

二白目 SOEWAY ニテ歐人ノホルトガル領チモールノ土民ガ、程近イ叢林ニ隠レテキル歐人ヲ監視シタト日本兵ニ報告シタ。即ち是ニ下人バカリノ日本兵ト約下人ノホルトガル領チモール土民ガソノ歐人ヲ捕ヘント叢林ニ赴イタ。

私ハコノ深索ニ由リケタ人々ノ申語ヲモ知ラナイ。

一歐人ヲ伴ツテ例ノ深索ガ戻ツテ來タノハ、同日ノマダ午前十二時前デアツタ。

Doc 5585

24

ソノ歐洲人ハ馬印國真ノ制服ヲ着、綠色ノズボン
ヲ穿キ、ゲートルヲツケ、緑ノシャツヲ着、綠色
ノ袴ヲカブツテキタ。原簿ガ透イタメ（洞穴下
米）私ハ彼ガ誰ダカ認メラレナカツタ。

三時頃日本人通譯ノ村上前私ノ許へ來、SHEE
KENS 少尉ヲ知ツテキルカト訊ネタノテ知ツテキ
ルト答へタ。ト云フノハ私ハ、SHEEKENS 少尉ハ
KOBANGノMARDEKA區ニ住ンテキタノテ知ツテキ
タノダツタ。次テコノ村上前私ニ、恩ヒ切ツテ、
歐洲人ノ首ガ斬レルカト訊ネタノテ到底ソノナ真
似ハ出來ヌト答へタ。彼ハ更ニKAPIPANニ同ジ
向ヲ出シ、私ト同ジ答ヲ得タ。ソコテ村上前私ニ
云ツタ。「俺ノ劍ハ今迄ニ多クノ人間ノ血ヲ吸ツ
タガ今日モ新シイ血ヲ吸フダラワ」コウ云ツテ笑
去ツタ。

同日ノ午後六時頃、私ハSHEEKENS 少尉ガモウ
堀ツテアツタ穴ノ處へ延レテ行カレルノヲ見タ。
彼ハソノ穴ノ中へ歩ミ入ラサレ、ソレカラ白布テ
目隠シラサレタ。ソコテ十人ノ兵隊ガソノ懸穴ノ
片側ニ立テ、一方二人ノ侍様ガ、反対側ニ立ツタ。
村上前ガヤツテ來テ、コノ二人ノ所持ノ筒ニ立テ、
劍ヲ返キ、兩手ヲ筒ヲ通シテ振りカブリ「天皇陛下
下ト申ンテ、ソノ愛馬君ノ首ヲ斬リ捨テタ。

Doc 5585

24

ソノ歐州人ハ島印國ノ制服ヲ着、綠色ノズボン
ヲ穿キ、ゲートルヲツケ、緑ノシャツヲ着、綠色
ノ袴ヲカブツテキタ。軍帽ガ違イタメ（洞天下
米）私ハ彼ガ誰ダカ認メラレナカツタ。

三時頃日本人通譯ノ村上ガ私ノ許ヘ來、SHEP
KENS 少尉ヲ知ツテキルカト訊ネタノテ知ツテキ
ルト答ヘタ。ト云フノハ私ハ、SHEP KENS 少尉ハ
KOE PANG ノ MARDEKA 區ニ住ンテキタノテ知ツテキ
タノダツタ。次テコノ村上ハ私ニ、恩ヒ切ツテ、
歐洲人ノ首ガ斬レルカト訊ネタノテ到底ソノナ真
似ハ出來ヌト答ヘタ。彼ハ更ニ KAPITAN ニ同ジ
向ラ出ツ、私ト同ジ答ヲ得タ。ソコテ村上ハ私ニ
云ツタ。「俺ノ剣ハ今迄ニ多クノ人間ノ血ヲ吸ツ
タガ今日モ新シイ血ヲ吸フダラウーコウ云ツテ候
去ツタ。

同日ノ午後六時頃、私ハ SHEP KENS 少尉ガモウ
堀ツテアツタ穴ノ處ヘ進レテ行カレルヲ見タ。彼
ハソノ穴ノ中ヘ歩ミ入ラサレ、ソレカラ白布ヲ
目隠シラサレタ。ソコテ十人ノ兵隊ガソノ墓穴ノ
片側ニ立テ、一方二人ノ將校ガ、反対側ニ立ツタ。
村上ガヤツテ來テ、コノ二人ノ將校ノ間ニ立テ、
剣ヲ抜キ、兩手ヲ柄ヲ握ンテ振りカブリ「天皇陛下
下一ト叫ンテ、ソノ發聲者ノ首ヲ斬リ捨テタ。

Doc 5585

3. A

首ト管ハ証穴へ審テ送ミ、ソノ後、日本人送ハソ
ノ場ヲ去リ、我々探察員ハ先へ送ミ候ケタ。

書ツテコノ原通ヲ確証スル

一九四五年／昭和二十年／十月十六日 KOEPANG ニテ

F. De BREE (署名)

准尉・治安調査係

出頭人署名 M. AUGUSTUN

コノ原通書ハオランダ語ヨリマレ一語ニ翻譯セル
モノヲ、S. SAUBAKI ト D. KENNING ノ立會ノ下ニ M.
AUGUSTUN ニ讀ミ聞カセラレタ。

證人

署名 S. SAUBAKI

署名 D. KENNING

Doc 5585 (cont)

証 明 書

左ニ署名セル「オランダ軍情報局 / NETHERS / 戦争
犯罪探検隊の印真大尉チャールズ ヨングネール
/ CHARLES JONGENEEL /」ハ正式宣言ノ後、添附供
求書ガ下記地名ノ和蘭語文書原本ノ全文ニシテ真
實、完全且正確ナル寫シナルコトヲ證實ス。

コエバング / KOEBANG / 一九四五年 / 昭和二十年 /
十月十六日附、第 OM / RI / M, 1456 号、前印真下士
官治安尉代理 T. テー・ブレイ / F. DE BREE / ニ
ヨリ作感セラレタルメルキアヌス・アウガステン
/ MELKIANUS AUGUSTIJN / ニ依ル叙述書、一情況陳
記添附シ、該文書ノ原本ハオランダ軍情報局ノ公
式記号ノ一部ナリ

署名 チャールズ・ヨングネール / 署名 /
/ CHARLES JONGENEEL /

官 印 於 バタビア

一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 八月二十八日

右ハ官印領印既探検隊隊長事務局前任官印真記
長少佐法学博士 ケイ・エイ・デー・ウエーアド・
/ K. A. DE WEERD / ノ面前ニ於テ署名シ且蓋印セリ

署名 ケイ・エイ・デー・ウエーアド / 署名 /
/ K. A. DE WEERD /

官 印

✱

Q. #1785

DOCUMENT NO. 5578

PAGE 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report to a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Report concerning Criminals of War Working Party Flores, drawn up by Capt. A.C.J. de THOUARS, Ldst soldier C.K. BRANTS and Res. 1st Lt. H.H.J. de VRIES, No. OM 205/E,"

which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE:

/s/ (Ch. Jongeneel)
 (S E A L)
BATAVIA, June 7th 1946

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

CX #1785

DOCUMENT NO. 5578

PAGE 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report to a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Report concerning Criminals of War Working Party Flores, drawn up by Capt. A.C.J. de THOUARS, Ldst soldier C.K. BRAWIS and Res. 1st Lt. H.H.J. de VRIES, No. OM 205/E,"

which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE:

(
/s/ (Ch. Jongeneel)
(S E A L)
BATAVIA, June 7th 1946

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

CRIMINALS OF WAR WORKING PARTY FLORES

As criminals of war are considered all Japanese instances, authorities and military men (Korean guards incl.) who can be made responsible for, we well as those directly or indirectly concerned with, the undermentioned facts that are regarded as war crimes:

- A. The using of Ps/W to execute military works, viz. unloading war materials (benzine, oil, aeroplane bombs) and designing military airbases.
Reference is made to which is mentioned in enclosed report.
Responsible herefore are held the Japanese command of the P.O.W. camps in the area concerned and the possible higher military instance which gave orders hereto to this command.
- B. To make a working party as the undermentioned of a great number of Ps/W who on account of their age, physical condition and/or condition of health ought not to have been brought into consideration.
Reference to statement sub "Composition of transport"
Responsible herefore are the instances mentioned sub A, the medical authorities, who on 18th April 1943 inspected at Tjimahi the departing persons, the senior officer who addressed them on April previous to 18th at Sourabaya and possible also the Japanese camp commandant ASHITA who the day before inspected them personally.
- C. The transport of Ps/W to Flores under conditions (want of accommodation and hygienic supplies on the ships, inadequate food, want of medicines and heavy unloading work), that inevitably led to weakening, illness and death.
Reference to statement on "Outward voyage Sourabaya-Flores".
Responsible herefore are the instances mentioned sub A/ and persons, the authorities specially charged with the regulation of the voyage, and the on one of the vessels travelling commandant ASHITA, who neglected to make rules to ameliorate the situation.
- D. The transport of Ps/W Flores on ships that carried i.a. benzine, oil and aeroplane bombs, as well as using the Ps/W to unload this cargo at places more or less exposed to bombardments (f.i. Laeteng and Koepang), this without practising safety rules.
Reference is made to the statement sub "Outward voyage Sourabaya - Flores (via Timor)".
Responsible herefore are the instances mentioned sub C and the authorities with the exception of ASHITA (insofar as he at least in the point had no influence or authority).
- E. To make Ps/W reside at Macemore (Flores) during many weeks without any covering, in the open air (incl. hundreds of sick people, amongst whom many serious cases), in which conditions nursing of the patients was practically impossible through utter lack of hygienic supplies and the number of cases and deaths in this period increases in jumps.
For further details reference is made to the report sub III "Stay at Flores" under the headings "Blom-Camp" - Material care, 1st and 2nd Sickcamp (So-called Wulff-Camps) - Material care and health condition".

Responsible

Responsible herefore are the instances and persons mentioned sub A the P/W Command at Ambon (under which resort also Flores fell), the camp commandant ASHITA and possibly the directing medical authorities (in as far as these knowing about the bad health conditions nevertheless neglected to have measures taken.

- F. The transport thereafter of Ps/W in barracks in which accommodation, hygienic supplies etc. offered insufficient opportunity to prevent further spreading of diseases and to attain recovery of the already present patients, and of which the main part of the camp was situated in such a way in regard to the contiguous aerodrome, that there was continuous danger of bomb ardnments and/or machinegunning, without there being any decisive safety measures.

Reference is made to information re this in the report sub III "Stay at Flores" under the headings "Blom-camp-Material care-Safety/protection, "1st and 2nd Sick-Camp (also-called Wulff-camps) - Material care.

- G. Responsible herefore are the instances and authorities sub E. To supply inadequate food (which caused weakening and greater susceptibility for diseases and also deteriorated the possibilities for recovery of the sick seriously) and insufficient medicines (which made recovery of many ill people and the prophylactic administration of medicines - specially quinine - impossible). For further details reference is made to the report sub III "Stay at Flores" under the headings "Blomp-camp & 1st and 2nd sick-camps (so-called Wulff-camps) - Material care,

Responsible herefore are the instances and authorities mentioned sub E, the Japanese sergeant and orderly NAKAHARA and the Korean hospital soldier (in as far as this one on his own account and purposely limited the supply of medicines still further), the Korean intendant and guards, who regularly the meat meant for Ps/W and other things used for themselves and those Korean guard commandants and guards who most often the Central Purchase to get restoratives (egs f.i.) from the suppliers.

- H. To employ Ps/W in places exposed to attacks of allies planes (aerodromes, ports), as well as have them carry out heavy duties under unfavorable conditions (long working hours, inadequate food, etc.) and by persons not fit for it (amongst others ill persons indicated by the guard OYAMA).

Responsible herefore are the instances and authorities mentioned sub A, as well as the Japanese and Korean military men who are guilty, directly or indirectly, of above mentioned.

- J. The absolute lack of immediate management by the Japanese camp commandant and his subaltern officers (excl. Aoki), the practical impossibility for the Netherlands camp commandant to contact firstmentioned, and to obtain any amelioration with lastmentioned (excl. Aoki)

Reference to report sub III "Stay at Flores" behaviour of the guards.

Responsible herefore are the authorities mentioned sub A, the Japanese camp commandant and subaltern officers.

- K. The execution of the escaped Ps/W Visser and the murder of the P/W Borgman.

Reference to report sub III "Stay at Flores" - Execution/murder.

Responsible herefore are the Japanese camp commandant, all high authorities, who ordered or approved of Visser's execution and / possible

- possible the Korean guard, who shot Borgman.
- L. The death of 214 Ps/W during the transport to/from and the stay at Flores, without mentioning the later occurring deaths and the permanent weakening of tens other victims of this working party.
Responsible herefore are all abovementioned sub A up till and including I instances, authorities, officers, subaltern officers and men.
- I. The utterly unnecessary torturing, beating, maltreating, of and wresting and stealing from Ps/W by the greater part of the Korean Guard and the maltreatment by the interpreter ASUMA, against which the Japanese camp commandant and his N.C.O.'s (sergeant major Aoki Excepted) did not act, or if he did inadequately.
Further details in report sub II "Stay at Flores" - behaviour of guards.
Responsible herefore are the instances and authorities sub A, as well as the Japanese and Korean military men, who directly or indirectly have been guilty abovementioned.

I. COMPOSITION OF TRANSPORT

Because at present the completed details about the composition of the Flores-transport cannot be disposed of, we have to be satisfied with the information that the total number of 2079 men consisted of a contingent of 1974 men for the P/W camp at Tjimahi (4th/9th bataljon) and the remainder of 105 men from the P/W camp at Sourabaya (Jaarmarkt) - resulting in the liquidation of this camp. Attention is drawn to the fact the contingent from Tjimahi especially consisted of a great number of older and physically weak people, apparent from the fact that the death list of this transport counted 90 deceased of above 40 years of age, ex-Tjimahi.

It is accepted that the Japanese authorities

- a. who ordered the composition of the Tjimahi-contingent of this transport to the Netherlands commandant of the P/W camp at that place:
- b. who inspected the Ps/W who were indicated by lastmentioned for this transport, on 16th April 1943 in the presence of the Netherlands camp commandant at Tjimahi,
- c. who visited the departing on the morning of embarkation (April 1943) at Sourabaya (Jaarmarkt, namely the senior officer who addressed them on that occasion.

Beforhand must have known the destination of the voyage, as well as the transport condition, the accommodation at Flores and other things, as well as the duty-work to be done there.

Apart from the question in how far the health condition and age of the indicated Ps/W was taken into consideration in the instruction to the Netherlands camp commandant at Tjimahi, it has to be stated that the Japanese authorities at abovementioned inspection in any case could have been that it could be accepted of a great part of the persons who were not excluded on account of their health, and later taken of this list, that they on account of their age and physical condition reasonably could have been equal to the voyage and the employment. This not in connection with the second question whether at that moment they knew that among the indicated persons there were a number of those who recently had been dismissed from hospital and were not quite recovered yet, and whether they knew that among those who were left behind (about men) there were adequate young and strong persons to take the place in the transport for the unfit.

Although

Although it is to be doubted whether the Japanese commandant of the transport, Lt. ASHITA, at the moment he held the inspection prior to the departure from Sourabaya, might have been able to make alterations, it must be stated, that mentioned ASHITA ought to have known that after a number of sick, weak and older (above 50 years of age) people had been singled out, part of the departing was not strong enough to outlive this escapade.

In any case ASHITA who was conversant with the age and outward appearance of the departing, utterly neglected to take this into consideration during the voyage and the stay at Flores.

OUTWARD VOYAGE SOURABAYA - FLORES (via TIMOR).

EMBARKMENT AT SOURABAYA

Hygienic supplies.

By the way of a "show" the people who had to embark were gathered in an open shed used for manganese ore, and were disinfected by a group of Japanese orderlies dressed in white coats and with mouth-masks, that is to say packed and loaded as they were with their luggage they had to walk along a pumping apparatus and were bedusted with an unknown liquid. (This is only mentioned as a contrast of this comedy on the one side and the bad conditions, hygienic during the progress of this voyage on the other side.

Behaviour of the guards.

Already directly after arrival at Sourabaya the Korean guards started to act palpably. During embarkation the "big luggage" (field sacks etc.) was roughly snatched away from the Ps/W and flung on a stack; the men themselves were driven into the holds with pushes, beatings and bad language.

SEA VOYAGE SOURABAYA - MACEMERE (FLORES).

Material care.

Accommodation. The accommodation on each of the three ships was absolutely inadequate. In the between decks were sleeping places of wood at the height of one meter, on which and under which there was only room for the Ps/W, when all sat down hunched up; part of the people stayed and slept on the uncovered upper deck (in between the winches, in the machine-oil, and up and under the freight cars, next to the pigsties and the latrines) and all this often during heavy rains at night; as a result thereof the situation in the hold became better; to lay down stretched out, however, was impossible, there was no passage, the light was inadequate or there was no light at all. Therefore it was impossible for many (especially for stomach-patient) to reach the latrine on the upper decks in time, so that the excrements dropped along the ladders in the holds and the sleeping places and soiled those sleeping under it; respectively infected them. Especially the first nights many slept standing upright. Protest with the Japanese guards resulted in the advice to sleep in turns. The above-mentioned counted for the s.s. "Tasima Maru" ad about 7000 tons (on which the between deck of hold II and the midship's between-deck were available for 1030 men, but 150 to 200 men stayed on deck uncovered, which stay was still made more difficult when between Dilly and Koepang 3 loading prahoes still more limited the sleeping-places and hindered the ventilation in the holds) as well as for the s.s. "Tensio Maru" ad 5000 to 6000 tons (here the between deck of hold I and in the beginning part of the centrecastle at star-board was available for 945 men); Concerning last mentioned ship it is told that after a few days the Ps/W were removed from the centrecastle and first

/ had

had to find places on deck upon hold II and later on (after unloading at Dilly Laoeteng and Koepang) when already part of the men were sick, together with others in the hold of health I viz. upon a row of standing drums, filled with oil and benzine. The third ship of about 4500 tons (name unknown) contained 104 Ps/W who together with 200 to 300 coolies from Singapore (Malays, Chinese, British Indians) and a number of Madurese prahoe-skippers were lodged in the betweendeck of hatch I which also had wooden places to sleep; outstretched position was possible, but the room in width was very narrow; At Koepang accommodation got still worse because in the same hold a number of sick and, during the bombing of the aerodrome at night there, hurt Japanese were lodged.

Hygienic supplies. The hygienic supplies on the ships were very inadequate. The latrine-sheds built of wood and alongside the gangway of the fore-part of the ship contained at the most 6 squatting places and 2 urinaries, which were often closed (during unloading f.i.) or reserved for the Japanese; The decline of the gutter and the amount of water available were insufficient; the waste-pipe outside the deck was too short causing the excrements to be spread over the deck at the smallest gust of wind even, and especially over the only place where the food had to be distributed and in the neighbourhood whereof the greater part of the Ps/W had to eat. The lack of latrines was apparent through the fact because of the long queues which practically night and day were waiting in front of the lavatories many were forced to discharge on deck which especially at night caused many sources of infection. The abovementioned counts for all three ships to about the same extent. The "Tasima Maru" as well as the "Tensio Maru" had a latrine shed at starboard and at larboard with 3 squatting places and 1 urinary, which larboard shed of lastmentioned vessel practically the whole day reserved for the Japanese, whilst at firstmentioned ship part of the latrines at irregular intervals was closed for Ps/W. On the third ship only 2 of the 3 squatting places in the latrineshed were available for the 104 Ps/W and 250 coolies, whilst there was no urinary. Opportunity to bathe and wash was at none of the ships, the little water which the Ps/W sometimes got was as a rule hardly enough to wash up the eating pans. The washing of clothes was out of the question which had disastrous result for many stomach-patient naturally. To get rid of rubbish was not taken care of (and to throw it overboard is forbidden in times of war).

Medical Care. The medicines especially meant and packed for this voyage were said to be put away in the hold at an unapproachable place. For this reason the repeated requests of our doctors to give some medicines, dressing material and disinfectants were refused; the supply thereof could only come from the very limited amount which our doctors and orderlies possessed. Needless to say what this meant during the extension of the number of stomach-patients (who mainly could be treated with magnesium sulphate and porridge diet) and infected wounds (as a result from the unloading duties). There was no room to nurse, to treat or to isolate. An improvised uncovered nursingroom on the poopdeck of the s.s. "Tasima Maru", as well as a shed situated behind the kitchen and used as "isolation shed", which gave place for 3 patients appeared to be utterly insufficient. On the s.s. "Tensio Maru" there was no nursingroom available; in the last days a little corner on the upperdeck was needed for seriously

ill dysentery cases. Eod pans were not available on any of the ships; serious cases had to use a limited number of little tins and bucket, which through lack of water could not be cleaned sufficiently.

Food supplies. The food supply on all ships was wholly inadequate. The food mainly consisted of small amounts of rice and wahoo, sometimes added with a little meat or fish, or left-overs from the Japanese kitchen. Usually the meals were limited to 2 per day. On the s.s. "Tensio Maru" the food was cooked with seawater - in order to economize on salt - and the rice that was always served as a porridge was mixed with undigestible kedelehbeans; this last fact added to the quick extension of the number of stomach patients; the 104 Ps/W on the ship with unknown names have been privileged above the others to a certain extent because they had the same food as the 250 coolies traveling with them. The distribution of drink was limited to 2 cups "tea" per day on every ship and thus also inadequate.

DUTIES.

Sport of duty. During the voyage the duties existed of heavy unloading at Dilly, Laoeteng and Koepang, at a quick rate and during continuous chasing up. Moreover, the people often had to stand in the water more than waist high during hours to land the goods (bombs, benzine, oil, and food) from the unloading crafts. That this added to the quick extension of the number of stomach-patients is self-explanatory.

Physical condition of the working parties. Not mentioning the fact that the bad accommodation and food during the previous days of the voyage in general already deteriorated the condition of the Ps/W and a great number on account of their age, physical condition and their not being in training was totally inefficient for this work, it has to be stated, that on s.s. "Tasima Maru" also had to go on duty those Ps/W who were declared ill by our doctors and they were beaten out of the holds by the guards. Therefore it is not very amazing that f.i. it happened on the "Tasima Maru" that out of the 300 on duty 100 men had to return to the ship on account of stomach troubles and exhaustion.

Duration of the duty/Rests. The unloading duties lasted about from 9 o'clock a.m. to 3 p.m. and sometimes (f.i. at Koepang) until far after midnight. The rests during the duties usually was very short as well as the official rests (for meals); at Koepang even no rest was given during the last day. The food was distributed by the ships. The drinking supply was short and at Koepang often inadequate.

Safety/safe-guarding.

On board the ships. During unloading at Dilly, Laoeteng and Koepang it appeared that the cargo of the ships amongst other things consisted of a considerable amount of benzine, oil and aeroplane bombs, which were located on the forepart of the ship in the holds under the between-decks, where the Ps/W stayed. The above-mentioned counts for each of the 3 ships, and also has to be mentioned the fact that on the s.s. "Tensio Maru" during the last part of the voyage a remainder of filled benzine - and oil-drums in the hold under hatch I were placed. In the quality of safe-guarding there were sloops, enough for a cargo ship crew in normal times. Moreover, a limited number of rafts and a heap of life-belts, which were not allowed to be distributed. Each ship was supplied with A.A. battery (incl. operators) which was used during the /
bombing

bombing of the aerodrome Koepang on the s.s. "Tasima Maru" lying on the roads. The ships have been convoyed during the whole voyage by a Japanese corvette.

During duty-work. During unloading at Dilly, Laceteng and Koepang (which 2 lastmentioned places regularly subject to bombing) no regulations or precautions for the safety / safeguarding of the Ps/W who had to land the contraband were taken. During the bombing of the aerodrome at Koepang in the night of 7/8 May 1943 those on duty ashore had to try to find cover on their own initiative.

Health condition. The bad accommodation, the very bad hygienic precautions, the fact that it was impossible to do proper nursing, the inadequate food and the heavy unloading duties have been the causes that the health condition grew worse every day. At the disembarkation at Macemere f.i. there were already 126 dysentery cases amongst the Ps/W of s.s. "Tasima Maru", 63 of which (incl. 25 very) serious. It was the same on the other ships, only the amounts were smaller.

Deaths. On May 1943 the first victim died of dysentery and heart-berri2 on the s.s. "Tasima Maru". Although a funeral ashore was possible as the ship was in the Koepang roads, a request there-to was refused and the corpse was put overboard after leaving Koepang. On board the third (name unknown) ship lying on the Macemere roads on 11th May 1943 the second death occurred.

Behaviour of guards.

Japanese commandant and N.C.O.'s. The Japanese commandant as well as the Japanese N.C.O.'s never minded the Ps/W during the voyage and left the management entirely to the Korean guards; the Japanese interpreter ASHIDA, who personally maltreated (beating with a piece of wood and kicking) a number of Ps/W.

Korean guards. Although these men were not yet "in full swing" on the ships, some of them amongst others the guards TAMURA and MATSUOKA who on the s.s. "Tasima Maru" beat the sick out of the holds for duty-work (as already mentioned above) directly applied themselves to beating and maltreating. It is remarkable that as from the disembarkation on this point they inspired.

DEBARKATION AT MACEMERE.

s.s. "Tasima Maru" the Ps/W of this ship were disembarked on the 10th of May 1943. During this the sick had to wait in a lighter alongside for a tugboat during 2 hours in the burning sun. After they had waited a considerable time on a shadowless tennis court (where they had to discharge in gutters and slokans) the serious cases were transported on trucks to the coconut garden announced as a hospital, which later became known as the 1st Wulff camp (so undermentioned). The less seriously ill patients originally would have been transported by truck, but finally they had to walk to their destination (1 1/2 km). The healthy Ps/W instantaneously had to start unloading the ship and only arrived in "camp" at night at about 11 o'clock.

s.s. "Tasima Maru". On May the 11th, 1943, the Ps/W of this ship were disembarked. The Korean Guards cramped the landing sloops under much shouting and beating, with healthy as well as with sick persons (amongst whom very serious cases); for the embarkation of lastmentioned no precautions were made, neither for the stay on board the sloops (the greater part had to stand). Most of the people had to stay on the uncovered tennis court from about 10 a.m. until 3 a.m. and to discharge gutter, slokans buckets and basins had to be used. The stick persons (incl. the very ill) finally had to walk staggering to the "1st Wulff camp" (as mentioned above), notwithstanding transport by car had been promised; the healthy departed walking to the coconut garden, located 3 km East from Macemere, which later on became the "Blom camp"./IIIISTAY

OM 205/E

III. STAY AT MIORE S"BLOM CAMP"Material Care

Accommodation. When the healthy Ps/W arrived on May 10th, 1943 about 5 p.m. in the coconut garden meant as a "camp" and situated on the shore 3 km East of Macmore (see sketch, App. A), accommodation consisted of 2 native houses, which the guards immediately took. The Ps/W had to lie down in the open air, with hardly time to unpack or to spread out their mats and (during the next weeks) they were unable often to fix their mosquito-nets, having no means of doing so. This to a great extent caused the malaria epidemics later on; this situation lasted for until, after about 2 weeks the first barracks were ready (the building of which could begin after the harbour-duties were finished). First the "healthy" people were lodged the sick got cover last (after 4 weeks). The barracks were primitive, people had to sleep on the ground (not before September were the rattan bunks made and put up), the roofs were far from water tight because of the coconut trees standing in the barracks and the barracks near the road suffered from dust, caused by the bullock-warts which was made worse by the aeroplanes on the aerodrome; the lack of gutters - which were made later on - caused the rain to drain into the barracks. Special attention has to be drawn to the fact that no workers were available to improve camp or hospital. At night until the signal "lights out" (8.30) a small oil lamp was the only illumination.

Hygienic precautions. As a nursing room for the first weeks a fenced off part of the coconut garden was used for this "sick garden" as a matter of fact was at intervals cleared by the transfer of serious cases to the sick-camp ("1st Wulff-camp"), but the finally the sick barracks were the last ready, the inconveniences of these sheds (constructed in the same way as the workers-sheds) showed themselves still more (m.i.) lack of sleeping bunks and the patients having to kneel for the doctors and orderlies was especially demonstrated when Dr. SCHOCKEL had to operate upon a patient for appendicitis in the "kolong" under the floor of the so-called "doctors' house" (in which the medical department was lodged); the dust falling from the roof was caught by blankets. Medicines were supplied inadequately. Thus it happened f.i. during many serious malaria epidemics that there was no quinine available for weeks, and only to patients with a temperature of over 40 degree pills could given. This was apparent when this resulted in malaria comatosa, in which cases the lack of quinine invariably caused death. Only a few thermometers were available. For dysentery and other stomach diseases English salt was used; medicines were distributed only in very serious cases from those held by the doctors and orderlies. The same applies also to beriberi and other diseases for which medicines were inadequate. There were hardly ever sufficient dressing used.

Preparations of yeast, kadsch-milk, extracts of Djohar leaves, and pater-hading rind and such like had to make up for the lack of medicines. The distribution of restoratives was out of the question; the only thing that could be done was to buy eggs which were offered at intervals in small quantities and usually were claimed by the Korean guards. The result was that many (for the greater part infected) wounds were cause.

Clothing.

Clothing. To wear/carry along upperclothing was forbidden workers; pants hung like rags round their bodies as a result of inadequate means of repairing and heavy wear, also through the washing with sea-water (originally without soap). Only after many months a limited amount of gray/green clothing mostly in too small sizes was distributed.

Safety/Safe-guarding.

In the camp. Enclosed drawing of the situation (Encl.A) points out the very dangerous location of the camp near the aerodrome. (The end of the main landing strip was at a distance of 75 m from the barracks). Even if they wished to spare the adjacent Ps/W camp during a possible bombing, would be very much endangered. The same counts for a possible machine-gun attack on the adjacent Japanese barracks and those of the Korean guards. The Japanese also saw this proves the facts that a Japanese sergeant-major expressed himself in the presence of some Ps/W as above. Protection against airplane attacks was not present in the first months. Later open (parallel to the road and the shore) not very deep trenches were constructed, whilst still later a primitive camouflage was made (leaves upon the barracks); not considering the question whether these precautions ameliorated the safety of the Ps/W or not.

During the fatigue work. Precautions were neglected on the very vulnerable aerodrome work; in case of an allied attack the order was to try to seek cover as well as on the airbase itself there was not enough care taken to safe-guard as appears from the fact that had the Ps/W put dynamite into pits despite the protests of the leader because no precautions were taken and whilst the Japanese themselves looked on from a considerable distance. Also with the harbour duties the risks were still greater (the Japanese airplanes were continually in the air and American planes machine-gunned a convoy entering the harbour (Mid.July 1 1943) every precautions were lacking. There were no shelters and the order was lately: go on working in case of air alarm and only look for cover when the airplanes appeared, bombing or strafing.

1st & 2nd Sick Camps (so-called "Wulff-Camps")

The coconut garden within which on the 10th of May 1943, the sick and healthy Ps/W from the s.s. "Tasima Maru" and on about 11th May 1943 the sick from the s.s. "Tensio Maru" were lodged, remained after the departure (about the 20th May) of the healthy people, exclusively a sick camp (the so-called 1st "Wulff-camp"); on June 10th this camp was transferred as a whole to a barracks camp (the so-called 2nd "Wulff-Camp" which in the meantime had been built in the neighbourhood (about 300 m) and that was liquidated on to the sick department of the "Blom-Camp").

Material care.

Accommodation. In the "1st Wulff-camp" there was no accommodation at all, except a kampong house and a store room that were taken by the Korean guards the first day and thereafter used as a dispensary and a store. Hundreds of sick as well as doctors and nurses, lay in the open air on the ground and the only cover was a number of hastily made improvised covers of mosquito nets (partially covered with banana leaves) for the most serious cases. The latter were transferred in 2 cases of heavy rain to an open goat stable; in one of these cases (29th May 1943) 2 men died in the dark whilst they lay there crowded, without bed-pans and making each other dirty. This appeared when daylight came; The transfer on 10th of July 1943 to the "2nd Wulff-camp" (which lasted, for lack of stretchers, from 10.30 a.m. / until

until 10.30 p.m.) made the situation no better insofar that part of the patients could be lodged in 2 barracks accommodating 400 men normally, but now 550 sick); it was constructed the same way as the "Blom-Camp" with all the inconveniences thereof (There were no bunks and the men had to sleep on the ground).

Supply of food. As far as the food supplied by the Japanese the quantity, quality and change was inadequate during the whole stay at Flores, and the purchase on own initiative (part of the duty-money and officers' salaries) through a centralised bureau lessened the number of diseases and deaths (beri-beri, oedema, pellagra, etc.) The Japanese food supply only consisted of rice (varying from 350 to 500 gr per day), yam and later on kedelehbeans, while from time to time (in the beginning) small quantities lard sapi- or goats meat and few times a little fish, fruit and green vegetables were distributed. To gather green vegetables (wild krokot i.e. sort of spinach) in the neighbourhood of the camp, only a few convalescents were available.

Duties.

Harbour-duties. Immediately on arrival the "Blom-Camp", FLORES the Ps/W dead tired from the voyage, had to unload the ships for 3 or 4 days and a number of Ps/W were beaten with a stick at the duty roll-call. This harbour-duty-work was repeated several times, when a group of ships anchored at the Macemere roads/ harbour. These duties as a rule lasted a few days with a working-time of 8 hours work - 8 hours rest and in some cases 16 hours work - 8 hours rest, which rest included the walk to and from the harbour, (thus twice 3 km). During these duties part of the workers often, (also in the evening and at night), stood waist deep in the water to pick up the benzine drums and wood that was cast overboard. The Japanese commands were confusing because each Japanese and Korean gave his own commands and orders the men were continuously beaten and urged.

"Karan-duties". To gather karang stones which could be got at low tide in the neighbour of the camp as a rule convalescent sick were used. When the tide was coming in which time they had to stand in the water up to the knees; this had disastrous results for many stomach-patients and malaria cases who were reconvalescent. Although footwear was compulsory, made many work without shoes, which caused many cuts and infection. As result

Aerodrome-duties. The main part of the duties were those on the so-called aerodrome (construction in total of 3 aerodromes); And the work which as a rule took place in mist and dust, consisted amongst other things of removing earth (often 1.5m per person per day) to smooth the field, digging the drainage canals, digging out and canalizing already existing kali's, constructing blastproof shelters for airplanes, digging sand-digging wells etc. As well as of serving a stone-breaker, during which they had to work without a stop in the burning sun, stone-gravel and dust. The working-time incl. rest was about 10 hours (7.15 a.m. to 5 o'clock pm.); later on when there were fatigue-duties the work stopped earlier. It has specially to be mentioned that as a rule people who were declared unfit by our doctors had to join the aerodrome-duties, they were appointed by the guards (especially by the Korean OYAMA who often himself kept the roll-call for the sick). Those who during the work dropped off on account of dysentery, fever or malaria (appr. 8 or 10 per day) were allowed to return to the camp after

lunch

lunch with these who fetched the food at about 2 or 3 p.m. and on arrival in camp they usually were waited for by the camp commandant, beaten and put to work or had to stand to attention until the main group of the workers returned to the camp some hours later.

Clothing and footwear.

Footwear. The footwear the workers had brought with them (partly shoes distributed at Sourabaya) was soon worn out, so that very soon part of the workers had to walk barefooted work (distance of 1½, 5 and 6 km) and had to do their work there. The result was that many (for the greater part infected) wounds were caused.

Clothing. To wear/carry along upperclothing was forbidden workers; pants hung like rags round their bodies as a result of inadequate means of repairing and heavy wear, also through the washing with sea-water (originally without soap). Only after many months a limited amount of graygreen clothing mostly in too small sizes was distributed.

Safety/safe-guarding.

In the camp. Enclosed drawing of the situation (Encl A.) points out the very dangerous location of the camp near the aerodrome. (The end of the main landing strip was at a distance of 75 m from the barracks.)

Even if they wished to spare the adjacent Ps/W camp during a possible bombing, it would be very much endangered. The same counts for a possible machine-gun attack on the adjacent Japanese barracks and those of the Korean guards. That the Japanese also saw this proves the fact that a Japanese sergeant-major AOKI expressed himself in the presence of some Ps/W as above. Protection against airplane attacks was not present in the first months. Later open (parallel to the road and the shore) not very deep trenches were constructed, whilst still later a primitive camouflage was made (leaves upon the barracks); not considering the question whether these precautions ameliorated the safety of the Ps/W or not.

During the fatigue work. Precautions were neglected on the very vulnerable aerodrome work; in case of an Allied attack the order was to try to seek cover as well as possible in the adjacent shrubs. Also during work on the airbase itself there was not enough care taken to safe-guard as appears from the fact that had the Ps/W put dynamite into pits despite the protests of the leader because no precautions were taken and whilst the Japanese themselves looked on from a considerable distance. Also with the harbour duties the risks were still greater (the Japanese airplanes were continually in the air and American planes machinegunned a convoy entering the harbour (mid July 1943) every precautions were lacking. There were no shelters and the order was lately: go on working in case of air alarm and only look for cover when the airplanes appeared, bombing or strafing.)

1st & 2nd Sick Camps (so-called "Wulff-camps")

The coconut garden in which, on the 10th of May 1943, the sick and healthy Ps/W from the s.s. "Tasima Maru" and on about 11th May 1943 the sick from s.s. "Tensio Maru" were lodged, remained after the departure (about the 20th May) of the healthy people, exclusively a sick camp (the so-called 1st "Wulff-Camp"); on June 10th this camp was transferred as a whole to a barracks camp (the so-called 2nd "Wulff-camp") which in the meantime had been built in the neighbourhood (about 300 m) and that was liquidated on 9th September 1943, whilst the remainder of the sick were brought to the sick department of the "Blom-camp".

Material Care.

Accommodation. In the "1st Wulff-Camp" there was no accommodation

/at

at all, except a kampong house and a store room that were taken by the Korean guards the first day and thereafter used as a dispensary and a store. Hundreds of sick as well as doctors and nurses, lay in the open air on the ground and the only cover was a number of hastily made improvised covers of mosquito nets (partially covered with banana leaves) for the most serious cases. The latter were transferred in 2 cases of heavy rain to an open goat stable; in one of these cases (29th May 1943) 2 men died in the dark whilst they lay there crowded, without bed-pans and making each other dirty. This appeared when daylight came. The transfer on 10th of July 1943 to the "2nd Wulff-camp" (which lasted, for lack of stretchers, from 10.36 a.m. until 10.30 p.m.) made the situation better insofar that part of the patients could be lodged in 2 barracks (accommodating 400 men normally, but now 550 sick); it was constructed the same way as the "Blom-camp" with all the inconveniences thereof (there were no bunks and the men had to sleep on the ground). Appr. 200 men, who had no room in these barracks were: a. serious patients (who could only use the trench latrines and on that account were brought to the barracks); b. most of the convalescent patients; Both groups originally stayed in the open air, but later on each got 3 wood barracks for housing built by latter. The Orderlies had to be lodged in a space under the floor of the doctor's house. The kitchen accommodation in both camps was very poor; in the 1st camp there was no accommodation at all and they had to make the best of an improvised kitchen. There was no illumination and if any was very inadequate. Only 5 oil lamps for the whole of the ward of the 2nd Camp were available.

Hygienic precautions. In the "1st Wulff-camp" no bedpans were available. In the ward for serious patients a little hole was dug next to each bed and the patients had to roll over it. Because a stool of 40 to 60 times a day was not an exception, time and again new holes had to be dug round the patient until that was impossible and a new bed had to be found. In case the patient was too weak to roll over to the hole next to their bed one was dug under it, and through the sleeping mat. In the beginning there was no water to wash the patients let alone clean their dirty clothes, and therefore they lay in this ward with uncovered (or slightly covered) under-part of the body, which was dirty from excrement and flies; in many cases bed-sore patients had fist deep wounded filled with mites (In the 2nd Wulff-camp" the discharging system with holes had to go on until finally some bedpans became available and the serious patients could be lodged in the wood barracks. In the ward for less seriously ill people cans could be used which had to be emptied in a dry ditch; later on here also trench latrine were built as in the ward for convalescent patients, in which this system was used, only the convalescent patients had to dump and redig these latrines themselves. In the "2nd Wulff-camp" usually these trenches were deeper (because of the ground water), but the small distance from the ward for lightly ill caused a considerable plague of flies. Lack of bathing and washing opportunity is apparent from the fact that during the first 3 weeks doctors and nursing personnel, only three times had the opportunity to wash themselves with dry water from a well near a kampong house.

Medical care. Not only lack of accommodation and hygienic precautions but also intense shortage of medicines and dressing material

made application of medical care very difficult, often even impossible. Here also in the beginning the medicines which the doctors and orderlies possessed, had to be used. The official soatres, taken along from Java, became available only a week after arrival notwithstanding many repeated requests on account of the growing number of serious cases which were likely to die. A somewhat larger supply therefore was at our disposal, but often not the medicines which were most badly needed. Instruments were not available.

Food supplies. The Japanese only supplied rice and walo. The first week it was prohibited to buy additional food but insufficient guard aided an individual "kawat" commerce, which of course the walking patients got first and made supply to the serious patients difficult. The purchase of pork ameliorated the household a bit. But the supply of milk by the Roman Catholic Mission for the serious patients was forbidden after a few days, while the purchase of other restoratives (eggs, fish, fruit) was very much thwarted and often made impossible because the Korean Guards themselves bought and stole these articles, or they made such a maximum price for our purchase, that the sellers who sympathised and helped us very much, had to return without effect. The meat meant for the sick camp butchered in the "Blom-camp" only arrived a few times. The Korean charged with the intendance usually used this for his own means. On arrival in the "1st Wulff-camp" there was only one well which had to be used for the kitchen; the first day there was no drinking water at all and thereafter for a long time the water was fetched with difficulty from a distant well, resulting in a poor distribution of tea to patients who often through loss of liquid resulting from dysentery were very thirsty and they clandestinely drank coconut milk and so made their troubles worse. Later on there came some improvement in the situation.

Duties.

Nursing. The number of nursing orderlies was so small, that the orderlies had to do too heavy work, had too little rest and as a result of the bad accommodation and food relapsed and became patients.

Other duties. The first 10 days the healthy people staying in the "1st Wulff-camp", who were not incorporated for harbour duty could be used but afterwards convalescents must be used for other duties (with exception of kitchen duty, which must be done by non-patients). Digging of latrines, cleaning of the camp, bearing of water in heavy casks, which when they are empty must be carried by 4 bearers, who must change after 100 M., distributing of food, making graves, bearing and cremation of corpses, must be done by convalescents. The result was that there were daily relapses.]

Safety/safety-measures.

The boundary of the "1st Wulff-Camp" was made by a road, a dry gutter, and an imaginary line along some separate bushes. In this way it was very difficult, especially in the evening and at night, to know if you was inside or outside the boundary, so that the POW's were not safe from the guards in case of real or pretended passing the boundary (see case Borman). The Korean guards seldom patrolled around the camp, so that in fact the responsibility was for the Dutch camp command.

Acting of guards.

Japanese Commander and warrant-officer.

Japanese commander.

The Japanese commander of the Flores-camps, Lieutenant ASHITA, was known during

during his residence on Flores (as on the sea voyages) as a person, who never interfered with the direct command of the camps. He lived during the greatest part of his residence there in the village of Macemere, he never came in the camp of sick persons (once he walked through the "2nd Wulff-Camp" with a handkerchief to his nose and mouth) and very seldom in the "Blom-camp" (at the most once a week). Only to the ceremony of bowing at a funeral did he give his attention (unesteemed being too late, so that the cremation could take place in the evening). The only purpose for his visits to the "Blom-Camp" was the dentist and painting, later he gave his attention to the strength of the barbed wire fence of the camp and afterwards made concentration space between the sheds of sick persons, in case of alarm. The Dutch Camp commander was never given the opportunity to speak with him. In the rare cases when you could speak to him he listened absentmindedly and uninterestedly and reacted negatively to each urgent request or proposal by being silent and ending the conversation by walking away without answering. In the first months he had given the direct command, by passing his warrant officers into hands of his Korean confident, the guard OYAMA, who was responsible for a reign of terror. This reign of terror was ended by the Japanese Sergeant Major not act as "leader" and Japanese warrant officers were appointed to command. We cannot judge if the attitude of the warrant officers SAKEMOTA, HASIKAWA, ISHI, NAKAZARA and the interpreter ASUMA was a result of a lack of help from the Japanese camp commander. Their effort to get action from ASHITA on the illtreatment of Captain De Thoars gives an indication in that direction. But the real fact is that the warrant-officers (with exception of AOKI) never interfered with the daily matters and the behaviour of the Korean guards, so that the impropriety of the Flores-camps was partly a result of their attitude. Sergeant-Major AOKI was the man, who has taken active part in camp affairs, corrected the situation, never beaten anyone, stopped the misdemeanour of the Korean guards, his attitude and measures were human, a great difference with the attitude of the others. For a proper understanding it must be known that the other warrant officers (with exception of the interpreter, ASUMA, who committed many brutalities) did not illtreat the POWs directly. They did not oppose or limit the illtreatment of the guards in contrast with AOKI.

Korean Guards.

With a single exception the Korean guards misbehaved themselves during the whole period on Flores to the POWs. That it became a little bit better during the last months was exclusively the result of the long stay there and not of human feelings. The really unlimited power of the guard commanders, duty leaders, intendants, soldiers of the day and others functionaries were abused by measures, which resulted in illtreatment of the POWs and advantage to themselves. The orders and the control for the lining up and cleaning of dust-bins, the giving of the military salute, the regular and repeated effort at extortion of watches, fountain pens and clutches, the theft/embezzlement of meat and other food for the POWs, the many cases of bad behaviour in the camp as a result of drunkenness and the forcing, under menace, of unmoral acts, also the punishment for real or fancied offences, the slapping (or orders to others to slap) of the face, the hitting of head and body with bamboo, cane or rifle butt, etc. This gave in the camps of sick persons and in the camp of working people (incl. sick department), a nervous uncertainty, the best example for this was the

calling

calling of the name of the new acting guard commandant, which name went through the camp immediately, to give the POWs the opportunity to have time for making preparations for the special "hobby" and the punishment. In general there was no consideration by the Korean guards for the sick persons, no devotion for deaths, no human treatment of the POWs. There can be made an exception for some Japanese and specially for the two Christian-Koreans, who gave a quantity of cigarettes as a present to be divided between the POWs on Christmas night 1943 (as a present).

III treatments.

It is impossible to give all details in this statement. It is possible only to give the worst offenders (with some examples their behaviour) and the names of some other guards. (H) ITO. Korean guard. One of the most terrible, who for preference beat his victims on the head with a rifle butt. 1. He kicked a dying patient in the ward of "serious sick persons" of the "1st Wulff-camp", because he could not give the ordered honours in a standing position. (Witness Lieutenant H.V. de Vries). 2. He beat an ill orderly (officially because he did not come at once to the sheds of ill people, but really for refusing to sell a watch of which he had already stopped the central purchase) and Dr. Wulff, as the responsible physician, with 42 blows with a stem of a coconut leaf, whereby the left side of the body of the latter was bruised from shoulder to knee. 3. He maltreated the Dutch Camp commandant Blom, while he was ill, because he complained of the increasing maltreatments. 4. He maltreated Lt. SOERENS and Dr. EISBACH in the Taliboran camp, broke the arm of POW ECKHOF and beat one of the buyers so severely that he got a rupture of the ear-drum.

CYAMA. Korean guard. About his reign of terror see the aforementioned explanation.

1. He interfered during this period with the sick report and sent malaria and dysentery patients with fever on duty to the aerodrome.
2. He beat sick POWs who returned from their duty and some beri-beri patients with a rifle butt.
3. Serious illtreatment of the Res. 1st Lt. P.W. STEEN (fearpschycosis during following dysentery) which indirectly resulted in death of this person.
4. Very serious illtreatment of the landstorm-sergeant BROUWER and of Lt. HARMSEN (in connection escape of some soldiers of his platoon)

ARAY - Korean guard. This man committed serious maltreatment not only as a leader of the working-party, but also in other cases.

1. In the ward "seriously ill patients" of the "1st WULFF-camp" he kicked a very sick patient on the head, because he did not "lay at attention".
2. Maltreated with a coconut-rib a group of convalescents of the "1st WULFF-camp" (with permission of the guard-commandant) who were looking for medicinal herbs and after that made them kneel in the sun for some hours.
3. Beat up the part of the campstaff of the "2nd WULFF-camp" at that moment available because of an "offence" of no importance (ash tray not wholly clean) and after that punched them in the face for a long time.
4. "Kicked sergeant CHAVANNES in the hospital" (with a kidney injury and a broken arm).

MATSUOKA

MATSUOKA - Korean guard. Of the Korean guards this one was the most horrible type.

1. Summoned all the officers in camp Talibora to the guardhouse and made them kneel down and kicked and beat them with sticks without any reason at all, only because he did not like the human behaviour of the Japanese camp commandant.
2. In the "1st WULFF-camp" he kicked a sick (later on he died) POW Mr. J. A. MEURSINGE on the leg causing a wound 10 cm. long to the bone because he was late in lying to attention and beat him once again.
3. Tried to induce some young P.O.W.s to commit homosexuality under threats (case van REES).

ASUMA - Japanese interpreter. This man was guilty of brutality several times not only during the voyage to and back, but also during the stay in Flores.

1. Serious maltreatment of Lieutenants HARMSEN and HANSEVEID.
2. Kicked his shoe to pieces against the head of P.O.W. JOB.

KASHIMURA - Korean guard. Next to some cases of maltreatment he was extremely (CLAUS) keen on making the sick who come back from their duty on the aerodrome stand at attention at the guard house. He beat them up or sent them back again to their work until the working-party as a whole came back.

YAMAMOTO - Korean guard/ leader of working patients. In last mentioned function he was several times guilty to maltreatment, refer to case de Thouars.

MAKIAMA, MASUYAMA, MATAHARA, KIAMA, YAMASAKI, TAKAMINI and TAMURA

NAMES WHICH must be added to the list to illustrate the we comment on two more cases of illtreatment.

The case of Captain DE THOUARS. As a rule the Capt. of inf. DE THOUARS acted as Dutch duty-commandant during the days of disembarkation at the harbour of Macumere and immediately afterwards. May 13th 1945 he complained to the Jap. sgt. ISHI and sgt. SAKAMOTO of the excessive use of liquor (so called "japane alcohol") by the guards and he expressed excuses based on the experiences of the former days. In the afternoon Cpt. DE THOUARS asked for and received permission from the Korean head of the working-party YAMAMOTO to send back by truck to the "Blom-Camp" some dysentery-patients who just had disembarked and some people on duty who fell ill. After a heated argument between YAMAMOTO and the Korean driver before starting the latter hit the Captain in the face, while YAMAMOTO kicked him on the shins screaming "kiotske".

Filled with indignation over this attitude Cpt. DE THOUARS, answered YAMAMOTO's questions as following: that he (DE THOUARS) had fought against the Japs, now he was obliged to obey the orders of the Jap, and that he would again fight against the Japs, if there was a chance. Then he got a total of forty blows with a rifle butt from the Korean MAKIAMA, on the mouth, was hit and pushed about, while in the meantime YAMAMOTO tried all sorts of jiu-jitsu-tricks on him.

Soon after that Sg. SAKAMOTO appeared again on the scene and through him Cpt. DE THOUARS was able to tell the camp commandant his complaint.

YAMAMOTO answered during this very superficial interrogation that that reason of the maltreatment was that opt. DE THOUARS without his knowledge sent the sick people of two kinds (disembarking people and duties) in one car, which caused confusion. The result of the illtreatment was a light concussion of the brain, an effusion over the whole body and a serious /

wound

MATSUOKA - Korean guard. Of the Korean guards this one was the most horrible type.

1. Summoned all the officers in camp Talibocra to the guardhouse and made them kneel down and kicked and beat them with sticks without any reason at all, only because he did not like the human behaviour of the Japanese camp commandant.
2. In the "1st WULFF-camp" he kicked a sick (later on he died) POW Mr. J. A. MEURSINGE on the leg causing a wound 10 cm. long to the bone because he was late in lying to attention and beat him once again.
3. Tried to induce some young P.O.W.s to commit homosexuality under threats (case van REES).

ASUMA - Japanese interpreter. This man was guilty of brutality several times not only during the voyage to and back, but also during the stay in Flores.

1. Serious maltreatment of Lieutenants HARMSEN and HANSEVELD.
 2. Kicked his shoe to pieces against the head of P.O.W. JOB.
- KASHIMURA - Korean guard. Next to some cases of maltreatment he was extremely (CLAUS) keen on making the sick who come back from their duty on the aerodrome stand at attention at the guard house. He beat them up or sent them back again to their work until the working-party as a whole came back.
- YAMAMOTO - Korean guard/ leader of working patients. In last mentioned function he was several times guilty to maltreatment, refer to case de Thouars.

MAKIAMA, MASIYAMA, MATAFARA, KIAMA, YAMASAKI, TAKANINI and TAMURA

NAMES WHICH must be added to the list to illustrate the we comment on two more cases of illtreatment.

The case of Captain DE THOUARS. As a rule the Capt. of inf. DE THOUARS acted as Dutch duty-commandant during the days of disembarkation at the harbour of Macomere and immediately afterwards. May 13th 1945 he complained to the Jap. sgt. ISHI and sgt. SAKAMOTO of the excessive use of liquor (so called "joppe gocong") by the guards and he expressed excuses based on the experiences of the former days. In the afternoon Cpt. DE THOUARS asked for and received permission from the Korean head of the working-party YAMAMOTO to send back by truck to the "Blom-Camp" some dysentery-patients who just had disembarked and some people on duty who fell ill. After a heated argument between YAMAMOTO and the Korean driver before starting the latter hit the Captain in the face, while YAMAMOTO kicked him on the shins screaming "kiotske".

Filled with indignation over this attitude Cpt. DE THOUARS, answered YAMAMOTO's questions as following: that he (DE THOUARS) had fought against the Japs, now he was obliged to obey the orders of the Jap, and that he would again fight against the Japs, if there was a chance. Then he got a total of forty blows with a rifle butt from the Korean MAKIAMA, on the mouth, was hit and pushed about, while in the meantime YAMAMOTO tried all sorts of jiu-jitsu-tricks on him. Soon after that Sg. SAKAMOTO appeared again on the scene and through him Cpt. DE THOUARS was able to tell the camp commandant his complaint. YAMAMOTO answered during this very superficial interrogation that that reason of the maltreatment was that Cpt. DE THOUARS without his knowledge sent the sick people of two kinds (disembarking people and duties) in one car, which caused confusion. The result of the illtreatment was a light concussion of the brain, an effusion over the whole body and a serious /

wound

wound of the right eye, causing a permanent injury. In the judgment of the Medical Officer, I Marien, this illtreatment would have caused the death to a less athletic person than Capt. DE THOUARS.)
The case of BROUWER.

The 1st sergeant H.A.B. BROUWER, No. 121304, was beaten by OYAMA with a rifle butt, because he did not see OYAMA, who walked outside the shed where BROUWER stayed, when the gedek was 1½ m. high and he did not bow. He was sent to the Japanese guard house to kneel and was beaten again with the rifle butt and was beaten by the rest of the guards for half an hour with bamboos, rifles and the open hand on head and body. BROUWER, who was knocked down with each blow collapsed when he went away to the gate of the camp and had to be carried to the hospital where he was for a week. The result of this illtreatment was as well as many painful spots over the body a terrific blue spot on the left buttock with a middle line of about 30 cm., also a torn eardrum. After his release from the hospital BROUWER stumbled for a long time before he could walk normally.

State of health/Death/Execution/Murder.

State of health.

Number of sick. The medical information about the general state of health (the number of sick during the several periods on FLORES). is not available at the moment (they are buried in one of the Java-Camps together with other pieces. Some information would give a sufficient view of this case). The fact is that until the first return transport (27th January 1944) 800 men of the original 2079 men at the most favourable time were able to do their duty outside the camp and at the most unfavourable time not more than 350 men. These figures speak for themselves. The hospital in the "Blom-Camp" after the closing of the "2nd WILFF camp" held continually 1200 patients, except the sick in quarters in the department of healthy people.

The kind of illness. During the first dysentery explosion there was the beginning of beri-beri, whilst afterwards there came a malaria-epidemic, which lasted until practically the end. There were daily many cases pellagra and wound infections. Dysentery had the most victims, while malaria, especially the malaria comatosa, and beri-beri the so-called wet-beri-beri were deadly. Elsewhere there's an explanation of how the plague of flies as a result of the open latrines and the pigsty nearby increased the dysentery cases, whilst the malaria-infection came from the period in the open air and the appearance of a mosquito-swamp in the middle of the "Blom-Camp". Lack of accommodation, hygienical supplies and medicines, also bad food increased the sickness.

Death.

Number of death. Irrespective of the many deaths afterwards, during the voyage 213 POW's died, 2 on the outward voyage, 1 in the train during the return and 208 POW's died at Flores as a result of illness and two were killed by the Japanese. Below is a table giving the death in each age-group.

Age	Number of deaths		Age	Number of deaths	
	Total	In % of total deaths		Total	In % of total deaths
unknown	15	7	35-40	35	16½
till 25	20	9½	40-45	54	26
25-30	17	8	45-50	35	16½
30-35	31	15	50-60	3	1½

For the review of the deathrate for a week see the graph (supplement B)

Funerals. The treatment of the corpses of the diseased persons was very bad. First they were laid on the ground under a blanket or a mosquito net, afterwards consent was given to build a mortuary. In the beginning there were coffins, but soon the dead were buried in mosquito nets and blankets and later on in goenisacks. The funerals from the both "Wulff-Camps" took place on a stretcher; from the "Blom-Camp" the corpses were carried away on an open truck together with serious ill persons, who must be brought to the "Wulff-Camp". Later on the funeral took place in a little goods-van, where the attendants must sit on the ground around the coffin and which was driven so fast that it was very difficult to hold the body on their bier. During the first days there came the order to cremate the corpses of the dysentery-patients "on account of affection". This cremation took place in the vault and caused in the beginning some difficulties on account of inexperience (insufficient carbonization) specially when coconut husks must be used in place of wood. After a while they didn't give wood anymore for the crosses, so that 80 graves stayed without indication except a border of old coconuts. After the liquidation of the second Wulff Camp opportunity was only given 3 or 4 times to keep the cemetery in repair. (a coconut garden in the neighbourhood of the 2nd Wulff Camp). A request for hiring an Indonesian to do this, was refused, so that it soon became a wilderness.

Execution/murder.

The case of Visser. Two days after the end of May 1943, when the section commander in charge, of the POW Visser, missed him, news was given that Visser was arrested by some Japanese sailors, who saw him walking --- K.M. east of the Camp. It may be concluded that this POW escaped the Camp, but identification never took place. We learnt from a number of items about trial and execution and from the fact that in those days a shift of Korean guards went off with rifles and shovels, to come back after a short time, and from the fact that the Japanese interpreter ASUMA was seen with Visser's rucksack, that he had been executed. Up to now it is unknown where, in which manner and after which trial this took place.

The case of Borgman. Dr. Wulff, the interpreter Lottgering and the res. 1st Lieutenant H.N.J. de Vries were called by the Korean OYAMA, to the Japanese Camp commander who was in a kampong house in the neighbour (in the presence of an unknown Korean guard) about half an hour after two shots were heard, followed by about half an hour after two shots were heard, followed by shouting, in the 1st Wulff Camp, on the night of the 7th June 1945 at 9 o'clock.

This Camp commander gave the order to identify a shot prisoner of war "trying to escape" but were forbidden to ask questions. The victim who was lying on his back on some distance from the house (a little stream of blood trickled from his mouth) mentioned that he was Borgman. He whispered to Dr. Wulff and Lt. de Vries that his condition was hopeless, a shot through both lungs, so that nothing could help any more. After returning to the Camp commander and making a report about the identification the officers were lead to the Camp, afterwards they heard ASHITA giving an order to an unknown guard. On the way back they heard a 3rd shot, on arrival at the Camp OYAMA gave the order to the section commander of the victim (1st Lieut. Jellema) to go back to the kamponghouse with a stretcher and 5 orderlies (including Costerus and Driessen). They found Borgman dead with a shot through his head.

Funerals. The treatment of the corpses of the diseased persons was very bad. First they were laid on the ground under a blanket or a mosquito net, afterwards consent was given to build a mortuary. In the beginning there were coffins, but soon the dead were buried in mosquito nets and blankets and later on in goenisacks. The funerals from the both "Wulff-Camps" took place on a stretcher; from the "Blom-Camp" the corpses were carried away on an open truck together with serious ill persons, who must be brought to the "Wulff-Camp". Later on the funeral took place in a little goods-van, where the attendants must sit on the ground around the coffin and which was driven so fast that it was very difficult to hold the body on their bier. During the first days there came the order to cremate the corpses of the dysentery-patients "on account of affection". This cremation took place in the vault and caused in the beginning some difficulties on account of inexperience (insufficient carbonization) specially when coconut husks must be used in place of wood. After a while they didn't give wood anymore for the crosses, so that 80 graves stayed without indication except a border of old coconuts. After the liquidation of the second Wulff Camp opportunity was only given 3 or 4 times to keep the cemetery in repair. (a coconut garden in the neighbourhood of the 2nd Wulff Camp). A request for hiring an Indonesian to do this, was refused, so that it soon became a wilderness.

Execution/murder.

The case of Visser. Two days after the end of May 1943, when the section commander in charge, of the POW Visser, missed him, news was given that Visser was arrested by some Japanese sailors, who saw him walking --- K.M. east of the Camp. It may be concluded that this POW escaped the Camp, but identification never took place. We learnt from a number of items about trial and execution and from the fact that in those days a shift of Korean guards went off with rifles and shovels, to come back after a short time, and from the fact that the Japanese interpreter ASUMA was seen with Visser's rucksack, that he had been executed. Up to now it is unknown where, in which manner and after which trial this took place.

The case of Borgman. Dr. Wulff, the interpreter Lottgering and the res. 1st Lieutenant H.N.J. de Vries were called by the Korean OYAMA, to the Japanese Camp commander who was in a kampong house in the neighbour (in the presence of an unknown Korean guard) about half an hour after two shots were heard, followed by about half an hour after two shots were heard, followed by shouting, in the 1st Wulff Camp, on the night of the 7th June 1945 at 9 o'clock.

This Camp commander gave the order to identify a shot prisoner of war "trying to escape" but were forbidden to ask questions. The victim who was lying on his back on some distance from the house (a little stream of blood trickled from his mouth) mentioned that he was Borgman. He whispered to Dr. Wulff and Lt. de Vries that his condition was hopeless, a shot through both lungs, so that nothing could help any more. After returning to the Camp commander and making a report about the identification the officers were lead to the Camp, afterwards they heard ASHITA giving an order to an unknown guard. On the way back they heard a 3rd shot, on arrival at the Camp OYAMA gave the order to the section commander of the victim (1st Lieut. Jellema) to go back to the kamponghouse with a stretcher and 5 orderlies (including Costerus and Driessen). They found Borgman dead with a shot through his head.

On completion of the order to bring the corpse to the cemetery to cremate it and to close the grave, the orderlies had the opportunity to state that the first shot really riddled the chest and in such a way, that the bullet had to riddle the arms if these were hanging down, (this can point to a "hands up" when this shot was heard) Lt. Jellema was maltreated the following morning in connection with this accident. Dr. Wulff was forced by OYAMA some weeks after this, to sign a death certificate, in which dysentery was mentioned as cause of death. We may be sure that Borgman did not want to escape but tried to buy some food from Indonesians, (so as many others tried) and in this case passed the boundary, the dry riverbed, see under head "1st and 2nd camp for sick people, the so-called "Wulff Camp", sub safety/protection measures) seduced by the absence of barbed wire and the slight patrolling along the part of the camp.

IV. Return Voyage MACEMERE (FLORES) - BATAVIA.

Transport of sick people (27-1-'44 and 10-5-'44)

Embarkation in MACEMERE.

The 1st transport of sick, which consisted patients could take with them the contents of a square military rucksack, not overpacked and without anything tied on, so that most of the patients had to leave behind a big part of their tattered belongings permission was refused for any of them to take with them their uniform, except the clutches they were wearing, whilst only officers were allowed shoes. Despite the provision of transport the distance "Blom-Camp" - Macemere had to be done on foot with luggage (3 K.M.), while during the March more military trucks passed them, in which the men, who fell out even were not allowed. From 10 O'clock in the morning till 5 P.M. this group must wait for embarkation in a back garden of an Indonesians house in the village of Macemere. Most of the sick people (i.e. serious beri-beri patients) must climb the rope ladder with their rucksack at the embarkation while there was a companion way. The barges alongside the ship were subject to heavy swell, so that it was impossible for many of them to get to the rope-ladder in time.

Voyage Macemere - Sourabaya. The accommodation was insufficient at both sick transports. On the 1st draft the available space between decks of hatch 1 (dirty from cement) and of hatch two gave insufficient room for lying; stretched out, staying on deck was forbidden except for visiting the lavatory. The food distribution was also in the holds. There was no bath and wash-place, water was only allowed for washing up. Hanging baskets outside the ship were used as latrine for one person. Although it was insufficient in quantity and quality the food was better than on the outward voyage. Food was prepared in the Japanese kitchen. The distribution of drinking water was limited. The light was very bad. In the 2nd sick draft there was not enough room for isolation of infectuous patients. There was lying a patient with open t.b.c. and a patient with crsipelas between the other patients.

Arrival in Batavia. After a voyage of 5 days in the hold and a train journey of 64 hours (normal 12 hours) in overcrowded 4th class wagons the 1st sick draft was left on arrival at Adek-Camp Batavia at night 11 o'clock, for hours in the mud and the rain, in an open field and must undergo a search.

/
After

after this at 3 o'clock in the night they were lay asleep in an empty shed and were chased out the building at 7.30 in the morning to line up for "morning roll-call".

Deaths. One of the patients of the 1st sick draft died during the train journey Sourabaya-Bandoeng-Batavia in the pneumonia ward. It was possible to bury him in Bandoeng, but the corpse had to be carried on the platform to Batavia.

MORE RETURN TRANSPORT.

Material care. The accommodation at the 3rd, 4th and 5th return-transport were in general also insufficient; not enough room practically no bath or wash place, defective hygienic arrangements (hanging latrines outside the ship) and insufficient life-belts. It deserved a special mention, that the POW's (479) in the 3rd return transport had to sit down the whole first night on the unprotected foredeck. The following day a part got a place in a midship bunker, where the men must lie, packed like sardines in dust, coal-dust, in unbearable heat from the adjacent boilers, insufficient ventilation and light.

15 drums filled with petrol were on deck the 5th return transport from Macemere until Bima was reached.

Guards. On the 3rd return transport the Japanese interpreter ASUMA owing to the selling of goods to the ships crew, severaly illtreated the victims, together with the two responsible section commandants (the 1st Lt. de Roo and the 2nd Lt. v. d. Eyck.) He beat them with a heavy wooden clog on the face and head helped by the Korean guard MATSUMOTO. Next he punished those caught smoking too early, together with their section Commandant 1st Lt. Harders, by kneeling about twenty minutes with the knees on the sharp corner of the steps of a ladder. The same ASUMA illtreated the 1st Lt. de Boer twice during the train trip Sourabaya-Batavia. (severe beating with a stone, which was taken from the sleeper and dragging him all over one of the stations) owing to pretended "mistake" in the distributing of tea and the closing of the windows. During the same journey the Korean TAKAMINI illtreated the POW van Mourik, because he asked his stolen grease tin back. In the 4th return-transport the Korean guard MATSIAMA kicked POW Felix Jr. for a minor reason and hit the ensigns de Mey and Remmers very severely in the face.

WS. Capt. A.C.J. de Thouars
Ldst. soldier C. K. Bra.
res. 1st Lt. H.H.J. de Vries

Manggalaan 47.

BANDOENG.

after this at 3 o'clock in the night they were lay asleep in an empty shed and were chased out the building at 7.30 in the morning to line up for "morning roll-call".

Deaths. One of the patients of the 1st sick draft died during the train journey Sourabaya-Bandoeng-Batavia in the pneumonia ward. It was possible to bury him in Bandoeng, but the corpse had to be carried on the platform to Batavia.

MORE RETURN TRANSPORT.

Material care. The accommodation at the 3rd, 4th and 5th return-transport were in general also insufficient; not enough room practically no bath or wash place, defective hygienic arrangements (hanging latrines outside the ship) and insufficient life-belts. It deserved a special mention, that the POW's (479) in the 3rd return transport had to sit down the whole first night on the unprotected foredeck. The following day a part got a place in a midship bunker, where the men must lie, packed like sardines in dust, coal-dust, in unbearable heat from the adjacent boilers, insufficient ventilation and light.

15 drums filled with petrol were on deck the 5th return transport from Macemere until Bima was reached.

Guards. On the 3rd return transport the Japanese interpreter ASUMA owing to the selling of goods to the ships crew, severely illtreated the victims, together with the two responsible section commandants (the 1st Lt. de Roo and the 2nd Lt. v. d. Eyck.) He beat them with a heavy wooden clog on the face and head helped by the Korean guard MATSUMOTO. Next he punished those caught smoking too early, together with their section Commandant 1st Lt. Harders, by kneeling about twenty minutes with the knees on the sharp corner of the steps of a ladder. The same ASUMA illtreated the 1st Lt. de Boer twice during the train trip Sourabaya-Batavia. (severe beating with a stone, which was taken from the sleeper and dragging him all over one of the stations) owing to pretended "mistake" in the distributing of tea and the closing of the windows. During the same journey the Korean TAKAMINI illtreated the POW van Mourik, because he asked his stolen grease tin back. In the 4th return-transport the Korean guard MATSIAMA kicked POW Felix Jr. for a minor reason and hit the ensigns de Mey and Remmers very severely in the face.

WS. Capt. A.C.J. de Thouars
 Ldst. soldier C. K. Bra.
 res. 1st Lt. H.H.J. de Vries

Manggalaan 47.

BANDOENG.

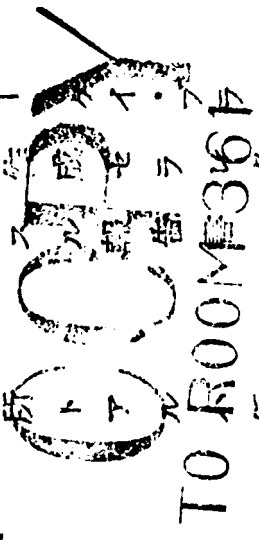
Ex. 1785-A

5578-1

表題——テツアース大尉ノ卒ノシ
及ビテアリース中尉ニ依リ
フロレス停務労働隊ニ關スル報告
。 。 。 。 。 。 。 。 。 。

フロム停務收容所ノ取以下單ニ以容
收容所ノコトナリノ
物質的の手續

宿舎設備、健康ナル停務が千九百四十三年五月十日
午後五時頃收容所トシテ充當セラレタ、
ノ東方三村ノ海岸ニ位スル椰子樹園(附
照ニ到着シタル時宿舎設備ハ二區ノ土人
成リ該家家屋ハ衛兵直チニ之レヲ
行荷物ヲ係キ又ハ彼等ノ進軍ヲ廣ゲル
ク徑天ニ横臥セザルヲ得ズ而シテ(總ク幾
領等ハ放浪ヲ取リ附ケムトスルモ兵ノ
リシ爲メ應々彼等ノ放浪ヲ取リ附ケル
キ是後日大々的ニマラリヤ毎染病ヲ發
此ノ状態ハ二週間後最初ノ營舎ガ準備
續シタリ(該建築作業ハ法止場務役終
シ得タルモノナリ)最初ニ健康ナル若
レ量後ニ(四週間後)病人ハ小
該營舎ハ元始的ノモノニシテ人ハ土
カラズ(九月以前ニハ簾ノ舞台ガ作



UP

5578-2

ザリキ、屋根ハ營舎内ニ掃子筒ノ立在スル爲メ防水ニハ適メテ紫キモノアリ而シテ通隙ニ近キ該營舎ハ手立ニ依リテ生ズル塵埃ニ苦シメラレ該塵埃ハ飛行場ノ飛行機ニ依リ更ラニ悪化セラレタリ、櫃ノ依如（該櫃ハ後日作ラレタリ）ハ營舎内ニ雨水ヲ流入セシメタリ。收容所又ハ病院ヲ改善スル爲メニ勞務者ヲ少シモ利用出來ナカツタ事實ニ待ニ差費ヲ負起セザル可カラズ。夜間ハ消燈信號（八時三十分）ニ至ルマテ油ヲ使用スル一價ノ小サナラムブガ片一ノ燈火ナリキ、

衛生上ノ予防、一ツノ番詰室トシテ最初ノ飯田岡ハ掃子筒ノ運搬ヲ以テ仕功ラレタル部分ガ使用セラレ事實上此ノ一病者ノ圍一ハ重症患者收容所（第一ウルフ収容所）へ移送スルコトニ依リ時々一借セラレタリ然レドモ是ニ病人收容ノ營舎ハ設備ニ準備セラレタリ之等ノ小屋ノ不便（勞務者ノ小屋ト同シ様ニ構築セラレタルモノ）ハ更ラニ一層（非常ニ劣悪ニシテ）寢台ノ不足ヲ示シ而シテ出願及ヒ病院事務員カラ手管ヲ受ケルノニ塵ハラザルヲ待ザルヲ以テ特ニ「信スクイレル」ガ肝臓病師ノ家（該家中ニ醫務部員ハ宿泊セリ）ノ床下ニ於テコロシグノ蒸樣肺炎息差手紙ノ要石リシ藥ヲ以テ封閉セラレタリ。屋根ヨリ蓋下スル塵埃ハ毛布ヲ敷ケトメラシタリ藥品ハ不

充分ニ支給セラレタリ、漸クシテ例ヘバ多クノ列シ
 キマラリヤ。傳染期間中數週間ニ亘リキニ一ホノ使用
 シ得ザルコト屢々起リ、而シテ四十度以上ノ熱病息
 差ニ對シテノミ丸藥ハ支給シ得ラレタリ此ノ事ハキ
 ニ一ホ劑ノ快如カ必ズ死ヲ招來スル管腔性マラリヤ
 ガソノ結果トシテ生ズルニ至リシ時突然リタリキ、
 喉嚨少ナル深溫器ガ使用出來赤痢及ビ其ノ類ノ胃病
 ニ對シテハイキリス鹽ガ使用セラレタリ、商品ハ極
 メテ重價ナル場合ニ於テノミ醫師及ビ病院事務員ノ
 所持スルモノヨリ分配セラレタリ。ソレニ對スル藥
 品ガ不十丈ナリシ脚氣及其他ノ病氣ニツイテモ同様
 ナリキ、同收容所ニ於テ管テ充分ナル手當用品ノ使
 用セラレザルコト殆ンド無シ。

監長、カテレミルク、ジヨハール業ノ類型、ペーダ
 ーヘーディング外及ビ之ニ對スル物ニヨリ藥品ノ
 不足ヲ論ハザルベカラザリキ元氣回復劑ノ分配ハ同
 題外ナリキ。唯一ノ能ク爲シ得タル事ハ時々少量ニ提
 供セラレ且ツ常ニ朝鮮人衛兵ニ依リ請求セラレタル
 時際ヲ照アコトテリキ。

。。。。。。。。

勞働ノ時間ハ休息ヲ含メテ約十時間（午前七時十五
 分ヨリ午後五時ニ至リ）ナリキ。後ニ至リ疲勞スル
 勞働ノ有リタル場合ハ之レヨリモ早く勞働ヲ中止ス

5578-4

ルコトトナレリ原則トシテ我々ノ書簡ニ依リ不適當
 ナリト宣セラレタル者ガ飛行場勤務ニ参加セザル可
 カラザリシコトハ特ニ取リ立テ言及セザル可カラズ
 彼等ノ即チ飛行場勤務ノ者ノハ衛兵ニ依リテ任命セラ
 レタリ（殊ニ朝鮮人天山ニ依リ任命セラレタリ同人
 ハ屢々自ラ病人ニ對スル臨呼ヲ行レタリ）特務甲赤
 痢熱病ハマラリヤ（一日約八人乃至十人）ノ爲メニ
 警伍スル者ハ約午後ノ二時又ハ三時ニ食所ヲ換ヘ來
 ル者ト共ニ晝食後取替所ヘ歸ルヲ許サレ取替所ヘ到
 着ノ上彼等ハ常ニ疲レ果テ取替所司令官ニ依リ待チ
 ウケ度打セラレ幾時圓カノ後勤務者ノ本隊ガ俾屬取
 替所ヘ歸勞務ニ限セシメラレルカ若クハ「飢ヲ附」
 ノ姿勢ニテ立タザル可カラズ

被服及ビ履物、

履物、勞役者ガ目ヲ持テシ來レル履物（一部ハス
 ベラヤニ於テ分配セラレタル靴）ハ當時ニシテ確然
 セル爲メ極メテ當時ニシテ一部ノ勞役者ハ裸足ニテ
 仕事ニ歩行スルヲ畏シ（一軒半、五、六軒ノ距離而
 シテ其所ニ於テ彼等ノ仕事ヲ爲サザル可カラズ其ノ
 結果ハ多クノ負傷者ヲ生ゼシメタルコトナリ（大部
 ハ病母ヲ含ミタルモノナリ）

被服、上衣ヲ着用シ又ハ携帯スルコトハ勞役者ニ對
 シ禁ゼラレタリ、ズボシハ不充分ナ修繕手續ト被シ

5578-5

キ着居ノ結果トシテ且ツ火海ホヲ以テスル消滅ヲ
シテ彼等ノ身体ノ周邊ニ儘横ノ如ク垂レ下レリ（初
カラ石鹼無シ一多クノ月日ヲ徑タ後始メテ多クハ小
型ニ失スル灰綠色ノ核膜ノ僅少ナル數量ガ分配セラ
レタノミナリ

安全又ハ保護

収容所ニ於ケル位置ヲ示セル説入セル圖面（同封込）
ハ飛行場ニ近キ収容所ノ極メテ危険ナル位置ヲ指摘
ス（主ナル滑走路ノ絶端ハ營舎ヨリ七十五米突ノ距
離ニ在リ）有り待可キ懸壁中ソレニ隣接セル停居収
容所ヲ彼等ガ助ケ様ト欲シタトシテモノノ収容所ハ
尙且ツ非常ナル危険ニ曝サレシナラン
同様ノ事ガ隣接セル日本人營舎及ビ朝鮮兵ノ營舎
ニ對スル有り待ベキ機銃掃射ニツイテモ言ヒ得ル。
日本人モ亦此ノ事ヲ知り居タルニト日本ノ警本部長ガ自ラ
或ル停居ノ面前ニ前述ノ如ク語りタル事實ガ証明ス
ル所ナリ。飛行機ノ墜撃ニ對スル保護ハ最初ノ墩月
間ハ存在セズ墩月（遠路及ビ海岸ニ並行シテ）覆無
ク餘リ深カラザル様ノ樺葉セラレルト共ニ更ラニ從
日ニ至リ原始的ナル迷彩ガ施サレタリ（即チ木ノ葉
ヲ營舎上ニ載ス）而シテ之等ノ豫防手段ガ停居ノ安
全ヲ改善スルヤ否ヤノ問題ヲ考慮スルコト無シ
對策中、豫防手段ハ飛行場ノ作業ニ於テ閉却セラレ

5578-5

キ着居ノ結果トシテ且ツ又海氷ヲ以テスル滑溜ヲ
シテ彼等ノ身体ノ風逆ニ撞機ノ如ク垂レ下レリ（初
カラ石鹼無シ）多クノ月日ヲ經タ後始メテ多クハ小
型ニ失スル灰綠色ノ微塵ノ僅少ナル數量ガ分配セラ
レタノミナリ

安全又ハ保護

収容所ニ於ケル位置ヲ示セル封入セル圖面（同封込）
ハ飛行場ニ近キ収容所ノ極メテ危險ナル位置ヲ指摘
ス（主ナル滑走路ノ絶端ハ營舎ヨリ七十五米突ノ距
離ニ在リ）有り得可キ疑難中ソレニ隣接セル停居収
容所ヲ彼等ガ助ケ様ト欲シタトシテモノノ収容所ハ
尙且ツ非常ナル危険ニ曝サレシナラン
同様ノ事ガ隣接セル日本人營舎及ビ朝鮮兵ノ營舎
ニ對スル有り得ベキ機銃掃射ニツイテモ言ヒ得ル。
日本人モ亦此ノ事ヲ知り居タルコト日本ノ警本部長ガ自ラ
或ル停居ノ圖面ニ前述ノ如ク語りタル事實ガ證明ス
ル所ナリ。飛行機ノ墜落ニ對スル保護ハ最初ノ墩月
間ハ存在セズ後月（遠陸及ビ海岸ニ並行シテ）墜無
ク管リ深カラザル塚ノ樺葉セラレルト共ニ更ラニ後
日ニ至リ原始的ナル迷彩ガ施サレタリ（即チ木ノ葉
ヲ營舎上ニ敷ス）而シテ之等ノ豫防手段ガ停居ノ安
全ヲ改善スルヤ否ヤノ問題ヲ考慮スルコト無シ
總中、豫防手段ハ飛行場ノ作業ニ於テ明却セラレ

5578-6

タリ聯合軍艦隊ノ場合ニハ命令ハ遅クノ際亦禁口ニ
出スル丈ケヨク懸レ揚所ヲ選シ索ムル様試ミル様ニ
トノコトナリキ、何等ノ警戒無キ爲メ指揮者ノ反對
ニ抱ハラズ管轄ヲシテ統甲ニダイナマイトヲ發填セ
シメ其ノ間日本人目体ハ相當ノ距離ヨリ等價シ居タ
ル事實ニ徴シテ明ラカナル如ク飛行場巨款ノ作業中
ニ於テモ亦保護ノ爲メニ充分ナル注意ノ拂ハレタル
コト無カリキ

又派止揚勞役ニツイテモ其ノ危險更ラニ大ニシテ一
即チ日本飛行機ハ絶ヘズ空中ニ在リ而シテ米機ハ入
港ノ發送船ヲ機銃掃射セリ、(千九百四十三年七月
中旬)有ラニル警戒手段ガ缺如ノ状態ナリキ、何等
ノ避難所無ク命令ハ最初次ノ如クニテアリキ、即チ
『空襲警報ノ場合勞務ヲ繼續シテ行ヘ而シテ陸隊機
出現爆撃ノ場合ニノミ隱シ揚所ヲ選シ索メヨト言
フニ在リキ

。 。 。 。 。 。 。 。 。 。

5578-6

タリ聯合軍艦來ノ場合ニハ命令ハ延クノ際亦
出ル丈ケヨク慮レ揚所ヲ選シ求ムル様ニ
トノコトナリキ、何等ノ警戒無キ爲メ指
ニ絶ハラズ管見ヲシテ銃甲ニダイナマイトヲ
シメ其ノ間日本人目体ハ相當ノ距離ヨリ
ル事實ニ徴シテ明ラカナル如ク飛行場
ニ於テモ亦保護ノ爲メニ充分ナル注意
コト無カリキ

又派止揚勞務ニツイテモ其ノ危険
即チ日本飛行機ハ絶ヘズ空中ニ在リ
港ノ發送船ヲ破銃掃射セリ、(千九百四
甲旬、有ラニル警戒手段ガ缺如ノ
ノ避難所無ク命令ハ最初次ノ如クニ
『空襲警報ノ場合勞務ヲ繼續シテ行
出現爆撃ノ場合ニノミ陰シ揚所ヲ選
フニ在リキ

。 。 。 。 。 。 。 。 。

5578-7

。。。。。。。。。。

宿舎設備、第一ウルフ收容所ニハ一ツノ馬來式帯内

家屋ト貯蔵室トヲ除キ何等種舎設備ナカリキ。之等

ノ剩物ハ初日ニ朝鮮衛兵ニ依リテ占取セラレ 其後

施業所及ビ貯蔵室トシテ使用セラレタリ。數百ノ患

者及ビ醫師並ニ看護人ハ露天ノ下、地上ニ横臥シ唯

一ノ覆蔽物ハ最モ急住遮ノ場合ニ對處スル若干急造

即席ノ蚊帳（部分的ニ芭蕉ノ葉ヲ以テ製ハレタル）

ノ覆蔽物有リタルノミナリ。後者ハ二回ノ大雨ノ暴

作中ニ露天ノ山羊小舎ニ移轉セシメラレタリ。之等

ノ事件中ノ一ツニ於テ（千九百四十三年五月廿九日）

彼等ガ便器モナク互ニ汚レ合ヒテ其所ニ群ガリ横臥

シタル時、二名ハ闇中ニ死亡シ此ノコトハ夜明けニ

及ビ判明セリ。

千九百四十三年七月十日ノ第二ウルフ收容所ヘノ

移轉（揚架ヲ候ク爲メ午前十時三十六分ヨリ午後十

時半マデ延擱セリ）ハソノ大部分ノ患者ガ二個ノ假

屋ニ宿泊セシメラレ待ク暇廢ニ於テ改營セラレタリ。

（普通四百人ヲ宿泊セシムルモ現存患者ハ五百五十

名ナリ）夫レハ凡ユル點ニ不便ナルゾロム收容所ト

同儕ニ構築セラレタリ。（其ノ内ニハ機台無ク人ハ

土間ニ眠ラザルベカラズ）夫等ノ假屋中ニ於テ部屋

ヲ有セザル約二百名ノ者ハ

5578-7

。。。。。。。。

宿舍設備、第一ウルフ收容所ニハ一ツノ馬寮式構内

ノ建物ハ初日ニ朝練衛兵ニ依リテ占取セラレ 其後

施設所及ビ貯蔵室トシテ使用セラレタリ。數百ノ患

者及ビ醫師並ニ看護人ハ露天ノ下、地上ニ横臥シ唯

一ノ積載物ハ最モ急遽遮ノ場合ニ對處スル若干急造

即席ノ蚊帳(部分的ニ芭蕉ノ葉ヲ以テ覆ハレタル)

ノ積載物有リタルノミナリ。後者ハ二回ノ大雨ノ事

件中ニ露天ノ山羊小舎ニ移轉セシメラレタリ。之等

ノ事件中ノ一ツニ於テ(千九百四十三年五月廿九日)

彼等が便器モナク互ニ汚レ合ヒテ其所ニ群ガリ横臥

シタル時、二名ハ闇中ニ死亡シ此ノコトハ夜間ケニ

及ビ判明セリ。

千九百四十三年七月十日ノ第二ウルフ收容所へノ

移轉(掛架ヲ俵ク爲メ午前十時三十六分ヨリ午後十

時半マテテ進綱セリ)ハソノ大部分ノ患者ガ二個ノ假

屋ニ宿泊セシメラレ待タる限度ニ於テ改善セラレタリ。

(普通四百人ヲ宿泊セシムルモ現存患者ハ五百五十

名ナリ)夫レハ凡ユル點ニ不便ナルゾロム收容所ト

同様ニ構築セラレタリ。(其ノ内ニハ寢台無ク人ハ

土間ニ眠ラザルベカラズ)夫等ノ假屋中ニ於テ部屋

ヲ有セザル約二百名ノ者ハ

5578-7

。。。。。。。。

宿舍設備、第一ウルフ收容所ニハーツノ馬來式精内
 家屋ト貯藏室トヲ除キ何等宿舍設備ナカリキ。之等
 ノ建物ハ初日ニ朝鮮衛兵ニ依リテ占取セラレ 其後
 施薬所及ビ貯藏室トシテ使用セラレタリ。獄百ノ患
 者及ビ醫師並ニ看護人ハ露天ノ下、地上ニ横臥シ唯
 一ノ發微物ハ最モ急性症ノ場合ニ對處スル若干急造
 即席ノ蚊帳（部分的ニ芭蕉ノ葉ヲ以テ製ハレタル）
 ノ程被褥有リタルノミナリ。後者ハ二回ノ大雨ノ暴
 作中ニ露天ノ山羊小舎ニ移轉セシメラレタリ。之等
 ノ事件中ノ一ツニ於テ（千九百四十三年五月廿九日）
 彼等ガ便所モナク互ニ汚レ合ヒテ其所ニ群ガリ横臥
 シタル時、二名ハ圍中ニ死亡シ此ノコトハ夜閉ケニ
 及ビ判明セリ。

千九百四十三年七月十日ノ第二ウルフ收容所ヘノ
 移轉（掛架ヲ俵ク爲メ午前十時三十六分ヨリ午後十
 時半マテ繼續セリ）ハソノ大部分ノ患者ガ二個ノ假
 屋ニ宿泊セシメラレ待タ限度ニ於テ改善セラレタリ。
 （普通四百人ヲ宿泊セシムルモ現存患者ハ五百五十
 名ナリ）夫レハ凡ユル點ニ不便ナルプロム收容所ト
 同様ニ構築セラレタリ。（其ノ内ニハ寢台無ク人ハ
 土間ニ眠ラザルベカラズ）夫等ノ假屋中ニ於テ部屋
 ヲ有セザル約二百名ノ者ハ

(イ) 重患者 (之給ノ者ハ唯湯式共同便所ヲ使用シテ
ル爲メ該假屋へ移サレタルモノ)

(ロ) 回復期ニ在ル患者ノ大部分ナリ

右両園ノ者ハ初メハ幾天ニ留マリシモ後日雙方共從
者ニ依リ建テラレタル宿泊用ノ各個ノ木造假屋ヲ得
タリ。病院事務員ハ醫師家屋ノ床下ニ在ル空キ間ニ
宿泊セザルヲ得ザリキ。而收容所ニ於ケル炊事場設
備ハ極メテ貧弱ニシテ第一收容所ニハ何等其ノ設備
無ク彼等ハ即席炊事場ヲ最善ニ活用セザル可カラザ
リキ。其所ニハ何等ノ燈火無ク又有リトスルモ極メ
不充分ナルモノナリ。唯第二收容所ノ病室ノ全体ニ
對シ五個ノ油ランプヲ使用シ得タルノミナリ。

衛生上ノ豫防手段。第一ウルフ收容所ニ於テハ何
等便器ハ使用セシメラレザリキ。重患者ニ對スル
病室ニハ小ナル穴ガ各寢台ニ設置シテ掘ラレ、患者ハ
其ノ穴ヲ越エテ轉身セザル可カラズ、一日四十回乃
至六十回ノ便通ハ普通ナルガ故ニ屢々新ラシキ穴ガ
患者ノ周邊ニ掘ラレザル可カラザリシタメ遂ニハ掘
ルコト不可能トナリ新ラシキ寢床ヲ見出サザルベカ
ラザリキ。患者ガ彼等ノ寢台ニ接続スル穴ニ轉ガリ
行クニ力弱キ場合ハ其穴ハ寢台ノ下ニ且ツ睡眠スル
蓆席ヲ通シテ掘ラレタリ。當初其所ニハ彼等ノ汚レ
タル衣服ヲ洗フ水ハ勿論、患者ヲ洗フベキ水モ無ク
夫レガ爲メ彼等ハ此ノ病室内ニ於テ排泄物ト糞ト

5578-9

ニ依リ不潔ナル身体ノ下方部ニ有染着アリキモノ多クシテ横臥セリ。(或ハ少シク寝ヘルモノモアリ)多クノ場合床敷レノ患者ハ臥テ充滿セル拳ノ深サノ衝ヲ持チ居リタリ。第二ウルフ收容所ニ於テハ穴ヲ以テスル排泄方法ハ最後ニ若干ノ便器使用セシメラレ、直患患者ガ木造ノ假屋ニ宿泊セシメラレ得ルニ至ルマデ續行ノ要アリタリ。サマテ直患患者ニ非ザル者ニ對スル病室ニ於テハ體ノ使用許サレ、該體ハ乾燥セル褥中ニ中尿ヲ放出シテ空虛ニセザル可カラズ。後日此處ニモ亦同復期ニ於ケル患者ノ病室ニ於ケルガ如ク褥式共同便所ガ設ケラレタリ。該同復期患者ノ病室内ニ此ノ方法(褥式共同便所)ガ用ヒラレタルモノナルガ、唯同復期ノ患者ハ自ラ之等ノ共同便所ヲ塵芥ヲ投ゲ捨テ、埋メ且ツ掃リ掃テ可カラザリキ。第二ウルフ收容所ニ於テハ一室ニ夫等ノ褥ハ他ニ比シテ深カリキ(地下水ノ爲メ)然レ共輕患患者ニ對スル病室ヨリ近距離ニ在ル爲メ相當廻廊ヲ發生セシメタリ。入浴及ビ洗濯ノ機會ニ乏シキコトハ最初ノ三週間中醫師及ビ看護ノ職員ガ唯償カニ參回、馬來式構内家屋ニ近キ湧水セザル井戸ノ溜水ヲ以テ彼等自身ヲ洗フ機會有リタルニ過ギザル事實ニ徴シ明白ナリ。

醫藥手當。宿舍設備及ビ衛生上ノ豫防手段ノ缺除ノミナラズ、亦藥品及ビ手當用品ノ著シキ不足ガ醫

5578-9

ニ依リ不潔ナル身体ノ下方部ニ竹箆ヲ用キモノ森
クシテ横臥セリ。(或ハ少シク寝ヘルモノモアリ)
多クノ場合屎尿レノ患者ハ瓦デ充滿セル釜ノ深サノ
節ヲ持チ居リタリ。第二ウルフ收容所ニ於テハ穴ヲ
以テスル排泄方法ハ最後ニ若干ノ便器使用セシメラ
レ、重患者ガ木造ノ假屋ニ宿泊セシメラレ得ルニ
至ルマデ續行ノ畏アリタリ。サマデ重患者ニ非ザ
ル者ニ對スル病室ニ於テハ他ノ使用許サレ、該處ハ
乾燥セル褥中ニ中味ヲ放出シテ空虛ニセザル可カラ
ズ。後日此處ニモ亦回復期ニ於ケル患者ノ病室ニ於
ケルガ如ク褥式共同便所ガ設ケラレタリ。該回復
期患者ノ病室内ニ此ノ方法(褥式共同便所)ガ用
ヒラレタルモノナルガ、唯回復期ノ患者ハ自ラ之等
ノ共同便所ヲ塵芥ヲ投ゲ捨テ、担メ早ツ掃リ去ル可
カラザリキ。第二ウルフ收容所ニ於テハ一室ニ夫等
ノ褥ハ他ニ比シテ深カリキ(地水ノ爲メ)然レ共輕
患者ニ對スル病室ヨリ近距離ニ在ル爲メ相當蠅孪ヲ
發生セシメタリ。入浴及ビ洗濯ノ機會ニ乏シキコト
ハ最初ノ三週間中醫師及ビ看護ノ職員ガ唯僅カニ
參回、馬來式構内家屋ニ近キ湧水セザル井戸ノ溜水
ヲ以テ彼等自身ヲ洗フ機會有リタルニ過キザル事實
ニ徴シ明白ナリ。

醫療手當。宿舍設備及ビ衛生上ノ豫防手段ノ缺除
ノミナラズ、亦藥品及ビ手當用品ノ著シキ不足ガ醫

ハ勿論歩行シ得ル患者ニ先取セラレ、重症患者ニ對スル供給ヲ困難ナラシメタリ。然レドモローマンカソリック傳道會ニ依ル重症患者ニ對スル牛乳ノ供給ハ數日ノ後禁ゼラレルト共ニ他ノ元氣回復資材（鳥卵、魚肉、果實）ノ購入モ非常ニ妨害セラレ屢々不可能ニセシメラレタリ。何故トナレバ、朝鮮人衛兵自ラ之等ノ物品ヲ買ヒ、且ツ賣ミ、或ハ我々ノ購入ニ對シ一種ノ最高價格ヲ設ケシタメ、非常ニ我々ニ同情シ我々ヲ助ケタル賣手ガ、其ノ甲斐モナク賣ラズニ歸ヘルコトヲ餘儀ナクセシメラルガ爲メナリ。

療手當ノ實施ヲ極メテ困難ナラシメ屢々不可能ニサ
 へ立チ到ラシメタリ。此所ニ於テモ亦當初醫師及ビ
 病院事務員ノ所有セル藥品ガ使用セラレザル可カラ
 ザリキ。シヤバヨリ持チ來ラレタル官用品ハ死ニ瀕
 セル重症患者ノ増加ノ爲メ幾多ノ反復セル要求アリ
 タルニ拘ハラズ、到着後一週間後初メテ使用シ得ル
 ニ至レリ。其ノタメ幾ラカ多量ノ供給品ヲ我々ニ於
 テ處分シ得ルニ至リタルモ、ソレハ屢々最モ切實ニ
 必要トセラレタル藥品ニテハ非ザリキ。醫療用具ハ
 得ラレザリキ。

食料供給。日本人ハ唯米及ビ南瓜ノミヲ供給シタ
 リ。最初ノ週間、追加食糧ノ購入禁ゼラレタルモ、
 衛兵不充分ニシテ、取締リ行キ届カズ、爲メニ白人
 營舎ノ鐵網垣根越シノ取引ヲ助ケタリ。其ノ取引
Kanot Village net fence

5578-10

療手當ノ實施ヲ極メテ困難ナラシメ屢々不可能ニサ
ヘ立チ到ラシメタリ。此所ニ於テモ亦當初醫師及ビ
病院事務員ノ所有セル藥品ガ使用セラレザル可カラ
ザリキ。シヤバヨリ持チ來ラレタル官用品ハ死ニ瀕
セル重症患者ノ増加ノ爲メ幾多ノ反復セル要求アリ
タルニ拘ハラズ、到着後一週間後初メテ使用シ得ル
ニ至レリ。其ノタメ幾ラカ多量ノ供給品ヲ我々ニ於
テ處分シ得ルニ至リタルモ、ソレハ屢々最モ切實ニ
必要トセラレタル藥品ニテハ非ザリキ。醫療用具ハ
得ラレザリキ。

食料供給。日本人ハ唯米及ビ南瓜ノミヲ供給シタ
リ。最初ノ週間、追加食糧ノ購入禁ゼラレタルモ、
衛兵不充分ニシテ、取繕リ行キ届カズ、爲メニ白人
ノ營舎ノ鐵網垣越シノ取引ヲ助ケタリ。其ノ取引
ハ勿論歩行シ得ル患者ニ先取セラレ、重症患者ニ對
スル供給ヲ困難ナラシメタリ。然レドモローマンカ
ソリック傳道會ニ依ル重症患者ニ對スル牛乳ノ供給
ハ数日ノ後禁ゼラレルト共ニ他ノ元氣回復資材（鳥
卵、魚肉、果實）ノ購入モ非常ニ妨害セラレ屢々不
可能ニセシメラレタリ。何故トナレバ、朝鮮人衛兵
自ラ之等ノ物品ヲ買ヒ、且ツ贖ミ、或ハ我々ノ購入
ニ對シ一種ノ最高價格ヲ設ケシタメ、非常ニ我々ニ
同情シ我々ヲ助ケタル莫手が、其ノ甲斐モナク賣ラ
ズニ歸ヘルコトヲ餘儀ナクセシメラルガ爲メナリ。

5578-11

ブロム收容所ニ於テ屠殺セラレシ病人收容所ノ爲
 メノ生肉ハ唯數回廻轉セシニ過ぎズ。其ノ管理ノ任
 ヲ任セラレタル鮮人衛兵ガ、通常ニ彼自身ノ爲メニ
 之ヲ使用シタリ。第一ウルフ收容所ニ到着スレバ
 其所ニ唯一ツノ井戸アリ、炊事場ノ爲メニ使用セシ
 メラレタリ。最初ノ日ハ何等飲料水ナク其後モ長時
 日ニ亘リ水ヲ遠隔ノ井戸ヨリ困難ヲ冒シテ搬ビ來レ
 リ。ソノ結果トシテ赤痢ニ依ル水分喪失ノタメ非常
 ニ困憊ノ渴ケル患者ニ對スル茶ノ乏シキ配分トナリ
 爲メニ彼等ハ秘カニココアツトミルクヲ飲ミ、彼
 等ノ病氣ヲ惡化セシメタリ。其後若干事態ノ改善ヲ
 見タリ。

養務

看護。看護吏員ノ數ハ非常ニ僅少ニシテ、夫レガ
 爲メ病院ノ事務員ハ過激ノ勞務ニ服シ、過少ノ休息
 ヲ取ルコトヲ餘儀ナクセラレ、而シテ劣悪ノ宿舍設
 備ト食料ノ爲メ病氣ヲ再度發シテ患者トナレリ。

他ノ勞役。最初ノ十日間ハ波止場勞務ニ組ミ入レ
 ラレザリシ第一ウルフ收容所ニ逗留セル健康者ヲ之
 レニ使用シ得タルモ其ノ後ハ回復期ノ患者ヲ他ノ勞
 務ノ爲メ使用セザルヲ得ザリキ。(患者ニ非ザル者
 ニ依リテ爲サル可キ炊事場ノ勞務ヲ除ク) 共同便所
 ヲ掘ルコト、收容所ノ掃除、直キ毎ノ水ヲ汲ブコト、
 (其ノ際ハ空虛ナル時四人ノ擔キ人ニ依リテテラ要

5578-11

ブロム收容所ニ於テ屠殺セラレシ病人收容所ノ爲
 メノ生肉ハ陸軍隊同運送セシニ運ギズ。其ノ管理ノ任
 ヲ託セラレタル鮮人衛兵ガ、通常ニ彼自身ノ爲メニ
 之ヲ使用シタリ。第一ウルフ收容所ニ到着スレバ
 其所ニ唯一ツノ井戸アリ、炊事場ノ爲メニ使用セシ
 メラレタリ。最初ノ日ハ何年飲料水ナク其後モ長時
 日ニ亘リ水ヲ遠隔ノ井戸ヨリ困難ヲ冒シテ汲ビ來レ
 リ。ソノ結果トシテ赤痢ニ依ル水分喪失ノタメ非常
 ニ咽喉ノ渴ケル患者ニ對スル茶ノ乏シキ配分トナリ
 爲メニ彼等ハ秘カニココアナツトミルクラ飲ミ、彼
 等ノ病氣ヲ悪化セシメタリ。其後若干事態ノ改善ヲ
 見タリ。

養務

看護。看護員ノ數ハ非常ニ僅少ニシテ、夫レガ
 爲メ病院ノ事務員ハ過激ノ勞務ニ服シ、適少ノ休息
 ヲ取ルコトヲ餘儀ナクセラレ、而シテ劣悪ノ宿舍設
 備ト食料ノ爲メ病氣ヲ再度發シテ患者トナレリ。

他ノ勞役。最初ノ十日間ハ渡止場勞務ニ組ミ入レ
 ラレザリシ第一ウルフ收容所ニ逗留セル健康者ヲ之
 レニ使用シ得タルモ其ノ後ハ回復期ノ患者ヲ他ノ勞
 務ノ爲メ使用セザルヲ得ザリキ。(患者ニ非ザル者
 ニ依リテ爲サル可キ炊事場ノ勞務ヲ除ク) 共同便所
 ヲ掘ルコト、收容所ノ掃除、重キ樽ノ水ヲ汲ブコト、
 (其ノ樽ハ空虛ナル時四人ノ擔ギ人ニ依リテ掘ラ要

5578-12

シ、夫等ノ人々ハ百米突ノ徳交代ヲ要ス、全將ノ死
配、墓ヲ造ルコト、死体ノ運搬及ビ火葬ハ、回復期
ノ患者ニ依リテ爲サザル可カラズ。其ノ結果ハ毎日
再發患者ノ有リタルコトナリ。

。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。

日本人指揮官。

フロレス收容所ノ日本人指揮官芦田中尉ハ、彼ノ
フロレス滞在中其ノ收容所ノ直接ノ指揮ニ決シテ容
疑セザリシ人ハ抗擧ニ於ケルガ如クトシテ、周知ノ
人物ナリキ。彼ハ彼ノ滞在中ノ大部分ヲマオエメレ
村ニ居住シ、彼ハ會テ患者收容所へ來リタルコトナ
シ（一回彼ハ彼ノ鼻ト口ニ手巾ヲ當テ第三ウルフ、收
容所ヲ通過シタルコトアリ）而シテ極メテ稀ニフロ
ム收容所ニ來レリ。（多クトモ一週ニ一度ナリ）

。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。

最初ノ月ニ於テ彼ハ彼ノ準士官ヲ、彼ノ信任スル
朝鮮人衛兵大山ノ手ニ委ヌルコトニ依リ直接ノ指揮
ヲ與ヘタリ。該大山ハ例ノ恐怖ノ統治ニ對シ責任者
ナリ。

。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。。

朝鮮人衛兵。

唯一人ノ例外ヲ除イテハ、朝鮮人衛兵ハフロレス
ニ於ケル全期間中停處ニ置シ非行ヲナシタリ。終リ
ノ數ヶ月間ニ稍長クナリタルハ、専ラ其所ニ長ク滞

5578-12

シ、夫等ノ人々ハ百米突ノ衝突代ヲ云ス(食料ノ欠
乏、墓ヲ造ルコト、死体ノ懸置及ヒ火葬ハ、回復期
ノ患者ニ依リテ爲サザル可カラズ。其ノ結果ハ毎日
百發患者ノ有リタルコトナリ。

日本人 指揮官。

フロレス 療養所ノ日本人 指揮官 芦田中尉ハ、彼ノ

フロレス 療養所中其ノ 療養所ノ 指揮ニ決シテ容

慮セザリシ人(抗滯ニ於ケルガ如ク)トシテ、風知ノ

人物ナリキ。彼ハ彼ノ 療養所中ノ大部分ヲマオエメレ

村ニ居住シ、彼ハ曾テ患者 療養所ヘ來リタルコトナ

シ(一回彼ハ彼ノ鼻ト口ニ手巾ヲ當テ、第二ナル、敗

容所ヲ通過シタルコトアリ)而シテ、極メテ稀ニフロ

ス 療養所ニ來レリ。(多クトモ一週ニ一度ナリ)

最初ノ月ニ於テ彼ハ彼ノ 準士官ヲ、彼ノ信任スル

朝鮮人 衛兵六山ノ手ニ委ヌルコトニ依リ、直接ノ指揮

ヲ與ヘタリ。該六山ハ例ノ 悉節ノ 統治ニ對シ、責任者

ナリ。

朝鮮人 衛兵。

唯一人ノ 例外ヲ除イテハ、朝鮮人 衛兵ハフロレス

ニ於ケル 全期間中 停戦ニ對シ、非行ヲナシタリ。終リ

ノ 數ケ月 隔ニ 稀長クナリタルハ、忘ラ其 所ニ 長ク 滯

5578-13

在セル結果ニシテ人情ノ結果ニ非ス、衛兵ノ指揮官、
服務指揮者、監督官、當番兵、及ビ其ノ他ノ職員ノ
眞ニ無微隠ナル能力ハ種々ノ手段ニ依リテ濫用セラ
レ、俘虜ノ虐待ト彼等自身ノ利益ニ終レリ。
整列ニ對スル命令及ビ指揮、茶箱ノ清掃、軍隊敬
禮ヲ爲スコト、懐中時計、万年筆、衣服ノ強請ニツ
イテノ定例ノ反復セル努力、俘虜ノ爲メノ肉及ビ其
他ノ食料ヲ盗ミ取リ又ハ着服スルコト、泥濘ノ結果
トシテノ收容所ニ於ケル数多ノ惡シキ振舞及ビ恐迫
ノ下ニスル不道德行爲ノ強行、又眞正ノ罪若シクハ
想像ノ罪ニ對スル處罰、顔面ノ平手打、(又ハ平手
打ヲ爲サシムル爲メノ他ニ對スル指圖、竹、杖、又
ハ銃ノ台尻ヲ以テ頭部及ビ身体ヲ打ツコト等ノ行爲
ハ患者收容所及ビ勞役者ノ收容所(患者ノ部門ヲ含
ム)ニ於テ神經不安ヲ起サシメタリ。此ノ最癩ノ例
ハ新任ノ衛兵指揮官代理ノ名ヲ呼ブコトナリ。即チ
其ノ名ハ、特別ノ道樂及ビ罰ニ對シ準備スル爲メノ
時間ヲ有ラシムル機會ヲ俘虜ニ與ヘムガ爲メ、直チ
ニ收容所内ニ傳ヘラレタリ。名ヲ呼ビ廻ハリテ準
備ヲ爲サシムル一晝ニ朝鮮人衛兵ハ病人ニ對シテ何
等考慮ヲ與フルコトナク、死者ニ對シテモ禮拜スル
コト無ク、俘虜ニ對シ人情味アル取扱ヲナスコトモ
無カリシナリ。若干ノ日本人ニツイテ除外例ヲ設ケ
ルコトヲ得、殊ニ二名ノ耶穌教信者ノ朝鮮人ニ對シ
テ然リ。即チ此ノ朝鮮人ハ千九百四十三年クリスマス
スノ夜、俘虜ノ間ニ分配セラル可キ贈物トシテ若干
ノ巻煙草ヲ與ヘタリ。

5578-15

一 彼ハ此ノ期間中患者報告ニ干渉セリ而シテ發熱ノ
マラリヤ及ビ赤痢患者ヲ飛行場勞役ニ送リタリ

二 彼ハ彼等ノ勞役ヨリ歸リタル病メル程度及ビ若干
ノ鼻氣患者ヲ銃ノ台尻ヲ以テ毆打セリ

三 演習中尉ビィ・ダブリーニィ・ステイーン(赤痢ヨ
リ來ル一種ノ重症患者)ニ對スル虐待ノ虐待夫レ
ハ此ノ人物ノ死亡ニ間接ノ原因ヲ爲セリ

四 國民軍軍曹ブローア一及ビホームセン中尉ニ對ス
ル極メテ激烈ナル虐待(彼ノ組ニ屬スル若干兵卒
逃亡ニ因シテ)

荒井、朝鮮人衛兵、此ノ人物ハ勞役區ノ指揮者トシ
テノミナラス他ノ場合ニ於テモ嚴シキ虐待ヲ行ヒタ
リ

一 第一ウルフ收容所ノ重症患者ノ病室ニ於テ彼ハ氣
ヲ附ケノ横臥姿勢ヲ爲サザリシ故ヲ以テ重症患者
ノ頸部ヲ離リタリ

二 藥草ヲ深水中ノ第一ウルフ收容所ノ回廊期ニ在ル
一團ノ患者ヲ罌子藥防ヲ以テ折檻シタリ
(衛兵指揮官ノ許可ヲ得テ)而シテ其ノ後テ彼等
ヲシテ日向ニ數時間曝ツカシメタリ

三 緊要ナラザル非行(灰皿ハ完全ニ汚穢セラレズ)
ノ故ニソノ時居合ハシタ第二ウルフ收容所ノ收容

5578-16

所員ヲ殴打シタリ而シテ其ノ従長時ニ亘リ彼等ノ
涙部ヲ殴打セリ

四 野際衛警ト新騎ノ警警ノ爲入院中ノキアバニース
軍曹ヲ蹴リタリ

松岡、朝鮮人衛兵、朝鮮人衛兵ノ内此ノ人物ハ最モ
恐ル可キ典型ノモノナリキ

一 唯日本ノ收容所指揮官ノ舉動ガ氣ニ陰ハザル爲ニ
ヤツ當リシテタリボエラ收容所ニ於ケル全部ノ
士官ノ警備ノ士官ヲ宿舍ニ呼ビ出シ何等ノ理由無
シニ彼等ヲ藤マツカシメテ蹴リ且襪ヲ以テ彼等ヲ
殴打セリ

ニ 彼ハ第一ウルフ收容所ニ於テ氣ヲ附ケノ横臥姿勢
ヲ取ルニ後レタル爲一患者（後日彼ハ死亡シタリ）
浮誇ジエー・エー・マーシンデノ脚部ヲ蹴リ長サ
十センチ骨ニ突スル程ヲ生ゼシメ更ニ再ビ壹回彼
ヲ殴打セリ

三 荷迫ノ下ニ或ル若年ノ警備ヲシテ鷄姦ヲ爲サシム
ル様説得セムト試ミタリ（ザアンリース事件）

吾等、日本人通譯、此ノ人物ハ陸往復ノ航路中ニ於
テノミナラズ、フロレンスニ滞在中ニ於テモ數回強
忍ナル行爲ニ就テ有罪ナリ

一 ハームセン中尉及ビハンデグエルド中尉ヲ辱シク
虐待セルコト

5578-17

ニ辱意シヨブノ頭部ヲ彼ノ靴ガ寸許サレルマテ蹴リ
タリ

洞村、朝鮮人衛兵、事件ノ虐待（クラウス）ニ次イ
テ彼ハ行場ニ於ケル彼等ノ勞役ヨリ歸還スル患者
ヲ待合ニ集メ附ケノ憂鬱ニテ立タシムルニ極メテ峻
烈ナリキ、彼ハ彼等ヲ毆打シ若シクハ勞役團ノ全員
ガ歸還スルマテ彼等ノ勞役ニ再ビ彼等ヲ送リ返シタ
リ

山本、朝鮮人衛兵、勞役患者ノ指導者

前掲終リニ是ゲラレタル職務ニ於テ彼ハ數回虐待ニ
關シ有罪ナリ

テ・ツリアース事件参照ノコト

テ・ツリアース大尉事件。一役ニ歩兵大尉テ・ツリ
アースハマオエメレノマオエマノ港ニ於ケル陸揚
ゲノ期間中及び其ノ直後ニ於テ和籍人勞役指揮者ト
シテ活動セリ、千九百四十三年五月十三日彼ハ日本
人軍曹石井及び軍曹坂本ニ對シ衛兵ニ依ル證據所認
ンビゴエノエングノ運度ノ使用ニ就テ不審ヲ述べ
且彼ハ前日ノ簿録ニ基キ餘分ノヲ期待シタリ、午後
ニ此テテツリアース大尉ハ願ヒ出テテ朝鮮人ノ勞役團
長、山本ヨリ今シ方上陸セル若干ノ赤痢患者及び病

81-855

氣ニナリタル若干ノ職務者ヲブロム牧寮所マデ賞働
 自費ニテ送還スル許可ヲ得タリ、出費前、山本ト
 親善人選章士トノ間ニ烈シキ議論有リタル終、後若
 (選章士)ハ大尉ノ責部ヲ受打シ其ノ間山本ハ氣ヲ
 附ケト叫ビツツ彼ノ向院ヲ出リタリ、此ノ節度ニ對
 シ憤慨ニ溢テテ、テ・ツィアース大尉ハ山本ノ愛國
 ニ對シテ次ノ如ク答ヘタリ即チ
 『彼(テ・ツィアース)ハ曾テ日本人ト圖ヒ今日彼
 ハ日本人ノ命令ニ應スルヲ餘儀ナクセラレ居ルコト
 及ビ若シ機會有レバ彼ハ再ビ日本人ト闘フ可キコト』
 ラ答ヘタリ、其ノ時彼ハ婦人、牧山ヨリ銃ノ台尻ヲ
 以テスル合計四十回ノ撃打ヲ口部ニ受ケ且腫ラレ且
 押シ難ハサレ其ノ間山本ハ彼ニ有ラユル柔術ノ手ヲ
 試ミタリ、其レカラ固モ無ク軍曹坂本ハ再ビ其ノ場
 ニ現ハレ彼ノ坂本ノヲ避シテ、テ・ツィアース大尉
 ハ彼ノ不潔ヲ牧寮所司令官ニ話ス事ヲ得タリ
 山本ハ之レニ對スル恠メテ表面的ニ皮相ナル愛國ノ
 圖ニ其ノ苦衷ノ理由ハ、テ・ツィアース大尉ガ一直
 ニ二種ノ患者(上唇ノ者及腹中ノ者)ヲ彼ニ知ラ
 サズニ送リソノタメ困窮ヲ生ゼシメタルニ位ル旨ヲ
 答辨シタリ其ノ折辱ノ結果ハ輕度ノ膿毒瘻血液ノ全
 身滲出及永久不潔ノ瘻管ヲ生ゼシメタル右眼ノ重瘻

81-855

氣ニナリタル若干ノ屬務者ヲブロム歐容所マテ賃働
 自費ニテ送還スル許可ヲ得タリ、出費者、山本ト
 親衛人選士トノ間ニ烈シキ議論有リタル終、後者
 (選士)ハ大尉ノ責ヲ打シ其ノ間山本ハ氣ヲ
 附ケト叫ビツツ彼ノ向戻ヲ止リタリ、此ノ程度ニ對
 シ償償ニ遣テテ、テ・ツィアース大尉ハ山本ノ質問
 ニ對シテ次ノ如ク答ヘタリ即チ
 『彼(テ・ツィアース)ハ曾テ日本人ト關ヒ今日彼
 ハ日本人ノ命令ニ應スルヲ餘儀ナクセラレ居ルコト
 及ビ若シ機會有レバ彼ハ再ビ日本人ト關フ可キコト』
 ラ答ヘタリ、其ノ時彼ハ婦人、牧山ヨリ銃ノ台尻ヲ
 以テスル合計四十回ノ打ヲ口部ニ受ケ且嚙ラレ且
 押シ廻ハサレ其ノ間山本ハ彼ニ有ラユル柔術ノ手ヲ
 試ミタリ、其レカラ間モ無ク軍曹坂本ハ再ビ其ノ場
 ニ現ハレ彼ノ坂本ノヲ遣シテ、テ・ツィアース大尉
 ハ彼ノ不潔ヲ歐容所司令官ニ話ス事ヲ得タリ
 山本ハ之レニ對スル極メテ表面的ニ良相ナル質問ノ
 間ニ其ノ苦痛ノ理由ハ、テ・ツィアース大尉ガ一章
 ニ二種ノ患者(上唇ノ者及原勝中ノ者)ヲ彼ニ知ラ
 サズニ送リソノタメ原因ヲ生ゼシメタルニ似ル旨ヲ
 答辨シタリ其ノ治療ノ結果ハ重症ノ膿瘻血液ノ全
 身滲出及永久不治ノ管ヲ生ゼシメタル右眼ノ腫瘍

リシコトナリ夫レ等ノ數字ハ事實ヲ雄辯ニ物語ル場
ナリ、第二ウルフ收容所ノ閉鎖後プロム收容所ニ於
ケル病院ハ健康者部門ノ宿所ニ於ケル患者ヲ除外シ
テ常ニ壹千貳百人ノ患者ヲ有シタリ

病氣ノ種類。最初ノ赤痢病ノ突發中脚氣病ガ定リ始
メタリ一方其ノ後ニ於テマラリヤ傳染病發生シ諛癩
ハ事實上最後ニ至ルマデ繼續シタリ

日々多數ノ傳染性皮膚病及創傷傳染病有リタリ、赤
痢ハ最も多クノ患者ヲ有セリ一方ニ於テマラリヤ
殊ニ昏眩性マラリア及脚氣部チ所謂水脚氣ハ致命的
ナリキ、覆無キ濠溝式共同便所並ニ附近ノ厩舎ノ糞
果トシテ蠅ノ禍ガ如何ニ赤痢病症ヲ増加セシメタル
カハ他ノ場所デ證明シアリ、他國マラリア傳染病ハ
舊天生活時代及プロム收容所ノ中央ニ於ケル蚊ノ發

5578-19

ナリキ、軍醫士官アイ・マリエンノ判斷ニ依レバ此
ノ折檻ハデ・ツィーアース大尉程ノ運動家デナイ場合
ニハ其ノ者ヲ死ニ至ラシムルモノナリト言フ

事實ハ最初ノ護送輸送ヘ千九百四十四年十一月二十
七日マデ最モヨイ時デ最初ノ二千七十九人ノ内ハ
百人ガ收容所外ノ低等ノ勞役ヲ爲スコト可能ナリシ
コト而シテ馬車ノ場合參百五十人以内ノ者ガ可能ナ

5578-20

生スル濕地ノ出現ヨリ起レリ、宿舍設備、衛生資料
及藥品ノ缺如故ニ粗悪ナ食料ハ病者ヲ増加セシメタ
リ

死亡、

死亡ノ數。後日ノ多量ノ死亡ヲ別ニシテ航海中二百
十三名ノ停泊ハ死亡シタリ即チ二名ハ往航ニ於テ、
數名ハ歸還中汽車中ニ於テ而シテ二百八名ハフロ
ンスニ於テ病氣ノ爲死亡シ貳名ハ日本人ニ依リ殺サ
レタリ、左記ハ年齢組別ニ死亡ヲ示シタル表ナリ

年 齡	死亡 者數	對全死亡 者百分率	年 齡	死亡 者數	對全死亡 者百分率
不 明	15	7%	自三十五才至四十才	35	16 $\frac{1}{2}$ %
二十五才マデ	20	9 $\frac{1}{2}$ %	自四十才至四十五才	54	26%
自二十五才至三十才	17	8%	自四十五才至五十才	35	16 $\frac{1}{2}$ %
自三十才至三十五才	31	15%	自五十才至六十才	3	1 $\frac{1}{2}$ %

死期執行、謀殺

グイツサー事件

千九百四十三年五月末日ヨリ二日後停泊グイツサー
ヲ受ケ持ツ部隊長ガ彼ノグイツサーノヲ見失ヘル時
グイツサーハ兵收容所ノ東方若干軒米ノ地蔵ヲ歩行

12-8635

シツツアル彼ラ員付ケタル若干ノ日本水兵ニヨリ逃
捕セラレタリトノ報告與ヘラレタリ

此ノ管束ガ收容所ヨリ逃亡シタルコトハ推定サレタ
ルナラムモ何等確認ヘ行ハレザリキノ

我々ハ審問及死刑執行ニ關スルイロイロノ事情ヨリ
又夫等ノ毒ノ有リタル日ニ於テ朝鮮衛兵ノ交代員ガ

銃トシヤベルヲ持テテ行ツテ當時ニシテ爵類スル豫
定ニテ出テ行キタル事案ヨリ且又日本人通譯者妻ガ

ドイツサイノリユツクサツクヲ持ツテイルノヲ見タ
事實ヨリ彼ノドイツサイノガ死刑ニ處セラレタルコ
トヲ知レリ

今日ニ至ルマデ何處ニ於テ如何ナル方法ヲ而シテド
ノ審問ノ後テ此レガ(死刑ノ執行ガ)行ハレタカ不
明デアル

ポルダマン事件。ウルフ警部、通譯ロットガーリン
グ及警備中尉エツチ・エツチ・ジエー・テ・フリー
スハ朝鮮人、大山ニ依リ近隣ノマレー式住宅ニ在リ
シ日本人收容所司令官ノトコロヘ呼ビ出サレタリ
(之レマデ知ラレザル一隊人衛兵ノ面前ニ於テ)ソ
レハ壹千九百四十五年六月七日夜九時ニ第一ウルフ
收容所ニ於テ二發ノ銃聲トソレニ續ク叫ビ聲ノ聞カ
レタル約半時間後ノ事ナリキ此ノ收容所司令官ハ逃

5578-22

亡ヲ試ミシ射撃セラレシ倅屍ヲ確認スベク命ジタル
モ質問ハ禁ゼラレタリ、其ノ家ヨリ若干ノ臣僚ノ所
ニ仰向キニ潰ハレル其ノ嚮往者（彼ノ口ヨリ小壘ノ
血ガ流レ瀉レリ）ハ彼ガボルグマンナルコトヲ告ゲ
タリ、彼ハウルフ醫師及デ・フリース中尉ニ對シ彼
ノ容態ハ絶望ニシテ一彈兩腕ヲ貫キ爲メニ最早救助
シ得ザルコトヲ耳證セリ
收容所司令官ノ所へ歸リ確認ノ結果報告ヲ爲シタル
後夫等ノ士官（前述ノ三人）ハ收容所ニ導カレ其ノ
後彼等ハ芦田ガ不知ノ衛兵ニ下命セルヲ聽ケリ
歸路彼等ハ第三回目ノ銃聲ヲ聽キタリ收容所ニ到着
スルヤ大山ハ其ノ嚮往者ノ部隊長（ジエレマ中尉）
ニ對シ擔架ヲ持テ六人ノ病院事務員（コスタラス及
ドライエツセンヲ舍ム）ト共ニ馬來式住宅へ戻ル様
命令シタリ、彼等ノ隊長以下六名ノハボルグマンガ
彼ノ頭貫通銃創ニテ死亡セルヲ發見セリ其ノ死體
ヲ火葬ニ附シ墓ニ埋メルタメ墓場ニ持ツテ來ル様ニ
トノ命令ヲ完遂シタル上其ノ病院事務員等ハ最初ノ
射撃ガ眞ニ胸部ヲ打ち貫キ而モ其ノ彈丸ガ若シ腕ガ
骨ニ下ガリテ在リタルモノナレバ其ノ腕ヲ貫通シタ
ル管ノ状態ニ打ち込まレタル旨機ヲ見テ物語リタリ
ノ打ち込まレタル旨物語ル機會有リタリノ
（之レ其ノ銃聲ノ聲コへタル時「兩手ヲ擧ゲ」ノ命

5578-23

令アリシ事ヲ示シ符ルモノナリ) ジエレマ中尉ハ翌
朝本件ニ關シテ虐待セラレタリ、 ウルズ... 醫師ハ
此ノ事アリシ事通問後ニ大山ニ依リ死亡ノ元因トシ
テ赤痢ガ疑ゲラレオレル死亡證明ニ署名スルヲ餘儀
無クセラレタリ

證人 大尉 エー・シー・ジエー・デ・ツィアース
國民兵 シー・テリ・ブランツ
豫備中尉 エツチ・エツチ・ジエー・デ・フリース

四七番 マンガラン
バンドン

E. #1786

Doc. No. 5583

Page 1

I, V39006 Major John Kevin LLOYD of Army HQ Melbourne, make oath and say:

1. I am an officer of the Australian Military Forces.
2. Annexed hereto and marked "A" is a true copy of an affidavit sworn by 416284 - T/Lt Lyndon Lloyd McKenzie on 25 Mar 46 which I have in my custody in the course of my duties.
3. The original affidavit cannot be made available immediately as it is required for trials of minor war criminals.

/s/ J. K. LLOYD
Major

Sworn before me at Melbourne
this eighth day of
May 1946

/s/ S. Peach Capt
An Officer of the
Australian Military Forces

Doc. No. 5583

Page 2

S. Beach Capt.

"A"

An officer of the I. M. F.

This is the copy affidavit referred to in the declaration of Mayor J. K. Lloyd dated the eighth day of May 1946

On this 25th day of March, One thousand nine hundred and forty-six E/Lt Lyndon Lloyd McKENZIE, No. 416284, of No. 2 Personnel Depot, R. A. A. F. BRADFIELD PARK, in the State of New South Wales, makes oath and says as follows:-

1. I was taken prisoner at SOEMBWA on 27 Apr. 45 at approximately 0830 hours, together with eleven other RAAF personnel, members of the crew of a Liberator bomber commanded by S/Ldr J. A. Wawn. After capture S/Ldr WAWN, F/O SYKES and self were separated from the rest of the party, hand-cuffed, blindfolded, legs tied and hands tied behind our backs. So trussed we were placed on the floor of a truck and driven over very rough road for a period of eight hours. If we moved in any way we were struck with a rifle butt. Immediately after this we were again separated and Japanese moved round and kicked and beat us for one hour, then we were interrogated by several Japanese Officers and threatened with death if we were found not to tell the truth. I was then knocked into insensibility with a rubber truncheon and when I had almost come to taken outside, had my head layed on a block and a Japanese drew and raised his sword as though to execute me but he did not do so. By this time it was about 0300 hours next day and I was tied up tight and left that way for the rest of the night. I was unable at this stage to identify personally any of the Japanese concerned in this treatment. We were further illtreated at SOEMBWA by various frightening ruses calculated to make us believe we were to be executed, tortured and bayoneted.
2. We were taken to SOEMBWA, where we remained for three weeks, being well treated and then moved to BATAVIA, arriving there in the middle of June.
3. At CYCLE Camp, BATAVIA I was interrogated by a Japanese whom we know as the "BASHER", a thick set man who prided himself as an exponent of ju-jitsu. Early in July the "BASHER" made me sit in a chair and severely bashed me with a wooden sword, finally knocking me off the chair onto concrete. The Japanese FCO who was with him, in his presence, then continued the bashing with a rubber slipper whilst I was on the ground. As a result of this my face became painfully swollen to such an extent that at first I was not recognized by my fellow P. W.

4. On another occasion the "BASHER" gave a personal exhibition of ju-jitsu, using me as the victim. I was not allowed to retaliate in any way and was thrown about heavily and suffered considerable pain.

5. The day after my beating by the "BASHER", which I have described, I saw F/lt' OLDFIELD, who had been similarly treated with a rubber slipper. His face was very swollen and one eye particularly was flaming red and in shocking condition.

6. About this time also I remember seeing Sgts McINERNEY and MALONEY after they had been subjected to a treatment wherein they were made to lay their hands palm down on the table and repeatedly hit on each finger nail in succession. Their nails were flattened and broken and they were in much pain.

SWORN by the above named deponent
Lyndon Lloyd McKENZIE at Sydney
on the 25th day of March
One thousand nine hundred and
forty-six

BEFORE ME Capt

R. R. B. HICKSON
IX 25579
An Officer of the Australian
Military Forces.

2. 1786-1

文書番號五五八三

英國飛行大尉「リンドン・ロイド・マツケンジ」口供書

抄 譯

5583-1

本千九百四十六年三月二十五日ニ、在「ニュー・サウス・ウエールズ」州「ブラッドフィールド・パーク」英國濠洲飛行隊第二人隊部勤務四一六二八四號飛行大尉「リンドン・ロイド・マツケンジ」

ハ宣誓ヲナシ次ノ如ク申シ述べマス。一九四五年四月二十七日八時半頃私ハ飛行中

長「J.A. ウォーレン」ニヨリ指揮サレタ「リベレイ」機ノ乗組員タル他ノ英國濠洲飛行隊員十名ト共ニ「セムパ」ニ於テ捕虜ニナリマシタ、捕

トナリタル後、飛行少佐「ウォーレン」飛行中尉「サイクス」及私ハ手錠ヲ掛ケラレ目隠シヲサレ足ヲ

縛ラレ且後手ニ縛ラレ一行ノ他ノ者カラ門閉サセラレシタ。私共ハ新ク縛リ付ケラレテ貨物自動車ノ

床ノ上ニ置カレ非常ナ悪路ヲ八時間ノ間運バレマシタ。私共ハ少シテモ動クト銃ノ床尻デ押ラレマシタ。

此ノ直グ後テ私共ハ又離サレテ一時間ノ間日本兵ハ私共ノ周圍ヲ歩キ廻リ蹴リ毆打ラシマシタ、ソレカラ

私共ハ獄人ノ日本將校カラ訊問ヲ受ケ若シ眞實ヲ云ハナカツタコトガ分レバ死刑ニナルノダト云ツテ

黙カサレマシタ。ソレカラ私ハ謾謾ノ様デ居ラレテ

0000361

RE

5583-2

人幕不省ニナリマシタ。ソシテ私が殆ンド正氣ズク
頃ニ外ニ避レ出サレ私ノ頭ヲ一ツノ意ノ上ニ置イテ
一人ノ日本兵ガ自分ノ刀ヲ抜キ漲リ上ゲテ私ヲ切ル
カニ見エマシタガ結局ハシマセンテシタ。其ノ時ハ
次ノ日ノ朝ノ三時頃デアリマシタガ私ハシツカリト
纏リ付ケラレ其ノ夜ノ強リノ間其ノマ、ニシテ置カ
レマシタ。此ノ段階ニ於テハ一コノ時ニハ一私ハ此
ノ取扱ニ關係シタ日本人ヲ誰ハ人トシテ自ラ確認ス
ルコトハ出来マセンテシタ。ソレカラ煎ニ刑共ハ一
センバ一テ私共ガヤガテ死刑ニナリ拷問ニ懸ケラレ
或ハ銃剣デ突キ刺サレルコトニナツテルガ如ク私共
ニ思ハセル爲ノ色々ノ酷カシノ計略デ非道イ限ニ會
ハサレマシタ。

二、三、四、五、六、一、一、一、一、一 省略 一、一、一、一、一
右ハ一九四六年三月二十五日「シドニー」ニ於テ
上記宣誓征人「リンドン・ロイド・マツケンジ」
ニヨリ余即チ濠洲陸軍將校タル陸軍大尉 R.R.B.
「ヒツクソン」N X 二五五七九ノ面前ニ於テ宣誓
セラレタルモノナリ。

EVIDENTIARY PAGE 583

余「ムルホー」之軍司令部附^{YX三九〇六}「ジョウケイ」トシテ、以テ「宣誓」
ト陳述ス。

一 余「オーストラリア」陸軍、將校トナリマス。

二 「ヨ」ニ添附サル「A」ト印シテタルハ、一九四六年三月二十一日、四三

二四「ロード」トイフ「ブック」ニ「空軍大尉」ヨリ「宣誓」サ

ル「宣誓」ト真正ト記述ナリマス。ソノ「宣誓」ハ私職務上私
保管ニナリガナリマス。

三 原又「宣誓」ニ級「戦争犯罪人」裁判、タニ必要トスカラ
直ニ提供スルハ出来マセ。

「J. ロイド」少佐 / 署名

「ムルホー」ニ於テ余、面前ニ宣誓セリ。

本一九四六年五月八日。

「S. シー」大尉 / 署名

「オーストラリア」陸軍ニ在リ

Q. # 1787

PRO JUSTITIA

Doc. 5597

Government Bureau for
the Investigation of
War Crimes.

OFFICIAL RECORD

Today, 15 March 1946, I, Gerrit Jan SIP, 1st class Inspector of Police, charged with investigation of war crimes, have interrogated the person: Charles van der SLOOT, born at The Hague on 20 February 1917, enlisted in the "landstorm" (Tr.note: territorial militia army), acting as interpreter at the Office for Japanese Affairs, residing at Park Hotel, Batavia, who, on enquiry, stated as follows:

I served in the R.N.I.A. as an interpreter for the Moluccas area and was stationed at Ambon. On 30 January 1942 it became known that Japanese troops had landed on Ambon. After some battles in which I personally took no part, the Staff of troops stationed in Ambon was taken prisoner near PASSO (Lateri) on 2 February 1942 at 3 a.m.

.....

On 16 February 1942 I along with some 20 Javanese soldiers of the R.N.I.A was taken by ship to Timor. The voyage lasted four days during which we were badly fed and one day were given nothing to drink. After disembarkation Koepang airfield proved to be our destination. The journey on foot took 5 days which I covered with hands tied behind my back. I was so exhausted that on arrival I lay unconscious for 5 hours. The next day I had to act as an interpreter between the Japanese and Australian Prisoners-of-war. There were more than one thousand Australians amongst whom were many wounded and malaria and dysentery patients.

An Australian medical officer asked for medical treatment and medicines for his sick. The Japanese officer named FUKADA bluntly refused. These Australians lived in an enclosure fenced in with barbed wire and bamboo, practically in the open air. I stayed there for about a fortnight and during that time about fifty Australians died and had to be buried within that same enclosure. The area in which more than one thousand Australians lived was about two acres. Food for these Australians was very poor. Only dry rice was supplied; they had to do their own cooking. Equipment for that purpose was insufficient so that preparation and serving of breakfast consisting of rice porridge lasted from 4 till 11 a.m. The Australian officer, a Lieutenant Colonel, asked my intermediary in order to get conditions improved. I translated this request to the Japanese named FUKADA but once again I received a blunt refusal. The Japanese supplied only rice, never vegetables or meat. During those two weeks I asked for improvement several times at the request of the Australian Lieutenant Colonel; I did the same of my own accord but it was all to no avail.

The Japanese demanded a working-party of 500 men each day to repair roads, to cut trees and to do digging. The Australian Officer could at most detail 300 men a day fit to do some work. The remainder was sick or too weak. The food supplied amounted to one liter of rice porridge per man per day.

Q. # 1787

PRO JUSTITIA

Doc. 5597

Government Bureau for
the Investigation of
War Crimes.

OFFICIAL RECORD

Today, 15 March 1946, I, Gerrit Jan SIP, 1st class Inspector of Police, charged with investigation of war crimes, have interrogated the person: Charles van der SLOOT, born at The Hague on 20 February 1917, enlisted in the "landstorm" (Tr.note: territorial militia army), acting as interpreter at the Office for Japanese Affairs, residing at Park Hotel, Batavia, who, on enquiry, stated as follows:

I served in the R.N.I.A. as an interpreter for the Moluccas area and was stationed at Ambon. On 30 January 1942 it became known that Japanese troops had landed on Ambon. After some battles in which I personally took no part, the Staff of troops stationed in Ambon was taken prisoner near PASSO (Lateri) on 2 February 1942 at 3 a.m.

.....

On 16 February 1942 I along with some 20 Javanese soldiers of the R.N.I.A. was taken by ship to Timor. The voyage lasted four days during which we were badly fed and one day were given nothing to drink. After disembarkation Koepang airfield proved to be our destination. The journey on foot took 5 days which I covered with hands tied behind my back. I was so exhausted that on arrival I lay unconscious for 5 hours. The next day I had to act as an interpreter between the Japanese and Australian Prisoners-of-war. There were more than one thousand Australians amongst whom were many wounded and malaria and dysentery patients.

An Australian medical officer asked for medical treatment and medicines for his sick. The Japanese officer named FUKADA bluntly refused. These Australians lived in an enclosure fenced in with barbed wire and bamboo, practically in the open air. I stayed there for about a fortnight and during that time about fifty Australians died and had to be buried within that same enclosure. The area in which more than one thousand Australians lived was about two acres. Food for these Australians was very poor. Only dry rice was supplied; they had to do their own cooking. Equipment for that purpose was insufficient so that preparation and serving of breakfast consisting of rice porridge lasted from 6 till 11 a.m. The Australian officer, a Lieutenant Colonel, asked my intermediary in order to get conditions improved. I translated this request to the Japanese named FUKADA but once again I received a blunt refusal. The Japanese supplied only rice, never vegetables or meat. During those two weeks I asked for improvement several times at the request of the Australian Lieutenant Colonel; I did the same of my own accord but it was all to no avail.

The Japanese demanded a working-party of 500 men each day to repair roads, to cut trees and to do digging. The Australian Officer could at most detail 300 men a day fit to do some work. The remainder was sick or too weak. The food supplied amounted to one liter of rice porridge per man per day.

The Australians had wounded personnel among them. During my two weeks' stay there about 30 men were operated upon for extraction of shell splinters among other things. These operations were carried out by their own doctors in the open air with the patient seated on and tied to a chair. The doctors were compelled in some cases to operate without anaesthetics. Medical treatment as well as admission to the hospital at Koepang were refused nor were anaesthetics given.

.....

In July 1942 a Timorese had cut a telephone wire at that place. The delinquent was caught in the act and arrested, along with two brothers of DENOE who happened to be in the neighbourhood. I am convinced they were not guilty; one was 21 years of age and the other 16. That very day they were sentenced to death which was done in the following way. In my presence and through my intermediary as an interpreter the suspect was merely asked his name and why he had cut the wire by KAWAKE. He stated his name and said further he wanted the wire for private use. The two brothers of DENOE were never asked a question. That same day on orders from KAWAKE and without any form of trial I had to draw up a document in the Malay language announcing the death sentence of these three which was placarded in the market-place. The public was instructed to come and look on. Rajas and I myself were told to attend. When I arrived on the spot I saw three new-dug graves. After a few minutes the three convicted with hands tied behind their backs were led in. One after another had to kneel before the graves facing the firing squad and the public. They were not blindfolded. A Japanese, Lieutenant KAWAKE read the sentence in Japanese warning that everybody who committed sabotage would be shot. I had to translate this in Malay to the public. Hereafter the three were shot; all three fell backwards in their grave. The 16 years old was immediately dead, the 21 years old received a coup de grace. The suspect was still alive and moaned. A Japanese soldier armed with a rifle and bayonet compelled one of the bystanders to take a heavy stone and to throw this into the grave at the head of the wounded man. The sight shocked me so that I went away. The graves have been filled up by bystanders on orders from the Japanese as I heard afterwards. Attending this execution were Lieutenant KAWAKE and Corporals KAWASAKI and KATC.

.....

Charles van der SLOOT, mentioned above, was duly sworn before me at the beginning of his statement in the manner prescribed to state the truth and nothing but the truth, while he, after having completed his statement and after having had it read to him adheres to it and signs it

/s/ Ch. van der SLOOT.

And I have embodied it in this official record in pursuance of the oath, taken by me on the assumption of my office and it has been signed and concluded by me, at Batavia, on 19 March 1946

The Inspector of Police
/s/ G.J. SIP

The Australians had wounded personnel among them. During my two weeks' stay there about 30 men were operated upon for extraction of shell splinters among other things. These operations were carried out by their own doctors in the open air with the patient seated on and tied to a chair. The doctors were compelled in some cases to operate without anaesthetics. Medical treatment as well as admission to the hospital at Koepang were refused nor were anaesthetics given.

.....

In July 1942 a Timorese had cut a telephone wire at that place. The delinquent was caught in the act and arrested, along with two brothers of DENOE who happened to be in the neighbourhood. I am convinced they were not guilty; one was 21 years of age and the other 16. That very day they were sentenced to death which was done in the following way. In my presence and through my intermediary as an interpreter the suspect was merely asked his name and why he had cut the wire by KAWAKE. He stated his name and said further he wanted the wire for private use. The two brothers of DENOE were never asked a question. That same day on orders from KAWAKE and without any form of trial I had to draw up a document in the Malay language announcing the death sentence of these three which was placarded in the market-place. The public was instructed to come and look on. Rajas and I myself were told to attend. When I arrived on the spot I saw three new-dug graves. After a few minutes the three convicted with hands tied behind their backs were led in. One after another had to kneel before the graves facing the firing squad and the public. They were not blindfolded. A Japanese, Lieutenant KAWAKE read the sentence in Japanese warning that everybody who committed sabotage would be shot. I had to translate this in Malay to the public. Hereafter the three were shot; all three fell backwards in their grave. The 16 years old was immediately dead, the 21 years old received a coup de grace. The suspect was still alive and moaned. A Japanese soldier armed with a rifle and bayonet compelled one of the bystanders to take a heavy stone and to throw this into the grave at the head of the wounded man. The sight shocked me so that I went away. The graves have been filled up by bystanders on orders from the Japanese as I heard afterwards. Attending this execution were Lieutenant KAWAKE and Corporals KAWASAKI and KATC.

.....

Charles van der SLOOT, mentioned above, was duly sworn before me at the beginning of his statement in the manner proscribed to state the truth and nothing but the truth, while he, after having completed his statement and after having had it read to him adheres to it and signs it

/s/ Ch. van der SLOOT.

And I have embodied it in this official record in pursuance of the oath, taken by me on the assumption of my office and it has been signed and concluded by me at Batavia, on 19 March 1946

The Inspector of Police
/s/ G.J. SIP

CERTIFICATE.

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, Captain RNIA, head of War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS), being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed statement is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original Dutch document entitled:

Sworn statement of Charles van der SLOOT, interpreter, drawn up by G.J. SIP, inspector of police, dated 15th March 1946, No.2750/R,

which original document is a part of the official records of NEFIS,

signature:

s.d. Ch. Jongeneel
September 2, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. de WEERD, LL.D., Major Artillery RNIA
Senior Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

signature:

s.d. K.A. de WEERD.

No. 1

EX-87

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # 5597

書類第五九七号

證明書

下記署名者和蘭軍情報部戦犯課長蘭印軍大尉
「チャールズヨングネール」は先づ正式に宣誓し、上添附、陳述書、
「警視」G.I.ニア」作成に係り、一九四六年三月十日附
通譯「チャールズ・ファン・デル・スタート」、宣誓陳述書

第三七五号

上題と和蘭語原文書全文、真実完全且正確に寫し、
尚右原文書、和蘭軍情報部、公式記録一部として、
署名

チャールズヨングネール

(和蘭軍情報部官印)

一九四六年十一月日

余蘭印檢事總長事務局附先任官交 蘭印軍砲兵
少佐 法学博士「カー・パー・デウ・ウエールト」、面前ニテ
署名且宣誓セルモノナリ

署名

カー・パー・デウ・ウエールト

(ランダア・セントル檢事總長官印)

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

(1)

No. 2

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # 5599

書類第五五九七號

2750/R

正義、為ニ

戦争犯罪調査局

公式記録

本日一九四六年三月十五日、余戦争犯罪調査擔當一給擧官視
「ゲリット・ゲヤン・スイツツ」ハ一九二七年、在六年、有二十日、海牙
生シ、「ランドストーム」(譯者註地方國民軍)所屬、日本關係事
務局通譯「バクビヤ」「バーク・ホテル」居住、

「チャールズ・ファン・デル・スロート」

ナル人物ヲ訊問シテ、ル處彼ハ質問ニ對シ次、如ク言明シタリ、

私ハ「マラカス」地域ニ於ケル通譯トシテ蘭印軍ニ勤務、

「アンボン」ニ駐在シテキマシタ、一九四二年一月三十日、日本軍

ガ「アンボン」ニ上陸シタ事ヲ判リマシタ。

私自身ハ參加シテカワリガニ三回、戦ヒガアツテカラ、「アンボン」

ニ駐在シテキタ軍隊幹部ハ「バツソ」(ラテリ)附近デ

一九四二年二月二日、午前三時捕虜ニナリマシタ。

5577

一九四二年三月十日自北京乘飛機... 飛機... 國境... 飛行場... 同僚... 非常... 日本... 漢州... 通話... 以上... 漢州... 赤痢...

一人、漢州軍兵司令部... 要求... 漢州... 鐵條... 構内... 約... 同僚... 埋葬... 以上... 地域... 約... 此等... 漢州... 非常... 乾... 料理... 設備... 衛... 朝... 時... 陸軍... 漢州... 改... 幹... 類... 私... 要... 請... 傳... 丹... 氣... 托... 受...

110.3

ト拒絶セシメ又ハ麻酔ヲ用テ與テシテ之ヲ殺スル。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

ト行ハレシメテ之ヲ治スルハ麻酔ヲ用テ之ヲ殺スルニ似テト云フ。

5599

X
X

X
X

X

X

1104

5597

之。日本人、米、ミヲ給之決シテ野菜、肉ヲ給與之セテ之ヲ
コ、三週間、然、豫州中、位、願ニ依リ數回改善ヲ要求之ニ
タ、又私自ラ進言改善方ヲ願ヒテ之ヲガシ、此日無敵ナリ
日本人、毎日五百人、作業隊ヲ道路修理、樹木伐採、取、
ク、ニ要求之タ、豫州士官、精々任事ラズ、可能、者日ニ二百名
ヲ派遣ス、其ノ出来ニタリ、残り、者、病氣、或、余リニ虚弱ナリ、
供給スル食物、一人日粥一立テ之ヲ、

豫州人、中、ニ、負傷兵ガ居タ、私ガ其処ニ三週間居、間、約二十
人ガ取リ、ク、砲彈、破片、摘出、手術ヲ受ケ、之タ、之等、手術
ハ、彼等自身、患者ニ依リテ患處ヲ坐ラセ椅子ニ縛リ、ク、戸外
テ行ヒ、之タ、患者連中、或、場合ニ、麻酔劑ヲ使用セ、又手術
ニ付、シ、バ、ナリ、マセ、之タ、治療並、ク、バ、グ、病院ニ入院ス、ル、
ヲ拒絶、サ、又麻酔劑ヲ與ヘ、ラ、セ、之タ、

X X X X X X

444

5597

私ハ立会ヲ去リマシタ。私ガ後ヲ聞イタ所ニ依リ、ソノ聲ハ參觀者ニヨリ日本人ノ命令ニヨリ埋テシマシタ。コノ執行ニ出席シ又者ハ川毛中尉並ニ川崎及加藤兩位長テアホシタ。

X X X X X

上述ノ「チャールズ・フアン・デル・スコート」ハ正式ニ私ノ面前ニ於テ彼ノ陳述ヲ為スニ先ダツテ所定ノ如ク眞實ヲ述ベ眞實以外ハ述ベガレ事ヲ誓言セリ而シテ彼ハ彼ノ陳述ヲ完了シテソレヲ彼ノ前テ讀マシト時是ヲ固守シ之ニ署名セリ

署名 チャールズ・フアン・デル・スコート

余ハ余ノ職務上ニシタル宣誓ニ從テ本陳述ヲコノ公式報告ニ作成セリ。余ハ一九四六年三月十九日「バタヴィヤ」ニ於テ之ニ署名シテ終了トナス

敬告

署名 G. J. スイプ

No. 6

E. 1788

Document No. 5596

Page 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL first Lieutenant R.N.I.A. head of the War Crimes Section of Netherlands Forces Intelligence Service (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original documents, entitled

"Report regarding the accused S. Nagata, Japanese interpreter at Soemba from May 15th to approx. July 1944," drawn up by W.F.H. van der Plas, controller in Soemba, dated Waingapoe, 4 December 1945, No. CM/1022/RB,

which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

Signature: CH. JONGENEEL

SEAL

Batavia, June 7th, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de WEERD

.

123/R.

REPORT REGARDING THE ACCUSED "S. NAGATA", JAPANESE INTERPRETER

AT SOEMBA, from MAY 15th to approx. JULY 1944.

Under the Japanese Commandant "JUNIHARA" at WAINGAPOE, the Japanese interpreter "S. NAGATA" in the beginning held the function of Civil Administrator in the Island of SOEMBA. He spoke the Malay language rather fluently and pre-war he presumably lived at MALANG for several years.

By his orders, the Europeans in SOEMBA and the 2 Americans who live there, in total 30 persons, received solitary confinement in the prison at WAINGAPOE, and 55 women and children were cramped in the "passanggrahan" at WAINGAPOE, which building contained only 3 bedrooms, an inner-hall and a dining room. Food was not supplied by the Japanese, everything had to be bought by the prisoners and prepared at home.

Private moncys, possessions and food-stocks were seized by or on orders of "S. NAGATA", most probably in co-operation with the Japanese "JUNIHARA". Fortunately the women had some money with them and the 30 men had together approx. f.900,-. Of this amount about f.300,- was stolen one night by a couple of Japanese guards on duty.

By orders of "S. NAGATA" all the Europeans here, had to make a statement of private amounts of money and possessions, whereafter the money was seized. Many valuable articles disappeared into the pockets of said "S. NAGATA" and in those of the Japanese Commandant and his assistants. Silver forks and spoons were recently found at the house of a Savoese woman in the village of KAMBANIROE; they had been presented to her by "S. NAGATA".

Moreover "S. NAGATA" was a sadist. Once or twice a week in the period from May 20th until July 10th 1942, he entered the prison between 20.00 hrs. and 24.00 hrs. accompanied by some soldiers, in order to thrash 5 to 10 "whites" with rice-pounders and big bamboo sticks. Nearly all of us were once thrashed in this fashion. When the victim lost consciousness, buckets of water were thrown over his body to revive him, some final strokes were inflicted upon him and thereafter the man was permitted to return to his cell. It was always "S. NAGATA" who organized these maltreatments. First he held a secret conversation with the Japanese soldiers who accompanied him, then he laughed aloud after which thrashing commenced. I wonder that arms and legs were not broken during these maltreatments. An American airman, "HALLIES," had 2 ribs broken as a result of maltreatment.

The Military Surgeon "van HASSELT" and Lt. "SCHUDEBEURS" incurred bruises, so that for days they were not able to walk and I myself partially fractured my left arm and was unable to use it for five weeks. Natives too, were beaten black and blue with "aloes" or rice-pounders. In June we saw a Soembanose, who had been carried into the prison and put in a cell, groaning with pain and with open wounds all over his body.

Other native prisoners received a small portion of under-done djagoeng (Indian corn) only once a day. They had to live and to work on this poor food. More cruelties were inflicted upon the natives in SOEMBA by said "S. NAGATA."

The above-mentioned facts were witnessed by me and I am willing to declare this on oath. Against "S. NAGATA" there is a fierce hatred among the native population and also among nearly all the officials and it is universally hoped and expected that this sadist will be sentenced and punished, if possible, in SOEMBA.

WALINGAPOE, 4/12/45.

The Govt. Controller in SOEMBA,
Signed: "W.F.H. PLAS".

5596-1

昭和十九年五月二十五日ヨリ凡ソ七月ニ至ル間一ソ
エムバ一島ニ於ケル日本人通譯ナル被害永田S(

音譯)ニ關スル報告書、
日本人通譯永田Sハ一ウエインガボ一ニ於ケル日
本人指揮官一ジユニハラ一ノ指揮ノ下ニ最初一ソ
エムバ一島ニ於テ行隊官ノ職ヲ勤メタ。彼ハ一マ
レー一語ヲ比較的流暢ニ話シ、戦前ハ數年間一マラ
ング一ニ住ンテ居タリシ、

彼ノ命令ニ依ツテ一ソエムバ一島ノ歐州人避ト同
所在住ノ二名ノ米人合計三丁名ガ一ウエインガボ一
ノ刑務所ノ獨房ニ入レラレ、五丁五名ノ婦人子供
ハ一ウエインガボ一ノ一バツサングラハン一ニ閉
込メラレタガ該建物はハ三ツノ寢室ト一ツノ居廣
間及一ツノ食堂シカオカツタ。食物ハ日本人ニ依
ツテ供給サレズ全テハ救済看護ニ依ツテ賄ハレホ
ベナラス彼等ノ居所ニ於テ準備サレホベナラナカ
ツタ、

私有ノ金錢、所有物、貯蓄食糧ハ悉クハ日本人
一ジユニハラ一ノ協力ニヨル永田Sノ命令ニ依リ
或ハ命令ニ基イテ押収サレタ。手ヒニモ婦人避ハ
イクラカ令ヲ持合メテ居タシ三十名ノ男子ハ皆テ
約九百一フランク一許リ持ツテ居タリ、此ノ中カラ

5596-2

約三百一フランクが其夜勤務中ノ日本人衛兵二
名ニ依リ盗マレタ。永田Sノ命令ニ依ツテ管該全
歐洲人私有ノ金銀及所有物全部ニ就イテ申告セネ
バナラテカツタガ其後金銀ハ奪ハレタノデアアル。
數多ノ貴重テ物ガ前述ノ永田Sヤ日本人指揮官及
彼ノ補佐官達ノ儀ニ消エテ行ツタ。彼ノ一フオ
クレーヤ匙ガ最近一カムパニローノ村ノ一サボエ
人ノ婦人ノ家テ發見サレタ。ソレヲハ永田Sニヨ
ツテ婦人ニ贈ラレタモノデアアル。

其上永田Sハ一履行淫亂症ノ人一デアツタ。昭和
十七年五月二十日ヨリ同年七月二十日ニ至ル間一週
ニ一度カ二度彼ハ二十時カラ二十四時ノ間ニ數名
ノ兵隊ヲ伴レテ刑務所ニ入ツテ來タ。其レハ杵ヤ
大キナ竹ノ棒テ五人カラ十人ノ一白人一ヲ打ツタ
メデアツタ。我メノ殆ンド全部ハコンナ瓜ニシテ
一度ハ答ヲ受ケタノデアアル。被害者ガ意識ヲ失フ
ト森生サセルタメニ一バケツ一テ水ガ体ニカケラ
レ最後ニ致同答ガ加ヘラレテカラ監房ニ歸ルコト
ヲ許サレタ。コレラノ虐待ヲ仕組ンダノハイツモ
永田Sデアツタ。給メニ彼ハ伴イテ來タ日本兵ト
ヒソカニ話ラシ、ソレカラ大笑テ笑ヒ答テ打テハ
ジメタ。此ノ虐待ヲ受ケテ居ル時面腹ガコハレナ

5596-2

カツタノハ不思議デアル。一米人飛行士 H A I N
田 S ハ虐待ノ結果肋骨ヲ二本折ラレタ。

軍曹 Van HASSELT、ト SCHUDDERBEURS 中尉ハ

打撲傷ヲ受ケタ爲メ數日同歩ケナカツタシ私自身
モ左ノ腕ヲ局部的ニ挫傷シテ五週間使ヘナカツタ、
土着人達モ亦一側膝木一ヤ杵ヲ凝結ガ生ズルホド
打タレタ。六月ニ我々ハ一人ノ一ソエムバー人ヲ
見タガ、彼ハ此ノ刑務所ヘ送バレテ監房ヘ入レラ
レタモノテ、苦痛ト体中一面ニ開イタ傷ヲ呻イテ
居タ。

他ノ土着人ノ収容者達モ半煮ノ「ヂヤゴン」(印
度穀物)ノ少シノ分前ラ一日ニ一回シカ貰ヘナカ
ツタ。此ノ乏シイ食物ヲ生キソシテ働カネバナラ
ナカツタ。前述ノ永田 S ハモツト通譯ナコトヲ土
着人ニ呉ヘタノデアル。

前述ノ諸事實ハ私が目撃シタモノデアリ、私ハ嘗
ツテ此レヲ言明シシイノデアル。永田 S ニ對シテ
ハ土着ノ人達ノ間ニ於テ又ハ殆ンド全部ノ官吏ノ
間ニ於テモ猛烈ニ憎惡ノ念ヲ抱イテ居ル。此ノ一、
サヂスト(虐行淫亂症ノ人)ガ出來ルコトナラ
一ソエムバー島ニ於テ刑ノ宣告ヲ受ケテ處罰サレ

41-9655

ルコトヲ一緩ハ希望シ期待シテ居ル。

「ウエインガボ」昭和二十一年二月十二日

「ソエムス」氏、政府駐在官

W. F. H. PLAS. 署名

Evidentiary Document Doc 5596!

證明書

下名即ニ和蘭軍情報部 (NEFIS) 戦争犯罪部長蘭領印度陸軍中尉「ケイ・ス・ジヨニゲネール」正巻ニ宣誓スル上添附セル報告書ハ「ウエイニガツホ」一九四五年十月附 〇ノ / 1022 / 2050「ソエバ」監督官「W. F. H. グエニナル・フラス」作成ニ係ル一九四四年五月十五日ヨリ同年七月頃ニ至ル「ソエバ」ニ於ケル被告人「日本人通訳」ガ「ソエバ」ニ関スル報告ト題スル文書原本ノ全部、真正完全且正確ナル謄本ニテ石文書ハ和蘭軍情報部ノ公式記録ノ一部ナルトヲ證言ス。

「ソエバ」ニ於テ一九四六年六月七日

ケイ・ス・ジヨニゲネール (署名)

和蘭軍
情報部印

右ノ余即ニ蘭印検事總長事務局附高級官吏蘭領印度陸軍中尉「K. A. デウイード」面前ニ於テ署名且宣誓ヲ爲シタリ

「K. A. デウイード」署名

[I, Carlos Jose Sequeira, widower of 51 years of age, of Portuguese nationality and born in Hongkong having been duly sworn, make the following statement:

PROTECTION ZONE GENERAL CONCENTRATION CAMP OF LIQUICA

a) The village of Liquica, about a square mile, was chosen to be the protection zone. All the remaining families that did not abandon BAUCAU on the 14th November 1942, when the Japanese invaded that village, were transferred by the Portuguese boat OKUSSEI, under Japanese control, on the night of 16th to 17th November 1942, and on the night of the 20th November 1942, to LIQUICA, except the Governor's family and some officials who were taken to Dili by Japanese trucks, to join His Excellency the Governor at the Government's House there. Almost everything that one possesses had to be left behind, because orders were to the effect that no one was to bring more than that which is considered indispensable.

GENERAL CONDITIONS

b) Upon our arrival at Liquica we were given accommodations by the Chefe do Posto of Liquica but as the number of houses was limited, several families had to be put into one house like sardines in tins, and family peace was thus destroyed. For about eight months, life went on like this, and during this period, it seems that the Japanese were trying to make friends with everyone by allowing soldiers to pay frequent visits to some houses, and mingled with its inmates, in a most friendly manner, but after this period, conditions started to change, and in a most methodical way, and in July 1943, all the radio sets were taken away, all rifles and ammunitions were ordered to be handed over; nobody was allowed to keep out of the house after 8 p.m.; parties of from 2 to 6 Japanese soldiers made constant search for compromising objects, followed by ill treatment of the community, and prohibition of the natives to be in contact with us. Prices of food began to rise, and as it go on rising, natives were not allowed to sell to the Portuguese anything, and the weekly markets began to be controlled by the police, and only what was left after they have bought the best, and the best part of the whole, the remainder could be bought by the famine crowd. Finally even this mode of buying was taken away from us. We had to go weekly to the Government's Cantina to receive a meagre supply of food and the Cantina itself is being controlled by them. By the beginning of 1944, all the families living in MUBARRA received orders to move to Liquica. Old men, women and children, had to make the journey some 15 miles on foot escorted by one mounted Japanese guard and several natives all armed. If lodgings in Liquica were already a necessity, with the influx of the new comers, things became worse. Servants were then taken into custody under all pretext and severely beaten for almost no fault, and many were afraid to return to work. Every now and then water supply were cut away and the excuse was that something was wrong with the pipes, when these are connected to the supply tank, next to their Headquarters.

FOOD SUPPLY

As aforesaid, not much more is to be added, except that natives were not allowed to go to Liquica to sell, and even the few remaining families who lived in the suburb, are not allowed to sell to the Portuguese. The rationed food received at the Cantina is so small in quantity, that it is not worth mentioning. No oil or fat was distributed, no sugar except about 200 grams once in 6 to 10 months time, and for vegetables we were given rotten potatoe and yam roots. We also received Wild beans and wild mandioc. Many had stomach troubles and some eventually died of poisoned beans. Everybody was down in health and weigh several stones less. I for instance, was weighing 85 kilos when I first arrived in Liquica, was weighing 49 kilos in 1945. Many died of insufficiency of food, and had the condition lasted for six months more, I do not think there will have been many left to-day to tell this story.

MEDICAL SUPPLIES AND ATTENTION

Not much has been done in this respect, for, although we had a doctor and several male nurses in the camp, there were no medical supplies to cope with the exigencies. Nearly everyone had a sore or a complaint. The majority had swollen feet and some even swollen faces and nose. Malaria was almost a general case, so was general weakness, from want of food.]

LINE OF COMMUNICATION

We were living actually without any outside news. No natives were allowed to approach our camp. We do not know what was passing around us outside the barbed wires and anything that we happen to hear were news given to someone on purpose by the Police, that the allies were losing, which of course, only the ignorants believed.

WAS IT TRUENE FROM AIR ATTACK ?

Yes up to a certain period, but when the Japanese tried to induce passing-by planes to attack the camp, we were then left liable for air attack. I say this because when the Liquica Hospital was machine gunned by some 10 planes, this incident was the result of the Japanese having treacherously opened fire from a spot between the Hospital and their High Command on a squadron of planes which were flying North, and these planes located the fire, made a half turn, and started machine gunning a limited area, about, and including the Hospital, but when the women and children who were hidden in the building could not stand any more the attack, and resolved to get out of the building, risking their lives, the pilots must have spotted them, for they immediately ceased fire and flew away, not without killing the very Japanese who opened fire from a machine gun. (I got this information from somebody whose name I do not recollect now: The male nurse LUIZ LEITS was called to the Japanese Headquarters to treat a wounded Japanese immediately after the attack.) Except for a few slight scratches from broken splinters, nobody was seriously hurt at the Hospital.)

ATTENDANCE AT RELIGIOUS SERVICES

This was normal except for a few sarcastic remarks thrown now and then to church goers by Japanese guards, no interference was made on the part of the Japanese.

SANITARY AND HYGIENE ARRANGEMENTS

Nothing was done in this respect by the Japanese and everything was left to nature.

FORCED LABOUR

Directly against the internees no labour was forced, but by punishing severely the servants as stated above, many families were left without help and had to do their water carrying and fetching of firewoods etc. In another word, forced labour was indirectly forced on the internees.

PORTUGUESE AND JAPANESE CURRENCY

Portuguese currency was the only currency used at the beginning but as the Japanese started on propaganda in the interior depreciating the value of this currency, natives started to refuse accepting Portuguese money and slowly, everything was paid in Japanese Guildens, only with a very few exceptions, Portuguese money could be made use of. From informations received after the war, very active propaganda did take place at the weekly markets in the interior of the Colony and to show and convince the natives that Portuguese money was of no value, officers in concluding their public speeches, use to burn some notes, and offer to exchange to the natives Japanese notes for Portuguese notes which the natives immediately decided to do.

ANY ANTI-ALLIED PROPAGANDA

Yes, of every kind. Only the natives, the ignorant ones of course, would believed.

[This is all I can offer for appreciation about the Concentration Camp.

Dili, 3rd July 1946.

/s/ C. J. Sequeira.

Sworn before me this third day
of July, nineteen hundred and forty-six.

/s/ H. Pas
Captain, N.E.I. Army

Summary of examination of RUISTO SIMONS, aged 29 years, born at DILLI, Portuguese Timor, a Portuguese subject, a driver and now residing in DILLI, Portuguese Timor, being duly sworn states:-

I am unable to give any information regarding the murders by the Japanese of Australians in DILLI or elsewhere.

About September 1942 all Portuguese troops were concentrated around the town of AILEU. I was a Portuguese soldier at the time.

[About 15th September 1942 the Japanese troops came to AILEU and from then on the Portuguese troops were stationed in special quarters inside AILEU. When the Japanese came to AILEU they stopped us from patrolling the surrounding area and the Japanese ordered the Portuguese troops to stay in AILEU while they took over the patrolling.

Although they ordered us to stay in the town they expressed their friendliness to us, saying they wished to help us. Till then the Japanese used to pass through AILEU and only remained at the most a day, but on this occasion they stayed four or five days. The day before the attack was made on AILEU the Japanese were especially friendly and distributed cigarettes and gifts amongst the Portuguese troops.

On the night before the attack I was on duty at my house when I heard some noise outside the house where I and another ninety Portuguese soldiers were quartered. I thought it was the noise of horses moving about so I went and asked the man in charge of the horses but he told me that all the horses were inside. I then opened the door and looked outside but could see nothing. When I went away from the door a grenade came inside the quarters and killed two horses near the door. I rushed to the other Portuguese soldiers and told them to be ready for an attack. While waiting for orders from our Commander I saw a group of men outside the door. First Sergeant MARTINS asked "Who's there" and the answer was "Nippon". First Sergeant MARTINS then said, that if they were Nippon they could come inside. When the men entered we saw that they were Black Troops of the Japanese. When First Sergeant MARTINS assumed an offensive attitude with his gun the Black Troops ran away. Then the fighting commenced. From six points I could hear the noise of machine-guns firing and from one side several mortars were shelling us. There was also lots of rifle fire and many grenades thrown.

It was about three o'clock in the morning and too dark to distinguish the people firing the mortars and machine-guns. As I have never seen any natives handling mortars I was sure that the Japanese were attacking us. The mortar bombs fell and burst in our quarters and it was most accurate fire.

Suddenly in the midst of the attack I saw large numbers of native troops advancing on the quarters so I hid in the underground cellar. From a girl who actually saw it happen, I was told that my brother-in-law and another Portuguese soldier were captured and taken outside by the Black Troops and shot.

From where I was hiding I could see through a hole Japanese troops moving around. Then about five o'clock in the morning I heard the native Black Troops shouting out to the Japanese that the white men were all finished. The Japanese then sent the native troops away and made an inspection of buildings to see if there were any white men left.

A few of the Portuguese soldiers were able to escape, but some others were killed, among which, was our Commander, Capt. FERREIRA da COSTA and his wife, Secretary GOUVELLA LEITE, the Clerk of the Judge, AFONSO and Doctor PEDROSO.]

After the attack First Sergeant MARTINS and my brother came out of hiding and when the Japanese Commander saw them he expressed surprise that there were some whites left. Then all people who were hiding were ordered to come out and the Japanese formed them up in a line. I was amongst this lot. The

Interpreter of the Japanese told us that the natives had been very bad and were dangerous to our safety and the Japanese offered their protection against them.

The Japanese took a Portuguese machine-gun from one of the Portuguese soldiers and examined it to see if it had been used. They then opened fire with it towards the river in which their own native troops were camped.

We were taken before the Japanese High Commander where we were asked if we were wounded and if we needed treatment. We had to stay in the hospital when we were brought to DILLI and were not allowed to leave it. After four days we were interned in the internment camp at LIUTICA.

Captain MURİYAMA was the Japanese officer in charge of the Japanese troops around DILLI at the time. The attack took place on 1st October 1942.

/s/ Ernesto Simoes
Signature of Deponent

Certificate of Interpreter.

I, GIL FERREIRA, certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

/s/ Gil Ferreira
Interpreter

Taken and Sworn before me this twenty-ninth day of June, nineteen hundred and forty-six, at DILLI, PORTUGUESE TERRITORY.

/s/ N. F. Quinton Major
Australian Military Forces

and

/s/ G. N. Poff Capt.
N. E. I. ARMY

/s/ (Illegible)
Intendente, PORTUGUESE TERRITORY

0811790

書信録 卷第 四 五

EVIDENTIARY Doc 5804

正身ニ皇諱ニ陳述ヲシタル年齢ニ及ビ爾國軍領ヲモリ此島(トリ)ニ
生シ爾國軍國人自勤軍運轉手現在爾國軍領ヲモリ此島(トリ)ニ
居住シテ下ニ交ト、モリスニ爾國ニ調査要約

五四年九月十五日頃日本軍隊ハ(ト)ニ進駐シ其時カ(ト)爾國軍
國軍隊ハ(ト)ニ内、特定地域ニ駐ルヤセシタ。日本軍ガ(ト)ニ
進駐シテ来タ時、彼等ハ我ガ周圍、地域ヲ巡察スルヲ中止セシ
タ、ソニテ日本軍ハ爾國軍隊ニ日本軍隊ガ巡察、往還停止ル
向テ(ト)ニ内ニ駐ルニ様、命令シタ。

日本軍ハ我ガ三町ニ居住スルヲ命ジタレドモ彼等ハ我ガ三友誼ヲ示シ
テ日本軍ハ我ガ援助セト欲シタルヲ述ベタ。其時迄ハ日本軍
ハ(ト)ニ通過スルハ高ク僅カニ日ヲ駐ルニテ(ト)ガ此時ハ
四日乃至五日間駐ルニシテ(ト)ニ攻撃ガ行ハル前日ニ日本軍
ハ(ト)ガ親密テ爾國軍隊間ニ卷煙草ヤ贈物ヲ分配シタ。
ソノ攻撃ノ前夜私ハ自命産ノ宿舎ニ於テ勤務ニ服シテ中ニシタガ私ト
其ノ他十名、爾國軍兵士ガ宿舎ニシタ家ノ外ニ何カ騒音ヲ聞
キシタ。私ハ其ノ事ヲ知ルモノアリト思ヒタテ私ハ其ノ係リヲシ
タタ兵ノ所ニ行キ訊ケタガ其ノ兵ハ私ニ其ノ全部中ニ中ルト言フタ。
其処テ私ハ(ト)ノ内ニテ外ヲ見タガ何モ見エカシタ私ハ(ト)ヲ
離シタ時手榴彈ガ一個宿舎地内ニ飛ビテ来テカ、側ニシタ三頭、
馬ヲ襲ルニシタ。私ハ他ノ爾國軍兵士達ニ處ニ駛ケツテ下ニ皆ニ斃
爾達ヲモト生ケタ。我ガ指揮官カノ命令ヲ待ツル間ニ
私ハ(ト)外ニ(ト)兵ヲ見タガ(ト)ノ(ト)番長ガ(ト)ニ居ルニ誰カ下
誰何ニシタ(ト)返答(ト)日本(ト)シタ。

No 1

Doc 5804

通譯者、證明
私刑に、ナリトシ、(前記證人、署名ニ先列ナ、前記
要約ヲ右證人ニ對シ、ソノ自國語ニ於テ、正當ニ
翻譯之聞カセ、又、筆ヲ證明ス。

ジ、ナリエ、(署名)

通譯者

右一九四六年三月九日葡萄牙領土毛儿島前ニ於テ
於テ本職、面前ニ於テ宣誓ヲナセリ。

判讀之難之(署名) 佐
濠洲陸軍部隊

判讀之難之(署名) 大尉
葡領東印度陸軍

及

判讀之難之(署名)
葡萄牙領土毛儿島知事。

No 3

C. # 1791

Doc. No. 5805

Page 1

In the International Military
Tribunal for the Far East

The United States of America and others

v.

ARAKI, Sadao and others

I, William Anderson Beattie, of 632 St. Kilda Road, Melbourne formerly No. 129833 Flying Officer W. A. Beattie of Royal Australian Airforce, make oath and say:-

1. In September 1942 I was a member of 2/4 Independent Company and embarked with that Company on H.M.S. Voyager for Timor, I disembarked in Timor and went up in October 1942 to the neighborhood of Dilli. At that time the Japanese were in occupation of Dilli. I remained in the Dilli area until December 1942, part of my duty being to obtain information concerning Japanese Forces in occupation of Dilli.
2. I know Fathers Noverto and Pires. They were Catholic priests at the Administrative Center Ainaro in the province of Suro. I knew them very well and they were strictly neutral as far as the war was concerned. They were only interested in their own mission work. In early October 1942 we left Ainaro for several days on patrol and a very large patrol of Japs came into Ainaro from the direction of Alicn, unknown to us. On our return to Ainaro several days later I went up to the house where the priests lived and found that it was completely ransacked. I inquired from a mission boy as to the whereabouts of the priests. He told me to go over to the Church. I went over and found some bloodstained clothing outside the Church and on going in noticed the bodies imperfectly buried, where the concrete floor had been picked up and a wooden platform placed over it. I later saw the mission boy who looked after them in their house. He told me that the Japanese had questioned them asking where the Australian soldiers were. They refused to disclose our whereabouts. The Japs had then tied their ankles together and had tied their heads down to their ankles and bayoneted them to death.
3. On 12th December 1942 the Japanese attacked us near Aitsabe. They used as a screen for this attack a number of unarmed natives whom they drove in front of them. About 50 to 60 natives were used and a number of them were killed. We also saw them burning native huts in the area of Mt. Xatrai and shooting the women and children as they ran from the huts. This was a regular practice among the Japs to make it unpopular with the natives to assist us.
4. A doctor who was the brother-in-law of the Portuguese Administrator of Manatuto told me that the Administrator had been frequently questioned

by Captain Moriyema head of the local Kempai Tai, and that the Administrator disappeared one night. On the following morning a native called on his wife and left a sack which contained his cut up remains.

Sworn at Melbourne in the)
State of Victoria this the)
27th day of September 1946)
Before Me

/s/ W. A. Beattie

/s/ John Mansfield

Evidentiary Document Doc-5805

Ex 1791

No. 1.

書類六〇五號

（於極東國際軍事裁判所）

亞米利加合衆國其他對荒木貞夫其他

私 MELBOURNE KILDA ROAD 街六三番地住 前濠洲陸軍航空隊 飛行特校 第二九八三號 WILLIAM ANDERSON BEATTIE

陳述ス

一九四三年／昭和十七年／九月私、乃獨立中隊一員ナリ、而幸同中 隊ト共、モリス行英國船 KOYAGER 二乗船致シタ。私、TIMOR 下船一九四三年／昭和十七年／十月、DILI 附近迄行キタ。當時日本 軍ガ ALI ヲ占領シ居リタ。私、一九四三年／昭和十七年／十月迄、 一、地ニテ、私職務一部、アリ、ヲ占領セル日本軍ニ關スル情報ヲ得 ル事ナリタ。

私、SOBARI 及 PILES 向教父ヲ知ツ居リタ。彼等、SUKO AIRMO 中央 管理区、カトリック、僧ヲナリタ。私、彼等ヲ非常ニ知ツ居リ、彼等、戰 争ニ關スル限リ、嚴格ニ中立ヲ守ツ居リタ。彼等、自身傳道、仕事ニ、 關心ヲ持ツ居リ、テリタ。一九四三年／昭和十七年／十月上旬、我々偵察 隊、數日ニ亘リ、下ノロ、ヲ離レタ。スルト我々、知ラ、間ニ、吾教、日本軍 偵察隊ガ ALI 地ニ、侵入致シタ。數日後私、下ノロ、歸 還スル、直ニ、僧、住テ居リ、家、其、外、至、掠奪、カ、キ、ヲ、發見、シ、私、人、シ、ホ、一、僧、事、認、メ、シ、タ、彼、私、教會、行、ハ、見、察、信、信、シ、ヲ、私、教會、外、テ、少、血、痕、附、ク、衣服、ヲ、見、出、シ、カ、下、ノ、ロ、ニ、其、衣、體、ヲ、埋、メ、シ、居、ル、ニ、氣、カ、キ、タ、其、處、ニ、一、ト、床、ヲ、掘、リ、起、シ、其、上、ニ、板、埋、テ、置、キ、其、後、僧、家、ガ、彼、等、ヲ、探、シ、テ、キ、ル、キ、ハ、シ、テ、ホ、一、ニ、合、ヒ、タ、シ、。

Doc-5805

彼私告云日本兵、彼等、澳洲、其行方、彼等、言曰、彼等、
我々行方、明カニスルヲ拒ミ、日本兵、両方、蹊ヲ纏リ、又頭
蹊ヲ纏、總、以テ銃劍ヲ刺シ殺シ、云々、云々、

一九四五年、昭和二十年、三月十日、日本軍、^{アトキ}附近、我々、攻撃
シ、彼等、彼等、前方、行リ、立テ、一團、非武装、原住民、此、攻撃、
彈丸、除、二、便、多、テ、リ、ス、約、五、乃、至、六、名、原住民、が、使用、サレ、中
多、數、者、が、落、命、シ、テ、リ、ス、我々、又、日本兵、^{NEKATRAI}地区、原住民
小屋、ヲ、燒キ、婦、女、が、小屋、カ、走リ、出、ル、所、ヲ、射、シ、有、様、ヲ、目、撃、シ、テ、リ、
ス、此、原住民、ヲ、我々、援、助、ス、ル、不、人、氣、ヲ、シ、ト、ス、ル、日本軍、常
套、手、段、ヲ、テ、リ、ス、

四、^{ANAKATUIS}「ホルトガル」人、行政官、兼、理、兄弟、子、ル、医、者、が、私、告、ケ、テ、其
行政官、所、在、憲、兵、隊、長、^{NOKIYAMA}モリヤマ、大、尉、ニ、シ、テ、訊、問、サ、レ、彼、ハ、或、ル、夜、途
ヲ、消、シ、ト、シ、テ、リ、ス、翌、朝、人、原、住、民、が、彼、ヲ、妻、ヲ、訪、問、シ、彼、ヲ、断、サ、レ
多、遺、骸、ハ、入、リ、テ、其、袋、ヲ、置、キ、行、ク、ノ、テ、リ、ス、

一九四六年、昭和二十年、九月二十七日、^{VICTORIA}「メルボルン」州、^{MELBOURNE}メルボルン、ニ、於、テ、

グロリア・^{BEATTIE}ビエッティ

署名

余、面前、於、テ、宣、誓、シ、

JOHN MANSFIELD
シ、ニ、ニ、ス、ニ、ル、ト

署名

No. 2

Summary of examination of LOIS ANTONIO LUIS RODRIGUES occupation, Doctor's clerk, of Portuguese nationality and born in Portuguese Timor, and 30 years of age, and residing at DILLI, Portuguese Timor, being duly sworn states:-

I was in DILLI on the 20th February 1942 when the Japanese first occupied DILLI,

Two or three days after a wounded Australian soldier was brought to the hospital where I was employed by a native. This Australian soldier was suffering from a large number of wounds. I was present when the native told the officials of the hospital about the bodies of seven (7) Australian soldiers that were then lying partly covered in ditches by the side of the road near FATU UTTA. The native had counted the bodies and told how their legs and feet were not covered by earth and the dogs were eating their legs.

I do not know of any person who actually saw the Australians killed, nor do I know the names of the Japanese concerned. I cannot now remember the name of the native who told me about the Australians being buried.

I only saw one Australian a Prisoner of War of the Japanese and that was the wounded Australian soldier brought to the hospital.

That is all that I know about the Australians.

In 1943 when I was in OSSU I saw Japanese beating natives including a native chief by the name of GEMMAS, and also half-casts. The Japanese used torture methods on the chief and two or three more natives by burning them with cigarettes after their hands were bound together and also by giving them a water torture by holding closed their mouth and pouring water into their mouth. They also forced them to kneel down on sharp stones while they applied pressure to their backs. Cigarettes were also put into their ears. The natives were also beaten by slappings with hands and by beatings with sticks and when they fell unconscious they were revived with water and beaten again.

I saw the native chief, GEMMAS, taken to a newly dug grave, he had his hands bound and four or five Japanese of the Kompetai with long native knives make small incisions on his throat, telling the chief that he had to disclose the whereabouts of Australians, otherwise he would be killed. The chief refused to give any information and was then taken away. About a month later, on a day of a Japanese feast, the Japanese announced that the chief had been killed because he was not a friend of the Japanese. The Japanese told another chief all this as a threat as to what would happen if they did not assist them.

The Japanese forced the natives to take part in celebrations of Japanese feasts, while the Portuguese feasts were not permitted.

On the 14th February 1943 I was in MATABIA when the Japanese attacked that mountain using black troops. I was in company with Lieutenant PIRES and Sergeant MARTINS and other Portuguese, and also two Australians, Lieutenant Frank HOLLAND and Sergeant SMITH.

I saw the Japanese burn the village of KILLICAI, including the hospital and Doctor's house. This was in December 1942. I also saw the village of MALETTA burnt by the Japanese after the attack on MATABIA.

THIS is the first page of the Statement by LOIS ANTONIO LUIS RODRIGUES

Summary of examination of DOIS ANTONIO FUMES RODRIGUES occupation, Doctor's clerk, of Portuguese nationality and born in Portuguese Timor, and 30 years of age, and residing at DILLI, Portuguese Timor, being duly sworn states:-

I was in DILLI on the 20th February 1942 when the Japanese first occupied DILLI,

Two or three days after a wounded Australian soldier was brought to the hospital where I was employed by a native. This Australian soldier was suffering from a large number of wounds. I was present when the native told the officials of the hospital about the bodies of seven (7) Australian soldiers that were then lying partly covered in ditches by the side of the road near BATEU LITTA. The native had counted the bodies and told how their legs and feet were not covered by earth and the dogs were eating their legs.

I do not know of any person who actually saw the Australians killed, nor do I know the names of the Japanese concerned. I cannot now remember the name of the native who told me about the Australians being buried.

I only saw one Australian a Prisoner of War of the Japanese and that was the wounded Australian soldier brought to the hospital.

That is all that I know about the Australians.

In 1943 when I was in OSSU I saw Japanese beating natives including a native chief by the name of GEMMIAS, and also half-casts. The Japanese used torture methods on the chief and two or three more natives by burning them with cigarettes after their hands were bound together and also by giving them a water torture by holding closed their mouth and pouring water into their mouth. They also forced them to kneel down on sharp stones while they applied pressure to their backs. Cigarettes were also put into their ears. The natives were also beaten by slappings with hands and by beatings with sticks and when they fell unconscious they were revived with water and beaten again.

I saw the native chief, GEMMIAS, taken to a newly dug grave, he had his hands bound and four or five Japanese of the Kempetai with long native knives make small incisions on his throat, telling the chief that he had to disclose the whereabouts of Australians, otherwise he would be killed. The chief refused to give any information and was then taken away. About a month later, on a day of a Japanese feast, the Japanese announced that the chief had been killed because he was not a friend of the Japanese. The Japanese told another chief all this as a threat as to what would happen if they did not assist them.

The Japanese forced the natives to take part in celebrations of Japanese feasts, while the Portuguese feasts were not permitted.

On the 14th February 1943 I was in MATABIA when the Japanese attacked that mountain using black troops. I was in company with Lieutenant PIERES and Sergeant MARTINS and other Portuguese, and also two Australians, Lieutenant Frank HOLLAND and Sergeant SMITH.

I saw the Japanese burn the village of KILLKAI, including the hospital and Doctor's house. This was in December 1942. I also saw the village of NABARECA burnt by the Japanese after the attack on MATABIA.

When the Japanese attacked the native villages they used indiscriminate machine-gun fire.

The people in Portuguese Timor were forced to use Japanese money. The Japanese issued an order that anyone found with Portuguese money would be killed. The order was given to the natives by the Japanese after the natives had been collected in the market place by the beating of drums.

On the 21st February 1942 I saw the Japanese forcing the doors of the Chinese houses in DILLI and many other houses, and looting the houses.

I know of a lot of places where the Japanese forced the chiefs to send native girls to Japanese brothels, by threatening the native chiefs by telling them that if they did not send the girls, they, the Japanese, would go to the chiefs houses and take away their near female relatives for this purpose.

On the days of the Japanese feasts I heard the Japanese telling how Asia was only for the Asiatics and all white people should be driven out.

I know the native chiefs were forced to give native labour to the Japanese to build military roads and at the aerodrome of LAUTEM. They also forced the natives to cut bamboo sticks for use against parachute attacks, and place the sticks in the ground. The Japanese paid the natives for this work with Japanese invasion money.

The Japanese used Arabs as spies for them and later appointed many Arabs to the positions of Chef de Poste and Administrators.

Two Japanese sergeants, AFAL and DaCIOGA and another sergeant MATTO were the Japanese who beat the native chief, CE IMIAS.

/s/ Lois Antonio Nunes Rodrigues
Signature of Deponent

Interpreter

I, GIL FERREIRA, certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

/s/ Gil Ferreira.....
Interpreter

Taken and Sworn by me at DILLI, PORTUGUESE TIMOR, this 26th day of June 1946.

/s/ W. F. Quinton, Major ..
being Officer appointed by Commander-in-Chief, S. E. A. C., to make this investigation

and

..s/.....H. Fos.....Cant.,

and

./s/... (unable to read).....
Intendant, PORTUGUESE TIMOR

「ルイアントニオ・ヌネス・ロドリゲス」訊問大要

同人一職業、醫院、了務員、国籍、ポルトガル、ポルトガル領「テイモール」出生、年齢三十才、現住所、ポルトガル領「テイモール」テイリ、ハ正當ニ宣誓ノ上陳述ス。

私ハ日本軍が最初ニ「テイリ」ヲ占領シタ一九四二年二月二十日ニハ「テイリ」ニ居マシタ。

X X X X X X

一九四三年「オツス」一居タ時私ハ日本人ガ「ケリミアスト」云フ名、原住民ノ酋長モ一縮ニ原住民ヲ殴打スルヲ見マシタ。又混血兒ヲ殴打ルモ見マシタ。日本人ハ酋長ヤ他ノニ三人ノ原住民ニ彼等ノ手ヲ縛ツノ上テ煙草ヲ焼イタリ。口鼻ヲ閉テ口ニ水ヲ注イタリシテ拷問ヲ行ヒマシタ。又彼等ヲ突ツタ石ノ上ニ無理ニ跪マツカセテ背中ヲ圧迫シタリマシタ。又煙草ヲ草ニテタリシマシタ。原住民ハマタ、平手テ打タレタリ、杖ヲ打ラレタリシテ、意識ヲ失フト水ヲ飲サセザラシ、再ビ殴打サレマシタ。私ハ原住民ノ酋長「ケリミアス」ガ新シク掘ラレタ墓穴ニ連レテ行カレルヲ見マシタ。彼ハ手ヲ縛バラレ、四五人ノ日本ノ憲兵ガ長イ原住民ノカデ酋長ノ咽喉ヲ小刻ニ切り、濠洲人ノ居所ヲ白狀シナケレバ殺シテシマフゾト彼ニ云ツテ居マシタ。酋長ハ如何ナル情報ヲ與ヘル事モ拒絶シマシタノテ連レ去ラレマシタ。

X X X X X X

私ハ日本人ガ「ケリカイ」村ヲ焼クヲ見マシタ。ソノ中ニハ病院ヤ醫者ノ家モテリマシタ。是ハ一九四二年十二月ノコトデシタ。私ハ又「マヤ」攻撃ノ後「ナハレカ」村ガ日本人ニ焼カレルヲ見マシタ。

X X X X X X

Doc 5806

Ex 1792

No 1

書類番号五八〇六

「ケリミアスト」又「スロテリゲ」調問大要
 同人「職業」監院「の」務員「国籍」ポルトガル「ポルトガル領」
 「ケリミア」出生「年齢」三十「現住所」ポルトガル領
 「ケリミア」「ケイリ」——「公正」宣誓「し」陳述ス。

私「日本軍」が「最初」ニ「ケイリ」ヲ「領シタ」一九四二年二月二十日
 ニ「ケイリ」ニ「居マシタ」。

x x x x x

一九四三年「オツ」ニ「居タ」時私「日本人」が「ケリミアスト」ト云フ名、
 原住民「酋長」モ「一」緒ニ「原住民」ヲ「殴打」スルヲ「見マシタ」又「混血」
 兒ヲ「殴」ルヲ「見マシタ」日本人「酋長」ヤ「他」ノ「二三人」原住民ニ
 彼等「手」ヲ「縛」ツ「上」テ「煙草」ヲ「焼」イタリ「口」ニ「鼻」ヲ「閉」セテ「口」
 ニ「水」ヲ「注」イ「タリシ」拷問ヲ「行」ヒマシタ。又「彼等」ヲ「突」ツ「石」
 ニ「無理」ニ「跪」マツ「カセテ」背「中」ヲ「圧迫」シ「タリ」マシタ。又「煙草」ヲ「鼻」
 ニ「ス」レ「タリ」マシタ。原住民「ハ」平「午」ニ「打」タ「レ」タ「杖」ヲ「殴」レ
 タ「リ」マシタ。意識ヲ「失」フ「水」ヲ「飲」ム「生」サセ「ル」ヲ「再」ビ「殴打」サ「レ」マシタ。
 私「原住民」ノ「酋長」「ケリミアスト」が「新」ニ「掘」ラ「レ」タ「墓穴」ニ「連」ヒ「テ」行
 カ「ル」ヲ「見」マシタ。彼「手」ヲ「縛」バ「ラ」レ「四五人」日本「憲兵」が「長」イ
 原住民「カ」テ「酋長」ノ「咽喉」ヲ「小刻」ニ「切リ」豫「州人」ノ「居所」ヲ「白」
 状ニ「ケ」レ「バ」殺「シ」テ「シ」マ「フ」ト「彼」ニ「云」フ「居」マシタ。酋長「如何」ナル「情」
 報ヲ「與」ヘ「ル」事モ「拒絶」シ「マシタ」テ「連」シ「去」ラ「レ」マシタ。

約一月経「テ」日本「毎日」ニ「日本人」ノ「酋長」ノ「日本人」友
 達「テ」「イ」カラ「殺」サ「レ」ト「発表」シ「マシタ」日本人「他」ノ「酋長」ニ「此」
 ノ「事」ヲ「全部」話「シ」タ。モ「モ」彼等「日本人」ヲ「援」ケ「テ」「口」ニ「手」ヲ「起」
 ル「カ」ニ「付」テ「嚇」シ「マシタ」。

x x x x x

私「日本人」が「ケリミア」村ヲ「焼」ク「ヲ」見「マシタ」中ニ「病院」ヤ
 醫「生」ノ「家」モ「焼」レ「タ」是「一九四三年十二月」ノ「事」ニ「シ」テ「私」ノ「又」多
 「ク」「攻撃」シ「後」「ケリミア」村「日本人」ニ「焼」カ「レ」ル「ヲ」見「マシタ」。

x x x x x

Doc 5806

日本人が原住民部落ヲ襲フ時、彼等ハ無差別機関銃射ヲ浴
ビシ。

X X X X X

一九四二年三月二十日ニ於テ、日本人が「テイリ」ノ支那人ノ家ヲ他多
數ノ家ノ戸ヲ叩キテ、家々ヲ掠奪シテ居ルヲ見マシ。
私ハ日本人ガ酋長ニ原住民、女ノ子達ヲ娼家ニ送ルヲ強要
シタ多ク、場所ヲ知ツテ居マス。彼等ハモシモ酋長ガ女ノ子達
ヲ送ラナイテ、彼等即チ日本人ガ酋長ノ家ニ行ツテ彼等ノ近
親ノ女達ヲ此ノ目的ヲ達シ去ルト云ツテ脅迫シマシ。

X X X X X

證人 署名

ルイ A. N. ロドリゲス

通訳者 私「ギルアイリ」ニ記證人ノ署名ニ先立テ前記
内容ヲ證人ニ對シ證人自身ノ國語ニ正當ニ翻譯セシメテ證明ス。
翻譯者 「ギルアイリ」本人署名。

一九四六年六月二十六日、ホルトガル領「テモール」テイリニ於テ余ハ
右ノ陳述ヲ録取シ且ツ宣誓ヲ為サシム。

東南亞細亞方面軍司令官ヨリ

右訊問方ヲ任命セシタル將校

「W. F. クイント」少佐 / 本人署名

葡領東印度軍

「H. ボス」大尉 / 本人署名

ホルトガル領「テモール」長官

本人署名 不明

No 2

E. 1174

DOCUMENT NO. 5594

PAGE 1

CERTIFICATE:

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the attached report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document, entitled "I Statement on Sulfata Incident, II Statement on other Incidents, III Statement on arrest of former auxiliary soldier of Mori unit", being statement in the English language of the Japanese Major General Tanaka Yuki ddo. Soembawa January 27, 1946, on several "incidents" on the Sermata, Locang and Moa Islands, No. 4012/R which original document is a part of the official records of the Nefis.

Batavia June 1946.

(S E A L)

Subscribed and sworn to before me, K. A. de Weerd, first lieutenant R.N.I.A., Senior official attached to the office at the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

I. Statement on Sulmata Incident.

1. Reason why suppressive action taken.

In Sulmata Island 4 Japanese M.P. and 6 crews of air watch party belonging to Air Intelligence Unit had been installed since middle of June, 1944, when in the end of Aug. 1944, natives started disturbance and murdered these Japanese. A suppressive action was taken to clear out this disturbance to sweep away the rest of the line for the future and to establish law and order in the island. (Total of Japanese massacred was 9, for one of 4 M.P. survived because he was in hospital at Loutem.)

2. Cause of disturbance.

Radja of Sulmata stationed in Luan Island ruled both island, Japanese advance to Sulmata was quite natural for performance of War, and their enforcement of military administration was unavoidable measure under then existed circumstances. Nevertheless, the Radja perverting this, for encroachment of his governing authority, determined to raise a rebellion. Besides, seeing that, at that time, flight of the Japanese aircraft over his area was scarce instead of the frequent flight of Allied aircraft, and that Japanese shipping activity around Lautem area was declining, he decided that our fighting power already fell and that, therefore, no Japanese reinforcement could be sent to the island, if ever he might raise a riot; and, moreover, he intended to securify by this rebellion his own status of Radja against the probable landing of Allied force. Statement to the above effect was made by the Radja, the chief criminal, on his examination, and no other notable cause of the incident was tractable. Looking to these causes of the incident from political point of view conduct of the Radja and people of Sulmata and Luan must be taken as purely rebellious and it must be justifiable that the Japanese treated them as rebels.

3. Outline of rebellion.

(1) The Radja establishing himself in Luan took command of whole campaign and made his son Yoo to direct action in Sulmata. Yoo surrounded the camp of air-watch crew with his force of about 350 natives consisting of about 200 natives of Sulmata (mainly natives from Ero village and Rokisal village, and 10 to 20 natives from each of other villages) and 150 of Luan. Their weapons were spears and bows. At that moment, only one Japanese was in the camp, and others had gone angling at the coast without carrying any weapons. They were all massacred at last and their bodies were thrown into the sea or cast away in the hill.

(2) On that day, 1 W.O. and 1 N.C.O. of M.P. force went to Luan, on the Radja's invitation. The Radja had plotted to sink the ship they took on their way by taking off the plug of the hole in the bottom of the ship which was prepared beforehand. But it was not actually carried out owing to the shipmen hesitation. M.P. were suddenly attacked by about 300 natives that night in their camp. They are known to have escaped from the camp and evacuated the island by rowing a small boat, but since then nothing has been heard of them (M.P. uniform, pistol and

boots worn by Yoos when he was arrested afterwards by suppressive party were probably robbed from their corpses).

(3) A N.C.O. of M.P. was massacred on small island west of Luan when he stopped there on his liaison trip to Lautom.

4. Motive of the discovery of crime.

Raised suspicion by the silence of their wireless since Sept. 1, 1944, a plane was sent to ascertain their safety. But the tragedy was felt when it received no answer to its signal.

5. Sending of suppression party.

Myself, the District commander, organized the following suppression party in accordance with the Divisional order;

Commander of the suppression party,	Captain Shimada Tosaka
	One infantry company
	One machine-gun platoon
	One light trench-mortar platoon
	5 barges
	Total strength---about 200 men

To the suppression party I ordered to such effect as they completely cleaned out the mutineers, and swept away the root of the evil to establish law and order for future, as well as they searched for their bodies and their belongings because it was almost certain that all of the Japanese on Sulmata were already annihilated by natives. In addition, I ordered to capture any intelligence party which I suspected to exist in the island, for it seemed to be probable that this, disturbance was the result of agitation made to these natives by such party.

6. Movement of suppression party.

(1) The suppression party on arrival to Sulmata Island, about 29th of Sept. 1944, landed at two points, northwest end and middle of north coast of the island. Most of the natives had retreated into the mountains, but some resisted with bow, sword and spear, while others attempted to stop our advance by conflagrating both sides of road. The suppression party captured some of the remaining natives, investigated the circumstances of the mutiny and succeeded in acquiring such information as that Yoos, son of the Radja was directing the whole, that natives of all villages joined to it, and that when the party landed, Yoos, went from north coast to south coast through east coast, agitating the natives by spreading the false news that strong Australian force were landing the island from many points. The suppression party followed the trace of Yoos but his whereabouts could not be easily found. They called up the village chiefs to question this but they would not open their mouths. Their incorporative attitude (except Leran village chief) made the searching extremely difficult. It was continued by dividing the party to many places

(2) A part of the suppression party was sent to Luan island. They were charged with rifles fire and so fired back against this. They frustrated natives resistance although the Radja and his family tried to / shoot

boots worn by Yoos when he was arrested afterwards by suppressive party were probably robbed from their corpses).

(3) A N.C.O. of M.P. was massacred on small island west of Luan when he stopped there on his liaison trip to Lautom.

4. Motive of the discovery of crime.

Raised suspicion by the silence of their wireless since Sept. 1, 1944, a plane was sent to ascertain their safety. But the tragedy was felt when it received no answer to its signal.

5. Sending of suppression party.

Myself, the District commander, organized the following suppression party in accordance with the Divisional order;

Commander of the suppression party,	Captain Shimada Tosaka
	One infantry company
	One machine-gun platoon
	One light trench-mortar platoon
	5 barges
	Total strength---about 200 men

To the suppression party I ordered to such effect as they completely cleaned out the mutineers, and swept away the root of the evil to establish law and order for future, as well as they searched for their bodies and their belongings because it was almost certain that all of the Japanese on Sulmata were already annihilated by natives. In addition, I ordered to capture any intelligence party which I suspected to exist in the island, for it seemed to be probable that this, disturbance was the result of agitation made to these natives by such party.

6. Movement of suppression party.

(1) The suppression party on arrival to Sulmata Island, about 29th of Sept. 1944, landed at two points, northwest end and middle of north coast of the island. Most of the natives had retreated into the mountains, but some resisted with bow, sword and spear, while others attempted to stop our advance by conflagrating both sides of road. The suppression party captured some of the remaining natives, investigated the circumstances of the mutiny and succeeded in acquiring such information as that Yoos, son of the Radja was directing the whole, that natives of all villages joined to it, and that when the party landed, Yoos, went from north coast to south coast through east coast, animating the natives by spreading the false news that strong Australian force were landing the island from many points. The suppression party followed the trace of Yoos but his whereabouts could not be easily found. They called up the village chiefs to question this but they would not open their mouths. Their incorporative attitude (except Leran village chief) made the searching extremely difficult. It was continued by dividing the party to many places

(2) A part of the suppression party was sent to Luan island. They were charged with rifles fire and so fired back against this. They frustrated natives resistance although the Radja and his family tried to /
shoot

shoot the Japanese by bows that night, arrested the Radja, his family and his chief subordinates, and returned to Sulmata.

(3) The main body of the suppression party fruitlessly continuing their search for Yoos, already for two weeks, ordered the Radja to search out Yoos within three days, with all the men in the island, under death penalty in default of carrying out this order. The Radja assented to obey this order and commenced the searching but could not find him out until the ordained date. Therefore he was executed. Next, a Japanese soldier found a native sentinel standing in front of a cave in the mountain, then the cave was surrounded by the Japanese and at last Yoos was found and arrested in spite of his resistance with a pistol.

(4) After the arrest of Yoos, those circumstances of the incidents brought to light, and most of the persons concerned with incident arrested, the commander of the suppression party requested for my instructions. To this I ordered the commander to bring Yoos and other leading criminals to Lautem, to execute those joined the conference of rebellion and led the crowd to the assault and to appoint Leran village chief as the next Radja. Three leading criminals including Yoos was executed in Lautem.

(5) Natives of Luan island were especially atrocious. They moved to Sulmata island from their own island to join the attack against our air watch party. On Luan island they assaulted our M.P. and they showed pretty stiff resistance when the suppression party landed there. Therefore, I ordered to bring 42 principals of them to Lautem. But, on the way, 8 of them escaped because they were divided to several small boats. So I made the remaining 34 executed on Moa island.

7. As the result of Sulmata mutiny, about 60 of total 650 persons joined the mutiny were put to death.
8. I do not know the names of executioners.

II. Statement on other incidents.

In Jan, 1943, natives of Elomalo, Lautem, Timor island assaulted the Japanese at Lore, and also natives of villages west of Matabia were at first against the Japanese rule. Therefore, subjugative actions were taken against them, and some of the natives were killed or injured during action, because the natives resistance was considerably strong at first. But they surrendered very soon. And, I remember, that considering the future influences on our administering natives, no native was put to death penalty after that subjugative actions. I have nothing more especially to state, because as the result of these subjugative actions, natives came to recognize the Japanese real power, and since were very obedient to our rule.

III. Statement on arrest of former auxiliary soldier of Mori Unit.

Sept. 1945, in Maumere Area, Flores 85 former auxiliary soldiers of Mori Unit deserted their unit. Therefore, I, as the District Commander, ordered Mori

/
unit

DOCUMENT NO. 5594

PAGE 5

unit and other units to arrest these auxiliary soldiers. They succeeded in arresting about 50 of them. I ordered, therefore, to stand a special guard to watch them. And when they were handed over to Australian, most of remaining 35 also followed them.

Jan. 27th, 1946, at Soembawa.

was signed: Major General TANAKA Yuki (?)

Seal: TANAKA Yuki (?)

5594-1-7655

僑團長ノ行状

一 僑團長ハ一六四四年元月二十七日頃「スルマタ島」
 ニ到着スルト島ノ西北端ト北海岸ノ中央部ノ二地點
 ヨリ上陸シタ。原住民ノ大多數ハ山ニ避ツテキタガ、
 若干ノ原住民ハ弓、刀、槍等ヲ抵抗シ又、他ノ原住民
 氏ハ連日ノ間にニ火災ヲ起サセテ我軍ノ前進ヲ足障
 カセヨリトシタ。僑團長ハ避ツテキタ原住民ヲ若干
 捕ヘテ遺棄ノ事情ヲ調査シ、次ノ様ナ情報ヲ得ルコ
 トニ成功シタ。即チ「ライジャ」ノ息子ノ「ユース」
 ガ全信ヲ提供シテホルト、ソノ村民ガ遺棄ニ加
 ハツテキナイ村ハナイコト、僑團長ガ上陸シタ時ニ
 「ユース」ハ東方ナ我軍ガ攻撃點カラ島ニ上陸シテ
 ホルト言フ原住民ノ敵ヲ追布シテ原住民ヲ見シナガ
 ラ北海岸カラ東海岸ヘ東海岸ヲ避ツテ行ツタト言フ
 コト等、僑團長ハ「ユース」ヲ追跡シタガ彼ノ行方
 ハ容易ニ分ラナカツタ。僑團長ハ村ノ長達ヲ呼ビ出
 シテ之ヲ尋ネタガ彼等ハ口ヲ閉カウトシナカツタ。
 彼等ノ言ヒ合ハセタヤウナ態度ハレラン村ノ村長ハ
 例外ハ遺棄ヲ程度ニ目撃セラシメタ。遺棄ハ隊ヲ
 數ヶ所ニ分散シテ續ケラレタ。
 一 僑團長ノ一支隊ハルアン島ニ派遣セラレタ。支隊ハ
 小銃部隊ヲ受ケタノテ之ニ應射シタ。「ライジャ」
 トソノ家族ガ其ノ夜弓矢ヲ日本兵ヲ射ヤウトシタガ、
 彼等ハ原住民ノ抵抗ヲ粉砕シ「ライジャ」、ソノ家

55941-2

族及ヒソノ主ナ家ヲ違ラ遊シテ「スルマタ」ニ歸
ツタ。

佐藤屋敷ノ本館ハ島果モ島ガラスニ館ニ二建四「ユ
ース」ノ建築ヲ似クテキタガ、「ライジヤ」ニ益島
島ト一層ニ「ユース」ヲ建シ固スコトヲ命シ、此ノ
命令ノ受符ニ欠クルコトアルトキハ死刑ニスルト言
ヒ渡シタ。「ライジヤ」ハ此ノ命令ニ従フコトヲ肯
シテ渡乗ニ着手シタガ是ラトタ目途ニ従ラ撰シ出
スコトガ出来ナカッタ。其時テ獄ハ處刑サレタ。次
テ「日本兵ハ一人ノ原住民ノ歩隊ヲ山中ノ洞穴ノ前
ニ立ツテキルノヲ御見シ、ソコテ洞穴ハ日本軍ニヨ
リ包圍サレ、終ニ「ユース」ハ御見サレ、ピストル
ヲ抵抗シタガ逃避セラレタ。

此「ユース」ノ逮捕ノ後、尋符ノソレ等ノ事情が閉
ルミニ置サレ、尋符ニ課添セル穴多量ノ者ガ逮捕セ
ラレ、佐藤隊長ガ私ノ指示ヲ仰イダ。之ニ對シ私ハ
隊長ニ「ユース」ト他ノ主長犯罪人ヲ「ラウテム」
ニ送レテ來ルヤウ命シ、監視官館ニ加ハリ時業ヲ登
導シテ監視サセタ者ヲ處刑シ、「レラン村」ノ村長
ヲ次ノ「ライジヤ」ニ任ズルヤウ命シタ。「ユース」
ヲ舍メテ三人ノ主長犯罪人が「ラウテム」ヲ處刑サ
レタ。

此「ルアン島」ノ原住民ハ等ニ擧進ダツタ。彼等ハ
自分達ノ島カラ「スルマタ島」ニ移住シテ我が方ノ

5594-2

族及とソノ主ナ家来達ヲ捕縛シテ「スルマタ」ニ囚
ツタ。

信濃國隊ノ本陣ハ高尾モ島ガタスニ置キ二週四「ユ
ース」ノ基業ヲ振クテキタガ、「ライツヤ」ニ全島
兵ト一掃ニ「ユース」ヲ獲シ固スコトヲ命ジ、此ノ
命令ノ実行ニ欠クルコトアルトキハ死刑ニスルト誓
ヒ置シタ。「ライツヤ」ハ此ノ命令ニ従フコトヲ肯
シテ渡業ニ着手シタガ、幾スラトタ日進ニ彼ヲ擧シ出
スコトが出来テシタ。其處ヲ往ハ島捕サレタ。次
テ「日本兵ハ一人ノ原住民ノ沙路ガ山中ノ洞穴ノ前
ニ立ツテキルヲ發見シ、ソコヲ洞穴ハ日本軍ニヨ
リ包圍サレ、遂ニ「ユース」ハ發見サレ、ピストル
ヲ抛擲シタガ逃避セラレタ。

此「ユース」ノ逃避ノ後、野谷ノソレ等ノ事情が明
ルキニ置サレ、野谷ニ謀害セル穴多ク其ノ者が捕縛セ
ラレ、信濃隊長ガ私ノ指示ヲ仰イタ。之ニ對シ私ハ
隊長ニ「ユース」ト他ノ主取犯罪人ヲ「ラウテム」
ニ送レテ來ルヤキ命ジ、偵視名義ニ加ハリ群衆ヲ掃
蕩シテ捕縛サセタ道ヲ處刑シ、「レラン村」ノ村長
ヲ次ノ「ライツヤ」ニ任ズルヤキ命ジタ。「ユース」
ヲ舍メテ三人ノ主取犯罪人ガ「ラウテム」ヲ處刑サ
レタ。

此「ルアン島」ノ原住民ハ彼ニ擧げダツタ。彼等ハ
自分達ノ島カラ「スルマタ島」ニ移住シテ我が方ノ

5594-3

對望壁視はニ對スル攻撃ニ遊蕩シタ。 「ルアン島」ニ於テハ彼等ハ我ガ方ノ憲兵ヲ襲撃シ、 傷壓隊ガ其處ニ上陸シタ時ハ可成リ頑強ヲ奮然ヲ見セタ。 故ニ私ハ彼等ノ中ノ主要人物十二人ヲ「ラウテム」ニ送レテ來ルヤヲ命ジタ。 然シソノ途中テ彼等ヲ數隻ノ小船ニ分乘セシメタ爲ニソノ中ノ八名ガ逃亡シタ。 ソコテ私ハ残りノ三十人ヲ「モア島」テ處刑サセタ。

「スルマ多羅拔」ノ結果トシテ囚徒ニ加ハツタ者ガ全部テ六百五十名ノ中約六十名ガ死刑ニセラレタ。

私ハ死刑執行人ノ名前ハ知ラナイ。 — — — — —

陸軍少將 田 中 邊
署名捺印

Doc 5594 (cont)

證 明 書

下記署名者、日印軍中尉、和國軍情報部戦争犯

／CHARLES JONGHEBEL

翻譯々長テヤイルス ヨンゲニール ハ先ヅ正式

ニ宣誓ノ上、森岡報督等ハ千九百四十六年ノ昭和

／SONNABA

二十一年ノ一月二十七日ソニバクニ於テ日本

／YANAKA YUKI /SERIYAMA /TOHANG

日軍少將田中ユキガ、セルマク・ジアン、及び

／MOE

モア島ニ關スル攻撃ノ「事件」ニ就キ英語ニヨリ

／STERN

陳述ニシテ、「スルマタ事件」ニ關スル第一陳述、

／JOH

「其ノ他ノ事件」ニ關スル第二陳述、「森部隊元

補助兵ノ逮捕」ニ關スル第三陳述」ト題スル文書原

本ノ全文ニシテ、眞實、完全且正確ナル寫本、第

四〇一二一Rニシテ其原本ハ和國軍情報部ノ公約

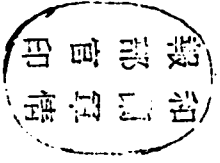
記録ノ一部ナルコトヲ証書ス。

／BATAVIA

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ六月 バタビアニ於テ

／CHARLES JONGHEBEL

テヤイルス ヨンゲニールノ署名ノ



2.

Doc 5594 (cont.)

余、印子蘭印憲長總長事務局前任官印軍中尉
K. H. de WEERD /
ケ・エ・デ・ヴァ・ヘルドノ口前ニテ署名宣經セリ

K. H. de WEERD /
ケ・エ・デ・ヴァ・ヘルドノ署名ノ

Ex. #1144

The undersigned, CHARLES JONGENIEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NLFIS), being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document, entitled:]

1. Compilation of NLFIS interrogation reports Nos. 2026/111, 2027/111, 2028/111, 2033/111, 2034/111;
 2. NLFIS interrogation report No. 1810, informant WLONTERY, Julius;
 3. NLFIS interrogation report No. 1811, informant SI OIL DOLOIDI;
 4. NLFIS interrogation report No. 1070, informant MATULIUMA SILVANUS;
 5. Extract from letter from SOHNIA LILIBI TILOR;
 6. Service report of Lt. OYAMA, C. Garrison in LOI ISLAND;
 7. Signed statement by YOLLIUS WONTERY;
 8. Signed statement by DOIFINOIS TOFUETIWE;
 9. Signed statement by Lt. OYAMA SAIDI;
 10. Signed statement by Sgt. HILSUSAKI TORUO;
 11. Signed statement by Sgt. i.s.j. UDO BLNZOO;
- [concerning mass-murder and forced prostitution on LOIANG and SIKAT ISLANDS;

which documents are part of the official records of the NLFIS.

Signature:

/s/ C. Jongeneel

(SILL)

Batavia, June 7th, 1946

Subscribed and sworn before me K. A. de Weerd, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.I.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

STATEMENT BY LT. OHARA Seidai

Q. What is your name and age?

A. My name is OHARA Seidai, my age 27.

Q. What is your unit?

A. TANAKA BUTAI, WYASHI TAI.

Q. What is your home address?

A. KUMAMOTO KEN, KAMOTO GUN, IMANO URA 2191.

Q. Give a resume of your service in the army?

A. Dec. 1940 2 Inf. Regt. of TAIWAN
Oct. 1941 KURUME Cadet Academy
Jan. 1942 JAVA
Dec. 1942 THOR
June 1944 MOA ISLAND

Q. Who was commander of MOA Island in Sept. '44?

A. I was.

Q. Were any natives killed on Moa Island in Sept. '44 and how many?

A. About 40 natives were captured at SIRATA and LOIAN Islands and they were killed.

Q. Why were they killed?

A. Because the natives attacked the KILPHI TAI on SIRATA and LOIAN Islands.

Q. Who ordered the killing?

A. Gen. TANAKA ordered that the natives were to be sent to his HQ but before they left MOA the order was changed and I was ordered to kill them there, and send 3 or 4 of the natives leaders to TANAKA BUTAI.

Q. Did you kill these natives yourself?

A. No. I only supervised the killing.

Q. Who assisted you?

A. Sgt. Maj. UDO, Sgt. TOYOSHIGE and Sgt. MATSUSAKI and 21 other soldiers.

STATEMENT BY LT. OWAMA Seidai

Q. What is your name and age?

A. My name is OWAMA Seidai, my age 27.

Q. What is your unit?

A. TANAKA BUTAI, WYAKSWI TAI.

Q. What is your home address?

A. KUMAMOTO KEN, KAROTO GUN, IMANOUURA 2191.

Q. Give a resume of your service in the army?

A. Dec. 1940 2 Inf. Regt. of TAIWAN
Oct. 1941 KURUME Cadet Academy
Jan. 1942 JAVA
Dec. 1942 THOR
June 1944 MOA ISLAND

Q. Who was commander of MOA Island in Sept. '44?

A. I was.

Q. Were any natives killed on Moa Island in Sept. '44 and how many?

A. About 40 natives were captured at SIRIATA and LOIAN Islands and they were killed.

Q. Why were they killed?

A. Because the natives attacked the KILPHI TAI on SIRIATA and LOIAN Islands.

Q. Who ordered the killing?

A. Gen. TANAKA ordered that the natives were to be sent to his HQ but before they left MOA the order was changed and I was ordered to kill them there, and send 3 or 4 of the natives leaders to TANAKA BUTAI.

Q. Did you kill these natives yourself?

A. No. I only supervised the killing.

Q. Who assisted you?

A. Sgt. Maj. UDO, Sgt. TOYOSHIGE and Sgt. MATSUSAKI and 21 other soldiers.

Q. Where are these men now?

A. Sgt. Maj. UDO and Sgt. MITSUSAKI are in LOPOK with 2 Inf. Regt. of TAIJAN. Sgt. TOYOSHIGE left for LAUTHI in July '45 and the barge arrived empty, so it was presumed that he was drowned.

Q. How were the men killed?

A. They were lined up in threes in column of route and then the 21 soldiers mentioned above charged them with bayonets, killing three at a time.

Q. A witness has said that you raped women and that women were brought to the barracks and used by the Japs. Is this true?

A. I organized a brothel for the soldiers and used it myself.

Q. Were the women willing to go into the brothel?

A. Some were willing, some were not.

Q. How many women were there?

A. 6.

Q. How many of these women were forced into the brothel?

A. Five.

Q. How were these women forced into the brothel?

A. They were daughters of the men who attacked the KLI PLI TAI.

Q. Then these women were forced into the brothels as a punishment for the deeds of their fathers.

A. Yes.

Q. For how long were these women kept in the brothel?

A. For 8 months.

Q. How many men used this brothel?

A. 25

Q. Have you ever beaten any natives?

A. Yes, I have struck native soldiers who co-operated with us.

Q. Why?

A. A native who lived on DAKA Island who was one of these killed the Japs soldiers escaped to HOA. There he hid in a house of a native who was a spy for the Japanese. Then he escaped and I do not know where he went. After his escape I found out that he had hidden in the spy's house, so I beat the spy with my clenched fists about the head and shoulders because he had not told us.

Q. Was this native badly hurt?

A. No.

(Sgt) OYAMA Seidai

Witness.

J. Lennie, Capt.
13 Jan. '46

The above has been read to OYAMA in Japanese and he states that it is a true and accurate report of the information given by him.]

Doc 5591

證明書

①

和蘭軍情報部戦争犯罪部長 R.N.I.A 陸軍中尉
下名「チャールズ・ヨンゲネール」ハ正当ニ宣誓ヲ為シタルニ添附
ノ報告書ハ左記文書ノ原本全部ノ真正ニシテ完全正確ナルニ爲
ニ相違ナキコトヲ證言ス

九「オハラセイダイ」海軍中尉宣誓陳述書

右「ロエアング」及「セルマ」島ニ於ケル集團殺人並ニ強姦ニ
関スルモノナリ

右ノ文書ハ和蘭軍情報部ノ公式記録ノ一部ナリ

和蘭軍情報部(印)「シ・エ・イ・ド・ウ・ヤ・ア・ド」(署名)

一九四六年/昭和二十一年六月七日「オハラセイダイ」ニ於テ和蘭領東印度
最高檢察官局附 上級將校 R.N.I.A 陸軍中尉「ケイ・エー・
ド・ウ・ヤ・ア・ド」ノ面前ニ於テ署名シ宣誓セラレタリ

「ケイ・エー・ド・ウ・ヤ・ア・ド」(署名)

1179

No 1

Doc 5591

陸軍中尉「オハラ、セイヤ」陳述書

問

貴方、氏名、年齢ハ?

答

氏名「オハラ、セイヤ」年齢ハ三七才

問

貴方、所屬部隊ハ?

答

「第九」部隊「ヤシ」隊

問

貴方、住所ハ?

答

熊本縣「元上」郡「小ノ」村「三九一」

問

貴方、軍隊勤務、概要ヲ述ベテサシ

答

一九四〇年、昭和十五年、十二月台湾赤兵第三聯隊

一九四一年、昭和十六年、十月又福米士官學校

一九四二年、昭和十七年、一月瓜哇

一九四二年、昭和十七年、十二月「千元」島

一九四四年、昭和十九年、六月「毛ア」島

問

一九四四年、九月三於「千元」島「毛ア」島、指揮官、誰ニシタカ。

答

私ニアリマシタ。

問

一九四四年、九月中ニ「毛ア」島ニ土民が殺サレタコトガアリマス

ク、又、人殺ハ?

答

セルマク島及「ロエア」島、約四十名、土民が捕虜ト

ナリ且殺サレマシタ

問

何故ニ殺サレタノデスカ。

答

土民達がセルマク及「ロエア」島ノ憲兵隊ヲ攻撃シタ

カラキス。

問

誰ガソノ殺スコトヲ命令シタノデスカ

No 7

DOC 5591

No 3

答、
「タカ」將軍ハ土民達ヲ司令部へ送ルヤカ命ジシタ
然シ土民達が「モア」ヲ出登スル前ニ私命令ハ変更サシ私ガ
「モア」ヲ彼等ヲ殺シ土民ノ指導者三四名ヲ「タカ」部隊
ニ送ルヤカ命ゼラシマシタ。

問、
貴方自分テソ、土民達ヲ殺シマシタカ。

答、
イ、私ハ唯ソノ殺スノヲ監督シタノデス。

問、
唯カ貴方ノ手助ヲシタノデスカ

答、
「ウド」曹長、「トヨシガ」軍曹、「マツガキ」軍曹及二十一名、他
ノ兵卒達ガス。

問、
ソノ等ノ者ハ今何處ニ居リマスカ。

答、
「ウド」曹長及「マツガキ」軍曹ハ台湾オニ歩兵聯隊ト共
ニ「ロホク」ニ居リマス。「トヨシガ」軍曹ハ一九四五年昭和
二十年七月中「ラウラ」ニ向ヒマシタガ荷船ガ着イタ時
ニ空示シタソノ故彼ハ溺死シタモト推定サレマシタ。

問、
ドノ風ニシテ土民達ハ殺サレタノデスカ。

答、
彼等ハ三人死途上縦隊ヲ作ツテ整列サセラシマシタ。ソノカ
ラ前ニ述べタ二十一人ノ兵達ハ銃劍ヲ彼等ヲ突刺シ一度ニ
三人ヲ殺シマシタ。

問、
或ル證人ハ貴方が婦女達ヲ強姦シソ、婦人達ハ兵營へ
連ラテ行カレ日本人達ノ用ニ供セラレタト言ヒマシタガソハ
本ガデスカ

答、
私ハ兵隊達、為ニ娼家ヲ一軒設ケ私自身モ之ヲ利用シ
マシタ。

問、
婦女達ハソノ娼家ニ行クコトヲ快諾シマシタカ

DOC 559

答 或者ハ快諾シ或ハ若ハ快諾シマゼンテシク。
 向 幾人女ガソコニ居リマシタカ
 答 六人デス。
 向 ソノ女達ノ中幾人が娼家ニ入ル様ニ強ヒラシマシタカ
 答 五人デス。
 向 ドウシテソノ等ノ婦女達ハ娼家ニ入ル様強ヒラシタデスカ。
 答 彼等ハ憲兵隊ヲ攻撃シタ者ノ娘達デアリマシタ。
 向 夫ハソノ婦女達ハ父親達ノシタ事ノ罰トシテ娼家ニ入ル様
 強ヒラシタノデスネ。
 答 左様デス。
 向 如何程ノ期間ソノ女達ハ娼家ニ入ラレテ居マシタカ。
 答 八ヶ月間デス。
 向 何人但コノ娼家ヲ利用シマシタカ。
 答 二十五人デス。
 向 二人ヲ殺ツタコトガアリマスカ
 答 アリマス、私ハ自命達ニ協力シテ廿二人兵達ヲ殺リマシタ。
 向 何故デスカ。
 答 「ガマル」島主ノ主人下日本兵達ヲ殺シタ者一人ガモア、
 逃ケマシタ。彼ハ日本人ノ為ノスパイニテアツタ一兵ノ
 家ニ隠シマシタ。ソコカラ又彼ハ逃セシマシタガ、私ハ彼ガ何
 処ヘ行ツタノカ分リマゼンシタ。彼ノ逃亡後彼ガ右ノスパイ
 ノ家ニ隠レテ居タコトガ分リマシタ。ソコテ私ハ「スパイ」ガ
 名ニ知ラセテオツタト言フ理由カラ拳銃ヲソノ頭ヤ肩ノ辺ヲ
 殺リマシタ。

No 4

No 4

DOC 559

或者ハ快諾シ或ル者ハ快諾シマセテシタ
 幾人女ガソコニ居リマシタカ
 六人ナス
 ソノ女達ノ中幾人が娼家ニ入ル様ニ強ヒラシマシタカ
 五人ナス
 ソウシテソノ母ノ婦々達ハ娼家ニ入ル様強ヒラシタガスカ
 彼等ハ憲兵隊ヲ攻撃シタ者ノ娘達ナリマシタ
 ナハソノ婦々達ハ父親達ノシタ事ノ罰ニテ娼家ニ入ル様
 強ヒラシタノ事ナス
 左様ナス
 如何程ノ期間ソノ女達ハ娼家ニ入ラレニテ居マシタカ
 八ヶ月間ナス
 何人位コノ娼家ヲ利用シマシタカ
 二十五人ナス
 二人ヲ殴ツタコトガアリマスカ
 アリマス、私ハ自命達ニ協力シテモタニ民兵達ヲ殴リマシタ
 何故ナスカ
 「オマレノ島主ノ主人ハ日本兵達ヲ殺シタ者ノ一人ガモア、
 逃ケマシタ、彼ハ日本人ノ為メノスパイナリマシタ一市民ノ
 家ニ隠レマシタ、ソコカラ又彼ハ逃セシマシタガ、私ハ彼ガ何
 処ヘ行ツタノカ分リマセテシタ、彼ノ逃セ後彼ガ右ノ家
 ノ家ニ隠レテ居タコトガ分リマシタ、ソコテ私ハ「スパイ」ガ
 知ラセテオキタト言フ理由カラ拳國デソノ頭ヤ肩ノ辺ヲ
 殴リマシタ、

No. 5

DOC 5591

答 同
ソノ長ハ非道ノ傷ヲ受ケマシタカ
イイ工。

証人「オハラ、セイダイ」(署名)
「ジイ、リンニ」陸軍大尉

一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 一月十三日

以上、應答ハ日本語ニテ「オハラ」ニ讀ミ聞カセラシ「オハラ」
ハ右ガ彼、為シク報告ノ真実ニテ正確ナル記録ナル
旨陳述セリ。

Cx. 1795



Summary of examination of CHEUNG HAI CHEUNG, also known as HAI HOI, occupation, merchant aged 24 years, born in CANCONG, a Chinese subject, residing during the war in LIQUICA and now in custody in LIQUICA Gaol, being duly sworn states:-

During the Japanese occupation of Portuguese Timor I worked for the Japanese as an Interpreter from May 1943 until the end of the war. I was working for the Kempaitai. The names of the Kempaitai for whom I worked were:-

Lieutenant	AKUZAWA
Sub-Lieut	KANEKO
Sgt (First)	NABETA
"	YOKO
"	UESUKI
" (Second)	IKETA
"	CNO
"	KIKINO
"	MIUCHI
"	KATO
"	UTSUKI
"	NASEWA
"	YASUKI
"	FUKUMOTO
"	NAITO
Driver	OKAMURA
Soldier	TAKAMUNE
"	KUWALCHI

There was also a Sergeant ARAI in the Kempaitai on the West Side of the island and a Captain MATSUDA of the ORTORI. That is all that I remember.

I was not an interpreter when the Japanese interrogated Australians because the Japanese could speak English. I did not see them interrogated.

I saw some Australians in the Dilli gaol from September 1943. I was brought down from LIQUICA in that month.



I acted as an interpreter in Portuguese when ANTONIO AUGUSTO dos SANTOS, was interrogated by the Kempaitai. This was sometime after September 1943. I saw dos SANTOS with his hands bound together and hung from the top of a doorway and I saw him beaten with sticks. I saw this happen to DOS SANTOS only once. Sub Lieut KANEKO was in charge of the interrogation of dos SANTOS and ordered him to be hung up. There

was a Japanese interpreter present but I do not remember his name. I saw dos SANTOS hung up for a period of fifteen or twenty minutes. After that time he was released and given a drink of water and I was sent away. Dos SANTOS was interrogated because he was accused of stealing petrol and ammunition which had belonged to the Dutch.

The Commandant of the gaol was Lieutenant KUZUNO, he was aged about 40 years. One Kempaitai named KAHNAPEN was in DILLI gaol for a short time, he is the one who wears glasses.

All prisoners in the DILLI gaol, including Portuguese, Chinese and natives, were treated in the same manner as dos SANTOS being hung by their hands from the top of a door with their feet off the ground. I saw this on a number of occasions. This was done to the prisoners if they did not give satisfactory answers to the interrogations. All the Japanese of the Kempaitai named above, except UESKI, YOKO, AKUZAWA, KILANO, TAKIMUNE, MASAKI, FUKUMOTO, OKAMURA, KOURIYACHI and NAITO, are the ones I saw tying the prisoners up by their hands to the doors. Sergeant KATO was the worst man. I know all the others did it but I did not see them.

I do not know the numbers of the Japanese regiments which occupied Portuguese Timor as they were kept secret, but I do know that the number of the Kempaitai unit for whom I was working was number 1921.

I was also present as an interpreter when a Portuguese Lieutenant, LIBERTO, was interrogated by the Kempaitai, sergeant NARETA. Lieutenant LIBERTO was also tied up by the hands to the top of a doorway and beaten with sticks by NARETA.

I also saw Sergeant UTCHEKI using the "water torture" on Chinese and native prisoners.

I could positively identify Sub-Lieutenant KANEKO and Sergeant NARETA again, if I saw them. I am not sure that I could identify the others.

When I saw the Australians passing through the gaol to take a bath or to do other things, they were very weak and exhausted.

There was another Japanese organisation which was worse than the Kempaitai, it was called ORTORI, and organised the native troops. There were many ARABS in this organisation. I heard that the ORTORI was responsible for the killing of several Chinese.

There were also some native women prisoners in the DILLI gaol. I saw them interrogated by Sergeant NARETA and beaten and hung up from the top of a doorway by their bound hands by him. I saw some of these native women being interrogated.

was a Japanese interpreter present but I do not remember his name. I saw dos SANTOS hung up for a period of fifteen or twenty minutes. After that time he was released and given a drink of water and I was sent away. Dos SANTOS was interrogated because he was accused of stealing petrol and ammunition which had belonged to the Dutch.

The Commandant of the gaol was Lieutenant AKUZAWA, he was aged about 40 years. One Kempaitai named KANEKAWA was in DILLI gaol for a short time, he is the one who wears glasses.

All prisoners in the DILLI gaol, including Portuguese, Chinese and natives, were treated in the same manner as dos SANTOS being hung by their hands from the top of a door with their feet off the ground. I saw this on a number of occasions. This was done to the prisoners if they did not give satisfactory answers to the interrogations. All the Japanese of the Kempaitai named above, except UESKI, YOKO, AKUZAWA, KITANO, TAKAMUNE, AMASAKI, FUKUMOTO, OKUMURA, KOUJIMACHI and NAITO, are the ones I saw tying the prisoners up by their hands to the doors. Sergeant KATO was the worst man. I know all the others did it but I did not see them.

I do not know the numbers of the Japanese regiments which occupied Portuguese Timor as they were kept secret, but I do know that the number of the Kempaitai unit for whom I was working was number 1921.

I was also present as an interpreter when a Portuguese Lieutenant, LIBERATO, was interrogated by the Kempaitai, sergeant NARETA. Lieutenant LIBERATO was also tied up by the hands to the top of a doorway and beaten with sticks by NARETA.

I also saw Sergeant UTSUKI using the "water torture" on Chinese and native prisoners.

I could positively identify Sub-Lieutenant KANEKO and Sergeant NARETA again, if I saw them. I am not sure that I could identify the others.

When I saw the Australians passing through the gaol to take a bath or to do other things, they were very weak and exhausted.

There was another Japanese organisation which was worse than the Kempaitai, it was called ORTORI, and organised the native troops. There were many ARABS in this organisation. I heard that the ORTORI was responsible for the killing of several Chinese.

There were also some native women prisoners in the DILLI gaol. I saw them interrogated by Sergeant NARETA and beaten and hung up from the top of a doorway by their bound hands by him. I saw some of these native women being interrogated.

I saw prisoners forced to squat down with a stick tied behind their knees until they fell over with exhaustion.] Sub-Lieutenant KANEKO, Sergeant NARETA, Sergeant KATO, Sergeant UCHIKI, were the ones I saw forcing prisoners to do this. One prisoner to whom this was done was Lieutenant LIBERATO. Sergeant NARETA was the one who did this to Lieutenant LIBERATO.

I know that the Japanese NAKATA and TOKUNAGA worked before the war for the SOCIEDADE AGRICOLA and came back in uniform with the Japanese invasion troops.

.../s/ Chung Hai Cheng.....
Signature of Deponent.

Certificate of Interpreter

I, GIL FIRRIERA, certify that I duly translated the above summary to the witness in his own language, prior to his signature which appears above.

[/s/ Gil Firriera
Interpreter]

Taken and Sworn before me this First day of July, nineteen hundred and forty-six, at DILLI, PORTEGUESE TIMOR.

/s/ W. E. Quinton Major
AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES

and

/s/ _____ Capt.,
N. E. I. ARMY

and

_____]
Intendente, PORTEGUESE TIMOR

Doc 5807

A. 之囚人等が訊問ニ対シ満足ニ返答ヲ與ヘシカハ場合行ハクシ

* * * * *

私、葡萄牙ノ「リブレ」中尉が憲兵隊、于テ「軍曹」ニ訊問サ
シ時ニモ亦通譯トシテ互合シ。リブレ中尉モ亦「縛」テ
名、頂上カノ金「棒」ヲ打リ。私亦「縛」テ、軍曹が中國人及二人ノ囚人ニ對シ「^{療法}水苛」ヲ

用ヒテ居ルヲ見。

* * * * *

私、豫州兵ガ入浴ニ他ノ「牢」ヲ為シ監獄ヲ通抜ルヲ見
時彼等「非常」ニ弱シテ報シ果テキ。

* * * * *

「牢」中監獄ニ亦数名ノ土人婦女ノ囚人が居。私、彼等ガ于
テ「軍曹」ニ取調ラシ打リ而シテ彼等ヲ縛テ「頂上」カノ金
下ラシヲ見。私、此等土人婦女ノ数名ガ取調ラシヲ見。

私、囚人ガ彼等「膝」ニ「棒」ヲ縛リ附ケシ、彼等ガ被シ果テ「倒
ル」位無理ニシガセシヲ見。

* * * * *

證人署名

ケエ、ハイ、ケエ、署名

Doc 5807

4. 之囚人等が訊問ニ対シ満足ニ返答ヲ與ヘ十カ月場合行心タラズ。

* * * * *

私、葡萄牙、リブラ上中尉が憲兵隊、于テ、軍曹ニ訊問サ
シ時ニモ亦通譯ト立會シ。リブラ上中尉ヲ示テ縛リ
テ、頂上ニ釣下ラシテ、棒ヲ打ラシ。

私亦、于テ、軍曹が中國人及土人囚人ニ対シ水苛^{瘡法}ヲ
用ヒテ虐ルヲ見。

* * * * *

私、豫州兵ガ入浴ニ他、于テ、監獄ヲ運搬ルヲ見。
時、彼等、非常ニ弱クテ、報シ果テテキ。

* * * * *

于テ、監獄ニ、亦、教知、土人婦女、囚人が居。私、彼等ガ于
テ、軍曹ニ取調ラシ打ラシ而シテ、彼、于テ、縛リテ、頂上ニ釣
下ラシヲ見。私、此等土人婦女、教知ガ取調ラシヲ見。
私、囚人が彼等、膝、後、棒ヲ縛リ、附ラシ、彼等ガ被シ果テ、倒
ルニ、無理ニ辛ガカシヲ見。

* * * * *

證人署名

于テ、ハ、于テ、署名

Doc 5807.

通訳、證明

私、于ル、ズルリ、エ、ハ、前記證人、於署名、不、前、私、前記要
約、證人、彼、自國語、正式、飛、誤、タ、コ、ト、證明ス。

通訳

于ル、ズルリ、エ、ハ、署名

葡萄牙領、毛、ル、デ、イ、リ、於、一、九、四、六、年、七、月、一、日、私、面、前、於
テ、宣、誓、ス。

濠洲陸軍部隊

署名判讀不能 少佐

蘭領東印度陸軍

署名判讀不能 大尉

葡萄牙領、毛、ル、主、計、官

署名判讀不能

DOCUMENT 5684

Prosecution Document

No. 5684.

NETHERLANDS INDIES

C. LEHNS

Synopsis

Netherlands Division I.P.S.

December 1946.

Lt. Col. J.S. Sinninghe Damst.

E.N.I.A.,

Assistant Prosecutor

CELEBES
and Surrounding Islands

Synopsis

Occupation by the Japanese Navy.

I. PRISONERS OF WAR:

1. Murder.

Several murders occurred: P.O.W. were executed without trial and even without any accusation; airmen in particular. These executions were ordered by the highest ranks in the Army and Navy.

- a. At Ralle, South West Celebes, in March 1942 eight Dutch P.O.W. were killed by bayonetting, as stated by Medical Officer MILGEBEL, R.M.I.A., in his interrogation-report; Prosecution Document 5518.

The Prosecution enters this document 5518 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- b. At Tomohon, near Manado, North East Celebes, in September 1944 two American airmen, made P.O.W., were executed on the order of Lt. Colonel KODZAKUMISU, as appears from the affidavit of Major T. ODUMURA, Prosecution Document 5520.

The Prosecution enters this document 5520 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- c. At Toli-Toli, South West Celebes, in October 1944 eight American airmen, made P.O.W., were executed. This is stated in the affidavit of Y. HAYASHI, Prosecution Document 5535.

The Prosecution enters this document 5535 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- d. At Kendari, South East Celebes, in November 1944 nine American airmen, made P.O.W. were executed on the order of Admiral OSUGI. As appears from the affidavit by Captain G. TAJIGUCHI; Prosecution Document 5532.

The Prosecution enters this document 5532 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- e. At Singkang, South East Celebes, in July 1945, five American airmen, made P.O.W., were executed on the orders of Lt. General TESHIMA;

/ at

CELEBES
And Surrounding Islands

Synopsis

Occupation by the Japanese Navy.

I. PRISONERS OF WAR:

1. Murder.

Several murders occurred: P.O.W. were executed without trial and even without any accusation; airmen in particular. These executions were ordered by the highest ranks in the Army and Navy.

- a. At Ralla, South West Celebes, in March 1942 eight Dutch P.O.W. were killed by bayonetting, as stated by Medical Officer ML. GEBEL, R.N.I.A., in his interrogation-report; Prosecution Document 5518.

The Prosecution enters this document 5518 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- b. At Tomohon, near Manado, North East Celebes, in September 1944 two American airmen, made P.O.W., were executed on the order of Lt. Colonel YODZAKUNUSU, as appears from the affidavit of Major T. ODUMURA, Prosecution Document 5520.

The Prosecution enters this document 5520 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- c. At Toli-Toli, South West Celebes, in October 1944 eight American airmen, made P.O.W., were executed. This is stated in the affidavit of Y. MIYASHI, Prosecution Document 5535.

The Prosecution enters this document 5535 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- d. At Kendari, South East Celebes, in November 1944 nine American airmen, made P.O.W. were executed on the order of Admiral OSUGI. As appears from the affidavit by Captain G. TEIGUCHI; Prosecution Document 5532.

The Prosecution enters this document 5532 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- e. At Singkang, South East Celebes, in July 1945, five American airmen, made P.O.W., were executed on the orders of Lt. General TESHIMA;

/ at

at any rate such an order was presumed by the C.O. Colonel M. NAKAMURA. Prosecution Document 5521 is his affidavit.

The Prosecution enters this document 5521 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

f. At Bea, Talaud Islands, North of Celebes, in March 1945 four Allied airmen were executed, as so-called punishment without accusation and without trial, on the order of General KATSURA, and at Rainis, Talaud, in June 1945 another Allied airman was executed under the same order. This appears from the statement of the Japanese Colonel KEBA, Prosecution Document 5564.

The Prosecution enters this document 5564 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

g. At Maros, near Macassar, South West Celebes, in July 1945 four Allied airmen, made P.O.W., were executed on the order of Lt. Commander ISHIDA. As appears from the affidavit of Lt. Y. NAKAMURA, Prosecution Document 5533.

The Prosecution enters this document 5533 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

2. Camps.

Conditions in the P.O.W. camps in this area generally were about the same as already described in the other areas: the well-known Japanese pattern.

a. At the P.O.W. camp at Macassar, South West Celebes; bad accommodation, no furniture, no bedding, no clothing, overcrowded camps; exhausting labour; labour on military objects; old and unfit men compelled to work; insufficient food, in quantity as well as in quality; bad sanitary conditions; medical supplies were inadequately provided notwithstanding outbreaks of dysentery and malaria; bad health as a consequence of malnutrition, resulting in a high death rate; no Red Cross parcels were distributed; no recreation was provided, even singing was forbidden; no mails; discipline was maintained by a system of terrorization with frequent and severe corporal punishments. This appears from the affidavit by Lt. Commander G.T. COOPER, R.N., Prosecution Document 5503.

The Prosecution enters this document 5503 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

The Commandant of the camp, Captain DIEUDONNE, R.N.I.A., has given a synopsis of the manhandling and ill-treatment by the Japanese in his report, Prosecution Document 5544: P.O.W. had to climb and stay in a tree full of red ants; various ways of torture were applied; severe beatings, until unconsciousness, resulting in bruised and cracked ribs and also in the necessity of skin-grafting; the Japanese Camp commandant took part in beatings; strangling; watertest; confinement in cells under utterly bad conditions; sick people forced to labour.

The Prosecution enters this document 5504 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- b. At Teragan, Halmaheira, Molucca's, a camp of British Indian P.O.W. was established, on which the Indian Medical Officer Captain S.E. PAUL reports in his affidavit, Prosecution Document 5538: In February 1945 the Indian P.O.W. were told that they formed a part of the Imperial Japanese Army, on orders of the High Command, Notwithstanding their protests they were forced to do fatigues and military training, under severe discipline involving corporal ill-treatment. Beatings unto unconsciousness, and even death; the Doctor was prevented from appropriate treatment of seriously ill patients although this was possible. Food was very bad, most P.O.W. contracted beri-beri. The sick had to parade and consequently many collapsed; still they were compelled to work.

The Prosecution enters this document 5538 as an exhibit.

- c. At Pomela, near Kendari, in October 1943 a seriously wounded Australian flying officer was left to die although appropriate medical treatment was available; he was not given the promised anaesthetic because when interrogated he refused to give further information than he needed to give according to international law. This is related by Lt. Commander P.E. CARR, R.A.N., Prosecution Document 5517.

The Prosecution enters this document 5517 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

3. Executions.

- a. At P.O.W. camp, Macassar, in September 1942 three Dutch P.O.W. (PELETIER c.s.) who had escaped but had been recaptured, were beheaded without trial. Another group of three Dutch P.O.W. (Lt. HEES c.s.)
/were

The Commandant of the camp, Captain DIEUDONNE, R.N.I.A., has given a synopsis of the manhandling and ill-treatment by the Japanese in his report, Prosecution Document 5504: P.O.W. had to climb and stay in a tree full of red ants; various ways of torture were applied; severe beatings, until unconsciousness, resulting in bruised and cracked ribs and also in the necessity of skin-grafting; the Japanese Camp commandant took part in beatings; strangling; watertest; confinement in cells under utterly bad conditions; sick people forced to labour.

The Prosecution enters this document 5504 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- b. At Terafan, Halmahera, Molucca's, a camp of British Indian P.O.W. was established, on which the Indian Medical Officer Captain S.N. PAUL reports in his affidavit, Prosecution Document 5538: In February 1945 the Indian P.O.W. were told that they formed a part of the Imperial Japanese Army, on orders of the High Command, Notwithstanding their protests they were forced to do fatigues and military training, under severe discipline involving corporal ill-treatment. Beatings unto unconsciousness, and even death; the Doctor was prevented from appropriate treatment of seriously ill patients although this was possible. Food was very bad, most P.O.W. contracted beri-beri. The sick had to parade and consequently many collapsed; still they were compelled to work.

The Prosecution enters this document 5538 as an exhibit.

- c. At Pomela, near Kendari, in October 1943 a seriously wounded Australian flying officer was left to die although appropriate medical treatment was available; he was not given the promised anaesthetic because when interrogated he refused to give further information than he needed to give according to international law. This is related by Lt. Commander P.E. CARR, R.A.N., Prosecution Document 5517.

The Prosecution enters this document 5517 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

3. Executions.

- a. At P.O.W. camp, Macassar, in September 1942 three Dutch P.O.W. (PELETIER c.s.) who had escaped but had been recaptured, were beheaded without trial. Another group of three Dutch P.O.W. (Lt. HEES c.s.)
/were

were beheaded about the same time after severe ill-treatment which lasted a week, this is contained in the report of Capt. DIEUDONNE, already introduced exhibit _____.

- b. At P.O.W. camp Menado, in March 1942 five Dutch N.C.Os. who had participated in guerilla activities but had surrendered eventually, were executed (group COSIJN). This is mentioned in the statement by Lt. R.J. HENSEL, R.N.I.A.; Prosecution Document 5514.

The Prosecution enters this document 5514 as an exhibit.

The same is related in the affidavit (page 3) of Major W.C. VAN DEN BERG, R.N.I.A., Prosecution Document 5563. This major also mentions the beheading of two Dutch N.C.O. who had defended an aerodrome (WIELINGA and ROBBEMOND) which execution was preceded by serious ill-treatment.

The Prosecution enters this document 5563 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- c. At Teragan, various executions, without trial, of Indian P.O.W. occurred:

In March 1945 MOHAMAD DIN was beheaded as a punishment for the alleged theft of a tin of fish.

In April 1945 four P.O.W. (CHINADURY c.s.) were beheaded after severe ill-treatment.

In July 1945 two P.O.W. (MOHAMAD AFSAR c.s.) were beheaded.

In July or August 1945 two P.O.W. escapees were beheaded.

In August 1945 the P.C.W, MOHAMAD RAMZAN was beheaded.

This is reported by Medical Officer PAUL, whose affidavit has already been introduced, exhibit _____.

II. CIVILIANS.

A. Internees.

The interned Dutch population suffered the same unnecessary hardships as in the other areas.

- a. At the Teling-internment camp for men, Menado, food was bad both in quality and quantity, and consisted in the beginning mainly of burnt rice. No medicines were supplied although dysentery broke out, resulting in the death of 10 out of about 150 internees. Discipline was maintained

/by

by terrorization: severe beatings and torture were applied, confinement in cells under miserable conditions.

On July 3d, 1942 two inmates of the camp (Dr. WOLFF and DE JCNG) were executed and at another place an American colonel, two Roman Catholic priests and a P.C. brother. Shortly afterwards another prisoner, DE IEEUW, was executed.

The same party of prisoners was moved to gaol for about six weeks: for 3 days no water or food was provided, afterwards only a little. No medical care was given although people suffered from dysentery.

After their return to the camp the internees got only one meal a day consisting of rice. Still no medicines were supplied. Sick people were sent to jail, where they had to die from starvation and illness. The only attention given by the Japanese doctor when he visited the camp was that he tried to buy watches.

On June 19th 1945 two internees were executed.

This story of misery is told by one of the victims, H. DALLINGA, Mayor of Manado, Prosecution Document 5544.

The Prosecution enters this document 5544 as an exhibit.

- b. At Pare-Pare, South West Celebes, in the men's-internment camp severe beatings occurred, even of a Roman Catholic priest, who was beaten almost to death. At Bodjoe, South West Celebes, the internees had to live in cowsheds and pigsties, under very bad sanitary conditions. Here as well as at Bolong camp, South West Celebes, food was insufficient. This appears from the interrogation report of the Controller (civil servant) H.J. KOERTS, Prosecution Document 5547.

The Prosecution enters this document 5547 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- c. At Aermedidi, the women's internment camp at Manado, beatings occurred regularly. Four girls between 13 and 18 years of age were severely beaten and then forced to stand night and day before the Japanese camp office for about a week at a stretch, without food. Food was insufficient, and caused beri-beri, resulting in the death of many. Medical supplies were inadequate; the Japanese comment was: "What use have you people for medicines? The sooner you die the better. I shall

/like

like it." Sanitation was bad. These conditions appear from the affidavit of the Dutch camp commandant Mrs. A.L. ROLFF, Prosecution Document 5555.

The Prosecution enters this document 5555 as an exhibit.

B. Non-Interned.

1. Tokeitai.

The same pattern of methods of interrogation, torture and ill-treatment, as applied by the Army Kempeitai in Java and Sumatra, was used by the Military Police of the Japanese Navy, the Tokeitai, whose methods have been mentioned already when dealing with Borneo.

- a. At Tokeitai Headquarters, Manado, the suspects were confined under appalling conditions: overcrowded cells; forced sitting up all day; no speaking allowed; insufficient food both in quality and in quantity; severe and repeated beating, in one case for 14 days all day long and sometimes also at night; hanging by the feet, head down; burning rape.

At the Military prison, Manado, the same conditions: sick men were not even given any food for two or three days, they died from dysentery and starvation.

At Makale, South West Celebes, food was very scanty; no medicines were provided.

At Tokeitai prison, Macassar, the prisoners were sometimes not allowed to go to the lavatory for three or four days and then only for two minutes; the use of soap was forbidden.

At Japanese Headquarters, Macassar, corporal ill-treatment was frequent.

All this appears from the affidavit of CH. H. WENSVEEN, Prosecution Document 5522.

The Prosecution enters this document 5522 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

- b. Conditions at Tomohon jail, near Manado, are described by Major VAN DEN BERG, whose affidavit has been introduced already, exhibit _____, showing a regime of terror; the lack of food led to disgusting scenes.
- c. At Manado, in February and March 1942, 18 persons, most natives, were located in a so-called death-cell. They were severely ill-treated, bound together back to back and placed in the tropical sunshine every

/day;

day; when they collapsed from exhaustion they were put on their legs by means of kicking and thrashing; for 6 days these men got no food. They were ordered to dig pits and were then executed.

This is told in the statement of Lt. HELSEL, already introduced, exhibit _____.

2. Murder.

- a. At Lolobata, Halmahera, in March 1944 a Menadonese was beheaded without trial. This appears from the statement of DJON SAMPON, Prosecution Document 5523.

The Prosecution enters this document 5523 as an exhibit.

- b. At Foelie, Halmahera, in September 1943 the Japanese killed a Javanese and a Buginese without trial, as appears from the statement of HCSIA BIR ARDILLAH, Prosecution Document 5529.

The Prosecution enters this document 5529 as an exhibit.

- c. At Socgi, Morotai, in September 1944, four natives were put to death by beheading, without trial. One of them, MAIRUHU, however was not killed and has reported this crime in his statement, Prosecution Document 5530, with a photograph showing the scar in his neck.

The Prosecution enters this document 5530 for identification and the excerpts as an exhibit.

This completes the synopsis of the Japanese crimes committed in the Celebes and surrounding islands, and concludes the survey regarding the Netherlands Indies.

Doc 5684

檢察書第五六八四號

B級及C級犯行

蘭 領 印 度

セ ル ベ ス

證 據 概 略

國際檢察部和蘭國課

一九四六年十二月

和蘭印度王國 副檢察官

陸軍中佐 J. S. シンニングヘ・ダムステ

∖ Lt. COL. J. S. SINNINGHE DAMSTE, R.N.I.A ∖

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5684

2.

書類第五六八四號

セレベス及周邊諸島

證據概略

日本海軍ニヨル占領

工俘 虜

一 殺 害

致次ノ殺害が行ハレタ。俘虜ハ裁判ヲ行ハレズ
 且時ニハ告訴サヘモサレズ殺害サレタ。飛行士
 ノ場合ニ於テハニソウデアツタ。之等ノ庭刑ハ
 陸海軍ノ最高級者ニ依テ命令サレタモノデアル
 (A) 一九四二年三月中、セレベス南西部、ララ、
 / ララ / ニ於テ八名ノ陸軍俘虜ガ銃剣ヲ刺
 殺サレシコトハ檢察書類第五五一八號、蘭印
 軍軍醫官 ミムゲレン / ミムゲレン / ニヨリ其訊
 問報告書ニ記載サレテオル。

當檢察官ハ本書類第五五一八號ヲ檢證トシ其拔萃ヲ
 證據トシテ提出ス。

(B) 一九四四年九月中、セレベス北東部、メナド
 ニ近キトモホン / ホモホ / ニ於テ捕虜トナ
 リシ二名ノ米國飛行士ガ コサムツ / コサムツ
 / 陸軍中佐ノ命令ニヨリテ死刑ニ處セラレ
 タ事ハ檢察書類第五五二〇號、T. オヅムラ

3.

Doc 5684

／P. OGDEN / 陸軍少佐ノ供述書中ニ示サレ
ル。

本檢察官ハ此書類第五二〇號ヲ檢證トシ其ノ拔萃
ヲ誓證トシテ提出スル。

(C) 一九四四年十月中、セレベス南西部トトリ
／POHLEPOH / ニ於テ捕虜トナリシ八名ノ米

國飛行士ガ死刑ニ處セラレタ。此事ハ檢察書
類第五三五號、Y. HAYASHI / ノ

供述書中ニ陳述サレテアル。

本檢察官ハ此書類第五三五號ヲ檢證トシ其拔萃ヲ

誓證トシテ提出スル。

(D) 一九四四年十一月中、セレベス南東部ケンダ
リ／KEDDARI / ニ於テ捕虜トナリタル九名ノ

米國飛行士ガアトミナル。オースキ／AMIRAL

OGDEN / ノ命令ニヨリテ死刑ニ處セラレタ

コトハ檢察書類第五三二號キヤブテシ。G

谷口ノ供述書ニ示サレテアル。

本檢察官ハ此檢察書類第五三二號ヲ檢證トシ其拔

萃ヲ誓證トシテ提出スル。

(E) 一九四五年七月中、セレベス南東部シソカン

／SHIRKANO / ニ於テ捕虜トナリタル五名ノ米

國飛行士ガ死刑ニサレタ。右ハテシマ陸軍中

將ノ命令カ或ハ斯ル命令ダカラ收容所長M.

中村陸軍大佐ノ命令デアツタカトモ推測サレ

Doc 5684

ル。 檢察書類第五五二一號ハ彼ノ供述書ニア
ル。

本檢察官ハ此書類第五五二一號ヲ檢證トシ其拔萃ヲ
書證トシテ提出スル。

(F) 一九四五年三月中、セレベス北方タラウド、
/ HALAGD / 島ノベオ / BEO / ニ於テ四名ノ聯
合國飛行士ガ死刑ニ處セラレタ。桂ノ音譯ノ
將軍ノ命令ニ依レルモノデ所謂告訴及裁判ナ
シノ死刑デアツタ。又タラウドノレイニス、
/ RAHHS / ニ於テハ一九四五年六月中モウ一
人別ノ聯合國飛行士ガ右ト同ジ命令ニヨリテ
處刑サレタ。以上ハ檢察書類第五五六四號、
日本陸軍コバ大佐ノ陳述書ニ表示サレテオル

本檢察官ハ此書類第五五六四號ヲ檢證トシ證據トシ
テ其拔萃ヲ提出スル。

(G) セレベス南西部マカツサル / MACASSAR / 附近
ノ、マロス / MAROS / ニ於テ一九四五年七月
軍少佐ノ命令ニヨリテ處刑セラレタル事、檢
察書類第五五三三號、Y. 中村海軍大尉ノ供
述書ニ表示セラレ。

本檢察官ハ此書類第五五三三號ヲ檢證トシ證據トシ
テ其拔萃ヲ提出スル。

4.

Doc 5684

二 收容所

此方面ニ於ケル俘虜收容所ノ状態ハ、概不他ノ
 方面ト同様、周知セラレタル日本流デアツタ。
 (A) 南西セレベス、マカツサル / MACASSAR / ニ於
 ル俘虜收容所ニ於テ、住居ノ不良、家具、寝
 具、被服ノ不給、過稠稠密ノ群居、疲勞過度
 ノ勞役、軍事目的ノ勞働、老人及不適者ノ就
 働強制、分量品質共ニ不適ナル食物、衛生設
 備ノ不良、醫藥品ノ供給ハ赤痢及マラリヤノ
 發生ニモ拘ラズ不足ナリシ事、營養不良ニ基
 ク不健康ノ結果高度ノ死亡率ヲ招來セル事。
 赤十字寄贈品ガ配給セラレザリシ事、休養娛
 樂ヲ與ヘズ、歌ヲ詠フ事サヘ許サ、リシ事。
 郵便ノ停止、頻々ト過酷ナル禁罰ヲ用ユル恐
 怖制度ニヨル規律ノ維持等々。以上ハ檢察書
 類第 五五〇三號、美國海軍少佐、G. T. ク
 ーバー、G. H. COOPER / ニヨル供進書ニ表示
 セラル。

本檢察官ハ此書類第 五五〇三號ヲ檢閲トシ、證
 據トシテ共拔萃ヲ提出スル。

收容所司令、D. 印草デユドシネ / DIEUDONNE /
 陸軍大尉ガ共報告、檢察書類第 五五〇四號ニ
 於テ日本人ニヨル、暴行虐待ノ根柢ヲ記セル

Doc 5684

6.

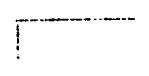
處ニヨレバ、俘虜ヲシテ赤巖ガ一杯居ル所ノ
 樹ニ登リテ其上ニ居ラシメラレシ事。各種ノ
 拷問ガ行ハレタル事。氣絶スルマデモ激シキ
 殴打、其結果、肋骨ノ挫折ヲ來シ或ハ禰皮施
 術ヲ必要トスルニ至レルモノアリシ事。日本
 人收容所長ガ殴打ニ加シタル事。絞首。水
 漿メ。毒シキ悪狀。獄ニ於ル監房ヘノ監禁。病
 人ノ強制労働等。

本 横 察 官 ハ 此 警 報 第 五 五 〇 四 號 ヲ 檢 閲 ト シ、 證
 據 ト シ テ 其 被 擧 ヲ 提 出 ス ル。

(B) モ ル ツ カ 群 島 / MOLOCCAS / ハ ル マ ヘ ラ ノ テ ラ
 ガ ン / SELANGOR / ニ 於 テ 英 領 印 度 俘 虜 收 容 所 ガ
 設 立 サ レ タリ 右 ニ 關 シ 印 度 軍 醫 大 尉 S. H.
 ボ ワ ル / S. H. BOWLER / ガ、 横 察 警 報 第 五 五 三 八
 號 ノ 供 述 書 ニ 於 テ 報 ズ ル 所 ニ ヨ レ バ、 一 九 四
 五 年 二 月 中、 印 度 人 俘 虜 ハ、 暹 羅 高 司 令 部 ノ 命
 ニ ヨ リ テ、 日 本 帝 國 軍 ノ 一 部 ヲ 形 成 ス ル 事 ト
 ナ リ シ 旨 報 告 サ レ タリ 彼 等 ノ 抗 議 ニ モ 拘 ハ ラ
 ズ、 苦 役 ヤ 軍 醫 教 練 ガ 強 制 セ ラ レ、 肉 體 的 磨
 待 ヲ 含 ム 所 ノ 烈 シ キ 暴 行 ノ 下 ニ 置 カ レ タリ 殴
 打 ハ 氣 絶 ニ 及 ビ 或 ハ 死 ニ 至 ル モ ノ モ ア ヲ ヲ
 官 ガ 重 症 患 者 ニ 向 ヲ テ、 適 當 ノ 處 置 ヲ 加 ヘ
 ント ス ル ニ 對 シ、 其 可 能 ナ ル ニ 拘 ハ ラ ズ、 妨

Doc 5684

評サレタ。食評ハ甚ダ不良デアツテ停シハ統
 不評氣ニ程ツテ居ツタ。息者モ練兵ヲ命ゼラ
 シ其爲多クノモノハ傾ル、ニ至ツタ。然ルニ
 尙從尋ハ待制ヲ強制サレタ。
 本檢察官ハ此等類第五三八號ヲ證據トシテ提出
 スル。



Doc 5684

5、死刑

(A) マカツサルノ捕虜収容所デ一九四二年九月ニ逃亡シテ又捕ヘラレタ三人ノオランダ人捕虜(ペレナイア其ノ他)ガ裁判モナツニ首ヲ切ラレタ、モウ一組ノ三人ノオランダ人捕虜(ヒヤ中尉等)ハ同ジコロニ一週間モヒドク處待サレタアゲクニ首ヲ切ラレタ。

コレハステニ提出サレタデイユドンネル大尉ノ報告中ニアリ証據書類ニ見エキイル。

(B) メナドノ捕虜収容所デ一九四二年三月ゲリラ隊ニ参加シタガ終ヒニ降参シタ五人ノオランダ下士官ガ死刑ニサレタ(コスイン陰)コトハ蘭領王陸軍中尉R. J. ヘンセルニヨル叙述ノ中ニ見エキイル。偵察書類五五一四號。

偵察部ハコノ書類五五一四ヲ証據書類トシテ提出スル。

同ジコトガ荷印王陸軍中佐W. O. バンデンベルグノ口供書(三頁)ニ述べラレテマル。偵察書類五五六三號。コノ中佐ハ又飛行場ヲ守ツタ二人ノオランダ下士官(ウイリンガ及ロベモンド)ガヒドイ處待ヲサレニ死刑ニサレタコトモイツテキル。

Doc 5684

檢察部ハコノ書類五五三六三號ヲ檢証トシテ提出
シテ其ヲ證據書類トシテ提出スル。

(9) アラガンニ於テハ裁判モセズニインドノ捕
房ヲ何度モ死刑ニシタ。

一九四五年三月ニモハマツドデインハ魚ノ信
詰ヲ盗ンダト申立テラレテ首ヲ切ラレタ。

一九四五年四月ニ四人ノ捕房(チナドリ一巻)
ガヒドク虐待サレタノテニ首ヲ切ラレタ。

一九四五年七月二人ノ捕房(モハマツド・ア
フスカ等)ガ首ヲ切ラレタ。

一九四五年七月カ八月ニ逃亡シタ二人ノ捕房
ガ首ヲ切ラレタ。

一九四五年八月捕房モハマツド・ランザンガ
首ヲ切ラレタ。

コノコトハ軍醫ホールニヨツテ報告サレテ井
ル、彼ノ口供書ハステニ提出サレテモル證據
書類デアル。

II 一般民間人

A 被收容者

收容サレタオランダ人民ハ他ノ地域ニ於テモ
同ジ様テ不必要ヲ書勞ラシタ。

(A) メオデノテリング男子收容所テハ量質共
ニ食物甚ク、給メハ主トシテイリ米デア

Doc 5684

ツタ。赤痢が發生シタノニ薬品ハ供給サレズ、
百五十人ノ被收容者中十人ノ死亡者ガ出タ。
紀律ヲヤブルトテロ固シキビシイ殴打ヤ虐待
ガ加ヘラレ、監房ノ中ニ悲惨ナ状態ノモトニ
監察サレタリシタ。
一九四二年七月三日ソノ收容所ニ收容サレテ
キタ二人（ウオルフ博士トテシヨング）ガ死
刑ニサレ、他ノ場所デアメリカ陸軍大佐ト二
人ノ司祭ト一人ノ僧ガ死刑ニサレタ。
ソレカラ間モオクモウ一人ノ捕虜デレエウガ
死刑ニサレタ。ソノ捕虜ノ一隊ハ牢獄ヘ凡ソ
六週間移サレタ、三日間食物モ水モ與ヘラレ
ズソノ後モ非常ニ少シシカ買ヘナカツタ、人
々ハ赤痢ニ悩ムダガ治療ハスコシモホドコサ
レナカツタ。
收容所ニカヘツテカラ被收容者達ハ一日ニ只
一同ノ米ノ食事ヲ得タバカリデアツタ、ソシ
テオホ葉ハ少シモアタヘラレナカツタ。
病人ハ牢獄ヘ送ラレ、其處デ彼ラハ飢エト病
ノタメニ死ナホバナラナカツタ。日本ノ囚者
ガ收容所ヲ訪レタトキニ示シタ只一ツノ囚心
トイフノハ彼ガ時計ヲ買取ラウトシタコトダ
ケデアル。

Doc 5684

一九四五年七月十九日二人ノ被收容者ガ死
別ニサレタ

コノ惨メナ話ハソノ犠牲者ノ一人デアツタ
メホド市長日・タリソガノ話ツタモノデア
ル。以察書類五五四四號。

檢察部ハコノ書類五五四四號ヲ證據書トシテ
提出スル。

(B) 南島セレベスノバレバレノ男子收容所デ
ハヒドイ殴打ガ行ハレ當該ノ司祭ニ對シテ
サヘ殆ンド死ニ至ラシメル程ニサレタ。

南島セレベスノボツジヨデハ被收容者ハ午
小震ヤ厥小屋ノ中デ非常ニ衛生的ニ悪イ條
件ノモトニ住マネバナラオカツタ。コ、デ
モボロング收容所デモ食物ハ不充分デアツ
タ。コノコトハ司政官(又官)日・J・コ
ルフノ賃問報告ニアリ、以察書類五五四七
號ニ出テイル。

檢察部ハコノ書類五五四七^号ヲ檢証ノ爲ニ數筆ヲ
證據書トシテ提出スル。

(C) メホドニ於ケルエアメデイデイ女子收容
所デハ以テハ定期的ニ行ハレタ、十三オカ
ラ十八オマデノ間ノ四人ノ少女ハ以テク叩
カレタ後ニ收容所日本人事務所ノ前デ一週

Doc 5684

間夜モ晝モ瀧ケテ食ベ物モナシニ立タセラ
 レタ。食物ハ充分デオクソノタメニ門氣ガ
 廻リ多クノ人が死ンダ。藥ノ供給ハ不充分
 デアツタ。日本人ハ「オ前タチハ藥ヲノシ
 デ何カノ役ニタツカ、死ヌノガ早ケレバ早
 イホドヨイ我々ニハソノ方ガイ、トイツ
 タ。衛生設備ハ悪カツタ、コレラノ状態ハ
 オランダ人收容所長 A. L. ロルフ 夫人ノ
 口供、檢察書類五五五五號ニ見エテキル。
 檢察員ハ此ノ書類五五五五號ヲ證據書類トシテ
 提出ス。

Doc 5684

13.

B 抑留サレザル者

一、トケイノ音譯ノ隊

ジヤダア及スマトラノ陸軍憲兵隊ト同シ遣リ
ロノ尋常ノ如ク陸待方日本海軍憲兵隊トケ
イノ音譯ノ隊ニ依ツテナサレマシタ、ソノ遣
リ口ハ然ニ、ボルネオ地區ニ麻守遣ベタ所ト
同ニテアリマス。

(A) メナドノトケイノ音譯ノ隊司令部ニ於テ容疑
者ハ驚クベキ悪狀況下ニ幽閉サレマシタ。
過剩收容ノ監房ニ詰メ込マレ、一日中立タサ
レ、一言ノ會話ヲモ禁止サレ、食物ハ質量共
ニ不充分テ、激烈且ツ絶エ間ナク殴打ヲ加ヘ
哀ル時ノ如キ十四日間ニワタリ終日、時ニハ
夜間ニ於テサヘモ殴打ヲ加ヘタ事ガアリ、逆
サ吊リ、火焙リ、強鼓等モナサレマシタ。
メナドノ陸軍監獄ニ於テモ同様ノ狀況デアリ
マシタ病人ハ二三日ノ間食物スラ與ヘラレズ
赤痢ト飢餓ノ故ニ死亡致シマシタ。
セレベス南西部ノマカレテハ食物ハ極度ノ少
量ヲ藥品ノ給與ハ全然アリマセンデシタ。

Doc 5684

マカツサルノトケイノ音譯ノ際刑務所デハ囚
 人ハ時ニハ三・四日ニワタリ使所使用ヲ禁ゼ
 ラレタ後、僅カニ分前ノ使用ガ許サレルノデ
 アリマシタ、石鹼食用ハ禁止サレテ居リマシ
 タ。

マカツサルノ日本軍司令部デハ肉体的虐待ハ
 屢々デシタ。

以上ハ〇B・B・ウエンスザエーシノ音譯ノ
 ノロ供醫檢察醫五五二二號ニ依リ明白デ
 アリマス。

檢察團ハ醫醫五五二二號ヲ檢證ノ爲ニ又拔萃
 ラ醫證トシテ提出致シマス。

(B)メナド近傍ノトモボシ刑務所ニ於ケル狀況ハ
 ザアソテソノベルグノ音譯ノ少佐ニ依リ陳述サ
 レ、ソノ口供醫ハ醫證トシテ既ニ紹介
 サレ、ソノ中ニテロ政糧ニ關テ述ベ、食物缺
 乏ガ嫌惡スベキ光景ヲ惹起シタ事ヲ述ベテ居
 リマス。

(C)一九四二年二月及三月ニ、メナドテ大部分ハ
 土民カラ成ル十八人ノ人々ガイハユル死ノ醫
 房ニ收容サレマシタ。彼等ニハ猛烈ト虐待ヲ

Doc 5684

受ケ、毎日晝中台セニ縛ラレテ熱帯ノ太陽ノ下ニ晒サレマシタ。彼等ガ体力弱リ果テテ倒レルト、蹴ル中、彼ル等シテ起立サセルノデアリマシタ。六日同、一口ノ食物モ與ヘラレマセンテシタ。毎ハ穴ヲ掘レト命ゼラレ。然ル後、庭刑サレマシタ。コノ事件ハ既ニ誓證トシテ紹介サレタヘンセルノ音譯ノ中尉ノ陳述書中ニ述ベラレテ居リマス。

二、殺 戮

(A) 一九四四年三月ニハルマヘラノロロバタニ於テ一メナド人ガ裁判ヲ受ケル事無ク庭刑サレマシタ。コレハジヨンサンホクノ音譯ノ口供書、檢察團監卷五五二三號ニヨリ明白デアリマス。

檢察團ハ營監卷五五二三號ヲ誓證トシテ提出致シマス。

(B) 一九四三年九月ニハルマヘラノフリーイニ於テ日本軍ハ裁判ヲ行ハズニ一ジャザア人及一ブキ人ヲ殺戮シタ。コノ事ハフシンビニアブダラノ音譯ノ陳述書、檢察團監卷五五二九號ニ依リ明カナル事デアリマス。

15.

Doc 5684

受ケ、毎日晝中合せニ縛ラレテ熱帯ノ太陽ノ下ニ露サレマシタ、彼等ガ体力弱リ畏テ下傾レルト、露ル、飯ル等シテ起立サセルノデアリマシタ。六日同、一口ノ食物モ與ヘラレマセンテシタ、彼等ハ穴ヲ掘レト命ゼラレ、然ル後庭刑サレマシタ。コノ事件ハ既ニ管證トシテ紹介サレタヘンセルノ音譯ノ中尉ノ陳述管中ニ述ベラレテ居リマス。

二、殺 戮

(A) 一九四四年三月ニハルマヘラノロロバタニ於テ一メナド人ガ裁判ヲ受ケル事無ク庭刑サレマシタ。コレハジヨンサンホクノ音譯ノ口供管、檢察團管卷五五二三號ニヨリ明白デアリマス。

檢察團ハ管卷五五二三號ヲ管證トシテ提出致シマス。

(B) 一九四三年九月ニハルマヘラノフリーイニ於テ日本軍ハ裁判ヲ行ハズニ一ジャヴァ人及一ブキ人ヲ殺戮シタ。コノ事ハフシンビンアブダラノ音譯ノ陳述管檢察團管卷五五二九號ニ依リ明カナル事デアリマス。

16.

Doc 5684-

檢察廳ハ管轄類三五二九號ヲ證據トシテ提出致
シマス。

(5) 一九四四年九月ニモロタインソエキノ音譯

ノニ於テ犯人ノ土民ガ裁判ヲ受ケル事ナク
斬首刑ヲ受ケマシタ。併シ彼等ノ一人マイン

ルルノ音譯ノハ死亡ヲ免ビ、右ノ頸部ノ傷

痕ノ寫眞ヲ添ヘタル陳述書、檢察廳事務五

五三〇號中ニ此ノ犯罪ヲ報告シテ居リマス。

檢察廳ハ管轄類三五三〇號ヲ證據ノ知ニ又拔萃

ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

之ヲ以テ、セレベヌ島及ソノ周囲ノ島嶼ニ

於テ犯罪サレタル日本軍ノ犯罪概略ヲ完結シ

山領印度諸島ニ關スル調査ヲ終結致シマス。

Q. #1191

D E N T I F I C A T E

The Undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.A.I., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

Report on Interrogation dated November 7, 1945, Dr. MINGLIEN, concerning Jap. invasion in CELEBES and massacre of Dutch privates, C.M. 115/A.C.

which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS

Signature:

/s/ CH. JONGENEEL

SEL

Batavia, June 7th, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. DE WERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Werd

REPORT ON INTERROGATION DATED 7th NOVEMBER 1945 DR. MINGELEN

Today, the 7th November 1945, appeared before me, the Ensign Meindersma Robert, in charge of the investigation regarding data concerning war-criminals and collaborators in NMI:

Dr. MINGELEN, Mil. Surgeon I, present residence Columbia Camp, Macol, who, on interrogation, stated as follows:

When the Japanese invaded the Celebes, I was 1st Bat. doctor at Makassar. As our forces were with inferior numbers, we retreated into the interior under Maj. Jaspers, across the Tallo-bridge, (an important communication with the hinterland). The bridge was to be blown up to check the Japanese progress. Why this did not happen, is unknown to me. We moved to the Rjumba-positions in the mountains (see enclosed map) where we remained till the end of February.

From the North we were attacked by the Japanese, who had marched along the coast in order to make an enveloping move. After two days struggle we marched further into the mountains and joined Col. Voorn's group, who had left Makassar at an earlier date.

At Tondukura part of our men separated from the main force and tried to reach the coast to surrender. The other force was to try and reach the Enrekang-position in the Northern mountain-ridge (Quarles-gebergte), where Lt. col. Gortmans had his hide-out. He later on was beheaded because a plan to attack the Japanese was detected. Halfway near Ralla the group was checked by the enemy and surrendered after a half day's fight.

The group consisted of 8 officers and some privates, amongst whom were 8 Europeans. The officers were put on two trucks and driven away. A short time after the Europeans (the privates) were bayoneted. Amongst them were Dr. JANSSEN (B.B.), BOERENBEKER, v.d. ZANDE.

The person, who guided the Japanese to the abode of the force, is an Indonesian, named BAKRI. This man BAKRI lives or lived at Boelockoemba, the capital of the sub-division of the same name. The officers were sent to Baroe for trial, after that to Makassar, where they were imprisoned in the infantry-barracks.

For their further adventures see report of Mr. Koorts OM 147/CC.

True account prepared by me,
8th November 1945

Signed R. Meindersma.

N.B. Bakri was present at the slaughter.

NAMES OF VICTIMS OF RALLA EXECUTIONS

GIEL P van	Mil Sgt. No. 201123
BLUM	" "
BOERENBEKER	Ldst Pte
BOOGARD	Sgt.
JANSSEN Dr. A	Pte
KUYER	Sgt
LEELIN B.	Sgt
OOSTERLOO	Sub Lt.
PIETERS	Cpl
v/d SANDEN D.J.	Pte
SJIT K.M.	I.O.
VELTHUIS	Sgt. Mij
van MEER A.	Sgt. Mij

警類第五五八號

。M 一 一 五 / 〇 . 〇

一九四五年十一月七日附「ミンダレン」博士訪問報告書

Doc 5518

本日即チ一九四五年十一月七日領東印度ニ於ケル戦争犯暴者及ビ共同者ニ歸スル資料ニ就イテノ詞查拏管者、本職「ロバート・メインテールスマ」海軍少尉ノ面前ニ、

現住所「ワコル・コロムビヤキヤンプ」陸軍一等軍曹「ミンダレン」博士カ出頭シ訪問ノ結果左ノ通り陳述シタ。

日本人カ「セレベス」島ヲ侵略シタ當時、私「マカツサル」ニ於ケル第一大隊ノ軍曹デアツタ。吾々ノ軍隊ハ少尉デアツタノヲ、「ジャムパース」少佐ノ下ニ「テロ」稱ハ具地トノ重要ナ交通路ニ渡ツテ具地ニ退却シタ。

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

包圍攻撃ヲスル爲ニ海岸ニ沿ツテ行軍シテ來タ日本人ニヨツテ吾々ハ北部カラ襲撃サレタ。二日間ノ争闘ノ後吾々ハ眞ニ山中ヘ行進シ、吾々ヨリモ早く「マカツサル」ヲ退去シテキム「ダウソ」大佐ノ辭

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5518

ニ加ツタ。

××××××××××××××××××××××××××××××

一 ララレハ半バ近ヅイタトコロヲ其ノ群ハ敵ニ驅
ヒ止メラレ、半日争闘シタ後降伏シタ。

其ノ群ハ將校八人ト數人ノ兵士カラナリ中八人ハ

歐洲人ニアツタ。將校達ハ二隊ノ一トラツクニ聚

セラレテ逃レテ行カレタ。間モナク歐洲人(兵士)

ハ銃剣ヲ突キ殺サレタ。其ノ中ニハ「ヤンセン」博

士(B. B. ト)「ホイスベ」カール・V. a. 「サ

ンデ」カキタ。

××××××××××××××××××××××××××××××

一九四五年十一月八日

右ハ本誌ニヨツテ作成サレタル譯文ナリ記

録ナリ

署名

R. M. イントン ナール スム

××××××××××××××××××××××××××××××

Doc 5518 (cc:t)

警類第五五一八號

證 明 書

名和蘭軍情報部戰爭犯罪課長 R . M . I . A .
中尉「チャールズ・ヨンゲンニール」ハ、先ヅ正當ニ
宣誓ヲナシタル上別紙添附ノ報告カ、
「第〇四一一五ノ〇・〇號日本ノ「セレベス」島使
哈及ビ和蘭兵虐殺ニ關スル一九四五年十一月七日附
「ミンケレン」博士訪問報告」
ト題セル原文ノ全文ニシテ眞實、完全及ビ正確ナル
寫テアルコト、並ビニ該書類カ和蘭軍情報部ノ公式
記録ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。

署 名

チャールズ・ヨンゲンニール / 署名

和 蘭 軍
情報部ノ印

於バタヴィヤ 一九四六年六月七日

右ハ本職副領東印度法務廳附高等官 R . M . I . A .
中尉「K . A . ダ . ウイアード」ノ面前ニ於テ署名
宣誓セリ。

/ 署名 / K . A . ダ . ウイアード

Doc 5518 (cont)

警類第五一八號

註 明 書

名和島軍情報部戰爭犯罪部長 R. H. I. A.
 中尉「チャイルス・ヨンゲン」ハ、先ヅ正當ニ
 宣誓ヲナシタル上別紙添附ノ報告カ、
 一第。四一五ノ。〇。〇號日本ノ「セレス」島使
 陪及ビ和島兵艦ニ關スル一九四五年十一月七日附
 「シンケレシ」博士談話報告「
 ト題セル原文ノ全文ニシテ眞實、完全及ビ正確ナル
 寫テアルコト、並びニ該筆寫カ和島軍情報部ノ公式
 記録ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。

署 名

チャイルス・ヨンゲン / 署名

和島軍
情報部ノ印

於バタヴィヤ 一九四六年六月七日

右ハ本職副領事印度法務廳附高等官 R. H. I. A.
 中尉「K. A. ダ・ウイア」ノ面前ニ於テ署名
 宣誓セリ。

署名 / K. A. ダ・ウイア

C. # 1198

RESTRICTED

(TOSHIYUKI ODAMURA, after having been duly sworn, testified at the Morotai Prisoners of War Camp, Morotai, Moluccas Group, Netherlands Indies, on 25 March 1946, as follows:

Q What is your full name, age, nationality, marital status and home address?

A Toshiyuki ODAMURA, 37 years old, Japanese, married, Soga-Ken, Oni-Gun, Hinomiyama Huro, Onza, Furui #8.

Q What was your rank in the Japanese Army?
A Major.

Q When did you enter the Japanese Army?
A When I was 22 years old.

Q What is your military background?
A I was in military school till then and was commissioned a 2nd Lieutenant in 1931. In March 1934 I was promoted to 1st Lieutenant; August 1937 promoted to Captain; August 1941 I was promoted to Major. I entered the Kepei Tai in 1937 when I was a captain. I served in the Kepei Tai as follows: 1 year in Tokyo; 1 year in Kobe; 1 year in Korea; 3 years in North China; 2 months in Manchuria; then I came to the Celebes.

Q Can you speak English?
A Yes, a little.

Q Where did you learn to read, write, and speak English?
A At military school.

Q Do you need an interpreter to understand my questions and to make answers to them?
A No, not if you talk slowly and use short words.

Q We will do as you ask. If you need the interpreter please ask for him and he will interpret for you. Do you understand that?
A Yes; I will try my best but I may need an interpreter.

Q Then we will use the interpreter throughout and he will give all questions and answers to that there will be no error. Is that satisfactory?
A Yes, sir.

Q When did you come to the Celebes?
A About April 20, 1944.

Cy. # 1198

RESTRICTED

[TOSHIYUKI ODAKURA, after having been duly sworn, testified at the Horotai Prisoners of War Camp, Horotai, Moluccas Group, Netherlands Indies, on 25 March 1946, as follows:

Q What is your full name, age, nationality, marital status and home address?

A Toshiyuki ODAKURA, 37 years old, Japanese, married, Soga-Ken, Oni-Gun, Hinomiyama Hura, Oaza, Furui #8.

Q What was your rank in the Japanese Army?
A Major.

Q When did you enter the Japanese Army?
A When I was 22 years old.

Q What is your military background?
A I was in military school till then and was commissioned a 2nd Lieutenant in 1931. In March 1934 I was promoted to 1st Lieutenant; August 1937 promoted to Captain; August 1941 I was promoted to Major. I entered the Kempo Tai in 1937 when I was a captain. I served in the Kempo Tai as follows: 1 year in Tokyo; 1 year in Kobe; 1 year in Korea; 3 years in North China; 2 months in Manchuria; then I came to the Celebes.

Q Can you speak English?
A Yes, a little.

Q Where did you learn to read, write, and speak English?
A At military school.

Q Do you need an interpreter to understand my questions and to make answers to them?
A No, not if you talk slowly and use short words.

Q We will do as you ask. If you need the interpreter please ask for him and he will interpret for you. Do you understand that?
A Yes; I will try my best but I may need an interpreter.

Q Then we will use the interpreter throughout and he will give all questions and answers to that there will be no error. Is that satisfactory?
A Yes, sir.

Q When did you come to the Celebes?
A About April 20, 1944.

CX # 1198

a. No. 5520

Page 1

RESTRICTED

[TOSHIYAKE ODAIURA, after having been duly sworn, testified at the Morotai Prisoners of War Camp, Morotai, Moluccas Group, Netherlands Indies, on 25 March 1946, as follows:

Q What is your full name, age, nationality, marital status and home address?

A Toshiyake ODAIURA, 37 years old, Japanese, married, Saigai-Kan, Oni-Gun, Minamiyama Hura, Oaza, Furui #8.

Q What was your rank in the Japanese Army?
A Major.

Q When did you enter the Japanese Army?
A When I was 22 years old.

Q What is your military background?
A I was in military school till then and was commissioned a 2nd Lieutenant in 1931. In March 1934 I was promoted to 1st Lieutenant; August 1937 promoted to Captain; August 1941 I was promoted to Major. I entered the Kepei Tai in 1937 when I was a captain. I served in the Kepei Tai as follows: 1 year in Tokyo; 1 year in Kobe; 1 year in Korea; 3 years in North China; 2 months in Manchuria; then I came to the Celebes.

Q Can you speak English?
A Yes, a little.

Q Where did you learn to read, write, and speak English?
A At military school.

Q Do you need an interpreter to understand my questions and to make answers to them?
A No, not if you talk slowly and use short words.

Q We will do as you ask. If you need the interpreter please ask for him and he will interpret for you. Do you understand that?
A Yes; I will try my best but I may need an interpreter.

Q Then we will use the interpreter throughout and he will give all questions and answers to that there will be no error. Is that satisfactory?
A Yes, sir.

Q When did you come to the Celebes?
A About April 20, 1944.

CX # 1198

RESTRICTED

[TOSHIYUKI ODAKURA, after having been duly sworn, testified at the Morotai Prisoners of War Camp, Morotai, Moluccas Group, Netherlands Indies, on 25 March 1946, as follows:

Q What is your full name, age, nationality, marital status and home address?

A Toshiyuki ODAKURA, 37 years old, Japanese, married, Saito-Ken, Oni-Gun, Minamiyama Hara, Oaza, Furui #8.

Q What was your rank in the Japanese Army?

A Major.

Q When did you enter the Japanese Army?

A When I was 22 years old.

Q What is your military background?

A I was in military school till then and was commissioned a 2nd Lieutenant in 1931. In March 1934 I was promoted to 1st Lieutenant; August 1937 promoted to Captain; August 1941 I was promoted to Major. I entered the Kempo Tai in 1937 when I was a captain. I served in the Kempo Tai as follows: 1 year in Tokyo; 1 year in Kobe; 1 year in Korea; 3 years in North China; 2 months in Manchuria; then I came to the Celebes.

Q Can you speak English?

A Yes, a little.

Q Where did you learn to read, write, and speak English?

A At military school.

Q Do you need an interpreter to understand my questions and to make answers to them?

A No, not if you talk slowly and use short words.

Q We will do as you ask. If you need the interpreter please ask for him and he will interpret for you. Do you understand that?

A Yes; I will try my best but I may need an interpreter.

Q Then we will use the interpreter throughout and he will give all questions and answers to that there will be no error. Is that satisfactory?

A Yes, sir.

Q When did you come to the Celebes?

A About April 20, 1944.

Q Of what unit were you a member when you first came to the Celebes?

A 8th Field Kempei Tai.

Q Where were its headquarters located?

A Washiro, Malakera. We reported there and from Malakera we were dispatched to other places.

Q What was your position in the Kempei Tai when you arrived at Manado?

A I was at that time Major and I was chief of the Kempei Tai.

Q What area did you personally command?

A Everywhere from north of Gorontalo excluding the Island of Manado.

Q As chief of the Manado Area Kempei Tai, were you in sole and complete and absolute charge of that entire area?

A Yes, but I was under the command of the 2nd Area Army headquarters.

Q What was the unit designation of the M.P. unit of which you were chief?

A The name of my unit was Manado Area Kempei Tai. Afterwards the name of my unit was Celebes Area Kempei Tai. The name only was changed, but the area remained the same.

Q Give us a complete organizational chart of your organization giving names and ranks of all members of your unit.

ANAMI (Gen.)
SECOND AREA ARMY

ENDO (Maj.-Gen.)
57th INDEPENDENT MIXED BRIGADE

ODAKURA (Maj.)
MANADO AREA KEMPEI TAI

JUDICIAL	TOKKO	GEN. AFFAIRS
W/O IZUMI OTO, Kunio	W/O MATSUOTO, Kunio	ICHIKAWA, Shigeo
	TSUTSUMI I, Okada	KOBAYASHI
	OKA	S. SAKURA
	SUZUKI	
	HITOMI	
	KINOSHITA	
	KAWASHIMA	

- Q: Of what unit were you a member when you first came to the Celebes?
- A: 8th Field Kenpei Tai.
- Q: Where were its headquarters located?
- A: Washiro, Walmakera. We reported there and from Walmakera we were dispatched to other places.
- Q: What was your position in the Kenpei Tai when you arrived at Manado?
- A: I was at that time Major and I was chief of the Kenpei Tai.
- Q: What area did you personally command?
- A: Everywhere from north of Gorontalo excluding the Island of Manado.
- Q: As chief of the Manado Area Kenpei Tai, were you in sole and complete and absolute charge of that entire area?
- A: Yes, but I was under the command of the 2nd Area Army headquarters.
- Q: What was the unit designation of the M.P. unit of which you were chief?
- A: The name of my unit was Manado Area Kenpei Tai. Afterwards the name of my unit was Celebes Area Kenpei Tai. The name only was changed, but the area remained the same.
- Q: Give us a complete organizational chart of your organization giving names and ranks of all members of your unit.

ANAMI (Gen.)
SECOND AREA ARMY

ENDO (Maj.-Gen.)
57th INDEPENDENT MIXED BRIGADE

ODHUKI (Maj.)
MANADO AREA KENPEI TAI

<p>JUDICIAL W/O IZUMI OTO, Kunie</p>	<p>TOKIO W/O IZUMI OTO, Kunie TSUTSUMI I, Okada OKI SUZUKI NITOMI KINOSHITA KAWASUMI</p>	<p>GEN. AFFAIRS ICHIKAWA, Shigeo KOBAYASHI SASAKURA</p>
--	--	---

Q During the time that you were chief of such Kenpei Tai how many Allied airmen were captured by your unit or were captured by other units and turned over to members of your unit?

A I remember six men being captured.

Q Tell me the date, the exact details and all other surrounding information concerning the capture and execution of the first of these Allied airmen.

A The first was about the 3rd or 4th of September 1944 when two airmen came down by parachute near the airfield of Langoan.

Q Were you at Langoan at that time?

A At that time I was at Tonkhen at the Second Area Army Headquarters and I was orally ordered by Staff Officer, Lt.-Col. KODAMATSU, to go to Langoan and bring back the two airmen.

Q Did you ever make a report to higher headquarters about MATSUMOTO?

A Yes, sir, I reported that MATSUMOTO is a very good worker and that if I am absent he can and does carry on the business of the Kenpei Tai in my place.

Q From when did you get initial information concerning the capture of these two airmen?

A When I received orders from Staff Officer KODAMATSU ordering me to proceed to Langoan to escort these prisoners to Tonkhen. About 15 minutes after I received this order, my telephone orderly informed me that Lt. SAITO who was commanding the Langoan Military Police unit had telephoned and informed me of the capture of the two airmen.

Q About how long after this telephone message did you leave for Langoan?

A About one hour.

Q Who accompanied you on this trip?

A Cpl. KIMURA, another whose name I do not remember, and also a chauffeur who drove the car, I do not remember his name.

Q What time exactly did you leave Tonkhen for Langoan?

A I think at about 11 o'clock in the morning. I arrived at Langoan at 12 o'clock noon.

Q Tell us your exact movements upon arriving at Langoan?

A I took dinner quickly and heard a report from Lt. SAITO, later promoted to Captain. At half past one we started from Langoan by truck.

Q During the time that you were chief of such Kenpei Tai how many Allied airmen were captured by your unit or were captured by other units and turned over to members of your unit?

A I remember six men being captured.

Q Tell me the date, the exact details and all other surrounding information concerning the capture and execution of the first of these Allied airmen.

A The first was about the 3rd or 4th of September 1944 when two airmen came down by parachute near the airfield of Langoon.

Q Were you at Langoon at that time?

A At that time I was at Tochohen at the Second Area Army Headquarters and I was orally ordered by Staff Officer, Lt.-Col. KODAMATSU, to go to Langoon and bring back the two airmen.

Q Did you ever make a report to higher headquarters about MATSUMOTO?

A Yes, sir, I reported that MATSUMOTO is a very good worker and that if I am absent he can and does carry on the business of the Kenpei Tai in my place.

Q From when did you get initial information concerning the capture of these two airmen?

A When I received orders from Staff Officer KODAMATSU ordering me to proceed to Langoon to escort these prisoners to Tochohen. About 15 minutes after I received this order, my telephone orderly informed me that Lt. SAITO who was commanding the Langoon Military Police unit had telephoned and informed me of the capture of the two airmen.

Q About how long after this telephone message did you leave for Langoon?

A About one hour.

Q Who accompanied you on this trip?

A Cpl. KIMISHIMA, another whose name I do not remember, and also a chauffeur who drove the car, I do not remember his name.

Q What time exactly did you leave Tochohen for Langoon?

A I think at about 11 o'clock in the morning. I arrived at Langoon at 12 o'clock noon.

Q Tell us your exact movements upon arriving at Langoon?

A I took dinner quickly and heard a report from Lt. SAITO, later promoted to Captain. At half past one we started from Langoon by truck.

Q Did you see or question the Americans?

A No.

Q With whom did you take dinner at Langoan?

A With Lt. SAITO, Sgt/Maj. HORIHOTO, and, I believe, Cpl. OKADA, from Langoan Kempai Tai.

Q During dinner was the subject of discussion the capture of the two airmen?

A We did not talk about the two airmen.

Q What was the subject of conversation then?

A The conversation was that the bombing of Langoan was very severe and that it was so sudden that they did not have time to escape to the air-raid shelters.

Q Were the fliers questioned by you at any time while you were in Langoan?

A Only for about 20 minutes, after the noon meal, and then they were taken to Tonohon.

Q When you started back for Tonohon with the two airmen who accompanied you?

A Cpl. KAWASHIMA and another corporal, I do not exactly remember his name, but I think it was OKA.

Q Did you return to Tonohon in the same vehicle that you arrived at Langoan in?

A Yes, it was the same truck and it was also used by the Kempai Tai for getting airplane parts and other things.

Q Who turned these two airmen over into your custody at Langoan?

A Lt. SAITO.

Q At the time that Lt. Saito turned these airmen over to you did he also give you any reports concerning these airmen or did you give him any receipt for these airmen?

A Lt. SAITO said that he was writing out a report but that he had not finished it yet; so he said he would send it afterward.

Q When did you receive such report?

A The next day about 11 o'clock in the morning. This report was transmitted by a military car which brought messages from Nanade to Tonohon.

Q Upon receiving this report did you read it?

A Yes, I read it thoroughly.

Q Did you see or question the Americans?

A No.

Q With whom did you take dinner at Langoan?

A With Lt. SAITO, Sgt/Maj. MORIHOTO, and, I believe, Cpl. OKADA, from Langoan Kenpei Tai.

Q During dinner was the subject of discussion the capture of the two airmen?

A We did not talk about the two airmen.

Q What was the subject of conversation then?

A The conversation was that the bombing of Langoan was very severe and that it was so sudden that they did not have time to escape to the air-raid shelters.

Q Were the fliers questioned by you at any time while you were in Langoan?

A Only for about 20 minutes, after the noon meal, and then they were taken to Tonohon.

Q When you started back for Tonohon with the two airmen who accompanied you?

A Cpl. KAWASHE and another corporal, I do not exactly remember his name, but I think it was OKA.

Q Did you return to Tonohon in the same vehicle that you arrived at Langoan in?

A Yes, it was the same truck and it was also used by the Kenpei Tai for getting airplane parts and other things.

Q Who turned these two airmen over into your custody at Langoan?

A Lt. SAITO.

Q At the time that Lt. Saito turned these airmen over to you did he also give you any reports concerning these airmen or did you give him any receipt for these airmen?

A Lt. SAITO said that he was writing out a report but that he had not finished it yet; so he said he would send it afterward.

Q When did you receive such report?

A The next day about 11 o'clock in the morning. This report was transmitted by a military car which brought messages from Henade to Tonohon.

Q Upon receiving this report did you read it?

A Yes, I read it thoroughly.

- Q Tell us exactly what that report contained.
A It contained the names, the ranks, the place and date of capture, and the nationality of the airmen. I can not remember the names, but I do remember that they were both sergeants, their nationality I remember was American. I do not know for sure, but I think that the date of their capture was the 3rd of September, 1944. I am certain however, that these airmen were captured on the same day I received the telephone message about their capture from Lt. SAITO.
- Q At what time did you arrive with the two airmen at Tenohen?
A 4:30 in the afternoon.
- Q Why did it take you so long?
A Because we stopped at all villages on the way back and spread propoganda on the B-24 which was shot down by Japanese planes. I was ordered to do so by Col. KODAMATSU before I left Tenohen for Langan.
- Q Did SAITO's report say that a B-24 was shot down?
A The report so said, and SAITO personally told me that on that day 17 B-24s raided Langan.
- Q Tell us exactly what happened upon your arrival at Tenohen with the two Americans?
A I went to Headquarters and reported to Staff Officer KODAMATSU. The two airmen were placed in the Kerpei Tai at Tenohen because there was no place in Headquarters. On the next day the two airmen were given rest as they were tired. The day after the next day W/O MATSUOTO interrogated the two airmen through an interpreter. I think the interpreter was Akemi SHINOMURA, a Japanese civilian attached to the Army. He is now at Bitang, Northern Celebes.
- Q What did MATSUOTO report to you was said at this interrogation?
A He gave me a report of 8 pages but I am sorry I do not remember exactly the contents. One of these documents was sent to Headquarters of Second Area Army.
- Q You spoke to MATSUOTO about the questioning, didn't you?
A Yes, sir.
- Q What did he say?
A He said the two airmen were still healthy and full of pep and that it was very easy to make a report as they answered quickly all the things that they knew.

- Q Tell us exactly what that report contained.
A It contained the names, the ranks, the place and date of capture, and the nationality of the airmen. I can not remember the names, but I do remember that they were both sergeants, their nationality I remember was American. I do not know for sure, but I think that the date of their capture was the 3rd of September, 1944. I am certain however, that these airmen were captured on the same day I received the telephone message about their capture from Lt. SAITO.
- Q At what time did you arrive with the two airmen at Tenoben?
A 4:30 in the afternoon.
- Q Why did it take you so long?
A Because we stopped at all villages on the way back and spread propaganda on the B-24 which was shot down by Japanese planes. I was ordered to do so by Col. KODAMATSU before I left Tenoben for Langoan.
- Q Did SAITO's report say that a B-24 was shot down?
A The report so said, and SAITO personally told me that on that day 17 B-24s raided Langoan.
- Q Tell us exactly what happened upon your arrival at Tenoben with the two Americans?
A I went to Headquarters and reported to Staff Officer KODAMATSU. The two airmen were placed in the Karpai Tai at Tenoben because there was no place in Headquarters. On the next day the two airmen were given rest as they were tired. The day after the next day W/O MATSUOTO interrogated the two airmen through an interpreter. I think the interpreter was Akemi SHINOHARA, a Japanese civilian attached to the Army. He is now at Bitang, Northern Celebes.
- Q What did MATSUOTO report to you was said at this interrogation?
A He gave me a report of 8 pages but I am sorry I do not remember exactly the contents. One of these documents was sent to Headquarters of Second Area Army.
- Q You spoke to MATSUOTO about the questioning, didn't you?
A Yes, sir.
- Q What did he say?
A He said the two airmen were still healthy and full of pep and that it was very easy to make a report as they answered quickly all the things that they knew.

- Q What did they know and tell MATSUOTO?
A The airmen told MATSUOTO how fast a B-24 could fly, how much bombs it carry, how many machine guns it has, how many men it carry. They also said that in Morotai there were about 60 B-24s and that Japanese planes from time to time came to Morotai.
- Q What names did MATSUOTO tell you these Americans had?
A I am sorry I cannot remember.
- Q What did they ~~sound~~ like?
A One was Frank UBLIT (WUBIRT? UBLIT) and the other was Charles ALBLIT.
- Q Tell us everything that happened concerning these two Americans after MATSUOTO interrogated them.
A They stayed in the cell of the Kempai Tai by order of Staff Officer KODAMATSU. They stayed there I think about one week or 10 days.
- Q During that one week or ten days how many times were they interrogated?
A After MATSUOTO had interrogated the two airmen it was reported to Headquarters and he did not question any more.
- Q Did Col. KODAMATSU come down during that period of 7 days or 10 days?
A Yes, sir. Three times.
- Q Each time he saw the American prisoners, did he not?
A No. The first time he went to the cell and questioned the prisoners. He asked the possibility of the landing of Allied forces in Celebes and if so when they would land. The second time he spoke to the prisoners and third time he just saw the prisoners but did not speak to them.
- Q How soon after KODAMATSU came down the last time was any order given to you concerning the two Americans?
A At the last time he came to the Kempai Tai he ordered that the two Americans should be killed that same night.
- Q Give me the sequence of events that occurred after you brought the two Americans from Languan to Tondohan, telling me all conversations that occurred with you present or conversations overheard by you.
A KODAMATSU saw the Americans the first day I brought them from Languan. He saw them two other times before they were executed. Once he questioned them. W/O MATSUOTO was eager to kill the Americans and

- Q What did they know and tell MATSUMOTO?
A The airmen told MATSUMOTO how fast a B-24 could fly, how much bombs it carry, how many machine guns it has, how many men it carry. They also said that in Morotai there were about 60 B-24s and that Japanese planes from time to time came to Morotai.
- Q What names did MATSUMOTO tell you these Americans had?
A I am sorry I cannot remember.
- Q What did they ~~sound~~ like?
A One was Frank UBILT (UBERT? UBIRT) and the other was Charles ALBERT.
- Q Tell us everything that happened concerning these two Americans after MATSUMOTO interrogated them.
A They stayed in the cell of the Kenpei Tai by order of Staff Officer KODAMATSU. They stayed there I think about one week or 10 days.
- Q During that one week or ten days how many times were they interrogated?
A After MATSUMOTO had interrogated the two airmen it was reported to Headquarters and he did not question any more.
- Q Did Col. KODAMATSU come down during that period of 7 days or 10 days?
A Yes, sir. Three times.
- Q Each time he saw the American prisoners, did he not?
A No. The first time he went to the cell and questioned the prisoners. He asked the possibility of the landing of Allied forces in Calboas and if so when they would land. The second time he spoke to the prisoners and third time he just saw the prisoners but did not speak to them.
- Q How soon after KODAMATSU came down the last time was any order given to you concerning the two Americans?
A At the last time he came to the Kenpei Tai he ordered that the two Americans should be killed that same night.
- Q Give me the sequence of events that occurred after you brought the two Americans from Languan to Tondohan, telling me all conversations that occurred with you present or conversations overheard by you.
A KODAMATSU saw the Americans the first day I brought them from Languan. He saw them two other times before they were executed. Once he questioned them. W/O MATSUMOTO was eager to kill the Americans and

asked me for permission several times. I told him the first time that I had no authority and that I would have to go to Headquarters to get the authority. I did not go that day. MATSUOTO then asked me three times altogether to go to Headquarters for the authority. Finally, on the morning of the day of the execution, MATSUOTO asked me again and so I went to Headquarters and spoke to Col. KODAMATSU in his office. No one was present except the Colonel and myself. I told Col. KODAMATSU that it would be better to send the men to the POW Camp at Java but Col. KODAMATSU said that war conditions did not permit it and also that because if possible American landings it was necessary to execute the Americans because they might give away some of the Japanese secrets. I told KODAMATSU that I did not think it advisable because it was against international law but KODAMATSU told me that the prisoners of war were under the jurisdiction of the Second Area Army Headquarters and that the Kanpei Tai was only holding them temporarily for disposition by Second Area Army Headquarters. He said that the Americans must be executed. I said "goodbye" and left.

Q What happened after that?

A That same day after supper while it was slightly dark but still light, Col. KODAMATSU came up the stone steps which were between the bathroom and the general office. At that time I was in the bathroom. Col. KODAMATSU, in a loud voice which I could clearly hear even though I was in the bathroom, said that the Americans would have to be executed that very same evening. W/O MATSUOTO then came to the bathroom and told me Col. KODAMATSU was there. I went out and saw him. KODAMATSU told me to execute the two airmen that same night. MATSUOTO and I were there when KODAMATSU told me those words. I said, "Yes, is that so?" KODAMATSU then left to go to the house of his girl friend. After KODAMATSU left I turned to MATSUOTO and said, "I don't like such a matter. I leave it up to you". MATSUOTO said, "I will do it". I then left for my house where I played mahjong all evening.

Q What did MATSUOTO do that evening?

A I do not know what MATSUOTO did because I did not see him after I went home. The next day, however, at one o'clock in the afternoon I saw MATSUOTO at my office room and MATSUOTO reported to me. He said, "Everything has been completed". I knew what MATSUOTO

was talking about but I did not want to hear the details. I told MATSUOTO to go to Col. KODAMATSU and report.

Q Where is KODAMATSU now?

A He left the Celebes on December 1, 1944 and went to Singkang. I heard that he went to Burma from there at the end of 1944 or the early part of 1945. I heard that he was there until the end of the war but I do not remember who told me.

Q Give me a complete description of KODAMATSU.

A He was Chief or Commander of the 61st Infantry Regiment. He was about 43 years old; 5'3"; 60 kilograms; clean-shaven; glasses, black horn-rimmed; no facial disfigurements or scars; two or three gold teeth -- molars, left side, lower; long face; prominent jaw-bone; loud, bass voice; clear voice; close cropped hair, not bald.

Q During the whole period of September and October 1945 were you in complete and exclusive charge of the Kerpei Tai at Tenobon?

A Yes, I was.

Q Who was your immediate superior?

A Staff Officer, Lt.-Col. KODAMATSU. I reported everything to him, including the matter of the two Americans, and he relayed all orders to me. Over him was the Chief of Staff whose name I do not remember and above the Chief of Staff was full General ANAMI, Korechika.

Q Where were the two Americans buried after being executed?

A MATSUOTO told me about a month later that it was behind the Kerpei Tai in a field.

Q Who was Sgt. OKA, Teru?

A A soldier working in my office.

Q OKA says that he knows nothing about KODAMATSU giving you the order to execute the Americans.

A OKA could not have known it because he did not go to headquarters. Other Kerpei Tais know that Col. KODAMATSU gave orders to me.

Q Why is it that in a previous statement to Lt. FLINT of the Australian Army you said that OKA knows about it and now you say that he does not know anything about it?

NETHERLANDS INDIAS)
) SS
 ISLAND OF LOROTAI)

I, MASAO DOUE, T/3, ASN 30111100, War Crimes Branch, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions and answers given from English to Japanese and from Japanese to English respectively, and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing eight (8) pages, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence affixed his signature thereto.

/s/ Masao Doue
 MASAO DOUE

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 29 day of March, 1946.

/s/ Morris D. Forkosch
 MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., INF.
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment.

C E R T I F I C A T E

We, EDWARD W. GREGORY, 1st Lt., O-1590553, QMC and MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., O-1336900, INF., certify that on 25th day of March, 1946, personally appeared before us, TOSHITAKE ODAMURA, and according to MASAO DOUE, gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth therein; that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said TOSHITAKE ODAMURA had read to him by the said interpreter the same and affixed his signature thereto in our presence.

Island of Morotai
 (Place)

/s/ Edward W. Gregory
 EDWARD W. GREGORY, 1st Lt., QMC
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment

29 March 46
 (Date)

/s/ Morris D. Forkosch
 MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., INF.
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment.]

Doc 5520

書類第五五二〇號

小田村利武ハ正當ニ宣譽ヲ爲シタル上一九四六年三月二十五日、南領東印度モルツカス群島、モロタイ、モロタイ停務駐在所ニ於テ左ノ通り發言セリ。

問、貴下ノ姓名、年齢、國籍、婚姻關係及ビ現住所ヲ述ベテサイ。

答、小田村利武、三十七歳、日本人、既婚、佐賀縣「オホ」郡、南山村大字古井八巻地。

問、日本陸軍ニ於ケル貴下ノ階級ハ何デアリマシタカ。

答、陸軍少佐。

××××××××

問、貴部隊幹部ノ姓名及階級ヲ明示セル構成ノ全組織圖表ヲ提示シテ下サイ。

答、阿南（陸軍大將）

第二方面軍

遠藤（陸軍少將）

第五十七獨立混成旅團

小田村（陸軍少佐）

マナド方面憲兵隊

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5520

法務部	特高	庶務
松本 三之丞 准尉	松本 三之丞 准尉	市橋 三之丞
	坂 三之丞	小林
	岡	笹倉
	鈴木	
	三富	
	本下	
	川島	

問、貴下が該憲兵隊長デアツタ期間ニ幾名ノ聯合
團軍飛行士が貴部隊ニミツテ捕ヘラレ、又ハ
他部隊ヲ捕ヘタモノヲ貴部隊員ニ引渡シタカ

答、六名捕ヘラレタト記憶シマス。

問、第一回ノ此聯合團軍飛行士ノ捕獲及處刑ニ關
スル期日、正確ヲ詳細及コレヲ同ル他ノ凡テ
ノ情報ヲ述べオサイ。

答、第一回ハ一九四四年九月三、四日頃デ其時二
名ノ飛行士ガ「ランゴア」飛行場附近ニ落
下傘デ下降シマシタ。

××××××××

問、貴下ガ二名ノ米國兵ヲ「ランゴア」カラ下
モホン「ニ」追レテ來タ後ニ起ツタ事件ノ順序
ヲ貴下ノ肩ル前テ行ハレタ對話ノ全部及貴下
ガ洩レ聞イタ對話ヲ述べラレ度イ。

Doc 5520

3.

答、一コダマツ一ハ私ガ「ラングアシーカラ進レ
 テ來タ米團兵ニ最初ノ日ニ會ヒマシタ。彼等
 ガ死刑ニサレル迄彼ハ其後二回會ヒマシタ。
 一度ハ米團兵ヲ訪問シマシタ。松本准尉ハ米
 團兵ヲ銃意殺ソウトシテ數回私ノ許可ヲ求メ
 マシタ。
 第一回ニハ私ハ期限ヲ持タナイカラ許可ヲ待
 ル爲司令部ヘ行カネバオラヌト松本ニ申シマ
 シタ。其日私ハ参リマセシマシタ。其後松本
 ハ私ニ全部デ三回モ許可ヲ以ヒニ司令部ニ行
 ク様求メマシタ。
 終ニ處刑當日ノ朝松本ハ亦モ私ニ頼ミマシタ、
 ソロデ私ハ司令部ニ赴キ尋ねテ「コダマツ」
 大佐ニ話シマシタ。大佐ト私自身ノ見識モ居
 マセシマシタ。
 私ハ「コダマツ」大佐ニ米團兵ヲ爪哇ノ俘虜
 收容所ニ送ツタ方ガヨカロウト申シマシタガ
 「コダマツ」大佐ハ戦争狀況ガ其レヲ許サズ
 又米軍ノ上陸ガアルヤモ知レズ米團兵ガ日本
 軍ノ總督ヲ幾分デモ浪ラスカラ米團兵ヲ處刑
 スル必要アリト云ヒマシタ。
 私ハ「コダマツ」ニ自決法ニ違反スルカラ思
 ハシクナイト考ヘルコトヲ申シマシタガ「コ

Dec 5520

ダマツ一ハ捕虜ハ第二方面軍司令官管轄下ニ
アツテ憲兵隊ハ第二方面軍司令部ノ應召アル
迄臨時ニ彼等ヲ保留スルノテアルト私ニ云ヒ
マシタ。一コダマツ一ハ米國兵ヲ處刑セネバ
ナラヌト云ヒマシタ。私ハ突應シマス一ト言
ツテ出陣マシタ。

問、其後何事が起リマシタカ

答、同日、晚食後霜降クナツテキタガイクラカ閉ル
カツタ時一コダマツ一、大佐ハ浴室ト一般事務
室トノ間ノ石ノ階段ヲ上ツテ来マシタ。其時
私ハ浴室ニ居リマシタ。一コダマツ一、大佐ハ私ガ浴室ニ
居テサヘハツキリ聞コエル様デ大佐デ米國兵ヲ今階段刑シナケ
レバナラヌト云ヒマシタ。松本大佐ハ其時浴室ニ来テ私ニ一コ

ダマツ一、大佐ガ其處ニ居ラレルト尋シマシタ。

私ハ出テ大佐ニ會ヒマシタ。

一コダマツ一ハ同夜二人ノ飛行士ヲ處刑スル
様私ニ云ヒマシタ。一コダマツ一ガ此事ヲ私
ニ云ツタ時松本ト私ハ其處ニ居リマシタ。

私ハ一ハイ、左様デスカート申シマシタ。一コ

ダマツ一ハ其レカラ女ノ友人ノ家ニ行ク爲出
掛ケマシタ。一コダマツ一ガ立去ツタ後デ私

ハ松本ヲ願ミテ一私ハコンオ等ハ控ダ。私ハ
御前ニ任セル一ト申シマシタ。松本ハ一私ガ

Doc 5520

ダマツ一ハ捕虜ハ第二方面軍司令官管轄下ニ
アツテ憲兵隊ハ第二方面軍司令官ノ處置アル
迄臨時ニ彼等ヲ保留スルノテアルト私ニ云ヒ
マシタ。一コダマツ一ハ米國兵ヲ處刑セネバ
シラヌト云ヒマシタ。私ハ突進シマス一ト言
ツテ出陣マシタ。

問、其後何事ガ起リマシタカ

答、同日、晚餐後稍暗クアツテキタガイクラカ明ル
カツタ時一コダマツ一、大佐ハ浴室ト一、野野
室トノ間ノ石ノ階段ヲ上ツテ來マシタ。其時
私ハ浴室ニ居リマシタ。一コダマツ一、大佐ハ私が浴室ニ
居テサヘハツキリ聞コエル様デ大佐デ米國兵ヲ今晩處刑シナケ
レバオラヌト云ヒマシタ。松本、大佐ハ其時浴室ニ來テ私ニ「コ
ダマツ一、大佐ガ其處ニ居ラレルト等シマシタ。

私ハ出テ大佐ニ會ヒマシタ。

一コダマツ一ハ同夜二人ノ飛行士ヲ處刑スル
様私ニ云ヒマシタ。一コダマツ一ガ此等ヲ私
ニ云ツタ時松本ト私ハ其處ニ居リマシタ。

私ハ「ハイ、左様デスカ一ト申シマシタ。一コ
ダマツ一ハ其レカラ女ノ友人ノ家ニ行ク爲出
掛ケマシタ。一コダマツ一ガ立去ツタ後私
ハ松本ヲ顧ミテ「私ハコンオ等ハ憐ダ。私ハ
御前ニ任セル一ト申シマシタ。松本ハ「私が

Doc 5520

其レヲ致シマス一ト云ヒマシタ。私ハ其レヲ
ラ家ニ歸リ終夜騒音ヲシマシタ。

問、其曉松本ハ何ヲシタカ

答、私ハ歸宅後松本ニ會ハオカツタカラ松本ガ何
ヲシタカ知リマセン。然シ翌日午後一時ニ私
ハ警務署デ松本ニ會ヒマシタ、而シテ松本ハ
私ニ報告シマシタ。彼ハ「全部終了シマシタ」
ト言ツタ。

私ハ松本ガ何ノ事ヲ話シテ居ルカ知ツテ居マ
シタガ詳細ヲ聞カウトハ欲シマセンデシタ。
私ハ松本ニ「コダマツ」大佐ノ廳へ行ツテ報
告スル様申シマシタ。

××××××××××

問、貴下ハ此二名ノ米軍兵捕虜ガ捕縛管轄カラ長

刑サレル迄ノ間判決又ハ死刑宣告ニ付スル裁

判、軍法會議、聽取又ハ其他ノ法的手續ノ形

式ガ何カ行ハレタコトヲ知ツテ居リマスカ、

答、私ノ知ツテ居ル範圍デハ捕縛カラ處刑マデノ間

ニ其様ナ裁判、軍法會議、聽取又ハ法的手續

ガ行ハレマセンデシタ

××××××××××

小 田 村 利 武 / 署名 /

/ 署名ハ英訳出ア /

印 領 印 度
モロタイ島 SS

5.

Doc 5520

私、小田村利武ハ正式ニ宣誓シタル後八頁ヨリ成
ル石楯本ニ包含セル私ノ訊問及全答辯ガ私ニ對シ
テ讀マレ且ソノ翻譯ヲ了済シ私ノ知ル且信シ得ル
限リ眞正ナルコトヲ陳述ス。

小 田 村 利 武 / 署 名 /
/ 署名ハ共前同文 /

一九四六年三月二十九日本官ノ面前ニテ署名シ宣
誓セリ

戦争犯罪調査分隊調査官

陸軍歩兵少尉

モリス・D・フオルコツツユ / 署名 /

口領印
モロタイ島

SS

私、戦争犯罪文部、ASN三〇二二一〇〇號E/三
下イウエ・マサオハ正式ニ宣誓ヲ爲シタル上訊問及
答辯ヲ英語ヨリ日本語ニ語シテ日本語ヨリ英語ニ
夫々翻譯ニ翻譯シ且轉寫サレタ後私ハ八頁ヨリ成
ル前記証言ヲ證人ニ翻譯ニ翻譯シテ聞カセ而シテ
其上證人が私ノ面前ニテ署名ヲ爲シタルコトヲ陳
述ス

ドイウエ・マサオ / 署名 /

7.

Doc 5520

モリス・D・フオルコツシュ／署名ノ

陸軍歩兵少尉

戦争犯罪調査分遣隊副長官

宣誓ヲ爲シタリ。

一九四六年三月二十九日 本官ノ面前ニテ署名シ且

Doc 5520

Doc 5520

一九四六年三月二十九日 本官ノ面前ニテ野名シ且
宣誓ヲ爲シタリ。

戦争犯罪調査分遣隊調査官

陸軍歩兵少尉

モリス・D・フォルコツシユ / 野名 /

Doc. 5520 (cont)

証 明 書

本官〇一五九〇五五三補給部中尉エドワード・W・
グレゴリー及〇一三三六九〇〇號元陸軍歩兵少
尉モリス・D・フオルコツシユハ一九四六年三月
二十五日本官ノ前ニ自ラ出立セル小田村利武ガ下
一ウエ・マサオノ通譯ニヨリ種々ノ訊問ニ對シ
前記答辯ヲ行ヒタルコト又証言ガ真偽サレタ後前
記小田村利武ガ通譯者ニヨリ訊ミ聽カサレ而シテ
本官ノ面前ニ於テ其署名ヲ爲シタルコトヲ證明ス

(場 所) モロタイ島

(期 日) 一九四六年三月二十九日

戦争犯罪調査分遣隊調査官

補給部陸軍中尉

エドワード・W・グレゴリー / 署名 /

戦争犯罪調査分遣隊調査官

陸軍歩兵少尉

モリス・D・フオルコツシユ / 署名 /

RESTRICTED

YOSHINORI HAYASHI, after having been duly sworn, testified aboard U.S. Army F.S. 319, enroute from Manado, Celebes to Morotai, on 30 April 1946, as follows:

Q What is your full name, rank, age, marital status, religion, nationality, and home address?

A Yoshinori HAYASHI, Warrant Officer, 32 years old, married, Buddhist, Japanese. I live at the house of Shigeo HIROMASA and his address is Hiroshima Ken, Kure Shi Hondori 4 Cho Me 9 Banchi. My wife, Fumiye HAYASHI lives in the same house.

Q When were you inducted into the Japanese Navy?

A 20 December 1940.

Q When did you first land in Celebes?

A The first part of September 1944.

Q Where did you land in Celebes?

A I landed in Tolitoli.

Q Of what unit were you a member?

A I was attached to the Tolitoli Seaplane Base Unit. In the middle of November 1944 I was sent to Balikpapan and assigned to the Signal Corps of the 22nd Special Naval Base Unit. The Seaplane Base which I was attached to at Tolitoli was part of the 22nd Special Naval Base Unit at Balikpapan. In the latter part of January 1945 I was sent back to the Celebes and stationed at Dongala, I was attached to the SATO unit as special observation post of planes and ships at Dongala. I was stationed at this post until the war ended.

Q Who was your commanding officer and what were your duties while you were stationed at the Tolitoli Seaplane Base?

A At the Tolitoli Seaplane Base there were two separate units, one was a guard unit commanded by Lieutenant (Junior Grade) IGAMI, the other was the unit which actually ran and operate the Seaplane Base. I cannot remember who the commanding officer of this unit was but I think that during the time I was stationed at Tolitoli, Warrant Officer SUITSU and Ensign YAMANOUCHI were in charge of this unit. I am not certain because the commanding officers of this unit changed quite often. I was attached to this latter unit. I was a wireless operator and I sent most of the messages that went to the 22nd Special Naval Base Unit.

Q Do you know anything of the eight Allied fliers who were captured near Tolitoli sometime in September or October 1944?

A Yes.

Q Please tell me everything you know concerning the capture and disposition of these eight fliers.

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

A Sometime in the latter part of September 1944 I heard that an American B-24 crash-landed in the water somewhere near Boeol which is in the province of Tolitoli. The natives in this area reported to the Tolitoli Seaplane Base that there were eight survivors in this crash. The standing patrol of the Tolitoli Seaplane Base was accordingly dispatched to Boeol to capture these survivors. However, when they arrived the naval police inspector and his subordinates had already captured these eight fliers. The naval police inspector at Boeol at this time was IKANE. His rank was police inspector. I do not know the names of any of his subordinates. The Tolitoli patrol which was dispatched to Boeol stayed at this place that night and the next day they returned to Tolitoli with the eight fliers. They returned by truck. These eight fliers were detained in the naval police detention cell in Tolitoli. The chief of the naval police in Tolitoli was AWAZU. He was a civilian attached to the navy with a rank of naval police inspector. These fliers were detained at the naval police detention cell in Tolitoli for about one month. These fliers were originally supposed to be sent to Balikpapan. However, I heard that an order was received from the 22nd Special Naval Base in Balikpapan to detain the fliers in Tolitoli and to execute them there. These fliers were executed on ~~at~~ about the 23rd of October 1944. I think this is the correct date, however I am not certain.

Q Please tell me everything that you know of the execution and the incidents leading up to it.

A At about 5:00 or 6:00 o'clock in the afternoon on or about the 22nd of October 1944 Warrant Officer SUITSU, who was in charge of the Seaplane Base at that time, or Lt IGAMI sent a telephone message to me. At the time that this message came over the phone I was out fixing the antenna for one of the wireless sets. When I returned to the office I was told that the message had been sent to me. The message said, "The commander of the Seaplane Base called you up and said tomorrow is the execution. You will be one of the executioners. Prepare your sword. The execution will be early tomorrow morning. The execution will be in the rear of the communication point near the Tolitoli cemetery."

Later that same evening about 7:00 o'clock another message came for me telling me that I should report to the execution place at 7:00 o'clock the following morning. The next morning I got up a little after 6:00 o'clock, dressed and ate my breakfast and went out on the porch of my house and waited. This morning I was dressed in my full uniform with boots and cap and I was wearing my Japanese sword. I waited on the porch about twenty minutes and then I saw about twenty members of the Naval Seaplane Base Unit come walking by my house on the way to the execution place. I cannot recall any of the names of the persons who were in this group of twenty. As soon as this group had passed my house I followed them at a distance of about twenty or thirty meters.

RESTRICTED

The execution place was about one kilometer from my house. I arrived at the execution place about fifteen minutes later. This was about 7:00 or 7:30 in the morning, I am not certain about the time. When I arrived at the place of execution I saw the eight fliers standing about 100 meters from a hole which was freshly dug. These fliers were all blindfolded and their hands were tied behind their backs. They were wearing khaki colored clothes. Some of them had field jackets with zippers on them. I don't think any of them had hats on. And I think that they wore brown colored shoes. There were about fifty or sixty guards and spectators standing around the eight fliers. Warrant Officer SUITSU was in charge of the execution party and he had already designated the executioners the previous evening. Warrant Officer SUITSU ordered the first prisoner to be brought to the place of execution. Warrant Officer SUITSU then ordered me to execute the first prisoner. I complained and said that I did not wish to execute the first prisoner. Warrant Officer SUITSU said that I must execute the first prisoner because I was the oldest member and that I should execute the first prisoner. I think two guards led the first flier to the hole. The flier was made to kneel in front of the hole, facing the hole. The two guards then stepped away from the prisoner and one of them said to me, "Alright" so I stepped up behind the prisoner and took a position about two feet to the left rear of him. My feet were about one foot apart. I raised my sword over my right shoulder and swung the sword downward against the prisoner's neck with both hands. When the sword struck the prisoner's neck his head was not completely severed from his body but his head flopped against his chest and blood spurted from his neck. The prisoner's body then rolled into the hole. I am sure that he died instantly. After I had executed the prisoner I stood with my hands in an attitude of prayer and prayed to my god that this flier I had just executed would go to heaven. I then withdrew about three to five meters and took a position among the other spectators. I stood in this position among the spectators and saw the second, third and fourth executions. I cannot remember the names of the executioners but I think they were all fliers from the Naval Seaplane Base in Tolitoli. I actually saw these executioners swing their swords and kill the second, third and fourth prisoners. After the fourth execution I left the place and returned to my quarters. Later I heard that Second Class Petty Officer TANAKA had executed the seventh prisoner, that Warrant Officer SUITSU had executed the sixth prisoner and that Administrative Officer IMAKI had executed the last prisoner. I do not recall from whom I heard this but everyone was talking about it.]

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

The execution place was about one kilometer from my house. I arrived at the execution place about fifteen minutes later. This was about 7:00 or 7:30 in the morning, I am not certain about the time. When I arrived at the place of execution I saw the eight fliers standing about 100 meters from a hole which was freshly dug. These fliers were all blindfolded and their hands were tied behind their backs. They were wearing khaki colored clothes. Some of them had field jackets with zippers on them. I don't think any of them had hats on. And I think that they wore brown colored shoes. There were about fifty or sixty guards and spectators standing around the eight fliers. Warrant Officer SUITSU was in charge of the execution party and he had already designated the executioners the previous evening. Warrant Officer SUITSU ordered the first prisoner to be brought to the place of execution. Warrant Officer SUITSU then ordered me to execute the first prisoner. I complained and said that I did not wish to execute the first prisoner. Warrant Officer SUITSU said that I must execute the first prisoner because I was the oldest member and that I should execute the first prisoner. I think two guards led the first flier to the hole. The flier was made to kneel in front of the hole, facing the hole. The two guards then stepped away from the prisoner and one of them said to me, "Alright" so I stepped up behind the prisoner and took a position about two feet to the left rear of him. My feet were about one foot apart. I raised my sword over my right shoulder and swung the sword downward against the prisoner's neck with both hands. When the sword struck the prisoner's neck his head was not completely severed from his body but his head flopped against his chest and blood spurted from his neck. The prisoner's body then rolled into the hole. I am sure that he died instantly. After I had executed the prisoner I stood with my hands in an attitude of prayer and prayed to my god that this flier I had just executed would go to heaven. I then withdrew about three to five meters and took a position among the other spectators. I stood in this position among the spectators and saw the second, third and fourth executions. I cannot remember the names of the executioners but I think they were all fliers from the Naval Seaplane Base in Telitoli. I actually saw these executioners swing their swords and kill the second, third and fourth prisoners. After the fourth execution I left the place and returned to my quarters. Later I heard that Second Class Petty Officer TANAKA had executed the seventh prisoner, that Warrant Officer SUITSU had executed the sixth prisoner and that Administrative Officer IMAKI had executed the last prisoner. I do not recall from whom I heard this but everyone was talking about it.]

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

- Q I now show you a sheet of legal size onion skin paper upon which Japanese characters are written in pencil. Will you tell me what they represent if you know?
- A This is the paper upon which I drew a diagram of the execution place of the eight American fliers. This diagram shows the hole where the Americans were executed, it also shows the road leading to the execution place. The diagram shows where my living quarters were located and also shows where other buildings in Tolitoli were located. I have signed and dated this diagram.
- Q Who was Warrant Officer SUITSU's commanding officer?
- A Warrant Officer SUITSU was under the command of Seaplane Base Aviation Unit which was part of the 22nd Special Naval Base Unit at Balikpapan. I, however, do not know who Warrant Officer SUITSU's commanding officer was or who the commanding officer of the 22nd Special Naval Base was.
- Q Do you know the names, ranks, description, or nationality of these eight fliers?
- A I do not know their names and I cannot describe them but I do remember that three of them were officers and the other five were non-commissioned officers. I think that two of the officers were second lieutenants and one was a first lieutenant. That's all I can recall about them. These fliers were all Americans.
- Q How do you know they were Americans?
- A I heard that police inspector AWAZU investigated these fliers and during the course of investigation he found out that these fliers were all Americans.
- Q Were these fliers ever given a hearing or a court martial?
- A I don't think that they were given court-martial or hearing.
- Q Why were these fliers executed?
- A I do not know.
- Q Tell me all of the persons that you can remember that either participated in or were present at the execution of the eight Americans.
- A Outside of the executioners whose names I have already given you I can remember no other persons. There were, however, a large number of people present.
- Q Can you tell me the first names and the present whereabouts of Administrative Officer HAKI and Warrant Officer SUITSU?

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

A I do not know either of these persons' first names. I heard that Administrative Officer IMKI is dead. I heard that Warrant Officer SUITSU is either in Balikpapan or Singapore, I do not know which.

Q Was force, threats, duress, or coercion used in taking this statement from you?

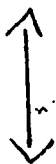
A No.

Q Was any promise of reward, immunity, or consideration given as a result of this statement?

A No.

Q Have you anything further to add to your statement?

A No.



[/s/ Yoshinori Hayashi
YOSHINORI HAYASHI]

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

A I do not know either of these persons' first names. I heard that Administrative Officer IM/KI is dead. I heard that Warrant Officer SUITSU is either in Balikpapan or Singapore, I do not know which.

Q Was force, threats, duress, or coercion used in taking this statement from you?

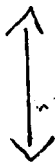
A No.

Q Was any promise of reward, immunity, or consideration given as a result of this statement?

A No.

Q Have you anything further to add to your statement?

A No.



[/s/ Yoshinori Hayashi
YOSHINORI HAYASHI]

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

A I do not know either of these persons' first names. I heard that Administrative Officer IM/KI is dead. I heard that Warrant Officer SUITSU is either in Balikpapan or Singapore, I do not know which.

Q Was force, threats, duress, or coercion used in taking this statement from you?

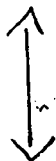
A No.

Q Was any promise of reward, immunity, or consideration given as a result of this statement?

A No.

Q Have you anything further to add to your statement?

A No.



[/s/ Yoshinori Hayashi
YOSHINORI HAYASHI]

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

NETHERLANDS INDIES)
ISLAND OF CELEBES) SS
TOWN OF MANADO)

I, YOSHINORI HAYASHI, being duly sworn on oath, state that I had read to me and understood the translation of the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein consisting of four (4) pages, are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Yoshinori Hayashi
YOSHINORI HAYASHI

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 1st day of May, 1946.

/s/ John D. Schwenker
JOHN D. SCHWENKER, Capt., FA
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment

NETHERLANDS INDIES)
ISLAND OF CELEBES) SS
TOWN OF MANADO)

I, SEISHUN KUBA, T/3, ASN 30110981, War Crimes Branch, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions and answers given from English to Japanese and from Japanese to English respectively, and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing four (4) pages, to the witness; that the witness whereupon in my presence affixed his signature thereto.

/s/ Seishun Kuba
SEISHUN KUBA

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 1st day of May, 1946.

/s/ John D. Schwenker
JOHN D. SCHWENKER, Capt., FA
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment

RESTRICTED

Document No. 5525

RESTRICTED

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, JOHN D. SCHMEYER, Capt., O-5443C, FA, certify that on 30th day of April, 1946, personally appeared before me YOSHIMORI HAYASHI, and according to SEISHUN FURA, gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth therein; that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said YOSHIMORI HAYASHI had read to him by the said interpreter the same and affixed his signature thereto in my presence.

Manado, Celebes
(Place)

1 May 1946
(Date)

/s/ John D. Schmeyer
JOHN D. SCHMEYER, Capt., FA
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment

Doc 5535

2.

登、千九百四十四年九月下旬某日、私ハ米國ノ
 B-34 一機ガトリトリ州内ノボエオル附近テ水
 上ニ不時着破損シタ旨ヲ聞キマシタ。其ノ
 地ノ住民ハトリトリ水上機基地ヘ此ヲ告テ
 ハ八名ノ生存者ガアルト報告シタ。ソコテ
 トリトリ水上機基地常備警務員ガ、ソレ等
 ノ生存者ヲ捕ヘルタメニ、ボエオルヘ派遣
 サレマシタ。然シ年ヲ彼等ガ其處ヘ到着シ
 タ時ニハ、海軍警務監察官ト其ノ部下幾ガ、
 既ニ是等八名ノ航空機搭乗員ヲ捕ヘテ居リ
 マシタ。當時ボエオルニ於ケル海軍警務監
 察官ハイワネデアリマシテ、其ノ階級ハ監
 察官デアリマシタ。彼ノ部下ノ姓名ハ私ハ
 知リマセン。ボエオルヘ派遣サレタトリト
 リ警務隊員ハ、其ノ夜ハ其ノ地ニ一泊シ、
 翌日前記八名ヲ連行シトリトリヘ歸還シマ
 シタ。彼等ハトラツクニ乗ツテ歸ツテ來タ
 ノデス。是等ノ八名ハトリトリニ於ケル海
 軍拘留所ニ監禁サレマシタ。トリトリ海軍
 警察署長ハ某津デアリマシタ。彼ハ海軍所
 屬ノ軍屬デアリマシタガ、其ノ階級ハ海軍
 警務監察官ト云フデアリマシタ。之等航
 空機搭乗員ハ右トリトリ海軍拘留所ニ約一

Doc 5535

ケ月監禁サレマシタ。彼等ハ最初バリツタバ
バンヘ送ラレル豫定デアリマシタガ、私ノ問
イタ所テハ其ノ後バリツタババン第二十二特
別隊軍港地カラ彼等八名ヲトリトリニ止メ、
トリトリテ刑ヲ執行スベシトノ命令ヲ受ケタ
ト云フコトヲシタ。此等搭乗員ハ一九四四年
十月二十三日頃處刑サレマシタガ、私ハコレ
ガ正確ナ日付ダト思ヒマスガハツキリ致シマ
セシ。

問、處刑並ヒニ處刑ニ至ルマテノ出來幕ニ就テ、
貴下ノ知ル所一切ヲ語シテ貰ヒ度イ。

答、千九百四十四年十月二十二日頃ノ午後五時カ
六時頃ト思ヒマスガ、當時水上機基地ノ指揮
ヲ執ツテ居タスヤツ兵官長カ或ハイガミ大尉
カラダツタカ、私ノ許ヘ電話ガ掛ツテ來マシ
タ。此電話ガ掛ツテ來タ時、私ハ丁度、無線
受信機ノ一ツニアンテナヲ張ルタメニ外出中
ダツタ。私ガ事務所ヘ歸ツテ來タ時ニ電話ガア
ツタト云フコトヲ聞カサレタノテス。其ノ傳
言ハ「水上機基地司令カラ貴下ニ電話ガ掛リ
明日ハ愈々處刑スル。貴下ハ刑執行員ノ一人
デアル、刀ヲ用意サル可シ。刑ハ明朝早ク行
ハル可ク、場所ハトリトリ基地附近通信所ノ

★
3.

Doc 5535

後方ノコトト云ソノテアリマシタ。同夜遅
ク、七時頃、私ノ許へ哥ヒ電話ガアリ、翌朝
七時ニ刑ノ執行場へ出頭スベシト云ツテ來マ
シタ。翌朝私ハ六時一寸過ぎニ起床シ、裝束
シ、朝食ノ後、宿舎ノ出口廊下ニ出テ待ツテ
居リマシタ。此朝私ハ正装シテ長靴ヲ穿キ正
體ヲ被リ日本刀ヲ腰ニツケテキマシタ。私ハ
出口廊下テ約二十分程待ツテ居リマシタガ、
ヤガテ海軍水上機隊部隊ノ連中約二十名許
リガ、刑執行場へノ途上私ノ宿舎ノ傍ヲ通ル
ノヲ見マシタ。コノ二十名許リノ一團ノ人達
ノ姓名ハ一ツモ思ヒ出セマセン。此一團ガ私
ノ宿舎ノ傍ヲ通り過ギタ直後、私ハ約三三十
「メートル」ノ間隔ヲ置イテ彼等ノ後ニ從ヒ
マシタ。刑ノ執行場ハ私ノ宿舎カラ約一「キロメー
トル」アリマシタガ私約十五分ノ後、其處へ到着
シマシタ。時刻ハ朝ノ七時カラ七時三十分頃
ダツタト思ヒマスガ時同ノ正體ニツイテハ判
然トシマセン。刑ノ執行場へ着イタ時ニハ八
名ノ航空機搭乗員ガ新タニ掘ラレターツノ穴
カラ約百「メートル」深レタ所ニ立ツテキル
ノヲ見マシタ。彼等ノ搭乗員達ハ何レモ目隠
シサレ後手ニ縛ラレテ居リマシタ。彼等ハ「

4

後方ノコト云フ。同夜選
ク、七時頃、私ノ許へ哥ヒ電話ガアリ、翌朝
七時ニ刑ノ執行場へ出頭スベシト云ツテ來々
シタ。翌朝私ハ六時一寸過キニ起床シ、裝束
シ、朝食ノ後、宿舍ノ出口廊下ニ出テ待ツテ
居リマシタ。此觀私ハ正装シテ長靴ヲ穿キ正
備ヲ被リ日本刀ヲ腰ニツケテキマシタ。私ハ
出口廊下テ約二十分程待ツテ居リマシタガ、
ヤガテ警察水上機警地部隊ノ連中約二十名許
リガ、刑執行場へノ送上私ノ宿舍ノ傍ヲ通ル
ノヲ見マシタ。コノ二十名許リノ一四ノ人達
ノ姓名ハ一ツモ恩ヒ出セマセン。此一四ガ私
ノ宿舍ノ傍ヲ通り過キタ直後、私ハ約二十三
「メイトル」ノ同僚ヲ置イテ彼等ノ後ニ從ヒ
マシタ。刑ノ執行場ハ私ノ宿舍カラ約一「キロメ
トル」アリマシタガ私約十五分ノ後、其處へ到着
シマシタ。時刻ハ朝ノ七時カラ七時三十分頃
ダツタト恩ヒマスガ時間ノ正確ニツイテハ判
然トシマセン。刑ノ執行場へ着イタ時ニハ八
名ノ航空機搭乗員ガ新クニ編ラレタ一ツノ穴
カラ約百「メイトル」ニ離レタ所ニ立ツテキル
ノヲ見マシタ。彼等ノ搭乗員達ハ何レモ目隠
シサレ後手ニ縛ラレテ居リマシタ。彼等ハ「

Doc 5535



Doc 5555

一 *

カーキ—色ノ服ヲ着テ居リマシタ。或者ハ
「デツバー」圍キノ服時上衣ヲ着テ居リマシ
タ。帽子ヲ被ツテ居タ若ハナカツタト思ヒマ
ス。靴ハ茶色ノヲ穿テ居タト思ヒマス。八右
ノ周圍ニハ約五、六十名ノ警護員ダノ見物人
ガ居リマシタ。スイツ兵官長ガ刑執行ノ指揮
ヲ執ツテキタノデスガ、彼ハ前夜既ニ誰ガ俘
虜ヲ斬ルカラ既ニ報告シテキタノデス。ソレ
カラスイツ兵官長ハ第一番目ノ俘虜ヲ刑執行
ノ場所ヘ送レテ來ル様ニ命令ラ下シマシタ。
ソシテ其ノ第一番目ノ俘虜ヲ私ニ斬レト命ジ
タノデス。私ハ不審ノ惑ヲ送レ第一番目ノ俘
虜ヲ斬リタクナイト申シマシタ。シカンスイ
ツ兵官長ハ、私が後言參者ダカラ第一番目ノ
俘虜ヲ斬ラネバナラスト云ヒマシタ。二名ノ
警護員ガ第一番目ノ俘虜ヲ穴ノ傍ニ送レテ行
ツタト思ヒマス。俘虜ハ穴ニ向ツテ穴ノ前ニ
跪カサレマシタ。二名ノ警護員ハ俘虜カラ進
レ、一人ガ私ニ向ツテ「進シイト云ヒマシ
タ。ソコテ私ハ俘虜ノ背後ニ廻ハリ彼ノ左背
後約二呎ノ所ニ位置ヲ取リマシタ。私ノ兩脚
ハ約一呎ノ間隔ニ開キマシタ。私ハ大刀ヲ右
肩上方ニ振り上げ、両手ニ刀ヲ持ツテ俘虜ノ

Doc 55.35

頸目掛ケテ一因新リ下ケマシタ。刀が腹部ヲ
 打ツタ時、彼ノ首ハ完全ニハ胴体カラ離レマ
 シンデシタガ、胸ノ所ニブラサガリ、頸カフ
 ハ鮮血ガ逆リマシタ。俘虜ノ胴体ハ其處テ穴
 ノ中ニ落テ込ミマシタ。即死シタコトハ間違
 ヒナイト思ヒマス。俘虜ヲ處刑シタ後私ハ合
 衆ノ姿勢ヲ立テ、今私ノ手ヲ断ツタ許リノ俘
 虜ガ繩索ニ行クヤウ裁断ニ加リマシタ。ソレカラ
 私ハ三「メートル」乃至五「メートル」後方へ退キ他ノ見
 物人ノ間ニ位置ヲ取リマシタ。私ハ此ノ見物人ノ中ニ立ツ
 テ、第二、第三、第四番目ノ處刑ヲ見マシタ。私ハ刑ノ
 執行者ハ誰デアツタカ、思ヒ出セマセンガ、
 彼等ハ全部トリトリニ於ケル海軍水上機飛地
 カラヤツテ來タ航艦隊員デアツタト思ヒマス。
 私ハ是等ノ刑執行者ガ其ノ大刀ヲ振りヒゲテ
 第二、第三、第四番目ノ俘虜ヲ撃殺スルノヲ
 實際目撃シタノデス。第四番目ノ處刑後私ハ
 其處ヲ去ツテ私ノ宿舎へ歸リマシタ。後ニナ
 ツテ、私ハ、田中二等兵曹ガ第七番目ノ俘虜
 ヲ、スイツ兵曹長ガ第六番目ノ俘虜ヲ、而シ
 テ今水管理將校ガ最後ノ俘虜ヲ處刑シタコト
 ヲ聞キマシタ。誰カラ之ヲ聞イタカハ思ヒ
 出セマセンガ、皆ガソウ申シテ居リマシタ。

* * * * *

4

Doc 55.35

線目掛ケテ一因新リ下ケマシタ。刀が頸部ヲ
 打ツタ時、彼ノ首ハ完全ニハ胴体カラ離レマ
 センデシタガ、胸ノ所ニブラサガリ、頸カフ
 ハ鮮血ガ逆リマシタ。俘虜ノ胴体ハ其處デ穴
 ノ中ニ落テ込ミマシタ。即死シタコトハ同廷
 ヒナイト思ヒマス。俘虜ヲ處刑シタ後私ハ合
 隊ノ姿勢テ立テ、今私ノ手テ斬ツタ許リノ俘
 虜ガ遺棄ニ行クヤウ誠神ニ祈リマシタ。ソレカラ
 私ハ三「メートル」乃至五「メートル」後方へ退キ他ノ見
 物人ノ間ニ位置ヲ取リマシタ。私ハ此ノ見物人ノ中ニ立ツ
 テ、第二、第三、第四番目ノ處刑ヲ見マシタ。私ハ刑ノ
 執行者ハ誰デアツタカ、思ヒ出セマセンガ、
 彼等ハ全部トリトリニ於ケル海軍水上機飛地
 カラヤツテ來タ航空隊員デアツタト思ヒマス。
 私ハ是等ノ刑執行者ガ其ノ大刀ヲ振りヒゲテ
 第二、第三、第四番目ノ俘虜ヲ斬殺スルノヲ
 實際目撃シタノデス。第四番目ノ處刑後私ハ
 其處ヲ去ツテ私ノ宿舎へ歸リマシタ。後ニナ
 ツテ、私ハ、田中二等兵曹ガ第七番目ノ俘虜
 ヲ、スイツ兵曹長ガ第六番目ノ俘虜ヲ、而シ
 テ今水管理府校ガ故後ノ俘虜ヲ處刑シタコト
 ヲ聞キマシタ。誰カラ之ヲ聞イタカハ思ヒ
 出セマセンガ、皆ガソヲ申シテ居リマシタ。

* * * * *

今

Doc 5535

南領印度「セレベス」島「マナド」町 SS

私、林「ヨシノリ」ハ正式ニ宣誓ヲナシ、私ニ
對スル訊問ノ前記謄本ノ編譯文ガ私ニ讀ミ聞カセ
ラレ且ツ私ハ之ヲ理解シタル事及ビソノ中ニ含
マレタル四頁ヨリ成ル凡テノ返答ガ私ノ知識ト信
念ニ照ラシテ眞實ナル事ヲ陳述ス。

／署名／ 林 ヨシノリ

一九四六年五月一日余ノ面前ニテ署名シ宣誓シタ
リ

戦争犯罪調査分遣隊

調査官 野砲大尉 ショーン・D・シュワエンカー

／署名／

南領印度「セレベス」島「マナド」町

私、「クバ・セイシュン」トシテノ戦争犯罪調査
隊番號三〇一一〇九八一ハ正式ニ宣誓ヲナシ兵へ
ラレタル訊問及ビ返答ヲ英語カラ日本語ニ、又日
本語カラ英語ニ夫々傳譯ニ編譯シタル事及ビ轉寫
サレタル後私ハ四頁ニ亙ル前記口供書ヲ証人ニ對
シテ眞實ニ陳述シタル事、且ツ証人ハ私ノ面前ニ
於テソレニ直チニ彼ノ署名ヲナシタル事ヲ陳述ス。

クバ・セイシュン／署名／

7. 4

8. *

Doc 55.35

一九四六年五月一日余ノ面前ニテ署名シ宣誓シタ
リ。

戦争犯罪調査分遣隊

調査官 野村大尉 シモン・D・シユ－エンカー / 署名 /

8. *

Doc 5535

一九四六年五月一日余ノ面前ニテ署名シ宣誓シタ
リ。

戦争犯罪調査分遣隊

調査官 野村大尉 シモン・D・シェーエンカー / 署名 /

★
Dec 5535 (cont)

證 明 書

一 紙「ジョン・D・シュワエンカー」野砲大尉
一 五四四三八ハ、一九四六年四月三十日赤「ヨシ
ノリ」自ラ余ノ面前ニ現ハレ「タバ・セイシュエジ」
ノ通譯ニヨツテソノ中ニ起ベラレタル数領ノ訛問
ニ前記ノ返答ヲ與ヘタル事、又彼ノ証言ガ專寫サ
レタル後前記林「ヨシノリ」ハ前記通譯ニヨツテソノ
証言ヲ讀ミ印カセラレ且ツ余ノ面前テ署名ヲ附シ
タル事ヲ註明ス

切 所 セレベス・マナド

日 付 一九四六年五月一日

戦争犯罪調査分遣隊

調査官 野砲大尉 ジョン・D・シュワエンカー / 署名 /

GOSUKE TANIGUCHI, after having been duly sworn, testified at the Mandal Prisoners of War Camp, Makassar, Celebes, on 11 April 1946, as follows:

Q What is your name, age, nationality, religion, marital status, and home address?

A Gosuke TANIGUCHI, 53 years old, Japanese, Buddhist, married, Tokyo, Shiba-Ku, Hita Koyama Cho, #8.

Q What is your wife's name?

A Mitsue TANIGUCHI.

Q Are you a member of the Imperial Japanese Forces?

A Yes, I am a Captain in the Japanese Navy.

Q How long have you been in the Navy?

A 36 years.

Q When did you come to Celebes?

A August 13, 1944.

Q What was your assignment in Celebes?

A On the 13th of August 1944 I arrived in Celebes and was stationed at Kendari. My duty was to take care of the transport of supplies to the 4th Southern Area Fleet which had its headquarters at Ambon.

Q How long did you remain in this unit?

A Until March 1945, although part of this service was in name only because there was a shortage of supplies and we had nothing very much to send to Ambon. In September 1944 I was appointed commanding officer of the 23rd Special Naval Base detachment at Kendari, which was under the command of the Second Southern Area Dispatch Fleet. I remained in this assignment until 16 December 1945. In the beginning of April 1945 I was appointed commanding officer of the Tokkei Tai stationed at Kendari.

Q Do you know of any Americans being detained at Kendari?

A Yes. I know of nine men in October 1944 and one man in January 1945, and two men in February 1945.

Q Will you tell me what you know of the nine men in October 1944?

A A PBV-5 (?) left Morotai 1 October 1944 on a flight to Celebes. On that same day the plane was fired on and hit by Japanese gunfire and the plane crashed off the eastern coast of Celebes, north of Kendari near an island. I forgot the name of the island, probably Salabangka. I was told that eleven men were in the plane but two of them died in the crash.

180017

GOSUKE TANIGUCHI, after having been duly sworn, testified at the Mandal Prisoners of War Camp, Makassar, Celebes, on 11 April 1946, as follows:

Q What is your name, age, nationality, religion, marital status, and home address?

A Gosuke TANIGUCHI, 53 years old, Japanese, Buddhist, married, Tokyo, Shiba-Ku, Hita Koyama Cho, #8.

Q What is your wife's name?

A Mitsue TANIGUCHI.

Q Are you a member of the Imperial Japanese Forces?

A Yes, I am a Captain in the Japanese Navy.

Q How long have you been in the Navy?

A 36 years.

Q When did you come to Celebes?

A August 13, 1944.

Q What was your assignment in Celebes?

A On the 13th of August 1944 I arrived in Celebes and was stationed at Kendari. My duty was to take care of the transport of supplies to the 4th Southern Area Fleet which had its headquarters at Ambon.

Q How long did you remain in this unit?

A Until March 1945, although part of this service was in name only because there was a shortage of supplies and we had nothing very much to send to Ambon. In September 1944 I was appointed commanding officer of the 23rd Special Naval Base detachment at Kendari, which was under the command of the Second Southern Area Dispatch Fleet. I remained in this assignment until 16 December 1945. In the beginning of April 1945 I was appointed commanding officer of the Tokkei Tai stationed at Kendari.

Q Do you know of any Americans being detained at Kendari?

A Yes. I know of nine men in October 1944 and one man in January 1945, and two men in February 1945.

Q Will you tell me what you know of the nine men in October 1944?

A A PBV-5 (?) left Morotai 1 October 1944 on a flight to Celebes. On that same day the plane was fired on and hit by Japanese gunfire and the plane crashed off the eastern coast of Celebes, north of Kendari near an island. I forgot the name of the island, probably Salabangka. I was told that eleven men were in the plane but two of them died in the crash.

The natives reported that nine men were on an island and also gave the approximate location and I dispatched a boat, about 70 or 80 tons, and about ten men to pick them up. They were brought to Kendari and I turned them over to Lt. Saburo TAKITA who was commanding officer of Tokkei Tai. As soon as the prisoners reached Kendari I informed Admiral Morikazu OSUGI at Makassar and Admiral Tamotsu FURUKAWA at Kendari. Admiral FURUKAWA was commanding officer of 23rd Air Unit. Admiral OSUGI was commanding officer of 23rd Special Naval Base.

Q Was Lt. TAKITA a member of the 23rd Special Naval Base unit?

A Yes.

Q How long were these nine Americans kept at Kendari?

A About six or seven weeks.

Q Were they interrogated while at Kendari?

A Yes, an interpreter, NOSE (civilian interpreter), was sent from Makassar and the staff officer of the 23rd Air Unit questioned them.

Q Do you know the first name of NOSE or where he is at present?

A I don't know his first name nor where he is.

Q What was the name of the staff officer who questioned them?

A The Senior Staff Officer was SONOKAW (FNU), Commander. He left in February 1946 for Japan.

Q Did you question the prisoners when they arrived in Kendari?

A Yes. I asked them some questions although no record was kept of this. I asked such questions as: name, rank, age, and how many times did they come to Kendari. All of them told me this was their first trip and that they had just come from America via Australia and New Guinea. I then told them that I was very sorry for them and that I would try and give them the best treatment possible. I advised them to answer the questions that would be asked by the authorities.

Q Do you remember the names of these men?

A There was a first lieutenant and I believe his name was either LIBBY or LIDDY. I don't remember the names of the others.

Q Do you know their ranks?

A I think they were non-commissioned officers. The lieutenant told me that the two who died were officers. The first lieutenant told me he was a navigator.

RESTRICTED

Q Were you the first one to question these men?

A I believe I was.

Q Did these nine Americans carry any papers or records of any sort?

A Yes, they had some pictures (wives, etc.), Japanese money, foreign money, glasses, and first aid kit. That's all about I remember now. They also had an IFF (Identification Friend or Foe) set. Tokkei Tai made a list of all the articles and sent me a list and I forwarded the list to Makassar. I received orders from Makassar to send the IFF set to Makassar. The other articles were kept by Tokkei Tai. I don't know what happened to the articles.

Q How were these prisoners dressed when you interrogated them?

A I believe one of them had khaki coveralls with a zipper. One was barefooted. Some had no shirt except undershirt. My memory is not clear and I am not sure about the dress.

Q Were you present when Tokkei Tai interrogated these prisoners?

A I passed the room several times but never stayed. I received a report from Tokkei Tai stating names, rank, age, and unit they were attached to. I sent the report back to Tokkei Tai. I believe NOSE took the report back to Makassar with him.

Q Were you present when the staff officer interrogated them?

A I passed several times but never stayed to listen.

Q When were these men interrogated in Tokkei Tai?

A About 10 October.

Q You say that these nine men were kept at the Tokkei Tai six or seven weeks. Then what happened?

A I received an order by radio about 23 November 1944 from Makassar to execute the nine American prisoners.

Q Who sent the message?

A Admiral OSUGI.

Q Exactly what did the message say?

A I don't remember the exact words. It either said to dispose of or execute the prisoners and I am not sure which but it was so worded that a possibility of mistake was very unlikely.

Q What action did you take upon receipt of this order?

A Lt. TAKITA brought the message to me and I told him

RESTRICTED

that we may as well go ahead with it. TAKITA said that he would make the arrangements and I told him that would be fine and that I would leave it up to him. TAKITA reported back to me that day and said that plans had been made to execute the prisoners the next day or two days later at about sunset. I approved of this plan and cautioned TAKITA to abide by the Samurai Code. About this time the Tokkei Tai received orders from the 23rd Air Unit at Kendari to send four of the prisoners to them. TAKITA brought the message to me. The order came from Commander SONOKAWA. I saw no order. TAKITA told me about it and I don't know how the message was sent. TAKITA said that the 23rd Air Unit wanted to execute four. The orders from Admiral OSUGI were to execute the nine prisoners so I didn't object to sending them for all that I was interested in was that they be executed and the place and by whom was immaterial. I heard that a car was sent from 23rd Air Unit to take the four back as it was about an hour drive.

Q
A

What happened to the other five?

They were executed either the next day or two days later as scheduled. I did not attend the execution but received the report from TAKITA. TAKITA did not attend the execution either but assigned Ensign CHUMA to do it. I thought at the time that Ensign CHUMA executed the five but I learned since that Ensign CHUMA executed only one and Ensign MITANI, Toshio, Warrant Officer OGAWA (FNU), Warrant Officer YAMAMOTO (FNU), Chief Petty Officer TANAKA (FNU), executed one each.

We heard that a Dutch plane was coming to investigate us 25 November 1945 so we talked it over and the conversation got around to American trials and we heard that Americans punished the ones who actually performed the execution as well as the one who ordered it done and it was at this time that I learned that CHUMA did not execute all of them but those I have just named also helped. I heard in this same conversation that the Americans punished the one who gave the orders as well as the one who performed the execution. We thought that some American officers were coming in that plane but when it came there were Dutchmen only, so I had done some unnecessary worrying.

Q
A

Who is the "we" you keep mentioning?

Just some people I ate with who had nothing to do with the incident. They had just heard about it. They were: Lt. NOSAKA, Lt. FUJINO, Ensign F.C. KAMI-KUBO, Ensign DAN, Lt. (jg) FUJITANI.

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

Q What else do you know about the execution?
 A TAKITA reported to me that the men had been executed and also brought a radio message for my signature. It stated that the prisoners had been executed as ordered by radio message number (?). I signed this message and it was sent to Admiral OSUGI and I never heard more. I would like to add that all Japanese radio messages are numbered and the number shows date and the hour.

Q You said you notified Admiral OSUGI that the nine men were executed. How do you know the four men ordered by Commander SONOKAWA were executed?

A One of my subordinates received a report from the 23rd Air Unit stating that the four men had been executed on same day. I don't know if the report was received by telephone or by messenger. I don't know who received the report nor the one who sent it.

Q Did this order to send these four men come from Admiral FURUKAWA or did it come from Commander SONOKAWA?

A Ordinarily Admiral FURUKAWA would give orders to Commander SONOKAWA but sometimes the Senior Staff Officers took matters in their own hands and later reported to Admiral FURUKAWA. I am not sure about this particular order.

Q Was this an order from Commander SONOKAWA or a mere request?

A It was an order from Commander SONOKAWA.

Q In the report that you received from the 23rd Air Unit did it state what unit or what personnel had performed the execution?

A The message that I received was a verbal report and it only stated that the men had been executed.

Q Was the original radio message that was sent from Makassar signed by Admiral OSUGI?

A When messages are sent it must be signed or stamped by some officer with authority. This particular message was sent to the commanding officer of the Kendari Dispatch Unit which was myself. It was sent from 23rd Special Naval Base Headquarters. Although the message did not have "headquarters" written on it, it had a symbol of headquarters. The symbol is a triangular flag that is used only by the headquarters and I had previously received messages with this symbol and they had been sent from Admiral OSUGI and there was no doubt in my mind about this one. And after this I received other radio messages with the same symbol which had come from OSUGI.

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

- Q When you sent the radio message about the nine Americans having been executed, did you send it to the commanding officer of the 23rd Special Naval Base?
- A Yes, I put the same symbol that designated the headquarters of the 23rd Special Naval Base and with that symbol it had to go to the highest ranking officer for his signature.
- Q Do you know where Lt. Saburo TAKITA is at present?
- A He left Kendari about 9th or 10th of February 1945 for Japan.
- Q Do you by chance know TAKITA's home address in Japan?
- A Kagawa Ken.
- Q Do you know his occupation?
- A He is an officer in the merchant marine.
- Q How old is TAKITA?
- A About 50 years old.
- Q Can you describe him?
- A He was about 5 feet, 2 or 3 inches tall, weighed about 120 pounds. He had false teeth. He wore glasses when reading. Has quite a large amount of hair for an old man. He has a mustache.
- Q Do you know where Ensign HITANI, Toshio, Warrant Officer OGAWA, Warrant Officer YAMAMOTO, Chief Petty Officer TANAKA and Ensign CHUMA are now?
- A HITANI is here; OGAWA, Benten; YAMAMOTO, Benten; TANAKA, is here; CHUMA, unknown.
- Q Do you know where Admiral Tanetsu FURUKAWA is at present?
- A The 23rd Air Unit moved to Java in March of last year and the admiral went to Java at that time. I don't know where he is at present.
- Q Do you know where Commander SONOKAWA (FNU) is at present?
- A He left Kendari sometime in February 1945 and went to Makassar on his way to Japan.
- Q Can you describe SONOKAWA?
- A No. I remember no distinguishing features about him.
- Q Do you know where in Japan he lives?
- A No.
- Q Where were these five Americans buried?
- A They were buried in the same place where they were executed about 200 yards from the barracks of the Rikhei Tai (Land Guard Unit).

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

Q Are the bodies still there?

A Of course.

Q Did you ever repair the graves of those five Americans?

A I had some stones placed around the grave.

Q Do you have anything else you want to tell us about the nine Americans?

A Yes. I would like to say this. I hear that the authorities from Makassar are denying that the message was sent but it is true. We anticipated an Allied landing in July 1945 and we destroyed all of our records or I could show you the message I received and a copy of the one I sent. I had no reason to execute these men. I had been in command of this unit for only two months and it was a decision too important for me to make.

Q Tell us about the other three Americans who were detained in Kendari last year?

A About the 15th or 16 of January 1945 a flight of about 30 P-38s came over and bombed an airstrip about 40 or 50 kilometers from Kendari. One of these planes was shot down and the searching party was sent out by the 23rd Air Unit and one American was found about the 18th or 19th of January in an empty hut in the evening. He was taken to the hospital of the 23rd Air Unit the following day.

Q How long did he stay in the hospital there?

A He stayed in the hospital two or three days. He was wounded in the head and chest.

Q After he had been in the hospital where did he go?

A He was brought to Kendari Tokkei Tai about the 23rd or 24th and placed in the hospital of the Tokkei Tai.

Q Did you see him when he was brought to Kendari?

A Yes, I saw him, the first day he was brought to Kendari. I went out when I heard that an automobile came in and I saw the American standing by it.

Q Where were you when you talked to this American?

A I talked to him in the office of the Tokkei Tai.

Q What did you talk to him about?

A I told him that I was commanding officer of that detachment and that his wounds would be taken care of by the doctor. And I told him that if there is anything he wanted, to let me know and would make him as comfortable as possible. I had already heard that he was a major and his name was ENDERS (?) (FNU).

Q Did you ask him any questions at that time?

A No. He was a patient and besides it was not my duty.

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

- Q Was the major wounded in any way?
A Yes. He had a wound in the head and I heard he had internal injuries in the chest. He had a bandage around his head and also one around his chest.
- Q Do you know where the major came from?
A I did not hear exactly. I think all planes attacking Kendari came from Morotai. I understood that the major was the flight commander of the flight of P-38s.
- Q How long was the major kept in Kendari Tokkei Tai?
A Less than a month I believe. He stayed there less than a month and it was the 13th of February 1945 that I received an order to send him to Makassar. I mentioned that to a doctor and he told me that the major had died that morning.
- Q Was the major interrogated while he was at Kendari Tokkei Tai?
A I heard that the officers from the 23rd Air Unit came down two or three times to question the American prisoner.
- Q Do you know the names of those officers?
A. I don't know.
- Q Do you know who acted as interpreter?
A I don't know exactly but I suppose NOSE was called.
- Q Do you know NOSE's first name?
A No.
- Q Do you know where he is now?
A No.
- Q Did the major receive proper medical attention?
A Yes. The major received proper medical attention. Special food was prepared for him because we knew that he was not accustomed to our own food.
- Q Did you see the major quite often during the time he was in Kendari?
A I saw him only once; that was the date he arrived.
- Q Who was the doctor that treated the major?
A Lieutenant FUJINO (FNU).
- Q Where is he now?
A Benten.
- Q Where was the major buried?
A Major ENDLERS was buried about 200 yards east of the barracks.

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

Q Was the major wounded in any way?

A Yes. He had a wound in the head and I heard he had internal injuries in the chest. He had a bandage around his head and also one around his chest.

Q Do you know where the major came from?

A I did not hear exactly. I think all planes attacking Kendari came from Morotai. I understood that the major was the flight commander of the flight of P-38s.

Q How long was the major kept in Kendari Tokkei Tai?

A Less than a month I believe. He stayed there less than a month and it was the 13th of February 1945 that I received an order to send him to Makassar. I mentioned that to a doctor and he told me that the major had died that morning.

Q Was the major interrogated while he was at Kendari Tokkei Tai?

A I heard that the officers from the 23rd Air Unit came down two or three times to question the American prisoner.

Q Do you know the names of those officers?

A. I don't know.

Q Do you know who acted as interpreter?

A I don't know exactly but I suppose NOSE was called.

Q Do you know NOSE's first name?

A No.

Q Do you know where he is now?

A No.

Q Did the major receive proper medical attention?

A Yes. The major received proper medical attention. Special food was prepared for him because we knew that he was not accustomed to our own food.

Q Did you see the major quite often during the time he was in Kendari?

A I saw him only once; that was the date he arrived.

Q Who was the doctor that treated the major?

A Lieutenant FUJINO (FNU).

Q Where is he now?

A Benten.

Q Where was the major buried?

A Major ENDLRS was buried about 200 yards east of the barracks.

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

Q Do you know of anything more about Major ENDERS?
A No.

Q Will you tell us about the two other men you mentioned being detained by the Tokkei Tai in February 1945?

A About the 16th or 17th of February 1945 one American non-commissioned officer was brought to the Tokkei Tai. The next day another American non-commissioned officer was brought to the Tokkei Tai. I don't know what type of plane they had come from nor do I know who apprehended them and brought them to the Tokkei Tai. As each man was brought to the Tok'ei Tai he was brought to the headquarters and I talked to him there. They were then taken to the Tokkei Tai and kept there about four or five days and then they were taken to Makassar by Chief Petty Officer SO, Shigeru and I believe they were turned over to the Makassar Tokkei Tai. I don't know if they were investigated while they were at Tokkei Tai or not.

Q When you talked to these men one at a time, did you hear their names?

A Yes, I asked their names but I have forgotten.

Q Do you remember the rank of these men?

A One man told me he was a corporal. I don't know the rank of the other except he was a non-commissioned officer.

Q What action did you take when these two men were brought to the Tokkei Tai?

A I sent a message to the headquarters of the 23rd Special Naval Base in Makassar when each American was brought to the Tokkei Tai. As a result of this radiogram I received orders from Makassar to send the two Americans to Makassar. I sent them by boat with Petty Officer SO in charge of them.

Q Do you know what finally happened to the two Americans?

A I never heard anything further about them.

Q I was told that you had a watch and ring in your possession. What was the make of the watch?

A Omega. I wanted a watch and I asked the Tokkei Tai to send me one. I know they had such things in their possession and Warrant Officer WAKASUGI (FNU) sent this watch to me. WAKASUGI took CHUFA's place when CHUMA left.

Q What did you do with the watch?

A After the war ended we were not sure for a couple of weeks that the war was actually over but when we became convinced that the war was over I decided to destroy the evidence and I threw it in the Kendari Bay about 25 or 26 of August 1945.

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

Q Where did you get the ring?

A When I moved to my new headquarters about 14 or 15 of October, SATO, Torao brought this ring to me. Before this, an order had been issued that all such evidence should be destroyed.

Q Who issued this order?

A I think Vice-Admiral SHIBATA, Yaichiro issued it. He was commanding officer of the 2nd Southern Area Dispatch Fleet.

Q Can you describe the ring?

A It looked like the one you have on (an ordinary College class ring, yellow gold with a black set).

Q Was it an Air Corps ring?

A I don't know.

Q When did SATO bring this ring to you?

A About the middle of October 1945.

Q Where did SATO get the ring?

A He said it belonged to Major ENDERS.

Q Did he tell you where he got it?

A No. He just told me it had belonged to Major ENDERS.

Q What did you do with it?

A I told him to leave it with me. The next day I threw it in the sea.

Q Was force, threats, duress, or coercion used in taking this statement from you?

A No.

Q Was any promise of reward, immunity, or consideration given as a result of this statement?

A No.

Q Have you anything further to add to your statement?

A No.

/s/ Gosuke Taniguchi
GOSUKE TANIGUCHI

NETHERLANDS INDIES)
CELEBES) SS
CITY OF MAKASSAR)

RESTRICTED

I, GOSUKE TANIGUCHI, being duly sworn on oath, state that I had read to me and understood the translation of the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein, consisting of nine (9) pages, are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Gosuke Taniguchi
GOSUKE TANIGUCHI

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 12 day of April, 1946.

/s/ Warren G. Hawkins
WARREN G. HAWKINS, 1st Lt., INF.
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment

I have re-read the above statement this 4 day of May 1946 on board FS 319 and all answers are true. I have no change to make or supplemental statement to dictate.

/s/ Gosuke Taniguchi

↑ NETHERLANDS INDIES)
CELEBES) SS
CITY OF MAKASSAR)

I, MASAO DOUE, T/3, ASN 30111100, War Crimes Branch, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions and answers given from English to Japanese and from Japanese to English, and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing nine (9) pages, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence affixed his signature thereto.

/s/ Masao Doue
MASAO DOUE

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 12 day of April, 1946.

/s/ Warren G. Hawkins
WARREN G. HAWKINS, 1st Lt., INF.
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

C E R T I F I C A T E

We, WARREN G. HAWKINS, 1st Lt., O-540420, INF. and LAWRENCE S. TOHILL, 1st Lt., O-926022, FA, certify that on 11th day of April, 1946, personally appeared before us GOSUKE TANIGUCHI, and according to MASAO DOUE, gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth therein; that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said GOSUKE TANIGUCHI had read to him by the said interpreter the same and affixed his signature thereto in our presence.

Makassar, Celebes
(Place)

/s/ Warren G. Hawkins
WARREN G. HAWKINS, 1st Lt., INF.
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment

12 April 1946
(Date)

/s/ Lawrence S. Tohill
LAWRENCE S. TOHILL, 1st Lt., FA
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment

RESTRICTED

Evidentiary Document 5532

問、貴下は名が宛附に懸たりの口上り大志野藩に懸指の口上り
多々、國河内迄に口上命令たる目録に宛附に懸たりの口上り何の
下品に下井に下り。

答、私、部下一人が目録に同様の宛附に懸たりの口上り送付に
三航空隊に懸指に懸たりの口上り、私に懸指の宛附に懸たりの
口上り使者に懸付たる口上り送付に懸付たる。私に懸指に懸付たる口上り
モシテ送付たる人モ送付に懸付。

* * * * *

谷口剛輔(署名)

蘭領印度
セシグス
マツサル市 } 55

私、谷口剛輔(正武)宣稱、上、私に懸付たる口上り、前記懸指、
纏訳文が私に懸付たる口上り送付に懸付たる口上り及其處に懸指に懸付たる
口上り成り送付、送付に懸付たる私に懸指、宛指及信念に懸付たる口上り
口上り陳述ス。

谷口剛輔(署名)

一九四六年四月十二日余、面前に於て懸指の宣稱セリ。

戦争犯罪調査会遣隊調査官中尉

カネハシ、G、ホーサニス(署名)

私一九四六年五月四日、丁、三一九号船上にて前掲陳述書を再讀
シテ、而して凡て送答に懸付。私に懸付たる書変更又は送付に懸付たる
陳述ナリ。

No. 1. ★

Doc 5532

蘭領印度
セシベス
マカッサル市 } SS

谷口剛輔 / 署名 /

私、トウ・マサヲ (戦争犯罪課技術三等曹長、上 / 認識番号
三〇一一〇〇号) に正式宣誓の上、訊問及、返答ヲ英語ヨリ日本
語ニ又日本語ヨリ英語ニ至ルノ翻訳ニ又此上及、轉寫作製ノ後、私
ノ真言、成ル前掲口供書ヲ証人ニ至ルノ翻訳ニ証人ノ此處ニ於テ私
ノ面前ニシテ署名シタルコトヲ陳述ス。

トウ・マサヲ / 署名 /

一九四六年四月十二日 私、面前ニ、トウ・マサヲ宣誓セリ

戦争犯罪調査隊調査官若井中尉

トウ・マサヲ / 署名 /

証 明 書

私達、トウ・マサヲ若井中尉、〇一五〇〇四一〇、及、ロ・J・K・S・L・U
野砲中尉、〇一五〇〇三三、(一九四六年四月十二日私達、前ニ谷口剛輔ノ個人
的証言ニ於テトウ・マサヲニ至ルコトヲ提出シタル質問ニ對シ前提
ノ返答ヲシ、且、彼ノ証言、轉寫ノ作製ヲシタル後、前記谷口剛輔
ノ前記翻訳ニ對シ口書ヲ讀ミ、且、私達、面前ニ於テ、トウ・マサヲ
タルコトヲ証明ス。

(場所) セシベス マカッサル

(日期) 一九四六年四月十二日

戦争犯罪調査隊調査官若井中尉 トウ・マサヲ / 署名 /

戦争犯罪調査隊調査官野砲中尉 ロ・J・K・S・L・U / 署名 /

No. 22

RESTRICTED

C. # 1801

NICHINORI NAKAMURA, after having been duly sworn, testified on the United States FS 319 en route from Makassar to Manado in the Strait of Makassar, on 26 April, 1946, as follows:

STATEMENT OF COLONEL NICHINORI NAKAMURA:

I have spoken with my counsel, Mr. Yukio YOSHIKAWA and Mr. Masumi TAKAHASHI, who are both present here now, and I desire to make a statement concerning the execution of five Americans at Singkang. The reason for this statement is that I have always followed the law and that my name Michinori means "acquainted with the rules". I also am desirous of saving you from any further trouble because I had made up my mind to tell the truth either after I have spoken to Major ODAKURA, Toshitake or upon the trial in Manila.

QUESTIONS BY LT. FORMOSCH:

Will you tell me in chronological order everything you know concerning such execution?

I returned to Singkang about July 23, 1945 from an inspection trip. When I returned I again had Major ODAKURA see Lt. Colonel ISHIRO, Shigeru who was on the staff of Lt. General TESHIMA, for the purpose of having the five American fliers removed from the Kempai Tai jail to the Second Army jurisdiction. I had been attempting to have these Americans so removed ever since I arrived at Singkang in June. My reason for desiring this transfer of the American prisoners was that they interfered with the Kempai Tai questioning of natives as well as the duties of the Kempai Tai because guards had to be supplied for the Americans. I also felt that these were Second Army prisoners and therefore should be kept by the Second Army. After my return on July 23, I again sent Major ODAKURA to see Lt. Colonel ISHIRO about this transfer, but the first time I sent him he reported that he had seen someone else on the staff because ISHIRO was away. I then sent ODAKURA a second time to see ISHIRO. I do not know the exact date of the second time ODAKURA went to see ISHIRO but I do know that ODAKURA returned to me that same day and reported to me, and that three days later the execution was held, and I believe such execution was held in the very last two or three days of July, 1945.

When ODAKURA returned to me after his second attempt to see ISHIRO, he, ODAKURA, told me that he had had a conversation with ISHIRO. ODAKURA said

RESTRICTED

that ISHIRO had suggested to him that the Kenpei Tai dispose of the Americans. Since in my opinion such a suggestion was an order, I ordered ODAURA to execute the Americans. I do not recall whether I told ODAURA to prepare plans for such execution or whether ODAURA thereafter brought such plans to me for approval. At that time ODAURA told me that the execution would be held back of the Leper Hospital and he told me the date and time at which it would be conducted. I do not remember the exact date. It has been so long ago that I have forgotten whether ODAURA gave me a written plan or whether it was verbal. The details of this plan are rather hazy in my mind. I did not spend too much time reviewing the plan of ODAURA, because I felt that as commander of the Southern Celebes Kenpei Tai he knew what his duties were. I do remember that about three days afterwards I got up at about six o'clock and left the Kenpei Tai quarters with ODAURA and Lieutenant KAHISUKI, Kotaro in company with about eight or twelve others. I do not remember the names or features of any of the others except that I recall Warrant Officer MATSUMOTO, Kunio and Sergeant OKAZAKI, Kazuaki. We went along the road to Watanpone until we passed the Second Army jail. We then turned left and cut across the field until we arrived at the place of execution. This was a small clearing surrounded by trees and bushes. There was one very large tree at one extreme end of the clearing and at the other end of the clearing were two smaller trees. A grave had been dug between these trees in such clearing. ODAURA, KAHISUKI and I went to one end of the clearing where the two small trees were. The Americans were kept at the large tree and were there blindfolded. It was becoming lighter at that time although it was still fairly dark. I remember that one American after another was brought up to the grave from the tree, placed in a kneeling position and then executed. I saw each American executed but I cannot remember who executed these Americans. I do not remember the names of the executioners nor do I remember their features. If I saw them now I don't think I would remember them.

It rained a little during the execution and I remember that someone handed me a raincoat. I did not bring such raincoat with me. I was dressed in my usual uniform but I don't believe I carried a sword. After the execution KAHISUKI and I walked back to the Kenpei Tai headquarters. I don't believe ODAURA returned with us. When we arrived at the Kenpei Tai I did not go into the office but went to my hut because I had not eaten breakfast.

RESTRICTED

Some time that day I remember definitely that I ordered ODAURA to report the execution to the Second Army headquarters. I do remember that ODAURA reported to me that he had reported but I do not remember the date ODAURA so reported to me.

Q Between the day of the execution and August 14, 1945 did you ever see ISHIRO?

A I did not.

Q Between the execution and August 14, did you see Lt. General TESHIMA?

A I did.

Q Did you speak about the execution?

A We did not although I believe that he knew about the execution.

Q Why do you say that and upon what facts do you base such statement?

A Because an execution can only be ordered by General TESHIMA. No one on the staff has the authority to make such an order. ISHIRO could not order the execution unless TESHIMA first ordered it. ISHIRO could have prepared such order and then brought it in for TESHIMA's signature but in such event it would be TESHIMA's order and not ISHIRO's. Since the execution had been suggested I felt that ISHIRO must have either received orders from TESHIMA or else obtained TESHIMA's order after the suggestion had been made.

Q Is that the only reason why you say that TESHIMA must have known about the execution?

A Yes.

Q Since the execution have you ever spoken to anyone about it?

A Besides what I have already said, I spoke to Colonel ISHIRO at Mandai Prisoner of War Camp near Makassar, during the latter part of January, 1946. I asked ISHIRO what he meant when he had suggested to ODAURA that the Kempei Tai dispose of the Americans. ISHIRO said to me that he thought the Americans could be used to listen to shortwave broadcasts or to work around the Kempei Tai headquarters. I told ISHIRO that the Kempei Tai had nothing to do with listening to broadcasts and of what use could they make of the Americans around the Kempei Tai. I then said to ISHIRO that under such circumstances what else was there to do but to execute the Americans. ISHIRO then said that that was his, ISHIRO's, mistake because he should have definitely told ODAURA not to execute the Americans but to put them to work or send them some place else.

RESTRICTED

Some time that day I remember definitely that I ordered ODAURA to report the execution to the Second Army headquarters. I do remember that ODAURA reported to me that he had reported but I do not remember the date ODAURA so reported to me.

Q Between the day of the execution and August 14, 1945 did you ever see ISHIRO?

A I did not.

Q Between the execution and August 14, did you see Lt. General TESHIMA?

A I did.

Q Did you speak about the execution?

A We did not although I believe that he knew about the execution.

Q Why do you say that and upon what facts do you base such statement?

A Because an execution can only be ordered by General TESHIMA. No one on the staff has the authority to make such an order. ISHIRO could not order the execution unless TESHIMA first ordered it. ISHIRO could have prepared such order and then brought it in for TESHIMA's signature but in such event it would be TESHIMA's order and not ISHIRO's. Since the execution had been suggested I felt that ISHIRO must have either received orders from TESHIMA or else obtained TESHIMA's order after the suggestion had been made.

Q Is that the only reason why you say that TESHIMA must have known about the execution?

A Yes.

Q Since the execution have you ever spoken to anyone about it?

A Besides what I have already said, I spoke to Colonel ISHIRO at Mandai Prisoner of War Camp near Makassar, during the latter part of January, 1946. I asked ISHIRO what he meant when he had suggested to ODAURA that the Kempei Tai dispose of the Americans. ISHIRO said to me that he thought the Americans could be used to listen to shortwave broadcasts or to work around the Kempei Tai headquarters. I told ISHIRO that the Kempei Tai had nothing to do with listening to broadcasts and of what use could they make of the Americans around the Kempei Tai. I then said to ISHIRO that under such circumstances what else was there to do but to execute the Americans. ISHIRO then said that that was his, ISHIRO's, mistake because he should have definitely told ODAURA not to execute the Americans but to put them to work or send them some place else.

Q Do you remember when the present group of Americans, of whom I am a member, began this investigation at Mendai?

A Yes.

Q Since we began this investigation at Mendai did you ever speak to Lt. KAMISUKI, Kotaro, Shiro SATO, or Tokujiro KATO concerning this execution?

A Yes but only to KAMISUKI and then he told me that I was justified.

Q Did you ever order KAMISUKI to warn SATO, KATO, and anyone else at the camp not to disclose anything about the execution?

A Yes.

Q What did you tell KAMISUKI to warn these others about?

A I told them to hold out about disclosing any information as long as they possibly could.

Q [Was there any court martial held of these five American prisoners before the execution?

A No. There was never any court martial, hearing, trial or other legal process given to these five Americans. I knew that they could not be executed without a court martial and the Kempei Tai has no power to execute any prisoner without a court martial. The Kempei Tai had no power to execute a prisoner without a court martial or an order from higher authority.]

Q Is your hearing and eye-sight good?

A Yes, they are perfect.

Q Was force, threats, duress, or coercion used in taking this statement from you?

A No.

Q Was any promise of reward, immunity, or consideration given as a result of this statement?

A No.

Q Do you have anything further to add to this statement?

A Yes. Another reason why I felt that TESHIMA must have given approval was because I always told ODAURA that even the natives must have received a court martial or hearing before being executed and if I followed this procedure in the natives I certainly followed it in the Americans' case. Also, while at the execution place, I recall that of the several people there I recognized at least two as being soldiers from the Second Army jail although I cannot give you their names nor can I remember them even if they were brought before me now.]

RESTRICTED

Q Have you anything further to add to this statement?
A No.

(Signed in Japanese characters)
NICHINORI NAKAMURA

↑
NETHERLANDS EAST INDIES)
ISLAND OF CEBUES) SS
TOWN OF LANADO)
↓

I, NICHINORI NAKAMURA, being duly sworn on oath, state that I had read to me and understood the translation of the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, and all answers contained therein, consisting of four (4) pages, are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

(Signed in Japanese characters)
NICHINORI NAKAMURA

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 28 day of April 1946.

/s/ Morris D. Forkosch
MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., INF
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment.

RESTRICTED

NETHERLANDS EAST INDIES)
 ISLAND OF CELEBES) SS
 TOWN OF MANADO)

I, MASAO DOUE, T/3, ASN 30111100, War Crimes Branch, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions and answers given from English to Japanese and from Japanese to English respectively, and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing four (4) pages, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence affixed his signature thereto.

/s/ Masao Doue
 MASAO DOUE

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 28 day of April, 1946.

/s/ Morris D. Forkosch
 MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., INF
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment.

C E R T I F I C A T E

We, EDWARD W. GREGORY, 1st Lt., O-1590553, QMC and MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., O-1336900, INF, certify that on 26th day of April, 1946, personally appeared before us MICHINORI NAKAMURA, and according to MASAO DOUE, gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth therein; and that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said MICHINORI NAKAMURA had read to him by the said interpreter the same and affixed his signature thereto in our presence.

Manado, Celebes

/s/ Edward W. Gregory
 EDWARD W. GREGORY, 1st Lt., QMC
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment.

28 April, 1946.

/s/ Morris D. Forkosch
 MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., INF
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment.

NETHERLANDS EAST INDIES)
 ISLAND OF CELEBES) SS
 TOWN OF MANADO)

I, MASAO DOUE, T/3, ASN 30111100, War Crimes Branch, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions and answers given from English to Japanese and from Japanese to English respectively, and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing four (4) pages, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence affixed his signature thereto.

/s/ Masao Doue
 MASAO DOUE

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 28 day of April, 1946.

/s/ Morris D. Forkosch
 MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., INF
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment.

C E R T I F I C A T E

We, EDWARD W. GREGORY, 1st Lt., O-1590553, QMC and MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., O-1336900, INF, certify that on 26th day of April, 1946, personally appeared before us MICHINORI NAKAMURA, and according to MASAO DOUE, gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth therein; and that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said MICHINORI NAKAMURA had read to him by the said interpreter the same and affixed his signature thereto in our presence.

Manado, Celebes

/s/ Edward W. Gregory
 EDWARD W. GREGORY, 1st Lt., QMC
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment.

28 April, 1946.

/s/ Morris D. Forkosch
 MORRIS D. FORKOSCH, 2nd Lt., INF
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment.

「フォークウシエ」中尉ニヨル 訊問

ソノ処刑ノ件ニ就テ是方が知ツテキル總テニコトヲ、日附順ニ話シテ下サ。

一答一私ハ一九四五年七月二十三日頃ニ、或ル視察旅行ノカラスンカン

へ歸ツテキマシ名 帰ツテ来ルト私ハモウ一度、小田村少佐ヲ、

牛島中將ノ幕僚デアツタ猪代茂中佐ニ会ヒニウカセマシタ。

ソレハソノ五名ノアメリカ人ニ飛行士ヲ憲兵隊ニ送リ倉カラ

第二軍官下へ移サセルタメデシタ。私ハ六月ニ「シンカン」ニ乗テ

以來、ソレヲ「アメリカ人」ニ飛行士達ヲソウイフ風ニ移動セセマツト

企テ、キタノデシタ。私ガソノ「アメリカ人」僥倖達ヲ移サウト望

ソダワケハ、ソノ僥倖達が原住民ヲ訊問スル憲兵隊ニ干渉シ

タリ、又「アメリカ人」ニ対スル看守ガ附ケラレネバナラナカツカス

憲兵隊ノ職務モ干渉シタカラデス。又私ハ彼等ハオニ軍一

No. 1

5521

中村通則 一九四六年四月二十六日、マカッサル海峡ニ於テ「マカッサル」ヨリ「マナド」ヘ航行中、「アキカ船」F.S.三一九号ニテ、正堂ニ宣折言ノ上陳述ス。

陸軍大佐 中村通則ノ陳述。

私ハ私ノ辯護人吉川幸雄氏及高橋喜澄氏 T.N. 日本人名

音譯 以下同断ト相談ヲシマシタ。ソノ兩人トモ今コニ居リ

マス。デ私ハ「シンカン」ニ於ケル五名ノ「アメリカ人」知刑ノ事ニ就テ

申シ述ベタイト思ヒマス。コノ陳述ヲ致ス理由ハ私ハ常ニ法規ニ從ワテ来コシタシ又、私ノ名ノ册モ「諸規定」ニ通ジテナルトイフ意味

ガカラテス。私ハ又コレ以上皆様ニ活字數ヲカケタクナイト思ヒマス。

トイフハ私ハ小田村利武少佐ニ話シタ後カ、或ヒハ「マニラ」ニ於ケル

審理ノ折ニ、事實アリノマ、ヲ述ベマウト決心シテキルカラ、デアリマス。

5521

停業ナシカラ、亦ニ軍が此旨通スベキテアルト考ヘタガデアリス。
 七月二十三日ニ帰ツテカラ再ビ私ハ、移動問題ニ関シテ、
 小田村少佐ヲ猪代中佐ニ念ヒニカセマシタ。シカシ最初ニ私ガ、
 小田村少佐ヲヤツタ時ニ、彼ハ猪代ガ留守ガツタノニ甚泰條申シ、
 誰カ外ノ者ト念ツテキタトイフコトマシタ。ソコテ私ハ再度小田村ヲ
 猪代ニ念ヒニヤリマシタ。私ハ小田村ガソノニ念目ニ猪代ニ念ヒシ
 多日ハハッキリ覺テ居リマセンガ、小田村ガ其日、内ニ帰ツテキテ、報
 シタ事及ビソノ三日後、カノ処刑ガ行ハルタ事ト覺テ居リマス。
 ソシテ私ハソノ処刑ガ行ハルタハ一九四五年、七月末、二三日間タツタ
 ト信ジマス。

小田村ガ二回目ニ猪代ニ念ヒ行ツカラ、私ハ沙人書面ヲキタ時、
~~彼ハ小田村ヲ猪代ニ念ヒ行ツカラ、私ハ沙人書面ヲキタ時、~~ 彼ハ小田村ハ
 猪代ト語ツテキタトイフコトヲ私ニ告ゲマシタ。小田村ハ憲兵隊
 アリ、アメリカ人運送処置セルヤウ猪代ガ彼ニ示唆シタト申
 シマシタ。私ハ猪代ハ示唆ハソノ命令ヲ思ツテ、小田村ニ「アメリカ
 人運送処置セルヤウ云々」云々マシタ。私ハ小田村ニソノ処刑ヲスルタメニ
 手筈ヲ懸ルヤウニ命令マシタ。又ハソノ後、小田村ガソノ手筈ニ就
 テ、私ハ承認ヲボメニ来リカドウカ覺テ居リマセン。当时小田村
 ハ処刑ハ癩病院、重石手ヲ行ハルルハツテ、ソノ日取リト時刻
 モ私ニ知ラセマシタ。

No. 2

私ハソノ正確ナル日附ハ覺テ居リマセン。ソレハモウズト前ノユトテ
 ス。小田村ハ私ハ沙人書面ニヨツテ計畫ヲ提出シタカ、口頭ヲ
 云ツテキタカ忘レマシタ。コノ計畫、詳細ニ就テハ私ハ記憶ニ
 ハッキリシマセン。私ハ小田村ハ計畫ヲソノナニ時間ヲ費シテ編

552!

せせす。ソレハ南郡にせしむる意を以て、小田村ハ
 自分ノ職務ニ就テハヨク承知シテ此ハツト思フカラズ。ソレカラ三日ハカリ後、私ハ朝六時頃迄キテ、八人乃至十人、皆ヲ
 引キ連レテ小田村トシテ、カニスキコウタロウ中尉トテ、茶三定身隊
 宿舎ヲ出テ、テマツル。松平國権准尉ト同崎一朗軍曹、
 外ハソノ同行者、若原、名カヤ、齊ヲ想ヒ、記スニハ、イキマシ。
 私達ハワタクボウノト路ヲ違ヒ、又テオニ軍收容所ニ過ギマ
 シク、ソレカラ私共ハ九ノ曲リ、野原ヲ横切リ、~~新~~新場ノ着キマシ。
 ソレハ一寸シタ空地ヲ、樹木ヤサ敷ニ取圍メテ居マシク、ソノ空
 地ノ一方ノ端ニ一本ノ非常ニ大キナ木ガアリ、他ノ端ニハソレヨリセ小キイ
 木ガ二本アリマシク、其ノ間、ソノ空地ノコシ、木々ノ間ニ樹ヲ
 レテアリマシク、小田村トカニスキトシテ、私ハ空地ノ小キイ木ガ二本下ル
 方ノ端ニ登リマシク、カノ方ヨリ大キナ木ノ幹ニ引キ登リテ、居ル。
 自覚シテサレテ、木ノ名、木ノ相違、皆ヲアリマシク、ソノ時、逆リ
 ハ、ソノ方ヨリ、此ノ方ヨリマシク、私ハアメリカ人達ガ一人ノ一人ノ所
 カラ、皆ハ、亦ハ連レテ、行カレリテ、膝ヲツキテ坐ラセテ、処刑シタ、
 マ、覺シテ居リマス。私ハアメリカ人ガ一人ノ一人ノ処刑サレ、ソノ目ヲ居リ
 マシク、誰ガ、処刑ヲヤツタカ、見テ居リマシク、私ハ処刑ヲシタ
 者、澤ノ名カ、モ覚シテ、十ヶレハ、顔ヲ記憶ガアリマシク、モシ今、
 私ガ、ソノ人々ニ逢フツトシテ、モ想ヒ出ヌキ、出来ナク、モアリマシク、

No. 3

552!

女セテシタ名 リレハ南郡^ノ也シベ^ニ意^ハ告^ル事^ニ以^テ小^ノ村^ハ
 自分^ノ職^務ニ就^テハ多^ク承^知シテキルハツト思^フタカ^クス。
 リレカラ三日^ハカ^レ後^ニ私^ハ朝^六時^頃迄^キ三人^乃至^テ十^人、皆^ヲ
 引^キ連^レシタ^ト田^村ト^カニ^スキ^コウ^タロ^ウ中^尉ト^共ニ^憲兵^隊
 宿^舎ヲ^出タ^ステ^電ハ^キマ^ス。私^ハ國^權准^尉上^岡崎^一明^軍曹^長、
 外^ハソ^ノ同^行ノ^若原^一名^ガヤ^ノ教^ヲ想^ヒ記^ステ^ハイ^テマ^シマ^シ。
 私^ハ運^ハワ^クム^ボウ^ノハ^ト略^ステ^運ビ[、]又^テオ^ニ軍^收容^隊ヲ^送ギ^マ
 シ^タ。リ^レカ^ラ私^ハ共^ハ九^人曲^リ野^原ヲ^横切^リテ[、]刑^場ハ^着キ^マシ^タ。
 リ^レハ^一寸^シタ^空地^ニ、樹^木々^廿數^ニ取^圍マ^シテ^居リ^マシ^タ。ソ^ノ空
 地^ハ一^方、端^ニ一^本、非常^ニ太^キナ^木ガ^アリ、他^ノ端^ハリ^レヨ^リセ^小サ^イ
 木^ガ二^本ア^リマ^シタ^{。其}ハ^一箇^所、ソ^ノ空^地、コ^ノ木^々、同^ニ植^ラ
 レ^タア^リマ^シタ^{。小}田^村ト^カニ^スキ[、]私^ハ空^地、小^サナ^木ガ^二本^アル
 カ[、]端^ニ登^リマ^シタ^カ、ア^リマ^シタ^{。大}木^ハ、引^キ据^ラレ^テ居^リマ^シタ。
 自^然シ^タサ^レテ^木々^ノ名[、]木^々相^違者^ヲア^リマ^シタ^{。ソ}ノ^時、思^ハ
 ハ^シマ^シタ^{。私}ハ^アメ^リカ^人達^ガ一^人ノ^大木^ノ所[、]所
 カ[、]登^リテ[、]方^ハ連^レテ[、]行^カレ^テ、藤^ヲツ^クテ[、]坐^ラセ^テ居^リテ[、]処^刑シ^タ、
 マ^ノ電^三ヲ^居リ^マシ^タ。私^ハア^メリ^カ人^ガ一^人ノ^処刑^サレ^ルヲ^思テ^居リ
 マ^シタ^{。誰}ガ[、]誰^ガ、処^刑ヲ^ヤツ^タテ[、]思^ヒテ^居リ^マシ^タ。私^ハ処^刑ヲ^シタ
 者^深ノ^名亦^モ思^ヒテ[、]木^々ノ^名ハ^顔モ^記憶^ガア^リマ^シタ^{。モ}シ^今、
 私^ガ、ソ^ノ人^々ニ^逢フ^リト^シテ^モ想^ヒ出^スエ^テ出^来ナ^リマ^シタ[。]

No. 3

5521

処刑の際少々雨が降ッテ居リ、誰カ私ニ雨衣ヲ渡シタラ覺
エテ居リマス、私ハソノ雨衣被ハ持ッテキテ車ヲカツタデス、私ハ
自分ノ常ノ軍服ヲ着テ車ヲマシテ、劍ハ着ケテ行カトカツタと思ヒマス、
処刑後分ミスキト私ハ憲兵隊司令部へ歩イテ歸リマシタ、小田村
ハ確カ私共ト一緒ニ歸ラトカツタヤウデス、私達ガ憲兵隊ニ着
イテモ、私ハ事務室へ行カズニ自分ノ小屋へ歸リマシタ、ソレハ未
ダ朝飯ヲ食ベテ車ヲカツタカラデス、ソノ日ノ何時頃デシタカ、私ハ小田村
ニ処刑ノコトヲオニ軍司令部へ報告シテオクヤウ言ヒツケタ、ソレハ
リト覺エテ居リマス、私ハ小田村ガ報告ヲシタコトヲ復命シテキタ
ラ覺エテ居リマスガ、小田村ガソウ復命シテキタ日ハ覺エテ居リマス

x x x x

向ソノ処刑刑ニソレヲ五名ノアメリカ人俘虜ニ対シ軍法會議カ開カ
レマシタカ、

答、ソノ軍法會議ヲ審問ヤ裁判ヤソ、外法律上ノ手續ハソノ五人ノ
アメリカ人ニ対シハ全然行ハレマセデシタ、私ハソレヲ俘虜連ハ
軍法會議ナシハ処刑スルコトハ出来ナイト憲兵隊モ軍法會議ヲ終ス
ル如何ナル俘虜トイヘドモ処刑スル權利ハソノコトヲ知ッテ居
リマシタ、憲兵隊ハ軍法會議乃至ハ上官ヨリノ命令ナシハ俘虜
ヲ処刑スルコトハ出来ナイデス、

x x x x

向、アタタコノ陳述ニ対シ何カ附ケ加ヘルコトガアリマスカ、

No 4

答、ハ、私ガ上級指揮官ガ承認ヲ与ヘタニキガヒト思ツタモウツノ理
由ハ、私ハソノ小田村ニ対シ原住民モ軍法會議カ審問ヲシタ後
下ナケレバ処刑ニテハソノコトヲ知ッテ居ラデ、モシ私ガ原住民ニ

7 5521

対して、手続を踏み出す事となす。アメリカ人達の場合に之勿論
ナシトテ其の管轄ス。又私が処刑場ニキレ向ニソノ場ニ居合ヒテ者、
皆テ、少クモ二名(赤十字軍收容所)ヲ末々軍人トシテ、タコトヲ想
ヒ出シテ、タコト二人、名前(今)寸合リマセシ。之(今)私(自)前ニ
立テ、来ラレクトシテ、一寸思ヒ出セトイフ也。

x x x x

中村通則署名

蘭領東印度
セシマス島
ナト町

余中村通則(正)ニ宣誓シ、上(自分)ニ対スル(前)述(記録)ノ飛
録(複製)ニ関シテ、了解(四原)ナリ、ソノ文中(ア)答(解)一切(自分)
加知(又)信(又)限(絶)了(具)実(ト)コトヲ(陳)述(ス)

中村通則署名

本一九四六年十月二十八日、余(前)ニ於テ署名(宣誓)スリ、

戦争犯罪調査(分)遣(班)調査(係)将(校)「モリス」
少(兵)少(尉)

モリス(少尉)署名

蘭領東印度
セシマス島
ナト町

405

余(戦争)犯罪(部)門(正)天(子)地(裁)西(小)番(号)三〇二二〇〇、(正)宣
誓(上)述(テ)ク(公)道(問)及(回)答(ヲ)英(語)ニ(リ)日(本)語(又)日(本)語(ヲ)
英(語)ニ(シ)テ(都)度(忠)実(ニ)録(取)セ(ル)ト(シ)テ(記)録(ヲ)作(製)セ(ル)後、
四(原)ナ(リ)テ(前)述(ノ)に(供)書(ヲ)証(人)ニ(対)シ(テ)忠(実)ニ(通)訳(セ)ル(コ)ト(シ)テ

5521

ヨリ当証人ハ余ノ面前ニテ前記ノ署名ヲ為セルコトヲ陳述ス。

土上正夫 (署名)
「マオドウエ」

本一九四六年四月二十八日、余、面前ニテ署名宣誓ス

戦争犯罪調査分遣班調査係將校「モウリス・D・フォックス」
歩兵少尉
モウリス・D・フォックス (署名)

証明書

我等「エドワード・W・グレグリー」補給部中尉。一五九五五三
及「モウリス・テイ・フォックス」歩兵少尉。一三三六九〇。バ
一九四六年四月二十六日、中村通則が自ら余等ノ前ニ於テ前記ノ諸証人
ニ對シ、土上正夫ヲ通シテ前記ノ如キ回答ヲ為シタルコト、而シテ同人ノ
証言ノ記録ヲ作成セシメ、後該中村通則ハ前記通訳者ヨリ同
文ヲ讀ミ聞カセシ、余等ノ面前ニテ前記署名ヲ為セルコトヲ證明ス。

「マド」セルニ於テ、一九四六年四月二十八日...

戦争犯罪調査分遣班調査係將校「エドワード・W・グレグリー」
補給部中尉

エドワード・W・グレグリー (署名)

戦争犯罪調査分遣班調査係將校「モウリス・D・フォックス」

歩兵少尉
モウリス・D・フォックス (署名)

No 6

EXHIBIT NO. 1X04

Doc. No. 5564

Page 1.

STATEMENT

1. I am Col. KOBA, Shigeru, Commander, TALAUD Garrison.
2. Of my own free will, in order to assist the inquiry, I am making a statement giving the facts as they are known to me.
3. In BEO, there were four allied airmen, and in RAINUS there was one. They were held as prisoners.
4. I was in hospital from 20 Dec 44 until 10 Mar 45, and the hospital records will show that.
5. I enquired from Manado Headquarters, the Commander of which was Major General KATSURA. Under him was Lt. Col. KOMURA, what was to be done with these airmen.
6. The answer was "You punish them on your own spot". This meant to me that I should execute these men, and since no further reply came, from KATSURA. I believed it was my duty to execute these men.
7. I believe the reply to my question came from MANADO about the end of January, or beginning of February 1945.
8. Then I gave a verbal order to Capt (now Major) TAMURA to execute these men. At that time there were only four airmen. I was still recovering from illness and on 23 Mar 45 they were executed. TAKEHASHI was not there, but he knew about it.
9. TAMURA reported to me a few days later that he had executed the men. (I was not present at the execution). I then reported to MANADA that the men had been executed.
10. I understand that when the above order came from KATSURA to deal with the matter on the spot, or to dispose of them on the spot, that the matter was to remain a secret. I therefore gave an order to the effect that no one was to talk or enquire about the matter.
11. In the beginning of Jun 45 I gave TAMURA a verbal order that the prisoner at RAINUS must be executed. I understood this was my duty as covered by the previous order from MANADO. I was NOT at the execution but TAMURA reported to me some time after the 10th June 45 that it had been done. I think it was done on the 10th June.
12. In times of war, the only thing for me to do was to act in accordance with orders of my superiors.

(Signed) Col KOBA.

(Signed) Capt J.A. Lowitch
(witness)

Doc. No. 5564

P. c 2

Translated and
Interrogated by Capt J.A. LOUWITCH AFIS.

(Signed) Capt J.A. Louwitch

Interrogation directed by Capt E.S. DURANCE Adv HQ AMF

E. DURANCE Capt.

Certified true copy.

/s/ Mornane
Lt.Col.

EXHIBIT NO. 1802

Exhibitory Document # 5

一、上陸部隊指揮官 永沼 繁(重藤英世子) 自由意志を以て親岡ヲ助ニシテ又事貴官ヲ知リテ 兵隊有リ、儘ニ陳述ス。

二、己ニ於テ四名ノ子又ニ於テ一名、聯合國飛行士 カシロ 彼等ハ停屠場トシテ拘留セラル。

三、一九四四年十二月廿日より一九四五年三月十日迄入院シ 居ル。病状ノ記録ハ其ノ事ヲ示サズ。

四、陸少将カ指揮官トシテ小村中佐カ其ノ下ニ居ル「中佐」 軍司令部ニ飛行士ヲ如何ニシテ南ニ送ル。

五、回答ハ貴官ハ現地ニ於テ処刑セラル。此回答ハ 秘カ飛行士ヲ死刑ニ處スル事トシテ。而シテ 甚ダ其情何シテ回答ニ無力ナル。秘カ此等ノ人カ 刑ニ處スルハ秘カ義務アリト信ス。

六、向合ニ村カ返答ハ一九四五年十一月末カ开始シ 下上カラ来ルト思フ

七、ソノ秘カ小村大尉(現在少佐)ニ飛行士ヲ死刑ニ處スル 事カ口頭命令トシテ、其時ハ唯四名ノ飛行士カ 了ル。秘カ未ダ病氣恢復中ナリ。ソノ一九四五年 三月廿三日ニ彼等カ死刑ニ處セラル。夕方ハ其時ニ 居ルカ其ノ事ヲ承認ス。

八、小村カ彼等飛行士ヲ死刑ニ處スル事ヲ三日後秘カ 報告シ(秘カ刑部ニ行ハス)秘カ此等ノ人カ 二飛行士カ死刑ニ處スル事トシテ、

九、秘カ此等ノ人カ死刑ニ處スル事トシテ、

RETURN TO ROOM 361 COPY

5564

後 處分等より前進命令の奉り時秘密保持
 秘密ニシテオケキモノト諒解シタ。ソレトテ松何人ニ
 此事柄ニ関シテ語リ或ハ事不心カラスト命令ヲ出シタ。
 十一 一九四五年六月、始メテ子区ノ学務ヲ死刑ニ處スル
 トノ口頭命令ヲ田村ニ下シタ。
 松コトガマテ下カラ、先ノ命令ノ通り松義路ニ下
 諒解シタ。松処刑現場ニハ命令ハ下シタガ田村ハ
 処刑ノ終了ヲ首ヲ一九四五年六月十日、後轉ラ
 シタラ松ニ報告シタ。松処刑六月十日ニ行ヒテ上思フ。
 十二 戦時中ニ於テハ松為ニ得唯ノ事ハ松上層ノ
 命令ニ從ヒ行動スルニ事ナラシタ。

不場大佐 (署名)
 J. A. ロウウィック大尉 (署名)

聯合國翻譯通譯部 J. A. ロウウィック大尉
 翻譯及訊問セリ

J. A. ロウウィック大尉 (署名)
 訊問ハオシタリヤ軍前進司令部所屬 E. S. ニシテ
 大尉ニ指圖サレタ。

三. 子区ニス大尉

眞定ナル字樣タリ事ヲ證明スル

丁. 元ル木一ノ中佐 (署名)

No2

5564

後、廣平省より前選命令が奉多時、秘密
秘密ニシテ、方々キモノト諒解シタ。ソノ
此、事柄ニ関シテ、或ハ尋ね、心カラズ、命令
上、一九四五年六月、始メ、子区ノ、修房ヲ死刑ニ處ス
ト、口頭命令ヲ田村ニ与ヘタ。

松コトカマ下カラ、先ノ命令、通り、松義勝
諒解シタ。松知刑現場ニ、立合、トシタカ、田村
知刑、終了、シタ、前、一九四五年六月十日、始
シ、松ニ報告シタ。松知刑、六月十日、行
十二、戦時中ニ於テ、松為心得、唯一、事、松上官、
命ニ従ヒ、行動スル、事、テ、ツタ。

不 島 大 佐 (署名)

証人 J. A. ロウウイタ 大尉 (署名)

聯合國翻譯進譯部 J. A. ロウウイタ 大尉
翻譯及訊問セリ

J. A. ロウウイタ 大尉 (署名)

訊問ハオーストラリア軍前進司令部所屬 E. S. ティエス
大尉ニ指図サレタ。

E. ティエス 大尉

眞実ナル字本タル事ヲ證明スル

T. 元一ル本一ニ中佐 (署名)

No 2

Q # 1803

RESTRICTED

YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA, after having been duly sworn, testified at the Mandai Prisoners of War Camp, Makassar, Celebes, on 20 April 1946, as follows:

Q What is your name, rank, age, religion, and home address?

A Yoshiyuki NAKAMURA, 1st Sub Lt., 26 years old, Buddhist, Sifu Prefecture, Ebiti County, Kasuga Village, Rokugo Ward, Number 1037, Japan.

Q Are you single or married?

A Single.

Q What is your father's name?

A NAKAMURA, Hyonichi.

Q When did you enter the Japanese Navy?

A 1 October 1943.

Q When and where did you first arrive in the Celebes?

A July 20, 1944, at Makassar. I stayed in Makassar until December 1944. I was in the land warfare department of the headquarters of the 23rd Special Naval Base. I then went to AROE to construct defensive positions. I stayed there until March 1945. Then I went to Manipi to construct defense positions and I stayed there until the war ended. From the time I first arrived in Makassar until the war's end I was always a member of the 23rd Special Naval Base.

Q Who was your immediate commanding officer?

A Lt. Commander ISHIDA was the Department Head of the Land Warfare Department.

Q Who was Lt. Commander ISHIDA's commanding officer?

A Captain TOYAMA was the senior staff officer in the 23rd Special Naval Base. He directed all Department Heads. He was also commander of the Makassar Tokkei Tai.

Q Do you know anything about four Allied airmen who were detained by the Makassar Tokkei Tai sometime in July 1945?

A Yes. I know about the execution of these four.

Q Do you know where these airmen were captured and what kind of a plane they were in?

A No because I was working at Manipi at the time of their capture. I don't know on what date they were captured but I was working at Manipi all the time.

- Q When was the first time that you had any knowledge of these four airmen?
- A One Sunday in the first part of July, I went to the headquarters of the 23rd Special Naval Base from Manipi to attend a conference that was going to be held on the following day. I arrived at Makassar at eleven o'clock in the morning and immediately reported to Lt. Commander ISHIDA and had lunch with him at the Land Warfare Department. I received the order to come to Makassar from the 23rd Special Naval Base. I received the order by telephone. I don't know who actually originated the order. While ISHIDA and I were eating lunch he told me, "Lt. NAKAMURA, we are going to execute war prisoners at Laros this afternoon so you will come along". That was the first knowledge I had that there were any war prisoners in Makassar. After lunch I withdrew to my room and bathed myself and slept until two o'clock in the afternoon. At 2:15 I was awakened by a bugle so I got up and walked to the front of the Land Warfare Department office and I saw one passenger car and one truck standing in front of the office. When I arrived at the place where the car and truck were standing I saw Lt. Commander ISHIDA standing beside the car, he told me to get into the car. This car was a passenger car which had been converted into a light truck. I got into the back of the car along with 1st Sub Lt. NAKAO, Kohei and ~~1st Sub Lt. YAMAWAKA (PNU)~~. Lt. /Y.N. Commander ISHIDA got into the front seat and sat beside the driver whose name I don't know. The truck was right behind our car, it was open truck and I saw about thirty or forty men from the Land Warfare Department on this truck. They were to be used as working parties. At about 2:30 in the afternoon our car started out through the gate of the office of Land Warfare and proceeded to the Military Court Building. The truck followed behind the car. The Military court is about one block away from the Land Warfare Office. When we arrived we saw a covered truck standing on the road in front of the Military Court Building. When we arrived Judge Advocate Lt. SHIRATO came out of the Military Court Building with four prisoners behind him. He ~~was accompanied by Lt. SAITO, Goichi~~. Lt. SHIRATO /Y.N. made the prisoners get into the back of the covered truck. The prisoners' hands were tied behind their backs but I don't think they were blindfolded. Immediately after the prisoners got into the covered truck, our car started for Laros, the

covered truck with the prisoners followed our car and the last vehicle was the truck carrying the working parties. We left the Military Court Building at about two-forty-five in the afternoon and we arrived at Iaros Airfield at about three twenty. As we drove into Iaros Airfield I saw a truck parked on the right hand side of the road, our car stopped about fifty meters behind this truck. The covered truck with the prisoners, followed by the other truck, then drove around our car and stopped behind the first truck. Immediately after all the trucks were parked, Lt. Commander ISHIDA got out of our car and went up to the truck that was already parked when we first arrived. There were about five or six men who were a working party standing near the truck. There was a 1st Sub Lieutenant with this party but I did not at that time know his name. When ISHIDA arrived at the place where the working party was I heard him order them to guard around the execution place. The 1st Sub Lieutenant with the party ordered his men to their guard positions. Then Lt. Commander ISHIDA inspected around the place and ordered where the washing water should be and inspected the ground for suitable footing for the execution. He finally chose a bomb crater that had flat ground around it for the execution place. This crater was twenty or thirty meters from the covered truck that carried the prisoners. By this time everyone except the four prisoners had dismounted from the trucks and we all followed Lt. Commander ISHIDA to the bomb crater he had selected. ISHIDA then ordered one prisoner to be brought to the execution place. I heard Lt. Commander ISHIDA order the prisoner to be blindfolded tightly. Accordingly, one soldier, I don't know his name, but I think he was a private or a non-commissioned officer, brought one prisoner to the crater. Then Lt. SHIMATO told the prisoner to sit down and also asked the prisoner his name in English. The prisoner answered his name and knelt on the edge of the bomb crater, facing it. His head was uplifted. Then Lt. Commander ISHIDA looked around the crowd and pointed to the 1st Sub Lieutenant whom I had seen with the first truck and said, "You do it". This Lieutenant looked very downcast and complained that he did not wish to do it. Then Lt. Commander ISHIDA said, "Go ahead, go ahead". Then this Lieutenant went forward and approached the prisoner and stood on the left rear of the prisoner. By this time this Lieutenant had already drawn his

sword and had it in his right hand with the point toward the ground. Then as soon as he took his position, he shook his head a few times and raised his sword over his right shoulder and swung it downward using both hands. The sword cut squarely the neck of the prisoner, the prisoner's head flopped over against his chest and the blood spurted from his neck, and the dead body rolled into the bomb crater. Immediately after the Lieutenant swung his sword he turned and walked to the back of the crowd to where water was ready for washing his sword. I saw him washing his sword. I was standing toward the back of the crowd near the washing water during the time that the first prisoner was executed. I was about seven or eight meters from the execution place. Then I heard Lt. Commander ISHIDA order the next prisoner to be brought. The second prisoner was brought and made to kneel down at the same place the first prisoner knelt. Lt. SHIRATO asked the second prisoner his name. The prisoner answered. Then Lt. Commander ISHIDA again looked around the crowd. I was in the back of the crowd, and ISHIDA said, "Where's Sub Lt NAKAMURA?" I then said, "Yes, Sir", and ISHIDA said, "You do it this time". I then scratched my head and said, "I cannot do it Sir". Then ISHIDA gave me a speech telling us that this was the man who indiscriminately bombed Japan. This speech was to arouse our anger. ISHIDA then insisted that I do it because it was the order of high officials. Since there were many high officials present I was under the impression that I was a legal executioner. Accordingly, I went to where the washing water was and washed my sword and holding my sword in my right hand with the point earthward I approached the kneeling prisoner and occupied a position about one pace to the left rear of the prisoner. Then the Judge Advocate asked the prisoner through an interpreter whose name I don't know whether he had anything to say. The prisoner said something but I can't remember what. ISHIDA then said, "Go ahead now". Accordingly I took a stand with my feet about one foot apart and using both hands raised the sword over my right shoulder and swung it downward on the neck of the prisoner. I finished him with one swing. As soon as I swung, the prisoner's head flopped against his chest and blood spurted from his neck and he fell into the crater dead on top of the first prisoner who was also dead. Then I turned

and walked to the place where the washing water was and washed my sword. While I was washing my sword I heard Lt. Commander ISHIDA order the third prisoner to be brought. I then wiped my sword clean and as I was sick in my stomach from smelling blood I walked about ten meters from the washing water to a small knoll and sat down behind the knoll with my back to the execution place. As I was sitting in this place I overheard ISHIDA say "Sub Lt. NAKAO you do it". I did not see NAKAO execute the third prisoner because I could not see from where I was sitting. While I was sitting in this place I saw the fourth and last prisoner being brought to the execution place. He was also blindfolded and his hands were tied behind him. I could not see the fourth execution, but I heard ISHIDA say, "NAKAO you do this also". About one or two minutes later I again heard ISHIDA talking. He said, "Fill the hole with earth". I then realized that the execution must be over and I also overheard ISHIDA say that the execution was over. I then walked by the bomb crater but I didn't look in, the working party had already finished filling the hole. I then walked directly to the motor car and waited for Lt. Commander ISHIDA who was inspecting the place of execution. At about four thirty in the afternoon ISHIDA got in the car and we left the place and returned to the Land Warfare Office.

- Q Who was present at the execution?
A Lt. SHIRATO, Lt. Commander IIAMURA who did not arrive until after the second execution. 1st Sub Lt. SAITO, Goichi, 1st-Sub-Lt. YAMAMAKA, 1st Sub Lt. NAKAO. There were a number of others whose names I can't remember. /Y.N.
- Q Can you describe the four prisoners?
A All of them were tall and the one I executed was very young. They spoke English and they were white skinned. They wore khaki colored clothes.
- Q What nationality were they?
A I don't know but I think they were Americans.
- Q What were their names?
A I don't know.
- Q Where were they captured and what kind of plane did they have?
A Afterward I heard that they were shot down at Pank-gadjeni. I don't know what type of plane.

- Q Who is the 1st Sub Lieutenant that you mentioned as executing the first prisoner?
- A At the time of the execution I did not know his name but later I found out his name was Lt. INAGAKI.
- Q Why were these prisoners executed?
- A I don't know.
- Q Were the prisoners given a hearing or trial?
- A I don't know.
- Q Who gave the original execution order?
- A I don't know whether orders were issued but if they were Admiral OHSUGI would have issued them.
- Q Could Lt. Commander ISHIDA have executed these prisoners without orders from a higher authority?
- A I don't think it is possible.
- Q Could Captain TOYAMA have issued the order?
- A I don't know.
- Q Could Lt. Commander ISHIDA have received an order to execute the prisoners without Captain TOYAMA's knowledge?
- A I don't think it's possible.
- Q What part did Lt. SAITO play in the execution?
- A I think he was sent from Tokkei Tai to witness the execution.
- Q Then Captain TOYAMA, as Commanding Officer of the Tokkei Tai, must have known about the execution?
- A Naturally I think he should have known.
- Q Do you have anything further to say?
- A Yes, I want you to please remember that I thought I was a legal executioner because there were many high officials present.
- Q Was force, threats, duress, or coercion used in taking this statement from you?
- A No.
- Q Was any promise of reward, immunity, or consideration given as a result of this statement?
- A No.

/s/ Yoshiyuki Nakamura
YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA

NETHERLANDS INDIES)
 CELEBES) SS
 CITY OF MAKASSAR)

I, YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA, being duly sworn on oath, state that I had read to me and understood the translation of the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein, consisting of four (4) pages, are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Yoshiyuki Nakamura
 YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA -

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 20 day of April, 1946.

/s/ John D. Schwenker
 JOHN D. SCHWENKER, Capt., F.A.
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment

NETHERLANDS INDIES)
 CELEBES) SS
 CITY OF MAKASSAR)

I, MASAO DOUE, T/3, ASN 30111100, War Crimes Branch, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions and answers given from English to Japanese and from Japanese to English respectively, and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing four (4) pages, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence affixed his signature thereto.

/s/ Masao Doue
 MASAO DOUE

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 20 day of April, 1946.

/s/ John D. Schwenker
 JOHN D. SCHWENKER, Capt., F.A.
 Investigating Officer, War Crimes
 Investigating Detachment

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, JOHN D. SCHWENKER, Capt., O-544384, FA, certify that on 23rd day of April, 1946, personally appeared before me YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA, and according to MASAO DOUE, gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth therein; that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA had read to him by the said interpreter the same and affixed his signature thereto in my presence.

Makassar, Celebes
(Place)

20 April 1946
(Date)

/s/ John D. Schwenker
JOHN D. SCHWENKER, Capt., FA
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment

Doc 5533

甲村 之 / 宛字 / YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA / 正報ニ宣
 登ノ上 一九四六年五月二十日セレス / SELEBES /
 マカッサル / MAKASSAR / ノマンドイ / MANDAI /
 答、叔父殿ニ於テ次ノ如ク趣言セリ
 問、貴方ノ通信、指込、年節、祭事及住所ヲ述ベテ
 下サイ。
 答、甲村 之 / 宛字 / YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA / 海軍中
 尉、二十六才、^リ以、日本岐阜縣揖斐郡 / IBICOUNTY
 春日村 / 宛字 / 不詳 / 宛字 / 一〇三七番地
 問、一九四五^年七月ノ同時以ダツタカ、マカッサル
 / MAKASSAR 航空隊ニ入ッテ押上サレテキタ四名
 ノ^中合乗^機飛行士ニ^シテ^ハ何カ知ッテキマスカ。
 問、ハイ此ノ^中何名ノ若^シノ^カ庭^ノ加^ニ知ッテ居マス。
 之^ノ西^行ノ^飛行^士ニ^ツキ^何カ知ッタノ^ハ何時ガ
 知ッテスカ。
 答、七月上旬ノ或ル日曜日、私ハソノ^日登^陸時^候サレ
 ルコトニナツテキタ隊員ニ出席スル爲ニ、マ
 ニピ / MANIPI / カラ第二十三時即海軍基地司
 令部ニ行キマシタ。私ハ午前十時ニマカッサ
 ル / MAKASSAR / ニ着キ、^此地ニ石田 / 宛字 /
 飛行少佐ノ許ニ由^リテ、直取部 / THE LAND
 WARFARE DEPARTMENT 取^ト食^ヲ共ニシマシタ。

Dec 25 1953

2.

私ハマカツサルニ乗ルヨウニ銀二十三俵別
 身持地ヨリ、節令ヲ安ケマシタ。私ハソノ節
 令ヲ取テ安ケマシタ。ソノ節令ヲ誰ガ實際
 ニ行シタノカ私ハ存ジマセン石田ノ字ノト
 私ガ家ヲシテキタ。彼ハ私ニ「中村ノ宛
 字ノ中庭」状々ハ今日ノ十時マロクノKAKOS
 デモラ廻ルコトニオツテキルカラ君モ
 乗付ヘ「ト」早シマシタ。ソレガ私ガマカツサ
 ルノKAKISSARノ「二」管方后ルト云フコトヲ
 知ツタ。真初テシタ。彼ハ私ハ目室ニ引返リ
 入居ラソテ、午飯ノ二時迄眠リマシタ。三時
 十五分ニ私ハ側臥テ目ラ地マサレマシタ。ソ
 レデモキ上リ車庫前ノ前ニ歩イテ行キ
 マシタ。ソレテ車庫前ノ前ニ一臺ノ乗用車ト
 一臺ノトラツクガ止マツテキルノヲ見マシタ
 私ハソノ乗用車ト、トラツクガ止ツテイル場
 所ヘ着クト、ソノ乗用車ノ横ニ立ツテキル石
 田少佐ニ逢ヒマシタ。彼ハ私ニ車ニ乗ルヨウ
 ニ言ヒマシタ。コノ車ハ軽自動車ニ買附サレ
 テキタ乗用車デシタ。私ハ車ノ後部席ニ甲尾
 塚平ノ字ノNAKAO KOHEIノ海軍中尉ト

Dec 30 1933

一言ニ承リマシタ。石田ノ宛子ノ少佐ハ前幕席ニ
 承リ廻轉手ノ位ニ坐リマシタ。廻轉手ノ名ハ私
 ハ存ジマセン。トラツクハ我々ノ章ノ眞終ニア
 リマシタ。ソレハ無蓋トラツクデコノトラツク
 ノ上ニ絶三ノ二十八ノ陸軍部ヨリ来タ兵ガ乗ツク
 テキルノヲ見マシタ。飯倉ハ作業中トシテ便所
 サレル旨デシタ。午二時半頃我々ノ直ハ出陣
 シ陸軍部ノ幕僚ノ門ヲ叩ツテ官署裁判所ノ建
 物ニ進ミマシタ。トラツクモムニツイテ來マシ
 タ。車輪被控所ハ陸軍部ノ倉庫所ヨリ第一機丁
 先ニアリマシタ。我々が着イタ時、軍醫裁判所
 ノ建物ノ前ニ一臺ノ便ヒラカケタ。トラツクガ
 院上ニ止マツテキルノヲ見マシタ。我々が着イ
 タ時白戸ノ宛子ノ SHIRATO / 法務大臣ガ急ニ
 山名ノ官房ヲ進レテ軍醫裁判所ノ傍中カラ出テ
 來マシタ。白戸ノ宛子ノ SHIRATO / 大臣ハ停
 止ヲ命ジカケタ。トラツクノ後部ニ乗セマシタ。
 官房進ノ寺ハ官邸テ前ハカレテキマシタガ飯倉
 ハ自決ツハサレテキナカツタト恩ヒマス。囚人
 達が積ヒラカケタ。トラツクニ乗リ込ムヤ否ヤ我
 々ノ直ハマロス / MARUS / ニ同ツテ出陣シマシ

Doc 5533

シタ。 袂ヲカケタトラツクハ 俾腰ヲ乗セテ 我
々ノ車ニツイテ來マシタ 敢後ノ車ハ 作業隊ヲ
乗セキルトラツクデシタ。 我々ハ午後二時
四十五分頃 皇軍裁判所建物前ヲ 出發シ三時二
十分頃 マロス / MAROS / 飛行場ニ着キマシタ
我々がマロス / MAROS / 飛行場ニ乗り入レタ
時、 秘ハ右手ノ道端ニ 駐車シテキル一臺ノト
ラツクヲ見マシタ。 我々ノ車ハコノトラツク
ノ約五十米後方ニ止リマシタ。 俾腰ノ乗ツテ
キル袂ヒラカケタトラツクハ 他ノトラツクヲ
後ニ從へ 我々ノ車ノ旁ヲ 廻ツテ 側カラキタト
ラツクノ彼ニ止リマシタ。 全部ノトラツクガ
駐車スルト直チニ 石田 / 宛字 / 少佐ハ我々ノ
車カラ睨リテ 我々が 敢初着イタ時 既に 駐直シ
テキタトラツクニ 向ツテ 歩イテ行キマシタ。
作業隊ノ約五、六名ノ者ガソノトラツクノ近
クニ立ツテ居リマシタ。 コノ隊ノ者ト一緒ニ
一人ノ海軍中尉ガ居リマシタガソノ時ハ私ハ
彼ノ名ヲ知りマセンデシタ。 ソノ作業隊ノ居
ル場所ニ 石田 / 宛字 / ガ行ツタ時 私ハ彼ガ兵
士起ニ處刑場ノ周圍ノ警戒ヲ命ズルノヲ聞キ

Doc 5533

マシタ。作業隊ト一宿ニ居タカノ海軍甲隊ハ
 部下ニ暫クノ位置ニツク候節令シマシタ。ソ
 レカラ石田ノ名字ノ少佐ハソノ場所ヲグルリ
 ト踏査シテ、沈ヒ水ヲ掘ク位置ヲ指示シ、ソ
 レカラ處刑ニ適當ナ足場ヲ探スタメ地百ヲ計
 ガシマシタ。彼後ニ彼ハ周圍ノ地百ガ平ニナ
 ソク燦爛ノ炸烈口ヲ處刑場トシテ選定シマ
 シタ。コノ穴ハ付ラ来セテキル覆ヲカケタ
 トラツシカラニ、三十不ノ票ニアリマシタ、
 コノ時ニハモウ四人ノ伴郎ヲ採イテ全員トラ
 ツクヨリ背リテキマシタガ訊々全部ハ石田ノ
 名字ノ少佐ニツイテ彼ノ選ンダ炸烈口ノ所へ
 行キマシタ。ソレカラ石田ハ處刑場所ニ一人
 ノ背ヲ向テ来ル候節令シマシタ。石田ノ
 名字ノ少佐ガ伴郎ニシツカリト目隠ヲスル様
 ニ指示スルノラ聞キマシタ。ソレニ從ツテ一
 人ノ兵ガ泓ハ彼ノ右ヲ知リマセンガ彼ハ兵カ
 職ハ下士ヲアツタカト心ヒマスガ彼ガソノ穴
 へ一人ノ伴郎ヲ遣レテ来マシタ。ソレカラ石
 田ノ名字ノ少佐ハ「SHIKAO」ノ穴ニ英語ヲ伴郎ニ告ルヨ
 ウニ言ヒ付ケ又伴郎ニソノ名ヲ訊ネマシタ。
 伴郎ハ自分ノ名ヲ答ヘソシテ「SHIKAO」ノ穴ノ奥ニ

5.

Doc 5533

顔ヲ穴ニ同ケテヒサマヅキマシタ。彼ハ頭ヲ高
クニケテキマシタ。ソノ後石田ノ宛字ノ少佐ハ
証ツクハタラ見廻シテ、私ガ最初ノトラツクノ
傍ヲ見タアノ海軍中尉ヲ指シテ「オ前ヤレ」ト
言ヒマシタ。コノ中尉ハ元氣ノナイ様子デ目分
ハヤリタクナイト訴ヘマシタ。ソレデ石田ノ宛字
ノ少佐ハ「オヤレヤレ」ト言ヒマシタ。ソコデコ
ノ中尉ハ進ミ四テ停摩ニ近ヨリソノ左後方ニ立
マシタ。コノ時既に此ノ中尉ハ刀ヲ抜キ、先
地ニ同ケテ右手ニ持ツテキマシタ。ソレカラ彼
ハ位置ニツクヤ咎ヤ取回首ヲ欲ツテカラ刀ヲ彼
ノ右肩上ニ振りカアルヤ、左手ヲ振り下シマシタ
刀ハ彼ノ首ヲ真直ニ断チ切りマシタ。俾時ノ
首ハ越サニ胸ニ垂レ下リ首カラ血ガ流れ出死骸
ハ燻洞穴ニ落ちて落チマシタ。中尉ハ刀ヲ膝下
ンテ後直ニムキラ纏ヘテ刀ヲ洗フ儀ニ用意シテ
アツタ水ノ桶ル行ニ同ツテ証衆ノ後ノ方ニ歩イ
テ行キマシタ。私ハ彼ガ刀ヲ洗フノヲ見マシタ
私ハ最初ノ俾時ガ處刑サレル間、群衆ノ後ニ、
水洗ヒ場近クニ立ツテキマシタ。私ハ處刑場所
ヨリ同七・八茶ノ所ニキマシタ。ソレカラ私ハ

Doc 5533

石田 / 亮字、此は先ノ字邊ヲ延レテ察ルヨウ
 節節シテキルノラニキマシタ。此二ノ件ハ此
 レテ來ラレテ、初ノ件ト同シ、勿レニヒザマツ
 夫カレマシタ。白戸 / 亮字 / 大尉ガ此二ノ件
 ニ依テ尋ネマシタ。此ハ此ニ付ヘマシタ。ソレカ
 ラ石田 / 亮字 / 少佐ハ尋ビ辨來ヲ見テシマシタ
 私ハ此ノ事ニ知リマシタ。石田 / 亮字 / ハ
 中村 / 亮字 / 中尉ハトコニキルト云ヒマシタ
 ソレデ私ガ「ハイ」ト云シマスト石田 / 亮字 /
 ハ「今ハオモヤ」ト云ヒマシタ。ソレデ私
 ハ「此ノ事ナカラ」私ニハ「此ニハ」ト云シ
 マシタ。ソレデ石田 / 亮字 / ハ「此ニハ」ト云ヒ
 卒ラ「此ノ事」ト云シタ。此ト云フ語ヲ聽シマシタ
 コノ事ハ「此ノ事」ト云フ語ヲ聽シタ。ソレ
 カラ石田 / 亮字 / ハ「上ノ令テアルカ」ト云ヒ
 レト云ヒ聞リマシタ。此ノ事ニハ「澤市上」ガ事
 ル事デシタ。私ハ「此ノ事」ト云フ語ニ
 思ヒマシタ。ソレデ私ハ「此ノ事」ト云フ語ニ
 キ私ノ「此ノ事」ト云フ語ニ「此ノ事」ト云フ語、
 ヒ「此ノ事」ト云フ語ニ「此ノ事」ト云フ語、
 ノ事ニ依テ「此ノ事」ト云フ語ニ「此ノ事」ト云フ語

Doc 5533

8.

是ニソノ知ハ知リマセンガ道詳ヲ知シテ俘虜
 ニ何カ云フ事ガアルカト尋ネマシタ。俘虜ハ
 何カ言ヒマシタガ私ハ何ト云ツタノカ記憶シ
 テキマセン。ソレデ石田ノ宛字ノハ一サアヤ
 レト言ヒマシタ。ソコデ私ハ足ヲ一呎バカ
 リ倒イテ身帯ヘラシ兩手デ刀ヲ私ノ右肩ノ上
 ニ振り上げ性急ノ首ニ打チ下シマシタ。私ハ
 一万ノ下ニ任止メマシタ。振り下スヤ唇ヤ俘
 虜ノ首ハ彼ノ胸ニ逆ニ浴テ血ハ首カラ洗リ出
 死ンデ、其隙穴ノ中ヘ、之亦既ニ死ンデキル
 最初ノ首級ノ上ニ浴テ置リマシタ。ソレカラ
 私ハ同キ處リ洗ヒ水ノアル場所ニ行キ刀ヲ洗
 ヒマシタ。私ガ刀ヲ使ツテキタ時、石田ノ宛字
 少佐ガ第三ノ營ヲ進レテ來ル時命令スルノ
 ラ聞キマシタ。私ハソレカラ私ノ刀ヲ奇麗ニ
 拭キマシタ。私ハ血ノ臭デ胸ガ悪クナツタノ
 テ此ヒ場所カラ約十歩離レタ小サナ丘ノ所ヘ行
 キ處洲場所ニ背ヲ向ケテ小丘ノ後ニ腰ヲ下シ
 マシタ。私ガ此ノ場所ニ坐ツテキル時石田ノ
 宛字ノ一甲尾ノ宛字ノ 0444 / 中尉オ前ヤ
 レト云フノヲ耳ニシマシタ。

Doc 5533

私ハ私ガ坐ツテキル場所カラハ見エマセンデ
 シタノテ第三ノ行ヲ中尾ノ宛字ノガ處刑シ
 タノヲ見マゼンデシタ。其ノ場所ニ私ガ坐ツ
 テキル間ニ、私ハ西査目ノツマリ魯魯ノ性
 ガ處刑場所ニ送レテ行カレルノヲ見マシタ。
 彼モ亦、目撃シサレテ彼手ニ押サレテキマシ
 タ。此種目ノ處刑モ私ハ見ルコトハ出来マセ
 ンデシタガ、石田ノ宛字ノガ中尾ノ宛字ノ
 之モオカレト云フノヲ聞キマシタ。此一
 二分彼等ト石田ノ宛字ノ言葉ガ聞エマシタ。
 彼ハ一穴ラ土ヲ掘メヨト云ヒマシタ。ソレ
 テ私ハ處刑ガ終ツタニ送ヒナイト思ヒマシタ
 又私ハ石田ノ宛字ノガ處刑ガ終ツタト言ツテ
 キルノヲ耳ニシマシタ。ソレカラ私ハ一穴
 ノ傍ヲ歩ミスギマシタ。中ラ見マセンデシタ。
 作業隊ガ既ニ穴ヲ掘メ終ヘテキマシタ。私ハ
 ソレカラマヌスグニ自動車ノ万ニ歩イテユキ
 戻リ場所ノ概シテキル石田ノ宛字ノ少佐ラ
 彼ツテキマシタ。午後四時半頃石田ノ宛字ノ
 ハ車ニ乗り、我々ハソノ場所ヲ離レ直ぐ警
 務所ニモドリマシタ。

× × × ×

中村 義之ノ宛字ノ姓名ノ YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA

9.

Doc 55533

南 領 印 度

セレベス / CELEBES /

マカッサル市 / CHEY OF MAKASSAR /

S . S

余、中村義之 / 音譯 / YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA / 正
規宣誓ノ上石ノ如キ余ニ對スル質問ノ寫シノ譯文
ヲ讀ミキカサレ、之ヲ了解シ並ニ四頁ヨリ成ル石
ノ質問ニ對スル余ノ返答ハ總テ余ノ信知スル限り
ニ於テ眞實ナルコトヲ陳述ス。

中村義之 / 音譯 / YOSHIYUKI
NAKAMURA / 署名 /

一九四六年四月二十日余ノ面前ニ於テ署名シ且宣
誓ス。

ジョン・D・シュエンカー 陸軍大尉 F . A

/ JOHN D. SCHWENKER CAPT. FA /

戦争犯罪調査支隊調査官

10.

Doc 5553

蘭 領 印 度

セ レ ベ ス / C E L E B E S /

マカッサル市 / C I T Y O F M A K A S S A R /

S · S

余、戦争犯罪部 / T / 3 · A · S · N 三〇一一一〇〇 /

ドウエ正雄 / H A S A O D O U E / ハ正規軍警ノ上座間及

返答ヲソレソレ英語ヨリ日本語ニ又右供述ヲ記録

シテ後、余ハソノ四頁ヨリ成ル口供書ヲ眞實ニ証

人ニ翻譯セルコト、ソノ上ニテ証人ハ余ノ面前ニ

テ之ニ署名セルコトヲ陳述ス。

ドウエ正雄 / 音譯 / H A S A O D O U E / / 署名 /

一九四六年四月二十日ニ余ノ面前ニ於テ署名シ宣
誓ス。

ジョン・D・シュエンカー 陸軍大尉 T · A

/ J O H N D S C H W E N K E R / C A P T F A /

戦争犯罪調査支隊調査官

證 明 書

Doc. 533 (part)

余、F・A・〇一五四四三八四陸軍大尉、ジョン・D・シウエ
ンカー / JOHN D SCHWENKER / 一九四六年四月二十
三日中村義之 / 音譯 / YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA / 自身
余ノ面前ニ出頭シ、ドウエ正雄 / 音譯 / MASAO
DOUE / ニ依リ、ココニ記録セル數質問ニ對シ右ノ
返答ヲ爲シタルコト及彼ノ供述ヲ記録セル後上記
中村義之 / 音譯 / YOSHIYUKI NAKAMURA / ハ上記通
譯者ニ依ツテ右記録ヲ讀ミ聞カサレ余ノ面前ニテ
右ニ署名セシコトヲ證明ス。

ジョン・D・シウエンカー / 陸軍大尉 F・A
/ JOHN D. SCHWENKER, CAPT. FA /
戦争犯罪調査支隊調査官

(場所) セレベス・マカッサル / MAKASSAR, CEELEBES /

(日時) 一九四六年四月二十日

ED/JAG/ES/JC/76
 AMBI/GC

IN THE MATTER OF JAPANESE WAR CRIMES
AT MACASSAR CAMP, CELEBES,

A F F I D A V I T

I, Leut. Comdr. GEORGE TYNDALE COOPER, Royal Navy, with home address at Pine-Tree Hill, Camberley, Surrey, make oath and say as follows:

1. I was captured in March 1942 after the sinking of H.M.S. EXETER in the Java Sea action. I was sent, in company with the survivors of H.M.S. EXETER to MACASSAR on the Island of CELEBES. We were all put into a modern Dutch military barracks about 2 miles south of the town. The Japanese authorities had appointed Lt. Col. L. COETJENS: K.N.I.L. as Camp Commander. He was not in fact the Senior Dutch Officer in the Camp; the Senior Dutch Officer was Col. M. VOOREN, K.N.I.L. The Dutch numbered about 1800, Americans 167 and the British 945. The British including those drafted to Japan were composed as follows:

<u>UNIT:</u>	<u>OFFICERS:</u>	<u>RATINGS:</u>	<u>TOTAL:</u>
H.M.S. EXETER	47	665	712
H.M.S. ENCOUNTER	8	159	167
H.M.S. STRONGHOLD	1	47	48
H.M.S. ANKLE	-	2	2
R.F.A. FRANKOL	5	3	8
D.S. DE RUYTER	1	-	1
D.S. JAVA	1	1	2
2/4th A.I.F. (ex Timor)	..	5	5
	63	882	945

One Australian Air Force Officer joined the British Group a few weeks later.

3. [The conditions prevailing when I assumed command were poor. For a month we had lived on a daily food issue composed solely of one bun, and an envelope of cooked rice with a little green watercress and sometimes a little dried evil-smelling fish. Everyone had recently had the unpleasant experience of being sunk and had to endure the ignominy of capture. Many had been weakened by a long period in the water. As regards EXETER's personnel had completed a year's war service, 8 months of which had been spent almost continuously in the Tropics. I mention this point here as it played an important part in future events. The only clothes we had were those we were wearing on being sunk and we were devoid of any other possessions. Men were crowded into barracks, four sometimes five to a cubicle 8 feet by 6 with no bedding and no food utensils. Mosquitoes were very bad and bites incurred at night soon went septic.]

4. The guard for the Camp was provided from a platoon of the Japanese Naval Landing Force organisation, under an Ex-Warrant Officer NAGATOMO Shoi. The whole of the Celebes area was under Japanese Naval Administration with a Rear Admiral in Charge, KORI Shosho. The Chief of Staff(?) or Staff Officer who administered the Prisoner of War Camp appeared to be OTA Tai (Lieutenant) an Officer who spoke English and Dutch and had previously been Naval Attache in Java. He was a Regular Naval Officer, rather fat, very smart and dapper. He was also extremely capable and intelligent. He would be 37 years old now, and was about 5'8" in height. He had been Staff Officer to the Admiral Commanding the cruiser squadron of which the 'Asigara' was the Flag-ship. This man used to inspect the camp quite often. I had about three interviews and one interrogation with this officer from I tried to get our lot eased, with no success. When questioned on the Geneva Convention his reply was brusque and emphatic: "Don't talk to me of International Law. There is no such thing." The Japanese attitude was consistent; namely, that officers and ratings must be considered lower than the lowest coolie. Actually they went further and treated prisoners as criminals. OTA once told me that all with technical ability would be employed technically, the remainder as labourers, regardless of rank. OTA left for Japan on the 15th November 1942. He had already been relieved of his duties at MACASSAR in September 1942 by Lieut. Comdr. KUROKI. I saw KUROKI the day he took over from OTA. He stayed on a Chief of Staff to Admiral KORI for one year but we never

ED/JAG/ES/JC/76
 AMBI/CC

IN THE MATTER OF JAPANESE WAR CRIMES
AT MACASSAR CAMP, CELEBES,

A F F I D A V I T

I, Leut. Comdr. GEORGE TYNDALE COOPER, Royal Navy, with home address at Pine-Tree Hill, Camberley, Surrey, make oath and say as follows:

1. I was captured in March 1942 after the sinking of H.M.S. EXETER in the Java Sea action. I was sent, in company with the survivors of H.M.S. EXETER to MACASSAR on the Island of CELEBES. We were all put into a modern Dutch military barracks about 2 miles south of the town. The Japanese authorities had appointed Lt. Col. L. CORTILINS, K.N.I.L. as Camp Commander. He was not in fact the Senior Dutch Officer in the Camp; the Senior Dutch Officer was Col. M. VOOREN, K.N.I.L. The Dutch numbered about 1800, Americans 167 and the British 945. The British including those drafted to Japan were composed as follows:

<u>UNIT:</u>	<u>OFFICERS:</u>	<u>RATINGS:</u>	<u>TOTAL:</u>
H.M.S. EXETER	47	665	712
H.M.S. ENCOUNTER	8	159	167
H.M.S. STRONGHOLD	1	47	48
H.M.S. ANKING	-	2	2
R.F.A. FRANKOL	5	3	8
D.S. DE RUYTER	1	-	1
D.S. JVA	1	1	2
2/4th A.I.F. (ex Timor)	..	5	5
	63	882	945

One Australian Air Force Officer joined the British Group a few weeks later.

3. [The conditions prevailing when I assumed command were poor. For a month we had lived on a daily food issue composed solely of one bun, and an envelope of cooked rice with a little green watercress and sometimes a little dried evil-smelling fish. Everyone had recently had the unpleasant experience of being sunk and had to endure the ignominy of capture. Many had been weakened by a long period in the water. As regards EXETER's personnel had completed a year's war service, 8 months of which had been spent almost continuously in the Tropics. I mention this point here as it played an important part in future events. The only clothes we had were those we were wearing on being sunk and we were devoid of any other possessions. Men were crowded into barracks, four sometimes five to a cubicle 8 feet by 6 with no bedding and no food utensils. Mosquitoes were very bad and bites incurred at night soon went septic.]

4. The guard for the Camp was provided from a platoon of the Japanese Naval Landing Force organisation, under an Ex-arrant Officer NAGATOMO Shoi. The whole of the Celebes area was under Japanese Naval Administration with a Rear Admiral in Charge, IKRI Shosho. The Chief of Staff(?) or Staff Officer who administered the Prisoner of War Camp appeared to be OTA Tai (Lieutenant) an Officer who spoke English and Dutch and had previously been Naval Attache in Java. He was a Regular Naval Officer, rather fat, very smart and dapper. He was also extremely capable and intelligent. He would be 37 years old now, and was about 5'8" in height. He had been Staff Officer to the Admiral Commanding the cruiser squadron of which the 'Asigara' was the Flag-ship. This man used to inspect the camp quite often. I had about three interviews and one interrogation with this officer from I tried to get our lot eased, with no success. When questioned on the Geneva Convention his reply was brusque and emphatic: "Don't talk to me of International Law. There is no such thing." The Japanese attitude was consistent; namely, that officers and ratings must be considered lower than the lowest coolie. Actually they went further and treated prisoners as criminals. OTA once told me that all with technical ability would be employed technically, the remainder as labourers, regardless of rank. OTA left for Japan on the 15th November 1942. He had already been relieved of his duties at MACASSAR in September 1942 by Lieut. Comdr. KUROKI. I saw KUROKI the day he took over from OTA. He stayed on a Chief of Staff to Admiral IKRI for one year but we never

him in the camp until he came back again in August 1943 to say goodbye. The Camp Commandant was almost unapproachable. Any adverse criticisms of the Camp reacted on the guards who took care to revenge themselves on the camp as a whole. The Japanese undoubtedly went out of their way to humiliate the European and were completely lacking in any form of sentiment regarding the sanctity of life or the welfare of the prisoners. The first Camp Commandant that we had was the equivalent of a Britisharrant-Officer. He was M.GATCICHO, he was Camp Commandant from April 1942 until May 1943. His character was quite negative and he never made any attempt to improve our conditions nor did he appear to care how we lived or what punishment was meted out to us so long as he himself was not bothered. He picked YOSHIDA, who really commanded the camp. M.GATCICHO lived in the house next door to the camp, he knew therefore, very well what was going on, exactly how YOSHIDA was running the camp. Sometimes he used to wander around on a bicycle, when he could see the conditions in which we were living, with his own eyes. He was a lightly built man; lean and tough; not very well educated, and could speak no English or Malay. He wore cropped hair, and was a typical Japanese ranker officer. His age was something over 40, and he was about 5' 5" in height.

5. In May 1943 M.GATCICHO was relieved by KIDAMA. This man KIDAMA is undoubtedly the same person as Lieut. Comdr. CHUBB mentions in paragraph 10, subparagraph 1 of his affidavit dated 25 January 1946. KIDAMA definitely took over in May 1943 and not in October as Lieut. Comdr. CHUBB states in his affidavit. KIDAMA had previously been in charge of the Military Police and had been both Comdr. of the Military Police and Camp Comdr. until October 1943. I agree with Lieut. Comdr. CHUBB's description of this man except that I can not remember spectacles. He was a thoroughly unpleasant character and let YOSHIDA get away with all his beatings and cruelty.

6. [The man who exercised the greatest influence in our camp life, for evil was 1st Class Seaman YOSHIDA.] The Japanese internal organisation is such that certain Petty Officers are appointed entirely for Administrative duties, (Clerical and Victualling etc.) One man, usually a Petty Officer, but in this case only a 1st Class Seaman (Equivalent to an A/B) is appointed as disciplinary P/O. He is responsible for all internal discipline and labour; in fact he combines the duties of Master-at-Arms and Chief Bosun's Mate. His power is limitless and over-rules superiors in administrative posts. YOSHIDA assumed this duty in April, 1942. He was promoted to 3rd Class P/O in May 1943, and subsequently at yearly intervals to the higher classes. Aged about 32, medium height, fit, strongly built, with flashing gold teeth, he was a man of untiring energy, excellent power of command and outstanding efficiency. Superimposed on these excellent qualities were an uncontrollable temper and all the bad characteristics that can be imagined. He became to us the embodiment of everything that was evil and everything that we had been fighting against in the war - sadistic brutality, cruelty, dishonesty, untruthfulness, rogerly and tyranny. It was not long before everything connected with the Camp revolved around this fiend and that despotic rule lasted right up to the end. Personally I believe he was an agent of the KEIPEI or Secret Military Police. His reputation for bestiality was wide-spread in the Celebes and he was universally feared. Officers from H.C. appeared to have no control over him and he could do what he liked. From the Japanese point of view he was a great economic asset as he alone ran the Camp and H.C. were never troubled by cases of indiscipline and embarrassing requests. He ran the Camp on a policy of fear with collective reprisals on the innocent and sick, he created in the Camp a nervous tension, the nature of which can not exactly be described, with displays of terrifying anger and sadistic beatings and assault to all and sundry whether innocent or guilty without any form of investigation or opportunity for the victims to state their defence. Efforts by Officers to mediate often resulted in increased fury and additional victims, including the mediators. At times he would vent his wrath on the officers acting as interpreters, our only means of intercommunication, and thus by frightfulness tactics reduced their efficiency. To men always hungry, in most cases suffering from some form of sickness or ailment, ill-clothed and herded in quarters like animals, the addition of this nervous tension to the drabness and monotony of prison life, already devoid of all amenities of life to which the British are accustomed, had very exhausting effects upon the mental health. A lowering of mental health lowered physical health and so on in a vicious circle. The general deterioration of health in 1944 and

1945 was undoubtedly assisted by the mental strain of living under the control of this terrible person.

7. The Japanese method of maintaining discipline is by assault on the face with fists and the infliction of corporal punishment. This was usually done by a baseball bat, but also included such things as pick axe handles, spades, bamboos or any other weapon which was handy. Later on special clubs were made. Punishment was usually inflicted on the backside, but in bad beatings any part of the body was liable to be struck. Punishment was often accompanied by Ju-Jitsu throwing and long periods in the 'stoop-fall' position, before and/or after the beating. The number of strokes varied between 5 and 50 and depended on the state of the rage of the Guard, the crime, and whether the victim was one of YOSHIDA's likes or dislikes. Beatings were often done in the mess and in full view of the Camp. In a bad beating victims would be knocked down and kicked and forced to do "press-ups" after the injury had been inflicted. War-drums were often broken and other bodily harm inflicted. Men down town working were often beaten up by the guards on the spot and reported to YOSHIDA on return to Camp. They would then have to go through further punishment on a body already black and blue with bruises and stiff from blows. Other forms of punishment on a body included long periods of standing in the tropical sun, doubling around the camp in wooden clogs up to any period of three hours. Reprisals on Officers, P/Os in charge of Barracks or working parties were frequent and such punishments inflicted in the full view of the men. I myself was assaulted in one way or another over fifty times and beating on two occasions, once with a club and once with a spade. Examples of this type were innumerable.

8. I remember one particular occasion when YOSHIDA on his evening round found that a water-tap had been left running in one of the barrack rooms. He lost complete control of himself and went completely berserk. He raged through the barrack-room screaming and helling for the Petty-Officer in charge who when he appeared was struck a heavy blow under the chin by YOSHIDA. Not content with that YOSHIDA went through the next two barrack-rooms and assaulted both of the Petty-Officers in charge of those two rooms. Then I appeared on the scene. YOSHIDA was still beside himself with fury and assaulted me. I personally received four stunning blows under the chin. Explanations at this stage were useless. YOSHIDA's next move was to call out the fire-picket which he paraded. I was then beaten in front of it with a spade, the last stroke of my beating was particularly painful as YOSHIDA turned the spade on its edge and I received quite a nasty wound. CHUEB and FISHER were similarly beaten and we were then told that we would have to stay there for several hours.

9. Owing to lack of money our men were forced to get it by other means and the main source of income was smuggling food into the Camp from working parties and selling it to the Dutch at a high price. This smuggling was also necessary in order to get capital to buy food outside and smuggle that in for use on Rice. Rice is easy to eat provided there is something to go with it, with only salt, it is desperately difficult. Sugar was essential to the health of the men in order to assist their eating the rice, the main part of the diet. This smuggling was a continual source of trouble and an endless source of worry and was the main cause of nauseating beatings. At times I forbade it altogether to protect the community, but I let up on it as much as possible and risked the beating of the few to help the many. One could not deprive the hungry of food nor hinder their consumption of rice. Soap etc. was also essential to health and I sympathized with men trying to get money somehow in order to maintain their lives.

10. Only about a hundred men per day were employed outside the Camp during the first five months; from August 1942 onwards a great call was made on working parties. Two hundred and fifteen men and officers left for Japan in October, 1942. Four hundred others were sent to an aerodrome about 15 miles away to extend the runways. This party suffered from Malaria, with a certain amount of Dysentery and tropical ulcers during the rainy season. As they went sick they came back to the camp and were subsequently replaced by others. No mosquito nets, little cover at night, no shift of clothes, very few boots and lack of soap made conditions very severe. Many protests, a heavy sick list and a death from Malaria in April 1943, at last forced the Japanese to make some provision of nets. By this time it was too late and more than 70% of the men

...the subject to recurrent Malaria; by 1945 this had increased to 96%. The weakening effect of this malady on men in bad conditions, and employed in coolie work in the tropics caused general undermining of health and was responsible for the heavy mortality during the epidemic of 1945. The Japanese were quite aware of the cause and the effects of Malaria, but made no attempt to prevent it. They also seriously restricted the supplies of Quinine. YOSHIDA could have rectified all this at any time, but did not do so. Other men were employed in the town on a variety of jobs or inside the Camp. Throughout our policy was one of "go slow" shoddy work and do as much damage as possible. The demand on working parties by the Japanese was so great that old and unfit men were forced to work far in excess of their physical capabilities. The usual period of sickness for malaria was five days. Foot trouble (septic ulcers) was general. Lack of a balanced diet weakened men, and food was insufficient to build up convalescents. Wounds and ulcers took months to heal. Hours were long, days off few and far between. In January, 1943, 29 officers and 171 men were drafted to FOMLALA on the East leg of the Celebes in a mosquito infested swamp with no provisions against Malaria. This party stayed eight months there and lost sixteen men from sickness.]

11. A large sick list existed from the start. At the time of the sinking, men were tired by eight months war-service in the tropics and were in urgent need of rest. A long period in the water weakened many and the lack of food in the first six months and the difficulty of changing from a European diet to an Asiatic one affected the general health. Septic skin diseases, malaria with a certain amount of Beri-Beri were the main complaints.

12. [Food, or the lack of it, has dominated every second of prison life. I do not know what the official ration was, but I am certain we never got it. The guards stole much of the prisoners' rations. The amount received by prisoners was just sufficient for the majority to maintain life. The Japanese wished to get the maximum work out of us at the least cost. It did not particularly interest them if we died through lack of food. To give food to sick men they think foolish and uneconomic. They treat their sick in the same way. Like animals, they discard the sick and weaklings. Our food in 1942 was roughly as follows:

Breakfast : 4 oz. Dry bread
 $\frac{1}{2}$ a cup Coffee.
 Dinner : 6 oz Rice with a little coarse meat
 and greens and/or a duck egg.
 Supper : 8 oz bread with one duck egg.

1943 Onwards:

Breakfast : 6 oz Rice porridge
 $\frac{1}{2}$ oz Sugar.
 $\frac{1}{2}$ a cup of Coffee.
 Dinner : 6 oz. Rice with a little coarse
 meat and greens.
 Supper : 6 oz rice with thin vegetable stew.

Sometimes the meat varied with fish or an egg while the type and quantity of vegetables varied enormously. Later meat, fish and eggs went off altogether. It is true really, to say that men have existed on a diet composed mainly of rice and greens, total weight of food varying between $1\frac{1}{2}$ and 2 pounds per day. The lack of vitamin and protein-bearing foods has led to widespread mal-nutritional diseases. Food was available locally and the small amount of food provided was deliberate. They wished to make prisoners weak physically. De ths from malnutrition and disease are attributable to malicious and pre-meditated neglect. Representations were continually being made to the guards without avail. The Macassar unit never received any Red Cross parcels, but the Java units received $\frac{3}{4}$ of a monthly parcel in $3\frac{1}{2}$ years. The rest must have gone to the Japanese forces somewhere.

13. The general life in Camp was drab. No forms of recreation were possible, no singing or concerts permitted. No mails, news, or papers were received. One wireless message was allowed to be sent in November, 1942 - nothing since. A rush mat and a sleeping board were the only furniture provided for the men.]

14. The majority of officers were drafted to Java in October, 1943. The Japanese selected one Lieutenant, one midshipman, the Chaplain and six arrant Officers to stay behind in Macassar - one Lieut. and one midshipman unfit to travel were also left. The command of the men was therefore transferred to Lieut. D.W.E. CHUBB, R.N., who kept it until 26th July 1945.

15. I consider that YOSHIDA was directly responsible for the ill-treatment which our PWs suffered in this camp and also consider that the Camp Commandants, Admiral MORI, and his Chief of Staff, should bear a large part of the responsibility for our treatment. Both Camp Commandants during the period in which I was the Senior Officer were well aware of what was going on and made no effort to improve our living conditions or to curb YOSHIDA in the exercise of his power.

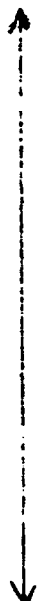
SWORN by the said
COOPER at 6, Spring Gardens in the
City of Westminster this 7th day
of February 1946.

(Sgd) G. T. Cooper
Lieutenant Commander.

(Sgd) G.T. COOPER

BEFORE ME

(Sgd) A. M. Bell-MacDonald,
Major
(A.M. BELL-MACDONALD)
Major Legal Staff,
Military Department,
Office of the Judge Advocate General,
London, S.W.1.



14. The majority of officers were drafted to Java in October, 1943. The Japanese selected one Lieutenant, one midshipman, the Chaplain and six arrant Officers to stay behind in Macassar - one Lieut. and one midshipman unfit to travel were also left. The command of the me: was therefore transferred to Lieut. D.W.E. CHUBB, R.N., who kept it until 26th July 1945.

15. I consider that YOSHIDA was directly responsible for the ill-treatment which our PWs suffered in this camp and also consider that the Camp Commandants, Admiral MORI, and his Chief of Staff, should bear a large part of the responsibility for our treatment. Both Camp Commandants during the period in which I was the Senior Officer were well aware of what was going on and made no effort to improve our living conditions or to curb YOSHIDA in the exercise of his power.

SWORN by the said
COOPER at 6, Spring Gardens in the
City of Westminster this 7th day
of February 1946.

(Sgd) G. T. Cooper
Lieutenant Commander.

(Sgd) G.T. COOPER

BEFORE ME

(Sgd) A. M. Bell-MacDonald,
Major
(A.M. BELL-MACDONALD)
Major Legal Staff,
Military Department,
Office of the Judge Advocate General,
London, S.W.1.

Doc 5503

私ハ、英國海軍、海軍少佐ジョージ、テイソチール、
クーパー、自宅ハ「サレール」州、「カンバレー」町、
「バインツリ」ヒル、「宣言」後左ノ通り陳述シマ
ス。

一、私ハ爪哇海戦ヲ英艦「エキセツタ」艦沈没ノ
後、一九四二年（昭和十七年）三月ニ俘虜トナリ
マシタ。私ハ英艦「エキセツタ」艦生存者ト一
所ニ「セレベス」島上ノ「マツカツサル」ニ送ラレ
マシタ。私共ハ益都町ノ南二區位ニ在ル近代風ノ
和蘭陸軍兵營ニ入セラレマシタ。日本當局ハ「和
蘭印度王軍」ノ陸軍中佐、J・コイトマンスマラ收
容所指揮官ニ任命シマシタ。彼ハ實際收容所ノ上
級和蘭將校ヲナカシタ。上級ノ和蘭將校ハ「真領
印度王軍」ノM・ザカイレン大佐デアリマシタ。
和蘭人ノ数ハ約千八百名、米國人ガ百六十七名而
シテ英國人ガ九百四十五名デアリマシタ。

三、私ガ指揮ヲ執ツタ時ノ状態ハ慘メデシタ。私共
ハ一ヶ月間丸パン唯一個ト少量ノ「水タカラシ」
ヲ副エタ飯一包ト時時悪臭アル乾魚少々カウ成ル
一日ノ支給食專テ生活シマシタ。各人共近頃環沈

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5503

サレタ不愉快ナ経験ヲ味ヒ、捕虜ノ不名譽ヲ忍バ
ホバナリマセンデシタ。多敷ハ長時間水中ニ居タ
爲メ衰弱シマシタ。一エキセツタ山號ニ就テ申セ
バ艦乗込員ハ一ケ年ノ戰時勤務ヲ終ニ其内八ヶ月
ハ殆ンドズツト熱帯デ日ヲ送リマシタ。私ハ此結
カ今後ノ出來事ニ大キナ影響ヲ及ボス故茲テ説明
致シマス。私共ガ持ツテ居ル唯一ノ着物ハ褌沈サ
レタ時着テ居タモノデ其他ノ所有品ハ有リマセン
デシタ。

人々ハ縦八尺横六尺ノ寢具モ食器モナイ小室ニ四
名、時ニ五名詰込マレマシタ。蚊ハ實ニ酷ク夜間
刺サレタ痕ハ直ニ化膿シマシタ。

× × × ×

六、私共ノ收容所生活ニ最大ノ悪影響ヲ及ボシタ人
ハ海軍一等水兵吉田デシタ。彼ハ肆無キ者
ト病人ニ對スル集團的報復ヲ以テスル恐怖方計テ
收容所内ヲ切盛りシ何ノ取締ノ形式モ無ク、又ハ
被害者ニ對シ自ラフ辯護スル機會モ具ヘズニ罪ア
ル者ニモ罪ナキ者ニモ全部ニ對シテ惡意的忿怒ヲ
示シ好意的殴打暴行ヲ加エ收容所内ニ或ル神經ノ
緊張感ヲ醸シ出シマシタガ、ソノ様シハ一寸表現
シ難イ性質ノモノデアリマス。將校連ガ仲裁シヨ
ウトスルト度々彼ノ怒リヲ増々熾リ立テ被害者ヲ

Doc 5503

増シ仲裁者迄モ冠添ヲ食フトイフ結果ニナリマシ
タ。時々吉田ハ私共ノ唯一ノ意志疏通者タル通譯
ヲ勤メル將校等ニ彼ノ憤怒ヲ爆發サセ斯クシテ恐
慮戰略ニヨリ彼等ノ能率ヲ低下サセマシタ。常ニ
飢エ、多クノ場合アル種ノ病氣ニ罹リ弊衣デ動物
ノ様ニ房中ニ集群サセラレタ人々ニトツテハ英國
人ガ習慣トシテ來タ生活ノ和氣請メサヲ既ニ缺除
シタ收容所生活ノ味氣無サト單調サニコノ神經ノ
緊張感ガ加ハツタ爲ニソノ精神的健康ガ非常ニ害
サレル結果トナリマシタ。精神的健康ノ低下ハ肉
体的健康ヲ低下サセ斯クシテ反動的ニ互ヒニ惡作
用ヲ及シマシタ。一九四四年及一九四五年ニ於ケ
ル一般的健康ノ衰退ハ此等ルベキ人物ノ支配下ニ
生活スル精神的緊張ニ依テ疑ヒナク助長サレマシ
タ。

七、日本人ノ規律維持方法ハ拳ヲ固メテ顔面ヲ殴打
スルコト、懲刑ニ依ルノデアリマス。之ハイツモ
野球ノ「バット」ヲ行ハレタカ亦拳ノ柄、鉄、
竹、又ハ手頃ナ其他ノ武器ノ如キ物ヲ含マレテ居
マシタ。後ニナツテ特別ノ棍棒ガ作ラレマシタ。
懲罰ハイツモ背部ニ課セラレルガ打方ノ惡イ時ハ
身体ノドンナ處モ打タレマシタ。懲罰ハ屢々其前
後ニ柔道ノ投ト赤イ筒「樽」マセラレル「コトカツ

Doc 5503

キモノデシタ。殴打ノ數ハ五回カラ五十回ノ間テ
區別サレテ居テ而シテ衛兵ノ怒ノ程度、罪、及被
害者カ吉田ノ好ム人間カ、好マヌ人間カニ依ツテ居
マシタ。殴打ハ屢々集會ノ庭ヤ收容所ノ衆目環視
ノ所テ行ハレマシタ。殴リ方ガ惡イト被害者ハ肢
體サレ、麻飛サレ而シテ害ガ加ヘラレタ後一處立
伏ラ強制サレテ居マシタ。屢々鼓膜カ破レ身体
ノ他ノ部分ニ傷ヲ受ケマシタ。町テ働イテ居ル人
々ハ屢々其ノ場テ衛兵カラウ殴ラレ收容所ニ歸ツテ
カラ吉田ニ報告サレマシタ。彼等ハ打撲傷テ概ニ
照ク書クナツタリ殴打テ癩ノ出來タ身体ニ更ニ體
刑ヲ受ケネバナラナカツタ。他ノ體刑ノ形式ハ長
イ同熱帶ノ太陽ノ下ニ立タセラレタリ三時間ニ直
リ收容所ノ周圍ヲ下駄テ廻ラサレルコトデアリマ
シタ。尉校達、收容所又ハ作業班ノ監督俘虜達ハ
ノ報復ハ屢々テ新カル罪ハ衆人環視ノ裡ニ行ハレ
マシタ。私自身モアレヤコレヤ五十回以上モ殴ラ
レ二度ノ内一度ハ棍棒テ一度ハ鐵テ打タレマシタ。
コノ型ノ例ハ數ヘ切レマセンデシタ。

八、私ハ一ツノ特別ノ出來事ヲ記憶シテ居マス。吉
田カタ刻ノ巡回ノ時ニ收容所ノ一室テ水道栓カ出
放シニナツテ居タノヲ見附マシタ。彼ハスツカリ
自制ヲ失イ全ク狂氣ニナリマシタ。彼ハ收容所ノ

Doc 5503

部座ヲ廻ツテ監督ノ下士官ニ向ツテ叫ビ且怒號
シナガラ走リマシタ。其下士官ハ出テ來タ時ニ吉
田カラ顎ノ下ヲ踏ク段ラレマシタ。ソレニ尙足セ
ズニ吉田ハ次ノ二室ヲ廻ツテ、此二室ノ監督ノ下
士官二人ヲ殴打シマシタ。其時私ハ現場ニ現レマ
シタ。吉田ハ猶怒テ夢中ニナツテ居タノテ私ヲ殴
リ附ケマシタ。私個人モ顎ノ下ニ四回モ氣ノ遠ク
ナル様ナ打撃ヲ受ケマシタ。コノ場合辯明ナドハ
無駄デシタ。吉田ノ次ノ行動ハ彼ガ憤悶シテ居タ
防火衛兵ヲ呼出スコトデシタ。ソレカラ私ハ其前
テ歟テ續ケ打ラサレマシタ。私ノ受ケタ最後ノ一
打ハ吉田カ歟ノ刃ノ向ヲ替エタノテ待ニ浦ク、而
シテ私ハ全ク容易ナラヌ負傷ラジマシタ。一チヤ
ツブート「フイツシヤ」モ同様ニ打タレ、而シ
テソレカラ私共ハ其處ニ數時間モ停マツテ居ル様
ニ云イ渡サレマシタ。

九、金錢ノ不足カラ我々ハ餘營ナク其ヲ他ノ方法デ
得ナケレバナリマセンデシタ。而シテ收入ノ主源
ハ作業班カラ收容所内ニ食糧ヲ密カニ運ビ込ンデ
而シテ其レヲ和蘭人ハ高價デ買ルコトデシタ。此
密輸入ハ亦飯ノ御菜ニスル食糧ヲ外デ買ヒ入レテ
ソレカラ密輸入スル爲ノ資金ヲ手ニ入レル様ニス
ルニモ亦必要デアリマシタ。飯ハ何カソレニ副エ

Doc 5503

レバ容易ニ食ベラレマスガ、鹽ト又ケテハ如何ト
シテモ困難デス。砂糖ハ食事ノ主要部分タル飯ヲ
食ベル手助ニナル爲ニ吾人ノ健康ニモ必要デシタ。
此密蔵人ハ面倒ノ頻繁ナ源デアリ無限ノ心配ノ源
デアリ而シテ嫌患スベキ殴打ノ主因デアリマシタ。
時々私ハ團體ヲ保護スル爲ニ其レヲ全面的ニ禁止
シマシタ。然シ私ハソレヲ出來ル又余計ニ見逃シ
テ多數ヲ救フ爲ニ少數者ノ殴打ノ危険ヲ賭シマシ
タ。我々ハ空腹者ノ食糧ヲ奪イ飯ノ消費ヲ妨ゲル
コトハ出來マセンデシタ。石礫其他モ亦健康ニ必
要デシタ。而シテ私ハ其生活ヲ維持スル爲ドウカ
コウカ金錢ヲ得ヨウトシテ居ル人々ニ同情シマシ
タ。

十、境初ノ五ケ月間ハ一日約百名位シカ收容所ノ外
テハ使役サレマセンデシタ。一九四二年八月以後
作業隊ニ大召集カ行ハレマシタ。一九四二年十月
二百十五名ノ兵士ト將校カ日本ニ出發シマシタ。
他ノ四百名ハ滑走路ヲ擴張スル爲ニ約十五哩離レ
タ飛行場ヘ送ラレマシタ。此一回ハ雨季中「マウ
リヤ」、相當數ノ赤痢及熱布性陣蕩ニ冒サレマシ
タ。病氣ニナルト彼等ハ收容所ニ歸サレ而シテ次
々ト他ノ者ト交代サセラレマシタ。蚊帳モナク、
夜ハ似カナ覆布、着替ノ絶無、極ク少ナイ長靴、

Doc 5503

レバ容易ニ食ベラレマスガ、鹽ト交ケテハ如何ト
シテモ困難デス。砂糖ハ食事ノ主要部分タル飯ヲ
食ベル手助ニナル爲ニ吾人ノ健康ニモ必要デシタ。
此密蔵人ハ面倒ノ頻繁ナ源デアリ無限ノ心配ノ源
デアリ而シテ癡愚スベキ殴打ノ主因デアリマシタ。
時々私ハ團體ヲ保護スル爲ニ其レヲ全面的ニ禁止
シマシタ。然シ私ハソレヲ出來ル又余計ニ見逃シ
テ多敷ヲ救フ爲ニ少數者ノ殴打ノ危険ヲ賭シマシ
タ。我々ハ望塵者ノ食糧ヲ尋イ飯ノ消費ヲ妨ゲル
コトハ出來マセンデシタ。石炭其他モ亦健康ニ必
要デシタ。而シテ私ハ其生活ヲ維持スル爲ドウカ
コウカ金錢ヲ得ヨウトシテ居ル人々ニ同情シマシ
タ。

十、境初ノ五ヶ月間ハ一日約百名位シカ收容所ノ外
テハ使役サレマセンデシタ。一九四二年八月以後
作業隊ニ六召集ガ行ハレマシタ。一九四二年十月
二百十五名ノ兵士ト將校ヲ日本ニ出發シマシタ。
他ノ四百名ハ滑走路ヲ擴張スル爲ニ約十五哩離レ
タ飛行場ヘ送ラレマシタ。此一國ハ雨季中「マウ
リヤ」、相當其ノ赤痢及熱布性腫瘍ニ冒サレマシ
タ。病氣ニナルト彼等ハ收容所ニ歸サレ而シテ次
々ト他ノ者ト交代サセラレマシタ。蚊帳モナク、
夜ハ僅カナ覆布、着替ノ絶無、極ク少ナイ長靴、

Doc 5503

而シテ石原ノ缺乏カ状態ヲ非常ニ痛クシマシタ。
多クノ抗議ト一九四三年四月ニ於ケル多数患者ノ
名簿ト「マウリヤ」ニヨル死者ハ遂ニ日本人ニ數
帳ヲ幾ツカ準備サセルコトヲ準備ナクサセマシタ。
此時ニハ民ニ選ク人員ノ七割以上ガ再發性「マウ
リヤ」ニ罹リ一九四五年迄ニハ九割六分ニ増加シ
マシタ。悪状態下ニアツテ而シテ熱帯デ土方仕事
ニ使役サレテイタ人々ガ此病氣ヲ衰弱サセラレタ
結果一般ニ健康ガ悪化シ一九四五年ノ流行病期
間中ノ非常ナ死亡率ニナツタノハ此ノ病氣ノセイ
デアリマシタ。日本人ハ「マウリヤ」ノ原因ト結
果トラ能ク知ツテ居マシタガ、ソレヲ防グコトヲ
企テマセンデシタ。彼等ハ亦「キニ」ノ文給
ヲ非常ニ制限シマシタ。吉田ハイツデモ此ヲ全ク
改良スルコトガ出來タノニソウシマセンデシタ。
他ノ人員ハ阿テ色々ナ仕幕ニ又ハ收容所ノ中デ使
役サレマシタ。船船共ノ方針ハ「遅ク歩メ式」
ノ一ツヲ見セ掛ノ仕幕ラシテ日本人ニ出來ル又多
ク損害ヲ與エルコトデシタ。日本人ノ作業隊ニ對
スル要求ハ非常ニ大キク、老人ヤ病弱ナ人ハ彼等
ノ肉体的能力ヲ遙カニ超過シテ働クコトヲ強要サ
レマシタ。「マウリヤ」ノ普通發作期ハ五日間
デシタ。足ノ病氣（腐敗性脚氣）ハ一般的デシタ。

Doc 5503

平衡シタ食料ノ缺乏ハ人々ヲ衰弱サセ食物ハ恢復
期ノ病人ヲ養ウノニ不充分デシタ。傷ト時傷トハ
快癒ニ數ケ月ヲ要シマシタ。労働時間ハ長ク休日
ハホシノ數ヘル程シカナカツタノデス。一九四三
年一月中ニ二十九名ノ將校ト百七十一名ノ兵士ハ
「セレベス」島ノ東ノ足部ニ當リ且ツ「マウリヤ」
ニ對シテ何等施設ナク蚊ノ多イ濕地ニ所在スル「
ボマウー」ニ分遣サレマシタ。コノ一隊ハ八ヶ月
間其處ニ滞在シテ病氣デ十六名ヲ失ヒマシタ。

(以下次頁ニ續ク)

Doc 5503

十二、食糧又ハ其缺乏ハ獄中生活ノ各瞬間ニ於テ固
 ニテアリマシタリ私ハ規定ノ配給量ガ何程デア
 ルカラ知リマセンガ私共ハソレヲ受ケタコトガ
 ナイコトハ積カテス。衛兵ハ停息ノ配給量ノ多
 クヲ望ミマシタリ停息ノ受取ツタ量ハ大多數ガ
 生命ヲ害スニ足ル文ケテシタリ日本人ハ長小ノ
 價格テ最大限ノ仕舞ヲヤラセヨウト欲シマシタリ。
 私共ガ食物ノ不足ノ爲ニ死ンテモ彼等ニ特別關
 心ヲ起サセマセンテシタリ。患者ニ食物ヲ與ヘル
 コトハ彼等ハ馬鹿ラシク而シテ不經濟ト思ヒマ
 シタリ。彼等ハ彼等ノ患者ヲモ同様ニ取扱ヒマス。
 彼等ハ患者ト弱イ人達ヲ動切ノ様ニ取棄テマス。
 一九四二年ニ於ケル私共ノ食事ハザツト左ノ通
 リテシタリ。

朝飯 乾パン四オンス、珈琲半杯
 昼飯 飯六オンス、硬イ肉少々トソレニ青
 菜ト家鴨ノ卵兩方カ一方
 晩飯 飯六オンス、家鴨ノ卵一個

一九四三年以降

朝飯 粥六オンス、砂糖半オンス、珈琲半杯
 昼飯 飯六オンス、硬イ肉少々ト青葉
 晩飯 飯六オンス、硬イ肉菜ステユ一

Doc 5503

時々肉ハ魚又ハ卵一個ト代リ又一方テハ野菜ノ
種類ト分量ハ論ク色々アリマシタ。其後肉、魚
及卵ハ全部無クナリマシタ。人々ハ主トシテ飯
ト青菜カラ成立テ居ル食事ニ依存シタコトハ實
際本當デス。食事ノ全量ハ一日一割度半カラ二
割度デシタ。ヅイタミント蛋白質ノアル食物ノ
不足ハ廣範圍ニ亘ル營養失調ニヨル病氣ヲ生ゼ
サセマシタ。食料ハ現地テ入手ガ出來タカラ食
糧ノ小量支給ハ故意デシタ。彼等ハ浮屠ヲ肉体
的ニ衰弱サセヨウト欲シマシタ。營養失調ト疾
病ニヨル死ハ惡意ナ謀略的怠慢ニ歸スルモノデ
ス。申立ガ絶エズ衛兵ニナサレタケレド効果ガ
アリマセンデシタ。一マカツサル一部隊ハ一度
モ赤十字救恤小包ヲ受取リマセンデシタ。然シ
爪哇部隊ハ三年半ノ間ニ一ヶ月分ノ小包ノ四分
ノ三ヲ一度ズケ受取リマシタ。残りハドコカ日
本軍ニ行ツタノニ違ヒナイテセウ。

十三、收容所ニ於ケル一般生活ハ單調デシタ。ドン
ナ形式ノ娛樂モ出來ズ、唱歌ヤ音樂ノ會モ許可
サレマセンデシタ。郵便モ報道モ又ハ新聞モ受
取リマセンデシタ。一九四二年十一月ニ無電ヲ
一通打ツコトヲ許可サレタキリ一以來何物モ。

Doc 5503

筒製ノ骨ト薩炭用ノ板トガ人員ニ供給サレタ陸
一ノ器具デアリマシタ

× × × × × × ×

海軍少佐 G. E. クーパー / 署名 /

右「クーパー」ハ一九四六年一月七日「ウエスト
ミンスター」市、「スプリングガーデン」六ニ於
テ予ノ面前ニテ宣誓セリ

ロンドン S. W. 1

法務局長事務所算務課

法務部員少佐

A. M. ベル・マクドナルド / 署名 /

11.

Document No. 5504

F-1
C. #1805-

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS), being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

Report on: "Some cases of man-handling and ill-treatment by Japanese guards in the P.O. Camp at MACASSAR dated October 4, 1945," drawn up by DIEUDONNE, Capt. R.N.I.A., No. OM/216/M

which document is a part of the official records of the Nefis.

Signature:

/s/ Ch. Jongeneel

SEAL

Batavia, June 7th, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney-General N.S.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

SOME CASES OF MAN-HANDLING AND ILL-TREATMENT BY JAPANESE GUARDS IN THE
P.O.W. CAMP AT MACASSAR

The following is a concise synopsis of cases of arbitrary actions and cruelty performed by the Japanese Guards at the P.W. Camp Macassar. The most ferocious of all no doubt, has been Yoshida, whilst Ka Koi - Nagao - Teraoko and Ishikawa have tried rather successfully to equal and match Yoshida. It is almost impossible and as a matter of fact much too elaborate to detail all cases worth mentioning but the following selection of cases will prove amply the inhuman treatment applied to the prisoners of war at the Macassar Camp. This report intends to deal with cases of cruelty only. The matter of food, hospital and sick bay shall have to be explained and detailed by a Medical Staff Officer, who is more competent to deal with those matters its consequences on the general condition of physical being and welfare of the P.W.'s.

[In the beginning of 1942, when the Macassar Camp was gradually filled to the brim, the behaviour of the Japanese Guards did not cause much reason for complaints. Except the bad beating and a variety of cruel acts, such as climbing and strying in a tree full of red ants, laying on the hands with feet in the air and roped to a tree or chair, whilst Japanese Guards tried the strength of the victims by standing on their backs, etc., applied to three P.W.'s who deserted the camp during the night, no serious cases of manhandling have to be reported. However, this comparatively satisfactory state of affairs prevailing in the Camp, suddenly changed to the worse with the appearance of Asano Yoshida on the 1st April, 1942, at that time a mere lancecorporal. The fact that this man was promoted to Sergeant Major, proves that his superiors must have been in full agreement with his inhuman treatment of P.W.'s and the management of the camp. Except the Warrant-Officer Shigoru-Kori, no other Japanese Camp-commander has ever had, at least as far as we have been able to ascertain, a word in the internal affairs of the camp. It was Yoshida who directed everything, and who counteracted orders issued by his superiors. Even applied unjustified punishment for deeds sanctioned and agreed with by his chiefs.

The first disgusting show of cruelty was given by Yoshida on the 9th May, 1942 when the South African R.N.V. Hefferman, Nelson, Service No. 68576, the Dutch home Guard soldier Simons, Alfred and the American Nagele, P.M., Fireman 2/c trespassed the order of contact between the British, American and Dutch contingents. Each received some 80 strokes with a heavy wooden club and other treatment such as kicking with heavy leather boots all over the body lying on the ground. Simons and Nagele had a broken arm whilst Hefferman had the ribs bruised and cracked. All three had to be sent to the Hospital ship "Op ten Noort" for medical treatment and cure.

5th June, 1942.

Thorough search for weapons throughout the barracks. This search was personally conducted by Naval Officer Capt. Ota, R.D.C. who on this occasion made the statement that all prisoners of war had to be very grateful

to Nippon, as he could do with the Pws whatever he liked even kill them. This Naval Officer's high standing was well illustrated by the fact that he himself slapped the senior Naval Officer 1st. cl. J. Beckering-Vinckers in his face and ordered Yoshida to continue this punishment so that said officer fell on the ground twice. The reason for this was, that B.V. was not standing to attention to the satisfaction of Ota when reporting on the search for weapons in the Navy Barracks.]

7th July, 1942.

The so called gun-repair-group were given permission to buy food at their workshop. However, Yoshida, did not know about this permission and without further comment, assisted by Shiap Chi Mori administered a bad beating to each member of the group.

20th July, 1942.

On the 5th June permission was granted by the captain, Ota, A.D.C. to continue lessons to the few Secondary School pupils in the camp. Lt. Col. Gortmans therefore arranged with the teachers present in the camp to proceed with the schoolwork. On the 20th July, 1942 Kaneichi Atoyama entered the schoolroom and after a short look retreated without comments. Soon after Yoshida appeared and ordered teachers and pupils to the quarters of Lt. Col. Gortmans, where they explained the situation and warned that trouble was ahead. However, Lt. Col. Gortmans, with Ota's permission did not expect any trouble, but when Yoshida arrived a few minutes later he started by slapping all teachers and pupils in the face. His Atoyama participated in the slapping and knocked Capt. Habesone one of the teachers, in the ditch. The debate between Lt. Col. Gortmans and Yoshida, through the interpreter Lt. Budding, was rather one sided as Lt. Col. Gortmans was not given a chance to explain things properly. Finally all pupils were given some 15 bad strokes with a club whilst the teachers Counread, who died in camp later on, and Habesone, transferred to Java, were beaten ferociously. The end was that pupils and teachers were put in the bricks for 2 days without any mat to sleep on or mosquito nets. Witnesses: JUNS DE GRUIF LAKKERKERKER - van DILLWILJN a.o.

9-14th September, 1942.

In the night of 8/9 September 1942 Army Sergeant Pelletier, Navy Officer De Haan and Sailor Entrep made an attempt to escape, but were picked up by the Japanese the following day. The group members of said three men were accused of knowledge and conspiracy and therefore held responsible. However, part of the members of the Pelletier group was on a working party and therefore some other men taken at random were put in the cell as hostages on the 9th. Total 21 men of which Peters, Prak and Nas are still at this place. The first 5 days they received food twice a day only. They had not mat to sleep on, no mosquito nets, no other clothing than they were wearing when put in the cell, and no bath. On the 12th they were ordered to dig

the grave for the three victims. On the 14th these were beheaded. On the 14th Captain Ota himself read out the sentence of death in front of the lined up PW's. This sentence of death contained the charge of conspiracy with the native population. Some days later it appeared that on the 14th also Lt. Hees, Balloni and Brandon were beheaded at the same time. In the period 9-14 September the three victims were beastly treated. Every change of the guards was an opportunity for the Sergeant of the guards to enjoy the beastly scene of ferocious beating of the 3 victims. After the 14th the 21 hostages received better treatment and were allowed to take fresh air twice a day, play football and gymnastics. The worst was to stay in a cell with 16 men, some of them suffering from malaria, others from dysentery. Only much later the sick were admitted to the hospital. Contact with the PW's in camp was strictly forbidden. On the occasion of a Japanese holiday, 3rd November, all hostages were set free and returned to camp.

25th October, 1942.

After having obtained permission from the No. 2 camp commander Mori, the Officers ordered 12 rattan chairs at the camp store. Yoshida noticed the delivery of these chairs and since he was not informed of this purchase he punished the officer in charge of camp store requirements, Lt. van Vreeden, with 42 severe strokes with the club. Lt. Col. Gortmans and Lt. Cohen, the latter 65 years old, who intervened in the beating were floored several times and Lt. Cohen was put in the cell for the day.

28th October, 1942.

Army Sergeant Smit, A.J. Service No. 91509 on a working party at the Ciba was addressed by a Japanese, who remarked upon his work. Sergeant Smit, out of politeness jumped from his sitting position on the ground to attention with his tool in hand. The Japanese was apparently frightened and accused him of aggressiveness and threatening and ordered him to do the "lizard" with stretched body, flat hands and toe-tips on the ground. Thereafter 37 beatings with the club. Upon return at the Camp at night the matter was reported to YOSHIDA, who reported the beating and gave another 50 strokes. Sergeant Smit not being able to stand on his legs any more was held to a tree by other PW's, who were forced by YOSHIDA to hold Smit erect against a tree. The PW's, who held Smit, also were beaten. This punishment was so beastly that blood soaked his shirt and ran down Smit's legs. He had to be admitted to the hospital where he remained for a considerable time before he was able to walk again.

2nd January, 1943.

YOSHIDA supervising some work at the wire fence around the hospital premises, yelled to A. Lewis, hospital attendant, who happened to pass on a gallery some 30 meters away. Not knowing that the yelling was directed at him, Lewis proceeded on his duty whereupon YOSHIDA followed him and after knocking him to the floor gave him a beastly beating. Dr. Manning, the

door on watch in the hospital, attracted by the noise outside, appeared in a doorway and was summoned by YOSHIDA. Dr. Nanning did not understand the almost incomprehensible mixture of YOSHIDA's few words of Malay and Japanese, which fact aggravated the situation and resulted in a ferocious beating at the gate, where Dr. Nanning and Lewis, thoroughly wet by the many buckets of water poured over them, had to stand to attention for some hours.]

5th April 1943.

Strict orders were issued that all Japanese officers, whilst on working parties or marching in groups in town, were to be saluted. Even by individual negligence of this order the whole camp, according to YOSHIDA, should be punished collectively.

15th July, 1943.

During fire alarm-roll Lt. Ketel badly beaten with a club by YOSHIDA, Lt. Ketel who acted as interpreter was not properly standing to attention.

28th October 1943.

Lt. Ketel severely beaten again in front of the lined up troops, because the troops were not called to attention at the arrival of YOSHIDA.

2nd November, 1943.

Four PWs caught by Japanese Officer in Japanese godown. Beaten on the spot and condemned to one week in the bricks after another 25 strokes with a club. After one week dismissed and in front of the troops beaten for the 3rd time. On this occasion the Camp Commander HISAKICHI KODAMA applied part of the beating himself, and stated that PWs were just like cats and dogs and if it happened again that PWs were found in places where they had no business to be, they would be beheaded. On this occasion YOSHIDA beat Lt. Ketel again for not translating orders properly.

22nd November 1943.

G. W. de Kater on a working party in town signaled to a passing lady to inform his wife that he was in town. No verbal contact was made, though pre-arranged code-signs were given. YOSHIDA being on the spot apparently noticed those signs. Upon return in the Camp at 5:30 p.m. de Kater was ordered to the front of the group and was dangerously beaten by YOSHIDA with a whip, specially prepared, causing wounds all over the body, but principally the legs and arms were beaten till blood was running. Thereafter the whole party was ordered on the double for about one hour. The whip must have been contaminated as the wounds remained open and purulent for a few months. After this beating de Kater was unable to walk for over 10 days.

14th January, 1944.

Sergeant C.A.G. Sprangers, in charge of outdoor working parties, was ordered by the Sergeant of the Guards to supply a group of 17 Americans and 33 Dutch for outdoor working. When YOSHIDA noticed that this party had gone out without his consent he called for Sprangers who received a bad beating and face slapping. Captain Dieudonne, who tried to intervene in this undeserved punishment was pushed aside and driven into his room-office, where he was slapped and manhandled by YOSHIDA.

15 January, 1944.

W.F.H. Plas, a civilian, belonging to the group of civilians for transfer to the Pare-Pare camp, was beaten beastly by YOSHIDA, because Plas did not understand the yelled orders in incomprehensible Malay.

9th April, 1944.

Collective beating was given to an outdoor working party, being accused of not bringing the proper salute to a passing officer.

15th April, 1944.

Corporal Shingenori Nagae beat the American Orlyk, S.M. machinist mate l/c in such a way that he had to be admitted to the hospital for immediate treatment. Wounds on his seat remained open and reached a stage of dangerous putrefaction. Dr. Smits then applied skin transfer, which fact in all probability saved Orlyk's life.

1st May, 1945.

32 Americans collectively thrashed by the entire Japanese Guards for having exchanged cigarette paper for food and fruit with the population.

3rd May, 1944.

Soldier J. J. Koster and four Americans, beastly thrashed by 8 Japanese under direction of YOSHIDA, for petty theft at Macassar. Each received some 75 strokes with a heavy club. Two days previously they were beaten for the same reason.]

6th May, 1944.

It was arranged with the Japanese Camp Commanders, that each person on a working-party in town was to be given 3 cents for buying refreshments on the job. No restrictions as to the nature of refreshments was made. At the BOW workshop, the "Seminkash" the senior Jap NCO in command gave the fullest cooperation and arranged for daily sweetened hot coffee. The Japanese working at the BOW shop made merry over the little amount allowed by YOSHIDA for daily expenditure by the PWs and intended to enjoy themselves over this at the cost of YOSHIDA in the bar, which intention was plainly stated to all

PWs at the BOW. That night YOSHIDA returned from the bar in a badly intoxicated condition and contended that he had forbidden them to buy coffee for the daily allowance of 3 cents, and that fruit only was permitted. The entire camp had to fall in and the trespassers had to step to the front to receive their punishment. [Mr. D. W. Taranskoen, sergeant 1/c, one of the party leaders, was given 20 strokes with the club, followed by a one-sided wrestling demonstration, kicking and beating of vital parts of body and head, strangling immediately followed by pouring in the mouth of some buckets of water. Thereafter a final beating of 40 strokes. Three more party leaders were given almost the same treatment. After the final beating, the victims had to stand to attention (two were flat on the ground).

4th August, 1944.

An Englishman was given 70 strokes by YOSHIDA because he did not perform "Eyes right" to his satisfaction.

5th August, 1944.

Wilkinson, J. Stoker R.N. hesitated to execute an order given him by the officer in command of the British contingent, which caused that one working party to leave the gate one man short. YOSHIDA and his gang administered not less than 207 strokes to Wilkinson. The extraordinary strength and will-power of Wilkinson infuriated YOSHIDA, who was determined to beat him down completely. However, Wilkinson managed to stand to attention, though unsteady, for over 2 hours afterwards.

12th January, 1945.

The party leader of "Galley Marise" group, returned to camp with rice from the noon meal in his mess tin. KAKOI, the sergeant of the Guards had the entire group badly thrashed, although most of them were PWs of advanced age. It is not improbable that the death of Sergeant W. ton Have soon afterwards (18/2/'45) is connected with this beating. On the same day the radio-working parties, 120 in total were given a beastly beating by the entire camp guards under direction of YOSHIDA. YOSHIDA kicked several men with his boots whilst lying on the ground after beating, till blood ran down their faces. Reason: some men had stolen sugar. Food situation at that time was extremely poor.

24th January, 1945.

KAKOI, Sergeant of the Guards, thrashed many PWs from returning working parties for no apparent reason.

18th February, 1945.

The garrison commander HIKOICHI ISHIDA ordered a thorough search in the camp. The names of all men who had reserve food stowed away were noted. At night the entire camp had to line up and all people whose names were noted

were given a beastly beating, varying from 35 to 110 strokes, with the club. Then followed all the hut- and group leaders. Many victims were knocked senseless and kicked all over the body whilst lying on the ground. . . . The entire guard was ordered to perform this sadistic orgy but KANEYOSHI TERUOKA, KUNITARO, SEIKI KAKOI and YOSHIDA excelled in cruelty.

Most of the food found was prepared from rice on medical advice, in an endeavour to increase the vitamin contents of the food, the lack of which in the daily menu was causing serious trouble.

20th February, 1945.

Case: Dodds, V. Royal Marine.

This Pw was caught with a bag of eggs, brought in from outside for sick people, needing additional food. The entire camp had to fall in to witness the torture which was beyond words, whilst the entire working group to which he belonged was given the cruellest treatment after having done the "lizard" for about 1 hour, in which all the British officers and chaplain had to participate. Dodds was condemned to death by YOSHIDA and was to be beheaded. The chaplain of the "Exeter", C.O.C. Fitzgerald, was ordered to conduct the community praying and to say the prayers of the dead. After prayers were said the matter was dismissed and Dodds put in the bricks where he remained for a considerable time, in spite of a bad attack of dysentery.

21st February, 1945.

A Japanese doctor made an inspection of the Camp Hospital. Looking in a refuse-bin he discovered some food rests. Dr. Bakker, senior medical officer, Capt. Wittich and Lt. Kotel were ordered to stand over the dustbin with head bent down for a considerable time. All doctors and hospital attendants had to fall in at the gate, where they were given a serious thrashing. Many of the Red Cross personnel were beaten senseless and were then given the water test (Pouring water in the mouth whilst the nose was held tight.) The principal participants in the beating of the medical staff were YOSHIDA - KAKOI - ISHIKAWA and TERUOKA.

23rd February, 1945.

As a consequence of the foregoing case, YOSHIDA stopped the sick-call, so that all sick people in outdoor working parties had to stay in their huts and had to go out without medical treatment. On the 23rd February, 5 British outdoor workers returned to camp at noon, not being able to do any more work. YOSHIDA accused them of not having been to the morning sick call (which was stopped by himself) and gave each 20 bad beatings with the club.

were given a beastly beating, varying from 35 to 110 strokes, with the club. Then followed all the hut- and group leaders. Many victims were knocked senseless and kicked all over the body whilst lying on the ground. . . . The entire guard was ordered to perform this sadistic orgy but KANETOSHI TERUOKA, KUNITARO, SEIKI KAKOI and YOSHIDA excelled in cruelty.

Most of the food found was prepared from rice on medical advice, in an endeavour to increase the vitamin contents of the food, the lack of which in the daily menu was causing serious trouble.

20th February, 1945.

Case: Dodds, J. Royal Marine.

This Pw was caught with a bag of food, brought in from outside for sick people, needing additional food. The entire camp had to fall in to witness the torture which was beyond words, whilst the entire working group to which he belonged was given the cruellest treatment after having done the "lizard" for about 1 hour, in which all the British officers and chaplain had to participate. Dodds was condemned to death by YOSHIDA and was to be beheaded. The chaplain of the "Exeter", C.C.C. Fitzgerald, was ordered to conduct the community praying and to say the prayers of the dead. After prayers were said the matter was dismissed and Dodds put in the bricks where he remained for a considerable time, in spite of a bad attack of dysentery.

21st February, 1945.

A Japanese doctor made an inspection of the Camp Hospital. Looking in a refuse-bin he discovered some food rests. Dr. Bakker, senior medical officer, Capt. Wittich and Lt. Hotel were ordered to stand over the dustbin with head bent down for a considerable time. All doctors and hospital attendants had to fall in at the gate, where they were given a serious thrashing. Many of the Red Cross personnel were beaten senseless and were then given the water test (Pouring water in the mouth whilst the nose was held tight.) The principal participants in the beating of the medical staff were YOSHIDA - KAKOI - ISHIKAWA and TERUOKA.

23rd February, 1945.

As a consequence of the foregoing case, YOSHIDA stopped the sick-call, so that all sick people on outdoor working parties had to stay in their huts and had to go out without medical treatment. On the 23rd February, 5 British outdoor workers returned to camp at noon, not being able to do any more work. YOSHIDA accused them of not having been to the morning sick call (which was stopped by himself) and gave each 20 bad beatings with the club.

14th March, 1945.

The most disgusting parade of miserable human beings was held on this day, when YOSHIDA ordered the lining up of all patients in the sick barracks. Q, P, O, and "no work". Q barracks contained the bad dysentery and beriberi cases, P those patients suspected of dysentery and/or other infectious disease, O patients who were dismissed from Q or P for recovery, "no work" all patients who were unable to do manual labour for a few days, such as malaria, wounds, etc. It was a rainy day but in spite of this all patients even those who had to be supported for not being able to walk had to fall in. Capt. Dioudonné who strongly protested against this beastly order and who refused to have some really dangerous patients lifted from their beds, was beaten with a small wooden board and knocked to the floor. All the lined up patients then were marched to the gate. Those who were unable to walk were carried by their friends. The physical condition of most of the P, Q and O patients was such that the rows of 5 had to support each other to keep erect and move forward. By the time this miserable parade had reached the gate some 150 meters from Q barracks rain was pouring down. Most of the patients were only dressed in their bed clothing and rather poor at that, so that they were soaked in no time. After having been lined up for about a quarter of an hour YOSHIDA ordered the patients who were lifted from their beds, to the hospital and had all others repair to their blocks. It is not much to assume that several cases of death have been precipitated by this parade and even that it has been the cause of death for some patients. Remains to be stated that the British officers who were looking after British patients, also suffered bad beatings by YOSHIDA.

17th May, 1945.

The daily rations of drinking water issued in the camp was rather on the low side. At the BOW shop ample drinking water was boiled for all the PWs working there and obviously those PWs at night returned to camp with their waterbottles filled. This had been going on for several months already and every one knew about it and agreed. However, on this day, for some reason or another YOSHIDA found it a suitable excuse for a general beating party and had all BOW workers badly thrashed by the Guards. Amongst the worst beaten was Sergeant Lt. Taronskeon, one of the BOW party leaders and mentioned in a previous case.]

For almost every case cited above, witnesses are to be found amongst the ex-PWs still at Macassar. As all British and American PWs have left the place, only Dutch witnesses can be heard.

Details of the cases mentioned before have been taken from diaries kept by PWs.

[was signed Dioudonné

Macassar, 4th October, 1945.]

5504
EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT

書類第五五〇四號

證明書

下名 和蘭軍情報部 (N.F.S) 鐵筆犯罪課長 R.N.

I.A 中尉, 4アールズ・ヨニゲニール, 正當宣誓書を於て別紙添
附報告

「一九四五年十月四日附、ワカハル字房收谷所、於て日本衛
暴行及虐待之因を以て、事件、作製者 R.N. I.A 大尉 M
ノイロ M 号「ア」に於て、報告と題す原本、全文ニテ、眞實完
全且正確ナル複写ヲアテ、及該原本、和蘭軍情報部、公武記
録、部ニ於テ、証言陳述ス。

署名「4アールズ・ヨニゲニール」 / 署名 /
於「ワカハル」一九四六年六月七日

和蘭軍情報部印

本職、和蘭領東印度檢察總長事務所前書記官 R.N. I.A
中尉「A.テ.ア」ト、面前於て署名、宣誓ス。

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

EXHIBIT NO. 1805A

No. 1

1 引脚

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT 5504

書類第五五〇四號

證明書

下名 和蘭軍情報部 (N.F.S) 戰爭犯罪課 長 R.N.

I.A 中尉, 471ルズヨニケニル, 正當に宣誓を為るとし別紙添
附報告を

一九四五年十月四日附、之カカル字條を收容す於て日本衛兵
暴行及虐待之周知若干、事件之制作者 R.N. I.A 大尉 O.M
ノ、M号「アエ」ニ、報告ト題スル原本、全文ニシテ眞實完
全且正確ナル複寫ヲ下ニ及該原本が和蘭軍情報部、書記
部トシテ証言陳述ス。

署名、471ルズヨニケニル、署名

於、1945年六月七日

和蘭軍情報部印

本職和蘭領東印度檢事總長事務局附書寫官 R.N. I.A
中尉, H.A. 字「ト」, 面前於て署名、宣誓セリ

FILE COPY 署名

RETURN TO ROOM 361

EXHIBIT NO. 1805A

No. 1

Doc 5504

考観中上、四三

~~マカハル俘虜收容所 於此日本衛兵、暴行及虐待、確~~
~~石干、事件~~

以下マカハル俘虜收容所 於此日本衛兵、暴行及虐待、確
專断的行動及殘虐行為、簡潔、概観、アル * * *

頁 2

一九四三年、初頭即マカハル收容所、次第、福員、十、時、
日本衛兵、行動、不平、理由、余、起、マカハル、醜、打擲、赤、躑、
一杯、樹木、登、之、留、此、又、身體、三、支、(カ、テ、西、脚)、座、
マカハル、樹木、名、荷、子、縛、之、同時、日本衛兵、犠牲者、体、リ、弱、
ニ、為、其、背、中、起、立、之、等、種、殘虐行為、此、收容所、
夜、同、脱、走、之、マカハル、俘虜、適用、之、以外、暴行、重大、事件、
テ、報告、之、不、シ、又、マカハル、無、然、之、此、收容所、廣、二、年、事、
能、此、比較、的、満足、状態、一九四三年、四月、一日、吉、田、時、軍、上、位、長、
勤務、上等、兵、テ、ア、吾、田、マカハル、来、テ、ウ、急、惡、化、之、此、男、
曹、長、官、升、進、之、事、度、其、上官、マカハル、俘虜、對、之、彼、非、人、間、的、取、
扱、ト、收容所、管理、之、全、幅、的、贊、成、テ、ア、之、相、母、ト、シ、証、
明、ス、マカハル、准、正、官、モ、リ、之、外、マカハル、モ、我、之、確、認、出、来、
又、張、リ、之、他、如何、之、日本、收容所、長、之、此、收容所、内、務、之、
一、言、モ、容、納、之、マカハル、萬、事、ヲ、指、揮、又、其、上官、ヨ、テ、發、出、之、
タ、命令、及、對、行、動、之、マカハル、吾、田、テ、ア、之、彼、長、ヨ、テ、長、認、且、同、
意、之、多、行、為、對、之、マカハル、不正、痛、處、罰、加、之、
殘虐行為、取、初、嫌、惡、之、事、場、面、一九四三年、五月、九、日、即、
南、下、之、英國、海、軍、義、勇、兵、服、役、番、号、六、八、五、七、六、号、之、此、

doc 5504

スニヘコトニ和蘭本國防備兵「ア」ノ下「ニ」及「及」及「及」
軍ニ至リテ「P. R.」カ「英」部「隊」間「交」
「及」之「時」吾「田」依「テ」之「各」人「重」
「ト」其他「地」面「倒」テ「身」体「ヲ」重「重」
「受」テ「及」之「腕」ヲ「折」リ「及」之「形」
「打」テ「打」傷「及」之「骨」ヲ「折」リ「此」
「為」之「病」院「船」ヲ「送」致「ス」

一九四三年六月廿日

廠令中、武器、徹底的搜索、此、搜索、副官、太田、
佐自身、ヨリ「及」之「彼」此「際」
何「様」ニ「處」置「ス」ル「ト」
此「海」軍「將」校「徹」底「上」
了「テ」之「顔」ヲ「平」手「テ」
副「官」行「令」
充「令」説「明」
廠「令」内「武」器「徹」底「上」
不「動」

* * *

一九四三年七月二十日

No. 3

六月五日ニ「收」
許「可」
業「ヲ」始「ル」
一「九」四「三」年「七」月「二」十「日」

Doc 5504

一 丁貝夕夕々何事、批評をせり云々。

同じく音田が現し、教師連と生徒連は「エト」にて中佐、衛
 令弁一行々十名、命令し、其處で彼等事情を説明、此等
 面倒、起ると警告し、然し下り太田、許可を言ふ事、エト上
 之中佐、何事、面倒を平見したる、然し数日後音田が来り、
 一 彼等全部、教師連と生徒連と、顔々平手ヲ打ヲ始ム。
 エト上にも亦此、平手打に参加し、又教師、入ル、ハス、大
 尉ヲ殴打し、海中ニ落ル。エト上之中佐ト音田ト間、通訳
 者ハハダ、中尉ヲ通じて、論議ハ「エト」にて中佐、事柄ヲ通
 知ニ説明ニ機會ヲ与令したる、テ寧ろ一時的ニ下り、結局生
 徒全員、棍棒ヲ約十五回、酷シ殴打ヲ与、之同時、其後收容
 所内ヲ死亡シ、教師ハ「エト」ト「ハバ」ヲ移送セ、ハバ
 一 家ト、猛烈ニ殴打セ、結果、生徒連ト教師連ト、竊ニ、暴
 走、張モノ煉瓦家屋、中へ三日間、入ラセ。

證人：「ミズト、グラーフ」「シカカーア」「ガニ、デハ、ハ、イ、ウ」

一九四三年九月九日—十四日

一九四三年九月八日、夜陸軍軍曹ペシケ元、海軍士官
 テ「エト」ト水兵「エト」ト「エト」ト、脱走シ、企テ、然し日本側ヨリ、
 翌日捕合ス。此三名、者、班員、其ヲ知テ居タ事ト共謀多
 席ヲ責ナル、從テ責任ヲ取ルモト認メ、然し「エト」上、ペシケ元
 、班一部、作業隊ニ在ラテ、從テ手高、次第ニ選ビ、他
 者、九月、人質トシ、懺辱ニ入ラセ。

No. 4

全員二十名、看護、ハケ「エト」ト「エト」ト及「エト」令同此處ニ
 居、最初、音田、彼等、一日二回、食事を食タ、其ノ下。

Doc 5504

テヤク將校、ソアウリテン「中尉」棍棒ヲ以テ同強打シテ處罰シタ。
「ゴーマス」中佐ト六十歳ノ「コーン」中尉、此ノ毆打ニヨリ出シタテツタガ、兩
名ノ敷同床ニ毆リ倒サレ、ソテ「コーン」中尉、其ノ白一日檻房ニ入ラレタ。

一九四三年十月二十八日
「キーバ」作業班ニ在リタ服役番号第九五。九番「A. J. スミット」陸軍軍曹、
一ノ日本人ニ言葉ヲ掛ケラレタガ其ノ日本人、彼ノ仕事ヲ批評シタ。「スミット」
軍曹、禮儀上地面ニ坐ツテキタ勢カラ跳ビ上リ器具ヲ子ニ持ツタ儘、
氣ヲ附ケ、姿勢ヲ取ツタ。此ノ日本人、明ニ敬馬イタ。ソテ彼ガ攻撃性的
グトク脅迫シタトク非難シテ彼ニ「トカゲ」/「I. N. 脱立伏マ」ヲヤト命ジ。
即チ地面、上ニ伏セ姿勢ヲトリ平手ト、滅光ヲ体ヲ支ルコトデアル。其ノ後棍
棒ヨリ三十七回ノ打擲。夜、收容所ニ歸ルト此ノコトガ吉田ニ報告セラレ。
吉田、打擲ヲ繰返シテ更ニ五十回、打擲ラレタ。「スミット」軍曹、是レ以上自
分、脚ヲ立ツコトが出来ラカッタノテ他、俘虜ニヨツテ一本ノ木ニ押シ立ラレ
タガ彼等ハ吉田ニ強制セラレテ「スミット」ヲ一本ノ木ニ背ヲ直立ニ立タセテキタ。
「スミット」ヲ支テキタ俘虜達モ亦打タレタ。此ノ處罰ハ余リモ野蠻的
アリ血ハ彼ノ「シヤツ」ヲ浸シ「スミット」ノ脚ヲ流シタ程デアリタ。彼ハ病院ハ收
容シシネバナラカッタソテ彼ガ再び歩行出来ル迄相當長ク間其處留
テキタノデアル

一九四三年一月二日
病院敷地周邊、針金柵、或ル作業ヲ監督シテキタ吉田ハ約三十米
離レタ廊下ヲ下度歩イテ行ク病院従業員ノ「A. ルウイス」ニ向ツテ聲
ヲ叫ビカケタ。此ノ大聲ガ自分ニ向ケラレキルコトヲ知ラカッタ「ルウイス」ハ
自分ノ仕事ニ向ツテ進テ行ツタ。其處テ吉田ハ彼ノ後ヲ追テ行キ彼ヲ床ニ
毆リ倒シタ後殘虐ト毆打ヲ爾ヘタ。病院、當直デアリタ「ナニク」醫師
ハ外部ノ聲音ニ注意ヲシテ入口ヲ「現」タガ其處テ吉田「叫」ビテ「ナニク」

No. 6

Doc 5504

（馬來語と日本語混リノ殆ド理解困難ト吉田ノ教語ガ判ラナカッタガ此
事尙更ハ事情ヲ悪化サセ其ノ結果ハ入口於ケル狂暴ヲ打擲トナッタ。此ノ入口
於テ「マニク」監師ト「ルウイス」トハ浴セラレタ數杯「バケツ」ノ水ニヨツテ「湯」
レナリ。數時間氣ヲ附ケ、姿勢ヲ起立セネバナラナカッタ。

* * * * *

一九四三年七月十五日

火災呼集ノ時「ケテル」中尉ハ吉田ニヨツテ棍棒ヲ酷ク打タレク。通譯者ト
テ行動シテ中尉「ケテル」中尉ハ正シク氣ヲ附ケ、姿勢ヲ起立セネバナカッタ、テ
アッタ。

一九四三年十月二十八日

「ケテル」中尉ハ整列シテ軍隊ノ前面ヲ再ビ酷ク打タレタ。其ノ理由吉田ノ臨
場ニ際シテ軍隊ニ氣ヲ附ケ、姿勢ヲ命ジナカッタカラデアル。

一九四三年十一月二日

四名ノ俘虏ガ日本將校ニヨツテ日本ノ倉庫ノ内ヲ捕ヘラレタ。其ノ現場ニ設
ケラレシテ更ニ棍棒ヲ以テ二十五回打タレタ後一週間煉瓦ノ屋ノ監房ノ内
込ニシテ言渡サレタ。一週間後ニ釋放セラレシテ軍隊ノ面前ニ三度目ノ
打擲ヲ受ケタ。此ノ時收容所長兒玉久吉ハ打撃ノ一部分自身ヲ實施
シタ。ソノ俘虏ハ度猫ヤ犬ノヤクモ「アツテ」万ノ俘虏達ガ彼等ノ是ノ可
所ニハ無キ場所ニ居ルコトガ發見セラル様ナコトガ再ビ生シタヲハ彼等ハ斬首
セラルト述べタ。此ノ時命令ヲ正シク翻譯シ「イトイク」テ吉田ハ「ケテル」中尉
ヲ再ビ打ツ。

No. 7

一九四三年十一月二十二日

町ノ作業班ニ在リタ「G. W. ケイツ」ハ自分が町ニ居ルコトヲ妻ニ知ラセル爲メ通
リ掛リ、一婦人ニ合圖ヲシタ。事前ニ用意シテアツタ竹謀ガ與ヘラレタガ言葉ヲ
交スコトナカッタ。此ノ現場ニ居ルタ吉田ハ此等ノ竹謀ニ明ニ氣ガ着イタ。午後五時十分收容
所ニ歸ルヤ「ケイツ」ハ仲間ノ前面ニ出ルヤハ命令セラレシ。ソノテ（以下次頁）

Doc 5504

特別用意を多敷く、自らの危険+程+打擲を以て、其の爲に
全身を創り生じ、此程より無流に此程全脚+腕を打つた、
この班全員が約一時間馳走命を以て、創り開き、本に數ヶ月間
化膿を伴うた、其の報は、汚し、また相違なく、此打擲、後下
り、二十日同様に歩行が出来た。

一九四四年一月十五日

野外作業班、担任は、A.G. スミス、この班に、庫管(野外
作業)為、十七名、米人十三名、和蘭人、因に、本に衛兵庫
官に命令せられた、此班が彼同意より、外出を許し、知れず
目撃された、この班は、スミス、この班に、酔い打擲した
た、この班は、此不備+處を創り、この班に、ライノドニ、大創
害を及ぼした、この班、事務官に、追いつき、其後、彼、吾國
に、平年を致し、其後、待たせられた。

一九四四年一月十五日

この班は、收容所へ、移轉、爲、地、地、班に、屬し、また、地、人、
V.F.H. アリス、理解、出来ず、馬來語、命令、判らな、多、爲
大に、吾國に、野獸的打擲を以て。

一九四四年四月九日

通し掛り、將校に、正當に、敬不、この班に、廉に、
野外作業班に、對し、集合的打擲を以て。

No. 8

一九四四年四月十五日

この班に、對し、彼、應急手当、タ、病院、收容を以て、
程打擲を、彼、腹部、創り、開き、其後、下、危険+腐爛

doc 5504

状態ニ盡シタル又ニ此ニ醫師ハコト皮膚病、移転術ト施シタリ
此ノ事實ヲ恐ルテナリシコトヲ生命ヲ救フテアラシ

一九四四年五月一日

三十三名、米國人ガ任臣ト煙草、巻紙、食物及果物ト交換シタリ
本軍衛兵全員ニ集團的ニ殴打セラル

一九四四年五月三日

兵士トシテ「ヨシ」及ビ四名、米國人「ヨシ」ナルニ於テ此ニ細切ノ罪
理由ヲ吾田ノ命令ニ「各、日本兵ヨリ猛烈ニ殴打セラル、各人、重イ
棍棒ヲ約七十回ト打タレ、二日前ニ彼等ノ同理由ニ殴打

シ、班長、又ハ「ヒ」ヨ「D」ヨ「タ」ニ「スキ」ト、一等軍曹、棍棒ヲ三回
打テ續クニ身体ト頸ト鼻ト蹴、頭ニ絞ルニ音、音的相撲、刑ヲ
痛クシ直シ、其後、ハ「シ」ニ数杯水ヲ口ニ注ギコシ、其後、最後ニ四
十回殴打セラル、更ニ三人、班長モト強自ニ取扱ヒテ、終ニト犠牲
者ニシ、不動、容認ヲ立タシク、(三名、地面ニ倒レ伏シキル)

一九四四年八月四日

一名、英國人、吾田ヲ満足程頭抱シ、ヤラシキコトノ理由ヲ吾田ニ七十回ト
打セラル

一九四四年八月五日

英國海軍、陸火兵士、ヨシキニシ、英國全軍、指揮官ガ子、命令
ノ実行ヲ躊躇シタリ、一作業隊、名不足ニ去テ、吾田トシ、
仲間共、シタトニ二百七回、殴打ヲシ、ヨシキニシ、子、ヨシキニシ、異音
トシ、シ、然シ、ヨシキニシ、シ、ヨシキニシ、ヨシキニシ、異音
カ不動、容認ヲ立シキ事ヲ去来ス

No. 9

一九四五年一月十二日

「子」ヨシ、ヨシ、班長、査査食米ヲ飯盒ニ装シ、収容所ニ持来リ、
衛兵軍曹「ヨシ」全隊員、シ、大部令、高聲、停屠テ、下、シ、不拘酷ク

Document 5504

改らセタ。此後同三ノ九田三番二月十日(廿九)迄
右位利渡之難シクハイノ軍需が死亡シテ、此際打ト
園軽が有リサ事多ク。同日廿九、無家通信隊隊
總長、吉田、余ニ依リ衛兵全及ニヨリ猛烈ニ攻打セタ。
吉田、攻打、後地上ニ倒シ、其ノ若干ノ者ヲ靴ヲ敷カ
血が流シテ死ス。其理由、善利、若カ砂糖ヲ過シテ者
アタタ。當時、食物、事情、極大ニ悪カシク。

一九四五年一月十日

衛兵軍需「カコキ」ノ降シテ事ヲ作業隊中、多量、
俘虜、昨日理由無キニ攻打セタ。

一九四五年二月十日

守備隊長石田友一ノ報告、收容所、總検査ヲ令
シタ。隊備、食物ヲ隠シテ事多ク、各名、全部記録
セタ。夜間收容所、全及、整列セテハ十二万ノシ、
名ヲ記セタ者全部、棍棒ヲ三十五回乃至百十回ニ及リ猛
烈ニ攻打ヲ受ケタ。ソレヲ廠舎長及ビ班長全部が之
ヲ行ヒテ攻打セタ。多量犠牲者達、死絶スルヲ改メ
、地上ニ倒シテ事ノ内作中ヲ跳飛セタ。衛兵全部
カ此ノ惨状ノ騒ギテ事ニ極ニ余セラシタ。

No. 10

* * * * *

一九四五年二月十日

事件「A・ド」

英國海兵隊員

Document 5504

此停屍、余少、念物、必要、上、之、病人、為、外部、
ノ、持、手、込、込、多、一、袋、一、卵、ヲ、持、リ、テ、外、此、所、ヲ、挿、ス、ル。收容所
ノ、全、員、ハ、コ、ノ、言、語、ニ、絶、ス、ル、持、向、ヲ、目、撃、ス、ル、為、ニ、整、列、セ、
テ、立、ツ、カ、ル、タ。一方、彼、ノ、所、屬、ス、ル、作、業、班、員、全、部、ハ、英、軍、
將、校、ト、徒、軍、僧、モ、全、ク、參、加、セ、テ、以、テ、立、ツ、カ、ル、タ、ノ、際、立、
伏、セ、シ、テ、一、部、員、モ、之、ヲ、檢、テ、見、出、テ、拜、艦、士、隊、扱、ヲ、受、ケ、
テ、ド、ク、シ、吉、田、ヨ、リ、死、刑、ヲ、宣、言、サ、シ、斬、首、サ、シ、テ、事、ニ、了、
ス、エ、ク、セ、タ、シ、徒、軍、僧、ト、軍、僧、局、長、ト、フ、イ、ツ、ク、シ、エ、テ、
カ、身、國、祈、禱、ノ、物、振、テ、之、死、ノ、祈、禱、ヲ、唱、ヘ、ル、事、ヲ、命、ジ、テ、
祈、禱、ヲ、唱、ヘ、ル、タ、後、三、時、ニ、了、リ、テ、ド、ク、シ、陣、有
造、リ、一、部、員、ニ、答、シ、テ、後、彼、ハ、赤、刺、ニ、以、テ、胸、ヲ、刺、ス、ル、不
拘、相、當、長、期、拘、禁、所、ト、シ、テ、居、ル、

一九四五年二月三十日

一人、曰、キ、人、醫、者、が、收容所、病院、ヲ、檢、査、ス、ル。塵、箱、ヲ
開、キ、テ、他、ノ、殊、般、ヲ、少、ク、發、見、ス、ル。冬、任、軍、醫、將、校、ハ、
カ、シ、博、士、ウ、イ、ツ、ク、シ、大、尉、及、ウ、イ、ツ、ク、シ、中、尉、ハ、ウ、ナ、リ、、問
塵、箱、ノ、上、ヲ、取、リ、下、ニ、向、テ、立、ツ、テ、年、々、様、子、、原、也、、シ、
醫、者、ト、病、院、勤、務、者、全、員、一、同、、所、ヲ、整、列、セ、テ、
ウ、ナ、ル、タ、ソ、レ、ヲ、其、所、ヲ、以、テ、改、打、セ、ル、、多、數、ノ、事、ヲ、
社、友、が、氣、絶、ス、ル、改、打、サ、レ、シ、カ、ラ、水、試、験、(鼻
ヲ、固、ク、封、シ、テ、固、直、ノ、口、ニ、水、ヲ、注、シ、テ、込、ル、事)、ヲ、行、フ、

No. 11

* * * * *

Document 5504.

一九四五年二月二十三日

前述ノ事件、結果トシテ、吉田、診断ヲ断リシトシ、
ノ為メニ野外作業隊、病人達、皆徳善ノ班内ニ
シテ十分ニシテス、而シテ治療トシテ出テ六ナリシ
ヲ。 二月二十三日ニ五名ノ英國人、野外作業隊員
ガモウニ以テ傷、事ガ出来テ、正午ニ收容所ニ歸
リ来タ。 吉田、徳善ガ年カ、診断（徳善自ラ言
フニ中止セシメ）ニ出テ、タテマ、行ニ徳善ヲ非難シ、各
自ノ根柢ヲ、吉田ガ、ハ、トク改メタ。

一九四五年三月十四日

吉田ガ病人收容所、即チ Q.P.O 及ビ「休業」
患者全部、一整理ヲ命ジタ。此ノ日、痛コシイ人間、且東
ニ構置スル、行列ガ行ニシタ。

又收容所、要隘赤痢、ト御氣、患者ヲ、甲收容
所、乙赤痢及ビ、其ノ他、傷寒病、証シテ、患者
ヲ、〇收容所、(同徳ノ為ニ)或ビ甲收容所カ、ラセシ
メ、患者ヲ收容シテタ。 「休業」患者トイフ人、トアリタ。

No. 12

傷トシ、ヤシニ三日、間力仕事、出来テ、患者、總括
シテタ。 其ノ日、雨降リテ、アツカ、ソシモ拘ラシ、患者トシ、
ノ患者、トシ、コトガ出来テ、イ、為ニ、友、ト、貴、ハ、シ、ト、ナ
リ、テ、到ニ、加、ラ、テ、ハ、シ、ト、ナ、リ。 此ノ、殊、酷、ト、命、令、ニ
シ、テ、異、議、ヲ、甲、立、テ、真、実、ニ、免、限、ト、對、人、魚、和、遠、

Document 5504

1. 信はかう起ヌコヲ拒絶シテ「ナニトテ」不疑
 「小サナ根ヲ打タシ、床ノ上ニ倒カシテ、ソレカラ懸列シ
 タ事ト者達ニ門ヲ示サセラシム。少クナラ者ニ信
 事ト者達ニ懸心シタ。A. & B. C. 收容所ニ大部
 ノ事ト者ノ各体ノ各体ノ五人記ヲ真直ニミツテ亦
 進スル為ニハ有互ニ支ヘ合ハネルナラヌ程ナラシム。此ノ
 懸心ナ行列ガ及ヒ收容所カラ百五十米位距リタ門ニ着
 キタ後、兩ト土砂降リトナリタ。事ト者ノ大部分ノ
 信事ト者ノ信向者ニ力着テ居ラズ、ソレモソレノ力弱ナ
 アラタ、ソレガ為ニ信事ト者ニ急ケルニシテ滞リナラシム。少ク
 ナ分間程懸列セラシム後、吉田ノ信はかう起
 ナシタ事ト者達ノ病院ニ行クト事ト者、他者ノ入ル
 信事ト者ノ区域ニ帰ラシム。此ノ行列ニヨリテ急ニ事ト者
 ノ死亡者ヲ察知セシメ、又事ト者ノ事ト者ニナラシム
 死亡ノ原因トナリタナラシムトモ過言ナラシム。同ホ事
 ト者ノ事ト者ノ也流ラシムナラシム事ト者ノ事ト者
 同ニヒドウ打タシタト云フコトヲ附加ス。

No. 13

一九四五年度
 收容所ニ於ケル毎日、飲料水、窒素量ニ寧ニ
 僅少ナルヲ。B. O. W. ノ名テハ其処ニ傷キナ
 ルスナラ、信事ト者ノ為ニ多量ノ飲料水ガ沸カシ
 タナラ、此等ノ信事ト者ニ夜ニ上ル水同ヲ一杯

Document 5504

ニシテ收容所ニ帰ルコトハ明カナリ。此事ハ
既ニ先般ノ月同院ノテ決メテ、誰モ知ラズ
ナリ。又「致」シテ決メテ決メ。トコトハ此ノ日
吉田ハドウイフ様カシラ總務打會ヲ催スニ適
高ノ理由ト考ヘ、衛官ニ B. O. W. 作書隊長全
部ヲ解散セシメ、一審ヒテ改メシメ、
甲ニハ保身班長一人テ決メテ、事件ヲ述メ、
「タレニス共」ニ「報告」ガナリ。

* * * * *

此「タレ」ハ一九四五年十月四日
署名「テ」ナリ

No. 14

C. # 1806

AUSTRALIAN WAR CRIMES COMMISSION.

Evidence taken on the 24th September, 1945, before His Honor Judge Kirby, at the POW and Internee's Reception Camp, Morotai.

EVIDENCE OF CAPN. S. N. PAUL

(Makes an affirmation)

(This witness gave his evidence without the aid of the Interpreter)

CAPN. S. N. PAUL, being duly affirmed by Judge Kirby, states:

My name is Capt. S. N. Paul. My Army No. is 17932 ICRO/Z. I belong to the Indian Medical Service. I was a Doctor before the war. My home address is 110/20 Pidyut Nagar, Dayal Bagh, Agra. When I was captured I was in 17 Combined General Hospital Singapore. The surrender was on the 15th Feb. 1942 and I was taken into captivity on the 18th.

I was in the following camps during the periods mentioned:

- (1) Neesoon Camp, 15 miles from Singapore, 23/2/42 to June 1942
- (2) Kranji Camp, 13 miles from Singapore, June 1942 to Oct. 1942
- (3) Buller Camp, about 5 miles from Singapore, Nov. 42 to Dec. 42.
- (4) Kranji Camp, 12th Jan 1943 to 31st Jan 1943
- (5) Selleter Camp, 12 miles from Singapore, 1st Feb 43 to 24th August 1943.
- (6) Adams Road Camp, about 7 miles from Singapore, 25th August to 27th August 1943.
- (7) Boarded on Okanamaru. Landed at Halmaheras 25th Sept 1943
- (8) Kockku Camp, 25th Sept, 43 to July 1944.
- (9) Tijku Camp, July 1944.
- (10) Camp, name unknown, about 1½ miles from Tijku, Aug. 1944
- (11) Teragan Camp, Sept. 1944 to August 31st, 1945

HIS HONOR: Q. I understand that so far as crimes by individual Japanese officers or guards are concerned you have nothing to complain of until you were at Teragan?

A. Other than the withholding of medical supplies and medical treatment, and minor slappings, there was nothing to complain of until Teragan Camp.

When I first arrived at Tijku Camp Lt. Kobuta was the Japanese officer in charge. There were also there Cpl. Ikai and 1st Class Pte. Kowana. Kobuta was a member of the No. 6

Transport Unit. During the period I was in this camp I saw Lt. Kobuta act as the officer in charge and issue orders, both to Japanese staff and to the Indian prisoners of war. I shifted from Tijku Camp to the unknown camp about 1½ miles away. This was in August 1944. The Japanese officers and NCO's mentioned above came with us to this camp and shortly after our arrival there Lt. Ito and L/C Tanaka arrived. I saw from my own observation that Lt. Kobuta remained the officer in charge of the camp but L/C Tanaka acted as his second in command in spite of the fact that there were others there higher in rank. L/C Tanaka in my presence took orders and discussed orders with Kobuta and gave orders to other members of the Japanese staff and Indian prisoners of war.

Tanaka said to me and other Indian prisoners that we were going to be part of the Japanese Army. In February 1945 Tanaka told me and Sub Mahomed Akrum and Mahomed Hussein IWO that we were no longer prisoners of war but by Japanese order formed part of the Japanese Army. He told us that in conversation in our own room. He said it was an order of the High Command and it had to be carried out. I protested and the two others also protested. We said it was not according to the rules of war and we said we did not want to be part of the Japanese Army. Tanaka said "You have just got to be". Tanaka spoke in the Japanese language and I understood what he said. The three of us understood enough of the Japanese language to know what he said. The IWO acted as an interpreter in translating our protests into the Japanese language to Tanaka. Tanaka then started putting us on parades. He started to teach us the Japanese procedure and customs. We started fatigues early in the morning, about 7 a.m. and finished about 6 p.m. That was the regular procedure. The fatigue was lifting heavy boxes of medicine or food stuff and carrying it about 2 or 3 miles and making three or four trips each day. A whole lot of the Indian prisoners were in the fatigue party. Some were sent to a garden whilst others did the work above referred to.

HIS HONOR: Q. Did you have any meal time between 7 a.m. and 6 p.m.?

A. The first meal of the day, when we had any, was about 6:30 a.m. During the last three months or so of our captivity we were given no meal before starting work for the day. We had our own cookhouse and we managed to obtain our own private supply of tea and sugar and salt. We were only able to have something to drink before starting work, but nothing to eat.

At 12 midday we got our first meal of the day. We generally carried rice with us which was supplied by the Japanese. At first the amount of rice given to us was 10 ozs. Later the supply diminished until it was about 5 ozs. They gave us some dried tinned vegetables but mostly we lived on jungle leaves. One hour was allowed for the midday meal. We stopped wherever we happened to be working.

The next meal was when we came back about 7 p.m. If it was dark at this time we were not provided with lights. All we could eat was the rice ration per man left over from the midday meal. Before the evening meal we were given half an hour's military training. Tanaka was always in charge of this training. Kobuta at times would come along and watch what was happening.

I saw Tanaka on a great many occasions beat the Indian prisoners on these parades. Sometimes he would slap them with his open hand and sometimes hit them with sticks about the head and body, but generally about the head. I saw him beat men so consistently that every prisoner would have received a beating and generally about 20 prisoners would be beaten each day at the training period. Mostly the slaps administered with the hand were severe enough to knock men to the ground. This generally happened when he slapped with his hand. I often heard him say to a prisoner "Your brain is not alright so I am going to fix it up", and he would then hit him on the head with a stick. The stick was generally a long walking stick about an inch thick.

I will deal now with ill-treatment and the withholding of medical supplies and give particular instances and when I have finished describing those I will describe beheadings and killings.

About March 1945 three of our soldiers, Mahomed Shafi, Ali Haider and Tufail Mahom d were ill-treated by Tanaka as well as Kobuta. Tanaka told me that these three men who were then working in the garden were bad workers and he asked me to examine them. I examined them and I told Tanaka they were sick from beri-beri and general debility. I told him this myself in the Japanese language, using my hands to supplement what I told him.

I then saw him beat them one by one, first of all by slapping them with his hands until they were knocked to the ground. He then got them to their feet again and beat them with a stick on the knuckles and knees and about the head until the three of them became unconscious. The beating lasted for about half an hour. After the beating I saw that Ali Haider was very sick and I gave him such medical attention as I could until his death about a week or ten days later. Although I told Tanaka that he was very sick Tanaka said he would have to work on the fatigue carrying vegetables from the ground. I saw that Ali Haider on this occasion did not return to the camp and the next morning he was brought by other Indians into the camp. I saw him then. He was unconscious and in a very feeble condition. I gave him injections to try and keep him alive but an hour and a half later he died.

I had been practising in India as a Doctor for three years. As Medical Officer I worked for three years and from my medical experience and my examination and observation of Ali Haider after the beatings I have described I can say that he died as the result of those beatings. I was present when he was buried.

Shafi and Tufail were ill from the beatings and were put on light work. Their condition was bad but not so bad as Ali Haider's

I saw that Tufail was in a very weak condition and in fact he was so ill that he asked me to give him poison so as to make him die. Of course I did not do so and eventually he recovered. I have seen Shafi in the 2/9 AGH on this Island and he is in that hospital now. I also saw Tufail in this hospital. Sub. Akrum and IWO Mahomed Hussein were present and saw the beating of Shafi, Haider and Tufail.

The next case of ill treatment was the case of Munshi Khan. I saw him beaten by Tanaka and Kowana and later tied to a tree. He was kept there for 24 hours without food or water. His hands were tied behind his back; he was tied up with rope to the trunk of the tree, the rope stretching around his body and the trunk of the tree. This was about July 1945. Whilst he was tied to the tree he actually passed water and defecated standing up whilst tied to the tree.

He was beaten for more than 15 minutes before he was tied to the tree. I saw him receive this beating from Tanaka and Kobuta who used firewood sticks about the length of my arm. They beat him about the head and knees. Jem. Abdullah Khan was present at the beating of Munshi Khan; IWO Mahomed Hussein was also present.

I can also speak of the beating of Mahomed Shafi of the 27 Jit. Reg. This was about the month of July 1945. Tanaka and Kowana beat him with heavy sticks over the head for more than half an hour. I saw them do this and I saw Kobuta standing watching at the time. I did not hear him say anything; he did not interfere in any way. I saw him become unconscious and Tanaka or Kowana would revive him by throwing water on his face and he was then beaten until he was unconscious again.

Immediately after the beating was over I saw Tanaka and Kowana force Shafi to kneel on firewood sticks with a piece of firewood behind his knees. I saw them tie Shafi's hands behind his back and I saw them beat him on the head and body with sticks. In the position he was it was impossible for him to remain upright and they would beat him when he fell down and then lift him back to the upright position again. This happened several times. This particular beating took about another half an hour. Whilst Shafi was in this position and being beaten by Tanaka and Kowana I saw Kowana pour petrol on Shafi's feet and set alight to it. Tanaka was still beating him whilst this was being done. When this beating was finished I saw Shafi tied with his hands behind his back to the trunk of a tree and he was left there all night. I and others supplied him with food and water secretly during the night.

The reason given by Tanaka for the beating of Shafi was that although Shafi admitted stealing food himself he refused to implicate others. Tanaka told me he would torture him until he implicated others but Shafi did not do this in spite of the beatings. I heard Shafi say from time to time whilst being beaten that he alone was responsible for any theft.

Shafi said in Industani that he intended to die by himself and he would not implicate anybody else. I translated this into the Japanese language and told Tanaka that this was what Shafi said.

The next morning after the beatings Tanaka and Kobuta called me, Jem, Abdullah Khan and Mahomed Hussein over and said they wanted to behead Shafi and asked our opinion about it. I said that many beheadings had already taken place, so many that it was no use beheading Shafi and suggested that he should receive some other other punishment. They did not behead him. Tanaka and Kobuta told me that they would leave the punishment to myself and the other Indians. We blackened his face with soot and hung his shoes around his neck on one parade. He had to promise that he would not steal in future and he gave this promise.

I can also speak of the beating of Mahomed Shafi of the C. J. R. This was about the month of July 1945. Tanaka and Kowana beat him with heavy sticks over the head for more than half an hour. I saw them do this and I saw Kobuta standing watching at the time. I did not hear him say anything; he did not interfere in any way. I saw him become unconscious and Tanaka or Kowana would revive him by throwing water on his face and he was then beaten until he was unconscious again.

Immediately after the beating was over I saw Tanaka and Kowana force Shafi to kneel on firewood sticks with a piece of firewood behind his knees. I saw them tie Shafi's hands behind his back and I saw them beat him on the head and body with sticks. In the position he was it was impossible for him to remain upright and they would beat him when he fell down and then lift him back to the upright position again. This happened several times. This particular beating took about another half an hour. Whilst Shafi was in this position and being beaten by Tanaka and Kowana I saw Kowana pour petrol on Shafi's feet and set alight to it. Tanaka was still beating him whilst this was being done. When this beating was finished I saw Shafi tied with his hands behind his back to the trunk of a tree and he was left there all night. I and others supplied him with food and water secretly during the night.

The reason given by Tanaka for the beating of Shafi was that although Shafi admitted stealing food himself he refused to implicate others. Tanaka told me he would torture him until he implicated others but Shafi did not do this in spite of the beatings. I heard Shafi say from time to time whilst being beaten that he alone was responsible for any theft.

Shafi said in Industani that he intended to die by himself and he would not implicate anybody else. I translated this into the Japanese language and told Tanaka that this was what Shafi said.

The next morning after the beatings Tanaka and Kobuta called me, Jem, Abdullah Khan and Mahomed Hussein over and said they wanted to behead Shafi and asked our opinion about it. I said that many beheadings had already taken place, so many that it was no use beheading Shafi and suggested that he should receive some other other punishment. They did not behead him. Tanaka and Kobuta told me that they would leave the punishment to myself and the other Indians. We blackened his face with soot and hung his shoes around his neck on one parade. He had to promise that he would not steal in future and he gave this promise.

The next incident I can speak of is the ill treatment of Jem. Mohan Singh. He suffered badly from dropsy. That was in April 1945. He had dropsy and eventually died of this condition about 13th or 14th August. I was looking after him. I saw that he was in intense pain as his abdomen was swollen with fulness of water. It interfered with his breathing and it was necessary for the water to be taken away from his abdomen to ease the pain. I had no proper instrument to do this. I asked both Tanaka and Kobuta several times for medicine and an instrument to take the water away. They said "You cannot get any medicine or instruments. I asked Tanaka and Kobuta would they admit the patient to hospital. They said "No, Indians are not allowed to go into hospital. Later a Japanese soldier, a medical orderly, supplied me with a 20 CC needle (like an injection needle) a very small one and using it I took 8 to 10 hours to get part of the water away. This caused the patient great pain because he had to sit all this time. I say from my medical knowledge and my observation and examination and treatment of Jem. Mohan Singh that had I been allowed to give him proper treatment and medicine his life might have been saved.

The next incident I can refer to is the ill treatment of Mahomed Akrum. About February 1945 I heard Lt. Kobuta tell Akrum that he had been disobedient and he ordered him to make two camps and a garden. I heard Akrum and Tanaka and Kobuta arguing about whether Akrum should continue work in the garden. I heard Akrum tell them that he wanted to appeal to a higher authority. I heard Tanaka say "You will get severe punishment, I have friends in the Military Police and they might cut your head off later on if so needed." I heard Akrum say that he would not go to the higher authority and then Kobuta said "I am not angry with you, I excuse you and you will go on working as you were before. Later I was present when a Military policeman came with an interpreter. Akrum was there also Jem. Abdullah Khan. Akrum was sitting down in his civilian clothes. The policeman said in Japanese "Why are you sitting like this in those clothes?" I started to translate what was being said but before I could finish the Military policeman started slapping Akrum with his hands. It was a very severe beating. Akrum was sitting down when he was beaten and was knocked to the floor from time to time. The beating lasted for 10 to 15 minutes. The beating took place in the prisoner's room.

I was mess secretary. For ten days Akrum was put on half rations. Tanaka came daily during the 10 days and made many statements to me and other prisoners that Akrum had committed various crimes. Tanaka told me that he wanted Akrum to sign a statement confessing his crimes as otherwise he would behead Akrum. He asked me would I tell Akrum this and persuade him to sign. I did so and Akrum did sign.

During the period that Tanaka and Kobuta were associated in control of the prisoners I actually saw almost every day one or both of them slapping and beating prisoners severely with sticks.

I will now deal with the beheading and death of prisoners. The first case is that of Mahomed Din about March 1945. He confessed that he took a tin of fish from the store. He was brought in and tied to a tree in the compound. I saw Mahomed Din whilst he was tied to the tree and I heard coming from the vicinity of the tree signs of blows and cries but I did not actually witness the beatings. I saw him whilst tied to the tree about 4 p.m. Some time after 10 o'clock he was not there. I searched for him and could not find him. A few days later Tanaka told me that Mahomed Din had been captured and that he had had Din beheaded by the Military police.

I never saw Mahomed Din after the night he escaped.

At the time of the Japanese surrender Tanaka asked me and other prisoners to sign the nominal roll that Din had died from natural causes. This was about 28th or 29th August. Tanaka at this time was armed with pistol and sword and said that his record showed that Din died from beheading following a conviction for stealing and that he, Tanaka, wanted to change that and show death as having taken place from natural causes. He said it would be better for the soldier's people if it was not recorded that he had been beheaded for stealing as that would cause dishonor and shame to Din's people. Akrum and I said that the true facts should be stated. We were unarmed whilst Tanaka was armed with pistol and sword. I signed because I was afraid that he would shoot or behead us.

The next case I can speak of is that of Chinadury, Said Gul, Miraj Din and Karim Ilahi. This happened about the 10th April. I was told something by Mahomed Hussein and I know that those four prisoners were taken away from our camp and kept away for three or four days. I saw them when they returned and they were all very ill. I saw Said Gul and Chinadury spitting blood. I saw that the four prisoners all had bruises and swellings on the head and that they were in a state of exhaustion. I saw them brought back by the Military police. Kobuta told me that he was going to have those four prisoners beheaded to set an example as to what would happen to prisoners who were guilty of theft. Later I saw the four prisoners being taken away by Japanese Military Police whose names I do not know. I saw them taken to an area where I had previously seen other prisoners go with swords

accompanied by a Japanese guard. After I saw the four men being taken to this area I did not see them again. The following morning at the morning parade Kobuta told me and the other prisoners that he, Kobuta, had had the four men beheaded and that that should be an example to the rest of us not to steal.

The next matter I wish to deal with relates to Mahomed Afsar and Yakub Khan. This was about July 1945. Tanaka told me that they had stolen a phial of medicine and that he had decided to have them beheaded. I saw them tied up without food or water from 4 o'clock one afternoon until 10 o'clock the next morning. They were not freed to obey and call of nature and did so whilst tied to the tree.

The next morning I saw them untied by Japanese guards and stripped naked and taken away. Tanaka was present at the time. I saw him go away with Afsar and Yakub Khan and the guards and I never saw those men again. Tanaka had his sword with him. There were two Japanese guards with them and they also had swords. Tanaka later told me that those two prisoners had been beheaded but he did not say who had done the actual beheading.

The next matter is that of Mahomed Ramzan. This was in August 1945 some weeks before the surrender. I saw Ramzan tied to a tree all night. Tanaka told me that he was taking Ramzan away and was going to behead him. He said that Ramzan had stolen a tapioca plant and had told lies to Tanaka about it. Tanaka said that Ramzan would not admit to him that he had taken the plant. I did not see Ramzan again after he had been taken away with Tanaka. I saw that Tanaka had his sword with him when he took Ramzan away and later Tanaka told me that he had himself beheaded Ramzan.

The next matter deals with Mahomed Hussein and Umer Din. Tanaka told me that they had escaped and had been caught and that he had had them beheaded by the Military police. I never saw either Hussein or Umer Din again after they escaped. This was shortly before the surrender. I am not certain about the month that these men escaped and were beheaded according to Tanaka but I think it was shortly before the beheading of Mahomed Afsar and Yakub Khan.

In September 1943 after we were taken to the Halmaheras dysentery broke out. Capn. Ushida was in charge of us. I went to the hospital and asked for medicine to cure the dysentery. They would not give it to me, they only gave me creosote to ease the pain.

Tanaka and Kobuta were responsible for us not getting a full supply of food. Every month when the rations were drawn the rations for the prisoners were put in the same store as the rations for the Japanese guards. They only issued us out of the store rice, salt and dried vegetables but would not give us biscuits, sweet biscuits or green peas, although I saw these latter items brought in every month for the No. 6 Transport Unit. About every two or three days I saw Tanaka and Kobuta taking boxes of biscuits for eight Japanese guards or police. Out of 40 bags of rice that would be brought in about 15 of them would go to them and 25 to us. This was for the whole month. There were eight of them to feed and about 190 of our men. I saw Tanaka and Kobuta giving biscuits and cigarettes to some of their friends, members of the Taiwan force and to the Kempetai (Jap. Military Police).

I have heard Tanaka on many occasions say that he had friends in the Kempetai and therefore he could get anything done to us that he wanted in the way of punishment without getting permission from headquarters.

As the result of food being kept away from the men they contracted beri-beri; they suffered from debility and some died from it. A lot of the men were sick and needed hospital treatment and needed drugs that I could not procure. Tanaka would not allow the men to be taken to hospital. I said to him "The hospitals are admitting your men, why not the Indians?" They were also admitting Indonesian members of the auxiliary forces. Tanaka said "No Indians can go to hospital."

During the last six months Kobuta and Tanaka were very harsh in their treatment of the sick at the morning fatigues. Irrespective of how sick they were the men had to attend the morning parade and stand to attention whilst they listened to a lecture from either Kobuta or Tanaka for about 10 or 15 minutes. Some of the men were too sick to do this and collapsed on the parade. When they collapsed and fell they were left lying where they fell and at the finish of the lecture the rest of the party would be marched off by Tanaka or Kobuta. We had to supply men to take the place of those who had collapsed and this had to be done from the other men available, mainly sick people who I knew were not fit to work. I told Kobuta and Tanaka on numbers of occasions that numbers of men were too sick to work.

After the parade Kobuta and Tanaka went over to those who had collapsed and who were still lying there. They used to hit

them over the head or knees or kick them to test whether they were malingering or not. A few may have laid down to get a rest but most of them were genuine sick cases. Tanaka and Kobuta would then select from the sick ones those who were to be given an injection. They would point to one man as being no good as a worker because he was too sick and ordered that he was not to have injections. Tanaka and Kobuta said that they were the ones to pick and choose who amongst the sick were to get the injections. They would not allow injections to be given to the very sick because they said they would be no good for working. The injections that were given were given either by myself or the Jap. medical orderly. The injections were of vita camphor or oilum camphor; they give strength to the heart for an hour or so, otherwise a man might die if he is in a very collapsed condition. Some of the men had to be lifted by Indian prisoners back to the barracks. The supply of camphor injection was obtained from either Tanaka or Kobuta or the medical orderly. Often I was able to give injections to those who were very sick and really needed it, but this was given from supplies which we had stolen. Of course I was unable to give those injections in the presence of Tanaka and Kobuta. I was only allowed to give injections to the men they picked out. The men they would not let me inject would have died if orders had been carried out, but in many cases I was able to save their lives by giving them secret injections.

Many of my men badly needed extractions of advanced carious teeth; I would report to Tanaka that those men were urgently in need of dental treatment but Tanaka would not let them go to the Japanese dental people. I did not have any instrument myself to perform extractions. Tanaka would not give any reason for not letting them go to the dentist but would say "They cannot go, we want them for work." Tanaka would not issue passes which were necessary to get dental care.

Earlier there were only six guards as well as Tanaka and Kobuta; in the last fortnight they put on another five, making eleven in addition to Tanaka and Kobuta. Kowana was one of them, Khagi Shima was another, Adachi was another, Otake was another, and the medical orderly, Okama, was another.

I often saw Kowana, Khagi Shima and Adachi administer severe beatings with hands and sticks.

I can identify Kobuta and Tanaka. I can also identify all the guards I have mentioned by name.

them over the head or knees or kick them to test whether they were malingering or not. A few may have laid down to get a rest but most of them were genuine sick cases. Tanaka and Kobuta would then select from the sick ones those who were to be given an injection. They would point to one man as being no good as a worker because he was too sick and ordered that he was not to have injections. Tanaka and Kobuta said that they were the ones to pick and choose who amongst the sick were to get the injections. They would not allow injections to be given to the very sick because they said they would be no good for working. The injections that were given were given either by myself or the Jap. medical orderly. The injections were of vita camphor or oilum camphor; they give strength to the heart for an hour or so, otherwise a man might die if he is in a very collapsed condition. Some of the men had to be lifted by Indian prisoners back to the barracks. The supply of camphor injection was obtained from either Tanaka or Kobuta or the medical orderly. Often I was able to give injections to those who were very sick and really needed it, but this was given from supplies which we had stolen. Of course I was unable to give those injections in the presence of Tanaka and Kobuta. I was only allowed to give injections to the men they picked out. The men they would not let me inject would have died if orders had been carried out, but in many cases I was able to save their lives by giving them secret injections.

Many of my men badly needed extractions of advanced carious teeth; I would report to Tanaka that those men were urgently in need of dental treatment but Tanaka would not let them go to the Japanese dental people. I did not have any instrument myself to perform extractions. Tanaka would not give any reason for not letting them go to the dentist but would say "They cannot go, we want them for work." Tanaka would not issue passes which were necessary to get dental care.

Earlier there were only six guards as well as Tanaka and Kobuta; in the last fortnight they put on another five, making eleven in addition to Tanaka and Kobuta. Kowana was one of them, Khagi Shima was another, Adachi was another, Otake was another, and the medical orderly, Okama, was another.

I often saw Kowana, Khagi Shima and Adachi administer severe beatings with hands and sticks.

I can identify Kobuta and Tanaka. I can also identify all the guards I have mentioned by name.

Two Indians, Shakeri Peg, 2/9 Jat. Reg, and Ghulam Yasin, 36 Ord. Workshop, died of dysentery - amoebic dysentery. This was about March or April 1945. I told Taraka that they were suffering from this complaint and I asked him for emetine to cure this condition. He said "You are not going to get this medicine, it is not available." I know that some had been available ten days before because I had been given a supply of it from another unit in the vicinity. I told Taraka that they would die unless I could treat them with this medicine. I asked him if he would not give me the medicine would he allow them to go to hospital in order to try and save their lives. He refused both the medicine or to allow them to go to hospital. They both died at the end of March or beginning of April 1945. I say from my medical experience and my observation and treatment of these men that I would have been able to cure their complaint and save their lives if I had been given this emetine.

When we arrived in the Halmaheras about two thirds of the Indian prisoners did not have any footwear and had to work in bare feet. This resulted in the men with bare feet getting sores on the feet and legs. The infection spread quickly and resulted in the permanent disability of many of them, and some deaths. The officer whom I asked for these supplies and who refused to give them was a Staff Capn. of the Thakeda Tai. I could not identify him as I only saw him once or twice.

I, Somnath Paul do solemnly and sincerely declare that the evidence given before this Commission and contained on this and the preceding six pages is the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth.

s/ S. M. Paul
CAPT., IMS

Declared before me this 25th day of September 1945.

s/ R. C. Kirby

EXHIBIT NO. 1806

書類第五五三八號

濱洲戦争犯罪委員会

一九四五年九月二十四日「モロタイ」戦時俘虜、抑留者收容所ニ於イテ「カービー」判事閣下ノ面前ニ
セラレタル證言。

陸軍大尉「S・N・ポール」ノ證言

(宣誓ヲナス)

(本證トシテ) 通譯 助ケラ籍ルコトナク證言ヲナシタ
リ) 陸軍大尉「S・N・ポール」ハ「カービー」判事ニ
依リ正式ニ宣誓セラレタル後陳述ス。

私ノ名ハ陸軍大尉「S・N・ポール」デアリマス。
私ノ陸軍番號ハ一七九三二一〇R〇ノデアリマス
私ハ印度軍軍醫部ニ所屬シテアリマス。戦争前私ハ
醫師デアリマシタ。私ノ本籍地ハ「アグラ」、「ダ
ヤル・ペール」、「ビジュツト・ナガール」、「一〇
ノ二〇」デアリマス。私ハ捕ヘラレタ時「シンガポ
ール」ノ第十七共同綜合病院ニタリマシタ。降伏ハ一
九四二年二月十五日デ私ハ十八日ニ捕ヘラレマシタ
私ハ下記ノ期間、下記ノ收容所ニタリマシタ。

(一)「シンガポール」ヨリ十五マイルノ「ミースー」

Doc 5538

EXHIBIT NO. 1806

BURO

1

2. *

Doc 5538

- 收客所、一九四二年二月二十三日ヨリ一九四二年六月マデ。

(二) 「シンガポール」ヨリ十三マイルノ「クランジ」收客所、一九四二年六月ヨリ一九四二年十月マデ。

(三) 「シンガポール」ヨリ約五マイルノ「ズライ」收客所、一九四二年十一月ヨリ一九四二年十二月マデ。

(四) 「クランジ」收客所、一九四三年一月十二日ヨリ一九四三年一月三十一日マデ。

(五) 「シンガポール」ヨリ十二マイルノ「セレタ」收客所、一九四三年三月一日ヨリ一九四三年八月二十四日マデ。

(六) 「シンガポール」ヨリ約七マイルノ「アダムス・ロイド」收客所、一九四三年八月二十五日ヨリ八月二十七日マデ。

(七) 「オカナマル」ニ乗船、一九四三年九月二十五日「ハルマヘラス」島ニ上陸。

(八) 「コックカ」收客所、一九四三年九月二十五日ヨリ一九四四年七月マデ。

(九) 「テイジユク」收客所、一九四四年七月。

(十) 「テイジユク」ヨリ約一、五マイルノ收客所、名稱不明、一九四四年八月。

(十一) 「テラガン」收客所、一九四四年九月ヨリ一九四五年八月三十一日マデ。

閣下、問、個々ノ日本人將校及ビ衛兵ノ犯罪ニ關ス

ル限リ、アナタハ「テラガシ」ニ行クマデ
ハ何等苦情ヲ申立テルヤウナ事ハナカツタ
ト了解シテキマスガソウデスカ。
答、「テラガシ」收容所ニ行クマデハ醫藥品

ト醫藥ノ抑制及ビ輕度ノ殴打以外ニハ別段
苦情ヲ申出ル程ノ事ハアリマセンザシタ。

最初私ガ「テイジユク」收容所ニ着イタ
時ニハ「コゾタ」中尉ガ日本軍指揮官デア
リマシタ。コノ收容所ニ「又」「イカイ」伍

長、「コクナ」一等兵ガアリマシタ。「コ
ゾタ」ハ第六輸送隊ノ一員デシタ。コノ收
容所ニキル間私ハ「コゾタ」中尉ガ指揮官

トシテ行動シ日本人幹部及ビ印度人戰時俘
虜ノ兩者ニ對シテ命令ラ下シテキルノヲ見

マシタ。私ハ「テイジユク」收容所カラ約
一、五マイル離レタ名稱不明ノ收容所ニ移

リマシタ。コレハ一九四四年ノ八月デシタ
前ニ述ベタ日本人將校ヤ下士官達モ我々ト

一緒ニコノ收容所ニ行キマシタ。ソシテ我
々ガソコニ到着シテカラ同モノク「イトカ」
中尉ト田中兵長ガ着キマシタ。私ハ自分ノ
自己「コゾタ」中尉ガ依然コノ收容所ノ指
揮官デアルノヲ見マシタガ田中兵長ハ階級

3. 4

Doc 5558

Doc 55.38

4.

テハ他ニモツト上ノ着ガアツタニモ拘ラズ
「コブタ」ノ副指揮官トシテ行動シテキマ
シタ。田中兵長ハ私ノキル前テ命令ヲ受領
シ、命令ニ就イテ「コブタ」ト相談シ他ノ
日本人所員ヤ印度人戦時俘虜達ニ命令ヲ下
シマシタ。

田中ハ私ヤ他ノ印度人俘虜達ニ我々ハ日
本軍ノ一員トナルダロウト言ヒマシタ。一
九四五年二月、田中ハ私ト「マホメツド、
アクラム」少尉トIWOノ「マホメツド、
ハツセン」ニ我々ハモハヤ戦時俘虜デハナ
ク日本軍ノ命ニ依ツテ日本軍ノ一員ニナツ
タト言ヒマシタ。彼ハソレヲ我々ノ室デノ
談話ノ原ニ申シマシタ。彼ハソレヲ上カラ
ノ命令デ服従シナケレバナラナイト言ヒマ
シタ。私ハ抗談シマシタ。他ノ三人モ亦抗
談シマシタ。我々ハソレハ戦争規定ニ違反
セルモノデアルト言ヒマシタ。ソシテ我々
ハ日本軍ノ一員トナルコトヲ欲シナイト言
ヒマシタ。田中ハ「君達ハサウシナケレバ
ナラナイノダ」ト言ヒマシタ。田中ハ日本
語デ言ヒマシタガ私ニハ彼ノ言ツタコトガ
判リマシタ。我々三人ハ彼ノ言フコトガ判
ル位、日本語ヲ知ツテキマシタ。IWOハ

Doc 5538

5. *

通譯トシテ我々ノ抗議ヲ田中ニ對シ日本語
ニ採譯シマシタ。ソノ時カラ田中ハ我々ヲ
整列サセルヤウニナリマシタ。
彼ハ我々ニ日本軍ノ方法ヤ慣習ヲ教ヘ始
マシタ。我々ハ早朝七時頃カラ雜役ニカカ
リ、午後六時頃ニ終リマシタ。ソレガ何時
モノ日課デシタ。雜役トイフノハ藥品ヤ食
糧ノハイツタ重イ箱ヲカツイデ、二、三マ
イル運搬シ毎日三、四往復スルコトデシタ
印度人俘虜ハ多量ガコノ雜役隊ニハイツテ
キマシタ。或ル者ハ烟ニヤラレマシタガ他
ノ者ハ前ニ述べタ仕事ヲシマシタ。

問、午前七時カラ午後六時マデノ間ニ食事時
間ハアリマシタカ。

答、食事ノアツタ日ニハ最初ノ食事ハ午前六
時半頃デシタ。我々が、捕ヘラレテキタ、
最後ノ三ヶ月ベカリハソノ日ノ作業ニ就ク
前ニ食事ハ全然與ヘラレマセンデシタ。我
々ハ我々自身ノ炊事室ヲ持ツテキマシタ。
ソシテ茶、砂糖、鹽ナド我々自身ノ私的ナ
食糧ヲ手ニ入レマシタ。我々ハ作業ニ取り
カカル前、何か飲ミ物ガアツタダケデ食ベ
物ハアリマセンデシタ。

正午十二時ニ我々ハソノ日ノ最初ノ食事ヲ

Doc 5538

5. *

通譯トシテ我々ノ抗議ヲ田中ニ對シ日本語
ニ翻譯シマシタ。ソノ時カラ田中ハ我々ヲ
整列サセルヤウニナリマシタ。

彼ハ我々ニ日本軍ノ方法ヤ慣習ヲ教ヘ始
マシタ。我々ハ早朝七時頃カラ雜役ニカカ
リ、午後六時頃ニ終リマシタ。ソレガ何時
モノ日課デシタ。雜役トイフノハ藥品ヤ食
糧ノハイツタ重イ箱ヲカツイデ、二、三マ
イル運搬シ毎日三、四往復スルコトデシタ
印度人俘虜ハ多數ガコノ雜役隊ニハイツテ
キマシタ。或ル者ハ烟ニヤラレマシタガ他
ノ者ハ前ニ述べタ仕事ヲシマシタ。

問下、問、午前七時カラ午後六時マデノ間ニ食事時
間ハアリマシタカ。

答、食事ノアツタ日ニハ最初ノ食事ハ午前六
時半頃デシタ。我々が、捕ヘラレテキタ、
最後ノ三ヶ月バカリハソノ日ノ作業ニ就ク
前ニ食事ハ全然與ヘラレマセンデシタ。我
々ハ我々自身ノ炊事室ヲ持ツテキマシタ。
ソシテ茶、砂糖、鹽ナド我々自身ノ私的ナ
食糧ヲ手ニ入レマシタ。我々ハ作業ニ取り
カカル前、何か飲ミ物がアツタダケデ食ベ
物ハアリマセンデシタ。
正午十二時ニ我々ハソノ日ノ最初ノ食事ヲ

Doc 5538

✱

6.

撮リマシム。普通我々ハ日本人ニ支給サレ
タ米ヲ持ツテ行キマシタ。我々ニ與ヘラレ
タ米ノ量ハ最初ハ十「オンズ」デシタ。ソ
ノ後コノ給與ハ減ジ最後ニハ約五「オンズ」
トナリマシタ。彼等ハ我々ニ若干ノ罐詰ニ
シタ乾燥野菜ヲ呉レマシタガ大体我々ハ密
林ノ草木ノ葉ヲ食ベテ生キテキマシタ。晝
食ノタメ一時間ノ休憩ガ與ヘラレマシタ。
我々ハドロデモ働イテキタドロデ休息シ
マシタ。
次ノ食事ハ午後七時頃歸ツテ來テカラデシ
タ。若シソノ時モウ暗クナツテキテモ燈火
ハ與ヘラレマセンデシタ。我々ノ食ベルモ
ノハ各人ニ配給サレタ米ノ晝食ノ残りダケ
デシタ。夕食前我々ニ約半時間ノ軍事教練
ガ施サレマシタ。イツモ田中ガコノ教練ヲ
受ケ持ツテキマシタ。時々「コブタ」モヤ
ツテ來テ様子ヲ見テキマシタ。
私ハ甚ダ屢々田中ガコノ整列ノ際印度人俘
虜ヲ殴ルノヲ見マシタ。或ル時ハ彼ハ平手
デ殴リマシタシ、又或ル時ニハ棒デ頭ヤ身
体ヲ打チマシタ。然シ大概ハ頭デシタ。私
ハ彼ガ誰彼ノ見境ナク殴ルノヲ見マシタ。
ソレハ俘虜ノ凡テガ一度ハ殴ラレ、大体二

Doc 5538

✱

6.

撮りマシム。普通我々ハ日本人ニ支給サレ
タ米ヲ持ツテ行キマシタ。我々ニ與ヘラレ
タ米ノ量ハ最初ハ十「オンズ」デシタ。ソ
ノ後コノ給與ハ減ジ最後ニハ約五「オンズ」
トナリマシタ。彼等ハ我々ニ若干ノ罐詰ニ
シタ乾燥野菜ヲ呉レマシタガ大体我々ハ密
林ノ草木ノ葉ヲ食ベテ生キテキマシタ。晝
食ノタメ一時間ノ休憩ガ與ヘラレマシタ。
我々ハドロデモ働イテキタドロデ休息シ
マシタ。
次ノ食事ハ午後七時頃歸ツテ來テカラデシ
タ。若シソノ時モウ暗クナツテキテモ燈火
ハ與ヘラレマセンデシタ。我々ノ食ベルモ
ノハ各人ニ配給サレタ米ノ晝食ノ残りダケ
デシタ。夕食前我々ニ約半時間ノ軍事教練
ガ施サレマシタ。イツモ田中ガコノ教練ヲ
受ケ持ツテキマシタ。時々「コブタ」モヤ
ツテ來テ様子ヲ見テキマシタ。
私ハ晝ダ屢々田中ガコノ整列ノ際印度人俘
虜ヲ殴ルノヲ見マシタ。或ル時ハ彼ハ平手
デ殴リマシタシ、又或ル時ニハ棒デ頭ヤ身
体ヲ打チマシタ。然シ大概ハ頭デシタ。私
ハ彼ガ誰彼ノ見境ナク殴ルノヲ見マシタ。
ソレハ俘虜ノ凡テガ一度ハ殴ラレ、大体二

Doc 5538

✱

6.

攝リマシム。普通我々ハ日本人ニ支給サレ
タ米ヲ持ツテ行キマシタ。我々ニ與ヘラレ
タ米ノ量ハ最初ハ十「オンズ」デシタ。ソ
ノ後コノ給與ハ減ジ最後ニハ約五「オンズ」
トナリマシタ。彼等ハ我々ニ若干ノ罐詰ニ
シタ乾燥野菜ヲ呉レマシタガ大体我々ハ密
林ノ草木ノ葉ヲ食ベテ生キテキマシタ。晝
食ノタメ一時間ノ休憩ガ與ヘラレマシタ。
我々ハドロコデモ働イテキタドロコデ休息シ
マシタ。
次ノ食事ハ午後七時頃歸ツテ來テカラデシ
タ。若シソノ時モウ暗クナツテキテモ燈火
ハ與ヘラレマセンデシタ。我々ノ食ベルモ
ノハ各人ニ配給サレタ米ノ晝食ノ残りダケ
デシタ。夕食前我々ニ約半時間ノ軍事教練
ガ施サレマシタ。イツモ田中ガコノ教練ヲ
受ケ持ツテキマシタ。時々「コブタ」モヤ
ツテ來テ様子ヲ見テキマシタ。
私ハ甚ダ屢々田中ガコノ整列ノ際印度人俘
虜ヲ殴ルノヲ見マシタ。或ル時ハ彼ハ平手
デ殴リマシタシ、又或ル時ニハ棒デ頭ヤ身
体ヲ打テマシタ。然シ大概ハ頭デシタ。私
ハ彼ガ誰彼ノ見境ナク殴ルノヲ見マシタ。
ソレハ俘虜ノ凡テガ一度ハ殴ラレ、大体二

Doc 5538

7. ★

十人ノ者が毎日教練ノ際毆ラレルトイフ程
デシタ。大抵ノ場合平手打ちハ相手ヲ地面
ニ倒ス程激シイモノデシタ。彼ガ手デ毆ル
時ニハ普通サウデシタ。私ハヨク彼ガ俘虜
ニ向カツテ言フノヲ聞キマシタ。「オ前ノ
頭ハヨクナイカラ直シテヤルノダ。」トソ
シテ彼ハ棒デ頭ヲ毆ルノデシタ。ソノ棒ハ
約一「インテ」ノ太サノアル長イ散歩用ノ
「ステツキ」デシタ。

ココデ私ハ虐待ト醫藥品ノ抑制ニ付イテ述
ベソノ例ヲ擧ゲマセウ。ソシテソレヲ述べ
終ヘタラ斬首ト殺害ニ付イテ申述べマセウ
一九四五年三月頃、我々ノ兵隊ノ三名「マ
ホメッド・シャイアイ」、「アリ・ハイダ
ー」、「ツフエイル・マホメッド」ハ「コ
ブタ」並ビニ田中カラ虐待ヲ受ケマシタ。
田中ハ私ニ向カツテ、當時畑ヲ働イテキタ
コノ三名ハ働キ振リガ悪イカラ診察シテク
レト言ヒマシタ。私ハ彼等ヲ診察シテ田中
ニ彼等ハ胸氣ト全身衰弱ニ冒サレテキル旨
話シマシタ。私ハコノコトヲ私自身、日本
語デ言葉ヲ補フタメ手眞似ヲ交ヘテ田中ニ
話シマシタ。

ソノ時私ハ彼ガ彼等ヲ一人宛毆ルノヲ見マ

Doc 5538

シタ。最初へ手デ彼等ガ地面ニ倒レルマデ
殴リ續ケマシタ。次ニ彼ハ彼等ヲ再ビ立チ
上ラセルト棒デ指關節、膝、頭部ヲ殴リ續
ケテ遂ニコノ三人ヲ人事不省ニ陥ラシメマ
シタ。コノ殴打ハ約半時間ニモ亘リマシタ
私ハコノ殴打ノ後「アリ・ハイダー」ガ重
態トナツタノヲ知リマシタ。ソシテデキル
ダケノ手當ヲ施シ續ケマシタガ遂ニ彼ハ一
週回カ十日ノ後死ニマシタ。私ハ田中ニ彼
ガ重態デアルコトヲ話シマシタガ田中ハ彼
ハ雜役ニ就キ畑カラ野菜ヲ運バナケレバナ
ラヌト言ヒマシタ。私ハコノ時「アリ・ハ
イダー」ガ宿舍ニ歸ツテ來ズ翌朝他ノ印度
人ニ依ツテ宿舍ニ運レテ來ラレルノヲ見マ
シタ。私ハソノ時彼ヲ見マシタ。彼ハ人事
不省ニ陥リ衰弱シ切ツタ状態ニアリマシタ
私ハ彼ノ生命ヲ持タセルタメ注射ヲ試ミマ
シタガ一時間半ノ後彼ハ死ニマシタ。

(以下次頁ニツヅク)

★
8

Doc 5538

私ハ印度テ三年間醫師ヲ職業シテ居マシタ、軍
醫ニナツテ三年間勤務シマシタ、ソウシテ私ノ醫
術上ノ経験及ビ「アリーハイダール」ガ毆打サレタ
ノヲ検査シ検査シタ結果彼ノ死因ハソノ毆打ニ依
ルモノト診断スルト記載シマシタ、彼ガ押メラレ
タ折ニハ私モ立會ヒマシタ。

「シヤアイル」及ビ「ツフアイル」モ毆打サレテ
病シテ居タノテ輕労働ニ廻サレテ居マシタ彼等ノ
程度ハ相當ヒドカツタガ「アリーハイダール」程悪ク
ハナカツタノデシタ。

私ハ「ツフアイル」ガ甚ダ衰弱シテ居ルノヲ見マ
シタ、實際彼ハ殺ス爲メニ毒ヲ下サイト私ニ頼ン
ダ程悪クアリマシタ、無論私ハソノ事ハシマセ
ンテシタガ彼ハ終ニ恢復シマシタ、私ハ「シヤア
イル」ガ本島ノ陸軍病院ニ入ツテ居ルノヲ見マシ
タ。今テモ彼ハソノ病院ニ居マス、
「ツフアイル」モ
コノ病院ニ居マシタ、「アクラム」及ビ「I.W.O
・マホメツド・ハツセン」助手モ現場ニ居テ「シ
ヤアイル」「ハイダール」及ビ「ツフアイル」ノ毆打
サレルノヲ見マシタ。

次ノ虐待事件ハ「マンシイカーン」ニ就テマス
私ハ彼ガ田中及ビ「コワナ」ニ毆ラレソレガラ木

7.

10

Doc 5538

ニ縛ラレタノヲ見マシクハ食物モ水モナシニシ
 コニ二十四時置放サレテ居マシク、彼ハ後手ニ
 縛ラレテ縄ヲ木ノ幹ニ結ヘ附ケラレテ居タ。縛ハ
 彼ノ身体ト木ノ幹トノマワリヲ縛ツテアリマシク
 コレハ一九三三年七月頃ノ事デス、當時彼ガ木ニ
 縛ラレテ居タ。ハ大小復露レ流シテアツタ。
 彼ハ木ニ縛ラレル所ニ三分以上モ縛ラレタ。私
 ハ彼ガ田中及ビ一コゾタニニ此ノ脚程ノ長サノ新
 樽ヲ以ツテ毀ラレテ居ルノヲ見タ、^シ彼等ハ彼ノ頭
 ト腹ノ邊ヲ打ツタ。一マシシイ・カ^シルガ^シラレ
 タ折ニハ一ゼム・アゾヂユラ・カイシ^シルモ一EW
 Oマホメツド。ハツセシ^シモ現^シキニ居タ

又% J A E I 際ノ一マホメツド・シキア^シルノ
 體打モ知ツテ居ル。コレハ一九三五年七月^月ノ事デ
 アツタ、^シ中ト一コゾタニガ太^シク樽ヲ頭ヲ半時間
 以上モ打ツタ、私ハ彼等ガ^シツテ居ルノヲ見タ。
 其ノ時一コゾタニハ立ツテ居ツタノヲ目撃シタ、
 此人ハ何モ云ハナイデ、何等抵抗シナカツタ。彼
 ガ氣絶スルト田中又ハ一コゾタニガ彼ノ額ニ水ヲ
 カケテ蘇生させ又氣絶スル迄彼ヲ毀ルノヲ見マシ
 タ。

Doc 5538

打ガ濟ムトスグニ田中ト「コワナ」ガ「シヤ
 フイ」ヲシテ「」ノ後ニ薪ヲ挟ンテ薪ノ上ニ無理ニ
 座ラセルノヲ見マシタ、私ハ彼等ガ行ヲ後手ニ縛
 リ置ト背トヲ褥テ叩クノヲ見マシタ。彼ハソノ姿
 勢デハ到底正座シテ居ル事ガ出来ナカッタノデ倒
 レト又打タレテ又元ノ正座ノ姿勢ニ起サレタ、
 コレガ度々起ツタ、コノ時點ノ田中ガ又坐時同
 イタ、「シヤフイ」ガコノ姿勢デ田中ト「コワナ」
 ニ置ラレタ折ニ「コワナ」ガ石油ヲ「シヤフイ」
 ノ足ニカケソレニ暗火シタ、ソノ時點モ田中ハ殿
 リツマケタ、置ラレタ後「シヤフイ」ハ後手ニ縛
 ラレテ木ノ幹ニ繋ガレ夜通シ放置サレタ、私及ヒ
 他ノ者ガ夜間宿カニ食物ト水ヲ與ヘタ。

田中ガ「シヤフイ」ヲ置ツタ理由ハ「シヤフイ」
 ハ彼自身ガ食慾ヲ盗ンダ事ハ目白シタガ他ノ者ヲ
 道座サセル事ヲ拒絕シタトノ事デアツタ、田中ハ
 彼ガ他ノ者ニツイテモ目白スル迄ハ責メルト私ニ
 云ツタ然シ「シヤフイ」ハコノヤウニ置ラレラレ
 テモソレハ云ハナカッタ、「シヤフイ」ハ打タレ
 ナガラ度々盗ンダ事ニ認シテハ唯自分一人丈ケガ
 責任アルノダト云ツテ居ルノヲ聞キマシタ。

★

11.

Doc 5538

「シヤフイ」ハ印度語デ自分一人死ヌ覺悟テ他
ノ者ハ誰モ遊座サセタクナイト云ヒマシム、秘ハ
コノコトヲ日本語ニ通譯シテ田中ニ「シヤフイ」
ガコウ云ツテ居ルト告ゲタ。

殿ツタ翌朝臣等ト「コブタ」ハ私ト「ゼム・ア
ブテエラ・カント」ト「マホメツドハツセレ」ヲ呼
ビ出シテ彼ハ「シヤフイ」ノ首ヲ斬ロウト思フガ
吾々ノ意見ハドウカト尋ネマシタ、私ハ斬首ハ已
ニ度々アツタノデ「シヤフイ」ヲ斬ツテモ何ノ役
ニモ立ツマイソレデ何か他ノ罰ヲ加ヘル方がヨロ
シカロウト云ツタ、彼等ヲ斬首シテカッタ田中ト
「コブタ」ハコノ懲罰ハ私ト他ノ印度人ニ委セル
ト云ツタ、ソレデ吾々ハ彼ノ顔ニ漆ヲ塗り彼ノ靴
ヲ首ニ吊リ下ゲテ一巡歩カセタ、彼ニ今後盜ミラ
シナイト覺ハセタ旨シテ彼ハ石ノ事ヲ經ツタ。

次ニ御話スル事件ハ「ゼム・モ」ハン・シング
「ノ」磨待デアル、此ハ京麻病ヲ重患デアツタ、ソ
レハ一九三三年五月ノ事デアツタ、彼ハ水腫病デア
ツタノデ終ニソノ病メニ八月十三日カ十四日ニ死
ツタ私ハ彼ノ世話ヲシテ居タ、私ハ彼ガ腹ニ水ガ

12

Doc 2538

瀧ツテ腫レ上リ非常ニ痛ンデ居タノヲ見ヌ、コレ
 ガ爲メニ呼喚ガ困難ニナリコノ痛ミヲ取ル爲メニ
 ハ彼ノ腹カラ水ヲ出サナケレバナラナカツタ、コレ
 レラスルノニ何モ其ノ遠ノ機具ハナカツタ、私ハ
 田中ト一コブタニ度々薬ト水ヲ取ル機具ヲ呉レ
 ルヤウニ頼ンダガ薬モ道具モ手ニ入ラナイトノ事
 デアツタ。私ハ田中ト一コブタニコノ病人ヲ病院
 ヘ入レルヤウニ頼ンダガ彼等ハ印度人ハ入院ヲ許
 サレナイト答ヘタ、其後一人ノ日本看護兵ガ二〇
 〇〇ノ針（注射針ノ様ナ）ノ非常ニ小サナノヲ呉
 レタノデソレテ一部ノ水ヲ取ツタガ八時間カラ十
 時間程カ、ツタ、ソノ間患者ヲ座ラセホベナラナ
 ヲツタノデ彼ニ取ツテハ非常ナ苦痛デアツタ、私
 ノ醫ニ就テノ知識ト私ノ観察ト診察並ビニ一ゼ
 ム・モーハン・シングラーヲ手術シタ事ニ繼ミ若シ
 形ガ彼ニ適當ナ手術ト藥ヲ與ヘタナラバ彼ノ生命
 ハ危ラク取止メラレタノデアロウト言ハスル。

(以下次頁ニツク)

★

13

Doc 5538

14

次ニ私ガ申上ゲタイ事件ハ「マホメット、アク
 ラム」ノ虐待ニ就テデアル、一九四五年ノ二月頃
 「コブタ」中尉ガ「アクラム」ヲ命令違反デ叱ツ
 テ居ルノヲ聞イタソシテ彼ニ二ツノ暴舎ト一ツノ
 庭ヲ作レト命ジタ、私ハ「アクラム」ト即中ト「
 コブタ」ガ「アクラム」ガ造庭作業ヲ續ケルベキ
 カ否ヤニツイテ議論ヲシテ居ルノヲ聞イタ、「ア
 クラム」ハ上級ノ營長ニ訴ヘルト云ツタ、田中ハ
 「オ前ハ殿幕ニ庭勤サレルゾ、自分ハ憲兵ニ澤山
 知人がアル、必要ト認メタ場合ニハ後日彼等ハオ
 前ノ首ヲ斬ルカモ知レナイゾ」ト云ツタ。
 「アクラム」ハ上級營長ニ訴ヘルコトハシマセン
 ト云ツタ、ソコデ「コブタ」ハ自分ハオ前ニ對シ
 テ怒ツテハ居ナイ、許スカラ元ノ廻リ云ヒ付カツ
 タ仕舞ヲセヨト云ツタ、其後一人ノ憲兵ガ通譯者
 ト來タ折ニ私モ居ツタ、「アクラム」モ「ゼム、
 アブデユラ、カイン」モ其屋ニ居ツタ、「アク
 ラム」ハ平手デ監ツテ居タ、憲兵ハ「ドウシテオ
 前ハソノ原由ヲシテ監ツテ居ルカ」ト日本語デ
 尋ネタ、私ハソノ言ヲ通譯シタガソレガ終ラヌ中
 ニ憲兵ハ平手デ「アクラム」ヲ叩キ出シタ、ソレ
 ハ誰ヒ殴リ方デアツタ、「アクラム」ハ殴ラレツ
 ツモ椅子ニカケテ居タガ度々床ニ張り倒サレタ、

Doc 5538

14

次ニ私ガ申上ゲタイ事件ハ「マホメット、アク
 ラム」ノ虐待ニ就テデアル、一兀四五年ノ二月頃
 「コブタ」中尉ガ「アクラム」ヲ命令違反デ叱ツ
 テ后ルノヲ聞イタソシテ彼ニ二ツノ蒸舎ト一ツノ
 庭ヲ作レト命ジタ、私ハ「アクラム」ト田中ト「
 コブタ」ガ「アクラム」ガ造庭作業ヲ續ケルベキ
 カ否ヤニツイテ議論ラシテ后ルノヲ聞イタ、「ア
 クラム」ハ上級ノ當局ニ訴ヘルト云ツタ、田中ハ
 「オ前ハ殿幕ニ庭前サレルゾ、自分ハ憲兵ニ澤山
 知人がアル、必要ト認メタ場合ニハ後日彼等ハオ
 前ノ首ヲ斬ルカモ知レナイゾ」ト云ツタ。
 「アクラム」ハ上級當局ニ訴ヘルコトハツマセン
 ト云ツタ、ソコデ「コブタ」ハ自分ハオ前ニ對シ
 テ怒ツテハ后ナイ、許スカラ元ノ通り云ヒ付カツ
 タ仕暮ラセヨト云ツタ、其後一人ノ憲兵ガ通譯者
 ト來タ折ニ私モ后ツタ、「アクラム」モ「ゼム、
 アブデユラー、カイン」モ其處ニ后ツタ、「アク
 ラム」ハ平氣デ匿ツテ后タ、憲兵ハ「ドウシテオ
 前ハソノ原裝ヲシテ座ツテ后ルカ」ト日本語デ
 尋ネタ、私ハソノ言ヲ通譯シタガソレガ終ラヌ中
 ニ憲兵ハ平手デ「アクラム」ヲ叩キ出シタ、ソレ
 ハ膝ヒ隠リ方デアツタ、「アクラム」ハ隠ラレツ
 ツモ椅子ニカケテ后タガ度々尿ニ張リ倒サレタ、

Dec 5538

毆打ハ十分乃至十五分モ續イタ、ソレハ捕房ノ監
デ起ツタ事デアル。

私ハ食堂事務員デアツタ。「アグラム」ハ十日
間食事ヲ半減サレタ、其十日間田中ハ毎日來テ私
ヤ他ノ捕房ニ對シ「アグラム」ハ福々ノ罪ヲ犯シ
テ居ルト語ツタ、田中ハ「アグラム」ニ罪狀白白
書ニ署名ヲ要求スル若シ拒ンダラ「アグラム」ノ
首ヲ斬ルト私ニ告ゲタ、彼ハコノ事ヲ「アグラム」
ニ話シ署名スルヤウ勸メヨト私ニ頼ンダ、私ハ云
ワレタ廻リ「アグラム」ニ話シタトコロ彼ハ署名
シタ。

田中ト「コブタ」ガ捕房ノ管理ニ關係シテ居ツ
タ全期間私ハ始ント毎日彼等ノ中ノ一人又ハ二人
共ガ棒ヲ持ツテ捕房ヲ踏ク印クノヲ實際ニ見マシ
タ。

次ニ私ハ捕房ノ斬首及ビ死亡ニ就テ聞リマセウ、
第一ノ事件ハ一九四五年三月五日ノ「マホメツド」デ
イン「ノ事件デス
彼ハ物置カラ魚ノ罐詰ヲ一個盗ンダ事ヲ白白シタ、
彼ハ引ツ張り出サレ帶負ノ荷ニ縛リツケラレタ、
私ハ「マホメツド」デイン「ガ荷ニ縛リツケラレ
テ居ルノハ見マシタ、ソウシテ其邊カラ「打」ノ書ト
叫ビ聲ガ來ルノヲ聞キマシタガ實際毆打サレテ居
ルノハ見マセンデシタ、私ハ彼ガ荷ニククラレテ

15. ★

Dec 5538

15. A

殴打ハ十分乃至十五分モ額イタ、ソレハ捕房ノ監
デ起ツク事デアル。

私ハ食堂事務員デアツタ。「アグラム」ハ十日
間食事ヲ半減サレタ、其十日田中ハ毎日來テ私
ヤ他ノ捕房ニ對シ「アグラム」ハ種々ノ罪ヲ犯シ
テ后ルト話ツタ、田中ハ「アグラム」ニ監禁自由
書ニ署名ヲ要求スル若シ拒ンダラ「アグラム」ノ
首ヲ斬ルト私ニ告ゲタ、彼ハコノ事ヲ「アグラム」
ニ話シ署名スルヤウ勸メヨト私ニ頼ンダ、私ハ云
ワレタ廻リ「アグラム」ニ話シタトコロ彼ハ署名
シタ。

田中ト「コブタ」ガ捕房ノ管理ニ關係シテ居ツ
タ全期間私ハ始ント毎日彼等ノ中ノ一人又ハ二人
共ガ袴ヲ持ツテ捕房ヲ踏ク印クノヲ實際ニ見マシ
タ。

次ニ私ハ捕房ノ斬首及ビ死亡ニ就テ聞リマセウ、
第一ノ事件ハ一九四五年三月五日ノ「マホメツド、デ
イン」ノ事件デス
彼ハ物置カラ魚ノ電話ヲ一個盗ンダ事ヲ自由シタ、
彼ハ引ツ張り出サレ機内ノ荷ニ縛リツケラレタ、
私ハ「マホメツド、デイン」ガ荷ニ縛リツケラレ
テ后ルノハ見マシタ、ソウシテ兵邊カラ殴打ノ音ト
叫ビ聲ガ來ルノヲ聞キマシタガ實際殴打サレテ居
ルノハ見マセンデシタ、私ハ彼ガ荷ニククラレテ

Doc 5538

16

居ルノヲ午後四時頃ニ見マシタ。午後十時頃以後
 何時カ彼ハソコニハ居マセシデシタ、私ハ彼ヲ搜
 シマシタが見付カリマセシデシタ、獄日菅田中ハ
 私ニ「マホメツド、デイン」ハ捕縛サレ警兵ノ手
 デ首ヲ斬ラセタト私ニ語シマシタ
 彼ガ其夜脱走シテカラ私ハ未ダニ「マホメツド、
 デイン」ヲ見マセン。
 日本ノ陣賊ニ際シ田中ハ私ト他ノ行方類ニ「デイ
 ン」ハ自然ノ原因ニ依リ死亡シタト云フ形式的ナ
 文書ニ署名スル様ニ頼ミマシタ。又ハ八月二十八
 日カ二十九日頃デアリマシタ。此ノ時田中ハ短銃
 ト剣トデ武裝シテ居リ、彼ノ記録ハ「デイン」ガ
 窃盗ニ對スル判決ニ從ヒ斬首ニ依リ死亡セルコト
 ヲ示シ居ルモ彼田中ハ夫レヲ疑見シ其ノ死亡ヲ自
 然ノ原因ニ依リシモノノ如ク註示スル様希望スル
 旨語リマシタ、彼ハ「デイン」ノ家族ニ對シテ不
 名誉ト恥辱ニナルカラ彼ガ窃盜罪ノ爲メニ斬首サ
 レタト記録サレナイオラバ其ノ方ガ却ツテ兵士ノ
 家族ノ爲メニ結構デアラウト申シマシタ。「アク
 ラム」ト私ハ本當ノ事實ガ記述セラル可キデアル
 ト申シマシタ、田中ガ短銃ト剣トデ武裝シテ居ル
 ノニ我々ハ何等武裝シテ居リマセシデシタ。私ハ
 彼ガ我々ヲ濠ツ刀取ハ首ヲ斬ルダラウト恐レタノ

17

Doc 5538

予署名シマシク。
 私ガ語リ得ル次ノ幕符ハ「チナチエリ」、「サ
 イド、ガル」ミラジ、デインシ「及び「ガリム、
 イラヒ」ノ事件デアリマス、是ハ西月十日頃起リ
 マシク、私ハ「マホメツド、ハツセイソ」カラ取
 ルコトヲ聞キ込シタノデス、ソシテ夫等四人ノ停
 房ガ我々ノ坂密所カラ逃レ出サレ三、四日「隔
 サレタコトヲ知ツテ居リマス。私ハ彼等ガ停ツテ
 來タ時ニ彼等ヲ見マシクガ彼等ハ皆非常ニ竹
 箒ヲ持テマシク。私ハ「サイド、ガル」ト「チ
 ナチエリ」トガ上ラ吐イテ居ルノヲ見マシク。私ハ四
 人ノ停房越ガ皆頭部ニ打撲傷トヒレ痛ノアツタノ
 ト彼等ガ疲勞甚大ノ狀態ニ在ツクノヲ見マシク、
 私ハ彼等ガ憲兵ニ依リ縛レ度サレタノヲ見マシク、
 「コラタ」ハ砲臺ヲ砲シタ停房逃ニ對スル處罰ニ
 處テ一ツノ見セシメマシクメヲ作ル爲メ夫等四名ノ停房ヲ
 斬首サレルヤウニシテ居ルト私ニ語シマシク、後
 テ私ハ其ノ四名ノ停房ガ日本憲兵ニ依リ連行サレ
 テ行クノヲ見マシクガ其ノ憲兵連ノ名前ハ知リマ
 セン、私ハ彼等ガ取ル場所ニ連行サレルノヲ見マ
 シクガ其所ハ私ガ前ニ別ノ停房連ガ日本衛兵ニ伴
 ハレ「踏線」ヲ持ツテ行クノヲ見タ場所ナノデス、
 私ガ此場所ニ其ノ四名ガ連行サレルノヲ見テカラ
 以後稱ビ彼等ヲ見マセンデシク。其ノ翌朝、朝ノ

Doc. 5538

18

集合ニ於テ「コブタ」ハ彼即チ「コブタ」ガ真因
 名ヲ斬首ニ處シタコト及ビ夫レガ余ノ我々對ス
 ル竊盜ヲシナイ様ニスル爲メノ見セシムデアルコ
 トヲ私ト他ノ俘虜達ニ話シテ聽カセマシタ。
 私ガ述ベタイ次ノ事件ハ「マホメツド、アフサ」
 ト「ヤクブ、カーン」ニ關係ガアリマス。此ノ事
 件ハ一九四五年七月頃デアリマシタ、田中ハ彼等
 ハ一ツノ小機入レノ藥品ヲ盜シタコト及ビ彼ガ彼
 等ヲ斬首ニ處スルコトニ決シタ旨ヲ私ニ語リマシ
 タ、私ハ既ル日ノ午後四時カラ翌朝十時マデ彼等
 ガ食物又ハ水モ無シニ縛リ上ゲラレタルノヲ見マ
 シタ、彼等ハ用便ノ自由モナカツタノデ木ニ縛リ
 ツケラレタママ垂レ流シマシタ。
 翌朝私ハ彼等ガ日本ノ衛兵ニ依リシメテ察カレ
 ニサレテ逃レテ行カレルノヲ見マシタ。田中ハ其
 時ニ居合ハセテ居リマシタ。私ハ田中ガ「アフサ
 ー」ト「ヤクブ、カーン」及ビ衛兵達ト共ニ立去
 ルノヲ見マシタガ其後私ハ二度ト夫等ノ人達ヲ見
 マセンデシタ。
 田中ハ帶劍シテ居リマシタ、其所ニハ彼等ト一緒
 ニ二名ノ日本衛兵ガ居リマシテ彼等モ亦劍ヲ持ツ
 テ居リマシタ。田中ハ從デ夫等二名ノ俘虜ハ斬首
 サレタコトヲ私ニ話シマシタガ誰ガ實際斬首ヲ爲
 シタカハ云ヒマセンデシタ。

Doc 5538

19.

次ノ事件ハ「マホメツド」ラムザン」ノ事件デア
リマス。之レハ降原ノ叛逆劇前一九四五年八月中
ノ事デアリマシタ。

私ハ「ラムザン」ガ終夜一本ノ木ニ縛リ付ケラレ
テルノヲ見マシタ。田中ハ彼ガ「ラムザン」ヲ送
レ去ツテ彼ヲ斬首シヤウトシテ居タコトヲ私ニ語
リマシタ。彼ハ「ラムザン」ガ「ムビオカ」荷
ヲ荷ンテ夫レニ就イテ田中ニ對シ騙ラツイタト申
シマシタ。田中ハ「ラムザン」ガ其荷ヲ荷ンダ
コトヲ彼ニ對シテ自狀シナカッタト申シマシタ。
私ハ彼ガ田中ニ送レ去ラレタ以後二度ト「ラムザ
ン」ヲ見マセンテシタ。私ハ田中ガ「ラムザン」
ヲ送レ去ツタ時布剣シテ居タノヲ見マシタガ後テ
田中ハ彼自ラ「ラムザン」ヲ斬首シタト私ニ語シ
マシタ。

次ノ事件ハ「マホメツド」ハツセイノ「ウマ
ー・テイノ」ニ關係ガアリマス。田中ハ彼等ガ脱
走シテ捕ヘラレソシテ彼ハ憲兵ニ彼等ヲ斬首サセ
タト私ニ語シマシタ。

私ハ彼等ガ脱走シタル後二度ト「ハツセイノ」
ウマー・テイノ」ノ何レモ見マセン。之レハ降原
ノ少シ前ノコトデアリマシタ。之等ノ人達ガ逃ゲ
テ田中ノ言フ通り斬首サレタ月ニ就テハ私ハハツ

Doc 5538

19.

次ノ事件ハ「マホメツド」ラムザン」ノ事件デア
リマス。之レハ降屋ノ裏廻廊前一九四五年八月中
ノ事デアリマシタ。

私ハ「ラムザン」ガ終夜一本ノ木ニ縛リ付ケラレ
テルノヲ見マシタ。田中ハ彼ガ「ラムザン」ヲ延
レ去ツテ彼ヲ斬首シヤウトシテ居タコトヲ私ニ語
リマシタ。彼ハ「ラムザン」ガ「ムビオカ」符
ヲ術ンテ夫レニ就イテ田中ニ對シ嘘ヲツイタト申
シマシタ。田中ハ「ラムザン」ガ其術ヲ術ンダ
コトヲ彼ニ對シテ自狀シナカッタト申シマシタ。
私ハ彼ガ田中ニ延レ去ラレタ以後二度ト「ラムザ
ン」ヲ見マセンテシタ。私ハ田中ガ「ラムザン」
ヲ延レ去ツタ時帯剣シテ居タノヲ見マシタガ後テ
田中ハ彼自ラ「ラムザン」ヲ斬首シタト私ニ語シ
マシタ。

次ノ事件ハ「マホメツド」ハツセイソート「ウマ
ー・テイソ」ニ關係ガアリマス。田中ハ彼等ガ脱
走ツテ捕ヘラレソシテ彼ハ憲兵ニ彼等ヲ斬首サセ
タト私ニ語シマシタ。

私ハ彼等ガ脱走シタル後二度ト「ハツセイソ」
ウマー・テイソ」ノ何レモ見マセン。之レハ降屋
ノ少ツ前ノコトデアリマシタ。之等ノ人達ガ逃ゲ
テ田中ノ言フ通り斬首サレタ月ニ就テハ私ハハツ

Doc 5538

19.

次ノ事件ハ「マホメツド」ラムザン」ノ事件デア
 リマス。之レハ實際ノ長瀬岡前一九四五年八月中
 ノ事デアリマシタ。
 私ハ「ラムザン」ガ終夜一本ノ木ニ縛リ付ケラレ
 テルノヲ見マシタ。田中ハ彼ガ「ラムザン」ヲ延
 レ去ツテ彼ヲ斬首シヤウトシテ居タコトヲ私ニ語
 リマシタ。彼ハ「ラムザン」ガ「ムビオカ」荷
 ヲ荷ンテ夫レニ就イテ田中ニ對シ臆ヲツイタト申
 シマシタ。田中ハ「ラムザン」ガ其荷ヲ荷ンダ
 コトヲ彼ニ對シテ自狀シナカッタト申シマシタ。
 私ハ彼ガ田中ニ延レ去ラレタ以後二度ト「ラムザ
 ン」ヲ見マセンテシタ。私ハ田中ガ「ラムザン」
 ヲ延レ去ツタ時荷劍シテ居タノヲ見マシタガ後テ
 田中ハ彼自ラ「ラムザン」ヲ斬首シタト私ニ語シ
 マシタ。
 次ノ事件ハ「マホメツド」ハツセイソト「ウマ
 ー・テイソ」ニ關係ガアリマス。田中ハ彼等ガ脱
 走シテ捕ヘラレソシテ彼ハ憲兵ニ彼等ヲ斬首サセ
 タト私ニ語シマシタ。
 私ハ彼等ガ脱走シタル後二度ト「ハツセイソ」
 「ウマー・テイソ」ノ何レモ見マセン。之レハ實際
 ノ少ツ前ノコトデアリマシタ。之等ノ人達ガ逃ゲ
 テ田中ノ言フ通り斬首サレタ月ニ就テハ私ハハツ

Doc 5538

★
20

キリ致シマセンガ、夫レハ「マホメツドアフサー」
ト「ヤクブカーン」ノ斬首ノ少シ前テアツタト思
ヒマス。
一九四三年九月中我々が「ハルマヘラス」ニ運行
サレタ後赤痢ガ狂盛シマッタ。牛田大尉ガ我々ヲ
當シテ屠マシタ。私ハ病院ニ行キ赤痢ヲ治療スル
爲メ藥ヲ請求シマッタ。
彼等ハ私ニ夫レヲ具ヘテ下レス膏痛ヲ緩和スル爲
ニ「クレオソート」ヲ私ニ呉レタダケテシタ。
我々ノ食料供給ガ不足シテ屠タノハ田中ト「コブ
ター」ノ責任テアリマス。
毎月食料ガ引キ出サレルト停心庭ニ對スル食料ハ
日本衛兵ニ對スル食料ト同ジ倉庫内ニ置カレマシ
タ。ソノ貯蔵品ノ中カラ彼等ハタツタ米ト鹽ト乾
燥野菜ヲ我々ニ出シテ呉レタダケテハ「ビスケツ
ト」ヤ「甘イ」ビスケツト」又ハ青豌豆ハ第六艦送
隊ノ爲メニ毎月持ち込マレルノヲ見タノテスガ我
々ニハ具ヘテハ下レマセンテシタ。凡ソ二日カ三
日毎ニ私ハ田中ト「コブター」ガ八名ノ日本衛兵又
ハ憲兵ノ爲メニ後信カノ「ビスケツト」ヲ引出ス
ノヲ見マシタ。常ニ持ち込マレル四十袋ノ米ノ内
カラ約十五袋ガ彼等ニ廻ハリ我々ノ方ヘハ二十五袋
ガ來マシタ。之レハ丸一ヶ月分テアリマス。

Doc. 5538

★

21

彼等ハ八人ニ食ベサセルニ反シテ、我々ハ約百九十人ニ食ベサセナケレバナラナカツタツテス。

私ハ田中ト「コブタ」トガ彼等ノ友人ノ或ル者ト臺灣部員ノ隊員ト憲兵隊（日本憲兵）ニ「ヒスケ」ト「ト」煙草ヲ與ヘテルノヲ見マシタ。

私ハ田中ガ既々彼ハ憲兵隊ニ友人ヲ持ツテ居ルカラ司令部カラ許可ヲ得ナクトモ處罰ニ付テ彼ガ望ム所ハ何テモ我々ニ對シテ爲シ得ルノダト放言スルノヲ聞キマシタ。

食物ヲ俘虜ニ與ヘラザル結果トシテ彼等ハ脚氣症ニ罹リマシタ。彼等ハ衰弱症ヲ呈シミ或ル者ハ夫レガ爲ニ死亡シマシタ。多クノ者ガ病氣ニナリ病院ノ治療ヲ與シ、藥材ヲ要シマシタガハソノ藥材ハ私ガ手ニ入レルコトハ出來マセンテシタ。

田中ハ其ノ人達ヲ病院ニ送レテ行カセマセンテシタ。私ハ彼ニ對シ「病院ハ貴方方ヲ入レルコトヲ許シテ居ルノニ何故印人ヲ入レナイノデスカ」ト申シマシタ。彼等ハ補助軍ノ「インドネシア」人ノ隊員ニモ入院ヲ許シテ居マシタ。田中ハ「印度人ハ病院ニ行クコトハ出來ナイ」ト申シマシタ。

最後ノ六ヶ月間「コブタ」ト田中ハ朝間勞役ニ於ケル病人取扱ヒニ苛酷ヲ極メマシタ。何シナニ彼等ガ病氣ヲ有ロウトモ其ノ人達ハ朝ノ奎園ニ參加

Doc 5538

22.

シテ約十分乃至十五分間「コブタ」カ田中カラ講
演ヲ聴ク間不動ノ姿勢ヲ居ナケレバナリマセンテ
シタ。其ノ人達ノ中ノ或ル者ハ之レヲスルノニ餘
リニモ病氣ヲ莫イノテ套園場ニ困憊シテ倒レマシタ。
彼等ガ困憊シテ倒レタ時ニハ彼等ハ倒レタ所ニ横
臥シタ儘倒サレ其ノ講演ガ終ルト其際ノ殘餘ノ者
ハ田中又ハ「コブタ」ニ引奉サレ行進シ去ルノ者
シタ。我々ハ困憊シテ倒レタ夫等ノ人達ノ代リヲ
スル者ヲ供給シナケレバナラス、之ハ他ノ使用シ
得ル人達ノ中カラ出サナケレバナリマセンテシタ
ガ、大部分ハ勞働ニハ向カナイ病人デシタ。
私ハ屢々「コブタ」ト田中ニ對シ多クノ人ハ勞役
スルノニハ餘リニモ病氣ガ重過ギルト申シマシタ。
套園ノ後「コブタ」ト田中ハ困憊シテ倒レ未ダ其
所ニ横臥シテ居ル人達ノ所ニ行キマシタ。彼等ハ
俘虜達ガ虛病ヲツカツテ居ルカドウカラ試メス爲
メニ彼等ノ頭ヤ膝ヲ打チ又ハ彼等ヲ蹴ルノヲ常ト
シマシタ。
休息ヲスル爲メニ倒レル振ヲシタ者モ少シハ居タ
カモ知レアイガソノ大部分ノ者ハ純然タル瘵氣テ
アツタノデス。
田中ト「コブタ」ハ其次ニ病人ノ中カラ注射ヲ施
サルベキ者ヲ選ビマシタ。彼等ハ餘リニ病弱過ギ

Doc 5538

23

テ勞役ニ遣ハシテ、アイ様ニ着テ、捕シ、英者ハ注射ヲ
 受ケナイ様ニ命ジマシタ。田中ト「コブタ」ハ彼
 等兩人ガ証ガ病人ノ中テ注射ヲ受ク可キ者ナルカ
 ラ、彼等ハヒドイ病人ニ
 ハ注射ヲ許シマセシテシタ。カソノ理由ハ彼等ハ勞
 役ニ遣シナイト云フノケス。此サレタ注射ハ私自
 身カ日本人ノ衛生兵ノ何レカニ似ツテ擔サレマシ
 タ。其ノ注射液ハ「ツイタ・カンフル」又ハ「オ
 リウム・カンフル」テシタ。夫等ノ注射液ハ約一
 時間心臓ヲ強クシ、ソウシナイト非常ニ衰弱シタ
 状態ニアル人ハ死スルモ知レマセン。其ノ人遣ノ
 中ノ数ル者ハ印及人管カニ抱カレテ醫舎ニ戻サレ
 ナケレバナリマセシテシタ。「カンフル」注射液
 ノ供給ハ田中又ハ「コブタ」等シクハ衛生兵ノ何
 レカカラ貰ヒマシタ。私ハ長々其病ヲ診ニ夫レヲ
 必要トスル人遣ニ注射ヲ與ヘルコトガ出來マシタ
 ガ之レハ多ク方編シテ、イタ材ヲ注シコシタノケス。
 勿論私ハ田中ヤ「コブタ」ノ目前テハ夫等ノ注射
 ハ出來マセシテシタ。私ハ証人ガ據ビ出シタ人
 遣ダケニ注射ヲ施スコトラ許サレテ居タノケス。
 私ニ注射ヲサセテカツタ人遣ハ若シ命令ガ實行サ
 レテ居タトスレバ死シマツタテシヤウガ、
 彼等ノ其命私ハ私箱ノ注射ヲ彼等ニ施スコトニ依
 リ彼等ノ命ヲ助ケルコトガ出來マシタ。

Doc 5538

24. ★

私ノ部下ノ多クハ惡化シテ敵軍ノ捕虜ヲ赤符ニ
 必トシテ屠グ。ソレヲ私ハ是等ノ君ハ國總督ノ
 治標ヲ示スルモノナルコトヲ上申シタガ、田中ハ
 彼等ヲ日本人官科出ノ計ニ行カセヤラトシナカツ
 タ。私自身ハ官ノ採球ヲ行フ何等ノ道具モ持ツテ
 屠ナカツタ。田中ハ彼等ヲ官科出ノ計ニ行カセヌ
 ニ爲テハ何ノ理由モ言ハズ「行ツテハナラヌ。彼
 等ハ仕事ニ必長テノダト云フダケダツタ。田中
 ハ官ノ治標ヲ受ケルニ必長テ計可成モ出サナカツ
 タ。

田中ニハ田中ト「ロブタ」ノ外ニ僅カ六名ノ衛兵
 ガ屠タガ、彼等ノ二起團ニハ他ニ五名ヲ増シ、田
 中ト「ロブタ」ノ外ニ十一名トアツタ。「コワテ」
 ハ其ノ一人デアリ「カキシマ」、「アダチ」、「ア
 タケ」ソレカラ右衛兵ノ「オカマ」モソノ中ニ
 屠タ。

私ハ屢々「コワテ」「カキシマ」ソレカラ「ア
 ダチ」ガ手ヤ機テ以テ打ヲ加ヘタルノヲ見タ。

私ハ「ロブタ」ト田中ヲ見分ケラレル。其私ガ
 名前ヲ擧ゲル爲テノ衛兵モ見分ケガ付ク。

8/9「ヂヤット」騎隊ノ「シヤキエン・ベグ」
 ト三六兵士工存助ノ「グラム・ヤシン」ノ二師長

兵ハ赤痢「アミーズ」赤痢「アミーズ」コレハ一九
 四三年ノ昭和二十年ノ三月カ四月頃ノコトデア

Doc 5538

25. *

ツタ。私ハ田中ニ彼等ハ石ノ疾患ニ罹ツテルコト
ヲ告ゲ、右ノ病狀ヲ癒ヤスガメニ僱医藥ヲ求メタ。
彼ハ「御前ハ其ノ藥ハ得ラレナイ。ソレハ手ニ入
ラナイノダ」ト云ツタ。私ハ十日間ニ其ノ藥ガ手
ニ入ツタコトヲ知ツテルト云フノハ其ノ附送ノ他
ノ際カラ其ノ藥ノ供給ヲ受ケタカラデアル。私ハ
田中ニ此藥ヲ彼等ニ手當スルコトガ出来ナケレバ
彼等ハ死ンテ了フト告ゲタ。私ハ田中ニ若シ彼ガ
藥ヲ私ニクレナイノチラバ、何トカソノ生命ヲ取
止メルケメニ患者ヲ病院ヘ行カシテクレト願ンダ。
彼ハ藥モ又病院ヘ行カセルコトモ深方共進ンダ。
彼等兩名共一九四五年ノ三月末カ四月初メニ死亡
シタ。私ハ自分ノ情衛上ノ健康ト診言カラ又是等
ノ患者ヲ實際以テツタノダカラ卓スガ、活シ前記
ノ僱医藥ガ實ヘケラ、私ハ彼等ノ疾患ヲ癒ホシ其
ノ生命ヲ取止ムルコトガ出来タデアラウ。
吾々が「ハルマヘラス」島ニ若イケ時印良人仔
ノ約三分ノ二ハ何等ノ原因モ持タズ余儀ナク深足
ヲ病イテキタ。ソノ結果深足ノ若者ハ足ヤ即ニ眞
物ガ出来タ。毎藥ハ急進ニ續ガリ彼等ノ中ノ多ク
ガ生涯ノ不具者トナツタリ又ハ死亡スルト云フ結
果ニナツタ。私ガ是等ノ藥ノ供給ヲ願ミ、シカモ
ソレヲ與ヘルコトヲ拒ンダ島長ハ「タケダ」島ノ

26. #

Doc 5538

一 参謀大尉チアツタ。私ハ彼ヲ見タノハ一二回ニ
過キアイノチ、見分ケハ符ケ衆ナル。

.....

余即チ「ソムナス・ポール」ハ本委員会ニ該シテ
提出サレタル本頁並ニ前六頁ニ記載ノ口書ハ兵費
完全ナル兵費、而シテ兵費以外ノ何物ニモ非ザル
コトヲ豫意且ツ認言ニ管言ス。

印長算四六尉

「S・M・ポール」ノ署名ノ

一九四五年九月二十三日余ノ口書ニ於テ管言サル。

「R・O・キルビー」ノ署名ノ

Q. # 1807

Loc. No. 5517

page 1

AUSTRALIAN WAR CRIMES COMMISSION.

Evidence taken before Mr. Justice Philp at Sydney this twenty-first day of January, 1946.

Lieutenant-Commander CARR, Palgrave Edden, R.A.N., being duly sworn, gives the following evidence:

I am Lieutenant-Commander CAIR, Palgrave Edden, R.A.N.; home address: 11 Nelson Road, Lindfield, Sydney.

On 1 October, 1943, while serving with Headquarters RAAF Command, AAF, a Catalina in which I was travelling was shot down into the sea near Pomala, Celebes. After being shot down and coming to the surface I saw F/O McDiarmed floating with a severe leg injury. One leg appeared to be practically severed below the knee. McDiarmed and I were picked up by Japanese in a boat, transferred to a shore launch. No attempt was made to attend to McDiarmed's wounds although I repeatedly pointed to them and asked for medical attention. I was interrogated by an officer whose name I do not know who threatened me with death if I did not answer. I refused to answer more than my name and rank. He then brought a guard with a fixed bayonet with the point of the bayonet touching me in front and asked me if I wanted to die. I still refused. I called his attention to McDiarmed's condition. McDiarmed was then conscious but delirious with pain. The officer turned to McDiarmed and kept repeating to him that he would give him morphia if he would answer the questions. McDiarmed gave his name and Wing Commander Stilling's name and said they were from Cairns. He, however, was given no morphia. A Japanese doctor and two Japanese nurses then arrived and one of the nurses put three stitches in the cuts on my face and dressed most of my wounds. McDiarmed was put on a stretcher and I thought he would be moved to hospital, but he was put down in the open and the doctor and the nurses proceeded to operate on him with the aid of an electric flash-light. This took place about 10 yards from me with an audience of about 20 guards and Japanese civilians. So far as I could see no general or local anaesthetic was given to McDiarmed as his cries of agony never ceased and he kept calling out to be shot. I could plainly hear bone being sawed through and the whole proceedings caused much laughter and amusement to the onlookers and nurses, who appeared to enjoy it. Finally McDiarmed was moved back on to the verandah and covered with a blanket. He was still delirious with pain and begging to be killed. I was dragged to my feet, my wrists bound very tightly behind my back and I was then placed against a verandah post and lashed to it from ankles to neck with easily 10 fathoms of line. The men sleeping inside the building objected to McDiarmed's cries so the stretcher was carried out into the middle of the road. The guards gave me water and two or three cigarettes. I tried to get them to do something for McDiarmed as it was now raining but all they would do was to take him water. Just before dawn when the pain in my wrist was becoming almost unbearable I persuaded the guard to loosen the lashings.

McDiarmed was silent by now and I think he died just before dawn. I feel certain that if he had received prompt and adequate medical aid he would have lived.]

When it was light I was taken out on to the road with a long rope tied around me in charge of a guard who had a fixed bayonet pointed at me. I had only one shoe and my shirt and trousers were in ribbons. I then saw McDiarmed was dead and later two native carpenters appeared and built a coffin for his body on the spot and it was taken away in a lorry.

The Catalina was shot down about midnight and McDiarmed was operated on about 1.30 a.m. and I was lashed to the post at about the same time.

I was taken from Fomala to Kendari on the morning of the 2nd October and on the 17th October I was confined in the ex-Dutch naval barracks at Sourabaya, till 30 October. No pillow or bedding of any sort was provided and the only clothes I had was a short sleeved singlet, a pair of shorts, a pair of sandals, a small hand towel and a Dutch Army jacket. Although requested, no protection from mosquitoes was provided, nor was I allowed out for exercise. No food was provided on the first day and thereafter I received about a large breakfast cupful of cooked white rice and nothing else three times a day. A beer bottle filled with drinking water was provided daily and the light was kept burning in the cell all night. I was allowed only a few minutes night and morning to wash at a small tap in a filthy W.C. near my cell. This W.C. was never clean and was covered with about an inch of dirty water during the whole period. For a week no medical attention was provided for my numerous cuts, abrasions and burns, which became infected. I was then given some medical attention at the sick bay. Japanese naval officers were fully aware of the above matters as an officer carried out an inspection everynight and I frequently complained to him. I do not know the names of any of these naval officers.

On 30 October 1943 I was flown to Japan and confined in a camp at Ofuna and remained there eight months. I later went to Omeri, Ashio, Zentsuji, and later to Misaka. Medical supplies and food in all these camps were bad, and at Ofuna medical supplies were practically non-existent.

I saw POWs beaten frequently at Ofuna and heard that beatings occurred in the other camps, except in Zentsuji.

W.O. IIDA, of the Japanese Navy, was camp commander at Ofuna.

I certify that the above evidence is true and correct.

..... It.-Cdr.

Taken and sworn before me
at Sydney this twenty-first day
of January, 1946.
.....Philp.....
Commissioner.

Ex 1807A
Evidentiary Document # 5517

濠洲戦争犯罪委員会

一九四六年一月三日「シドニー」ニ於テ判事「フリップ」ノ面前ニ取ラレタル証據。

濠洲海軍少佐「ホルグリーブ・エブテニカー」ノ正式ニ宣誓、上
次、証言ヲ為ス

私、濠洲海軍少佐「ホルグリーブ・エブテニカー」デアル。故國、住所ハ「シドニー」「リドフィルト」「ネルソン」街十一番地デアル。

一九四三年十月一日私ガ濠洲空軍司令部ニ勤務中、私、搭乗
シ「カタリナ」機「セビス」島「ボマラ」附近、海中ニ墜降セシタ。

墜降セル海面ニ未タ時ニ私飛行中尉「マクデアームド」ノ脚部ニ
重傷ヲ受ケテ海面ニ浮ニテ居ルヲ見タ。

片脚ハ實際ニ膝カラ切断サシ様ニ思ヒタ。「マクデアームド」ト
私ハ日本人ニ依ツテ「ボート」ニ拾ヒトゲラレテ沿岸警備艇ヘ移

サシ。私「マクデアームド」ノ負傷、處々度々繰リ返シテ指サシテ
医療ヲ加ヘルコトヲ依頼シタガ何等其傷、千當タシテ呉リヨウ

ト、シタカシ。私ハ姓名ヲ知ラヌ一士官ニ訊問セシタ。若シ私ガ
答辯シケレバ私、生命ヲ奪フト彼、脅迫シタ。

私ハ自分、氏名及階級以外ニ答ヘルコトヲ拒絶シタ。

ソコテ彼、着剣シテ一衛兵ヲ連シテ来テ其、銃剣、切先ヲ
正面カラ私、身体ニ觸シテ死ニ度イカト私ニ尋ネタ。私ハ依然トシ

テ拒シタ。私ハ其士官、注意ヲ「マクデアームド」ノ容態ニ喚起シタ。
「マクデアームド」ハ其、時、意識ハアツクガ苦痛、爲メ狂亂的デアリタ。

其士官ハ「マクデアームド」ノ方ヲ振り向キテ若シ訊問答ヘルトシバモ
ルヒテシヲ與ヘルト再三言フタ。「マクデアームド」ハ彼、氏名ト飛行大隊

No. 1

Doc. 5517.

長アリニシテ、名ヲ語リ又彼等ハカイルニ交ルル者ト語ク。然
 之彼ハモルニ不ク、實ハナカク。一人日本人医師ト二人、日本看護婦
 婦ガ共處ヘ到着ス。ソレ看護婦、一人ガ私、顔面切傷
 ヲ三針縫ヒ又大傷ノ私、創傷ニ瀰帯ヲシテ、マクテ、ア一
 ハ擔架ニ乗セシム。彼ハ病院ヘ運バレルモト私、思フ。
 然レ彼ハ野外ヲ降サレ、ソレヲ医師ト看護婦ハ懐中電
 燈ノ光ヲ手術ニ着キテ。是ハ初メ十碼位、處テ石
 位、警備兵及日本一般人、見テ居ル處ヲ行キテ。私知
 リ得テ範圍ニハマクテ、何年全身麻酔ヲ局部
 麻酔ニ與ヘシカク多様ヲシテ。ト言フハ彼、絶ニ吾肉
 叫ビテ拳ヲ又射殺シテ、大聲ヲ言ヒ、ソレヲ升ルニ
 私ハ判ツキリト骨ヲ握キ切ラレルガ痛コシ。其處、全
 体ハ見物人々看護婦等ヲ大變哭ニ喜ビテ。彼等ハ
 共ニ集テ居テ様ヲアツク。
 遂ニマクテ、ア一ハ、之ニシテ、方ハ床ニテ、毛布ヲ掛テ
 ン。彼ハ依然トシテ苦痛ヲ極ル様ニテ、射殺シテ、
 ト頼ニテ居テ。私ハ引張リテ、立テ上リサシ。
 而テ、後キ二國ヲ結ビテ。ソレ其レカラ私ハ、
 柱ニ依リ掛テ、之ニ登カラ頭ニテ、十尋ノ完命ニ、網ヲ
 柱ニ縛テシテ。其建物、内部ニ、眼ヲテ居テ、人々ノ至テ、
 呻リ声ニ文句ヲ言フテ、彼ヲ載セテ担架ニ運出サ
 レテ道、真中ニ置カレテ。番兵ハ私ニ水トニ三本、巻煙草
 ヲ與テ。今ハ兩方降リテ、其方カニマクテ、ア一ハ、

No. 2

Doc. 5517

何。處置ヲ講ジテ是ト番兵等ニ頼ミテ見タカ彼等
爲シテ是トタ、ハ彼ニ水ヲ運テ是トタニ過キカシク。
丁夜夜明ケ前、松ノ琴ノ痛キ堪工印シカシク、テ番兵
ヲ説クヲ網ノ結目ヲ弛メタシク。コノ事アトト、ハ最早
瑞カニテシテ仕舞シタ。彼ハ丁夜夜明前ニ死ニシタト
思フ。若シ彼ガ敏速ヲ適切ニ沈察ヲ受ケタトハ、必ス
命ヲ助ケタトト思フ。

一九四六年本月二十日、山ノ下ニ於テ、余ノ面前ニ於テ
宣誓証言ス

了りツク署名
委員

No. 3

Q. # 1808

Document No. 5514

Page No. 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (N.F.I.S.) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

"Statement of R.J.HENSEL, 2nd Lt. of Inf., Inspector 1st. class in the F.T.F., head of the postoffice at MENADO, dd. BANDONG the 16th of November 1945, signed A.W.BOR, examining magistrate," OM/228/M,

which document is a part of the official records of the N.F.I.S.

SIGNATURE:

BATAVIA, June 7th 1946.

/s/ Ch. Jongeneel

SEAL

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. de WEERD, first lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

On this day, Friday the 16th of November 1945 there appeared before me

Mr. A.J. Bor, examining magistrate

a person, who on demand declared to be

Hensel R.J.

age 44 years, now 2nd Lieut. of infantry, occupation inspector 1st class in the P.T.T., head of the postoffice at Manado, and who made the following statement:

In the night of 12/13 January 1942 I was at Tondano together with some other military men, among others Mr. van der Meulen, manager of the wireless plant at that place and Mr. Spruyt, technician in the P.T.T., in a house waiting for the motorcar that was sent to fetch us and to bring us back to our unit, from which we were cut off. At about 5 o'clock in the morning the japs marched into the town mentioned above and a short time afterwards a Japanese patrol came along and banged at the windows of the houses in our neighbourhood to ascertain if there were any soldiers in the houses. This happened also at the house where we were staying, upon which I immediately went out and reported ourselves to the commander of the patrol. Observing the badge of the town guard on my uniform and after my explanations he ordered us to stay where we were and to keep quiet, saying that most likely we would be ordered to guard the town. For two days I stayed in this house; in the afternoon of the third day all of a sudden the house was surrounded and searched. After that we were handcuffed, kicked and beaten, and ordered to take off our shoes, whereupon we were marched off in a downpour to the military post at Tondano which we reached by way of several subordinate stations—where we were also maltreated every time—and where we found already assembled 10 or 15 colleagues, including some officers, also handcuffed the same as we. From here we were sent by truck, still handcuffed, to Lunggan, the place where the headquarters for the whole Minchassa were established. After our arrival at these headquarters we had to wait for several hours, still handcuffed and sopping wet, before we were tried at last at 8 o'clock in the evening by some officers. An official report of this trial was drawn up. My purse, containing an amount of several thousand guilders, which had been left me by former searches was confiscated on this occasion and a note made of this confiscation in the official report. After this our handcuffs were taken off and for the night we were housed in a little native house. Next morning we were transported to Manado, where they locked us up in the prison for natives on trial. We found in this prison assembled about 100 European and 400 to 500 native prisoners of war. Concerning the bedding: with 12 to 16 persons we were locked in cells with a normal capacity of 6 persons; neither mats nor clothing were issued. Food: the first few days some ship's biscuits, after that three times a day one ball consisting of dry-boiled rice—naturally no utensils for eating were issued—and next we had to cook for ourselves for which purpose we received every day a handful of black-burned rice, hailing from a burnt go-down. At the same time "kankong" stalks were issued as vegetables, but as a rule these had lain somewhere for several days already. Hygienic conditions. We had to fetch our water from a well situated between the lavatories and in consequence seriously polluted, because the number of lavatories was quite insufficient and so they overflowed.

Treatment: Maltreatments at the hands of the jap guards were the order of the day. Especially a certain YAMADA, governor of the prison, was a continuous offender, using for this purpose a leather whip, the end of which was made heavier with a ball of lead.

Medical treatment: none. There were some physicians among us, but they had no medicines at all, although there were about 60 to 80 malaria patients among us. Further there were two severe cases of dysentery. Both patients regularly dirtied themselves, being too weak to go to the lavatories, so we had to carry them there. Dr. Borstlap several times approached the governor by the mouth of the interpreter with an urgent request to dispense medicines without any result. Next he wrote several open letters to the same authority. These letters were handed to the guard and immediately torn up. At last some jap officers came to look over the prison, one of whom Dr. Borstlap identified by his distinctives as a medical officer. Dr. Borstlap jumped out of his cell and butt nipped this jap medical officer, calling his attention to the two dysentery cases. By order of this jap officer the two dysentery cases were isolated and Dr. Borstlap told off as nursing orderly, which meant that he had to do the dirty washing and empty the bedpans, because no medicines were given to him. The treatment was reserved to the jap doctor. Firstly both patients did not get any food at all for some days, then during the next days a little ricewater and at last some injections. Yet both patients recovered. At the same time Dr. Borstlap tried to get some quinine for the numerous malaria patients but in vain. Very often it happened that one of this patients could not reach the lavatory on account of weakness, with the result that all malaria patients had to parade to receive a sound thrashing. Often maltreatment happened as a result of our misunderstanding japanese orders.

Executions: In February 1942 Mr. Beon, local manager of the Moluksche Handel Ky, and President of the Committee for legal intercourse in times of war, was executed. He was charged with the embezzlement of money in his latter capacity. First he was severely maltreated and next-I did not see this myself but heard it from native eye-witnesses-beheaded. Further were executed Mr. Lie Beon Yat together with his two sons, all residing at Menado. In the prison there was one cell with a superscription in japanese characters meaning "deserving death". At the beginning of March 1942 there were in this cell 18 persons locked up, mostly native soldiers, but at least one Indo-European. I knew that two of them were punished for an attempt to escape; they were severely maltreated, to wit bound together back to back they were placed in the sunshine every day till the evening when they were returned to their cell. As a rule they collapsed from exhaustion and were put on their legs again by means of kicking and thrashing. For 6 or 7 days the 18 men in this cell got no food at all; after that for a fortnight daily one mug of water and every other day one ball of dry-boiled rice. At the end of this period they were executed. Some days before prisoners of war were ordered to dig pits and some native eye-witnesses furnished particulars of the execution.

During March 1942 Capt. Kroon together with two native soldiers and five European N.C.O.'s was caught. Up to that moment this officer had succeeded to stay at large with his faithful band and to conduct a guerilla warfare

against the japs. Capt. Kroon and the two native soldiers were housed in the prison with us; the five N.C.O.'s, among whom Cosijn, were executed according to him. This was also officially communicated to us by the jap. On April 15 we Europeans were evacuated to the POW camp at Makassar excepting de Wlff, employed by V & W, commander of the destruction unit, Mr. de Jong, official in the Sea fishery, Mr. Lubbers and major Schimmeler. The last named two persons arrived at a later date in our camp at Makassar and told us that the first named two were executed after our departure.

Witnesses: Lieut. Noltinius de Kan
" W. Lambers
" Sachumsky
Capt Klooster

Executed at Bandoeng on the 16th of November 1945
signed A.W.Bor

Doc 5514

Ex 1808

1.

〇 M / 三三八 / M 二二九
警 察 署 五 五 一 區

平日、一九四三年十一月十六日、金曜日ニ、余
皇太子副官エイ、ダウリユウ、ボア氏 / H.R.A.W.
BOR / ノ國前ニ於テ通情ニ務古價算第一級檢閱
官、メナド郵便局長、現在、歩兵少尉アール、
ゼイヘンセル / HENSEL R.J. / ト帯スルモノ年
齡四十四才ハ要求ニヨリ出陣ノ上テノ願込ヲ行
へり。

一九四二年一月十二、三日ノ夜私ハ其名ノ真
人其ノ中ニハ同地ノ無線工場ノ支那人フアン、
ナル、ムウレン / VANDER MEULEN / 氏及ヒ其借働
務局長スプリイト氏 / SPRUYE / モ居マツタガ誠
意ノ内テ、我々ヲ迎レテ歸リ我々が運給ラ運
サレタ我々ノ部屋ニ送り返ス様ニト派遣サレタ
自動車ヲ待合ハセテ居マツタ。朝ノ五時頃、日
本軍ハ上記ノ市街ニ進軍ツテ來マツタ。其後
タクスムルト日本軍進軍線ガヤツテ來テ我々ノ陣
營ノ徑ヲ其ノ家ニ兵士ガ居ルカラ砲カメル爲メ
ニドントント叩キマツタ。
此レガ、我々が留マツテ居タ家ニモ亦行ハレタ
ノテ、之ニ應ジテ私ハ直チニ外ニ出テ行ツテ迎

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5514

2. ★

局長ニ我々ノ事ヲ報告シマシタ。
 我々ノ正門ノ上ノ市警衛ノ徽章ニ氣ガツイテ私が
 説得ラシタ後、我々が恐ラク市街ヲ徘徊ニ
 當ル際命ゼラレルダラウト云ツテ、我々が后ツ
 タ家ニ歸マツテ居テ警カニシテ居ル様ニト命ジ
 マシタ。二日同我々ハ其ノ家ニ留マツテ居マシ
 タ。三日目ノ午後突然團家庭ハ包圍サレ緊鎖シ
 ラサレマシタ。其後我々ハ手錠ヲカケラレ臨ラ
 レタリ候ラレマシタ。ソツテ靴ヲヌグ様ニ命
 ゼラレマシタ。其ノ上、蒙爾ノ甲ラトシダノ
 /HONDAHO/ノ山頂ノ麓處所ヘ行進シマシタ。
 我々ハ道中終ツカノ麓處又所ヲ經由シテ其處ニ
 到着シマシタガ其處ニ亦辱待ヲ受ケマシタ。ソ
 シテ、其處テ我々ハ其人ノ將校モ入レテ十人乃
 至十五名ノ仲間ヲ見出シマシタガ此等モ亦我々
 ト同様ニ手錠ヲカケラレテ居マシタ。其處カラ
 我々ハ手錠ヲカケラレタ仁益ミナハサ/HINABA
 ISSA/地方本部ノ誤任シテアルランゴアン/EAN
 IGOR/々デトラツクテ送ラレマシタ。
 我々が其ノ本部ニ到着後、我々ノ八時ニヤットノ
 コト其人ノ將校ニ取訊ヲ受ケルマテ其時間モ、
 手錠ヲハメラレ、ツブ漏レノ儘テ待タナケレバ
 ナリマセンデシタ。此取調ノ正式報告ハ作感サ

Doc 5514

レマシタ。
 私ノ身價銀ノ額ガ入ツテ居ル金入レハ前
 此ノ後私ノ手債ハ戻カレマシタ。其ノ夜ハ我々ハ
 少サイ原住民ノ家ニ収容サレマシタ。其處朝我々
 ハメナド / MEMORANDUM / ニ送ラレマシタ。其處デ、裁判
 ノ上、原住民ヲ収容スル監獄ニ監禁サレマシタ。
 我々ハ此ノ監獄デ百名ノ囚人トト、五名ノ原住
 民ノ停留ガ余メラレテ居ルノヲ見出シマシタ。
 床ニシテハ、普通六人ノ収容力ノアル監房
 ニ十二名乃至十六名ヲ監禁サレマシタ。ソシテ、
 食料モ被褥モ天給サレマセンテシタ。
 食料ハ初ノ其日ハ船用ビスケットヲ若干、其
 後ハ、ボロボロニ乾イタ餅リ似ガ一ケ、一日三回
 支給サレマシタ。
 勿論食料ノ支給ハアリマセンテシタ。
 其後ハ自分達ヲ罰ラシナケレバナリマセンテシ
 タ。其ノ爲メニ、焼失倉庫カラ持テ出シタ、眞黒
 燐ノ柴、下物ヲ我々ハ毎日採取リマシタ。同時ニ
 野菜トシテハ「カソコン」 / KANKOENG / 水中ニ
 生ル一科ノ野菜ノ一種カ支給サレマシタガ、然シ

★
3

4. *

Doc 5514

此等ハ次ス何時ナモ解ニ其日何處カニ疑ツテアツタモノナシク、

籠左状態 我々ハ我々ノ飯料水ヲ便所ト便所ノ間ニテル赤尾カラヒソクテ茶ナケレバナリマセンテシタカラ其結果罪給ニ不_レナリマシク、其理由ハ便所ノ私ガ不_レ充分ナリマシクカラ便所ハ_レシテ居マシク。

待期 日本兵ノ留守ノ手ニヨル穩待ハ日當ノ出来無テアリマシク。虎甲兵隊ノ田田某ノ_レハ_レ常名犯テ給ニ先_レ知ヲ命玉ヲ實際ヲ付ケタ草ノ_レ此ノ目的ノ爲メニ使用シテ居リマシク。

隠探手當 皆然、我々待間ニハ其名ノ_レ間方居リマシクガ約六十名乃至八十名ノマラリヤ患者ガ我々ノ内ニ居ツテモ彼等ハ_レ持ツテ居リマセンテシタ。更ニ、赤尾ノ_レ真患者ガ二人居リマシク、兩名ノ患者ハ_レ非宿ニ_レ居テ便所へ行ケナイノ_レ平氣モ_レ粗相シマシク、ソコテ我々ハ彼等ヲソコニ、差ソテヤリマシク。

ボルス_トラツグ_ノボリス_トハ_レ真同ニ_レ互リ_レ通譯ヲ_レ通ジテ_レ隠探ヲ_レ賦與スル_レ様ニ_レ切_レ直シテ_レ典獄ニ_レ折衝シマシタガ、何ノ_レ効果モ_レ付ラ_レマセンテシタ。次ニ博士ハ_レ區當局ニ_レ其_レ長公_レ關_レ版_レヲ_レ替_レキマシタ。此等ノ_レ手續ガ_レ監守ニ_レ手_レ渡サ_レマシタカ、_レス_レグ_レニ_レ引

5.

Doc 5514

製カレマシタ。此ニ其名ノ由不詳持本ガ監獄ノ視
察ニ來マシタ。其ノ中ノ一人ガ彼ノ印章カラボル
ストラツブ博士ハ彼ヲ真行テアルト認メマシタ。
醫師ハ彼ノ監房カラ帯ビ出シテ行ツテ、此其目ヲ
引取メ、二名ノ赤痢患者ニ對スル彼レノ注意
ヲ喚起シマシタ。此日不始校ノ命帶ニヨリ二名ノ
赤痢患者ハ隔離サレマシタ。ソシテホルトラツフ
先生ハ看護手トシテ派遣サレマシタガ醫藥ガ少シ
モ彼ニ與ヘラレナカツタノテ比レハ汚レ物ノ洗滌
ヤ便器ヲ盥ケルノヲ彼カシテケレバオラナイト云
フ事ヲ意味シテ居マシタ。

Doc. 5514

6. A

手官ハ日弁人ノ一語ニ使密ツレテ居マシタ。先ズ初
 聞名ノ急行ハ日國ハ少シモ實情ヲ實ヒマセシテシ
 タ、ソレカラ次ノ日國ハ真偽ヲ少兵、爲ニ實國ノ
 注視テシタ。其レテモ二人ノ思惑ハ深リマシタ。同
 時ニボルスラツフ先正ハ、此ノマラリキ恩者ニ謝
 シテ、キニイネラ入手レント試ミマシタガ無感テシ
 タ。此等ノ思惑ノ一人ガ表裏ノ知メニ何所ニ至スル
 事ガ出来ナカツタ。精米至マラリキ恩者ガ罪過イ管打
 ラ安ケル爲ニ行列ヲ作ラネバナラナカツタ。是ハ是々
 起リマシタ。是等ハ日弁人ノ行常ヲ考メガテ誤解ス
 ル事候候々起リマシタ。

庭刑 モロツクシユ同官前 / HOLLERSCHE FANDELEY /
 ノ事カ更ニハ、ノビ候合儀惣取引候事合會長ベ
 ン氏 / BERNARD / ハ一カ色ニ在 / 二カニ庭刑サレマシ
 タ。彼ハ後志ノ彼ノ親友上ノ公全私情ノ罪ニ關ハレ
 マシタ。是初秘ハ強請ニ歸せサレテニ以テ身重マセ
 シテシタガ原地島ノ日譯者カラ、イタノテスガ彼ハ
 首ヲ切ラレマシタ。更ニリイ、ブ、ヤート氏 /
 THE BOER KEE / 及二色ノ息子ガ庭刑サレマシタ。
 彼等ハ官メナド / BERNARD / ニ任シテ居リマシ
 タ。庭刑甲ニ、日本文字テ一死ニ至ス / DESERVING
 DEATH / ト云フ意味ノ陪刑ノシテアル庭刑ガ一

Doc. 5514

6. A

手官ハ日本入ノ上ニ留ニ候留ツレテ居マシキ。先ズ初
 聞名ノ趣行ハ其日同ハ少シモ復候シ實ヒマセンデシ
 タ、ソレカラ次ノ感白書ハ懸物ヲ少馬、然ニ寛國ノ
 注進テシタ。其レテモ二人ノ感言ハ候リマシタ。同
 時ニボルストラツフ先立ハ感言ノマラリヤ恩者ニ候
 シテ、キニイネラ入手モント候ミマシタガ御座テシ
 タ。此等ノ感言ノ一人ガ表候ノ公メニ候所ニ候スル
 一ガ出来ナカツタ結末ニマラリヤ恩者ガ罪遣イ候訂
 ラ安ケル候ニ骨列ラ作ラネバナラナカツタ。ハ候々
 候リマシタ。其時ハ日本入ノ御座ラ候々ガ誤解ス
 ル候候候候候リマシタ。

鹿洲モロツクシユ同ニ官前 / HOLLERSCHE HANDELMAN /
 ノ其方支二ハ、ノビ候時合法候取引候事合會長ベ一
 シ氏 / 鹿洲 / ハ一先立ニ在 / 二方ニ鹿洲サレマシ
 タ。彼ハ彼等ノ彼ノ候實立ノ公金私等ノ難ニ向ハレ
 マシタ。其初候ハ強請ニ候事サレズニ其御身無マセ
 シテシタガ其地島ノ日職ニカラ、イタノテスガ彼ハ
 昔ラ初ラレマシタ。其ニリイ、ブツ、ヤトト氏 /
 THE BOEHN KASE / 及二年ノ息子ガ鹿洲サレマシタ。
 彼等ハ其メナド / 鹿洲 / ニ住ンテ居リマシ
 タ。其候甲ニ、日本文字テ「死ニ候ス」 / DESERVING
 DEATH / ト云フ候味ノ陪候ノシテアル鹿洲ガ一

Doc 5514

一ツアリマシタ。一九四二年 / 三月^{初旬}ニ於テ此
 ノ監房ニハ十八名^{五ト}シテ原^地民^係テハアリマシ
 タガ少クトモ^如ホインド人一名^証察サレタリマシ
 タ。彼等ノ内二名ハ逃亡采^テ割セラレタノヲ私
 ハ知ツテ居リマス。彼等ハ^監房ニ^移付サレマシタ
 言葉ヲ代テ云ヘバ背^中ト背^中ヲ一^箱ニシテ^經カレテ^タ
 タ方ニナルマデ^日天^日ニ^曝サレマシタ。夕^方ニハ
 彼等ハ百分ノ^監房ニ^歸ヘサレマシタ。彼等ハ^疲勞^タ
 爲メニ^倒レルノガ^加テシタ、ソシテ、^嘔ラレタリ
 即カレタリスルコトニ^ヨツテ^再ビ^起キ^上ガ^ラサレ
 マシタ。六、七日間此ノ^監房内ノ十八名ハ少シモ
 食物ヲ^食ヒマセ^ンテシタ。其後二^週間ハ^日湯^香
 一杯ノ水ト、一日^間ニ^ボロ々々ノ^湯一^杯ヲ^食ヒ
 マシタ。此ノ^劫間ノ^終ニ^彼等ハ^庭刑^サレマシタ。
 其^日間^停止^シテ^延ハ^坑ヲ^掘ル^様ニ^命ゼ^ラレマシタ。
 ソシテ^彼等ノ^原地^民ノ^自身^若シ^テハ^庭刑ノ^詳シ^クヲ^疑
 出シマシタ。

一九四二年 / 三月^中クル^シ大^尉 / ^{THE} KROON /
 ガ原^地兵^二名^及ビ^民間^人ノ^下士^兵五^名ト^共ニ^處
 刑^サレマシタ。其ノ^時マデ^此知^ルハ^彼等ノ^忠實^ナ
 ル^下ト^一箱^ニ入^レズ^ニテ^付テ[、]日^本軍^ニ
 變^シテ^ゲリ^ラル^ヲ疑^ハル^コト^ガ出^来マシタ。

7. *

Doc 5514

一ツアリマシタ。一九四二年 / 三月初旬ニ於テ此
 ノ監房ニハ十八名五トシテ原地民~~孫~~テハアリマシ
 タガ少クトモ~~ハ~~如ホインド人一名監禁サレテ居マシ
 タ。彼等ノ内二名ハ逃亡未遂ヲ罰セラレタノヲ私
 ハ知ツテ居リマス。彼等ハ法郎ニ辱行サレマシタ
 言葉ヲ背テ法へバ背甲ト背甲ヲ一箱ニシテ運カレテ
 タ方ニナルマテ~~毎~~日天日ニ曝サレマシタ。夕万ニハ
 彼等ハ自分ノ監房ニ歸ヘサレマシタ。彼等ハ疲弊
 爲メニ倒レルノガ節デシタ、ソシテ、嘔ラレタリ
 即カレタリスルコトニヨツテ再び起キ上ガラサレ
 マシタ。六、七日間此ノ監房内ノ十八名ハ少シモ
 食糧ヲ食ヒマセンテシタ。其後二週間ハ毎日湯呑
 一杯ノ水ト、一日間ニボロ々々ノ湯一盃ヲ食ヒ
 マシタ。此ノ期間ノ終ニ彼等ハ庭刑サレマシタ。
 其頃日同管~~以~~連ハ坑ヲ掘ル様ニ命ゼラレマシタ。
 ソシテ~~以~~名ノ原地民ノ自軍若~~起~~ハ庭刑ノ様~~ハ~~ラ
 出シマシタ。

一九四二年 / 三月~~中~~クルン大尉 / ~~THE~~ KROON /
 ガ原地兵二名及ビ~~以~~人ノ下士兵五名ト共ニ
 命サレマシタ。其ノ時マテ此知~~ハ~~彼レノ忠~~心~~ナ
 ル~~下~~ト一箱ニ~~以~~ハレズニ~~以~~テ~~命~~ヘテ、日本~~軍~~ニ
 送シテゲリ~~ラ~~~~以~~テ~~命~~行スルコトガ出来マシタ。

7. ★

Doc 5514

クルン 大尉ト原地民兵士二名トハ我々ト共ニ同シ
 獄ニ収容サレテキマシタ、彼ノ言フ所ニヨルトコシ
 ジン / KOSTER / ラ官ム是等下士兵五名ハ處刑
 サレマシタ、此ノ時ハ日弁人ニヨツテ公式ニ我々ニ
 謝罪サレマシタ、在月二十五日ニ我々、歐州人ハ、
 破城部隊長ヴァイ・ブント・ダブリユウ / ~~V. BUNTO~~ / ノ 人
 イル・ド ウルフ / IR DE WOLFF / 水陸軍ノ 人デア
 ルデ、ジョン / DE JOHN / ルーベース氏 / LUBBERS /
 及ビシムラー少佐 / MAJOR SCHNEIDER / ラ 隊イテ、
 マカツサア / TAKASSAR / 性ニ収容所ニ引ダヒ
 マシタ、最後ニ我々ニ在ハ後ニマカツサノ我々ノ
 俘虜収容所ニ到着シマシタ、ソツテ我々ニ在ゲタニ
 在ハ我々ノ囚徒を處刑サレタト我々ニ告シマシタ、

證人

ノルデニユスマン / NOLTENIUS DEMAN 中尉
 ダブリユウ・ランマース / W. LAMMERS / 中尉
 サツクムスキイ / S. CZEULSKY / 中尉
 クルウスター / KLOOSTER / 大尉
 一九〇五年十一月十六日バンドン / BANDOENG / 二
 於テ証書作可サル
 エイ・ダブリウ・ボア / A.W. BOR / 中尉

8.

Doc 5514

クルン 大尉ト原地兵士二名トハ我々ト共ニ同シ
 獄ニ収容サレテキマシタ。彼ノ言フ所ニヨルトコシ
 シン / KOSTER / ラ官ム定等下士兵五名ハ處刑
 サレマシタ。此ノ時ハ日本人ニヨツテ公式ニ我々ニ
 稱呼サレマシタ。此月二十五日ニ我々、歐州人ハ、
 破嶺部長ヴァイ・ブント・ダブリユウ / V&W / ノ人
 イル・ド ウルフ / IR DE WOLFF / 水陸軍ノ役人デア
 ルデ、ヨシ / DE JOHN / ルーベース氏 / LUBBERS /
 及ビシムラー少佐 / MAJOR SCHEMELER / ラ隊イテ、
 マカツサア / KAKASSAR / 特ニ収容所ニ引替ヒ
 マシタ。最後ニ我々ニ在ハ後ニマカツサノ我々ノ
 俘囚収容所ニ到着シマシタ。ソシテ初メニ我々ニ
 在ハ我々ノ出立處刑サレタト我々ニ告シマシタ。

證人

ノルキニユス デ マン / NOLTENIUS DE MAN 中尉
 ダブリユウ・ランマース / W. LAMMERS / 中尉
 サツクムスキイ / SLOEULSKY / 中尉
 クルウスター / KLOOSTER / 大尉
 一九四五年十一月十六日バンドン / BANDOENG / =
 於テ証書作取サル
 エイ・ダブリウ・ボア / A.W. BOR / 書記ス

8.

登録番号三五二四

Doc 5514 (cont)

下記署名者印
軍醫官 / R. N. H. A. / 中尉 チャールズ・ヨングニール / CHARLES JOHNGENEEL / ハ京勅ニ正典ノ宣誓ヲ行
ヲ行ヒ添附報等ハ左記署名ノ原文ノ誓詞ノ全文ニ
シテ真実且完全且公正ナル爲本ナルコトヲ願述ス

通信官 / R. F. F. / 第一級通信官、メナド / MENADO
/ 郵便局長少尉アル・ゼイ・ケンセル / R. J.
FENSEL / ノ銀通信、日附バンドン / BANDONG
一九四五年十一月十六日、通信官長 / EXAMINING
MAGISTRAT / エイ・ダブリユウ・ボア / A. W. BOR

署名 / 〇 〇 二二八 / M

右署名ハ印信情報局ノ公式記録ノ一部ナリ。

署名

メタビヤ、一九四六年六月七日

通信官印

チャールズヨングニール / 署名

余等印信情報局長室付、高級官、印信監官 / R. N. H.

ケイ / 中尉 ケイユイヴエールト / K. WEERD

ノ署名ニ於テ署名宣誓セリ

ケイユイヴエールト / 署名

★

PRO JUSTITIA

S I A I
Office of the Attorney General
Government Bureau for the
Investigation of War Crimes

OFFICIAL RECORD
INTERROGATION OF WITNESS

Today, Thursday, 22nd October 1945, appeared before me, Christiana Robert Steven SCHICHEL, Attorney-at-Law, Assistant Judge Advocate, attached to the Temporary Court Martial at Macassar, charged with the investigation of war crimes committed in the Minahassa region, the person of: C. van den BEEG, who, after having been duly notified of the obligation to tell the whole truth and nothing but the truth and of the importance of the oath to be taken by him, answered the questions put to him as stated below:

Q. What is your full name, age, occupation, address?

A. van den BEEG, Willem Carol, 47 years of age, Major Inf. R.N.I.A. Macassar.

Q. What can you tell me in relation to this? (The witness is shown the report concerning war crimes committed in the Minahassa region) (T.I. Celebes).

A. Towards the end of March 1942, I along with many others was confined in Menado prison. Upon my arrival there I saw a number of Dutch prisoners of war already there, who at the end of January 1942 had been imprisoned. I also saw that Chinese and Indonesian persons had been imprisoned there; These had already been confined during the invasion. They had been confined, as far as I know, for committing certain offenses. I, myself, came from Lagoon, where I had been interned in a house for approximately one month. At Menado I entered for the first time life as a prisoner of war and it has impressed me deeply. The first day I was speechless after all I saw in that prison there. Many of my old acquaintances I could no longer recognize. They looked very uncared for, had long beards, long hair and were considerably emaciated, while some of them kept staring blankly ahead. I noticed a terror psychosis amongst the prisoners owing to the fact that some had been executed already, whilst every moment one could expect that more people would be fetched from the prison not to return alive. I have never witnessed actual executions, but I have heard about that from others. I myself remained only for eight to ten days in the prison. After a Japanese Major of the Staff at Macassar, a certain Hoeake, had visited the prison, we were transferred to Teling Camp. This was certainly necessary as conditions in the prison were more than beastly.

Some facts will illustrate that. The space in the prison was absolutely insufficient for the great number of prisoners. Nevertheless, we were crammed into it; in a cell destined for only three men, sometimes seven men were confined. Furthermore, there was a well around which open lavatories had been made. Bathing, teeth cleaning, using the lavatory, washing of clothes, everything had to be done in the open air in the small courtyard where the well was located. It is not to be wondered at that the water in the well was fouled in such a way that soon unbearable smells arose. The Japanese undertook nothing, absolutely nothing, to improve the situation. When we were brought in, we did receive no food or drink at all the first day. The following days we received food twice. In the morning we got no food at all, only at noon and in the evening. These meals consisted

of a handful of burned, boiled rice mixed with rotten "kankang-s" (T.L. water-cress). Altogether it had an unpleasant odour, and smelt so badly that at a distance of one meter already it caused a feeling of nausea.

The burned rice was from a rice stock which had caught fire during the destruction of the harbour installation. What remained of the burnt rice stock had been swept together and this was supplied to us as our food.

The hunger, however, was so great that people who had been imprisoned longer asked for their ration of stinking rice and soup, and even fought for it.

There were no medical supplies, at least they were not supplied by the Japanese.

Concerning this, the Medical Officer, 1st Class, BORSTLIP, who at that time was charged with the medical supervision, can give detailed information. Personally I have witnessed the so-called sick-parade and noticed amongst other things that large virulent ulcers were covered with a piece of paper soaked in a disinfectant.

The Japanese did not supply us with this disinfectant. It was smuggled into the prison by the labour gangs. There were many patients suffering from dysentery and malaria and as I was told, many of these wretches, who went about with deep-set and faded eyes even were thrashed by the Japanese when owing to their disease they fouled themselves.

A bin for refuse was placed near the kitchen with a placard announcing "Not allowed to eat from this refuse-bin", or words to that extent. Furthermore, there was a so-called "death cell." Therein were confined small groups of people awaiting their possible execution. I will not easily forget the aspect of these virtually doomed people. Many of them declined visibly from day to day; I was told that these people in the "death cell" did not always regularly get their food. Their very stay in this "death cell" badly affected their physical and psychic disposition. As I was assured, a complaint about the "food" resulted in the reduction of three meals to two; I mentioned these meals before. As regards clothing, I can state that practically all clothing had been taken away from the people. Consequently, they looked like vagabonds.

When I arrived in prison, the fear of maltreatment was already so prevalent that everybody tried to stay away from the Japanese as much as possible, lest to give rise to further illtreatment. Certainly, I saw some heavy blows struck with the whip and I saw also people in the so-called "lizard" position. The man, who handled the whip, was YAMADA, the prison hangman; he was at the same time charged with the supervision in the prison. About executions I can report the following: Except COSSIN and Sergeant J. MEIJER, I learnt that Major BOTTINGA and Sergeant Major KEERSTENIS were also executed. The latter was from the Section of Captain KROON.

My subordinates, Lieutenant WIELINGA and Sergeant Major ROBELMOLD were in charge of the defense of Kallowierang airfield, mostly called Kakkas airfield. Both persons last mentioned have probably been executed in revenge for the losses suffered by the Japanese. The Japanese paratroops declared to us that they had suffered considerable casualties and that e.g. a Captain of the Japanese Paratroops was riddled with 82 bullets. The Japanese Lt. Col. HORIUTSCHI, Commander of the paratroops told me when I appeared before the Japanese Court Martial that he had not been able to observe from the air that there

was

was a small occupation at the airfield, because otherwise he would have landed with his paratroops in the rice fields between the aforementioned airfields and Makkas village. Inhabitants of the Minahassa region whose names I do not know told me that VIELINGA and ROBBENMOED were bestially maltreated before their execution. Concerning Lt. SIGMUND and Sgt. FLIPS, a Dutch sailor, whose name I cannot remember, told me that as a prisoner of war at Langoan he was locked in a shed and that one day into that same shed were thrown the above mentioned SIGMUND and FLIPS tied to one another. They were badly maltreated, e.g. their teeth had been struck out, they urinated blood and they could hardly open their mouths. The questions put to them by the Japanese were aimed at obtaining information about the defense and number of troops in South Celebes, and particularly concerning the code that was used. According to the Japanese they should be able to give this information since they respectively as lieutenant and sergeant. codewriter should be informed about all secret matters. That must have happened about 24 January 1942. The Japs gave them one night to sleep and think it over, while they were told that if they could not give better answers the next morning, they were to be beheaded. The above mentioned sailor ended his report saying: " I saw them taken away and have never seen them back."

The Japanese doctor, a Captain, at Langoan and some other paratroops told me that there had been some fighting in the surroundings of Amorang; in the course of that engagement the guerilla fighters should have been captured and admitted to the Langoan hospital. The Commandant, Sgt. MALLEZER, should have received shot-wounds in the knee. The Japanese paratroops told me that they daily visited the hospital ward and threatened those three men with gestures which indicated that their throats would be cut. Afterwards they laughingly told me that one of the three guerilla fighters had hung himself and later that Sgt. MALLEZER had cut his wrists with pieces of a broken medicine bottle.

The Japanese told me further, that the wife of M.W.O. Hofman, living in Keneang village should also have participated in the guerilla fight, probably to avenge the death of her husband and should have been beheaded for that reason.

After the above questions and answers were slowly and clearly read to the witness, he adhered to his statements and did not desire to have anything altered therein; in proof whereof he has signed his statement.

The Witness

/s/ v. d. Berg

Drawn up in my presence,
The Asst. Judge Advocate
/s/ Sounkil

Thereupon the witness has taken the oath in accordance with his religious convictions to have told the whole truth and nothing but the truth.

The Asst. Judge Advocate

/s/ Sounkil

For the confirmation on oath:
/s/ v. d. Berg

Certified a true copy
The 1st Clerk
/s/ (Illegible)

S E A L

Office of the Attorney General
Government Office for
Investigation of War Crimes

64 / 809

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT 55-83

正業多

政府轉 警察廳 調查局 檢事官 檢査室 印

公証記録

證人 証問

本日一九四六年十月二十日 大體日 十官即六マツカサニ於テ
陸軍省會議所爲該務局副理事「シムラ」地方ニ於テ行ハルニ關シ
犯罪調査ヲ擔當スル法學士「クリスチヤン・ロバート」ニ對シテ
「シムラ」面前ニ

「シムラ」ニ云フ「シムラ」

ト云フ人物出頭シ、後彼ニ眞實ニシテ云フ語リ、眞實ニシテ
陳述スル責務及ニト及ビ彼ガ採リタル宣誓ニ重大ナルトテ承諾
シタル事ニ、彼ニ課シタル証問ニ對シテ、如キ陳述アリタリ
汝ノ姓名、年令、職業、及ビ住所、

答 予之ハ「シムラ」カール」四十七歳、和蘭王國印
陸軍歩兵少佐「マツカサ」

問 二、件ニ付テ如何ナルニシテ私ニ告ルニ出ルニカ「シムラ」ニ
方ニ翻譯者註シタルニ「於テ行ハルニ關シ犯罪ニ關シ報告スル證人
ニシテ」

答 一九四三年三月末アリタル私ニ他、多數ノ人名及ニシテ

No. 1

三三三 COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

既ニ抑留スルニ付

日記 5月3日

所敷の洗面所が造ラレテアツクト云ふ。入浴に當リ磨キ上ル
便所等は何モ彼モ井戸アツク狭ク内庭、野天デシト云フコト
云々云々、水カクモ汚シテ居テ間エテ堪ヘシト云フ惡心自ラ考ヘ
末等カクモ不見識ヲモカッタ、テス。日本人側デハ是ガ改善ヲス様
ノ事ハナクモ否金ノシラセシテス。我々が運シラシテ来テ最モ初、日ニ食
モ飲料一切世貫ハナカッタ、テス。次、日カク食物ヲ二回世貫ヒマシク。朝
食ノ食物ガ無ク。唯正午ト夕方ニ世貫ツクテテス。

食物ト云フ、一握リ焼ケテ煮米ト腐ツカニシ、幹(翻訳者註
水等ト混セテモ、テス。ソレ、金ク一種不快ノ臭氣ヲ持ツテ、
其ノ臭氣ハ米突離シラトコデ既ニ嘔氣ヲ催ス程悪クモ、テアツク、
此邊ケル米、港灣設備ヲ破壊申テ火延焼シテ米、貯藏所カク持
テキタモノアリマシク、焼ケテ貯藏米、殘物ヲ一掃ニ掃キ集メテコシテ我
ノ食物トシテ供給シラテアリマス。

然レ飢饉ハ非常ニシテ、永ク監禁サレテ居ル人達ハ惡心自ラ、下ル米
ヤ汁ヲ食シトシ、ソレガ為ニ争ヒマシク程デシク。

医サ及鑛業類ハ何ツモ無ク、ナリトモ日本人カク、世貫ヒマシテス。
此國ニテハ平時医療監督ヲ擔當シテ居ル「級医官」ボルスラ、
氏ガ詳細ノ報告ヲスルコトガ出来マス。

私自身ハ、所謂病人行列ナルモノヲ目撃シマシク、ソレヲ就中、
有臭ク熱帯特有ノ腫物ガ消毒薬ヲ吸ヒ込マシク一枚ノ紙ヲ覆
ラアル、ニ氣ガツキマシク。

No. 3

日記 5563

用敷洗濯所が造ラレテアツクニトテ。入浴モ齒ヲ磨クコトハ
便シク進モ何モ彼モ井戸アツク狭ク内庭、野天デシテバツカ
今人アツク水カクモ汚シテ居ツテ間モ堪ヘシイ悪心自ガ者生
来事ハ前ニ本島議ヲモカクテ、テス。日本人側デハ是ガ改善ヲス様
ノ事ハ少クモ否全クシヤセシテス。我々が運シラシテ来テ最初、日ハ食
モ飲料ニ切貫ハナカクテ、テス。次、日カウ食物ヲ二回世貝ヒマシタ。朝
食ノ食物ガ無ク。唯正午ト夕方ニ世貝ツクテテス。

食物ト云フハ一程ノ焼ケタ高米ト腐ツタカニコシ、幹(翻訳者註
…水草ト混セテモテス。ソレハ食ク一種不快ノ臭氣ヲ持ツモノト
其ノ臭氣ハ米穴離シタトコロ既ニ嘔氣ヲ催ス程悪クモ、テアツク、
此焼ケタ米ハ港灣設備ヲ破壊中充テ延焼シタ米、貯藏所カラ持
テキタモノアリマタ焼ケタ貯藏米ノ残物ヲ一掃ニ掃キ倒メコシテ我
ノ食物トシテ供給シテアリマス。

然レハ飢饉ハ非常トミテ、永ク監視極サシテ居テ人達ハ悪心自ハル米
ヤケヲ食ヒトシテソレガ為ニ争ヒマシタ程デシタ。

医セオ及補養類ハ何ツモ無クツク、サウトモ日本人カラハ世貝ヒアセテシタ
此國ニテハ當時医療監督ヲ擔當シテ居テ「級医官」ボルストラフ
氏ガ詳細ノ報告ヲスルコトガ出来マス。

私自身ハ所謂病人行列ナルモノヲ目撃シマシタ。ソレヲ就中ハ
有室ノ熱帯特有ノ腫物ガ消毒薬ヲ吸ヒ込マシタ一枚ノ紙ヲ覆
フアルニ氣ガツキマシタ。

No. 3

確ニ私ハ報ヲ打タシテ強打ヲ自警スニシタリ又所謂「踏踏」ノ
 勢ニ驚カシテ自警スニシタリ報ヲ振シタリハ條條死ヲ執行スル
 四ツアリシタリ。彼ハ同時ニ監獄ノ監督ヲ擔當シ居リシタリ。私ハ
 死刑執行ヲ付テ次ノコトヲ報告スルコトヲ告スル。私ハ
 「ソレト」ト「エ、ア、ヤ」ノ外ニ「ホ、カ」及「カ、レ、ス、ス」曹長モ亦
 死刑セシムルコトヲ私ハ聞キシタリ。後者ハ「ロ、ソ」大尉ノ小隊
 屬ヲ居シタリ者ナシタリ。

私ノ部下「ウ、エ、リ、カ」中尉及「ロ、ベ、モ、ソ」曹長ハ普通「カ、カ、ス」飛行
 場ト呼ビテ居ルル「カ、ビ、グ、イ、ラ、シ、カ」飛行場ノ防衛主任トナリシタリ。是
 後ニ逆ニテ兩者ハ多分日本人ヲ受テテ損失ニ對スル報復手段トシテ、此
 刑ヲ受テテ居リシタリ。日本落下傘部隊ハ相當ノ死傷者ヲ出シタリ
 ト並ニ一例トシテ日本落下傘部隊ノ大尉ハ「八、二、登」彈丸ヲ乱カ
 シテニサシタリコトヲ我々ニ告ガシタリ。

日本落下傘部隊長「ホ、リ、ウ、チ」中佐ハ私ハ軍法會議ニ週サシテ、彼
 ハ其飛行場ノ留守備隊ヲ上空カラハ全ク認識スルコトヲ出来ナカシタリ。
 サラシカツタナエ、彼ハ落下傘部隊ヲ前述ノ飛行場ト「カ、ソ、カ、ス」村ニ
 トノ中間、稻田ニ着陸サセシメテ「ソ、ウ、タ」ト私ニ語りシタリ。姓名ハ知リテ
 セシカ「ミ、ナ、ハ、ツ、サ」城區ノ住民ハ、「ウ、イ、リ、カ」ト「ロ、ベ、モ、ソ」ト「カ、ビ、グ、イ、ラ、シ、カ」
 セラシムル前ニ甚クシク虐待サセタト云フコトヲ私ニ告ガシタリ。

5503

55-63

「シムド中尉」アリ「軍曹」明シ、其思本名也。一和蘭人本宗、
 彼が「シムド」ニ「浮屠」トシ小屋閉ルコト居タトコ口、或曰、其向ニ
 小屋中ニ上テ「シムド」アリ「シムド」トアリ「シムド」トアリ、其
 ト私ニ語りタリ。彼等、非常ニ虐待ヲ受テ、例ヲ尋テ、彼等、其
 「齒」打テ抜カシ、血尿ヲ必ニ出トコト聞ケルコトが出来タ也。シムド、
 日本人が彼等ニ居ルノ質問、南都、也。之ニ於テ、防備ト軍隊數ト特ニ
 使用サテ居ル各階ヲ閉ルノ情報ヲ得トスル目的ヲ有シタリ。
 日本人云フ「シムド」ハ、彼等即チ中尉ト副中尉、如キ各々時時翻譯者
 テアル以上萬事此秘密事項ヲ付テ知ラセテ居ル旨アリカ。コノ情報
 ヲ答ルコトが出来ル者アリ云フガ也。
 シムド一九四三年一月廿四日頃起リテトニ違ヒタカリタリ。
 日本人彼等ニ「睡眠」ヲ与ヘシコトヲ懸念セタリ。夫レヨリ若シ
 彼等が翌朝尚好シ、違事ヲスルコトが出来ル場合ニ、彼等ハ斬首サレ
 タリト云フコトヲ通告サレタリ。
 該水兵ハ私ハ彼等が違ヒ去リ行クコトヲ見テ、歸テ来リ、見
 無カリ、ト云ヒテ、其物語ヲ終ルコトナリ。

6

「シムド」ニ居ル日本人中尉、醫者及ビ他、檢下傘部隊、或チハ
 「シムド」内戦闘が行ハレ、夫レヨリシムドノ戦士が捕縛サレ、シムド
 病院ニ入リ、遠シキト云フコトヲ私ニ語りタリ。
 指揮者、アリ「軍曹」ハ、膝ニ銃創ヲ受ケ、遠シキ。
 日本、檢下傘部隊、者ハ、彼等が毎日病院室ニ来ルコトヲ三人者

5583 因難ヲ切ト云ニカサキ身振ヲ示シテ管カシト和ニ
認リマシタ。此三人ノケリテ戰事ノ一人自身ヲ首ヲ示
リ其後又其ノ一軍曹ノカタク藥ヲ擲テ其ノ胸ヲ
切リテ復テ彼等ノ其ノ和ニ管カシタ。

doc 甚自本公更ニ又ア不クノ朝落ニ居住シテ其ノ和ニ
才！亦之ノ妻君、彼ノ夫ノ死ニ對シテ討ツルニ彼
夫亦之ニ戰事加ヘテ其ノ理由ヲ辯明セシメテ其ノ
下ニ和ニ認リマシタ。

其間會談ニ目撃シテ人ニ對シテ朗讀シテ其ノ和ニ管カシ
陳述ニ因テ其ノ中何事ノ故トシテ其ノ要求セズヨ
シ其語據トシテ彼ノ其ノ陳述書ニ署名セリ

余面前於該人 不ニ下ニ「ブルグ」(署名也)

茲於該人、彼ノ高教的信件ヨリ其果ノ「ニ」
以外何モ一モ認ルニサリ、事ヲ宣誓ヨリ

自誓ニ「確認」(爲) 法務局副理事 又ハ其ノ(署名也)

真ニ「自誓」(爲) 又 法務局副理事 又ハ其ノ(署名也)

一筆書記 不判讀(署名也)

封印

政府所轄戰事犯罪調查局檢事總長室

5563
因嫌其心不誠力甚身振示其誓力多不和
詔之。此三人ノケリヲ戰吉ノ人自身ヲ首ヲ示
リ其後又其ノ軍營ノ力ヲ多奪據亦其ノ戰博
野ヲ復奪其軍兵ヲ多私營之。

doc
其自奉命更又アケテ其ノ朝落ニ居住ニテ其ノ心
才亦之ヲ妻君ニ彼ノ夫ノ死ニ對シテ討ツルヲ彼
亦其ノ戰參加スルニトシテ理由ヲ辯言セシメテ
不和平詔シマシ。

其間會經ニ其時聽ニ其ノ對朗讀シルノ口彼彼
陳述國執其中何事ニ對シテ其ノ下ヲ要求セヨ
其語據トシテ彼ノ其ノ陳述書ニ署名セリ

余面前於其作成也
「アハニシ」(署名也)

茲於其語人彼ノ自叙の信條ヨリ其果ノニ
以外何モ一モ証ニサリテ事ヲ自誓ヨリ

自誓ニ其認(爲)
法務局副理事 又ハ其(署名也)

真ニ其自(其)下(其)語
「アハニシ」(署名也)

一其書記……不判讀(署名也)

封印
政府所轄戰爭犯罪調查局檢事總長宣

553

語、因據此、以上云、乃其、身、振、不、年、婚、夫、下、和、
此、其、後、又、其、一、軍、營、ハ、カ、ク、多、藥、據、來、生、機、博、
又、後、復、其、其、カ、ニ、科、二、書、之、云、

doc

其、自、奉、命、更、又、正、不、ア、カ、部、落、二、居、住、シ、テ、其、カ、之、中、
才、亦、之、之、妻、君、彼、夫、夫、死、二、對、抗、計、以、其、彼、
亦、之、之、戰、參、加、シ、テ、ア、ル、ト、シ、理、由、を、辯、明、シ、テ、
下、カ、私、語、シ、タ、ク、

其、實、話、據、ト、シ、彼、其、陳、述、書、二、書、カ、セ、リ、
陳、述、固、執、其、中、何、事、改、訂、加、入、シ、テ、要、求、セ、ル、
上、カ、問、合、致、身、冊、書、二、誌、二、對、朗、讀、シ、テ、以、テ、其、後、
不、カ、私、語、シ、タ、ク、

余、面、前、於、作、成、也、
不、カ、私、語、シ、タ、ク、

茲、於、誌、人、彼、宗、教、的、信、條、二、以、其、果、二、以、
以、外、何、一、无、語、シ、テ、事、ヲ、宣、誓、シ、
法、務、局、副、理、事、又、カ、其、也、(署、也、)

宣、誓、上、陳、述、(為、) 理、事、又、カ、其、也、(署、也、)

真、正、之、身、其、下、カ、
法、務、局、副、理、事、又、カ、其、也、(署、也、)

其、實、話、據、ト、シ、彼、其、陳、述、書、二、書、カ、セ、リ、
不、カ、私、語、シ、タ、ク、

封印

政府所轄戰爭犯罪調查局檢察總長宣

Ex. # 1810

Doc. No. 5544

Page 1

Evidence taken in BRISBANE on November 5, 1945, before
Mr. Justice Mansfield.

Mr. Herman DALLINGA being duly sworn gives the following
evidence:

I am a civilian, my full name being Herman Dellinga. I was
burgomaster at Menado.

I was interned on 10 January 1942 and on the following day
I handed over the town to the Japanese. They told me then
that I was to be placed in prison. I was put in a building
belonging to a Chinese named Lie Boan Yet, which had been
made into a barracks. Mr. Fockstra and I were confined
in this place. He had been a civil officer dealing with
the rural area, whereas I had been dealing as a civilian
with the city area. I was five days in this Chinese building
and then was taken to the Wilhelmina Hotel, in Menado.
Already there were a number of Dutch men, women and children.
After being kept there for a few days the women were taken
to Tomohon, in the mountains, to the camp there. It was
a Roman Catholic building. The men were taken to the Roman
Catholic school St. Joseph in Menado. I was one of those
taken. There were about 100 of us. There were about 400
women and children sent up to Tomohon.

I stayed with the others in the R.C. building for about a
month during February 1942. On 31 March I went to the
Dutch soldiers' barracks. Whilst in the Roman Catholic
building we did not get anything to eat from the Japanese;
we found some rice from the school, however, and from the
hotel we had brought some tinned vegetables. The Japs
gave us nothing at all. Jap soldiers guarded us. Towards
the end of the month an NCO, YAMADA, came to the camp; he
was in the Jap Navy. He brought us rice - but it was burnt
rice. We had this burnt rice for a whole year.

In the Chinese building Mr. Fockstra and I were asked every
day different questions; one night the Japs took Fockstra
away for further interrogation and when he returned he was
put in gaol. Another night they took me away for interroga-
tion, which lasted all night, and they held pistols at my
head. A Jap Colonel and a Staff Officer conducted the
interrogation. After we went to the R.C. building later,
one of the officers visited the place and knocked me on
the face. I fell back. I was not put in gaol, however.

Ex. # 1810

Doc. No. 5544

Page 1

Evidence taken in BRISBANE on November 5, 1945, before
Mr. Justice Mansfield.

Mr. Herman DALLINGA being duly sworn gives the following
evidence:

I am a civilian, my full name being Herman Dallinga. I was
burgonaster at Menado.

I was interned on 10 January 1942 and on the following day
I handed over the town to the Japanese. They told me then
that I was to be placed in prison. I was put in a building
belonging to a Chinese named Lie Boan Yat, which had been
made into a barracks. Mr. Fockstra and I were confined
in this place. He had been a civil officer dealing with
the rural area, whereas I had been dealing as a civilian
with the city area. I was five days in this Chinese building
and then was taken to the Wilhelmina Hotel, in Menado.
Already there were a number of Dutch men, women and children.
After being kept there for a few days the women were taken
to Tomohon, in the mountains, to the camp there. It was
a Roman Catholic building. The men were taken to the Roman
Catholic school St. Joseph in Menado. I was one of those
taken. There were about 100 of us. There were about 400
women and children sent up to Tomohon.

I stayed with the others in the R.C. building for about a
month during February 1942. On 31 March I went to the
Dutch soldiers' barracks. Whilst in the Roman Catholic
building we did not get anything to eat from the Japanese;
we found some rice from the school, however, and from the
hotel we had brought some tinned vegetables. The Japs
gave us nothing at all. Jap soldiers guarded us. Towards
the end of the month an NCO, YAMADA, came to the camp; he
was in the Jap Navy. He brought us rice - but it was burnt
rice. We had this burnt rice for a whole year.

In the Chinese building Mr. Fockstra and I were asked every
day different questions; one night the Japs took Fockstra
away for further interrogation and when he returned he was
put in gaol. Another night they took me away for interroga-
tion, which lasted all night, and they held pistols at my
head. A Jap Colonel and a Staff Officer conducted the
interrogation. After we went to the R.C. building later,
one of the officers visited the place and knocked me on
the face. I fell back. I was not put in gaol, however.

After leaving the Roman Catholic building, I was taken to Teling, the Dutch soldiers' barracks in Manado. There were about 100 men there, including Hoekstra. I went there at the end of March 1942 and was there to 10 September 1944. There were about 150 men there at the finish. For one year we had burnt rice, ending in December 1942; then we got maize and tapioca. We grew our own vegetables. One day we got 12 kilograms of meat and bones for 150 men. In February 1944 some dysentery broke out; 10 men died. We had no medicines. Twelve men were allowed into hospital, in the R.C. school; most of the men died there, not in the camp. One Roman Catholic priest died prior to that - he was Father Greenen, who died on 19 August 1942. Another man who died there was Keenan, on 19 March 1942. The Resident from Manado, Mr. Hirschmann, died from dysentery on 19 March 1944. Brother Gevel died on 16 February 1944; Mr. De With died on 1 March 1944; Mr. Veldhuis, Protestant Minister, died on 4 March 1944; a 16-years-old son of Mr. Symons died on 12 February 1944; Mr. Petric died on 28 February 1944; Mr. Van Brunen, an agent from Lscmptebank, died on 12 March 1944; and Mr. Rector, president of the Court in Manado, died on 29 March 1944.

YAMADA was a Japanese with a long black beard; he was known as Whiskers Blake.

In the Dutch barracks we had to work in the gardens - the big and the small gardens.

Yanada beat everyone. There were no rules in the camp and we did not know what was allowed and what was not; and Yanada used to go and beat the men when they did something supposed not to have been done. 4 January 1943 Mr. Symons was badly bashed; he was accused of having contact with somebody outside; everybody was lined up and in front of everyone Symons was beaten. He was put in goal to 20 October 1943; the cell had only a cement floor; he was with Mr. D'Ancona, who later was killed. D'Ancona also was thrashed by Yanada, for a similar reason; he was beaten with sticks about the kidneys; he was made to hold up his arms and was beaten in that position; the beatings lasted about half an hour. He was unconscious, and the Japs threw water over him; then he was carried away and put in goal for four months. This was at the end of 1943.

After leaving the Roman Catholic building, I was taken to Teling, the Dutch soldiers' barracks in Manado. There were about 100 men there, including Hoekstra. I went there at the end of March 1942 and was there to 10 September 1944. There were about 150 men there at the finish. For one year we had burnt rice, ending in December 1942; then we got maize and tapioca. We grew our own vegetables. One day we got 12 kilograms of meat and bones for 150 men. In February 1944 some dysentery broke out; 10 men died. We had no medicines. Twelve men were allowed into hospital, in the R.C. school; most of the men died there, not in the camp. One Roman Catholic priest died prior to that - he was Father Groenen, who died on 19 August 1942. Another man who died there was Keenen, on 19 March 1942. The Resident from Manado, Mr. Harschmann, died from dysentery on 19 March 1944. Brother Gevel died on 16 February 1944; Mr. De With died on 1 March 1944; Mr. Veldhuis, Protestant Minister, died on 4 March 1944; a 16-years-old son of Mr. Symons died on 12 February 1944; Mr. Petric died on 28 February 1944; Mr. Van Brunen, an agent from Lescryptebank, died on 12 March 1944; and Mr. Rector, president of the Court in Manado, died on 29 March 1944.

YAMADA was a Japanese with a long black beard; he was known as Whiskers Blake.

In the Dutch barracks we had to work in the gardens - the big and the small gardens.

Yanada beat everyone. There were no rules in the camp and we did not know what was allowed and what was not; and Yanada used to go and beat the men when they did something supposed not to have been done. 4 January 1943 Mr. Symons was badly bashed; he was accused of having contact with somebody outside; everybody was lined up and in front of everyone Symons was beaten. He was put in goal to 20 October 1943; the cell had only a cement floor; he was with Mr. D'Ancona, who later was killed. D'Ancona also was thrashed by Yanada, for a similar reason; he was beaten with sticks about the kidneys; he was made to hold up his arms and was beaten in that position; the beatings lasted about half an hour. He was unconscious, and the Japs throw water over him; then he was carried away and put in goal for four months. This was at the end of 1943.

I was bashed and had some front teeth knocked out, by this Yamada.

Half the camp was thrashed by Yamada. In the gaol, Yamada came up to D'Ancola, who could not stand up, and kicked him on the shin, and he got a serious infection. Yamada used to beat people over the head. These beatings occurred quite frequently. The Roman Catholic priest was beaten in this way.

A Mr. Been was taken from the R.C. building, and put in gaol. An engineer, De Wolff, also was put in gaol; then Mr. De Jong. Mr. Been, a trader from the Moluccas, was forced to be a Q.M. for the Japanese; later he was executed, according to my information from Indonesians.

YONI (MUNAI) before the war a Japanese trader, was the man behind the execution of Been; also of the three Chinese -- Lie Bren Yat, Lie Tek Hien, and Lie Goan Ain.

De Wolff was executed on 3 July 1942; and De Jong also on that date. The executions occurred on the Hospital Hill there; I believe they were buried behind the hospital there.

De Jong had had some connection with the Pitoeng fish supplies and was executed for some reason relating to that; De Wolff was executed because he was an engineer and had destroyed some of the works before the Japs arrived.

Mr. Leeuw had been captured and brought in with us; he was executed shortly afterwards. I do not know the date. It was said that this Yamada carried this execution out. Commander of the whole of Menado area was Colonel HASHIMOTO.

On 3 July 1942, somewhere in or about Menado, an American Colonel, two RC priests (Pastor McLahon and Pastor Drone) and a Brother (Bro. Brown), were executed; they were from the Philippines. As far as I know, Yunai or Hashimoto was responsible.

We left the Dutch barracks on 10 September 1944 after Allied bombardments; we had had an American casualty, Billie Green. On 10 September 1944 we were put in the civil gaol in Menado - 10 men to a cell. There were about 150 of us. For three days we got no water or food. From then to 24 October we received a little food. Sick people remained there after 24 October - about 16 of them. I was returned to the camp.

Whilst I was in gaol, people died mostly from dysentery and lack of food. We got no medical attention. Most of the 16 left in gaol, died. Anybody becoming sick was put in the gaol; one of our camp of 150 men, about 68 men died. Five men were killed as the result of bombing.

In the Barracks we had to dig underground shelters. We had to load trucks. We got some rice once a day. We got no medicines. A lot of men became sick and died, there being no treatment for them. Three died in one day in the camp as the result of starvation, and some because of their malaria. YAMADA later went across to the women's camp; MATSUMOTO, a former civilian Japanese was a very bad Japanese. He beat us with sticks and with his fists. Mr. Van Oostrum, in camp with me, was badly thrashed there. Watanabe was there for some time - we first encountered him during October 1944. There were never any markings on any of the camps to distinguish them as PW camps.

I was released from internment in September 1945.

Hoekstra and d'Amico were put in gaol once and later, 19 January 1945, were executed; it was said that Yonaguchi, head of the Tokki Tai, was responsible for this. I believe this occurred in Tendano; they were said to have been executed for communicating with outside people.

Allied airmen caught were killed. I heard that all Allied airmen shot down or landed in Honshu were all killed. The Tokki Tai were said to have killed them. When I worked at the Tokki Tai building I saw three airmen - Americans, I believe. We saw them in the gaol, about June or July 1945; and I think they were executed in Tendano. Mr. Stelling was put in gaol and bamboo splinters were put under his nails; the Tokki Tai did this - Yonaguchi was the head of them.

Mr. Moelensar died from bad treatment. One day his clothes were returned by the Japs and they were all blood-covered. He died on 16 February 1945.

↑
Doc. 5544

Page 5

Dr. HORI was the Jap doctor there. He did not do much about any of us; he only came through our group trying to buy watches; we never got any medicines or anything else from him.

- - -

I swear that the above evidence is true and correct.

/s/ Dallinga

↓
Taken and sworn before me in
BRISBANE on 5 November 1945

/s/ (Signature illegible)
Commissioner

Doc. 5544

Page 5

Dr. HORI was the Jap doctor there. He did not do much about any of us; he only came through our group trying to buy watches; we never got any medicines or anything else from him.

- - -

I swear that the above evidence is true and correct.

/s/ Dallinga

Taken and sworn before me in
BRISBANE on 5 November 1945

/s/ (Signature illegible)
Commissioner

64-1810
Doc 5544

note

一九四五年十一月五日「ブリスベン」ニ於テ、「マンスンイルド」裁判官ノ面前ニテ取りタル証言。

「ヘルマン・ダリング」氏ハ型ノ如ク宣誓シテ次ノ証言ヲ爲シタ。

私ハ一般市民デアツテ、姓名ヲ「ヘルマン・ダリング」ト云フ。私ハ「メナド」市長デアツタ。

私ハ一九四二年一月十日ニ抑留セラレ、其ノ翌日市ヲ日本人ニ引渡シタノデアル。ソレカウ日本人ハ私ニ、私ハ監獄ニ入ラレナケレバナラヌノデアルト告ゲタ。私ハ「リイ・ボアソン・ヤット」呼ブ一中国人ノ所有テ收容所トナツテ、其ノ建物は入ラレタ。「ホエタストフ」氏ト私ハ此處ニ閉テ籠メラレタ。彼ハ長業地帯ノコトヲ取扱フテキタ文官デアツタガ、私ハ一般市民トシテ市街地帯ノコトヲ取扱フテキタノデアル。私ハコノ中国人ノ建物は五日間居サレタ。「ホテル」ニハ此ニ和信人ノ男女子供ガ多ク其來テ居ツタ。其處ニ數日間抑留セラレタ後デ、婦人建ハ山ノ中ノ「トセボソン」ヘ、ソコニアル收容所ヘ送レテ行カレタノデアル。コノ收容所ハ天主教ノ

建物は「セント・ヨオ」ニ於テ、私ノ一人デア

FILED COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Eu 1810
Doc 5544

一九四五年十一月五日「アリスペン」ニ於テ、「マンスフィールド」裁判官ノ面前ニテ取りタル証言。

「ヘルマン・ダリング」氏ハ型ノ如ク宣誓シテ次ノ証言ヲ爲シタ。

私ハ一般市民デアツテ、姓名ヲ「ヘルマン・ダリング」ト云フ。私ハ「メナド」市長デアツタ。

私ハ一九四二年一月十日ニ抑留セラレ、其ノ翌日市ヲ日本人ニ引渡シタノデアル。ソレカラ日本人ハ私ニ、私ハ監獄ニ入ラレナケレバオラヌノデアルト告ゲタ。私ハ「リイ・ボアソン・ヤット」呼ブ一中國人ノ所有テ收容所トナツテ、并々懲罰ニ入ラレタ。「ボエクストフ」氏ト私ハ此處ニ閉テ籠メラレタ。彼ハ接葉地帯ノコトラ取扱フテキタ文官デアツタガ、私ハ一般市民トシテ市街地帯ノコトラ取扱フテキタノデアル。私ハコノ中國人ノ建屋ニ五日間居タガ「メナド」ノ「ワイルヘルミナ・ホテル」ニ移サレタ。「ホテル」ニハ既ニ和信人ノ身女子供ガ多量來テ居ツタ。其處ニ數日間抑留セラレタ後デ、婦人達ハ山ノ中ノ「トセボン」ヘ、ソコニアル收容所ヘ連れて行カレタノデアル。コノ收容所ハ天主教ノ

懲罰デアツタ。男ハ「メナド」ニアル天主教ノ學校セント・ヨオニ「メナド」ニ收容シテ私コノ一人デア

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

1.

Doc 5544

ツタ。我々仲間ハ約百人デアツタ。一トマホンニ
送ラレタ女ト子供ハ約四百名デアツタ。

私ハ他ノ者ト一緒ニ一九四二年ノ二月中約一ヶ月
間、天主教ノ建物ニ滞在シタ。私ハ三月卅一日和蘭
兵ノ兵舎ニ移ツタノデアル。天主教ノ建物ニ滞在中
ハ日本人カラ喰ベル物ハ價一ツ貫ハオカツタ。我々
ハ學校カラ若干ノ米ヲ見付ケ且ツ「ホテル」カラ若
干ノ纏結ノ罌粟ヲ持ツテ來テ屠ツタノデアル。日本
人ハ益ク何一ソ呉レナカツタ。日本兵ハ我々ヲ監視
シタ。其ノ月ノ末ニナツテ、日本人下士官ノ山田ガ
收容所ヘヤツテ來タ、彼ハ日本海軍ニ屠ツタモノデ
アツタ。彼ハ我々ニ米ヲ持ツテキテクレタガ、シカ
シ燒米デアツタ。我々ハ一年間ヲ通バテコノ燒米ヲ
食シナケレバナラナカツタ。

中國人ノ建物ニ於テ「ホエクストラ」氏ト私ハ毎
日色々ナ賞問ヲ受ケマシタ、或夜、日本人ハ「ホエ
クストラ」ヲ尙此ノ上訊問スルタメ、外ヘ遣レ出シ
タガ彼ハ歸ツテクルト監獄ニ入レラレタ。別ノ夜、
日本人ハ私ヲ訊問ニ遣レ出シタガ、コノ訊問ハ終夜
引キ續イテ行ハレ且ツ彼等ハ私ノ頭部ニ拳銃ヲ擬シ
タ。一日本人大佐ト參謀トガ訊問ヲ行ツタ。其ノ後
天主教建物ニ行ツテカラ、コノ士官ノ一人ガ此處ヘ
見廻ツテ來テ私ノ頭ヲ毆ツタ。私ハ後ニ倒レタ、シ

Doc 5544

カシ監獄ニハ入レラレナカツタ。

天主教ノ建ヲ去ツテ私ハ「メナド」ノ和蘭兵ノ
 兵舎デアル「テリング」ニ遷レテユカレタ。ソコニ
 ハ約百名バカリガ居リ、「ホエクストラ」モ其ノ中
 ニ居タノデアル。私ハソコハ一九四二年ノ三月末
 ニ行キ、一九四四年九月十日迄居ツタノデアル。最
 後ニハ百五十名バカリ居ツタノデアル。一九四二年
 十二月迄ノ一年間我々ハ焼米ヲ食シ其ノ後玉蜀黍ト
 「タビオカ」トヲ食シタ。我々ハ自身ノ野菜ヲ栽培
 シタノデアル。或日我々百五十名ニ對シ十二匹ノ肉
 ト骨トヲ賣ツタ。一九四四年二月ニ數名ノ赤痢患者
 ガ發生シテ、十名ガ死亡シタ。我々ハ口薬ヲ持ツテ
 居ナカツタ、十二名ガ天主教ノ學堂ニ於テ病院ニ送リテ許可
 サレタガ殆ド其處テ死亡シタノデアツテ、收容所テ
 ハ死亡シタノテハナカツタ。一天主教僧モソレニ先
 ツテ死亡シタ。彼ハ「父」ル「ン」「テ」一九四二
 年八月十九日ニ死亡シタノデアツタ。其處テ死亡シ
 タモウ一人ハ「コエホン」「テ」一九四二年三月十九日
 ニ死シタ。「メ」子「ド」カ「ラ」茶々知「ハ」ス「マ」
 「氏」ハ一九四四年三月十九日ニ赤痢テ死亡シタ。
 同教徒ノ「ゲベル」ハ一九四四年二月十六日ニ死亡
 シ、「デウイス」氏ハ一九四四年三月一日ニ死亡、
 新教徒ノ牧師「ワニルトハイヤス」氏ハ一九四四年

Doc 5544

カシ監獄ニハ入レラレハツタ。
 天主敎ノ難行ヲ去ツテ私ハ「メナド」ノ和蘭兵ノ
 兵舎テアル「テリス」ニ送レテユカレタ。ソコニ
 ハ約百名バカリガ居リ、「ボエクス」トラ「モ」其ノ中
 ニ居タノテアル。私ハソコハ一九四二年ノ三月末
 ニ行キ、一九四四年九月十日迄居ツタノテアル。最
 後ニハ百五十名バカリ居ツタノテアル。一九四二年
 十二月迄ノ一年間我々ハ晝米ヲ食シ其ノ後玉蜀黍ト
 「タピオカ」トヲ食ツタ。我々ハ自身ノ厨薬ヲ栽培
 シタノテアル。或日我々百五十名ニ對シ十二鹿ノ肉
 ト骨トヲ貰ツタ。一九四四年二月ニ數名ノ赤痢患者
 ガ發症シテ、十名ガ死亡シタ。我々ハ醫藥ヲ持ツテ
 居ナカツタ、十二名ガ天主敎ノ學校ニテ「病院」ト許可
 サレタガ殆ド其處テ死亡シタノテアツテ、啟容所テ
 ハ死亡シタノテハナカツタ。一天主教僧モソレニ先
 ツテ死亡シタ。彼ハ「父」ル「ノ」ホ「ン」テ「一九四二
 年八月十九日」ニ死亡シタノテアツタ。其處テ死亡シ
 タモウ一人ハ「コエ」ホ「ン」テ「一九四二年三月十九日
 ニ死亡シタ。」「メ」ナ「ド」カ「ラ」來「タ」知「察」ハ「イス」チ「マ
 シ」氏ハ「一九四四年三月十九日」ニ赤痢テ死亡シタ。
 同教徒ノ「ゲ」バ「ル」ハ「一九四四年二月十六日」ニ死亡
 シ、「テ」ウ「イス」氏ハ「一九四四年三月一日」ニ死亡、
 新教徒ノ牧師「ウ」エ「ルト」ハ「イス」氏ハ「一九四四年

Doc 5544

三月四日ニ死亡、十六歳ノ「シモンズ」氏ノ息子ハ
一九四四年二月十二日ニ死亡、「ベトリ」氏ハ一
九四四年二月二十八日ニ死亡、「エスコンプト銀行
ノ代表ハ「ヴァン、ツフホス」氏ハ一九四四年三月
十二日ニ死亡、又「メナド」裁判所々長「レクタ」
氏ハ一九四四年三月廿九日ニ死亡シタ。山田ハ長イ
黒イ送ノアル日本人デアツテ、「黒島」トイフ縛名
ガツイテ居タ。

和島兵舎テハ、我々ハ六、小包々ノ庭テ働カネバ
ナラナカツタ。

山田ハ誰テモ殴ツタ。救急所ニハ規則ト云フモノ
ガ無ク、我々ハ如何ナルコトガ許サレ、如何ナルコ
トガ許サレテ居ナイカト云フコトヲ知ラナカツタ、
山田ハシテハイケナイト息フヤウナコトヲ爲タ着ラ
イツモ打擲シタ。一九四三年六月四日「シモンズ」
氏ハ非常ニ痛打サレタ、彼ハ外部ノ誰カト連絡ラシ
タト云フノテ真メラレタ、誰モ彼モ監列サセラレ、
其ノ前テ「シモンズ」氏ハ打擲サレタ。一九四三年
十月二十日迄彼ハ獄ニ投ゼラレタ、獄室ハセメント
ノ床ダケデアツタ。彼ハ、其ノ後殺害サレタ「ダン
コナ」氏ト一緒ダツタ。「ダンコナ」モ亦同様ナ理
由テ山田ニ殴ラレタ。彼ハ獄テ唇ノ邊ヲ打タレタ、
彼ハ兩腕ヲ擧ゲササレ、其ノ部分ヲ殴ラレタ、半時

Doc 5544

間ばかり類々テ打サレタ。彼ハ人等不省ニナツタ
ノテ、日本人ハ彼ニ水ヲ打掛ケタ上進ンテ去ツテ四
ケ月間モ懲ニ投シテ置イタ。コレハ一九四三年ノ末
ノコトデアツタ。

私ハコノ山田ニ殴アレ、前齒ヲ數枚折ツタ。

良容所ノ半獄ノ者ハ山田ニ殴打サレタ。監獄テハ、
山田ハ立テ上ルコトガ出来ナカツタ「ダンコナ」ノ
トコロハヤツテキテ向監ヲ臨ツタ、ソシテ「ダンコ
ナ」ハ猛烈ナ傳染病ニ罹ツタノデス。山田ハ人ノ頭
ヲ皮帶テ打ツ儀ガアツタ。コノ強打ハ實ニ再々行ハ
レタ。天主教ノ牧師モコノ方法テ打タレタノデス。
「ビイーン」ト云フ人モ天主教ノ建勸カラ進レ出サ
レテ獄ニ入レタ。牧師ノ「デウ・ウルフ」モ亦
獄ニ入ラレ、次ニ「デウ・ジョン」氏モ入ラレ
タ。「モラカス」ノ貿易商デアル「ビイーン」氏ハ
日本人ノ爲メ無罪ニ給養係ニサレタノデス、私ガ「
インドネシア人」カラ得タ報知ニヨルト、彼ハ其ノ
後死刑ニ處セラレタノデス。

戦前ハ日本貿易商デアツタ「ヨニ」(ユナイ)ハ
「ビイーン」ノ處刑及ビ三人ノ中國人「リイ、ブレ
ン、ヤツ」、「リイ、ダック、ヒュン」及ビ「リイ、
ゴーン、アン」ノ處刑ニ對シテモ亦其ノ黒幕デアツ
タ。

Doc 5544

「テウ、ウルフ」ハ一九四二年七月三日處刑サレ、
「テウ、ジョン」モ同日處刑サレタ。處刑ハソコ
病院ノ丘テ行ハレタ。彼等ハ病院ノ後庭ニ埋メラレ
タモノト信ズル。

「テウ、ジョン」ハ「ピトエング」魚類供給所ト
何カ連絡ガアツタモノテ、コレニ因進シタ或ル理由
テ處刑サレタノデアツタ。「テウ、ウルフ」ハ牧師
デアツテ、日本人ガ到着スル以前ニ工場ノ幾ラカラ
破壊シタト云フ環自テ處刑サレタ。

「リイ、ウ」氏ハ捕縛セラレ、我々ト共ニ進レラ
レテキタガ、彼ハ其ノ後同モ無ク處刑サレタ。私ハ
其ノ日附ヲ知ラナイ。コノ山田ガ處刑ヲ執行シタノ
ダト云フコトデアツタ。「メテド」地區ノ總司令官
ハ橋本大佐デアツタ。

(以下頁ニ続ク)

Doc 5544

一九四二年七月三日「メナド」ノ市内又ハ附近ノ
何處カデ、一名ノ米國人大佐、二名ノ天主教牧師（
「マクマホン」牧師及「ツロート」牧師）ト一名ノ
教徒（教徒「ブラウン」）ガ處刑サレタ、彼等ハ一
「フリツピン」カラ來タモノデアツタ。私ノ知レル
範圍デハ「ユナイ」ガ橋本カマコノ責任ヲ負フベキ
デアツタ。

聯合軍ノ空襲後ノ一九四四年九月十日ニ我々ハ和
島兵舎ヲ去ツタノデアル、一米人カ不慮ノ厄ニアツ
タ。「ビリイ・グリーン」デアル。一九四四年九月
十日、我々ハ「メナド」ノ一般ノ監獄ヘ入レラレタ。
十人ガ一室ノ割デ、我々ハ凡ソ百五十人デアツタ。
三日間水モ食物モ無カツタ。其ノ後十月廿四日迄吾
々ハ少量ノ食物ヲ食ツタ。十月廿四日以後モ病人ハ
其處ニ居テツタノデアツタト凡ソ十六名バカリ。私
ハ監獄所ヘ歸ツテ來タノデアル。

私カ監獄ニ居タ時ニ、人々ハ大部分カ赤痢ト食糧
不足トテ死亡シタ。我々ハ何等ノ治療ヲ受ケナ
カツタ。監獄ニ殺サレタ十六名ノ知ソドカ死亡シテ
シマツタ。誰ラモ病氣ニナツタラ監獄ニ入レラレタ。
我々收容所ノ百五十名ノ中デ六十八名カ死亡シタ。
五名ノ死ガ原因ノ結果死シタ。

7.

Doc 5544

我々ハ兵舎内ニ地下避難所ヲ掘ラナケレバナラナ
カツタ。我々ハ貨車自動車ニ荷積ヲセシケレバナラ
ナカツタ。我々ハ一日ニ一回若干ノ米ヲ貰ツタ。食
薬ハ何モ長ハナカツタ。何等ノ仕事手當セナカツタ
ノテ多量ノ毒ガ病氣ニナリ死亡シテシマツタ。收容
所テハ一日ニ三人ノ毒ガ^殺死シ一人ノ毒ガ一マラリ
ヤレテ死亡シタ。山田ハ其ノ後如人收容所ニ移ツテ
イツタ、以前一市民日本人ダツタ渡邊ハ非常ニ愚イ
日本人デアツタ。彼ハ獄ヲ拳固テ我々ヲ辱ツタ。私
ト一船ニ收容所ニ居タ一ヴァン・オーストラム氏
ハヒドク殴ラレタ。渡邊ハ或ル期間其處ニ勤務シテ
居ツタ。我々ハ一九四四年十月初メテ彼ニ會ツタ
ノデノデアル。ドノ收容所ニモ曾テ收容所ダト云フ
コトヲ諷別スル何等ノ賞識モナカツタノデアル。

我ハ一九四五年九月ニ押置カラ放免サレタノデア
ル。

「ホエグハトラート一ヴァンコナートハ一度監獄
ニ入レラレ共ノ後一九四五年六月十九日處刑セラレ
タ。「トツキ」隊長ノ山口ハコノ事件ニ責任カア
ルト云ハレテキル。私ハコノ事件ハ「トング」テ
起ツタモノト信ジテ居ル、彼等ハ外部ノ若ト通信ヲ
シタト云フ故テ處刑セラレタノダト云フコトヲアツ

Doc. 5544

捕縛サレタ。聯合軍宛答書發身右ハ懸響サレムノテ
 アツタ。一ムサド一テ射落サレタリ或ハ不民着シタ
 聯合軍宛答書發身右ハ懸響サレタト云フコトヲ
 私ハ即イタ。一ホソキ際一カ彼等ヲ懸響シタノダト
 云フコトヲアツタ。私カ一トツキハ一ヲ懸響シテ
 屠タ時ニ私ハ三名ノ航空機搭乗員一米人ダツタト信
 ズル一ヲ免ナケタ。一
 一九四五年六月或ハ七月頃我々ハ彼等ガ監獄ニ屠タ
 ノヲ見カケタ。彼等ハ一トシタノ一テ處刑サレタモ
 ノト私ハ思ツテキル。一ステルマー氏ハ監獄ニ入レ
 ラレ竹片ノ爪ノ下ニ括シ込マレタ。一トツキ際一ガ
 コレヲ爲タノテアツタ。一山口ハ彼等ノ長テアツタ。
 一ムーレンサア一氏ハ處刑サレタ爲メ死亡シタ
 我ル日彼ノ衣服ガ日本人ノ手テ送リ送サレテキタガ
 全部血カ着イテ屠ツタ。彼ハ一九四五年二月十六
 日死亡シタ。
 総長即ハソノ日本人長テアツタ。彼ハ我々仲
 同ノ語ニ對シテ大シテ何モシテクレナカツタ。彼
 ハ我々ノ乗組ヲ通り抜ケ機中機計ヲ貫ハウトシタ
 ニ逆ギナカツタ。我々ハ彼ガラハ何等ノ言葉モ其ノ

Doc 5544

10.

他ノ何儀ヲモ其ノカツタ。

整ハ上記ノ記言ハ其管ニシテ且ツ正確デアルコト
ヲ宣旨ス

ダ リ シ カ

一九四五年十一月五日一ブリスベンニ於テ

余ノ面談ニテ記言ニ採立テラレ且ツ宣旨サル。

ユイ・ジユイ・マンスフィールド

委 員

C e r t i f i c a t e

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.L., head of the War Crimes section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed report is a full, true, complete and accurate copy of the original document entitled:

Report on Interrogation H.J. KOFFIS, dated November 5, 1946, concerning war-crimes at South-Celebes, with attached report concerning the situation during the occupation of South-Celebes made by H.J. KOFFIS, dated November 2, 1945. O. 147/CC.

which document is a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

Signature:

/s/ Ch. Jongeneel

(SEAL)

Batavia, June 7th, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.L. de WETD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.L. Higher official attached to the office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

/s/ K. L. de laerd

E. R.

REPORT ON INTERROGATION DATED 5th NOVEMBER 1945.

H. J. KOEFTS.

OM/147/CC

Today, the 5th November, 1945, appeared before me, the Ens. BEINDERSMA, in charge of the investigation regarding data concerning war criminals and collaborators in N.E.I.

H. J. KOEFTS, Controller I Class, present residence Columbia Camp, Molokai, who, on interrogation stated as follows:-

"On the 6th February 1942 I was interned in a field police hqs, where I remained till the 23rd July 1942. There was also a military camp in the Infantry Barracks. In June 1942 a plot was discovered of an armed revolt by the Imbonese. 10 Imbonese were beheaded. C.O. of the P. Camp the Lt. Col. COETJENS, was beheaded for the same reason. 23rd July the Government Officials (B.B.) were removed to the infantry barracks, there at the beginning we were excellently treated, the soldiers on the contrary had a very bad time. They were accommodated with 2,600 men in a camp built for 500. The working parties were badly thrashed for the smallest offence. The guard (brute), YOSHIDE, was in charge of the working parties, and also to all practical purposes controlled the camp. There was naturally a Japanese C.O., but he was never seen. At the end of the year 1942 the conditions of the B.B. officials changed for the worse. We received twice a day 1 ball rice with some salt, nothing else; moreover a dysentery epidemic broke out which weakened the men. In January 1944 we were moved to Pare - Pare, where I saw the leader of the camp, Father SCHNEIDER, thrashed to within an inch of his life by YANDJI (the brute). This priest merely stamped the ground around newly planted vegetables with his bare feet. YANDJI found this a heavy insult to the Japanese army, and severely ill-treated him, so that he was left for dead. The last sacraments were administered, but he later recovered. In connection with this, a compl int was lodged by Father WASSEN with the Japanese Ass. Res. MIKINO with the result that Father WASSEN was tortured also by YANDJI. In connection with this an extensive inquiry was carried out by Mr. Bannink-Tolt, and Mr. Veldhuizen. The first named person will arrive here within a few days. On the 19th and the 21st October 1944 we were bombed by the Americans. 7 internees lost their lives. Since everything was smashed, we were moved to an emergency camp at Bodjoe (4 miles from Pare-Pare). We lived there in cowsheds and bisties. Sanitary condition was extremely bad. In the middle of November a dysentery epidemic broke out: of the 600 men 400 were sick with dysentery, 25 men died of it. Food was insufficient, no meat; vegetables had to be smuggled into the camp, they were dandelions and ferns. On the 20th May 1945 we were removed to Bolong, (1,400 m. above sea level). We slept in open bamboo barracks, practically no clothes, and no blankets. We suffered much because of the cold. C.O. was LOFI, who systematically tried to starve us. We received 300 gr. rice per day. Later LOFI was replaced by TODA. We received from him 400 gr. rice per day. The last days of August 1945 we returned to Pare-Pare, where we were liberated.

N.B. Lists were immediately made of spies and collaborators and presented to Maj. EGENOF of MICA, but nothing was done about it. The culprits are still free, and became leaders of the Soekarno movement. Can nothing be done about this?

True account prepared by me on the
6th November, 1945.

The Ens. R. Beindersma.

Sgd. F. BEINDERSMA.

No. 1

Evidentiary Document

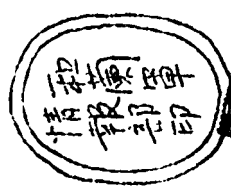
5547

書類番号第五四七號

證明書

下名和蘭軍情報部戦争犯罪課長 R. N. I. A. 中尉
 「ヤルス・ミンゲール」ハ正当ニ宣誓言フナリ此別紙添付書類
 「南セルベス」ニ於テ戦争犯罪ニ関スル一九四五年十一月五日附
 「フイツ」新聞報共書及ビ付属セル一九四五年十一月二日附
 「CCH」フイツ」ヨリ作成セラレタル南セルベス
 新聞報共書
 ナル題名「モ」ガ該書類、原本、全文ニシテ眞實ナル事
 實ニテアルコト並ビ該書類ハ和蘭軍情報部
 一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。

署名 ヤルス・ミンゲール



於「タビヤ」一九四五年二月七日

右ハ本職 N. E. I. 法務廳附高等官 R. N. I. A. 中尉 K. A.
 「フウアード」面前ニテ署名宣誓

署名 K. A. フウアード

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO R.O.

EXHIBIT NO. 1811A

5547

書類番号五五四七号

一九四五年十一月五日附託向報告書 O.M.二四七〇

H.J. クーツ

本日即チ一九四五年十一月五日、蘭領東印度ニ於ケル戦争犯罪者及其協力者ニ関スル證據物調査係、海軍少尉「アイラス・ロート」ナル者ハ私ノ面前ニ虫頭ヲナシ。

現任所「アール・コロセヤヤニア」一級検査官 H.J. クーツハ訊問ヲ受クルニキリテ、如ク陳述セリ。

* * * * *

一九四四年一月ニ我々「コレバリエ」ニ移サレソコテ私ニ收容所内ノ長テアル教父「エナイター」カ山路（音訳）（殘忍漢）ニ自、根カ山ノ程迄テ打テルヲ見マシタ。即チ此ノ牧師ハ新シク植エラレタ野菜畑廻リ地面ヲ蹴足ヲ踏ニ固マシタ。山路（音訳）ハコレヲ日本陸軍ニ対スル耐（難イ侮辱トミテ、彼ヲトク産待シソレガ為メ死ニテモトシテ放置サレマシタ。最後、聖礼が行レマシタガ其後ニナツテ彼ハ蘇生シマシタ。此ノ事ニ関聯シテ、教父「アロセン」ニヨリ日本人牧野（音訳）助彼ニ抗議ガ提出サレシガ其ノ結果トシテ、教父「アロセン」モ亦山路（音訳）依リ苦シムシ。

* * * * *

一九四四年十月十九日及二十日ニ我々「米國機」ヨリ爆撃ヲ受ケタ。七名、被收容者ハ生命ヲ失ヒマシタ。何モカモ破壊サレタ為メ、我々「ボウ」シ（コレバリエヨリ四哩）臨時、收容所へ移サレマシタ。我々「ソコ」テ牛ノ屋ヤ豚ノ舎ニ住ニテ居リマシタ。衛生状態ハ極度ニ悪カシタ。十一月、中頃傳染病、赤痢ガ起リ、六百名中四百名ハ赤痢ニカリ、二十五名ガ死亡致シマシタ。

No. 2

5-547

書類番号五五四七号

一九四五年十一月五日附託向報告書 O.M. 二四七/CC

H. J. クーツ

本日即チ一九四五年十一月五日蘭領東印度ニ於テ戦争犯罪者及其協力者ニ関スル證據物調査係海軍少尉マイリス・マ・ロートトナル者ハ私ノ面前ニ出頭ヲナシテ

現任所「ワコール」コロムビヤキヤン、一級検査官 H. J. クーツノ訊問ヲ受クルニ基リテ如ク陳述セリ。

* * * * *

一九四四年一月ニ我々、コレバエニ移サレソコデ私ハ收容所内ノ長テアル教父「マートセン」カ山路「吾譯」(殘忍漢)ニ息根カ止ル程迄打テルヲ見マシテ。即チ此ノ牧師ハ新ク植エラレタ野菜畑廻リ地面ヲ踏足テ踏ニ固クマシテ。山路「吾譯」ハコレヲ日本陸軍ニ対スル耐ヘ難イ侮辱トシテ。彼ヲヒトク虐待シ、ソレガ為メ死ニテ放置サレマシテ。最後、聖礼が行ハマシタガ其後ニテ彼ハ蘇生シマシテ。此ノ事ニ関聯シテ教父「マートセン」ヨリ日本人牧師「吾譯」助役ニ抗議ガ提出サレシガ其ノ結果トシテ教父「マートセン」モ亦山路「吾譯」依リ告シテマシテ。

* * * * *

一九四四年十月十九日及二十一日ニ我々、米國機ニヨリ爆撃ヲ受ケテ。七名、被收容者ハ生命ヲ失ヒマシテ。何モカモ破壊サレシガ為メ。我々「コレバエ」(コレバエヨリ四哩)臨時、收容所ヘ移サレマシテ。我々「コレバエ」牛ヤ屋ヤ豚小屋ニ住ニテ居リマシテ。衛生状態ハ極度悪クシテ。十一月、中頃傳染病、赤痢ガ起リ六百名中四百名ハ赤痢ニカリ二十五名ガ死亡致シマシ

No. 2

5547

9. 食物、不十分アリ肉ナク、野菜、コソソリト收容所内持
込マネバナリヤセシタガッレハ蒲心菜ヤ羊歯、芽ナドデアラウ。
一九四五年五月二十日ニ我々「ホロク」(海拔一四〇〇米)ニ移サ
レタ。我々ノ所ニ竹藪、ハラクノ中ニ休マネバナラズ着
物モ毛布モ殆ンド無カシタ。寒暑、タメニ我々ノ非常ニ悩マ
サレタ。司令官ハ森林音訊ヲ彼ノ組織的ニ我々ヲ飢死サ
セヨウトシタ。我々ハ一日三百瓦、米ヲ受ケタシタ。其後森林音訊
ハ戸田音訊ト代リマシタ。我々ハ彼等ハ一日四百瓦、米ヲ受
ケタシタ。

* * * * *

右ハ一九四五年十一月六日本職、面前ニ於テ調製セラレタル
眞實ナル記述ナリ

海軍少尉 R. マインデルスマ

署名 R. マインデルスマ

No. 3

Cx. #1812

Evidence of Mrs. Ann Lilian FOLEY taken on 27 September 1945 at the Prisoner-of War and Internee Reception Depot, Morotai, in the presence of His Honour, Mr. Justice Mansfield.

My full name is Ann Lilian FOLEY. I am a widow. My husband was killed in action. I am of Dutch nationality.

I was first interned at Tomohon prison camp but in March 1943 I was removed to Aermadedi camp. The guards at Aermadedi camp were Paula, Colowig and Wono; they were not Japanese. Altogether, there were eight guards, four of whom were on duty at a time. I have no complaints about these guards.

YAMADA was a Japanese and in control of Aermadedi camp. He used to hit the women when they went outside the camp to try to smuggle in food; we were reported by the guards. YAMADA had any offenders sent to his office and then he would beat them about 10 or 15 times with a whip, the number depending on how energetic he felt. He beat us on the back. I have not actually been beaten myself, but I have seen other women beaten.

I remember the occasion on which four girls were ill-treated by YAMADA on 9 August 1945. The girls were Anka Bloom, Rientje Symons, Rientje Faber and Svenra Stelma. They were aged respectively 18, 15, 16, 14 and 12 or 13.

These girls had been caught out of bounds. It was prohibited to go outside the compound but these girls were looking for coconuts and any food they could find. They were discovered by one of the guards and brought along the main road back to the camp. YAMADA ordered that they be brought to him at his office. Then the whole camp was called up and paraded in front of his office. If anyone had to be punished, we were always paraded in this manner; a bell was rung and we had to line up - women and children.

The four girls were then beaten in turn with a whip across the back and on the arms. I could not say exactly how many strokes each received but they had about 10 or 12.

After the beatings, the girls were forced to stand before YAMADA's office night and day for about a week. Although I am not sure, I think that after the war had ended, they were ordered to stand there another day. They were not allowed to go home and, according to YAMADA, they were not to have anything to eat or drink, but food was smuggled to them. They were compelled by YAMADA to stand the whole time although they had an opportunity of sitting when he was not present; if he was in his office all day, the girls had to stand all day.

When two girls were found outside the compound one day YAMADA deprived two-thirds of the camp of food for one day. There were approximately 340 in the camp altogether.

The condition of the girls mentioned above who were forced to stand before YAMADA's office was poor at the end of the six or seven days; they were fairly exhausted. They have now recovered, as far as I know.

Mrs. Symons, mother of one of the girls, was beaten in 1942 before we went to Aermededi, to Tomohon. YAMADA was also in charge at Tomohon. On this occasion, Mrs. Symons tried to smuggle a letter out to one of the drivers of the truck that brought our food. Every ten days our rations were brought, and she tried to get a letter to her husband, who was in a camp about 60 miles distant. She was reported and paraded before YAMADA. We were then all paraded in front of his office and the people in the street were able to look in also. Then he punched her in the face with his fists many times. They were hard punches and her face was all swollen as a result. Also, she had trouble with her ear after the beating. I saw her fall down during the beating and while she was on the ground YAMADA kicked her on the legs; I turned away when he did this. YAMADA then addressed the rest of the camp, telling us that if we were caught out of bounds, we should receive the same treatment and this would be a lesson to us. We were told we were rotten through and through. Mrs. Symons walked around the camp for a little time on the morning she was beaten in order to give YAMADA the impression that she had been affected by the beating, but immediately he had gone she took a few day's rest; exactly how long I cannot say.

Mrs. Radema was also at Aermededi during this year; it may have been about March or a little later. She was also outside looking for coconuts on one occasion and was brought in by one of the police who was dressed in civilian clothes. She was brought before YAMADA and then she was called everything from a dog down and was beaten on the back by YAMADA with a whip. I cannot say how many strokes she received but it was approximately 30; they were heavy strokes. After having given her this beating, she had to stand outside his office for two days and two nights. YAMADA would not allow her to have food but food was smuggled in to her. According to YAMADA, if any person was called before him on a charge of smuggling in food, that person was not allowed to have anything to eat.

Mrs. Bruckel was assaulted during 1945 at Aermededi camp. She was found cooking outside the kitchen. We were not allowed to cook outside the kitchen, but sometimes some of the women tried to cook something extra. I saw Mrs. Bruckel being hit in the face by YAMADA; I was about the kitchen at the time. YAMADA smacked her in the face two or three times with his open hands. Then he sent her to his office. He drew a circle on the ground in the boiling sun and put a guard over her; she was to stand there facing the sun for the whole day. When YAMADA had gone, the guard let her go out of the sun. She was at the office altogether for about two days and two nights.

Mrs. David was also interned in the camp at Aermededi, I think some time during this year. I saw her beaten by YAMADA. We were all paraded again before his office. Mrs. David had been caught cooking outside the kitchen. She had to go to the office and explain what she had been doing and to bring the food along. She also had to stand outside YAMADA's office for about one day and one night, as far as I can remember. We saw her being taken into the office at night but what happened in there I cannot say.

Mrs. Van Doggenear came to Aermededi camp in about September of last year. She was beaten at night. I saw her the following day and she was black and blue and her face was swollen up and her ankle was very sore for two or three weeks after. She had bruises on her ankle and on the calf of her leg, and she was sick.

The food supplies at Aermadedi were very poor. We were allowed 1200 kilos of rice and maize every ten days. There were about 300 or 400 kilos of rice, the remainder being corn. Sometimes we had to grind the corn ourselves and sometimes it was sent to us already ground. For the first few months we received 1200 kilos every ten days but it gradually dwindled to 900 and 800 kilos. Then a Japanese called Takasaki came to the camp and I asked him to look into the matter of food. He said he would see about it and the position did improve after that. We then had only rice.

Beri beri was rampant in the camp and 38 died altogether. The beri beri was the cause of their death. At Tomohon for the first couple of months, we were allowed to go to hospital when we were sick but in Aermadedi camp we were not allowed, except on one occasion when two women went to hospital and subsequently died; they were too far gone when they were taken away.

Medical supplies at Aermadedi were very poor. YAMADA would give us only 200 quinine tablets for 300 people; this was given us only once. Later, he gave us 300 on one occasion and 700 on another. There was much malaria in the camp. Every time we asked for medicine YAMADA always replied in Malayan, "What use have you people for medicine?" The sooner you die the better I shall like it." If anybody was dying and we asked for a light at night, we were not allowed one.

A few children were born in camp. When the first baby was born, the mother was attended by one of the nurses in the camp, who were also internees. The mothers of the other babies born in the camp were sent to the hospital up in the country. There was a doctor there, but he did not bother about them and they were attended by native nurses. The mothers were alright, although they were not supplied with extra food. Some of the children in the camp; I think about seven or eight of those who died were children. All died from beri beri.

When we were interned, we did not take any of our own property into the camp except a few clothes; the Japanese went through our bags and cases and took anything of any value. I managed to save only a gold case.

My little girl now aged five years, suffered from dysentery at the camp. She is at present in hospital.

Whenever YAMADA went to the laboratory he did not bother about covering himself very much. He lived in a bamboo hut with three open sides and although he had a screen he never used to use it but dressed and undressed in front of the women. When he went to the lavatory, he went in cotton shorts only but might as well not have worn anything.

The guards at the gate had to sign for rations coming into the camp. I asked YAMADA once for extra food and we received 900 kilos instead of 800. The guard signed for the 900 kilos but when the food was brought inside YAMADA would take one of the sacks which had been signed for.

We were never visited by any Red Cross people at Aermadedi. Japanese officers visited the camp occasionally. One man, TAKASAKI, came about four times. Complaints were made to him which helped us for a few days while he was present.

But as soon as he had gone away the old rations of food were reverted to. TAKASAKI was a baron and a naval officer.

When women died in the camp, other women had to dig the graves and carry the dead to the graves. We also had to dig our own latrine pits.

The washing facilities were very poor. We had no running water and had to go outside the camp with a guard at 4 o'clock every afternoon and carry about 20 buckets of water to the kitchen. After that, we had to carry one or two buckets of water for ourselves. We had to wash our clothes and bath in that water.

When YAMADA was expecting any visitors, he always sent for me and told me how long we would be allowed to talk to them and on one occasion he threatened that if I made any complaints I would be beaten. I did complain, however, but YAMADA did not get to hear about it so I was not beaten.

About four or five days after the signing of the peace, we were allowed to walk about the streets. We were actually released on 15 September 1945.

I would be able to identify YAMADA; he was commonly known as "The Beaver."

- - - - -

I certify that the above evidence is true and correct.

Taken and sworn before me at Morotai

on this 27th day of September 1945.

Signature:

/s/ A. J. Mansfield

/s/A. R. ROLFF

Commissioner

I have this day seen the Japanese named YAMADO and have identified him as the person mentioned in my evidence as being in control of Aermadedi camp.

- /s/ A. R. ROLFF - - - - -

28 September 1945

Evidentiary Document 555

「ジャスティス・マンフィールド」/Justice MANSFIELD/ 南米、同書
「モロタイ」/MOROTAI/、信房及探田船收容所ニテ。一九四
五年九月二十七日ニ「獄中」ニ「ア・リリアン・ロルフ」/Ann
Lilian ROLFF/、証言。

私、姓名「ア・リリアン・ロルフ」/Ann Lilian ROLFF/ニテ。
私、富婦ナラス。私、夫、戦死セシタ。私、国籍、米
ナス。

私、最初「トモホ」/TOMOHO/、信房收容所ニ「收容
セシタ」ガ一九四三年三月「ア・エマデ」/AERMADEDI/ 收容
所ニ「移」セシタ。「ア・エマデ」/AERMADEDI/ 收容所、番
人「ポーラ」/PAULA/、「コロウィグ」/COLOWIG/ 及「ワ
ンソ」/WONSO/ ナリシタ。彼等、日本人「ア・リリアン」ニテ。
全部「六」人、番人が居リ、彼等、四人宛テ「交番」勤初メ
テ居リシタ。私、此等、番人ニ「因」テ「不平」アリセシ。

5x 18 | 2

山田、日本人「ア・エマデ」/AERMADEDI/ 收容所
監理ニテ居リシタ。彼、倉庫「コソリ」ニ入リ「掃」テ「收容所
カ」「掃」テ「出」ス女等ヲ「ヨ」リ「打」擲シタ。我達、ニ「テ」番人カ
「用」イタ「テ」ス。山田、違及者ヲ「自」カ「事」務所ニ「連」テ
「来」テ「鞭」テ「十」回「乃至」十五回「程」打「タ」モ「テ」シタ。ソ「ノ」數、彼
「山田」ノ「シ」時、精カ「ニ」休リシタ。彼、私共、背「中」ヲ「打」テ
シタ。私、實際ニ「打」タ「事」ハ「ア」ラ「セ」ニ「ガ」彼、女達「ガ」打
「タ」テ「見」タシタ。

No. 1

私、一九四五年八月九日ニ四人、少女が山田「カ」「信」房「カ」「事」
ヲ「責」ニ「テ」居「ル」ス。其少女達「ハ」「ア・カ・ブルー」/Anka BLO

No. 2

Document 555

(M)「ニエニニ、ニエニニ」/ Rientje SYMONS / 「ニエニニ、
ニエニニ」/ Rientje FABER / 及「ニエニニ、ニエニニ」/ Spen
na STELMA / ナエニニニ。 彼女等、共々十六、十五、
十四及十三、三ノテアリマシタ。

此等ノ少女達、境界外ヲ捕ヘウシタ、デシタ。 捕内カラ
外ニ出ルコト、禁セウシテ居タノテ、此等ノ少女達、椰子
ヲ其ノ地何ヲモキニ入ル食物ヲ見セテ居タシタ。 彼
女達ノ番人、一人見セテ、大通リヲ通リ、検査所ニ
連シ帰ルマシタ。 山田/YAMADA / (彼女達ヲ彼事務所
ニ連シテ来ル様ニ余記シタ。 シカウ検査所全部ガ呼ニ集
タリシ後、事務所、余ニ並ハサシマシタ。 彼ガ割セウシ
ケルナリ、余ハ私達ノ何モ斯ウシノ風ニ並ハサシムコ
ト。 彼ガ鳴ルト私達ノ女等共ニ懇別ニシテ去リマセ
テシタ。

四人ノ少女達、ソシカウ順々ニ背ヲ腕ヲ離テ打タシマシタ。
私ハ各々何回打タシタカ正確ニハ意ニテ居マセニガ彼女達ノ
十回及十二回位打タシマシタ。 打テ居リタカラ少女達、山田
/YAMADA / 、事務所、余ニ約(通内)許リ重復立タサ
シマシタ。 私ハ確ガ行アリマセニガ、戦争ガ終リタカニ彼女
達ノ其所ニモウ一日立リテ居ル様ニ余記シテ去リマシタ。
彼女達ノ家ニ帰ルコトヲ許サシズ、ソシテ山田/YAMADA / 係
テ彼女達ノ如何ナル食物ヲ根ルコトニテ、ナリカ、ナリカガ此
ニ食物ノコソリト彼女達ニ連シマシタ。 彼女達ノ彼山田
ガ居テ居ル座ル様モアリマシタ、共ニ終始立リテ居ルコト

No 3
Document 5555

山田 / YAMADA / 強盗に大 花を盗る 事務所
= 終日死の少女達、終日泣いて及たすにたりたりとす。

或日二人の少女が境外で見たところ山田 / YAMADA /
= 其、收容所、一日分、食糧、三名、二、奪り去り
たり。其、收容所 = 全部を天候三四。各程居
たり。

山田 / YAMADA / 事務所、前 = 泣いて泣いて強盗せり
と上述、少女達の状態、六七日目、終りに哀し
たりたり。彼女達、可成り憔悴したるなり。私、
知、限りて、彼女達、今、回復し、たり。

少女達、中、一人、母方の「サイモン」 / SYMONS /
夫人の私達が「アエマディ」 / AERMADEI / 一行、前、
一、九、年 = 「トモホ」 / TOMOHON / 打擲、其、事、
たりたり。山田 / YAMADA / 矢張り「トモホ」 / TOMO
HON / 夫、管理、したるなり。此、時、「サイモン」 / SYMONS /
夫人、私共、食物、運、送、する、に、た、り、り、運、送、す、る、一
二年、外、ラ、ット、渡、サ、ト、ス、たり。十日、毎、私共、食
糧、に、思、ひ、たり。彼女、約、六、哩、離、した、收容所、に、居、る、夫、
一、通、書、面、う、ち、サ、ト、ス、たり。彼女、呼、び、出、せ、し、山田 /

YAMADA / 前 = 引、出、せ、し、たり。ソ、コ、で、私共、の、時、彼、事
務所、前 = 並、び、し、並、行、る、人、を、亦、視、き、込、り、た、り、お、来
たり。ソ、コ、で、彼、の、拳、を、何、回、も、彼女、顔、を、打、つ、に
たり。ソ、レ、に、ヒ、ト、イ、打、撃、を、シ、結果、彼女、顔、全、く、腫、れ
たりたり。又、彼女、打、擲、後、彼女、再、も、王、障、り、か、り

Document 5555

か不地... 山田/YAMADA / 彼女、脚ヲ蹴
... 山田/YAMADA / ... 山
... 山田/YAMADA / ... 山
... SYMONS / ...
... MADA / ...
... 彼女 ...
... 彼女 ...

... RADENA / ...
... AERMADEDI / ...
... YAMADA / ...
... YAMADA / ...
... YAMADA / ...

... BRUCKEL / ...
... YAMADA / ...
... YAMADA / ...

No. 4

Doc 55555

マシタ。彼、炎日、下、大地ニ圖ヲ畫キ、彼女、爲ニ番人ヲ置
キマシタ。彼女、其所ニ終日太陽ノ方ヲ向キ、立タズバカリマセンデシタ、
山田 / YAMADA / が甚ルト、番人、彼女ヲ日伺カラ去ラセシタ。彼女、
全部テ日ニ晩事務所ニ居タリシタ。

「デグット」 / DAVID / 夫人モアエルマデイ / AERNADEI / 收容所ニ收
容サレシタ。私、多分本年中、何時カ、事 / デアラウト思ヒヌ。私、彼
女ガ山田 / YAMADA / ニ打タレテ居ルヲ見マシタ。私達ハ又モ、彼、事
務所前ニ並ハセラレマシタ。デグット / DAVID / 夫人ハ、所、外テ料理
ニ居ルヲ見付ケラレタノデス。彼女、事務所行ッテ何ヲニ居タカラ説
明シ、食物ヲ持ッテ行クネバナリマセンデシタ。彼女モ亦山田 / YAMADA /
ノ事務所、外ニ私、記憶スル限リテ、約一晝夜立ッテ居ナケレバナリマシ
タ。私共ハ夜、彼女ガ事務所中ニ入ラレテ居ルヲ見マシタ。中テ何が起シタ
カ私共言ヘシ。

「グランドクナル」 / VAN DOSSGENAAR / 夫人ハアエルマデイ / AERNADEI /
收容所ニ去年、九月頃來マシタ。彼女、夜打タレマシタ。私、翌日彼女ヲ見
マシタ。青黒ク彼女、顔ハ腫レテ居リシニテ彼女、踝ハ三週間非常
ニ痛ミ續ケマシタ。彼女、彼女、踝ト彼女、脚ノ間ニ打撲傷ヲ負ヒシ
テ彼女ハ加減ガ悪クマシタ。

「アエルマデイ」 / AERNADEI / 食物給與ハ非常ニ貧弱デシタ。私共ハ
十日毎ニ一。五。米ト玉蜀黍ヲ與ヘラレシタ。ソ、中三。乃至四。キロ許
リハ米テ残りハ玉蜀黍デシタ。時ニ私達ハ自ラ玉蜀黍ヲ挽カネバナラズ又
時ニ既ニ挽イタモノヲ供給サレヨトモアリマシタ。初メニ三月六日毎ニ一。
キロ食ケテ居マシタ。ソハ法第三九。又ハ。ト減テ來マシタ。ソ、頃高崎
ノ「トキヤ」ト云フ日本人ガ收容所ニマツテ來シタ。私、彼ニ食糧事情

No. 5

doc 5355

調査ヲ頼ミシタ。彼ハ調査ヨウト言ヒシヲ。ソニテ其ノ後ノ状態良ク
ナリシヲ。私達ハソカラ米食許リデタ。
19.2.11 收容所テハ脚氣ガ流行シ全部テ二十人死亡シシタ。脚氣ハ彼等
死ノ原因ダッタ。トモホシ/TOMOHON/テハ最初ノ三月間ハ私達
ハ病氣時入院スルニ許サレシタガ「エルマデ」/AERMADE/收容
所テハ私達ハ許サレセシタ。例外ニ唯二人ノ婦人ハ入院ノ事
アリシタガ間モテク死シテシヒシタ。彼女等ハ連レテ行ケタ時ハモソ手
遅レタッタ。トモホシ。

「エルマデ」/AERMADE/ニ於ケル醫藥給與ハ具ニ貧弱デタ。
山田/YAMADA/ハ三人ニ對シテ僅カニ。錠ノキニネヲ喫ヘタケ
テ而モ此ハ私達ニ僅ク一度切リ與ヘラタゲタ。後ニソツテ彼ハ一度
錠ヲ又一度セ。錠ヲ私達ニ與ヘシタ。收容所テハマリヤニヨク罹リシタ。
私達ガ藥ヲ頼ム母ニ山田/YAMADA/ハ「マ」語テ何時モ「貴下
方ハ何爲ニ藥ガ飲シノカ。貴下方ガ早ク死スルハ私ニ好都合ナク」
ト答ヘルノデタ。誰カガ死ニカツテ居テ私達ガ夜燈ヲ頼ムモ私達ハ許
サレセシタ。

No. 6

三人ノ赤子が收容所ニ生レシタ。最初ノ赤子ノ出生時ノ母親ハ
マリ被抑留者ダッタ收容所ノ看護婦一人ニ附添ハレシタ。收容
所ニ生レタ他ノ赤子ノ母親ハ同舎ノ病院ニ送ラレシタ。其所ニ監
禁ガ人居シタガ彼ハ少シモ彼等ヲ世話シセシタ。ソニテ彼等ハ土着
民ノ看護婦ニ附添ハレシタ。彼等ハ余分ノ食物トテ供給サレシタ
シタガ母親達ハ皆元氣デタ。收容所ノ子供達中幾人カハ私ノ死後ノ
中七八人ノ子供ダッタと思ヒマスガ皆脚氣テ死亡シシタ。
私達ガ收容サレタ時私達ハ二三ノ着物ヲ除キテ私達自身ノ財産ハ何モ

doc 5555

收容所ニ持ッテ行キマセンデシタ。日本人ハ私達ノ鞆ヤ箱ヲ調べ上ゲテ目屋ニイモノハ何テモ取りマシタ。私ハヤット金ノケースニッダテ助ケル事カ出来マシタ。

只今五才ニナリヌ私ノ娘ハ收容所ヲ赤痢ニ罹リマシタ。彼女ハ今入院中ニス。山田/YAMADAハ便所ニ行ク時ハ何時モ余リ自分ノ身ヲ敵ヲ事ニ構ヒマセンデシタ。彼ハ三方カ開イテ居ル竹ノ小屋ニ任ニテ居マシタ。ソシテ彼ハ衝立ヲ持ッテ居ルニモ拘ラズ彼ハソレヲ用ヒヌニ婦人ノ前テ衣服ヲ脱イダリ着クヲリスルノガ常デシタ。彼カ便所ニ行ク時ハ木綿ノ半ズボンヲ著ケテ行ク丈デソレモ何モ纏ッテ居ナイト同然デシタ。

キャンプノ門番ハ收容所ニ入ッテ來ル配給物ニ對シ署名シナケレバナラナイノデシタ。私ハ一度山田/YAMADAニ特配ヲ求メハ。キロノ代リニ九。キロヲ受ケタコトガアリマシタ。門番ハ九。キロト署名シタノデスガ然シ食糧カ搬入サレタ時小山田/YAMADAハ既ニ署名サレタ袋ノ中ノ一ツヲ取ルノデシタ。

私達ハアエルコデイ/AERMADEIノテハ只一人ノ赤十字ノ人カラモ訪問サレマセンデシタ。日本將校ハ時々收容所ニヤンテ來マシタ。高崎/TAKASAKIト云フ人ハ、四度許リ來マシタ。苦情カ彼ニ持込マレヌト彼ノ居ルニ、三日間私達モ助カリマシタガ、彼カ行ッテシマウト直ケ元ノ食物配給ニ立歸リマシタ。高崎/TAKASAKIハ男爵テ海軍將校デシタ。

婦人カ收容所テ死ニヌスト、他ノ婦人達カ墓ヲ掘リソシテ死体ヲ墓邊運バネハナリマセンデシタ。私達ハ又自分達ノ用便ノ穴モ掘ラナケレバナリマセンデシタ。

洗濯ノ設備モ非常ニ貧弱デシタ。私達ハ流水カナクツタノテ毎日午后四時番人附テ收容所ノ外ヘ行キニ十杯位ノバケツノ水ヲ台所ニ運バネバナリマセンデシタ。ソレカラ私達ハ一ニ杯ノバケツノ水ヲ自分ノ爲ニ運バネバナラナクツタノデス。私達ハ其ノ水デ着物ヲ洗ヒ入浴シナケレバナラナクツタノデス。

No. 7

Doc 5555

收容所ニ持ッテ行キマセテシタ。日本人ハ私達ノ靴ヤ箱ヲ調べテ目
屋ニモハ何テモ取リマシタ。私ハヤツト金ノケースヲダケ助ケル事ガ出来
シタ。

只今五才ナリヌ私ノ娘ハ收容所ヲ赤痢ヲ罹リマシタ。彼女ハ今入院中矣。
山田/YAMADA/ハ便所ニ行ク時ハ何時モ余リ自分ノ身ヲ蔽フ事ヲ構ヒ
セテシタ。彼ハ三方ガ開イテ居ル竹ノ小屋ニ住ニテ居マシタ。ソレヲ彼衝立
ヲ持ッテ居ルニ拘ラス彼ハソレヲ用ヒズニ婦人ノ前テ衣服ヲ脱イダリ着タ
リスルガ常デシタ。彼ガ便所ニ行ク時ハ木綿ノ半ズボニヲ著ケテ行ク女ヲ
ソレモ何モ纏ッテ居ナイト自然デシタ。

キャブノ門番ハ收容所ニツテ來ル配給物ニ對シ署名ニケレバナラナイコト
ヲ私ハ度山田/YAMADA/ニ特配ヲ求メ。キロノ代リニ九。キロヲ受ケタ
コトアリマシタ。門番九。キロト署名シタ。テスガ然シ食糧ガ搬入サレタ時ハ
田/YAMADA/ハ既ニ署名サレタ袋中ノソレヲ取ルデシタ。

私達ハアエルマデー/AERMADEDI/テハ只一人ハ赤十字ノ人カラモ訪問サ
レシテシタ。日本將校ハ時々收容所ニマシテ來マシタ。高崎/TAKASAKI/ト
言フ人ハ四度許リ來シタ。吾情ガ彼ニ特達マシヌト彼ノ居ルニ三日間私
達モ助カリマシタガ彼ガ行ッテシマウト直ぐ元ノ食物配給ニ立歸リマシタ。高
崎/TAKASAKI/ハ男爵ヲ海軍將校デシタ。

婦人ガ收容所テ死ニヌスト他ノ婦人達ガ墓ヲ掘リソレニ死体ヲ發掘運バネ
ナリマセシテシタ。私達ハ又自分達ノ用便ノ穴ヲ掘リケレバナリマセシタ。

No. 7

洗濯設備モ非常ニ貧弱デシタ。私達ハ流水ガナクツタデ毎日午后四時番
人附テ收容所ノ外ヘ行キテ杯位ノバケツノ水ヲ台所ニ運バネバナリマセシ
タ。ソレカラ私達ハ一二杯ノバケツノ水ヲ自分ノ爲ニ運バネバナリマセシタ。
私達ハ其ノ水ヲ着物ヲ洗ヒ入浴ニケレバナラナクツタデス。

Doc 5555

收容所ニ持ッテ行キマセテシタ。日本人、私達ノ靴、ヤ、箱ヲ調ベテ目
屋ニモ、何テモ取リマシタ。私、ヤット金、ウ、ス、ト、ダ、ク、助、ケル、事、が、出、来、
シ、タ。

只今吾等ニナリヌ私、娘、ハ、收容所、ヲ、赤、刺、籠、リ、マ、シ、タ。彼、女、ハ、今、院、中、
山田 / YAMADA / 便所ニ行ク時、何時モ余リ自分、身ヲ蔽フ事ニ構ヒ
セテシタ。彼、ハ、三、方、が、開、イ、テ、居、ル、竹、ノ、小、屋、ニ、住、ニ、居、マ、シ、タ。ソ、レ、
ヲ、持、ッ、テ、居、ル、モ、拘、ラ、ズ、彼、ハ、ソ、レ、ヲ、用、ヒ、ズ、ニ、婦、人、ノ、前、テ、衣、服、ヲ、脱、イ、
ダ、リ、着、タ、リ、ス、ル、が、常、デ、シ、タ。彼、ノ、便、所、ニ、行、ク、時、木、綿、ノ、半、ズ、
ボ、ヲ、著、ケ、テ、行、ク、文、デ、ソ、レ、モ、何、モ、纏、ッ、テ、居、
ナ、イ、ト、同、然、デ、シ、タ。

キャンプ、門番、ハ、收容所、ニ、ス、ッ、テ、來、ル、配、給、物、ニ、對、シ、署、名、
ニ、ケ、レ、バ、ナ、イ、ト、シ、タ。私、ハ、度、山田 / YAMADA / 三、特、配、
ヲ、求、メ、ハ、キ、ロ、ノ、代、リ、ニ、九、ノ、キ、ロ、ヲ、受、ケ、
テ、コ、ト、ア、リ、マ、シ、タ。門、番、ハ、キ、ロ、ト、署、名、
ニ、タ、ノ、テ、ス、ガ、然、シ、食、糧、が、搬、入、
サ、シ、タ、時、山田 / YAMADA / 既、ニ、署、名、
サ、レ、タ、袋、中、ノ、ソ、ヲ、取、ル、
デ、シ、タ。

私達、ハ、ア、エ、ル、マ、デ、イ、
AERMADEI / 一、人、ノ、赤、十、字、
ノ、人、カ、ラ、モ、訪、問、セ、
ラ、レ、テ、シ、タ。日、本、將、校、
ハ、時、々、收、容、所、ニ、マ、
シ、テ、來、マ、シ、タ。高崎 /
TAKASAKI / 一、言、フ、
人、ハ、四、度、許、リ、來、マ、
シ、タ。苦、情、が、彼、ニ、持、
込、マ、シ、テ、シ、タ。彼、ノ、
居、ル、ニ、三、日、間、私、
達、モ、助、カ、リ、マ、シ、
タ、が、彼、が、行、ッ、テ、
シ、タ、ウ、ト、直、ク、元、
ノ、食、物、配、給、ニ、立、
歸、リ、マ、シ、タ。高
崎 / TAKASAKI / 一、男、
將、校、
ヲ、海、軍、將、校、
デ、シ、タ。

婦、人、が、收、容、所、
デ、死、ニ、マ、ス、ト、他、
ノ、婦、人、達、が、墓、ヲ、
掘、リ、ソ、ノ、死、体、
ヲ、墓、迄、運、
ビ、
テ、リ、マ、セ、テ、シ、
タ。私、達、又、自、分、
達、ノ、用、便、ノ、穴、
ヲ、掘、ラ、ケ、レ、
バ、ナ、イ、ト、シ、
タ。

No. 7

洗濯、設備、
モ、非、常、ニ、貧、
弱、デ、シ、タ。私、
達、ハ、流、水、
ガ、ナ、ク、ツ、タ、
テ、毎、日、午、
后、四、時、番、
人、附、テ、
收、容、所、
ノ、外、
ニ、行、
キ、二、
杯、位、
ノ、バ、ケ、
ツ、ノ、
水、ヲ、
台、所、
ニ、運、
ビ、
ネ、
バ、
ナ、
リ、
マ、
セ、
シ、
タ。
ソ、
レ、
ヲ、
私、
達、
ハ、
二、
杯、
ノ、
バ、
ケ、
ツ、
ノ、
水、
ヲ、
自、
分、
ノ、
爲、
ニ、
運、
ビ、
ネ、
バ、
ナ、
ラ、
カ、
ツ、
タ、
シ、
タ。
私、
達、
其、
ノ、
水、
ヲ、
着、
物、
ヲ、
洗、
ヒ、
入、
浴、
ニ、
ケ、
レ、
バ、
ナ、
ラ、
カ、
ツ、
タ、
シ、
タ。

5555
R221

小田 / YAMADA / が誰か訪問者ヲ豫期シテ居ルニ、彼、常ニ私ヲ呼ビ、ニ
私ニ私達ガ彼等ト何、位、時間語スヲ許サレカヲ告グマ、又或時、彼、若
シ私ガ苦情ヲ申スレハ、毆ルト言ツテ嚇シマシタ。然レ私苦情ヲ訴ヘニシタ、ハ果
山田 / YAMADA / ニシテ、就今耳ニ入りセシマシタ、テ私ハ毆ラセシマシタ、
平和、調印後、四、五日經テ私達、六、街ヲ歩キ廻ルコトヲ許サレシタ。私達、實際
ニ解放サレタ、ハ、一九四五年九月十五日デシタ。
私ハ山田 / YAMADA / ヲ認證スルコトが出来マス。彼ハ通稱「海狸」 / The
Beaver / 、「テ」ヲテ居マシタ。

私ハ上述ノ證據ガ真摯ニシテ正確ナルコトヲ證明致シマス。

H. E. ROLF / A. L. ROLFF / 署名

一九四五年九月二十七日 北田 / MOROTAI / 於テ余ハ面州ニテ

證明及宣誓セリ

委員

H. E. MANSFIELD / A. J. MANSFIELD / 署名

私ハ本日山田 / YAMADA / ナル日本人ヲ見シタ、而シテ、
收買所ノ管理者トシテ、證據中ニ述ベタル人物トシテ彼ヲ認證致シマス。

一九四五年九月二十一日

H. E. ROLF / A. L. ROLFF / 署名

No. 8

5555
19221

小田 / YAMADA が誰か訪問者ヲ豫期シテ居ルキ、彼、常ニ私ヲ呼ビ、ニ
私ニ私達ガ彼等ト何、位、時間語スコトヲ許サレバ告ケマス、又或時、彼若
シ私ガ苦情ヲ申スレバ、敵ト言フヲ嫌ヒシタ。然レ私苦情ヲ訴ヘニシタ、兵
山田 / YAMADA ニシテ、就イテ再ニ入リセシメテ、私ニ敵ヲシセシメテ、
平和、調印後、四、五日經テ私達ニ、街ヲ歩キ廻ルコトヲ許サレシタ。私達ニ實際
ニ解放サレタ、一九四五年九月十五日デシタ。
私ハ山田 / YAMADA ヲ認證スルコトガ出来マス。彼、通稱「海狸」 / The
Beaver / 知ラシテ居シタ。

私ハ上述、證據ガ眞實ニシテ正確ナルコトヲ證明致シマス。

H. E. ROLF / A. L. ROLFF / 署名

一九四五年九月二十七日 北極星 / NOROTAI / 於テ余ニ面テ
證明及宣誓セリ
委員

H. J. MANSFIELD / A. J. MANSFIELD / 署名

私ハ本日山田 / YAMADA / ナル日本人ヲ見シタ、而シテ、此ノ人、AERIMADEL /
收買所、管理者トシテ、私、證據中ニ述ベタル人物トシテ彼ヲ認證致シマス。

一九四五年九月二十六日

H. E. ROLF / A. L. ROLFF / 署名

16.8

Ex. # 1813

CHRISTIAN HENDRIK WENSVEEN, being duly sworn, gives the following evidence:

My full name is Christian Hendrik Wensveen.

Prior to the war I was a member of the Militia. I was taken prisoner in Makassar and remained in the camp at Makassar for 1½ years. I was arrested because I had been seen with Cortmans, my colonel. I was taken to the Japanese Gestapo House on 8 June 1943 and remained there until 30 September 1943. I was put into a cell 2½ metres long and 2 metres wide; there were eight people altogether in this cell. We were made to sit up and were not allowed to speak at all during the day but at about 8 o'clock at night if the sentry was good he would let us lay down until 7 o'clock on the following morning, when we had breakfast. The food was very bad and insufficient in quantity. We had no food at all for the first three days and after that we received only a handful of rice twice a day. All the other people were kept in the cell with me. I was beaten with a stick for 14 days all day long and also at night time. The Japanese wanted me to give information and when I kept silence he continued to beat me. He hung me up by the feet and twisted me around and then let me go so that I spun around. When I was beaten I was standing with my hands above my head. For the first two days I was hung up by the feet for about five or ten minutes on each occasion. The Japanese responsible for this was named Oku. Nobody besides the Japanese and myself was present at the time. The Japanese would also beat us if we told them we were not being treated well. Oku also burnt me under the arms with a cigarette lighter and also beat me about the face with his fists. He made me sign a document which he would not translate for me and I also had to put my thumb print on a blank paper; what he wrote above it I do not know.

While I was in this prison camp I saw many people beaten, including a woman, Mrs. Parimussa. The Japanese called me over and when I went inside the building I saw this woman tied with her hands behind her back. The Japanese told us that we all must watch what he was about to do. He pulled up her clothes and pushed a stick into her private parts; this was done in front of all the people present. She was also slapped and when she was released she fell down. My wife then took her to her cell; she was in the same prison camp. The Japanese responsible for this was Simitsu.

I saw my wife hit with a stick by Monabe but I took the stick from him and told him we did not beat women. Mrs. Parks was also beaten but I do not know the Japanese responsible although I think he was a sergeant-major. I could identify him. One of the Indonesians, Maedoe, also beat the prisoners; he was promoted by the Japanese to the position of sentry and he gave the men much less food than they needed. Other Japanese guards at the camp were Mizaka, Yamasaki and Nakashima, who was a particularly bad fellow. He used to beat the prisoners without reason, both with his hands and with a stick. One Japanese sergeant was very good to us and very kind to the women; he never beat any of the prisoners. The sick men at the camp were not given any medical treatment.

I then went over to the Japanese military prison and remained there until 5 October 1944. This was a very bad prison and we were very much overcrowded. When I was there there were more than 100 prisoners, 10 of whom died from dysentery and beri beri. Sick men were not given any food for two or three days and they died also from starvation as well as dysentery and beri beri. One particularly bad sentry was Watanabe. He tied us up in a sitting position and if we moved at all he would beat us. Many prisoners were treated in this manner. They were beaten with sticks and sometimes with the flat of a sword.

On 5 October 1944 I went to the Indonesian prison at Liensiebu, where I remained until 24 June 1945. I told the sentries there not to beat me because when the war was over I would remember them, and as a result they were a bit afraid of me. One Indonesian guard named Abdul Hamid used to sneer at us. The food at the camp was not very bad; we received rice for two months and after that we were given maize. Many of the prisoners suffered from dysentery. One of the Japanese, Sumi, who was a good man, put me in charge of the kitchen and the health of the men improved then. Many had ulcers and medicines were very scarce.

I then went to Makale and stayed there until 13 August 1945. I was locked in a room there. In the morning we were allowed to go to the lavatory but we had no water. We received food twice a day and it was insufficient in quantity; we received only rice and maize. Medicines could not be obtained for those suffering from malaria. There were 13 of us in the room and two women also had been brought to Makale. Yabe was in charge of this prison camp.

When I was in the Tokel Tai prison at Makassar, we were sometimes not allowed to go to the lavatory for three or four days and then only for two minutes. We used to have small tins in the cell which we emptied when we went to the lavatory. We were not allowed to use soap or to wash at all.

In December 1943 I was taken to the Japanese headquarters in Makassar and was there questioned and beaten with a stick and punched by a Japanese Lieutenant (Junior Grade). I was handcuffed when I was beaten. I had to hold a can of water out in front of me on another occasion and the Japanese also screwed a stick into my foot. I was given rice three times a day which amounted to a smaller quantity than we received in the two meals previously and was totally insufficient.

I certify that the above evidence is true and correct.

Taken and sworn before me)
")
at Makassar on 25 October)
1945.)
/s/)
Commissioner)

Doc. # 5522

「...」此日本人之目的在於... (text partially illegible)

此捕房收容所... (text describing the detention facility and the Japanese perspective on the prisoners)

此... 捕房... 收容所... (detailed description of the conditions and treatment of prisoners)

No. 2

其... 日本... 一九四... (text at the bottom of the page)

No. 3

一九四四年十月五日、私ハ民政部ニ在ル「インドネシア」人刑務所
ニ行キ其処ニ九四五年六月二十四日迄居マシタ。其処ノ衛兵ニ
私ハ戦争が終ンテモ君等ヲ賢エテ居ルノカカラ、私ヲ打ツテト
云ツテヤリマシタガ、其ノ結果彼等ハ私ヲ少シ怖レマシタ。「インド
ネシア」人ノ一人「アブドウル、ハミッド」ト云フ者ハ吾々ヲヨク嘲笑
シタモノデス。此ノ收容所ノ食物ハ、サウ悪クハアリマセンデシタ。ニヶ
月ノ間ハ米ヲ支給サレ、其後ハ、玉蜀黍ヲ与ヘラシマシタ。多数
ノ捕虜が赤痢ニ罹リマシタ。「スミット」云フ一人ノ日本人ハ善良
ナ者デ、私ニ炊クヲ受持タセマシタ。其レカラ後ハ各人ノ健康ハ
増進シマシタ。多数ノ人達ニ腫物が出来マシタガ、薬ハ極ク少シ
シカアリマセンデシタ。

其後私ハ「マカレ」ニ行キマシタ。ソシテ一九四五年八月十三日迄
其処ニ居マシタ。其処デハ、私ハ一ツノ部屋ニ閉ヂ込メラレテ居リマシタ。

Doc. # 5522

此処ハ非常ニ悪イ所デ、余リニ多ク入レ過ギテ居リマシタ。
私カ其処ニ居タ時ニハ百名以上ノ捕虜ガ居リ、其ノ中十名ガ赤
痢ト脚氣デ死亡シマシタ。病人ニハ二、三日間ハ食物ガ与ヘラレマ
セシデシタ。其レデスカラ彼等ノ死因ニハ赤痢ヤ脚氣ト同様ニ
飢餓モアリマス。

特ニ悪イ一人ノ衛兵ハ渡辺ト云フノデシタ。彼ハ吾々ヲ腰ヲ掛ケ
タ儘縛リ付ケ若シ少シデモ動クト叩キマシタ。多数ノ捕虜
ガ此ノ様ナ目ニ愈ヒマシタ。彼等ハ棒ヲ叩カレタリ又時ニハ劍ノ
平タイ部分ヲ叩カレタリシマシタ。

Doc. # 5522

朝吾々ハ便所ニ行フ事ヲ許サシマシタガホハアリマセシデシタ。
吾々ハ一日ニ食テラヒマシタガ量ハ不充分デシタ。吾々ハ米ト玉蜀黍
ヲ受取ツタ、デシタ。「マシヤ」ニ置ツテ居ル者モ葉ヲモラヘ
マセシデシタ。吾々ハツ、部屋ニ十三人入ラシテ居リ。婦人モ三名カシ
ニ連テ来ラシマシタ。「ヤ」ト云フ者ガ此、收容所ヲ受持ツタ人デス。
私ガ「マカツサル」トケイタイ」刑務所ニ入ラシテ居タ時ハ吾々ハ
三四日間便所ニ行ク事ヲ許サシマシタ。事が時々アリマス。許サ
シテモ僅クニ二日間デシタ。監房内ニハ小サナ罐ガ備ヘ付ケテアリ、
其ヲ便所ニ行ツタ時ニ空ケル、デス。吾々ハ石鹼ヲ使フ事或ハ
身体ヲ洗フ事モ全ク許サシマセシデシタ。

一九四三年十二月ニ私ハ「マカツサル」ニ在ツタ日本軍ノ司令部ニ連
テ行カ、其処ニ日本軍ノ少尉ニ尋問サレタリ。棒ヲ叩カレタリ、
ボン改ラレタリシマシタ。叩カレ時ニハ手錠ガ掛ケラシマシタ。又或ル
折ニハ水ノ入ツタ罐ヲ身体ノ前ニ捧ケテ持ツテ居テケレバナリマ
セシデシタ。ソクシテ、日本人ハ又私ノ足ニ棒ヲネジ込シタ、デシタ。
私ハ一日ニ三回飯ヲモラヒマシタガ、其ノ量ハ以前ニ一日ニ回モラヒタリ
少量デ、全ク不充分ナモノデシタ。

余ハ上記ノ證據ノ眞実ニシテ且正確ナル事ヲ證ス。
一九四五年十月二十五日「マカツサル」ニテ余ノ面前ニテシタタメ誓
言シタルモノナリ

No. 4

(署名) 判讀シ難シ
「ニミツシヨタイ」

Q. #1814

DOCUMENT NO. 5523

PAGE 2

TRANSLATION:

I, Djon Sampok, of Menadonese race, and rank of gunner 1st class military number 32150 saw evidence of commission (of a crime) which took place at Lolobata, Halmaherain March 1944 as set forth below:-

At the time when I was engaged in boat fishing I encountered villagers at sea and they told that behind the village of Lolobata there was a Menadonese tied to a tree. I came straight to the place mentioned but the man tied there had been beheaded while his body remained tied but the man's head had been buried. By the man's uniform and his body I knew him and witness that it was that of an acquaintance of mine named SUMAKUL of Menadonese race and rank of fusilier. Subsequently I got to know that the sforesaid had been tied up and beheaded by Japanese whose place was not far from the place of the commission of the Crime because he tried to save a young female relative, who worked at this place, from the Japanese.

Merauke 5 December 1944.

I who make this declaration and set my hand hereto swear before an officer of NIO

Sgd. SAMPOK
Sgd. K. A. de MURTER, Lt. NIO

'INTERROGATOR'S note:- The young woman was a forced inmate of a brothel.

DOCUMENT 5523

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CORNELIS JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NEDERLANDS MOEDERS INVEESTIGINGDIENST (NEDIS), being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed reports are full, true, complete and accurate copies of the original eleven documents entitled:

" Nedis Interrogation Report (No. 730) of Sapek Djon; (No. 803) of Antale; (No. 1404) of Kaliajo bin Dariman; (No. 1475) of Among bin Radji Boedjajar; (No. 1477) of Borehan bin Brahim; (No. 1404 corrected) of Kaliajo bin Dariman; (No. 1544) of Antoek bin Nassan; (No. 1548) of Siap bin Markassan; with annexed six Malay Statements (and English translations) of the same witnesses, concerning the murder of three Indonesians, name of DJAJA (Sumatran), LAJAJA (Bugenese) and SUREKUL (Manadonese), by Japanese on the Island of Palmarera in the month of, respectively, April 1943 and March 1944, numbered 1 to 10A,"

which documents are part of the official records of the NEDIS.

SIGNATURE:

(
(
(S E A L)
(/s/ Cn. Jongeneel)
()

Batavia, June 7th 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney - General N.I.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

EXHIBIT NO. 1814

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Vertical Japanese text, likely a transcription or list of items, arranged in columns from right to left. The text is partially obscured by the 'RETURN TO ROOM 361' stamp.

5523-2

ヲ以テラウトシタタメニ其ノ日本ノ人等ニ傳ハラレタ上
 ニ首ヲ領奪サレタノダト云フ事ヲ知リマシタ。
 メラウケ 昭和十九年（西曆一九四四年）十二月五
 日
 N I O ノ士官ノ前ニ於テ私が發シテ説明シ野名シマ
 ス

サンボック

野名

N I O ノ少尉 K パテームンテル

野名

Doc 5523 (cont)

第五五二三

證 人 名

下記姓名、オランダ軍情報部 戦争犯罪課長
印 度 軍、 陸 軍 中 尉 CHARLES JONGEHEIJ
ハ 初ニ正式ニ宣誓ノ上、次ノ如ク証言シ且陳述
ス

添附ノ報告書ハ下記姓名ノ十一通ノ原文書ノ、
全部ノ、眞實ノ、完全且正確ナル爲シナルコト

- 「SALPOK DJOH / KANTALE」
サンボクジヨシニ對スル (七三〇號) カンタレ
- ニ對スル (八〇三號) / KALIDJO BIN DARIMAN
カリジヨ。ビン。ダリマン
- ニ對スル (一四〇四號) / AMPONG BIN HADJI
アンポン。ビン。ハジ。
- 「BOHDJAPAR / BOHE」
ボハ。ヤハ。ールニ對スル (一四七五號) ボヘ
- ム。ビン。アラヒムニ對スル (一四七七號)
- 「KALIDJO BIN DARIMAN」
カリジヨ。ビン。ダリマンニ對スル (訂正一四〇
四號) / ANTOEK BIN KASSAM
アントエク。ビン。カッサムニ對スル (
- 一六四五號) / SIAP BIN MARHASSAN
シアア。ビン。マルハッサムニ對
スル (一六四六號) オランダ軍情報部談話録、
及ビソノソノ一九四三年四月及ビ一九四四年三月
「HAJEANERA / DJA」
ハルマヘラニ於テ日本兵ニ殺リ犯サレタルジヤ
「SUMATORAN / IKAHA」
ナン (スマトラ人) ラヤハ (アイゲン人) 及ビス
「SUMAKUL / JENADONESE」
マクル (マナド人) 三名ノインドネシヤ人殺害ニ
對スル一乃至十ト番號ヲ附セラレタル、右證人
等ノ馬來語陳述書 (及ビソノ英語) 六通添附シ

Doc 5523 (cont)

上記書翰ハオランダ軍情報部ノ公式記録ノ一部
ナルコト

署名

CHARLES. JONGENEEL

チャールス・ヨングネール 軍情報部印

BATAVIA

バタヴィア 一九四六年六月七日

余、オランダ領東インド駐在軍情報部長部附高級記録
官、オランダ領東インド陸軍中尉、ケイ・エイ・
ヴェールトノ面前ニ於テ署名宣書サレタリ

K. A. de VEERD

ケイ・エイ・テ ヴェールト 署名

Q # 1815

DOCUMENT NO. 5529

~~IN RE: HOESEIN BIN ABDOLLAH~~

Sheet 4

XI. ATROCITIES A. Factual - Declaration:

Foelie-Wasile Bay
Halmahera Sep 43

Before me

M. B. Bell NIO

I who sign here under HOESEIN bin Abdoellah of race Boegis saw the murders of two men as stated below:

In the month of September 1945, date I have forgotten, at about 3 p.m. I saw two Jap. superior officers accompanied by soldiers, go to the sea shore to the front of a coolie barracks, all were fully armed. They were all Japanese. The names of the aforesaid superior officers were OKI and WATA both Captains,

Thereupon there took place:

1. The beheading with a sword by an unknown Jap of a Boegis from Makassar named SOENNOESI which was done under the orders of OKI and WATA aforesaid. Soencesi was head overseer of coolies.
2. The bayoneting to death of a Javanese named SIMALI who worked as an overscer of coolies by a Japanese name unknown but under orders also of OKI and WATA aforesaid.

Both corpses were burned in one hole and buried there.

Hollandia 19 Mar 45
I who make this declaration sign and swear before an Officer of NIO.

Before me,
M. B. Bell NIO (signed).

Hoesein (Signed)

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed reports are full, true, complete and accurate copies of the original documents entitled:

1. NEFIS reports of interrogation of HOESAIN bin ABDULLAH (No 1565) of SINOM bin LADIMAN (1816), and of MOHAMAD BIN KADIR (No 1822)
2. Sworn statements in Malay (with English translations) of the same informants, dated respectively Hollandia 19 March 1945, 10 April 1945 and 13 April 1945.

which documents are a part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE:

(
(/s/ Ch Jongeneel)
)

BATAVIA, June 7th 1946

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the office of the Attorney General N.E.I.

/s/ K. A. de Weerd

又又三ー及ビシナリーニ名、處殺争伴一

Doc 5529

然ハ「ギス」人「アセ」ン「アゴ」ラ「下」之「者」テ「二名」ニ「處殺」
ヲ「目撃」シ「マシタ」ル「ヲ」龍「記」通「シ」詭「明」イ「タ」シ「マ」ス
「ハ」ル「ハ」ラ「ウ」イ「シ」ル「満」ノ「ア」リ「一」時「ニ」在「テ」昭「和」十「八」年「(西暦」
「九」四「五」年)「九」月「十」日「ハ」忘「レ」マ「シ」タ「ガ」午「後」三「時」段「ニ」名「ノ」日「本」
將「校」ハ「兵」ト「共」ニ「海」邊「ノ」勞「務」者「用」宿「舎」ノ「側」ノ「下」ノ「方」ニ
完「全」武「装」ヲ「ミ」テ「見」テ「マ」シ「タ」夫「レ」ハ「金」部「ガ」日「本」人「テ」シ「タ」
ト「シ」將「校」ノ「名」亦「ハ」大「木」及「ビ」和「田」ト「云」フ「テ」兩「人」共「ニ」大「尉」ト「シ」
タ「リ」時「ニ」約「ハ」ル「多」ク「ハ」龍「記」通「シ」マ「ス

Ex 1815

「マ」カ「ツ」サ「ル」ガ「ギ」ス「人」三「テ」又「又」シ「ト」云「フ」勞「務」者「ノ」人「共」數
ヲ「務」メ「テ」居「ル」者「ヲ」名「亦」ハ「知」ラ「タ」ガ「大」木「大」尉「及」ビ「和」田
大「尉」ノ「部」下「デ」アル「日」本「人」ニ「依」リ「軍」力「ヲ」斬「ラ」シ「マ」シ「タ」
「シ」テ「ハ」人「ニ」シ「テ」ナ「リ」ト「云」フ「勞」務「者」ノ「又」夫「願」ヲ「務」メ「テ」
居「ル」者「ヲ」名「亦」ハ「知」ラ「タ」ガ「大」木「大」尉「ト」和「田」大「尉」ノ
部「下」デ「アル」日「本」兵「ニ」依「リ」銃「劍」ニ「テ」刺「殺」サ「レ」マ「シ」タ
ト「シ」死「体」ヲ「穴」中「ニ」燒「カ」シ「タ」ト「シ」埋「メ」ラ「レ」タ「事」ヲ
私「ハ」見「マ」シ「タ

No. 7

ホ「ル」ラ「ン」デ「イ」ア「昭」和「十」八「年」(西「暦」一「九」四「五」年)「三」月「九」日
名「ハ」N10ノ「士」官、亦「三」名「テ」在「テ」詭「明」シ「署名」及「ビ」モ「ノ」テ
アリ「マ

「ア」セ「ン」(署名)

名「亦」ニ「テ」N10 MB「ル」(署名)

Doc 5529

證明書

下記署名如者、和蘭軍情報局戦犯部長 蘭印陸軍中尉
 「ヤルス、ミゲネル」ハ、先ヅ、正式ニ宣誓シ、之、本添附調書ハ在
 記標題、原本、完全ニ真ニ且、正確ナル寫本ニテ、尚何
 書類ガ和蘭軍情報局、公武記録、一部タルヲ、證言ハ
 (一) 和蘭軍情報部、「シム、ヒ、ラゲネ」(オ一五六五號)
 「シム、ヒ、ラゲネ」(オ一八六號)及「ヒ、ラゲネ、カゲル」(オ一
 二號)、訊問調書
 (二) 各「ホ、ラゲネ」一九四五年三月十九日、一九四五年四月十日及「一五五」
 年四月十三日附同之報告者、馬來語宣誓證書
 (英語譯文付)

署名如 (ヤルス、ミゲネル)

一九四六年六月七日

バタウィヤ市

余、蘭領東印度檢事総長

事務所付 高崎官 蘭印軍中尉

「ケ、エ、テ、ケ、エ、ル」ハ、面前ニ於テ

署名如且宣誓セルニテリ。

署名如 「ケ、エ、テ、ケ、エ、ル」

Doc No 114

Q # 1816

AFFIDAVIT
of
JOHAN MAIRUHU

On Friday the 5th of May 1945 there appeared before myself, Eduard Jan Uilckenbeck, Police Officer 1st class, a man of Ambonese race named Mairuhu Jehan, 35, occupation overseer in a NICA hospital in Morotai, who stated as follows:

At the time that I was employed as a cook for the Japanese Heiho's in August or September 1944 in Kampong Soegita, Morotai, I went to Tandjong Barce to get coconuts. There I met two Indonesians named Saribin and Mochamad. These two men confessed to me that they were spies working for the U.S.A.. Saribin was fully equipped with a wireless-set and Mochamad was his assistant. They both told me that they had landed from a U.S. submarine with rations for only one and a half month. But since they had already been on the island for nearly two months and had no food left, they were compelled to ask me for food. Upon the request of these two spies, I gave them food four times. Also someone else from the village, by the name of Oeloe, gave them food.

When my food that consisted of saigo was exhausted, I asked help from Oeloe to supply the two spies with food from his garden at Tandjong Gerano. At the same time I warned Oeloe not to reveal this matter to anyone, not even to his wife, because it was a matter of extreme secrecy. These two spies remained hidden in a cave, close to Oeloe's garden in Tandjong Isioe. However Oeloe became afraid, as the Japanese issued a warning that whoever failed to report such things, he and his whole family would surely be put to death.

Oeloe reported the matter to the village-headman, named Soerabaya Djoenroet, and the latter informed the Japanese. Subsequently, I was called up, tied and beaten in order to make me confess everything that had happened.

The Jap. spy named Mohamad Lien also interrogated me. After being interrogated for two days, we were sentenced to death by beheading, whereupon six Japanese took us to the jungle. We were made to kneel and were bound with an iron chain. Then the Japanese cut our necks with a sword. This happened approximately on the 15th of September 1944 at 7 a.m..

Those beheaded were:

1. Oeloe.
2. Saribin.
3. Mairuhu, Johan (witness, not killed).
4. Mochamad.

-2-

After some hours I regained consciousness and could breathe again. I fled, and after three days walking I struck upon the U.S. forces which had landed in Morotai, and I was brought to and treated in the U.S. hospital.

Witness,

Signed, Mairuhu

This statement is made on oath.

Morotai 5 May 1945.

Signed: E.J. Uhlenbeck,
Police Officer 1st class.

二

三

ヨーハンマイルフ船三隻ノ斬首刑事件

報 務

5530-1

昭和二十年（西曆一九四五年）五月五日金曜日ニ
 私一等看護エドワードヤンウィルンベツクノ前ニ
 一人ノアンボン人デアルマイルフト云フ三十五才
 ノモロタイノ蘭印民政部ノ病院ニ於テ使丁頭ヲ勤
 メテ居ル者ガ左記ノ通り説明セリ

「當時私ハモロタイノスギタ町ニアル日本軍兵補
 等ノ料理ハトシテ勤メテ居ツタ時ニシテ昭和十九
 年（西曆一九四四年）ノ八月カ九月頃ノ事デシタ。
 私ハ丁度タンジョンバルト云フ處ニ椰子ノ實ヲ
 取りニ行ツタ時デス其處デインドネシア人ノサリ
 ビントモハマツドトモフ二人ノ者ニ會ヒマシタ
 ソシテ彼等カラ吾々兩人共米國ノ密偵デサリピン
 ハラジヨノ設備ヲヤル者デモハマツドハ其ノ助手
 デアル事ヲ聞カツレ尙私ニ次ノヤウナ事ヲ話シテ
 呉レマシタ

吾々二人ハ米國海軍ノ潜水艦ヨリ一ケ月半ノ食糧
 ノ用意ヲシテ上陸シタ者デスガスデニ二ケ月近ク
 此ノ島内ニ暮シ用意シタ食糧モスデニ無クアツタ
 ノデ止ムヲ得ズ私ニ食糧ヲ貰ヒタイトノ話デシタ
 密偵二八等ノ要求ニ應ジ私ハ直ニ食糧ヲ四回彼等

ヨーハンマイルフ列三名ノ斬首刑事件

証 詞

昭和二十年（西曆一九四五年）五月五日金曜日ニ
私一等看護エドワードヤンウールンベックノ前ニ
一人ノアンボン人デアルマイルフト云フ三十五才
ノモロタイノ齒印民政部ノ病院ニ於テ使丁頭ヲ勤
メテ居ル者カ左記ノ通り説明セリ

「當時私ハモロタイノスギタ町ニアル日本軍兵補
等ノ料理ハトシテ勤メテ居ツタ時ニシテ昭和十九
年（西曆一九四四年）ノ八月カ九月頃ノ事デシタ。
私ハ丁度タンジヨンバルト云フ處ニ椰子ノ安ヲ
取リニ行ツタ時デス某處デインドネシア人ノサリ
ピントモハマツドトモフ二人ノ者ニ會ヒマシタ
ソシテ彼等カラ吾々兩人共米國ノ密偵デサリピン
ハラジオノ設備ヲヤル者デモハマツドハ其ノ助手
デアル事ヲ聞カツレ尙私ニ次ノヤウナ事ヲ話シテ
呉レマシタ
吾々二人ハ米國海軍ノ潜水艦ヨリ一ヶ月半ノ食糧
ノ用意ヲシテ上陸シタ者デスガスデニ二ヶ月近ク
此ノ島内ニ暮シ用意シタ食糧モスデニ無クナツタ
ノデ止ムラ得ズ私ニ食糧ヲ貰ヒタイトノ話デシタ
密偵二人等ノ要求ニ應ジ私ハ直ニ食糧ヲ四回彼等

5530-1

5530-2

ニ與ヘマシタウルト云フ一人ノ村人モ彼等ニ食
物ヲ與ヘマシタ
丁度私ノサゴ一殿粉デ造ツタ食物ガ無クナツタ時
其ノ町ノ住民デアルウル一ナル者ニタンジヨンゴ
ラノニアアル彼ノ農園デ探レタ食物ヲ彼ノ二名ノ密
偵ニ分ケテ呉レルヤウ頼ンデ與ヘテ貸ヒマシタ
其ノ時私ハウル一ニ此ノ事ハ重大ナル秘密デア
カラ此ノ問題ニツイテハ他人ニハ勿論自分ノ妻ニ
サヘモ絶對ニ公開スルヤウナ事ノナイヤウニト呉
々モ注意ヲ與ヘマシタ
其ノ後彼ノ二人ノ密偵ハタンジヨンイシウト云フ
ウル一ノ農園ノ近クニアル一ツノ洞窟ニ隠レテ住
ンデ居リマシタ
デモ當時日本側ハコノヤウナ事件ニツイテ若シ報
告ラセヌ場合ハ本人ハ勿論家族ノ者ニマデ死刑ニ
處シ到底逃レル事ハ出來ヌトキツイ命令ガアツタ
ノデ怖シクナリ止ムヲ得ズウル一ハツイニ此ノ事
ヲ村長デアルスラバヤジユムルツトニ報告シタノ
デ其ノ村長ハ直ニ此ノ問題ヲ日本側ニ通知シマシ
タ
其ノ結果私ハ呼ビ出サレ此ノ問題ノ起ツタ事ニツ
キ總テヲ白狀スルヤウニ縛バラレタ上ニ毆ラレ
マシタ其レト共ニ日本ノ密偵デアアルモハマツドリ

5530-2

ニ與ヘマシタウルト云フ一人ノ村人モ彼等ニ食物ヲ與ヘマシタ

丁度私ノサゴ一殿粉ヲ造ツタ食物ガ經クホツタ時其ノ町ノ住民デアルウル一ナル者ニタソジヨソゴヲノニアアル彼ノ農園デ探レタ食物ヲ彼ノ二名ノ密偵ニ分ケテ呉レルヤウ續ソデ與ヘテ貫ヒマシタ

其ノ時私ハウル一ニ此ノ事ハ重大ナル秘密デアルカラ此ノ問題ニツイテハ他人ニハ勿論自分ノ妻ニサヘモ絕對ニ公開スルヤウナ事ノナイヤウニト呉々モ注意ヲ與ヘマシタ

其ノ後彼ノ二人ノ密偵ハタソジヨソイソウト云フウル一ノ農園ノ近クニアルトツノ洞窟ニ隠レテ住ソデ居リマシタ

デモ當時日本側ハコノヤウナ事件ニツイテ若シ報告ラセヌ場合ハ本人ハ勿論家族ノ者ニマデ死刑ニ處シ到底逃レル事ハ出來ヌトキツイ命令ガアツタノデ怖シクナリ止ムヲ得ズウル一ハツイニ此ノ事ヲ村長デアルスラバヤジユムルツトニ報告シタノデ其ノ村長ハ直ニ此ノ問題ヲ日本側ニ通知シマシタ

其ノ結果私ハ呼ビ出サレ此ノ問題ノ起ツタ事ニツキ總テヲ白狀スルヤウニト縛バラレタ上ニ毆ラレマシタ其レト共ニ日本ノ密偵デアルモハマツドリ

5530-3

ムノ取調へモ受ケマシタ

二日間ニ渡ル取調方終リ其ノ結果我々ハ斬首刑ニ

處セラル、警ニナリ六人ノ日本人ニ依リ森林ノ中

ニ連行サレ坐ラサレタ上ニ鐵ノ鏈ヲ縛ルト共ニ我

々ノ首ハ彼ノ日本人ノ軍刀ヲ斬ラレマシタノハク

シカ昭和十九年（西曆一九四四年）九月十五日ノ

朝七時ト思ヒマス

其ノ時ノ斬首刑トナツタ者ハ

一、ウル

二、サリビン

三、マイルフヨ一ハン（証人ニシテ死ナ、カツタ者）

四、モハマツド

何時間カ經ツテカラ私ハ息ヲ吹返ヘシ直ニ遣ツテ

迷ゲ出シテカラ三日目ニモロタイヨリ上陸シタ米

國軍ニ會ヒ助ケラレテ米國軍ノ病院ニテ治療ヲ受

ケマシタ

私マイルフヨ一ハンハ前記ノ証人ノ文面ヲ讀ミ候

實ニ相違ナキ事ヲ證明シテ審判官ノ前ニ於テ署名

シマス

證人 マイルフ 署名

此ノ説明ハ証人ノ宣誓シテ申述ベタ事ヲ認メテ作

製ス

モロタイ昭和二十年（西曆一九四五年）五月五日

一等警視

田中. ウーレンベック 署名

警類第五五三〇號

證

余朝倉純孝ハ余ガ馬來語及ビ日本語ニ精通セル
者ナルコト並ニ馬來語原文及ビ日本語原文ヲ對照
ノ上右ハ本警類ヲ眞實ニ且正確ニ翻譯セルモノナ
ルヲ確證セルコトヲ茲ニ證ス

一九四六年九月十六日

朝 倉 純 孝

5530-4

5530-5

證 明 書

下記署名和蘭軍情報局戦争犯罪部長、蘭印陸軍中尉「チャールズ、ヨンゲネール」ハ先ツ正式ニ宣誓ノ上、添函詢答及ビ寫眞ガ左記各標題原本ノ完全ニシテ眞正且正雜ナル爲本ニシテ、尙同誓類ハ和蘭軍情報局公式記録ノ一部ナルコトヲ證言ス

- 一、和蘭軍情報局訊問調書第一五〇九號、報告者「ヨハン、マイルフ」
- 二、「モロタイ」一九四五年五月五日附「ヨハン、マイルフ」ノ馬來語宣誓書英語翻譯附
- 三、處置後ニ於ケル「ヨハン、マイルフ」ノ寫眞二葉

署名（チャールズ、ヨンゲネール）

「バタビヤ」ニ於テ一九四六年六月七日

余、蘭領東印度檢察總長事務所附高等官、蘭印軍中尉「ケイ、エイ、ド、ヴェールド」ノ面前ニテ署名且宣誓セルモノナリ。

署名（ケイ、エイ、ド、ヴェールド）

5530-5

證 明 書

下記署名和蘭軍情報局戦争犯罪部長、蘭印陸軍中尉「チャールズ、ヨンゲネール」ハ先ツ正式ニ宣誓ノ上、添函詢答及ビ寫眞ガ左記各標題原本ノ完全ニシテ眞正且正確ナル寫本ニシテ、尙同誓類ハ和蘭軍情報局公式記録ノ一部ナルコトヲ證言ス

- 一、和蘭軍情報局訊問調書第一五〇九號、報告者「ヨハン、マイルフ」
- 二、「モロタイ」一九四五年五月五日附「ヨハン、マイルフ」ノ馬來語宣誓書英語翻譯附
- 三、處置後ニ於ケル「ヨハン、マイルフ」ノ寫眞二葉

署名（チャールズ、ヨンゲネール）

「バタビヤ」ニ於テ一九四六年六月七日

余、蘭領東印度檢察總長事務所附高等官、蘭印軍中尉「ケイ、エイ、ド、ヴェールド」ノ面前ニテ署名且宣誓セルモノナリ。

署名（ケイ、エイ、ド、ヴェールド）



C. #1817

Evidentiary Document No. 5440.

SYNOPSIS - AMBON ISLAND GROUP SECTION

The next section of this phase relates to the treatment of prisoners of war and civilians in and around these islands.

(a) My first document is an affidavit made by Major George De Vardon WESTLEY formerly of 2/21 Australian Infantry Battalion. It is Prosecution Document No. 5419. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent states that he was with the 2/21 Battalion on Amboina Island in February, 1942, when the Japanese landed. The Australian forces on the Island consisted of 300 on the Ambon side and about 300 on the Laha side. The deponent became a prisoner in February, 1942, and remained on the island until the Japanese surrender in 1945. While he was a prisoner he heard nothing as to the fate of the 300 on the Laha side of the Island and in September, 1945, sent a party there to endeavour to trace them. No trace was found, but a Japanese medical officer pointed out a Cairn under which he said about 200 men were buried, but he could not say whether they were Australian or Japanese.

.....

(b) Prosecution Document No. 5334 is a record of the evidence of Lieutenant-Commander KUN-ICHI MATSUDA, Imperial Japanese Navy, retired, in the Prosecution Court of the Tokyo Naval General Court Martial on 8th November, 1945, and in the Tokyo General Demobilisation Court on the 22nd. December, 1945, and the 29th December, 1945. I tender Prosecution Document No. 5334 in evidence.

.....

MATAGAWA was a Lieutenant of the Japanese Naval Forces at Laha. I will now read certain excerpts from his evidence. (Page 1, para 3.) "I am now going to tell you about the course taken in the operation to capture Laha. The Laha Occupation Force commenced landing on the beach of Hitlana (this spelling is uncertain) about two o'clock a.m., January 31st, 1942, and captured the airfield about 7 a.m. on February 3rd., 1942, with our casualties amounting to more than 100.

"The POW taken at the airport totalled about 400 consisting of about 210 Australians, about 60 Dutch, and troops of the native.

(Pages 9 and 10, questions and answers 5, 6 and 7, omitting second paragraph in the answer to question 6.)

"Q. Tell me about the enemy POW captured in battle to capture the Laha airfield.

A. In the forenoon of the 1st. of February (I am not sure of the exact time,) our reconnoiters (Petty-Officer CHADA and seaman 1st. Class MATSUDA of the Company-headquarters platoons) captured 10 enemy troops led by an Australian Army Second Lt and took them to Sowacoed. And besides this, as mentioned above, on the 2nd. of February about 50 Australian POW were

taken prisoners by us when they came to our camp to surrender.

6. Q. How were these POWs disposed of?

- A. The first 10 POWs were bayoneted to death before our force left Sowacoed for the support of the aforementioned penetrating unit on the 1st. of Feb. Both Adjutant HATAKEYAMA and I were at that time near the Laha airfield in ambush leading the penetrating unit, so we did not see the scene of the execution on the spot; according to Ensign SAKAMOTO's statement made to me afterward, these POWs were killed by the order of the Commanding Officer Rear-Admiral HATAKEYAMA, because these POWs were likely to become a drag upon the movement of the admiral's force in rear."

*Next I will tell you about the killing of the POW which numbered, as I remember aright, 51, though I mention in the above they were more than 50.

On the 4th of February Ensign SAKAMOTO at Sowacoed sent a report to Rear-Admiral HATAKEYAMA at the Laha airfield that SAKAMOTO was at a loss with small number of guard for treatment of POWs. According to the SAKAMOTO's report these POW either rebelled against him or made desertions because of the misunderstanding due to difference of language. The Admiral got angry hearing this report, and called Adjutant HATAKEYAMA and me to his room at the Laha airfield that evening, where the engineer staff officer was also present.

We were ordered by the Admiral that we should kill them on the following day because he had received a report informing that POWs at Sowacoed were in disquietude. In compliance with this order on the 5th of February, I took about 30 Petty Officers and men to Sowacoed; I cannot recall now from what platoon these 30 petty officers and men were selected. In a forest of coconut-tree, about 200 meters toward the airfield from Sowacoed, we dug out holes, and killed POWs with swords or bayonets. I recall, it took about 2 hours from 10 a.m. The process of the murder was as follows; I divided 30 Petty Officers and men into 3 groups, the first group for leading the POWs out of a dwelling house where the victims were temporarily confined, the second for preventing disorder on their way from the house to the forest, the third for beheading or stabbing the POWs. The POWs were sent to the spot one by one and made to kneel with bandage on their eyes. Our men of the third group, one at a time, came out in turn either to behead a POW with his sword or to stab him through the breast with his bayonet.

These POWs were all Australians, including 4 or 5 officers. I am sure that there was a major, whose name was unknown to me. All corpses were buried in the holes. The names of our men then employed for this execution cannot be recalled at all. But it is certain that there were present on the spot no officer, either warrant or commissioned, except myself. Most of the time I placed myself in the middle between the house and the place of the killing to do the overall command; but I went to the spot when the last victim was to be executed. Interpreter LEUCHI was then in the dwelling house to send out the POW from the house.

7. Q. Did you make a report that the execution had been accomplished?
- A. I reported it to Adjutant HATAKEYAMA in his room on that day, and I suppose the adjutant in his turn reported it to Admiral HATAKEYAMA."

(Page 12 to 15, question and answer 11, omitting only translator's note).

- "11. Q. Tell me about the other killings of the POW than you have afore stated.
- A. As I have said, there were billeted in the airfield barracks some 200 Australians and some 60 Dutchmen. When our forces first entered into the airfield, they saw that the Japanese strength was very small, numbering only some 170. Some of the POW, therefore, expressed their view through IZUCHI, interpreter, to such an effect as that they would not have surrendered but would rather have continued fighting bravely if they had known the Japanese strength was so small, and that if they had fought more stubbornly the Japanese casualties would have amounted to a considerable degree. In addition to these they behaved themselves disobedient in their assigned works, though partly caused by the difference of language. And about 30 of them were considered to be especially disobedient. The Commanding Officer heard of this fact, and he gave Adjutant HATAKEYAMA and me an order in his room in the evening of 5th February to murder these some 30 POWs.

I had about 20 enlisted men kill these some 30 POW about 3 p.m. on the following day, if I remember right, in a coco-palm forest near Tauli, about 700 meters from the airfield, though I cannot recall what platoons these about 20 men belonged to. In this killing, too, the POWs were once taken in a house nearby, then called out in turn one by one, and killed with sword or with bayonet, as before. Their corpse was buried in the hole dug for the purpose. As in the previous case I stood in the middle between that house and the spot of murder to take general command for the most of the time, and I went to the spot to witness the last one of being killed and ascertained this bloody work had been finished. I reported to the Adjutant HATAKEYAMA the accomplishment of the execution. I am not sure whether any Dutch men were included among the victims or not, but it is certain that the victims were all enlisted men.

Next I will tell you about another killing of the POW.

On the 17th or 18th of February, I cannot recall which day, while we were taking lunch at Abon, Commanding Officer HAYASHI disclosed his intention rather to kill all the remaining POWs. His reason was this our troops available for service was numbered only 340 or 350 from which various guards in various districts had to be dispatched; the desertions of the POWs began to be noted; rumours ran among natives that the allied troops would come soon to attack us; enemy planes in fact came for reconnaissance; if the deserting POWs would divulge

the situation of Japanese side, we would be faced very unfavourable situation; and all these factors were forming a menace to the position of the Japanese forces. I asked Commanding Officer, then, what is his opinion concerning the provisions of the International Law which I understood to be stipulating that "FURYO" (PO) should not be treated as enemy. He answered me that I was right so far as "FURYO" was concerned, but that the captives interned there were to be classified and called "HORYO" and therefore we would not violate the International Law if we would kill them.

A few days later, in the evening while taking supper with the Commanding Officer and his Adjutant H.T. YASHI at the garden in front of the Commanding Officer's room, I was told by the Commanding Officer to kill all the POs at Laha.

On the following day, probably 20th of Feb. if my recollection is right, I gathered up some 60 enlisted men from various platoons attached to the 1 - INBLL. Moreover about 30 enlisted men from the crew of the Minesweeper No. 9 who were boarding at the 1-INBLL barracks because their ship had sunk then, were employed by the consent of a reserve-list officer attached to that minesweeper.

I took the both groups of enlisted men totalling to some 90 to Laha from Ambon at about 1 p.m. on the 20th. We dug holes in a place in a coconut forest at Pauli; this new place is a different position from that of the previous murder being 140 or 150 meters away from it, and was about 200 meters off the head-quarters of the Laha Detachment. I divided 90 men into 9 groups; 2 groups for bloody killing, 3 groups for watching the POs; on their ways to the killing place, 2 groups for sending POs out of the barracks, one group for guard on the spot of the killing, the last one for emergency. The POs were carried by truck from the barracks to the Detachment building about 500 meters in distance, and they were on foot from the Detachment building to the spot of the killing. The same way of the killing was adopted as in the previous case; to have them kneel down with bandage over their eyes and to kill them with sword or bayonet.

The poor victims numbered about 220 in all including a few Australian officers. Interpreter IMUCHI was, as in the previous case, in charge of duty of sending POs out of the barracks; I was in the Detachment building giving overall directions and ascertained the final accomplishment of the affair on the spot. It took from about 6 p.m. to 9.30 p.m. Most of the corpses were buried in one hole, but because the hole was not big enough to receive all of the corpses a dug-out nearby was also used for the burial. On that day upon my arrival at our headquarters I reported it the Commanding Officer directly and also to his adjutant.

(Page 15. Question and answer 13).

- *13. Q. Was the order of killing POs issued by the Commanding Officer H.YASHI at his own discretion?

"A. In the first three cases of the murder the orders were with no doubt issued by Rear-Admiral HATAKEYAMA. But as for the last case, I am not sure whether the order was issued by the Commanding Officer HAYASHI himself, or it was given in compliance with the order of Rear-Admiral HATAKEYAMA."

.....
(c) Prosecution Document No. 5323 is my next document. It is the record of evidence of Commander JUNITO HATAKEYAMA of the Imperial Japanese Navy given before the Tokyo General Court Martial on 6th November, 1945, and the Tokyo General Demobilization Court on 24th December, 1945, and 12th February, 1946. I tender this document in evidence.

.....
This document refers to the killing of prisoners at LAM. It is put in evidence in compliance with order contained on paper No. 573 permitting use of record in evidence of JUNITO HATAKEYAMA and KEN-ICHI MATAGAMA without putting in the whole record of evidence contained in Evidentiary Document No. 5333.

(d) Prosecution Document No. 5413 is an affidavit by Major George De Verdon WESTLEY formerly of 2/21 Australian Infantry Battalion. I tender the document for identification and excerpts therefrom in evidence.

.....
I will read paragraphs 3, 4, 5, 7, 8 and 9 of this affidavit.

.....
(e) Prosecution Document No. 5417 is affidavit of former Major Ian Farquhar MACRAE of 2/21 Australian Infantry Battalion. I tender the document for identification and excerpts therefrom in evidence.

.....
I will read paragraphs 2 and 3 of this document.

.....
(f) Prosecution Document No. 5302 is the affidavit of Private Verdun Clive BALL of 8th Division, Australian Army Service Corps. I tender it for identification and marked excerpts thereof in evidence.

.....
The affiant describes the beating and torture of deponent and 22 other Australians because they had gone outside the camp limits. As a result deponent lost the use of his legs for three or four months.

.....
(g) Prosecution Document No. 5301 is the affidavit of Private John Leslie SMARTE of 8th Division A.A.S.C. I tender the document for identification and the original in evidence.

.....
The affiant describes certain of the work the Japanese made him do in 1944. He says -

"I was put on the long carry 13 times during 1944. The last occasion was just before Christmas. The distance of the long carry was about eight miles over very rough rugged country made up of broken coral with gullies and steep hills. We had to go on all four sometimes to crawl up the hills. It took us about five hours to complete the journey with a load. I carried bags of cement and 150 lb bombs. The bags of cement weighed 94 lbs. Two men were detailed for each bag; when one could carry it no further the other took over. The Japanese guards did not actually bash us but made us hurry along."

.....
(h) Prosecution Document No. 5206 is an official report of the Netherlands Forces Intelligence Service. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpt in evidence.
I will read the excerpt which appears on the last page of the document.

.....
(i) Prosecution Document No. 5297 is an affidavit made by Flying Officer Denis Brian MASON of the Royal Air Force. I tender the original for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....
The affiant and a party of 2050 prisoners of war landed at MAROTOM Island on 5th May, 1943. Upon arrival the camp was only partly built and did not provide adequate shelter. At this camp prisoners were starved and beaten. Although most of them were sick they were compelled to work ten hours a day, mainly on the construction of an aerodrome. Clothing and boots were not supplied to prisoners. Large numbers suffered from beri beri, malaria and dysentery. Hospital patients were starved and had to supplement their diet with rats, mice, dogs, cats and snails. No medical supplies were provided. Open trench latrines only were permitted for the first twelve months and this resulted in spread of dysentery. Over 15 months 336 died from sickness and starvation.

.....
(j) Prosecution Document No. 5298 is an affidavit made by Flying Officer Denis Brian MASON of the Royal Air Force. I tender the original for identification and marked excerpts in evidence.

.....
This is a short affidavit and I propose to read marked excerpts from "Then I arrived at Lahat Camp.....constructing A.R.P. trenches for the Japanese."

.....
(k) Prosecution Document No. 5299 is an affidavit by Leading Aircraftsman Henry MITTREKELAN of Royal Air Force. I tender this document for identification and marked excerpts in evidence.

.....
The affiant states that 1000 prisoners of war went to LIANG on Ambon Island in May, 1943. Accommodation was bad consisting for the most part of leaky tents. Food was totally inadequate. Prisoners were engaged on the construction of an aerodrome. Work was very heavy and the guards inflicted brutal beatings on the prisoners. Medical supplies were insufficient. One man, Champion, was

murdered. In October, 1944, a draft of 600 were sent by sea back to Java. Prisoners were overcrowded. Only a third of a pint of drinking water was provided for each man daily. 28 died on the voyage.

.....

(l) Prosecution Document No. 5300 is an extract from War Diary of 2/5 Aust. Gen. Hosp. of 12 Sept., 1945. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I shall read the entry.

(m) Prosecution Document No. 5392 is a report on recovered prisoners of war by Officer in Charge, Medical Division, 2/5 Aust. Gen. Hosp. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read the first three paragraphs of this report.

.....

I refer the Court to Exhibit 17A and 1675B which were put in evidence at page 13452 of transcript. Certain of the photographs included in that exhibit relate to prisoners recovered in Ambon.

(n) Prosecution Document No. 5303 is an affidavit made by 1st. Lieut. Paul Alfred STANBURY of U.S. Army Air Force. I put the document in for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The affiant was bombardier on a B24 which crashed over KAI Islands on 21 September, 1945. It was in three feet of water on a coral reef. The crew had sustained serious injuries in the crash and the navigator was pinned down on the flight deck. A Japanese boat came out. The airmen with the exception of the navigator were taken prisoners. The Japanese refused to do anything for the navigator but left him there to die. The rest of the airmen were taken to Ambon. They were placed in mosquito infested cells without blankets, bedding or mosquito nets. No sunlight could penetrate the cells and there was no ventilation. They were starved on weevily rice. No medical attention was given them. For 68 days they were interrogated to the accompaniment of beatings almost daily. Later the deponent and the co-pilot were shipped to Japan. They were frequently beaten by the guards. They both became paralyzed with beri beri but received no treatment for this during the 60 days sea voyage. The deponent remained paralyzed for nine months and the co-pilot for 20 months.

.....

(o) Prosecution Document No. 5223 is a sworn interrogation of Warrant Officer MIYOSATO, YOSHIZUMI of Japanese Navy. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

Exhibentiary Document No. 5440.

Page 3.

On the 29th August, 1944, the deponent took part in the beheading of three American airmen at Saraya Trischer of War Camp. This was done on orders of superior officers. The district had been bombed by American planes on the previous day.

.....

That completes the evidence in relation to this section of the phase.

EXHIBIT NO. 1812

Examination Document No 5886

證 據 概 略

此項... (illegible text) ...
 房及... (illegible text) ...
 (一) 嚴... (illegible text) ...
 嚴... (illegible text) ...
 Verdon WESTLEY... (illegible text) ...
 嚴... (illegible text) ...
 中... (illegible text) ...
 證... (illegible text) ...
 言... (illegible text) ...
 島... (illegible text) ...
 名... (illegible text) ...
 廣... (illegible text) ...
 展... (illegible text) ...
 運... (illegible text) ...
 有... (illegible text) ...
 何... (illegible text) ...
 必... (illegible text) ...
 之... (illegible text) ...
 (二) 檢... (illegible text) ...
 五... (illegible text) ...
 九... (illegible text) ...
 證... (illegible text) ...
 注... (illegible text) ...

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO ROOM 361

101

Doc 5440

中川公人、上野三、茶、日本、海軍、中尉、下、官、又、秘、法、
日、波、證、言、力、或、以、按、奉、朝、續、致、以、又、(一、與、第、三、節)
日、波、證、言、力、或、以、按、奉、朝、續、致、以、又、(一、與、第、三、節)
和、七、月、三、十、日、前、二、時、派、以、三、日、海、軍、(陸、軍、部)
之、敵、被、打、抹、除、之、日、三、日、前、七、時、鐘、一、氣、行、擊、
空、襲、致、之、多、方、我、方、亦、傷、(敵、傷、者、余、十、七、名、
同、氣、行、擊、之、捕、多、敵、俘、虜、六、全、部、手、部、百、名、送、
于、其、中、海、軍、部、俘、虜、者、約、百、十、名、他、國、軍、部、
俘、虜、者、約、十、七、名、其、他、士、兵、軍、部、亦、有、之、云、云、
(五、十、日、來、九、問、答、(六、三)、(六)、(六)、答、中、年、二、節、
海、軍、部、之、云、云)

問 日、波、證、言、力、或、以、按、奉、朝、續、致、以、又、(一、與、第、三、節)
中、年、二、節、之、云、云、

答 一、月、三、日、前、中、(時、間、三、分、半、)海、軍、部、(海、軍、部、)在、海、軍、
部、之、證、言、力、或、以、按、奉、朝、續、致、以、又、(一、與、第、三、節)
日、波、證、言、力、或、以、按、奉、朝、續、致、以、又、(一、與、第、三、節)
之、行、事、之、日、三、日、前、二、時、派、以、三、日、海、軍、(陸、軍、部)
之、敵、被、打、抹、除、之、日、三、日、前、七、時、鐘、一、氣、行、擊、
空、襲、致、之、多、方、我、方、亦、傷、(敵、傷、者、余、十、七、名、
同、氣、行、擊、之、捕、多、敵、俘、虜、六、全、部、手、部、百、名、送、
于、其、中、海、軍、部、俘、虜、者、約、百、十、名、他、國、軍、部、
俘、虜、者、約、十、七、名、其、他、士、兵、軍、部、亦、有、之、云、云、

六、問 日、波、證、言、力、或、以、按、奉、朝、續、致、以、又、(一、與、第、三、節)
中、年、二、節、之、云、云、
答 一、月、三、日、前、中、(時、間、三、分、半、)海、軍、部、(海、軍、部、)在、海、軍、
部、之、證、言、力、或、以、按、奉、朝、續、致、以、又、(一、與、第、三、節)
日、波、證、言、力、或、以、按、奉、朝、續、致、以、又、(一、與、第、三、節)
之、行、事、之、日、三、日、前、二、時、派、以、三、日、海、軍、(陸、軍、部)
之、敵、被、打、抹、除、之、日、三、日、前、七、時、鐘、一、氣、行、擊、
空、襲、致、之、多、方、我、方、亦、傷、(敵、傷、者、余、十、七、名、
同、氣、行、擊、之、捕、多、敵、俘、虜、六、全、部、手、部、百、名、送、
于、其、中、海、軍、部、俘、虜、者、約、百、十、名、他、國、軍、部、
俘、虜、者、約、十、七、名、其、他、士、兵、軍、部、亦、有、之、云、云、

No 2

Doc 5440

次ニ又今五十数名、停虜ト申シマシタ、ハタニハ
 五十名ヲアット記憶シマカ之、有日ソコニ
 ドニ残留ニテ居タ坂本少尉カニ大寄、停虜言
 語不通、爲反抗ニタリ或、逃走ニタリス者ガ
 來テ居ルガ警告戒兵モ寡ク處置ニ窮ニテ
 居ルト云フ報告ガ、心、飛行場ニオツク島山少將
 處ニ参リマシタ、テ同少將、憤激セシ同日名
 「心、飛行場、同少將部屋ニ私ト島山副官トヲ
 呼ビル其、場ニ機關参謀モ居ルマシタガ同少將
 カソコト、停虜ガ不穩、狀態デアルト
 イフ報告カ來タカラ之ヲ明日行ツテ處分セ
 ト命ラレマシタ、テ翌五日私何小隊、記憶
 ニテ居リマセヌカ下士官兵約三十名程率
 キソコトニ行キソコト、約百本手前
 椰子林、中ニ穴ヲ掘リカヌ、銃劍ヲ以テ之
 ヲ處分シマシタ

時間ハ午前十時頃カラ始メ二時間位ヲ要
 シタト記憶ニテ居リマセヌカ、方法ハ三名ノ士
 官兵ヲ三組ニ命ケ一組ハ收容セリテ居ル人家
 カラ送去ス任務、一組ハ途中、警戒、他、一組

N03

Doc 5440

直接處分ニ當ツテ其、際一人宛送去セシ
 来ル侍虜ヲ處分班カラ一名宛交互ニ去テ自
 隱ニテ座セシメ刀デ、斬首、鋭劍デ、胸部ヲ刺
 殺スル方法ヲ用キタノデアリヌ
 其、五十一名ハ全部濠洲軍ヲ將校モ四名居
 リマシタ、其、中ニ名刑、判リヌヌカ濠洲軍
 少佐カ一名居タ、事、確デアリヌ
 屍体ハ全部、穴ニ埋メマシタ、其、時連
 リテ行ツタ下士官兵、名刑、ドウニテモ思出ヌ
 又尚其、場ニ立會ツタ者、私以外ニ准士
 官以上ハ一人モ居リヌンテシタ、事、確デアリヌ
 私人家ト處分現場、中間ニ居テ全般、
 指揮ニ當ツテ居リヌタカ最後ニ一名處分
 スル時ニ現場ニ行ツテ見テ居リヌシタ
 又人家ニ池内通訳ガ居テ侍虜ヲ送去ス後
 目ヲ担タシテ居リヌシタ。

尚其、際處分終了、報告ニシタカ
 答同日ニ派遣隊、白田少副官、部屋ヲ司令
 代理タル同副官ニ處分終了、旨報告シ
 タ同副官カ、更ニ白田少將ニ報告セヌ
 タモト思ヒヌ

NO4

(十頁ヨリ十五頁ニ、内卷上ヲ譯者註、
 ニ省略シテ朗讀致ス)

Doc 5440

直接處分ニ崇ツタ譯テ其、際一人宛送去セシ
 来ル侍虜ヲ處分班カラ一名宛交互ニ去テ自
 隱ニテ座セシメ刀ヲ斬首、銳劍ヲ胸部ヲ刺
 殺スル方法ヲ用キタテアリマス
 其、五十一名ハ全部濠洲軍ヲ將校モ四名居
 リマシタリ、其、中ニ名刑、判リマスカ濠洲軍
 少佐カ一名居テ、事、確テアリマス
 屍體ハ全部、穴ニ埋メタシタリ、其、時連
 リテ行ツタ下士官兵、名刑、ドウシテモ思出タ
 又尚其、場ニ立會ツタ者、私以外ニ准士
 官以上ハ一人モ居リマセンテシタリ、事、確テアリマス
 私人家ト處分現場、中間ニ居テ全般、
 指揮ニ事ツテ居リマシタカ最後ニ一名處分
 スル時ニ現場ニ行ツテ見テ居リマシタ
 又他家ハ池内通訳ガ居テ侍虜ヲ送去ス後
 目ヲ担タシテ居リマシタリ。

尚其、際處分終了、報告ニシタカ
 答同日ハ派遣隊、白田少副官、部屋ヲ司令
 代理タル同副官ニ處分終了、旨報告シ
 タ同副官カ、更ニ白田少將ニ報告セシ
 タモト思ヒマス

NO4

(十頁ヨリ十五頁ニ、内卷十一ヲ譯者註、
 ニ省略シテ朗讀致シマス)

Doc. 5440

(d) 檢察文書第五四八号、元、濠洲歩兵大隊、兵卒、ジョージ・デ・ヴェン
ト・ウ・イット / George De Vendon WESTLEY /、宣誓口述書アリ、私、文書
ヲ檢証、為、中印、抜萃ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス
私、宣誓口述書、第三四五七八各段ヲ朗讀致シマス。

(e) 檢察文書第五四七号、元、濠洲歩兵大隊、イアン・ファク・マク・イット / Ian Farquhar MACKAY /、宣誓口述書アリ、私、文書ヲ檢証、為、
中印、抜萃ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。
私、文書、第三段、第三段ヲ朗讀致シマス。

(f) 檢察文書第五三〇号、元、濠洲陸軍輜重隊第八師團、兵卒、ヴェン
ト・ウ・イット / Vendor Cline GAIL /、宣誓口述書アリ、私、文書ヲ檢証、為、
中印、抜萃ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

証人、証人及他、二十二人、濠洲人が收容所、境界線外ニテ
トイノ理由ヲ殴打、拷問セシメ、述ハシ居リマス、結果、証人、三
月乃至四月脚ヲ使ハシメ、事ガ未ダ完セテ居ラス。

(g) 檢察文書第五三〇号、元、濠洲陸軍輜重隊第八師團、兵卒、ジョン・レス
リー / John Leslie SEALANT /、宣誓口述書アリ、私、
文書ヲ檢証、為、原文ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

証人、一九四四年、昭和十九年、日本人ガ假ニセテ、仕事ニテ、
述ベ、様ニ言フテ居リマス。

私、一九四四年、昭和十九年、同二十三回所謂「長距離輸送」
ヲ命ゼラレ、最後、場合、丁度「クリスマス」、東京、
トイ、長距離輸送、約八哩位、距離ヲ、珊瑚砂、隙ニテ、

No. 8

No. 9

Doc 5440

No. 10

(九) 検察文書第五三六号、和蘭軍情報部、公文報告書デアリマス。私ハ、文書を檢証、爲、印、ツイク箇所、抜萃ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。私ハ、文書ノ取後、負ニ表ルテキル抜萃ヲ朗讀、報シマス。

(十) 検察文書第五九七号、英帝國空軍、デニス・ブライアン・メイソン / Dennis Brian MASON / 空軍將校、宣誓口述書デアリマス。私ハ原文ヲ檢証、爲、印、ツイク箇所、抜萃ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

ヲ、証人トシヨ。人、俘虜ノ隊が一九四三年船中、五月五日、バルク / HARDEKOE / 島ニ上陸シマス。到着シテ、收容所ハ一部分シカ出来テ居ラズ、適宜ニ掩蓋トモナリマセシマス。コノ收容所デハ、俘虜ハ飢工、殴打サレシマス。大抵ノ者が病氣デアツクニ拘ラズ、一日ニ十時間、主ニ飛行場構築ニ強制的ニ働カサレシマス。着ル物モ長靴モ俘虜達ニ給トサレマセシマス。大多数ノ者が脚氣、マラリア、赤痢ヲ患ヒサレシキマシマス。病院、患者ハ飢工、食料ニ鼠、十日鼠、犬、猫、鶏ヲ補充シテバナリマセシマス。医療供給ハ全然アリマセシマス。開放式淨便所ガ各シカ最初、十二月間、使用ヲ許

Doe 5440

No. 11

サレシ、結果、赤痢、蔓延トナリマシタ。十五ヶ月アメリ
ノ間ニ、三、六人が病氣ト飢餓、為死亡シマシタ。

(J) 捜索文書、第五二九、号ハ、英帝國空軍、デニス、
ブライアン、メイソン、空軍特校、宣明言口述書トアリ
マス。私ハ原文ヲ檢証、為、印、ツイタ、國跡、板葺
ヲ證據トシテ提出、致シマス。

此ハ短イ宣明言口述書トアリマシタ。私ハ今ヨリ、私
ヲハト收容所ニ到着シタハ、——日本人、為ニ
防空壕ヲ作リマシタ。トイハシカラ、印、ツイタ、國跡
、板葺ヲ謝讀ニ、敬ト思ヒマス。

Doc. 5440

(K) 検察文書第五九九号、英海軍省、ヘンリーキッターリング / Henry KITTERINGHAM / 上等航軍整備員、宣誓供述書アリマス。私、コ、文書ヲ検証、為印、ソ、イ、タ、固所、抜萃ヲ証拠トシテ提出致シマス。

コ、証、一九四一年、昭和十九年五月二〇日、人、信房が、ホ、ノ、島、リ、ア、ノ、
/ LIANG / 三行ノ事ヲ述ベテ居リマス。設備、大抵、テントが雨漏ラス、ヤ、ノ、工、事、全クナシ。食物、非常ニ不足ナリ。信房達、飛行機構造ニ従事セリマス。作業、非常ニ重労働ヲ看守ガ信房ニ残心ヲ致打テ加ヘリ。医療給与、不足ナリ。オ、オ、ノ、Champion / 十人、信房が殺サレタリ。一九四一年、昭和十九年十月二六日、人、金遣隊が、ソ、ノ、海路送り返サレタリ。信房、超調員ナリ。人、一日三合、パイ、ト、飲料水、ノ、身、ヲ、シ、セ、タ、リ。二十八人、航海中、死セタリ。

(L) 検察文書第五三〇号、一九四五年、昭和二十年九月十二日、濠洲一般病院、戦時日誌ヨリ、抜萃デアリマス。私、コ、文書ヲ検証、為印、ソ、イ、タ、固所、抜萃ヲ証拠トシテ提出致シマス。記入ノ項ヲ朗読致シマス。

(M) 検察文書第五三九号、復員ノ信房、就テ、濠洲一般病院、信房部、積込得設、報告書デアリマス。私、コ、文書ヲ検証、為印、ソ、イ、タ、固所、抜萃ヲ証拠トシテ提出致シマス。私、コ、報告書、自叙部、三段ヲ朗読致シマス。裁判所、寫シ、三四五頁ニ証拠トシテ提出セリ。書証、六、六、A、及、B、六、六、B、ヲ参照セヨ。コ、証拠書類中、或、寫真、ノ、示、ニ、依、リ、信房、ノ、信房、ニ、関、係、シ、テ、居、リ、タ、ス。

No. 12

Doc 5440

No. 13

(M) 検察文書第 五三三 號、合衆國空軍、ポートルワード スミス、
Paul Alfred STANBURY 中尉、宣誓、口述書、アリマス。私、
文書ヲ檢證、爲 印、ワ、夕、箇所、拔萃ヲ證據トシテ提出
致シマス。

證人、一九四三年九月二十日、カ、島上空ニ墜落シタ、B-24、爆
撃機、アリマス。墜落シタ、ハ、三、ア、ト、海中、珊瑚礁、上テ、
ノ、乗組員、墜落、ヨリ、重傷ヲ受テ、航空士、探微室ニ釘付
ケ、サ、シ、マ、シ、ク、日本軍、ボート、ガ、現、レ、マ、シ、ク、航空士ヲ、除キ、飛行
士、全部、俘虜トシテ、捕、レ、シ、マ、シ、ク、日本人、ハ、航空士、ニ、爲、何
ノ、事、モ、推察シ、彼、其、處、ヲ、通、テ、ガ、リ、テ、死、七、シ、マ、シ、ク、残り、
飛行セ、テ、ア、ニ、ホ、ニ、運、行、サ、シ、マ、シ、ク、

彼等、夥シク、蚊、多シ、小部屋ニ、石、モ、寝具、モ、蚊帳、モ、ナ、ク、
アリ、マ、シ、ク、日、光、全、然、ニ、小部屋、ニ、射、テ、空、氣、流、通、ス、テ、リ、マ、セ、
シ、ク、彼等、象鼻虫、ワ、ク、木ヲ、食、テ、飢、エ、テ、居、シ、タ、医、療、
配慮、全、然、與、ラ、シ、マ、セ、テ、リ、マ、シ、ク、六、十、日、間、殆、ト、毎日、殴打、
シ、テ、訊、問、サ、シ、マ、シ、ク、後、代、證、人、ト、同、洋、探、微、士、ハ、日本、ニ、送、ラ、
シ、タ、ク、彼等、屢々、痛、打、サ、シ、マ、シ、ク、彼等、三、人、共、脚
氣、ガ、麻痺、シ、テ、居、マ、シ、ク、ガ、リ、テ、六、十、日、間、航、海、中、全、然、医、療
ノ、待遇、ヲ、受、ケ、マ、セ、デ、シ、ク、證、人、ハ、九、月、間、同、乗、探、微、士、ニ、
十、月、間、身、体、ガ、麻痺、シ、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、ク、

(O) 検察文書第 五三三 號、日本海軍、下士官ヨシザキ、キヨ
サト、音談、宣誓、訊問、アリマス。私、コ、レ、ヲ、檢證、爲 印
、付、夕、箇所、拔萃ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

No. 14

Doc. 5440

(Page 8)

一九四四年／昭和十九年／六月二十九日三試、證人六サハ／吾
讀ノ字屬收容所ニ於テ三人、不國人飛行士ヲ斬首ス
ル事ニ参加シマシク、コノ上級士官、命令ニ依リテサキターダ
トナラス。コノ地区ハ、前日不國ノ飛行機ニ依リテ爆撃サ
レテ居マシク、
コノ事ハ不國ノコノ区域ニ関スル證據ヲ終リマス。

CX # 1818

Evidentiary Document No. 5419.

In the International Military
Tribunal for the Far East.

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AND
OTHERS

v

ARAKI, Sadao and OTHERS

AFFIDAVIT.

I, GEORGE DE VERDON WESTLEY of 284a Camberwell Road, Camberwell in the State of Victoria, formerly VX 44808 Major G. De V. Westley of 2/21 Battalion make oath and say:-

1. I was with 2/21 Battalion on Amboina Island in February 1942 when the Japanese landed. At that time Lt-Col Scott was commanding the Battalion, he was also Commanding Officer of Gull Force. This Force consisted of the battalion and attached troops. The troops from this Force were disposed in two main bodies, approximately 800 being on the Ambon side, and about 300 on the Laha side of the island.
2. I became a prisoner in February, 1942, and remained a prisoner on the island until the Japanese surrender in 1945.
3. In September, 1945, I sent a reconnaissance party to Laha to endeavour to trace the men who had been at Laha and of whom I had not heard since the surrender. Lieutenant Russel was in charge of this reconnaissance party. A Japanese Medical Officer pointed out to him a cairn under which he said about 200 men were buried but he could not say whether they were Australians or Japanese. Lieutenant Russell was unable to find any other trace of the Australians who had been at Laha.

SWORN at Melbourne in)
 the State of Victoria) (Sgd) G. De V. WESTLEY
 this seventh day of)
 October, 1946.)
 BEFORE ME
 (sgd) W. A. Fax
 Commissioner for taking affidavits
 and declarations under the Evidence
 Act, 1928.

Ex 1818F Doc 5419

書類第五四一九号

松前少佐大隊以四八〇陸軍大佐 G. De V. ウェスト
ビクトリア州、カンバーウエル市、カンバーウエル街二八四 A. ジョシ
デアードン ウェストレーハ宣誓シ陳述ス。

一、私ハ日本軍が上陸シタ一九四二年二月ニアンボイ島、少
大隊ト一緒デアリマシタ。ソノ時陸軍中佐 スコットが同大
隊ヲ指揮シテキタ。彼ハ又ガル部隊、司令官デアッタ。
コノ部隊ハ同大隊ト配属部隊トヨリタッタキタ。コノ部隊
ヨリ分テ来タ兵員ハ二個ノ主要ハ部隊トナテ配置サシタ。
即チアンボイ側ニハ約八〇〇名、及島、ソノ側ニハ約三百
名。

二、私一九四二年二月ニ捕虜トナツテ、一九四五年日本が降伏
シタ時ニテ同島ニ於テ捕虜トシテ居タ。

三、一九四五年九月前ニソノ島ニ居テ、降伏後何ソノ消息モ
ナカッタ者ヲ探サウトシテ私ハ搜索隊ヲソノ島ニ出シタ。
スツセル中尉ハコノ搜索隊ノ責任者デアッタ。日本、軍
医將校が彼ニ石塚ヲ指サシテコ、下ニ約二百名が埋ッテ
居ルト云ツタ。併シ彼ハソノ等が濠洲兵デアルカ日本
兵デアルカ言フコトガ出来ナカッタ。スツセル中尉ハソノ島ニ
居ッタ濠洲兵、痕跡ヲ他ニ発見出来ナカッタ。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 301

Ex # 1819

Evidentiary Document No. 5536. A

RECORD OF STATEMENT.

(Pages 11-15)

Kazuoichi NAKAGAWA,

who is Lieutenant Commander, IJN, retired, whose present address is c/o Hirota Chu, 256, Hirami-hatashiki, Tokaichi-Fuchi, Futami-Gun, Hiroshima Prefecture, and who was born on 15th February 1893, made the following statement, of his free will, in the presence of the prosecutor at the prosecution court of the Tokyo Naval General Court Martial on November 8, 1945:

1. "My domicile is No. 2 Shimonaganoki-Cho, Kure City, Hiroshima Prefecture.

2. "I first entered the navy on June 1st, 1927, and was made, after gradual promotion, to Lieutenant Commander on September 5th, 1945. Then I was placed in the retired list, on October 25th of the year and arriving at the present address

"While I was still in service in the navy, I was involved in a POW murder incident at the time of our occupation battle of Ambon Island which was fought in connection with the Great Pacific War.

"The situation at that time was as follows: The Ambon Island Occupation Forces were commanded by Major General ITO of the Japanese Army. The main body of the ITO Detachment, which was placed under his direct command, engaged in the occupation of Ambon City. The capture of the Laha Airport was assigned to the force commanded by Rear Admiral HATAKE-YAMA, who was then mentioned to be the Commander of the 24 NSBF; this Laha Occupation Force consisted of the 1 KNSLP, one infantry platoon each from the 1st and 2nd Sasebo Naval Special Landing Parties, an artillery unit and an infantry platoon of the 32nd Naval Special Base Force, and one army infantry company despatched from the ITO Detachment.

"I was then a company commander of the 1 KNSLP with the rank of Lieutenant Junior grade in Special Service Officer Branch. Because Commander HAYASHI, IJN, appointed Commander of the 1 KNSLP, had not yet arrived at his post, the command of the 1 KNSLP was assumed by Lt. Kunito HATANEYAMA, IJN, because of his being the Senior Officer present of the 1 KNSLP though he was merely the adjutant in his formal regular appointment.

"It appeared that the 21st Minesweeper Division participated in the operation for the minesweeping purpose, though the details about it is not known to me.

3. "I am now going to tell you about the course taken in the operation to capture Laha. The Laha Occupation Force commenced landing on the beach of Hitlema (this spelling is uncertain) about two o'clock a.m., January 31st, 1942, and

captured the airfield about 7 a.m. on February 3rd with our casualties amounting to more than 100.

"The POW taken at the airport totalled about 100 consisting of about 210 Australians, about 60 Dutch, and troops of the natives.

4. "Regarding the treatment of the POW I am going to explain you as follows:

Appointed Commander of the 24 NSBF, Rear Admiral HATAKEYAMA, displayed his flag on Feb. 5 at Laha, but on the 4th or 9th of the month leaving one platoon of his forces at Laha he moved to Ambon because the IFO Detachment was about to evacuate the city. Therefore the direct treatment of the POW at Laha was assigned to the platoon Commander, Kakutaro SASAKI, then on the rank of Warrant Officer.

"The POW at Ambon City consisting of some 1,100 of Australian and Dutch soldiers who had been captured by our army forces were taken over from the competent army authorities by Senior Staff Officer Shigeki and Engineer Staff Officer MIZOGUCHI (both, of the 24 NSBF) and myself, after the 24 NSBF moved to Ambon City. This notwithstanding, the affairs relating to POW, in the headquarters of the 24 NSBF were handled by the Engineer Staff Officer, MIZOGUCHI, while the duty directly to take care of them was placed under the charge of the 1 KNSIP. Such being the case, all matters relating to the treatment of the POW, either at Ambon or Laha, were reported to Adjutant HATAKEYAMA, who was then acting for the Commander of our landing party; and all these matters were conducted according to his direction. After the arrival of the duly appointed commander around February 9, the affairs connected with the POW was understood to have been reported to him by the Adjutant.

Though its exact date cannot be recalled, when the 1 KNSIP was absorbed in the 24 NSBF, Mr. HATAKEYAMA was appointed Chief of the Shore Guard Division in the 24 NSBF, and this division was in charge of the treatment of the POW.

5. "As for the killing of the POW my statement is as follows:

I remember it was about the 20th of February. In our Headquarters at Ambon, I was told by Mr. HATAKEYAMA that I should go to Laha to have the POW there put to death. And by this I surmised that the decision for the killing was probably ascribable to the fact that considerable difficulties were being confronted with in the matter of local peace and security; for, taking advantage of the insufficient strength of the detachment troops there, the desertion of the POW was continuously happening at Laha in those days. Leading about 60 men of my own company together with about 30 men

of Minesweeper No. 9 who were then accommodated in my company barracks, I arrived at the quarters of the Labor Detachment at about 2 p.m. on the very day that I received the aforementioned order; as for the taking these latter personnel of Minesweeper No. 9 I was given a verbal consent by a reserve officer of the Minesweeper. Though this reservist officer accompanied us, nothing was directed or requested of him on my part.

"I briefed these about 90 enlisted men to assign them their duties. First of all the burial place was to be dug by all of us. Then the party was to be divided into three: the first group for transporting the victims from the camp to the place of the killing, the second group for preventing disturbances, and the third group composed of some twenty men for directly engaging in the conduct of the killing.

"The place of the kill was selected in coco-palm woods situated on both sides of a road running a little beyond a marsh which lies about 200 meters northeastward from the detachment barracks standing just in front of the pier. The smaller burial hole on the right side of the road was for about 50 corpses, while the larger ones dug on the left side was for all of the rest bodies.

"According to my memory the number of the POW killed was about 220. They were killed either by swords of Japanese style or bayonets with their eyes covered. And I was directing the overall affairs at the detachment barracks. On that day the detachment commander was in sick-bed because of malaria and on my part I merely notified him as regards the killing.

"If I remember right the aforementioned fateful deed was commenced at about six o'clock in the evening and ended at about 9 o'clock. On that day I reported to Lt. HANAKIYAMA on the accomplishment of the deed after we came back to our headquarters.

I wish to add that the aforementioned enlisted men from Minesweeper No. 9 had been accommodated in the barracks of my company because their ship had been lost through hitting a mine when entering the Bay of Labon."

When the statement was completed, the record made of it was read before Ken-ichi MAKAGAWA, who acknowledged the correctness of the record and affixed his signature and seal herewith.

(The signature and seal of
Ken-ichi MAKAGAWA)

- (Signed by) Tadao HANSEN, Justice Ensign, IJN., Recorder, the Tokyo Naval General Court Martial.
- (Signed by) Ichiro ITO, Justice Lt.-Comdr., IJN., Prosecutor, the Tokyo Naval General Court Martial.

Examination of Accused.

(Pages 23-25)

Accused:- NAKIGAMA Ken-ichi.

On the 8th November 1915, in a preliminary hearing in the Tokyo General Court-Martial, Justice Lt. Commander ONO Keichoku, Examining Official, in the presence of Justice Sub-Lieutenant 2nd Class IBE Yasuo, the recorder of the Court, examined the accused in connection with the case of murder. The questions and answers are as follows:

1. Q. What are your name, date of birth, title and rank, local address, native place, present address?
 - A. Name - NAKIGAMA Ken-ichi.
Date of birth - 13th February 1 95
Title and rank - Lt. Commander, retired.
Local Address - No. 3, Shinonaganoki-Cho, Kure City.
Native place - No. 554, Takasugi, Kamisugi-Mura, Futatabi-Gun, Hiroshima Prefecture.
Present Address - c/o Hideroku ONO, No. 256, Minami-Hatashiki, Tokaichi-Machi, Futatabi-Gun, Hiroshima Prefecture.
2. Q. Court-rank, decoration, medal, annuity, pension, if any?
 - A. I am on the 7th Court Rank(jg)(Ju-shichi-i) and the 4th Class Order of Merit (Kun-Shi-to) and I have War-Medal of the 1911-1914 Incident, Showa Coronation Memorial-Medal Manchukuo Foundation Medal, War-Medal of the China Incident and Memorial-Medal of the Manchurian Emperor's visit to Japan, etc. My pension is not given yet.
3. Q. Have you ever been punished on charge of the criminal case before?
 - A. Never. (The examining official, hereby, told the accused that he would be examined in connection with the above-mentioned murder case.)
4. Q. This is the reasons why you are suspected of the charge. Have you any opinion about it?
(The examining official, hereby, read to the accused the evidence of crime which is stated in the "statement of opinion" submitted by the prosecutor to the Navy Minister under date 8 November 1915 and which is mentioned in the prosecutor's letter under same date requiring this preliminary hearing.)

1. A. That you have read to me just now is without any mistakes, and I haven't any particular opinion about it.
5. Q. It is understood that you have stated to the prosecutor in this way. Have you any opinion about it? (The examining official, hereby, read to the accused the prosecutor's hearing-note for the accused.)
1. A. That you have read just now is without any mistakes.
6. Q. What was the relation of command between the accused and Commander HATKEYAMA at the time when this incident took place?
- A. Commander HATKEYAMA was, at that time, Lt. and the Adjutant of the 1 KUSUP, while I was a company commander. Accordingly, the orders of Commander HAYASHI, the Commanding Officer of the Party came to me through Lt. HATKEYAMA, who was the Adjutant.
7. Q. Then, is it your opinion that the murder of this case was performed by the order of the Commanding Officer HAYASHI?
- A. Yes, it is.

When the testimony was completed, the record made of it was read again: and as HATKEYAMA said that it was without any mistakes, he was caused to affix his signature and seal below.

(Signed) Ken-ichi HATKEYAMA (Seal)
the accused.

(Signed) Yasuo IBE,
Clerk, Second Demobilization
Ministry.

(Signed) Keichoku OKO,
Examining Official, Second
Demobilization Ministry.

At the Tokyo Demobilization Court,
6 November 1945.

Record of the Second Examination of the Accused.

(Pages 104-110)

The Accused: NAKIGAWA Ken-ichi..

On 22nd December, 1945, in a preliminary hearing in the Tokyo General Demobilisation Court, Shinro WATABIKI, SDO. and Pro. of TGDC., in the presence of Yasuo ABE, SDO. and Ref. of TGDC., examined for the second time Ken-ichi NAKIGAWA in connection with the case of homicide with which he was accused.

The questions and answers are as follows:

1. Q. What is your name?

A. NAKIGAWA Ken-ichi.

(After this question and answer, the examining officer told NAKIGAWA that an interrogation would be started in connection with the case abovementioned.)

2. Q. Is there anything to be corrected in your statements made so far?

A. Yes, there are some points to be corrected, which I would like to mention you about; because my memory was not altogether clear and exact at the time, I think I made some incorrect statements.

3. Q. Tell me the organization of the forces that joined in the operation for the capture of Rabon Island?

A. I will tell you first that of 1-KNSLP. It was as follows:

Commanding Officer: Commander HIYASHI,

Adjutant: then-Lieutenant HIRAKAWA,

Company Commander: NAKIGAWA, myself.

No. 1 Platoon (Ensign Rinnocuko FUKUDA)

No. 2 Platoon (Warrant Officer Shuzo NAGATA)

No. 3 Platoon (Warrant Officer Tokuyoshi YOSHIMAWA)

No. 4 " (I cannot remember the name of the Commander.)

No. 5 " (Warrant Officer Masaru YOSHIKAWA)

A Machine-gun platoon (Warrant Officer Kakutaro SAKAMI)

An Infantry-gun " (Warrant Officer Kenji ITOUE)

Besides the above we had the following attached units.

Communication Unit (Warrant Officer Kazuo SUWA)

Transportation Unit (Warrant Mechanician Saburo ODA)

Medical Service Unit (I cannot remember the name of the Commander.)
Stretcher Unit (I cannot remember the name of the Commander, but he was a Petty Officer.
Engineering Unit (Petty Constructor Koigo KATAYAMA)
Paymaster Unit (I cannot remember the name of the Leader.)

Besides the above mentioned officers, there were following officers in the 1-KWSIP.

Chief Pay Clerk	Harriet Wataru Juroo ISHIMURA.
Chief Surgeon	Surgeon Lt. (I cannot remember his name.)
Assistant Surgeon	Surgeon Ensign SOEZOZOHO (ETU).
Chief Paymaster	Paymaster Lt. (I cannot remember his name.)
Chief Archivist Clerk	Paymaster Lt. (jg) Yu-ko TAMAGATA.

/the 5th platoon from
the 1st. Sasebo NSLP,

Commanding Officer, Commander H.Y. SHI arrived at Ambon City and assumed command on the 9th (or 10th) February 1942. Before that time, Adjutant H.F. KUYAMA was assuming the command in his place. The company joined in this operation as the 2nd company of 1-KWSIP, and the 1st company of the 1-KWSIP had been dispatched to Solo Island area (Philippines). The 4th platoon had been detached from the 2nd Sasebo WSP, and the 2nd platoon and the infantry-gun platoon from the 3rd WSBF, to join in the organization of the force of the 1-KWSIP.

Part I will tell you about the 34th WSBF. This corps was created on the 5th of February, 1942, with the following key personnel:

Commandant	Deer-Admiral H.F. KUYAMA
Senior Staff Officer	Commander IZU
Engineer Staff Officer	Lieutenant ITZOGUCHI

At the time of the landing on Ambon Is. these numbers were the only component part of the corps, totally lacking the subordinate organizations, though Rear-Admiral H.F. KUYAMA was assigned to take the Command of Naval Forces in battle after landing on Ambon Is.

Besides these naval forces, the main body of the ITO Detachment of the Army under Command of Major-General ITO played the roll of capturing Ambon City, and General ITO was the Commanding General of over-all

forces of the army and navy. Moreover, 21st Minesweeper Division joined into the battle as a surface fleet.

4. Q. Tell me the course of the battle to capture Rabou Island.
- A. I tell you what I can recall.

At 10.30 p.m. on the 30th of January, 1942, our force reached our Hitoloma beach, and prepared for landing. At 0215 a.m. on the 31st we started landing under the order "Start action", and finished landing at 5.15 a.m. Leaving a part of the force there, we marched to the Jaha airfield, where we got at 3.50 p.m. and began fighting. But at 5 p.m. we temporarily stopped fighting in order to get back for a while to renew preparation for further fighting.

On that night we stayed at Sovaood about 4 kilometers north of the airfield.

On the 1st February, we dispatched the officer reconnoiterer to get information on enemy situation. After having roughly classified the enemy situation at 9.30 p.m. a unit to break through into the airfield which was organized by about half strength of each infantry platoon except No. 1 and No. 4 platoons left Sovaood to get information of the situation inside the enemy positions and to break wire-entanglements. An army force of one company started from Sovaood at 5 p.m. for the purpose of penetrating into the Jaha airfield from back. (An agreement had been made between the army and navy that the airfield was to be broken into at 3 a.m. on the 3rd of February.) Between 2 and 3.30 a.m. of 2nd February we broke the wire-entanglements, penetrated into enemy positions; and thereupon we were fired by enemy with small arms and machine guns, and engagement ensued finally turning into a hand to hand fight.

When we reported the situation of this fighting to Rear-Admiral MATSUMI then at Sovaood, he left that place at 3.15 a.m. taking with him the whole of his troops remaining so far in rear in order to support the penetrating unit at the Jaha airfield, and at 5 a.m. he got there. He gave battle. Friend-planes bombed the enemy more than ten times; a large number of casualties for both

sides, friend and foe, in the heavy fighting led us to stop fighting some time after 9 a.m., and we got back to Sotacoed for a while to straighten the line. At 5 p.m. about 50 enemy soldiers came Sotacoed to surrender. After the sunset the penetrating unit began to arrive at Sotacoed one after another, and the concentration of our whole troops was accomplished at 11 p.m.

On 3rd at 1 a.m. the whole of our force left Sotacoed to capture the airfield reaching there at 5 a.m. We machine-gunned enemy positions to decoy enemy firing for the purpose of finding out the exact positions of enemy guns. But there was no returning fire from the enemy and it appeared that the enemy was prepared for surrender having lost the fighting spirit. When Mr. HATKEYMA, then the acting Commander of the 1-K SFP, accompanied by an interpreter, entered the airfield as the parlementaire, the enemy offered him an over-all surrender. At 6 a.m. we marched into and occupied the airfield, and at about 9.50 a.m. the army force entered the airfield from the back and joined us.

The above is the summary narrative of the capture of the Iaha airfield. Irbon City was told to have been occupied by the army troops on the 2nd of February.

5. Q. Tell me about the enemy POW captured in battle to capture the Iaha airfield.
 1. In the forenoon of the 1st of February (I am not sure of the exact time), our reconnoitrons (Petty-Officer OKIDA and seaman 1st Class TAMURA of the Company-headquarters platoons) captured 10 enemy troops led by an Australian Army Second Lt. and took them to Sotacoed. And besides this, as mentioned above, on the 2nd of February about 50 Australian POW were taken prisoners by us when they came to our camp to surrender.
6. Q. How were these POWs disposed of?
 1. The first 10 POWs were bayoneted to death before our force left Sotacoed for the support of the aforementioned penetrating unit on the 1st of Feb. Both Lieutenant HATKEYMA and I were at that time near the Iaha airfield in charge leading the penetrating unit, so we did not see the scene of the execution on the spot; according to Ensign SAKIMOTO's statement made to us afterward, these POWs were killed by the order

of the Commanding Officer Rear-Admiral HATAKEYAMA, because these POWs were likely to become a drag upon the movement of the admiral's force in rear.

As I remember right the key personnel then present at Sowacoed were as follows:

Senior Staff Officer, IEKI.
Engineer Staff Officer, NIZOGUCHI.
Ensign, SAKIMOTO.
Commander of Machine-gun Platoon, SASAKI.
Commander of Infantry-gun Platoon, IFOUE.
Commander of Communication Unit, SUMA.

Next I will tell you about the killing of the POW which numbered, as I remember aright, 51, though I mentioned in the above they were more than 50.

On the 4th of February Ensign SAKIMOTO at Sowacoed sent a report to Rear-Admiral HATAKEYAMA at the Laha airfield that SAKIMOTO was at a loss with small number of guard for treatment of POWs. According to the SAKIMOTO's report these POW either rebelled against him or made desertions because of the misunderstanding due to difference of language. The Admiral got angry hearing this report, and called Adjutant HATAKEYAMA and me to his room at the Laha airfield that evening, where the engineer staff officer was also present.

We were ordered by the Admiral that we should kill them on the following day because he had received a report informing that POWs at Sowacoed were in disquietude. In compliance with this order on the 5th of Feb., I took about 30 Petty Officers and men to Sowacoed; I cannot recall now from what platoon these 30 petty officers and men were selected. In a forest of coconut-tree, about 200 meters toward the airfield from Sowacoed, we dug out holes, and killed POWs with swords or bayonets. I recall, it took about 2 hours from 10 a.m. The process of the murder was as follows: I divided 30 Petty Officers and men into 3 groups, the first group for leading the POWs out of a dwelling house where the victims were temporarily confined, the second for preventing disorder on their way from the house to the forest, the third for beheading or stabbing the POWs. The POWs were sent to the spot one by one and made to kneel with bandage on their eyes. Our men of the third group, one at a time, came out in turn either to behead a POW with his sword or to stab him through the breast with his bayonet.

These POWs were all Australians, including 4 or 5 officers. I am sure that there was a major, whose name was unknown to me. All corpses were buried in the holes. The names of our men then employed for this execution cannot be recalled at all. But it is certain that there were present on the spot no officer, either warrant or commissioned, except myself. Most of the time I placed myself in the middle between the house and the place of the killing to do the overall command; but I went to the spot when the last victim was to be executed. Interpreter IKEUCHI was then in the dwelling house to send out the POW from the house.

7. Q. Did you make a report that the execution had been accomplished?

A. I reported it to Adjutant HATAKEYAMA in his room on that day, and I suppose the adjutant in his turn reported it to Admiral HATAKEYAMA.

8. Q. Kakutaro SASAKI made us a statement regarding the killing of the first group of the POW in this way. What do you think of it?

(Thereupon the examining officer read No. 10th question and answer of the record of the examination of Kakutaro SASAKI, a witness of the case.) (see No. HPC-50.

A. I am sure there was in Ambon a Lt.-Colonel of the Dutch POW captured by our army, but of any other such ranking Dutch POW I never heard. And SASAKI says that 2 or 3 POW were captured by reconnoiters of a platoon. These POW might be, I suppose, the same with the enemy scouting squad led by an officer whom our Petty-Officer OKUDA and his men captured just as I mentioned in this hearing. When these POW numbering more than 10 were murdered, SASAKI was in Sowacon as a machine-gun platoon commander in rear.

9. Q. How many POWs were captured at the time of occupation of the Laha airfield, besides the POWs mentioned above?

A. I cannot recall the exact number of these POWs, but I suppose that there were about 200 Australians and about 60 Dutchmen. Besides these there were some troops of the native tribes, but it is believed these natives ran away from the spot when we broke into the airfield. The POW were given their billet in the barracks in the airfield.

Evid. Doc. No. 5353.

12.

10. Q. Tell me the activities of our naval forces after the occupation of airfield.

A. Rear-Admiral HATKEYAMA hoisted his flag at the Laha airfield on the 5th of February as Commanding Officer of the 24 USBT. The main force of the 1-NSLP left Laha for Rabon on the 10th of the month, leaving a platoon of about 40 officers and men at Laha. It was the machine-gun platoon, as I remember right.

11. Q. Tell me about the other killings of the POWs that you have afore stated.

A. As I have said, there were billeted in the airfield barracks some 200 Australians and some 60 Dutchmen. When our forces first entered into the airfield, they saw that the Japanese strength was very small numbering only some 170. Some of the POWs, therefore expressed their view through IYUCHI, interpreter, to such an effect as that they would not have surrendered but would rather have continued fighting bravely if they had known the Japanese strength was so small, and that if they had fought more stubbornly the Japanese casualties would have amounted to a considerable degree. In addition to these they behaved themselves disobedient in their assigned works, though partly caused by the difference of language. And about 30 of them were considered to be especially disobedient. The Commanding Officer heard of this fact, and he gave Adjutant HATKEYAMA and me an order in his room in the evening of 5th February to murder these some 30 POWs.

I had about 20 enlisted men kill these some 30 POWs about 3 p.m. on the following day, if I remember right, in a coco-palm forest near Tauli, about 700 meters from the airfield, though I cannot recall what platoons these about 20 men belonged to. In this killing, too, the poor POWs were once taken in a house nearby, then called out in turn one by one, and killed with sword or with bayonet, as before. Their corpse was buried in the hole dug for the purpose. As in the previous case I stood in the middle between that house and the spot of murder to take general command for the most of the time, and I went to the spot to witness the last one of being killed and ascertained this bloody work had been finished. I reported to the Adjutant.

HITAJEYAMA the accomplishment of the execution. I am not sure whether any Dutch men were included among the victims or not, but it is certain that the victims were all enlisted men.

Next I will tell you about another killing of the POWs.

On the 17th or 18th of February, I cannot recall which day, while we were taking lunch at Mabon, Commanding Officer HIYASHI disclosed his intention rather to kill all the remaining POWs. His reason was this: our troops available for service was numbered only 340 or 350 from which various guards in various districts had to be dispatched; the desertions of the POWs began to be noted; rumours ran among natives that the allied troops would come soon to attack us; enemy planes in fact came for reconnaissance; if the deserting POWs would divulge the situation of Japanese side, we would be in a very unfavourable situation; and all these factors were forming a menace to the position of the Japanese forces. I asked Commanding Officer, then, what is his opinion concerning the provisions of the International Law which I understood to be stipulating that "FURYO" (POW) should not be treated as enemy. He answered me that I was right so far as "FURYO" was concerned, but that the captives interned there were to be classified and called "HORYO" and therefore we would not violate the International Law if we could kill them.

N.B. (The Translator's Note)

In our translation we cannot make any difference between "FURYO" and "HORYO" for the following reasons:

a. In the Navy Regulations of the former Japanese Navy which had been distributed among all of the Naval units as the most authoritative document to be referred to by all navy personnel regarding the various legal matters including those on International Law and customs, the term "HORYO" is nowhere found, though the term "FURYO" is used for prisoners of war. The same holds true with the Manual of the Wartime International Law and Usage, a book which was also published and distributed by the Navy Ministry among almost all naval units of any importance as the most standard, if not the sole, guide book on International Law and customs.

According to these two documents a belligerent person, once captured, will become "FURYO"; therefore

from these widely read books to get no suggestion that there can exist any special stage or status for a belligerent person between his capture and his acquiring the status of the prisoner of war - that is to say, from these books we are told that the instant he is captured, a belligerent is a prisoner of war.

b. The term "HORYO" is used in colloquialism in the same sense with "FURYO". In Chinese characteristics "HORYO" is written 捕虜, while "FURYO" 俘虜. "HO" 捕 means simply "to catch or capture", and "FU" 虜 "to take prisoner or to capture a hostile or offending person alive". The meaning of "RYO" 虜 is "a prisoner". When combined and phrased "HORYO" and "FURYO" have the same meaning, a prisoner of war, according to either Japanese-Chinese dictionaries or Japanese-English dictionaries as well as to our common conception.

A few days later, in the evening while taking supper with the Commanding Officer and his Adjutant H. TAKEYAMA at the garden in front of the Commanding Officer's room, I was told by the Commanding Officer to kill all the POWs at Laha.

On the following day, probably 20th of Feb. if my recollection is right, I gathered up some 60 enlisted men from various platoons attached to the 1-KISLP. Moreover about 50 enlisted men from the crew of the Minesweeper No. 9 who were boarding at the 1-KISLP barracks because their ship had sunk then, were employed by the consent of a reserve-list officer attached to that minesweeper.

I took the both groups of enlisted men totalling to some 90 to Laha from Yuban at about 1 p.m. on the 20th. We dug holes in a place in a coconut forest at Teuli; this new place is a different position from that of the previous murder being 120 or 150 meters away from it, and was about 200 meters on the headquarters of the Laha Detachment. I divided 90 men into 3 groups: 2 groups for bloody killing, 3 groups for watching the POWs; on their ways to the killing place, 2 groups for sending POWs out of the barracks, one group for guard on the spot of the killing, the last one for emergency. The POWs were carried by truck from the barracks to the Detachment building about 500 meters in distance, and then were on foot from the Detachment building to the spot of

the killing. The same way of the killing was adopted as in the previous case; to have them kneel down with bandage over their eyes and to kill them with sword or bayonet.

The poor victims numbered about 220 in all including a few Australian officers. Interpreter IKEUCHI was, as in the previous case, in charge of duty of sending POWs out of the barracks; I was in the Detachment building giving overall directions and ascertained the final accomplishment of the affair on the spot. It took from about 6 p.m. to 9.50 p.m. Most of corpses were buried in one hole, but because the hole was not big enough to receive all of the corpses a dug-out nearby was also used for the burial. On that day upon my arrival at our headquarters I reported it to the Commanding Officer directly and also to his adjutant.

12. Q. Did the men in the civil engineering corps join in it then?
- A. No, not at all.
13. Q. Was the order of killing POWs issued by the Commanding Officer HAYASHI at his own discretion?
- A. In the first three cases of the murder the orders were with no doubt issued by Rear-Admiral HATAKEYAMA. But as for the last case, I am not sure whether the order was issued by the Commanding Officer HAYASHI himself, or it was given in compliance with the order of Rear-Admiral HATAKEYAMA.
14. Q. Do you know that the International Law prohibits the murder of POWs?
- A. I was taught it and knew it, but the Commanding Officer HAYASHI told me that though we were prohibited to kill "FURYO", there was no such prohibition concerning "HORYO". I was persuaded by his opinion and obeyed his order.
15. Q. Do you think that it was indispensable at the time to dispose of the POWs from the viewpoint of the conduct of the operations?
- A. Judging from circumstances then existing, we were in a disquieting situation indeed, but I do not believe

that it was unacceptably necessitated to kill all of the POW at any cost.

16. Q. Shinosuke FUKUDA, Kazuo SUMA, Junzo NISHIMURA, Kazuo Ishikawa, and Kakutaro SASAKI have stated in the following way; what is your opinion about their statements?

(The examining official then read the records of the examination of these five witnesses.)

- A. FUKUDA stated as if I took with me men of the civil-engineering corps to the spot of the murder and let them join in the murder, but I never employed in that bloody affair at all. Besides this point, to speak in detail, some parts of statements made by these witnesses are incorrect and different from fact, but I have now no particular opinion about them.

When the testimony was completed, the record made of it was read again; and as NAKAGAWA said that it was without any mistake, he was caused to affix his signature and seal below.

(Signed) Ken-ichi NAKAGAWA,
The Accused.

(Signed) Yasuo ABE,
SDO, Fed., TGDC.

(Signed) Shiro WATABIKI,
SDO., Fed., TGDC.

At the Tokyo General Demobilisation Court,

On 22nd December 1945.

Record of the 3rd Interrogation of the
Accused Ken-ichi NAKAGAWA.

(Pages 163-165.)

On 29th December 1945, in a preliminary hearing in the Tokyo General Demobilization Court, Shinro MATSUKI, examining official of the Court, in the presence of Yasuo ABE, Recorder of the Court, held examination of Ken-ichi NAKAGAWA in connection with the case of homicide, in continuance with the previous preliminary hearing, as follows:

1. Q. What is your name?

A. My name is NAKAGAWA Ken-ichi.

(The examining official told him that he would question him in connection with his homicide case.)

2. Q. How do you feel about the statement of Kunita HATAKEYAMA?

(Hereupon the examining official read the Record of the 2nd Interrogation of Kunita HATAKEYAMA.)

A. The statement of HATAKEYAMA is different in some points from what I told you, but it seems to me that his statement is correct. Therefore, you may correct the different points according to the statement of HATAKEYAMA.

3. Q. What is your opinion about the statement of IWASHITA, Sadaki?

(Hereupon the examining official read the record of the examination of IWASHITA Sadaki, a witness of the case.)

A. Now I cannot recall to my mind that IWASHITA was reproved by me when he approached to the place where the fourth murder was carried out; but I cannot confidently deny his statement because of my lack of memory. About other parts of his statement I have nothing particular to state my opinion.

4. Q. Give me a detailed explanation on the place of the POW killing.

A. Now I present you the maps showing the spots, which I have prepared. Although I had nothing to do with the first murder, I had a chance to visit there afterwards and so I can indicate the spots without mistake.

Evid. Doc. N. 5555.

16.

(S. saying, the record presented two maps entitled "Map of Suwayama showing the spot of Murder" and "Map of Tauli showing the Spot of Murder" respectively which are attached herewith.) (See Ex. HIC-12 attached a & b)

5. Q. What are you thinking of the case now?

A. The order to kill the POWs must have been issued out of sheer necessity due to an impending situation. But it seems to me now that some other measures would have been found out than such a drastic one to cope with the situation, because there were, anyway, still interned other POWs somewhere else on the same island at the time. For my part, I could not but to execute the superior's orders thinking there would be no other way for me to do than to obey them. Recollecting those days I am sorry from the bottom of my heart for the POWs killed by our hands. This idea is haunting me day and night. And I am always praying for their souls with all my heart.

(Hereupon the preliminary examination official explained the defendant the reasons why he was suspected as a criminal and asked if he had any exculpation for it. He answered that he had any exculpation against it.)

6. Q. Have you anything more to explain?

A. N. I have nothing.

When the interrogation was completed, the record was read again: and as NAKAGAMI said that it was without any mistakes, he was caused to affix his signature and seal below.

NAKAGAMI Ken-ichi (signed)

(Signed) Yasu. IBE,
SDO., Fed., TGDC.

(Signed) Shiro MATSUKI,
SDO., Fed., TGDC.

At the Tokyo General Demobilization Court,
On 29th Dec 1945.

Ex. # 1819 B

Evidentiary Document No. 5353-B

RECORD OF STATEMENT.

KUNITO HATKEYAMA, (Pages 16-18)

who is Commander, IJN., and attached to the Navy Ministry, whose present address is the Living Quarter of the Yokosuka Naval Station Headquarters, and who was born on March 14th, 1906, made the following statement, of his free will, in the presence of the Prosecutor at the Prosecution Court of the Tokyo General Court Martial on Nov. 8, 1945:

1. "My domicile is 1717 Yano-Machi, Aki-Gun, Hiroshima Prefecture.

2. "While a Lieutenant of the Navy, I participated in the Arden Island Occupation Campaign in connection with the Great Pacific War in the capacity of the Adjutant and Senior Officer of the 1 KNSLP. And in those days there happened an incident of the murder of POW on the island.

3. "Before entering into the details of the incident I wish to explain the organization of the Occupation Forces and the general view of the operation. The overall command of the operation was assumed by Major-General ITO, IJN. The forces composed of army troops was used for the capture of the City of Arden, while naval troops was employed for taking the air field under the command of Rear Admiral HATKEYAMA, mentioned Commander of the 24 NSBF; the forces placed under his command were-

the 1 KNSLP, one infantry platoon each from the 1st and 2nd Sasebo Naval Special Landing Party, and one army infantry company. The Minesweeping Force consisted of the 21st Minesweeper Division.

"We began our landing of Hitlana (this spelling is not sure) Beach on January 31st, 1942, capturing the airfield on Feb. 3rd. And Admiral HATKEYAMA hoisted his flag at the Laha Airfield on the 5th of the month. In this operation I took the command of the 1 KNSLP troops due to the fact that Commander HAYASHI had not yet arrived at his post.

"The POW taken at the Laha Airfield during this operation were about 250 of Australian and Dutch troops, and there were besides the above native troops amounting to a considerable number as far as I can recall, though the exact number is uncertain.

"With the creation of the 24 NSBF on Feb. 5, the 1 KNSLP was put under the permanent command of this unit. And if I remember correct, either late in February or in the beginning of March the 1 KNSLP was dissolved to be absorbed intact into the 24 NSBF. Commander HAYASHI, Commander of the 1 KNSLP,

Evid. Doc. No. 5333-B.

2.

arrived at his post in Arban around February 7th, and was transferred to other post with the dissolution of the 1 KNSLP.

"Entering into the explanation of the POW murder incident at Laha I am going to state you as follows:

It is recalled it was around the 20th of February that the incident took place. At the court of inquiry I stated that I was away for an operation to clear away guerilla element, leading Mr. NAKAGAWA, a company commander, and others, at the time when this incident occurred. But if Mr. NAKAGAWA stated that he had participated in the incident as the leader on the spot in compliance with the order of Commander HAYASHI which he said to have been transmitted by me, such might be the case. As a matter of fact my memory on the matter is vague because I was exceedingly busy with those affairs such as the clearing up of the battle-fought grounds, the taking over the occupation duties from the army units, the clearing away of guerilla elements, etc. which became necessitated by the situation existing just after the occupation of the area."

(At this juncture the record of the statement by Ken-ichi NAKAGAWA was read to him by the prosecutor.)

5. "I wish to make some statement in connection with what has been read just now. In the composition of the Laha Occupation Forces the artillery unit and the platoon from the 32 Naval Special Base Force were originally a part of the 1 KNSLP, and they had been despatched to Jolo Island till that time; they were merely rejoined to the 1 KNSLP for the operation. According to my memory the Commander of the Laha Detachment was not Chief Warrant Officer SASAKI, but Lieutenant Junior Grade Shoji SAKEMOTO, a special service Officer.

"Moreover it must be added that the term the order given by me which was mentioned in the just-now-read NAKAGAWA's statement should mean the order of our commander transmitted by me, because I was then merely the adjutant, and the proper commander had already arrived at his post before the incident happened.

"Besides the above I do not think of anything to state.

When the statement was completed, the record made of it was read to Kunito HATAKEYAMA, who acknowledged the correctness

Evid. Doc. No. 5333-B.

3.

of the record and affixed his signature and seal hereafter.

(The signature and seal of

Kunito HATAKEYAMA)

(Signed by) Tadao MAMBU, Justice Ensign, IJN.,
Recorder, the Tokyo Naval General
Court Martial.

(Signed by) Ichiro ITO, Justice Lt.-Comdr., IJN.,
Prosecutor, the Tokyo Naval General
Court Martial.

Examination of Defendant

(Pages 26-28)

Accused: - Kunito HATAKEYAMA.

On 8th November 1945, at the preliminary examination court of the Tokyo General Court-Martial, Justice Lt. Comdr. Keichoku ONO the preliminary examination officer, in the presence of Justice Ensign Yasuo ABE, the Recorder of the court, examined the above mentioned accused charged with homicide abetment. The questions and answers were as follows:

1. Q. What are your name, date of birth, affiliation, title and rank, domicile, place of birth, present address and occupation before entering navy?
 - A. Name - HATAKEYAMA Kunito.
Date of birth - 14th March 1906.
Affiliation - Attached to Navy Ministry.
Title and rank - Commander of the Navy.
Domicile - 1,717 Yano-Cho, Aki-Gun, Hiroshima Prefecture.
Place of birth - same as domicile.
Address - Yaguchi, Kuchida-Mura, Aso-Gun, Hiroshima Prefecture.
Occupation before entering navy - Middle school student
2. Q. Court rank, decoration, medals, annuity or pension, if any?
 - A. 6th Court Rank: Junior grade (Ju-roku-i), 5th class

Evid. Doc. No. 5335-B.

4.

order-of-merit (Sun-co-to), war medal for the 1931-1934 Incident, a Manchukuo Foundation Medal, Medal Commemorating the Showa Coronation, and war medal for the China Affair.

been

3. Q. Have you ever/punished for Criminal offenses?
A. Never.

(Hereupon the preliminary examining officer told the defendant that he would now start questioning him on the aforementioned charge.)

4. Q. The reason why you are suspected of the aforementioned charge is this. What do you say about it?

(Hereupon the preliminary examining officer then read to him the evidence of the crime which is noted down in the "Statement of Opinion", submitted by the Prosecutor ITO to the Navy Minister under date 8 November 1945 and which is mentioned in the Prosecutor's letter under same date requiring this preliminary hearing.)

- A. The number of POW murdered was not so large as is stated in papers just now read to me. According to my recollection the POW killed numbered some 100 to 150. Besides this point I have no other opinion.

5. Q. As I understand, you have stated to the prosecutor in the following way. Is it correct? (With this, the preliminary examining officer read the record of the statement of the accused which has been prepared by the prosecutor.)

- A. It is exactly as you have read just now.

6. Q. What was your relation with Lt. Comdr. MUKAGAKI in the chain of command at the time the case took place?

- A. I was at that time Adjutant to the 1 KISLP, while Lt.-Comdr. MUKAGAKI was a company commander of our corps. Therefore the orders by the Commander of the Corps, Commander Shojiro HAYASHI, were in some cases transmitted through me, while at other times, they were given direct to MUKAGAKI by our Commander.

7. Q. If that is so, may I understand that you transmitted the Commander's order concerning this case?

- A. As far as I remember now, it was so.

Evid. Doc. No. 5333-B.

5.

When the testimony was completed and the record made of it was read again, the defendant stated that it was without mistake so that he was caused to affix his signature and seal below.

(Signed)

Defendant - Kunito HATAKEYAMA (Seal)

(Signed) Yasuo ABE,
Justice Ensign, IJN.,
The Recorder of the Tokyo General
Court-Martial.

(Signed) Keichoku ONO,
Justice Lt.-Comdr., IJN.,
The Preliminary Examination Officer of
the Tokyo General Court-Martial.

At the Preliminary Examination Court of the Tokyo General
Court-Martial,

On 8 November 1945.

THE RECORD OF THE SECOND INTERROGATION OF THE ACCUSED.

(Pages 119-129)

THE ACCUSED: Kunito HATAKEYAMA.

On the case of the homicidal abetment and aid by the above-mentioned accused, the Preliminary-Examination Officer Shinro MATSUKI, a Second Demobilization Official, made the second interrogation of the accused at the Preliminary-Examination Court of the Tokyo General Demobilization Court, on December 24th, 1945, as follows; Yasuo ABE, the Recorder of the Court and a Second Demobilization Official, attending there also:

1. Q. Your name?

A. Kunito HATAKEYAMA.

(Hereupon the examination officer stated that he would proceed to interrogate the accused on the case aforementioned.)

2. Q. Is the statement you have made so far all correct?
- A. No. I have made some mis-statements, and so I am going to set them right.
3. Q. Regarding the composition of the forces participated in the capture of Arbon Island Ken-ichi NAKAGAWA states like this; what is your opinion about it?

(Hereupon the examination officer read Question No. 3 and its answer from the record of the second interrogation of Ken-ichi NAKAGAWA another accused.) (See No. HMC-38.)

- A. Roughly speaking the composition was as is stated by NAKAGAWA, but there are some inaccurate points in his statement; and I will make my statement on these points i.e.

The second platoon and the infantry-gun unit of the 1 KNSLP are not to be considered as the reinforcement from the 32 MSBF, but both of them were attached to the Jolo Detachment, which was really a part of the 1 KNSLP, and were then just made to rejoin with the main body because of Arbon Occupation Operation.

As regards the establishment of the 24 MSBF, NAKAGAWA says that this corps had already been created at the time of the landing on Arbon Island. As a matter of fact, however, at the time of the landing Rear Admiral HATANEYAMA was still merely an officer attached to the Headquarters of the Third Fleet, though he joined us on board my ship in compliance with a telegraphic order by the fleet headquarters under date of January 29 that "Rear-Admiral HATANEYAMA shall assume the command of the 1 KNSLP after the landing on Arbon Island"; and though two of his assistants, Commander IENI and Lieutenant MIZOGUCHI, both also attached to the Third Fleet Headquarters, came to our ship accompanying him, too.

At that time I could not understand clearly enough what was really meant by the words "shall assume the Command of the 1 KNSLP", but I was told by the Admiral that he would command the party in every aspect, and everything was to be reported to him thereafter.

Being the acting commander of the 1 KNSLP since around the 25th of January, I was left to uncertainty about the prospect whether the proper Commander of the 1 KNSLP would newly be appointed or not, because after the arrival of Admiral HATANEYAMA an information

Evid. Doc. No. 5333-B.

7.

reached to my ear that the 1 KNSLP would be reorganized into the 24 NSBF and that Admiral HATKEYAMA would become the commandant of the new unit with Commander IEMI and Lieutenant HIZOGUCHI as his staff officers.

As to the operation of the 21st Minesweeper Division this division participated in the campaign breaking into the Ambon Bay area independently; the surface fleet which directly cooperated with us in the occupation battle from the open sea was, as a matter of fact, a Destroyer Division of the Second Destroyer Squadron.

4. Q. Regarding the progress of the Ambon Island Occupation Battle Ken-ichi NAKAGAWA has said like this; do you agree with him?

(Hereupon the Examining Officer read question No. 4 on the answer from among the record of the second interrogation of the accused Ken-ichi NAKAGAWA.) (See No. HIC-38.)

- A. Roughly, his statement is correct, though I will present you my written statement because his statement is not sufficiently precise in respect of time and some other points.

(Hereupon the accused HATKEYAMA presented a paper entitled "Summary View of the Course of the Battle fought by the 1 KNSLP in the Capture of the Lahe Airfield on Ambon Island," which is annexed at the end of this present record.)

5. Q. Will you explain about the POW taken at the battle of capturing the Lahe Airfield?

- A. The POW taken for the first time were some ten Australian soldiers; they were taken by our scouts in the daytime of the 1st of February and were brought in to Sonecard (this spelling is not sure). The second group of the POW numbering about 50 were told to have been captured in the daytime of the Feb. 2 and been brought to Sonecard, though I have no knowledge about the circumstances of the capture because I was then far into the enemy's defense position of the Lahe Airfield.

The Third group of the POW numbered about 250, consisting chiefly of Australian troops and of some Dutch soldiers, both of whom were taken on the occasion of the capture of the Lahe airfield early in the morning of February 3rd.

These were the all of the POW taken in the battle for capturing the Laha Airfield.

3. Q. How were these POW killed?

A. As to the about ten POW taken for the first time by our scouts, I heard that Admiral HATAKEYAMA put them to death early in the morning of February 2nd when he was about to start marching toward the airfield with all his troops. I do not know much about the details of the killing because I was then far into the enemy's position at the airfield. As far as I know the officers remaining at Sawacond at that time were Admiral HATAKEYAMA, Commander IEMI, Lieutenant HIEGUCHI, Ensign SAKAYOTO, Warrant Officer SASAKI, and Warrant Officer SUMA. So far as I was told Rear Admiral HATAKEYAMA had had Ensign SAKAYOTO, Senior Officer present of the 1 KNSLP troops at Sawacond, kill them when his force was about to leave Sawacond for the capture of the airfield, considering it necessary to get rid of the danger to his rear in view of the fact that only a weak force consisting of a medical service unit and a communication unit would be left at Sawacond.

The second group of the POW, about 50 in number, were killed in the following manner: Either on the night of the 3rd of February or on the next day, I don't remember accurately which is correct, a report was forwarded up to the Admiral HATAKEYAMA's headquarters at the Laha Airfield through a despatch rider by Ensign SAKAYOTO, who was then stationed at Sawacond. According to this report the POW were constituting a menace against our unit left at Sawacond which was composed of only one squad of ten guard troops, five or six communication operators, about ten medical corps men and fifty or sixty wounded persons; and this report said the POW, taking advantage of our weakness, behaved rebellious toward the guards, attempted desertions, etc.

At the Laha Airfield, on the other hand, all of our troops numbering about 150 to 170 in all were then occupied by such duties as to keep another group of the POW totalling about 250 under guard, as well as to be alert against any eventuality which were not unliable to occur from outside at such a precarious time as was natural immediately after the capture of the field. It was under these circumstances that Rear-Admiral HATAKEYAMA, who had been already apprehensive of the overall uneasy situation of the area which had been manifesting itself as is written my "Summary View

of the Course of the Battle in the Capture of the Laha Airfield on Ambon Island", called NAKAGAWA, company-commander, and me into his room where Lt. MIZOGUCHI was also present, when he received the aforementioned report by Ensign SAKUNOTO, and ordered us to kill the POW who were assuming menacing attitude at Sorsogon. He added also at that time that the killing had to be carried out after careful preparation to insure strict secrecy, and that rifles must not be used because the sound of the firing would have bad effect.

Though I considered, on the one hand, that the absence of the company-commander from the airfield would cause us some anxiety in view of the then precarious defense situation of the field, I was also afraid, on the other hand, lest some unretrievable failure should be made if an unexperienced officer such as a platoon-commander would be entrusted with this killing of the POW which required a considerable carefulness. Therefore I promptly expressed my intention to Admiral HATAKEYAMA that I would have the company-commander administer and supervise this affair personally, and with the approval of the Admiral I so ordered the company-commander NAKAGAWA.

Around 4th or 5th of the month, probably on the 5th if I remember right, the Company-Commander NAKAGAWA reported to me that he had come back from Sorsogon having done the killing of the POW there. So I took him to Admiral HATAKEYAMA to have him report the Admiral on the accomplishment of the killing. Though later on I was reported in detail on the conditions of the killing, the vivid and exact picture of the reported detail fails to come up to my memory at present; for I was at that time so much occupied with various other duties including negotiations with the army authorities at Ambon, I was also told at a later date that the troops led by NAKAGAWA for the killing numbered about thirty, though I am not certain which platoon he had picked up the men from. A report was also made to me that the prisoner of the war of the highest rank then killed was a major of the Australian force; of the others none can be recollected to me now.

When we killed the POW for the third time, the victims numbered about 30 out of the about 250 POW in total taken at the time of our capture of the airfield. And this was done also according to the order of Admiral HATAKEYAMA. These 250 POW, when drawn up on a runway on the occasion of the victorious formal

entry of the main body of the Admiral HATAKEYAMA's forces into the airfield, behaved themselves so disturbingly apparently out of their vexatiousness, making tut-tut, clenching their fists, stamping the grounds, and the like, that we were forced to make them quiet and to place them under more strict guard. We also noticed on that night that the POW were talking a secret talk in their barracks without going to sleep as if instituting a mutinous intrigue. And some of them committed desertion taking advantage of the smallness of our guard strength. Furthermore, when we employed them in the work of clearing off debris in the battle-fought areas, we saw in their attitudes something inexcusable, for instance: They behaved as if they were looking down upon our troops, or they were attempting to invite danger to us through misleading us in the handling of bomb-igniters or through keeping the mined place a secret. Moreover, in view of a very uneasy situation of the airfield at that time as is written in my "Summary View of the Course of the Battle in the Capture of the Ambon Island", Admiral HATAKEYAMA had to keep deployed almost all of his forces for the defense of the positions where the surprise by the enemy's remnants was expected; therefore he could employ only insufficient strength for the guard of the POW. There was also some evidence that the POW were exercising contact by the medium of deserters with their comrades remained outside unaptured.

I think it was the result of the consideration of these circumstances just mentioned as well as of the recollection of the aforesaid mutinous behaviour of the 50 POW at Sownoad that Admiral HATAKEYAMA called the Company-Commander and myself on February 5th and ordered us to kill about 30 men who were considered to be especially rebellious out of the about 250 POW billeted in the barracks in the airfield. I in my turn, having decided to have this admiral's order be executed by the Company-Commander himself as before, gave my order to MAKAGAWA to that effect.

On the 6th evening I was reported by the Company-Commander that the killing of the about 50 POW had been finished completely at Tauli as ordered, though I do not know the detailed manner of the killing. All I can remember now was the information then I received to the effect that all of these about 30 POW were Australian with some officers among them.

Next I am going to state about the POW killing committed for the fourth time. For some length of time after the just now mentioned killing of the about 30 POW the rest of the POW behaved themselves quiet and obedient. But since after no more than one platoon strength got left at Laha upon the withdrawal of the main body of the 1 KNSLP to Ambon around February 10th, desertion began to take place again among the POW in course of time. Moreover, it appeared that they were expecting an Allied counter offensive against the region and were preparing for a resolute action to be taken by themselves on such occasions. The fact that some of the deserters dropped back to the camp gave the rise to our suspicion naturally that a sort of secret liaison was being conducted between the POW in the camp and their friends outside. In addition to the above, the POW who were reluctant in their assigned work and showed defiant attitude became increasingly numerous. These changing situations of the POW at Laha were reported to the Commander of the 1 KNSLP at Ambon by the Chief of the Laha Detachment, whose name was, if I remember right, SAKAMOTO, an Ensign.

As is written in the "Summary View of the Course of Battle", the circumstances in Ambon at that time was also in a great precariousness, and the strength available in the city for the defense and guard was so small that it was impossible for us to send reinforcement to Laha even in case of emergency, not to say permanently. It was probably due to this reason that Commander HAYASHI called the Company-Commander NAKAGAWA and me around the 17th or the 18th of February in front of his official room and gave his order directly to the Company Commander to kill the all remaining POW. On the next day the company-commander NAKAGAWA reported me that the killing of all of the remaining POW had been completely done at Teuli; accordingly I reported the same on to Commander HAYASHI.

As for the detailed manner of the kill, I did not hear anything except that swords or bayonets were used instead of rifles in order not to make loud reports. Though I was told that the company-commander took with him the enlisted men quartered in the Victorian Barracks, the number of these men has lost to my memory. In this connection it is recollected that in compliance with the commander's order I told the men employed in the killing never to blab about the matter

Evid. Doc. No. 5333-B.

12.

for fear this should reach the ears of the POW who were then billeted in Galala.

7. Q. Was the killing of the last POW ordered by Commander HAYASHI?
- A. I think Commander HAYASHI ordered this too in accordance with the direction by Admiral HATAKEYAMA.
8. Q. Had the Third Fleet Headquarters been ever asked its opinion regarding the disposition of the POW?
- A. As for myself I do not know about the matter of such higher level.
9. Q. How about the POW taken by the army in the case of the Ambon Island Occupation Campaign?
- A. The POW taken by the army totalled about 800 including both Australian and Dutch. The 24 NSBF took over from the army around February 12th or 13th the charge of these POW in Galala. And the 24 NSBF in its turn by the oral order through Staff Officer MIZOGUCHI, who then looked after the affairs related to the POW, had the 1 KNSLP take charge of the POW Camp at Galala with the guard of one platoon strength. Accordingly either Warrant Officer SASAKI or Ensign FUKUDA, so far as I can recollect, though I am not sure which of them, was despatched to the POW Camp to assume the guard duty.
- As far as I have been told none of these POW was killed.
10. Q. Did you compile any list of the POW captured by the Navy?
- A. As I understand the Staff Officer MIZOGUCHI was preparing for it, though nothing was heard about it since then.
11. Q. It is said that about 50 enlisted men belonging to Minesweeper No. 9 then already sunk were included in the men whom Company-Commander NAKAGAWA took with him in the case of the killing of the last group of the POW; do you know about it?
- A. I have no knowledge about it.

12. Q. Was it then understood to you that the killing of the POW is prohibited by the international law?
- A. Yes. I know it fully at that time.
13. Q. If you understood it, why do you think the killing was committed?
- A. I think the killing was done in the light of the circumstances then existing, i.e. in view of the fact that the surrounding situation was very precarious and that the portent that the POW might mutiny was extremely noticeable, there existed not a small possibility that we ourselves would become of their victim instead if they would be let alone.

When the interrogation of the accused was completed, the record made of it was read to the accused; and as the accused said that it was without any mistakes, he was caused to affix his signature and thumb-print below.

(The signature and thumb-print
of the Accused)

(Signed) Yasuo ABE,
Recorder, Second Demobilization
Ministry.

(Signed) Shinro MATSUKI,
Preliminary Examination Officer,
Second Demobilization Ministry.

At the Preliminary Court of the Tokyo Demobilization Court,
On December 24th, 1945.

The Third Interrogatory of the Accused.

(Pages 324-327)

The Accused - HATAKEYAMA Kunito.

On 12 February 1946, in the third examination in the Court of the Demobilization Ministry in Tokyo, MATSUKI Shinro, SDO Pac. of TGDC in the presence of IBE Yasuo, SDO, Red. of TGDC, continued the examination of HATAKEYAMA Kunito held on the charge of abettor to a murder case. The questions and answers are as follows:

1. Q. What is your name?

A. HATAKEYAMA Kunito.

(Hereupon the examining official told him that he would examine him for the case above-mentioned.)

2. Q. In what capacity were you called to Commandant HATAKEYAMA, when you received the orders to execute the POWs around 5th or 6th of February?

A. As the Commanding Officer, HAYASHI, of 1 KNSLP had not yet arrived at his post on that day, I was called in to receive the orders in the capacity of Acting Commanding officer of 1 KNSLP.

3. Q. In what capacity then, when the orders of the execution of POWs was delivered on about 20 February?

A. The order was directly delivered to the company commander NAKAGAWA Kenichi from the Commanding Officer; I was attending there as adjutant. As a rule, orders of the Commanding Officer are to be delivered directly from the Commanding Officer, though sometimes they are given through the adjutant. As adjutant is the assistant to the Commanding Officer, it is necessary for him to be well acquainted with Commanding Officer's policies and intentions in general, so that when an order is given, the adjutant is usually with him, and if not, he is ordinarily told about the order before or after its actual delivery.

4. Q. Did you express any opinion of yours, when the order of the execution was given?

A. I know that the execution of POWs is in principle a violation of international law and also of rules concerning land warfare. So when the Commandant

HATAKEYAMA told me at first his intention that he would kill POW due to their restive attitude, I proposed him to put them under a stricter guard, and then take some other measures afterwards. But Commandant HATAKEYAMA seemed to have been strongly convinced that it would be better to dispatch the POWs at once, because, he was afraid, if he left the matter as it was, there might be chance enough that we ourselves would be annihilated by the rebellious POWs. As for me, I took it for granted to obey the Commandant since my advice had once been denied; this thought of mine, moreover, had been strengthened through my experiences during the war.

Again, about 20 February, when I was summoned to the Commanding Officer HAYASHI, before the order of execution was given, I told my opinion as before, and I think the Commanding Officer himself advised the Commandant regarding the illegality of the execution of POWs.

But it seems that the Admiral had been determined to act according to his own conviction in view of the general affairs on the island of Ambon and the rebellious atmosphere among the POWs. And the order was eventually delivered from the Commanding Officer HAYASHI.

5. Q. Is it true that the Company Commander NIKAGAWA also stated his views when he was given the order of execution from the commanding officer HAYASHI around 20 February?

A. Yes, I remember, he did.

6. Q. Does the defendant think that the superior's order should be obeyed, even when the order is clearly unlawful?

A. It is very difficult to decide whether the order is unlawful or not; it depends upon the differences of the quality of culture and opinions between the commander and his subordinate. If the order is construed to be plainly against the law, the subordinate may state his own opinion about it; but when the commander insists upon carrying out his order, the subordinate should obey, I think.

Of course, it may sometimes happen that the subordinate purposely disobeys the commander's order and acts otherwise, but in this case he does so upon his own responsibility, considering the situation in general.

7. Q. Is the defendant's career truthfully represented in this curriculum vitae of yours?

(Hereupon the examining official read to the defendant the copy of the curriculum vitae of the defendant that had been forwarded from the Chief of Personnel Bureau of Navy Ministry.)

- A. There are no mistakes.

By the way, before I was admitted to the Naval College I had finished Kōryō Middle School of Hiroshima City in March 1925.

8. Q. How about your domestic affairs?

- A. Wife Suzuko (33 years), daughter Yōko (12 years) and son Tadakuni (5 years); we have no other property except about 7,000 yen on deposit.

9. Q. How is your state of mind at present?

- A. It seems to me that the general situation in those days was the principal factor for Rear-Admiral Hatakeyama, the Commandant, to determine upon the execution of POWs, in order to prevent the untoward accident; and I think that the commandant was compelled to take such measures; maybe he could do otherwise in such a psychological crisis he was confronted with. But it is truly regrettable that he did not accept my opinion about the matter, and at the same time I feel an extreme pity for those POWs who lost their precious lives through the execution, I can't help praying for the repose of their souls from the bottom of my heart.

(Hereupon the examining official told the defendant about the grounds upon which the defendant was held in suspicion, and that the defendant could plead his case if he would, but the defendant said that he had no plea to offer.)

10. Q. Have you anything else to say?

- A. No, I have nothing else to say in particular.

When the testimony was completed, the record made of it was read again; and as Hatakeyama said that it was without

Evid. Doc. No. 5333-B.

17.

any mistakes he was caused to affix his signature and seal below.

The Accused

HATAKEYAMA Kunito (Signed)

(Signed) ABE Yasuo, SDO, Rec., TGDC.
Clerk, Second Demobilization Ministry.

(Signed) WATABIKE Shinro, SDO, Pres. TGDC.
Examining Official
Second Demobilization Ministry.

At the same court as above, 12 February 1946.

Evid. Doc. No. 5333-B.

17.

any mistakes he was caused to affix his signature and seal below.

The Accused

HATANEYAMA Kunito (Signed)

(Signed) ABE Yasuo, SDO, Rep., TGDC.
Clerk, Second Demobilization Ministry.

(Signed) WATABIKE Shinro, SDO, Rep. TGDC.
Examining Official
Second Demobilization Ministry.

At the same court as above, 12 February 1946.

Doc 5333-B

橫須賀鎮守府廳舎内
海軍省出仕
海軍中佐

島山國登

明治三十九年三月十日生

右之者昭和二十年十一月八日東京軍法會議核
察之於之檢察官ニ對シ任意ニ、通リ陳述ヲ爲
シタリ

一、私、本籍、廣島縣安藝之郡安野町千七百十
七番地ニアリマス

二、私ハ嘗テ海軍大尉ニ在リ、大東亞戰爭
ニ際シ、第一特別官(之任將校)トシテ、下ノ二
島攻略作戰ニ參加シ、マシタガ、當時同島ニ於テ
信守力務官事件ガアリマス、其、狀況ヲ申

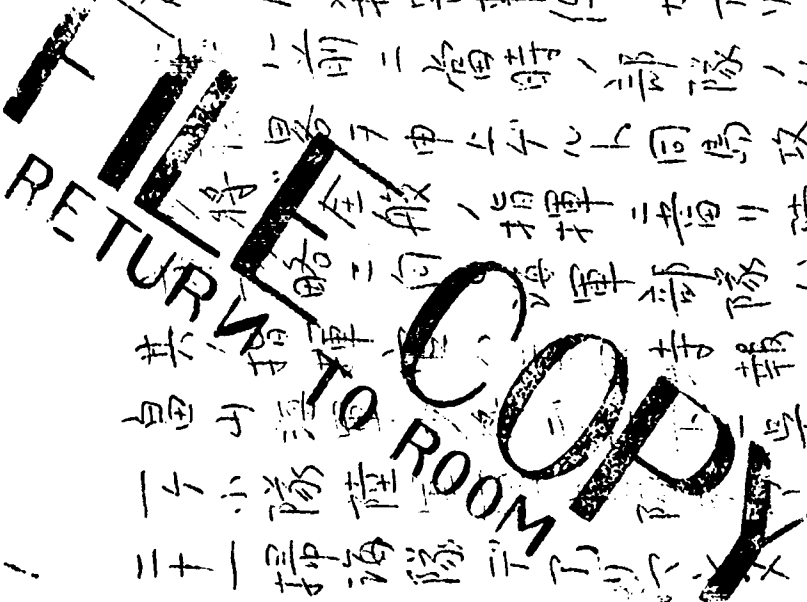
シ、前ニ當時、部隊、編成ニ、戰鬪經過
ニ、島ヲ申上ケルト、同島攻略作戰、伊藤陸軍

將全般、指揮ニ當リ、陸軍部隊ハ、二ボ
共、指揮官、海軍部隊、飛行場攻略ニ當リ

島山海軍、一、特任、一、特、各
一、小隊陸軍、一、掃海部隊、

一、掃海隊、一、掃海隊、

昭和十七年一月三十一日、陸軍開始ニ、
三日、飛行場占領、四月五日、島山少將、



Doc 5333-B

飛行場ニ將旗ヲ掲ゲニシミンク 當時私ハ司令
林中佐未着任ノ爲メトテ一特ノ指揮官トシテ
本作戦ニ當リニシタ 同作戦ニ於テ「ラ」ハ飛行
場ニ於ケル敵機傍ハ遠洲和蘭軍約二百
五十名ヲ其ノ他ニ土民兵ヲ數ハ判然トシマセ又ガ
相音書教アツタ様ニ記憶ニ居リマス

二十四特根ハ二月五日編成セラルシマシタ又ガ呉一
特ハ其ノ儘其ノ指揮下ニアリマシテ二月下旬カ
又ハ三月上旬ト思ヒマスガ呉一特ガ解散セラル
其ノ儘二十四特根ニ編入セラルタデアリマス

呉一特ノ司令林中佐ハ二月七日頃ア「ボ」ニ
着任セラルシ呉一特解散ト共ニ他ニ轉去致シテ
居リマス

「ラ」ニ於ケル機傍殺害事件ニ付キマス「ラ」ハ
二月二十日前後ノ事ト記憶シマスガ私ハ査閲ノ
際ハ私ガ中川中隊長以下ヲ引達シ既定作戦
ノ爲メ不在中其ノ處命ガアツタ様ニ申上ラマシ
タガ中川中隊長ガ其ノ處命ニ付利カラウ林司令
ノ命令傳達ニ依リ現場指揮官トシテ其ノ
處命ニ關係シタト述ベテ居ルト致シマス「ラ」其
ノ様ナ事ガアツタカニ知シマセ又ガ當時ハ占領

直後ノ事デアリ 戦場ノ整理ノ陸軍部隊ト
引継既定作戦守極メニ多忙デアリマシタ
「ラ」ノ記憶ニ於テ判然トシタ事ハ申上ケカネヌ

Doc 5333-B

飛行場ニ將旗ヲ掲ゲニシマシク 當時私ノ司令
林中佐未着任ノ爲メトテ一特ノ指揮官トシテ
本作戦ニ當リシマシク 同作戦ニ於テ「飛行
場ニ於ケル敵信屬ハ遠洲和蘭軍約三百
五十名ヲ其ノ他ニ土民兵ヲ數ハ判然トシマセ又ガ
相者當數アツク様ニ記憶ニ居リマス

二十四特根ハ二月五日編成セラルシマシク又ガ呉一
特ノ其ノ後其ノ指揮下ニアリマシテ二月下旬カ
又ハ三月上旬ト思ヒマスガ呉一特ガ解散セラル
其ノ後二十四特根ニ編入セラルテアリマス。

呉一特ノ司令林中佐ハ二月七日頃 アニホニ
着任セラルシマシク呉一特解散ト共ニ他ニ轉去致シテ
居リマス

「」ニ於ケル信屬殺害事件ニ付キマスシテハ
二月二十日前後ノ事ト記憶シマスガ私ノ査閲ノ
際ハ私ガ中川中隊長以下ヲ引連シ敷定作戦
ノ爲メ不在申共ノ處命ガアツク様ニ申上ケマシ
タガ中川中隊長ガ其ノ處命ニ付私カラ林司令
ノ命令傳達ニ依リ現場指揮官トシテ其ノ
處命ニ關係シタト述ベテ居ルト致シマスシハ其
ノ様ト事ガアツタカニ知シマセ又ガ當時ハ占領
直後ノ事ナリ 戦場ノ整理ノ陸軍部隊ト
引継敷定作戦等極メニ多忙テアリマシク
テ私ノ記憶ニ於テ判然トシタ事ハ申上ケカネス

Doc 5333 B

此、時橋察官（中川建）ニ付スル書取書ヲ
 讀南ケケリ
 一、只今御讀聞ケ、事ニ就キマシテ、山口攻路
 部隊、編成中三十三特部、砲隊及一ヶ小隊、
 元々兵一特、一部ニアリマス。亦、島ニ派遣セ、
 シテ屋々、テ復歸セシメタケル、事ニアリマス
 又、派遣隊長ニ就キマシテ、私ノ記憶テハ
 佐々木兵曹長ニシテ、特部中尉阿本正ニシ
 テ、アツタ様ニ記憶シテ居リマス。
 尚、只今御讀聞ケ、中川、調書中、私ノ命令
 ト云フ言甚カアリマスガ、私ノ當時副官ニシテ、
 司令着任後、事ニアリマス、テ司令ノ命令
 傳達ノ意味、元ニシテアリマス
 其ノ他、別ニ申上ケル事、ニアリマス也又

右讀聞ケケル處相違ナキ旨ヲ申述、左ニ署
 捺印セリ

白山國登(印)

前同日記場所ニ於テ

東京
軍法
會議

東京軍法會議

海軍法務少尉 南部定生(印)

橋本海軍法務少佐

伊藤一郎(印)

5333 B

Doc

被告人訊問調書

被告人 白田山國登

右殺人幫助 被告事件ニ付 昭和二十年十月

日東京軍法會議議審官海軍志務少佐

小野敬直ニ録事海軍志務少將 阿部保

田立倉ノ上被告人ニ對シ訊問ヲ爲スニ

左ノ如シ

一 問 氏名、生年月日、所屬部隊、官職等級、

本籍、出生地、住居、入籍前、職業、如何

答 氏名、 白田山國登

生年月日、 明治三十九年三月十四日生

所屬部隊、 海軍省

官職等級、 海軍中佐

本籍、 廣島縣安藝郡方野所

千七百十七番地

出生地、 本籍地ニ同シ

住居、 廣島縣安佐郡口田村字名

入籍前、職業、 中學生

二、 問
答

位記、勳章、記章、年金、恩給、有否ヤ

從六位勳五等 昭和六年乃至九年 事務從軍

記章、滿洲國建國廟記念章 昭和

大正記念章 支那事務從軍記章

等ヲ有スニ居リマス

三、 問
答

刑事上ノ處分ヲ受ケタノコト、ナシカ

アリマセヌ

4

Doc 5-333B

於茲豫審官ハ被告人ニ對シ前記被害事件ニ付
訊問スルヒ曰フ事ケタリ

四問 被告人ノ嫌疑ヲ受ケタル内容ハ斯様ニナリ
居ルカ如何

於茲豫審官ハ豫審請求書ニ據用ノ檢察官
意見書記載ノ犯罪事實ヲ讀聞ケタリ

答 只今御讀聞ケノ内容中殺害ノ夕位屠
ノ數ハソシ程多クハク自分ノ記憶テハ百名カ
百五十名位ニアツト思ヒマス 其ノ他ニ就
テハ意見ハアリマセ又

五問 被告人ハ檢察官ニ對シ斯様ニ申述セテ
居ル様カ如何

於茲豫審官ハ被告人ニ對スル檢察官ノ聽取
書ヲ讀聞ケタリ

答 只今御讀聞ケノ通り事實ニ相違アリマセ又

六問 本件當時ニ於ケル中川少佐ト被告人
トノ命令關係ハ如何

答 自分ノ當時兵第一特務陸戰隊副官
ヲシテ居リ中川少佐ハ中隊長ヲシテ居
リマシタ 終ッテ同隊司令林銓次郎
中佐ノ命令ハ私ヲ連テ中川ニ達セタル事
モアリ直接命令ヨリ達セタル事ニアリマシタ
様ヲ關係ニナツテ居リマシタ

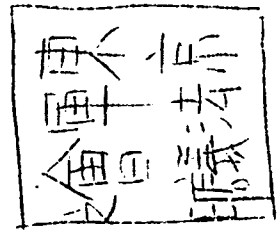
5

Doc 5333B

七回 然るに本件は林大佐、命令を傳達して
 實行せしむる事ニナリ居ルカ
 答 只今、自命ノ記憶ニテ居ル限リニ、左様
 ニナリ居ルト認ムス
 左讀聞ケタル處相違ナキ旨ヲ申シ並ニ
 以テ左ニ署名捺印セシム

秘 出 人 島 山 國 登 (印)

前 日 前 部 協 所 三 三
 東 京 海 軍 法 會 議
 録 事 海 軍 法 務 少 尉



阿 部 保 田 乃 (印)
 海 軍 法 務 少 佐

小 野 敬 直 (印)

Doc 5333B

七間 然るに条件・林・佐・命令・傳達・
實行セシム事ニナリ居ルカ
答 只今ノ自命ノ記憶ニテ居ル限リニテ左様
ニナリ居ルト思ヒマス
左讀聞ケタル處相違ナキ旨ヲ申シ述べ
テ以テ左ニ署名捺印セシム

秘出人 島山國登 (印)

前日目前部場所ニ於テ

東京軍法會議

録事海軍法務少尉

東京
軍法
會議
之日

豫審官

海軍法務少佐

阿部 保田 (阿部)

小野敬直 (印)

Doc 5333B

第三回被告人訊問調書

被告人 白田山國登

右ノ者ニ對スル殺人幫助被告事件ニ付昭和二十
年十二月二十五日東京復員裁判所、豫審審達ニ
於テ豫審官才ニ復員官紳引紳郎ノ録事
才ニ復員官阿部保用之會ノ上被告人ニ對シ
前回ニ引續キ訊問ヲ爲スニ左ノ如シ
一、問 氏名ハ

答 白田山國登

於茲豫審官ノ前記被告事件ニ付訊問
ヲ爲スニ曰ク告ゲタリ

二、問 是迄申述ク多事ノ相違ナクカ

答 事實ト相違ク多矣カアリマス、テ只今
カハ是等ノ点ヲ訂正致シマス

三、問 アニホノ島攻略ニ参加ク多部隊ノ編成

ニ付中川建一ノ斯様ニ述クニ居ルカモ何
此ノ時豫審官、被告人中川建一ニ對スル才ニ
訊問調書中才ニ問答ヲ讀聞ケタリ

答 大体中川ノ述クニ居ル通りデアリマスカ

其ノ中若干違ツテ居ル点ヲ申上ケマス
呉一特、第三小隊及赤坂隊、三十三特
根カニ派遣サレタモノ、テ、此ノ兩隊トモ
本来呉一特、ホロ派遣隊ニ所屬シテ居
ルモノ、テ、アニホノ島攻略戰鬥ノ為ニ呼返
シタモノデアリマス

7

5333.B

Doc

又二十四特根ニ付、中川ハアニホノ島上陸當時既ニ
 編成サシテ居ツタ様ニ申シテ居リマスカ島山少将
 ハ夫道ヲ三艦隊司令部附テアリマシタカ一月
 二十九日同艦隊ヨリ「島山少将ハアニホノ島上陸
 後呉一特ヲ指揮スベシト」電命ヲ受ケ同
 艦隊司令部附、家本中佐ヲ溝口大尉、二人
 カ共ノ輔佐官ト為リ私、船ニ來ラシタモノニアリマ
 共、陸「呉一特ヲ指揮スベシト」云フ意味カ良ク
 判リマセヌテシタカ島山少将ヨリ萬事ニ付ニ指
 揮スベシカラ自分ノ慶ヘ云ツタ事イト云ハシテ居リマ
 尙私ハ一月二十五日頃カラ呉一特、司令代理ヲ致シ
 居リマシタカ島山少将カ来リシテカラアニホノ
 島嶺後呉一特、二十四特根ニ編成替日ニサツテ
 島山少将カ共、司令官、家本中佐、溝口大尉カ
 參謀ニナルト云フ語ヲ聞イテ居リマシタ終ツテ
 當時呉一特、司令カ新ニ着任セシルカ何ウカ
 ト云フ先モ判然ニシカクテアリマス
 次ニ三十一掃海隊ハアニホノ海ノカニ侵入シタモノト
 直接我々ト共ニ海上カラ攻略戦ニ参加シタ、
 オニ水雷戦隊中、駆逐隊テアリマシタ

四、問「アニホノ島攻略戦闘、經過ニ付中川建一
 ハ斯様ニ述ヘテ居ルカ如何

答 此、時隊軍官ニ報告人の中川建一ニ対スルカニ
 訊問調書中第四問答ヲ讀聞ケタリ。

Doc 5333B

答 大体其全進シテアリマスカ時間ノ莫等餘リ
正確ナキ處ニアリマスカラ私ノ記憶ニ基ク
モノヲ書イテ差ニ上ケマス

此ノ時被詰人ノ吳一特アニホニ島ニハ飛行場攻略戦
闘經過概要ト題スル書面ヲ提出シタリ以テ本調
書ノ末尾ニ添付ス

五問 ヲハ飛行場攻略戦闘ニ於テ得タ敵俘虏
ノ状況ニ付申述ベヨ

答 第一回ハ二月一日ノ晝間我々候カ濠洲軍
ノ俘虏約十名ヲ捕ヘテソコトニ連行シ
テ來ミタ

第二回ハ二月二日晝間約五十名ヲ捕ヘテ
ソコトニ連行シタト云フ事ヲ聞キミタ
當時私ハハ飛行場ノ敵陣地内ニ侵入シ
居リマシタノテ其ノ捕ヘタ時ノ状況等ハ知
リマセヌ

第三回ハ二月三日早朝ハ飛行場侵入占領
ノ際濠洲軍ヲ主トシテ若干ノ和蘭軍ヲ合
メテ合計約二百五十名ノ俘虏ヲ得ミタ
以上ガハ飛行場攻略戦闘ニ於テ得タ敵
俘虏ノ全部ニアリマス

9 六問 之等ノ俘虏ハ如何ニ處分シタカ

答 第一回ノ候ノ捕ヘテ來タ約十名ノ俘
虜ハ二月三日早朝白山少将カ全力ヲ率

Doc 5333 B

其ニ飛行場攻撃ニ向テ際上處命セシタト云フ
事ヲ聞キマシク其ノ際私ハ既ニ同飛行場、
敵陣地ニ侵入シテ居リマシクテ處命、詳シイ
状況ハ知リマセヌ 其ノ際ソノコードニ残ッテ
居タ者、中、私、知ッテ居ル准士官以上ハ富
山少将家木中佐、海軍大尉、坂本少尉、佐々木
兵曹長 諏訪兵曹長等ニアリマシテ信房
ノ處命ハ私ノ聞ク又所テハ富山少将カ飛行
場進撃ニ際シソノコードニ醫務隊通信隊
ニカ残留シテ自係上後方、不安ヲ除ク爲
ニソノコードニ居タ兵一特、先任者坂本少尉
ニ命ジテ之ヲ處命サセタト云フ事テアリマス
オニ回目、約五十名ノ信房ハ二月三日夜中
カ良ク記憶シテ居リマセヌカ當時ソノコード
ニ残留シテ居タ坂本少尉カソノ飛行場ニ
居リマシタ富山少将、許ニ傳令ニ依リ報告カ
参リソレニ依リマスト當時ソノコードニ残ッテ居
タハ負傷者五、六十名、醫務隊約十名、通
信隊五、六名警戒兵一ノ令隊約十名、ミニア
ルニ對シ夫等ノ信房カ警戒兵ニ對シ反抗
的態度ヲ示シタリ逃走者カ出タリ不穩十
然勢カヲ示シテ居ルト云フ事テアリマス又一方
ハ飛行場ニ於テモ味方ノ全兵力百六七十名ヲ
以テ長嶺南嶺ノ四周ニ對スル不安モアリ約二百

Doc F333 B

五十名、信濃、警戒ニ當リテ居リ兵令差出シタ
 タアニホニ島ニ飛行場攻略戦闘經過概
 要中ニ記載致シテ置キマシク様ニ四周ノ不安ノ
 状態ニ加ヘ此等ノ信濃カ反乱ノ氣勢ヲ示
 シマシクテ島山少将ノ自令ノ部屋ヲ私トシ中川
 中隊長ヲ呼ビ其ノ場ニ溝口大尉ヲ居リマシタ
 カ同少将ノソコニト、信濃カ不穩ノ情勢ヲ
 示シテ居ルト云フ報告カ來タカニ處命シテ任舞
 へ命セシシ尚共、際外部ニ判ニ又様ニ良ク
 準備ニヤシ銃ノ音カ不カク使ハ又様ニト云ハ
 ミシクテ私ノ音時中隊長ヲ飛行場ノ外ニ去
 事ニ飛行場周辺ノ警戒上若干ノ不安アリ
 ミシクカ信濃ノ處命ノ相當ニ慎重ヲ要スル事
 ナアリ中隊長ナドニ命シテマアサシト困ルト思
 ヒマシクテ其ノ場ニ島山少将ニ對シ中隊長ヲ
 シテ直接指揮監督シ之ヲ實施セシメ度旨
 申出テ同少将ノ承諾ヲ得テ之ヲ中川中隊長ニ
 命シタ

ソレテ四日又五日頃多分五日ト記憶シマスカ中川中
 隊長ノソコトニ赴キ信濃ヲ處命シテ來タリ日
 利ニ報告カアリマシクカ私ハ中川中隊長ト共ニ
 島山少将ノ處ニ参リ同中隊長ヲシテ處命終了
 日報告セシマシタ當時私陸軍ト連絡ノ
 為アニホニ中ノ方ニ行リテ來リシテ居クニ處命際、

Doc 53336

詩之模標ニ付モ其、後報告ヲマツク何カ只今判然ニ記
憶シテ居ルニ又中川中隊長、率キテ行クヤホリ、後、聞
イタ所ニ依リ、三十名程ヲマツト之ヲ事テ下リ、マカ何處、小隊
ニ連テ行ク判然ニ記ス。

又其、際處命令ヲ傳フ先任者、濠洲軍、少佐下、聞
キテ、マカ其、心算、記憶シ居ルニ又

第三軍團、飛行場長、際捕ハ約二百五十名、中、約三十名
迄、命令、自山少將ヲ命ジ、マカ、マカ、此、約二百五十
名、傳、自山少將、率キテ、味方、主方、飛行場、庫艦、旗

樹テ、入場ス、際、滑走路ニ整列セシメ、マカ、マカ、我兵カ、
非聲ニ察ス、ト、裝備、為テ居ル、ヲ見テ、結果、思ヒ、マカ

台打テ、マカ、マカ、握リ、足ヲ踏ミ、鳴ラ、マカ、マカ、残念相、
態度ヲ示シテ、騷キ出シ、マカ、マカ、之ヲ制止シ、マカ、一層警戒、嚴

ニシテ、事ヲアリ、マカ、又其、夜、停、傍、軍、兵、令、中、睡眠セ
ス、反抗、為ニ密議、マカ、マカ、居、様、氣配、見、マカ、マカ、更ニ、
上、警戒、兵、ヲ、マカ、マカ、此、夜、マカ、マカ、見、マカ、マカ

高、戰、場、整理、傳、傍、使、マカ、際、味方、兵、隊、對、上、侮
ス、様、態度ヲ示シ、マカ、マカ、爆、彈、發、火、聲、取、扱、マカ、マカ、
味方、損、害、マカ、マカ、様、態度ヲ見、マカ、マカ、更ニ、地、雷、敷

設、個、計、敷、マカ、マカ、政、音、危、信、マカ、マカ、マカ、マカ、高、南
時、狀況、マカ、マカ、攻、戰、戰、闘、經、過、概、要、中、記、載、マカ、マカ、置

キ、マカ、マカ、甚、マカ、不、安、狀況、マカ、マカ、マカ、自、山、少、將、傳、時
飛行場、狀況、マカ、マカ、敗、殘、兵、未、撤、退、處、マカ、マカ、地、上、警

戒、兵、配、マカ、マカ、マカ、傳、傍、整、戒、不、令、マカ、マカ、傳、傍

12

Doc 5333B

カ逃走ニ敗殘兵ト連絡シテ居ル形跡モアリ（オノコロトニ居
 タ約五十名、俘虜カ反乱、氣配ヨホシク狀況トテ照ニ合ニ
 シテ結果ト思ヒニオカ五日ニ私ト中隊長ヲ呼シ飛行場、兵
 舎ニ收容カシテ居ル約三百五十名、俘虜、中將ニ甚シク反乱
 的態度ヲ示スモノト認メタリ約二十名ヲ處命シテ仕舞ト命
 セシメタリ、テ私前ト同様中隊長自ラ其、実行ニ備ニセシ事
 トシ其、日中川中隊長ニ命ジタリ、アリニ
 其、翌六日夕亦同中隊長カ其、俘虜約三十名、夕アリシ
 テ完全ニ處命シタト云フ報告ヲ受テ、夕ニ處命、丹波毒
 矢張リ詳シテ事、利リニセヌ此、約三十名、濠洲軍、ニテ
 將校モ混テ居ルト聞ク、標ニ記憶ニ居リニ
 次ニ第四回目、俘虜、處命ニ付テ申上トス
 只今申上クニシテ標ニ約三十名、俘虜ヲ處命ニタリ、テ
 殺リ、俘虜ニ過順ニシテ居リニタリ二月十日前後ニ二
 十四特撮及吳一特、主カリ下ニ示ニ引揚ケタ後ニハニハ
 僅カ一々小隊ニカ殘留シテ居リニセヌテ、テ次ニ俘
 虜、中カラ逃走者ヲ本始メ其、上近ク聯合軍カ反攻ニ兼

(以下次頁)

Doc 5333 B

14

以上同様態度を示し及又言来々場合之時
應之氣配見及逃走し停虜之歸て来
りて外部と連絡し停虜之様子下り其
上次第作業之怎樣ニリ及抗的態度ヲ示
者次亦示来々之等、状況多ク取本少
尉上記憶之る當時、ハ派遣隊長カアト、
吳一待司令ニ報告ヲ奉リテ

當時アトニ於テ本日提出、戦争經過概要
ニ記載シテ通リ四圍状況甚ク憂慮スルハ狀況
下リ然ニ警告上方、甚ク寡クニ、其、兵ヲ割
リ奪ニ行カス又危急際ニ直ニ應振行ノ事モ
未ナリト状況下リテ之ヲ爲ト思ヒ三月十七日
林司令カ司令室前テ私ト中川中隊長ニ呼ビ司
令カ直接中川中隊長ニ對シテ全部、停虜、處
分ヲ命ゼリテ下リテ

其羽目の中川中隊長カ「タリ」ニ於テ「停虜全
部、處分ヲ済ニテ」之ヲ報告スリテ「タリ」私カ
更ニ司令ニ其、自申上テ之ヲ

此時、處分、状況行テ、首ヲ立テテ為鏡、使用セ
乃又、鏡劍ニ依リ殺害シテ之ヲ以テ私ハ「詳シ
事聞テ」之ヲ中川中隊長カ當時「トリヤ兵舎
ニ居テ下士官兵ヲ連シテ行テ」ハ聞キテ之カ何名位
下リテ記憶シテ居テ之カ甚ク際司令カ指示セ
テ待テ此事カ當時カ之ヲ收容シテ居テ停虜ニ知

Doc 5333B

15

七、
九、
問 答 問 答

一〇、
問 答

以上懸念の如く実行の如く有對して口外
標口止の事と據るに序云
最後、俘虜、處分の林司令官の命に
恐る最後、時天島少將、命を授け林司令官
の命を以てして思ふ

俘虜、處分の際、第三艦隊司令部、其、意
趣を記し、事の下
自今、左様、事實、知、り、又
丁、島、攻、略、戦、に、於、て、陸、軍、側、に、得、る、俘、虜、如、何
陸、軍、側、に、得、る、俘、虜、濠、蘭、軍、令、に、合、計、約、合、名、を
丁、二、月、十、三、日、頃、に、於、て、陸、軍、に、電、報、を、送、り、引、續、け、
受、け、当、時、俘、虜、關、係、事、務、を、擔、當、し、て、序、溝、口
冬、謙、ら、吳、特、對、し、十、十、隊、を、派、遣、し、た、ら、
俘、虜、收、容、所、に、警、戒、を、言、明、し、た、ら、多、分、佐、々、木、兵
曹、長、の、福、田、少、尉、が、判、然、と、し、た、ら、十、十、隊、を、派、遣、し、
て、俘、虜、收、容、所、に、警、戒、を、言、明、し、た、ら、
尚、之、等、俘、虜、中、に、處、分、せ、ら、れ、る、一、人、を、屠、す、の
様、に、聞、か、し、た、ら、

海軍側を得る俘虜、行、俘、虜、名、簿、を、作、成、し、た、ら、

溝、口、冬、謙、が、作、成、し、た、序、の、様、に、下、り、又、其、後、何
の、事、も、知、ら、ず、

第四回、俘虜、處、分、際、中、川、少、隊、長、の、司、率、下、

Handwritten text at the top of the page, possibly a title or header.

Handwritten text line.

Handwritten text line.

Handwritten text line.

Handwritten text line.

Handwritten text line.

答

Handwritten text line.

三問

Handwritten text line.

答

Handwritten text line.

Handwritten text line.

三問

Handwritten text line.

答

Handwritten text line.

Handwritten text line.

Handwritten text line.

53338

Handwritten signature or mark.

部

部

部

部

部

部

部

部

部

部

部

部

部

Q or 5333 B:

第三回被告人訊問調書

被告人 島山國登

右者ニ對スル殺人犯中助被告事件ニ付昭和二十一年二月十二日東京復員裁判所豫審庭ニ於テ豫審官第二復員官錦引紳郎、録事第二復員官阿部保男之會ノ上被告人ニ對シ前同ニ引續キ訊問ヲ為スコト左ノ如シ

一問 氏名

答 島山國登

於茲豫審官、前記被告事件ニ付訊問ヲ為ス旨ヲ告ケケリ

二問 被告人、二月五日頃、及六日頃、後傷處令ノ命令ニ島山司令官ヨリ達セシトク時、如何ナル資格ヲ司令官ニ呼ビシカ

答 其、際、吳一特、林司令カ來タ着任者ニ「リスミタ」ト私、吳一特、司令代理トシテ呼ビ命令ヲ達セシトク、ニアリス

三問 二月二十日頃、後傷處令、命令ノ林司令ヨリ達セシトク時、如何

答 其、際、命令ノ司令ヨリ中川中隊長ニ直接達セシトク、ニアリスカ私、副官トシテ之ニ會ハシ、ニアリス

勿論司令カ、命令ノ司令カ直達下サシカ原則ニ時ニ副官ヨリ傳達セシトクモアリ

又副官ノ司令、補佐トシ司令、六針

17

5333B

So

18

意圖ト云ハ様トモ、ヲ全般的ニ知リテ居ル必要
カアリマス、ニ命令ヲ下サレ様答ニニ立會ハカリ
又立會ハサル協會ハ下令前後司令ヨリ話カレ
ノカ普通ニアリマス

四問 信濃處分ノ命令カアツタ際ニ被告ノ人カ
ノ意見ヲ具申シタ事カアツタカ

答 信濃カア處分スル事、國際法上又ハ陸戰
法規ノ上カウモ原則トシテ違法ニアラズ、
私モ知リテ居リマシタ、テ最初島山司令官
ヨリ信濃ニ反乱ノ状態カアリシニ處分シ
テ、任舞ノヤト云ハシ、時ニ私、信濃ノ監
獄状態ヲ屬屬事ニシテ、他ニ方策ヲ考
ヘテ、何ウニスカリ意見ヲ申述シタ事カアリマス
其、島山司令官、若シ抛ツテ置ケテ此カ
カ反対ニマシル様ト事ニサツタ、共、時、既ニ
手遅シタ、今ノ中ニ斷乎處分シテ任舞ヘト
云フ決意カ非事ニ堅カク様ニアリマス
私トシテ、一應意見ヲ具申シテ、ソカ採用
サレタ命令トシテ下サレタ、其、命令ニ
絶対服従スベキモ、ト思フテ居リマシタ、
時ニ戰爭中ニ於テ此ノ感、深クシ居リタ
様ト決意ニアリマス

又二月二十日頃、處分命令カアレ前ニ林司
令カニ呼ビ、時モ同様ニ私、意見ヲ申上
ケ、又林司令モ此ノ事、當分島山司令官

5-333B

80c

ニモ通シテト思ヒマスカ同司令官ノ當時、下ニ
ホシ島ニ於テ一般狀態停滯ノ及乱氣勢力等
ヲ考慮サシ又上新子處命スル事ニ決意サシ又
結果結局林司令カウ此ノ命令カ出サシタモト
思ヒマス

五問 中川中隊長モ二月二十日頃林司令ヨリ停
滯處命ノ命令ヲ受ケタ際一應之ニ對シ
意見ヲ具申シタトノ事又カ如何
答 其ノ様ナ事カアツタ様ニ記憶シテ居リマ

六問 被告人ノ上官ノ命令ナラハ明ニ不法ナ
命令タリ云フ事カ判ツテ居ニモ部下
ハ之ニ従フヘキモノデアリト思フカ

答 命令マカ正シクカ何カト云フ事ハ命令
者ト服従者ノ平等ノ修養見識ノ上下
テ判断ハ仰ク困難ニアリマスソシテ
明ニ不法ト思フタ時ニハ意見ヲ具申
スル譯ニアリマスカリテモ尚命令サシ
場合ハ之ニ服従スヘキモノト思フテ居リス
勿論其ノ時ノ各種ノ情況ニ依ツテハ
命令ト雖モ之ニ従ハサル爲ノ責任ヲ自命
ト命執ルル云フ決意ノ下ニ命令ニ従ハス
他ニ手段ヲ講ズル場合モアリマス

19 七問 被告人ノ経験ハ此ノ履歷書記載ノ
通り相違ナイカ

Doc 53333

此時該審官海軍省人等、局長曰、此係二條、被
告人ニ對スル應歷書寫ノ誤聞ケリ
答、御審問ケ、通リ相違ナリトセ又
尚海軍兵學校ノ學所、經歷ト、正
十一年三月廣島市廣陵中學校ヲ卒業
シテ居リマス

八問、家底、事情、如何

答、初等官職ノ妻壽々子(舊三十二年)ト女
壽二(舊十二年)長男忠國(舊五年)カ、
財産トシテ貯金カ約七千円ト、外不動産
無シトアリトセ又

九問、現在ノ心境、如何

答、本件信譽處命令、其當時、四圍、不穩情
勢ニ對スル危險防止、爲山少將ノ指揮
官トシテノ責任ニ斯ノ如キ決意ヲ爲シタ
ス、ト當時、同少將ノ心理上、已テ符十カ、タモ
トモ思ハ、トスカ其陰氣、一應ノ意見ヲ答シテ
シカ、タ事ヲ遺憾ニ感シマス、共ニ本處分
ニ依リ一命ヲ失ヒシ多敷ノ信譽カニ對シテ、
洵ニ氣、毒ナ次第ナトアリ、テ其ノ冥福ヲ
祈ヒ、念ヲ強キモノカアリトス

於茲該審官、被告人ニ對シ本件嫌疑
ヲ受ケタレ、處由ノ生ケ、辯解、得ルヨリ
告ケタルニ、被告ノ辯解、十日終、答ケリ

十、問、他ニ申述ハ、事ハ、ナシカ

Doc 5333H

答別段申上ノ書下リヨロ

右讀用ノ久處相違ナキヨリ申上ノ心ヲ
以テ左ニ署名捺印セヨ

被差人 白田山國登

前同日前記場所ニ於テ
更ニ書寫員裁断所

録事兼二徳信官

阿部信力 (印)

徳信官

兼二徳信官

阿部信力 (印)

E. # 1820

f. i

Evidentiary Document No. 5418.

In the International Military
Tribunal for the Far East.

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
AND OTHERS

V

ARAKI Sadao and Others

AFFIDAVIT

I, George De Verdon WESTLEY of 284a Camberwell Road, Camberwell, in the State of Victoria, formerly VX44808 Major G. De V. Westley of 2/21 Infantry Battalion make oath and say:-

1. On 3rd. February 1942, I was one of the 39 officers and 752 other ranks of the Australian Forces captured by the Japanese on the Ambon Town side of Ambon Island. We were confined in Tan Toey Camp. Dutch prisoners of war were held in a separate compound on the other side of a road which separated the two compounds.
2. On 26th October, 1942, a draft of 263 prisoners of war including the Battalion Commander and all except one medical officer were taken from the Australian Forces and despatched to an unknown destination. Nearly all of the Dutch prisoners of war were taken on the same ship. I remained and had 22 officers and 505 other ranks under my command.
3. Early in 1942 the Japanese had placed within the boundaries of our camp a bomb dump of approximately 200,000 pounds of high explosive aerial bombs. This was placed within 50 yards of the Camp Hospital. I protested to the Japs but they refused to remove it saying that the Allies wouldn't bomb it because they knew we were in the camp. On 15th February, 1943, as a result of a bombing raid this dump was exploded. Ten Australians, including the Medical Officer, were killed and 75 were wounded. Most of the camp was blown flat and more than half was destroyed by fire. I was then told by the Japs to put a large red cross on the roof of one of the still remaining buildings. The rest of the camp was still burning. Japanese planes flew over and photographed the camp. I was then ordered to take the Red Cross down and realised that it had only been erected for propaganda purposes.
4. Up to August, 1944, the rice ration was 17 ounces per man per day. Occasional issues of fish and vegetables were made, but never at any time was the daily ration adequate for the amount or kind of work the men had to do. During September and October, 1944, the daily ration was $1\frac{1}{2}$ ounces of rice and $7\frac{1}{2}$ ounces of tapioca flour per man. During November and December the daily ration was 9 ounces of tapioca flour and no rice. For January to March, 1945, the daily ration was $8\frac{1}{2}$ ounces of rice per man plus sometimes sweet potatoes but these were all bad.

E. # 1820

f. i

Evidentiary Document No. 5418.

In the International Military
Tribunal for the Far East.

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
AND OTHERS

V

ARAKI Sadao and Others

AFFIDAVIT

I, George De Verdon WESTLEY of 284a Camberwell Road, Camberwell, in the State of Victoria, formerly VX44808 Major G. De V. Westley of 2/21 Infantry Battalion make oath and say:-

1. On 3rd. February 1942, I was one of the 39 officers and 752 other ranks of the Australian Forces captured by the Japanese on the Ambon Town side of Ambon Island. We were confined in Tan Toey Camp. Dutch prisoners of war were held in a separate compound on the other side of a road which separated the two compounds.
2. On 26th October, 1942, a draft of 263 prisoners of war including the Battalion Commander and all except one medical officer were taken from the Australian Forces and despatched to an unknown destination. Nearly all of the Dutch prisoners of war were taken on the same ship. I remained and had 22 officers and 505 other ranks under my command.
3. Early in 1942 the Japanese had placed within the boundaries of our camp a bomb dump of approximately 200,000 pounds of high explosive aerial bombs. This was placed within 50 yards of the Camp Hospital. I protested to the Japs but they refused to remove it saying that the Allies wouldn't bomb it because they knew we were in the camp. On 15th February, 1943, as a result of a bombing raid this dump was exploded. Ten Australians, including the Medical Officer, were killed and 75 were wounded. Most of the camp was blown flat and more than half was destroyed by fire. I was then told by the Japs to put a large red cross on the roof of one of the still remaining buildings. The rest of the camp was still burning. Japanese planes flew over and photographed the camp. I was then ordered to take the Red Cross down and realised that it had only been erected for propaganda purposes.
4. Up to August, 1944, the rice ration was 17 ounces per man per day. Occasional issues of fish and vegetables were made, but never at any time was the daily ration adequate for the amount or kind of work the men had to do. During September and October, 1944, the daily ration was 1½ ounces of rice and 7½ ounces of tapioca flour per man. During November and December the daily ration was 9 ounces of tapioca flour and no rice. For January to March, 1945, the daily ration was 8½ ounces of rice per man plus sometimes sweet potatoes but these were all bad.

April and May the ration was 6 ounces of rice and from June to August, 1945, it was 4 ounces of rice. After the Japanese surrender the rice ration was increased to 27 ounces per man per day and in addition tinned meat, and fish, fresh vegetables, sugar and salt were issued showing that the supplies of these foods were available. The Japanese guards got much better rations than we did. They did not suffer from any shortage of food.

5. Continuously throughout the period of captivity the majority of officers and men were forced to work on military tasks. These included loading and unloading supplies and munition from ships, building roads and stores, oil tanks, air-raid shelter tank straps, gun positions trench systems and delousing bombs. The hours of work were from 7 a.m. to 6 p.m. I made protests about the nature of the work on which the men were engaged but these were of no avail. If the men refused to work they were beaten. On one occasion when I protested the Camp Commandant struck an ulcer on my leg with a stick. On another occasion when I complained about a sick American being made to work I was struck on the face. Sick men were made to work. Men with terrific ulcers, men suffering from malaria, beri beri, enteritis and other diseases were forced to work by the Japanese. I have seen men on crutches and sticks forced to work. I know of other cases of men who were so weak that they had to be lifted on to trucks being forced to work.

6. After August, 1944, a particular drastic form of torture was introduced by the Japs. We called it "the long carry." In my opinion it was deliberately instituted to break down the morale and to kill off the weaker prisoners. At that time the men were in an extremely weakened condition, many were sick as well. They were forced to carry 90 pounds bags of cement one per man, or a 250 pound aerial bomb between 2 men up a very steep incline. They were beaten with sticks or pick handles if they lagged. The men left at about 6 a.m. and returned at 8 p.m. The distance to the place where these things were dumped and back was about miles. The cement and bombs could have been transported easily by sea as both the place where they were picked up and the place where they were dumped was near the sea.

7. Discipline was enforced by the Japanese by beating with pick handles, iron bars, steel wire cables etc. In 1942 on one occasion eleven men were executed by the Japs. About 4 men had been outside the compound and were caught. They had been out to try to get food. The Japs alleged that 19 others were implicated. They took the 23 men to the Japanese Headquarter outside the camp where they were tortured and beaten for five days. I could hear their screams and could see the rise and fall of the iron bars as they were struck. When they lost consciousness they were revived with water and the beating continued. Eleven of

They were then taken away and executed. Those that came back were just a horrible looking mass of black and blue blood bruises. The Japs had also tortured them with lighted cigarettes and had hung them up by their thumbs. All have since died except Private Elsum.

8. The Japanese executed 17 Australians altogether, 11 for leaving camp to obtain food after dark, 5 for stealing food from a Jap store and one for attempting to escape. Sixteen were beheaded and one was shot.

9. Of the 528 men at Tan Tocy on 26 Oct. 42 only 123 were alive on capitulation of the Japs and two of these subsequently died at Morotai to which we were evacuated.

Sworn at MELBOURNE)
in the State of Victoria)
this the Seventh day)
of October, 1946.)

(Sgd) G. De V. WESTLEY

Before me

(sgd) W. A. Fax
Commissioner for taking affidavits and declarations under the
Evidence Act 1928.

NO 1

五

三十九百四十二年昭和十七年十一月二十二日其壕洲軍カラ軍醫
一名ヲ除キ大隊長及ヒ其他總テテ合ム二百二十三名ノ
俘虜ガ徴發シテ地名不詳、或ル目的地ヘ派遣サレタ。和蘭兵ノ
復虜ヲ達シ殆ト總テ者同船ヘ連シテ行カレタ。
和ハ後ニ残リテ而シテ私ノ指揮下ニ二十二人ノ將校ト五百五人ノ兵ガ
居タ。

三十九百四十二年昭和十七年、初メ日本軍ハ高性能爆彈約
廿万磅ヲ容ル貯藏所一ヲ吾々、收容所、構内ニ設置
シタ。之ハ收容所病院カラ五ヤード以内ノ距離ニ設テシタノ
事ナリ。和ハ日本人達ニ抗議セシメ、聯合軍側ハ吾々此、收
容所ニ居ル事ヲ知リテ居ルコソテ爆撃ヲシタト云フ事其、
爆彈貯藏所ヲ他ヘ移ス事ヲ拒絕シタ。十九百四十三
年昭和十八年三月十五日爆撃ヲシタ。此、貯藏所ハ爆
破サレタ。軍醫一名ヲ合ム十八、壕洲兵ハ死シテ外ニ七十五
人員傷シタ。收容所ハ地上ニ吹キ倒サレ事ハ以

Doc 5418

VICTORIA 井 / CAMBERWELL / CAMBERWELL 待二百八十四の第三位

余 / GEORGE DE VERDON WESTLEY / GEORGE DE VERDON WESTLEY 歩兵大隊の四八八少佐

余 / DE K. WESTLEY / DE K. WESTLEY 宣誓言の次ノ通り陳述ス。

一 初ハ九百四十二年昭和七年三月三日 AMBOY 島 / AMBOY 町側デ日本

軍三捕ヘシテ濠洲軍將校三十九人他ノ階級者七百五十二人中ノ一

人ヲアツク。

吾々ハ / TAN TOBY / TAN TOBY 收容所ニ監禁ヲサシタ。和蘭兵ノ俘虜達ハ

其構成ヲ二三區分ニシテ道路ノ向側ニ別區劃内抑留サ

シタ。

Doc 5418

大空襲、有人機失之。次日本航空連の松島尚残存之
在建築物、一ノ屋上ニ大十字ヲ掲グル様ニ言ハル。收容
所、残り、部合、尚燃ニテ何様カ、日本、飛行機、上空ヲ飛
翔シテ其收容所ヲ撮影ス。其カ、松島、大十字、下ノ梯ニ命
命カシテ、而シテ松島、大十字、軍ニ宣傳、為ニ掲揚セシメ居テ
知ラセシ。

目的

四、千九百四十四年昭和十九年、八月迄、米、定量、一人、一日、十六リ、
下ノ時、魚、野菜、砂糖、及、塩、ト、支給セラル。然レ、毎日、配給食糧、ハ、是
等、食料、不足、量、ト、種類、對シ、何時、決、テ、通、知、セ、テ、
ハ、千九百四十四年昭和十九年、九月、及、十月、間、一日、配給食糧、
一人、一日、十三リ、米、十六リ、魚、十リ、粉、十リ、十月、及、十一
月、間、日々、定量、ハ、九、リ、米、十、リ、粉、米、配給セラル。千
九百四十五年昭和二十年、一月、及、三月、迄、一日、配給食糧、一人、
ハ、十三リ、米、十リ、時々、甘藷、カ、支給セラル。之等、ハ、白、麩、イ、品、物、ヲ
ハ、千九百四十五年昭和二十年、四月、及、五月、ハ、定量、ハ、十六、リ、米、
十三リ、六月、ハ、八月、迄、一日、食糧、一人、ハ、十四、リ、米、配給セラル。日本
降伏後、米、配給、一人、ハ、十三、リ、增加セラル。其外、罐詰肉、
魚、新鮮、野菜、砂糖、及、塩、ト、カ、支給セラル。之、真、正、食、料、等、
食糧ヲ補給、得、ル、事、ハ、下、ノ、下、カ、ル、日本、監視、兵、士、其
等、ハ、天、造、リ、良、ク、配給、ヲ、受、テ、居、ル。彼等、食糧、不足、ト、
事、合、意、カ、ル。

No 2

五、俘虜セシテ居ル期間中、始終大部令、將校、及、口

Doc 541A

兵卒、軍需作業、衛生、強、
 之等、法律、中、食糧及軍需品、積込船、荷部、
 道路、倉庫、油、防空壕、戰車、砲、炸藥、殺虫
 彈、衛生、食、衛生、時間、午前、午後、
 議、私、我、兵、使、格、事、性、抗
 或、時、病、氣、米、國、人、事、
 非、道、物、人、脚、氣、腸、其、他、病、氣、
 人、日、本、兵、無、理、私、私、
 頼、人、無、理、私、私、
 人、大、衰、弱、
 理、衛、生、
 六、九、百、四、十、四、年、昭、和、十、九、年、八、月、以、降、特、殊、恐、口、
 方、式、日、本、軍、採、用、合、果、永、
 私、者、之、士、氣、減、退、衰、弱、
 盡、為、計、畫、的、設、其、頃、多、數、部、
 端、衰、弱、者、又、病、氣、
 彼、等、非、常、險、峻、道、九、十、討、度、
 或、二、百、五、十、討、度、炸、彈、二、人、
 強、
 部、下、者、連、朝、六、時、頃、至、夜、一、時、
 部、下、者、連、朝、六、時、頃、至、夜、一、時、

No. 3

Doc 5418

此等品物、貯藏之場所、往後、距離、唯ア又此、セメ下
及爆彈、搬去之場所、其貯藏之場所、双方トモ海軍、附近ノ
ヨリ船ヲ容易ニ運搬シ得タリト云フ。

七、日本人、鷹嘴、柄、鉄棒、鋼索等、殴打ニ處刑、強行シ、
千九百四十二年、昭和十七年、中、或時、十人、者、日本人ヨリ處刑
シタル、約、外人、者、其構内外ニ居テ捕ラレタリ、彼等、食糧ヲ
得タリ、外ニ居ラザル、日本人、如、外ニ居、十人、者、同條ニ居
ルニ主張シ、日本人、此二十三人、者、收容所、外、在、日本軍司令部
ニ連行シ、同構問所ニ殴打シ、私、彼等、殴打セル時、其叫声ヲ
聞キ、幾、棒ヲ上下スルヲ見、トク、未タ。

彼等、意識ヲ失、ト水、掛テ之ヲ懸テ、殴打ヲ繼續セル事アリ、
此、中、十人、者、連シテ死刑ニシ、呼、来、者、吾、運、血、血、痕
ニ見、ル、恐、口、唇、相、塊、アラ、日本人、又、彼等、人、附、テ、キ、ル
卷、煙、草、ヲ、拷問、シ、彼等、指、指、彼等、早、シ、タ、其、後、三、人、ニ、等
兵、ヲ、除、テ、總、テ、者、死、シ、タ、

八、日本人、濠洲、兵、十人、夜、ニ、テ、食糧、得、タ、收容所、被、テ、セ、タ、
廉、ヨリ、五人、日本軍、倉庫、食糧、盗、シ、廉、ヨリ、人、脱、走、
シ、廉、ヨリ、合計、七人、死刑、處、ラ、十人、首、斬、ラ、一人、
射、殺、セ、タ、

九、千九百四十二年、昭和十七年、十月二十六日、TAN TOEY、テ、全、百、二人、
居、リ、者、中、僅、ク、百、三、十三人、日本軍、降、伏、時、生、残、テ、居、リ、
此、中、三人、喜、シ、移、動、先、MOROTAI、ヲ、其、後、死、シ、タ、……

No. 4

C. #1821

Evidentiary Document No. 5417.

In the International Military Tribunal for the Far East.

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
AND OTHERS

ARAKI, Sadao AND OTHERS

AFFIDAVIT

I, IAN FAROUHAR MACRAE of 14 Myrniong Grove Hawthorn in the State of Victoria, formerly VX44787 Major I. F. MACRAE of 2/21 Battalion Australian Imperial Forces, makes oath and say:-

1. I was captured in Ambon on 2nd. February, 1942, and taken to TANTOEY CAMP: At this camp there were 791 Australian prisoners. There was a Dutch prison camp across the road, the senior Dutch officer being Colonel KAPITZ.

2. About the middle of 1942 Dutch troops were ordered to unload bombs from ships. Colonel KAPITZ protested to the Japanese authorities. Capt ANDO the Japanese Commander of AMBON Town visited the camp and addressed the Dutch telling them if anyone would not obey his orders and unload the ship he would execute them on the spot.

3. The Japanese discovered that Dutch prisoners were sending letters to their wives who were interned in another camp. As a result of this on 12th July, 1942, 34 Dutch prisoners including nine officers, two doctors and a padre were assembled with their hands tied. At about 1400 hours a platoon of Japanese marines under Capt. ANDO, armed with star pickets, length of piping and pick handles, commenced to beat the Dutch. They continued until all of the prisoners had been beaten into unconsciousness. Capt ANDO then struck each of the unconscious prisoners on the head with a pick handle. The scene of the beating was slippery with blood. Thirteen of the prisoners suffered single and double fractures whilst two of them sustained fractured skulls. Three of the prisoners died, two from fractured skulls and one from ruptured kidneys.

4. On 25th October, 1942, two hundred and sixty three Australian prisoners and about 300 Dutch prisoners were shipped from AMBON to HAINAN.

Sworn at MELBOURNE in the State of)
Victoria this the 3rd. day of October,) (Sgd) I. MACRAE
1946, Before me)
(Sgd) Illegible)

A Commissioner of the Supreme Court of Victoria for taking Affidavits.

CX #1822

DOCUMENT No. 5902

Page 1.

Evidence of NX 1677 Private VERDUN CLIVE BALL.

Verdun Clive Ball, being duly sworn by His Honour, states:

My full number, name, rank and unit are NX 1677 Private Verdun Clive Ball, 3th Division A.A.S.C., attached to 2/21 Aust. Infantry Battalion. My home address is Caswell Street, Peak Hill, New South Wales.

I was captured on 3 February 1942 and confined in Tan Toey camp. I was released on 10 September, 1945.

I saw the bashing of the Dutch personnel from the camp. I cannot identify any of the Japanese guards involved. The distance from the camp to the hill where the beating took place was about 150 yards. The guards who did the bashing were not local guards and were taken away later.

I was one of the 23 Australians who were beaten. We volunteered the information that we had broken camp. A certain number were taken from the camp and eight of the remainder volunteered their names. We were told the punishment would be lighter if we did this. I was taken to the same Japanese Headquarters on the hill outside the camp. We went before a Japanese Island Commander, Capt. Handor, who asked us questions through an interpreter. In the room we were bashed with pick handles in front of the captain. One of the guards who bashed me was nicknamed "Horseface".

After we had been beaten in the room we were taken outside and tied together in a row, with one hand in front and one behind. Whilst I was there I saw Ikiuchi come out and belt one of the Australians who was there when we arrived with a pick handle. He had a broken arm and was belted all over the back.

I was bashed again that night and tied up for the night. This occurred about dusk. We were tied around a tree in a ring, making a complete circle. We had to stay there all night and were not allowed to lean back against the tree. When we asked for water individual guards would give us a drink. We did not get any food until the next morning, when the usual ration of rice was brought up from the camp.

Next day I was again bashed; this was the heaviest beating of them all. The Japanese guards beat us with pick handles and pieces of bowser pipes. I was hit mostly from the small of the back down to the knees. I do not know the names of the men involved but I could identify them by sight. They were regular prison guards at the time but were later shifted. Two are still on Ambon Island; there may be a lot more but I have not seen them.

While I was at the Headquarters, I saw a truck come up. Ten men were loaded on to the truck and one into a motor car. He was completely unconscious and may have been dead. I do not know what had happened to these eleven men as they were at the Headquarters before we arrived. During that time I know they were bashed because we could hear them screaming practically every night. They were tortured by some of the guards privately. I never saw those eleven men again after they had been taken away.

The Japanese guards put lighted cigarettes on the back of my neck and once on my forehead. They used to flick me with their fingers in the one spot on the forehead for a considerable time to give me a headache. I saw them put lighted cigarettes on some of the Australians' noses to put them out.

Some of the men who were with me when I was bashed received worse treatment than I did; they lay down and were kicked and tied up. I was put in hospital as a result of the beating but the Japanese sent down word that I was not to be kept in hospital and I was then sent back to the hut. I was in bed for about three weeks. I practically lost the use of my legs and for three or four months after I was just able to get about by shuffling. Gradually I regained my strength. I did light work and was ordered by the doctor not to go out to work. However, I did a little work later on on the working parties.

I was present when Private Tait was beaten, in about September 1944. He was accused of stealing binoculars from an air raid shelter. He was brought back to the camp and I saw everything from the kitchen where I was working. He was bashed at the guard house in the camp and was only about 30 yards away from me, across the road. He was beaten by a guard nicknamed "Frillneck", Ichiuchi was present and saw the bashing. When the Commandant came out, he hit him a couple of times on the head with a light stick and rolled him over a couple of times so that the other guard could hit him more. W/O Wajimura was also present.

Private Tait was beaten with pick handles. Two pick handles were broken on him; eventually they got one strong enough. He was knocked unconscious two or three times; then the Commandant threw water over him and when he came to he was beaten again. In the end, he was left lying in the rain for about half an hour. Our Officer tried all the time to have him removed and eventually he was taken away to hospital on a stretcher. He never recovered properly. He lost the use of his legs and could only just get about. Eventually, he died.

Not many of the Australians who were beaten lost the use of their legs as much as I did; those who were fat did not suffer so badly

but the thin ones did. My normal weight is 10 stone 7 lbs., but my weight when I came out of camp was about 9 stone. I was down to about 8 stone 7 lbs. at one time.

Up till one year ago the food was reasonable; you could live on it. During the last year, however, from August until the end of the war the rations were about 4 ounces of rice per day and a small issue of rotten potatoes that no-one else could eat.

It was a regular thing for someone to be beaten every morning, or jumped on or kicked. We were beaten for not being able to get about quickly or for being a bit late in coming out of our huts; it was generally for very paltry things. Ikiuchi was the main one who beat them on sores or ulcers. He hit Major Westley one day on an ulcer for being late on parade.

I certify that the above evidence is true and correct.

Taken and sworn before me at Morotai)
on this 25th day of September 1945)
A. Mansfield) V.C. BALL
Commissioner)

EXHIBIT NO. 1821 A

Doc. 5417

證據編號 5417 號

口述書

於一九四三年十月廿三日在... 亞姆邦 / 14 Myrning

Grove Hawthorn in the state of Victoria /

/ IAN FARQUHAR MACRAE / 元漢洲軍 大隊長

西元一九四三年十月廿三日在亞姆邦... 陳述如下

一 於一九四三年十月廿三日在亞姆邦 / AMBON / 被捕

於一九四三年十月廿三日在亞姆邦 / TANTOEY CAMP /

一九四三年十月廿三日在亞姆邦... 與蘭人... 俘獲

與蘭人... 與蘭人... Colonel KAPITZ /

344

二 一九四三年十月廿三日在亞姆邦... 與蘭人... 命

KAPITZ 命... 與蘭人... 命

ANDO 命... 與蘭人... 命

命... 與蘭人... 命

三 日本兵... 與蘭人... 命

命... 與蘭人... 命

命... 與蘭人... 命

命... 與蘭人... 命

命... 與蘭人... 命

命... 與蘭人... 命

命... 與蘭人... 命

No. 1

FILE COPY RETURN TO ROOM 361

No. 2

Doc. 5417

明倭虜頭一人、頭蓋破砕、
 手足不之、
 被辱、中二人、頭蓋破砕、
 二人、頭蓋破砕、
 一九四三年 / 昭和十七年 / 十月二十五日 / 二六三人、
 船隻送、
 AMBON
 HAINAN

Doc. 5417

四

明倭虜頭一人、頭蓋、板打、骨、頭打、頭打、
 子、之、人、之、身、身、身。十三人、倭虜、六、力、力、性、備、之、身、
 彼、身、中、二、人、頭、蓋、破、碎、之、身、身、身、倭、虜、死、之、身、身。
 二、人、頭、蓋、破、碎、之、身、身、身、骨、臟、破、碎、之、身、身。
 一、九、四、三、年、一、昭、和、十、七、年、十、月、二、十、日、二、十、三、人、一、海、南、島、倭、虜
 十、三、人、一、他、國、倭、虜、^{AMBON}、_{下、本、之、力、力、}海、南、島、(HAINAN) /
 二、船、之、送、之、身、身、身。

No. 2

Evidence of NX 1677 Private VERDUN CLIVE BALL.

Verdun Clive Ball, being duly sworn by His Honour, states:

My full number, name, rank and unit are NX 1677 Private Verdun Clive Ball, 8th Division A.I.S.C., attached to 2/21 Aust. Infantry Battalion. My home address is Caswell Street, Peak Hill, New South Wales.

I was captured on 3 February 1942 and confined in Tan Tock camp. I was released on 10 September, 1945.

I saw the bashing of the Dutch personnel from the camp. I cannot identify any of the Japanese guards involved. The distance from the camp to the hill where the bashing took place was about 150 yards. The guards who did the bashing were not local guards and were taken away later.

I was one of the 23 Australians who were beaten. We volunteered the information that we had broken camp. A certain number were taken from the camp and eight of the remainder volunteered their names. We were told the punishment would be lighter if we did this. I was taken to the same Japanese Headquarters on the hill outside the camp. We went before a Japanese Island Commander, Capt. Haruo, who asked us questions through an interpreter. In the room we were bashed with pick handles in front of the captain. One of the guards who bashed me was nicknamed "Horseface".

After we had been beaten in the room we were taken outside and tied together in a row, with one hand in front and one behind. Whilst I was there I saw Ikiuchi come out and belt one of the Australians who was there when we arrived with a pick handle. He had a broken arm and was belted all over the back.

I was bashed again that night and tied up for the night. This occurred about dusk. We were tied around a tree in a ring, making a complete circle. We had to stay there all night and were not allowed to lean back against the tree. When we asked for water individual guards would give us a drink. We did not get any food until the next morning, when the usual ration of rice was brought up from the camp.

Next day I was again bashed; this was the heaviest beating of them all. The Japanese guards beat us with pick handles and pieces of bowser pipes. I was hit mostly from the small of the back down to the knees. I do not know the names of the men involved but I could identify them by sight. They were regular prison guards at the time but were later shifted. Two are still on Abou Island; there may be a lot more but I have not seen them.

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

While I was at the Headquarters, I saw a truck come up. Ten men were loaded on to the truck and one into a motor car. He was completely unconscious and may have been dead. I do not know what had happened to these eleven men as they were at the Headquarters before we arrived. During that time I know they were bashed because we could hear them screaming practically every night. They were tortured by some of the guards privately. I never saw those eleven men again after they had been taken away.

The Japanese guards put lighted cigarettes on the back of my neck and once on my forehead. They used to flick me with their fingers in the one spot on the forehead for a considerable time to give me a headache. I saw them put lighted cigarettes on some of the Australians' noses to put them out.

Some of the men who were with me when I was bashed received worse treatment than I did; they lay down and were kicked and tied up. I was put in hospital as a result of the beating but the Japanese sent down word that I was not to be kept in hospital and I was then sent back to the hut. I was in bed for about three weeks. I practically lost the use of my legs and for three or four months after I was just able to get about by shuffling. Gradually I regained my strength. I did light work and was ordered by the doctor not to go out to work. However, I did a little work later on on the working parties.

I was present when Private Tait was beaten, in about September 1944. He was accused of stealing binoculars from an air raid shelter. He was brought back to the camp and I saw everything from the kitchen where I was working. He was bashed at the guard house in the camp and was only about 30 yards away from me, across the road. He was beaten by a guard nicknamed "Frillneck". Ichiuchi was present and saw the bashing. When the Commandant came out, he hit him a couple of times on the head with a light stick and rolled him over a couple of times so that the other guard could hit him more. W/C Weimura was also present.

Private Tait was beaten with pick handles. Two pick handles were broken on him; eventually they got one strong enough. He was knocked unconscious two or three times; then the Commandant threw water over him and when he came to he was beaten again. In the end, he was left lying in the rain for about half an hour. Our Officer tried all the time to have him removed and eventually he was taken away to hospital on a stretcher. He never recovered properly. He lost the use of his legs and could only just get about. Eventually, he died.

Not many of the Australians who were beaten lost the use of their legs as much as I did; those who were fat did not suffer so badly

but the thin ones did. My normal weight is 10 stone 7 lbs., but my weight when I came out of camp was about 9 stone. I was down to about 8 stone 7 lbs. at one time.

Up till one year ago the food was reasonable; you could live on it. During the last year, however, from August until the end of the war the rations were about 4 ounces of rice per day and a small issue of rotten potatoes that no-one else could eat.

It was a regular thing for someone to be beaten every morning, or jumped on or kicked. We were beaten for not being able to get about quickly or for being a bit late in coming out of our huts; it was generally for very paltry things. Ikiuchi was the main one who beat them on sores or ulcers. He hit Major Westley one day on an ulcer for being late on parade.

I certify that the above evidence is true and correct.

Taken and sworn before me at Morotai)
on this 25th day of September 1945)
A. Mansfield) V.C. BALL
Commissioner)

5.1822-19

5302-1

RETURN TO ROOM 361

COPY

「ウエルダア」クライブボ「ハ」ハ自分ノ名譽
ニカケテ誓ツテ陳述致シマス。
私ハ第ロト。一ホセヨ誓ノ「ウエルダア」クライブボ
ルト云フ兵卒ヲシテ澳洲ノ二ノ二十一歩兵大隊ノ
第八分隊ニ屬シテ居リマシタ。
私ノ家ハ「ニュウサウスウエルズ」ノピークヒルノ
「カセウエ」通りニ在リマシタ。
私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）二月三日ニ捕ヘラレ
「タントイ」捕虜收容所ニ監禁セラレテ一九四五年
（昭和二十年）九月十日ニ釋放サレマシタ。私ハ此ノ捕
虜收容所ニ於テ和費人ガ毆打サレタノヲ目撃シタノ
デアリマス。
私ハソレニ連累シタ日本ノ番兵ヲ一人一人誰カ見別
ケル事ハ出来マセン。捕虜連ノ毆打ハ岡ノ上テ行ハ
レマシテ捕虜收容所カラ一五〇「ヤード」位ノ處テ
シタ。
毆打シタ番兵等ハ其地方並任ノ番兵テハナク後日他
ヘ移サレマシタ。私ハ二十三人ノ澳洲人ガ毆打サレ
タ其内ノ一人デス。
言々ハ捕虜收容所ヲ移動シタ事ヲ述ンテ申出テマシ
タ。一部ノ捕虜等ハ他ヘ移サレ、残サレタ捕虜連ノ
内八人ノ者ハ述ンテ自分ノ氏名ヲ名乗リマシタ。
言々ハ氏名ヲ名乗ルト刑罰ガ軽クナル事ヲ陳カサレ

5302-2

テ居リマシタ。私ハ捕虜收容所ノ外ノ岡ノ上ニアル
岡シ日本ノ司令官ニ廻行サレマシタ。
吾々ハ日本ノ島ノ捜査者デアル「ハンドー」大尉ノ
許ニ行キマシタ。
此人ハ通譯ヲ遣シテ吾々ニ質問シタノデアリマス。
吾々ハ其ノ部屋テ此ノ大尉ノ面前テ橋嘴ノ柄ヲ以テ
毆打サレマシタ。私ヲ毆打シタ番兵ノ一人ハ「馬ノ
糞」ト云フ綽名ノ人デシタ。吾々ハ其ノ部屋テ毆打
サレテカラ外ヘ連れ出サレ片方ノ手ハ前ニ、片方ノ
手ハ後ニシテ列ヲナシテ縛ラレマシタ。
私ハ外ニ居ル間ニ「イキウテ」ト云フ人ガ出テ來マ
シテ一人ノ漆洲人ヲ橋嘴ノ柄ヲ毆打スルノヲ見マシ
タ。此ノ漆洲人ハ吾々ガ外ヘ出ル前ニ外ニ居タノデ
シタ。彼ハ腕ヲ折ラレ、背中ヲ毆ク毆打サレテ居マ
シタ。其腕私ハ再ビ毆打サレテ縛ラレマシタ。是ハ
夕方頃行ハレマシタ。吾々ハ一本ノ木ノ周圍ニ完全
ナル圓形ヲナシテ縛ラレマシタ。吾々ハ一晚中其處
ニ滞マラネバナリマセンデシタ。而シテ木ニ危リカ
カル事ヲ許サレマセンデシタ。吾々ハ水ヲ要求シマ
スト番兵難ハ一杯ノ水ヲ呉レマシタ。
翌朝釜ドシテ食糧モ與ヘラレズ、翌朝ニナリテ捕虜
收容所カラ平常ノ煎キ飯ノ給ガアリマシタ。翌日
兵ビ私ハ今迄ニナイ程ニ睡ク毆打サレマシタ。

5302-3

日本ノ番長等ハ彼等ノ部下ガソリン油ヲ奪ス時 使臣
 スルゴム等ノ御見ヲ以テ書々ヲ提出シマシタ。
 私ハ彼等ノ一着カラ島津島ヲ打サレマシタ。
 彼等ハ其番長等ノ名目ハ知リマセンガ見レバ 俾リマス。
 彼等ハ當時正當ノ島津島ヲ打サレマシタガ後日 他へ
 責任サセラレマシタ。彼等ノ内二人ハ未ダ「アキボ
 ン」島ニ居ツテ居リマス。モツト島津島ヲ打居ルカ
 モ知レマセンガ私ハ見々事ハアリマセン。私ハ司令
 官ニ居ル時ニ一撃ノ隻身ガ来マシタ。此隻身ニ十人
 乗セラレ、他ノ一人ハ巨銃ニ乗セラレマシタ。巨
 銃ニ乗セラレタ一人ハ益々無慈悲ヲシタ。多分死
 亡シテ居タノテセウ。是等十一人ノ人々ハ番長ガ司令
 官ニ来ル以前カラ司令官ニ居リマシタノテ、如何
 ナル事ガアツタノカ私ニハ知リマセンデシタ。
 當時部下等既私ノ部下ヲ殺シマシタノテ番長ハ
 打サレタ事ガ知リマス。
 彼等ハ一部ノ番長ニ密カニ居付サレマシタ。是等十
 一人ノ人々ガ進行サレタ後ハ私ハ一着モ奪ヘマセン
 デシタ。

日本ノ番長等ハ私ノ首筋ニ火ノ付イタ船是等ヲ殺シ
 マシタ。一着ハ私ノ船ニ居キマシタ。番長等ハ私ニ
 照應ヲ行サセル船ニ居テ私ノ船ノ一室ヲ長イ銃屋
 タシマシタ。私ハ番長等ガ此等諸人ノ身ノ上テ

5302-4

參煙草ノ火ヲ消シテ居ルノヲ見マシタ。私ガ際打サ
レタ時一語ニ居タ一部ノ人々ハ私以上ニ慮待サレマ
シタ。彼等ハ寢カサレ、驚ラレ、縛ラレタノデシタ
私ハ際ラレマシタノテ病院ニ送ラレマシタガ、日本
人ハ私ヲ病院ニ置クベキテナイト云ヒマシタノテ、
其レカラ私ハ小屋ニ返サレマシタ。私ハ約三週間病
テ居リマシタ。

私ハ事實上足ノ使用ガ出来シクナリ、ソレカラ三、
四週間後漸ヤク歩キ始メ得ル様ニナリマシタ。
漸次私ハ体力ヲ回復シマシタ。

私ハ樂ナ仕事ヲシマシタガ、山部ハ仕事ヲシナイ様
ニ命ジマシタ。

然シ私ハ後日仕事仲間ト共ニ輕作業ノ仕事ヲシマシ
タ。

兵卒ノ「タイト」ガ際ラレタ時私ハ一語ニ居リマシ
タ。其レハ一九四四年（昭和十九年）ノ九月頃デシ
タ。

「タイト」ハ翌發機庫所カラ派員館ヲ送ンダト云フ
鼻ヲ負ハサレタノデス。私ハ捕虜收容所ニ連レ戻サ
レマシタ。私ハ仕事場ノ台所カラ何ンデモ見ル事が
出来マシタ。彼ハ捕虜收容所ノ右兵詰所テ際ラレマ
シタ。其レハ私カラ送附ヲ送エテ僅カ三〇「ヤード」
程離レタ處デアリマシタ。彼ハ「製ノアル類」ト云

5302-5

フ傳名ノ番兵ニ懸ラレタノテス。「イキウチ」ハ真
 場テ目立シテ居リマシタ。指揮官ガ察マシタ時「イ
 キウチ」ハ「イ」ステツキテ彼ノ頭ヲ二回際ツテ二回
 轉ガシマシタノテ他ノ番兵モ彼ヲヨリ多ク際ル事ガ
 出来ル程。「シエイムラ」准士官モ其場ニ居マシタ
 「タイト」兵卒ハ鶴岡ノ部ヲ取付サレマシタ。二本
 ノ鶴岡ノ部ガ取付ニ終リ折レタノテモツト丈夫ナ一
 本ノ鶴岡ノ部ヲ持ツテ來マシタ。彼ハ二三回人取不
 省ニナル迄際打セラレマシタ。スルト指揮官ガ水ヲ
 浴セマシテ正氣附クト又際打サレタノテス。
 終ニ彼ハ雨ノ中ニ半時間程沈黙サレテ居リマシタ。
 吾々ノ士官ハ終終彼ヲ移ス程ニ努メマシタノテ終ニ
 彼ハ擔架ヲ病院ニ送ラレマシタ。彼ハ決シテ戻リニ
 戻ラセシマセンテシタ。彼ハ足ヲ使用シ得ナクナリ、
 漸ク歩キ難メ得ル程テシタ。終ニ彼ハ死亡シマシタ
 際打サレタ譯人ノ一部ハ私ノ旅ニ足ラ使居スル事
 ガ出来ナクナリマシタ。此エタ人々ハ其レ程苦痛シ
 マセンテシタガ、憐セタ人々ハ苦痛シマシタ。
 私ノ体重ハ昔違百四十七割度アルノテスガ捕虜收容
 所カラ出タ時ハ百二十六割度程テシタ。一度体重ガ
 百十九割度減少シタ事ガアリマシタ。一年前違ハ
 相當ノ食糧ガ結集サレマシテ生存ガ出来マシタ。
 然シ後ノ年ニ於テ八月カラ終戦迄ハ一日ニ四「オ

5302-6

ンス「ノ米ト誰レモ他ノ人ハ食フ事ノ出来ヌ腐ツタ
馬鈴薯ガ少量配給サレタノデシタ。毎朝誰カ際ラレ
ル事、或ハ罰セラレル事、或ハ職ラレル事ハ一部ノ
人ニハ普通ノ事デシタ。
吾々ハ動作緩慢ノ故ヲ以テ、或ハ小匠カラノ外匠ガ
少シ遅クレタ故ヲ以テ際ラレタノデシタ。
何時モ大變ツマラヌ事ノタメニ際ラレマシタ。
「イキウチ」ハ梯屋裏ノ滄イ所トカ匠物等ヲ際ツタ
主ナル人デアツタ。
彼ハ或ル日「ウエストレー」少佐ノ匠物ヲ園兵ニ過
クレタ故ヲ以テ感リマシタ。

5302-6

ンス「ノ米ト誰レモ他ノ人ハ食フ事ノ出来又廣ツタ
馬鈴薯ガ少量配給サレタノデシタ。毎朝誰カ際ラレ
ル事、或ハ罰セラレル事、或ハ監ラレル事ハ一部ノ
人ニハ普遍ノ事デシタ。
吾々ハ動作緩慢ノ故ヲ以テ、或ハ小匣カラノ外箱ガ
少シ遅クレタ故ヲ以テ際ラレタノデシタ。
何時モ大變ツマラヌ事ノタメニ殿ラレマシタ。
「イキウチ」ハ梯屋裏ノ滄イ所トカ匣物等ヲ殿ツタ
主ナル人デアツタ。
彼ハ或ル日「ウエストレー」少佐ノ匣物ヲ衛兵ニ過
クレタ故ヲ以テ殿リマシタ。

DOCUMENT No. 5301

Page 1.

Evidence of NX 40912 Private JOHN LESLIE SEARANT.

John Leslie SEARANT, being duly sworn by His Honour, states:

My full number, name, rank and unit are NX.40912 Private John Leslie Searant, 8th Div. A.A.S.C., attached to 2/21 Aust. Infantry Battalion. My home address is Lambeth Street, Glen Innes, N.S.W.

I was taken prisoner on 3 February 1942 at Ambon, and confined at Tan Toey. I was released on 10 September 1945.

I saw the beating of the Dutch personnel on 12 July 1942. About 30 were beaten altogether. They were beaten up on the hill at the H.Q., about 250 to 300 yards from the camp. The Japanese guards hit them with sticks, piece of iron, pick handles and anything they could lay hold of. They were hit all over the body and head for about 20 minutes or half an hour; it may have been longer. Even after they had fallen down the guards continued to beat them. This was witnessed by most of the men in the camp. I could not identify any particular guard engaged on this beating.

I saw the Japanese place a large number of bombs in a transport shed in the centre of the camp area in about October 1942. They were placed in the officers' quarters and about 50 or 70 yards from the hospital. The Americans bombed the camp on 15 February 1943. There were no markings on the camp to show that it contained prisoners-of-war. As a result of the dump being hit, 10 men were killed and quite a number injured by shrapnel.

I saw the beating of about 23 Australian prisoners on about 19 or 20 November 1942. These men had been accused of breaking camp. The Japanese took them up the hill to the Headquarters where they belted them until they could not stand. Those who could not stand were tied erect to a tree. The guards used pick handles and pieces of hose pipe to belt the Australians. They were hit mainly around the back. Eleven in particular were belted all over the body.

A Japanese guard nicknamed "Gold Tooth" was one involved in the beating. I cannot identify any of the others.

I saw eight of the men who came back to the camp after the beating. They were very badly bruised down the backs of the legs and on the buttocks. I did not see the eleven again. I saw them being taken away from the hill, some in a staff car and some in a truck, but never saw them again.

I was put on the "long carry" 13 times during 1944. The last occasion was just before Christmas. The distance of the long carry was about

eight miles over very rough, rugged country made up of broken coral with gullies and steep hills. We had to go on all fours sometimes to crawl up the hills. It took us about five hours to complete the journey with a load. I carried bags of cement and 150-lb. bombs. The bags of cement weighed 94 lbs. Two men were detailed for each bag; when one could carry it no further the other took over. The Japanese guards did not actually bash us but made us hurry along. Sometimes we had good guards who would give us a fair go, but on one occasion we were guarded by some Koreans who kept us moving all the time.

At that time my weight was about 7 stone 6 lbs. My normal weight is 10 stone 6 lbs. I was in hospital just a fter we were taken prisoner but not after that.

I used to go out on working parties. We did all classes of work, such as carrying coconut logs, digging tunnels and building tank traps and pillboxes; we also had to carry cement blocks. While I was on these working parties I received quite a few bashings for trying to ease up on the work a bit. In the majority of cases, it was for no reason at all. We were given four or five smacks across the buttocks with a stick and a couple of times were hit on the head. I was knocked over a couple of times. I do not know the names of any of the guards involved in this. While digging the base for an oil tank on one occasion I saw a Japanese guard nicknamed "Five in one" bash some of the Australians. He used to smack them on the face with his hand and knock them down; when they had fallen he used to kick them.

I certify that the above evidence is true and correct.

Taken and sworn before me at Morotai)

on this 25th day of September 1945)

A. HANSFIELD)

Commissioner)

J.L.SEARANT.

5301-1
F. 123F

ジョン、レスリー、シーラント 等約シテ供述ス私ノ全

名、番號、階級及所屬ハ

氏名 ジョン、レスリー、シーラント

軍籍 濠洲軍歩兵大隊 2/21 所屬

A A B O 第八師團 M X 第四〇九一二番

住所 ニュー、サウス、ウエールズ湖クレイン、インス町ラン
ベス街

私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）二月三日「アンホ
ン」ニテ捕ヘラレ「タン」ト「エイ」ニ收容サレマ
シタ。

私ハ一九四五年（昭和二十年）九月十日放免サレ
マシタ。

私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）七月十二日オラン
ダ人が撲ラレルノヲ見マシタ。約ソ三十人ノモノ
ガ一團トサツテ撲ラレマシタ。司令部ノアル丘ノ
上テ收容所カラ二百五十乃至三百ヤードノ處テ撲
ラレタノデス。日本ノ警備兵ハ掃切レ、鐵片鶴嘴
ノ柄ソノ他何テモ彼テモ手當リ武器ノモノテ打テ
マシタ。二十分乃至三十分間暴テテ頭テモ處々ハ
ズ打テマシタ倒レテモ尚ホ撲リ續ケマシタ。收容
所ニ居タモノハ大概是ヲ見マシタ。私ハコノ際打
ニ參加シタ警備兵ハ誰レダカ思イ出キマセン。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

5301-2

私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）十月頃私ハ日本兵
ガ陳腐ノ中央ニアル陸海軍厚ニ多数ノ爆弾ヲ置
タノヲ見マシタ。
ソノ爆弾ハ病院カラ五十乃至七十メートル位ノ士官
宿所ニ置カレマシタ。一九四三年（昭和十八年）
二月十五日アメリカ軍ハ收容所ヲ爆撃シマシタガ
ソノ收容所ニハ補給收容所トモ何トモ標記ハ出テ
居マセンデシタ。投下爆弾ハ命中シタ結果十人位
ガ殺サレ榴霰弾デ多数ノモノガ傷キマシタ。
私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）十一月十九日又ハ
二十日頃約二十三名ノ豫洲兵ノ加勢ガ襲ラレタイ
タノヲ見マシタ此ノ人達ハ收容所ヲ脱出シタコト
ニヨリ告訴サレタノデアリマス日本兵ハ彼ヲラ丘
ノ上ノ本部ニ連行シ立ツテ居ラレナイ位マデ帯皮
デ褌リツケマシタ、立テオクテツタモノハ樹ニ真
直ニク、リツケマシタ警備兵ハ長槍ヲヒツバタ
クノニ嚮背ノ柄ダトカホース等ヲ用イマシタ、日
本兵ハ主ニ背ヲ打テマシタガ特ニ下一名ノ者ハ膝
中處カマラス打タレマシタ。
一金ノ筒ト縛名サレタ日本ノ警備兵ハ此際打ニ
連累シテ居リマシタガ私ハ他ノモノハ憶ヒ出シマ
セン。

5:01-3

私ハ撲ラレタ後、收容所ニ歸ヘサレタモノヲ八人
 見マシタ彼ラハ脚部ノ背部ヤ臀部ヲヒドク打撲傷
 受ケテ居マシタ。私ハソノ十一人ノモノニ二度ト
 逢ヒマセシデシタ多分備付ケノ避成直カツラツク
 テ丘上カラ他ニ移サレタモノト思ヒマス。私ハソ
 ノ人々ニモ少逢ヘマセシデシタ。

私ハ一九四四年（昭和十九年）ノ間二十三回所謂
 「長距離遠征」ヲ命ゼラレマシタ。ソノ最後ノ場
 合ハ丁度「クリスマス」ノ直前デシタソノ長距離
 遠征ハ約八哩位ノ距離デ、形ノ違ハナイ珊瑚カラ
 成ル険シイ谷ヤ丘ノアル實ニオホホホ田舎路デシ
 タ。私達ハ四ツ遣イニナツテ丘ヲ登ラネバナラ
 ナイコトモアリマシタ。重荷ヲ背ツテソノ旅ヲ終
 ルノニ五時同位モカ、ツタコトモアリマシタ、私
 ハセメント 袋ヤ百五十ポンドノ爆彈ヲ運ビ
 マシタ。ソノセメント袋ハ九十圓ポンドアリマシ
 タ。一ツノ袋ヲ二人デ擔任シ、ソノ一人ガソレ以
 上選ベナクナルト他ノ一人ガ選ブ譯ナノデス。日
 本ノ警備兵ハ實際ニ私達ヲ行テマセシデシタガ急
 ガセマシタ。時ニ善良ナ警備兵ニ附添ハレタコト
 モアリマシタ、ソノ警備兵達ハ渠ニ歩カセテクレ
 マシタガ而シ或ルトキ私達ヲ始終動カシテ后ツタ

5701-4

朝鮮出身ノ警備兵ニ附添ハレタコトモアリマシタ
ソノトキ私ノ齡ハ七ストシ六ボンド／一〇四ボ
ンド／デシタガ私ハ不斷十ストシ六ボンド／一四六
ボンド／アリマシタ。私ハ補隊ニナツタ當時入院
シマシタガソノ後ハソノ取扱ヒヲ受ケタコトハ
アリマセン。

私ハ常ニ勞務班ニ加ワリマシタ。私違ハ凡ユル勞
動ヲ致シマシタ例ヘバコ、ナツトノ樹ヲ運ンダリ
トシホルヤ戰車壕ヲ掘タリ、小管ヲ建テタリナン
カ致シマシタ。私違ハ又セメント初ヲ運ビマシタ
私ガ勞務班ニ屬シテ居タ間ニ、私ハ少シ仕事ヲナ
マケマシタノデ、二三回強打サレマシタ。大部分
ハ全ク理由ノナイコトデス。私違ハ枝デ四五回オ
臂ト、二三回頭ヲ撲ラレマシタ。私ハ二回程コツ
ビドクヤツ、ケラレマシタ。私ハ是レニ参加シタ
警備兵ノ名前ヲ知リマセン私違ハ油槽ノ基礎工事
ヲヤツテ居タトキ私ハ日本ノ警備兵デ「一人デ五」
人前ト綽名ノ附イタモノガ他ノ隊兵ヲ強クヤ
ツ、ケテイルノヲ見マシタ。彼ハイツデモ平手デ
顔面ヲ撲リツケルデス、ソシテ胸レルト蹴飛ハ
スノデシタ。

Ex. # 1824

Doc. No. 5306*

Page 1.

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant, R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes' Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed reports are full, true, complete and accurate copies of the original documents entitled:

Nefisreport of interrogation (No. 890) of Boedimen Potinus with annexed sworn statement of same in Malay with English translation, concerning the murder on twenty eight persons - 15 Ambonese men, 4 Ambonese women and 9 white men - by Japanese on the island Arboina in the month of July 1943.

which documents are parts of the official records of the Nefis.

Signature:

Charles Jongeneel (Seal)

Batavia, 7th June 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K. A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant, R.N.I.A. Higher official attached to the office of the Attorney - General, N.E.I.

s/ K. A. de Weerd

AMBONESE: Twenty Eight persons-- 15 Ambonesemales, 4 Ambonese women & 9 European men; apparently were killed, Amboina, Ambon Island, July 1943.

Informant: BOLDIMAN Potinus, Monadonese.

Reliability: Average intelligence and a good observer; information considered reliable.

Person Responsible: Japanese (names not stated).

AMBOINA, AMBON ISLAND, July 1943: while informant was interned in the former Artillery barracks, he saw 15 Ambonese males 4 Ambonese women & 9 European men (Informant assumes they were Australians), standing with their hands tied behind their backs near the guard house. They were later taken away under heavy escort & were followed by Japanese soldiers carrying shovels. None of these people were seen again, & informant assumes that they were executed.

Nefis
INTER-REPORT No. 890

Signed & Witnessed
Statement.

PERSONAL DATA: BOLDIMAN - Informant.

Name: BOLDIMAN Potinus.
Rank:
Age: 28
Date of Birth: 19/5/18.
Place of Birth: Kakockoe, Poelce Bangka, Merado.
Nationality: Monadonese.
Remarks: Intelligent, observant with good memory. Gives a clear account of his experiences and of himself. Appears to be a man of integrity and initiative.

AMBONESE: Twenty Eight persons-- 15 Ambonese males, 4 Ambonese women & 9 European men; apparently were killed, Amboina, Ambon Island, July 1943.

Informant: BOEDIMAN Potinus, Menadonese.

Reliability: Average intelligence and a good observer; information considered reliable.

Person Responsible: Japanese (names not stated).

AMBOINA, AMBON ISLAND, July 1943: while informant was interned in the former Artillery barracks, he saw 15 Ambonese males 4 Ambonese women & 9 European men (Informant assumes they were Australians), standing with their hands tied behind their backs near the guard house. They were later taken away under heavy escort & were followed by Japanese soldiers carrying shovels. None of these people were seen again, & informant assumes that they were executed.

Nefis
INTER-REPORT No. 890

Signed & Witnessed
Statement.

PERSONAL DATA: BOEDIMAN - Informant.

Name: BOEDIMAN Potinus.
Rank:
Age: 28
Date of Birth: 19/5/18.
Place of Birth: Makookoe, Poeloe Banka, Menado.
Nationality: Menadonese.
Remarks: Intelligent, observant with good memory. Gives a clear account of his experiences and of himself. Appears to be a man of integrity and initiative.

Declaration

Relative I.R. No. 104 Bell Merauke.

Saja jang bernama P. BOEDIMAN bangsa Sangir pangkat fuselier sl. stb.nr. 32878, koetika saja berada di Ambon dan bertempat di kpg. Benteng di dalam tangsi artilieriq (Belanda poonja d'eloe) selakoe Heiho pada boelan Juli 1943, mekes saja melinat 5 orang tawanan Australia, 15 orang Ambon lelaki preinan dan 4 orang Ambon perempuan semoe tangannya di kist dan berdjalan di moeka tangsi terseboet certa di kentar oleh beberapa orang Djepan jang mana is ada Lombawah sekop (schop) dan klewang.

Orang 2 jang terikat tangannya itoe, di bawah di belakang dari tangsi terseboet saja tida lihat apa jang telah djadi dengan orang 2 itoe; tetapi tida berapa la ma neka berapa Djepan jang membawah orang 2 itoe telah kembali dengan sekop (schop) dan klewang, tetapi orang 2 terseboet tida ada.

Saja beraga dengan seenggoek 2 bahwa semoe orang 2 jang terikat tangan itoe telah di boeloh (potong leher) oleh Djepan 2 itoe, sebab meraka memberi makanan dan lain 2 kepada orang2 tawanan Australia.

Merauke, tg 29 November 1944.

Saja jang memberi keterangan serta barten-
da tangan dan bersoempa di hadapan tosan
Officier dari M.I.O.

Sgd. Boediman.

S. d. K. de MUNTEN.

Translation:

I, P. Boediman, of Sangirese race, rank of fusilier, No. 32878, while I was at Ambon quartered at the former Dutch artillery barracks at Kempoeng Benteng and while I was working in the Heiho (Labour Corps) in July 1943 saw 5 Australian PW, 15 Ambonese male civilians and 4 Ambonese (female) women all with hands tied and they passed in front of the barracks aforesaid escorted by a number of Japs carrying shovels and swords. Those with their hands tied aforesaid were taken behind the barracks abovementioned. I did not see what happened to those people but before long the Japs who had escorted them came back with the shovels and swords but without the people aforesaid. I think and really believe that all those persons who had their hands tied were killed by beheading by the Japs mentioned because they had given food and other things to the Australian PWs.

Merauke 29th November 1944

I who make this declaration sign and
swear before MIO OFFICER.

Sgd. BOEDIMAN

S. d. K. de Munter.

サングリス (Sangrisse) 一族、陸發銃兵ノ位
 子、第三萬二千八百七十三號ノ私ビト、ボエチイ
 ヲ (Polizius Bedieman) ハ私ガアソボソニ於テ、カ
 ソボエソグセソテイソグ (Polizius Bedieman) 以前
 ノカラソグノ砲兵々舎ニ宿營シテキタ間、又、昭和
 十八年(一九四三年)七月、ネイホー (Zeyo) 勢
 衛兵團(チンイテキタ間ニ、五人ノオーストラリア
 人ノ俘虜ト十五人ノアソボソ人ノ男ノ民間人ト四人
 ノアソボソ人(女性)ノ女ガ皆手ヲ縛ラレテ、シヤ
 ベルト劍ヲ持ツタ一隊ノ日本人ニ送テ、前送
 ノ兵舎ノ前ヲ廻リ過ギルノヲ見タ。
 今云ツタソレヲノ手ヲ縛ラレタ人々ハ前送ノ兵舎ノ
 後ニ送レテ行カレタ。之等ノ人々ニ、ボンナコトガ
 起ツタカ私ハ見テカツタ。然シ間モナク彼等ヲ送
 シテ行ツタ日本人ハシヤベルト劍ヲ持ツテ歸ツタ奈
 タ、ガ今云ツタ人々ハ居テカツタ。
 ソレヲ憶ベテノ手ヲシバラレテキタ人々ハ前送ノ
 日本人道ニヨツテ首サレテ送サレタト私ハ尋へ又
 本當ニ信ジテキル、何トナレバ彼等ハオーストラリ
 アノ戦争停戦ニ食糧ヤ他ノモノヲ與ヘタカラテアル。

FILE
 RETURNS TO ROOM 361
 COP

5306

5306
101824-F

サンデリース (Sandinese) 族テ、艦發銃兵ノ位
テ、第三萬二千八百七十三號ノ私ピト・ボエディマ
ン (Pontinus Boediman) ハ私ガアンボンニ於テ、カ
ンボエングセンテイング (Kampoe Senting) ノ以前
ノオランダノ砲兵々舎ニ宿營シテキタ間、又、昭和
十八年 (一九四三年) 七月、ネイホー (Nehoe) (勞
働兵團) テ管イテキタ間ニ、五人ノオーストラリア
人ノ俘虜ト十五人ノアンボン人ノ男ノ民間人ト四人
ノアンボン人 (女性) ノ女ガ皆手ヲ縛ラレテ、シヤ
ベルト劍ヲ持ツタ一隊ノ日本人ニ送送サレテ、前述
ノ兵舎ノ前ヲ通り過ギルノヲ見タ。

今云ツタソレラノ手ヲ縛ラレタ人々ハ前述ノ兵舎ノ
後ニ送レテ行カレタ。之等ノ人々ニ、ドンナコトガ
起ツタカ私ハ見テカッタ。然シ間モテク彼等ヲ送送
シテ行ツタ日本人ハシヤベルト劍ヲ持ツテ歸ツタ奈
タ、ガ今云ツタ人々ハ居テカッタ。

ソレラ德ベテノ手ヲシバラレテキタ人々ハ前述ノ
日本人達ニヨツテ誓首サレテ懲サレタト私ハ考ヘ又
本當ニ信ジテキル、何トナレバ彼等ハオーストラリ
アノ戰爭俘虜ニ食糧ヤ他ノモノヲ與ヘタカラテアル。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

FS/JC/111Evidentiary Document
5297IN THE MATTER OF JAPANESE WAR CRIMES
AND THE ILL-TREATMENT OF BRITISH AND
ALLIED PRISONERS OF WAR ON HAROEKOE
ISLAND, AMBON GROUP.
-----A F F I D A V I T

I, No. 145281 Flying-Officer DENIS BRIAN MASON, R.A.F., at present stationed at COSFORD near WOLVERHAMPTON and with permanent home address at 15, Chalkpit Terrace, DORKING, Surrey, make oath and say as follows:-

1. After being taken Prisoner of War in March 1942, I was sent through various prisoner of war camps, till on 8th January, 1943, I reached 'Yaarmarkt' Camp, Soerabaya, Java. There I found a camp which already had four thousand Prisoners of War of mixed nationalities. It was here that preparations were begun for the despatch of working parties of Prisoners of War to HAROEKOE Island, and other islands in the area, for the construction of airfields.

2. I found general living conditions much as at other camps, but with the splendid additions of such as a factory in full working order, making 'Peanut Butter' for sale at reasonable prices. Canteens selling fruit, fresh butter, eggs and a varied stock of chocolate and tinned goods, all over and above the Japanese scale of rations which was principally rice, with a limited amount of vegetables, and also a very, very limited amount of fresh meat. Football and general recreational games were permitted. Radio loudspeakers were installed for local broadcasting etc.; we also had two film shows showing Japanese propaganda films. A Japanese movie camera staff visited the camp and took special shots of Prisoner of War camp life.

3. We very soon learnt the reason for all this. The Japanese were fattening us up so that we might be in good physical condition to build Airfields in various parts of Japanese occupied territories. The first week in April 1943 the Japanese camp officials began preparing these working parties for drafting to the various islands. One morning the fit Prisoners of War were told to parade on the square. The sick were told to stay in their quarters so that the Japanese Medical Officer could inspect them to see if they were fit to proceed on working parties. The Japanese Medical Officer duly arrived, borrowed a cycle and rode around the camp. Upon return to the camp office he duly stated that all sick in quarters were now fit and should all be included on the nominal rolls of working parties. It is to be noted that this Japanese Medical Officer did not once stop or enter a building for the purpose of examining the patients. On the parade ground the Japanese Medical Officer duly walked up and down the ranks of the supposedly fit men and duly passed everybody as fit for inclusion in the working parties without examining any single man.

4. Prior to my draft leaving on this working party, each Prisoner of War was issued with two pairs of canvas rubber boots, maximum size 9s. These Prisoners of War who required a larger size than 9s had to go without footwear.

5. This draft left Soerabaya on 11th April 1943. A total of two thousand and fifty Prisoners of War, both British and Dutch were all consigned to Haroekoe. Other drafts were also included in the convoy and proceeded to AMBON and CERAM Island.

FS/JC/111Evidentiary Document
5297IN THE MATTER OF JAPANESE WAR CRIMES
AND THE ILL-TREATMENT OF BRITISH AND
ALLIED PRISONERS OF WAR ON HAROEKOE
ISLAND, AMBON GROUP.
-----A F F I D A V I T

I, No. 145281 Flying-Officer DENIS BRIAN MASON, R.A.F., at present stationed at COSEFORD near WOLVERHAMPTON and with permanent home address at 15, Chalkpit Terrace, DORKING, Surrey, make oath and say as follows:-

1. After being taken Prisoner of War in March 1942, I was sent through various prisoner of war camps, till on 8th January, 1943, I reached 'Yaarmarkt' Camp, Soerabaya, Java. There I found a camp which already had four thousand Prisoners of War of mixed nationalities. It was here that preparations were begun for the despatch of working parties of Prisoners of War to HAROEKOE Island, and other islands in the area, for the construction of airfields.

2. I found general living conditions much as at other camps, but with the splendid additions of such as a factory in full working order, making 'Peanut Butter' for sale at reasonable prices. Canteens selling fruit, fresh butter, eggs and a varied stock of chocolate and tinned goods, all over and above the Japanese scale of rations which was principally rice, with a limited amount of vegetables, and also a very, very limited amount of fresh meat. Football and general recreational games were permitted. Radio loudspeakers were installed for local broadcasting etc.; we also had two film shows showing Japanese propaganda films. A Japanese movie camera staff visited the camp and took special shots of Prisoner of War camp life.

3. We very soon learnt the reason for all this. The Japanese were fattening us up so that we might be in good physical condition to build Airfields in various parts of Japanese occupied territories. The first week in April 1943 the Japanese camp officials began preparing these working parties for drafting to the various islands. One morning the fit Prisoners of War were told to parade on the square. The sick were told to stay in their quarters so that the Japanese Medical Officer could inspect them to see if they were fit to proceed on working parties. The Japanese Medical Officer duly arrived, borrowed a cycle and rode around the camp. Upon return to the camp office he duly stated that all sick in quarters were now fit and should all be included on the nominal rolls of working parties. It is to be noted that this Japanese Medical Officer did not once stop or enter a building for the purpose of examining the patients. On the parade ground the Japanese Medical Officer duly walked up and down the ranks of the supposedly fit men and duly passed everybody as fit for inclusion in the working parties without examining any single man.

4. Prior to my draft leaving on this working party, each Prisoner of War was issued with two pairs of canvas rubber boots, maximum size 9s. Those Prisoners of War who required a larger size than 9s had to go without footwear.

5. This draft left Soerabaya on 11th April 1943. A total of two thousand and fifty Prisoners of War, both British and Dutch were all consigned to Haroekoe. Other drafts were also included in the convoy and proceeded to AMBON and CERAM Island.

6. As regards the Haroekoe draft, they boarded a Japanese ship named MAGGIE MARU. Accommodation was provided in the holes, where a wood platform had been erected half way between the two decks. Instead of walking below, one had to crawl below with ones kit. Officers and Doctors and other ranks all jumbled up together. Each man had to himself for living, eating and sleeping and storing his kit, the space of 5 square feet x a headroom of 4 feet, making a total of twenty cubic feet. During the whole voyage drink in the form of tea was issued in unlimited quantities. Food was very poor, consisting of two meals a day, each meal being approximately 100 grammes (3½ ounces) of Rice Pap, with an addition to the evening meal of a small measure of soup containing about one ounce of vegetables and one quarter ounce of shark fish. Washing facilities were almost non-existent. Exercise was limited to the very few occasions during the voyage that we were permitted to go on deck for roll call and visiting the latrines. During the last week of the voyage, when the Prisoners of War were beginning to go sick, a few men at a time were permitted on deck under the direct supervision of the Japanese Major ANAMI.

7. This Japanese Major Anami had addressed us prior to our leaving Seorabaya and informed us that "in future he was to be our commander and that we were to look at his 'bloody' face and that our lives were to be his safety", to use his very words. We were well to remember his words.

8. Dysentery and general sickness soon began. One morning the Prisoner of War Doctors started to organise a Prisoner of War sick parade on the forepart of the ship. The Japanese Major Anami and a Japanese Warrant Officer who was nicknamed "yellow boots" duly attended this sick parade. "Yellow boots" proceeded to beat up those Prisoners of War who reported sick, using the flat of his sword and beating them until they all replied that they were not sick. So ended the sick parade.

9. No life saving equipment was issued to the Prisoners of War. The firefighting services were non-existent, and there were no life boats on board.

10. AMBCINA town was reached on 1st May, 1943, and it was there that it was discovered that the ship's holds were full of petrol, bombs and ammunition. Haroekoe island was eventually reached by myself and the party of two thousand and fifty Prisoners of War on 5th May, 1943. We landed at night in a very heavy tropical rainstorm and discovered that the camp was only partly built and was still under construction.

11. The next morning the sick, who amounted to about 50%, were weeded out and the remainder of the Prisoners of War commenced to complete the construction of the camp, which was composed of bamboo huts covered with a local palm leaf. No tea or even water was provided to drink for the first four days. The first meal was provided after 26 hours and this consisted of sloppy rice of 3½ ounces (100 grammes). Food for the first week was appalling. We only had meals once in every twenty four hours which consisted every time of sloppy rice. Water was eventually discovered in an adjoining river which was used for drinking and cooking. This river was highly polluted, as the natives used it as a latrine.

12. Squadron Leader PITTS, Royal Air Force, was the senior British Officer in the camp, with Squadron Leader HOPKINS, Royal Air Force as second senior (now dead). The British Medical Officers were: Flight Lieutenant PHILPS, and Flight Lieutenant FORBES, Royal Air Force. The senior Netherland East Indies Forces Doctor was: Captain BUNING.

13. The Japanese Major (now Colonel) Anami was in charge of all Prisoner of War Camps in the district using Haroekoe as his Headquarters. The Japanese 2nd. (now 1st) Lieutenant KURISHIMA was camp commandant. His staff consisted of the Japanese Sergeant MORI as second in charge, the Korean KASIAMA as English-Japanese interpreter, plus about one hundred Koreans.

14. On the third day after arrival at this camp the Japanese said that the major task of constructing a Japanese Airfield must begin the next day. Working parties would consist of as many Prisoners of War as possible working in two shifts from daylight to dark.

15. It was pointed out to the Japanese Lieutenant KURISHIMA by the Prisoner of War Officers that obviously the Prisoners of War were not in a fit state at present to commence heavy work for the following reasons:-

- (i) Partial sickness of almost all Prisoners of War when they left Java.
- (ii) General conditions on board ship, such as overcrowding, loss of sleep, lack of exercise, and general bad feeding.
- (iii) Very bad feeding since arrival at Haroekoe.
- (iv) Very little sleep since arrival at Haroekoe owing to sleeping on the wet and flooded ground.

All of these points were disregarded by the Japanese and the next morning the working parties began. Later this same day all Prisoner of War Officers left in camp, were paraded and severely beaten up by Sergeant Mori and Lt. Kurishima, presumably as intimidation tactics.

16. After about the first week the sick rate amongst the Prisoners of War was so high (principally Dysentery) that the Japanese were very worried and ordered all Prisoners of War in camp that could crawl to build sleeping platforms in the barracks. On, I think, it was the eighth day, there were so many sick that all Airfield working parties were stopped and the whole Prisoner of War camp was turned into a hospital area. I took over inside working parties under the direction of Sergeant Mori and all the Prisoners of War that could possibly do a little work, carried on improving the camp. The difficult part of this was, that Sergeant Mori would not give me a free hand. I was an expert at camp construction and he knew absolutely nothing.

17. The existing latrines were only open trenches and the flies were breeding in multitudes and carrying the dysentery germs to all and sundry. The camp was immediately on the edge of the sea. I requested Sergeant Mori to give me the materials and permission to construct a latrine immediately over the sea, explaining that the existing sanitary accommodation was causing the spread of disease in the camp. Permission was refused. Later a Japanese Medical Officer arrived, and I repeated my request to him. He duly considered it and turned it down giving as reasons the following: "That the dysentery germs would pollute the sea, spread all over the world and thus would reach Japan." At this stage rubbish in the camp was disposed of under Sergeant Mori's instructions in open holes dug in the ground, these simply provided breeding places for the flies. I pointed out to Sergeant Mori how dangerous this was, and requested permission to build an incinerator, and thus burn the rubbish. This was refused on the grounds that Allied Aircraft would see the smoke from the incinerator.

18. After three hundred Prisoners of War had died in this camp over a period of one year, I eventually persuaded the Japanese to let me build a latrine over the sea. They never did grant permission to build an incinerator. During this period of one year, I repeatedly asked permission and material to alter the pernicious system of open trench latrines. This was refused repeatedly. The Japanese remedy to overcome the "fly" nuisance was to issue an order that "all Prisoners of War, including officers, were to catch so many hundred flies a day, the catch to be counted at night by the Prisoner of War Company Commanders". I repeatedly stressed in conjunction with the Prisoner of War Medical Officer that this method was of little use and that the remedy was to stop the flies breeding by adopting my recommendations as regards sanitary arrangements. As the sickness got worse and the death rate began to creep upwards, the Prisoner of War Medical Officer made repeated requests to the Japanese for supplies of medicines and better food. The small quantities as supplied were hopelessly inadequate.

19. The whole camp of Prisoners of War at this time were existing on a 24 hour ration of 150 grammes (5½ ounces) of rice. The Japanese were apparently under the impression that very sick men would recover and get well again on this diet, and soon be fit once more for heavy manual work on the construction of their airfield. In a very short time almost every Prisoner of War had Beri-Beri to add to his troubles and the death rate was mounting daily to as much as 14 and 15. After a few weeks of this high death rate the Japanese decided that working parties, sick included, must carry on the construction of the airfield. I witnessed the first parade of the sick men at 2 p.m. one day. Attending the parade were patients, Prisoner of War Medical Officers, the senior camp Prisoner of War Officer, the Japanese Medical Officer, Lt. Kurishina, Sgt. Mori and Kasiana.

20. A Japanese gave the order to step forward to the first patient, who was a Dutchman. The Japanese then asked what the trouble was. The Prisoner of War Medical Officer explained that it was a bad case of Beri-Beri and the patient could barely walk. So Sgt. Mori then gave the patient a terrific clout in the small of the back with a bamboo pole which was about 6 ft long by about 2 inches in diameter. This clout literally picked the patient up about 2 feet into the air and deposited him about 5 feet from where he had been standing. I buried this patient a few days later.

21. And so it went on. The P.O.W. Medical Officers protested and were beaten up for their trouble. This is a typical example of dozens of such parades that went on by all of the Japanese mentioned above when they were seeking sick P.O.W. for working parties.

22. Hospital conditions were almost indescribable. The P.O.W. Medical Officers and staff struggled on manfully against almost hopeless odds. Not only was there starvation and an almost complete lack of medical supplies, but also savage brutality to sick P.O.W., P.O.W. Medical Officers and their staffs by Sgt. Mori and Kasiana, often aided and abetted by Lt. Kurashina. The patients in general were looking like living skeletons. Those patients who could either walk or stagger used to go on to the sea beach and gather sea vermin such as snails etc., cook these and share with their weaker comrades. Others caught rats and mice and all went into the cooking pot in their almost hopeless task of trying to get sufficient food to keep alive.

Dogs and cats went the same way into the cooking pot, but when these were obtainable they were cooked in the camp kitchen for the benefit of the camp as a whole. The sick P.O.W. were as eager as possible to gain sufficient strength to stagger on to the Japanese working parties, as these got a little extra food in the way of very small issue of meat and vegetables. Also other methods of obtaining food outside the camp were sometimes possible, such as exchanging personal possessions with the natives. Also Sgt. Mori was trading in a big way and exchanging articles for food with the P.O.W.

23. Malaria was also on the upgrade when I took over the reconstruction of this camp. I stressed to Sgt. Mori the importance of my being permitted to carry out anti-malaria measures on the outskirts of the camp. Numerous applications were also made to Lt. Kurishina both by myself and the P.O.W. Medical Officers which were persistently refused, until we had been in the camp some twelve months. Even after this, anti-malaria precautions were only allowed to be carried out in a most unsatisfactory manner.

24. The average working hours for P.O.W. at this camp were as follows:-

6 a. m.	Reveille	1 p.m.- 2 p.m.	Midday meal
6.30 a.m.	Breakfast	2 p.m.- 5.30 p.m.	All P.O.W. work
7.45 a.m.	Roll call and Parade	5.30 p.m.- 7 p.m.	All inside camp working parties augmented by those who had been working outside the camp - all carried on until dark with camp fatigues.
8. a.m.-1 p.m.	Work		

Thus the men never saw the inside of their barrack in the daylight or had any form of recreation. Even bathing in the adjacent river had to be carried out in the dark.

25. During the whole of the period spent in this camp. i.e. some 15 months, the only recreation we had was two football matches, two concerts and for the first three months only, Sunday evening Church services. No Red Cross supplies of any kind was ever received. In May 1944, the Japanese let us write one postcard home, morale increased a little at this, but these postcards were burnt and as far as I can trace, not one ever left the island. About 100 letters and six cablegrams were received at Christmas 1943, this good luck cheered the recipients up no end.

26. The usual slappings and beatings went on in this camp as in all others, in the majority of cases for the most trivial offences and very often for no offence at all.

27. The clothing and footwear situation, particularly the latter, became very acute after the first few months, as the P.O.W. were working almost continuously on Coral surface. Only once, did the Japanese issue a few items of Dutch uniform clothing, which was helplessly inadequate for the whole camp. And for the last year in the camp almost all P.O.W. had no footwear of any kind.

28. Lots of P.O.W. were having trouble with their eyes, principally through malnutrition. Some went quite blind, some semi-blind. Many attempted to carry on with the outside working

parties as the only hope of obtaining sufficient food to keep them alive. These conditions were particularly bad on the airfield construction job, owing to the very fierce glare of the sun, shining on the Coral surface. We asked the Japanese to supply sun glasses.

29. After we had been in this camp for some weeks, the Japanese gave us permission to have a small shop, and purchase local supplies of fruit, etc. Sgt. Mori controlled the purchases, and also the selling side under two P.O.W. officers, namely F/O Hobson and F/O Corbet, R.A.F. Only those who worked hard were permitted to purchase these very limited supplies of goods on a coupon system. Thus the sick had very little opportunity of buying anything. I understand from the two named officers, that at least for one month Sgt. Mori's account had to be written off to the extent of five hundred guilders, which of course meant, that the P.O.W. had to foot the bill. At another occasion the P.O.W. fund at the canteen had to pay for a supply of live pigs that were delivered for Japanese consumption, to the extent of one hundred and eighty guilders, and so the story of corruption could go on. After a time, provided P.O.W.'s worked hard, the supply of rice was increased to 400 grammes a day.

30. As regards A.R.P. precautions in the camp, although we repeatedly requested the Japanese permission to provide shelter accommodation, it was some months, before permission was obtained and then the P.O.W. had to dig these in their spare time. I have already explained their working hours, so it can be clearly understood what spare time the men had. As regards A.R.P. trenches on the airfield, it was not until we had been on the airfield for a year, that provision was made in this respect, although plenty of allied aircraft were operating in the vicinity.

31. After we had occupied this camp for several months, the buildings started to collapse, and the Japanese gave me permission to rebuild the whole camp, working under the direct instructions of Sgt. Mori. So, using semi-sick P.O.W. as a labour force, I rebuilt the whole camp. We also organised large areas as gardens. These better living conditions, together with quantities of vegetables from the gardens, greatly improved the health, morale and spirit of the whole camp.

32. Of the two thousand and fifty P.O.W. that started in this camp, three hundred and eighty six died and were buried there. In addition a party of six hundred very sick left to return to Java in October-November 1943, and at later dates various other small parties of sick left to return to Java.

33. I consider that the causes of death of the 386 P.O.W. who died on this island, can be attributed to the following:-

- (i) General brutal ill-treatment and beatings by Sgt. Mori, who consistently used bamboo sticks and poles and also a wide leather service belt with a heavy brass buckle at the end to beat Prisoners with. Similar methods were also used by the Korean intercreator Masada.
- (ii) Constant malnutrition caused by insufficient food issued by the Japanese government and aggravated by the authorised rations being reduced on instructions by Lt. Ishikawa and Sgt. Mori.

- (iii) Refusal by the Japanese in charge of us, to allow us to build a proper trench latrine system and a similar refusal to allow us to dispose of rubbish by burning, in order to prevent flies breeding and check the spread of dysentery.
- (iv) Lack of medical supplies. The Japanese never gave us any medical attention whatever.
- (v) I regard Major (now Lt-Col.) Anani who was in charge of all P.O.W. camps in the Haroekoe area, as being primarily responsible for these conditions. I also regard the Haroekoe camp staff as having a large share of the responsibility for conditions. These include:-

Lt. KURISHIMA,
Sgt. MORI,
Interpreter KASIAMA.

34. Descriptions of two of these Japanese are as under:-

Lt. KURISHIMA About 5'7" tall, normally in good health, weighs about 10 stone, usual Japanese features with close cut, black hair. Habitually wears glasses and presumably was in a Japanese cavalry regiment, as he wore jack boots with spurs. He told me that he was a railway station master by profession. Speaks a lot of English.

Sergeant MORI Known by all P.O.W. as "BAMBOO MORI", is about 5'6" tall, weighs normally, in good health, about 10 stone, 12 lbs.; is very muscular with very wide and powerful shoulders. Usual Japanese features with usual Japanese short black hair. Is very particular about his dress and is almost a non-smoker. Speaks a little English.

35. Annexed to this affidavit and marked 'Exhibit A', is a nominal roll of prisoners of war who died and were buried on Haroekoe island. It was part of my duties to keep a record of all those who died. The British Officer in command of Haroekoe island was Squadron Leader PITTS.

SWORN by the said DENIS BRIAN MASON,)
at 6, Spring Gardens in the City of) D. B. Mason
Westminster this 8th day of February, 1946. (Sgd.) D.B. MASON.

Before me

A. M. Bell-Macdonald Major
(Sgd.) A.M. Bell-Macdonald.

Exhibit A referred to in the
affidavit of Flying Officer
D. B. Mason R.A.F., sworn before
me on 8th day of February 1946.
/s/ A.M. Bell-Macdonald
Major RA Legal Staff

HAROEKOF ISLANDAMBON GROUP NETNOMINAL ROLL OF DEAD

NOTES D = DUTCH
R = R.A.F.)
A = ARMY)
N = NAVY)

May 1943 - June 1944

BRITISH

A5 Plan

No. Grave No. = DIED + BURIED AT SEA? OR? PORT?

Grave No.	Name	Initial	Rank	Serv-ice	Service Number	P.C.W. Number
1	Assendelft-De-Coningh	C.F.	Soldier	D	?	10925
2	Smith	D.W.	Cpl	R	1118974	633
3	Parsons	J.M.		R	931330	1328
4	Penman	G.V.B.	Cpl	R	970589	676
5	Eekhout	E.L.A.	Sgt/M	D		4224
6	Flemmington	W.B.	Cpl	R		489
7	Green	R.H.	LAC	R		1846
8	Kortelink	E.		D		6000
9	Ruitenbach	W.A.		D		6634
10	Moll	P.J.H.		D	108296	6305
11	Crawforth	W.E.	Gunner A(RA)			2138
12	Enery	N.		R		1682
13	Isaacs	J.A.	AC	R	1272715	1590
14	Warnett	R.	LAC	R		905
15	Lucas	J.		D		6183
16	Ridley	A.D.		R		1594
17	Showell	E.L.G.	AC1	R	1252098	2220
18	Edwards	F.E.	LAC	R		1697
19	Lakeman	W.H.	Cpl	R		519
20	Wolff	J.M.		D		2930
21	Elenbaas	P.M.		D		10936
22	Beard	A.B.		R		1420
23	Peters	R.	AC1	R	932780	1258
24	De-Vink	P.E.		D		4509
25	Westlake	D.C.		R		2240
26	Koning	A.M.N.		D		3241
27	Draper	J.A.	F/S	R	518877	277
28	Bristow	R.P.	F/S	R	520381	293
29	Belshan	A.E.		R	1116586	2282
30	Donaldson	R.D.	Sgt	A		311
31	Poole	J.K.		R		1538
32	Tipple	A.W.		R		894
33	Andreas	D.P.		D		4898
34	Horne	K.L.		R		751
35	Winch	L.G.		R	1214361	1066
36	Parker	M.F.	LAC	R	1030258	1210
37	Romer	A.L.		D		6589
38	Schurink	B.H.H.		D		3426
39	Howard	A.T.	LAC	R	645529	1982
40	Stokes	L.G.		R		836
41	Grand	A.J.		R	934676	2272
42	Murphy	R.A.		R		1792

Grave No.	Name	Initial	Rank	Service	Service No.	P.O.W. No.
43	Domont	H.W.		D		7545
44	Broad	T.M.	F/S	R	363418	287
45	McManus	F.		R	1026769	1796
46	Fender	J.	LAC	R	1103623	1842
47	Cooke	R.G.	LAC	R	1177719	1398
48	Adelink	H.		D		7418
49	Brown	J.M.	Cpl	R	1004010	562
50	Maddison	W.R.	Sgt	R		357
51	Lee	A.G.		R		1559
52	Dormers	M.J.		D		5369
53	Edwards	S.J.		R		1493
54	Tyler	C.J.	LAC	R		980
55	Bewley	E.W.C.	F/S	R		297
56	Potter	V.J.		R	913914	1016
57	Holmes	F.C.	LAC	R	1161052	1320
58	Storey	W.		R	1303164	1691
59	Thompson	A.A.W.		R		1457
60	Hooker	A.E.	Cpl	R		400
61	Warren	C.V.	Cpl	R	917055	434
62	Webster	J.S.	AC	R	1290450	1157
63	Rogerson	J.	ACI	R	952920	787
64	Ward	C.S.	Cpl	R	908269	439
65	Paris	J.G.	Sldr	A	919445	2146
66	Methley	J.T.	T/O	R		182
67	French	D.M.	ACI	R	1073634	1298
68	Paumen	H.H.E.		D		3353
69	Docherty	G.W.		R	631275	2164
70	Foley	S.R.	AC	R	1336769	1892
71	Bronsgoest	E.Th.		D		5189
72	Glaze	R.C.	LAC	R		1752
73	Mc Rae	D.	LAC	R	978807	1307
74	Morgan	J.S.A.		R		2062
75	Gosden died 31.5.43	A.H.S.	LAC	R	184677	1350
76	Linthwaite	D.	AC	R	1380368	1443
77	McCoocy	P.	AC	R	1205336	1514
78	Seddon	T.	AC	R	1086234	1754
79	Friend	H.L.		N		721
80	West	A.D.		R		1460
81	Uiterdijk	M.		D		11013
82	Maarsen	A.		D		6199
83	Goey	W.A.	LAC	R		1340
84	Carty	J.P.	AC	R		2169
85	Trigg	C.C.		R	1096592	1729
86	Taylor	J.	LAC	R	858990	1837
87	Linnage	C.T.	Cpl	R	953374	449
88	Williamson	I.T.	AC II	R	547930	911
89	Rollisson	H.F.	LAC	R	1284793	2297
90	Carson	S.	Cpl	R		.616
91	Element	S.H.		R	1295359	935
92	Medley	W.P.	AC II	R	1535231	1447
93	Clark	D.T.	AC I	R	924830	1483
94	Hayes	M.	LAC	R		1647
95	Hunslip	J.C.		D		10955
96	Harris	L.E.		R		1857
97	Walker	R.W.	LAC	R	1007546	1954
98	Newble	E.S.		R		1013
99	Worsley	S.A.	AC I	R	1070593	736
100	Komen	C.		D		5989
101	Mahoney	D.M.	LAC	R		1170
102	Barnes	J.L.	Gunner	A	1771718	2114
103	Stacey	C.	LAC	R		848
104	Jones	A.D.	Sldr	A		2145
105	Jess	W.J.	Cpl	R	548834	405

Grave No.	Name	Initial	Rank	Service	Service No.	F.O.W. No.
106	Hulzen	W.J.		D		3010
107	Kelsell	E.	Cpl	R		520
108	Rachburn	G.L.	AC	R		1223
109	Cleeve	W.	Gunner	A	1587829	2115
110	Deans	J.M.	LAC	R		1490
111	Heyboer	G.B.		D		5759
112	Davis	R.E.	Cpl	R		476
113	Castell	A.E.B.	F/S	R	364568	284
114	Hunter	J.	Sldr	A		2152
115	Paxton	A.	LAC	R	630239	739
116	Arendse	S.F.		D		4920
117	Van Aronthals	J.		D		7384
118	Balk	T.P.	Sldr	D		4944
119	Ameljden-Van-Duyn	E.		D		7461
120	Walsh	P.J.	LAC	R	549567	899
121	Schonhage	L.A.		D		3823
122	Watmore	G.H.	Sldr	A		2130
123	Ironmonger	R.W.	Sgt	R	519418	368
124	Windhouwer	J.		D		10995
125	Hunter	G.O.	LAC	R		1878
126	Manning	T.G.	LAC	R	912481	1117
127	Van-Der-Beek	C.R.		D		10740
128	Reos	J.		D		6600
129	Reinders	H.A.		D		10951
130	Christie	R.C.M.	ACI	R	982397	1706
131	Grant	J.B.	Sgt	R		354
132	Way	J.M.	ACI	R	926461	947
133	Happel	M.J.		D		5677
134	Beaumont	K.	LAC	R		1391
135	Sneekes	H.H.		D		6783
136	Bronsgcest	S.P.		D		5168
137	Smith	H.R.	Sgt	D		3437
138	Poldernahs	J.J.	Sgt	D		4104
139	Hutchins	C.H.	AC	R	625111	769
140	Tobias	H.A.J.T.	Sgt	D		3473
141	Parlow	D.	AC	R	1497415	1200
142	Burnell	J.R.	LAC	R	933807	1354
143	Beerschers	J.	Sgt	D		4672
144	Driver	C.J.	Cpl	R	648111	493
145	Furniss	C.A.	LAC	R	868690	1498
146	Palmer	E.E.	LAC	R	1304124	2015
147	Carberry	J.H.	ACI	R	960121	2031
148	Lloyd	E.	LAC	R	621950	1815
149	Guthrie	C.S.	Cpl	R	130361	589
150	Jenkins	S.G.R.	AC	R		944
151	Taylor	H.	ACI	R	1291754	1015
152	Gibson	E.G.	LAC	R	913057	2295
153	Boogert	A.H.		D		5093
154	Cummings	J.S.	AC	R		2204
155	Monk	A.J.		R	1208033	2256
156	Jansch	G.H.	Sgt	D		4230 or 11012
157	Fitzpatrick	M.	Sldr	A	847418	2141
158	Durno	J.E.	LAC	R	1123370	1377
159	Dezentje	D.F.D.C.		D		5341
160	Roso	A.		D		11004
161	Middleton	F.	ACI	R	1078252	797
162	Van Amstel	P.C.	Sgt	D	(153 MU)	3917
163	Harper (151 MU Seletar)	A.T.	AC	R	649757	1658
164	White	S.W.	LAC	R	635194	2047
165	Weatherley	P.E.	LAC	R	746322	902
166	Loveridge	C.N.	AC	R	949187	1508

Grave No.	Name	Initial	Rank	Service	Service No.	P.O.W. No.
167	Trickett	H.H.		R	1047807	1012
168	Peat	K.	Sgt	R	623243	363
169	Giles	H.W.	LAC	R	1187680	1967
170	Bell	R.A.	AC	R	1285444	1410
171	Muir	H.A.	Cpl	R		429
172	Lansdowne	R.H.	AC2	R	1283315	1162
173	Bodenham	J.	Gnr	A(RA)	1638466	2113
174	Holden	J.I.		R	1063408	951
175	Fenton	E.W.	AC2	R	1310875	1863
176	Rahkena	J.	Sgt	D		4109
177	Pratt	A.P.	LAC	R	357884	1956
178	Lake	R.D.	Cpl	R	923642	402
179	Van Mourick	J.B.		D		7389
180	Stocks	P.H.	LAC	R	1112375	2259
181	Hilditch	A.	LAC	R	977060	815
182	Jenkinson	G.W.	AC1	R	1309534	1435
183	Eijkman	R.		D		5468
184	Lic-Scei-Dhoon			D		7413
185	Hazelwood	A.S.	A.C.II	R	1219747	2005
186	Honig	C.		D		4235
187	Hanton	N.H.	Cpl.	R	916072	465
188	Hyde	A.V.	L.A.C.	R	1281762	1129
189	Rich	A.			1448643	671
190	Lister	R.B.	Cpl.	R	953356	448
191	Higgins	S.W.	L.A.C.	R	923617	1083
192	Howe	R.W.		R	902670	11138
193	Mothersdale	T.	Sgt	R	562215	331
194	Moorhouse	J.		R	640837	1945
195	Baldwin	E.E.J.	Cpl	R	1163540	483
196	Geraerds-Thesingh	C.D.L.	Sldr	D	32694	5542
197	Ball	G.	L.A.C.	R	1005091	1035
198	Smith	W.C.	L.A.C.	R	522718	1746
199	Pentoney	R.	Sgt/Pilot	R	1377544	683
200	Nichols	E.C.	L.A.C.	R	960097	1798
201	Schoewaert	H.J.		D		6705
202	McKinnon	D.		R	1346094	1575
203	Rowe	A.F.	Cpl.	R	91652	719
204	Van-Mourick	B.B.	D			7442
205	Caesar	H.W.	Cpl	A(AA)	1452791	723
206	Morling	F.R.	L.A.C.	R	1209502	1167
207	Dobbie	R.J.C.	A.C.II	R	785101	2160
208	Hopkins	D.	L.A.C.	R	644602	1243
209	Lund	R.A.		R	1131417	1816
210	Day	K.J.		A	266354	2148
211	McKinley	F.	Cpl	R	1002171	601
212	Klein-Poelhuis	J.A.	Sgt	D		10507
213	Fraser	H.A.	F/L	R	Ex-PWD Malaya	159
214	Marlisa	C.V.		D		6220
215	Scadding	G.C.	A.C.I	R	907348	1638
216	Cunningham	T.	L.A.C.	R	1054118	933
217	Jehanzoon	E.J.	Sgt	D		3215
218	Stephens	A.	A.C.I	R		1685
219	Thompson	W.A.	Cpl	R	542694	568
220	Ragan	B.	Sgt	R	532118	692
221	Bower	E.W.	L.A.C.	R	1306741	1000
222	Marchant	R.G.		R	914463	1174
223	Thornley	V.	A.C.I	R	1104988	1264
224	Barton	J.	L.A.C.	R	1069791	804
225	de-Bruin	R.		D		7966
226	Moore	F.R.	F/O	R		200
227	Parry	E.L.	Cpl.	R	1022071	532
228	Dunlop	J.P.	L.A.C.	R	955904	1367
229	Moore	C.R.	L.A.C.	R	R 80313	1178

Grave No.	Name	Initial	Rank	Service No.	P.O.W. No.
167	Trickett	H.H.		R 1047807	1012
168	Peat	K.	Sgt	R 623243	363
169	Giles	H.W.	LAC	R 1187680	1967
170	Bell	R.A.	AC	R 1285444	1410
171	Muir	H.A.	Cpl	R	429
172	Lansdowne	R.H.	AC2	R 1283315	1162
173	Bodenham	J.	Gnr	A(RA)1638466	2113
174	Holden	J.I.		R 1063408	951
175	Fenton	E.W.	AC2	R 1310875	1863
176	Rahkena	J.	Sgt	D	4109
177	Pratt	A.P.	LAC	R 357884	1956
178	Lake	R.D.	Cpl	R 923642	402
179	Van Mourick	J.B.		D	7389
180	Stocks	P.H.	LAC	R 1112375	2259
181	Hilditch	A.	LAC	R 977060	815
182	Jenkinson	G.W.	AC1	R 1309534	1435
183	Eijkman	R.		D	5468
184	Lic-Scei-Dhoen			D	7413
185	Hazelwood	A.S.	A.C.II	R 1219747	2005
186	Honig	C.		D	4235
187	Hanton	N.H.	Cpl.	R 916072	465
188	Hyde	A.V.	L.A.C.	R 1281762	1129
189	Rich	A.		1448643	671
190	Lister	R.B.	Cpl.	R 953356	448
191	Higgins	S.W.	L.A.C.	R 923617	1083
192	Howe	R.W.		R 902670	11138
193	Mothersdale	T.	Sgt	R 562215	331
194	Moorhouse	J.		R 640837	1945
195	Baldwin	E.E.J.	Cpl	R 1163540	483
196	Geraerds-Thesingh	C.D.L.	Sldr	D 32694	5542
197	Ball	G.	L.A.C.	R 1005091	1035
198	Smith	W.C.	L.A.C.	R 522718	1746
199	Pentney	R.	Sgt/Pilot	R 1377544	683
200	Nichols	E.C.	L.A.C.	R 960097	1798
201	Schoewaert	H.J.		D	6705
202	McKinnon	D.		R 1346094	1575
203	Howe	A.F.	Cpl.	R 91652	719
204	Van-Mourick	B.B.	D		7442
205	Caesar	H.W.	Cpl	A(AA) 1452791	723
206	Morling	F.R.	L.A.C.	R 1209502	1167
207	Dobbie	R.J.C.	A.C.II	R 785101	2160
208	Hopkins	D.	L.A.C.	R 644602	1243
209	Lund	R.A.		R 1131417	1816
210	Day	K.J.		A 266354	2148
211	McKinley	F.	Cpl	R 1002171	601
212	Klein-Poelhuis	J.A.	Sgt	D	10507
213	Fraser	H.A.	F/L	R Ex-PWD Malaya	159
214	Marlisa	C.W.		D	6220
215	Scadding	G.C.	A.C.I	R 907348	1638
216	Cunningham	T.	L.A.C.	R 1054118	933
217	Jehanzoon	E.J.	Sgt	D	3215
218	Stephens	A.	A.C.I	R	1685
219	Thompson	W.A.	Cpl	R 542694	568
220	Ragan	B.	Sgt	R 532118	692
221	Bower	E.W.	L.A.C.	R 1306741	1000
222	Marchant	R.G.		R 914463	1174
223	Thornley	V.	A.C.I	R 1104988	1264
224	Barton	J.	L.A.C.	R 1069791	804
225	de-Bruin	R.		D	7966
226	Moore	F.R.	F/O	R	200
227	Parry	E.L.	Cpl.	R 1022071	532
228	Dunlop	J.P.	L.A.C.	R 955904	1367
229	Moore	C.R.	L.A.C.	R 80313	1178

Grave No.	Name	Initial	Rank	Service	Service No.	P.O.V. No.
230	Reith	A.	L.A.C.	R	1179228	1218
231	Hoogveen	C.W.	Sgt.	D		3191
232	Williamson	J.P.	Cpl.	R	992776	533
233	Negelen	W.J.F.		D		6259
234	Wilson	J.		R	1120873	2239
235	Gray	G.F.E.		D		3707
236	Salts	R.J.	L.A.C.	R	575325	1732
237	Hoyland	S.	L.A.C.	R	1535698	1112
238	Hegt	A.		D		10674
239	Paul	R.	L.A.C.	R	572827	1774
240	Lunn	C.W.H.	L.A.C.	R	539567	1444
241	Warwick	K.	A.C.	R	1136141	2180
242	Fisher	A.B.	L.A.C.	R	1164322	1023
243	Playcl	S.J.		A	1537883	2155
244	Pierpoint	W.	Sgt.	R	526405	347
245	Williams	E.J.P.	A.C.I	R	575169	930
246	Trotter	J.A.	Sgt	R	527309	338
247	Meijes	G.J.		D		6324
248	Allcorn	H.	LAC	R	1176530	1416
249	Lindeijer	W.		D		8428
250	Ward	J.W.		R	979024	2000
251	Roberts	E.	AC1	R	992671	1767
252	Reilly	R.J.	Cpl	R	535202	643
253	Brookman	H.E.		D		10935
254	Hutchinson	G.	Cpl	R	570881	565
255	Smith	B.	AC1	R	922898	1100
256	Collings	A.F.	AC1	R	945820	1484
257	Goodman	W.S.		R	1120650	1329
258	Van-Der-Renst	E.		D		4111
259	Collins	S.	AC1	R	1359164	1485
260	Harrington	J.	LAC	R	631373	817
261	Jones	N.N.	LAC	R	1106664	1633
262	Woodman	W.	LAC	R	949740	1045
263	Van-Der-Linden	A.	D		6154	
264	Williams	J.	AC	R	1104069	906
265	Higrove	F.H.	P/O	R	AMVD	229
266	Young	J.	AC1	R	850544	945
267	Springate	T.L.D.	AC	R	1244999	1618
268	Bett	D.E.H.	LAC	R	1063647	1392
269	Manley	C.	AC1	R	1086294	1515
270	Nutter	H.	LAC	R	1108409	1189
271	Healham	C.E.	Cpl	R	523049	414
272	Bates	L.K.	LAC	R	961002	996
273	Tucker	W.		R	1113227	2268
274	Butt	W.G.	AC	R		2202
275	Morgan	K.E.	AC	R	1217442	1512
276	Oldfield	A.	AC	R	1089492	1195
277	Mugridge	L.A.	Cpl	R	1358076	456
278	McGregor	I.C.F.	Cpl	R	1052521	516
279	Fleming	F.	LAC	R	1121363	2260
280	Ward	A.	AC	R	1066951	2012
281	Forsythe	J.H.	AC	R	1206286	1865
282	Coleman	J.W.	AC1	R	1281638	780
283	Syrms	A.	AC1	R	1330407	835
284	Guest	S.F.	AC1	R	1284775	2171
285	Laker	E.C.	LAC	R	637386	1247
286	Copeland	A.R.	AC	R	065169	809
287	Mulder	L.A.D.	Sgt	D		4228?
288	Reeves	C.	AC	R	1441963	1608
289	Hayball	W.G.	Sailor	N	D/J84979	2063

H.M.S. Jupiter

Grave No.	Name	Initial	Rank	Service	Service No.	P.O. No.
290	Hilliard	J.R.	Gnr	A	1779353	2124
291	Hind	J.F.	Sgt	R	564645	342
292	Ballinger	A.W.B.	AC2	R	1401299	1028
293	Loveridge	N.J.	AC1	R	1205726	752
294	McAllen	J.J.B.	AC2	R	1024863	2184
295	Geely	G.W.	LAC	R	634171	1702
296	Westun	C.C.	AC	R	1261430	1779
297	Wansbury	W.H.	LAC	R	626555	1288
298	Curtis	A.P.L.	AC1	R	930326	1701
299	Robinson	F.	LAC	R	1004752	1544
300	Broekhuysen	M.J.		D		10385
301	Walker	M.S.	AC	R	1173011	1095
302	Street	N.S.	LAC	R	1182033	1750
303	Muir	A.	LAC	R	574540	1803
304	Dumbleton	A.	AC2	R	1139355	1562
305	Funn	R.T.	LAC	R	933127	1948
306	Thomas	H.G.	LAC	R	529304	1114
307	Bevsichen	J.A.		D		4241
308	Head	C.E.	P/O	R		228
309	Isaacson	H.A.	LAC	R	750952	1648
310	Hill	G.W.	Cpl	R	649400	420
311	Nash	T.S.	LAC	R	625255	795
312	Uren	B.	AC	R	1141230	923
313	Hart	J.	Cpl	R	1255250	700
314	Bus	M.J.M.		D		5206
315	Beards More	E.J.	A.C.	R	644622	1711
316	Devonport	G.	L.A.C.	R	1650110	893
317	Denekamp	H.		D		4254
318	Sayer	W.B.	L.A.C.	R	645390	1751
319	Mullins	S.G.	L.A.C.	R	1253430	830
320	Brinkman	C.J.J.		D		5147
321	Monks	P.M.	L.A.C.	R	970802	1810
322	Annis	F.W.	L.A.C.	R	907763	859
323	Beckman Lapre	H.P.	Sgt	D		3937
324	Harris	A.T.	L.A.C.	R	653946	1121
325	Allen	S.W.	A.C.I	R	1229744	1919
326	Mayer	D.		D		7421
327	Chappell	J.E.	A.C.I	R	1187467	1481
328	Orsan	A.R.	L.A.C.	R	902187	1521
329	Wright	J.F.	Cpl.	R	642719	548
330	Waters	G.L.	F/S	R	521440	299
331	Garder	L.J.	A.C.	R	1501578	1464
332	Williams	D.C.	F/S	R	510721	290
333	Bennett	L.M.	L.A.C.	R	917074	1630
334	Brooks	H.H.	A.C.	R	1201681	1549
335	Darwin	J.	Cpl.	R	926872	473
336	Van Essen	D.M.		D		4926
337	Penny	F.E.	L.A.C.	R	110(8?)830	1213
338	Hardy	H.A.	L.A.C.	R	1196796	1740
339	Edwards	F.	Cpl.	R	508081	426
340	Haig	E.H.S.	A.C.	R	1195599	1333
341	Hall	G.A.	L.A.C.	R	940901	2271
342	Saywell	G.V.R.	L.A.C.	R	912125	1953
343	Greenwald	J.		D		12615
344	Goulty	R.R.	A.C.	R	1334864	1533
345	Mason	F.P.	Cpl.	R	909374	602
346	Miller	B.	L.A.C.	R	515996	1255
347	Van Mil	J.G.		D		4937
348	Protz	L.C.	Cpl.	R	763144	575
349	Thompson	G.S.	A.C.I	R	1356432	898
350	Palmer	K.E.	L.A.C.	R	924405	940
351	Jarvis	E.N.	L.A.C.	R	1282273	1147

Grave No.	Name	Initial	Rank	Service	Service No.	P.O.W. No.
352	Canard	H.J.	L.A.C.	R	907728	1372
353	Cramer	A.		D		4298
354	Gordon	F.	L.A.C.	R	1078112	1500
355	Goldsmith	A.T.	Sldr	A	6401716	2135
356	Schroder	W.H.		D		10981
357	Lanternans	W.		D		11369
358	Tanse(?)	A.L.	A.C.II	R	1233801	1877
359	de Boer	J.W.		D		4363
360	Wiggers	F.W.		D		3870
361	Slet Boom	B.		D		11862
362	Oosterhuis	T.P.		D		3345
363	Rolfe	F.	Cpl.	R	615121	536
364	Chapman	A.S.	L.A.C.	R	623172	1108
365	Briedenbach	H.		D		11890
366	Buys	W.		D		12195
367	Woodward	N.	Sgt.	R	630498	684
368	Leonard	R.S.	Cpl.	R		541
369	Moore	E.	L.A.C.	R	1002088	2252
370	Shears	A.D.	L.A.C.	R	1015957	1021
371	Hickman	A.P.	Cpl.	R	569630	713
372	Hewson	R.W.B.	A.C.I	R	613028	1645
373	Byron	B.	Cpl.	R	630453	694
374	Aarts	J.		D		11604
375	Van Dingstee	F.H.		D		11563
376	Fleyd	W.	L.A.C.	R	1082769	2209
377	Simpson	W.J.	A.C.I.	R	1370694	1839
378	Adams	H.H.	A.C.II	R	1444801	1561
379	Schmitt	R.	Sldr	D	74398	6732
380	Rebijn	K.		D		11456
381	Weelner	K.C.	L.A.C.	R	574318	914
382	W st	N.W.	L.A.C.	R	627155	917
383	Harris	C.L.	Cpl.	R	633426	442
	(Simon-V-Leeuwen	F.	Sgt	D	)	12030
	(Oosterhuis	T.	O/Lt	D	)	11411
	(Roberts	A.	Cpl	R	) Appro	566
	(Johnston	W.G.		R	) Ncv	1144
	(Martin	H.H.		R	) 1945	1068
	(Keede	E.		D	)	11713
	(Gouverneur	E.F.C.		D	)	10625
	(Oldcorn.	L.		R	)	1782
384) 392	Walton	J.		R	1030016	1548
	(Died at Liang Ambon)					
	Hof Vant	J.N.D.A!	Sgt	D		11652
385) 394	Handibode	P.J.	A.C.I.	R	521753	1867
386) 395	Bailey	G.	A.C.I	R	648099	1909

386 graves, total in all Haroekoe.

EXHIBIT NO. 1825A

口供書

Doc. 5297

本籍地 井川 (Surrey) (Hoking) (Chalkit) (Terrace)
地ニテ四ノ下ノ村ニ住ルニシテ、附近ニテハ「」ニシテ、
中ニ英國陸軍飛行隊員ニシテ、第一師團ニシテ、飛行機
行將投下ニシテ、飛行機ニテハ「」ニシテ、其ノ如ク、
私一、二年 (昭和七年) 三月ニシテ、第一師團ニシテ、
方ニシテ、四年 (昭和八年) 一月八日ニシテ、
所在ニシテ、(昭和三十二年) 一月八日ニシテ、
收容所ニ到着スルニシテ、

籍地ニシテ、(昭和三十二年) 一月八日ニシテ、
收容所ニ到着スルニシテ、

方ニシテ、(昭和三十二年) 一月八日ニシテ、
收容所ニ到着スルニシテ、

該地ニシテ、(昭和三十二年) 四月十一日ニ

及ニシテ、(昭和三十二年) 四月十一日ニ

地ニシテ、(昭和三十二年) 四月十一日ニ

五日ニシテ、(昭和三十二年) 四月十一日ニ

一日ニシテ、(昭和三十二年) 四月十一日ニ

分ニシテ、(昭和三十二年) 四月十一日ニ

國者及他階級者無一皆「」ニシテ、

No. 1

Doc 5297

各人が自分ノ生活食事睡眠及荷物等ノ爲ニ雜囊ヲ持ツテ井マシタ。一五平方呎ノ廣サト四呎ノ高サヲ乗ズルト總計二十立方呎ノ面積トナリマス。此ノ全航海中才茶ノ飲物ノ制限ナク大量ニ配給セラルシマシタ。食物ノ非常中ニ之ノウアリマシタ。一日ニ一回ノ食事ヲ各食事ノ約一〇グラム(僅才ニ)ニ重量ノ了然ヲ食ニ約一才スノ野菜ト四分一才スノ鯨ノ肉ヲ食ハシ少量ノ吸物ガ附加サシマシタ。洗濯設備ハ船トアリマセシマシタ。航海中運動ハ非常ニ稀ニ場合ニ制限サレテ我々ノ叫呼ヤ便所ニ行ク時ニ甲板ニ出ルヲ許可サシマシタ。海ノ最後ノ週間ニ停傷ガ罹病シ始メタ時航艦數名ガ一回ニ日本軍ノ河南陸軍少佐ノ直接監督ノ下ニ甲板ニ出ルヲ許可サシマシタ。此ノ日本軍ノ河南陸軍少佐ノ我々ガスズヤヲ差スル前ニ我々ニ生口ヲ申シマシタ。一即チ彼ノ例ニ言葉ヲ使用シテ將來私ノ講君ノ指揮者トナルノ命ハ私ノ身ヲ護ルタメニアリゲト。我々ハ彼ノ言葉ヲ記憶シテ井テ良カシタ。

亦痢ヤ般ノ病氣ガ直ニ發生シタ。或ル朝停傷ノ医者ガ甲板ノ前部ニ罹病停傷ノ行列ヲサセ始メマシタ。日本軍ノ河南陸軍少佐ト「黃色ノ長靴ト澤名サシタ」准尉ガ此ノ罹病者閱兵ニ正堂ニ出席シマシタ。此ノ黃色ノ長靴ハ彼ノ平たい部分ヲ病氣ガト云ハシタ停傷ガ病氣ガト

NO 2

Doc 5297

ト谷(元)は此等、信房ヲ殴打シ行キマシ。斯ニ
ニ手雖病者、闘兵ニ終了シマシ。
9. 生命救助装置、何一ツ信房ニ配給セシカマシ。
防火設備モ無ク、又救命短艇ヲ船中ニアリマシ
テマシ。

10. 一九四三年(昭和十八年)五月一日ニ丁ケボイ十町ニ
到着。該船、船艙カ石油爆弾及軍需品ヲ充滿
シテ北ニテ発見シ、(実ニ該地ニアリマシ)結局
一九四三年(昭和十八年)五月五日ニ和ト六〇五。名
信房、一行ガ北ケ島ニ到着シマシ。我々、非
常ニ激シク熱帯ノ豪雨、中ニ夜上陸シマシ。
丁ケ谷所、僅カ半分バカリ出来上リテ未ダ建築
中ニテトテマシ。

11. 羽朝約五〇%ニ上リ、罹病者、淘汰サレ、余
ノ信房ガ収谷所、建設ヲ完成スルマシ。仕事ヲ
始メマシ。ソレト其、収谷所、地方、棕櫚、
葉ヲ覆ハル竹藪、数棟、小屋カヲ成ラシ
井マシ。最初、四日間、飲ム茶トコロカ水ヲ
モ與ヘラシマシマシ。最初、食事、二十六時間
後ニ支給サシテ、コシハ32オンス(100グラム)、水、木
ノ飯米ヲ作ラシテ井マシ。最初、週間、食物、
カシキマシテアリマシ。我々、其、都度、水、木
ノ飯米カラ出来テ井ル食事ヲ二十四時間毎ニ
回食シマシ。結局附近、川ニ水ヲ見テ
ソレト飲料及料理ニ使用シマシ。此、川、原住民
ガ便所トシテ使用シテ井マシ。誠ニ不潔シマシ。

N03

Doc 5297

14. 收容所に到着し、翌三日目、日本人、日本軍飛行場を建設する主要ナル仕事、明日から開始せしむるに申し出らる。尚、未だ多量の浮屠カラス成ル作業班、夜明けから夕刻迄、交替して作業しむる。浮屠、明瞭三日下迄、也キ理由ニヨリテ激シク労働ニ適スル状態ニ無キト謂フコトヲ浮屠士官達カラ日本軍、粟島中尉(音訳ニ ISHIMA) 指摘しむる。

- (i) 浮屠、粟島當時殆ど全部、者が部分的ニ罹病セシコト。
- (ii) 乗船中、一般的状态——例へば混雑、睡眠不足、運動不足及食物供與が一般的ニ粗悪ナリシコト。
- (iii) 到着以來食物供與が極メテ粗悪ナリシコト。
- (iv) 到着以來濕地及浸水地ニ就寝セシタメ極メテ睡眠、僅少ナリシコト。

是等諸点、全部、日本軍ニ依ツテ無視サレテ習作作業隊ハ仕事ヲ開始シマシタ。當日遅ク收容所發サレタヤ凡テ、浮屠將校多分同様の戦術トシテ森軍曹及粟島中尉ニ依ツテ整列セシメラレテ激シク殴打サレマシタ。

No. 4

16. 最初、約一週間後浮屠中、罹病率が非常ニ高クナツタ、デ(主トシテ赤痢)日本軍、大変當面感ニテ收容所、匍匐テキル全浮屠ニ對シテ兵舎内ニ睡眠用、ふらつとほ一むヲ建築

Doc 5297

スル様ニ命令ニマシタ。多分第八日目ト思ヒマス
が非常ニ多クノ罹病者が出テ全飛行場工作隊
が仕事ヲ中止シテ全停務收容所が病院地區ニ變
化ニマシタ。私ハ森軍曹ノ指揮下ニ在リテ内部作
業隊ヲ引受ケマシタ。ソシテ多少仕事、出来ル
全停務收容所ヲ改良スル仕事ヲヤリマシタ。
此ノ仕事ノ困難ナルハ森軍曹が私ニ自由ニ任セヨ
トシテカクコトナシ。私ハ收容所建設ニハ熟
練家ナリシ故ニ全クノ無知ナリマシタ。

17. 當時ノ便所ハ唯開放式ノ壕デアルノ蠅が無数
ニ繁殖シテ赤痢菌ヲ各人ニ運ビテキマシタ。收
容所ハ直接海邊ノ尖端ニアリマシタ。私ハ現在
ノ衛生設備ハ收容所ニ病氣ヲ蔓延セシメルモノ
デアルカト説明シテ森軍曹ニ資材ヲ貰ヒテ
直接海上ニ便所ヲ造ル許可ヲ得タト要求シ
マシタ。許可ハ拒絶サレマシタ。後ニソレヲ日本
軍醫士官ガ到着シタゲ私ハ重テ要求シ
マシタ。彼ハ十分ニ之ヲ考慮シマシテ次ノ如キ
理由ニ依リテ拒絶シマシタ。即チ赤痢菌ハ海ヲ
不淨ニシテ全世界ニ蔓延スルコトヲ日本ニ到達
スルト。此ノ項收容所内ノ塵埃ハ森軍曹ノ
指揮下敷地開放式穴ノ中ニ処分サレマシタ。テ
此ノ穴ハ全ク蠅ノ發生場トナリテキマシタ。私ハ
森軍曹ニ如何ニコレガ危険デアルカヲ指摘シ

No. 5

Doc 5297

No 6

- テ焼却爐ヲ建造シ該塵埃ヲ焼却スル許可ヲ要求シマシク。コレハ聯合國側飛行機ガ焼却爐カラ出ル煙ヲ発見スルグラタイフ理由テ拒絕サレマシク。
18. 一年有余ノ間ニ收容所テ三百名ノ俘虜ガ死亡シテカク私ハ日本人ニ海上ノ便所ヲ造ラセテ呉ルトタリカネテ申込ミマシク。彼等ハドウシテモ焼却爐建造ノ許可ヲ與ヘテクレマセシテシク。此ノ一年ノ期間中、私ハ繰返シテ此ノ有害ノ開放的ノ壕式便所ヲ改変スルタメニ許可ト資材ヲ呉ルト要求シマシク。該件繰返シテ拒絕サレマシク。所謂「蠅」ナル有害物ヲ征服スル日本軍ノ方策ハ將校ヲ含ム全俘虜ガ一日ニ數百匹ノ蠅ヲ捕ヘテ其ノ捕獲高ヲ夜俘虜中隊長ガ計算スル様ニ命令ヲ出スコトアリマシク。私ハ繰返シテ俘虜醫官ト協力シテ此ノ方法ハ殆ド効力無キコト及ビ衛生施設ニ関シテハ私ノ進言ヲ採用スルコトガ蠅ノ繁殖ヲ防グ方策ナルコトヲ強調シマシク。病狀ガ悪化シ死亡率ガ出高マシテ来タノデ、俘虜醫官ハ再三日本軍ニ對シテ藥品ト良質ノ食物ヲ供給スル様要求シマシク。供給サレタ僅少量ハ絶望的ニ不十分デアリマシク。
19. 當時收容所ノ全俘虜ハ米食一五〇グラム(五オンス)ノ二十四時間定量ヲ生活シテ居リマシク。日本軍ハ明カニ此ノ食事ヲ該罹病者達ハ再び回復シテ元氣ニ成リ、直ニモウ一度飛行場建設ノ助肉重勞

Doc 5.2917

務ヲアルノニ適スルヲラウト考ヘテ居リマシタ。問
モ無ク、殆ド全俘虜ガコノ病氣ノ外ニ脚氣ニ罹リ
マシタ、ソシテ死亡率ガ毎日十四人カラ十五人ノ多
キニ出向リマシタ。此ノ高死亡率ガ數週間續イテカ
ラ日本人ハ次ノ様ニ決断シマシタ——即チ工作隊ハ
病人ヲモ含メテ飛行場建設ヲ續行スベシト。私ハ
或日午後二時ニ最初ノ罹病者整列ヲ目撃シマシタ。
即チコノ整列ニ出席シタノハ罹病者、俘虜醫官、
上級俘虜收容所士官、日本軍々醫、KURISHIMA 森島中尉、
森軍營及効シマシマ等デアリマシタ。
20. 一日本人ハ最初ノ病人ニ前進スル様命ジマシタ。
コノ病人ハ和蘭人デアリマシタ。此ノ日本人ハソレ
カラ何シテコトガ甚痛カト訊ネマシタ。俘虜
醫官ハ此ノ者ハ重症、脚氣ヲ死ト歩行ガ困
難デアルト説明シマシタ。

(右頁ニ續ク)

167

Doc 5297

患者 1 名
 腰部 = 數寸與之此強打之令此病人之約三呎之高
 宙三上之 患者中位置者約五呎之離之所 = 置之又之。此
 病多數日後 = 埋之也。

21. 其ノ様ニテ過ルヲ行キタ。信務長官ノ抗議ニテ之ヲ骨ノ
 折ヲ政打サレタ。コレ上記ノ日本人ノ全員ハ信務ノ罹病者ヲ
 工作隊ニ使用スル人亦テ居多時ニヤノ數多クノ數別ニ典刑ノ實
 例アリタ。

22. 病院ノ状態ハ強ク劣等トシテ甚ク難シ程アリタ。信務長官ノ部員ハ破
 乏ノ令ノ絶望ノ極ニ抗議シテ之ヲ飢餓ノ医薬品ノ完全ニ

抹之ハ存在シタ。罹病ノ信務長官並ニ其部員ニ對シテ
 加シテ ^{KASHIMA} 兩人ニ依テ行ル又層々 ^{KURISHIMA} 栗島中村ニ依テ

援助カ目ヲ教唆サレタ。一般ノ病人ハ重クハ骸骨ノ相ヲ呈シテ
 之ヲ。步行出来又ハ自己歩ル病人ハ海邊ノ行ヲ海棹 物例ハ

蝸牛等ノ如クハ捕獲シテ料理ニ呈シテ中間ノ衰弱者トシテ令ノ加
 害アリタ。他者幸ニ白鼠ト目白鼠ヲ捕獲シテ之ヲ生存セカクニ

充分ノ食物ヲ入手シテ之ヲ試シテ之ヲ絶望ノ仕事アリタ。是等
 捕獲物ヲ全部料理鍋ニ入ルニテ大鍋ニ同様に料理鍋ニ入ルニテ

食シテ之ヲ加入手ヲ食シ大抵收容所ノ全員ノ之ニ收容所ノ調理場
 料理シタ。罹病信務長官ノ野菜ノ極ニ乏シク配給シテ少量ノ餘

分ノ食物ヲ得ルニ十分ノ得等ノ日本人工作隊進ニテ之ヲ十分力ヲ
 出サシメ一生懸命カサレタ。又收容所外ニ時々食物ヲ入手シ

No 8

他方ニカサレタ。例ハ一人ノ口ノ所有品ヲ交換シ ^{林澤曹}
 之ヲ大規模ニ圖ルニ信務長官種品ヲ交換シ居リタ。

例 1-1

工 作 改 正 便 用 人 員 等 之 考 査 手 続 等 之 考 査 手 続

折 入 款 打 出 上 記 人 員 之 考 査 手 続 等 之 考 査 手 続

21. 折 入 款 打 出 上 記 人 員 之 考 査 手 続 等 之 考 査 手 続

折 入 款 打 出 上 記 人 員 之 考 査 手 続 等 之 考 査 手 続

折 入 款 打 出 上 記 人 員 之 考 査 手 続 等 之 考 査 手 続

折 入 款 打 出 上 記 人 員 之 考 査 手 続 等 之 考 査 手 続

折 入 款 打 出 上 記 人 員 之 考 査 手 続 等 之 考 査 手 続

Doc 5297

○ ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

ちのこ = 子 (こ) の ちう = 行 (ちう) の こ = 行 (ちう) の こ

Doc 5297

23. 私は此の牧客所を再建する計画を時 = マリヤか 又上野に中する
私、^{五〇次} 再興費 = マリヤ 予防策の牧客所、外周 = 施又コトノ私許
可及ハ八重島の事ト強調之ヲ 敷キテ、甲込カ 又私ト信儀無官
カウ 愛島中野 = 禁ニナシニシテカ 我々此の牧客所 = 約十五ヶ月生活
又此ニ上ト 執拗 = 拒否セシメテ 此、後テスラモ マリヤ 予防
策ハ我々 不満ニテ 方針行標 = 許可セシテ = 過知セシメテ

24. 該牧客所ニ於テ (毎年度の作業時間) 次ニ述ベルニテ
午前〇時 起床 唸
午前〇時30分 朝食
午前〇時45分 突呼並整理
午前時 - 午後時 作業
午後時 - 全二時 晝食
午後二時 - 全三時30分 信儀全員作業

午後三時30分 - 全四時 全内部牧客所作業隊カ 牧客所、外部
作業者ニシテ 増員セテ 全員ニ刻道牧客所警隊ヲ 統行シテ
斯ルニシテ 信儀ハ 田中宿舎、内部ヲ見テコトモ 又何ラ、娯楽モ
有リセシメテ 附近、川、水浴等モ 嗜ムコトヲ 行ハセリセシメテ

25. 此の牧客所作業ニテ 全期間 - 即チ約十五ヶ月間ニ 我々加得テ 唯一
娯楽ハ 二回、蹴球試合ニ 回、音楽會ハ 三最初、三ヶ月間ニ 限
リ 日曜日、晚教會、禮拜式ヲ 致シテ 之ヲ 如何ニ 種々、
而十字教 他國ニ 普及シ 之ヲ 一九四四年、五月ニ 日本人

97

ハ 我々ニ 一教員ヲ 故國ニ 普及セシメテ 此、時 工業カ 少シク
下ガリニ 併シ 我々今 記憶ヲ 述ベルニ 範圍内ハ 異年、異書、
支那ニ 一教員 (島カ) 出テ 之ヲ 之ノ 百通、千紙ト 述ベ

Doc 5297

「電報」(一九四三年^{昭和十八年})の「時事」ニ記載レリシニ此ノ事蹟ハ記リテ
宗鏡者ヲ元寇ノ事ニシテ

26. 此ノ牧客所成テ他ノ凡テノ場所ト同様ニテモ、手打ヲ政打カ
行ハシメテ事件ノ大部分ハ極クツシメテ隠蔽セ、層々無実ノ罪ヲ
以テ謀ルニシテ

27. 衣服等ハ信物、状態等特ニ信者ニ就テ信實加増ト絶テ珊瑚
島ノ表面ヲ作事シテ、最モ初メノ非常ニ心算トシテ、只、
一面、日本人ノ知識ノ制限ヲ教員ニ配給シテ之ヲ以テ之ニ「金貨券
ニ対シテ全然不十分アリシヲ

(次頁ニ續ク)

Doc 5297

1. 此收容所に最後年迄は存続、全員、如何に種類、履物を用ひて之を
 28. 得、存続が主として栄養不足から眼病に困り半に之を即ち或者、今、首
 上り、或者、半首目上りに之を得、存続、唯生きが為に充分に食物ヲ
 得、之を望むる屋外作業隊上者、働、カ、リ、ト、シ、テ、珊瑚島、表面ヲ照、
 して強烈に太陽、眩光、ク、シ、テ、是等、條件、特、飛行場建設、作
 業、に、悪、ク、シ、テ、我、々、日本人、に、色眼鏡ヲ供給、ス、様、願、ヒ、シ、テ、
 29. 我、々、此、收容所、に、數、週、間、暮、シ、カ、ス、日本人、我、々、一、小店、ヲ、開、業、シ、果
 物、其他、之、に、供給、物、ヲ、購、入、ス、ル、許、可、ヲ、照、字、吳、シ、テ、森、ノ、コ、ロ、に、軍、曹
 が、購、入、物、ト、シ、テ、存、続、將、校、即、ち、英國、陸、軍、航、空、隊、附、の、飛行、將、校
 ル、ボ、ン、/HOBSON、及、コ、ル、ビ、ット、/CORBET、兩、人、ト、シ、テ、販、賣、場、ヲ
 毛、管理、シ、シ、テ、良、く、働、働、シ、テ、切、取、切、符、制、ヲ、是、等、極、限、シ、
 多、量、の、供給、物、ヲ、購、入、ス、ル、許、可、ヲ、得、シ、テ、斯、程、に、稀、人、何、れ、販、賣、シ、
 機、會、ヲ、得、得、シ、テ、私、に、上、掲、氏、名、一、二、搭、客、ヲ、三、次、車、乘、ヲ、知
 2. 即、ち、少、ク、ト、モ、一、月、間、ニ、森、ノ、コ、ロ、に、軍、曹、一、會、計、が、在、リ、
 平、日、一、日、一、範圍、ヲ、離、脱、シ、テ、行、キ、テ、論、議、シ、信、譽、が、我、ら
 へ、注、目、シ、テ、争、又、或、レ、時、酒、保、信、譽、資、金、ヲ、日、本、人、ノ、消費、
 ス、ル、メ、ニ、交、際、シ、テ、生、キ、テ、隊、ノ、配、給、品、ヲ、一、日、中、一、範圍、内、ヲ、
 及、私、人、ト、シ、テ、之、ヲ、販、賣、シ、テ、之、ヲ、販、賣、シ、テ、行、キ、テ、物、語、ノ、趣、意、ヲ、事
 が、之、ヲ、知、シ、テ、之、ヲ、對、面、シ、テ、信、譽、ノ、重、要、働、キ、條、件、ト、シ、テ、本
 會、ノ、信、譽、が、日、二、四、〇、五、ニ、増、加、シ、テ、之、ヲ、
 30. 收容所、及、防空、施設、ニ、関、シ、テ、我、ら、が、線、及、シ、テ、日、本、人、ニ、難、難、所、ヲ、
 獲、テ、之、ヲ、ト、シ、テ、之、ヲ、以、テ、許、可、ヲ、得、ル、ニ、テ、數、々、月、カ、リ、
 1. 此、信、譽、が、防空、施設、ヲ、爾、時、三、搭、客、ヲ、得、ル、ニ、テ、私、人、既、ニ、
 信、譽、ノ、作、業、時間、ヲ、説明、シ、テ、之、ヲ、知、ル、信、譽、が、何、レ、ノ、困、難、ノ、時、カ、リ、

No 11

Doc 5297

明かりを解せ得るが、飛行場、防護壕ニ関シハ多ク、联合国
空軍が附近ヲ作戦シテナクシトモ我々ハ津田ニ設備ガ未ダ
飛行場ニ無設備ナリ居シタ。

31 我々ガ此、收容所ヲ敷キ月々有ニシテハ建物ノ崩壊シ始メテ
日英人ノ森 / MORI / 軍曹、直接指揮、下ニ作業シテ私ニ全收容
所ヲ再建スルヲ許シテ莫シキコトヲ私ハ常勤部隊トシテ半

病人ノ治療ヲ使役シ全收容所ヲ再建シシタ。我々ハ亦僅大ニ地
域ヲ庭園トシタ。是等ノ改良セリ生活條件ノ及園カ、多量ノ
野草木ト共ニ本ニ全收容所ノ健康トシ及又持テ改善シタ。

32 此、收容所ヲ建築スル始メテ五十五名ノ治療ノ中三百十六名ガ
其処テ死シテ埋葬サレシタ。ソレトシテ一九四三年十月、同一
令アリタル名ノ一隊ガ「Java」(帰還スルニ離島トシタ。

ソレガ後ニツテ極少數ノ他、極人部隊ガ「Java」(帰還、
タニ離島トシタ。
33 我ハ比、島ヲ死亡シタ三名ノ治療死原因ニ次ク如キ諸點ニ起
困ルト思フニマシ、即チ

(i) 森 / MORI / 軍曹、重傷ノ後、心ニ定結紮ニ段打、即チ此、者
ハ終始用具ヲ治療ヲ段打スルニ所、小棒、木棒或ハ又端ニ重ノ
厚銅製ニ細ニ付、付ノ煙、廣ノ電制ヲ調節ヲ使用シタ。同方法
ガ亦朝鮮人ノカニアマ / KASAMA / 通譯ニ依ツテ使用サレタ。

(ii) 日本政府ヨリ配給サレ且、西米島中尉 / Kurishima / 及森 / Mori /
軍曹、指令ニ依テ減配ヲ委付サレテ思ハレタ不充足ニ食糧
ニ起因スル栄養失調

(iii) 直チニ此、戰場使新機ヲ建造許シタル日英人ノヨリ拒否、件
及蠅、繁殖、埋藏、防ナシ、及塵埃、燒却許シタル
同拒否、件ヲ

No 12

No 13

Doc 5297

(11) 長瀬 本定 日本人 信濃 三好 之 信 之 一 博 多 的 注 意 正 考 慮 也 其 事 事
 (12) 和 心 心 心 / darakeke / 地 域 三 於 下 全 信 濃 收 容 所 監 理 三 心 心
 三 心 心 / anami / 三 心 心 (目 下 在 佐) 加 是 監 署 三 事 情 三 心 心 三 心 心 三 心 心
 加 心 心 心 三 心 心 三 心 心 / darakeke 收 容 所 職 員 加 事 事
 情 三 心 心 三 事 事 三 心 心 加 心 心 心 心 三 心 心 三 心 心 三 心 心 三 心 心
 三 心 心 三 心 心 三 心 心

- 栗岡中尉 — Kurishima
- 本林 學 士 — Mori
- カニノ子 用 譯 — Kashiama

CX. # 1826

DOCUMENT No. 5298

Page 1.

AFFIDAVIT OF DENIS BRIAN MASON.

I, No 145281 F/O DENIS BRIAN MASON, RAF, at present stationed at Cosford nr. Wolverhampton, and with permanent home address at 15, Chalkpit Terrace, Dorking, make oath and say as follows:-

When I arrived at LAHAT Camp from Amboina town on 18 August 1944 I found that there was no accommodation for my party as the camp was already very badly overcrowded. The Japs took us to some huts on the outskirts of the camp that had been occupied by a Javanese Labour Battalion from Java.

Part of the huts were still occupied by the remainder of the Battalion i.e. their rotting corpses. We had to dispose of these corpses and extend the existing accommodation to make room for the incoming party of British and Dutch POW.

This new part of the camp was now joined to the existing one.

A Jap staff were of course already operating. This was augmented by the addition of Jap Lt. Kurishima. Jap Sgt. Mori, Korean interpreter Kasama and numerous Koreans.

Senior British Officer was Major Gibson, RA/AA.

A few days later Major (now Col.) Anami joined the camp.

Accommodation was shockingly overcrowded, each PW of which there were about four thousand, was lucky to have 12 sq. ft. per man. My party had to lie on the earth floor.

Water was reasonable, being obtained from a spring.

Food was very bad, consisting of never more than 150 grammes of rice a day and nothing else.

Sickness and deaths among the POW still continued at an alarming rate.

Working parties still continued principally loading ships.

No clothing, boots or bedding etc. was issued to us.

No recreation or Church services were allowed. Nor were any letters or Red cross parcels ever received by us while we were there.

Medical supplies were almost unobtainable. The only medical supplies we had, were those scrounged by the POW from the Jap stores whilst loading the ships.

Even the British CC camp and all the PW Officers, including the very sick had to work constructing ARF trenches for the Japanese.

With regard to personalities there was a particularly brutal and cruel Korean named KAMINOKI who was employed in the PW cookhouse. Previously I had been badly beaten by the man at LIANG Camp. He used to take a special delight in maltreating British Officers. I remember two PW Officers in particular, whom he almost killed in this camp. They were F/O Meathrel and F/O J. Reece, now both dead. KAMINOKI was nicknamed "CYCLOPS".

SWORN by the said)
DENIS ERLAN MASON)
at 6 Spring Gardens in) D.B. MASON
the City of Westminster)
this 8th day of February, 1946.)

BEFORE ME

(Signed) A.L. Bell Macdonald,
Major,
Legal Staff,
Office of the Judge Advocate General,
London.

5298-1

口 供 書

自分ハ英皇陸軍ノ第一四五二八番、飛行士官ノ「^(F/O)
DENIS」^(A. H. DENIS)トイフ。メ「^(A. H. DENIS)ソノ「^(A. H. DENIS)アル。現在ハ「^(A. H. DENIS)ウ
^(A. H. DENIS)カ「^(A. H. DENIS)バ「^(A. H. DENIS)ブ「^(A. H. DENIS)ソ「^(A. H. DENIS)ノ「^(A. H. DENIS)コ「^(A. H. DENIS)ス「^(A. H. DENIS)ア「^(A. H. DENIS)ド」ニ
居リ本籍地ハ「^(A. H. DENIS)ノ「^(A. H. DENIS)チ「^(A. H. DENIS)ヨ「^(A. H. DENIS)ク「^(A. H. DENIS)ピ「^(A. H. DENIS)ット。
テ「^(A. H. DENIS)ラ「^(A. H. DENIS)ス「^(A. H. DENIS)十五番地ニアル

自分ハ直覺シテ次ノコトヲ述ベル
自分ガ一九四四年八月十八日「^(A. H. DENIS)ア「^(A. H. DENIS)ン「^(A. H. DENIS)ボ「^(A. H. DENIS)イ「^(A. H. DENIS)ナ」ノ町カ
ラ「^(A. H. DENIS)ラ「^(A. H. DENIS)ハ「^(A. H. DENIS)ツ「^(A. H. DENIS)ト」ニ着イタ時収容所ハ既に悉ク充満
シテ居リ自分等一行ノ宿所ハナカツタ。日本人ハ我
タラ収容所ノ奥ニアル小舎ニ避レテ行ツタ。其後ハ
「^(A. H. DENIS)ヂ「^(A. H. DENIS)ヤ「^(A. H. DENIS)バ」カラ來タ「^(A. H. DENIS)ジ「^(A. H. DENIS)ヤ「^(A. H. DENIS)バ」労働者隊ノ屋々後テ
アツタ。

其小舎ノ一部ニハ僑長部隊ノ要醫者ガ居住シテ居タ、
即チ彼等ノ腐敗シタ死骸ガ取サレテ居タ。我々ハ此
等ノ死骸ヲ處分シ、又彼等ノ英皇ヤ和蘭ノ俘虜ノ部
隊ノ爲ノ場所ヲ作ル爲、現存ノ宿舎ヲ強強シナケレ
バナラナカツタ。此新設ノ部分ハ収容所ノ、既存ノ
部分ニ連接サンタ。

宿舎ハヒトク運搬員デアツタ。約四千人ノ等應ハ各
人十二平方フットノ場所ヲ得レバ幸運デアツタ。
自分等ノ隊ハ土壁ノ上ニ寝ナケレバナラナカツタ。
水ハ其カラ取ツタノテヨカツタ。

5298-2

食糧ハ僅クビドカツタ。何時モ一日米百五十グラム以上ハナカツタ、其ノ他ニハ何モナカツタ。停務ノ間ニハ病氣ト死亡ガ幾クベキ率ヲ繼續シタ。醫術スル際ハナホ銀キ、主ニ船ノ娯樂ノ禮送ヲアツタ。

衣服、靴、器具等ハ我々ニ給與サレナカツタ。娯樂、教會ノ禮拜等ハ許サレナカツタ。

又、其所三層ル間、我々ハ一腰モ手紙ヤ赤十字ノ小包ヲ受取ツタ事ハナカツタ。

藥品ハ殆ド手ニ入ラナカツタ。我々ノ唯一ノ藥品給與ハ船ノ積荷ノ際ニ停務ガ日本ノ倉庫カラ盗ミ取ツテクルモノダツタ。

重病人マテモ含ム續テノ停務士官、英國ノ指揮官サヘ日本人屋ノ防空機機ノ仕事ヲツナケレバナラナカツタ。

人物ニ付テハ停務ノ料理場ノ使用人ノ「カミノカ」ト云フ朝鮮人ガ特別敬重ヲアツタ。曾テ自分ハ「リアングー」ノ收容所ニ於テ彼ニビドク打ケレタコトガアル。彼ハ倅ニ美態ノ士官ヲ虐待スルコトニ喜ビラ感ジテキタ。自分ハ此ノ收容所ヲ彼ガ殆ド殺シタ二人ノ停務士官ヲ特別に記述シテキル。彼等ハ飛行士官「(F)イムアール」ト飛行士官「(F)エドワーズ」ト「(X)ポプ」ト「(X)ロ」ト稱名サレテ居タ。

Cy. # 1827

Evidentiary Document No. 5299.

Page No. 1.

IN THE MATTER OF JAPANESE WAR CRIMES
AND THE GENERAL ILL-TREATMENT OF
PRISONERS OF WAR AT LIANG CAMP ON
AMBON ISLAND, MALUCCAS, FROM 3 May,
1943, TILL OCTOBER, 1944.

I, No. 1295339 LAC HENRY KITTINGHAM, Royal Air Force, with permanent home address at Glatten Road, Sawtry, Huntingdonshire, make oath and say as follows:-

1. I was taken prisoner in Java in February, 1942. I stayed there for some months. In late April, 1943, a large draft of us collected at Sourabaya to go over to Liang on Ambon Island. We arrived there on 3 May, 1943. This group of Prisoners of War numbered somewhat over one thousand and was commanded by Major L. N. Gibson, R.A. Major Gibson was in charge of this group of Prisoners of War all the time he was there.

2. We actually disembarked at Ambon town and had to march two days to reach Liang. The conditions on this march were very bad. Men were constantly dropping out through the heat and lack of food. In fact even some of the Japanese guards were dropping out. Those who did so were beaten up and belaboured with bamboo poles, rifle butts and such like to make them get on. If they could not move they were just left lying by the side of the road and were picked up later on. We suffered terribly from thirst those two days and a good many people drank the dirty village water which resulted in a severe outbreak of dysentery at Liang Camp later on.

3. Accommodation at Liang was very bad when we first arrived. There was one barracks which could accommodate about 60 men. For the rest there were only leaky tents, which kept the sun off but that is all that could be said for them.

4. Our work at this camp was constructing an aerodrome. It was very heavy work and involved dragging logs about and clearing virgin jungle to make dispersal bays and runways. Our food was just pig-swill. It consisted of burned rice and vegetables and very occasionally we had a little meat. A sample day's menu would be first thing in the morning rice pap which was rice boiled up into a porridge-like consistency, at midday a handful of rice and some vegetables or rice soup and at night another handful of rice and some more vegetables. We usually got slightly more vegetables at night. The quality of the food improved a little as soon as we took over the management of our own kitchen but the quantity of the food was always insufficient. Sometimes we were able to get local produce from the Island, bought in the camp shop. I believe several people died of malnutrition during the time that we were on this island. As far as I am concerned my eye-sight which before the war was

perfectly all right has been seriously affected as a result of lack of the necessary vitamins.

5. Medical supplies I know were in very short supply although as far as I am concerned when I went into hospital with tropical ulcers I was given some yellow powder which did me a lot of good. The medical staff at the camp hospital was a mixed Dutch and British what might be called a Field Ambulance Unit. There was, I believe, a Japanese medical officer called Lieutenant SHAMADA but he never did anything to help us.

6. As regards our treatment when we were at work all the guards with very few exceptions treated us with the usual brutality and we were constantly being beaten with bamboos, pick-shafts and rifle butts. A guard I can remember who was particularly brutal was the Corporal in charge of the construction of the aerodrome. I cannot remember his name but would remember him if I saw a photograph of him. He treated us particularly badly and was always very brutal with the light duty party which consisted of the hospital cases who were getting better. Another guard called "Blueshirt" and another called "Donald Duck" were also, I remember, particularly brutal to us and took a delight in beating people whenever they could.

7. I remember the Champion incident quite well. I did not see the beginning of it as I was working on Major Gibson's Staff in the Japanese Camp office but I saw Champion carried in on a stretcher and I saw Major Anami and Major Gibson arguing together over him. Later I saw Champion tied to a post inside the guard room. He stayed there all that night till the following morning. On the following morning I saw him being put in the back of a lorry with a rope round his neck like a halter, and picks and shovels were thrown into the lorry with him. Various camp guards and Lieutenant Oida, who was then the camp Commandant, went with Champion on the lorry. They had been gone about quarter of an hour when I heard a rifle shot. Then the lorry was back again inside another 15 minutes. Champion was not in the lorry then and I never saw him again. While I was in the office some days later one of the Japanese orderlies came up and told me to fill in the casualty book that Champion had died of dysentery at Ambon.

8. Another incident I witnessed was when Sergeant Major SATU (whose nickname was "Yellow Boots") who was in charge of the camp guards beat up Pilot Officer IVES. Satu was a lunatic in the exact sense of the word as whenever the moon was new or full he became almost insane. We always expected trouble from Satu at those times. On this particular occasion Pilot Officer Ives was in charge of a working party in one of the dispersal bays on the aerodrome. Satu came up to Ives and said that we were not working fast enough. Then, in order to show off

to the various Japanese Guards who were watching, he ordered Ives to help him carry a long pole with six baskets of earth slung from it. Satu was a very powerful man, whereas Ives was not very strong owing to lack of food and privations generally. Even so a load of six baskets of earth was practically impossible. Eventually the two of them managed a load of four and Satu got much amusement out of watching Ives stagger with this enormous load. Satu ordered him to do it again. Ives refused and then Satu went completely mad. First of all he thrashed him with bamboo poles and broke a number on him. Then he ordered the guards to bind Ives' hands behind his back. Then he got hold of some cocconut tree roots which are long whippy brown tendrils like boot laces. With these he slashed Ives across the face a great many times. Finally he asked the guards to bring his sword and we thought that Ives was going to be murdered. However, the guards were not able to find the sword and Satu contented himself with knocking Ives out by punching him in the face and stomach. That closed the incident.

9. The Japanese Camp Commandant after Lieutenant Ouida was Lieutenant SHIOZAWA whom we thought at first was going to be a reasonable man but he turned out to be uncooperative and brutal to us in every way he could. He used to egg on the guards to make us work harder and use any methods they liked to do so. He used to make us work on our half days off building camp roads and such like. The commander of all Prisoners of War on the Island Group was a man called Major ANAMI. He was a thoroughly unpleasant man and I regard him as being responsible for all our privations on the Island. Furthermore he did not consider it beneath him to go in amongst one of our working parties and beat up people with his sword scabbard as an example to his junior officers.

10. In October, 1944, I left the Island with a draft of about six hundred to go back to Java. Captain Bently-Taylor was in charge of our particular draft. We were crammed into a small coast vessel and conditions on board this ship were appalling. There was no lying room. We used to have to sit in each others laps in order to make room for the really sick cases. I was acting as a medical orderly during the voyage and for the first seven days and nights I hardly had any sleep at all trying to clean up the sick and to make them as comfortable as possible. It is almost impossible to imagine the conditions. The food was putrid and there was very little of it. We were allowed a third of a pint of water a day to drink and we had to use salt water for washing and cleaning people up. We very often weren't allowed to have salt water. The hold where many of us existed were battened down all the voyage except for a few planks which were taken off at night. Many of the Prisoners of War were just skin and bone. When they tried to sit up their bones almost stuck through their skin. Many of them had no clothes as they had all been up with dysentery and the dirt on board the ship. There

were millions of lice and we all suffered acutely from them. What with the lice and the flies and dysentery stools all over the place it was a miracle to me that we did not have a serious epidemic. We were on board about a month and during that time only 28 people died. When we arrived at Sourabaya Sergeant Major Satu (Yellow Boots) and Major Anami met us. I consider Major Anami personally responsible for conditions on this voyage. In all fairness I cannot blame the Japanese Sergeant who was O.C. ship. He was a medical Sergeant and did what little he could to help us. For example when we called at Macassar he got us some vegetables.

11. We never at any time on Ambon Island got any Red Cross supplies. A few of us got an occasional letter.

SWORN by the said HENRY KITTERINGHAM)
at 6, Spring Gardens, in the City)
of Westminster, this day)
of 1945.) (Sgd) H. KITTERINGHAM

BEFORE ME

(Sgd) M. BELL MACDONALD, Major
Legal Staff.

I certify that this is a true copy of the original affidavit.

(Sgd) Illegible Major
Legal Staff
Office of the Judge Advocate General.

證據目録加五三九号

一九四三年五月三日より、一九四四年十月二日之間、アムステルダム、アムステルダム、アムステルダム（Amsterdam）收容所ニ於ケル日本兵戦争犯罪並ニ俘虏ニ対スル一般虐待行為ニ関スル件。

5299

私トヤニ九五三三九号 空軍上等兵 集・ギブリン・キツタリガ公
英空軍所属、本籍 ハンニグドニア、キウトリ・クワント
ノ通、ハ宣誓ヲナシ左記、如ク陳述シマス。

一、一九四三年二月、私、シヤロデ俘虏トナリマシタ。
其ノ處ニ数ヶ月居リマシタ。一九四三年四月下旬、吾々、
大分遣隊ハ、アムステルダムノリヤグニ送ル為メスラバヤ
集合シマシタ。其ノ處ニ到着シタハ、一九四三年五月
三日デシタ。コノ俘虏、集団ハ、オホキ十人以上デ
L.N.ギブリン英空軍少佐ニ依ツテ指揮サレシタ。
ギブリン少佐ハ役ガ此處ニ居タ間中、コノ俘虏、集
団ヲ受持タマシタ。

No 1.

二、吾々ハ實際ニアムステルダム、町デ下船シ、ソクラ、リヤ
クニ着ク迄、三日間行軍シタテマシタ。

5299

證據書目録カ五三九号

一九四三年五月三日ヨリ、一九四四年十月ニ至ル間、
アボニ島、リアング(Liango) 收容所ニ於ケル日本兵
等犯罪並ニ俘虏ニ対スル一般虐待行為ニ関スル件。

私トヤニ九五三三九号 空軍上等兵
英空軍所屬、本籍 ハンガリー、
通、ハ宣誓ヲナシ左記、如ク陳述シマス。

一、一九四二年二月、私、
其處ニ数ヶ月居リマス。一九四三年四月下旬、
大分遣隊ハ、アボニ島ノリアングニ渡ル為メスラバ
集合シタ。某處ニ到着シタハ、一九四三年五月
三日デシタ。コノ俘虏、集団ハ、
L.N. ギブリン 英空軍少佐ニ依ツテ指揮サレタ。
ギブリン少佐ハ役ガ此處ニ居タ間中、
団ヲ受持タマス。

二、吾々ハ實際ニアボニ、
シテ着ク迄ニ日間行軍シタ。

No 1.

5299

此、行軍中、状態ハ非常ニ悪クアリシタ。人々ハ暑サヤ、食量不足、為、次々ニ落伍シテ行キマシタ。

實際幾人カ、日本監視兵等へ落伍シテマシタ。

落伍シテ着達ハ竹、構ヤ、小銃、台尻ヤ、ソレニ類スルモノデ立上リセル為ニ、ソコボク改メマシタ。

モ、彼等カ動クニ出テ来テマシタ。路傍ニ腐タメテ置云リニナル後テ拾ハラシタ。ソ、二日ハ過、為メボク指サセ非常。

多勢、着ハマシ村、水ヲ飲ミマシタ。ソ、多後ニツテ、リヤガ收容所ニ於テ、モ、毒イ赤痢ガ發生シマシタ。

三、最初吾々が着イタトキ、リヤガ、收容設備ハ非常ニ悪クアリマシタ。約六十名ヲ收容スルニトガ出来一棟ハバツクガアリマシタ。アトハ唯、雨漏、スルテ、下ガ若干アリタ。日除ニマシタ。併シ、彼等ニ対スル施設トシテ、是レガ凡テ、モ、デアマシタ。

四、コ、收容所ニ於ケル吾々、仕事ハ飛行場ヲ建設スルニトマシタ。

No 2.

ソレハ非常ニ重労働デ、アキラウカラニ分散格調庫下滑走路ヲ作ルマシ、丸太ヲ搬送シ、處々林ヲ伐採マシタ。

リスル事ヲ念フニ年ニシタ。吾々、食糧ハ寸度極、飼料ニモ等
イテ残り汁、椀ヲ物デシタ。ソレハ、昼ケタ飯ト野菜デ極ク節
ニサレバカリ、肉ヲモロヒシタ。

5299

日々、衛生ノ一例トシテ、大抵朝、最初、モハ粥、椀ヲ濃
ニ米ヲ煮テ流動食、晝ハ一杯、飯ト若干、野菜或ハ粥汁、
夜ハモロ一握リ、飯ト若干モイ野菜デシタ。吾々ハ普通
夜ニハ、ホソクツシ餘計ト野菜ヲモロヒシタ。吾々が吾々自身
ノ意欲所、管理ヲ引受ケタトモニ、食事ノ質ハ少ク、改
善サレシタガ、ソノ量ハ常ニ不充分デナリシタ。

時々、吾々ハ、ソノ島、物産ヲ收容所、賣店デ買合年ニ各
ノトガ出来シタ。吾々が、此ノ島ニ居ル間ニ、数知ノ者が深
養失調、為ニ死スルト信ジス。私ノ関スル限リ、戦兵ニ
完全ニ良クツタ視カガ必要ヲ、ウイタニ、不足ノ結果
トク害サレシタ。

No.3

五、私ノ関スル限リ 私が熱帯腫物ヲ入院シタ時、
私ハ或ル憂色、不穏ヲ示シ、ソレハ大變効果ガナリシタ。
併シ私ガ知子中心知子ハ、医療ノ供給ハ非常ニ不足シタ。
收容所病院、医務科職員トシテハ野戦救後班ト

5299

No 4.

「毛、稱スニキ、蘭夷混血人志人が多ク。シヤニシテ尉官ト呼
バシタ日本軍医が一人多ク答ト思フテス。が役ハ、何ニモ吾々、
助ニル様ト事ハシセデシタ。

六、吾々が働クヤタ時、吾々ニ対スル待遇ニ因テハ極ク
少クテ例外ハアリマシタ。殆布凡テ、監視兵ハ例、橋ト
殘虐性ヲ以ツテ、吾々ヲ取扱ヒ、吾々ハ絶エテ竹十尖
ツク橋ヤ小銃、台座テ改メテ居リシタ。

私ガ橋ニ居ル特別ニ亂暴テアリシタ人、監視兵ハ
飛行場建設、任ニテツタ、但長テアリシタ。

私ハ役、私ガヲ思ヒ出セシマシガ、モシ役、寫真ヲ見タラ思
ヒ出セルダラウト思ヒマス。役ハ吾々ヲ特別ニ扱ヒ、良ク
ナリツツアル病院患看厚、輕勞働班ニ對シ、何時モ非
常ニ亂暴テアリシタ。苛シカリト云ハラナク他、監視兵
及ビ今一人トナルド、名クト云ハラナクモ、此ニ人ハ我々
對シ、特ニ亂暴テ、機会ハ、アル人ヲ改メル事ニ、快感ヲ
得ラナク様ニ、私ハ記憶シキル。

七、私ハヤゴロヨロ事件、ヨ良ク憶テ居ラス。
私ハ昇奉、收容所事務所ヲギブリンツウ佐、本部

5299

二働イテ中ニシタケリノ事件、始メ見マセデシタガ、ケヤ公ヨ
 カ擔架ヲ運バシテ来ルノヲ見マセリシテ、アテ、主任ト
 キイブソ、ケヤ任カ役エウイテ識諭シテ中々見マセタ。後テ
 ケヤ公ヨニガ監視室、内ノ櫃ニ預ラシテ居ルヲ見マセタ。
 彼ハ、三理ヲ朝迄、一役中、居リマセタ。翌朝、改道案
 一様ニ廻リ着ニ卷附ケタ役ガ貨物自動車、後ニ
 来セシテカルヲ見マセタ。ソシテ、鶴崎ヤ、シヤベルカ役、
 一諸ノ貨物自動車、中ニ投入マシマセタ。多勢ノ收
 容所監視矢ト当時收容所、指揮官ヲツクオウカ
 尉官ハ貨物自動車ニ乗ッテ、ケヤ公ヨニト一諸ニ行キマ
 シタ。役等ガ二五分位行ツタ頃、私ハ小銃、音ヲ聞キ
 マセタ。ソレカ又十五分間、中ニ貨物自動車が歸ッテ来
 マセタ。ソレ時ハケヤ公ヨニハ貨物自動車、中ニ居リマセマ
 シタ。ソシテ私ハ再ビ彼ヲ見マセデシタ。數日後、私ガ事
 務所ニ居タ時、病院、日本人職員、一人ガヤシテ来テ、
 ケヤ公ヨニハアテシテ、赤痢、為、死亡シタト、事故記録
 書ニ書キ以公儀ニト、私ニ告ゲマシタ。

405

八、私ガ目撃シタ、モウソ、事件ハ收容所、監視室

5299

、受持デアルヲ特務曹長サツ(SATU)(役、渾如八庚
 色、靴、デアル)ガ飛行将校イヴス(IVES)ヲ改メ
 時デアリス。サツハ、正確ナ意味デ、狂人デアリマシト云
 へ、八月ガ新月ニ、ツツリ、満月ニ、ツツリス時ハ、何時モ殆
 ホ気が狂ラシト云ミタ。コト様ナ時ニハ、何時モサツカラ、
 災難ヲ予期シ居リマシタ。コト特別、場合ニ就テ申シ
 スト飛行将校イヴスハ、飛行場、ハ、散格弼摩、ソデ
 働ク組ヲ受持タマシタ。サツハ、イヴス、一處ヘツツラ来テ、
 吾々が仕事ヲ充分急イデ、イナイト云ヒマシタ。

ソカラ、見テマタ多勢、日本、監視矢ニ見ユル迄ニ、彼ハ
 イヴスニ、エ、エ、ハツタ籠、ブラドツテヤル棒ヲ彼ガ運
 ブコト傳、様ニ命ジマシタ。サツハ、大受カ、アル男
 ラシタガ、之ニ及レ、イヴスハ、食事不足、一般的ニ不自由、
 為、大テ又来テハ、アリモイデシタ。ト云へ、二人ハ、
 籠ハ到底不可能デアリマシタ。家ニ彼等、二人ハ、思、
 物ヲ片付ケマシタ。ソレテ、サツハ、此、非常ニ重イ荷物、
 為、イヴスが、ヨヒタク、ヲ見テ大層喜ビマシタ。サツハ、
 馬一匹ヤル様ニ、役ニ命ジマシタ。イヴスハ、拒絶シマシタ。サツハ、

No 6

5299

完全ニ狂ツテ去リシタ。先ヅ最初ニ彼ハ竹ノ棒ヲ以テ糸
幾ツモ傷ヲツケシタ。ソレカラ監視達ニイダシ、両方、方ヲ
後手ニ導ル様ニ命ジシタ。彼ハ鞆紐、橋ノ長ノ鞭、橋ノ
褐色ノ蔓ヲ取ル。三ツ、木ノ根ヲ幾本カラ手ニ取リ、何處ニ何處
モイダシ、顔ヲ縦横ニヒッパキマシタ。路ニ監視達ニ彼ノ劍ヲ
持ツテ来テ、各様ニ頼ミマシタラス。吾々ハイダシガ殺サル
タト思ヒシタ。ソレニ監視ハ劍ヲ見附ケルコトが出来シニ
シタ。サレバ、イダシ、顔ヲ胃ヲ段ツテ、彼ヲ打テ倒シ
トテ満足シシタ。ソレヲ、三事件ニ終末ヲ告ゲシタ。

九、オウイダ尉官、後任、日本、收容所指揮官ハ、オウイダ
尉官ヲアリマシタ。最初、吾々ハ彼ハワケ、解ツタ人ニナリシタ
ト思ヒシタガ、ガレト変リテ、彼が出来ルニテ元方法ヲ吾々對
シ、非協力的ニシテ、荒々シクアリマシタ。彼ハヨク監視達ヲ煽動
シ、吾々ヲ、一層ニシク働カセ、又彼等が好ムヤリヲナシテ
用ヒシタ。彼ハ吾々、半日、日ニ收容所、道ヲ造ツタソレヲ
橋ノ事ヲ辱々働カセシタ。ソレ、群島、俘虜全体ニ對シ、司令
官ハ、アサヒサ佐ト呼バルルウダアリマシタ。彼ハ徹底的ニ不協
快トナリ、私ハ三島ガ島ニ於ケル吾々、不自由ニ對シ、入テ、善任

No. 7

5299

No 8

カルと思ヒマス。オマケ。彼、吾々、働キ先祖、一ツ二人ツキキ
下級將校達ニ手本ヲ示シ、彼、劍鞘ニ人々ヲ改ム事
ヲ彼ヨリ下、事々トと思ヒセシメタ。

十一、十四年十月ニ私、約不自由程、分遣隊ト一隊ニ兵
ニ歸ル為ニ、コ島ヲ去リシタ。

ベトリ・テラー大尉ハ吾々、特別分遣隊、受持アリシタ。
吾々ハ小舟沿海船ニ詰ルニシテ、船、状態ハ驚ク事
モアリシタ。横ニル空間モナリシタ。吾々ハヨリ事病人
為ニ空間ヲヨシル物、オカ、膝、ニ生クオハナラズトガ履キ
アリシタ。私ハ航海中、医務班員トシテ働キシタ。ヨリ最
初、一週間、間、晝夜病人ヲ清潔ニシテ、又出来ルタケ
必地ヨシタル様ニ試シ、殆ホ一睡モナシシタ。状態ヲ
想像ス事モ殆ホ不能ス。食物ハ僅クアリ。又非常
ニ少量方アリシタ。吾々ハ五分、一パイト、水ヲ飲
ムコトヲ許セシタ。ヨリ洗濯タリ、軀ヲ洗ハタリスルハ
塩水ヲ使ハネバリシタ。塩水ヲ採ルコトガ許セラルモ非常
ニ稀シタ。吾々、多クガ居タ船艙ハ航海中固クハツテ鎖
サレタリ。例外トシテ、夜が夜取除ニシタ。停務多

5299

八、本当ニ骨ト皮トス。生ラウトスル、骨ガ皮膚ニツキサ、様
 々感ズ。彼等、多く、着物ヲ、一枚モ持ツテ居リマシタ。故
 ナラ、着物、赤痢、船ニ、塵ヲ、スリ、ゴキヤ
 ナリニツテマシタ。虫ガ、何百ト居リ、吾々全部ガ、為
 ビク惱マシタ。鼠、蠅、アリ、一面、赤痢、大便ガ、
 多ク、吾々ガ、大々傳染病ニ懼ラカッタ。秘トシテ
 奔蹟デアリタ。吾々、約一月船ニ乗リ、期間中、二名
 十八名カ、死ニマシタ。

スルヤニ着ク時、カツ特務曹長(黄色、靴)トア
 シ、吾々ニ會ヒタ。私ハ、子ニ、少佐ハ、如、航海、状態
 ニ対シ、彼、自身直接責任ガアルト思ヒタ。

今、公平ニ見テ、輸送船、責任者、ソコ日本、軍曹ヲ
 批難スコトガ出来タ。彼ハ、医務軍曹、イカニ、サナニ、
 吾々ヲ助ケルコト、出来タコト、シラセマシタ。例ヘバ、吾々ガ、クルル
 一、寄港時、彼ハ、吾々ニ、若干、野菜ヲ、クマシタ。

十一、吾々ハ、アノ島ニ居タ時、一、名、赤十字、配給ヲ得
 タ。吾々、數知カ時、名、手紙ヲ得タ。

No 9

5299

八、本島ニ骨ト皮デシタ。生ラフトスル、骨ガ皮膚ニツキサ、様
 感じデシタ。彼等、多く、着物ヲ、一枚モ持ッテ居リマシタ。
 所故ナラ、着物、赤痢ヲ、船ニ、塵テ、スルコトヤ
 タラシニツテマシタ。虱ガ何百ト居リ、吾々全部ガ、為
 ドウ惱マシタ。虱ヤ蠅ヤ、アタリ一面、赤痢、大便ガ、
 多モカス。吾々が大多傳染病ニ懼ラタツコト、必トテ
 奔蹟デアリシタ。吾々ハ約一月船ニ乗リ、期間中、多
 クハ知カ、死ニマシタ。

スルヤニ着ク時、カツ特務曹長(黄色、靴)トア、
 シ佐ガ吾々ニ會ヒシタ。私ハア、ア、ア、性ハ如、航海、状態
 ニ対シ、彼レ自身直接責任ガアルト思ヒヌ。

今、公平ニ見テ、輸送船、責任者デラシク日本、軍曹ヲ
 批難スコトガ出来ヌ。彼ハ、医務軍曹デ、イカニ小サニシテ、
 吾々ヲ助ケルコト、出来タコトヲラシメシタ。例ハ、吾々がマクニル
 空港時、彼ハ吾々ニ吾平、野菜ヲクシタ。

十一、吾々ハア、ホ、島ニ居多時、一言タリト、赤十字、配給ヲ得
 多トハシマシタ。吾々、数知カ時、手紙ヲ得ヌ。

No 9

Ex. # 1828

DOCUMENT NO. 5300

PAGE 1

WAR CRIMES - AMBON

DOCUMENT 'G'

I VX 108282 Capt. J. H. Smith, Military History Sec. A.M.F.

make oath and say

1. I am an officer of the Australian Military Forces.
2. Annexed hereto and marked Exhibit "A" is a true extract from the War Dairy of 2/5 Aust. Gen. Hospital which I have in my possession in the course of my duties.
3. The original cannot be made available.

Sworn before me at Melbourne)
This 20th day of May 1946)/s/ J. Smith, Capt.

/s/ M. Baehlan, Capt.
An Officer of the
Australian Military Forces

EXHIBIT AExtract of War Diary of 2/5 Aust Gen Hospital
12 Sep 1945

<u>Place</u>	<u>Date</u>	<u>Extract of Summary of Events and Information.</u>
MOROTAI	12 Sep	64 Australian and 7 Dutch Recovered Prisoners of War were received from Ambona. Included in this number were 38 stretcher cases. The patients were in a very weak and emaciated condition and were all suffering from malnutrition, a number being severely ill. One patient died early in the morning of 13.9.45. Bed state at midnight 1020 equipped, 572 occupied 448 vacant.

Signed A. J. Murray Colonel
Commanding 2/5 Aust Gen Hospital.

This is the extract marked Exhibit A from the War Diary of the 2/5 Aust Gen Hospital referred to in the declaration made by VX106282 Capt. J. H. Smith dated 20 May 1946.

/s/ M. Baehlan, Capt.

/s/ J. Smith, Capt.

Ex 1828A

5300

一九四五年 / 昭和二十年 / 九月十二日 ^{2/5} オースト

ワリヤ衛戍病院ノ臨時日記ヨリノ抜萃

揚 所 モロタイ
日 付 九月十二日
事件情法大略ノ抜萃

アムボイナヨリ六四人ノオーストワリヤ人及七人ノ和蘭人存身ガ送還サレタ。此ノ中、三十八人ハ送還必要者デアツタ。患者ハ瘧疾ヲ患ヘタ。其ノシキツタ状態ヲ築養博害ヲ起シテ居リ、若干ノ人々ハ非常ニ弱リキツテ居タ。一患者ハ一九四五年、昭和二十年、九月十三日早朝死亡シタ。

本園ノベッド使用状態ハ設備ベッド千二十ノ中、使用三七二、空四八デアル。

署名 ^{2/5} オーストワリヤ衛戍病院監督

監署大佐 ~~2/5~~ エイジエイマレイ。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 364

Ex. # 1829

Evidentiary Document No. 5399.

Page 1.

WAR CRIMES - ALBON DOCUMENT "H"

I, SX10334 Capt. Douglas McBAIN of DPW&I A.H.Q. make oath and say

1. I am an officer of the Australian Military Forces.
2. Annexed hereto and marked Exhibit C is a copy of the Report on Recovered PWs ex Amboina by O.C. Medical Div 2/5 A.G.H. which I have in my possession in the course of my duties.
3. The original cannot be made available.

Sworn before me at Melbourne)
this 20th day of May, 1946.) (Signed) DOUGLAS McBAIN

(Signed) M. Lachlan Capt.
An Officer of the Australian
Military Forces.

COPY OF REPORT BY LT-COL M. L. POWELL ON PW EX AMBOINA.
EXHIBIT "C"

D.D.G.M.S.,
ADV LHQ

2/5 Aust. Gen Hosp.
14 Sept. 45.
Ref:

REPORT ON RECOVERED P.Ws. Ex AMBOINA.

The outstanding impressions of these 65 men over the first 48 hours observation are as follows:-

1. 15 were extremely emaciated, hollow-eyed, pallid had swollen abdomens and ankles and extensive ulceration in inferior extremities. This group was strongly reminiscent of Belsen and one, shockingly wasted, died without regaining full consciousness. Four others of this group are giving concern and are not out of danger.
2. A large group of about 45 were a fairly homogeneous collection exhibiting various stages of malnutrition, beri-beri, tropical ulcers and anaemia. Some of this group had been able to bear their weight and walk with assistance in the prison camp and on the naval vessels which brought them to Morctai.
3. The remainder, some 6 to 8, were in quite good condition apart from obvious loss of weight.

4. Their mental condition is surprisingly good, intense relief is predominant, coupled with a certain excitation expressed by a desire to talk volubly to all listeners of their experiences. This phase is giving way in a very small number to a temporary depression of spirit and occasionally tears.

Morale is high and they all bear the imprint of doggedness and resource without which they were lost.

It is singularly moving to see a grossly emaciated man weighing about 4½ stone quite philosophically arranging his head more comfortably on his pillow by the simple expedient of grasping his forelock with a thin wasted hand and moving by this means his head into the desired position.

5, In regard to specificity of diagnosis investigations are incomplete. At present it is apparent that the following conditions will be identified.

- a. Beri Beri, wet and dry with gross hypo-proteinaemia, haemodilution anaemia (mainly macroscopic) and varying degrees of cardiac decompensation. Tendon reflexes are absent in about 80%.
- b. Malaria will appear in a high percentage, pyrexia with positive blood films are already in evidence.
- c. Hook-worm, ascaris and strongyloides infestation will be heavy. No specific bacillary pathogen has been isolated. No amoebic infestation has been identified as yet.
- d. There is one case suggestive of sprue.
- e. There is evidence of residual pigmentation of pellagra in three cases.
- f. Scurvy is conspicuous by its absence.
- g. Visual impairment is present in 6 cases. Its cause as yet uncertain.
- h. The post-mortem on the fatal case showed bilateral basal pneumonic consolidation in addition to extreme emaciation.

This is the report, marked (Signed) M. L. POWELL Lt.Col
Exhibit "C", by Lt.-Col M.L.Powell O.C.Medical Division
2/5 Aust.Gen Hospital dated 14th Sept, 1945, 2/5 Aust. Gen Hosp.
referred to in the declaration of Capt.
Douglas McBain dated 20th May, 1946.

(Signed) M. LACHLAN Capt.

Doc 5399

證探書類番號第五三九九號

／戦争犯罪—アンボン／ALBON /文書「H」／

私即チ軍司令部 D P W & I ノ陸軍大尉 (S X 一
 ○三三四) ダグラス・マクベイン / DOUGLAS
 MCBAIN / ハ宣誓ノ上申述べマス。
 一私ハ濠洲軍將校デアリマス。
 二茲ニ添付セラレ、書証ニト表示セラレテアリマ
 スノハ私が勤務中所持スル「2/5 陸軍衛戍病
 衛生隊指揮官ニ依ルアンボイナ / AMBOINA / ヨ
 リ遅レ歸リタル俘虜ニ就テノ報告」ノ復本デア
 リマス。
 三原本ハ入手不可能デアリマス。

(署名) ダグラス マクベイン
 / DOUGLAS MCBAIN /

余ノ面前ニ於テ一 九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 五月
 二十日宣誓セラレタリ。

(署名) 濠洲軍將校、陸軍大尉

エム・ラックラン

M. LACHLAN /

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

IN 1827-1 Dec 5399

證據書類番號第五三九九號

／ 戦争犯罪 - アンボン / AMBON / 文書「H」 /

私即ち軍司令部 D P W & I ノ陸軍大尉 (S X I
 ○三三四) ダグラス・マクベイン / DOUGLAS
 MCBAIN / ハ宣誓ノ上申述べマス。
 一私ハ濠洲軍將校デアリマス。
 二茲ニ添付セラレ、誓証口ト表示セラレテアリマ
 スノハ私が勤務中所持スル「2/5 陸軍衛戍病院
 衛生隊指揮官ニ依ルアンボイナ / AMBOINA / ヨ
 リ遅レ歸リタル俘虜ニ就テノ報告」ノ復本デア
 リマス。
 三原本ハ入手不可能デアリマス。

(署名) ダグラス マクベイン
 / DOUGLAS MCBAIN /

余ノ面前ニ於テ九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 五月
 二十日宣誓セラレタリ。

(署名) 濠洲軍將校、陸軍大尉

エム・ラックラン

M. LACHLAN

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

★
/

Doc 5399

「報告」

中佐エム・エル・ボウエル / M. L. POWELL

二俵ルナムボイナ / AMBOINA / ヨリノ俘虜ニ

關スル報告原本

A D V I H Q 軍務局醫務隊長

一九四五年 / 昭和二十年 / 九月十四日

2/5 濠洲衛戍病院報告

AMBONNA /

アンボイナヨリ進レ歸リタル俘虜ニ關

スル報告

進レ歸リテヨリ / 始メノ四十八時間ニ亘リ是

等六十五名ノ者ヲ觀察シテ得ル著シキ印象次

ノ如シ。一

一十五名ハ極度ニ瘦セテ、目ハ鑷ミ、顔色ハ青

ク腹部及足首ハ腫レ手足ノ先キガヒドク化膿

シテ居ク。此ノ一四ハ明瞭ニヘルセン / 如シ、

望シク、十分意識ヲ回復セズシテ死ソダ。此

ノ一門ノ他ノ四名ノ容態ハ氣遣ハレテ居リ殆

隙狀ヲ露シテ居ナク。

二四十五名程ノ多勢ノ一團ハ榮養不良、即氣、

熱帶瘧疾及貧血症ノ各症ヲ示ス明カニ同

Doc 5399

3.

瀧ノ症状ノ患者ノ集リテアツタ。此ノ一回ノ或
者建ハ足腰モ立テ激會ニ於テモ、又彼等ヲモロ
タイノ器ROPEノニ進レテ來タ船ノ上テモ助ケラ
レテ歩行スルコトが出来タ。

其ノ他ノ六名カラ八名程ノ者ハ明カナ体重減少
ヲ除イテハ完全ニ良好ナ状態デアツタ。

彼等ノ精神状態ハ驚ク程良好デアツタ、又彼等
ハ自分等ノ体取ヲ論キ手がアレバ誰ニテモ滔々
ト話シタイト言ツタヤウナ一種ノ興奮ト共ニ強
イ安心感が頂着ニ認めラレタ。但シ極ク少數ノ
者ニ在ツテハ、一時的ノ精神抑壓ト時々ノ啼泣
トガ之ニ代ツテキタ。

士氣ハ高ク剛毅ノ氣節ト變遷ノ能力トヲ失ツ
テ居ナイ。是等ノモノカ無カツタラ彼等ハ死ン
テ居タノデアツタ。

体重四ストン半ノ約七長五百六十匁ノ位ノ著
シク衰弱シタ男ガ、全ク巧妙ニ、ソノ細イ瘦セ
ク手ニ前ニテ懸ツア簡單ナ方法テ、頭ヲ枕ノ上
ニ居心地ヨク密チ着カセタリ、同様ニシテ氣ノ
向イタ位置ニ頭ヲ動かス其ノ様子ハ森夏ニ人ノ
心ヲ動かスモノガアル。

諸々ノ疾病ニ關スル利益ハ完成シテ居ナイ。現
在テハ次ノ様ナ症状ガ何レ確認サレルコトハ明

Doc 5399

察テアル。

／ 諸病者 あり。 以下症候ノ記述反譯ニハ自體ヲ有セザルモ不取反譯出ス

a、 脚氣ハ、 高度ノ血中蛋白減少症、 低色素性 gross hypo-proteinaemia / haemoglobin / tion aemia /

貧血症（主トシテ、 因襲的所見ニ伴ル）及心

／ cardiac decompensation /

機能不全ノ種々相ヲ併發セル濕性及乾性

症。 心反射ハ約八十パーセントノ者ニ消失

シテキル。

b、 マラリヤ病ハ高率ニ現ハレルデアラウ。 陽

／ positive blood films /

性ノ血液標本ヲ伴フ發熱ガ比ニ明カデアアル。

c、 十二指腸虫、 口蟲及 strongyloides / stercorariae /

線蟲）ノ感染ハ著シイデアラウ。 之ト言ツ

テ病原桿菌ハ檢出サレテ居ナイ。 アメーバ

性感染ハ未ダ見出サレナイ。

d、 鶏口瘡ノ疑ヒアルモノガ一件アル。

e、 三息者チハ一ペラグラレノ後胎性色素沈着

ガ認めラレル。

f、 壞血病ノナイノが目立ツ。

g、 視力障害ガ六管アル。 其ノ原因ハ未ダ確認

セラレナイ。

Doc. 5399

h、死亡患者ノ死体ヲ解剖シテ見ルニ極端ナル
衰弱ニ加フルニ兩側ノ肺ノ葉底部ノ癒着ガ
認めラレタ。

(署名) 2/5 塚田真壽郎 病院

衛生部長官 陸軍中佐

エム・エル・ポウエル
/ E. L. POWELL /

右ハ一九四六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ五月二十日附陸
軍大尉ダグラス マクベイン / DOUGLAS MCBAIN /
ノ言明中ニ引用セラレタル、2/5 塚田真壽郎 病院
病院ニ中佐エム・エル・ポウエル / E. L. POWELL /
ニ依ル、一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ九月十四日附、
管轄ト表示サレタ報告書ナリ。

(署名) エム・ラックラン 大尉

/ M. LACKLAN /

C. #1820

Doc. No. 5303

Page 1

XXXXXXXXXX

RESTRICTED Classification changed from "CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED" by order of the Secretary of War By /s/ T.R.C. King, Lt. Col. Inf

WAR DEPARTMENT Judge Advocate General's Department United States of America

IN THE MATTER OF THE MURDER OF) 2d LT. EDWARD F. SKUZINSKI, THE) BEATING AND IMPRISONMENT UNDER) IMPROPER CONDITIONS OF NINE) AMERICAN AIRMEN AT AMBON, AND) THE TRANSPORTATION OF SEVEN) AMERICAN PRISONERS OF WAR UNDER) IMPROPER CONDITIONS FROM AMBON) TO OFUNA, JAPAN.)

Deposition of PAUL A. STANSBURY 1st LT. ASN 0734399

Taken at : Letterman General Hospital Presidio of San Francisco, Calif. Date : 3 October 1945. In the Presence of : William E. Stewart, Jr., Agent, SIC, CD, NSC. Questions by : William E. Stewart, Jr., Agent, SIC, CD, NSC.

Page One (1) of 2 pages

XXXXXXXXXX RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

XXXXXXXXXX
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

- Q. What is your name, age, rank serial number and permanent address?
- A. Paul Alfred Stansbury, 28, 1st Lt., 0734399, 1209 4th Avenue, Ashbury Park, New Jersey.
- Q. On what dates were you inducted, sent overseas, and returned from overseas?
- A. I was inducted on 30 January 1943 and went overseas in April 1943 as a bombardier on a B-24 and was returned to the United States on 1 October 1945.
- Q. Were you ever a prisoner of war of any of the Axis powers?
- A. Yes. Of Japan.
- Q. State the organization with which you were serving at the time of your capture, and when, where and by whom you were taken into custody, or otherwise made a prisoner or an internee.
- A. I was serving with the 380th Bomb Group, 530th Squadron, 5th Bomb Command and was captured on 21 September 1943 in the Kai Islands by a Japanese naval unit.
- Q. Where were you kept and what were your movements while you were in such custody?
- A. After my capture I was held on the Kai Island about five days and then moved by plane to Ambon, Ambonia Island, in the Spice Island group. I was held here 68 days and then moved by ship to Ofuna, Japan, arriving there on 12 February 1944. I was held at this prison for one month and then moved by train to Omori where I remained from 13 March to 27 August, 1944, and then was moved by train and ferry to Zentsuji where I remained until 23 June 1945, and last was moved by ferry and train to Kokirosi, Japan, where I remained until liberated.
- Q. Were you an eye-witness to any illegal conduct, either by way of omission or commission, on the part of Axis nationals or soldiers which resulted in the death or serious injury of any American national?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Describe in detail the conduct which you believe to be illegal, giving particulars as to the nature thereof, the name and identification of the victim and of the accused.

- A. About 4:15 p.m. on 21 September 1943 the B-24 on which I was a bombardier was shot down over the Kai Islands and after this plane crashed nine of the ten-man crew were able to get out of the plane. This plane had crashed about 1,000 yards off the island in three feet of water on a coral reef. One man in the crew, the navigator, 2d Lt. Edward F. Zkuzinski of Grand Rapids, Michigan, was pinned down on the flight deck by the top turret which had fallen on his back. I did not see this man in this position as I had been injured in the crash and was stretched out on the wing. This man's position was described to me as stated and after we had been on the reef about an hour and a half and were still unable to remove the navigator whose screams and conversation were audible to me as I lay on the wing, a small dugout boat came out from the shore. The first pilot had given the navigator some morphine. According to the description I received from the other crew members, the navigator was on his hands and knees but able to twist and raise his head above the water which was then about at his chest. One of his legs was fractured and he was bleeding profusely and suffering from internal injuries. The dugout boat contained one Japanese marine, a private and a native. Because of the navigator's condition and the need of his immediate removal from the plane we surrendered to these two individuals. After we surrendered our wrist watches were collected and more marines led by one Japanese naval officer, an ensign, came out to the reef and placed the nine of us in a boat. We were taken ashore despite our protests and they refused to do anything to assist the navigator. On the next morning the pilot, 1st Lt. Wilbur Morris, was taken out to the plane and saw the navigator still pinned down but with his head submerged beneath the water. We were led to believe that the navigator would be buried but we do not know if this actually happened. I do not know the identity of any of the Japanese involved in this incident.

On the third day after our capture we were moved by boat to Lagoon, the capitol of this Island, where all nine of us were interrogated and remained eight or nine days. Then we were sent by plane to Anbon, Arbonia Island. We were treated very well at Lagoon. Upon our arrival at Anbon

Page Three (3) of 9 pages.

/s/ P.A.S.

ⓧ Ⓢ ⓧ ⓧ ⓧ Ⓢ ⓧ ⓧ ⓧ ⓧ
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

we were met by a Japanese naval commander who was in command of the entire base and who assigned the six enlisted men in the crew to one cell and then the three officers, including myself, were placed in separate cells. These cells were in an ancient Dutch prison fort. The walls were of heavy brick and the roof of wood. Each cell was about 9'x9' and about 20' high. There was no ventilation, no sunlight and the cells were thick with mosquitoes. We had no beds to sleep on nor any blankets. We received one rice ball three times per day. This was just a little smaller than a baseball and the rice was covered with worms. We also received about a half an evaporated milk can of hot water three times a day with our meal and this was all the food we received. During our trip from the Kai Islands to Langoon the Gunner, Sargeant Bowman, had received some medical care for cuts on his face and hands. However, all the rest of us were injured and never received any medical care. For the next 68 days we lived in these cells with an interrogation nearly every day. During these interrogations all the enlisted men, the co-pilot and myself were beaten. I do not know whether the pilot was beaten or not. The number of beatings I took here were too many to count. In all of these interrogations, with a few exceptions, we were questioned by a civilian interpreter named Ickies. He is about 5'4" or 5'5" and quite bowlegged. His permanent home was in Tokyo. On a few occasions I was also interrogated by a Japanese navy ensign whose brother had attended my Alma Mater, Columbia University. I was never beaten by the ensign but when Ickies interrogated us he beat us and also had the other Japanese naval personnel in the room do likewise. One of these Japanese guards who beat me and the others was a Sargeant Major in the Japanese Navy whom we nicknamed "Tojo". He was about 5'11" tall, weighed about 225 pounds, and was constantly bragging as to his wrestling ability. His head was shaped like a pear and it was he and Ickies who administered the greater part of the punishment to us. /The interrogation was directed as to our planes, organization, strength, training and airfield layouts./ After we had been in this prison for seven days the pilot, Morris, was flown to Tokyo and I did not see him again until February, 1944, at Ofuna. After 30 days in this

Page Four (4) of 9 pages.

/s/ P.A.S.

ⓧ Ⓢ ⓧ ⓧ ⓧ Ⓢ ⓧ ⓧ ⓧ ⓧ
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

Q N N X X N E N X X X E
 RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

prison two of the enlisted men, Jones and Scott, the engineer and radio operator, were flown to Tokyo and the remaining four enlisted men were moved by truck to a prison camp about four or five miles distant from this prison and they were held there until later joined by the two of us left in this prison. /The co-pilot and myself stayed in this prison for 68 days in all under the daily interrogations and frequent beatings and the living conditions described before. All of us had sustained serious injuries in the crash of our plane and despite these were forced to live in a prison and take these daily beatings. 1st Lt. Wilbur L. Morris, the pilot, had sustained cuts about the body. 2d Lt. Robert M. Russell, the co-pilot, had sustained small cuts about his back, arms and legs and had a broken nose. T/Sgt. Paul Jones the engineer, had a broken leg and many cuts. T/Sgt. Scott the radio operator, had cuts about the face and legs. S/Sgt. Charles Bowman the gunner, had broken ribs, broken breastbone, and deep cuts on the face, mouth, arms and legs and had lost a great deal of blood and passed out many times during his imprisonment. S/Sgt. Chester Brown, the tail gunner, whose right arm had been broken in two places and had sustained a dislocated right elbow and many cuts, S/Sgt. Curtis Warren, the nose gunner, had a broken right collarbone and several cuts, S/Sgt. Clayton Ruhland, a gunner, sustained a deep gash in the head and cuts in the leg and a dislocated knee cap, and I had a broken left collarbone, some broken ribs and several gashes in my left knee and right ankle. We asked the naval commander in charge of this base for medical care upon our arrival here and as often afterwards as we were able to see him. We were laughed at and received no medical care. In addition to personally asking the commander I also asked Ickies, but to no avail, though on one occasion Ickies sent a Japanese medical corpsman to see me in my cell and this corpsman gave me some salve to rub on my broken collarbone telling me this would cause it to knit and heal. I threw the salve away. I caught malaria in this prison and never received any medical care for this. There can be no question that the commandant, the naval commander of this base, knew of the living conditions in this prison, the physical condition in which the men were and the daily beatings and interrogations. I was warned of this by the commandant before imprisonment. He told me the

Page Five (5) of 9 pages.

/s/ P.A.S.

Q N N X X N E N X X X E
 RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

☒ ☒ X X X X X X X X X X
 RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

choice was mine, that is to talk and be sent to a good place or just remain here under the conditions such as I have described. Throughout our 68 days of imprisonment here I counted 18 raids by American planes. During these raids we were kept locked in our cells where the smoke would be very thick and breathing would become very difficult. We were told that we could not use the airraid shelters because we were not prisoners of war but captives. There were ample shelters for us to use here. None of us here were ever wounded in these air raids. When the four enlisted men were taken from this prison after 30 days to the prisoner of war camp four or five miles distant they did receive some medical care from a Dutch doctor who was also a prisoner. I learned this later from Bowman, Brown, Warren and Ruhland, the four men who were transferred. Finally, on 7 December 1943, the co-pilot and myself were taken out of this prison and taken by motorcycle to this prisoner of war camp where our enlisted men had been taken previously. There I received some quinine for my malaria and some pills for our very rundown condition, and some very good food. The Dutch doctor said he did not have, nor could he get, any anaesthesia nor plaster of Paris to set my shoulder or Brown's right arm. My weight had gone from 187 at the time of my capture to 148. I remained at this camp until 12 December 1943 when Russell and I and the four enlisted men of our crew were put aboard a merchant vessel, about a 6,000 ton ship. In addition to the six of us there was a U. S. Navy Lieutenant, J. G., Yuglovich of Seattle, Washington, also put aboard with us. There were about 100 Japanese sailors aboard who were returning to Japan and a cargo of nickel ore. Nine Japanese naval enlisted personnel were assigned to guard us throughout this trip. We were aboard this ship 60 days before docking in Japan. We had to wash this ship daily, were forced to march in goose-step style for the pleasure and amusement of our guards, and forced to do pushing up exercises or calisthenics until we dropped and then were beaten for failure to hold our position. We were beaten several times with a wooden cane about the size of a Japanese sword because during the night we were locked in our hold and not allowed to use the latrine. We kept a can in the hold and used

Page Six (6) of 9 pages.

/s/ P.A.S.

☒ ☒ X X X X X X X X X X
 RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

██████████
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

this and when this was discovered all of us were beaten by our guards. One day on this trip I was told by one of the guards to pick up some heavy mats used for sleeping. I tried to pick them up and couldn't because I was too weak. I was wearing only a pair of shorts at the time and this guard took a lighted cigarette and jabbed it into my back three times. On the next day I came down with beri-beri and lost the use of my hands and legs. I received no treatment of any nature for this. 2d Lt. Russell also came down with the same and lost the use of his legs and began to lose the use of his hands. From then on both of us had to be carried wherever we went. This paralysis of my hands and legs lasted nine months and Russell's lasted about 20 months. I have full coordination of the hands and legs now but Russell does not. We were kept in the bow of the boat and were barricaded in at night. We were told that if the ship were torpedoed we were going down with her. After 60 days of this we arrived at Ofuna, Japan, and it was there that I received my first medical treatment for beri-beri but nothing was done for my shoulder because of the lack of facilities for proper treatment. Kuhland, who had sustained a broken kneecap in the crash has a permanent injury. He can walk only a short while before the leg bothers him and he was advised that it is too late now for surgery. Jones need to have his leg rebroken and reset and I need to have my collarbone rebroken. Brown's arm will need to be corrected by surgery if this is possible. /Of the Japanese naval personnel assigned as our guards on this boat trip one was named Yamashita (phonetic) and another was named Meisha (phonetic). The latter had been a policeman in Tokyo before the war. I cannot recall the identity of any of the other guards.

- Q. Do you know the name of, or can you describe any distinguishing characteristics of commanding officer of the camp, or other officer or official responsible for the actions of the person guilty of such conduct?
- A. I do not know the identity of the ship captain or any other officials aboard this ship. The Japanese naval commander who was the base commandant at Ambon was a very good looking Jap, supposedly well bred and well educated

Page Seven (7) of 9 pages.

/s/ P.A.S.

██████████
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

██████████
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

this and when this was discovered all of us were beaten by our guards. One day on this trip I was told by one of the guards to pick up some heavy mats used for sleeping. I tried to pick them up and couldn't because I was too weak. I was wearing only a pair of shorts at the time and this guard took a lighted cigarette and jabbed it into my back three times. On the next day I came down with beri-beri and lost the use of my hands and legs. I received no treatment of any nature for this. 2d Lt. Russell also came down with the same and lost the use of his legs and began to lose the use of his hands. From then on both of us had to be carried wherever we went. This paralysis of my hands and legs lasted nine months and Russell's lasted about 20 months. I have full coordination of the hands and legs now but Russell does not. We were kept in the bow of the boat and were barricaded in at night. We were told that if the ship were torpedoed we were going down with her. After 60 days of this we arrived at Ofuna, Japan, and it was there that I received my first medical treatment for beri-beri but nothing was done for my shoulder because of the lack of facilities for proper treatment. Ruhland, who had sustained a broken kneecap in the crash has a permanent injury. He can walk only a short while before the leg bothers him and he was advised that it is too late now for surgery. Jones need to have his leg rebroken and reset and I need to have my collarbone rebroken. Brown's arm will need to be corrected by surgery if this is possible. /Of the Japanese naval personnel assigned as our guards on this boat trip one was named Yamashita (phonetic) and another was named Meisha (phonetic). The latter had been a policeman in Tokyo before the war. I cannot recall the identity of any of the other guards.

- Q. Do you know the name of, or can you describe any distinguishing characteristics of commanding officer of the camp, or other officer or official responsible for the actions of the person guilty of such conduct?
- A. I do not know the identity of the ship captain or any other officials aboard this ship. The Japanese naval commander who was the base commandant at Anbon was a very good looking Jap, supposedly well bred and well educated

Page Seven (7) of 9 pages.

/s/ P.A.S.

██████████
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

XXXXXXXXXX
RESTRICTED /s/ T.D.C.K.

and spoke excellent English, but I am unable to identify him further.

Q. Do you have, or know the location of, any physical evidence, such as photographs, relating to this incident?

A. No.

Q. Do you know the name of or can you identify any other eye-witnesses to this incident?

A. Only those of us who participated in the above-described incidents, 1st Lt. Wilbur L. Morris, the pilot, 2d Lt. Robert M. Russell, the co-pilot, T/Sgt. Paul Jones, the engineer, T/Sgt. Scott, the radio operator, S/Sgt. Charles Bowman, the gunner, S/Sgt. Chester Brown, the tail gunner, S/Sgt. Curtis Warren, the nose gunner, and S/Sgt. Clayton Ruhland, gunner.

Q. Does the testimony you have given herein cover all the pertinent details of this incident which you are able to remember?

A. Yes.

/s/ Paul A. Stansbury
PAUL A. STANSBURY
1st Lt. ASN 0734399

XXXXXXXXXX
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

Doc. No. 5303

XXXXXXXXXXXX
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

Page 9

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
City and : SS.
County of SAN FRANCISCO :

I, PAUL A. STANSBURY, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of 5 pages, including this and the title page, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Paul A. Stansbury
PAUL A. STANSBURY

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 8 day of OCTOBER, 1945, at San Francisco, California.

My commission expires: /s/ Julian S. Egan
Capt. J.A.G.D.
0-568007

STATE OF :
County of : SS.
Country of :

I, _____, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions asked and answers given and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing _____ pages, including this and the title page, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence initialed each page of the deposition and affixed his signature thereto.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this _____ day of _____, 19____, at _____.

My commission expires: _____

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
City and : SS.
County of SAN FRANCISCO :

I, WILLIAM E. STEWART, JR., certify that (Name) PAUL A. STANSBURY, (Rank) 1st Lt. (ASN) 0734399, personally appeared before me on the 3d day of October, 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by (him) (her) to the several questions set forth.

Place: San Francisco, California /s/ William E. Stewart, Jr.
WILLIAM E. STEWART, JR.
Agent, SIC, CD, NSC.
Date: 3 October 1945

Page 5 of 5 pages.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Edwin F. Svare
EDWIN F. SVARE, 1st Lt., Inf.

XXXXXXXXXXXX
RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

5303
Ex 1830-10

問 貴官、姓名、年令、階級、認識番号及原籍如何不。

答 / Paul Alfyed Stanstury /

「ボート・アーク・リット・スタスタ・パーク」 二六、中尉、〇三四三九九

「New Jersey Ashbury Park /

「ニュー・ジャージー州アッシュベリーパーク」 四号、街一、二〇九

答 余ハ第五爆撃隊第三〇中隊第三八〇爆撃隊班ニ勤務シテ居タリ

（一九四三年（昭和十八年）九月二十日）「カイ」島ヲ日本海軍ニ為捕虜トシ

向何処ニ拘置セラルカ又拘置申貴官、行動ハ如何下アツカ。

答 余ハ捕虜トシテ約五日「Kai Islands」 「Spice Islands」

「Ambonia Island / Ambon」 島ニ抑留セシカラ「バイ」群島

「アムボナ」島「アムボナ」ニ飛行機ヲ移サシク。余ハ此処ニ在リ南

極端ナル次下船ヲ日本ノ大船ニ移サシルコトナリ一九四四年（昭和十九年）

二月十三日某処ニ到着シタ。

答 一九四三年（昭和十八年）九月二十日午後四時十五分頃余ハ爆撃機ニ乗

リ搭乗シタ。B-24 「カイ」島ニ墜落セシ後墜落後十人、乗

組員中九名ハ飛行機カラ脱出スルコトが出来タ。此飛行機ハ「カイ」島

沖約一千碼水深ニ墜、珊瑚礁上ニ墜テタ。乗組員一人ハ航空士少尉

エドワード・F・スズィンスキ / Michigan / Grand Rapids

「セント・エフ・スズィンスキ」 ミシガン州「グランド・ラピッド」ニ在リ

背中、上ニ墜テキタ一番高イ塔、為ニ飛行機ニ釘付ニサシタ。

余ハ墜落シ、際怪状ヲシ、頭上ニ付シタ、余本人コソ位置見テ

カ。本人、位置區ハ前述ニ余ニ説明セシ、而シテ余等ハ約一時間

半珊瑚礁上ニ居テ、余ハ翼上ニ横ニテ、テキタ時ソ、航空士ノ叫ビ

聲ト語聲カ聞エタガ尚航空士ノ勸カスコトが出来ナイナリ。一般

小ナリ独木舟カ出テ来タ。才一操縦士ハ航空士ニ「元ル」ニテ居テ

與テ。余ハ他乗組員カラ後々々説明ニヨリト航空士ハ四ツ違ナリ、ソ

時胸ノ辺達アツタ水、上ニ頭ヲ曲ゲテ揚ケルコトが出来タ。片方脚ハ

檢査之末血カビト7且の内傷亦若干ナリ。独木舟ニハ人日本水兵十兵
 卒士大ガ居リ。航空士ノ状態能敵ニ又彼等飛行機ヲ直チニ移ス必要上
 余等ハ二名ノ者ニ降服シテ降服後余等ノ監視計ハ取リテ一名
 日本ノ海軍中將ヲ海軍少尉ノ引率ニテ大勢ノ水兵ガ珊瑚礁上
 七ノ末ノ余等九名ヲ舟ニ收容シテ。余等ハ抗議シテ其海岸ニ進行セ
 ヲ。彼等ハ航空士ヲ助ケルコトヲ全然拒絶シテ。翌朝機銃士カビトモイ
 中尉ハ飛行機ノ所ニ連テ行カセ。而シテ航空士ガ尚水中ニ頭ヲ没シテ釘
 付テトキ此ノ見テ。余等ハ航空士ガ埋蓋ナルハ分ク上点ツテ併シカ
 為実ノソナリカドカ知ラナイ。余ハ本件ノ關係ニ日本人ノ識別ハ出来ナ
 捕虜トシカラフ三日。余等流島首都ヲイナシニ舟ヲ連行サシ其地ニ余
 等九名ハ取調ヲテハ九日留置サシ。ソレカラフ二日ノ間ノパヒホシハ
 飛行機ヲ送テシ。ラングーンニテハ非常ニ好遇サシ。アムボニ到着シ共
 ニ日本ノ海軍司令官ニ會シテ彼ハ金根據地ノ指揮ニ當リテ居リ。而シテ彼
 ハ末組員中大名ノ兵卒ヲツテ監房ハ余等三名ノ將校ヲ別々ノ監房ハ割當リ
 コレノ監房ハ昔知蘭ノ牢監獄内ニテ。壁ハ厚ク煉瓦ノ屋根ハ木ノ出来
 居リ。各監房ハ縦横凡シ九呎。高サ約二呎ナリ。其処ハ通風装置道
 毛線光燈設置モ何モナリ監房ハ吹テ充滿シナリ。余等ハ寝台モ布モ與
 へテナリ。余等ハ日三回一個ノ握飯ヲ與ヘラシ。ソレハ下度野球ヲ
 リシホイ位ノ毛糸ノテテ飯ハ面皿ヲ覆ヒテナリ。余等ハ又日三回
 食前ト共ニ半バ蒸籠シテ牛乳罐一杯湯ヲ給サシ。サウシテ之ガ余等
 食テテ全食糧下リ。カビトモイナシハ人余砲手ノボクニ
 軍曹ハ顔ト平ノ切傷ヲ治療ヲ受ケタ分他者ハ全部負傷シテ居ツテ治療
 ヲ受ケナカツ。續ク六十日間余等ハコノ監房ニ在リテ始メ毎日取調
 ヲ受ケ。コノ取調中全兵卒及副操縦士ト余ハ殴打サシ。操縦士ガ
 殴打サシカドカ知ラナイ。此処示敵ラシク敵ハ敵ハキレテ程多ク。

取調ハ我飛行機組織兵力訓練飛行場施設三園三行ハ分。

DOC 5303

副操縦士十余ハ毎日取調ト受テ辱メ殺シ刑罰ヲ生活状態ト總計シテ
 間ヲ以テ監獄ニ送リシ。余野宮飛行機墜落時重傷ヲ負キテハ三ヶ月ヲ監獄ニ
 送リテ毎日改テ此辱自ニ受テシ。操縦士ハ心ト志ニシテ Wilbur L. Morris 少尉
 ハ身体中切傷ヲ負テ副操縦士トシテ Robert H. Russell 少尉ハ脚
 腕切傷ヲ受テ副操縦士トシテ Paul Jones 技術軍曹ハ脚
 ヲ折リ多ク切傷ヲ受テ無線通信トシテ Scott 曹長 脚傷ヲ受テ
 手トシテ木トシテ Charles Bowman 軍曹ハ肋骨ト胸骨ヲ折リ顔口腕脚部ニ深傷ヲ
 受テ監獄中辱メテ倒シテ後死シテ死ス。Chester Brown 軍曹ハ
 右腕ト右肋骨ト右腕腕及心臓ト傷ヲ受テ胸部破裂トシテ Curtis
 Warner 曹長ハ右鎖骨ヲ折リ数ヶ傷ヲ受テ死ス。Clayton
 Richland 軍曹ハ頭部ニ深ク挫傷脚部ニ創傷膝蓋骨脱臼トシテ余ハ左鎖骨ヲ
 肋骨ヲ折リ及左膝右踝關節毀傷數ヶ所ヲ受テ余等ハ此処到着ト共ニ其後余
 毎ニ根柢地司令官ニ治療ヲ嘆願シ。併シ余等ハ嘲笑ヲ治療ニ送テラレタリ。
 余ハ此監獄トシテ三ヶ月ヲ何年ト受テカク司令官此海軍根柢地司令官ハ
 此監獄生活状態ニ鑑テ身体状態毎日改打セリ取調カ行ハルト知ラザル
 トシテ疑ヲ容テシ。余ハ獄前司令官カラ之就テ警告ヲ受テ送致ハ余ハ自由ヲ
 言ハ撥心ハ自然ト良場所ニ送テシ。余ハ前述シテ様ト状態トテ殘留人ハ自由ヲ
 下シ但余言テ此処於テハ獄中八回三米利加軍飛行機ハ空襲ハ八回トシテ
 空襲中余等ハ過房中ニ閉テ之過房の煙ハ漆トシテ呼吸ハ甚ク困難トシテ余
 等ハ停房中トシテ押房下ニ急空龍巻避難材ト使用出来テ言ハル。此ハ
 余等ハ使用スル避難材ハ沃山トシテ余等ハ誰モ之空襲中負傷ナカク。

☆
No 3

一九四三年昭和十八年十二月首終副操縦士十余ハ此監獄カヲ送テ自由自轉車下リ！
修序

取調ハ我飛行機組織兵力訓練飛行場施設ニ関スル行ハク。

DOC 5303

副操縦士ト余ハ毎日取調ト受ケ屢々殺シ刑ヲ科シ生活状態ト總計十有六回
 同ク之監獄ニ過シタ。余等皆飛行機墜落時重傷ヲ負リテ之ヲ無拘ヲシ監獄ニ
 送リテ毎日改メテ自ニ送リタ。操縦士トシテ之ニモ「Wilbur L. Morris」海軍
 公身体中切傷ヲ負シテ副操縦士トシテ之ニモ「Robert H. Russell」少尉公
 腕脚ニ切傷ヲ負シテ大軍士トシテ之ニモ「Paul Jones」技術軍曹公脚
 ヲ折リ多ク切傷ヲ負シテ無線通信士トシテ之ニモ「Scott」軍曹公脚傷ガシテ砲手
 トシテ之ニモ「Charles Bonina」軍曹公肋骨ト胸骨ヲ折リ顔口腕脚部ニ深傷ヲ負
 シ大軍士トシテ監獄中屢々年倒シテ後許砲手トシテ之ニモ「Chester Brown」軍曹公
 右腕ニ折骨ヲ折リ右腕脱臼及心臓ニ傷ヲ負シテ前部砲手トシテ之ニモ「Curtis」
 「Warren」軍曹公右鎖骨ヲ折リ膝ニ傷ヲ受ケテ砲手トシテ之ニモ「Clayton」
 「Richland」軍曹公頭部ニ深ク損傷脚部ニ創傷膝蓋骨脱臼シテ余ハ左鎖骨ヲ折
 リ肋骨ヲ折リ左膝右踝間脚部傷數ヶ所ヲ受ケタ。余等公此處ニ到着シテ又其後余ハ
 毎三根機地司令官ニ送檢テ受檢シテ之ヲ以テ余等ハ謝安テシテ治療ト受ケテ之ヲナシタ。
 余ハ此監獄ニシテ三ヶ月ニシテ之ヲ何年ニ受ケテ之ヲ。司令官此海軍機地司令官ハ
 之ヲ監獄生活状態ト整布シ身体状態ト毎日改メテ之ヲ取調ガ行ハク之ヲ下リ知シテ
 之ヲ上ニ送リ答テシ。余ハ監獄前司令官方之ヲ就テ警告ヲ受ケテ送檢ト余ハ自由ハ
 言ヒ換ヒ公自狀トシテ良場所ニ送リシトモ余ハ前述シテ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ
 下リシトモ余ハ言フタ此監獄トシテ監獄本公間ニ亞米利加軍飛行機ノ空襲長ハ八回トシテ
 空襲中余等公機中ニ閉シテ之ヲ避ケテ機中ニシテ之ヲ避ケテ甚ク困難トシテ之ヲ
 避ケテ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ之ヲ下リ
 余等亦使用スル避難所ハ沃出シタ。余等ハ難言ノ空襲中重傷ヲ受ケタ。
 一九四三年昭和十八年十二月首終副操縦士トシテ余ハ此監獄ヲ退出シ自働自轉車下リ
 修薩

No 3 ☆

Doc 5303

船が急雷攻撃を受け、十二名死亡、船上共二流の被害あり。

二十一日、船海、後後余等、日本、大船、到着、余、其、其、意、

初、脚、氣、治、療、受、け、た、事、を、余、亦、之、處、會、治、療、意、を、示、し、し、理、由、

不、得、治、療、受、け、た、事、を、示、し、し、理、由、を、示、し、し、理、由、

膝蓋骨骨折、傷、二十、日、餘、を、復、脚、機、二、日、進、歩、

し、歩、行、す、可、能、な、事、が、今、十、日、外、科、手、術、同、二、日、進、歩、

し、歩、行、す、可、能、な、事、が、今、十、日、外、科、手、術、同、二、日、進、歩、

余、鎖、骨、又、取、外、す、可、能、な、事、が、今、十、日、外、科、手、術、同、二、日、進、歩、

科、手、術、不、得、な、事、が、今、十、日、外、科、手、術、同、二、日、進、歩、

no. 5

RESTRICTED

KIYOSATO YOSHIKAZI, after having been duly sworn, testified at the Morotai Prisoner of War Camp, Morotai Island, Netherlands East Indies, on 28 March, 1946, as follows:-

- Q. State your name, age, nationality, marital status, religion and home address.
- A. Kiyosato YOSHIKAZI, 36 years old, Japanese, married, Buddhist, Ibusukicho, Ibusuki Gun Kagoshima Province, Japan.
- Q. What is your rank in the Navy?
- A. Warrant Officer.
- Q. When were you inducted into the Navy?
- A. 30 June, 1932 I joined the Navy.
- Q. When did you first come to Ambon Island?
- A. 25 June, 1942, I came to Ambon and was attached to the 24th Navy Division at Victoria Garrison.
- Q. When were you assigned to the Garara Prison Camp?
- A. I was assigned to Garara Prisoner of War Camp from 23 January 1943, to 10 March, 1943. Then until 10 May, 1943, I was in Victoria Garrison. On 11 May, 1943, I was again assigned to Garara Camp and stayed until 2 May, 1945.
- Q. Were there any American fliers executed at Garara Camp in 1944?
- A. On the 28th of August, 1944, the districts of Ambon and Garara were very heavily bombed by American B-29 planes. I think there were eighty planes. Due to this bombing Victoria Garrison was on fire. Also part of Garara Camp was on fire. On the afternoon of 28 August between 5 and 6 o'clock W/O UEMURA brought three Americans to Garara Camp. At that time I was busy repairing tents which were bombed but I heard that the three Americans were placed in three separate cells. The next morning at about 8 o'clock W/O UEMURA ordered me and said, "Today we must have the execution of the three prisoner so we must get ready." He also said, "You must execute one of the prisoners." At 2.30 o'clock in the afternoon of 29 August, 1944, a truck was ordered and myself, UEMURA, IKEUCHI the driver and the three Americans all loaded into the truck. After about a five minute drive we arrived at the execution place. It was near the Jap soldiers' cemetery. It was about 150 meters from the cemetery. The truck stopped about 30 meters from the execution place. The execution place was off of the road and on a small hill, there was tropical jungle all around the hill. When the truck stopped UEMURA ordered

me to go to the execution place quickly, so I left for the place. When I arrived at the place of execution I found two holes already dug. When our truck first arrived I saw 1st. Lt. NOGI of the Navy and five soldiers whose names I do not know standing waiting for us. As soon as the truck stopped, IKEUCHI reported to this Lieutenant and said, "Here we are." When UEMURA ordered me to go to the execution place I went alone leaving Lt. NOGI and the five soldiers at the truck. About three or four minutes after I arrived at the execution place, Lt. NOGI came to the execution place. About five minutes later one of Lt. NOGI's soldiers arrived with one American prisoner. He was already blindfolded and his hands were already tied in back of him. The soldier made him kneel in front of one of the holes, facing one of the holes that was already dug. It was the hole on the right. This soldier then returned to the truck. I then stepped up behind this American and beheaded him. I only swung the sword once. I hit the American squarely on the back of the neck. The American's head dropped forward and hung against his chest. Immediately the American fell into the hole dead. The hole was six feet long, three feet wide and one and a half meters deep. When the soldier made the American kneel he knelt at the eastern end of the hole. I also was standing at that end. The sword I used for killing the American belonged to W/O UEMURA. He lent it to me just before we left Garaia Camp. I think the blade of this sword was two feet and two inches long and the handle was about ten inches long. The whole sword therefore was three feet and two inches long. I used both hands to swing the sword. I stood directly behind the American with my feet about two feet apart. I raised the sword over my right shoulder and swung with both hands. I am right handed. After I had killed the American I retired about fifteen meters away from the execution place in some bushes. The reason I did this was because my duty was finished and I was also very excited and upset and I didn't want to see any more executions. After I had retired to the bushes in about two or three minutes I saw a soldier bring another blindfolded American past me. I didn't see this American executed because from my place in the bushes I could not see the execution. About five minutes later the third blindfolded American came past my place, accompanied by a soldier. About five or ten minutes after I saw the third American being taken to the execution place, Lt. NOGI called from the bushes and said, "Come. We must bury the Americans and clean the place. The execution is all finished." So I went back to the execution place. When I got there I saw Lt. NOGI and three soldiers. I looked into the two holes and in the right hand hole was the American that I had executed, and in the left hand hole were the two remaining Americans. I looked into the holes and the bodies were not moving. They were quite dead. After I had looked into the holes the three soldiers and myself started to cover the bodies

over with dirt. We worked at this task about forty minutes before the burial was finished. During this time Lt. NOGI stood and watched. When we were all finished each hole had a small hump or mound of earth over it. I put a flower on each grave. Then the three soldiers and myself raked the graves until they were smooth. After this was done Lt. NOGI, the three soldiers and myself all saluted the graves. After this Lt. NOGI went back to his car and returned to Naval Headquarters at Ambon. Then the three soldiers and myself walked back to the road and walked to the Japanese soldiers' cemetery. When we reached that place the truck came from Garara to fetch us. We arrived at Garara Camp at about 5 o'clock in the afternoon.

- Q. I hand you this stenographic note-book and pen and ask you to draw, upon it, a diagram of the place of execution, showing the position of the graves, all men and soldiers there, the American's position, the road, and any and all other information you may have.
- A. I cannot draw very well but I will give you directions and you will please do it for me.
- Q. Please write upon such diagram, in Japanese, a statement of what it is. Also sign and date such document and I will annex it to your certificate as an exhibit.
- A. I have done so.
- Q. Were you and Lt. NOGI and the three soldiers the only ones at the execution place?
- A. Yes. We were the only ones present. IKEUCHI, UEMURA, the driver, and the two remaining soldiers stayed at the truck and I think they left and returned to Garara Camp as soon as the last American was taken to the execution place.
- Q. You stated that Lt. NOGI was waiting at the execution place when you arrived. Where did he come from and how did he get there?
- A. I think Lt. NOGI came from Naval Headquarters at Ambon and came to the execution place in his car taking the five soldiers with him.
- Q. Who was Lt. NOGI?
- A. All I know is that he came from Naval Headquarters in Ambon. He was very tall about six feet tall, complexion white, black hair, military hair cut. He wore no glasses.
- Q. Who ordered Lt. NOGI to come to the execution?

over with dirt. We worked at this task about forty minutes before the burial was finished. During this time Lt. NOGI stood and watched. When we were all finished each hole had a small hump or mound of earth over it. I put a flower on each grave. Then the three soldiers and myself raked the graves until they were smooth. After this was done Lt. NOGI, the three soldiers and myself all saluted the graves. After this Lt. NOGI went back to his car and returned to Naval Headquarters at Ambon. Then the three soldiers and myself walked back to the road and walked to the Japanese soldiers' cemetery. When we reached that place the truck came from Garara to fetch us. We arrived at Garara Camp at about 5 o'clock in the afternoon.

- Q. I hand you this stenographic note-book and pen and ask you to draw, upon it, a diagram of the place of execution, showing the position of the graves, all men and soldiers there, the American's position, the road, and any and all other information you may have.
- A. I cannot draw very well but I will give you directions and you will please do it for me.
- Q. Please write upon such diagram, in Japanese, a statement of what it is. Also sign and date such document and I will annex it to your certificate as an exhibit.
- A. I have done so.
- Q. Were you and Lt. NOGI and the three soldiers the only ones at the execution place?
- A. Yes. We were the only ones present. IKEUCHI, UEMURA, the driver, and the two remaining soldiers stayed at the truck and I think they left and returned to Garara Camp as soon as the last American was taken to the execution place.
- Q. You stated that Lt. NOGI was waiting at the execution place when you arrived. Where did he come from and how did he get there?
- A. I think Lt. NOGI came from Naval Headquarters at Ambon and came to the execution place in his car taking the five soldiers with him.
- Q. Who was Lt. NOGI?
- A. All I know is that he came from Naval Headquarters in Ambon. He was very tall about six feet tall, complexion white, black hair, military hair cut. He wore no glasses.
- Q. Who ordered Lt. NOGI to come to the execution?

- A. I think that the order came from Naval Headquarters in Ambon to the Naval Police headquarters. I think that Lt. MIYAZAKI ordered Lt. NOGI to execute the Americans.
- Q. Who executed the other two Americans?
- A. Lt. NOGI
- Q. How do you know?
- A. On the day and at the place of the execution immediately after all the Americans were killed, Lt. NOGI called me from the bushes and told me. He said what I have already told you and he also said, "Now the execution is finished, and I executed the other two Americans." I didn't say anything to him, and that was all he said. I was very upset.
- Q. Why were these Americans executed?
- A. On the morning of the execution, after UEMURA ordered me to kill one of the Americans, I was worried so I asked UEMURA why these Americans were to be killed. He said I shouldn't worry because everything was ordered by superior officers.
- Q. Were these Americans given a hearing or a court martial?
- A. I don't know.
- Q. Were they given a hearing or court martial while at Garara Camp?
- A. No.
- Q. Who ordered W/O UEMURA to have the Americans executed?
- A. I think the order came from Lt. MIYAZAKI, but I think Capt. SHIROZU gave the original order.
- Q. Where are Capt. SHIROZU and Lt. MIYAZAKI now?
- A. Both of them are in No. 3 Compound.
- Q. What were the three Americans' names, ranks, and descriptions?
- A. It has been so long ago and they only stayed at Garara one night so I don't remember anything except that two were very tall. They were all wearing khaki uniform with long trousers. I don't know whether they were officers or enlisted men.
- Q. Where were these Americans captured?

- A. I think that the order came from Naval Headquarters in Ambon to the Naval Police headquarters. I think that Lt. MIYAZAKI ordered Lt. NOGI to execute the Americans.
- Q. Who executed the other two Americans?
- A. Lt. NOGI
- Q. How do you know?
- A. On the day and at the place of the execution immediately after all the Americans were killed, Lt. NOGI called me from the bushes and told me. He said what I have already told you and he also said, "Now the execution is finished, and I executed the other two Americans." I didn't say anything to him, and that was all he said. I was very upset.
- Q. Why were these Americans executed?
- A. On the morning of the execution, after UEMURA ordered me to kill one of the Americans, I was worried so I asked UEMURA why these Americans were to be killed. He said I shouldn't worry because everything was ordered by superior officers.
- Q. Were these Americans given a hearing or a court martial?
- A. I don't know.
- Q. Were they given a hearing or court martial while at Garara Camp?
- A. No.
- Q. Who ordered W/O UEMURA to have the Americans executed?
- A. I think the order came from Lt. MIYAZAKI, but I think Capt. SHIROZU gave the original order.
- Q. Where are Capt. SHIROZU and Lt. MIYAZAKI now?
- A. Both of them are in No. 3 Compound.
- Q. What were the three Americans' names, ranks, and descriptions?
- A. It has been so long ago and they only stayed at Garara one night so I don't remember anything except that two were very tall. They were all wearing khaki uniform with long trousers. I don't know whether they were officers or enlisted men.
- Q. Where were these Americans captured?

- A. IKEUCHI told me that they were captured on Ceram Island that is all I know.
- Q. What was your rank at the time you executed the American?
- A. I was a Sergeant Major.
- Q. Were you under direct orders from W/O UEMURA?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Could you have disobeyed UEMURA's order to execute the American?
- A. I couldn't refuse because of Japanese army discipline.
- Q. Was force, threats, duress or coercion used in taking this statement from you?
- A. No.
- Q. Was any promise of reward, immunity or consideration given as a result of this statement?
- A. No.

(Signed) KIYOSATO YOSHIZAKI

NETHERLANDS EAST INDIES)
ISLAND OF MOHOTAI) SS

I, KIYOSATO YOSHIZAKI, being duly sworn on oath, state that I had read to me and understood the translation of the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein, consisting of four (4) pages, are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

(Signed) KIYOSATO YOSHIZAKI

Subscribed and sworn to before me this thirtieth day of March, 1946.

(Signed) JOHN D SCHWENKER, Capt., F.I.
Investigating Officer, War Crime
Investigating Detachment.

NETHERLANDS EAST INDIES)
ISLAND OF MOHOTAI) SS

I, MASAO DOUE, T/3, ASN 30111100, War Crimes Branch, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the question and answers given from English to Japanese and from Japanese

- A. IKEUCHI told me that they were captured on Ceram Island that is all I know.
- Q. What was your rank at the time you executed the American?
- A. I was a Sergeant Major.
- Q. Were you under direct orders from W/O UEMURA?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Could you have disobeyed UEMURA's order to execute the American?
- A. I couldn't refuse because of Japanese army discipline.
- Q. Was force, threats, duress or coercion used in taking this statement from you?
- A. No.
- Q. Was any promise of reward, immunity or consideration given as a result of this statement?
- A. No.

(Signed) KIYOSATO YOSHIZAKI

NETHERLANDS EAST INDIES)
ISLAND OF MOROTAI) SS

I, KIYOSATO YOSHIZAKI, being duly sworn on oath, state that I had read to me and understood the translation of the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein, consisting of four (4) pages, are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

(Signed) KIYOSATO YOSHIZAKI

Subscribed and sworn to before me this thirtieth day of March, 1946.

(Signed) JOHN D SCHWENKER, Capt., F.A.
Investigating Officer, War Crime
Investigating Detachment.

NETHERLANDS EAST INDIES)
ISLAND OF MOROTAI) SS

I, MASAO DOUE, T/3, ASN 30111100, War Crimes Branch, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions and answers given from English to Japanese and from Japanese

Evidentiary Document No. 5223.

RESTRICTED

to English respectively, and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing three (3) pages to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence affixed his signature thereto.

(Signed) MASAO DOUE

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 30 day of March, 1946.

(Signed) JOHN D SCHWENKER,
Capt., F.A.
Investigating Officer, War Crime
Investigating Detachment.

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, JOHN D. SCHWENKER, Capt.,
O-544384, FA, certify that on 28th day of March, 1946,
personally appeared before me KIYOSATO YOSHIZAKI, and
according to MASAO DOUE, gave the foregoing answers to the
several questions set forth therein; that after his testimony
had been transcribed, the said KIYOSATO YOSHIZAKI had read
to him by the said interpreter the same and affixed his
signature thereto in my presence.

Island of Morotai,
NETHERLANDS EAST INDIES
30th day of March, 1946.

(Signed) JOHN D. SCHWENKER,
Capt. F.A.,
Investigating Officer, War Crimes
Investigating Detachment.

RESTRICTED

昭和十一年八月十九日

Doc 5-22

6702-1A

三國同盟

昭和十一年八月十九日（昭和十一年八月十九日）頃、東洋軍（日本）は、南支那方面に、軍事行動を開始し、暹羅、カンボジア、ラオスに侵入した。

問 暹羅に在る我が國籍者、有無に依り、如何に處置せられたる乎。

答 暹羅、南支那、日本人、既に、佛教徒、日本、鹿児島、縣、松島、郡、長崎、町、に在り。

問 吾等、南支那、階級、如何なる乎。

答 階級、有らざる。

x x x x x

問 昭和一十一年（一九四〇年）八月十九日、收容所、に、米軍、飛行機、が、墜したる事、如何。

答 昭和一十一年（一九四〇年）八月十九日、アノホノ地方、に、米軍、飛行機、が、墜した。此、非常、に、猛烈、に、爆撃、せられた。八十機、以上、の、米軍、飛行機、が、墜した。其、中、に、兵艦、が、一機、あり、火災、が、起つた。アノホノ「收容所」、一部、に、火災、が、起つた。八月十九日、午後五時、から、六時、の間、に、アノホノ「准尉」が、米國人、三名、を、アノホノ「收容所」に、連れて、来られた。其、時、に、私、も、爆撃、を受け、た。我々、修理、に、忙しかつたが、三名、の、米國人、が、一、別々、に、監房、に、入られた。翌朝、八時、頃、に、アノホノ「准尉」が、私、に、命じて、今日、の、三人、の、俘虜、を、處刑、せよと、命じた。我々、は、困窮、に、陥つて、居ると、云はれた。彼、が、又、我々、の、俘虜、を、人處、刑、に、送ると、云はれた。昭和十一年（一九四〇年）八月十九日、午後三時、頃、に、アノホノ、用意、が、命ぜられた。私、が、アノホノ「准尉」に、運、び、た、米國人、三名、全部、に、アノホノ「收容所」に、連れて、来られた。五、五、名、の、兵隊、が、我々、の、處刑、場所、に、着きた。其所、に、日本軍、人、が、集、まつた。我々、の、約、二、百、名、の、兵隊、が、我々、の、處刑、場所、に、集、まつた。我々、の、處刑、場所、に、米兵、が、用、した、アノホノ、處刑、場所、に、連れて、來、られた。我々、の、處刑、場所、に、我々、の、兵隊、が、集、まつた。我々、の、處刑、場所、に、我々、の、兵隊、が、集、まつた。我々、の、處刑、場所、に、我々、の、兵隊、が、集、まつた。

Doc 5223

No 乙 女

「ワエ」の私ニ直ク處刑所へ行...
 所へ向ヒマシタ。私が處刑、場所へ着イタ時 既に穴ニ...
 アルヲ見ホシマシタ。我々、「トラック」が着イタ當座私ハ最初ニ
 乃本海軍大尉ト名ヲ知ラナイ五名、兵隊トが我々ヲ立ツテ侍ツテ
 ルヲ見マシタ。「トラック」が此ルヤ否ヤ「イケラセ」同大尉ニ報告シ
 下到着致シマシタト云ヒマシタ。「ワエ」が私ニ處刑所へ行ク
 ン命シタ時、私ハ乃本大尉ト五名、兵士ヲ「トラック」所ニ待
 テ一人テ行キマシタ。私が處刑所ニ着イテカラ、三四分、後乃本
 大尉が處刑所へヤツテ来マシタ。約五分後、乃本大尉、部
 下、一人ガ米國人ノ俘虜ヲ一名連シテ到着シマシタ。彼ハ既ニ目隠
 シテ後手ニ縛ラレテ来マシタ。兵隊ハ彼ヲ既ニ握ッテアルニ
 向ケテソ、前ニ膝ニツカセマシタ。其ノ右、穴ニテシタ。此ノ兵隊
 「トラック」へ歸リマシタ。ソレカラ私ハ此ノ米國人、背後へ近
 寄ツテ彼ヲ斬首シマシタ。私ハ刀ヲ一振、打振ツタガケテ
 私ハ米國兵ノ頸、ウシロヲ正確ニ打テマシタ。米國人ノ首ハ前ニ落
 チ胸、前ニブラサガリマシタ。直ニ米國兵ハ死ニテ穴ノ中へ落
 マシタ。穴ハ縦六呎、横三呎深サ一米半デシタ。兵隊ハ米國人ヲ
 膝ニツカセタ時、彼ハ穴ノ東ノ端ニ膝ニツキマシタ。私モソ、端ニ立
 テマシタ。私ガソノ米國人ヲ殺ス、ニ使ツタ刀ハ「ワエ」ニ推尉、モ
 テシタ。我々がカララシ收容所ヲ出ル直前ニ彼ハ其ノ刀ヲ私ニ
 シタ。此ノ刀、刃ハ長サ二呎二吋、柄ハ約十吋タメ
 思ヒマス。テスカラ其ノ刀、全長ハ三呎二吋デシタ。私ハ其ノ刀ヲ振
 ルニ兩手ヲ使ヒマシタ。私ハ米國人、直ク後ニ兩足ヲ二呎許
 リ離シ立テマシタ。私ハ刀ヲ自分ノ右肩ノ上へ上ケテ兩手ヲ振
 リマシタ。私ハ右利キナ、デス。私ハ米國人ヲ殺シタ後處刑所
 約十五米バカリ離シタ叢、中へ退キマシタ。私ガカラシ理由ハ
 自分ノ義務ヲ終リ、私モ非常ニ興奮ニ氣ガ顛倒ニテ居リ、其
 以上處刑ヲ見タク無カシタ。私ガ其ノ叢、中へ退イテカラ
 五分後一人、兵隊ハ私ノ所ヲ通ツテ目隠シサレタモウ一人、米國
 人ヲ連シテ行クヲ見マシタ。叢、中、私ガ居タ場所カニ處刑
 見エカシタ。私ハ此ノ米國人ガ處刑サレ、見マセンデシタ。
 約五分後ニ登目、目隠シサレタ米國人ガ一人、兵隊ニ伴

CX # 1832

Evidentiary Document No. 5442.

SYNOPSIS - N.W. GUINEA

I now propose to offer documentary evidence relating to treatment of prisoners of war, civilians and natives in New Guinea.

(a) Prosecution Document No. 5379 is affidavit of Major Charles Henry BIGGS of the Australian Imperial Forces. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read paragraphs 3, 4, 5 and 6 of this exhibit.

.....

(b) Prosecution Document No. 5378 is affidavit of former Captain Charles Walter KENDALL of 18 Australian Infantry Brigade. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read paragraphs 2 to 3 of this document.

.....

(c) Prosecution Document No. 5333 is the affidavit of former Captain Alan Gladen Palmer of 1 Australian Independent Company. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

(d) Prosecution Document No. 4053 consists of excerpts from Evidentiary Document No. 405. It contains records of the interrogation of two Japanese prisoners and excerpts from 6 Japanese diaries. I tender the document in evidence.

.....

From these excerpts it appears that 7 to 9 Australian of whom 3 or 4 were women and one a child were captured by the Japanese near Buna towards the middle of August and executed on the following day.

.....

(e) Prosecution Document No. 405A contains further excerpts from Evidentiary Document No. 405. It contains an excerpt from a captured diary and the record of a statement made by a Japanese prisoner. I tender this document in evidence.

.....

I will read the diary excerpt from "Blood Carnival" down to the words "instruct to the A.T.C. at Moresby."

(f) Prosecution Document No. 5300 is a statement made by Sepoy Bachan SINGH of 1/13 F.F.R. I tender the document for identification and the excerpts marked therein in evidence.

.....

CX. #1832

Exhibitory Document No. 5442.

SYNOPSIS - NEW GUINEA.

I now propose to offer documentary evidence relating to treatment of prisoners of war, civilians and natives in New Guinea.

(a) Prosecution Document No. 5379 is affidavit of Major Charles Henry BICKS of the Australian Imperial Forces. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read paragraphs 3, 4, 5 and 6 of this exhibit.

.....

(b) Prosecution Document No. 5373 is affidavit of former Captain Charles Walter KENDALL of 18 Australian Infantry Brigade. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read paragraphs 2 to 3 of this document.

.....

(c) Prosecution Document No. 5333 is the affidavit of former Captain Alan Sladen Palmer of 1 Australian Independent Company. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

(d) Prosecution Document No. 4053 consists of excerpts from Exhibitory Document No. 405. It contains records of the interrogation of two Japanese prisoners and excerpts from 6 Japanese diaries. I tender the document in evidence.

.....

From these excerpts it appears that 7 to 9 Australian of whom 3 or 4 were women and one a child were captured by the Japanese near Buna towards the middle of August and executed on the following day.

.....

(e) Prosecution Document No. 4054 contains further excerpts from Exhibitory Document No. 405. It contains an excerpt from a captured diary and the record of a statement made by a Japanese prisoner. I tender this document in evidence.

.....

I will read the diary excerpt from "Blood Carnival" down to the words "instruct to the A.T.C. at Moresby."

(f) Prosecution Document No. 5390 is a statement made by Sepoy BACHAN SINGH of 1/13 F.F.R. I tender the document for identification and the excerpts marked therein in evidence.

.....

I propose to read the marked excerpts other than the translator's certificate.

.....

(g)

Prosecution Document No. 5394 is a Statutory Declaration made by Jemadar Abdul LATIF of 4/9 Jat Regiment. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read paragraph 3 of this Declaration.

(h) Prosecution Document No. 5391 is a Statutory Declaration made by L/Cpl Dina MATI of 5/17 Dogra Regiment. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The declarant as an Indian prisoner of war, was a member of 18 Indian Working Party. In May, 1944, the main body of this party went to RABANG leaving behind at BUT 100 sick Indians. About a month later Jem L/CPL TAKASHI who had remained with these sick prisoners said they had been killed by machine guns and hand grenades as a reprisal because some Gurkhas had signalled to allied aircraft.

(i) Prosecution Document No. 5392 is a Statutory Declaration by Jem Chain SINGH of 2/12 Frontier Force. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The declarant states that in August, 1944, two Indian prisoners of war, Sergeant Mariaa SINGH and L/Cpl HAZARA SINGH were beaten by the Japanese with a shovel and sticks and were then taken away. He never saw them again.

.....

(j) Prosecution Document No. 5393 is a statement of Japanese L/Cpl YASUSAKI, Masaji of 19 Special Water Duty Coy. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

YASUSAKI admits that he and another Japanese shot and killed the two Indian prisoners of war, Sergeant Mariaa Singh and L/Cpl Hazara Singh referred to in previous exhibit.

.....

(k) Prosecution Document No. 5390 is a statement by Japanese L/Cpl YASUSAKI. I tender this document for identification and marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

He states that at Ranimboa in September, 1944, an Indian officer, Rashid MOHD and an Indian N.C.O. complained to the Japanese that another Japanese soldier had taken tobacco and shoes from them. Yasusaka and another Japanese then tied the Indians hands, took them into the bush and shot them.

.....

Evidentiary Document No. 5412.

Page 3.

(1) Prosecution Document No. 5361 is a Statutory Declaration by Te LAKHU SINGH. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

This document refers to the same happening as previous exhibit.

.....

(m) Prosecution Document No. 5366 is Statutory Declaration of JAGDAR CHINT SINGH of 2/12 Frontier Force. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The declarant tells of an Indian Prisoner of War being beaten into unconsciousness by a Japanese in February, 1945, at MURRING. Three weeks later he died from the effects of this beating.

.....

(n) Prosecution Document No. 5377 is a Statutory Declaration made by Sergeant Hanir SINGH of 2/12 Frontier Force. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The declarant tells of the shooting and killing of four sick Indian officers, who were prisoners of war, by the Japanese at YAL, New Guinea in February, 1945.

.....

(o) Prosecution Document No. 5229 is a record of the interrogation of Japanese Captain ONO, Satoru of 59 Field Anti-Aircraft Artillery Bn., 36 Div. 2nd. Army. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

ONO, Satoru states that he applied to Yoshino unit commander for an American prisoner of war to kill. He was given two. He had them bayoneted and then beheaded. One was finally beheaded with a shovel. This was in 1944. He did it because he had a strong hostile feeling on account of Americans bombing his battery.

.....

(p) Prosecution Document No. 5385 is sworn record of interrogation of Captain MIYANO, TILCHIRO of Fujimura Unit. I tender the document for identification and marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent stated that on orders of Chief of Staff Divisional Headquarters he executed an Australian soldier who had been captured at OTAKWA about 12th November, 1944.

.....

Evidentiary Document No. 5442.

Page 4.

(q) Prosecution Document No. 592 is a Netherlands Forces Intelligence Service report, with two photographs attached. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts including photographs in evidence.

.....

The report contains a statement by a Japanese prisoner of war admitting that he took part in the execution of an Australian Sergeant and two Abon natives at Aitapee on 24th October, 1943.

.....

(r) Prosecution Document No. 5989 is a Netherlands Forces Intelligence Service Report. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

This report contains a statement by Fusilier Nawi bin Gimam that in July, 1944, on Noenfoor Island he and 16 other Indonesians were tied up and bayoneted by the Japanese. He and one other feigned death and ultimately escaped. At least 14 of the remainder were killed.

.....

(s) Prosecution Document No. 409 contains extracts from Evidentiary Document No. 409. Paper 573 contains an order made by the Tribunal on 25th November, 1945, authorizing service of excerpts from Evidentiary Document No. 409 on accused instead of copies of Evidentiary Document No. 409. I tender Prosecution Document No. 409A in evidence.

.....

I will read sub-paragraphs (a) and (b) from first page of document.

.....

That completes the evidence on the New Guinea Section of this phase.

Ex 1832
Evidentiary Document # 5442

書證五四四二号

概略——二十六号

只今二十三日三教令に依りて民間人及び士民、取扱に因る書證を提出致したる。

(a) 檢察部書類第五三七九号、八采高國不、スラリヤ軍少佐
テ、此ノ書類ニ付、口供書アリ、又高田君
檢證、爲ニ又拔萃、印、附、多國所ノ書證ニ提出致したる。
常書記、中三四五及六部ヲ訓讀致したる。

(b) 檢察部書類第五三七八号、八采高國不、スラリヤ軍第十八歩兵
旅團元大尉、テ、此ノ書類ニ付、口供書アリ、又高田君
檢證、爲ニ又拔萃、印、附、多國所ノ書證ニ提出致したる。
常書類、中二部、リ、亦八部迄ヲ訓讀致したる。

(c) 檢察部書類第五三八八号、八采高國不、スラリヤ軍第一独立隊
元大尉、テ、此ノ書類ニ付、口供書アリ、又高田君
檢證、爲ニ又拔萃、印、附、多國所ノ書證ニ提出致したる。

(d) 檢察部書類第四四五号、B、書證第四四五号、拔萃
アリ、又、二人、日本人借席、審問記録ト亦、日本人見
カラ、拔萃ヲ命令テ提出致したる。

No. 1

以上、拔萃十二ヨリ、三人、又、四人、婦人、二人、子供ヲ含
七人、乃至九人、オ、スラリヤ人、八州、元半、ニ、テ、下、スル
頃、フ、テ、近、近、日本軍ニ捕、ハ、レ、聖、日、庭、刑、サ、ル、事
明記、サ、ル、所、ナ、ラ、ズ、

X X X X X

Doc 5442

(e) 檢察部書類第四五号、A 亦書證第四〇五号、
板葦ニアリヌ。捕獲セル日記カ、板葦ト日本人
修澤、陳述、記録ヲ合シテ展リヌ。此、書類ヲ書
證トシテ提出ス。

此書類ヲ、與、謝岡繁「カラ」ト「七一」空軍訓練隊、
教官ヲテ品トシテ「トイ」語道朗讀シヌ。

(f) 檢察部書類第五三九号、八第一隊隊員 F. R.
第二十三隊、ヨロイバカンシテ「音譯」ニ依リ陳述
書ニアリヌ。此書類ヲ檢證、爲「又板葦、印、
附イ多圖說ヲ書證トシテ提出ス。

飛訊者、證、於、於、除、板葦、印、附イ多圖說ヲ
朗讀、シ、ル、ト、イ、テ、ア、リ、ヌ。

(g) 檢察部書類第五三四号、八「音譯」隊
第四、隊員、三「ダ」ズ「ドル」ヲ「音譯」ニ依リ
ナル、其、的、宣、言、ニアリヌ。此書類ヲ檢證、爲
又板葦、印、附イ多圖說ヲ書證トシテ提出ス。

No. 2.

此、宣、言、の、三、即、朗、讀、シ、ヌ。

10.3

Doc 5442

(R) 陸軍部書第 五三九号ハトニ各譯ノ聯隊
 第三十七隊 隊長 勤務上ノ兵士 十ノ一ニ係リナ
 レタル海防ノ宣言ヲ下リマス。之ヲ檢證ノ爲ニ又拔萃、
 印ノ附イテ國勢ヲ書證トシテ提出シマス。

イノト人修養場ニ原出ハ第六イノト五隊員ニナリマス。
 一九四二年五月ニ此隊ノ大部分ハ心ノ一〇名ノ病人ヲ
 發シテ、之バニ連行セラルガヤリマス。之等ノ病人ル
 修養場ト安ニ臥シ居ルツ、日本人 隊長 勤務上ノ兵士カニ
 各譯ノ聯合軍ノ飛行機ニ信号ヲ送リ、之ルカ人
 ガ居ル爲、ソレ復繼々トシテ修養場ヲ全部機園銃ト
 手榴彈ヲ殺撃セラルト認リマス。

(次頁へ續く)

Doc. 54442

(シ) 検察部書類第五三八三號、前線部隊第二十二隊兵卒
オエニシテ / 音譯 / ニヨリナセタシ志的尙言ナリマス。
當書類ヲ檢證、爲ニ又拔萃、印、以テ箇所ヲ書證トシテ
提出致シマス。

x x x x x x x

原書一九四四年八月二日、イニド人俘虜オカクワリカ公ニ音譯
軍曹トガラシク音譯、任長勤務上等兵ガ日本人ニシテ、棒
ヲ毆打サレ連行サレ事、及、以後此ノ人、率、再ビ見ラレカ、
事ヲ陳述致シ居リマス。

x x x x x

(イ) 検察部書類第五三八三號、日本兵第十九特別給水中隊
ニ等兵 安嶋正治 / 音譯 / 陳述書ナリマス。
此ノ書類ヲ檢證、爲ニ又拔萃、印、附イテ箇所ヲ書證トシテ
提出致シマス。

x x x x x x

安嶋、彼ガ他ノ日本人、共ニ先刻、書證中ニ言及サレ、此ノ人、イニド
人俘虜オカクワリカ公ニシテ / 音譯 / 軍曹トガラシク音譯
任長勤務上等兵ヲ銃殺シ事ヲ承認シ居リマス。

x x x x x x

(ウ) 検察部書類第五三八三號、日本軍ニ等兵安根 / 音譯 / 陳述
書ナリマス。當書類ヲ檢證、爲ニ又拔萃、印、附イテ箇所ヲ
書證トシテ提出致シマス。

x x x x x x

Fla. 4

No. 5

Doc. 5442

然、其後四年九月二十三日、
 一、一人、下士官、
 奪つた、
 身ヲ捕縛シ、
 × × × ×

(遺書ニ據ル)

Doc. 5442

證據書類第五四二號

(I) 檢察書類第五三八號、兵ラウラム / LAHU RAM / 係、
陳述、余之檢證上其標記、按筆、證據、提出スル。

此書類、前書證、同一、事實、因連、在、之、下、也。

(II) 檢察書類第五三八號、兵、
/ JEMADAR CHINT SINGH / 係、陳述、余之檢證
上其標記、按筆、證據、提出スル。

本陳述者、一九四五年二月、中、
印度、俘虜、日本人、ヨリ、打擲、
語、此、同、人、此、打、
、
、

(III) 檢察書類第五三九號、兵、
/ Hamis SINGH / 係、
證上其標記、按筆、證據、提出スル。

此陳述者、一九四五年二月、
、
、

66

(O) 檢察書類第五三九號、日本、
、
、

華三證據上之出心

小野悟 / Ono Satom / 陳述三之彼六音野

YOSHINO 音訊 / 部隊長 敵之三人 倍去層子謀求之

又與之兄弟 彼之彼等之銀劍之決于斬首之夕。

下自取後三平之以此于斬首之夕此夕一九四四年事

ア。彼等母中ツタノニ 米軍飛行機ヲ殺シ 砲隊爆

撃シタリ 乃チ強烈ナル敵意を感じタリ

(次頁ニ續ク)

Doc. 5442

167

Doc 5442

(P) 檢察書類第五五五號：檢附 / 音譯 / 部
隊，加藤喜八郎 / 音譯 / 大尉，宣揚言不認
認錄其 余之檢證上其標記已按察 / 證
據上 / 提其

證人陳述之所言，一九四三年十月十二日頃
有到 / OTAKWA / 二於 / 捕虜 / 一人，
濠洲軍師團參謀長，命 / 死刑 / 二人，
(另) 檢察書類第五三四號，二枚，寫真亦添附
也之，如濠洲軍情報 / 檢證上其
標記之按察及寫真 / 檢證上其

此報告之記載，所 / 一人，日本人 / 傷處 / 陳述之
所言，係 / 一九四三年十月十二日 / 一人 / AITAPEE
二於 / 一人，濠洲軍之書及二人 / 二人 / 一人，處刑
二國樂 / 上 / 亦 / 檢證上其

No. 8

(九) 檢察書類第五八九號：如濠洲軍情報部
報告之 / 余之檢證上其標記已按察 / 證
據上 / 提其

此報告之 / 隊 / 檢證上其 / NAW
BIN GIMAN / 陳述 / 一九四三年七月 / 中

Doc. 5442

(P) 檢察書類第五三六號：櫻村 / 音譯 / 部
隊，加藤喜一郎 / 音譯 / 大尉，宣揚官，認
證書記，余之檢證，其標記已檢封，證
據，據云。

證人陳述之所在，一九四三年十月十二日頃
有列之 OTAKWA / 三於 / 捕虜 / 一人，
濠洲島，師團參謀長，命 / 三 / 死刑 / 二人，
(另) 檢察書類第五三四號，二枚，寫真，添附
也，一九四三年四月三日，檢證，其
標記已檢封，寫真，檢證，據云。

此報告，記載於所，一人，日本人，俘虜，陳述之
所，一九四三年十月十二日，所，AITAPEE，
二於，一人，濠洲島，書及二人，所，一人，處刑
二國，與，一九四三年，檢證，據云。

No. 8

(九) 檢察書類第五三九號：加藤 / 音譯 / 部
報告，余之檢證，其標記已檢封，證
據，據云。

此報告，由，隊，大尉，所，NAWA
BIN GIMAN / 陳述，一九四三年七月，中。

Doc 5442

（五）檢察書類第四〇九號、證據書類第四〇九號、搜查書類第一九號、添附之文書五七八、
 一九四六年十一月二十五日裁決前二月十七日指
 令第九四号
 「證據書類第四〇九號、同月提出之件」ニ該證
 據書類第四〇九號、被審二國及一人、被審ヲ以
 テ及ルヲ許スル
 旨ノ指合及、余、檢察書類第四〇九號
 證據書類提出之件

余、細目(五)及(六)ノ書類、第一頁上ノ讀ミ上
 ルニ
 以上ヲ以テ檢察側ヨリ、二月廿四日、部内三國及
 證據書類提出之件

No. 9

（五）檢察書類第四〇九號、證據書類第四〇九號、
 搜查書類第一九號、添附之文書五七八、
 一九四六年十一月二十五日裁決前二月十七日指
 令第九四号
 「證據書類第四〇九號、同月提出之件」ニ該證
 據書類第四〇九號、被審二國及一人、被審ヲ以
 テ及ルヲ許スル
 旨ノ指合及、余、檢察書類第四〇九號
 證據書類提出之件

Doc 5442

（五）NEEMFOOR、島、於、彼、及、他、十
六、小、本、及、日、本、人、三、十、三、捕、獲、也、上
鏡、劍、以、及、其、他、人、死、之、數、之、詳、情、見
出、此、事、之、本、報、發、給、內、少、至、十、四、人、之、死、亡、之、

(S) 檢察書類第四。九A號。證據書類第
四。九號。檢査書類添附。文章五七八。
一九四六年十一月二十五日。檢査書類。九A號。指
令九號。
證據書類第四。九號。檢査書類添附。文章五七八。
一九四六年十一月二十五日。檢査書類。九A號。指
令九號。
證據書類第四。九號。檢査書類添附。文章五七八。
一九四六年十一月二十五日。檢査書類。九A號。指
令九號。

余、細、目、(a) 及 (b) 之、書、類、第、一、頁、之、上
之、上。
以上、之、以、檢、察、側、面、之、二、十、二、部、面、之、
證據書類檢査書類添附。文章五七八。

No. 9

NO. 9

Doc 5442

（一）本行 / NCEMFOR / 島松信廣及其他十
名、全日本及び日本人三行ヲ捕縛セリ以上
銃劔ヲ以テ殺シ及被テ他人ノ死ヲ殺スヲ甚屬
凶悪事ト為シ、戦後ノ内カ多ク十四人ノ死亡シ

（三）檢察書類第四〇九A號ノ證據書類第
四〇九號ヨリ、被テ事及添附シテ文書五七八ノ
一九四六年十一月二五日に裁判所ニヨリ十月九日指
令シテ即

「證據書類第四〇九號同ノ提出スル」ニ該證
據書類第四〇九號中被告ニ關スル、被テ事ヲ以
テ及テ事許シテ
自ノ指合及、余ノ檢察書類第四〇九A號
ノ證據書類提出スル

余、總目(四)及(五)ノ書類、第一頁ヨリ讀ミ上
リテ

以上ヲ以テ檢察側ヨリ一九四四年四月三
證據書類提出スル

Ex. 1833

Evidentiary Document No. 5379.

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL OF THE FAR EAST
NO. 1.
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AND OTHERS
- against -
ARAKI, Sadao and OTHERS

I, Charles Henry BICKS, of "Standford", Amy Street, Hawthorne, at present attached to Northern Command Discharge Depot, Redbank, QX 47482, make oath and say as follows:-

1. I am at present a Major in the Australian Military Forces.
2. In August, 1942, I was a Captain attached to the 61st. Australian Infantry Battalion, and I was OC of "B" Coy.
3. I was at Milne Bay on Tuesday, 25th August, 1942, when the Japanese landed in that area, and I took part in the fighting which occurred in that area between the Japanese and Australian Forces from the 25th August, 1942 until the 31st. August, 1942.
4. On the morning of the 30th August, 1942, I took a patrol consisting of myself and four others into Japanese occupied territory. At a place called KOTEO, where our forces had engaged the Japanese on the night of the 26th, I saw a native lying on his face in the middle of the road. His hands were tied behind him with signal wire (Don-3 Cable). He had been shot three or four times through the body, and he had also been bayoneted through the stomach about three times. I did not know/who this native was, but he appeared to me to have been a native of that district. From my observations, I would say definitely that he had been bayoneted and shot after having been tied up.
5. Further on in the jungle, near the same village, I found the body of a native woman. She had been tied down with signal wire by the wrists and legs to stakes. She was lying on her back and was naked. She had been killed by a knife or a bayonet slash from the stomach upwards.
6. Further on near KOEBELE, where fighting had taken place on the night of the 27th, between the 2/10th and the Japanese, I found the bodies of six Australians lying near the track. Their hands had been tied behind their backs with signal wire, and they had been bayoneted through the stomach. Two of them had had their arms smashed with rifle bullets fired at close range. These men were lying with their knees up. I looked for the Identity Discs, but these had all been removed.
7. On the beach near the KOEBELE JETTY I saw the bodies of two

Q. # 1833

Evidentiary Document No. 5379.

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL OF THE FAR EAST
NO. 1.
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AND OTHERS
- against -
ARAKI, Sadao and OTHERS

I, Charles Henry BICKS, of "Standford", Amy Street, Hawthorne, at present attached to Northern Command Discharge Depot, Redbank, QX 47482, make oath and say as follows:-

1. I am at present a Major in the Australian Military Forces.
2. In August, 1942, I was a Captain attached to the 61st. Australian Infantry Battalion, and I was OC of "B" Coy.
3. I was at Milne Bay on Tuesday, 25th August, 1942, when the Japanese landed in that area, and I took part in the fighting which occurred in that area between the Japanese and Australian Forces from the 25th August, 1942 until the 31st. August, 1942.
4. On the morning of the 30th August, 1942, I took a patrol consisting of myself and four others into Japanese occupied territory. At a place called MOTEQ, where our forces had engaged the Japanese on the night of the 26th, I saw a native lying on his face in the middle of the road. His hands were tied behind him with signal wire (Don-3 Cable). He had been shot three or four times through the body, and he had also been bayoneted through the stomach about three times. I did not know/who this native was, but he appeared to me to have been a native of that district. From my observations, I would say definitely that he had been bayoneted and shot after having been tied up.
5. Further on in the jungle, near the same village, I found the body of a native woman. She had been tied down with signal wire by the wrists and legs to stakes. She was lying on her back and was naked. She had been killed by a knife or a bayonet slash from the stomach upwards.
6. Further on near KOEBELE, where fighting had taken place on the night of the 27th, between the 2/10th and the Japanese, I found the bodies of six Australians lying near the track. Their hands had been tied behind their backs with signal wire, and they had been bayoneted through the stomach. Two of them had had their arms smashed with rifle bullets fired at close range. These men were lying with their knees up. I looked for the Identity Discs, but these had all been removed.
7. On the beach near the KOEBELE JETTY I saw the bodies of two

Artillery officers. They were naked, and had apparently been killed by machine gun fire, and the flesh seemed to be burnt. As these bodies were lying near the corner of a hut which had been burnt, I consider that the hut had caught fire and they had been burnt in this fire.

SWORN BEFORE ME AT)
BRISBANE ON THE 23rd.)
DAY OF AUGUST, 1946.) /s/ C. H. Bicks, Major.

/s/ A. J. Mansfield
Judge of Supreme Court of Queensland.

Doc 5379

私ハホーン・アーミー・ストリート「スミス・ホーン」居住、
 HAWTHORNE ARMY STREET STANDFORD
 チャーレス・ヘンリー・ビックス Charles Henry BICKS (上申)
 當時のQX四七四「レッドバンク」(北軍司令部
 除隊所 Northern Command Discharge Depot) 所屬
 して居りマシキ者。
 官誓、上次、證言ヲ致シマス。

Ex 1833

- 一 私現在濠洲陸軍、少佐トゴザイマス。
- 二 一九四二年(昭和十七年)八月ニ私第六十二濠洲歩
 兵大隊所屬、陸軍大尉トアリB中隊、掛リ將校
 トゴザイシタ。
- 三 一九四二年(昭和十七年)八月十五日火曜日ニ私
 ミルン湾 Milne Bayニ居リマシキトヨ其ノ地方(日本軍
 ガ上陸致シマシタ。ソノ私ノ地方ニ起ツタ一九四二年
 八月十五日カラ其ノ月二十日ニ至リ日本軍ト濠洲
 軍ト、戦ニ從ヒマシタ。
- 四 一九四二年八月三日朝、私私外四名者ト日本軍ガ
 占據シタ地域ヲ偵察ヲ行ヒマシタ。モテ不(Moteo)
 ト云フ所ニ「真然」ト其日夜我軍ガ日本軍ト會戦
 シタ場所ニアシキガ「私一人」ト人カ道、真中ニ俯
 向シテ倒リ居ルヲ見タマシタ。彼、両手ハ電線(トシ
 一ニケブル)ヲ附ケタマ、背後廻リテ居リマシタ。彼ハ
 三四國所貫通銃剣ヲ受テ居リ、腹部ヲ三四國所程
 銃剣ヲ突刺セシテ居リマシタ。私ハ彼名ハ存ジマセシタ

No 1

Doc 5379

が彼其、地方、之人、之、思、ハ、シ、シ、私、ノ、觀、ト、コ、ロ、ヨリ
マ、ト、彼、ハ、慥、ニ、縛、メ、ラ、シ、タ、銃、劍、ヲ、突、刺、サ、シ、上、ニ、射
殺、セ、シ、タ、モ、テ、ゴ、サ、シ、タ、ス。

五、更、ニ、進、テ、同、心、村、ノ、シ、ヤ、ン、グ、ル、ノ、中、ニ、入、リ、マ、ス、私、ハ、
一、人、ノ、死、骸、ヲ、見、カ、ケ、マ、シ、タ。彼、女、ハ、電、線、ヲ、杖、ニ、両、手、
ヲ、首、ト、両、足、ヲ、結、ヒ、付、ケ、テ、居、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ。彼、女、ハ、仰、向
キ、ニ、寝、テ、居、リ、裸、ニ、セ、ラ、レ、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ。彼、女、ハ、右、手、ニ、銃
劍、ヲ、腹、部、カ、ラ、上、ヲ、突、刺、サ、シ、殺、セ、テ、居、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ。

六、尚、ホ、進、テ、ゴ、エ、ニ、シ、Kachele、ノ、近、ク、テ、一、其、處、ニ、ハ
二、七、日、ノ、夜、一、部、隊、ト、日、本、軍、ト、同、ニ、戦、闘、シ、マ、シ、タ。
一、テ、シ、タ、ガ、一、徑、傍、ニ、七、人、ノ、濠、洲、人、ノ、死、体、ヲ、見、シ、マ、シ、タ。
彼、等、ハ、電、線、ヲ、兩、手、ヲ、背、後、ニ、結、ヒ、テ、銃、劍、ヲ、腹、部、
ニ、突、刺、サ、シ、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ。彼、等、ノ、中、ニ、二、名、ハ、腕、ヲ、向、面、ニ、卷、
キ、テ、射、テ、小、銃、彈、ヲ、打、碎、カ、シ、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ。彼、等、ハ、膝、ヲ、立
テ、倒、リ、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ。私、ハ、認、識、標、ヲ、探、シ、マ、シ、タ、ガ、既、ニ
皆、持、去、レ、テ、ゴ、サ、イ、マ、セ、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ。

七、Kachele Jetty、ノ、近、ク、海、岸、ニ、私、ハ、
歩、兵、將、校、ノ、死、体、ヲ、出、遭、ヒ、マ、シ、タ。彼、等、ハ、裸、ニ、モ、ラ、レ、テ、
居、リ、明、カ、ニ、機、関、銃、ヲ、射、殺、サ、シ、マ、シ、タ。彼、等、由、リ、
燒、キ、焦、カ、サ、シ、テ、居、ル、様、子、ニ、シ、タ。彼、等、ノ、死、体、ハ、燒、カ、シ、タ、小、屋、
ノ、隔、近、ク、ニ、轉、シ、テ、居、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ。小屋、ガ、火、事、ト、ナ、リ、其、火、ハ、彼、等、
ガ、燒、カ、シ、タ、ヲ、ト、私、ハ、思、フ、リ、マ、シ、タ。

No 2

D. 1833A

Evidentiary Document No. 5379.

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL OF THE FAR EAST

NO. 1.

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AND OTHERS

- against -

ARAKI, Sadao and OTHERS

I, Charles Henry BICKS, of "Standford", Amy Street, Hawthorne, at present attached to Northern Command Discharge Depot, Redbank, QX 47482, make oath and say as follows:-

1. I am at present a Major in the Australian Military Forces.
2. In August, 1942, I was a Captain attached to the 61st. Australian Infantry Battalion, and I was OC of "B" Coy.
3. I was at Milne Bay on Tuesday, 25th August, 1942, when the Japanese landed in that area, and I took part in the fighting which occurred in that area between the Japanese and Australian Forces from the 25th August, 1942 until the 31st. August, 1942.
4. On the morning of the 30th August, 1942, I took a patrol consisting of myself and four others into Japanese occupied territory. At a place called MOTEU, where our forces had engaged the Japanese on the night of the 26th, I saw a native lying on his face in the middle of the road. His hands were tied behind him with signal wire (Don-3 Cable). He had been shot three or four times through the body, and he had also been bayoneted through the stomach about three times. I did not know ^{who} this native was, but he appeared to me to have been a native of that district. From my observations, I would say definitely that he had been bayoneted and shot after having been tied up.
5. Further on in the jungle, near the same village, I found the body of a native woman. She had been tied down with signal wire by the wrists and legs to stakes. She was lying on her back and was naked. She had been killed by a knife or a bayonet slash from the stomach upwards.
6. Further on near KOEBELE, where fighting had taken place on the night of the 27th, between the 2/10th and the Japanese, I found the bodies of six Australians lying near the track. Their hands had been tied behind their backs with signal wire, and they had been bayoneted through the stomach. Two of them had had their arms smashed with rifle bullets fired at close range. These men were lying with their knees up. I looked for the Identity Discs, but these had all been removed.
7. On the beach near the KOEBELE JETTY I saw the bodies of two

Artillery officers. They were naked, and had apparently been killed by machine gun fire, and the flesh seemed to be burnt. As these bodies were lying near the corner of a hut which had been burnt, I consider that the hut had caught fire and they had been burnt in this fire.

SWORN BEFORE ME AT)
BRISBANE ON THE 23rd.)
DAY OF AUGUST, 1946.) /s/ C. H. Bicks, Major.

/s/ A. J. Mansfield
Judge of Supreme Court of Queensland.

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL OF THE FAR EASTUNITED STATES OF AMERICA AND OTHERS

- against -

ABAKI, SPACE AND OTHERS

I, Charles Walter KENDALL, of 747 Sandgate Road, Clayfield, Brisbane, in the State of Queensland, civil servant, make oath and say as follows:-

1. In the months of August and September, 1942, I was a Captain in the Australian Military Forces being QX 6134. I was attached to the 18th Infantry Brigade Headquarters, and took part in the fighting at Milne Bay during those months.
2. About 1st. or 2nd. September, 1942, at Waga Waga in Milne Bay we captured the headquarters of a Japanese Marine Regiment. In clearing the jungle around these Headquarters for our own defensive position, I saw the bodies of two Australian soldiers who had been members of the 61st. Militia Battalion.
3. One of these bodies was lying on the ground with his hands tied together in front of him, and his trousers pulled down around his knees and tied down to his boots by his belt. He had the tops of his ears cut off, and about twenty knife or bayonet wound in the body. His hands were tied in front of his chest and his fore-arms were cut as though he had been trying to protect himself. His buttocks and genitals had been frightfully mutilated.
4. About six feet away from his body the other body was tied to a tree, with his hands behind his back. He had about six small wounds on the upper arm. The ground around the base of the tree was very disturbed as though he had been tied there for some days.
5. Both these bodies were not more than fifty yards from the Japanese Headquarters which had been captured.
6. On the track leading from Waga Waga to Lillihi, I saw the body of another Australian soldier, with his hands tied behind his back, lying face downwards. He was tied with string. He had a wound on his leg, with a service field dressing on it, and he had the top of his head cut right off. The top portion of the skull was lying forward as if it had been cut right through with a heavy knife or sword, and had been chopped from the rear. He also had lacertations criss-crossing his back and shoulders. They appeared to be knife or sword wounds, and had cut right through the shirt in the flesh.
7. Between the villages of Waga Waga and Goroni, near a Japanese Wireless Station, I saw the body of a native woman pegged out on the ground. She was tied with twine from her wrists and

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL OF THE FAR EASTUNITED STATES OF AMERICA AND OTHERS

- against -

ARAKI, Saigao AND OTHERS

I, Charles Walter KENDALL, of 747 Sandgate Road, Clayfield, Brisbane, in the State of Queensland, civil servant, make oath and say as follows:-

1. In the months of August and September, 1942, I was a Captain in the Australian Military Forces being QX 6134. I was attached to the 18th Infantry Brigade Headquarters, and took part in the fighting at Milne Bay during those months.
2. About 1st. or 2nd. September, 1942, at Waga Waga in Milne Bay we captured the headquarters of a Japanese Marine Regiment. In clearing the jungle around these Headquarters for our own defensive position, I saw the bodies of two Australian soldiers who had been members of the 61st. Militia Battalion.
3. One of these bodies was lying on the ground with his hands tied together in front of him, and his trousers pulled down around his knees and tied down to his boots by his belt. He had the tops of his ears cut off, and about twenty knife or bayonet wound in the body. His hands were tied in front of his chest and his fore-arms were cut as though he had been trying to protect himself. His buttocks and genitals had been frightfully mutilated.
4. About six feet away from his body the other body was tied to a tree, with his hands behind his back. He had about six small wounds on the upper arm. The ground around the base of the tree was very disturbed as though he had been tied there for some days.
5. Both these bodies were not more than fifty yards from the Japanese Headquarters which had been captured.
6. On the track leading from Waga Waga to Lillihi, I saw the body of another Australian soldier, with his hands tied behind his back, lying face downwards. He was tied with string. He had a wound on his leg, with a service field dressing on it, and he had the top of his head cut right off. The top portion of the skull was lying forward as if it had been cut right through with a heavy knife or sword, and had been chopped from the rear. He also had lacertations criss-crossing his back and shoulders. They appeared to be knife or sword wounds, and had cut right through the shirt in the flesh.
7. Between the villages of Waga Waga and Goroni, near a Japanese Wireless Station, I saw the body of a native woman pegged out on the ground. She was tied with twine from her wrists and

ankles to pegs driven in the ground. Both of her breasts had been cut off and one was placed on her face and the other one on her stomach. The body appeared to be that of a young native woman about 20 years old. She was naked, and did not appear to have been dead for very long. In my opinion, her breasts had been severed with a knife as they were very raggedly cut.

8. Within a couple of days a Japanese soldier was captured at Ahione. He spoke English, and I showed him the bodies of the two Australian soldiers whom I have previously mentioned. He told me that he was attached to the landing party, and that the ill-treatment and torturing of Australian troops was done by the orders of their officers so that the Japanese soldiers would fight and not surrender, because the same things would be done to them now that these atrocities had been committed on the Australians.

/s/ C. W. Kendall.

SWORN BEFORE ME AT)
BRISBANE ON THE)
23RD DAY OF AUGUST,)
1946.)

/s/ A. J. Mansfield
Judge of Supreme Court of Queensland.

Doc. 5378
A1534

查宣長... (一) 宣長... (二) 宣長... (三) 宣長... (四) 宣長... (五) 宣長... (六) 宣長... (七) 宣長... (八) 宣長... (九) 宣長... (十) 宣長... (十一) 宣長... (十二) 宣長... (十三) 宣長... (十四) 宣長... (十五) 宣長... (十六) 宣長... (十七) 宣長... (十八) 宣長... (十九) 宣長... (二十) 宣長... (二十一) 宣長... (二十二) 宣長... (二十三) 宣長... (二十四) 宣長... (二十五) 宣長... (二十六) 宣長... (二十七) 宣長... (二十八) 宣長... (二十九) 宣長... (三十) 宣長... (三十一) 宣長... (三十二) 宣長... (三十三) 宣長... (三十四) 宣長... (三十五) 宣長... (三十六) 宣長... (三十七) 宣長... (三十八) 宣長... (三十九) 宣長... (四十) 宣長... (四十一) 宣長... (四十二) 宣長... (四十三) 宣長... (四十四) 宣長... (四十五) 宣長... (四十六) 宣長... (四十七) 宣長... (四十八) 宣長... (四十九) 宣長... (五十) 宣長... (五十一) 宣長... (五十二) 宣長... (五十三) 宣長... (五十四) 宣長... (五十五) 宣長... (五十六) 宣長... (五十七) 宣長... (五十八) 宣長... (五十九) 宣長... (六十) 宣長... (六十一) 宣長... (六十二) 宣長... (六十三) 宣長... (六十四) 宣長... (六十五) 宣長... (六十六) 宣長... (六十七) 宣長... (六十八) 宣長... (六十九) 宣長... (七十) 宣長... (七十一) 宣長... (七十二) 宣長... (七十三) 宣長... (七十四) 宣長... (七十五) 宣長... (七十六) 宣長... (七十七) 宣長... (七十八) 宣長... (七十九) 宣長... (八十) 宣長... (八十一) 宣長... (八十二) 宣長... (八十三) 宣長... (八十四) 宣長... (八十五) 宣長... (八十六) 宣長... (八十七) 宣長... (八十八) 宣長... (八十九) 宣長... (九十) 宣長... (九十一) 宣長... (九十二) 宣長... (九十三) 宣長... (九十四) 宣長... (九十五) 宣長... (九十六) 宣長... (九十七) 宣長... (九十八) 宣長... (九十九) 宣長... (一百) 宣長...

Doc 5398

蘇... 蘇... 蘇...
 其... 其... 其...
 其... 其... 其...
 其... 其... 其...

(八) 二日...
 彼... 彼... 彼...
 二見... 二見... 二見...
 夫... 夫... 夫...
 等... 等... 等...
 下... 下... 下...

2

Ex. *1835-

Evidentiary Document No. 5388.

IN THE INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL
FOR THE FAR EAST.

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AND OTHERS

v
ALAKI, SADAO AND OTHERS

A F F I D A V I T

I, Alan Staden Palmer, of 48 Rainbow Avenue, South Broken Hill, in the State of New South Wales, formerly SX6543 Captain A.S. Palmer, of 1 Australian Independent Company, make oath and say:

1. In August, 1942, I was on patrol duty in the vicinity of Milne Bay in New Guinea, and was passing through a small native village about half a mile inland from Kabi mission. On the outskirts of the village I saw eight native men and women lying dead. They had been dead from two to five days, and all were shot or bayoneted.

2. I went on into the village and saw an Australian soldier tied to a coconut palm by D5 telephone cable. His arms had been tied around the tree and the wire had cut deeply into his wrists, and this led me to believe that he was alive when tied to the tree. He was practically naked, wearing only a pair of tattered shorts. He had a number of bullet wounds in his body. He was dead. I also saw quite a number of natives lying about dead, including two native women and one native man who were tied to trees. They had been killed by either sword or bayonet thrusts.

SWORN AT BROKEN HILL IN THE

STATE OF NEW SOUTH WALES

THIS THE 4TH DAY OF OCTOBER 1946

(sgd) A. S. PALMER.

BEFORE ME

(sgd) J. MANDERSON J.P.

Doc. 5388

臺灣警備司令部

秘
軍警委員會
軍事委員會
軍警委員會

一、九四三年八月...
二、本...

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc. No. 405-B

1836
/

(being excerpts from pages 18 to 24 of Evidentiary Document 405.)

(E) The following references establish the fact and circumstance of the execution of 7-9 Australians in the vicinity of BUNA Government Station about 12 - 14 Aug 42.

(1) The summary report of interrogation of PW JA 100037 yields the following account. Examining Officers were Lieutenant-Commander L.C.S. SHEPARD, R.N., and G.W. COLTON, USN.

"No. 4 Section of No. 3 Platoon, No. 2 Company of TSUKICHA Force was on duty at HAKOZANE IANU Landing Place, about 2 1/2 miles west of BUNA and identified by PW as SAMANANDA Point, from 11 Aug until it rejoined the main unit at BUNA on 22 Aug 42. PW did not, therefore, witness the incident, but heard about it for the first time about 15 Aug. Two men from No. 4 Section ITTOSUIHEI (1st. Class Seaman) IMOUYE, Fukuichi, and SAITOSUIHEI (3rd. Class Seaman) IWALATBU, Takeshi, had left the Landing Place that morning for BUNA, and on their return the same evening they told the story to the rest of No. 4 Section. PW had also talked with other members of the Force who were at BUNA at the time, but claim that he did not hear much about the incident.

PW heard that the party consisted of 7 Australians. Two were men aged about 30, one fat and one not so fat. One was a child aged about 7, which PW thought was a boy. He thought the other four were women, one being the mother of the child and aged about 25. He could give no further description of them, and did not know if they were traders of missionaries. He did not think that the men were soldiers. They had 2 rifles, but he did not think they had any other gear, such as pistols, W/T set, or provisions. He did not know whether the Battalion Commander had any previous knowledge of their former residences. He had not heard of MALIKOFU Village.

/He had not heard of any reward being given to them

PW heard that the party was brought in by about 20 natives about 12 Aug. but he did not know at what time. He did not know whence the natives came, as those around BUNA had fled some time before. They were, however, natives of NEW GUINEA and did not come from RAFAUL. He did not know who was the "headman". He did not think that Australians were brought in by force, as they carried 2 rifles, but they may have been deceived by the natives. He thought the latter were acting on their own accord, not under Japanese instructions. PW thought that the natives left BUNA after they had been interviewed by an interpreter, and did not witness the execution.

PW did not know what happened when the party reached the Japanese sentry lines. They were, however, captured near a road at the edge of coconut plantation. After capture, they were put in a building in the clearing near the Point.

PW believed that the building was formerly used as a garage. It was completely open at one end, about 10 metres long, 5 metres wide, and 7 - 8 metres high, and had no doors or windows. The roof and walls were made of corrugated iron, tarred or painted black. The floor was made of earth. A dirt road ran in front of the open end.

The prisoners were kept together in this building for the night of the 12/13 Aug. Sentries from No. 3 Platoon were posted; they were outside the building and not inside. One of them was a man from No. 1 Section of No. 3 Platoon, OKULURA, Masao, with whom PW had spoken subsequently. He did not know the names of the other guards. He did not think that they were bound or stripped, or in any way mistreated. He did not think that the women were raped then, or at any later time, but did not enquire about it; the Japanese would not do a thing like that. Even if they were, PW would not be told about it. Naturally they would be given military rations, and would be allowed to go to a latrine.

While in the building, the prisoners were visited by the interpreter, a man called TASHIRO, personal name unknown. He was a GUNZOKU (Civilian in Naval employment) and came from KABAUL. PW did not know if he lived in KABAUL before the war. He spoke to natives in pidgin English. He was last seen alive and well by PW on GOODENOUGH Island Sept. or Oct. 42. The interpreter asked the prisoners their names, ages, occupations, etc. PW did not hear the results of the questioning. He did not know whether they were brought before the Battalion Commander, Commander TSUKICKA, I. J. N., who was the Senior Naval Officer and in BUNA at the time. PW did not know whether any form of trial or court-martial was held. He did not know why they were treated in such a way, but presumed that the execution was the idea of the Battalion Commander (BUTAICHO NC OIOE).

The prisoners were executed the following day, 13 Aug. PW did not know at what time, but thought it was afternoon. Before they were killed, a grave was dug. PW did not know whether it was dug by prisoners themselves. He did not know the place where execution took place, but did not think it was in immediate vicinity of camp. It was not in the hills. PW did not know if prisoners were bound before, or during, the execution, and did not think they were stripped. He did not think they were ill treated or teased in any way.

No order was given that all members of the BUTAI were to witness the execution, and attendance was voluntary. Some men remained in their billets, including No. 1 Section Leader of No. 3 Platoon, FUKUFUJIA, Katsuchi. PW could not give names of others who stayed away, but thought they included Nos. 2 and 3 Section Leaders of No. 3 Platoon. He stated that a man would not be asked whether he attended or not. No. 1 Platoon of No. 2 Company was not present, as it was at a place about 5 KI (12 miles) from BUNA, and did not return until after 24 Aug. The 14th Pioneer

giment was also in the BUNA Area, but did not know about the execution, and did not witness it.

PW did not know whether the Battalion Commander was present at the execution, nor the names of officers who attended. He thought that men from the Battalion Headquarters Platoon, No. 2 Platoon, No. 3 Platoon less No. 4 Section, and Company MG Platoon were present. Spectators were fallen in to witness the execution, PW did not hear of any speeches being made beforehand.

PW did not know how many men carried out the execution, but thought there was one man to each prisoner. He did not know if they were volunteers or not. He did not know the names of the executioners and stated most emphatically that this was the truth and that he was not lying. He was not certain from which Platoons they came, but thought they were from No. 2 Platoon and the IG Platoon.

The Prisoners were made to kneel down by the grave and were killed one by one, and not all together. He did not know the order in which they were killed except that the mother and child were killed towards the last. The mother was holding the child, who was crying, in her arms when she was shot with a pistol. The child was then shot with a pistol. He did not know how many shots were fired. PW thought that the man who shot them was a rating and not an officer. The other prisoners were all stabbed with bayonets, but PW did not know how many times. He had not heard, but did not think that their heads were cut off afterwards. He had not heard of a girl aged 16 trying to escape and having her head cut off. He did not know how long the execution took to complete.

PW did not know if all the bodies were buried together in the one grave. They were not cremated, nor were their bodies thrown into the sea. He did not know if the grave was marked in any way, and had never seen it himself. He could not guide anyone to it.

PW stated that he and his friends were ashamed of the incident. He thought that such treatment was not proper and was very brutal. The child, in particular, was pitiful. He thought it "a little cruel" on the part of the Battalion Commander.

PW denied any knowledge of the capture in the BUNA Area, Jul and Aug. 42, of a further group of prisoners or of an American Air Corps Pilot, or of an Australian 2nd. Lieutenant. He had not heard of the execution of any natives. While on GOODENOUGH Island Aug - Oct. 42, natives had mentioned a white man with radio equipment. A search was made for him, but the search party returned without finding him. PW did not think a further search was made, nor any prisoners captured on the island.

PW emphatically stated that he had not told any lies, and even if there were any mistakes in his story, it was the truth as he knew it. He reiterated that he did not know the names of the executioners, as he had never heard who they were."

giment was also in the BUNA Area, but did not know about the execution, and did not witness it.

PW did not know whether the Battalion Commander was present at the execution, nor the names of officers who attended. He thought that men from the Battalion Headquarters Platoon, No. 2 Platoon, No. 3 Platoon less No. 4 Section, and Company MG Platoon were present. Spectators were fallen in to witness the execution, PW did not hear of any speeches being made beforehand.

PW did not know how many men carried out the execution, but thought there was one man to each prisoner. He did not know if they were volunteers or not. He did not know the names of the executioners and stated most emphatically that this was the truth and that he was not lying. He was not certain from which Platoons they came, but thought they were from No. 2 Platoon and the I.G Platoon.

The Prisoners were made to kneel down by the grave and were killed one by one, and not all together. He did not know the order in which they were killed except that the mother and child were killed towards the last. The mother was holding the child, who was crying, in her arms when she was shot with a pistol. The child was then shot with a pistol. He did not know how many shots were fired. PW thought that the man who shot them was a rating and not an officer. The other prisoners were all stabbed with bayonets, but PW did not know how many times. He had not heard, but did not think that their heads were cut off afterwards. He had not heard of a girl aged 16 trying to escape and having her head cut off. He did not know how long the execution took to complete.

PW did not know if all the bodies were buried together in the one grave. They were not cremated, nor were their bodies thrown into the sea. He did not know if the grave was marked in any way, and had never seen it himself. He could not guide anyone to it.

PW stated that he and his friends were ashamed of the incident. He thought that such treatment was not proper and was very brutal. The child, in particular, was pitiful. He thought it "a little cruel" on the part of the Battalion Commander.

PW denied any knowledge of the capture in the BUNA Area, Jul and Aug. 42, of a further group of prisoners or of an American Air Corps Pilot, or of an Australian 2nd. Lieutenant. He had not heard of the execution of any natives. While on GOODENOUGH Island Aug - Oct. 42, natives had mentioned a white man with radio equipment. A search was made for him, but the search party returned without finding him. PW did not think a further search was made, nor any prisoners captured on the island.

PW emphatically stated that he had not told any lies, and even if there were any mistakes in his story, it was the truth as he knew it. He reiterated that he did not know the names of the executioners, as he had never heard who they were."

ATIS Special Interrogation Report of PW JA 100037).

Comment: TSUKIOKA Force is identical with SASLBO
5 SNLF.

(2) ATIS Document No. 243 (Original is reproduced as Appendix "A", Part 11, p A2) a diary belonging to SHIN, Shunji, 1st. Class Seaman, 2 Company, SASEBO 5 SNLF, contains the following entries:

"13 Aug - Natives brought in British prisoners - 5 men, 3 Women, 1 child. They were lodged in one room.

14 Aug - Beginning at about 8 o'clock, the nine prisoners were beheaded and shot to death (T.N. i.e., some of them were beheaded, and some shot)." (ATIS Current Translations No. 6, p.8)

(3) ATIS DOCUMENT NO. 1051, (Original is reproduced as Appendix "A", Part 111, p A3) a diary dated 17 June 42 - 17 Aug 42 belonging to unknown member of SASEBO 5 SNLF, 2 Company, 1 Platoon, 1 Section, contains the following entries:

"12 Aug - In the afternoon natives brought in nine British people, male and female,

13 Aug - Yesterday's nine British people were shot to death to-day."
(ATIS Current Translations No. 32, pp 32, 33).

(4) ATIS Document No. 1268, (Original is reproduced as Appendix "A", Part IV, p A4) a diary dated 10 Jun 42 - 14 Aug 42, owner and unit unknown, contains the following entries:

"6 white people and 3 Australians - 5 men, 3 women and 1 child - taken prisoner (13th). (T.N. from section headed "August" by writer).

"14th - Disposal of prisoners 0830. (T.N. The word used in the original is "SHOBUN" i.e. "disposal", in the sense of "to dispose of" or "to deal with")."
(ATIS Current Translations No. 49, p.41)

(5) ATIS Document No. 1274, (Original is reproduced as Appendix "A", Part V p A5) a diary dated 10 Jun 42 - 13 Dec. 42 belonging to TATEMACHI, Sei of 14 Pioneer Regiment, contains the following entry:

"14 Aug - It is said that some Americans, 3 men 3 women and 1 child, were shot to death in the morning."
(ATIS Current Translations No. 19, p 17)

(6) ATIS Document No. 2113, (Original is reproduced as Appendix "A" Part VI, p A6), a diary dated 2 Dec. 41 - 24 Nov 42, owner unknown but presumably a member of 15 Pioneer Regiment, contains the following entry:

"20 Aug - The other day, nine enemy prisoners (4 men, 4 women, 1 child) because.....(T.N. part of page torn and missing) malignant enemies, were summarily shot to death."
(ATIS Current Translations No. 26, p 11C)

(7) ATIS Document No. 492 (Original is reproduced as Appendix "A", Part VII, p A7) a notebook and diary belonging to SATO, Toshio, presumably a translator attached to SASEBO 5 SNLP, contains the following entry:

"8 Sep - I hear that when FUNA was occupied, the TSUKIOKA Force (SASEBO 5 SNLP) Captured 6 or 7 Australian men and women who had escaped into the jungle, made the m kneel on the beach and beheaded them one by one. In case of one of them, a girl of 16, they bungled the cutting, and held her down screaming and crying out while they cut off her head. The soldier who told me said the sight was more than he could stand. I am told they threw the heads and bodies into the sea. It is said that many ghost-fires fly about in the vicinity. Some soldiers are said to have suffered burns (T.N. The last sentence has been scored through in the original.)"
(ATIS Current Translations No. 6 pp 23, 24).

(8) PW JA 145118 stated that:

"He had heard of the killing of certain PWs - 4 civilians including 1 woman. They had been killed before he came to NE. GUINEA, but he had heard about the case from members of SASEBO 5 SNLP and from Interpreter SATO, an English-speaking Japanese civilian attached to Headquarters.

PW stated that, with the exception of the 100 men from this unit who escaped by destroyer from MILNE Bay, this unit was wiped out."

(ATIS Advanced Echelon No. 1, Subsequent Preliminary Interrogation of PW JA 145118, p 3).

(9). PW JA 100037, interrogated by Lieutenant-Commander L.C.S. SHEFFARD, R.N. and Lieutenant G. W. COLTON, USNR, definitely established the location of the building in which the 7 Australians were imprisoned. PW drew a sketch of the area which, together with a tracing of an aerial photograph, is reproduced as Appendix "C" (pp C1). He stated that:

"Area where Psw were kept on night of 12 - 13 Aug 42 was the BUNA Government Station.

He believed building had been used as a garage. It was about 10 metres long, 5 metres wide and 7 - 8 metres high. Building was completely open at one end and had no doors or windows. Roof was made of corrugated iron. Walls were of corrugated iron, nailed to upright posts, and tarred or painted black. Floor was made of earth. A dirt road ran in front of the open end." (ATIS Special Interrogation Report of 19 Aug 43 on PW JA 100037).

(1) Available evidence bearing upon possible participants in this execution is set forth below:

(A) PW interrogations have established that the following units of SASEBO 5 SMLP were stationed in BUNA Area at time of the incident:

Battalion Headquarters Platoon
No. 2 Company
No. 1. Platoon
No. 2 Platoon
No. 3 Platoon
Machine Gun Platoon
Anti-Aircraft Machine Gun Platoon
Anti-Tank Gun Platoon
Sea Transport Unit
Medical Unit
Accountant Unit

The remaining units of SASEBO 5 SMLP were stationed at LAE or HAEPAUL, and did not take part in the incident.

Evidentiary Doc

405-B

No. 1

英領地政府報告書

(證據書類號碼一號字一頁三十四頁三十三號年)

(B) 次掲ノル参照事項一五四年ノ昭和十七年八月十日ヨリ至十月十日ヨリ
行政區ノBUNA GOVERNMENT STATIONノ附近ニ於テ之ガ五九人ノ豫洲
人ノ疑刑ノ事實及情況ヲ確證スル。

(1) 得傍丁A.O.O.三七記開ノ記録次ノ事項ヲ供示スル疑問將次ニ英
國海軍少佐L.S.C.五ノ上ノSHEPPARD米國豫備海軍大尉G.D.
ニルノCOLTONノ事。

八月間隊第二中隊第三小队第四班ノ西方約二哩半ニ至リ得傍
ヨリノ西方約一哩ノ處ニ宿營スル。揚陸地地点ニ於テ
五四年ノ昭和十七年八月十日ヨリ至ニ於テ本隊ニ合流スル
八月二十日迄ノ任務ニ付テテ人々ノ故得傍ノ事ヲ白
撃シテテ八月十日ヨリ至ニ於テ其ノ事ヲ云フ
第四班ノ一等水兵井田福一及三等水兵岩松武ノ音譯ノ三名
其朝揚陸地点ヲ出発シテ向テ其晩歸リテ來テ第四班ノ
留者ニ此話ヲシタリ。得傍ノ其時ノ在リノ同部隊ノ他者
達トモ談話ヲシテ遂ニ此ノ事件ニ付テ余リテクノ聞カセテ云フ
居テ。

得傍ノ聞キ込ミルニ此ノ事ヲ仲間ノ六人ノ豫洲人ノ成リ立ツ
居テ其内二人ニ三十歳位ノ男子一人ニ肥體也一人ニ左程肥満ニハ
居テカ又一人ニ七十歳位ノ男子一人ニ得傍ノ事ヲ云フ上五ノ事
九又他四人ノ婦人其内一人ノ子持ト女親ニテ歳凡ハ三十五
位ニシテ思ハ彼ノ子以上ノ事ヲ得傍ノ事ヲ云フ又彼等ガ
内人ニテ其當教師ノ事ヲ云フ其邊ノ解テテ少クノ海軍人等ノ又

10-1-1

Doc 405B

八月十一日、彼等、二挺、銃ヲ持テ居タ。然レモ、他、携帶スル、即チ、短銃、
無電機、又、食糧等、ヲ携帶シテ居タト、曰ハレタリ。彼、六、隊長ガ、彼等、
以前、住所ニ付テ、何等カ、豫メ、知ラセ居タド、ウカ、知ラナシ、彼、六、リ、コ、フ、
ノ、ZARIKOBU、村ニ、付テ、開キテ、居タカ、タ。

俘虜、六、此、一行ガ、八月、十一日、頃、約、二十名、土、民、ニ、連レテ、来ラセタ、テ、ル、コ、ト、ヲ、
開キ、タ、然レ、モ、シ、カ、何、時、頃、ニ、テ、ア、ウ、カ、知ラナシ、彼、六、之、等、土、民、カ、何、處、
カラ、来タ、デ、アル、カ、ヲ、知ラナシ、ソ、レ、ハ、ア、ノ、附近、土、民、ハ、ソ、ノ、以前、既ニ、逃、亡、シ、
居タ、カラ、然レ、モ、シ、カ、彼、等、六、ヲ、キ、テ、ア、土、民、ニ、テ、ア、ウ、カ、知ラナシ、
彼、誰、ガ、其、團、長、ニ、テ、ア、ウ、カ、知ラナシ、濠、洲、人、連、レ、二、挺、銃、ヲ、持テ、居、テ、
アル、カ、強、制、セ、テ、来、タ、モ、ト、考、ヘ、ラ、レ、タ、リ、或、ハ、土、民、連、レ、テ、ア、ウ、カ、知、
ラ、ナシ、土、民、連、レ、自、命、連、考、ヘ、シ、テ、行、動、シ、タ、モ、テ、ア、ウ、カ、知、ラ、
ナシ、又、彼、等、ガ、何、等、カ、報、酬、ヲ、貰、タ、ド、ウ、カ、知、ラ、
ナシ、土、民、連、レ、通、譯、ニ、面、會、シ、タ、後、ア、ノ、去、ラ、タ、處、刑、ヲ、自、撃、シ、
タ、モ、ト、思、ハ、レ、タ、リ。

俘虜、六、此、一行ガ、日本、哨、兵、線、ニ、到、達、シ、タ、ル、時、起、ク、タ、事、件、ニ、付、テ、何、
モ、知、ラ、ナシ、然レ、モ、彼、等、六、禰、子、樹、農、園、端、ニ、テ、ル、踏、傍、ニ、於、テ、捕、ヘ、
ラ、レ、タ、後、押、シ、テ、近、キ、空、地、ニ、テ、ル、建、物、ニ、入、リ、タ、

俘虜、六、信、ズ、ル、所、ニ、從、テ、此、建、物、ニ、從、前、車、庫、ト、シ、テ、使、用、セ、ラ、レ、タ、モ、テ、
ア、ル、ハ、ソ、ノ、一、方、ガ、開、ケ、放、シ、テ、ア、リ、與、行、約、十、米、間、口、五、米、高、サ、七、八、米、
靡、天、窓、モ、ウ、キ、平、ナ、シ、モ、テ、アル。屋、根、上、壁、ハ、十、三、板、ヲ、作、ラ、シ、タ、ル、カ、ベ、ニ、キ、テ、
黒、色、ニ、塗、ラ、レ、タ、床、ハ、土、上、五、米、サ、カ、タ、一、ツ、土、砂、道、路、ガ、開、放、口、前、ヲ、走、
ラ、セ、タ、

No. 2

此、捕、ヘ、ラ、レ、タ、人、々、八、月、十二日、夜、此、建、物、内、ニ、收、容、セ、ラ、レ、タ、第、三、小、隊、
カラ、哨、兵、ガ、運、カ、レ、タ、彼、等、六、建、物、外、側、ニ、居、テ、内、側、ニ、居、テ、

doc 405B

No. 3

ハ、吉田、内一名ニ第三小隊第一班カラ、本多奥村正雄（音譯）ニテ
リ、俘虜ニ此男ト後ニ語ニラシタ。彼ハ哨兵、他ノ者、名ニ知ラナイ。彼、彼
等ガ縛ニシタリ、鞭クニタリ、或ハ他ノ竹筥カノ方法ニ於テ尾背ニクニテト
思フニ、彼、其時又ハ夏、後ニ於テ元婦女子ガ犯サレタト、思フニ、此
事ニ就テハ、尋ヌモノニカク、日本人ハ、此ノ事ヲスル者ト、思フニ、假リニ其様
ト事ガトツト、此ノ俘虜ニキカサシカク、タテロウ、勿論、兵隊並、配給
ヲ受ケ、使所ニ通リ、事ヲ許可サシタ、答テアル。

此建物内ニ居ル間ニ、捕虜達ハ田代ト云フ（名前ニ不明ナルガ）通譯、
訪問ヲ受ケタ。此人ハ一軍屬（海軍ニ雇滞サレタリ）般人ニテ、ニテ、
カニ来タモノナル。俘虜ハ此人ガ戦前カラ、ニ住ニテ居タモノカド
ハ知ラナイ。彼ハ又、ニテ、
居タ俘虜ハ、彼ヲ一九四二年（昭和十七年）九月カ十月ニ、
ニ健在ナリ、ヲ見クガ最後ナル。

通譯ハ、捕虜達ニ姓名、年齢、職業等ヲ尋ヌク。俘虜ハ、其訊
問、結果ヲ聞イテ居ナイ。
彼、彼等ガ當時、ニ於ル先任海軍将校、
岡海軍中佐、
面、
行カシタカドシカ知ラナイ。

（以下頁）

Doc 405 B

件属の裁判上の軍法会議が行はるべき事を知りて、彼、何故、此様
上層部が取らざるに知りて、或、部隊長、若、依、て處刑せらるる
事、は、た、り、と、思、つ、。

捕虜連の群、月十三日處刑せらる、件属の、が何時行はるべきか、知らざ
り、と、思、つ、。彼等が殺害せし、何、に、遺、体、が、掘、り、出、す、。件属、其、し
が、件属連自身に依、り、掘、り、出、さ、る、事、を、知、ら、ず、。彼、何、處、に、處、刑
が、行、は、る、事、を、知、ら、ず、。然、る、に、其、の、遺、体、を、掘、り、出、さ、る、事、を、知、ら、ず、。こ、の、こ、ろ、に、
、中、に、其、の、事、を、知、ら、ず、。件属、處、刑、の、際、又、其、の、前、に、掘、り、出、さ、る、事、を、知、
ら、ず、。又、彼等、^{何、れ、を、掘、り、出、す、}、の、事、を、知、ら、ず、。又、其、の、事、を、知、ら、ず、。

此、の、處、刑、を、看、る、様、に、部、隊、全、員、に、對、し、命、令、を、發、せ、ら、れ、り、。、
現場、に、在、り、の、任、意、的、に、行、は、れ、り、。或、は、者、の、遺、体、を、掘、り、出、さ、る、。、因、に、第、三、小、
隊、第、一、班、長、福、原、勝、一、に、對、し、命、令、を、發、せ、ら、れ、り、。件属、殘、留、者、也、と、名、出、す、
事、を、知、ら、ず、。出、立、の、時、に、第、三、小、隊、第、二、班、長、王、の、内、に、合、こ、し、て、中、
に、行、き、。彼、誰、も、の、場、に、行、く、事、を、知、ら、ず、。又、其、の、事、を、知、ら、ず、。、
第、二、中、隊、第、一、小、隊、の、現、場、に、居、り、。何、し、に、こ、の、部、隊、は、(、中、隊、
、四、二、班、) 殺、害、さ、る、所、に、居、り、。月、十、四、日、以、後、返、り、歸、つ、て、来、た、事、を、知、ら、
ず、。工、兵、第、十、四、聯、隊、も、亦、こ、の、地、方、に、在、り、。其、の、事、を、知、ら、ず、。又、
之、を、目、撃、し、。居、り、。

No. 4

件属の部隊長が處刑に立会つた事、及び、場、に、臨、み、將、校、連、
氏、名、を、知、ら、ず、。彼、の、部、隊、本、部、一、小、隊、第、二、小、隊、及、第、四、班、を、除、き、。第、
三、小、隊、及、中、隊、機、関、銃、小、隊、を、兵、隊、連、が、臨、場、に、在、り、。處、刑、
に、見、る、に、見、物、人、が、參、集、し、。件属、何、れ、の、部、隊、に、在、り、。其、の、事、を、
知、ら、ず、。

ALC 405B

俘虜の幾人が處刑されたか、知ろ才が俘虜一人に対し一人宛相當とモ
ト思ッテ居ル。彼、彼等が自來軍から志願ニテ出るモノカドカ、知ラナイ。彼
の處刑執行者達ノ名ヲ知ラナイ。且、事ノ真実ニテ決ニ嘘ヲ
ナシト強調ス。彼、又彼等が敵ノ小隊カラ来タモノデアルカモシカト、
知ラナイが第三小隊及機關銃小隊カラ来タモノデハナイカト思ッテ居ル。

俘虜達ノ墓穴ノ傍ニ跪座セシメテ一人又一人ト順ニ殺サシテ行ク。
一斉ニ殺サシテハナイ。彼、彼等が殺サシテ順序ヲ知ラナイが母ト子が最
後ニ殺サシテコトヲ知ラナイ。母親ノ泣キ叫ビ子供ヲ抱キテ短銃
ヲ射タシ。ソノ次ニ子供が短銃ヲ射タシ。彼、何發ノ弾ガ發射サシタ
知ラナイ。彼等ヲ射ッタハ士官ヲハテ兵ヲアツタト思ッテ居ル。他ノ俘虜
達ノ銃劍ヲ以テ刺殺サシタ。然レ俘虜ノ何回空カシタモノカ、知ラナイ。
彼、彼等がソノ後道ヲ斬ラシタ事ヲ聞カス。又左様ニ思ッテナシ。彼、十
六才ノ少女ガ逃ゲ出サルトニテ道ヲ斬ラシタ事ヲ付テハ何等聞テ
居ナシ。彼、此ノ處刑ヲ終了スル迄ニトノ位、時ヲ要シタカニ付テ知ラナイ。
俘虜ノ全部ノ死體ガソノ墓穴ニ纏ニ埋メラシタモノカドカ、知ラナイ。且母
ノ火葬ニサシタモノデモナシ。亦海ニ投ゲテシタモノデモナイ。何カ墓標ガ設
ケラシタモノカ、知ラナイ。又自ら行クテ見タ事モナカス。ソノ場所ニ入ラナイ
事モ出来ナシ。

No. 5

俘虜ノ彼モ彼、女達モ此事件ニ付テハ語ルモ恥
ルコトヲ述ベテ。彼、此種ノ処置ハ決シテ適當ナ
ク、且甚ク殘虐ナルト思ッテ居ル。殊ニ子供ガ可
哀相心ヲアツテ。部隊長モ少ク躊躇ト思フ旨ヲ
傳ヘテ語ツテ。

Doc 405 B

俘虜ハ一九四三年六月、月引方面ニ於テ以テ外、捕
 虜ノ集團又ハ米軍飛行士或ハ濠洲軍ノ射
 捕ニシテタコトニ付テハ何等ヲ所ナシト立ツテオ
 彼ノ主民、接刑カシタ事案ニ付テ前ニ居ル
 グッドエナフ島 / GOODENOUGH ISLAND / 一ノリノ時
 一九四三年八月十日、主民ガ無覺襲置ヲ携ヘテ或
 白人ノ事ヲ傳ヘシ。其搜索ヲナシタゲアツガ然
 搜索隊ハ彼ヲ発見スル事ナクシテ歸テ来タ
 俘虜ハ該島ニ於テシテ以上、搜索ガ行ハ又
 捕ハシタモガアツタノ思フ居タリ。

俘虜ハ彼ガ何等、虚偽ヲ語ラシ事、及彼、
 語ヲ何事カ、謀リガアツタシモ、彼、知ル限
 ニ於テハ眞実ニアツタ事ヲ強調シ。彼、處刑者
 ノ名ヲ前ニタコトモナシカシ全然知ラシ旨保返
 線返シ述ベリ。

聯合國魏談運送部 / 1715 / 俘虜丁A。
 〇 〇 特別密同報告

(証解) 月陽隊トアルハ佐佐保才五特別海
 軍陸隊 / SONO / ト同一ナリ。

(2) ATIS 書類才三四號 (原本、附録A
 才二部、ベシA = / APPENDIX A. PART II P. A2 /

複字提出) 佐佐保才五特別海軍陸隊
 隊才中隊一等水兵遣候 = / SHIN, Shunji
 音譯 / 所持、日記ニシテ、次、如キ記事ナリ。
 八月一日、人捕虜果人男、女、三、名、子、三、名、ト、シ、テ、林、中、に、合、合、記

Na 6

No. 7
(5)

DOC 405B

八月十四日、八時頃ヨリ、捕虜九人ヲ打首及銃殺ニ処ス
(翻譯者註、或ハ者斬首、或ハ者、射殺ノ意) 四 ATIS
一般翻譯等六号等(一三)

(3) ATIS書類等一五号(原本、附録A、第三部A三六)
/APPENDIX A PART D. A三二機寫授主(佐世保軍並符
海軍陸戰隊/SNKP/等中隊第一小队等一班、
氏名不詳者所持、一九四三年六月十七日ヨリ同年八月
十七日ニ至ル日記ニテ次、如キ記事ナリ。

八月十日、午後五時、土人が四カセ丸を連行セリ。

八月十日、昨日、英國人九名本日銃殺ス
(ATIS一般翻譯等三三三、三三三(一三)
(4) ATIS書類等三六八号(原本、附録A、第四部A
四一三) PART D. A三二機寫授主(所有者及隊
名不詳、日記一九四三年六月十日ヨリ同年八月十四日。

至ル間ニ次、如キ記事ナリ

『白人六名、濠洲人三名、男五名、女三名、子供一名、
捕虜トス(十三日)(翻譯者註、一月ノ記載ニテ
ヨリ部分即チ八月十三日(自ナリ) 十四日、捕虜身
ノ一部分(三〇)(翻譯者註、本支ニヨリト
ルガ「スホーバル」コトナリ) 四 (ATIS一般翻譯等
ATIS 文書類等二七四号(原本、附録A、第五部

DOC 405 B

八月十四日、一時頃ヨリ、捕虜九人ヲ打首及銃殺ニ処ス
(翻譯者註、或ハ斬首、或ハ射殺、意) □ (ATIS
一般翻譯書第六号第八(一三))

(3) ATIS書類第一五号(原本、附録A、第三部A三(一三)
/ APPENDIX A PART. P. A三ニ複寫授之) 佐世保軍五特別
海軍陸戰隊 / 5SNLP / 第二中隊第一小隊第一班、
氏名不詳者所持、一九四三年六月十七日ヨリ同年八月
十七日ニ至ル日記ニラ次、如キ記事アリ。

『八月十日、午後土人が馬を九名連行セリ。

八月十日、昨日、英國人九名本日銃殺ス □

(ATIS一般翻譯書第三三号、第三三及第三三(一三))

(4) ATIS書類第三六(一)号(原本、附録A、第四部A
四(一三) / PART. P. A四ニ複寫授之) 所有者及隊
名不詳、日記一九四三年六月十日ヨリ同年八月十四日
ニ至ル間ニ次、如キ記事アリ

『白人六名、濠洲人三名、男五名、女三名、子供一名、

捕虜トス(十三日) (翻譯者註、一月ト記載セリ

トル部分即チ八月十三日ヨリ) 十四日、捕虜

處分〇(一三〇) (翻譯者註、本文ニ「ゴット

アルガリスボヤル、コトナリ) □ (ATIS一般翻譯書

四九号、四一(一三))

No. 7

(5)

ATIS文書第三七四号(原本、附録A、第五部

No. 8

Doc 405B

A 五(一) / APPENDIX A PART V PAS = 複寫搜査
工兵第十四聯隊、五野生 / TATEYACHI, Sei 音譯
所有、一九四三年六月起、十月十日三三〇日記中次、記事

日下、
月十四日、米國人、男三人、女三人、子供一人
ヲ朝ニエツサツラト云フ事ヲ云フ (ATIS 綴翻譯等
一九四一年、一七(一三))

(5) ATIS 書類等二二三号 (原本附録 A 等六部 A 六
P. 11) / APPENDIX "A" PART VI / = 複寫搜査 (工兵等
十五聯隊、買カト推測セラレ、成不詳者所有、
一九四一年十月二日ヨリ、一九四三年十月三十四日ニ至ル日記
中次、記事ナシ、

月二日、此間敵捕虜九名 (男四、女四、少年一)
要領、敵人之故ニ直ニ銃殺シ (註、原文ニミ)
(ATIS 一般翻譯等二六号二〇(一三))

(7) ATIS 書類等四九二号 (原本、附録 A 等七部 A
六(一) / APPENDIX "A" PART III, P. 11 / = 複寫搜
査) 佐世係等五特別海軍陸戰隊屬セル 船隻
通譯ナリニカト察セシ、佐藤壽雄所有、記録及
日記帳ニ次、記事ナシ、

日九月、台一、ナヲ占領セシトキ月岡部隊ガ、
シタルニ逃亡志縁人男廿六、女七、捕、海岸ニ座シセ

No. 8

Doc 405B

A 五(一) / APPENDIX A. PART V. PAS = 複寫搜出
工兵等十四聯隊、在町生 / WATEMACHI, Sei 音譯
所有、一九四三年六月起、十月十日三日止日記中次、記事

凡(一) 月十四日 - 米國人之男三人、女三人、子供二人
ヲ朝ニツクサリト云フ事ヲ記シ (ATIS 綴譯等
一九四一年 - 一九四二年)

(6) ATIS 書類等二二三号 (原本附録 A 等六部 A 六
一(一) / APPENDIX "A" PART V / = 複寫搜出) 工兵等
十五聯隊、買カト推測セラレ、其名不詳者所有、
一九四一年十月二日ヨリ、一九四二年十月十四日三日止日記
中次、記事アリ

凡(一) 月二日 - 此間敵捕虜九名 (男四、女四、少年一)
要領、敵人之故、直ニ銃殺シ (註 - 原文ニシテ)

(ATIS 綴譯等二六号二(一) - 三)

(7) ATIS 書類等四九三号 (原本、附録 A 等七部 A
五(一) / APPENDIX "A" PART III, PART IV / = 複寫搜出

之) 佐世係等五特別海軍陸戰隊、屬セル敵、
通譯ナリニシテ察スル、佐藤壽雄所有、日記及

日記帳ニ次ノ記事アリ

凡(一) 月(一) 日 - フナヲ占領セリトキ月岡部隊カシ
テ、凡(一) 月(一) 日 - 逃亡志願人男廿六、女十、捕ヘ、海岸ニ座シ

Doc 405B

一人々首ヲ斬リニト、中ニ十六計リ、少セヲ斬リ損ニ喚
キハブラ無理ニ首ヲ落セリト見テ居ニテアリニト、兵語
也、而ニテ首ト胴ニ海中ニ投込メリト、此近所ニ人
魂ガ多ク飛ニ過ルノ事、火傷セニ兵ニアリタリト。 凶

(ATIS 一般翻譯第六号ニ及ニ四一三)
(8) 停虜ガ A 一四五一八、陳述ニ依ルニ、
「彼、人、婦人ヲ念ム四人、一般人ガ殺害サレタ事ヲ聞
ク、ソレ、彼ガ「エー」キニ「ニ」ナル前ニ殺サレタナル、
彼、此事件ヲ佐世保 第五特別海軍陸戦隊、諸員
及、佐藤通譯カヲ聞ク、佐藤、本部分、英語話
スル一般日本人デアッタ。

停虜、言ニ依ルニ、彼、部隊、ミルニ湾 / MILNE
Bay / 「テ」船艦カヲ脱去ニタル百人ノ外、全
滅ニタト事ヲ云ハ。 (ATIS 第一投込隊、停虜ガ
A 一四五一八、續行稼着、オニ一三)

No. 9

(9) 停虜ガ A 100 三七、英國海軍少佐 L. C. S.
ニ「ハート」 SHEPPARD / 及米國豫備海軍大尉
G. W. コルトン / COLTON / ニル評問ヨリテ、七人、濠
洲人が盗禁サレタル建物、位置ガ判明ニタ。 停虜、其
地域、各國ヲ画イタ。 之ト並ニ写真、寫ニテヲ添
テ附録「C」ニ掲ゲル(ベニ一 C T)。 彼、陳述ニヨルニ、

No. 10

Doc 405B

一九四三年八月十日、十三日、夜、捕虜が收容場に
地域、ブナ政府 / BUNA GOVERNMENT STATION
テコタ

彼ら建物、車庫トミテ使用、サリ屋クモ、テコト

信ズル、其ハ長サ約十米、幅五米高さ八米、サ

ハ周放シテ、天扉ト窓トモ、屋根ハ、ナリ板、テコト

壁ト堅ク、柱ニ釘付ケ、ナリナリ故、テ、タリ又ハ、

サ、テ、里ヲ塗エ、テ、床、ト、上、テ、出来、テ、土、砂、道

路ガ、合、ノ、前、ヲ、通、ジ、テ、居、ル、(ATIS 一九四三年八月十九

日、俘虜、ノ、A-100ニ、テ、特別、審問、報告)

(7) 此處刑ニ関係者、多ク得、ベキ者ヲ、判定スルニ、効力

アル、證據、左、如シ

(A) 俘虜、審問ニ、依、リ、該、事件、當時、ノ、地、域ニ、駐、在

シ、テ、リ、タル、佐、世、保、ヲ、五、特別、海、軍、陸、戰、隊、(USN

ノ、ニ、屬、スル、左、記、諸、隊、ナ、リ、事、ヲ、確、証、シ、テ、

大隊本部、屬、員 / BATTALION HEADQUARTERS
PLATOON /

1 No. 2 COMPANY

1 No. 1 PLATOON /

1 No. 2 PLATOON /

1 No. 3 PLATOON /

1 MACHINE GUN PLATOON /

第三中队
第一小队
第二小队
第三小队
機関銃小队

Doc 405B

No. 10

一九四三年八月十日、十一日、夜捕虜が収容せられた地域は、ブナ行政局 / BUNA GOVERNMENT STATION / デブタ。

彼ら建築物は車庫として使用され居た。デブタに信スル、其の長さ約十米、幅五米高さ二米、寺の周りにあり、扉は木製、屋根は竹の束で、壁は堅く、柱は釘付の竹の束で、タイルの床に、土の塗りをした。床の上には土の道が、路が合、前を通つて居た。(ATIS 一九四三年八月十日俘虜のA-10027、特別審問報告)

(7) 此處刑に關係者たり得べき者を判定スルに効力ある證據左、如し

(A) 俘虜審問に依り、該事件當時ブナ地域に駐屯し、タールの佐世保第五特別海軍陸戰隊 / 5.52 / へ、屬する左記の諸隊は、此の事を確認する。

- 大隊本部 屬員 / BATTALION HEADQUARTERS PLATOON /
- 第三中隊 / NO. 2 COMPANY /
- 第一小隊 / NO. 1. PLATOON /
- 第二小隊 / NO. 2 PLATOON /
- 第三小隊 / NO. 3 PLATOON /
- 機関銃小隊 / MACHINE GUN PLATOON /

Doc 405-B.

高射機砲隊	ANTI-AIRCRAFT PLATOON
対戦車砲隊	ANTI-TANK GUN PLATOON
海上輸送隊	SEA TRANSPORT UNIT
衛生隊	MEDICAL UNIT
經理隊	ACCOUNTANT UNIT

佐世保第五特別海軍陸戦隊、他、諸隊ニ工兵
 フバウルニ駐屯スルヲ以テ該事件ニ関與セ
 ザリニモナリ、
 (了)

No. 11

E. # 1836 B

Doc. No. 405-A

(Being excerpts from pages 4 to 7 of Evidentiary Document No. 405).

(1) SWFA:

(a) The following references established the fact and circumstances of the execution of a Flight Lieutenant near SALAMAU on 29 Mar 43.

(1) ATIS Document No. 4959, (Original reproduced as Appendix "A", Part 1, page A1), extracts from diary, owner and unit unknown, contains the following passage:

"FLOOD CARNIVAL"

"29 Mar 43. All four of us (Technician KUROKAWA, NISHIGUCHI, YAWATA and myself) assembled in front of the Headquarters at 1500 hours. One of the two members of the crew of the Douglas which was shot down by A/A on the 18th, and who had been under cross-examination by the 7th Base Force for some days, had been returned to the SALAMAU Garrison, and it had been decided to kill him. Unit Commander KOMAI, when he came to the observation station to-day, told us personally that, in accordance with the compassionate sentiments of Japanese FUSHIDO, he was going to kill the prisoner himself with his favourite sword. So we gathered to observe this. After we had waited a little more than ten minutes, the truck came along.

"The prisoner, who is at the side of the guard house, is given his last drink of water, etc. The Chief Medical Officer, Unit Commander KOMAI and the Headquarters Platoon Commander came out of the officers' mess, wearing their military swords. The time has come, so the prisoner, with his arms bound and his long hair now cropped very close, totters forward. He probably suspects what is afoot; but he is put on the truck and we set out for our destination. I have a seat next to the Chief Medical Officer, but ten guards ride with us. To the pleasant rumble of the engine we run swiftly along the road in the growing twilight. The glowing sun has set behind the western hills, gigantic clouds rise before us, and the dusk is falling all around. It will not be long now. As I picture the scene we are about to witness, my heart beats faster.

I glance at the prisoner; he has probably resigned himself to his fate. As though saying farewell to the world, as he sits in the truck he looks about, at the hills, at the sea, and seems deep in thought. I feel a surge of pity and turn my eyes away.

As we passed by the place where last year our lamented squad leader was cremated, Technician NISHIGUCHI must have been thinking about him too, for he remarked "It's a long time since we were here last". It certainly is a long time. We could see the place every day from the observation post, but never got a chance to come.

It is nearly a year since the squad leader was cremated. I was moved in spite of myself, and as I passed the place I closed my eyes and prayed for the repose of SHIMIZU's soul.

The truck runs along the sea shore. We have left the Navy guard sector behind us and now come into the Army guard sector. Here and there we see sentries in the grassy fields, and I thank them in my heart for their toil as we drive on. They must have got it in the bombing the night before last - there are great holes by the side of the road, full of water from the rain. In a little over twenty minutes, we arrive at our destination, and all get off.

Unit Commander KOMAI stands up and says to the prisoner, "We are not going to kill you". When he tells the prisoner that in accordance with Japanese BUSHIDO he would be killed with a Japanese sword, and that he would have two or three minutes' grace, he listens with bowed head. The Flight-Lieutenant (T.N. in Japanese, "TAII" - this refers to the prisoner) says a few words in a low voice. Apparently he wants to be killed with one stroke of the sword. I hear him say the word "One" (T.N. in English). The Unit Commander becomes tense and his face stiffens as he replies, "Yes" (T.N. in English).

Now the time has come, and the prisoner is made to kneel on the bank of a bomb crater filled with water. He is apparently resigned; the precaution is taken of surrounding him with guards with fixed bayonets, but he remains calm. He even stretches out his neck, and is very brave. When I put myself in the prisoner's place, and think that in one more minute it will be good-bye to this world, although the daily bombings have filled me with hate, ordinary human feelings make me pity him.

The Unit Commander has drawn his favourite sword. It is the famous OSAME sword which he showed us at the observation post. It glitters in the light and sends a cold shiver down my spine. He taps the prisoner's neck lightly with the back of the blade, then raises it above his head with both arms, and brings it down with a sweep.

I had been standing with my muscles tensed, but in that moment I closed my eyes.

SSH!.....It must be the sound of blood spurting from the arteries. With a sound as though something watery had been cut, the body falls forward. It is amazing - he had killed him with one stroke. The onlookers crowd forward. The head, detached from the trunk, rolls in front of it. SSH! SSH!....The dark blood gushes out.

All is over. The head is dead white, like a doll. The savageness

which I felt only a little while ago is gone, and now I feel nothing but the true compassion of Japanese BUSHIDO. A Senior corporal laughs loudly "Well, he will enter Nirvana now!" Then, a superior seaman of the medical unit takes the Chief Medical Officer's Japanese sword and, intent on paying off old scores, turns the headless body over on its back, and cuts the abdomen open with one clean stroke. "They are thick-skinned, these KETO (T.N. "Hairy foreigner" - common term of opprobrium for a white man) - even the skin of their bellies is thick." Not a drop of blood cores out of the body. It is pushed over into the crater at once and buried.

Now the wind blows mournfully and I see the scene again in my mind's eye: We get on to the truck again and start back. It is dark now. We get off in front of the Headquarters. I say good-bye to Unit Commander KOMAI, and climb up the hill with Technician KUROKAWA. This will be something to remember all my life. If ever I get back alive it will make a good story to tell, so I have written it down.

AT SALALUA Observation Post, 30 Mar 43, 0110 hrs, to the sound of the midnight waves.

Note: The prisoner killed to-day was an Air Force Flight-Lieutenant (T.N. "TAII") from MOLESBY. He was a young man, 23 this year, said to have been an instructor to the A.T.C. at MOLESBY."

(ATIS Spot Report No. 153, pp 1, 2)

1. a. (1) (a) (2) FWJA 145598 stated that:

"He had heard of an officer named KOMAI. He volunteered information that he had heard of KOMAI's executing someone, but could give no further information."

(ATIS Interrogation Report, Serial No. 292, p 8).

(3) ATIS Document No. 5496, file of reference notes and intelligence reports belonging to Lt. KAWALE of 20 Division Headquarters Staff, contains records of various American and Australian POW captured in NEW GUINEA. One such interrogation report appears from internal evidence to be that of the victim in the abovenoted "Blood Carnival". It is reproduced as Appendix "B" (pp P1)
ATIS Document No. 5496, pp 71 - 78.

No 1
EX 133-B EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # 405A

證據書類四〇五号四頁—七頁ヨリ、抜萃

一、西南太平洋地区

(1) 左記、參考、一九四三年三月二十九日サラモア音訊
ニ於テ、一飛行大尉処刑、ノ実及ビ事情ヲ確實
ナラシムルモノナリ

一、聯合國飛訊情報局書類四九五九号(原文八Aノ頁)

第一部、追加月トシテ複寫サレタルモノ、所屬部隊
不明、者、日記抜萃中ニ左ノ如キ記事アリ。

五、謝肉祭

一九四三年三月二十九日、我々四人ハ全部(技師、黒川、
西只八幡以上音訊及ビ自分)ハ十五時ニ司令部ノ前ニ
集合シタ。十八日高射砲ニ射落サレタダグラス機、乗組員
二人中、一人彼ハ數日向第七基地隊ニヨリ嚴ク訊問ヲ
受ケテ居タノデアリガサラモア音訊守備隊ニ連シ度サ
レ、死刑ト決定セラレテ居タノデアリタ。部隊長駒井音
訊ガ監視所ニ来タ時我々ニ個人的ニ日本武士道、
憐シミ、感情ニ從ツテ俘虏ヲ彼自身愛用、刀ヲ介
錯スルツモリアルト語ッタ。ツレテ我々ハコシヲ觀ル為ニ
集合シタ十分余リ待ツタ頃トラックガヤツテ来タ。

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

405A

衛兵所側ニ居タ僞虜ハ末期ノ水其ノ他ヲ与ヘラシタ
 軍医將校部隊長駒井音訳及ビ司令部附歩兵小隊
 指揮官が軍刀ヲ帶ビテ將校集会所カウ出テ来タ。愈々
 時刻トツタデ腕ヲ縛ラシ長イ頭髪ヲ今ハ短ク刈ラ
 レテシマク僞虜がヨメテ進ム。彼ハキツト何事が起ツテ
 居ルカトアヤシク居ルデアラウ。僞虜ハトラックニ乗テ
 ラシ我々ハ目的地ヘト出発シタ。私ハ軍医將校ノ横ニ坐
 ツタガ十人ノ衛兵が同乗シタ。快ヨイエンジンノ音ニツシ
 テ我々ハ刻々増シテニクク夕闇ヲツイテ疾走シタ。赫イ
 陽ハ既ニ西ノ山陰ニ沈ミ、巨大ト雲が我々ノ行く手ニ起
 ツタツシテ闇が我々ヲ包ミツツアツタ。モウ直グダラウ。
 我々ハツシカク目撃シテアウトスル光景ヲ思ヒ插イテ見タ時
 自分ノ勤倅ハ早クオツタ。
 私ハ僞虜ヲ一瞥シタ。彼ハキツト自分ノ運命ニ既ニ觀
 念シテ居ルデアラウ。彼ハトラックニ坐ツテ恰カモコノ世
 ニ別レテ告ゲテ居ルカ、如クアタリノ山や海ヲ見返シ深
 イ冥想ニ耽ツテ居ル様ニ見エル。
 私ハ憐シミノ氣持ニ襲ハル、目ヲソラシタ。

No 2

405 A

部隊長が火葬場を通過する時
 西口普詠/技師が彼を助けた。彼は「運」
 と云う。彼が戦後が苦年。此処は来日時から不十分経
 ったと云う言ひが多かつた。いよいよ確かなる日が来る
 まで。我々の監視所から毎日此一場面を見ることが出来
 たり。此処は又ウチに来れば機会は一変するから。分
 隊長が火葬場を降したから。殆ど一年は。私共
 へ感謝の意。其処を通過する時、自ら閉鎖された普詠
 へ「運」を云う。

トラックの海岸に沿って走る。我々の海軍守備地区
 南には、今陸軍守備地区へ入る。荒れ草原、アケビ
 畑が見える。車上で私共、彼等、此方苦しい感謝
 一昨夜、爆撃機中へ彼等、其任務を果した。運
 へ。一道路、傍へ雨水溜り穴が。十分余り
 下我々の目的地に到着し、全員下車す。

部隊長が普詠へ起立し、「我々の忠告を利して
 後遺言を告げる。彼が武進道に従って日本に命を
 託した。マダ、三分、余裕がある。アケビ畑の
 間、後遺言の重さを聴かせる。飛行大尉は、
 彼へ「運」を三言、三言、言ひ、キッと彼へ「運」を
 度へと思つた。彼は「運」を言ひ、彼が「運」を言ひ、
 部隊長の緊張した顔を見ながら、彼が「運」を言ひ、

NO 3

405A.

硬ハワク。

念々時刻が来タ。停屠ハ水、溜リ多爆撃ヲ、後、穴
一線ニ跳ニツカセラル。彼ハ以テカニ觀念ニキルヲシテ。
用心、為ニ銃剣ヲ擬シテ衛兵ガ彼ヲ圍ニテ疾ニガ、彼ハ
静カテ下ル。彼ハ首ヲサシ、ハテサハ居テ、非常ニ勇敢ナル。
私ハ停屠、身ニツキテ見テ、今一分、後、此、也ニオ別レテ
ト考ヘタ。連日、爆撃ニヨリ、怖思テ滴クサレテ居ルトハ
言ハ普通ノ人情トシテ、彼ヲ憐レズザルヲ得ナイ。

部隊長ハ愛用、刀ヲ、抜ケタ。監視シテ彼ガ我々ニ
見セタシ、甚名ナ^ト長宗、シテ、光ヲ受テ、輝キ、自命、
有ハ物ニ、冷シ、戦慄ヲ起シセル。彼ハ停屠、首ヲ刀、峰ヲ
経テ、叩イテカラ、両手ヲ頭上ニ刀ヲ、一撃ニ打テ下ス。

私ハ物肉ヲ硬ハラセテ立ツテ居タガ、ソノ瞬間目ヲ閉ヂタ。

No 4

Doc 405-A

ニシ……動脈の血が逆ハル音ニ違ヒ。水氣、多ク元、切ラ時
程ノ音ヲ立テテ體の前ニ倒シ。撃ノ可キ事ヲ一被ハ刀ノ下ニ
停務ヲ被タシ。見物人ノ前ニ来リ出ス。胴体ヲ離シ首ハ前
轉カシ居ル。ニシ！ニシ！血ハ逆ニ出ル。

萬事終リテ首ハ人形様ニ倉白クナリ居ル。一瞬前ニ自分ノ感
ノ我思サレ元ノ消テ去リ。今自分ノ思ハ日本武士道ノ情ニシテモ、
ヲ感シルニテアル。立卷ノ使長カラ「ト笑フ」サ。彼ハ元ノ遺骸
ニ入場タラシ。時立卷ノ使長ハ首ヲ軍医將校ノ日本刀ヲ取リ
宿怨ヲハラサテ首ヲ死体ニ仰向ケテ一閃下ニ覆殺ラケリ。聞ス
「毛皮ノ厚ク、腹皮ヲ厚ク。一滴ノ血モ死体カラ出テ来テカク。死
体ハ穴ノ中ニ突キ落サレテ埋メラシク。

今風ハ哀悼スルカ、如ク吹キ私ノ心中ニハノ光景ハ再現シル。我々ハ再
トシテ下ヲ退シ歸路附ル。モウ暗クシタ。司令官ノ所ニ下車スル。
私ノ隊隊長駒井ノ音談ニ割シテモウ里川ノ音談ノ校師ト
共ニ丘ヲ登ル。元ハ自分ノ生涯志ヲレ又事トナルヲウ。若シ自
分ハ生還シタラ、良ノ語り草トナルヲウ。ソレヲ私ハニ「記事ヲ書
キトメタラシ。」

カモテ監視所ニ。一九四三年三月三十日ノ時真夜中ノ波ノ音ヲ聴ク。

(註) 今日殺サレテ停務タラシト「音談」カラ来タ空軍大尉ナリ。
彼ハ三才ノ青年ヲモニス。空軍訓練隊ノ教官ニシテ居テ語り。

No 5

Doc 405-A.

(聯合國秘設情報局原報書一五三號一、二頁)
一、(一)(二)日本陸軍停戰五五九號、次、如、述、之、是、也。

彼、駒、音、談、ト、イ、フ、名、將、校、ノ、事、ヲ、聞、イ、タ、事、ガ、ア、リ、タ、。 彼、
駒、音、談、ガ、誰、カ、ヲ、處、刑、シ、タ、事、ヲ、聞、イ、タ、ト、イ、フ、情、報、ヲ、自、ラ、進、テ、
申、シ、出、タ、。 シ、カ、シ、レ、以、上、ノ、詳、細、情、報、ヲ、與、ヘ、ル、事、ヲ、出、来、テ、カ、ラ、ズ、。

(聯合國秘設情報局記聞報告書 書類綴二九號、八頁。)

(三) 聯合國秘設情報書類五四九六號、第二十師團司令部參謀
川、出、音、談、中、尉、所、有、ノ、參、考、文、及、情、報、報、告、綴、ハ、三、ト、ギ、
ニ、於、テ、捕、テ、ラ、タ、色、々、ノ、事、ヲ、並、ニ、オ、ー、ス、ト、リ、ヤ、ノ、停、屠、ノ、記、録、ガ、
載、シ、居、ル、。 カ、ル、記、聞、書、ハ、六、ノ、內、在、的、的、證、據、ヲ、推、シ、上、記、
血、謝、肉、祭、ニ、於、テ、ハ、犠、牲、者、ノ、記、録、ヲ、ト、モ、思、ハ、ル、ソ、レ、ハ、進、加、B
(頁、B、ノ、ト、ニ、ノ、複、寫、ガ、シ、テ、居、ル、。

聯合國秘設情報局書類五四九六號、七、五、頁、七、八、頁

706

Doc 405-A

(聯合國秘設情報局各地報告書一五三號一、二頁)

(一)(二)(三)日本陸軍停廢五五九號六次如多述之居ル。

彼ハ駒ヶ音談トイフ名、將校ノ事ヲ聞イタ事ガアツ。彼ハ駒ヶ音談ガ誰カラ處刑ニ事ヲ聞イタトイフ情報ヲ自ラ獲テ申シ出タ。シカシソレ以上ノ詳細情報ヲ與ヘル事ガ出来テカツ。

(聯合國秘設情報局訊問報告書 書類綴二九号八頁)

(三)聯合國秘設情報書類五四九六号 第二十師團司令部參謀、川出音談中尉所有ノ參考ノ及ビ情報報告綴二六三トギニ於テ捕ヘラタ色々ノ事ヲ述ニオーストラリア、停廢ノ記録ヲ載テ居ル。カナル訊問書、六、內存 的證據ニリ推シテ記、血、謝肉祭ニ於テハ犧牲者、記録テハト思ハルソレハ追加B(頁B)トシテ複寫サシ居ル。

聯合國秘設情報局書類五四九六号 七一頁七八頁

706

Ex. #1837

Translation of statement by 19678 Sep. BACHAN SINGH 1/13 F.F.K.

On 5 May, 1943, I left SINGAPORE for NEW GUINEA as a prisoner of war in a Japanese ship. There were about 595 men in the party. I cannot describe the hardships we suffered during the voyage. For bathing and washing we had to use sea water. Food was very little and there was a space only 10 feet by 10 feet for all of us in which to sleep. I could neither sleep nor sit down. These hardships lasted for 10 days.

On 16 May 1943, I disembarked at WEWAK, NEW GUINEA. For two days following our arrival we were given no shelter, clothing or food of any kind. We were tormented by mosquitos and several men fell ill. When our officers reported about the lack of food the Japanese beat them saying, "That's our affair. Whatever we do is right". Two days later we were taken to a place 3 miles away. There an order was given that every man will build his own hut out of jungle plants. Nobody could make smoke etc. by day nor light a fire at night because they were afraid of American aircraft. If anyone did anything to the contrary he was punished with death. After about a week, our men began dying of fever, dysentery, beri-beri and several other diseases. Our party was sent from WEWAK to another place. From there 350 men were sent to BUT. The remainder (those who were in WEWAK) were sick. For them there was no arrangement for rations or medicine. I went with the 350 men to BUT. For the next 3 months fit PWs got rations but no food was given to the sick. We used to share our rations with them. We were worked so hard that we got no rest during the day or night. For about 8 days we were made to work continuously without any relief. The result was that 5 or 6 men died every day. Nothing could be done to dispose of their bodies by cremation or burial. Those who became ill were only relieved of fatigues when they could not walk. They would relieve a man one or two days before he died. If our officers complained they would be brutally beaten. No heed was given to any report or grievance.

On 14 Dec 43, at about 1 a.m. American aircraft began to bomb the locality and afterwards they came regularly. Then our officers told the Jap officer i/c of the party that a flag should be put over our camp to indicate prisoners of war. There was a Jap. Lt. Col. TAKANO present to whom this was reported by the Jap. officer. He replied "No permission from our Government to place flags over P.W. camps has been received".

While air raids were going on he put us to work on the airfield. Our officers complained that their men should not have to remain on the airfield during an air raid but this complaint was rejected. On aircraft approaching, all the Japs of our party used to run into the jungle, but our orders were that none was to move a step. If any I.O.K. or officers fled for cover they were severely beaten. Due to this they could not sleep for several nights.

On 15 Dec. 43 at BUT when we were working on the airfield there was a very heavy air attack in which 5 of our men were killed and 10 wounded. The latter were given no treatment or food. They were taken to a Jap hospital where several of them were killed by some injection of poison. I worked at BUT for about 10 months during which I got 4 biscuits and 5 (ounces?) of boiled rice per day. From BUT we returned to WEWAK. At BUT 160 men died out of 350. Only 190 men reached WEWAK. When I got there I learnt that all the sick, whom we had left there, had died. After 2 days at WEWAK we were sent to BOIKEN - about half way between BUT AND WEWAK.

On 25 Apr 44 after we had been working there for 3 months the Japs ordered all of us who could walk to get ready to accompany them to KANJA (AITAPE?) carrying Jap stores and a month's rations as KANJI was about 300 miles from BOIKEN. We were told that we would go on foot and would have to make our own ration arrangements. If anyone fell out through illness during the march he would get no attention except to be shot. We were given each about 12 lbs rice and $\frac{1}{2}$ lb salt as a month's ration and told that that would be our food for the journey from BOIKEN to KANJA.

The Jap officer commanding our party (No.17) was named Lt. YAMAHOKO. His 2 i/c was Lt. NAKODA and junior to them were YAMAMOTO and YAMASHITA. The first three beat a great number of our men and left several of them to die on the march. YAMASHITA was a very good officer. He never beat anybody himself. When we had set out from BOIKEN and reached BUT we were stopped there by the Japs who ordered us to return to our original camps from which we had come. I heard that the Americans had landed at HOLLANDIA and for that reason we would be sent back. We were brought back to BOIKEN. I became very happy when I heard that the Allied Armies had landed at HOLLANDIA. We came back to BOIKEN and stayed there for 18 days and rejoined the original party of sick men which had been left there.

On 5 May 44 the Japs ordered all fit men to go with them into the jungle. The sick were to stay at the hospital where a Jap Doctor would remain to attend to them. The fit men with the Japanese set out for the jungle. The sick men including myself were left in hospital about 4 miles from BOIKEN. As I remained with the sick I know nothing about the fit men who went with the Japs. Then the Jap Doctor, whose name I do not know but whom I could identify, gave an order that 30 patients from those who were the most seriously ill were to be sent to the big Jap hospital. It was 1700 hours when he gave this order. The big hospital was about 1 mile distant. I did not go with the 30 men as I remained with the others. I do not know where those 30 were taken but that night 2 seriously wounded men crawled back into our camp where I was lying ill. They told us that the Japs had killed the other 28 and that they were the only survivors.

All had been killed by bayonetting and shooting. They had escaped only by good luck but had been badly wounded. Our officers asked the Jap officers why the 28 men had been killed. They replied that the 2 men were lying, that all were alive and that after 3 days they would be taken there to see them.

On 10 May 44 the Jap Doctor ordered 35 men from the worst cases to be sent to the big hospital. They too went and were destroyed. At 10 o'clock that night one man returned. He had bayonet wounds in the chest and was covered with earth but had not died. When he had regained consciousness (he said) he got up and fled back to our camp. He told us that the remaining 34 men had been bayoneted and buried in a trench. "I was with them too", he said "My life was spared but with this wound there is no hope for me. Look after your own lives if possible because the Japs will kill you all one by one".

Then we considered that it would be better to escape from there than to be killed. At midnight all of us ran away in different directions and became separated. I and 20 others went to a place in the jungle and began to live there. Nothing was ever heard about the rest of the party. I lived as a fugitive under terrible hardships, living on plants in the jungle for 1 year 9 days - from 10 May 44 to 22 May 45. Then the Australian Army rescued me from the claws of the Japs. I don't know what became of the Japs in our camp because we had run away from them that night. Out of the 20 men who were with me in the jungle 5 were recovered and reached Australia. The Japs searched for the others and killed them.

I CERTIFY that the above is a translation of the statement written in Urdu by 19678 Sep. BACHAN SINGH, 1/13 F.F.K, and to the best of my knowledge I have accurately transcribed its meaning.

(sgd) H. G. COOMBE Maj
'A' Sect. C.S.D.I.C. (I)

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY.

(sgd) T. MOKNANE Lt.Col.

EX 1877A EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # 5390 No. 1

書証才五三九〇号

國境小銃部隊 ^{印度兵} の「バツチヤン」シグ

1967年、陳述書、証文

一九四三年五月五日、私ハ戦時停虜トシテ日本船ヲ新嘉坡カラ「エギマ」ヘ向ケテ出発シマシタ。

一九四三年五月十六日、私ハ「エギマ」ノ「ウヰワ」ニ下船シマシタ。私達、到着後二日間ハ住居モ衣類モ又ドテ食物モ與ヘラレマセテシタ。私達、蚊ニ悩マシ數人ノ者ハ病氣ニテリマシタ。私達、士官ガ食物ノ缺乏ヲ訴ヘタ時日本人ハ其士官ヲ打擲シ「シヤト」ハ俺達ノ關係事ダ。俺達、スルコト「ドシ」ヲモ正シイ「ダ」ト云ヒマシタ。二日後私達、三哩離レタ所ヘ連テ行カレマシタ。其処デハ各自ガ密林ノ木ヲ自分ノ小屋ヲ造ルヤウ命ガ与ヘラレマシタ。日本人ハ西米利加ノ飛行機ヲ怖シテ誰モ日中ハ煙ヲ出シテ夜ハ燈ヲツケタリスルコトハ出来マセデシタ。若シ誰カ「コシ」ニ反スルヤウテ事ヲモシヤウテ死刑ノ罰ニ処セラレマシタ。約週間後私達、仲間ハ熱病、赤痢、脚氣其他種々ノ病氣、為メ死ニテ行キマシタ。私達、隊ハ「ウヰワ」カラ他ノ所ニ派遣セラレマシタ。其処カラ三百五十人が「バツチ」ニテラレマシタ。残りノ者（「ウヰワ」ニ居タ者）ハ病人ガアリマシタ。彼等ニハ食物ヲ醫藥ヲ給スル何等ノ手配モアリマセデシタ。私ハ三百五十人ト一緒ニ「バツチ」ニ行キマシタ。次ノ三ヶ月間ハ健康ヲ戦時停虜ニハ食物ガ與ヘラレマシタガ病人ニハ食物ハ與ヘラレマセデシタ。私達ハ彼等ト共ニ私達ノ食物ヲ倉ヲ「デ」アリマシタ。私達ハ

837A EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # 5390

書証才五三九〇号

國境小銃部隊 ^{印度駐兵} バツチヤン シン

1967年、陳述書、訳文

一九四三年五月五日、私ハ戰時停務トシテ日本船ヲ新嘉坡カ
「ミギマ」ニ向ケテ出発シマシタ。

一九四三年五月十六日、私ハ「ミギマ」ノ「ウヅク」ニ下船シマシタ。
私達、到着後二日間ハ住居モ衣類モ又トテ食物モ與ヘラセシ
テシタ。私達ハ蚊ニ悩マレ數人ノ者ハ病氣ヲナリマシタ。私達、士官
ガ食物ノ缺乏ヲ訴ヘタ時日本人ハ其士官ヲ打擲シ「ソコトハ
俺達ノ肉係事ダ。俺達ノスルコトハソコトハ正シイノダ」ト云ヒマ
シタ。二日後私達ハ三哩離レタ所ニ連テ行カレシタ。其処ニハ各官ガ
密林ノ木ヲ自分ノ屋ヲ造ルヤウ命ガ与ヘラシマシタ。日本人ハ亞米
利加ノ飛行機ヲ怖レテ誰モ日中ハ煙ヲ出シテ夜ハ燈ヲツケテリス
ルコトハ出来マセデシタ。若シ誰カバツレニ反ヌルヤウテ事ヲモヤウト
ラ死刑ノ罰ニ処セラレマシタ。約一週間ノ後私達、仲間ハ熱病、赤痢、
脚氣其他種々ノ病氣ノ為メ死シテ行キマシタ。私達ノ隊ハ「ウヅク」
カラ他ノ所ニ派遣セラレマシタ。其処カラ三百五十人ガ「バツト」ニマラ
レマシタ。残りノ者（「ウヅク」ニ居タ者）ハ病人ガアリマシタ。彼等ニ
ハ食物ヲ醫藥ヲ給スル何等ノ手配モアリマセデシタ。私ハ三百
五十人ト一組ニ「バツト」ニ行キマシタ。次、三ヶ月間ハ健康ト戰時停
務ニハ食物ガ與ヘラセマシタガ病人ハ食物ガ與ヘラセデシタ。
私達ハ彼等ト共ニ私達ノ食物ヲ分テ合フテアリマシタ。私達ハ

Ex No 1

No 2

DOC 5390

余リニ元ヒシクは多クセラシク、下晝夜共ニ休息スルコトハ出来マ
 シタ、大凡一日間私達ハ何等ノ交代ナク立テ續ケニ働カセラシマシタ、
 其ノ結果トシテ毎日五六人ツクガ死亡シタ、其ノ死骸ヲ火葬
 又ハ土葬ニヨリテ処置スルハ何等手ノ下シヨクガアリマセシタ、病
 氣ニ罹リタ者ハ步行出来ナイ場合ガハ殆ダ後ヲ休ムコトが出来マシタ、
 日本人ハ死亡スル日カ二日前ニ總マセルコトニシテ居リマシタ、若シ
 私達ノ士官ガ不亭云云ハモテテ残忍ニモ打擲サレシタ、如何ナル
 報告ヤ苦情ニ付テモ何ノ注意モ拂ハレマセシタ、

一九四三年十二月十四日、午前一時頃亞米利加ノ飛行機ガ所在地ヲ爆
 撃シ始メタリ、ソシテ其ノ後規則的ニヤツテ来マシタ、ソレ私達ノ士
 官ハ隊全任日本人士官ニ付テ戦時停虜ヲ標示スル識別旗ヲ收
 容所ニ上ニ掲ゲル可キアルト云フコトヲ説キマシタ、コトハ日本士
 官カラソコニ駐在シテ居リマシタ高野中佐ニ報告セラレマシタ、
 彼ハ略ハテ停虜收容所ニ識別旗ヲ掲ゲルト云フ許可ハ我が政
 府カラ来テ居ラヌト言ヒマシタ、

然ルニ空襲機ガ行ハテ居ル時モ彼高野ハ私達ヲ飛行場ハ働
 キニ出シマシタ、私達ノ士官ハ空襲機時中兵達ヲ飛行場ニ止メニ置
 フベキヲ無イテ抗議シタガコレハ拒絶セラレマシタ、飛行機ガ
 接近シテ来ヌト私達ノ隊ノ日本人ハ全部密林ノ中ニ逃ゲ込ムコト
 ニシテ居リマシタガ私達ニ付テ命令ハ赤毛勅イテハテラヌト云フコト
 ナシタ、若シ印度別階級兵トク士官ガ覆蓋物中ニ逃ゲ込ムコト
 一手段シク打擲セラレマシタ、コトガ為テ彼等ハ数晩睡眠出
 来マセシタ、

Doc. 5390

一九四三年十二月十五日、「バット」で私達を飛行場デ働イテ
居リマシタ時猛烈ナ空襲ガアリ、コレニヨツテ私達ノ五人ガ
殺サレ、十人ガ負傷シマシタ。負傷者ハ何ノ手當モ食物
モ与ヘラレマセンデシタ。負傷者ハ日本ノ病院へ連レテカレソ
コデ數人ノ者ハ毒藥ノ注射ニヨツテ殺サレマシタ。私ハ「バット」
デ約十ヶ月間働キコノ期間中毎日四枚ノ「ピスケット」ト五(オ
ンス?)ノ米トガ支給セラレマシタ。「バット」カラ私達ハ「ウエワ
ク」ニ歸リマシタ。私が歸ツテ来タ時知ツタコトハ私達ガ此処
へ残シテ行ツタ病人ノ全部ガ死亡シタト云フコトデアッタ。
「ウエワク」ニ二日留ツタ後私達ハ「バット」ト「ウエワク」トノ大凡
中間ノトコロニアル「ホイケン」へ送ラレマシタ。

一九四四年四月二十五日 私達ガ三月間ソコデ働イタ後日本人ハ私
達ニ歩行ノ出来ル者ハ日本人ノ必要品ト一ヶ月間ノ食糧ト
ヲ運搬シテ「ランヂヤ」(アイタニア?)迄彼等ニ同行スルヤウ準備
セヨト命ジマシタソレト言フノハ「ランヂヤ」ガ「ホイケン」カラ三百哩ハ
カリ離レタトコロニアツタカラデアリマス。私達ハ徒歩デ行クコ
トニナツテ居リ、私達自身デ食糧ノ手配ヲシナケレバナライト云フ
コトヲ告ゲラレマシタ。若シ誰デモ行軍中病氣ガ落伍スレバ射
殺サレルガケデ何ノ面倒モ見テクナイコトデアッタ。私達ハ各
自約十二封度ノ米ト半封度ノ塩トヲ一ヶ月間ノ食糧トシテ与
ヘラレ、コレガ「ホイケン」カラ「ランヂヤ」迄、旅程ニ於ケル食糧デア
リルト云ヒ渡サレマシタ。
No. 17 隊(第十七)ヲ指揮シテ居タ日本將校ハ「ヤマホコ」中
尉ト云フ名デアリマシタ。彼ノ次位ハ「ナコダ」中尉デ其ノ

Doc. 5390

運シテ子カレタカハ知リマセシガ其、夜二人、重傷ヲ頂ツ者
カ私カ病丸ヲ寝テ居ル收容所へ匍ツテ帰ツテ来ニシタ
二人、私達ニ日本人ガ他、二十人ヲ殺シテシモ、ソシテ二人ガ
ケガ生存者ト告ゲニシタ。全部ハ銃劍ト射撃トテ殺害セ
ラレタデアリニシタ。二人、全ク幸運テ逃シタ、テニシカ重
傷ヲ頂ツテ来ニシタ。私達、將校ハ日本人、將校ニ對シ何
故ニ二十人、者ガ殺害サレタ、カト尋ネニシタ。彼等二人、
者ガ嘘ヲ云ツテ居リ皆生キテ居テ三日後ニハ夫等一人
達ニ會フ為メ其処へ運シテ子カレタラウト答ヘニシタ

一九四四年五月十日。日本人醫師ハ最重患者、中カラ三
十五人ヲ大キイ病院へ送ルヤラ命ジマシタ。其人達モ又オカ
ケテキソシテ殺害サレニシタ。其、夜十時ニ一人ガ帰ツテキ
マシタ。彼ハ胸ニ銃劍ノ傷ヲ頂ツテ居リ全身ニエヲ被
テ居リマシタカ死サナカッタ、デス。彼ハ意識ヲ回復シタ時
（彼ハ語ニシタ）彼ハ云フツテ私達、收容所迄逃ゲテキタ、デス。

彼ハ残り、三十四人ハ銃劍ヲ突カレ塹壕、中へ埋メラレタ、ト私
達ニ語リマシタ。「私モ亦彼等ト一緒ガッタ、ト彼ハ云ヒシ
タ。私、命ハ助カッタ、トガコノ傷デハモ早私ニハ望ハ無イ。去
来ルコトナラ諸君自身、生命ニ氣ヲツケラシヨ。何トナシ
日本人ハ諸君全部ヲ一人ツ、殺害スルタラウ。ソコデ私達
ハ殺害セラレ、ヨリモ其処カラ逃亡スル方が好イタラウト云コ
トヲ考ヘニシタ。真夜中ニ私達全部、モ、ハソレソレ異ツタ方

No. 5

向ヘ逃亡シテ散々バラバラニナリマシタ。私ト外ニ二十人、者
ハ密林、中、或ル場所ニ行キソコデ生活ヲ始メマシタ。一隊、

5390

残リ、者ニ付テハ其後何モ消息ヲ聞キマセシク。私ニ年
ト九日間密林中ニ植物ヲ食シテ慘憺タル状態、モトニ脱走
者トシテ一九四四年五月十日ヨリ一九四五年五月二十三日迄生活シ来
リタ。其後濠洲陸軍ノ手ニヨリ私自本人、毒ガ救ヒマシタ。其夜
私達、復等、逃亡シマシタ。私達、收容所ニ居テ日本人
ガドウナツカハ私ハ知リマセン。密林ヲ私ト一緒ニ居リマシタ
二十人、中五人ハ健康回復シテ濠洲ニ到着シマシタ。日本人
ハ他ノ者ヲ採シ出シテ殺害シマシタ。

上記文ハ国境小銃部隊ノ「印度土民兵」ハツチヤンシ
一九六七八ニ依リ書カレタルウルズ語、陈述書、翻譯ニシテ
余ノ知識、最善ヲ盡シテ其ノ意味ヲ正確ニ轉寫セシメ
テ證ス

聯合派遣訊問本部 A 課
(署名) ナ 佐 戸ツチ、ダイ、ウ、ウ、ウ

No. 6

Ex # 1838

Evidentiary Document No. 5384.

WAL CLUES

INVESTIGATION INTO THE DEATH OF:
PTE FATEH KHAN of 1 B.P. INF.
DECLARATION OF JEMADAR ABDUL LATIF.

I, JEMADAR ABDUL LATIF of 4/9 Jat Regt. do solemnly and sincerely declare that :

1. I am Jemadar Abdul Latif of 4/9 Jat. Regt.
2. While in New Guinea as an Indian PW I was a member of 26 Indian Working Party.
3. In April, 1944, I was with 26 Indian Working Party during a march from Wewak towards Hollandia. Pte FATEH KHAN was with me on that march. In the vicinity of BOIKEM he complained to Lt. KASHIOTO that he was too weak to carry his load and asked that it be lightened. Lt. KASHIOTO was in charge of the party. He ordered Cpl YAMADA (now deceased) and other Japanese soldiers to bind Pte Fateh Khan's hands and feet and put him in the sea. He was thereupon tied up by four soldiers carried out into 4 feet of water and left there. He drowned, while Lt KASHIOTO and the other Japanese looked on. I and other Indians now deceased witnessed the incident.
4. I was present at a parade of Japanese soldiers at WEWAK on 9 Nov. 45 the Japanese known to me as Lt. (now Capt) KASHIOTO and whom I there pointed out to Lt. T. H. LIPSCOMBE of ATIS att. 6 Div. is a member of the Japanese unit which guarded 26 Indian PW Party and is identical with the individual so named in this declaration and with the individual whose photograph is exhibited hereto and numbered 103.
5. I there pointed out to Lt. LIPSCOMBE a Japanese soldier who bound Pte FATEH KHAN's hands and helped to put him in the sea. I now know him to be Sgt. KOBAYASHI who is identical with the individual whose photograph is exhibited hereto and numbered 105.

AND I MAKE THIS solemn declaration by virtue of the Statutory Declarations Act 1911-1922 conscientiously believing the statements contained therein to be true in every particular.

DECLARED in the Field this)
11th day of November, 1945) Abdul Latif Jem

(sgd) JOHN COWAN LOWRY Major
Officer of AMF

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

(sgd) T. Mornane
Lt. Col.
24/9/46.

Doc 5384

余、^ラフ^アフ^エハ^エ / ^シヤ^ツト^隊 / ^ノジ^エマ^ダル[。] / ^アブ^ドール[。]
ラ^フア^フエ^ハエ^ハ / ^シヤ^ツト^隊 / ^ノジ^エマ^ダル[。] / ^アブ^ドール[。]
ラ^フア^フエ^ハエ^ハ / ^シヤ^ツト^隊 / ^ノジ^エマ^ダル[。] / ^アブ^ドール[。]

一、私ハ^ラフ^アフ^エハ^エ / ^シヤ^ツト^隊 / ^ノジ^エマ^ダル[。] / ^アブ^ドール[。]
ラ^フア^フエ^ハエ^ハ / ^シヤ^ツト^隊 / ^ノジ^エマ^ダル[。] / ^アブ^ドール[。]

二、インド人管轄トシテニユ一ギニアニ所タトキ私
第二六インド人作業隊ノ一員デアツタ。

三、一九四四年 / 昭和十九年 / 四月^ウエ^ワク^ヨリ
^ホイ^ラン^テイ^ヤヘ^ノ行^進 / ^中ニ^ハ / ^第二^六 / ^イン^ド / ^人 / ^勞
^働 / ^隊 / ^ト / ^一 / ^緒 / ^テ / ^ア / ^ツ / ^タ。

兵^フア^フエ^ハエ^ハ / ^カハ^イン^ノ / ^行 / ^進 / ^ノ / ^時 / ^私 / ^ト / ^一 / ^緒
テ^ア / ^ツ / ^タ。

ボ^イ / ^ケン^ノ / ^附 / ^近 / ^テ / ^彼 / ^ハ / ^カ / ^シ / ^モ / ^ト / ^中 / ^尉 / ^ニ / ^彼 / ^ハ / ^弱 / ^ク / ^テ
彼^ノ / ^荷 / ^切 / ^ヲ / ^擔 / ^ゲ / ^ナ / ^イ / ^ト / ^苦 / ^痛 / ^ヲ / ^訴 / ^ヘ / ^ノ / ^之 / ^ヲ / ^輕 / ^ク / ^シ / ^テ
クレ^ト / ^煩 / ^ン / ^ダ。 / ^カ / ^シ / ^モ / ^ト / ^中 / ^尉 / ^ハ / ^此 / ^ノ / ^際 / ^ノ / ^責 / ^任 / ^者 / ^テ
ア^ツ / ^タ。

彼^ハ / ^ヤ / ^マ / ^ダ / ^伍 / ^長 / [（] / ^現 / ^在 / ^敵 / ^人 / [）] / ^ト / ^他 / ^ノ / ^日 / ^本 / ^兵 / ^建 / ^ニ / ^兵
フ^ア / ^フ / ^エ / ^ハ / ^エ / ^ハ / ^カ / ^ハ / ^イ / ^ン / ^ノ / ^手 / ^ト / ^足 / ^ヲ / ^縛 / ^リ / ^彼 / ^ヲ / ^海 / ^ニ / ^投 / ^込
ム^様 / ^ニ / ^命 / ^ジ / ^タ。 / ^ソ / ^コ / ^テ / ^彼 / ^ハ / ^四 / ^名 / ^ノ / ^兵 / ^ニ / ^依 / ^リ / ^縛 / ^ラ / ^レ
深^サ / ^四 / ^フ / ^イ / ^ト / ^ノ / ^水 / ^ノ / ^中 / ^ニ / ^選 / ^バ / ^レ / ^遺 / ^棄 / ^サ / ^レ / ^タ。
彼^ハ / ^カ / ^シ / ^モ / ^ト / ^中 / ^尉 / ^ヤ / ^他 / ^ノ / ^日 / ^本 / ^兵 / ^建 / ^ガ / ^見 / ^テ / ^キ / ^ル / ^所 / ^テ
溺^死 / ^シ / ^タ。 / ^私 / ^並 / ^ニ / ^今 / ^ハ / ^敵 / ^人 / ^ト / ^ナ / ^ツ / ^タ / ^他 / ^ノ / ^イ / ^ン / ^ド / ^兵
建^ハ / ^コ / ^ノ / ^事 / ^件 / ^ヲ / ^目 / ^撃 / ^シ / ^タ。

Doc 5384

2.

四、私ハ一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ十一月^九日・ウエ
ワクニ於ケル日本兵ノ凶兵ニ出席シタ。

私ガ其處テ第六師團附藤合真^リ、通譯部ノT・
リツアスコーム中尉ニ擧擧シタカシモト中尉（現
在大尉）トシテ私ノ知ル所ノ一日本人ハ第二六一
ノ隊ノ監視ニ當ツタ日本軍部隊ノ一員テ、
コノ陳述ニ於テ同氏名ヲ以テ拘ゲタル人物ト同一
ニシテ茲ニ提出セル一〇三號ト番號ヲ標記セル寫
眞ノ人物ト同一人テアル。

五、私ハ其處テ兵^アアテエ^イ・カ^ハイン^ノノ^ミヲ^リ縛^リ彼
ヲ^毎ニ^復込^ムコト^ヲ手^傷ツタ^一日本兵^ヲリ^ツア^ス
コーム中尉ニ擧擧シタ。私ハ今彼ガコバヤシ^ス
實テアルコトヲ知ツタ。彼ハ茲ニ示サレタル第一
〇五號ノ寫眞ノ人物ト同一テアル。

E. # 1839

Evidentiary Document No. 5391.

WAR CRIMES

INVESTIGATION INTO THE DEATH OF:
ABOUT 100 INDIANS of 18 INDIAN WORKING PARTY.
DECLARATION OF L/CPL DINA NATH

I, DINA NATH of 3/17 Dogra Regt. do solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. I am DINA NATH L/Cpl in 3/17 Dogra Regt.
2. While in New Guinea as an Indian PW I was a member of 18 Indian Working Party.
3. In the month of May, 1944, the main body of 18 Indian Working party left BUT and proceeded to KABANG about 7 miles south of BUT. About 100 Indians were too sick to move and were left behind at BUT. Jenadar ADHIN CHAND of 3/17 Dogra Regt. remained with them.
4. Approximately one month later L/Cpl TAKASHI a member of the Japanese guard of 18 Working Party rejoined us at KABANG. He had been left behind at BUT with the 100 sick INDIANS. Four or five Indians including Cpl PHUMAN SINGH and myself were sitting together. Cpl PHUMAN SINGH could speak Japanese and he asked L/Epl TAKASHI how the sick Indians were getting on at BUT. L/Cpl TAKASHI replied that all the Indians at BUT had been machine gunned and killed by the Japanese as a reprisal for the action of some Gurkha in signalling Allied Aircraft. When the Japanese began to machine gun the Indians L/Cpl TAKASHI stated that some of them took refuge in nearby trenches. When the machine gunning was over the Japanese threw grenades into these trenches. He also stated that allied aircraft continued to circle the area and dropped a small boat into the sea. Some Gurkhas made an unsuccessful attempt to reach it.
5. About three days later Jenadar ADHIN GHAND arrived and told the other Indians and myself the story we had already heard from L/Cpl TAKASHI through Cpl PHUMAN SINGH. The latter escaped with Capt. PATEL's party in August and I do not know what happened to him.

AND I MAKE this solemn declaration by virtue of the Statutory Declarations Act 1911-1922 conscientiously believing the statements contained therein to be true in every particular.

DECLARED in the field this)
11th day of November, 1945)

(Signed) DINA NATH

(Signed) J. C. LOWRY Major
(JOHN COWAN LOWRY)
OFFICER OF A.M.F.

Doc. 5391

21839

No. 1

書證第叁九一號

戰爭犯罪

第八印度人作業隊の。名、印度人家に關し調査 伍長勤務「ナナ」に陳述。

松「ト」に聯隊「ナナ」にハ嚴肅ニ且誠實ニ陳述ス。即チ

(一) 松「ト」に聯隊「ナナ」伍長勤務「ナナ」に

(二) 印度人伍長「ナナ」に「ナナ」頃ハ第八印度人作業隊、一員「ナナ」。

(三) 五四年五月ハ才八印度人作業隊、本隊「ナナ」に「ナナ」上、南不約理「ナナ」に「ナナ」進來ル。約一〇〇名、印度人、初動「ナナ」病氣ハ重カク「ナナ」残サシ「ナナ」聯隊「ナナ」に「ナナ」。

(四) 約一月後ハ才八作業隊、日本營備兵、一人「ナナ」伍長勤務「ナナ」に「ナナ」再「ナナ」彼「ナナ」病「ナナ」印度人「ナナ」残サシ「ナナ」伍長「ナナ」松「ナナ」印度人が「ナナ」下「ナナ」伍長「ナナ」日本語ヲ話「ナナ」彼「ナナ」勤務「ナナ」計「ナナ」病「ナナ」印度人達ハ「ナナ」如何「ナナ」訊「ナナ」。

伍長勤務「ナナ」に「ナナ」印度人、全部ハ機關銃「ナナ」ヲ銃殺サレト答「ナナ」。

飛行機「ナナ」行爲「ナナ」復讐計「ナナ」日本人「ナナ」殺「ナナ」。

日本兵ハ印度人「ナナ」開始「ナナ」伍長勤務「ナナ」。

「ナナ」。

印度人、或ハ兵「ナナ」海「ナナ」下「ナナ」。

機關銃掃射「ナナ」日本兵ハ其「ナナ」中「ナナ」擲「ナナ」。

No. 2

Doc. 5391

下... 彼... 投下... 人... 舟...

(五) 劉... 後... 印度人... 不...

Confidential Document No. 5082.

STATEMENTS

INVESTIGATION INTO THE DEATH OF:
SGT WARIAN SINGH and L/CPL HAZARA SINGH of 2/12 Frontier Force.
DECLARATION OF PTE CHAIN SINGH

I, PTE CHAIN SINGH of 2/12 Frontier Force do solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. I am Pte CHAIN SINGH of 2/12 Frontier Force.
2. While in New Guinea as an Indian PW I was a member of 19 Indian Working Party.
3. In August 1944 19 Indian Working Party had its main camp at MANILBOA with a detachment of about 100 Indians nearby at PAHOI. Sgt. WARIAN SINGH, L/Cpl HAZARA SINGH and I were with the detachment at PAHOI.
4. One day while we were making sac sac Sgt. WARIAN SINGH and L/Cpl HAZARA SINGH quarrelled with one Cpl HAJINDAI SINGH and began beating him. Subedar GANDA SINGH and Subedar SUKHDARSHAN SINGH separated them. A few minutes later I saw Cpl HAJINDAI SINGH go up to Cpl TAKEI and say something. About ten minutes later Cpl TAKEI L/Cpl HATA Pte ISHIYAMA and Pte YASUSAKA approached with a shovel and two sticks. Cpl TAKEI and the two Privates beat Sgt. WARIAN SINGH and L/Cpl HAZARA SINGH with the shovel and sticks until they fell to the ground senseless. Lt. MITSUBA and L/Cpl HATA locked on.
5. Half an hour later they were still lying on the ground. Cpl TAKEI, L/Cpl HATA and Ptes ISHIYAMA and YASUSAKA bound their hands behind their backs with turbans and led them away. Pte ISHIYAMA was carrying a shovel and Pte YASUSAKA a rifle. As they passed the guard hut they were joined by Cpl SHIMIZU who was also carrying a rifle. Lt. MITSUBA followed them. Shortly afterwards I heard three rifle shots.
6. I did not see either of these Indians again. The next day I overheard Subedar GANDA SINGH asking Lt. MITSUBA what had happened to Sgt. WARIAN SINGH and L/Cpl HAZARA SINGH and heard Lt. MITSUBA reply saying that they had been handed over to the Military Police.
7. I was present at a parade of Japanese soldiers at WEWAK on 9 Nov. 45. I there pointed out to Lt. T. H. LIFSCOLBE OF ATF att 6 Div the undermentioned Japanese soldiers who are referred to by name in paras 4, 5 and 6 hereof. They are Cpl. (now Sgt/Maj) TAKEI, L/Cpl (now Sgt) HATA, etc (now Cpl) ISHIYAMA, Pte (L/Cpl) YASUSAKA, Lt. MITSUBA and Cpl (now Sgt/Maj) SHIMIZU and are the individuals whose photographs are exhibited hereto

EX. # 1840

Evidentiary Document No. 5382

Page 2.

and numbered 83,87,90, 100, 70 and 84 respectively.

AND I make this solemn declaration by virtue of the Statutory
Declarations Act 1911-1922 conscientiously believing the
statements contained therein to be true in every particular.

DECLARED in the field this)
11th day of November, 1945.) (sgd) CHAIN SINGH

(sgd) J. C. LOWRY
(JOHN COWAN LOWRY)
OFFICER OF A.I.F

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

(Sgd) T. MORNAME Lt. Col.
24/9/46.

Doc 5382

余、遊正堂第十二聯隊第二大隊所屬、兵、キエイ
ン・シンク / CHAIN SINGH / 警備 / 八島嶺五ツ嶺
管ニ兼務スルコト左ノ如シ。

ト余ハ遊正堂第十二聯隊第二大隊所屬ノ兵、キエイ
ン・シンク / CHAIN SINGH / 警備 / ナリ。

ト印度人管島トシテ、ニユーギニア / NEW GUINEA /
ニ在リタル間、余ハ第十九印度人作業者ノ一員ナリ
キ。

ト一九四四年 / 昭和十九年 / 八月中、第十九印度人
作業者、本所ハ ラニンボア / RANIMBOA / ニ

又は一〇〇名ノ印度人ヲ收容セル所ハ、パロム
/ PAROM / 正堂ニ設置セラレアリ。ワリアム・シンク

WARIAM SINGH / 警備 / 警備、ハザラ・シンク、

HAZARA SINGH / 警備 / 兵長及ヒ余ハ、パロム / PAROM /

所ニ在リタルニ在リタリ。

ト一日余ガ サックサック / SAC SAC / 作業者、ワ

リアム・シンク / WARIAM SINGH / 警備 / 警備及ヒ

ハザラ・シンク / HAZARA SINGH / 警備 / 隊員ノ隊

長ハ ラジンダー・シンク / RAJINDAR SINGH / 警

備 / 兵長トシテヲ起シテヲ隊員ニシテシメタリ。

1.

Doc 5382

余、遊三置第十二聯隊第二大隊所屬、兵、キエイ
ン・シング / CHAIN SINGH / 警備 / 八島嶺上ツ説
書ニ取越スルコト左ノ如ク。

ト余ハ遊三置第十二聯隊第二大隊所屬ノ兵、キエイ
ン・シング / CHAIN SINGH / 警備 / ナリ。

ト印度人管島トシテ、ニユーギニア / NEW GUINEA /
ニ在リタル間、余ハ第十九印度人作業者ノ一員ナリ
キ。

ト一九四四年 / 昭和十九年 / 八月中、第十九印度人
作業者、本所ハ ラニンボア / RANIMBOA / ニ

又焼一〇〇名ノ印度人ヲ收容セル所ニハ、ハロム
/ PAROM / 附近ニ設置セラレアリ。ワリアム・シング

／ WARIAM SINGH / 警備 / 警備、ハザラ・シング、

／ HAZARA SINGH / 警備 / 兵長及ビ余ハ、ハロム / PAROM /
附近ノ所ニ在リタリ。

ト一日余ガ サックサック / SAC SAC / 作業者、ワ

リアム・シング / WARIAM SINGH / 警備 / 警備及ビ

ハザラ・シング / HAZARA SINGH / 警備 / 隊員ノ所

ニハ、ラジンダー・シング / RAJINDAR SINGH / 警

備 / 兵長ト爲テ起シテハ隊員トシテナリ。

Doc 5382

ガンダ・シンダ / GANDA SINGH / 敬請 / 貴族院議員
 及び スクダール・シンダ / SUKHDARSAN
 SINGH / 敬請 / 印度自治会 / 議定 / 議決 / 議決 / 議決
 リ。 敬請 / 敬請 / スクダール・シンダ / RAJINDAR
 SINGH / 敬請 / 印度 / タケイ / TAKEI / 印度
 / 議定 / 議決 / 議決 / 議決 / 議決 / 議決 / 議決 / 議決
 タケイ / TAKEI / 印度 / 敬請 / HATA / 敬請 / 敬請 /
 ヤマ / ISHIYAMA / 敬請 / ヤスサカ / YASUSAKA /
 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請
 ケイ / TAKEI / 印度 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 /
 シンダ / WARIAM SINGH / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 /
 シンダ / HAZARA SINGH / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 /
 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請
 タケイ / TAKEI / 印度 / 敬請 / HATA / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 /
 / ヤスサカ / ISHIYAMA / / YASUSAKA / 敬請 /
 シンダ / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 /
 ヤマ / ISHIYAMA / 敬請 / 敬請 / ヤスサカ / YASU
 SAKA / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 / 敬請 /

Doc 5382

セル隊、之を小籠ヲ擧ぐタル シミズ / SHIMIZU /
 任長ト一行ニ知レリ。一行ノ後ヨリ シミズ
 / MITSUBA / 中 / 少? / 時モ之ニ從ヒ行キタリ。
 少時ノ後、余ハ三體ノ儀ヲ尋ニセリ。
 其ノ後余ハ之等諸君ノ印度人ノ装ヲ見タルコト
 ナシ。翌日、余ハ ガンダ・シング / GANDA SINGH /
 雲霧ノ印度軍師ガ ミツバ / MITSUBA / 中 / 少? /
 隊ニ就ヒ、ワリアム・シング / WARIAM SINGH / 雲霧
 軍官及ヒハラザ・シング / HARAZA SINGH / 雲霧ノ
 兵長諸君ノ式ニ何事ノ趣リタルヤヲ訊ネキタルヲ
 洩レテキタリ。ミツバ / MITSUBA / 中 / 少? / 時ハ
 諸君ハ各兵ニ別送サレタル營營ニ居タリ。
 一九四三年ノ昭和二十年ノ十一月九日、ウエワ
 ク / WEWAK / ニ於テ行ハレタル日本軍將兵ノ山兵
 ニ際シ余ハ其ノ中ニ臨ミ、第ニ陸軍軍醫官合國
 醫官諸君ノ リプスコム / LIPSCOMBE / 中隊
 ニ就シ、本隊造營所、第三、第六隊ニ其ノ名ヲ尋
 グタル日本軍將兵ヲ指示セリ。
 右ノ中ニ タケイ / TAKEI / 任長 (現陸軍軍醫)
 ハタ / HATA / 兵長 (現軍醫) 伊イシヤマ / ISHI
 YAMA / (現任長) 兵ヤスサカ / YASUSAKA / (現

Doc 5382

長) ミツズ / MITSUBA / 中 / 少? / 尉及ビシミス
/ SHIMIZU 伍長 (現特務曹長) ニツテ、且ツ此處
ニ第八三、八七、九〇、一〇〇、七〇及八四號ト附
番シ表示シアル寫眞ハ各々右ノ者ノ寫眞ナリ。

G. #1841

Confidential Document No. 5383.
INTERROGATION OF

L/Pte YASUSAKA, Masaji, of 19 Special Water Duty Coy.
Ref. death of Sgt. Wariam SINGH and L/Cpl HAZARA SINGH

Q. Do you remember being at PAKOH in Aug 44?

A. Yes.

Q. Did you know that two Indians were killed there?

A. Yes, but I do not know their names.

Q. Why were they killed?

A. These two Indians were quarreling with a third Indian and had beaten him. This Indian was unable to take revenge, so he reported to TAKEI that they had told him that when the Americans came all the Japanese would be killed, TAKEI then reported the matter to MIISUEA.

Q. Who killed them?

A. MIISUEA ordered SHIMIZU and me to shoot them. We took them away from the party and shot them with rifles.

Q. Was anyone else present?

A. There were three or four, but I only remember the names of two, TAKEI AND Pte SEINO (Now dead).

Q. Were they beaten before being killed?

A. They were beaten with a shovel while working sac sac by TAKEI.

Signatures of Officers taking evidence. /s/ Bruce Capt.
(indecipherable) Lt.
/s/ (indecipherable) Lt.

Signature of Interpreter at Cape WOM 26 Oct. 45 /s/ (indecipherable)

Certified true copy. /s/ T. Mornane Lt. Col. 24/9/46.

Doc 5383

警證第五三八三號

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

第十九特別給水中隊所屬兵長「ヤスサカ・マサジ」尋問
單曹「シング、ワリナム」及恒長勤番「シング、
ハザラ」ノ死ニ關シテ。

問、一九四四年八月三「バロム」ニ居タノヲ覺ユ

テ居ルカ。

答、ハイ。

問、ソコテ印度人が二人殺サレタノヲ知ツテキル

カ。

答、知ツテ居マスガ其名ハ知りマセン。

問、何故殺サレタカ。

答、此二人ノ印度人ハモ一人ノ印度人ト喧嘩ラシ

テ居テ其一人ノ方ヲ覆リマシタ。其印度人ハ

仕返シガ出来ナイモノデスカラ「タケイ」ニ

テノ二人ハ照会ヲ加人ガヤツテ來ルト日本人

ハ皆殺ニ合フテテラウト自分ニ話シタト告ゲ

タノデス。「タケイ」ハ其辭ヲ「ミツバ」ニ

報告シタ。

問、誰レガ此二人ヲ殺シタカ。

答、「ミツバ」ガ警水ト殺ニ命令シテ此二人ヲ殺

タセマシタ。吾々ハ此二人ノ其一行カラ引離

1.

Doc 5383

第十九特別給水中隊所屬兵長「ヤスサカ・マサジ」尋問
 軍曹「シング、ワリアム」及恆長勳章「シング、
 ハザラ」ノ死ニ関シテ。
 問、一九四四年八月三「バロム」ニ居タノヲ覺ユ
 テ居ルカ。
 答、ハイ。
 問、ソコデ印度人が二人殺サレタノヲ知ツテキル
 カ。
 答、知ツテ居マスガ其旨ハ知りマセン。
 問、何故殺サレタカ。
 答、此二人ノ印度人ハモ一人ノ印度人ト喧嘩ラシ
 テ居テ其一人ノ方ヲ覆リマシタ。其印度人ハ
 仕返シガ出来ナイモノデスカラ「タケイ」ニ
 テノ二人ハ強采ヲ加人ガヤツテ來ルト日本人
 ハ皆殺ニ合フテアラウト自分ニ替シタト告ゲ
 タノデス。「タケイ」ハ其等ヲ「ミツバ」ニ
 報告シタ。
 問、誰レガ此二人ヲ殺シタカ。
 答、「ミツバ」ガ精水ト殺ニ命令シテ此二人ヲ殺
 タセマシタ。吾々ハ此二人ヲ其一行カラ引離

警證第五三八三號

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5383

シテ小銃ヲ撃チマシタリ

問、他ニ居合セタモノハ無カツタカ。

答、三四人居マシタガ二人シカ名前ヲ覺ヘテ居リ

マセン。「タケイ」ト兵ノ「セイノ」ダケデ

ス。「セイノ」ハ銃ニ死ンデキル

問、此二人ハ死ヌ前ニ殺ラレタカ。

答、サクサク作業中

「タケイ」ニヨツテ「シヤベル」ヲ撃ラレマ

シタ。

2.

Doc 5383

シテ小銃ヲ撃テマシタ。

問、他ニ居合セタモノハ無カツタカ。

答、三四人居マシタガ二人シカ名前ヲ覺ヘテ居リ

マセシ。「タケイ」ト兵ノ「セイノ」ダケテ

ス。(「セイノ」ハ腕ニ死ンデキル)

問、此二人ハ死ヌ前ニ霞ラレタカ。

答、サクサク作業中

「タケイ」ニヨツテ「シヤベル」ヲ撃ラレマ

シタ。

C. # 1842

Evidentiary Document No. 5380

Page 1.

INTERROGATION OF

L/Pte YASUSAKA, Masaji, of 19 Special Water Duty Coy.
Ref. death of HISALDAR RASHID MOHD.

Q. Do you remember being at PANIMBOA in Sep 44?
A. Yes.

Q. Do you remember an Indian officer by the name of RASHID MOHD?
A. Yes, and one other Indian NCO also.

Q. Where did you actually see them?
A. I saw them sitting outside a hut with their hands tied.

Q. What happened to them?
A. Pte. ISHIYAMA took these two Indians into the bush. Ishiyama always wanted a watch, so he took the watch from RASHID MOHD, then shot both the Indians.

Q. What part did you play in this?
A. I stood and watched.

At this stage YASUSAKA wished to tell the whole story, which is as follows:-

During the morning HIBINO took tobacco and shoes from these two Indians. The Indians then complained to all the other Japanese soldiers, but no one took any notice of them. Pte ISHIYAMA and I decided to scare them, so we tied their hands together. Later on we took them into the bush and while walking along I told ISHIYAMA that we had scared them enough and to let them go now. But he said "We have gone this far, we may as well finish it and I would like this officer's watch". ISHIYAMA then shot them both and took the watch.

Q. Was permission sought from any officer for these men to be killed?
A. No. We had been told previously by IZUMI that any Indian disobeying an order could be shot without permission.

Q. Did you report this killing to anyone?
A. Yes, I reported to Capt. IZUMI.

Q. What action did IZUMI take?
A. He did not take any action, but said "That's all".

Q. Was TAKEI present then?
A. TAKEI and all other Japanese soldiers of the platoon saw them with their hands tied.

Q # 1842

INTERROGATION OF

L/Pte YASUSAKA, Masaji, of 19 Special Water Duty Coy.
Ref. death of HIMALDA RASHID MOHD.

Q. Do you remember being at BANIMBOA in Sep 44?
A. Yes.

Q. Do you remember an Indian officer by the name of RASHID MOHD?
A. Yes, and one other Indian NCO also.

Q. Where did you actually see them?
A. I saw them sitting outside a hut with their hands tied.

Q. What happened to them?
A. Pte. ISHIYAMA took these two Indians into the bush.
Ishiyama always wanted a watch, so he took the watch from
RASHID MOHD, then shot both the Indians.

Q. What part did you play in this?
A. I stood and watched.

At this stage YASUSAKA wished to tell the whole story, which is as follows:-

During the morning HIBINO took tobacco and shoes from these two Indians. The Indians then complained to all the other Japanese soldiers, but no one took any notice of them. Pte ISHIYAMA and I decided to scare them, so we tied their hands together. Later on we took them into the bush and while walking along I told ISHIYAMA that we had scared them enough and to let them go now. But he said "We have gone this far, we may as well finish it and I would like this officer's watch". ISHIYAMA then shot them both and took the watch.

Q. Was permission sought from any officer for these men to be killed?
A. No. We had been told previously by IZUMI that any Indian disobeying an order could be shot without permission.

Q. Did you report this killing to anyone?
A. Yes, I reported to Capt. IZUMI.

Q. What action did IZUMI take?
A. He did not take any action, but said "That's all".

Q. Was TAKEI present then?
A. TAKEI and all other Japanese soldiers of the platoon saw them with their hands tied.

Q. Did TAKEI have anything to do with the killing of these two
Indians?

A. No.

Q. Did TAKEI ever take watches or pens from the Indians?

A. I did not see him actually do this, but I know he had some
watches and pens belonging to the Indians.

Signatures of Officers taking evidence/s/ ? Brun Capt.
(Indecipherable) L.T.

Signature of Interpreter At Cape WOM
26 Oct. 45
(Indecipherable)

Certified true copy.
/s/ T. Mornane Lt. Col.
20 Sept., 1946.

圖樣巻類第五三八〇號

「リサルダール・ラシツド・モード」ノ死ニ關スル

第十九特別給水中隊、兵長、「ヤスサカ・マサジ」ノ証言

42 Doc 5380

問、君ハ一九四四年九月「ラニムボア」ニ居タコト
ヲ記憶シテホルカ。

答、ハイ、

問、ラシツド・モード「ナル印度人將校ヲ覺エテ居
ルカ。

答、ハイ、ソレカラモソ一人ノ印度人ノ下士モ覺エ
テ居リマス。

問、彼等ヲ實際ニ見タノハ何處カ。

答、私ハ彼等ガ兩手ヲ縛ラレテ小屋ノ外ニ坐ツテ居
ルノヲ目撃シマシタ。

問、何事ガ彼等ニ起ツタカ。

答、石山音詮兵卒ガコノ二人ノ印度人ヲ叢林ノ中ニ
送レテ行キマシタ。石山音詮ハ始終時計ヲ欲シ
ガツテ居リマシタ。ソコデ彼等ハ「ラシツド・
モード」カラソノ時計ヲ奪ヒ、コレヲノ印度人
ヲ匿名トモ射殺シテシマヒマシタ。

問、ソノ時君ハ如何ナル役割ヲ演ジタカ。

答、私ハ立ツテ見テ居リマシタ。

圖樣彙編第五三八〇號

「リサルダール・ラシツド・モード」ノ死ニ關スル
第十九特別給水中隊、兵長、「ヤスザカ・マサジ」ノ証言

問、君ハ一九四四年九月「ラニムボア」ニ居タコト
ヲ記憶シテキルカ。

答、ハイ、

問、ラシツド・モード「ナル印度人將校ヲ覺エテ居
ルカ。

答、ハイ、ソレカラモソ一人ノ印度人ノ下士モ覺エ
テ居リマス。

問、彼等ヲ實際ニ見タノハ何處カ。

答、私ハ彼等ガ兩手ヲ縛ラレテ小屋ノ外ニ坐ツテ居
ルノヲ目撃シマシタ。

問、何事ガ彼等ニ起ツタカ。

答、石山香譯兵卒ガコノ二人ノ印度人ヲ叢林ノ中ニ
送レテ行キマシタ。石山香譯ハ始終時計ヲ欲シ
ガツテ居リマシタ。ソコデ彼等ハ「ラシツド・
モード」カラソノ時計ヲ奪ヒ、コレヲノ印度人
ヲ匿名トモ射殺シテシマヒマシタ。

問、ソノ時君ハ如何ナル役割ヲ演ジタカ。

答、私ハ立ツテ見テ居リマシタ。

42 Doc 5380

1.

Doc 5380

コノ時、一ヤスサカ「ハコノ経緯ノ全部ヲ話シ
タイト希冀シタ。ソレハ次ノ通りデアル。
朝、日比野^{音譯}ガコノ二人ノ印度人カラ煙草ト
輪ヲ取リ上ゲマシタ。印度人違ハ他ノ日本兵違
ニソレヲ訴ヘマシタガ誰モ彼等ニ構ツテヤルモ
ノハアリマセンデシタ。石山^{音譯}兵卒ト私ハ
彼等シ威シテヤラウト思ツテ彼等ノ手ヲ縛リ上
ゲマシタ。ソレカラ私共ハ彼等ヲ叢林ニ連れて
行キマシタ。歩キテガラ私ハ石山^{音譯}ニモウ十
分戻シタカラコレ位デ勸禁シテヤラウトハナイ
カト申シマシタ。シカシ彼ハ「此處マデヤツテ
來タノダカラ片付ケテシマツテモヨイダラウ。
ソシテ俺ハコノ將校ノ時計ガ欲シイノダ。」ト
申シマシタ。石山^{音譯}ハソコデコノ瓦名ヲ射殺
シ時計ヲ奪リマシタ。

問、彼等ヲ殺害スルニ付テ誰カ將校ノ許可ヲ受ケタ
カ。

答、イイエ、受ケマセンデシタ。私共ハ前ニ泉^{音譯}
カラ命令ニ従ハナカツタ印度人ハ許可テクシテ
射殺シテモヨイトイハレテ居リマシタ。

問、君ハコノ殺害ニ付テ誰カニ報告シタカ。

答、ハイ、泉^{音譯}大尉ニ報告致シマシタ。

問、泉^{音譯}ハドウ云フ行動ヲトツタカ。

Doc 5380

3.

答、何ノ行動モトリマセンデシタ。タダ、「ソウカ」ト云ヒマシタ。

問、竹井音譯ハソノ時居合セタカ。

答、竹井音譯ト小隊ノ他ノ日本兵達ハ彼等カ手ヲ縛ラレテ居ル所ヲ目撃致シマシタ。

問、竹井音譯ハコレヲ兩名ノ印度人殺害ニ關係ガアツタカ。

答、アリマセン。

問、竹井音譯ハソレマデ印度人達カラ時計ヤペン、ヲ奪ツタコトガアルカ。

答、私ハ彼ガ實際ニ奪ツテ居ル所ヲ目撃シタコトハアリマセンデシタガ、シカシ彼ガ印度人達ノ所
有物デアアル時計ヤ、ペンヲ持ツテ居タノヲ知ツ
テ居リマス。

Ex. # 1843

Evidentiary Document. No. 5381.

WAR CRIMES

INVESTIGATION INTO THE DEATH OF:
RISALDEH RASHID MOHD and CPL MASHUQ ALI both of 3 Ind. Cav.
DECLARATION OF PTE LAKHU RAM

I, PTE LAKHU RAM of 2/12 Frontier Force do solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. I am Pte LAKHU RAM of 2/12 Frontier Force.
2. While in New Guinea as an Indian PW I was a member of 19 Indian Working Party.
3. In September, 1944, I and the other members of 19 Indian Working Party were camped at KANIMBOA. At about 1400 hours one afternoon I saw RISALDEH RASHID MOHD and Cpl MASHUQ ALI both tied to one tree with their hands behind their back. They were outside Cpl TAKEI's hut and as Cpl. TAKEI and other Japanese were about I did not ask them what they had been doing.
4. At about 1800 hours on the same day I heard two shots. I assumed that RISALDEH RASHID MOHD and Cpl MASHUQ ALI had been shot and went straight to the hut that they occupied. A Private whose name I do not remember but whose bed was next to RISALDEH RASHID MOHD told me that they had gone to see Cpl TAKEI at approximately 1100 hours that morning to ask for the return of some tobacco which Cpl TAKEI had confiscated on the preceding day.
5. Later in the evening I was told by Pte SOHNU (now deceased) that he had seen the two Indians led away into the bush by Ptes ISHIYAMA AND YASUSAKA shortly before the shooting.
6. I have not seen either RISALDEH RASHID MOHD or Cpl MASHUQ ALI since that day.
7. I was present at a parade of Japanese soldiers at WEWAK on 9 November, 1945, I there pointed out to Lt. T. H. LIPSCOMBE of ATIS att 6 Div. the undermentioned Japanese who are referred to by name in paras 3, 4 and 5 hereof they are Cpl. (now Sgt/Maj) TAKEI Pte (now Cpl) ISHIYAMA and Pte (now L/Cpl) YASUSAKA and are the individuals whose photographs are exhibited hereto and numbered 83, 90 and 100 respectively.

And I make this solemn declaration by virtue of the provisions of the Statutory Declarations Act 1911-1922 conscientiously believing the statements contained therein to be true in every particular.

DECLARED in the field this 11th day of)
November, 1945:) LAKHU RAM

J. C. LOWRY Major
(JOHN COWAN LOWRY)
Officer of AMF

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY
/s/ T. MORRANE Lt. Col.
20 Sept., 1946.

證據書類第五三八一號

.....

1843A Doc 5381

一 私、^{2/1}國境軍兵卒「ラクフ・ラム」ハ嚴肅且誠實
 ニ次ノ如ク供述シマス。
 二 私ハ^{2/1}國境軍兵卒「ラクフ・ラム」デアリマス。
 三 印度兵俘虜トシテ「ニュー・ギニア」ニキタ間私
 ハ第十九印度兵作業隊ノ一員デアリマシタ。
 四 一九四四年（昭和十九年）九月、私ト他ノ第十九
 印度兵作業隊員ガ「ラニムボア」ニ宿營シマシタ
 五 或ル日ノ午後二時頃、私ハ「リサルダ・ラシド」
 モードト「マシユク・アリ」伍長ノ二名ガ何レ
 モ一本ノ槍ニ後手ニ縛ラレテキルノヲ目撃シマシ
 タ。彼等ハ「タケイ」伍長ノ兵舎ノ外ニ居リ、「タ
 ケイ」伍長ト他ノ日本兵ガ其ノ邊ニ居マシタノデ
 六 二人ニ何ヲシタノカラ訊ネマセンデシタ。
 七 同日ノ午後六時頃私ハ、二聲ノ銃聲ヲ聞キマシタ
 八 私ハ「リサルダ・ラシド・モードト」マシユ
 ク・アリ」伍長ガ射タレタノダト思ヒ、直グ様彼
 九 等ノ居住スル兵舎へ行キマシタ。名前ハ覺エテ居
 一〇 リマセンガ、「リサルダ・ラシド・モード」ノ
 一一 隣リノ寢台ノ兵ガ二人ハ今朝十一時頃「タケイ」
 一二 伍長ガ昨日没救シタ煙草ノ返還ヲ頼ミニ彼ニ會ヒ
 一三 ニ出掛ケタノダト私ニ言ヒマシタ。

Doc 5381

其ノ夜過ク、私ハ（今ハ故人）ノ兵卒「ソ一ニユ」カラ例ノ統聲ノ少シ前ニ、二名ノ印度兵ガ兵卒ノ「イシヤマ」及ビ「ヤスサカ」ニ叢林ノ中へ連レ込マレルノヲ見タト聞カサレマシタ。

其ノ日以來私ハ、「リサルダ一・ラッド・モ一ド」ニモ「マシユク」アリ「伍長ニモ會ヒマセンデシタ。

私ハ一九四五年（昭和二十年）十一月九日「ウエラク」ニ於ケル日本兵ノ閩兵ニ參列シ、其ノ場テ第六師團附陸軍機譯者通譯部ノ「ライ・エイチ・リヌコム」中尉ニ本口供書ノ第三、四、五節ヲ述ベタ。次ノ日本兵即チ「タケイ」伍長（現在實長）、「イシヤマ」兵卒（現在伍長）、「ヤスサカ」兵卒（現在兵長）ヲ名指シマシタ。彼等ノ寫眞ハ此ノ件ニ關シテ指示シ夫々、八三番、九十番、百番ト番號ガ附シテアリマス。

Doc 5381

2.

其ノ夜遅ク、私ハ（今ハ故人）ノ兵卒「ソーニユ」カラ例ノ銃聲ノ少シ前ニ、二名ノ印度兵ガ兵卒ノ「イシヤマ」及ビ「ヤスサカ」ニ叢林ノ中へ運レ込マレルヲ見タト聞カサレマシタ。

其ノ日以来私ハ、「リサルダー・ラッド・モード」ニモ「マシユク・アリ」伍長ニモ會ヒマセンデシタ。

私ハ一九四五年（昭和二十年）十一月九日「ウエワク」ニ於ケル日本兵ノ閲兵ニ參列シ、其ノ場デ第六師團附陸軍機譯者通譯部ノ「テイ・エイチ・リブスコム」中尉ニ本口供書ノ第三、四、五節デ述べタ次ノ日本兵即チ「タケイ」伍長（現在曹長）、「イシヤマ」兵卒（現在伍長）、「ヤスサカ」兵卒（現在兵長）ヲ名指シマシタ。彼等ノ寫眞ハ此ノ件ニ關シテ指示シ夫々、八三番、九十番、百番ト番號ガ附シテアリマス。

C. #1844

Evidentiary Document No. 5386.

DEATH OF KITIAL SINGH
STATUTORY DECLARATION

I, JELADAR CHINT SINGH, 2/12 Frontier Force, do solemnly and sincerely declare as follows:

1. In the month of February 1945, when the JAPANESE marched us to YAKANO from YAWA and again back to YAWA, we stopped at FURRINGE on the way. On the following morning I saw Pte LAIDA, a member of our guard (nursing orderly) beating Jenadar KITIAL SINGH. Pte LAIDA had a big stick in his hand and KITIAL SINGH was lying on the ground. Pte LAIDA was beating his head, face and other parts of the body. His head started bleeding and the blood flowed over his face and shirt. He became unconscious. LAIDA left him and went into his hut.
2. We carried KITIAL SINGH to his hut and put water in his mouth and he recovered after half an hour. I asked him the reason for the beating. He told me that LAIDA had called him early in the morning, his boots being dirty with his uncontrollable motion and had order Jenadar KITIAL SINGH to clean them. He said he took the boots to the creek nearby and cleaned them. When he came back Pte LAIDA inspected the boots and found a little dirt in one of the boots and started beating him.
3. After this beating KITIAL SINGH did no work for 3 days. He was very weak and had been beaten so severely that he was not able to work for this period.
4. He was then made to work, although his condition was such that he could do very little. He told LAIDA and others that he was too ill to work. LAIDA said that he was a malingerer and sent him out to work each day.
5. KITIAL SINGH never recovered from the effect of the beating and became weaker and weaker every day.
6. About 3 weeks after he had resumed work he became too sick to eat or walk. We left him alone on his bed for 2 days and he received no medical attention.
7. On the third day he died.
8. The abovementioned incident was also witnessed by L/Cpl FUKAI, the JAPANESE guard who died later on and all the INDIANS present there.

Evidentiary Document No. 5386.

Page 2.

9. I was present at a parade of JAP soldiers at WEWAK on 9 Nov 45. The JAPANESE whom I then pointed out to Lt. T. H. LIFSCOLFE, ATIS, att 6 Div, was the person referred to above as Pte MAIDA. He is identical with the person whose photograph is annexed hereto and numbered 101.

AND I MAKE this solemn declaration by virtue of the STATUTORY DECLARATIONS ACT 1911-22 conscientiously believing the statements contained herein to be true in every particular.

DECLARED at WEWAK this)
8th day of January, 1946) /s/ CHINT SINGH JEE
before me)

(JOHN D STLED)
Capt. Officer of AIF

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY.
/s/ T. Mornane, Lt-Col.

9. I was present at a parade of JAP soldiers at WEWAK on 9 Nov 45. The JAPANESE whom I then pointed out to Lt. T. H. LIPSCOFFE, ATIS, att 6 Div, was the person referred to above as Pte MAIDA. He is identical with the person whose photograph is annexed hereto and numbered 101.

AND I MAKE this solemn declaration by virtue of the STATUTORY DECLARATIONS ACT 1911-22 conscientiously believing the statements contained herein to be true in every particular.

DECLARED at WEWAK this)
8th day of January, 1946) /s/ CHINT SINGH JEE
before me)

(JOHN D STLED)
Capt. Officer of AIF

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY.
/s/ T. Mornane, Lt-Col.

Doc. 5386

◎「キチアル・シング」ノ死

律令的陳述

私國境軍一二ノ二、「ヂエマダ・ナン・シング」ハ
嚴肅及ビ眞實ニ次ノ如ク陳述シマス。

一、一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ二月三日本軍ガ我
タラ「ヤワ」カラ「ヤカノ」ヘ進軍セシメソシテ
又「ヤワ」ヘ戻ラセラシタ時、途中「フリンデ」
ニ止リマシタ。翌朝、私ハ我々ノ番兵（看護兵）
ノ一人「マイダ」兵卒ガ「ヂエマダ・キチアルシ
ング」ヲ毆打スルノヲ見マシタ。「マイダ」兵卒ハ
手ニ大キナ棒ヲ持テ、ソシテ「キチアル・シング」
ハ地面ニ横タハツテキマシタ。「マイダ」兵卒ハ
彼ノ頭、顔、及ビ体ノ他ノ部分ヲ毆ツテイマシタ。
彼ノ頭ハ出血シ初メソシテ血ハ彼ノ肩ト袷衣ノ上
ニ流レマシタ。彼ハ人夢不省ニナリ「マイダ」ハ
彼ヲ置キ去リニシテ、自分ノ兵舎ヘ入ツテ了ヒマシ
タ。

二、我々ハ「キチアル・シング」ヲ彼ノ小屋ヘ
運ビ口ノ中ヘ水ヲ入レテヤリマシタ。彼ハ半時間
後ニ正氣ニ返リ私ハ彼ニ毆ラレタ理由ヲ尋ヒマシ
タ。彼ハ「マイダ」ハ早朝彼ヲ辱ンデ靴ガソノ亂
暴ナ動作ノタメニ汚レテイタノデ「ヂエマダ・キ
チアル・シング」ニ奇麗ニスルヨウニ命ジタト語

1.

Doc 5386

2.

- リマシタ。彼ハ近クノ小川ニ靴ヲ持テイツテ掃除
シタト申シマシタ。彼ガ長ツテ来タ時「マイダ」
兵卒ハ靴ヲ檢タメ値カナ汚レラ靴ノ片方^見見出シ
ソシテ彼ヲ陳リ初メタノデス。
- 三、 毆打後、「キチアル・シング」ハ三日間働カナ
カツタ。彼ハ非常ニ虚弱ナ上ニ餘リヒドク毆ラレ
タノテ此ノ期間働カセラレナカツタノデス。
- 四、 ソレカラ彼ハ殆ド働ケナイ様ナ状態ニ在ツタ
ノニ働カサレマシタ。彼ハ「マイダ」ト他ノ人々
ニ、彼ハ働クニハ弱スキルト語リマシタガ「マ
イダ」ハ彼ハ^虚病者デアルト云ヒ彼ヲ毎日働キニ
送り出シマシタ。
- 五、 「キチアル・シング」ハ毆打ノ結果サツバリ
回復セズ毎日弱クナル一方デシタ。
- 六、 彼ガ再び仕事ヲ初メテカラ約三週間後、アマリ
ナ重態ニナツタノテ食事モ歩行モ出来ナクナリマ
シタ。我々ハ彼ヲ唯一人二日間療台ニ置シマシタ
ガ其ノ間彼ハ何等治療ヲ受ケマセンデシタ。
- 七、 三日目ニ彼ハ死亡シマシタ。
- 八、 上記ノ出来事ハ其ノ後死ンダ日本人ノ番兵「フ
カイ」兵長並ニ其處ニ居タ^經テノ印度人モ目撃サ
レマシタ。
- 九、 私ハ一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ十一月九日、

Doc 5386

「ウエワク」デ日本兵ノ圖兵式ヲ參觀シマシタ。
其ノ時私が第六師團附屬聯合軍機譯通譯部ノ「ア
イ・エ伊サ・リブスコムブ」中尉ニ指摘シタ日本
人ハ「マイダ」兵卒トシテ前ニ言及シタ人物デア
リマシタ。彼ハ此處ニ添付サレタル「〇」番ノ寫
眞ノ人物ト同一人デアリマス。

XXXXX

XXXXXX

Cx # 1845

Evidentiary Document No. 5387.

WAR CRIMES

INVESTIGATION INTO THE DEATH OF:

SUBEDAR ISHAH SINGH, SUBEDAR GANDA SINGH, JEMADAR RAI SINGH,
and BAHADUR SINGH all of 2/12 Frontier Force.

DECLARATION OF SGT. HALIH SINGH.

I, Sgt. HALIH SINGH of 2/12 Frontier Force do solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. I am Sgt. HALIH SINGH of 2/12 Frontier Force.
2. While in New Guinea as an Indian PW I was a member of 19 Indian Working Party.
3. At the beginning of February, 1945, I and the other members of 19 Indian Working Party left YAWA for YAKANO. Subedar ISHAH SINGH, SUBEDAR GANDA SINGH, JEMADAR RAI SINGH and JEMADAR BAHADUR SINGH were too weak to carry their loads and were left in YAWA. I have been told by Pte RAI SINGH and Pte SAPURAN SINGH (both now deceased) that Lt. MITSUBA ordered them to march to YAPANO and that they refused stating that they were too sick to walk.
4. Lt. MITSUBA, Nursing Orderly MAIDA, Cpl HATA and a Japanese whose name I do not know went into the hut in which the Indian Officers had been left. At that time I was outside a hut approximately 150 yards distant. Inside this, this hut, were Sgt/Maj DEVALESHO RAI and Pte PURAN SINGH (both now deceased) who were sick and who were not going on the march. I heard five shots four of them being fired in quick succession and the last one a couple of minutes later. About twenty minutes after the shooting Lt. MITSUBA and the other three Japanese emerged from the hut and joined my party about 200 yards away. I then also joined my party.
5. About half an hour after the shooting I went back to the hut in which were Sgt/Maj DEVALESHO RAI and Pte PURAN SINGH. The former told me that he had been across to the Officers' hut and that he had seen the bodies of the four officers lying on the floor under some blankets. They were dead.
6. I was present at a parade of Japanese soldiers on 9 Nov. 45 at KEWAK. The Japanese whom I there pointed out to Lt. LIPSCOMBE of ATIS att 6 Div as Lt. MITSUBA, Cpl HATA and Nursing Orderly MAIDA are the persons mentioned in paras 3 and 4 hereof by those names, and are the individuals whose photographs are exhibited hereto and numbered 70, 87 and 101 respectively.

7. I further pointed out to the said Lt. LIFSCOTTE a Japanese soldier whom I now know as Cpl HIRAKA who is the unnamed Japanese referred to in para 4 hereof and who is the individual whose photograph is exhibited hereto and numbered 89.

AND I make this solemn declaration by virtue of the Statutory Declarations Act 1911-1922 conscientiously believing the statements contained therein to be true in every particular.

DECLARED in the field this)
11th day of Nov. 1945:)

HANU SINGH

(Sgd) JOHN COWAN LOWRY Major
Officer of AIF

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

(Signed) T. NORMAN Lt-Col

7. I further pointed out to the said Lt. LIFSCOLLE a Japanese soldier whom I now know as Cpl HIROOKA who is the unnamed Japanese referred to in para 4 hereof and who is the individual whose photograph is exhibited hereto and numbered 89.

AND I make this solemn declaration by virtue of the Statutory Declarations Act 1911-1922 conscientiously believing the statements contained therein to be true in every particular.

DECLARED in the field this)
11th day of Nov. 1945:)

HANIL SINGH

(Sgd) JOHN COWAN LOWRY Major
Officer of AIF

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

(Signed) T. MORRANE Lt-Col

Doc-5387

證據書類番號五二八七號

12 FRONTIER FORCE / SUBEDAR ISHAR SINGH /
 國境部隊所屬 / スグアルイニヤルスینگ
 SUBEDAR GANDA SINGH / JEMAPARS RAM SINGH /
 スグアルカニタスینگ / ナヒマタルスラムスینگ及
 BAHDUR SINGH /
 以上ニ關スル死亡調査
 SGT. HAMIR SINGH /
 以上ニ關スル軍曹ノ陳述

予ノ國境部隊所屬ノハミルスینگ軍曹ノ嚴肅ニ且誠實ニ在
 加ク陳述致シマス
 1. 私ハ國境部隊所屬ノハミルスینگ軍曹ニ在リマス
 IN NEW GUINEA
 2. 私ハ印度人俘虜トシテ、ニヒキニ居リマシク期間ハ第一九印度人
 作業隊所屬ノ員ニ在リマシク
 3. 一九四五年(昭和二十年)二月初旬ニ私ハ第一九印度人作業隊所屬
 他隊員ノヤカノヤカノニ向テ出發シマス。SUBEDAR ISHAR SINGH
 SUBEDAR GANDA SINGH, JEMADAR RAM SINGH, JEMADAR BAHDUR
 SINGH, 及ナヒマタルスラムスینگ及ナヒマタルハミル
 SINGH
 以上ノ自身ノ荷物ヲ携帶スルコトガ不可能ト程衰弱ニ居タルニ命
 残サレマシク
 PTE RAM SINGH, PTE SUPERON SINGH
 以上ノ兵士ハフランススینگ兵、兩名(現在兩名トモ故人ガ次ノ様ト事
 實ヲ私語ヲ聞クニ即テハ中尉若少尉ガ自命達ニ遠
 行進セヨト命ジマスガ其行スル事ガ不可能ト程衰弱ニ居ルニ及テ申
 述ベテ断リマシク
 SGT. MITSUGA, SGT. HATA
 中尉若少尉(前田眉護兵)ノ任長及一名ノ日本人現在
 姓名不詳ガ數名ノ印度人俘虜ノ残キニ小屋ニ入テ行キマシク

My 7

Doc-5387

其時私小屋カヲ約一五〇ヤード離シテ外部ニ居リシヲ
 此中即チ此小屋、内部ニ爲シヨラ公曹長ト、^{PTE. PURAN SINGH}ア、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}ニシテ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}尖瓊在居
 故人、二名ガ病氣ニ此ヲ行進ニ去掛ケテ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}残留ニテ居リシヲ。
 私ニ發シ銃聲ヲ聞キテ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}其内四發、全ク連續的ニ發シ、
 一發ニ命傷ニ發射サレシヲ。此射擊後、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}二十分進テ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}シヨラ中尉
 (若少尉)ト他、二名、日本兵、此小屋カヲ去テ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}約二〇〇ヤード離シテ
 私隊ニ参加シシヲ。私ニ亦、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}此小屋ニ参加シシヲ。
 5. 此射擊後、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}約二十分進テ、私、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}シヨラ公曹長ト、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}ア、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}尖、
 兩名ガ居テ小屋ニ引込ニテ行キシヲ。前者、此將校連、小屋ヲ通テ
 合シテ、此四名將校、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}身傍ガ若干ノ毛布ニ敷キ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}床、上ニ横テ
 (此ヲ目撃シテ)私ニ語リシヲ。

6. 私、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}於一九四五年(昭和二十年)十月九日日本兵、閱兵ニ出
 席シシヲ。
 其時、私ガ第六師團所屬聯合軍總譯及通譯部勤務、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}アリシ
 中尉(若少尉)トシ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}シヨラ中尉(若少尉)トシ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}夕長及、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}シヨラ
 父看護士ト指摘シテ、日本人、各人、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}姓名ガ本陳述、第三
 節及第四節ニ述ベシト、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}人、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}アリマス。
 此ヲ茲ニ提出シテ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}右各人、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}爲真、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}全、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}第七〇號、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}第八七號及第
 一〇二號、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}番號ヲ附シテ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}アリマス。

7. 私、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}更前記、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}シヨラ中尉(若少尉)ニ日本兵ヲ指摘シシヲ。
 前者、本陳述、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}第四節、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}於テ言及シ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}日本人、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}某、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}今、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}シヨラ
 長、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}アルニ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}知リシヲ。

而シテ同、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}人、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}爲真、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}茲ニ提出シテ、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}第八九號、^{PT. PURAN SINGH}番號ヲ附シ
 アリマス。

Doc 5

Page 3

Doc 5387

而予于一九二二一九三三年律令 THE STATUTORY DECLARATIONS ^{ACT} 遵守
 敬請。本陳述之文字其良心昭然。右包含之陳述 ^{ACT} 及
 其於其真實性之信不
 一九四五年(昭和二十年)十月十日戰錄於其陳述不

HAMIR SINGH

OFFICER of IAF
 其文字所屬士官

陸軍少佐 JOHN COWN LOWRY MAJOR (署名)

右之真實性之寫實性之證明不

陸軍中佐 T. NORNAME LT. COL (署名)

C. #1846

Evidentiary Document No. 5229.

Page 1.

RESTRICTED

Translation of Exhibit "A"
28 Nov. 1945.

53rd. Field Anti-Aircraft Artillery Bn. 36 Div. 2d. Army

Acting Bn. Comdr. Capt. ONO, Satoru

Born 25th April, 1921

Home Address 4028 Takatsuhara Kashima-cho Saga-Ken

The aforementioned officer was interrogated by Air Force Capt. Conduit and made the following statement through interpreter Sgt. Wright.

- Q. On 25 Nov., when asked "What do you know about the American POW? Why did you tell a lie and say "I don't know anything."?
- A. I was ordered to say "I don't know," although I know something, Staff Officer Lt. Col. KAJIWAHA of the 36 Div. I believe he gave the same order to all other officer of the same Div.
- Q. On the 25th when you were interrogated why did you say "I don't know" on the subject whether or not you were ordered to say "I don't know."?
- A. If I said "I know" I thought I'd cause some trouble for the Div. Comdr.
- Q. What was the name of the American POW who was transferred to Capt. ONO from 2nd. Lt. ISE (now 1st. Lt) attached to Hqs. of the 223rd. Inf Regt?
- A. I do not know the name.
- Q. Why were you in need of the POW?
- A. Because I wanted to kill him.
- Q. What was the date and time of killing?
- A. I don't remember exactly, but I believe it was in Oct. 1944.
- Q. 1st. Lt. ISE stated it was between the latter part of Oct. or the early part of Nov. Can you figure it out by comparison?
- A. I believe it was latter part of Oct. 1944.
- Q. To whom did you give the orders to kill the Americans?
- A. I gave the orders to Sgt. OGINO and Cpl. YOSHIJIMA.
- Q. Where are the two at the present?
- A. They are dead.
- Q. When did they die?
- A. I believe Sgt. OGINO died in May 1945 and Cpl. YOSHIJIMA died in Aug.

Q. What other POW of the Allied Forces was killed by the 36 Div.

A. I just heard that Allied fliers that crashed in the vicinity of Salomi were fired by machine gun and hid in the sea. (T.N.died)

Q. Where were the Americans executed by your orders?

A. They were killed by the road near the Div. Hqrs. (Details shown on the map attached to this report)

Q. Why did you give the orders to execute the Americans?

A. I had a strong hostile feeling, because I lost more than 100 of my men, and 6 artillery guns, due to American bombing. Since ancient times the Japanese believed in revenge and I believed that I was justified in doing so during war time. I asked if I can get a POW and kill him. Then YOSHINO unit comdr. gave me permission through Hqs. officers. Therefore I made up my mind.

Q. Did you take anything from the American POWs before you led them to the place of execution.

A. I didn't take anything then, but after the execution Sgt. OGINO took one pair of shoes.

Q. When the POW was executed, what did the American POW have in possession?

A. I did not look into that.

Q. What was the color of hair of the taller American?

A. I believe he was blonde.

Q. What was the color of the shorter one?

A. I believe, he was blond too.

Q. Did you tie the hands of the Americans?

A. Yes, I did have their hands tied.

Q. What orders did you give the N.C.O. regarding the method of execution?

A. I ordered them to have the distance of 3 meters between the POW and have them kneel.

Q. Did you blindfold them?

A. Yes, they were blindfolded with a towel.

Q. What orders did you give when executing?

A. I gave orders to bayonet them and they did so. The NCOs bayoneted them in their chest one at a time. The Americans fell on their back and died. Then I ordered the Americans to be beheaded and it was carried out. The neck of the Americans couldn't be beheaded completely from the body so I ordered them to remove them. One NCO did so by using a shovel. Then I ordered to fire; Sgt. OGINO fired a round or two at one of the

Q. What did you do with the corpses?

A. I had the bodies buried at the place of execution, but I had one American head placed on top of the grave.

Q. Did you make a report to YOSHINO unit comdr that you killed then?

A. Yes I did after a few days.

Testimony of Capt ONO. Acting Bn. Comdr, 53rd. Field AAA Bn
/s/ Capt. ONO, Satoru
Certified by Capt. (F/Lt) Conduit Interrogator
" " Sgt. Wright Interpreter.

COMMONWEALTH OF THE PHILIPPINES)
CITY OF MANILA) SS

I, T/3 Naoya Haruta, 36917038, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the above Exhibit "A" from Japanese to English: and the above is a true record of that translation.

/s/ T/3 Naoya Haruta
NAOYA HARUTA, T/3
36917038

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 22 day of March, 1946.

/s/ Roy J. Donnelly
ROY J. DONNELLY, 2d Lt. Inf.
Investigating Officer, War
Crimes Investigating
Detachment.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ John R. Fleming
JOHN R. FLEMING
2nd. Lt. ORD

E X H I B I T "A"

RESTRICTED

Doc 56647

Ex 1846A

護照 番号 五二二九 號

第二軍第三十六師團第五十三師隊高射砲大隊

ONO SAFORU

大隊長代理 オノ・サトル 大尉

出生年月日 一九二一年 / 大正十年 / 五月二十五日生

本 籍 佐賀縣鹿島町高津原四〇二八番地

CONDUITE

右士官ハコンテイット空軍大尉ニ依リ訊問サレ通譯

ライト軍曹ヲ總シ左ノ取述ニナシタ。

— — — — —

ISE

問、君二三三歩兵部隊本陣付伊勢 / 音聲 / 少尉 (號

甲尉) ヨリオノ大尉ニ引渡サレタ米國人俘虜ノ

由ハ何ト云フノデスカ。

答、之ハ分リマセン。

問、貴方ハ何故其ノ俘虜ヲ必妥トシマシタカ。

答、私ハ彼ヲ救サウト強ツタカラデス。

問、幾シタ日時ハ何時デシタカ。

Doc 5229

答、勢然ト知ユテキマニシカ一丸凶正經ノ陸軍十九年
ノ十月ダツタト意ヒマス。

問、誰ニソノアメリカ人連ラ様ス様ニト行令ラ與ヘマ
シタカ
OGINO YOSHIJIMA

答、秋野軍官ト「ヨシジマ」伍長ニ命ジマシタ。

問、三十六師團ヲ編成サレタ聯合軍ノ他ノ俘虜ハ誰アシ
タカ。

答、私ノ只今知イタ處テハ聯合軍ノ飛行士テサロミノ
近クハ墜落シタモハ徳軍機ヲ撃タレテ海中ニ没シ
タサウデス。
(T・N・死ニマシタ)

SALOMI

問、何處テ貴方ノ師ニ守リ兵米兵ハ野戦サレタノデス
カ。

答、師團司令ニ近クノ部隊ヲ守サレマシタ。(詳細ハ
此ノ報告ニ添附シタ地圖ニ示シテアリマス。)

問、何處貴方ハソノアメリカ人連ラ死刑ニスル營節
令ラ與ヘマシタカ。

答、私ハ一〇〇人以上ノ山下ト、地穴門ヲアメリカノ
兵士ノケメニテツクノテ様シイ覺意ヲ持ツテキマ

21

3
★

Doc 5229

答、昔カラ日本ハニハ復讐ノ信節ガアリ、歐陸中ハ其ノ權ヲ懸クシテモ正シイト云ツテモマツカ。

私ハ信^{MOGHIE}ヲ手ニ入レテ、彼ヲ殺シテモ其イカ類御カカキマツカラ、吉野^{MOGHIE}ノ本^{MOGHIE}ヲ殺シテモ其イカ類御許可ヲ得ヘマツカ。ソレヲ私ハ其心シマツカ。

問、貴方ハ元^{MOGHIE}ノ執行ノ權ヲ^{MOGHIE}ニ^{MOGHIE}人^{MOGHIE}權^{MOGHIE}ヲ^{MOGHIE}シテ行ク國ニ^{MOGHIE}等カラ^{MOGHIE}カ^{MOGHIE}リマツカカ。

答、私ハ其^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}モ^{MOGHIE}トリマセンテマツカ。然シ^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}ニ^{MOGHIE}富^{MOGHIE}ハ^{MOGHIE}短^{MOGHIE}カラ^{MOGHIE}一^{MOGHIE}足^{MOGHIE}ヲ^{MOGHIE}トリマツカ。

問、其^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}ガ^{MOGHIE}所^{MOGHIE}別^{MOGHIE}ニ^{MOGHIE}サ^{MOGHIE}レ^{MOGHIE}タ^{MOGHIE}時^{MOGHIE}彼^{MOGHIE}ハ^{MOGHIE}何^{MOGHIE}ヲ^{MOGHIE}造^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}テ^{MOGHIE}キ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}カ。

答、私ハサカウツカ^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}疑^{MOGHIE}ハ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ベ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}セ^{MOGHIE}ン^{MOGHIE}テ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}カ。

問、貴^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}萬^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}米^{MOGHIE}國^{MOGHIE}人^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}疑^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}也^{MOGHIE}ハ^{MOGHIE}何^{MOGHIE}デ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}カ。

答、金^{MOGHIE}包^{MOGHIE}ダ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}タ^{MOGHIE}ト^{MOGHIE}ル^{MOGHIE}ヒ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ス。

問、密^{MOGHIE}イ^{MOGHIE}萬^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}米^{MOGHIE}國^{MOGHIE}人^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}疑^{MOGHIE}ハ^{MOGHIE}ド^{MOGHIE}ソ^{MOGHIE}ナ^{MOGHIE}也^{MOGHIE}デ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}カ。

答、英^{MOGHIE}張^{MOGHIE}リ^{MOGHIE}金^{MOGHIE}包^{MOGHIE}ダ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}タ^{MOGHIE}ト^{MOGHIE}ル^{MOGHIE}ヒ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ス。

問、貴^{MOGHIE}方^{MOGHIE}ハ^{MOGHIE}ア^{MOGHIE}メ^{MOGHIE}リ^{MOGHIE}カ^{MOGHIE}人^{MOGHIE}知^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}手^{MOGHIE}ヲ^{MOGHIE}縛^{MOGHIE}リ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}カ。

答、サ^{MOGHIE}カ^{MOGHIE}チ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ス。私^{MOGHIE}ハ^{MOGHIE}彼^{MOGHIE}等^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}手^{MOGHIE}ヲ^{MOGHIE}縛^{MOGHIE}ラ^{MOGHIE}セ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}カ。

問、元^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}執行^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}萬^{MOGHIE}法^{MOGHIE}ニ^{MOGHIE}似^{MOGHIE}シ^{MOGHIE}テ^{MOGHIE}下^{MOGHIE}上^{MOGHIE}官^{MOGHIE}廷^{MOGHIE}ニ^{MOGHIE}ド^{MOGHIE}ソ^{MOGHIE}ナ^{MOGHIE}翁^{MOGHIE}等^{MOGHIE}ヲ^{MOGHIE}シ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}カ。

答、彼^{MOGHIE}等^{MOGHIE}ヲ^{MOGHIE}三^{MOGHIE}六^{MOGHIE}ノ^{MOGHIE}間^{MOGHIE}ヲ^{MOGHIE}監^{MOGHIE}イ^{MOGHIE}テ^{MOGHIE}死^{MOGHIE}カ^{MOGHIE}セ^{MOGHIE}ル^{MOGHIE}據^{MOGHIE}前^{MOGHIE}ジ^{MOGHIE}マ^{MOGHIE}ツ^{MOGHIE}カ。

Doc 5229

問、彼等ニ目撃シラシマシタカ。

答、サウデス。タオルデ目撃シラシマシタ。

問、死刑ヲ執行スル時ドシテ命令ヲ受ヘマシタカ。

答、私ハ銃剣ヲ突刺セト命ジマシタ。彼等ハ其聲ニ
シマシタ。下士官達ハ一時ニ一ハツツ彼等ノ
前ヲ突刺テ突刺シマシタ。アメリカ人達ハ御向
ケニ倒レテ死ニマシタ。ソレカラ私ハアメリカ
人達ノ首ヲハネヨト命ジ、ソレハ実行サレマシ
タ。アメリカ人達ノ首ハ完全ニ頭カラハネル事
カ出来ナカツタノア、私ハ彼等ニソレヲ許セト
命付シマシタ。一ハノ下士官ハ、シヤベルラ似
ツテサウシマシタ。ソコデ私ハ發砲セヨト命ジ
マシタ。狐島軍官ハ銃口ノ一ツニ向ツテ一、二
發^{SHOOT}シマシタ。虎^{SHOOT}ヲ射テシマシタカ。

問、私ハ虎^{SHOOT}ヲ死刑執行ノ場所ニ送メサセマシタ。

答、私ハアメリカ人ノ首ラ一ツ^{SHOOT}ノ上ニ置カセマシ
タ。

問、吉野^{SHOOT}隊長ニ彼等ヲ殺シタ事ヲ報告シマシタカ。

答、サウデス。二三ロツテカウ報告シマシタ。

Doc 5229

ONO
オノ大尉ノ自述第五十三野戦高射砲大隊、大隊長代理

ONO SAHORU
／署名／オノ・サトル大尉

調査官 CONDUIT
コンライツト大尉（加空大尉）之ヲ證明ス
WRIGHT

衆 諺 ライト軍曹之ヲ證明ス

アイリツピン共相識

マニラ前 ニ於テ

HARUFA NA
余、三六九一七〇三八陸軍三等技術軍曹ハルタ・ナ
ラヤ^{OKA}ハ通法ニ宣誓ラナシ余ガ上記誓証、A ラ日本
語ヨリ英語ニ正シク翻譯セシコト並ビニ上記ガ該
譯ノ真正ノ記録ナルコトヲ陳述ス。

／署名／陸軍三等技術軍曹 ハルタ・ナラヤ
HARUFA NA OYA

三六九一七〇三八陸軍三等技術軍曹 ハルタナラヤ

一九四六年／昭和二十一年／三月二十二日余ノ面前
ニ於テ署名シ、且宣誓ス

ROY J DONNELLY
署名 ロイジエー・ドンネリ

以等犯罪調査校隊新五野戦陸軍歩兵少尉

ロイジエー・ドンネリ

真正ノ寫シナルコトヲ證明ス

署名 JOHN R FLEMING
ジョン・アール・フレミング

兵 曹 ジョン・アール・フレミング少尉

誓証 "A" / 荷出 / 禁止

5

G. # 1847

Evidentiary Document No. 5385.

Page 1.

The accused: Fujinura Unit, Army Capt Kato, Kihachiro, gives the following evidence: being duly sworn.

(see form of oath attached)

Q. What unit did you belong to on the 14th Nov 44?

A. I was a member of the KATSU KIKI also known as the KATO Force.

Q. What did that force consist of - the number of Japanese and natives?

A. It was composed of 4 Japanese and about 16 Indonesians.

Q. What were the duties of that force?

A. The guarding of this place OTAKWA. The relations with the natives, seeing that they are controlled.

Q. Do you remember an Australian being captured at OTAKWA about 14 Nov?

A. There was a prisoner captured on the 12th November.

Q. When the prisoner was captured, what was done with him?

A. After his capture he was kept for two or three days and taken to the rear.

Q. Where at?

A. First of all he was taken to INOOGA and from there to KAPALAPORA.

Q. Was he wounded when he was taken prisoner?

A. No.

Q. After the prisoner had been captured did you send any signals to 5 Div HQ?

A. In a signal sent to this HQ amongst other things mentioned I told them that I had a prisoner.

Q. It was just a normal situation report sent in by you?

A. The fact that I had a prisoner was mentioned last.

Q. When did you send that signal, how soon after the prisoner was captured?

A. About 2 days after the prisoner was captured.

Q. Did you get a reply to that signal?

A. No, there was no reply to that.

Q. Did you send another signal later on relating to the prisoner?

A. A good deal later I sent another enquiry "What will be done with the prisoner?"

Q. Did you get a reply?

A. I got a reply very much later I think early in March 45.

Evidentiary Document No. 5385.

Page 1.

The accused: Fujimura Unit, Army Capt Kato, Kihachiro, gives the following evidence: being duly sworn.

(see form of oath attached)

Q. What unit did you belong to on the 14th Nov 44?

A. I was a member of the KATSU KIKA also known as the KATO Force.

Q. What did that force consist of - the number of Japanese and natives?

A. It was composed of 4 Japanese and about 16 Indonesians.

Q. What were the duties of that force?

A. The guarding of this place OTAKWA. The relations with the natives, seeing that they are controlled.

Q. Do you remember an Australian being captured at OTAKWA about 14 Nov?

A. There was a prisoner captured on the 12th November.

Q. When the prisoner was captured, what was done with him?

A. After his capture he was kept for two or three days and taken to the rear.

Q. Where at?

A. First of all he was taken to IHOOGA and from there to KAPARAPOKA.

Q. Was he wounded when he was taken prisoner?

A. No.

Q. After the prisoner had been captured did you send any signals to 5 Div HQ?

A. In a signal sent to this HQ amongst other things mentioned I told them that I had a prisoner.

Q. It was just a normal situation report sent in by you?

A. The fact that I had a prisoner was mentioned last.

Q. When did you send that signal, how soon after the prisoner was captured?

A. About 2 days after the prisoner was captured.

Q. Did you get a reply to that signal?

A. No, there was no reply to that.

Q. Did you send another signal later on relating to the prisoner?

A. A good deal later I sent another enquiry "What will be done with the prisoner?"

Q. Did you get a reply?

A. I got a reply very much later I think early in March 45.

- Q. What did that signal say?
A. The signal was "GENSHI SHOBUN". "I want it carried out - disposal locally". "You are directed to carry out the disposal SHOBUN locally". "Want SHOBUN carried out locally".
- Q. Did you understand that signal to mean that you were to carry out the execution on the spot?
A. As soon as I received the telegram, under the conditions of the war situation at the moment, I understood that I was to kill the prisoners.
- Q. Who signed the signal?
A. The Chief of Staff.
- Q. What would you have done with the prisoner if you had not received the signal from Div HQ.
A. I was wanting him to be sent back and I would have done so if I had not got the signal.
- Q. What were your reactions to the signal?
A. The prisoner and I had lived together and I had begun to understand the feelings of the Australian and I was very sorry it had to be done but seeing it was an order it had to be carried out.
- Q. What would have happened to you if you had not carried out the order?
A. As it was an order from a superior I actually did not consider what would happen to me, it had to be carried out and I was very sorry.
- Q. How did you treat the prisoner?
A. The prisoner was housed in a portion of the house that I lived in when I was in KAPALAPOKA and I was aware that foreigners ate more meat than Japanese and I used to try to get more meat for him when the opportunity arose.
- Q. Did you ever give the prisoner medical supplies?
A. I had given him medicine for malaria and for stomach trouble.
- Q. Do you remember the day of the execution?
A. Yes.
- Q. What did you say to the prisoner on that day?
A. I told him "On orders received you are to be shot". Having known that the prisoner was a Christian I asked him if he would like 10 minutes to pray.
- Q. After the execution how was the prisoner buried?
A. In following the Japanese custom we straightened the body out and put the arms resting on the chest and buried him, and covered the grave right up.

Q. You gave the same burial to the prisoner that you would have given to a normal Japanese soldier?

A. Yes.

Q. If you had not received this order from Div HQ would you have executed the prisoner?

A. I had no authority to kill any prisoner. I would have evacuated him to the rear at the first opportunity.

Q. You were your own boss, there was no one senior to you in your particular area?

A. Yes.

Q. You heard the other witness say you were about 300 kilometres from the nearest HQ?

A. Yes, I heard that.

Q. So if you had kept this prisoner alive for some additional time there wasn't much likelihood of your getting into trouble with 5 Div HQ was there?

A. An order had been received to carry out this execution therefore I carried out without any thought of not receiving any punishment myself if I did not carry it out.

Q. How long was it before WILLIAMS was well. Wasn't he sick for some period.

A. He was down with malaria 2 or 3 times and he had a slight touch of dysentery.

Q. You went to the execution yourself didn't you?

A. Yes.

Q. And ordered the firing party to fire?

A. Yes.

Q. Who did you use, natives?
How many?

A. 5.

Q. Did they all have ball ammunition?

A. Yes, I gave them 5 each.

Q. Did you know of anything wrong that this man WILLIAMS had done?

A. No.

Q. But you suggested at one stage that WILLIAMS was a spy hadn't you?

A. I did not say such a thing.

Q. How long have you been a Capt?

A. April 1945.

- Q. How long did you have a commission before that?
A. Nov. 40 I became an officer.
- Q. Have you ever had any teaching on what is the proper treatment of prisoners of war?
A. I was never taught anything. All my training was in connection with war. At schools we were not likely to be more than Capt's we were not instructed.
- Q. Have you ever heard of International Law relating to prisoners of war?
A. I didn't know anything about International Law but I had heard that prisoners of war were to be put in a stockade and remove them to higher HQ as soon as possible.
- Q. And how are they to be treated?
A. I don't know.
- Q. Do you think it is a good thing to kill a defenceless man?
A. I think it is a very bad thing. I myself was very upset about it.

THE DEFENDING OFFICER:

- Q. What is your civilian occupation?
A. I was on the technical side in a company which made glass cement etc.
- Q. You were not a permanent soldier?
A. I had been in the Army since 1939.
- Q. But you were not a permanent soldier?
A. I was called up in 1939 and I have been in ever since, I don't know whether I am a permanent soldier or not.
- Q. Was the school you went to a Reserve Officers' School and not a school for the Permanent Army?
A. Reserve Officers' School.

THE COURT:

- Q. When did you first mention the signal you had received to the previous witness.
A. I first told the Lt. in a letter I wrote.
- Q. How long after you received the signal?
A. I think it was 2 or 3 days after I received it.
- Q. Why didn't you kill the prisoner within the first few days of receiving that order?
A. It never entered my head to kill him.

Q. Do you agree it would have been wrong to kill the prisoner at that time?

A. Yes.

Q. Why?

A. I didn't consider anything about the killing. I arrived on the night after he had been captured and my thought was to move him to the rear, it didn't enter my head whether it was right or wrong.

Q. Why do you think it is a bad thing to kill a defenceless prisoner of war who has committed no offence?

A. A prisoner of war had no means of defending himself and his weapons have been taken and I had also heard that a prisoner of war should not be executed. Therefore I knew it was wrong.

R. P. 83(B) complied with.

THE DEFENDING OFFICER: That is all the evidence I have.

I certify that this sheet and the four preceding sheets bearing my signature contain a true copy of the official record of evidence of Captain KATO KIHACHIRO contained in the proceedings of Military Court held at Morotai on 14th January, 1946, relating to the trial of the said Captain KATO, KIHACHIRO on the charge of murdering a prisoner of war at KAPALAPOKA, Dutch New Guinea, between 10 March 45 and 20 March 45.

/s/ T. Mornane Lt. Col.

Q. Do you agree it would have been wrong to kill the prisoner at that time?

A. Yes.

Q. Why?

A. I didn't consider anything about the killing. I arrived on the night after he had been captured and my thought was to move him to the rear, it didn't enter my head whether it was right or wrong.

Q. Why do you think it is a bad thing to kill a defenceless prisoner of war who has committed no offence?

A. A prisoner of war had no means of defending himself and his weapons have been taken and I had also heard that a prisoner of war should not be executed. Therefore I knew it was wrong.

R. P. 83(B) complied with.

THE DEFENDING OFFICER: That is all the evidence I have.

I certify that this sheet and the four preceding sheets bearing my signature contain a true copy of the official record of evidence of Captain KATO KIHACHIRO contained in the proceedings of Military Court held at Morotai on 14th January, 1946, relating to the trial of the said Captain KATO, KIHACHIRO on the charge of murdering a prisoner of war at KAPALAPOKA, Dutch New Guinea, between 10 March 45 and 20 March 45.

/s/ T. Mornane Lt. Col.

Doc 5385

被常藤村部隊 陸軍大臣 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省
(添附 陸軍省 參照)

問 二月十四日 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 其部隊 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 部隊 任務 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省
陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 二月十四日 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 停虜捕合後 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 停虜捕合後 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 回答 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 通信 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 通信 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省
陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 通信 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 通信 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 其通信 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

答 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

問 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省

Doc 5385

問

「貴方自身は、何と云ふ方か。」

答 貴方（彼）「當領」の命令「依り貴方へ射殺せしむ」云と云ふ方か。

私（貴方）「傍ら」に「宿敵」に「死す」事「知りしむ」と「云ふ」に「問」「答」し「しむ」。

「是」云ふ「事」か。

問 処刑後、傍らに如何に尋らるる方か。

答 日本習慣に從ひ、我々の死体を眞直に吊臈し胸に貫き、其の盛らるる。

× × × × ×

問 貴方自身は刑場所へ行かざらぬか。

答 行かざらぬ。

問 「之」銃殺隊に射殺せしむる命は如何か。

答 命はなし。

× × × × ×

余、余の署知事有る本紙並に前四葉、九四五年三月十日ヨリ、九四
 五年三月二十日ヨリ「蘭領」「三ノ本」「カコホカ」ニ於て傍ら如何に殺害
 せしむるに依り、陸軍大尉加藤喜八郎、密理之閣公九四六年四月十日ヨリ
 又、同建廿五軍事裁判裁判記録中ニ合へば陸軍大尉加藤
 喜八郎、証言、公判記録、眞正、正字、本字、合符、合符、可証。

陸軍中位 下（右）不（左）署知

Doc 5385

問

問、貴方自身は、俘虜に何と云ふ事か。

答、私彼に「爾等も命令に依り、貴方に射殺せられたら、

私に俘虜が基督教徒なら、知らず知らず十分間許しを以て、

許す事になる。

問、処刑後、俘虜は如何に葬られたか。

答、日本習慣に従って、我々の死体も真直に、胸を胸に、腹を腹に、蓋せられた。

x x x x x

問、貴方自身は、刑場所へ行かされたか。

答、へ行かされた。

問、貴方銃殺隊に射殺されたか。

答、サレた。

x x x x x

余、余の署名が有る本紙並に前四葉、一九四五年三月十日ヨリ一九四五年三月十五日三箇領「三ノ下」に於て、俘虜に如何に殺害せられたか、依り陸軍大尉加藤喜一郎、密理之問に、一九四六年三月十日ヨリ、名に關して、軍事裁判裁判記録中に、余は陸軍大尉、加藤喜一郎、証言、公判記録、真正に字を合せる事可証。

陸軍中位 下、モ、不、ノ、署名

Document No.5314



Document No. 5314



Ex. # 1848

Evidentiary Document No. 5314.

Page 1.

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed:

- a) letter from Colonel O.I.C. 2nd. Echelon, H.Q.A.M.F., Melbourne, dd.11 April, 1946, to Director Nefis Batavia,
- b) statement of prisoner Yunome, Kunio (Civilian), taken by Capt. Edwin L. Booth, representative U.S. Army, War Crimes Branch
- c) letter from Colonel O.I.C. 2nd. Echelon H.Q.A.M.F., Melbourne 26 March 1946 to N.E.I.H.Q - Melbourne, and two photographs enclosed,

are full, true, complete and accurate copies of the original documents or foto's, and

- d) extract of report by Capt. H.A.J. Fryer, d.d.10 Oct. 1945

is a true, complete, and accurate extract of the original document,

which documents, photo's and report all concerning Missing Personnel NEFIS, are part of the official records of the N.I.F.I.S.

SIGNATURE:

Stamp of the Intelligence Service
Netherlands Forces
BATAVIA, 7 June, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me H.A. deWEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A. Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General, N.E.I.

AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES

ADJUTANT-GENERAL.

Quote (Ecl..145/4/32)
In Reply

MELBOURNE
11 April 1946.

Director,
N.E.F.I.S.
Batavia,
via Box 1386 R.,
G.P.O. BRISBANE

MISSING PERSONNEL - NEFIS
PTES REHARIG & PATTAWAEL

With reference to this office letter of 26th March 1946 to N.E.I. HQ Melbourne enclosing photographs relating to the execution of the abovenamed Indonesian soldiers and to interview of 5 April 1946 with Lieut N.G. DYKSTRA of NEFIS, forwarded herewith as arranged are copies of the following documents viz:

- (1) Report of Capt. H.A.J. FLYER of the activities of "Whiting" party up to the time of the capture of Sgt. SIFFLEET (AMF) and the two abovenamed Indonesians.
- (2) Statement of prisoner YUNOME, Kunio taken at Prisoner of War Camp, Murchison, Victoria on 6th February 46.

(Signed) Colonel
OIC 2nd. Echelon HQ AMF
10 Apr. 1946.

7th February, 1946.

Statement of prisoner YUNOME, Kunio (Civilian) - attached Japanese Army - taken at Prisoner of War Camp, Murchison, Victoria, Australia on 6 February, 1946.

About September, 1943, I was ordered to report by the Aitape agent Commander Shingawa to go to Maroe where a branch of the Aitape agent was located. The Commander of that branch was HIROE of the Naval garrison troops. The Takasa Unit which consisted of about six men and two civilian employees were also in Maroe. The natives in the area reported to HIROE that there was an element of enemy reconnaissance unit in the rear side of the mountains. Thereupon, HIROE, The Takasa Unit, and I, went to investigate the said area. We also brought some natives to guide us. However, we were unable to find the enemy. HIROE told the

natives in that area that if anyone should capture this enemy he would be well rewarded. About two weeks later, about ten natives brought to HIKOE an Australian Sgt. and two Ambon natives. Upon request, I interpreted for HIKOE and interrogated them. A report about this was made to SHINAGOWA of the Aitape agent. Then these three prisoners were taken to Aitape. Sgt. Maj. WATANABE who was the garrison troop leader made the report through wireless to the Wewak Hqrs. I heard from YASUNO that an answer from Hqrs. came through a wireless saying to execute the men. Therefore, I believe we executed them the following day.

On 24th October, 1943, Sgt. Maj WATANABE ordered the natives to dig a hole in the sand along the sea coast. Then Sgt. Maj WATANABE, Sgt. YASUNO, myself, MITSUEASHI, ADACHI, six men of the Takasa Unit and about 25 or 26 men of the Navy garrison unit went to the place of execution. There were natives also present at the execution. The first execution was done by YASUNO, who beheaded the Australian sgt. with a sword. By the order of YASUNO, I then beheaded one of the Ambon natives with a sword. MITSUEASHI executed the other native in the same manner. I believe ADACHI, a civilian employee, was the one who took the picture of the execution. After the execution we buried them and covered the hole with sand. I was told by YASUNO that the reason for the execution was that they were guilty of reconnoitering the area and giving secret information through wireless, the natives acting as a spy.

This statement was taken by Capt. Edwin L. Booth, Representative, U.S. Army, War Crimes Branch.

EDWIN L. BOOTH,
Capt. C.M.P.,
Investigating Officer,
War Crimes Branch.

Quote in Department of the Army. Melbourne S.I.
Reply (Ech.145/4/32). (Adjutant-General)

N.E.I. HQ.
431 St. Kilda Road,
Melbourne.

MISSING PERSONNEL - NEPIS

Forwarded herewith for information are two photographs one depicting a member of the AIF and two Indonesians (Ambonese) awaiting executions by the Japanese and the other depicting one of the Indonesians about to be executed by a Japanese named

YUNOME Kunio, a civilian attached to the Japanese Navy as an interpreter. Yunome is at present a prisoner of war interned at Murchison prisoner of war group Victoria.

2. The identity of the Australian in the photograph is known and the two Indonesians are Ptes KAHARING AND PATAWALL members of NEFIS project known as "Whiting" party.

3. Whiting Party was under the leadership of Naval Officer-Cadet Staverman which party, beside the leader, included Sgt. Sifleet and Cpt. Topman (AMF) and the two abovenamed Indonesians. The object of the party was to collect military intelligence in the Hollandia area. Staverman was attacked and believed to be killed during September 43 and on 19 October 43 Sgt. Sifleet and two Indonesians were captured by natives at Wantipi 44 km West of Aitape and handed over to the Japanese who executed them on 24 Oct. 43.

4. Further information concerning the events leading up to the capture of the Indonesians and their subsequent execution may be obtained from files held at this office and it is suggested that a representative from your HQ call and examine the relevant files. There is also in existence a photograph of the execution of the other Indonesian a copy of which is not held at this office but if a copy of same is desired your HQ will be advised how this may be obtained.

(Signed) Colonel
OIC 2nd. Echelon HQ AIF
26 Mar 46.

EXTRACT FROM REPORT
BY CAPT. H.A.J. FRYER
10 Oct. 45.

On November, 16, 1942 arrived at CAIHNS to undertake the final organisation of the delayed LOCUST party destined for the HOLLANDIA-WEWAK area.

On Dec. 12 travelled to TOWNSVILLE embarking on "DUNTHOON" on 17 arriving at P.M. on 23rd.

The LOCUST party consisted of:

Capt. (then Lt) H.A.J. FRYER - Leader
" (" ") H. A. AIKEN - 2 i/c
" (" ") G. BLACK -

Sgt. BAILLIE L. - Radio operator and to it was attached the HOLLANDIA party (21A):

Sgt. STAVEMAN (238) - Leader
Cpl. TOPMAN (259)
Pte. KAHARING (234)

Pte PATTAWAEL (252)
Sgt SIFFLETT (336) - Radio operator

The arrangement was for these two parties to be flown to VANIMO; to establish a base near the border and to move E and W, until the Dutch party reached the Dutch border they were to be under the control of Capt. FLYEK. These instructions were dated at MELBOURNE Nov 23 1942. They were varied in some details by instructions issued by Cdr. FELDT at P.M. on Dec. 21 1942. These provided that the parties be flown to BENA BENA and possible BAKUI (on the SEPIK), proceed towards AITAPE and pass the Dutch party safely and secretly into Dutch territory.

Unfortunately it was found impossible to obtain any form of transport beyond BENA BENA, presumably owing to a lack of facilities for air cover, and on Jan 16 1943, the first plane with Capt. AIKEN and stores landed at BENA BENA in central NEW GUINA an unprotected outstation subject to bombing by the enemy from WEWAK, MADANG, LAE and SALAMAUA. On Jan 20 all the remaining stores and personnel were landed at BENA BENA and on Jan 21 the combined parties with about 400 carriers set off on its long trek through and across N.G.

During the whole of 1943 Capt. FLYEK kept detailed notes, survey particulars, panoramic sketches and photographs of the whole of the route followed - 939 miles on foot and 245 miles by waterways. Complete plans were drawn and submitted with a covering report.

The route followed by the combined Australian and Dutch parties is indicated in the following brief chronological sequence. Dates are approx. only since in many places the ferrying of stores or labor broke the party into four groups.

BENA BENA	21 Jan 43	
HAGEN	30 Jan 43	Last outpost.
WABAG	9 Feb 43	
KEMAN	16 Feb 43	Crossed Divide at 10,300'
LEYALAM	9 Mar 43	Cpl. TOPMAN returns
KUENGU	24 Mar 43	Found Messrs. MacGREGOR, SCHROEDER, BELL, HARTLEY, LAMBERT, RAPHAEL
YIMAS	6 Apr 43	McGREGOR and RAPHAEL join party.
KUVANMAS	11 Apr 43	Capt. Taylor's base
AVATIF	17 Apr 43	Found ASHTON's party in dire straits and passed them to Capt. TAYLOR (ANGAU).
MASALAGA	4 May 43	
MAIMAI	9-31 May 43	MacGREGOR RETURNS to TAYLOR
LUMI	10 Jun-8 Jul 43	At this point Capt. FLYEK had travelled 514 miles by track and 225 miles by waterways. Here also the Dutch party was despatched with

guides, police and labour for the HOLLANDIA area on 7 Jul. The FRYER party moved easterly to

TORRICELLI OP.
(overlooking AITAPE) 26 Jul 43

when Jap patrols became active in the area (a warning of the fact that a particular patrol was on Capt. FRYER's trail was radioed by Sgt. STAVEMAN, from SUMOR on the report of one of Capt. FRYER's flanking scouts at MALOL (12m. west of AITAPE).

ELFA 2 Aug 43
NIGRE 22 Aug 43
LUMI 2 Sep 43

met Lt. STANLEY
STORE looted by Japs in Jul, captured and escaped from natives, but lost all weapons. Returned to hidden radio and advised STAVEMAN of attack and to beware of "friendly" natives, (there is some doubt whether STAVEMAN received this message)

YILVI 11 Sep 43

On 4 Oct first received a report by radio from SIFFLETT that STAVEMAN had been attacked and believed killed behind VANIMO. Immediately volunteered to lead a relief party and advised SIFFLETT to travel S.E. across BUVANIO and would meet him north of YAGPONER. Owing to signal delays this message apparently did not reach SIFFLETT before he destroyed his set at WOMA. Capt FRYER was instructed from VIG to take no action, as Major FARLOW of MOSSTROOPS would arrange all necessary action from his base. 8 Oct. Major FARLOW invited Capt. FRYER to visit MOSSTROOP Base (D). 14 Oct. Capt. FRYER at "D" Base. No action had been taken in regard to SIFFLETT. Again requested permission to proceed towards VANIMO. Placed under instructions of Major FARLOW to guide MOSSTROOP patrol to the KILIWAS area. After futile waiting. Capt. FRYER and Capt. BLACK left "D" base with 17 natives 21 Oct. A MOSS patrol followed for 2 days and turned back.

8 Nov. reached the BIWANI Mts. south of MORI and learned that SIFFLETT, PATTAWAEL and RAHAKING had passed easterly as far as ASIKI some weeks before. As it was believed that the Dutch party would cross the Mts. at KAPOKI and try to follow down the sand or a branch of the NORTH River, FRYER and BLACK travelled back to these rivers. Major FARLOW advised that he would send a patrol from STANLEY's base at Melip through WAPI. (I believe that a few natives only went and made enquiries in the south WAPI area).

Evidentiary Document No. 5314

Page 7.

It appears that SIFFLETT and the 2 others followed the route out by which they had entered. They were guided by a WAPI native named MAIENA who should have known better. The natives of WANTIFI, aided by others, treacherously attacked that party apparently at night in late Oct, (20?). They were captured, trussed and taken to AITAPE and apparently executed in front of natives.

Evidentiary Document No. 5314

Page 7.

It appears that SIFFLETT and the 2 others followed the route out by which they had entered. They were guided by a WAPI native named MAIENA who should have known better. The natives of WANTIFI, aided by others, treacherously attacked that party apparently at night in late Oct, (202). They were captured, trussed and taken to AITAPE and apparently executed in front of natives.

Document No. 5314





Doc 53 / 4

証書書類 第五三四号
証 明 書

下署名 蘭印軍中知 和蘭軍情報部 戦争犯罪課長
「クアール・ヨネ」ハ先ツ正式ニ宣誓シテ以上以下 証書
ニ付
添付

(1) 一九四六年四月十日付「クアール」和蘭軍情報部長
ニ「濠洲軍司令部」カネ「第二梯隊長」ヨリ書翰
(2) 戦争犯罪課長部 合衆國軍代表「トマス・エルブス」大尉 聴
取信書「クニエ」(一般人) 陳述書

(3) 一九四六年三月二十七日付「クニエ」蘭領東印度司令部
カネ「濠洲軍司令部」カネ「第二梯隊長」ヨリ書翰
寫真二冊、余本書類又ハ寫真、完全ニシテ誤リキレ
本ニ付

(4) 一九四五年十月十日付「エドワード・フラー」大尉、報告
卒(余本書類)誤リ完全正確ニ付テ、而シテ、和蘭
軍情報部行方不明者ニ付スル右書類寫真及ヒ報告(和蘭軍
情報部、公式記録、部ナリ)

署名 和蘭軍情報部、印

一九四六年六月七日

「クアール」ニ付テ

余、蘭領東印度檢査部長事務此附高等官、蘭印中尉
「エドワード」ハ、前ニ於テ署名宣誓セリ日本軍属俘虏場
「クニエ」(一般人) 陳述 一九四六年三月六日「濠洲軍
司令部」カネ「信書收受容許」ニ於テ取リタレ

Doc 5 3/4

和軍属「ア」の死刑執行、高島三郎、田中元一、
思、死後、其の遺骨を埋む、穴二つあり、其の理由
ハ、竹等が該地ニ偵察シ、無線ヲ秘密情報ヲ送リ、
吾國民ハ「ア」トシテ行動シ、其ノ結果ハ、吾國ノ利益ヲ

李(連) 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部
元(一) 大尉 三 隊 員 三 名 以上

陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部
「ア」ハ「ア」トシ

行方不明者ニ付關連情報詳

茲ニ參考ニ、米信ハ、高島三郎、田中元一、日本人
ニ依リ、刑ヲ行フ、一名、濠洲軍属ノ名ニ、二名、アト不
知、一人(アト不)ニ播高ニ他、(吾國用)トシ、日本
海軍軍属トシ、アト不、アト不、一名、日本人ニ依リ、特
ニ刑ヲ行フ、アト不、アト不、一人、播高ニ他、
田中元一、濠洲人、身元、判明、アト不、二名、アト不、
人ハ「アト不」トシ、知、其ノ如、陸軍情報部、作業班員
名、兵士「アト不」及「アト不」ハ、二人ナリ
同、アト不、班、海軍士官候補生「アト不」ヲ長トシ、
同、隊、隊長、他、二、アト不、上、軍、曹、長、トシ、アト不、大尉
(濠洲軍)ト前記、二名、アト不、人、及、同、班、
「アト不」地、三、名、ハ、軍、情報、免、免、目的、ナリ、
「アト不」ハ、一九四二年、昭和十八年、九月中、三、龍、撃、撃、殺

Doc 5 3/4

本「軍属」の「死」刑執行、高島ヲ搬送、田中ノ死
思フ、前従軍記者等ヲ捕テ、穴ニ封ジテ死ス、刑ノ理由
ハ「作戦」ノ該地ニ偵察シテ無線ヲ發シ情報ヲ送リ
高島「民」ノ死ニ上テ行動ヲ監視ス、安野ノ死ニ上

李漢魂(戦時海軍部合衆國軍代表「三」)
五ノ一ニ大誌ニ送リ「聴取」スルニ上リ
戦時海軍部支那直轄軍艦隊大誌
「五」ノ一ニ送リ

行方不明者(海軍)情報部

茲ニ「参」ル「米」海軍「高島」三「艦」ニ上リ「艦」ハ「日本」人
ニ依リ「刑」ヲ付ク「名」ノ「濠洲」軍艦「及」三「名」ノ「死」ト不
明トシ「(」ノ「死」ト「)」ヲ「捕」高「心」他「(」ヲ「合」用「取」ト「日」本
海軍「軍属」ト「シ」テ「之」ノ「死」ト「一」ヲ「録」ス「日本」人「二」依リ「特
ニ」刑「ヲ」付ク「死」ト「不」明ト「ス」人「一」ヲ「捕」高「心」ト「リ
日」高「島」中「濠洲」人「身」元「判」明ト「言」フ「二」名「ノ」死「不」明
人「ノ」死「不」明ト「班」ト「知」ル「海軍」情報「部」作「事」班「員
名」兵「士」ノ「死」不「明」ト「及」「死」ノ「死」不「明」ト「二」人「ト」リ
「死」不「明」ト「班」ノ「海軍」士「官」候補「生」ト「ス」ル「死」不「明」ト「長」トシ
同「隊」ノ「隊長」他「二」名「ノ」死「不」明ト「軍」艦「及」「死」不「明」ト「大」尉
(濠洲「軍」)ト「前」記「二」名「ノ」死「不」明ト「人」ノ「死」不「明」ト「同」班「ノ
死」不「明」ト「他」二「名」ノ「死」不「明」ト「軍」艦「情報」ノ「免」除「ヲ」目的ト「リ
「死」不「明」ト「死」不「明」ト「一九四二年」昭和「十八年」九「月」中「三」龍「艦」撃「手」殺

Doc 53/4

然、軍属としての死刑執行、高層の機密であるとして、
密に死罪執行の事実を、穴三郎の父、何れも理由
の不明な談話を通じて復讐の無謀な秘密情報（注）として、
軍属の死に上り行動の異常な、密に伝言

在横濱（戦争中、海軍本部合衆國軍代表「三〇」）
元々大尉三郎の聴取の元は、

戦争中、海軍本部調査部長大尉
「三郎」元々

行方不明者（海軍情報部）

該三名、米海軍の軍属三名、（一）日本人
二名、刑を終った、海軍軍属二名、（二）日本不
明者（三）日本人）「捕高」他、（一）海軍軍属、日本
海軍軍属「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
（海軍中、海軍人、身元、判明、元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
人「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
元兵士「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
同隊隊長、他「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
（海軍）「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々
「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々「三郎」元々

Doc 5 314

唐島島主、大憲、一九四三年十月十九日、
及心二名、
於一九四三年十月十九日、
四三年十月十四日、

(四) 「不潔不潔」人、逮捕及口供等、其後、
事件二自及此以上、情報、
心可得及心三行貴司令部、代表者、
心取寄也、檢查之樣相成度、

今人、
寫本、
之、

(署名) 濠洲軍司令部、
一九四三年三月二十六日

E. # 1849

Evidentiary Document No. 5389.

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS) being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed reports are full, true, complete and accurate copies of the original documents entitled:

1. Nefis reports of Interrogation of PAIMIN bin KARTOSEMITO (No. 548) of NAWI bin GILAN (No. 513) and of LADJELIA bin MESSIN (No. 514).
2. Sworn Statements of the same Informants.

All concerning Massacre of Indonesians, former soldiers R.N.I.A., forced Hei-Ho's on Noenfoor Island, in July, 1944.

which documents are part of the official records of the NEFIS.

SIGNATURE:

(Signed)

Stamp of the Intelligence Service
Netherlands Forces.

PATAVIA, June 7th., 1946.

Subscribed and sworn to before me K.A. de WEERD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

SIGNATURE: (Signed) K. A. de WEERD

PAIMIN -- from MAGELANG, PARMINI from KOETCADJO, PARDJO from MAGELANG, PAHIJO from POERWOREDJO, with 10 Ladoerese were bayoneted to death at GEELVINK BAY, NOENFOOR Is., about July, 1944.

Informant: PAIMIN bin KARTOSEMITO Fus. KV 3142

Reliability: Uneducated but bright and helpful, clear in what he has seen and knows. Information may be taken approximating the fact.

Person Responsible: Japanese names not stated.

Hearsay:

On Noenfoor Island, Geelvink Bay, DNG, about July, 1944, informant was told by two Madoerese who though bayoneted at the time, survived and escaped, that 14 men (10 Madoerese and 4 Javanese) missing from a Hei-ho detachment of 55 originally sent fr Manokwari, DNG, had been bayoneted to death by Japanese. The names of the four Javanese were, PARMIN from Koetboardjo (Mid. Java), PAIMIN from Magelang (Mid. Java), PARDJO from Magelang (Mid. Java) and PAHIJO from Poerworedjo (Mid. Java).

NOTE: According to Informant Paimin bin Kartosemito, the following Japanese may be regarded as responsible for the murder of the 14 Hoi-ho reported above:

KUJITA	Goenso	(Sergeant)
INOYE	Djotohei	(Supr. Priv.)
ODJAWA	"	" "
MATJAJOTO	"	" "

All believed to have fled to the interior of Noerfoor Island in July 1944.

INTERROGATION REPORT NO. 548

I, the undersigned, named,

PAILIN bin KARTOSEMITO, Stbno, 3142

herewith declare before 2nd. Lt. P.A.C. v.d. BERGH, temporary unpaid police-official for the whole of the Netherlands East Indies, as follows:

About the 20th of July, 1944, after the American landing on Noerfoor, 16 Hoi-Ho's and myself, who had already tried to escape twice were recaptured again by the Japanese.

The next morning at about 8 o'clock, we saw many Japanese armed with rifles and bayonets. We were blindfolded and ordered to open our coats. All of us were bayoneted and fell down.

Except my friend, named MADOMILLA bin MESDIN, and myself all were killed. We acted like being dead. At that time a Japanese came back to ascertain whether or not we were still alive. This Japanese severed the back of my head with his sabre.

After the Japanese had left, we moved away to the village KANSAI where we met the Americans.

On

at

I saw a photo, nr. 51 J 5636 of a Japanese named INCUE KOJI, and I recognised him as the INCUE KOJO, who was standing near us with a sword in his hand, before we were blindfolded.

Nare:

After the above declaration of informant PAILIN bin KARTOSEMITO had been put into writing by me and had been slowly and carefully read to him, and he had affirmed and signed the declaration he took an oath according to his religious persuasion, that in the

Evidentiary Document No. 5389.

Page 3.

above mentioned declaration he told the truth and nothing but the truth.

In witness hereof,

Made under official
oath.

Temporary unpaid
Police-Official

P.A.C. v.d. BERGH
Res. 2 de Lt. der Inf. v.s.d.

NAWI bin GIMAN, Fusilier No. 37070, was severely maltreated at NOEMFOOR Island, about the middle of July, 1944.

Informant: NAWI bin GIMAN, Fusilier No. 37070.

Reliability: Fair Intelligence, information may be considered reliable.

Person Responsible: Japanese, names not stated, but there were about 4 officers present, including a Captain, a 1st. Lieut., 2 2nd. Lieuts. and a Sergeant Major

Informant states that after the American landing on Noemfoor Is., on July 2 1944, he was taken with about 50 other Heiho of mixed Indonesian races into the jungle with the Japanese Garrison. He does not know how many Japs. there were but they numbered some hundreds. After the 5th, he and ten others of mixed races succeeded in escaping. After about 5 days of walking in the jungle, they fell in with about 50 Japs. who took them again into the jungle for about 2 days. Informant escaped again, this time with 7 others, for one day, when they met 9 others (Heiho) who had escaped they were then a party of 17 escapees. They were together for 2 days, when they again met Japanese numbering about 100, once more they were under escort, but on the following day, in the evening they were very closely watched and kept in a bunch with Jap. sentries all around them. In the morning at about 8 o'clock, informant and the 16 others were ordered to fall in, they were blindfolded and ordered to open their coats. Before this however, informant saw that all the Japanese had fixed bayonets, they were behind and in front of these 17 men, about 4 officers were present including a Captain, a 1st. Lieut., 2 2nd. Lieuts., and a Sergeant Major., orders were shouted to the Japs., and all 17 men were bayoneted. Each was then examined to ascertain whether life was extinct or not.

Informant received 4 stabs in the back with a bayonet and then fell down, when being examined he with another Madocrese named

MADOELLA feigned death, informant lay quiet for a little while until all the Japs. had gone and then managed to get up. He saw the bodies of the 15 men who had been bayoneted, these two men walked for 5 days in the jungle until on the 5th day they reached the road which skirts the shore, and there met an American patrol which rescued them.

INTER. REPORT NO. 513.

Further to the previous report:-

Informant: MADOELLA BIN MUDJIN, Easilier KV No. 41040.

Reliability: Low intelligence, information may be considered reliable.

Person responsible: Japanese soldiers, one of whom was Superior Private INOE.

Informant with NAWI bin GIMAN, were the only survivors of the massacre carried out by the Japanese about the 20th July, 1944, on NOEMFOOR Island.

Madoella confirms Nawi's evidence, and adds that he and Nawi emerged after being bayoneted at the village of KANSAL, where they met the American patrol. Informant states after being bayoneted and whilst lying prone on the ground feigning death, a Jap. laid his hands on his back to ascertain whether he was still breathing. He then got a sabre cut on the back of his head. He adds the important fact that one of the Japanese soldiers present was formerly belonging to his Butai (Araidatai No. 10446). His name is Superior Private INOE. Just before the victims were blind-folded he saw this man standing near with a drawn sabre.

INTER. REPORT NO. 514.

I, the undersigned, named:

NAWI bin GIMAN,

No. 37070.

herewith declare before 2nd. Lt. P.A.C.v.d.Bergh, temporary unpaid police-official for the whole of the Netherlands East Indies, as follows:-

About the 20th of July 1944, after the American landing on Noemfoer, 16 Hei-Mo's and myself, who had already tried to escape twice were recaptured again by the Japanese.

The next morning at about 8 o'clock, we saw many Japanese armed

with rifles and bayonets. We were blindfolded and ordered to open our coats. All of us bayoneted and fell down.

Except my friend named MADOELLA bin MESDIN, and myself all were killed. We acted like being dead. At that time a Japanese came back to ascertain whether or not we were still alive. This Japanese severed the back of my head with his sabre. (rifle).

After the Japanese had left, we moved away to the village KANSAI, where we met the Americans.

On

at

I saw a photo, nr. 51 J 5136 of a Japanese named INOUE KOJI, and recognised him as the INOUE KOJI, who was standing near us with sword in his hand, before we were blindfolded.

Casion,
Name:

After the above declaration of informant NAWI bin GIMAN had been put into writing by me and had been slowly and carefully read to him, and he had affirmed and signed the declaration he took an oath according to his religious persuasion, that in the above mentioned declaration he told the truth and nothing but the truth.

In witness hereof,

Made under official oath.
Temporary unpaid, Police-
Official.
P.A.C. v. d. Bergh.
Res. 2de Lt. der Inf. v.s.d

I, the undersigned, named:

MADOELLA bin MESDIN, nr. 41040

herewith declare before 2nd. Lt. P.A.C.v.d. BILGH, temporary unpaid police-official, as follows:

About the 20th of July, 1944, after the American landing on Noerfoor, 16 Hei-Ho's and myself, who had already tried to escape twice were recaptured again by the Japanese.

The next morning at about 8 o'clock, we saw many Japanese armed with rifles and bayonets. We were blindfolded and ordered to open our coats. All of us were bayoneted and fell down.

Except my friend, named NAWI bin GOMAN and myself, all were killed. We acted like being dead. At that time a Japanese came back to ascertain whether or not we were still alive. This Japanese

severed the back of my head with his sabre.

After the Japanese had left we moved away to the village KANSAI, where we met the Americans.

On
at
I saw a photo, nr. 51 J 5636 of a Japanese named INOUE KOJI, and I recognized him as the INOUE KOJI, who was standing near us with a sword in his hand, before we were blindfolded.

Casino:

None:

After the above declaration of informant MADOLILLA bin MESDIN had been put into writing by me and had been slowly and carefully read to him, and he had affirmed and signed the declaration, he took an oath according to his religious persuasion that in the above mentioned declaration he told the truth and nothing but the truth.

In witness hereof,

Made under official oath.

P.A.C. v.d. BERGH

Temporary unpaid
Police-Official
Kcs. 2nd. Lt. Inf. v.s.d.

Evidentiary Document: 5389

證據書類第五三九号

證明書

下名和蘭軍情報部戦争犯罪課長 R. N. I. A. 中尉「チャイルズ・ミンゲニール」ハ正當ニ宣誓ヲナシタル兵何レモ一九四四年七月ニ「ムアア」島ニ於テ「インドネシア人」元 R. N. I. A. 兵ニ徵用「イホ」ハ虐殺ニ関スル

一「ハイミンビン・カトセ」と(第五四八号)「クイビギン」(第五一三号)及「アドエラ・ビン・メステイン」(第五一四号)ニ係ル和蘭軍情報部訊問報告書
二右通報者等ノ宣誓陳述書ナル題名、書類ガ該書類、原文、全文ニシテ眞実完全及正確ナル高テアルコト並ビニ該書類ガ和蘭軍情報部、公式記録、一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。

署名

(署名)
和蘭軍情報部印

於「ムアア」一九四六年六月七日

右本職、蘭領東印度法務廳附高等官 R. N. I. A 中尉「K. A. グラウアー」ハ、面前ニ署名宣誓ヲナシタリ。

署名(署名) K. A. グラウアー

* * * * *

Doc. 5389

輕歩兵第三七。七三。十少イ。ビシ。キマシ。一九四四年。

七月中旬頃、エムア。ア島ニ於テ甚クテ虐待サレタ。

通報者 輕歩兵第三七。七。号。十少イ。ビシ。キマシ

信憑性 知能相當。報告信ズベキモノト思料サル

責任者 日本人。姓名不詳。但シ大尉一名。中尉一名。

少尉三名ヲ含ム。約四名。將校及曹長一

名ニ升タ。

通報者ハ一九四四年七月二日米軍、エムア。ア島ニ

陸後他ノ一編五ノ名混血インドネシア人ト共ニ日本軍守

備隊ト一編ニジャングル中ニ連シテ行カレタト陳述シテ

ル。彼ハ其處ニ日本人が何名居タカ知ラナイガ日

本人ノ数ハ数百名ヲタ。五日以後、彼及ヒ他ノ十人ノ

混血人ノ脱走ニ成功シタ。約五日間、ジャングル中ヲ歩

キタ後、彼等ハ約五十人、日本兵ニ遭遇シ、再ビ二日間

ジャングル中ヲ連行サレタ。通報者ハ又モ今度、他

ノ七人ト一編ヲ脱走シタガ一日バカリニ脱走シタ他、

九人ハイホト會ヒ、十七人ノ脱走者ノ一團トナツタ。彼等

ハ二日間一編ヲアツタガ、又モヤ約百名ノ日本兵ニ出遇

ヒ、再ビ護送サレタガ翌日、夕方ハ嚴重ニ監視ヲ受

ケ、周圍全部ヲ日本人哨兵ニ取巻カシ罐詰ニサレタ。

朝、一時頃通報者ト他ノ十六名ハ整列ヲ命ゼラレ、目

隠シサレテ、上衣ヲ脱ゲト命ゼラレタ。併シ、其前ニ通

報者ハ全部ノ日本兵が着剣シタヲ見タ。彼等ハコ

ノ十七人、前後ニ立テ、大尉一名。中尉一名。少尉三名ヲ含ム

No. 2

Doc. 5389

約四名、將校ト増長一名が中々、日本兵ニ向テ号令が叫ビテ
テ全部銃剣ヲ突カシテ、ソカラ皆死ニタカドウカ確メル為ニ調
ベシタ。
通報者ハ銃剣ヲ背中ヲ貫テ倒レテ、調ベシク時ニ彼ト
「ト言」ト言テ他「ト言」人ト死ニタリシタ。通報者ハ日本兵が全
部立去ルニテ暫クシトテ依テ居ルソカラヤト立上リテ、彼突キ
刺サシテ死体ヲ見タ。ソニ「ト言」テ中ヲ各間兵ヲ各目ニ
海岸ニ沿テ道路ニ達シ、其處ニ米巡邏兵ニ出逢ヒ救助セシタ。
訊問報告第五一三号

追加報告

通報者 輕歩兵トテ第四。四号「ト言」ト「ト言」ト「ト言」ト
信憑性 智能低シ、情報ハ信ズキモノト思料セル
責任者 日本軍兵士、内「ト言」ト「ト言」ト兵卒
通報者ハ「ト言」ト「ト言」ト共ニ九四四年七月十日頃「ト言」ト「ト言」ト
日本軍、行ツテ屠殺、唯一ノ生存者トシタ。
「ト言」ト「ト言」ト證言ヲ確認シ、彼「ト言」ト銃剣ヲ突テ刺サシ後カ
「ト言」ト出テ、其處ニ米巡邏兵ニ逢ツテ附ケ加ヘテ居ル。通報者ハ突
キ刺サシ後死テ、其「ト言」ト向キ地面ニ伏シテ居ル間、人、日本兵が彼カ
呼吸シテ居ルカドウカヲ確メ、爲彼背中ニ手ヲ置キ、ソカラ劍ヲ彼後頭
部ニ切シタ。彼其處ニ居ル日本兵、人、以前彼ノ部隊（「ト言」ト「ト言」ト
「ト言」ト）ニ居ルト重要ト事実ヲ附ケ加ヘタ。彼ノ名ハ「ト言」ト兵卒ト
シ、犠牲者達ガ目撃シタル直前彼ハ「ト言」ト男ガ拔劍シテ近
ニ立上ルルヲ見タ。

No. 3

訊問報告第五一四号

C # 1850

Document No. 409-A

(being excerpts from page 47
Evidentiary Document No. 409)

a. Extract from Document entitled "Daily Record of Investigation of Prisoners," dated 8 March - 14 May, 1942, unit unknown, containing daily records of investigation of CHINESE, natives and civilians under surveillance in LAE Area:

"28 April - Although we today re-examined them at the Mountain Gun Unit sentry group, they did not confess. Perhaps MAHI and the other natives took separate roads to come here, so the latter did not see them. However considering the future, one person was handed over to the Chief Medical Officer of No. 4 Air Medical Unit for medical experiments, and the other five persons were stabbed to death."
(ATIS Enemy Publications No. 65, page 6).

b. Prisoner of War FUSEI, Iwataro, (JA 145118) labourer, member of 15 Pioneer Battalion, surrendered near BUNA, 3 January 1943, stated:

"An AUSTRALIAN Second Lieutenant was captured at BUNA in September and was questioned by Interpreter SATO. He was examined as to Allied treatment of prisoners of war and stated that we placed them in internment camps and that they were well treated. After examination he was beheaded that night. The medical officer of 14 Pioneer United acted as executioner using his own sword.

"Two AMERICAN soldiers were captured. One of them is said to have claimed to be a MEXICAN. The other was an AMERICAN. Prisoner of war stated he did not know full details. Interpreter SATO told him that these prisoners of war were blindfolded while being questioned and afterwards were both beheaded by the same medical officer of the 14 Pioneers who used his own sword."
(ATIS Advanced Echelon No. 1. Subsequent Preliminary Interrogation of Prisoner of War JA 145118, page 3).

8. VIVISECTION.

a. While B-363 was at KIANDOK, he saw the following committed on a healthy, unwounded AFRICAN prisoner of war:

"The man was tied to a tree outside the HIKARI KIKAN Office. A JAPANESE doctor and four JAPANESE medical students stood around him. They first removed the finger nails, then cutting open his chest removed his heart, on which the doctor gave a practical demonstration."
(CSDIC Information Section Report No. 40, page 3).

b. Extract from diary, apparently belonging to an officer, unit unknown. Vivisection took place in KOKUMBONA Area of GUADACANAL.

Document No. 409-A

Page 2.

"24 September, 1942 - Because two prisoners escaped, each unit was notified and we searched until it finally became daylight.

"26 September - Discovered and captured the two prisoners who escaped last night in the jungle, and let the Guard Company guard them. To prevent their escaping a second time, pistols were fired at their feet, but it was difficult to hit them. The two prisoners were dissected while still alive by Medical Officer YAMAJI and their livers were taken out, and for the first time I saw the internal organs of a human being. It was very informative."

(SOPAC Translation, Serial No. 01497, Item 614, pages 1 - 7.)

Evidentiary Document # 409-A

No. 1

書類第四〇九号 A EXHIBIT NO. 1850A①

(證據書類第四〇九号第四頁ヨリ、抜萃)

a. 「正地区ニテ監視下ニアル華僑原住民並ニ市民ニ対スル調査、日記ヲ内容トスル。一九四三年自三月八日至五月十四日附部隊名不明、俘虜調査日記ト題スル書類ヨリ、抜萃。四月二十日「我々本日山砲隊下士哨ニテ彼等ヲ再訊同シクオ白状シテカッタ。多分コレ及ビ他、原住民達ノ別ノ道ヲ通ツテ此所ニ来タ為。後者、彼等ヲ見掛ケカツク、デアラウ。然レ乍ラ將來ヲ顧慮シテ一人ハ中四航空医務隊、軍医正ニ医学上、實驗用トシテ引渡サレ、他、五人ノ刺シ殺サレタ。」(聯合軍翻譯通譯課、敵國刊行物中六五卷中六頁)

b. 俘虜、フセイ岩太郎(丁 A 一四五二八) 労働者中十五兵大隊員、一九四三年一月三日コレ附近ニテ降伏、次、如ク陳述シタ。

「濠軍少尉、九月コレニテ捕虜トナリ、佐藤通譯ニツテ訊問サレタ。彼ノ俘虜ニ対スル聯合軍、待遇ニ就テ訊問セラレ、我々聯合軍、彼等ヲ抑留收容所ニ入レ、良イ待遇ヲ與ヘテサト述ベタ。訊問後彼、其後斬首サレタ。

中四兵隊、軍医、自己、コレヲ用テ五種執行令

「三名、英國兵捕虜ナリ。此(中)三ノ一人、アルト稱ス(田)兵(中)他、又ハ米國人デアッタ。俘虜ノ詳シイ事ハ知ラヌト言ツタ。佐藤通譯、彼ニ対シ此等

COPY

此 364-10

Evidentiary Document # 409-A

書類第四。九字 A EXHIBIT NO. 1810A ①

(證據書類第四。九字才四頁ヨリ、抜萃)

a. 〓地区ニテ監視下ニアル華僑、原住民並ニ市民ニ対スル調査、日記ヲ内容トスル。一九四二年自三月八日至五月十四日附部隊名不明、俘虜調査日記ト題スル書類ヨリ、抜萃。四月十八日「我々本日山砲隊下士哨ニテ彼等ヲ再訊同シタカ白狀シテカク。多分〓及ビ他、原住民達〓別、道ヲ通ツテ此所ニ来タカ。後者、彼等ヲ見掛ケテカクク、テアラウ。然レ乍ラ將來ヲ顧慮シテ一人ハ中四航空医務隊、軍医正ニ医学士、實驗用トシテ引渡サレ、他、五人〓刺シ殺サレタ。 (聯合軍翻譯通譯課、敵國刊行物才六五卷才六頁)

b. 俘虜、フセイ岩太郎(丁 A 一四五一八) 労働者才十五兵大隊員、一九四二年一月三日アナ附近ニテ降伏、〓次、如何ニ陳述シタ。

「濠軍少尉、九月アナニテ捕虜トナリ、佐藤通譯ニツテ訊問サレタ。彼、俘虜ニ対スル聯合軍、待遇ニ就テ訊問セラレ、我々聯合軍、彼等ヲ抑留收容所ニ入レ、良イ待遇ヲ與ヘテサト述ベタ。訊問後、彼、其取斬首サレ、

才四兵隊、軍医、自己、軍中、用、刑、執行、令、

三名、英國兵捕虜、此、〓、ト、〓、ト、〓、ト、〓、ト、〓、ト、

アルト稱、〓、他、人、米國人ヲアツタ。俘虜ハ詳シイ事、知ラヌト言ツタ。佐藤通譯、彼ニ対シ、此等

No. 1

COPIES TO ROOM 301

Doc 409-A

、俘虜達が訊問中目隠サレ、後ニ二人共同シオ十四兵
隊、軍医ニヨリソ、軍刀ヲ以テ斬首サレト語リ。
(聯合軍翻譯課、通譯課オ一前進梯隊、後、俘虜丁A
五五二八豫備訊問、オ三頁)

ハ、生体解剖

a. B-三六三が「カドク」ニ居ツテ頃、彼ハ次、様々事ヲ健康
ヲ頂傷シテ居ラヌ「アフリカ」人俘虜ニ為サレル、ヲ見タ。
「其、男ハ光機関事務所、外ニアル樹ニ縛リ付ケラヌ
一人、日本軍医ト四人、見習軍医ヲ彼ノ廻リニ立ツテタ。
彼等ハ先ヅ最初ニ指、血ヲ剝キ取リ、ソレカラ胸ヲ切り開
キハ心臓ヲ取り去ッタ。ソレニ就イテ軍医ハ実験ヲシテ見タ。

(C S D I C 情報課報告オ四十号オ三頁)

b. 明ラカニ部隊名不明、一將校、モト思ハレル日記、按筆。
生体解剖ハ「ガダルカナル」島、コウムボナ地区ヲ行ハタ。
「九四年九月二十四日」二名、俘虜が逃亡シタ為、各隊ハソ
通告ヲ受ケタ。ソレヲ我々ハ遂ニ夜が明ケル迄搜索シタ。
「九月二十六日」昨夜、ジャングル内ニ逃ケ込ニテ二人、俘虜
ヲ発見、逮捕シ、警備中隊ヲシテ、警備セシメタ。彼等が再
逃亡スルヲ防グ為、彼等ノ足ニ拳銃ヲ散発発射シタが命
中サレルハ難シカッタ。二人、俘虜ハ「ヤマジ」軍医ヨリ未ダ生きて居
中ニ解剖サレ、彼等、肝臓ヲ取リ去サレタ。ソレヲ始メテ私ハ人間ノ内臓
ヲ見タ。ニテ非常ニ知識ヲ興ヘルニ有益デアッタ。

(南西太平洋翻譯課、繼續番号オ一四九七号オ六一四項
オ一七頁)

No. 2

Evidentiary Document No. 5445.

SYNOPSIS - NEW BRITAIN

The next section deals with the treatment of prisoners of war and civilians in New Britain. The proof offered will be entirely documentary.

Prosecution Document No. 5311 is record of evidence given by Private William Cook of 2/10 Australian Field Ambulance. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....
The deponent says that on 4th February, 1942, the Japanese captured a party of 24 Australian soldiers and one civilian at Tol in New Britain. The soldiers were Army Medical Corps men and drew the attention of the Japanese to their Red Cross armbands. The Japs ripped their armbands off. I will now read the third, fourth and fifth paragraphs on page 3 of the document.

.....
Prosecution Document No. 5312 is a record of evidence of Driver Willie Desmond Collins of 2/10 Australian Field Ambulance. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence

.....
Collins was one of a party of 123 Australian soldiers captured by the Japs at Tol. They were broken up into parties of ten or twelve and marched into the bush. The members of his party were bayoneted or shot. He himself was shot but escaped after feigning death.

.....
Prosecution Document No. 5313 is a record of the evidence of Private Hugh Joseph Webster of 2/22nd. Australian Infantry Battalion. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....
The deponent says that on 4th February, 1942, he and eleven other Australian soldiers were captured by the Japanese at Waitavlo in New Britain, tied up and shot. Ten were killed. The deponent and one other man were wounded.

.....
Prosecution Document No. 5400 is an affidavit made by Lieutenant WONG YU SIN of 200 Battalion, 67 Division, Chinese National Army. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

Evidentiary Document No. 5445.

Page 2.

The deponent says that ten Chinese soldiers, whom he names, were shot and killed by the Japs at Labaul on 29th January, 1943, because they were too sick to work.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5402 is an affidavit made by Major LI WAI SIN of 3rd. Field Volunteer Army. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent says that on 4th February, 1943, at Labaul the Japanese shot and killed six Chinese officers and soldiers because they were too ill to work.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5393 is record of evidence given by Captain LIU WEI TAO of the Chinese National Army. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The affiant states that at Labaul on 3rd. March, 1943, the Japanese took 24 sick Chinese soldiers from the sick quarters, forced them into a grave that had already been dug and shot them all. On the 10th March, 1943, a further batch of six Chinese soldiers who were ill were killed by the Japanese in the same manner.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5404 is an affidavit made by Captain YUNG PIANG PAE of Central Volunteer Chinese Army Headquarters. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent states that on 3rd. April, 1943, eleven sick Chinese soldiers were executed with swords, because they were too ill to work.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5405 is record of evidence of Corporal Shier Tchen TSE of Chinese National Army. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The document refers to the same killing as the previous exhibit. It fixes KOKOPO as the place of execution.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5406 is an affidavit made by Captain CHEUNG YEE YU of 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

Evidentiary Document No. 5445.

Page 2.

The deponent says that ten Chinese soldiers, whom he names, were shot and killed by the Japs at Labaul on 29th January, 1943, because they were too sick to work.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5402 is an affidavit made by Major LEE WAI SIN of 3rd. Field Volunteer Army. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent says that on 4th February, 1943, at Labaul the Japanese shot and killed six Chinese officers and soldiers because they were too ill to work.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5393 is record of evidence given by Captain LIU WEI TAO of the Chinese National Army. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The affiant states that at Labaul on 3rd. March, 1943, the Japanese took 24 sick Chinese soldiers from the sick quarters, forced them into a grave that had already been dug and shot them all. On the 10th March, 1943, a further batch of six Chinese soldiers who were ill were killed by the Japanese in the same manner.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5404 is an affidavit made by Captain YUNG PING PAE of Central Volunteer Chinese Army Headquarters. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent states that on 3rd. April, 1943, eleven sick Chinese soldiers were executed with swords, because they were too ill to work.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5405 is record of evidence of Corporal Shier Ichen TSE of Chinese National Army. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The document refers to the same killing as the previous exhibit. It fixes KOKOFO as the place of execution.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5406 is an affidavit made by Captain CHEUNG YEE YU of 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

Evidentiary Document No. 5425.

Page 3.

I will read the first two paragraphs of this affidavit.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5407 is an affidavit made by Lieutenant Tan Fai Ling of Central Chinese Volunteer Army. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent states that on 2nd. November, 1943, at KAMMAT Aerodrome the Japanese killed by shooting a Chinese soldier who was too ill to work.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5408 is an affidavit by Corporal FANG NAI TING of 88th Division. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

Deponent states that on 26th July, 1944, at Kabaul a Chinese soldier was clubbed to death by the Japanese because he was too ill to work.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 549 is a record of evidence of Mrs. LEE YITSAI KUNYANG of Chinatown, Kabaul. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence

.....

The deponent is 59 years of age. In April, 1943, because of having a radio set she was beaten by the Japanese until she fainted. Her six sons were also beaten and finally one was beheaded.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5217 is an affidavit made jointly by 1st. Lieutenant James A. McLUKIA, 2nd. Lieutenant Jose L. BOLQUIN and 2nd. Lieutenant Alphonse D. QUINONES all of 5th U.S. Air Force. I tender this document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read the 4th paragraph of the affidavit.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5438 is a statement made by Captain John J. MURPHY of Allied Intelligence Bureau. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence

.....

I will read this statement.

Evidentiary Document No. 5445.

Page 4.

Prosecution Document No. 5410 is an affidavit made by MUTA
LLOMAD, a native boy. I tender this document for identification
and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent states that at Tobera Airfield a Japanese struck
a native who retaliated by punching the Japanese in the eye.
The native boy and four other native boys were tied up. The
Japanese then struck them all on the head with a mallet. Three
were killed in this manner. The whole five, including two who
were still alive were then buried.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5433 is a record of an Australian
Military Court in relation to trial of Navy Workmen MIKA A,
Haruo on two charges of murder. I tender the document for
identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

This refers to the same happening as the previous exhibit.
It fixes the time of the happening as August, 1943.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5412 consists of affidavits of Sweeper
GIANI and Pioneer LUCI KOPE, both of Indian Army. I tender
this document for identification and the marked excerpts in
evidence.

.....

The deponents say that in May, 1944, an Indian named FAKLA
was beaten by the Japs and then hung.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5414 is a record of the evidence of
JEM QUTUBUDDIN of 1st. Battalion Hyderabad Infantry. I tender
this document for identification and the marked excerpts in
evidence.

.....

The deponent with a party of 35 Indian was at NISHIZAKIYAMA
in November, 1944, as prisoners of war. They were starved by
the Japanese. Two sepoy were allowed by the Japanese to have
stolen rice. They were taken away and executed by the Japanese
without any trial.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5413 is a Statutory Declaration made
by a native named NUJA. I tender it for identification and
the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

Evidentiary Document No. 5445.

Page 5.

The declarant states that between December, 1944, and March, 1945, at KANGAGUA Japanese took a mosquito net and sore calico from three Indian prisoners of war. The Indians objected to this, whereupon the Japanese had them beheaded.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5411 is affidavit of Pioneer FARALUAI of the Indian Army. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent states that on 12 February, 1945, an Indian EIRLU LISTAI became exhausted at his work and asked the Japanese commander for permission to rest. The prisoner was then beaten into unconsciousness by the Japanese Commander. The prisoner died two days later as a result of this treatment.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5416 is an affidavit by Havildar Chandgi MAI of the Indian Army. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read the 2nd. and third paragraphs.

.....

THAT COMPLETES THE EVIDENCE FOR THE NEW BRITAIN SECTION OF THIS PHASE.

Exhibentiary Document No. 5445.

Page 5.

The declarant states that between December, 1944, and March, 1945, at KANGAGUA Japanese took a mosquito net and sore calico from three Indian prisoners of war. The Indians objected to this, whereupon the Japanese had them beheaded.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5411 is affidavit of Pioneer FARALU.A. of the Indian Army. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent states that on 12 February, 1945, an Indian EIRLUHISTI became exhausted at his work and asked the Japanese commander for permission to rest. The prisoner was then beaten into unconsciousness by the Japanese Commander. The prisoner died two days later as a result of this treatment.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5416 is an affidavit by Havildar Chandgi BAN of the Indian Army. I tender the document for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read the 2nd. and third paragraphs.

.....

THAT COMPLETES THE EVIDENCE FOR THE NEW BRITAIN SECTION OF THIS CASE.

證據概略 - ニエアリテ一島

次、地域ハニエアリテ一島ニ於ケル信房及一般民間人
ノ待望ニ因テ本事ヲ取扱フテ居ラス。證據總論卷
ヲ以テ提出致シマス。

5445

検査文書第五三二号ハ之。濠洲衛生隊ノ兵卒
ウィリアム・ウィルク WILKES WILKES WILKES
アリマス。此ノ文書ヲ檢證シテ提上ノ中、即所
多國所ノ被擄者ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

Doc

documentary

文書ハ次ノ如ク述テ居ラス。一九四三年昭和十七年
二月四日日本人ノニエアリテ一島トシテ上ニ於テ
ニ四名濠洲兵ト一名ノ民間人ノ團ヲ信房ニシテ
アリマス。兵卒六陸軍軍医團ノ人アリマス。檢
査ノ事ハ之ノ概略ヲ日本公ニ示シテ注意ヲ惹キテ
居ル。日本人ノ被擄者ノ別ヲ取リテアリマス
是ヨリ此ノ文書ハ三頁ノ外三四頁ノ全部ヲ附録致シ

5446

検査文書第五三二号ハ之。濠洲衛生隊ノ兵卒
ウィリアム・ウィルク WILKES WILKES WILKES
アリマス。此ノ文書ヲ檢證シテ提上ノ中、即所
多國所ノ被擄者ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

Ne

之ノ事ハ之ノ如ク述テ居ラス。一九四三年昭和十七年
二月四日日本人ノニエアリテ一島トシテ上ニ於テ
ニ四名濠洲兵ト一名ノ民間人ノ團ヲ信房ニシテ
アリマス。兵卒六陸軍軍医團ノ人アリマス。檢
査ノ事ハ之ノ概略ヲ日本公ニ示シテ注意ヲ惹キテ
居ル。日本人ノ被擄者ノ別ヲ取リテアリマス
是ヨリ此ノ文書ハ三頁ノ外三四頁ノ全部ヲ附録致シ

Doc. 5445

X X X X X

檢察文書第二三三三號ハ豫州歩兵大隊、兵卒トシテ、ウヱズ
FIGHT OSEPNYBSト依ル證言、記録アリ、私ハ、文書ヲ檢證
為提去シ、中、印、附、箇所、按率ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

X X X X X

此、文書、次、如、述、テ居リマス。九四三年、昭和七年、二月、四日、彼、十一名、他、豫州兵
ニ、アリ、テ、ウヱズ、シ、テ、音、譯、セ、テ、於、日本、人、依、ル、俘虜、ヲ、縛、リ、テ
テ、射、殺、サ、レ、タ、十、名、殺、サ、レ、テ、他、一、名、傷、害、ヲ、受、ケ、タ、リ、

X X X X X

檢察文書第五四〇號ハ中国國民軍六師團三〇大隊ニ属スルウヱズ、ヨシ、ウヱズ
YOSIN中尉依ル證言書アリ、私、此、文書ヲ檢證、為提去シ、其、中、印、附
イ、箇所、按率ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

X X X X X

證人、九四三年、昭和七年、二月、九日、二十名、中国兵、が、彼、等、ノ、名、前、ヲ、示、シ、テ、ウヱズ、
ル、於、テ、余、リ、病、氣、が、重、イ、為、勞、働、出、来、ナ、イ、カ、ラ、ト、云、フ、テ、射、殺、サ、レ、タ、事、ヲ、陳、述
シ、テ、居、リ、マ、ス。

X X X X X

檢察文書第五四〇三號ハ、サ、野、戰、義、勇、軍、ノ、リ、ウヱズ、LEEWA-SIN陸軍
少佐依ル證言書アリ、私、此、文書ヲ檢證、為提去シ、其、中、印、附、
イ、箇所、按率ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

X X X X X

No. 2

証人、九四三年、昭和十八年、二月、四日、ラ、ウ、ル、ニ、於、テ、日本、人、が、六、人、中国
將、兵、ヲ、彼、等、ノ、病、氣、が、重、イ、為、勞、働、出、来、ナ、イ、カ、ラ、ト、云、フ、テ、射、殺、シ、
タ、事、ヲ、述、ベ、テ、居、リ、マ、ス。

Doc 5745

檢察文書第 五三九三號、中國國民軍、
録了了。此、文書檢証、爲
、中、印、附、國行、技研、証據、
、提、書、致、之、又。

年記人、如、陳、述、
人、二、四、名、之、病、死、中、國、兵、之、病、室、自、連、去、
、既、二、病、死、之、了、之、甚、二、無、理、之、全、部、
、殺、之、了、之、又、一、九、四、三、年、報、和、十、全、
、二、月、十、日、二、日、二、者、之、成、二、組、之、病、之、中、
、國、兵、加、同、之、標、二、日、本、人、二、殺、之、了、之、又。

檢察文書第 五三四。四号、中央義勇軍中國
陸軍司令部、ヨ、ニ、ハ、YONG-PANG.
、大、尉、二、依、此、宣、誓、口、述、書、了、之、又、私、之、
、檢、証、爲、二、提、出、之、其、中、之、印、附、
、國、行、技、研、之、証、據、
、提、出、致、之、又。

NO 3

年記人、一、九、四、三、年、報、和、十、年、四、月、三、日、二、十、一、
、名、之、病、人、中、國、兵、之、病、室、二、病、死、之、重、

Doc 5-225

一為海軍部... 軍力... 戰事...

檢察文書... 海軍部... 戰事... 軍力...

此... 文書... 海軍部... 戰事...

檢察文書... 海軍部... 戰事... 軍力...

NO 4

此... 文書... 海軍部... 戰事...

Doc 5-485

一為... 檢... 檢... 檢...

檢... 檢... 檢... 檢... 檢...

檢... 檢... 檢... 檢... 檢...

檢... 檢... 檢... 檢... 檢...

檢... 檢... 檢... 檢... 檢...

NO 4

Doc 57445

檢察文書第五四〇七号、中国中央義勇軍、〇、〇、〇、
之、Tom Bai Ming、宣哲言、証書、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
ヲ檢証、高印、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
之、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、

証、一九四三年、昭和十九年、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、

檢察文書第五四〇八号、潘、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、

証、一九四三年、昭和十九年、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、

檢察文書第五四〇九号、李、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、

証、一九四三年、昭和十九年、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、

NO 5

檢察文書第五三二七号、James D. McMURRIA、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、
〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、〇、

Doc 5745

John L. HOLQUIN / 約翰·L·霍爾昆 / 檢閱文書
Alphons D. QUINONES / 阿方索·D·奎諾內斯 / 檢閱文書
John J. MURPHY / 約翰·J·墨菲 / 檢閱文書

MAUTA LEONARD / 馬奧塔·利昂納德 / 檢閱文書

NO 6

飛行員... 檢閱文書... 裁判...

No 8

doc

5-445

彼等、野首に之ヲ

検察文書第百四十二号、印度軍兵ハラスノ(PARASURAM) /
宣誓口述書アリニ、私に之ヲ檢証、寫印、イタ國所、板
本ヲ證據トシ提出致シニ

証人、一九四五年(昭和二十年)二月十二日イタ國所、
IBINDHU MISTRIL、仕事に疲し切つた。日本、司令官ニ休
息、許可ヲ願ふニ、スルニ、兵ハ、日本、司令官ニ氣ヲ失フ
迄打たれた。兵、一日後ニ、仕打テ、結果死亡シタリ。

検察文書第百四十二号、印度軍、ハラスノ(Parasuram) /
Havildar Chandgi RAM、宣誓口述書アリニ、私に、
文書ヲ檢証、寫印、イタ國所、板本ヲ證據トシ提出
致シマス。

私、第二、三段ヲ翻譯致シニ

之、イタ國所、イタ國所ニ、イタ國所ニ、證據ヲ終リマス。

Q # 1852

Confidential Document No. 5311.

Page 1.

WILLIAM COOK

IX56978, PRIVATE WILLIAM COOK, Details, 2/10 Field Ambulance, being duly sworn, states:

I am IX56978, Private William Cook of Details, 2/10 Field Ambulance.

I was a member of the original Details of 2/10 Field Ambulance which was sent to RABAU, sailing from here on the 12th March, 1941, and I remained with the Field Ambulance in NEW BRITAIN until the evacuation.

I was present with the Field Ambulance when orders were given on the 22nd. January, 1942, at about 1500 hours for the hospital to be evacuated from KALANULA to the VUNAPOPE Mission site. I assisted during the movement of patients and equipment. I was in charge of the Isolation Dysentery ward at KALANULA, and afterwards at VUNAPOPE.

On the morning of the 24th January, at about 0600 hours I received orders from Major Palmer, O.C. of the Ambulance, for the evacuation of the Ambulance personnel to LALABUNGA. It was understood that all sick and wounded patients were being left at VUNAPOPE, and, in order that they might be looked after, volunteers from the Ambulance personnel were called for to remain to look after the patients, and from those who volunteered, two were chosen - Private Max Langdon and Corporal L. Hudson. In addition to our own military patients who were being left behind, I know that the following civilian personnel also remained at VUNAPOPE when our party left, that is, two civilian medical assistants from the KAPENDIK Native Hospital, two male members of the Public Health Department and seven civilian nurses from the RABAU District, together with a few civilians whose names I do not recall.

At about 0700 hours a convoy of the Details of the 2/10 Field Ambulance left from VUNAPOPE, and the party proceeded towards LALABUNGA.

Just before we got to LALABUNGA, we met a party of troops with a patient who had a broken leg. We took him on to LALABUNGA with us. At LALABUNGA, Major Palmer divided us into two parties. Five of the Details of the 2/10 Field Ambulance, two of the Dental Unit and one civilian stayed at LALABUNGA. The rest of the party proceeded towards the coast. I stayed with the first named party.

During the afternoon, two members of the Dental Unit and a civilian made off, leaving us, with the permission of Captain Robertson who was in charge of that party. About an hour later one of the Dental party returned. During the afternoon, Japanese planes flew very low overhead, and the same

the next morning, so Captain Robertson decided to push on. One of the 2/10 - the Dental Unit man who had returned - volunteered to stay behind with the patients. Captain Robertson, Robert Hennessey and Pearsall and myself then moved off towards the south coast at about midday on Saturday the 24th. We proceeded to LAHINGI MISSION where our party caught up with Major Palmer and the bulk of the details of the 2/10 Field Ambulance. There were also other troops in this body and, after we arrived, the total strength would be about 18. From here the party moved on under arrangements supervised by Major Palmer in parties of varying numbers, each party being separated some distance from the other. I was in one of the leading parties, and Major Palmer with a party brought up the rear to watch for stragglers and to generally supervise and control.

About the 29th my party arrived at ADLER BAY and we stayed there for three days.

The first party to leave ADLER BAY was Captain Robertson's comprising two of the 2/10, one man temporarily attached to the 2/10, with Captain Robertson. They left about the morning of the 31st. January. Another party of three left on the Saturday night, and six of us left on the Sunday morning, all making in the direction of WIDE BAY. Major Palmer with his party which consisted of a Sergeant and a Private went by another track right round ADLER BAY. He moved off on the Sunday morning and on Monday morning, 2nd. February, we caught up with the two men who were with Major Palmer, they having waited behind for us. That was about a day's journey from TOL.

The next day - the 2nd. February - we continued towards TOL. At this stage we saw the Japanese landing craft at about 0900 hours proceeding towards TOL, although we did not know that at the time. We then left a notice on a piece of paper on a bush on the track warning any troops following that the Japanese had been seen.

On Wednesday the 4th, when going along the track at about 0930 hours, we met Staff Sergeant Bower of the 2/22 Battalion. He informed us that the Japanese had left TOL, but not to move on until he made sure. He went on ahead - on reconnaissance. We waited just off the track, four of us having a game of cards and the other four cooking some food. Our first intimation that the Japs were there was when the four who were cooking ran past us, muttering "The Japs are on us." We were at the edge of the jungle. I myself ran into the jungle and hid. I saw my seven mates walk out with their hands up, so I went back with them. This was roughly about 1030 hours. We were taken to the main track under a party of Japanese in charge of whom was a Sergeant. He indicated by signs that he was a Sergeant

We were searched for firearms and were allowed to sit down awaiting the rest of the Japanese party. Small parties

Evidentiary Document No. 5311.

Page 11

of Japanese came up with us with other prisoners until there were 23 prisoners in all.

Our identification discs were taken. By an officer we were given a book in which to sign our names and numbers.

When the party was about to move off, another Australian soldier crawled up to us, showing signs of fatigue, and complaining of hunger. We were told to treat him, and two of our men were detailed to carry him. The rest of us carried ammunition and a few rifles which the Japanese had capture.

About a quarter of a mile along the track, the two who were carrying the patient were, by signs, told to leave him on the ground, and we were marched off, a Japanese soldier staying behind with the patient. Shortly after, the Japanese soldier caught up with us, and we saw no more of the patient.

Just before reaching TOL, a civilian European policeman from KABAUL and another soldier were added to our party, making it 25 all told. On arriving at TOL, the Japanese soldiers were allowed to ransack our packs and to search for anything which may have been of value to them. Rings and watches were taken from us.

We were told to put everything out of our pockets on to the ground, and our pay books were collected. They then tied our hands behind our backs with fishing cord, and we were tied together in parties of twos and threes. They then separated from us the European member of the police force. They then took off our tin hats, and as we were marched off, they were questioning the member of the police force. They marched us to a plantation about half a mile from TOL in the direction of KABAUL. We were, by signs, told to sit down on a slight rise on the track leading into the plantation, with our back towards the plantation. At this stage we protested against the treatment, as we were of the Red Cross, and each of us wore a Red Cross arm band. The officer-in-charge just ripped our arm bands off our sleeves and kept them in his hand.

They started to take the men down the track in parties, but the first man was taken down separately. Then we followed in groups of two or three. I was in the second last party consisting of three. There were two in the last party.

The officer, by signs, asked us would we sooner be bayoneted or shot. We asked to be shot. We were taken down the track. When we reached the bottom of the track, three other Japanese with fixed bayonets intercepted us and walked behind us. The first blow knocked the

They then stabbed us in the back with their bayonets. The first blow knocked the three of us to the ground. Our thumbs were tied behind our backs and native lap laps were used to connect us together through our arms. They stood above us and stabbed us several more times. I received five stabs. I pretended death and held my breath.

The Japanese then walked away. The soldier who was lying next to me groaned. One Japanese came back and stabbed him again. I could not hold my breath any longer, and when I breathed he heard it and stabbed me another six times. The last thrust went through my ear, face and into my mouth, severing an artery which caused the blood to gush out of my mouth. He then placed cocconut fronds and vines over the three of us. I lay there and heard the last two men being shot.

I lay there for approximately one hour, when I decided to try to escape. I untied the cloth which connected me with the other two and walked towards the sea, which was about 50 yards away. After a few steps, I collapsed. It seemed only a short time before I regained consciousness. I then tried to saw the bonds from my thumbs on the iron heel of my boot, but could not do so because my thumbs were swollen. After a short while, I managed to get my leg between my two hands and I chewed at the knot until it became undone. I then walked towards the beach. I made my way along the beach, walking as much as possible in the water to avoid leaving traces of blood and at the same time bathing my back in the salt water. Just at dusk I sighted the smoke of a camp fire in the jungle near the beach, and made towards it.

After about 10 hours - as far as I can gather - I rested as near as I could judge near to where the fire was and had a few hours sleep. When I awoke I found the path leading towards this camp, and I followed it and found a small party of soldiers camped there. Colonel Scanlan was in charge of this party. I told him what had happened, and he dressed two of my wounds, not having sufficient material to do the rest.

I was allowed to sleep for a few hours, and when I awoke I was given some food to eat and then sent from there along the track with a native to find another party. Before meeting up with anybody else, the native left me and I walked a short distance and went into the bush for a rest.

Shortly afterwards a party of three soldiers came along the track. I attracted their attention and after a short conversation we decided to climb the mountains so as to go around the Japanese at TOL. After a week spent trying to climb the mountains we finished up exactly where we started. Then a native told us the Japanese had left and offered to guid us to the next mission. We passed through TOL till we came to a big river and were taken across by canoe and landed on a small island. We

stayed there for the night and next morning were making arrangements with other natives who had come along in the meantime to make a raft and so to cross another river.

Just then, a Japanese cruiser was sighted coming into TOL, so we swam on to the mainland and went bush for a while. We met another party of soldiers and the four of us kept on. Eventually I met up with Major Palmer. That was about the end of February, and from then on I was with his party until the evacuation. We came out from the South Coast.

BY THE COURT: After shaming dead at TOL, on your escape did you see any dead bodies of other Australian soldiers?---Yes, I saw three. I did not see others on account of the parties being taken to separate parts of the plantation.

You do not know the names of any of these three?---No, I do not.

Was there anything, to your knowledge, done by our troops when taken prisoner to warrant this massacre?---Definitely not.

(sgd) NX56978
Pte. W, Cook
5/6/42.

Certified true copy

(sgd) T. F. Mornane Lieut. Col.
Australian Military Forces.

Doc 5311

證據書類第五三一號

WILLIAM COOK

野戰病院小分遣隊所屬

正規 = 宣撫言ヲ上陳述ニス

野戰病院小分遣隊所屬兵

一九四四年昭和十六年三月十二日此処ヨリ上航 RABUL 野戰病院、基準小分遣隊、一員アリ。撤退ニ到ル迄 NEW BRITAIN 野戰病院ト共ニ留ムツ居リニシテ

一九四二年昭和十七年一月二十二日午後三時頃病院ヲ NAMANKLA 傳道館所在地ニ後退セシメヨト、命令亦下サ多時 野戰病院ニ居リニシテ、私ハ患者達ヲ施設ヲ移動スル間、午 傳道館ニシテ、私ハ NAMANKLA 又後ニ VUNAPOPE 赤痢隔離病 棟、受持下リニシテ

一月二十四日、朝六時頃私ハ野戰病院、隊長 PALMER 野戰病院所屬員 HALABUNGA 後退セヨト、命令ヲ受取リ

十九日頃私ハ隊 ADLER BA 灣ニ着キ、ソコニ三日間滞在ニシ

翌日即チ二月二日吾々ハ TOL 向テ前進ヲ續行ニシ

No 1.

Doc 5311

No 2

其の初、午前九時頃我々の日本、上陸用舟艇がトシニ向テ進ニテ行
 フヲ見マシタ。其の時ニハソレがトシニ行クダトハ知リマセデシタ。
 ソレテ吾々の後、ウチノ友軍部隊ニ既ニ日本軍が見エタリヨ警告
 スルヲ路上ノ草叢ニ紙切ニ書イタ注意書ヲ残シテオキマシタ。
 四水曜日午前九時半頃路上ヲ行進ニテ共タトキ、吾々の大隊
 長「ROWER」曹長ニ逢ヒマシタ。彼ハ吾々に日本軍ハ既ニトシニ立タ
 が自分カソレヲ確メル迄進ニテハイケサイト知ラセテクマシタ。彼ハ偵
 察ノタメ先ニ行キマシタ。吾々ハチヨット路ヲ外シテ待機ニマシタ。
 我々、中四人ハ「トラン」ヲヤツテ遊ビ、他ノ四名ハナニカ食物ヲ料
 理ニテマシタ。ソレテ料理ヲマシタ四名、者ガ「日本兵ニ感付カレタ」ト
 小声ニ叫ビテ停ヲ駈ケ抜ケタノテ初メテ日本兵ハ其處ニ居ルニハカ
 附マシタ。吾々の密林ノ端ニ居マシタ。私自身ハ密林ニ馳込ニ隠シマ
 シ。私仲間七名ハ手ヲ上げてオテニク、ヲ見マシタ、テ引返シテ彼等ト一緒
 ナリマシタ。コトハ大体午前十時三十分頃デアリマシタ。吾々の軍曹
 ハ率テ居ル日本軍ノ隊ニ守ラレテ大通リニ連テ行カレマシタ。彼ハ
 軍曹デアツタニハ階級章ヲ解リマシタ。
 吾々の火器所有ノ有無、調べ受ケテカス。日本軍部隊、残り
 者ヲ待ツタメ坐ルコトヲ許サレマシタ。幾組、日本兵、小部隊
 他、捕虜達ヲ連シテ吾々に追付キ。捕虜ハ全部テ三十三名トナリ
 マシタ。
 吾々、認識標ハ取テケラシマシタ。吾々ハ一人、將校カ、各々、名前
 ヤ番号ヲ誌スタ。一冊、手帳ヲ渡サレマシタ。
 部隊ハ將ニ去テカニトスル時又一人、AUSTRALIA、兵ハ吾々、處ニ
 ヤット捕ツテ出リ着キ、カモ疲シク様子テ空腹ヲ許シマシタ。吾
 々ハ彼ヲ看テハル様ニ云ハ、仲間二人ハ彼ヲ運ブ様ニ選バレマシタ。

Doc 5311

吾々、中、残り、者、日本兵が今捕つた弾薬ト二三挺、小銃ヲ運
 びました。此、路、約四分一哩程行つた頃、患者ヲ運ニテ廿二名、
 者、手真似テ病人ヲ其處ニオイテ行ケト云ハシ日本兵が一人病
 介下ニ縮ニ後残り吾々又行進サセシマシタ。間モナク、日本兵、
 吾々ニ追附キマシタが病人ノ姿、モヤ見エマセシタ。
 此ニ着クスヨシ前 ^{TRABALK}カラ来タヨーロッパ人、民間巡查一
 名、及モ一、名、兵が吾々、隊ニ加リ既述ノ者全部ニ二十五名ニナ
 リタ。此ニ着ク、日本兵連、吾々、荷物ヲ引摺廻シ余々様
 上ノヲ十二ニテ投スヨト許サシマシタ。吾々、指環ヤ時計ヲ取テ下
 シマシタ。

吾々、ボウツト、モノヲ全部出シテ地面ニ置ク様ニ云ハシ吾々、食
 料薄シ集メラシマシタ。ツギニ彼等、換獲用、索テ吾々ヲ後手ニ
 縛リ、我々ニ人ト三人ツツ、幾ツカ、組ニ互ニ縛リ合サシマシタ。ソレガ
 例、ヨーロッパ人、警察隊員ヲ吾々カラ別ニシテシマシタ。
 次ニ彼等、吾々、錫製、帽子ヲ取テ下ケ、又吾々、行進サセラシ時
 彼等、警察隊員ヲ訊問ニテ并マシタ。彼等、吾々ヲ ^{TRABALK}ノ方向
 此ヨリ半哩バカリアル農場迄行進サセマシタ。吾々、手真似テ
 農場ニ入ル路、イラカ坂ニツタ、処ニ農場ニ背ヲ向ケテ生ル様ニ
 云ハシマシタ。コトキ吾々、彼等、待遇対シ抗議ヲ申シマ
 シタト云フ、ハ吾々、赤十字、者アリタ。各々赤十字、腕章ヲ
 附ケテ下ケテアリヌ。隊長、將校、吾々、袖カ、腕章
 コシタク、彼、手ニ收メテシマシタ。

No 3

Doc 311

彼等ハ吾々ヲ組組攻進下ニ始マシメ、カシ最初二人ノ別進去リ
 多ク、シテ吾々三人カシ組、マシ、ゴッロ、ハトキマシ、私ハ最後
 カシ二番目、組下リ、組三人下リシ。最後、組ハ三人下リシ。

新夜ハ手真似ニ吾々ニ向テ銃剣ヲ突ガサルト射ヲルトト下ガ取
 カシ記マシ、吾々ハ射殺サレ方ヲ頼ミマシ。吾々ハ進言ヲ踏下ニキ
 マシ。吾々が踏ハ合信ニ處ニ着テマシ、着剣ヲ銃ヲ倚テ他ニマ
 日本兵が吾々ヲ止メ、ソレカラ後ニツイテ来マシ。ソレカラ彼等ハ、銃
 剣ヲ吾々ノ背中ニ突キマシ。最初、一聲ヲ吾々三人、地ニ打倒サ
 レマシ。吾々ハ、指ハ後ヲ縛リ、吾々ヲ一纏ニスルヲ、脱通言テ地竹が
 便ニマシ。彼等ハ吾々ニ上ニ乘リカテ、更ニ數回突刺シマシ。私ハ固実
 カシマシ。私ハ死ニ振テ、息ヲコソシマシ。

ソレカラ日本兵ハ行テマシ。私ハ隣ニ臥シ、死ニ覚テ、念リマシ。

一ハ日本兵又マシ来テ、又ハ一度彼ヲ突刺シマシ。私ハ最早息止マシ
 マシ。息止マシト、彼ハソレ周リ又ハ固私ヲ突刺シマシ。最後ニ突刺
 シマシ。耳、顔、母腹、口ニ達シ、一本動脈ヲ切テマシ。私ハ、口ニ血ガ流
 レマシ。ソレカラ彼ハ吾々三人、上ニ柳子、葉ニ蔓ニ復テマシ。

私ハ其處横ニマシ、最後ニ人ガ射スルヲ聞キマシ。

不時間程横ニマシ、ソレカラ逃ゲテ見ヨウト決心シマシ。

私ハ他三人ト結合テ、又布ヲ解テ、約五十ヤード程離キ、海ノ方
 へ歩テマシ。數歩歩テ、又ハ氣ヲ遠テマシ。ソレカラ間无テ、
 氣ヲ取テマシ。ソレカラ靴、杖、彈、子、西梅指ヲ縛リ、綱ヲ磨
 リ切テマシ、梅指ガ、子ヲ、子ヲ、子ヲ、出テマシ。

船ニマシ、下ヤリ、コシ、是ヲ、両手、間ニ入テ、結、目ヲ、嘴ニ、解キマシ。

私ハ、ソレカラ、海岸ニ歩テ、行キマシ。海岸ニ、沿テ、進テ、血跡ヲ、残サ、
 三、五、米、心、ガ、水、中、ヲ、歩テ、標ニ、同、時、ニ、塩、米、背、中、ニ、浸シマシ。

104

Doc 311

104

彼等六吾々三組三組攻進下始マシカニ最初一人別進シテ
 三ノ。ソレ吾々ニカミ人ツ、組マ、ゴッロ、ノ、ト、ナリ。私、身、最、後
 此ニ番目、組下、組三人、ナリ。最後、組、二人、ナリ。
 射殺、手、真、似、吾々、向、之、銃、剣、ヲ、突、キ、サ、ルト、射、ヲ、止、ム、ル、事、ナ
 リ、記、シ、テ、吾、々、射、殺、サ、ル、方、ヲ、頼、ミ、シ、テ、吾、々、逃、シ、テ、下、ニ、下
 マシ、吾、々、が、路、ヲ、急、イ、處、着、キ、テ、着、剣、ヲ、航、向、シ、地、三、人
 日本、兵、が、吾、々、ヲ、止、メ、ソ、レ、カ、ラ、後、ニ、テ、テ、来、マ、シ、テ、ソ、レ、カ、ラ、後、射、ヲ、止、ム、ル、事、ナ
 劍、ヲ、吾、々、者、中、キ、突、キ、マ、シ、テ、最初、一、撃、ヲ、吾、々、三、人、地、一、ノ、打、倒、サ
 シ、シ、テ、吾、々、地、指、後、下、ニ、テ、吾、々、一、纏、ミ、ル、テ、脱、逃、シ、テ、地、指、カ
 便、シ、マ、シ、テ、後、身、三、ノ、上、ニ、来、リ、カ、テ、更、ニ、數、回、突、刺、シ、マ、シ、テ、私、五、回、突
 カ、シ、テ、私、死、ニ、振、ラ、シ、息、ヲ、コ、ロ、シ、テ、井、ニ、マ、シ、テ、
 ソ、レ、カ、ラ、日本、兵、六、行、テ、シ、マ、シ、テ、私、隣、ニ、臥、シ、テ、身、ヲ、急、命、シ、マ、シ、テ、
 一、日本、兵、又、テ、来、リ、テ、一、度、復、テ、突、刺、シ、マ、シ、テ、私、最早、自、切、テ、井、ニ、
 下、ニ、テ、自、切、シ、テ、口、復、テ、ソ、ノ、間、又、テ、用、私、突、刺、シ、マ、シ、テ、最後、ニ、突、刺
 シ、テ、一、耳、割、リ、身、ヲ、口、達、シ、一本、筋、脈、切、テ、マ、シ、テ、私、口、ニ、血、が、流
 シ、マ、シ、テ、ソ、レ、カ、ラ、彼、六、吾、々、三、人、上、ニ、柳、子、葉、ヲ、要、シ、復、セ、マ、シ、テ、
 私、其、處、横、ニ、テ、井、ニ、最後、ニ、人、が、射、ル、ル、ヲ、用、キ、マ、シ、テ、
 不、時、間、程、横、ニ、テ、井、ニ、テ、ガ、ソ、レ、カ、ラ、逃、ゲ、見、ヨ、ク、決、心、シ、マ、シ、テ、
 私、他、三、人、ト、結、合、シ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、
 歩、キ、マ、シ、マ、シ、テ、數、歩、歩、キ、マ、シ、テ、氣、が、遠、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、
 急、取、来、リ、マ、シ、テ、ソ、レ、テ、私、靴、外、踏、テ、テ、兩、指、ヲ、傳、テ、網、ヲ、磨
 リ、切、リ、テ、マ、シ、テ、指、が、テ、テ、井、ニ、テ、出、来、リ、マ、シ、テ、
 結、合、シ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、
 索、シ、テ、ソ、レ、カ、ラ、海岸、ニ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、
 三、出、来、リ、マ、シ、テ、水中、ヲ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、
 三、出、来、リ、マ、シ、テ、水中、ヲ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、テ、

Doc 5311

下屋台春窓林... 何洋行... 約半時間後... 和方推測... 和者... 必方近... 目... 和方... 和者... 和者...

USGIVLAN... 和方... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者...

和方... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者...

和方... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者...

和方... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者...

和方... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者...

和方... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者... 和者...

5

CX # 1853

Evidentiary Document # 5312.

WILLIE DESMOND COLLINS.

SYDNEY, MONDAY, 8th JUNE, 1942. AT 12 NOON.

NX57343 DRIVER WILLIE DESMOND COLLINS, 2/10 F.A., being duly sworn, states:

I am NX57343, DRIVER WILLIE DESMOND COLLINS, 2/10 Field Ambulance. I arrived in New Britain in March, 1941, and remained with the 2/10 Field Ambulance until evacuated. Throughout this period I was at the hospital at NAMANULA, RABAU, until the day before the Japanese landing. On that date I took a load of wounded to WUNAPOPE MISSION near KOKOPO where they were taken in. The civilian nurses were already at WUNAPOPE. The Army nurses arrived while I was there. The hospital was set up at the Mission Hospital. The Army and civilian nurses were quartered at the Mission two or three hundred yards from the hospital.

I left about 0800 on the day of the landing with an ambulance to go to TOMA expecting to pick up wounded. I was in a convoy with several trucks. We got to TOMA but there was nothing there so we went to MMLAFUNGA and set up a hospital at the Mission there under Major Palmer and Captain Robertson. We were there nearly all day, and then all troops were evacuated from the north to the hills and expected to continue fighting there. One of our medical officers picked out a number of medical volunteers to go with the troops, and I volunteered. We walked for two days in the hills and carried supplies and kept on going without any organisation, and could not find headquarters; so we kept going. Someone spread a rumour that we were going to be evacuated from some point on the coast. We reached the coast at ADLER BAY. We were there for two days, and ~~many~~ of the chaps were footsore and a couple of our chaps remained with them, and we were going further down the coast where there was supposed to be a teleradic. I did not get down that far, but was captured at TOL.

BY THE COURT: What happened when you got to Tol? Tell us how you came to be captured, what happened afterwards, and how you got away?---We were just past ROSS's plantation, and on the edge of the first of three rivers a lot of men were trying to cross. We were awaiting our turn, and five Japanese barges came into the bay and started shelling troops in the village, and machine gunning them, so we ran up the river to a point where we were able to wade across. We eventually crossed the three rivers, and at a Mission there there were Clissold and myself. Two barges landed, and we were caught there. We did not see them coming into the beach. They fired mortars and machine guns across the Mission and we dived into a creek. There was a party of Japanese above us, and they took us back and put us on one of the barges and took us to another plantation further south in the direction in which we were originally going. It was dark when they reached the shore, so they went back to Ross's plantation, just near TOL.

were there any other Australians on the barges besides you two?---A civilian policeman named Nolty. They put us ashore at Ross's near TOL.

Up to that time, had they treated you well?---Yes, quite well.

Had they fed you?---No; but one chap gave us some of his rations; and they gave us cigarettes.

Q # 1853

Evidentiary Document # 5312.

WILKIE DESMOND COLLINS.

SYDNEY, MONDAY, 8th JUNE, 1942, AT 12 NOON.

NX57343 DRIVER WILKIE DESMOND COLLINS, 2/10 F.A., being duly sworn, states:

I am NX57343, DRIVER WILKIE DESMOND COLLINS, 2/10 Field Ambulance, I arrived in New Britain in March, 1941, and remained with the 2/10 Field Ambulance until evacuated. Throughout this period I was at the hospital at NAMANULA, RABAUL, until the day before the Japanese landing. On that date I took a load of wounded to VUNAPORE MISSION near KOKOPO where they were taken in. The civilian nurses were already at VUNAPORE. The Army nurses arrived while I was there. The hospital was set up at the Mission Hospital. The Army and civilian nurses were quartered at the Mission two or three hundred yards from the hospital.

I left about 0800 on the day of the landing with an ambulance to go to TOMA expecting to pick up wounded. I was in a convoy with several trucks. We got to TOMA but there was nothing there so we went to MALAEUNGA and set up a hospital at the Mission there under Major Palmer and Captain Robertson. We were there nearly all day, and then all troops were evacuated from the north to the hills and expected to continue fighting there. One of our medical officers picked out a number of medical volunteers to go with the troops, and I volunteered. We walked for two days in the hills and carried supplies and kept on going without any organisation, and could not find headquarters; so we kept going. Someone sprang a rumour that we were going to be evacuated from some point on the coast. We reached the coast at ADLER BAY. We were there for two days, and ~~many~~ of the chaps were footsore and a couple of our chaps remained with them, and we were going further down the coast where there was supposed to be a telereadic. I did not get down that far, but was captured at TOL.

BY THE COURT: What happened when you got to Tol? Tell us how you came to be captured, what happened afterwards, and how you got away?---We were just past ROSS's plantation, and on the edge of the first of three rivers a lot of men were trying to cross. We were awaiting our turn, and five Japanese barges came into the bay and started shelling troops in the village, and machine gunning them, so we ran up the river to a point where we were able to wade across. We eventually crossed the three rivers, and at a Mission there there were Clissold and myself. Two barges landed, and we were caught there. We did not see them coming into the beach. They fired mortars and machine guns across the Mission and we dived into a creek. There was a party of Japanese above us, and they took us back and put us on one of the barges and took us to another plantation further south in the direction in which we were originally going. It was dark when they reached the shore, so they went back to Ross's plantation, just near TOL.

Were there any other Australians on the barges besides you two?---A civilian policeman named Nolty. They put us ashore at Ross's near TOL.

Up to that time, had they treated you well?---Yes, quite well.

Had they fed you?---No; but one chap gave us some of his rations; and they gave us cigarettes.

5312

2.

W.E. Collins (cont.)

Did they put you ashore at TOL?--Yes, at midnight, and all the troops they had captured in the morning were in that village. They put us in a hut in *which* there were about 60. At daybreak they took us out and took our names and numbers on a piece of paper, and later they lined us up and counted us, and they marched us to TOL. There were 123. The Japanese counted us in English and he said there should be more, and asked what happened to them. Then they marched the whole party to TOL about a mile away. At TOL we sat down for a while and then they took our identity discs and gave some of them back and then took them again, and then they took all our personal belongings and pay books and tied us up in parties of 10 or 12 after having tied our hands behind our backs. Some more chaps walked down then, and they were captured. They marched us back towards RABAIL on the track of the plantation and the parties broke off the track into the undergrowth.

How far was that from the house?--About a quarter of a mile.

What time of day was this?--About 1000 hours. Then they told us to sit down. All the parties went in different directions, and I could see only our own party of 12. An officer pulled out a sword and he cut one joker loose and he walked him into the bush signalling him to go. He followed with a fixed bayonet. I heard a scream, and the Japanese soldier came back wiping his bayonet. Another two or three went like that. One broke loose and jumped up and tried to run for it, and the officer hit him with his sword and then shot him. One chap asked to be shot - in my presence - and the officer shot him with an automatic revolver. Clissold got up with the Red Cross on his arm and tried to tell him that he was in the 2/10 Field Ambulance, but the Japanese just ripped off the arm band and took it.

Did the Japanese say anything?--No. I was the last one left, and the Japanese troops were away in the bush and the officer was left by himself. He put away his sword and took a rifle. He motioned me to get up and to walk. I took a few paces and he shot me through the shoulder. I fell on the ground and kept still. He fired again and he hit me through both wrists and in the back. He decided he had finished me, and he went away. I could not move for about a quarter of an hour. The bullet which went through my wrist had cut the line with which I had been tied, and I got up and made off into the bush.

Did you see any of the bodies of your mates before you left?--I saw about half a dozen bodies of my mates on the ground.

Had they covered you with leaves?--No.

Had they covered any of the others?--No. The men were just lying on the ground. I got up and walked about a mile and crawled into a big clump of bush at the foot of a range of hills and remained there for a few days. Then I climbed up to the top of the range and walked along, and came back through the bush to the house on Ross's plantation where they had been and the Japs had gone. I went into the hut and found a lot of bananas so I stayed there a couple of days and went to the place where we had been searched, to try to find any equipment that would be of use, but I found everything had been burned. I found two chaps, who had been bayoneted, in one of the huts.

3 3/2

3.

W.D. Collins (cont.)

Do you know their names?---I had nothing with which to write their names down. They told me their names. I took them back to Ross's place where the bananas were and put them in the house. One of them was very bad, and the other chap might have lived. After putting them there I stayed there for a while, and eventually a party of civilians came. The party comprised W.O. Feetun, Mr. Crawley, Mr. Goxton and Mr. Palmer. I had been trying to get to the missionary to get the priest to look after these chaps, and I could not get over the rivers. When the civilians came, I went with them towards the mission. We just crossed the last of the rivers when a destroyer came into the harbour, and we went into the bush and stayed there two days. When we came out to see what was doing, the destroyer was just going out of ADLER BAY, and Ross's house was on fire. That was two days after I left the TOL plantation. We went on from there and came to a plantation, and just before the missionary had made arrangements with the planter there to feed us. Then a party from the north coast came to pick us up. It was Mr. Holland's party, and he went back to the north coast. Some other chaps who came along said they found two bodies in the house. I then came under Captain Appel's orders and eventually went to IROKE and from there I was evacuated on the "Lakatoi".

What was your condition when you came out on the "Lakatoi"?---I was still pretty sick.

How was the treatment from the time you got back to the north coast?---It was good.

And on the "Lakatoi"?---Good. I could not have got better treatment. Mrs. Baker, Mr. Frank Holland and Capt. Appel did everything they could for us.

Did you see any officer there dressed in Australian uniform with the Japanese? ---No, but one of the wounded I took to Mrs. Ross's house told me that there was a Scotsman with the Japanese who said he had joined the Japanese to fight the Chinese, and could not get out of fighting the Australians for the Japs. This man did not say how that officer was dressed.

Do you know anything about a party of 23 who surrendered on the beach?--- I did not see it; but I saw the Japanese separating them.

When they lined you up and counted you, did they separate them?--- When they took us to TOL plantation and took our discs away, I think it was an attempt then to find those who had surrendered. They separated those chaps.

Was anything said about it?---The Japanese were arguing about it, and the Australians were arguing, too.

What was the argument about?---There were 22 surrendered in one place on the beach and another 20 somewhere else, and they all reckoned they all surrendered at the same time, and they were arguing about that. The Japanese did not agree, and said there were only 22. They separated 22 from the rest.

Did you see any incident or anything happen which might have led to some Japanese retaliation?---No, I did not see anything at all.

5317

W.D. Collins (cont.)

Was there any resistance by any of you after you were taken prisoner - any breakaway, or anything?---Unless it was that when they counted us and found there were 123 and said there should be more. Some of them might have escaped in the night.

However, the Japanese gave you no explanation nor did they say anything which would give you an idea of what was in their minds?---No.

As far as you could see, the behaviour of the troops after capture was correct and as it should have been?---Yes. I have no idea why it was done.

Is there anything else you could bring in which would help us?---I think I gave Colonel Hoare a statement.

Did you see any of the men actually being bayoneted?---Yes.

Not being taken into the bush at all?---Only the last couple, who were just near me.

I suppose the Japanese soldiers who did the bayoneting were ordered to do it?---I did not hear an order given by anyone at any time.

It was apparently all pre-arranged?---Yes.

(Sgd.) NX57343
W.D. Collins.

Certified true copy.
J. G. Norman
..... Licut. Col.
Australian Military Forces.

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

警 署 第 五 三 一 二 號

ウイ ル キー ・ デ ス モ ン ド ・ コ リ ン ス

一 九 四 二 年 / 昭 和 十 七 年 / 六 月 八 日 / 月 曜 日

正 午 十 二 時 「 シ ョ ー 」 に 於 テ

Doc 5312

第 二 / 十 衛 生 隊 付 自 動 草 手 、 ウ イ ル キ ー ・ デ ス
モ ン ド ・ コ リ ン ス (N X 五 七 三 四 三) ハ 正 當 ニ 宣
警 署 爲 シ タ ル 上 、 左 ノ 如 ク 陳 述 ス 。

私 ハ 第 二 / 十 衛 生 隊 附 自 動 草 手 ウ イ ル キ ー ・ デ
ス モ ン ド ・ コ リ ン ス (N X 五 七 三 四 三) デ ス 。

一 九 四 一 年 / 昭 和 十 六 年 / 三 月 私 ハ 「 ニ ュ ー ・ プ リ
テン 」 ニ 到 着 シ 、 抵 坂 ス ル マ デ 第 二 / 十 衛 生 隊 ニ
居 リ マ シ タ 。

コ ノ 期 間 中 、 日 本 軍 上 陸 ノ 前 日 迄 、
私 ハ 「 ラ バ ウ ル 」 、 「 ナ マ ス ラ 」 ノ 病 院 ニ 居 リ マ
シ タ 。

其 ノ 日 私 ハ 負 傷 者 達 ヲ 採 セ テ 、 彼 等 ガ 收 容
サ レ ル 「 コ コ ボ 」 近 夕 ノ 「 プ ナ ボ ベ 」 教 會 ニ 避 シ
テ 行 キ マ シ タ 。

「 プ ナ ボ ベ 」 ニ ハ 既 ニ 民 間 看護 婦
達 ガ 居 リ マ シ タ 。

國 軍 看護 婦 達 ハ 私 ガ 其 處 ニ 居 ル
所 ニ 到 着 シ マ シ タ 。

病 院 ハ 教 會 附 屬 病 院 内 ニ 設 ケ
ラ レ マ シ タ 。

國 軍 並 ニ 民 間 看護 婦 達 ハ 病 院 カ ラ 二 、
三 百 馮 難 レ タ 教 會 内 ニ 宿 泊 ス ル コ ト ニ ナ リ マ シ タ 。

私 ハ 日 本 軍 上 陸 日 ノ 八 時 頃 、 負 傷 者 ヲ 收 容 ス ル

Doc 5312.

2.

積リテ、患者運搬車ヲ雇ツテ、「トマ」ニ出掛ケ
マシタ。私ハ敵台ノ自動装置ノ試行險ニキマシタ。
我々ハ「トマ」ニ着キマシタガ、河野モナイノデ、
「マラブソング」ニ進ミ、「バーマー」少佐ト「ロ
バートソン」大尉ノ指揮デ、其處ノ敵倉ニ病院ヲ
設ケマシタ。我々ハ殆ど一日甲兵處ニ居リマシタ
ガ、ソレカラ全隊ハ北方カラ丘陵地險ニ撤收シ
テ、ソコデ戦員ヲ續ケルモノト思ハレマシタ。軍
醫ノ一人ハ、部隊ト一緒ニ行ク衛生志願兵ヲ多數
選ビマシタガ、私モソレヲ志望シマシタ。我々ハ
二日間丘陵地帯ヲ歩キ、補給品ヲ運ンデ、バラ々
々ニナツテ進ンデ行キマシタガ、司令官ハ見ツカ
リマセンデシタ。ソコデ、我々ハナホ歩キ續ケマ
シタ。誰カガ、隊方ハ海岸ノ某地點カラ撤退シヨ
ウトシテキルノダトイフ聲ヲ立テマシタ。我々ハ
「アルダー」灣ノ沿岸ニ進シマシタ。我々ハ其處
ニ二日間居マシタ。多クノ者が足ヲ傷メテ居マシ
タガ、我々ノ中ノ二名ハ、彼等ト共ニ寝リ、我々
ハ無線機ガアルト思ハレテ居タ海岸ニ向ツテ、更
ニ進ンデ行キマシタ。私ハ其處迄行キ着カナイデ、
「トル」テ捕ヘラレマシタ。
裁判官「アナタガ「トル」ニ着イタ時、ドンナコ

Doc 5312

トが起リマシタカ。アナタハドウシテ捕ヘラレ
ルヤウニテツタカ、其後ドンナコトが起ツタカ、
ドウシテ逃レタカ、語ッテ下サイ。――
我々ハ丁度「ロス」農園ヲ起リ過ギテ、三ツノ
中ノ第一番目ノ河ノ岸デ、多数ノ者が、渡渉シ
ヨウトシテ居マシタ。我々が順番ヲ待ツテ居ル
ト、日本軍ノ舟艇五隻ガ湾内ニ入ツテ來テ、村
内ノ島嶼ニ對シ砲撃ト、機銃掃射ヲ始メマシ
タノデ、我々ハ渡渉出來ル地點迄河ヲ馳ケ上リ
マシタ。我々ハ遂ニ三ツノ河ヲ渡リマシタガ、
ソコノ敵會テハ「クリソルト」ト私ダケテシタ。
二隻ノ舟艇ガ差イテ、我々ハソコデ捕ヘラレマ
シタ。我々ハ舟艇ガ岸ニヤツテ來ルノヲ見ナカ
ツタノデス。ソレラノ舟艇ハ白砲ト機銃ト敵
會ニ砲ヲ込シテ來タノデ、我々ハ小川ニ飛込ミ
マシタ。日本兵ノ一隊ガ我々ノ川上ニ居テ、我
々ヲ引キ戻シ一隻ノ舟艇ニ乗セテ、更ニ南方ノ
我々が最初ニ行カウトシテキタ方向ニアルモワ
一ツノ農園ニ退レテ行キマシタ。彼等ガ岸ニ到
着シタ時ニハモウ暗カツタノデ、彼等ハ「トル」
ノ近クノ「ロス」農園ニ引返シマシタ。
舟艇ニハ、アナタ方ニ外ニ、涼洲人が乘
ツテ居マシタカ。――「トル」トイフ

Doc. 5312

4.

言が来ッテキマシタ。彼等ハ我々ヲ「トル」ノ
近クノ「ロス」農場テ上陸サセマシタ。
ソノ時迄、彼等ハアナタ方ヲ丁寧ニ取扱ヒマ
シタカ。――ハイ、可ナリ丁寧デシタ。
彼等ハ、アナタ方ニ食料ヲ供シマシタカ。――
――イ、エ、ダガ取替が自分ノ糧食ヲ我々ニ分
ケテ呉レマシタ。凍草ハ呉レマシタ。
彼等ハ、アナタ方「トル」ニ上陸サセタノデ
スカ。――サウデス。夜中デシタ。午前中
彼等ガ捕ヘタ前隊ハ全クソノ村ニ居リマシタ。我
々ハ約六十名ハイツテキタ小屋ニ入セラレマシ
タ。夜明ケ、彼等ハ我々ヲ逐レ出シ、右前ト番
隊ヲ紙片ニ聲ヲ取リマシタ。ソレカラ我々ヲ追
バセテ、我々ヲ取リ、「トル」ニ向ツテ行進サセ
マシタ。百二十三名居マシタ。日本人ハ英語ヲ
我々ヲ教ヘテ、モット居ル管ダト言ヒ、他ノ者
ハドワシタノカト尋ネマシタ。ソレカラ彼等ハ
全部ノ者ヲ、約一団陸レタ「トル」ニ行進サセ
マシタ。我々ハ「トル」テ燧ク標ヲ下シマシタ
ガ、ソレカラ彼等ハ我々ノ認識票ヲ取リ上ゲ、
一部ハ返シテ呉レマシタガ、ソレモ又取上ゲテ
仕舞ヒマシタ。ソツテ我々ノ私物、特給海ヲ全
部取リ上ゲ、両手ヲ紐手ニ縛ツタ上、十名カ十

Doc 5312

5

二名ヲ一組ニシテ我々ヲ案内シテ仕等ヒマシタ。
ソノ時更に数名ノ者がヤツテ來テ、優勝ニサレ
マシタ。日本人ハ我々ヲ「ラバウル」ノ方向ニ
向ツテ、農園ノ道ヲ行進サセマシタ。ソシテ組
々ガ道カラ外レテ森林中ニハイツテ行キマシタ。
ソレハ家カラドノ位離レテ居マシタカ。一
四分ノ一區位デシタ。
ソレハ何時ヲデシタカ。一一一午前十時頃デ
シタ。ソレカラ日本人ハ我々ニ指示ヲ下セト言ヒ
マシタ。各組ハソレゾレ異ツタ方向ニ行キマシ
タノデ、私ハ十二名ノ自分ノ組ヲケシカ見ルコ
トガデキマセンデシタ。一人ノ將校ガ、刀ヲ拔
イテ、一人ノ視目ヲ切り、其者ニ合圍シテ、森
林中ニ歩イテ行カセマシタ。將校ハ着剣シタ銃
ヲ以テ後カラツイテ行キマシタ。叫ビ聲ガ聞エ、
日本兵ガ彼ノ銃剣ヲ試ヒナガラ戻ツテ來マシタ。
更に二、三名ノ者が同様ノ目ニアヒマシタ。一
人が視目ヲ切ツテ、處ビ上リ、逃ゲヨウトシマ
シタガ、將校ガ刀ヲ斬リツケタ上、射撃シマシ
タ。一人ハ私ノ面前デ一撃ツテクレト申出デ
マシタ。スルト將校ハ自動拳銃ヲ彼ヲ撃チマシ
タ。「クリソルド」ハ腕ノ赤十字章ヲ示シナガ
ラ立テ上リ、第二ノ十衛生隊員デアルコトヲ將

Doc 5312

校ニ話サウトシマシタリ、彼ハソノ隨章ヲ刺キ
取ツテ、取り上げて仕舞ヒマシタ。

日本人ハ何か言ヒマシタカ。一一一イイエ、
私が最後ニ一人残サレマシタ。日本人ノ部隊ハ
叢林中ニ去ツテ、將校ヲ殺シマシタ。彼ハ刀
ヲ帶メ、屍ヲ執リマシタ。彼ハ私ニ立ツテ歩ク
様ニ合圖シマシタ。私が緩歩進ムト、彼ハ私ノ
肩ヲ撃チ抜キマシタ。私ハ地面ニ倒レ、ジツト
シテ居マシタ。彼ハ又撃チマシタ。ソレハ私ノ
兩手頸ト背中ニ當リマシタ。彼ハ私ヲヤツツケ
タト思ツテ、行ツテ仕舞ヒマシタ。私ハ約十五
分バカリ、動ケマセンテシタ。私ノ手頸ヲ撃チ
抜イタ彈丸ハ私ヲ縛ツテキタ。繩目ヲ切ツテ呉レ
マシタ。私ハ起キ上ツテ、叢林中ニ逃ゲ込ミマ
シタ。

アナタハ立去ル前ニ、仲間ノ屍ヲ見マシタ
カ。一一一私ハ地上ニ六石バカリノ仲間ノ屍
ヲ見マシタ。

日本人ハアタヲ殺テ獲ヒマシタカ。一一一
イイエ。

他ノ者達ノ中テ誰カ殺ハレテキマシタカ。一一一
一一一イイエ。地面ニ私がツテ居ルダケテシタ。

Doc 5312

私ハ立チ上ツテ、約一圓ホ下歩キ、丘陵地帯ノ
 麓ニアル大キナ叢林ニ遁入り込ンテ、其處テ數
 日留ツテ居マシタ。ソレカラ私ハ丘陵地帯ノ頂
 上ニ登リ、歩キ續ケテ、叢林ヲ通り、日本人ガ
 以前居テ、今ハ居ナクナツタ「ロス」農園ノ家
 ニ戻リマシタ。私ハ小産ニハイツテ、澤山ノバ
 ナヲ見ツケタノデ、二三日間ソコニ滞在シマ
 シタ。ソシテ何か役ニ立ツ器具ヲ探サウト思ツ
 テ、我々が身體被褥ヲサレタ場所ニ行ツテ見マ
 シタ。然シ總テハ塵脚シテアリマシタ。一ツノ
 小屋ニ、鏡ヲ刺サレタ二石ノ着ガ居リマシタ。

アナタハ海岸テ降伏シタ二十三名ノ一隊ニツ
 イテ、何か知ツテキマスカ。私ハソレヲ
 見マセンデシタ。然シ日本人ガ彼等ヲ他ノ者カ
 ラ別ケテ居ルノヲ見タコトガアリマス。
 日本人ガアナタ方ヲ並ベテ、數ヘタ時ニ、彼
 等ヲ別ケタノデスカ。日本人ガ我々ヲ「
 トル」農園ニ連れて行キ、認誠票ヲ取リ上ゲタ
 ノハ、降伏シタ者達ヲ見ツケル爲ダツタト思ヒ
 マス。日本人ハ、ソレヲノ者ヲ別ニシマシタ。

Doc 5312

ソレニツイテ、何か言ツテマシタカ。一一一
日本人ハソレニツイテ、議論シテキマシタ。又
遠洲人モ議論シテキマシタ。

ドウイフ議論デシタカ。一一一海岸ノ或處所
テ二十二名ガ投降シ、城ノドコカデ、更ニ二十
名ガ投降シタノデスガ、日本人ハ全部ガ同時ニ
降伏シタノ故ト思ツテ、ソノ處ニ議論シテキタ
イデス。日本人ハ納得シナイデ、二十二名シカ
居ナイト言ヒマシタ。彼等ハ二十二名ヲ他ノ若
カラ測ケマシタ。

アタクハ何か日本人ニ復讐行爲ヲサセル様ナ
事停又ハ幕柄ノ起ツタノヲ見タコトガアリマス
カ。一一一イエ。全然見タコトハアリマセン。
アタ方ガ存心ニナツテカラ逃走トカ何トカ、
誰カ抵抗シマシタカ。一一一日本人ガ我々ヲ獲
ヘテ、百二十三名シカ居ナイノデ、モツト居ル
答答ト言ツタ時以外、何もアリマセンデシタ。

然シ日本人ハ、彼等ガドウイフコトヲ考ヘテ
居ルカラアタ方ニ疑ラセル様ナ説明モ何モシ
ナカツクノデセウ。一一一何モシマセンデシタ。
アタクノ如クツテ居ル限リデハ、浮島ニナツテ

居ルカ
然シ日本人ハ、
彼等ガドウイフコトヲ考ヘテ
居ルカラアタ方ニ疑ラセル様ナ説明モ何モシ
ナカツクノデセウ。一一一何モシマセンデシタ。
アタクノ如クツテ居ル限リデハ、浮島ニナツテ

Dec 53/2

カラノ部隊ノ行動ハ、正當デ、當然ノ行動ヲト
ツクワケデスネ。――サウデス。私ニハ何故
アツナコトニナツクノカ分リマセン。

其ノホカ何カコテラノ參考ニナルヤウナコト
ハアリマセンカ。――「ホア――大佐ニ陳述
書ヲ出シタト思ヒマスガ。

アナタハ實際ニ誰カガ銃剣ヲ刺サレルトコロ
ヲ見タコトガアリマスカ。――ハイ。

全然殺害ニ遅レテ行カレズニデスカ。――
私ノスグソバニ届タ最後ノ二人タケテシタガ。

銃剣ヲ突キ刺シタ日本兵達ハ、サウスルヤウ
ニ命令サレタノダト思ヒマスガ。――私ハ一
度モ誰カガ命令スルノヲ聞イタコトハアリマセ
ン。

スベテ前以テ決メテアツタ様子デスネ。――
――サウデス。

N X 五七三陸三

W . D . コリンズ (署名)

右ハ真正ノ寫本ナルコトヲ證明ス。

濠洲軍陸軍中佐

T . P . モーノン (署名)

C. # 1854

Evidentiary Document # 5313

HUGH JOSEPH WEBSTER.

VX23821, PRIVATE HUGH JOSEPH WEBSTER, 2/22nd Battalion, D Company, being duly sworn, states:-

I am VX23821, Private Hugh Joseph Webster, 2/22nd Battalion, D Company.

I went to RABAU with the 2/22 Battalion and was there till after the Japanese landing.

After the Japanese landing the Company retired into the bush and I went with it, and I made my way down to the South Coast with other members of the Battalion.

We arrived in the vicinity of TOL about February the 3rd, in the late afternoon. There were eight in our party, all of the 2/22.

On arrival at TOL we set about trying to get some food. We got a sheep and a bit of corn and cooked it. We slept the night in a native hut in the TOL plantation. There were eight of us in the hut.

Next morning we ate for breakfast what food was left from the night before, and lay down again. There was a river ahead, and we were trying to organise a crossing of the river. While we were lying on the bunks there was a bit of a conction outside. We went out to have a look and looked out to sea and could see sampans out in the bay. We packed all our stuff in a hurry and went into the bush again. On the way to the bush we heard a type of mortar firing. We slept in the bush on the night of the 4th.

In the morning, it was our idea that the Japs would not stay long, so we posted two sentries to watch the Japs at the native huts. The sentries came rushing back and said a Japanese patrol was coming up. The patrol surrounded us and took us prisoners. We had picked up three more men by this time and were a party of eleven, and the only arms in the party was a revolver carried by Cpl. Walker. The Japs surrounded us and took us prisoner at about 9 or 10 in the morning. They made a search of the surrounding bush to see if there were any more and then took us to Japanese headquarters at WAITAVLO.

There was only our party at the Japanese headquarters at WAITAVLO at the time. There they gave us two sheets of paper. We had to sign our names and numbers twice. They took our identification discs from us and also all our personal belongings. Then they tied our hands behind our backs with rope and marched us just up behind WAITAVLO House, about 200 yards. There was a big group of Japanese at the Headquarters, cleaning machine guns and rifles and doing odd jobs and the Japanese that went with us behind WAITAVLO House numbered between 20 and 30.

There was a bit of cliff and they lined us up along that. They would not let us face them. We were not linked together. They then opened on us with rifles and light machine guns. I was wounded in the arm and side and fell down and lost consciousness.

5313

2.

H.J. Webster. (cont.)

I eventually recovered consciousness, and the Japs had gone. On recovering consciousness, I definitely saw the other ten of my mates lying there on the ground. I examined them and found that Private Walkley was still alive. I got him to his feet and he and I went down into a bit of a gully. We were there for about three days. We then decided to set off, and we went through the thick bush. Walkley was in pretty bad condition. I was going ahead and missed him. I came back to find him, sang out and looked for him, but I was not able to find him at all and I thought he must have died in the bush.

I then went on by myself. While going on by myself I had only gone a short distance when I came on a number of bodies of other victims. I could not say definitely the number but, on a rough estimate, there would be about eight or nine. They were covered with coconut fronds. They were definitely Australian troops. I did not see them sufficiently to identify them.

I was eventually picked up by a party with Col. Scanlon and ultimately came out on the south coast with Major Palmer and Major Owen. I made a quick recovery from my bullet wounds.

I did not see anything which might have given the Japanese any ground for attack on our party. We were an unarmed party as far as they were concerned. We even threw away the revolver before they came up.

There was a Japanese officer who spoke English. I did not see any officer with them dressed in Australian uniform. There were local natives working for the Japanese at the headquarters.

I have given the names of my party to Records.

The evidence is read over to the witness.

(Sgd.) HUGH J. WEBSTER.

Certified true copy.

T. F. Moran
.....Lieut. Col.
Australian Military Forces.

Doc 5313

証書告知第五三一三號

ヒユ一。デヨセフ。ウエブスター

第三〇三大隊、D中隊、VX二三、八二二號、「ヒユ一。デヨセフ。ウエブスター」兵卒ハ、正式直管ノ上、次ノ如ク以述ス。

私ハ第三〇三大隊、D中隊ノVX二三、八二二號、「ヒユ一。デヨセフ。ウエブスター」兵卒デアリマス。私ハ第三〇三大隊所屬デ「ラバウル」ニ行キ、日本軍ノ上陸迄同所ニ居リマシタ。

日本軍ノ上陸後、中隊ハ密林中ニ退却シ、私モ中隊ト行動ヲ共ニシ、ソレカラ大隊ノ者ト共ニ、南岸ヘ下リマシタ。

我々ハ、二月三日頃午後遅ク「トル」附近ニ到着シマシタ。我々ノ一行ハ八人デ、皆第三〇三大隊ノ者デアリマシタ。

「トル」ニ到着スルヤ、我々ハ食糧獲得ニ着手シマシタ。我々ハ羊ト少シ許リノ玉蜀黍ヲ手ニ入レ、ソレヲ料理シマシタ。我々ハ「トル」農園ノ原住民小屋デ其ノ夜ハ眠リマシタ。小屋ニハ我々八人が居ツタノテス。

翌朝、我々ハ昨夜食べ残シタ食物ヲ朝食ニシ、ソシテ再び横ニナリマシタ。前方ニ川ガアリ、我

Doc 5313

々ハソノ川ヲ渡ル工夫ヲシヨウトシマシタ。其
ニ積臥シテ居ルト、外テ少々騒ギガシマシタノテ
様子ヲ見ヨウト外へ出テ、海ノ方ヲ見渡シマスト、
海内ニ「サンバン」ガハツキリ眼ニ入りマシタ。
我々ハ急イテ一切ノ荷物ヲ「マトメ」ニシ、再ビ密
林中ニ入りマシタ。密林ニ赴ク途中デ、我々ハ白
穂ヲ撃ツタラシイ音ヲ聞キマシタ。我々ハ四日ノ
夜ハ、密林中テ眠リマシタ。
朝、日本軍ハ、長ク留ル事ハアルマイ、下考エ
テ、我々ハ原住民小屋ニキタ日本軍監視ノタメ、
二名ノ歩哨ヲ配置シマシタ。歩哨ハ走り戻ツテ來
テ、日本兵斥候隊ガヤツテ來ルト言イマシタ。其
ノ斥候ガ我々ヲ包圍シ、捕虜トシタノデアリマス。
此ノ時迄ニ、我々ハ、尙三人ヲ加エテ居マシタノ
デ、一行ハ十一人デアリマシタ。ソシテ我々一行
中ノ唯一ノ武器ハ「ウオーカー」伍長ノ携行スル
拳銃デアリマシタ。日本兵ハ我々ヲ包圍シ、其ノ
朝ノ九時カ十時頃、我々ヲ捕虜トシタノデアリマ
ス。彼等ハ、未ダ居リハセヌカラ訥ベルタメ、周
圍ノ密林ノ搜索ヲ行ヒ、然ル後、我々ヲ「ワイタ
ヴロー」ノ日本軍司令部ニ連行シマシタ。
其ノ時ニハ、「ワイタヴロー」ノ日本軍司令部ニ
ハ、我々一行ノミシカ居リマセンデシタ。其處デ
彼等ハ、我々ニ二枚ノ紙ヲ渡シマシタ。我々ハ我

Doc 5313

タノ行前ト番號ヲ二反右セネバナリマセシ
タ。彼等ハ我々カラ認識票ヲ奪ヒ、私物一切ヲ沒
收シマシタ。ソレカラ彼等ハ網テ、我々ヲ後手ニ
縛リ、「ワイタヴロー邸宅ノ向フ迄約二百ヤード
ヲ遠レテ行キマシタ。司令部ニハ日本兵ガ澤山居
リ、機銃ヤ小銃ヲ掃除シタリ、其他何ヤ彼ヤト
仕立ヲシテ居リ、我々ト一掃ニ「ワイタヴロー邸
宅ノ向フヘ來タ日本兵ハ、二十人カラ三十人ヲ數
エマシタ。

少シ絶壁ニナツタ所ガアリ、彼等ハソノ絶壁ニ
沿ツテ我々ヲ監列サセマシタ。彼等ハ我々ヲ彼等
ト向イ合セズ、我々ハ一掃ニ暴ガレハシマセンデ
シタ。ソレカラ彼等ハ、我々ニ對シテ、小銃ト輕
機銃ヲ發射シマシタ。私ハ胸ト背腹ニ負傷シテ倒
レ、意識ヲ失ヒマシタ。

私ハ終ニ意識ヲ回復シマシタ。日本兵ハ既に去
ツテ居リマシタ。意識ノ回復スルヤ、私ハ地上ニ
横タハツテキル他ノ十人ノ战友ヲハツキリト見マ
シタ。私ハ彼等ノ生死ヲ模ベマシタ。ソシテ「ウ
オークリール」兵卒ガ未ダ生キテキル事ヲ知リマシ
タ。私ハ彼ヲ立たセ、彼ト私ハ小サナ谷ニ下リマ
シタ。我々ハ三日許リ其處ニ居リマシタ。ソレカ
ラ我々ハ、去ラント決心シ、深イ密林ヘ入リマシ
タ。「ウオークリール」ノ隊ノ討子ハカナリ惡カツ

タノテス。私ハ先ニ立ツテ歩イテキル中ニ彼ヲ見
 失ヒマシタ。私ハ彼ヲ探シニ戻リ、大聲ヲ呼ビ、
 探シ求メマシタガ、遠ニ見付ケ出スコトガ出來ヌ。
 私ハ彼ガ密林中テ死ソタニ違イナイト思ヒマシタ。
 ソレカラハ私ハ只一人テ行キマシタ。只一人テ
 歩イテキル時、餘リ遠ク行カナイ中ニ、私ハ他ノ
 獵者ノ幾ツカノ死体ニ遭遇シマシタ。ハツキリ
 ト其ノ故ヲ言フ事ハ出來マセンガ、大體ノ見積リ
 テハ、八、九人デアリマシタ。其ノ死体ハ樺子ノ
 葉ヲ蔽ハレテアリマシタ。彼等ハ弱カニ「ホリス
 トラリ」ノ車ノ兵テシタ。私ハ彼等ヲ識別スルタ
 メニ充分ニ死体ヲ見マセンテシタ。私ハ終ニ「ス
 キヤン」ノ大佐ノ一隊ニ返ハレ、結局、「バル
 マ」少佐及ビ「ホリエン」少佐ト共ニ南岸ニ進
 リ着キマシタ。私ノ空ケタ弾薬ハ、遠カニ回復シ
 マシタ。
 私ハ、我々一行ヲ攻撃スル何カノ理由ヲ日本軍
 ニ與エタヨクナ事ハ一切知エマセンテシタ。我々
 ハ彼等ニ返ツテハ、非武裝偵察テシタ。我々ハ彼等
 ノ來ル以前ニ、攀籠サエ放棄シテシマツタノデス。
 英語ヲ話ヌ日本軍將校ガ居リマシタ。私ハ「ホ
 ー」トラリヤ「車」ノ衣服ヲ着タ將校ヲ、彼等ノ中
 一人モ見マセンテシタ。司令部隊ハ、日本軍ノ
 タメニ歸ラク地方原任民ガ居リマシタ。

4.

Doc 5313

Dec 5.3.13

私ハ、私ノ一行ノ姓名ヲ記録係リニ届ケマシタ。

記録係ニ對シテ詢問カセラレタリ。

ヒヨウ。J。ウエブスター (行長)

眞實ナル爲本ナルコトヲ証明ス

源が監事 中佐 T。F。モ一ネイン / 署名 /

5.

C. # 1855

Evidentiary Document No. 5400.

Lieut. WONG YO SIN of 200 Bn, 67 Div, Chinese National Army,
having been called on 16 Oct. 1945 and duly sworn, states:-

Pte CHOW KWONG PIT of my Battalion and Pte LONG MIN of my Battalion were killed by shooting by Japanese because they were too ill to work. They were shot by Pte SHIGEO and two Formosans, TAIWUN LIN YE and OHGABA YASI. All are from Jap Supplies Depot. This occurred in RABAU on 25 Jan 43. They were both shot at the same time.

These men with others had been confined in a small space in the ship's hold since leaving SHANGHAI. There was insufficient ventilation and the men became ill. On arrival at RABAU when all were disembarked, these two men were too sick to move and the Japanese immediately took them off the ship and shot them in the bush. I saw this happen. The shooting occurred two hours after we disembarked.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by him.

(Signed) WONG YO SIN

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, TIMOTHY MAK do hereby certify that this statement was made by Lieut WONG YO SIN in Chinese and after same had been written in English was read back to Witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of the Witness' evidence.

(Signed) TIMOTHY MAK
Timothy Mak

(Signed) A. A. McLennan Capt.
CA.T A. A. McLELLAN

Doc 5400

證據書類 第五四〇〇

中國國民軍第六七師團第二〇〇大隊ノ「ウオング・
 ヨウ・シン」中尉ハ一九四五年十月十六日ニ招致セ
 ラレ、正當ニ宣誓シテ、次ノ陳述ヲ爲ス。

私ノ大隊ノ兵「チヤウ・クオン、ピット」同ジク私ノ
 大隊ノ「ロンク、ミン」ハ病ガ重クテ働ケナリツ
 タノデ、日本兵ニ銃殺ニヨリ殺サレタ。ソノ二人
 ハ「シゲオ」ト言フ日本兵ト「タイウン・リン、キ」
 及ビ「オーガバ・ヤシ」ト言フ二人ノ臺灣人ニ射殺サ
 レタ。彼等ハ皆、日本軍補給支廠ノ兵デアル。此
 ノ事件ハ一九四三年一月廿五日「ラバウル」ニ於
 テ起ツタ。彼等ハ、共ニ同時ニ射殺サレタ。

此ノ二人ハ他ノ者ト一語ニ上海出港以來船倉ノ
 狭イ場所ニ閉ヂ込メラレテキタ。快氣ハ不充分デ
 人々ハ病氣ニナツタ。「ラバウル」ニ到着シ、全
 員ガ上陸サセラレタ時ニハ此ノ二人ハ具合ガ悪ク
 テ動く事ガ出来ナカツタ。日本兵ハ直チニ此ノ二
 人ヲ船カラ遠レ去ツテ叢ノ中デ射殺シタ。私ハ之
 レカ行ハレルノヲ見タ。射殺ハ我々ノ上陸二時間
 後ニ行ハレタ。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

C. # 1856

Confidential Document No 5401.

Major LEE WAI SIN of the 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army, having been called on 17 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:-

Private SO LIN SUNG
" SUI YOUNG CHEONG
" SIN SIT MING
" GOK TAI YEE
" CHAI SEE DOE
" YEE SUNG FING
" GO TAI YORE
" CHOW KUI SANG
" PAN YOUNG MING
" CHICK CHUI SUNG

The above mentioned names, members of 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army, were killed by shooting by Japanese because they were too ill to work. They were shot by Corporal AYIZAWA HARUSAKO and a Formosan, HAYASI HACHIMA both from Supplies Depot. This occurred in RABAUL Jan 29th 43. They were shot at the same time.

These men with others had been confined in a small space in the ship's hold since leaving SHANGHAI. There was insufficient ventilation and little to eat. These men became ill. On arrival at RABAUL when all were disembarked, the above mentioned men were too sick to move and had no strength to work for the Japs. They have no medical men to attend them, no medicines and little to eat. The Japs took them into the bush and shot them. I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by him.

(Signed) LEE WAI SIN
2 i/c

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, TIMOTHY MAK do hereby certify that this statement was made by Major LEE WAI SIN in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to Witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of the Witness' evidence.

(Signed) TIMOTHY MAK

(Signed) Capt. Lan Yet Chai.

C. # 1856

Confidential Document No 5401.

Major LEE WAI SIN of the 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army, having been called on 17 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:-

Private SO IIN SUNG
" SUI YOUNG CHEONG
" SIN SIT MING
" GOR TAI YEE
" CHAI SEE DOE
" YEE SUNG FING
" GO TAI YORE
" CHOW KUI SANG
" PAN YOUNG MING
" CHICK CHUI SUNG

The above mentioned names, members of 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army, were killed by shooting by Japanese because they were too ill to work. They were shot by Corporal AYIZAWA HARUSAKO and a Formosan, HAYASI HACHIMA both from Supplies Depot. This occurred in RABAUL Jan 29th 43. They were shot at the same time.

These men with others had been confined in a small space in the ship's hold since leaving SHANGHAI. There was insufficient ventilation and little to eat. These men became ill. On arrival at RABAUL when all were disembarked, the above mentioned men were too sick to move and had no strength to work for the Japs. They have no medical men to attend them, no medicines and little to eat. The Japs took them into the bush and shot them. I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by him.

(Signed) LEE WAI SIN
2 i/c

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, TIMOTHY MAK do hereby certify that this statement was made by Major LEE WAI SIN in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to Witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of the Witness' evidence.

(Signed) TIMOTHY MAK

(Signed) Capt. Lan Yet Chai.

Q # 1857

Evidentiary Document No. 5402.

Major LEE WAI SIN of the 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army, having been called on 18 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:

- Private CHEE YOKE LIN
- " LOOK SOON CHING
- " SING JEE MING
- Serjeant PUN CHAN MING
- 2nd.Ltd. CHAN KURE LING
- " PUN YEN JOONG

The above mentioned men, members of my formation, were killed by shooting by Japanese because they were too ill to work. They were shot by Corporal AYIZAWA HARU SAKO and a Formosan, TAKE HYASHI TSUKUICHI, both are from Supplies Depot. This occurred in RABAUL 4 Feb 43. They were shot at the same time.

These men with others had been confined in a small space in a ship's hold since leaving SHANGHAI. There was insufficient ventilation and little to eat. These men became ill. On arrival at RABAUL when all men were disembarked the above mentioned were too sick to move and had no strength to work for the Japs. They have no medical men to attend them, no medicines and very little to eat. The Japs took them into the bush and shot them.

I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by Witness.

(Signed) LEE WAI SIN
2 i/c.

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, TIMOTHY LAK do hereby certify that this statement was made by Major LEE WAI SIN in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to Witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of the Witness' evidence.

(Signed) TIMOTHY LAK

(Signed) Capt. LAN YET CHAI

Doc. 5402

證據書類第五〇二

一九四五年十月十八日召喚キト正當ニ控言シタル第三野戰義勇軍李
恩星少佐以下如ク陳述ス

兵卒	李耀林
	羅朱清
	辛吉明
軍曹	潘文明
少尉	張可明
	潘英華

私隊隊員ヲル前記者ニ病氣ガ重クテ働ケヌトイフ理由ニ日本
兵ニ射殺セラル。彼等ニ英ニ補給支廠員テトルアサワルサ己佐長
及ビ台湾人ヲ名付シルイケニ射殺セラル。之ニ一九四三年二月四日
「ソウル」テ起ケタテタル。彼等ニ同時ニ射殺セラル。
此者達ニ他者ト共ニ上海ニ發以來船艙内ニ狭イ處ニ閉ジ込
ラレタタ。換氣ハ不十分テリ食料ハ少クカワ。此者達ニ病氣ニ
成ラ「ソウル」ニ到着ニ全員ガ上陸ス時前記者達ニ病氣ガ
重クテ動ク事ガ出来ズ日本兵ニ働カガカワ。
彼等ニ看護ニモラテ醫者モ無ク藥モ無ク食物ハ非常ニ少クカワ。
日本兵達ニ彼等ヲ數々達ニテ射殺ス。私ニ行ハルヲ見タ。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Q # 185-7

Evidentiary Document No. 5402.

Major LEE WAI SIN of the 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army, having been called on 18 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:

Private CHEE YOKE LIN
" LOOK SOON CHING
" SING JEE MING
Serjeant PUN CHAN MING
2nd.Ltd. CHAN KURE LING
" PUN YEN JOONG

The above mentioned men, members of my formation, were killed by shooting by Japanese because they were too ill to work. They were shot by Corporal AYIZAWA HARU SAKO and a Formosan, TAKE HYASHI TSUKUICHI, both are from Supplies Depot. This occurred in RABAUL 4 Feb 43. They were shot at the same time.

These men with others had been confined in a small space in a ship's hold since leaving SHANGHAI. There was insufficient ventilation and little to eat. These men became ill. On arrival at RABAUL when all men were disembarked the above mentioned were too sick to move and had no strength to work for the Japs. They have no medical men to attend them, no medicines and very little to eat. The Japs took them into the bush and shot them.

I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by Witness.

(Signed) LEE WAI SIN
2 i/c.

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, TIMOTHY LAK do hereby certify that this statement was made by Major LEE WAI SIN in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to Witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of the Witness' evidence.

(Signed) TIMOTHY LAK

(Signed) Capt. LAN YET CHAI

Doc ~ 5402

證據書類第百四三

一九四五年十月十八日召喚之正當^並拉^並言^並之^並第三野戰義勇軍李
惠星少佐^並沈^並如^並陳^並遜^並

兵 年	李 耀 林
軍 營	羅 宋 清
少 尉	辛 吉 明
	張 可 明
	潘 英 學

私隊隊員^並前記者^並病氣^並重^並テ^並働^並ク^並ス^並ト^並イ^並フ^並理^並由^並ニ^並日^並本^並
 兵^並ニ^並射^並殺^並セ^並リ^並タ^並。彼等^並、兵^並ニ^並補^並給^並ス^並ル^並支^並隊^並員^並テ^並ル^並ア^並イ^並サ^並ワ^並ル^並サ^並己^並位^並長^並
 及^並七^並台^並灣^並人^並ノ^並多^並ク^並シ^並ル^並ト^並イ^並フ^並ニ^並射^並殺^並セ^並リ^並タ^並。之^並、一^並九^並四^並三^並年^並二^並月^並四^並日^並
 フ^並シ^並ル^並テ^並起^並ク^並タ^並テ^並ル^並。彼等^並、同^並時^並ニ^並射^並殺^並セ^並リ^並タ^並。
 此^並、者^並達^並、他^並、者^並ト^並共^並ニ^並上^並海^並ニ^並去^並リ^並テ^並、船^並倉^並内^並、狭^並イ^並處^並ニ^並閉^並ジ^並込^並テ^並、
 此^並、者^並達^並、病^並氣^並ニ^並シ^並テ^並、換^並氣^並、不^並十^並分^並テ^並リ^並、食^並料^並、少^並ク^並カ^並ツ^並タ^並。此^並、者^並達^並、病^並氣^並ニ^並
 成^並リ^並テ^並、ラ^並フ^並ニ^並到^並着^並、全^並員^並カ^並上^並陸^並ニ^並シ^並タ^並時^並、前^並記^並、者^並達^並、病^並氣^並カ^並
 重^並ク^並テ^並働^並ク^並事^並カ^並出^並来^並テ^並日^並本^並兵^並、為^並ニ^並働^並ク^並力^並カ^並ツ^並タ^並。
 彼等^並、看^並護^並ス^並ル^並ニ^並モ^並ラ^並ズ^並、醫^並者^並モ^並無^並ク^並、菜^並モ^並無^並ク^並、食^並物^並、非^並常^並ニ^並少^並ク^並カ^並ツ^並タ^並。
 日^並本^並兵^並達^並、彼等^並ヲ^並數^並々^並ニ^並射^並殺^並シ^並タ^並。私^並、之^並カ^並行^並ハ^並ル^並ヲ^並見^並タ^並。

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO ROOM 361

C. # 1858

Evidentiary Document No. 5393.

Page 1.

EXHIBIT "A"

E.C. LILLIKIN Major

President

10 April, 1946.

LIU WEI PAO being duly sworn is examined by the Prosecutor through interpreter J.S.R. Ferguson.

My full name and rank is Liu Wei Pao. I am a Capt. in the Chinese National Army. I came to Rabaul in 1943. It was in Jan. 1943. I was a POW controlled by the Japanese Army. I was living in Rabaul on 3rd. March 43. I know all of the men referred to as deceased in charge one. All these men were soldiers in the Chinese National Army. All these men were POW the same as myself. I last saw those men on 3rd. March 43. I know a Japanese named Matsushima. On the first day we arrived in Rabaul I met Matsushima. I can now see the man referred to as Matsushima (witness indicates accused Matsushima) I know a Japanese Ayizawa. I can now see him. (witness indicates accused Ayizawa). Those two men are members of a Japanese Supply Depot. I know a Formosan named Hayasi. I can now see him. (witness indicates accused Hayasi) I know a man called Okabayashi (witness indicates accused Okabayashi). I know a man named Kiohara (witness indicates accused Kiohara) I know a man named Yanagawa. (witness indicates accused Yanagawa) I know a Formosan known as Shimura. (witness indicates accused Shimura) I know a Formosan known as Furuya. (witness indicates accused Wakabayashi) Witness points to each accused and identifies each by name. On 3rd. March 43 at about 8 o'clock I remember a Japanese truck coming into our camp. When the truck arrived in our camp area, Japanese and Formosans got down from the truck. There were approximately 14 in the truck, seven of whom would be Japanese and 7 Formosans. Those men came across to our living quarters. With me in the living quarters was Major Lee and Lt. Wong. All these accused were among the fourteen men. Ayizawa said to Major Lee and Lt. Wong and myself "Come with us to where the sick Chinese are." We three Chinese officers did as we were instructed. Each of the accused in court were with the party including us three Chinese officers which went to the place where the sick men were. Ayizawa instructed me to detail eight Chinese proceed to the mountain and dig a pit. I went with the eight Chinese soldiers and supervised the digging of the pit. After the Chinese had dug a very large pit I returned to our quarters and reported to Ayizawa. When I came back and reported to Ayizawa, Major Lee and Lt. Wong were with me. Ayizawa was at our quarters at this time. The party including the three Chinese officers as well as Ayizawa and each of the accused in Court together with a few others went to the sick Chinese quarters. The other few whom I referred to were a few of our own Chinese troops who were working around the area. Ayizawa instructed all the sick Chinese to get outside the sick quarters. He then proceeded to count them and counted 26. Ayizawa left the party for a few minutes and went in the direction

of his quarters. By quarters I mean in the direction of the building which the Japanese occupied when they were on duty. Within a few minutes he returned with two rifles and two pistols. He had the assistance of a Formosan to bring back these weapons. Ayizawa then instructed Major Lee to have each of the sick men taken to the mountain. When we had completed approximately half the journey to the pit, two Chinese soldiers ran away. Chiu Youn Sie and Fie Din Youn were the two men who ran away. I know these two men because they are at present living with us. These two men were among the 26 who were counted outside the sick quarters. To my memory they were suffering from Malaria. Two of the sick people were carried on the backs of others because of ulcers on the feet. The remaining 24 including the two that escaped went on foot. Major Lee and Lt. Wong were with me together with this party when we arrived at the hole. I know: Pte DOU CHIN CHUA, Pte Woo Shi Chan, Pte WIK VIE TSUN, Pte LO CHEE SUN, Pte FUO LAE KIN, Pte LOU SUN FONA, Pte CHUN SUE GEN, Pte WONG SUN TOI, Pte FONG WEI SIE, Pte LIU PAO SUN, Cpl TSON VIN LING. The men to whom I referred were all at the pit at this time. Each of the accused were present at the pit. Ayizawa instructed the sick Chinese to go into the hole. At this time Major Lee and Lt. Wong were standing a few feet from the mouth of the hole.

Upon receiving instructions to get into the hole the Chinese refused to do so. They were then set upon by the whole party and using their hands and sticks and their boots and also with the butts of the two rifles were forced into the hole. The injuries to the sick people were extreme. Blood was flowing very freely from several ugly wounds inflicted by the kickings and punchings and one man's head had a large wound. The man who inflicted the large wound in the man's head was the accused. Okabayashi. At this time Okabayashi was using a stick. Ayizawa fired several shots into the hole and then four of the accused took the two rifles and the two pistols and together the four of them shot into the hole. The guns were then handed over to the other accused who then shot into the hole. Each group fired several rounds into the hole. I was a witness together with the other two Chinese officers of all this and when it was apparent that each of the twenty-four men were dead Ayizawa said "Each of you (referring to the Japanese and Formosan party) may have another shot." Each of the accused did as was suggested. Ayizawa was the last in the party to shoot with the pistol, instructed us to fill in the hole and told the party to return to camp. I looked into the hole and whilst there were a few quiverings among the deceased, it was evidence that each one was dead. We waited until these quiverings had ceased. We then filled in the hole. After we filled in the hole the Chinese who were in the party paid our last respects to the deceased and returned to camp.

On 11th March, 1943, in the morning a Japanese truck pulled up outside our quarters and a number of Japanese and Formosans left the truck. I heard Ayizawa give instructions for the day's work. Ayizawa said to Major Lee, Lt. Wong and I,

"We want to see the sick troops." Ayizawa and some of his party together with Major Lee Lt. Wong and myself went to the sick quarters of the Chinese troops. There were ten people lying ill in the hut. Ayizawa said "Send a Chinese working party out to the mountain to prepare a pit." Lt. Wong and I went with the working party. Major Lee remained behind. Ayizawa went with the working party. There were other Japanese and Formosans who sent with the working party. When the hole was quite large Ayizawa instructed the Formosans to return to the camp. Ayizawa instructed the Formosans to return to camp and escort the ten sick Chinese to the hole. Each of the Formosan party returned bringing with them only six of the ten sick men. I know each of: Pte TAI TSU WU, Pte CHUN MEI SUN, Pte KUO DJEM DEI, Pte WONG HONG QUE, Pte TSUN SIE SUNG, Pte HONG LIANG CHUI. The six men who I have mentioned were the men who were escorted by the Formosans to the hole. Each of these men were Privates in the Chinese National Army. These men were captured in China by the Japanese and were brought to Rabaul by them. There were seven Japanese at the pit. There are two Japanese who were in that party present in court today. One is called Ayizawa and the other is Matsushima. Each of the accused in Court today were present at the hole on 11th March, 1943. When the Formosans returned escorting the Chinese soldiers they were carrying with them two Japanese rifles and two pistols. Ayizawa instructed the six men to get into the pit. The six sick Chinese tried to break away and the Formosans and party set upon them with sticks and with the assistance of hands and feet forced them into the pit. Four of the accused then stepped forward in line and shot with their rifles and pistols. After firing several rounds handed the weapons over to the other accused who also fired into the pit. Ayizawa then took the pistol and firing several rounds into the pit instructed us to fill in the hole. I was standing a few feet from the mouth of the pit together with Major Lee and Lt. Wong and saw each of the six men were dead. We filled in the hole and paid our respects and returned to camp. On returning to camp Ayizawa came to Major Lee and said, "Where are the other four." Major Lee replied, "I do not know where they are." Ayizawa then said "If you do not find these four men I will shoot you." The next morning with two Chinese soldiers we set out in search of the four missing soldiers. After searching for several hours we came upon one named Lee Lo Youn hanging from a tree. On the 15th March with some Chinese soldiers I set out for a further search for the missing men. We found the three men near to each other hanging from a tree. Among the three was a Chinese and two Privates. The Lt's name was Ching Hei Pen, and the two soldiers were named Chin Yee Pu and the third Youn Ying Tsu. On the person of Lt. Ching I found a letter addressed to Col Woo Yien.

At first opportunity I gave this letter to Col Woo Yien. The letter was burnt by myself for fear of it falling into the hands of the Japanese. Col Woo Yien was with me when I burnt the letter. The gist of the letter was "We cannot understand the Japanese. We four have talked the matter over as to whether we should return, but as we know we shall be killed we feel it better to hang ourselves." The twenty four men named in the first charge are the twenty four men whom I saw shot in the pit and buried.

I CERTIFY that the foregoing is a true copy of a sworn statement made by Capt LIU WEI PAO tendered, read to him, admitted in evidence, marked Exhibit "A", signed by the President and annexed to the proceedings of a Military Court on the trial of Sgt. MATSUSHIMA Tozaburo and others held at RABAU on 10/16 April, 1946.

(Signed) A. F. Scott Capt.
Officer having the custody of the
Original proceedings.

Doc 5390

機事長

一九四三年三月三日

「リウウ、少少、少少」ニ成ニ置書ニ「私、人、又、下、一、此、下、一、製、

通、訊、今、之、機、事、一、做、リ、テ、評、同、サ、ル、カ、
私、姓、名、及、階、級、ハ、リ、ウ、ウ、カ、ヲ、八、ケ、中、國、國、民、軍、ト、大、隊、長、ト、
私、九、四、三、年、三、月、三、日、ニ、奉、命、監、守、一、月、ヲ、私、日、軍、管、理、

停、務、テ、マ、シ、タ、私、九、四、三、年、三、月、三、日、ニ、奉、命、一、此、ニ、任、命、シ、タ、
私、一、地、許、禁、ニ、依、リ、テ、死、亡、セ、ル、者、ヲ、全、部、知、リ、居、ル、後、年、終、國、
際、學、生、旅、行、人、等、ニ、對、シ、テ、最、後、三、見、タ、

ハ、一、九、四、三、年、三、月、三、日、ヲ、以、テ、私、松、島、(N) 音、認、以、下、同、類、
云、フ、日、本、人、ヲ、知、リ、居、ル、我、等、ガ、ソ、レ、ノ、到、着、シ、テ、最、初、日、
私、松、島、ニ、會、シ、タ、私、島、ト、言、ハ、ル、人、ヲ、現、在、見、合、ケ、ル、者、ガ、

出、来、ル、(証、人、ハ、被、告、松、島、ヲ、指、示、ス、ル) 和、相、澤、ト、ル、日、本、人、
知、リ、居、ル、私、唯、今、被、告、ヲ、見、合、ケ、ル、者、ガ、出、来、ル、証、人、ハ、被、告、
相、澤、ヲ、指、示、ス、ル) 彼、等、三、人、ハ、日、本、軍、兵、站、部、勤、務、員、ト、

ア、シ、タ、私、林、ト、云、フ、台、灣、人、ヲ、知、リ、居、ル、私、今、被、告、判、別、
ス、ル、者、ガ、出、来、ル、(証、人、ハ、被、告、林、ヲ、指、示、ス、ル) 和、岡、村、ト、云、フ、
人、ヲ、知、リ、居、ル、(証、人、ハ、被、告、岡、村、ヲ、指、示、ス、ル) 和、清、原、ト、云、フ、

人、ヲ、知、リ、居、ル、(証、人、ハ、被、告、清、原、ヲ、指、示、ス、ル) 和、柳、川、ト、云、フ、
人、ヲ、知、リ、居、ル、(証、人、ハ、被、告、柳、川、ヲ、指、示、ス、ル) 和、志、村、ト、
シ、テ、知、ラ、レ、テ、居、ル、台、灣、人、ヲ、知、リ、居、ル、(証、人、ハ、被、告、志、村、ヲ、

指、示、ス、ル) 和、石、屋、ト、云、フ、台、灣、人、ヲ、知、リ、居、ル、(証、人、ハ、被、告、
高、林、ヲ、指、示、ス) 証、人、ハ、各、被、告、ヲ、指、シ、姓、名、依、リ、テ、同、人、ト、シ、テ、
ヲ、認、定、シ、タ、一、九、四、三、年、三、月、三、日、八、時、頃、日、本、人、ト、云、フ、者、ガ、

我、等、收、容、所、ニ、這、入、リ、テ、来、タ、ヲ、覺、テ、居、ル、「ト、ラ、ウ、ク」ガ、
我、等、收、容、所、地、域、ニ、到、着、ス、ル、ト、日、本、人、ト、台、灣、人、ガ、ソ、レ、ノ、上、下、ノ、
カ、ヲ、下、リ、タ、「ト、ラ、ウ、ク」ニ、ハ、約、十、四、名、ガ、集、ム、ヲ、居、ル、其、内、

七、名、ガ、日、本、人、ト、シ、テ、七、名、ガ、台、灣、人、ト、シ、カ、シ、タ、此、等、ハ、我、等、ノ、
宿、舎、ニ、来、タ、宿、舎、ニ、私、ト、共、ニ、奉、命、少、佐、ト、シ、テ、中、隊、長、ト、シ、
テ、住、ミ、居、ル、此、等、被、告、全、部、共、十、四、名、ノ、中、ニ、居、ル、

No. 1

Doc 5393

福澤、李少佐、ウオシ中尉及私ニ病氣、中國人、居ル
 所（我等ト一緒ニ来ント云ク。我等三人、中國將校ハ
 命セラシクヤウニシツク。法廷ニ於ケル各被害ハ病人、
 居多場所ニシツク我等三人、中國軍將校ヲ舍テ一團ト共ニ
 居ル。相沢ハ一人、中國人ヲ出シ山ニ穴ヲ掘ラセヨト私ニ
 命ジク。私ハ一人、中國軍兵士ト共ニ約キ穴掘リ作業ヲ
 監視シク。中國人が非常ニ大キテ穴ヲ掘ツク後、私私達、
 宿舎ニ歸リ相沢ニ其旨ヲ報告シク。私が歸リ、相沢ニ報告
 シク時、李少佐ト、ウオシ中尉ハ私ト共ニ居ル。其時相沢ハ
 我等、部屋ニ居ル。三人、中國軍將校ト相沢及法廷、各
 被害ト其他數一團ハ病氣、中國人宿舎ニシツク。
 其他數名ト云ツク人達ハ收容所、附近ニ労働シテ居ル
 我が中國人部隊、者達テアツク。相沢ハ病人全部ニ
 病室ヲ出ルヤウニ命ジク。ソシテ相沢ハ病人ヲ算ヘ始メ
 千六名ヲ算ヘク。相沢ハ數分間一團ヨリ病シテ彼、宿舎
 一方向ニシツク。宿舎トハ日本人が勤務中使スル建物
 ノアル方向ト云フ意味ナシ。數分間後彼ハ二ツ、小銃ト
 二ツ、拳銃ヲ持ツテ歸ツテ来ク。彼ハ台湾人、助手ニ
 此等、武器ヲ運バセテ来ク。ソシテ相沢ハ李少佐ニ各
 病人ヲ少ク方ヘ運シテ約クヤウニ命ジク。我等が穴ハ
 約半分、道程ヲ終ヘク時二人、中國兵士ガ逃去シク。
 「チウ、エン、スイ、ト、ロ、イ、ダイ、ニン、シ」ガ逃去シク三人、者ガ
 以テ。此三人、者ハ現在我等ト共ニ生活シテ居ルハ私ハ
 知ツテ居ル。此三人ハ病室、外ヲ算ヘラレク千六名ノ中、
 者テアツク。私ハ記憶テハ彼等ハ「マ、リ、ヤ、患、者、ヲ、ツク。
 又、病人ハ是部、潰瘍ヲ他人ニ背負ルテ運バレク。
 逃去シク三人ヲ舍テ残り、二十四名ハ徒勞ヲシツク。一行が穴ニ
 到着シク時李少佐ウオシ中尉ハ私ト一緒ニ此一行ニ居ル。
 私ハ次、人々ヲ知ツテ居ル「ドウ、チン、ケ、ア、兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ
 兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ、ウ、シ、兵、卒、〇、兵、又、之、兵、卒、ヲ、来、テ、キ、シ
 兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ、兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ、兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ、兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ
 兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ、兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ、兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ、兵、卒、ウ、シ、セ、シ

Doc 5393

伍長以上名ヲ擧ゲタルハ皆此時穴ノ跡ニ居タ。 相沢ハ

各被告モ穴ノ跡ニ居タ。 病氣ノ中國人ニ穴ニ這入ルヤウニ命シタ。 此時李少佐

ウオン中尉ハ穴ノ口ヨリ数呎ノ処ニ立ツテ居タ。 中國人ハ穴ニ入ルト命ヲ受ケタ時、之ヲ拒絶シマシタ。

ソレデ彼等ハ一團ノ者全部ヲ攻撃サレ、彼等ノ手、棒

長靴ヤ又銃床デ穴ノ中ニ号理ニ追ヒ込マレタ。 病人、

受ケタ傷ハ極端ナルモデアツタ。 打タレ蹴ラレテ生ジタ

數個ノ醜イ傷カラ血ハ流レ方題ニ流レ一人ハ頭ニ大キキ傷ヲ

受ケケタ。 其人ノ頭ニ大キキ傷ヲ與ヘタ人ハ被告岡林テ

アル。 此時岡林ハ棒ヲ用ヒテキタ。 相沢ハ穴ニ向ケテ數回

発砲シタ。 ソレカラ四名ノ被告ハニツノ小銃トニツノ拳銃ヲ

取リ上ゲ彼等ノ四名共ニ穴ノ中ニ発射シタ。 銃ハソレカラ

他ノ被告ニ手渡サレ、ソレカラ彼等ハ穴中へ発砲シタ。

ドノ組モ穴ノ中ニ數発発射シタ。 私ハ他ノ三人ノ中國將校

ト共ニ此ノ事ヲ終始目撃シタ。 二十四名ノ各人が死シタ

事ガ略明ラカニ解ツタ時、相沢ハ君達ハ日本人ト台湾

20.3

人ノ一團ヲ指ス。 各自モウ一発射ツテ宜シト云ツタ。 各被告ハ云ハレタヤウニ射ツタ。 相沢ハ拳銃デ一同ノ最

後ニ発射シタ。 ソシテ我々ニ穴ヲ埋メルヤウニソシテ

一紗ニ收容跡ニ歸ルヤウニ命シタ。 私ハ穴ヲ覗キ込シタ。

ソシテ死者ノ由ニハ數人ノ標ヘテ居ル者モ有ツタ。 各人が

死ニシタニトハ確カデアツタ。 我等ハ標ヘガ止ル迄待ツタ。 ソレカラ我等ハ穴ヲ埋メタ。 穴ヲ埋メタ後、一紗ノ中國人ハ

死者ニ最後ノ敬意ヲ表シ收容跡ニ歸ツタ。 一九四三年三月十一日朝、日本トトラツクガ我等ノ宿舎ノ

外側ニ乘附ラレ、多數ノ日本人ト台湾人ガトラツクカテ降

リタ。 私ハ相沢ガソノ日ノ使者ニ対スル命令ヲ受ヘルヲ聞

イタ。 相沢ハ李少佐、ウオン中尉及私ニ、我等ハ患者兵ヲ

見タイト云ツタ。

伍長以上名ヲ擧ゲタルハ皆此時穴ノ跡ニ居タ。

相沢ハ

各被告モ穴ノ跡ニ居タ。病氣ノ中國人ニ穴ニ這入ルヤウニ命ジタ。此時李少佐

ウオン中尉ハ穴ノ口ヨリ數呎ノ処ニ立ツテ居タ。中國人ハ穴ニ入ルト命ヲ受ケタ時、之ヲ拒絶シマシタ。

ソレデ彼等ハ一團ノ者全部ヲ攻撃サレ、彼等ノ手槍長靴ヤ又銃床穴ノ中ニ考理ニ追ヒ込マレタ。病人、

受ケタ傷ハ極端ナルモ、テアツタ。打タレ蹴ラレテ生ジタ數個ノ醜イ傷ヲ血ハ流レ方題ニ流レ一人ハ頭ニ大キナ傷ヲ

受ケタ。其ノ人ノ頭ニ大キナ傷ヲ與ヘタ人ハ被告岡林テアル。此時岡林ハ棒ヲ用ヒテキタ。相沢ハ穴ニ向ケテ數回

発砲シタ。ソレカラ四名ノ被告ハニツノ小銃トニツノ拳銃ヲ取リ上ゲ彼等ノ四名共ニ穴ノ中ニ発射シタ。銃ハソレカラ

他ノ被告ニ手渡サレ、ソレカラ彼等ハ穴中へ発砲シタ。ドノ組モ穴中ニ數發発射シタ。私ハ他ノ二人ノ中國將校

ト共ニ此ノ事ヲ終始目撃シタ。二十四名ノ各人が死シタ。事ガ略明ラカニ解ツタ時、相沢ハ「君達ハ日本人ト台湾

人ノ一團ヲ指ス」各自モウ一發射ツテ宜シト云ツタ。各被告ハ云ハレタヤウニ射ツタ。相沢ハ拳銃デ一同ノ最

後ニ発射シタ。ソシテ我々ニ穴ヲ埋メルヤウミ、ソシテ一發ニ收容跡ニ歸ルヤウニ命ジタ。私ハ穴ヲ覗キ込シタ。

ソシテ死者ノ中ニハ數人ノ標ヘテ居ル者モ有ツタ。各人が死ニシタコトハ確カデアツタ。我等ハ標ヘガ止マル迄待ツタ。

ソレカラ我等ハ穴ヲ埋メタ。穴ヲ埋メタ後、一發ノ中國人ハ死者ニ最後ノ敬意ヲ表シ收容跡ニ歸ツタ。

一九四三年三月十一日朝、日本ノトラウクガ我等ノ宿舎ノ外側ニ乗附ラレ、多數ノ日本人ト台湾人ガ「トリス」カラ降

リタ。私ハ相沢ガソノ日ノ任事ニ対スル命令ヲ受ヘルヲ厚イカニ相沢ハ李少佐、ウオン中尉及私ニ「我等ハ患者兵ヲ

見タイト云ツタ。

Doc 5393

相澤及彼一行、数名者、李少佐、ウラノ中尉及林一等
 中國軍部隊、柄標、行方。十名、思惟、病、于、山、中、三
 身ヲ横、テ、ナク。相澤、ハ、中國人、使、役、隊、ヲ、出、シ、山、穴、ヲ
 用意、セ、シ、ト、云、フ。ウラノ中尉、ト、私、使、役、隊、ハ、附、テ、行、ク。
 李少佐、ハ、後、三、殘、ツ、タ。相澤、ハ、使、役、隊、ト、一、編、二、行、ツ、タ。他、ノ、日、本
 人、ト、台灣人、カ、使、役、隊、ト、共、ニ、行、ツ、タ。
 穴、ヲ、入、リ、テ、時、相澤、ハ、台灣人、達、ヲ、收容、所、ニ、帰、ル、ヲ、命、
 ジ、タ。相澤、ハ、台灣人、達、ニ、收容、所、ニ、帰、リ、十、名、病、兵、附、添
 ヲ、穴、前、ニ、来、ル、ヲ、命、ジ、タ。各、台灣人、達、ハ、帰、リ、十、名、病、兵
 ノ、内、僅、カ、六、名、ヲ、運、テ、来、タ。其、以下、各人、ヲ、知、リ、居、ル。
 「ア、以、ウ、兵、卒、」
 「ウ、ボ、ン、五、兵、卒、」
 「カ、名、ヲ、舉、テ、病、氣、」
 六、名、台灣人、達、ニ、從、テ、
 来、タ、人、達、テ、ア、ツ、ク。彼等、ハ、皆、中國、之、民、軍、
 兵、卒、ヲ、テ、リ、タ。彼等、ハ、中國、ニ、於、テ、日本、軍、ノ、倍、虐、
 ト、テ、リ、日本、軍、ヨ、リ、テ、ア、リ、ル、ニ、連、テ、来、リ、タ、
 テ、ア、ツ、ク。穴、側、六、七、名、日、本、人
 ガ、居、タ、。其、ノ、一、行、中、三、居、タ、日、本、人、
 中、三、ハ、今日、法、廷、ニ、頭、シ、テ、居、ル。
 一、ハ、相澤、ト、云、ヒ、他、ノ、人、ハ、松、島、ト、云、フ。
 今日、法、廷、ノ、向、被、告、ハ、一九四三年三月十日、穴、
 傍、ニ、居、タ。台灣人、達、ガ、中國、
 軍、兵、卒、ニ、附、テ、添、テ、來、リ、タ、時、
 彼等、ハ、二、挺、ノ、日本、小、銃、ト、二、挺、
 ノ、拳、銃、ヲ、携、テ、居、タ。相澤、ハ、六、名、
 者、ニ、穴、ニ、這、入、ル、ヲ、命、ジ、タ。六、名、
 病、氣、ノ、中國人、ハ、逃、ル、ヲ、試、シ、
 テ、台灣人、ハ、一、行、ハ、破、リ、以、テ、追、テ、
 這、リ、達、ニ、掛、リ、テ、足、力、ヲ、役、隊、
 ヲ、穴、ノ、中、ハ、追、テ、達、シ、タ。被告、
 四、名、ハ、列、テ、踏、ミ、出、テ、小、銃、
 ト、拳、銃、ヲ、發、射、シ、タ。數、発、ヲ、發、射、シ、
 テ、武器、(他、ノ、被告、ニ、渡、
 リ、シ、) 彼等、亦、穴、ノ、中、ハ、發、砲、
 シ、タ。以、テ、相澤、ハ、拳、銃、ヲ、
 取、リ、數、發、ヲ、穴、ノ、中、ハ、發、射、
 シ、タ。私、達、三、穴、ヲ、埋、テ、テ、ア、リ、
 之、ハ、附、テ、居、タ。私、ハ、李少佐、ト、
 ウラノ中尉、ト、共、ニ、穴、ノ、口、ヲ、
 敷、吹、離、テ、地、裏、ニ、立、ツ、テ、居、
 タ、以、テ、六、名、者、ガ、各、死、シ、テ、
 見、タ。我、等、ハ、穴、ヲ、掘、テ、
 敬意、ヲ、表、シ、テ、收容、所、
 ニ、帰、リ、タ。

164

Doc 5393

知事と上登夕。...
 了其六俺若新殺...
 下我等八行衛不...
 搜夕後李甲...
 三月十五日...
 更ニ捜索スル...
 本ニ首ヲ...
 二人ノ兵...
 姓名ハ...
 中尉ノ...
 見夕、私ハ...
 夕。其手...
 字、...
 手...
 不可能...
 此...
 是...
 私...
 私ハ...
 宣誓...
 聞...
 ニ依リ...
 ニ於テ...
 ニ於テ...

No 5

(署名) 「工、工、スニツト」大尉
 調書原本、保管將校

Doc 5393

紙又上卷之。人々其時、若し
了て公庵君射殺之。其時、
ト我軍ハ行衛不詳、四人者、機度
搜之、後、本中、及之、若し、
三月十五日、秘他、殺名、中國人、
更ニ搜索スル、名、
本ニ首ヲ印シテ居ルヲ登見シ。三人、
二人ハ兵卒ナリ。中尉ノ名ハ、
姓名ハ、
「之ニ中尉、身体ハ、
見シ。私ハ最初、機會ニ其手ヲ
之。其手ヲ八日、本人、
「之ニ中尉、私ハ其手ヲ
手ヲ、概要ハ、
不可能シ、我軍ハ、
此ニ事ヲ判シ居ル、
是ハ、ト、
私ハ、中尉、
私ハ前述、陳述ハ、
宣誓ヲ、
用ニ、
ニ依リ署名、
ニ於テ、
ニ於テ、

No. 5

(署名) 「之、之、
調書目原本、保管部

Cx. # 1859

Evidentiary Document No. 5404.

Capt YUNG PANG FAE of the Central Volunteer Chinese Army, HQ.,
having been called on 18 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:

- Private YET FONG CHAN
- " WONG CHUN
- " CHANG PANG
- " CHIN CHAI CHIN
- " MEI YAU MOA
- " LEU WAH
- " LEE PANG YAU
- " CHAU MOK SANG
- " CHANG NAM CHANG
- " HAN BAK YENG
- " WONG SUI YAU

The above mentioned names were killed by sabre by Japanese because they were too ill to work. They were killed by Lt. KAMITOGA KONOSUKE, Cpl MAJIMOTO and Pte ITAGAKI; they are members of the Jap Supplies Depot. This occurred in KOKOPO on 3 Apr. 43. They were killed at the same time.

These men have been giving the hardest work and no rest with little food and lived in filthy places, some became ill, some have ulcers, and are forced to carry heavy cases, they could not do it because they were too weak from illness and starvation, so the Lieut KAMITOGA KONOSUKE and his Corporal MAJIMOTO with Pte ITAGAKI, take the above mentioned victims to a bush and executed them with sabre and also cut up their stomach for experiment.

I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by him.

(Signed) YUNG PANG FAE

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, PETER CHAN do hereby certify that this statement was made by Capt. YUNG PANG FAE in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to Witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Witness' evidence.

(Signed) PETER CHAN

(Signed) Maj LEE WAI SIN

C. # 1860

Page 1

Evidentiary Document No. 5405.

Cpl. SHIER TCHEN TSE being duly sworn is examined by Prosecuting officer through interpreter J.S.R. Ferguson.

I am SHIER TCHEN TSE, a Cpl in the Chinese National Army. In April 43 I was a POW of the Japanese then living at Kokopo. I know a Chinese soldier named Yeh Fong Chien. I last saw him alive on 3rd. April 43. When at Kokopo I came to know a Japanese warrant officer in charge of the Chinese prisoners. I can now see him.

Witness indicates accused and identifies him by name of Kamitabe. On the day that Yeh FongChien met his death, he and some other Chinese soldiers were sick. Yeh was suffering from a sore on the leg and the others had light illnesses. I saw the accused on that day. As we were coming together on the late morning of 3rd. April for our food the accused arrived with two other Japanese and two Formosans. These were the people who were in charge of us at Kokopo. He asked the Chinese officer in charge of us how many sick people there were. Our officer replied there were 11 people who were a little sick and he said "I am going to send them to hospital. Our officer asked the accused whether he wanted them to take the personal equipment with them and he was told this was not necessary. The accused and his party then went to the sick men's quarters, and instructions were given for the sick men to leave their quarters. The Chinese did not come out quickly and the accused shouted to the interpreter and the interpreter shouted out to the men in the sick quarters "If you don't hurry up I will kill you here". Capt. Shiun went to him and tried to reason with him explaining that the men were not very ill and would be able to work again within a few days. The accused would not accept the reasoning of our officer and threatened to kill him if he said too much. The party of sick Chinese were then escorted by the accused and the other four people who were in control of us to a place not very far away. They were carrying three swords, a long rifle, and a revolver. Although we were instructed by the accused not to accompany the party we followed them. We went to a place which would be in the vicinity of about 50 feet from where the party had halted where there were some depressions in the ground. We were standing on an elevated position from where the party were standing and we saw quite clearly what followed. They had no sooner arrived at this place than the Japanese party started to behead the Chinese soldiers. A couple of them were not completely decapitated and the accused using the revolver which he was carrying fired one round at each of the two men.

Defending officer declines to cross-examine.

No questions by the Court.

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

(Signed) T. MORNANE
Lt-Col.

umentary Evidence No. 5405.

I CERTIFY that this is a true copy of the official record of the evidence of Corporal SHIEK TCHEN TSE contained in the proceedings of the Military Court relating to the trial of Lieutenant UETOGE KONOSUKE of 26 Supply Depot on the charge of murder in that he at KOKOPO on about 3rd. April, 1943, murdered Pte YEH FONG CHIEN and ten other members of the Chinese Army.

T. MORNANE
(Signed) LT. COL.
Australian Imperial Force

24752

Doc 5405

監禁記録第五四〇五號

「シエル・チエン・ツエ」伍長ハ正式ニ宣誓ノ上、
 通譯「J・S・R・フアイグソン」ヲ介シ檢禁官
 ニ依リ岩間セラル。私ハ中山口長算伍長「シエル・チエン・ツエ」デ
 アリマス。一九四三年四月私ハ管時「ココボ」ニ
 居タ日本算ノ停診テシタ。私ハ「イエ・フオング
 ・チエン」ト云フ中山兵ヲ知ツテ居マス。私ガ始
 キテキル彼ヲ見タノハ四三年四月三日ガ最後デシ
 タ。 「ココボ」ニ居タ時ニ私ハ中山人停診係ノ日
 本算ノ下士官ト知合ニテリマシタ。私ハ今彼ヲ見
 ルコトガ出来マス。 證人ハ被告ヲ捕サシ、彼ヲ「カミタベ」ト云フ名
 前デアルト認メマス。「イエ・フオン・チエン」
 ガ死ンダ日、彼並ニ若干ノ他ノ中山兵ハ病氣デシ
 タ。「イエ」ハ脚ノ腫ヲ患ツテ居リ、他ノモノ
 ハ「イエ」病氣デシタ。私ハ被告ヲソノ日ニ見タノデ
 シタ。四月三日ノ朝起ク私ガ食事は禁ラウトシ
 テキタ時ニ、被告ハ二人ノ他ノ日本人云ビ二人ノ
 監禁人ト一室ニ來マシタ。是等ノ人達ハ「コ、ボ」
 ニ於テ私達ヲ監督シテ居タ人々デシタ。彼ハ私達
 ヲ監督シテ居タ中山算係ニ病人ハ何人居ルカト
 尋ヌマシタ。私達ノ尉長ハ「イエ」病人ガ下一人居ル

Doc 5405

ト答ハテ、「私ハ彼等ヲ病院ハ送ルトコロダト
云ヒマシタ。私達ノ將校ガ彼等ニ彼等ヲ病人ヲ
ヲ一給ニ持ツテ行カセ長イカト尋ヌタ所、彼ハソ
ノ必長ハナイト云ヒマシタ。彼等並ニソノ一行ハ
ソレカラ病人ノ宿舎ニ行キ病人達ニソノ宿舎ヲ去
ルヤウニト指示ガ兵ハラレマシタ。中口人ハ遠ニ
外ハ出マセンデシタノデ彼等ハ追討ニ叫ビマシタ。
ソツテ追討ハ病舎ノ内ニ居ル兵隊ニ急ガナケレバ
此處デ恐スゾ、トドナリツケマシタ。「シユング」
大尉ハ彼ノ處ニ行ツテ、兵隊ハ大シタ病氣デハナ
ク数日中ニハ再ビ倒ケルダラウト説明シテ彼ヲ説
キ伏セヨウトシタ、彼等ハ私達ノ將校ノ言ヲ答
レヨウトハセズ、余リ戻ルト恐スゾト叫カシタ。
ソレカラ中山人ノ病人ノ一行ハ、彼等及ビ私達ヲ
指揮シタ他ノ四人ニ依リ、余リ選クナイ場所ハ説
送サレタ。彼等ハ三挺ノ銃、一挺ノ長イ小銃、及
拳銃一挺ヲ携帯シテキタ。私達ハ一行ニ附イテ來
ナイヤウニト彼等ニ指示サレタガ私達ハ彼等ニ附
イテ行ツタ。私達ハ一行ガ道首ニ若干ノ鹽ミノア
ル所ヲ停止シタ處カラ二〇フイート位離レテ居ル
ト思ハレル真詰ヲ行ツタ。私達ハ一行ガ立ツテ居
タ所ヨリモ遠起シタ真詰ニ立ツテキタノデ私達ハ
次イテ起ツタ事ヲ全ク歸隊ニ見テ取ツタ。彼等ハ

Doc 5405

2.

ト答ハテ、「私ハ彼等ヲ病院ヘ送ルトコロダ」ト
云ヒマシタ。私起ノ尉長ガ報告ニ彼等ヲ病人兼備
ヲ一箱ニ持ツテ行カセ長イカト尋ネタ所、彼ハソ
ノ必長ハナイト云ヒマシタ。報告並ニソノ一行ハ
ソレカラ病人ノ宿舎ニ行キ病人起ニソノ宿舎ヲ去
ルヤウニト指示ガ兵ハラレマシタ。中口人ハ遊ニ
外ヘ出マセンデシタノテ報告ハ遊ニ叫ビマシタ。
ソツテ遊ハ病舎ノ内ニ居ル兵隊ニ急ガナケレバ
此處テ恐スゾ、トドナリツケマシタ。「シユング」
大尉ハ彼ノ處ニ行ツテ、兵隊ハ大ツタ病氣テハテ
ク数日中ニハ再ビ倒ケルダラウト説明シテ彼ヲ説
キ伏セヨウトシタ、報告ハ私起ノ尉長ノ言辭ヲ答
レヨウトハセズ、余リ陳ルト恐スゾト斷カシタ。
ソレカラ中口人ノ病人ノ一行ハ、報告及ビ私起ヲ
指揮シタ他ノ四人ニ依リ、余リ遣クタイ湯所ヘ送
送サレタ。彼等ハ三美ノ病、一理ノ長イ小銃、及
拳銃一挺ヲ携帶シテキタ。私起ハ一行ニ附イテ來
ナイヤウニト報告ニ指示サレタガ私起ハ彼等ニ附
イテ行ツタ。私起ハ一行ガ地面ニ若干ノ鹽ミノア
ル所ヲ停止シタ處カラ二〇フイート位離レテ居ル
ト思ハレル真結ヲ行ツタ。私起ハ一行ガ立ツテ居
タ所ヨリモ遠起シタ真結ニ立ツテキタノテ私起ハ
次イテ起ツタ事ヲ全ク観察ニ見テ取ツタ。彼等ハ

Doc 5405

ト答ハテ、「私ハ彼等ヲ病院ヘ送ルトコロダト
 云ヒマシタ。私達ノ尉長ガ報告ニ彼等ヲ信人獲備
 ラ一給ニ持ツテ行カセ長イカト尋ネタ所、彼ハソ
 ノ必長ハナイト云ヒマシタ。報告並ニソノ一行ハ
 ソレカラ病人ノ宿舍ニ行キ病人達ニソノ宿舍ヲ去
 ルヤウニト指示ガ兵ハラレマシタ。中口人ハ達ニ
 外ヘ出マセンデシタノテ報告ハ通譯ニ叫ビマシタ。
 ソツテ通譯ハ病舎ノ内ニ居ル兵隊ニ急ガナケレバ
 此處テ恐スゾ、トドナリツケマシタ。「シユング」
 大尉ハ彼ノ處ニ行ツテ、兵隊ハ大シタ病氣テハナ
 ク数日中ニハ再ビ倒ケルダラウト説明シテ彼ヲ説
 キ伏セヨウトシタ、報告ハ私達ノ尉長ノ言語ヲ容
 レヨウトハセズ、余リ陳ルト恐スゾト斷カシタ。
 ソレカラ中山人ノ病人ノ一行ハ、報告及ビ私達ヲ
 指揮シタ他ノ四人ニ依リ、余リ遠クナイ場所ヘ退
 避サレタ。彼等ハ三挺ノ銃、一挺ノ長イ小銃、及
 拳銃一挺ヲ携帯シテキタ。私達ハ一行ニ附イテ來
 ナイヤウニト報告ニ指示サレタガ私達ハ彼等ニ附
 イテ行ツタ。私達ハ一行ガ進路ニ若干ノ窪ミノヤ
 ル所ヲ停止シタ處カラ二〇フイート位離レテ居ル
 ト思ハレル真竊進行ツタ。私達ハ一行ガ立ツテ居
 タ所ヨリモ隠起シタ銃ニ立ツテキタノテ私達ハ
 次イテ起ツタ時ヲ全ク傍觀ニ見テ取ツタ。彼等ハ

Doc 5405

3.

此長ニ着クヤ否ヤ、日本人ノ一行ハ中口兵ノ首ヲ
斬リ始メタ。彼等ノ一組ハ完全ニ首ヲ斬ラレタカ
ツヘノテ故皆ハ彼ガ持ツテキガ拳銃ヲ使ツテ二人
ノ兵隊ノ各々ニ一發宛發射シタ。

我ハ是ガ二大補給廠「クエ」ガ、コノ「クエ」中
尉ノ一九四三年四月三日「クエ」ニ於テ、二
等兵「イ」エ、「ス」エ、「タ」エ、「ニ」エ、並ビニ他ノ十人
ノ中山軍ノ兵氣運管ノ職ニヨル裁判ニ預スル算野
裁判所ノ起訴手続ニ合マル、「シ」エ、「ラ」エ、
ツエ、一佐長ノ証言ノ公衆記録ノ展覧ナル爲シタル
コトヲ懸案ス。

(参考) 大英帝國海軍中佐

「エ」・「イ」・「エ」・「ン」

C. # 1861

Document No. 5406.

Captain CHEUNG YEE YU of the 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army, having been called on 9 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:-

Pte LO YAM CHEUNG of my 3rd. Fd. Volunteer Army, was shot by Japanese because he was too ill to work. He was shot by Lt. SASAKI, member of the (YANG Butai) No. 9644 KEREVAT Aerodrome. This occurred in KEREVAT 9 Oct 43. He was shot by rifles.

This man with his comrades was working together in KEREVAT Aerodrome - treated him like a slave, lived in filthy places, bitten by mosquitoes and became ill. No doctor attended him while he is sick, besides no medicine was given to him, supply insufficient food for him to eat - on account of this, he could not work, so this Lt. SASAKI, officer in charge of this party, take him into the bush and shot him through the skull.

I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by him.

(Signed) CHEUNG YEE YU

Interpreter's Certificate.

I XAVIER CHOI do hereby certify that this statement was made by Capt. CHEUNG YEE YU in Chinese and after some had been written down in English was read back to witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Witness' evidence.

(Signed) XAVIER CHOI

(Signed) Maj LEE WAI SIN

Doc 5406

第三野戦義勇軍附程宜有 / 音譯 CHEUNG YEE YU
大尉ハ一九四五年 / 昭和二十年 / 十月九日召喚サレ正
當ニ宣誓ノ上庄ノ如ク陳述ス。

我第三野戦義勇軍附程亞程 / 音譯 / LO YAR CHEUNG
二等兵ハ病氣ヲ労働出來トイトイフ理由ヲ以テ日本人
ノ爲射撃サレマシタ。彼ハ「クレヴァット」 / KEREVAT
飛行場ノ「場第九六西四部隊」員佐々木 / SASAKI /
中尉ニ射撃サレマシタ。コレハ一九四三年 / 昭和十八
年 / 十月九日「クレヴァット」 / KEREVAT / 予起ツタ
ノデシタ。彼ハ小銃ヲ射タレマシタ。

本人ハ戦友ト「クレヴァット」 / KEREVAT / 飛行場
デ一宿ニ働イテ居リマシタ。彼ハ奴隷ノ様ナ取扱ラウ
ケ、不潔ナ場所ニ住ミ蚊ニ咬ハレ病氣ニナリマシタ。
病氣中醫者ハ診察セス且樂モ與ヘラレズ食物ノ供給ハ
不充分デアツタノデコレガ爲彼ハ働クコトガ出來テカ
ツタ。右ノ様ナ次第デ本部隊ノ監督將校タル佐々木 /
SASAKI / 中尉ハ彼ヲ養育ノ中ヘ連行シ彼ノ頭ヲ前
ツタノデシタ。

余ハ本件ヲ目撃セリ。

證據書類ハ證人ニ讀返サレ本人コレニ署名ス。

(署名) 程宜有 / 音譯 / CHEUNG YEE YU

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Ev. # 1862

Evidentiary Document No. 5407.

Lieut TAN BAI MING of the Central Chinese Volunteer Army, having been called on 18 Oct 45 and duly sworn, states:

Private CHIANG JIN LIM of my Central Chinese Volunteer Army was killed by shooting by Japanese, because he was too ill to work. He was shot by Lieut SASAKI, he was a member of (YANG BAIN) No. 9644 KARAWAT Aerodrome. This occurred in KARAWAT, Nov. 2nd. 43. He was shot by rifle.

This man with others was working in KARAWAT 'drome, bitten by mosquitoes fell ill, no medicines was given to him, and no doctor attended to him, the Japs gave him little to eat, because he could not work; so this Lieut SASAKI who was in charge of working party, took Pte CHIANG JIN LIM into the bush and shot him through his skull.

I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by him.

(Signed) TAN BAI MING

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, TIMOTHY LAK do hereby certify that this statement was made by Lt. TAN BAI MING in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to him in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Witness' evidence.

(Signed) TIMOTHY LAK

(Signed) Maj LEE WAI SIN

Ev. # 1862

Evidentiary Document No. 5407.

Lieut TAN BAI MING of the Central Chinese Volunteer Army, having been called on 18 Oct 45 and duly sworn, states:

Private CHIANG JIN LIM of my Central Chinese Volunteer Army was killed by shooting by Japanese, because he was too ill to work. He was shot by Lieut SASAKI, he was a member of (YANG BAIN) No. 9644 KARAWAT Aerodrome. This occurred in KARAWAT, Nov. 2nd. 43. He was shot by rifle.

This man with others was working in KARAWAT 'drome, bitten by mosquitoes fell ill, no medicines was given to him, and no doctor attended to him, the Japs gave him little to eat, because he could not work; so this Lieut SASAKI who was in charge of working party, took Pte CHIANG JIN LIM into the bush and shot him through his skull.

I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by him.

(Signed) TAN BAI MING

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, TIMOTHY MAK do hereby certify that this statement was made by Lt. TAN BAI MING in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to him in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Witness' evidence.

(Signed) TIMOTHY MAK

(Signed) Maj LEE WAI SIN

Doc. 5407

中支義勇軍「ア・イ・エ」中尉は一九四五年/昭和二十年
 十月十日召喚され、正當宣誓の上、陳述す。
 彼は屬言中支義勇軍「ア・イ・エ」の兵卒、病氣
 で働けなかつたが、日本兵に射殺された。彼は佐々木
 中尉に射殺された。彼は九六四四から飛行場中
 の大隊に属して居た。これは一九四三年/昭和十八
 年十一月二日から起つた。彼は銃で射
 殺された。
 コノ男は他者と共に飛行場作業に従ひ、彼
 は病気がたつたが、薬を與へられず、逃者、牛を食は
 せられた。彼は働けなかつたが、日本兵に食物を
 小量だけ與へられた。ソノ作業隊係、佐々木中尉は
 「ア・イ・エ」の兵卒を數年連続して行キ頭蓋骨を射貫
 した。
 彼の「ア・イ・エ」日撃した。証據は証人対して讀み、南
 の証人後して署名せられた。

署名 「ア・イ・エ」

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc. 5407

中友美就勇軍「ア・バイ・ミニ」中尉は一九四五年（昭和二十年）十月十八日召喚され、正官宣誓の上、陳述す。私ノ属シキ中友美就勇軍、ア・バイ・ミニ之兵卒ハ、病氣ヲ働クコトが出来ナカシメ、日本人ニ射殺サレシ。彼、佐々木中尉ニ射殺サレシ。彼、オカサカワヲシト飛行場（中ノ大隊）ニ属シテ居リマシ。コレハ一九四三年（昭和十八年）十一月二日カラワシトテ起ツタコトニス。彼、小銃ヲ射殺サレシ。

コノ男ハ他者ト共ニカラワシト飛行場ヲ作業ニ従ヒ、殺シテ、病氣ナリマシガ、薬ヲ與ヘラズ、匿着、手当ヲ加ヘラシメシ。彼、働クコトが出来ナカシメ、日本人ハ食物モ少量ヲ与ヘシメテシ。ソコヲ作業隊係、佐々木中尉ハ「ア・バイ・ミニ」之兵卒ヲ數人連シテ行キ、頭蓋骨ヲ射貫キシ。

彼、コノ事件ヲ日撃シマシ。証據ハ証合対テ讀ミ、南カキシ。証人ニ依リテ署名セラシ。

署名

「ア・バイ・ミニ」

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Q # 1863

Evidentiary Document No. 5402.

Corporal PANG NAM TING of the 88th Division, having been called on 18 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:

Pte WONG SHUI CHUNG of my 88th Division was killed by beating with club by Japanese because he was too ill to work. He was beaten to death by Cpl OKAZAKI MAZUO, a member of the Supplies Depot. This occurred in RABAU on 26 Jul. 44. He was beaten to death. This man has been given little food to eat, bitten by mosquitoes became ill, no medical attention was given, he was forced to work carrying big heavy boxes, he could not carry them because he is too weak by illness, so the Corporal OKAZAKI beat him with a big club until he vomits blood and died.

I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to witness and signed by him.

(Signed) PANG NAM TING

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, PETER CHAN do hereby certify that this statement was made by Corporal PANG NAM TING in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of witness' evidence.

(Signed) PETER CHAN

(Signed) Maj. LEE WAI SIN

Q # 1863

Evidentiary Document No. 542a.

Corporal PANG NAM TING of the 88th Division, having been called on 18 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:

Pte WONG SHUI CHUNG of my 88th Division was killed by beating with club by Japanese because he was too ill to work. He was beaten to death by Cpl OKAZAKI MAZUO, a member of the Supplies Depot. This occurred in RABAU on 26 Jul. 44. He was beaten to death. This man has been given little food to eat, bitten by mosquitoes became ill, no medical attention was given, he was forced to work carrying big heavy boxes, he could not carry them because he is too weak by illness, so the Corporal OKAZAKI beat him with a big club until he vomits blood and died.

I saw this happen.

Evidence is read over to witness and signed by him.

(Signed) PANG NAM TING

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, PETER CHAN do hereby certify that this statement was made by Corporal PANG NAM TING in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of witness' evidence.

(Signed) PETER CHAN

(Signed) Maj. LEE WAI SIN

Doc 5408

第八師團長「バニ」氏長、一九四五年（昭和二十年）
 十月十八日石原忠之正三直筆之文上陳述ス
 松属之「バニ」氏長、第八師團、宇之「バニ」兵隊、重傷
 多々働之、其末「バニ」氏、日本人ニ棍棒ヲ撲殺セリマ
 之、彼ハ兵站部員、岡崎之「バニ」氏長ニ殺リ殺セリマ
 之、一九四四年（昭和十九年）七月二十六日「バニ」氏起リマ
 トス、彼ハ殺リ殺セリマ、コノ男ハ食物モ殆ド與フ
 之、蚊ニ刺サレ、病氣トナリマ之ガ治療、モ加ヘテ、無理
 ニ大キト重ク相ラ運ハケマ之ガ、彼ハ病氣ヲ余リニ弱
 ク、又々々、ソラ運ハケマ、不ナク、下岡崎氏長ハ彼
 ヲ大キト棍棒ヲ血ヲ吐キ死ス、政ヲ「バニ」氏長
 此ハコノ事件ガ起ル、自撃之マ、
 證據書ハ證人ニ付テ、讀ニ聞カレ、證人ニ依リテ
 署名名目ナリ

(署名) 「バニ」氏長

Evidentiary Document No. 5409.

Mrs. LEE YITSAI KUNYANG, Chinatown, RABAU, having been called on 20th October, 1945 and duly sworn, states:

I am a married woman and lived at RABAU before the war for 44 years. My husband trades but has died during the War. I have a family of 9 children - six sons and three daughters. We were living at BANNING before the War and stayed there when the Japs came.

The native boys told the Military Police (Jap) that we had a radio in the house and were communicating with Americans; we had no radio. The Japs came out and took me and my family to RABAU. We were put in a prison in Chinatown. The Jap police questioned me about the radio every day, 3 times a day. Each day they gave beatings to my sons. I was beaten 3 times. I was made to bend down and I was questioned. If I said "No" they beat me. They beat me with a thick stick. I got about 30 or 40 stroke. When I fainted they stopped beating me. The beating was done by two Jap policemen. I do not know their names. MATSI MOTO was there when they beat me. The beatings took place in April 43. After the first beating they beat me again two days later and again after another 2 days. MATSI MOTO was present on the first and third occasion but not on the second. I had black and red marks where I had been beaten. They were very painful. I am 59 years of age. The Japs gave me no treatment or medicine. My sons were beaten every day. I did not actually see the beatings but I heard them crying out. Afterwards they came to me and they were bleeding on the head, the side and the back. My sons told me they had been beaten. My sons names are WOO CHING KONG (43 years), WOO CHING FOOK (38), WOO CHING WAH (34), WOO CHING CHEONG (32) WOO CHING KEONG (23) WOO CHING ON (21).

My son KEONG was beheaded by the Japs. I did not see him killed. I have not found his body. I was told by two Chinese girls, ANNA CHAN and BETTY PANG, who had been told that KEONG had been beheaded.

While my sons and I were in prison we were given nothing but small quantities of rice and vegetables. We slept on the ground.

Statement is read over to Complainant and signed by Complainant.

Witness mark,
Signature of Complainant

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, AUGUST CHAN of Chinatown, RABAU, do hereby certify that this statement was made by Mrs. LEE YITSAI KUNYANG in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to Complainant in her own language before she signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Complainant's statement.

(sig. illegible) Major.
Interrogating Officer.

(Sgd) AUGUST CHAN (Interpreter)

C. # 1864

Evidentiary Document No. 5409.

Mrs. LEE YITSAI KUNYANG of Chinatown, RABAUL, having been called on 20th October, 1945 and duly sworn, states:

I am a married woman and lived at RABAUL before the war for 44 years. My husband trades but has died during the War. I have a family of 9 children - six sons and three daughters. We were living at BAINING before the War and stayed there when the Japs came.

The native boys told the Military Police (Jap) that we had a radio in the house and were communicating with Americans; we had no radio. The Japs came out and took me and my family to RABAUL. We were put in a prison in Chinatown. The Jap police questioned me about the radio every day, 3 times a day. Each day they gave beatings to my sons. I was beaten 3 times. I was made to bend down and I was questioned. If I said "No" they beat me. They beat me with a thick stick. I got about 30 or 40 stroke. When I fainted they stopped beating me. The beating was done by two Jap policemen. I do not know their names. MATSI MOTO was there when they beat me. The beatings took place in April 43. After the first beating they beat me again two days later and again after another 2 days. MATSI MOTO was present on the first and third occasion but not on the second. I had black and red marks where I had been beaten. They were very painful. I am 59 years of age. The Japs gave me no treatment or medicine. My sons were beaten every day. I did not actually see the beatings but I heard them crying out. Afterwards they came to me and they were bleeding on the head, the side and the back. My sons told me they had been beaten. My sons names are WOO CHING KONG (43 years), WOO CHING FOOK (38), WOO CHING WAH (34), WOO CHING CHEONG (32) WOO CHING KEONG (23) WOO CHING ON (21).

My son KEONG was beheaded by the Japs. I did not see him killed. I have not found his body. I was told by two Chinese girls, ANNA CHAN and BETTY PANG, who had been told that KEONG had been beheaded.

While my sons and I were in prison we were given nothing but small quantities of rice and vegetables. We slept on the ground.

Statement is read over to Complainant and signed by Complainant.

Witness mark.
Signature of Complainant

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, AUGUST CHAN of Chinatown, RABAUL, do hereby certify that this statement was made by Mrs. LEE YITSAI KUNYANG in Chinese and after same had been written down in English was read back to Complainant in her own language before she signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Complainant's statement.

(sig. illegible) Major. (Sgd) AUGUST CHAN (Interpreter)
Interrogating Officer.

62 1264 390

Doc 5409

二、... (Faint handwritten text)

五、... (Faint handwritten text)

六、... (Faint handwritten text)

七、... (Faint handwritten text)

八、... (Faint handwritten text)

九、... (Faint handwritten text)

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

No 2

DOC 5409

私ノ息子達ハ毎日殴打サレマシタ。私ハ現ニ殴打シテキルトコロハ見ナ
 カッタガ子供等が大聲ヲ叫ブノヲ聞キマシタ。後ニ彼等ハ私ノ許ニ
 来マシタソシテ彼等ハ頭ノ上側後ニ出血シテ申マシタ。私ノ息子達
 ハ私ニ殴打セラレタト告ゲマシタ。私ノ息子達ノ名前ハウー・チン
 フン(四十ニオ)ウー・ヤン(三十八オ)ウー・チン(三十四オ)
 ウー・チン(三十三オ)ウー・チン(三十三オ)ウー・チン(三十三オ)ウー・チン
 オン(三十一オ)デアリマス。

私ノ息子ノ「ケオン」ハ日本人ニヨリ首ヲ斬ラレシタ。私ハ彼ガ殺
 サレノヲ見ナカッタ。又私ハ彼ノ死体ヲ見出サナカッタ。私ハ二人ノ中国人
 ノ少女「アンチヤン」ト「ベティバン」カラ聞キマシタ。ソノ二人ノ少女ハ
 「ケオン」ガ首ヲ斬ラレタコトヲソノ前ニ聞イテ申タノニス。

私ノ息子ト私が監獄ニ居リマシタ間 我々ハ少量ノ米ト野菜以外
 ニハ何も給與サレナカッタ。我々ハ地面ニ寝マシタ。

陳述書ハ公訴人ニ讀ミ上ケラレソシテ出訴人ニヨリ署名セラレタリ。

出訴人署名 証人 記号

× × × × ×

× × × × × × ×

C. # 1865
1.

Evidentiary Document No. 5217,

RESTRICTED.

Classification changed from "CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED" by order of the Secretary of War by /s/ T.E.C. King, Lt. Col., Inf.

STATE OF WASHINGTON)
COUNTY OF PIERCE) SS

We, James A. McMurria, Josel. Holguin, and Alphonse D. Quinones, of Lawful age, being duly sworn, on oath depose and say:

I am 1st. Lt. James A. McMurria, ASN O-372644. My permanent address is 933 Benning Blvd., Columbus, Ga. I was captured by the Japanese of 3 March, 1943, in New Guinea while serving with the 90th Bomb Group, 5th Air Force. I was taken to Rabaul in May, 1943, and remained there until March, 1944, when I was transferred to Tunnel Hill, where I remained until 7 September, 1945.

I am Jose L. Holguin, 2nd. Lt., ASN O-72838. My permanent address is 1448 Court St., Los Angeles, Calif. I was captured on 19 July, 1943, at New Britain while serving with the 43rd. Bomb Group 5th Air Force. I was first taken to the town of Rabaul and in March of 1944 was transferred to Tunnel Hill, where I remained until liberated on 7 September, 1945.

I am Alphonse D. Quinones, 2nd. Lt., ASN O-748875. My permanent address is 1448 Court St., Los Angeles, Calif. I was captured by the Japanese on Rabaul, New Britain, on 7 November, 1943, while serving with the 38th Fighter Squadron, 5th Air Force. I was held at the town of Rabaul until March, 1944, when I was transferred to Tunnel Hill, where I remained until liberated on 7 September, 1945.

While at Rabaul we were quartered in a small wood building where we slept on the floor. Conditions were very crowded and at times it was impossible for all of us to lie down. We received about a coffee cup three-fourths full of rice and half a cup of soup three times a day. Beating of prisoners was common at the camp for the slightest infraction of the rules and many times for no reason at all. These beatings were sometimes rather severe and Japanese often used bamboo clubs, bayonet cases, belts, their fists, and ramrods from their rifles. They also used rifle butts, and often when a prisoner was down they would kick him in the testicles. Corporal Wada was the worst offender in the beating of prisoners. He was nicknamed "the Bull." We had no American medical officer there, and the Japanese furnished practically no medical attention. At first there were 64 allied prisoners at the camp. Forty of these were reported by the Japanese as having been killed by bombing while being transported to another camp. Twelve American prisoners of war and five other American prisoners died in camp from

starvation, beri beri, dysentery, combined with lack of medical care. There were only six allied prisoners who were alive when the camp was liberated on 7 September, 1945.

The Japanese doctor who was responsible for our medical care was called "the Butcher." He was a captain, and was assigned to the Kempe Tai (Military Police detachment). The executive officer Matsuta in charge of the camp was a Major named Mazuta. There was a colonel over him who was really the commanding officer, but we do not recall his name. We can give no further description of persons responsible for conditions at Kabaul, and we can state no further details concerning the matters described in this affidavit.

/s/ James A. McMurria 1st. Lieut
0-372644

/s/ Jose L. Holguin, 2nd. Lt. A.C.
0-72838.

/s/ Alphonse D. Quinones, 2nd. Lt.
0-748875

In the presence of

/s/ Donald W. Smith, Agent, SIC

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Edwin F. Svare
1st. Lt., Inf.

RESTRICTED /s/ T.R.C.K.

證據書類 第五二七号

部外秘 陸軍省 極秘 部外秘 分類 変更

ex. 1865 DOC 5217

ワシントン州
ピアス郡

TOC WOOD
軍歩隊中

私共即チ適法年令ニ達シタル「ジエイムズ・エイ・マックアリア」
「ジョセル・ホルギン」アルホズデー・クイネス」ハ兵式宣誓、上證言
シ陳述シマス。

私ハ「ジエイムズ・エイ・マックアリア」中尉認識番号〇一三七三六四
デアリマス。私ノ本籍地ハ「ジョージア州」コロンバス市 ベニング街 九三三
番地デス。私ハ一九四三年（昭和十八年）三月三日 ニューギニアニ於テ
第五空軍部隊第九十爆撃隊ニ勤務中日本軍ノ俘虏トナリマ
シタ。私ハ一九四三年（昭和十八年）五月ラバウルニ連テ行ケル。一九四四年（昭和
十九年）三月迄リマニナリマシタガソレカラ「タネル・ヒル」ニ轉送サシ
一九四五年（昭和二十年）九月七日迄ソコニ居リマシタ。

私ハ「ジョセル・ホルギン」少尉認識番号〇一七三三八デス。私ノ本
籍地ハカリフォルニア州 ロスアンゼルス市 コート通り 一四六デス。私ハ一九四三
年（昭和十八年）七月十九日 ニューギニア第五空軍部隊第四十三
爆撃隊ニ勤務中俘虏トナリマシタ。私ハ最初ラバウルノ街ニ連
テ行ケル。一九四四年（昭和十九年）三月ニ「タネル・ヒル」ニ轉送サ
シ、ソコニ一九四五年（昭和二十年）九月七日釋放サレル迄居リマ
シタ。

No 1.

Doc 5217

ト日本人の報告に云く。十二人、アメリカ、信房ト五名、
アメリカ人柳留君ハ飢餓ニヨリ或脚氣亦刺カリ治療
ガナカシク爲ニ死亡シマシク。

ソノ收容所ガ一九四五年/昭和二十年九月七日釋放セシ夕時六時
六名、聯念國合カシキ生キテ序ラマセテシク。

私達、医療管理ニ責任アル日本、医師ハ肉屋ト呼ビ
シテ序ラマシク。彼ハ大尉ヲ定兵隊(軍事警察令隊)附
テアリマシク。收容所ヲ管理スル主務將校ハマツトトウ
少佐テシク。彼、上ニ大佐ガ居テ實際、指揮官テアリマ
シクガソノ名ヲ思ヒ出スコトガ出来マセシ。私達ハソノハウル状態
ニ関シ責任アル人々ノコトヲコレ以上敘述スルコト出来マセシ
コノ宣誓口供書ニ敘述セシ夕事件ニツイテコレ以上詳シク申シ
ケルコト出来マセシ。

署名 ジョージ・スミス 大尉 〇一七三六四

署名 ジョージ・ホルン 空軍少尉 〇一七三三八

署名 アール・スティーヴン 少尉 〇一七三九五

署名 ドナルド・グレン・スミス S.I.C 代表者、面前於

署名シク

眞實、寫シテコトヲ証明ス

署名 エドワード・スティーヴン 歩兵中尉

部外秘署名 ジョージ・スミス

No 3

Doc 5217

ト日本人ハ報告シマシク 十二人、アメリカ、俘虏ト五名、
アメリカ人抑留者ハ飢餓ニヨリ或脚氣亦痢ニカシテ医療
ガナカシク為ニ死亡シマシク。

ソノ收容所ガ一九四五年昭和二十年九月七日釋放セシ時六名、
六名、聯念國入心ヲ生キテ居リマセテシク。

私達、医療管理ニ責任アル日本、医師、肉屋ト呼ビ
シテ居リマシク。彼ハ大尉ヲ憲兵隊(軍事警察令隊)所
テアリマシク。收容所ヲ管理スル主務將校ハマツトトシテ
少佐テシク。彼、上ニ大佐ガ居テ實際、指揮官テアリマ
シクガソノ名ヲ思ヒ出スコトガ出来マセシ。私達ハバウル状態
ニ関シ責任アル人々ノコトヲコレ以上敘述スルコトハ出来マセシ
コノ宣誓口供書ニ敘述セシク事件ニツイテコレ以上詳ク申止
セルコトハ出来マセシ。

署名 トウシ、大佐、マツトト申尉 〇一七三六四

署名 シヨゼ、ホルキ、空軍少尉 〇一七三三八

署名 アホ、大佐、マツト申尉 〇一七三六五

署名 トウシ、大佐、マツト申尉 S.I.C 代表者、西前三

署名 トウシ、大佐、マツト申尉

署名 トウシ、大佐、マツト申尉

署名 トウシ、大佐、マツト申尉

No 3

Q. #1866

Evidentiary Document No. 5438.

(CERTIFIED COPY)
APPENDIX C 15

Statement by Repatriated Prisoners of War at Australian
General Hospital, Jacquinot Bay, 9th September, 1945.

Norman Vickers of the Royal New Zealand Air Force, was with us
as a prisoner of war off Tunnel Hill Road, Rabaul.

He stated that he was shot down in the Bougainville-Shortlands
area I believe.

When he arrived at the prison camp in Rabaul he had been
cruelly ill-treated. He had been bound by ropes to which
fish hooks had been attached in such a way that whenever he
moved his head the fish hooks would pierce his face.

Vickers' health deteriorated and in July, 1944, he died in
my presence as the result of malnutrition and dysentery.

He did not name the person who ill-treated him.

(Signed) James A McMurria	(Signed) John J. Murphy
0 372644	NGX 310
1st. Lieutenant	Captain
90th Bomber Group	A.I.B.
5th U.S. Air Force.	

Witnessed:

W. F. Ingram
Flight Lieutenant
R.N.Z.A.F.

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

(Signed) T. R. Hunt Brigadier
per Adjutant-General.

EVIDENTIARY of 5438

EXHIBIT NO. 28664

證據書類才五四三号

(証明清算)附録(一五)

一九四五年九月九日 / ジャクヴィノット・ベイ / 濠洲

JACQUINOT BAY

綜合病院ニ於テ歸還仔虜ヨリ陳述

ニトニト空軍ニ屬スルノ一ニ、ウィッカーズ

NEW ZEALAND / NORMAN VICKERS /

仔虜トシテ我ニト共ニ、ニトニト上ニルニ、

RABUL TUNNEL HILL ROAD /

近傍居ニシヤ。

彼、ブーゲンビルニヨリトニト地ニテ墜陸セリト

BOUGAINVILLE SHORTLANDS /

申ニタト私ノ記憶ニテ括ルヌ。

彼がラバウル、仔虜收容所ニ到着ニタトキ、彼

RABUL /

ハ惨酷ニ虐待サレテキニシヤ。彼、繩ヲ縛ニレテ

居テ、其、繩、魚釣用鉤ガ着ケテ有リ、彼ガ頭ガ

カサトスニシテ、其、釣鉤ガ彼、顔ニ刺サル様ニシ

テ居ニシヤ。

ウィッカーズ、健康ハ悪化シ一九四四年七月、彼

面前テ、栄養不良並ニ赤痢ニ患ヒ

致ニシヤ。

彼、彼ヲ虐待ニシヤ者、姓名ニテ

No 1

ALL COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5438

會衆國第五空軍第九。爆擊隊班。

陸軍中尉。0三三六四。三三六四。三三六四。三三六四。
/JAMES A MCMURRIA/

陸軍大尉。三三六四。
/A. B. /
/N. G.

三三六四。三三六四。三三六四。
/JOHN. J. MURPHY/ (署名)

証
三三六四。三三六四。三三六四。
/NEW ZEALAND/ 空軍。航空
中尉。三三六四。三三六四。
/W. H. INGRAM/

真實。高。証。明。
軍務局長代理。三三六四。三三六四。
/T B. HUNT/ (署名)

No 2

Q # 1867

Evidentiary Document No. 5410.

STATEMENT.

MAUTA LEONARD Native Boy of BITAGALIH NEW BRITAIN having been called on 29th October, 1945, and duly sworn states:-

I remember working at the TOBERA AIR Field with a party of natives. We were working with a truck. The engine broke down and one of the boys TO URAVAGIN told the Japanese that the engine would not work. The Japanese called him up and hit him on the head with a stick this was the Japanese interpreter. TO URAVAGIN retaliated by hitting the Japanese in the eye and breaking his glasses. We all then ran away. We were caught and taken back to the air field. There there Japanese tied us up together in two parties. Five together in one party, and the rest in another. The Japanese who had been struck by the Natives then took up a wooden mallet and hit the five who had been tied together on their heads. They all fell down. The Japanese who was with the interpreter and whose name is CHICABA took a stick and hit the natives who had fallen on the ground on the head. Three of them died immediately, but two of them did not die. The names of those who died immediately were, TO LUI, TO MORAC, TO EDIN, and two still alive were TO URAVAGIN and TO VARGIL. The Japanese then told the boys to pick up the five natives and carry them away to bury them. I saw that the two were still alive for I could see them moving. CHICABA told the rest of us not to look. The party went away and some Japanese went with them. Later the boys came back and told me that they had buried them all including the two still alive. They said that one of them had said "Better you kill me and then bury me, but kill me first," but the Japanese took no notice and they were told to hurry on with the burial. I saw all that happen up to the time when the burial party went away.

We were on our way to the MINSABU to complain about the Japanese guards treatment of TO URAVAGIN when he struck him when we were captured by the soldiers. We had been told we could complain of bad treatment to the MINSABU. CHICABA was a Navy Man.

LEONAT
Signature of Witness.

I, Father William Cadogan, Roman Catholic Missionary of RAMALI Mission do hereby certify that this statement was made by MAUTA LEONARD in pidgen and after same had been written down in English was read back to witness in pidgen before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of the witness's evidence.

(sgd) William Cadogan
Signature of Interpreter
29 Oct. 1945.

Doc. 5410

1867

No. 1

陳述書

人「三ノリキ」/NEW BRITAIN/「三ノリキ」/BITAGALIF/、五
和子年「十月二十九日呼出」/MAUTA LEONARD/、「一九五五年」
述ス

和「トベラ」/TOBERA/飛行場主人、一隊一編三衝トク
其機因不故障多起シ少年一人「ト、コバダ」/TO URAVAGIN/
ガ日本人ニ「五」ガ勸カキト告テマシタ 日本人、彼ヲ呼付テ
テ彼頭ヲ打ケリマシタ。之、日本人、通譯ヲ下リマシタ。「ト、コバ
ダ」/TO URAVAGIN/、「其、日本人、眼ヲ打テ眼鏡ヲコソシテ後
シマシタ。此等秘案、皆迷テマシタ。私等、捕ヘシ飛行場へ
連戻カシマシタ。其知テ日本人、私等ヲ三組ニテ一編ニ纏リ上ケマ
シ。五人一編三組ヲ然リカシ一組テ下リマシ。土人即カテ日本人
ハ「木槌ヲ取上テ一編ニ纏ラシ五人頭ヲ打ケシタ。皆倒レマ
シ。通譯ト一編ニ居テ日本人テ「カ」/CHICABA/ト云テ者ヲ捕テ
地面到リ五人達、頭ヲ打ケシタ。其、内三人、直ニ様死シマシタ。
併シ二人、死ハセシマシタ。直ニ様死シ三人を前「ト、コバ」/TO
LUI/「ト、コバ」/TO MORAC/「ト、コバ」/TO EDIN/「ト、コバ」生
キテ者三人「ト、コバ」/TO URAVAGIN/ト「ト、コバ」
TO VARGIL/「ト、コバ」日本人、子供等ニ、五人、土人ヲ捕上テ持
テ行テ埋テト言ヒケリマシタ。私三人ハ「勸テ居ケル生キテ
居ルガ命ヲマシタ。カ」/CHICABA/、「私等、残テ者ニ見テ「カ」
ト言ヒケリマシタ。一隊が行テ了レシ、日本人一編ニ行テマシタ。後ニ

Doc.

女兵等歸、其來子、多少生きた者三人を一緒ニ埋葬せしむと私ニ
云はせり。其の内一人が「故に子カラ埋せしむ。併し自分も最初ニ
殺せしむしと言ひしが日本人の父、彼等ニ多少埋せしむと言ひ
すと皆が言はせり。私、埋せし一隊が行つて了らば這起つた上り出
見せしむとせり。

和野ハ「ト、ウラバギン」/TO URAVAGIN/ カナラシク時、彼ニ村
ニ日本人監視、取扱ニ就き苦情ヲ申出さし給ニ民生部
MINSABU/ へ行、途中兵隊ニイカサマシク、和野ハ取扱、悪
クハ民政部へ申出さし給はせり。其ハ/CHICABA/ハ海軍
者ナリ。

上木トト/LEONAT/ 証人、署名。

E. # 1868

Evidentiary Document No. 5433.

AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES AAF 117(A)
RECORD OF MILITARY COURT (JAPANESE
WAR CRIMINALS)

A.M.C. No: 2676
Aust. M.C. List Ser No:

Accused: Navy Workman KIKAWA, Haruo.
Court Place: RAFAUL
Date and 4 and 10 Jan 46.
Formation: 11 Aust. Div.

<u>Charge (s)</u>	<u>Plea</u>	<u>Verdict Finding</u>
<u>First Charge:</u> MURDER at TOBERA about Aug 43 murdered TO LUI TO LOBAC TO EDLIN	Not Guilty	Guilty
<u>Second Charge:</u> MURDER at TOBERA about Aug 43 murdered TO UAVACI and TO VICIL	Not Guilty	Guilty

Precis of Evidence: About Aug 43 a number of native boys were employed on earthwork at TOBERA airfield. The accused KIKAWA was in charge of the Camp, welfare of the boys etc. A Jap called NAGAO who wore glasses was apparently in charge of a working party and struck one native with a plank. The native retaliated and broke NAGAO'S glasses. Natives ran away and were brought back to the field. Natives were lined up and the one concerned in the striking incident and four others were fallen out, tied up and hit on the head with a mallet. Three were apparently killed instantly and two still lived. A Japanese then struck all five with a piece of wood. The three dead and two living natives were buried. The evidence of two natives is in agreement except that one stated that KIKAWA used the mallet in the presence of NAGAO and the other states that NAGAO used the mallet and that KIKAWA helped tied the natives and struck them with the piece of wood. The defence is an alibi, supported by Lt. YUI that he arrived at the scene after the incidents detailed.

Sentence: To suffer death by hanging.
and Date: 10 January, 1946.

Confirmation Finding and sentence confirmed and warrant signed by
and by whom: Acting C-in-C. 26 February, 1946.

Promulgation: 17 January, 1946.

Evidentiary Document No. 5433.

Page 2.

Petition: Submitted 23 Jan. 46 against finding and Sentence of
the Court.

J.A.G.'s Report on Petition: That Finding and Sentence be confirmed.

Action on Petition: Dismissed.

Filed in Attorney-General's Department and Numbered.

Certified true copy of official record.

(Sgd) T. MORNAME
Lt. Col.

Doc 5433

証據書類才五三三号

濠洲陸軍、軍事裁判記録 (日本戦争犯罪)

A A F A 一七 (A)

濠洲戦争犯罪才三二七二号

濠洲戦争犯罪人表才 号

被告 海軍職工キカワ ハルヲ / KIKAWA HARUO

法廷場所 ラバウル / RABAU

時及部隊 一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 一月四及十日

濠洲軍才十一師團

228 868

3

NO 1

起訴事由	抗辯	罪定審理決定
才一起訴事由 殺人 一九四三年 / 昭和十年 月頃トハラ / TOBERA ヲ殺言セリ	無罪	有罪
才二起訴事由 殺人 一九四三年 / 昭和十年 月頃トハラ / TOBER ヲ殺言セリ	無罪	有罪

No 2

Doc 5433

証據、概要
 一九四三年、昭和十八年、洞窟トビラ、TOBERA
 飛行場ヲ教多、土人、男、子供等が土工作業ニ
 備ルテ居ル。被害キカワ、KAWA、其、男、子
 供等、宿舎、健康状態等、監督ヲシテ居ル。
 ナガオ、NAGAO、トシテ眼鏡ヲ掛ケテ日本人が
 作業隊、監督ヲシテ居ル桶ヲアケテ、而シテ人
 土人ヲ板切テ改ツ。其、土人、復讐ヲシテナ
 飛行場、眼鏡ヲ壊シ。土人等、並ニサレ眼鏡ヲ
 壊シテ事件ニ関係シテ一人及他、四人が引出
 サレ縛リ、木槌ヲ頭ヲ打ツ。一人、即死シテ
 桶ヲアケテ二人、赤ダ生キテ居ル。一人、日本人が
 ソクラ木片ヲ五人全部ヲ改ツ。其、死ニシテ
 及生キテ居ル二人、埋メテ。一人、土人、証言
 一人、キカワ、KAWA、ナガオ、目前
 テソ、木槌ヲ使フタトシ他、一人、ナガオ、
 ガソ、木槌ヲ使ヒキカワ、KAWA、手傳ツテ其土人
 達ヲ縛リソノ木片ヲ彼等ヲ改ツトシテ外、一
 ナ居ル。被害、抗辯、今詳述シテ事件ヲ清ク
 カ現場ニ着クダトシテ現場不在証明テ
 而シテ是、コト、中尉ニ依リテ及持セラレ居ル。

Doc 5433

判決及年月日 絞首刑ニ服ス事 一九四六年

月十日 確認及確認者 一九四六年一月二十六日 検司令
官代理ニ依リ事實審理ノ結果及判決ヲ確認セリ
令狀ニ署名セリタリ。

告示 一九四六年一月十日

原文才ニ頁!

控訴 当法院ノ事實審理ノ結果及判決ニ付スル
不服申立ヲ一九四六年一月二十日提出セリ。

法務局ノ控訴ニ就テノ報告 事實審理ノ結
果及判決ノ確認セリタリ。

控訴ニ就テノ所理 却下セリタリ。

検事総長事務局ニ綴込ミル番号ヲ附セリタリ。

公文記録ノ真実ナル複本ヲ出シテ証ス。

(署名) 陸軍中佐

アム・モリネーニ / T. MORNANE

N03

Ex. # 1869

Evidentiary Document No. 5412.

Page 1.

164314 Sweeper GIANI, C. Coy 13 Pioneer Bn, having been called on 5 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:

On 5 May 44 GUTHNU and I saw MATARI GUNSO beatin. FAKIRA severely and mercilessly in the jungle where petrol dumps were situated. LUNGI came to our hut about 9 pm that night and told us that FAKIRA's whereabouts were unknown and that we were to help look for him.

On 6th and 7th May 44 we all searched but could not find FAKIRA. Then on 8 May 44 FUJITA took us all to our old camp and there we saw the dead body of FAKIRA hanging from a tree. We were told to be careful. Before returning to work I saw that FAKIRA's left leg was broken and his chest, back and hands bore wounds of having been beaten by a stick. The rope round his neck was very loose, touching his chin at a distance of three or four inches from the throat. FUJITA and MATARI admitted that they had killed FAKIRA. They were proud of this fact.

Evidence is read over to witness and signed by witness.

(Finger mark of witness)
Signature of Witness.

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, S/Clerk J. Clattery do hereby certify that this statement was made by GI ANI in Hindustani and after same had been written down in English was read back to witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Witness' evidence.

(Sgd) J. CLATTERY
Signature of Interpreter.

453 Pioneer LUNGI KOBE having been called on 5 Oct 45 and duly sworn, states:

On 5 May 44 MATARI GUNSO took FAKIRA with him but I did not know why or where he took him. They both left Coastal house where FAKIRA and I were extracting oil at the time. At about 11 o'clock MATARI came and told me that he had killed FAKIRA but I did not believe it. At 1800 hours I went to our men who were working in the garden and enquired about FAKIRA but they knew nothing about him.

At about 1300 hours 8 May 44 MATARI took us to our old camp and there we saw FAKIRA hanging from a tree. FUJITA and MATARI warned us all to be careful, otherwise we would meet deaths similar to FAKIRA's. SHRI RAM and myself buried FAKIRA. FAKIRA's left leg was broken and had been bleeding. There was no

Evidentiary Document no. 5412.

Page 2.

sign of blood on his ears, eyes nor mouth. The rope was very loose and touching the chin about three inches from the throat.

I know that FAKIRA was killed; he did not suicide.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by Witness.

(sgd) LUNGI KOBE.

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, S/Clerk J. Clattery do hereby certify that this statement was made by LUNGI KOBE in Hindustani and after same had been written down in English was read back to Witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Witness' evidence.

(sgd) J. CLATTERY
Signature of Interpreter.

Certified true copy.

(sgd) T. MORNANE Lt.-Col.

I certify that this sheet contains true copies of the official record of the evidence of 164314 Sweeper GIANI and 453 Pioneer LUNGI KOBE contained in the proceedings of a Military Court held at Rabaul relating to the trial of Sergeant MAWATARI KUNIYOSH on a charge of murder of FAKIRA a member of the Indian Army at Norga on or about 5th May, 1944.

(Sgd) Thomas F. Mornane Lt.-Col.

Evidentiary Document no. 5412.

Page 2.

sign of blood on his ears, eyes nor mouth. The rope was very loose and touching the chin about three inches from the throat.

I know that FAKIRA was killed; he did not suicide.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by Witness.

(sgd) LUNGI KOBE.

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, S/Clerk J. Clattery do hereby certify that this statement was made by LUNGI KOBE in Hindustani and after same had been written down in English was read back to Witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Witness' evidence.

(sgd) J. CLATTERY
Signature of Interpreter.

Certified true copy.

(sgd) T. MORWANE Lt.-Col.

I certify that this sheet contains true copies of the official record of the evidence of 164314 Sweeper GIANI and 453 Pioneer LUNGI KOBE contained in the proceedings of a Military Court held at Rabaul relating to the trial of Sergeant MAWATARI KUNIYOSH on a charge of murder of FAKIRA a member of the Indian Army at Norga on or about 5th May, 1944.

(Sgd) Thomas F. Mornane Lt.-Col.

證據書要 第三四二号

5412

第三十三号大體 第一六四二二号、證據書要 第三四二号、
一九四四年／昭和十九年／五月五日、^{COY} 櫻井 義一、
次、如左叙述ス。

Doc

一九四四年／昭和十九年／五月五日、^{IGUTHINU} 櫻井 義一、
^{MAIARI GUNS / FAKIRA} 櫻井 義一、
無慈悲ニ毆打シテ、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、
九時頃、我々、小屋ニツキテ、^{FAKIRA} 櫻井 義一、
而シテ我々ハ彼ヲ捜索スルニ傳ヒテ、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、
一九四四年／昭和十九年／五月六日、二日ニカケテ、我々ハ皆テ

1869

アキテ、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、
一九四四年／昭和十九年／五月、^{FUJIA} 藤田 吾郎、
ノ用、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、
アキテ、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、
言ハシマシタ。作業ニ戻ル前ニ、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、
ノ彼、胸背、両手ニ、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、
シタ。彼ノ首ニ、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、
三四時、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、
アタリ、^{MAIARI} 藤田 吾郎、
マシタ。彼等ハ、^{LANG II} 櫻井 義一、

證據ハ証人ニ對シテ反讀セラル証人ニ依リ署名セラル

(証人ノ摺印)

証人署名

10.1

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 04

/LUNGI KOBE/

Doc 5412

赤四五三号工兵「ルンギ」コビ、ハ一九四五年昭和。四月
十月五日、奥向ヲ受ケ、正武堂^誓、後次、如^隠、
一九四四年、昭和十九年、五月五日、^{MAIARI GUNSO}、マクリ、軍曹ハ^ハ、

/FAKIRA/ヲ連行シマシタ。併シ、私ハ何故、ソノ何^人、
彼ガ「アキラ」ヲ連シテ行ツタ、ヲ知リアセシマシタ。

彼等二人ハ「アキラ」ト私ガ其、時、油ノ箱ニヤツテ、
「アキラ」ハ、ハウズ^マ、海岸^家、立去リマシタ。十一時頃、

「マクリ」ガヤツテ来テ、彼ハ「アキラ」ヲ殺シ、ト私ニシマシ
タガ、私ハソノ信ジマセシマシタ。十一時、午後六時、

私ハ庭園ヲ働キ、本々仲向、所へ行ツテ、「アキラ」
ヲヲ訊キマシタガ、彼等ハ、彼ニ就テ何モ知リアセシマシタ。

一九四四年、昭和十九年、五月六日、十三時頃、午後一時頃、
「マクリ」ハ我々ヲ救ヒ、旧「キャンプ」ニ連シテ行キマシタ。

甚知テ我々ハ、木ニ下ツテ、其「アキラ」ヲ見タケアリマス。
齋田音談「マクリ」ハ、氣ヲ附ケル様ニ、サモナイト我々ニ

「アキラ」ト同様ニ死、目ニ過フト我々ニ警告ヲ致シマシタ。
/SHIRI RAN/、^ト私ハ「アキラ」ニ死体ヲ埋メマシタ。「アキラ」

花脚ハ折ラレテ居リ、出坐シテ井マシタ。彼、耳ニ毛、眼ニ毛
口ニ毛、血ノ氣ガ下リアセシマシタ。其ハ非常ニ死ニテ居リ

咽喉カラ三時程、スレテ野ニ触レテ居リアシタ。
私ハ「アキラ」ガ殺サレタ、イ「アキラ」ヲ存シテ居リアス。
彼ハ自殺シタ、デハアリマセン。

No. 2

/LUNGI KOBE/

Doc 5412

赤四三三号、工女「ルンギ」ヨク、八一九四五年、昭和。年、
 十月五日、曝問ヲ受ケ、正武堂^{（打書）}、後次、如、際、入、
 一九四四年、昭和十九年、五月五日、^{（MARI GUNSO）}「マタリ」^{（軍曹）}ハ「アキラ」、
 /FAKIRA/ヲ連行シマシタ。併ニ私ハ何故、リシテ何処、
 彼ガ「アキラ」ヲ連シテ行ツツ、知リマセシテシタ。
 彼等兩人ハ「アキラ」ト私ガ其、時、油、桶、中、ヲアツテ、
 「アキラ」ハ「アキラ」海岸、家、立、止、リ、マシタ。十一時頃、
 「マタリ」ガ「アキラ」ヲ殺シ、テ、私ニ云ヒ、マシ
 タガ、私ハ「アキラ」信ジ、マセ、シ、タ。十一時、午後六時、
 私ハ庭園、中、働、キ、中、ト、所、ハ、行、ツ、テ、「アキラ」、
 子、ヲ、見、マシ、タ、が、彼等ハ、彼ニ就、テ、何、モ、知、リ、マ、セ、シ、タ。
 一九四四年、昭和十九年、五月六日、十三時頃、午後一時頃、
 「マタリ」ハ、我々ヲ、殺、シ、テ、自、キ、マ、ン、ヲ、連、シ、テ、行、キ、マ、シ、タ。
 甚、処、下、我々ハ、木、ニ、下、ツ、テ、死、ス、ル、ヲ、見、タ、ド、ア、リ、マ、ス。
 藤田音談、ト「マタリ」ハ、氣、ヲ、附、キ、テ、サ、モ、イ、ト、我々、
 「アキラ」ト同様ニ死、シ、テ、自、己、ノ、死、ヲ、告、げ、マ、シ、タ。
 /SHIRI RAM/「マタリ」ト私ハ「アキラ」ノ、死、体、ヲ、埋、マ、シ、タ。「アキラ」
 左、脚、ハ、折、ラ、レ、テ、居、リ、出、血、シ、テ、居、マ、シ、タ。彼、ノ、身、ニ、毛、眼、ニ、
 口、ニ、毛、ノ、氣、ガ、下、リ、マ、セ、シ、タ。彼、ハ、非、常、ニ、死、ニ、居、リ
 咽、喉、カ、ラ、三、寸、程、ズ、レ、テ、野、ニ、触、レ、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ。

No. 2

私ハ「アキラ」ガ、殺、サ、レ、タ、ノ、事、ヲ、存、シ、テ、居、リ、マ、ス。
 彼、ハ、自、殺、シ、タ、ノ、事、ハ、ア、リ、マ、セ、ン。

Doc 5412

証書に証人ニ許シテ及讀テト。證人ニ録リ署名セ
ラシケリ。

(署名) LUNGI KOBE /
ルンギ・コベ

余ハ本書ガ一九四四年ノ昭和十九年ノ五月五日。若シクハ
其ノ前後ノ日ガ /NORGA/ ニ於テ印泰軍、(買ケル
アアキラノ殺害ノ嫌疑ニ因リ、IMAWATARI KUNDOSH)
裁判ニ與ル在ラバハ /RABAUL/ 軍手紙ニ、許シテ
統中ニ含マレド一六四三(四号。相模夫早ノ /GIANI/
及ビ中四五三号、五共 /LUNGI KOBE/ 等ニ署名シ、正式記録
真正ナル寫本ヲ内容トスルモノトシテ証明ス。

(署名) THOMAS F. MORNANE /
トマス・フ・モーナー、陸軍中佐。

No. 3.

Evidentiary Document No. 5414.

CONFIDENTIAL

SF6267 Jem QUTUBUDDIN 1 Bn. Hyderabad Inf. having been called on 19 September 1945 and duly sworn states:-

In the month of November, 1944, I was at NISHIZAKIYAMA with a party of 35 men. 2/Lt. FUKUHARA NICHOTAI was in charge of us. I and my men used to dig big shelters for coastal guns under CHIK-JEOLI (sappers and miners). Sometimes we used to fetch rations from a distance of 3 to 4 miles.

On 28 November, 1944, I and 29 other ranks were ordered by 2/Lt. GUKUHARA to bring rations from a distance of 4 miles. We brought all rations by 1500 hours. Regtl. No. 186 Sepoy ABDUL GAFFORE and Regtl. No. 830 Sepoy SHEIK SALEIGH BIN MOHD were detailed by the Japanese JOTAHAI FUZIWARA to dump all the rice bags and other articles in a neat ranner. After an hour those two Sepoys were returned to their barracks. After the fatigue hours as usual the men were boiling the water, for cleaning their ulcers. At such a time a Ha-ho SHAKOTA (Ha-ho means one who works for Japanese. Indonesians from JAVA and SULAWATI were called Ha-Hos and as such they were Japanese troops) came to the place where my men were boiling their water. SHAKOTA after seeing this went to Japanese JOTOHAI FUZIWARA and complained as usual that Indians were cooking rice. On hearing this JOTOHAI FUZIWARA, JOTOHAI KASIYA (Nursing Orderly) and JOTOHAI MASHUSHU rushed to the scene and searched all the cooking utensils but they could not find a single grain of rice. Failing in the attempt, they ordered all the Indians to fall in. When all the Indians fell in, JOTOHAI FUZIWARA asked who was the one who was cooking rice. Nobody answered this question because nobody was cooking the rice. Some of the men brought the boiling water and showed it to enquiring Japanese. But FUZIWARA and KASIYA did not believe this and started beating brutally all the Indians for three hours. Since Japanese could not find out rice from my soldiers, they dismissed them. My men due to severe beatings and bootings could not sleep that night.

On 29 November, 1944, after Morning Roll-call we were not given usual food but ordered to proceed on fatigue empty stomachs. Whereas the Ha-Hos were given food on that morning even though they also did the fatigue of fetching rations with us.

Japanese used to give the following rations to Indian POW:-

- | | | |
|--------------------------------------|---|-------------|
| 1. Rice - 50 grammes. |) | |
| 2. Sweet potato - 100 grammes |) | No curry to |
| 3. Papaiah - 100 grams |) | Indians |
| 4. Sweet potato leave - 100 grammes) |) | |

Japanese used to give the following rations to Ha-Hos (apart of Japanese troops):

1. Rice - 200 grammes)
2. Sweet potatoes - 200 grammes) Good Curry
3. Papaiah - 200 grammes)
4. Sweet potato leaves - 100 grammes)

The abovementioned food was so little and fatigue so tremendous that those human beings can only realize who had been through it. While doing fatigue soldiers used to say "our stomachs are burning with hunger". My stomach too was burning with hunger because I used to get the same food as men. I repeatedly reported to Japanese about the food but 2/Lt. FUKIHARA and the Sigi JOTCHAI FUZIWARA put it on deaf ears. I and my men saw our rice, fish and salt being given to Kanakas daily in exchange of good fruit and fresh vegetables for Japanese.

Under the pressure of extreme hunger my men reported to one CHIK-GEOB officer 2/Lt. TAKAHARA who was in charge of our fatigue. This officer in turn told all the Japanese officers in CHIK-GEOB about the NICHOTAI officer 2/Lt. FUKIHARA who was starving the Indians to death. 2/Lt. TAKAHARA fatigue in charge officer of Indian POW called 2/Lt. FUKIHARA and told him that Indians are doing heavy fatigue and the food is hopelessly insufficient. He ordered 2/Lt. FUKIHARA to give more food to Indians but 2/Lt. FUKIHARA thought that he was offended and never cared to increase the food. Extreme malnutrition and the cry of hungry Indians spread throughout the CHIK-GEOB officers and men. 2/Lt FUKIHARA was humiliated and accused by his brother officer on this issue.

2/Lt FUKIHARA to keep up his prestige and to get rid of the accusation planned the following scheme to revenge us.

Pte FUZIWARA and Nursing Orderly KASIYA under the cover of darkness and with two bags of rice and threw them in the bush in front of our barracks. After an hour a Japanese search party started searching the bush where the Japs had thrown the bags. Hardly they had searched the bush for five minutes before Japanese produced two bags of rice.

We were again ordered to fall in that night. Japanese came out and produced the two bags of rice and told us that Indians alone have stolen them. All of us denied but to no good effect. On the other hand we got severe beating again and then dismissed.

On 29 November, 1944, when we were on fatigue with empty stomachs 2/Lt. FUKIHARA came and took away with him Regtl. No. 186 Sepoy ABDUL GAFFORE and Regtl. No. 830 Sepoy SHEIK SALEIGH BIN MOHD without asking me. When my two men were

thus being taken away, I became suspicious due to yesterday's made up story by Japanese and followed them. We went to our camp after half-an-hour's rest in the camp 2/Lt. FUKIHARA took with him my Hav. Major MOHD NAVAZ KHAN, Sepoys ABDUL GAFFORE and SHEIK SALEIGH BIN MOHD without informing me. I saw 2/Lt. FUKUHARA was accompanied by Japanese soldiers KASIYA, MASHUSHI, and KHUDRA with rifles and spades. This sight made me more suspicious and restless and I asked Hav. Major NAVAZ KHAN to find out the full details.

After an hour my Hav Major MD NAVAZ KHAN returned and stated that Sepoys ABDUL GAFFORE and SHEIK SALEIGH BIN MOHD were shot by the orders of 2/Lt. FUKUHARA and 2/Lt. TAKAHEERA. Both these officers told Hav Major NAVAZ KHAN that abovementioned Sepoys were shot because of stealing rice.

I was an officer and was commanding a party of 35 men. 2/Lt. FUKUHARA did not either inform me that he was taking my men for shooting or enquire about them in full details. The abovementioned Japanese officers neither held any court-of-enquiry nor any court-martial but they straight away took two human beings and shot them ruthlessly like wild animals.

The statement is read over to the witness.

(Sgd) SF6267 QUTUBUDDIN Jem
Signature of Witness

Witness withdraws.

Certified true copy.
(sgd) T. MORNANE
Lt.-Col

I certify that this sheet and the preceding sheet bearing my signature is a true copy of the official record of evidence of SF6267 JEM QUTUBUDDIN contained in the proceedings of Military Court held at Kabaul relating to the trial of Captain NAKAMURA, MORIYAKI and Lieutenant FUKUHARA, SHOZO on a charge of murder in that they at NISHI ZAKIYAMA on or about 29th November, 1944, murdered Sepoy ABDUL GAFFORE and Sepoy SHEIK SALEIGH BIN MOHD both of 1 Bn HYDERABAD INFANTRY.

(Sgd) T. F. MORNANE
Lt. Col.

Doc 5414

大ニヤノ精屋ノ土倉兵(番隊兵)各「カシ」土倉兵ノ持、
場ニ馳セ付テ炊事道具全部ヲ檢査シテ、然レ一割、米ヲ見
出ス事ハ出来セザリシ。其、金トニ失敗スルヲ彼等ノ金印度
人ニ整列ヲ命ジテ、金印度人が整列スルト藤原土倉兵
ハ米ヲ炊テテヤタノノ誰カト尋ネシ。誰モ米ヲ炊テテヤ
カッタノヲ誰モ透サシニセシ。何人カ、人達ノ寓ヲ持ッ
来テ之ヲ訊問シテ、日本ノ人ニ見セシ。然レ藤原土倉兵
ハ之ヲ信ゼズ、金印度人ヲ三時間ニ亘リ残醒ニ強リ始メ、
日本人ハ私ノ部下カラ米ヲ見付テ得テカッタノヲ解放シ、
部下達ハ醒ク強メ、且ツ職ニシタテ、其、晚ハ眠シセシ。

一九四四年十一月二十九日我々朝礼點時後、イッモ、食
事ヲ給セシ又腹、減ラヌニ、使役ヲ遣ナル様命セシ。又
一方「カシ」人達ハ彼等ヲ我々ト一體ニ糧食ヲ持ッテクル使役ニ従事
シテ居ラズ、其、朝食事ヲタシシ。

日本人ハ次、食糧ヲ印度人使役ニテ、常トシテ付シ。

- 一 米 五十ポンド
 - 二 甘蔗 二百ポンド
 - 三 ポテト 二百ポンド
 - 四 甘蔗葉 二百ポンド
- } 印度人ニ「カシ」
ヲ支給セヌ

又日本人ハ「カシ」(日本軍隊一部)ニハ次、糧食ヲ支給シテ付シ。

- 一 米 二百ポンド
 - 二 甘蔗 二百ポンド
 - 三 ポテト 二百ポンド
 - 四 甘蔗葉 二百ポンド
- } 食糧「カシ」

No. 2

Doc 54/4

上述、食糧の甚だ僅かに勞役に及非常に甚大に下シタ、テ、ソレヲ
 経験シタ人ヲナクシ、ハ判ニナシ程ヲアリマシタ。使役ヲヤリナガ
 ラ兵連ハイツモ「空腹、タメ腹ガヒリノスル」ト云クテナシタ。
 私も兵連ト同シ食事を擧クテナシタ、私ノ腹モ空腹ヲ痛
 ニテナシタ。私ノ線り返シ食事をニシテ日本人ニ報告シタ。
 クガ「ス」少尉ヤ「シ」機原上等兵ハ「コ」ニ耳ヲカサナカシタ。
 私ト部下ノ我々、米、食、塩ガ毎日日本人、タメノ新鮮ト野菜
 良質、果實トノ交換、タメニ「カ」人ニ支「シ」ルヲ見シタ。
 余リノ空腹ニ耐エカヌテ私ノ (次頁ニ續ク)

No. 3

doc 54/4

部下、我々、使役係ヲヤツテ耳ル「チクジョウブ」築城部、將校「クハラ」
高原少尉ニ報告シタ。此、將校ハ印度人ヲ飢ニ死サセヨウトシ
テ耳ルニ中隊將校「マハラ」少尉、コトヲ「チクジョウブ」築城部、
全日本人將校ニ話シタ。印度人俘虜使役係高原少尉ハ、
「マハラ」少尉ヲ呼ビテ印度人ハ重労働ヲヤツテ居リ食物ハ絶望
的ニ不充足ナルト語リマシタ。彼「マハラ」少尉ニ計ニ印度人ニ
モット食糧ヲ與ヘル様命ジマシタガ「マハラ」少尉ハ侮辱サレタ
考へ米ニテ食糧ヲ増サウトシマセシマシタ。空腹ニ印度人ハ極端
ニ栄養不良ト嘆キガ「チクジョウブ」築城部、將校兵連、間
ニ擴ガリマシタ。「マハラ」少尉ハ此、問題ニツイテ同僚將校ニ
断然シラシ、責メタシマシタ。

「マハラ」少尉ハ威信ヲ保チ且非難ヲ除ク爲メ我々復讐言ハ
次ノ企テヲ計画シマシタ。

兵隊藤原ト看護兵「カシヤ」ハ夜陰ニ乘ジテ三袋ノ米ヲ持チ
之ヲ我々兵舎ノ前ノ叢ニ棄テマシタ。一時間後日本人捜査隊
ガ日本人ガ袋ヲ棄テタ叢取ヲ搜索シ始メマシタ。彼等ハ五分間モ
叢取ヲ搜索シテ中ニ日本人ハ二袋ノ米ヲ持チ出シマシタ。

其ノ夜我々ハ再び整列ヲ命ゼラシマシタ、日本人ハヤツテ來テ其
ノ袋ノ米ヲ示シ、印度人以外ニ盗シタ者ハナイト言ヒマシタ。我々ハ
イツレモ否定シマシタガ、何ノ效果モアリマセシマシタ。即チ我々ハ
又酷ク攻メシテ解放サレマシタ。

No. 4

一九四四年十二月二十九日吾々が空腹ヲ抱ヘテ労働ヲヤツテ耳ル
「マハラ」少尉ガヤツテ來テ私三團ノ下ニテ聯隊番号一八七印
度兵「アブガル」カフオレ及ビ聯隊番号八〇印度兵「シク」。

Doc 5414

サレイグ・ビン・モード」ヲ連レ去リマシタ。

斯ウシテ私ノ二人ノ部下ガ連レ去ラセタ時私ハ昨日ノ日暮人ニヨル作リ
詰ガアツタ爲疑念ラハサミ彼等ノ後ヲ追ヒマシタ。我々ハ收容所ニ
ユキマシタ。ソシテ收容所デ十分休憩シタ後「フクハラ」少尉ハ私
ニ知ラセズニ「モード・ナバツ・カン」曹長 印度兵「アブタル・ガフオア」
ト「レイク・サレイグ・ビン・モード」ヲ一緇ニ連レテユキマシタ。私ハ「フク
ハラ」少尉ト一緇ニ少銃ト「シヤベル」ヲ持ツタ日本兵「カシヤ」「マシユシ」
及「クツドラ」ガ同伴シテキルヲ見マシタ。此ノ光景ハ私ニ益々
疑ハシク不安ナラシメマシタ。デ「ナバツ・カン」曹長ニ事件ノ詳細
ヲ調ヘル様頼ミマシタ。

一時間後「モード・ナバツ・カン」曹長ガ歸ツテ來テ印度兵「アブタル
カフオア」及「レイク・サレイグ・ビン・モード」ハ「フクハラ」少尉及「タカ
ヒラ」少尉ノ命令ニヨリ銃殺サレタト述ベマシタ。此ノ二人ノ將校ハ「バ
ツ・カン」曹長ニ右ノ印度兵ハ米ヲ盗ンダ廉ニヨリ銃殺サレタト語り
マシタ。

私ハ將校「アリ」三十五人ノ一行ヲ指揮シテキタ將校「アリ」マシタ。
「フクハラ」少尉ハ私ニ銃殺ノ爲私ノ部下ヲ連レテユクコトヲ知ラセモセ
ズ又ハ彼等ニツイテ詳細ニ調査スルコトモシマセンデシタ。右ノ日本
人將校ハ審問法廷モ軍法會議モ開カズ、直チニ二人ノ人間
ヲ連レ去リ野獸ヲ殺キソ様ニ無慈悲ハニ銃殺シマシタ。

右陳述書ハ證人ニ讀ミ聞カセタ。

(署名) S.F. 六二七 クウブデイン ジム

證人ノ署名

證人退場

No. 5

Doc 5414

真正ノ黨十ニ口ニ證ス

(署名) 正ノ黨十ニ口ニ證ス

余、署名ナル者長及浦貞八ノカケテ、下流ノ上流及
 「アタラシク」少尉が同部隊十ニ口ニ證ス
 (其頃西崎山ニ於テ「アタラシク」兵隊隊長一
 大隊ノ面印度兵「アタラシク」及「アタラシク」
 「アタラシク」ヲ殺シタル事知ル「アタラシク」證ス
 タル事法廷ノ側々ノ空判ニ證ス其後、法廷ニ
 二包金ナリタル「アタラシク」兵隊隊長一

據記録ノ真正ノ黨十ニ口ニ證ス

(署名) 正ノ黨十ニ口ニ證ス

No. 6

Evidentiary Document No. 5413.

STATUTORY DECLARATION

I, NUM-A of NANGAGUA, do solemnly and sincerely declare as follows:

1. I am a native of NANGAGUA. Between the months of Dec. 44 and Mar 45, a party of about 30 Japanese were living in NANGAGUA.
2. Three Indians, whose names I do not know, were living with the Japanese.
3. One day, between Dec. 44 and Mar 45, some of the JAPANESE took a mosquito net and some calico from the INDIANS. The INDIANS objected to this. This made the JAPANESE angry.
4. The JAPANESE commander, named YAMAMOTO, and his 2 i/c, named MIAKI, then beheaded the three INDIANS and threw their dead bodies into the SCREW RIVER.
5. On 29 Dec. 45, from a line-up of JAPANESE I identified YAMAMOTO (now known to me as Lt. YAMAMOTO Jintaro) and MIAKO (now known to me as Sgt-Maj MIYAKAWA Kazuo) and pointed them out to Captain JOHN DAVID STEED, AALC, att 6 Aust. Div.

AND I MAKE this solemn declaration by virtue of the provisions of the STATUTORY DECLARATIONS ACT 1911-22 conscientiously believing the statements contained herein to be true in every particular.

DECLARED AT MOEM This 2nd. day of)
January, 1946 before me) NUM-A His X MARK

(sgd) JOHN DAVID STEED Capt.
Officer of AMF.

I certify that I, AI-INGO, Tul tul of JAMA, read the contents of the above statement (as interpreted to me by Lt. MacGregor) to NUM-A in his native tongue and that he understood the effect of his declaration.

AI-INGO HIS X MARK

I certify that I read over and explained to the above-named AI-INGO in PIDGIN the above statement of NUM-A and the certificate which he, the said AI-INGO, subscribed.

(sgd) W. A. MACGREGOR LT.
A N G A U

Certified true copy.
(sgd) T. Mornane
Lt.-Col.

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO ROOM 361

法 定 宣 言

私即チ「ナンガア」ノ「ヌム・ア」ハ段篇且
 ツ展覧ニ次ノ様ニ宣言シマス。

一 私ハ「ナンガア」ノ原産長テアリス。一九
 四四年十二月ヨリ一九四五年三月マデノ間、約
 三十名ヨリ成ル日本兵一隊ガ「ナンガア」ニ
 往シテ居マツタ。

三名ハ知リマセンガ三名ノ印度人ガ其日本兵ト一
 縮ニ往シテ居マツタ。

其 或ル日、即チ一九四四年十二月ト一九四五年三
 月トノ間、其ノ日本兵中ノ数名ガ一張ノ蚊帳ト
 白木綿ノ切地トヲ其印度人達カラ奪ヒマツタ。

印度人達ハ此事ニ抗議シマツタ。是ガ其日本兵
 等ヲ立腹セシメマツタ。

四 山本ト稱スル日本ノ指揮官ト彼ノ副指揮官「ミ
 アコ」トガソコテ三名ノ印度人ヲ斬首シマツタ。
 ソシテ彼等ノ死骸ヲ「ヌタル」川ニ投込シマツ
 タ。

其 一九四五年十二月二十九日日本兵ノ人列カラ山
 本（今私ニハ山本ジツタロウ中尉トシテ知ラレ
 テ居マス）及「ミアコ」（今ノ私ニハ宮川カヅ

Doc 5413

Doc 5413

法 定 宣 言

詔 諭 書 類 第 五 四 三 號

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

私 即 テ 「 ナ ン ガ グ ア 」 ノ 「 ス ム ・ ア 」 ハ 殿 齋 且

ツ 眞 實 ニ 次 ノ 様 ニ 宣 言 シ マ ス 。

「 私 ハ 「 ナ ン ガ グ ア 」 ノ 原 住 民 テ ア リ マ ス 。

一 九 四 四 年 十 二 月 ヨ リ 一 九 四 五 年 三 月 マ デ ノ 間 、 約

三 十 名 ヨ リ 成 ル 日 本 兵 一 隊 ガ 「 ナ ン ガ グ ア 」 ニ

住 シ テ 居 マ シ ヲ 。

三 名 ハ 知 リ マ セ ン ガ 三 名 ノ 印 度 人 ガ 其 日 本 兵 ト 一

緒 ニ 往 シ テ 居 マ シ ヲ 。

一 九 四 四 年 十 二 月 ト 一 九 四 五 年 三

月 ト ノ 間 、 其 ノ 日 本 兵 中 ノ 數 名 ガ 一 張 ノ 敷 帳 ト

白 木 綿 ノ 切 地 ト ラ 其 印 度 人 達 カ ラ 奪 ヒ マ シ ヲ 。

印 度 人 達 ハ 此 事 ニ 抗 議 シ マ シ ヲ 。

是 ガ 其 日 本 兵 等 ヲ 立 腹 セ シ メ マ シ ヲ 。

四 山 本 ト 稱 ス ル 日 本 ノ 海 軍 官 ト 彼 ノ 副 指 揮 官 「 ミ

ア コ ー ト ガ ソ コ チ 三 名 ノ 印 度 人 ヲ 斬 首 シ マ シ ヲ 。

ソ シ テ 彼 等 ノ 死 骸 ヲ 「 ス ク ル 」 川 ニ 投 込 ミ マ シ

タ 。

一 九 四 五 年 十 二 月 二 十 九 日 日 本 兵 ノ 人 列 カ ラ 山

本 (今 私 ニ ハ 山 本 ジ ャ ン ク ロ ウ 中 尉 ト シ テ 知 ラ レ

テ 居 マ ス) 及 「 ミ ア コ ー 」 (今 ノ 私 ニ ハ 宮 川 カ ガ

Doc 5413

ヲ首長トシテ知ラレテ居マス一ツ確メマシタ。
ソコテ私ハ濠洲第六師團所屬濠洲警備連絡部隊
ノ「ジヨシ・デービッド・スアイード」大尉ニ
彼等ヲ指導シマシタ。

而シテ叙ハル處ニ當マレテアル陳述ハ其各項ニ亙
リ眞實ナルニトシテ良心的ニ信ジテ、一九一一年並
ニ一九二二年制定ノ法定宣言令ニ準據シテ此ノ陳
述ナル宣言ヲ行シマス。

余ノ面前ニ於テ一九四六年ヌム・ア X 印
本一月二日「モヌム」ニ於テ宣言ス

ジヨシ・デービッド・スアイード大尉 (署名)

濠洲軍士官

私即チ「ジヤマー」ノ首長「アイ・インゴ」ハ上記
陳述ノ内容ヲ(「マクグレガー」中尉ニ依ツテ私
ニ通譯サレタ通りニ)土語ニテ「ヌム・ア」ニ讀
ミ聞カセタ事又彼ハ彼ノ宣言ノ趣旨ヲ了解シタ事
ヲ證明致シマス。

アイ・インゴ X 印

余ハ東洋英語ニテ「ヌム・ア」ノ上記陳述及ビ上
述「アイ・インゴ」ガ署名セシ證明書ヲ上記「ア
イ・インゴ」ニ反復讀ミ聞カセ且ツ説明セシコト
ヲ證明ス。

W・A・マクグレガー中尉 (署名)

アソガウ

X X X X X X X

2.

Ex. # 1812

Evidentiary Document No. 5411.

164232 Pioneer PARASURAM, 13 Aux Pioneers, having been called on 7 Oct. 45 and duly sworn, states:

On 12 Feb 45, I was working with a fatigue party at THOMA Camp TAKAYA BITHAI. Bindhu Mистри of 13 Pioneers was also in the party, and we were engaged in rolling heavy petrol drum uphill and stacking them in a tunnel. BHINDU was exhausted and requested the Jap Commander to give him 5 minutes rest, after which he would resume his work. The Jap Commander - KISHI GUNZO - was very annoyed at this request and commenced kicking and beating BHINDU MISTRY with a stick, which he kept up for half an hour at the end of which BHINDU MISTRY was unconscious. KHISHI GUNSO ordered me and three others to carry BHINDU MISTRY to Indian house., where after an hour, blood was flowing from his mouth, nose, urine and stools, and continued until the morning of 14th when, at 8 am BHINDU MISTRY died. I was present when he died. No medical treatment had been rendered him by the Japs.

Evidence is read over to witness and signed by Witness.

(Signed) PARASURAM
(Signature of Witness)

Interpreter's Certificate.

I, S/Clerk J. Clattery do hereby certify that this statement was made by PARASURAM in Hindustani and after same had been written down in English was read back to Witness in his own language before he signed it and the translation is a correct translation of Witness's evidence.

(Signed) J. Clattery
(Signature of Interpreter)

Certified True copy.

(sgd) T. Mornane Lt. Col.

I certify that this is a true copy of the official record of the evidence of 164232 Pioneer PARASURAM contained in the proceedings of Military Court relating to the trial of Sergeant KISHI, FUYOSHIKU of 26 Motor Vehicle Depot on the charge of murdering BINDHU MISTRY of 13 Aux Pioneers, Indian Army at or near THOMA on or about 14th February, 1945.

(sgd) T. Mornane Lt. Col.

證據書類 五四一

PARASURAM

第三補助工兵隊第一六四三二號 兵「ラスム」一九四五年(昭和二十年)十月七日喚問カシ正式宣誓後次如ク陳述ス。

TAKAYA BITHAI THOMAI

一九四五年(昭和二十年)二月十三日私「タカヤ・ビサイ」「トモ」

Doc

キム・ミン・ミストリ 雜役隊三屬(印度人)第一三兵隊「トモ」

モ亦同雜役隊三屬(印度人)「トモ」ヲ兵士上

「轉心」地下道、中へ積ミ上ルニ作業ヲシタ「トモ」ハ

トトニ疲テ日本人、隊長ニ五分間、休息ヲ與フ事ニ

願ヒ五分間ヲ再ビ作業ヲ始ル事ト言フニ日本人、隊長

長 キム・クン / KISHI GUNZO / 「此願ヲ聞クハ大ニ當惑シ

トモ・ミストリ」ヲ蹴リ棒ヲ毆シ始ル事トシ「トモ・ミストリ」

カ遂ニ意識不明ニ陥ラシメテ三十分間シテ續ク事カラシ

キム・クン / KISHI GUNZO / 「私ト他、三名、者ニ命ヲ」

トモ・ミストリ」ヲ印度人「隊」ニ運カセシ。其「隊」一時間後

彼ハ口鼻ニ出血シ尿及大便ヲ排泄シタ。之ヲ十四日朝

迄續キ其朝八時「トモ・ミストリ」ハ自心ヲ引取リタ。彼

死ニ時私ハ居合ヒタ。日本人、彼ニ何、医療ヲ施シ是

トモカシ。

證據書類ヲ証人ニ向テ讀ミ聞カセシ上証人ニ署名

(署名名)

PARASURAM

(証人、署名)

1872

12

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 5411

余の本書が「ト」若くは其の附近に於て一九四五年(昭和二十年)
 二月十四日若くは其の前後に印度軍第一三補助工兵隊所属
 「ロ」(「ミスター」)殺害、嫌疑に因り第一六三自動車補給部所
 属軍曹キシヨシキウ(KISHI RYOSHKU)、裁判に因り
 事法廷に訴訟手續中、倉庫第一六四三三號工兵に於
 て之を、證據、公式記録、真正に寫本に事ヲ證明ス

(署名) 陸軍中佐 T. MORNAME

Ex # 1873

Doc. No. 5416

page 1 *

6564 HAY CHANEKI RAJ. of H.K.S.R.A., having been called on 30th October, 1945, and duly sworn, states:-

On 12 Nov 44 I was digging a trench for Japanese truck in TOTABII Arca. About 1600 hours one single engined U.S.A. fighter plane made a forced landing, about 100 yards away from where I was working. The Japanese belonging to GO BUTAI KENMEBO Camp rushed to the spot and got hold of the pilot-aged about 19 years - who had come out of the machine himself before the Japanese reached him. General TAMURA also lived there in the Japanese Army Headquarters.

About half an hour from the time of forced landing, Japanese Military Police - KENTAI - beheaded the Allied pilot. I saw this from behind a tree and noticed Japanese cut his flesh from arms, legs, chest and hips and carried the same to their quarters. I was shocked at the scene and followed the Japanese, just to find out, what they do to the flesh. They cut the flesh to small pieces and fried it. About 1800 hours a Japanese high official (a Major-General) addressed about 150 Japanese mostly officers. At the conclusion of the speech a piece of the fried flesh was given to all present, who ate it on the spot.

I do not know the name of Japanese taking part in the action, but can recognise them. Moreover, KAWAGUCHI TAI of OO BUTAI KENMEBO and MASUDA Gunso of TAMADA TAI were present at the spot and could tell the name of Japanese actually involved in the affair.

Evidence is read over to Witness and signed by Witness

(Sgd) CHANEKI RAJ. Hay

(Sgd) A. McLellan Capt.
11 Aust. Div.

Doc 5416

證據文書第五四一六号

H.K.S.R.A. 第六五六四号 (イ.キ.サ.ラ.イ. 一九四五年十月三十日召喚状) 正死ニ宣旨シタ後速ニ

一九四四年十月十二日 我ハ日本ノ領土ノ為ニ「トク」地ニ於テ
動ニ候ヲ極メテ午後四時頃軍營ノ未戰闘機カ私働多ク
所カラ自「ド程離」所ニ不時着陸シテ剛「高澤」部隊ニ
「キ」ニ属シテ日本人ノ命令ニ「地」ニ往テ十九夜位
ノ操縦者ヲ捕テ「彼」ハ日本人カ到着スル前ニ自分ノ飛行機ヲ
下リテ「イ」ヲ將軍ニ其処ノ日本軍司令部ニ住ニテ
不時着陸ノ後「半」間程ニ日本憲兵隊カ聯合軍操縦士
ヲ斬首シテ私ノ樹木ノ後「見」テ日本人カ操縦士ノ腕
脚ノ胸臍ヲ切り取テ「自」命達ノ宿舎ニ運テ行クヲ
認メテ私ハ「先」者ニ認シテ日本人カ「肉」ヲドウスルカ「す
見」カト思テ後「ツ」テ行ク「彼」等ハ「肉」ヲカサ刻シテ「油」
揚ケテ午後六時頃或ル日本軍高級將校(少将)カ「五」名程
ノ大部分將校ノ日本人ニ演説ス「演説」時「肉」カ
一切「記」全者座者ニ與シ「彼」等「其」場「テ」テ食フ
私ハ「行」為ニ加フテ日本人ノ名前ノ知ラテ「顔」「憶」シテ
更ニ「部」隊「ヲ」知「カ」ラ「テ」「イ」ト「ハ」テ「タ」シ「ス」ド
クニ「ハ」テ「歸」ニ居候也實際ノ事件ニ係リ合フテ日本人
ノ名前ヲ生カシト「出」サレ

證據ハ證據人ニ對シ讀「聞」カシ證據人ニヨリ署名セリ

一署名一

一署名一

「キ」カ「ラ」イ「イ」
オーストラリア第十一師團
A. マクドラン 大尉

C. # 1874

Evidentiary Document No. 5446.

SYNO: IS - SOLOMON ISLANDS,
GILBERT AND ELLIC ISLANDS, NAU
AND OCEAN ISLAND.

Prosecution Document No. 5447 is a record of the interrogation of Captain Watanabe, Kaoru and Major Ito, Taichi, both of 17 Army I.F. Unit. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

In the course of the interrogation it was admitted that two American airmen who had come down in the sea between Taiof Island and Porton in Bougainville were beheaded on orders of H.Q. 17 Army. This happened in December, 1943.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5452 is a Netherlands Forces Intelligence Service report. I tender it for identification and marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

This report states that nine Ambonese members of N.E.I. forces were executed by the Japanese at Bougainville in 1944 for stealing food.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5262 is affidavit of Cher Chee a Chinese civilian captured in Hong Kong. I tender the document for identification and marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

I will read the marked excerpts of this affidavit.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5263 is record of interrogation of KANESEIRO FUKUKAN a Formosan. I tender this document for identification and marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent said that in December, 1942, or January, 1943, 600 white prisoners of war landed on Ballah Island. He was told that one was beheaded by a Japanese OZAKI on the night they landed. On night of 30 June, 1943, Ballah Island was shelled. The Japs were afraid of an allied landing and killed by bayonets or swords the surviving prisoners.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5425 is an affidavit by Lt. Commander Otsuki, Toshi iko of 18th Naval Construction Battalion. I tender it in evidence.

.....

The deponent says that towards the end of 1942, 527 prisoners were brought to Fella Island. They were to be used as labour for the construction of an aerodrome. He says, "On watching the POWs as they were disembarking from the transport although there were some who were extremely "peppy" the majority of them were so weak that they could not walk by themselves and were only barely able to do so with the help of their comrades." On the night the prisoners landed one was alleged to have attempted to escape. Upon recapture he was executed on instructions of deponent. Prisoners died rapidly owing to disease. At one stage three deaths were occurring daily. A large number of prisoners were killed by allied bombing.

A defence plan of the island was prepared. Under this prisoners of war were to be killed if an allied landing was made on the island. In April, 1943, news was received of the approach of allied ships. The surviving prisoners, about 90, were then bayoneted to death by the Japanese in accordance with plan.

.....

I refer the Tribunal to Prosecution Document No. 409A which is in evidence as Exhibit No.

I propose to read paragraph 8.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5398 contains the proceedings of an inquest held at Tarawa in October, 1944. I tender the proceedings for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The coroner found that twenty-two prisoners were killed by the Japanese at Fella, Tarawa on or about 15th October, 1942. At about that time American planes had bombed Japanese shipping at the island. After this had happened the Japanese beheaded the prisoners eighteen of whom were coast watchers in the service of the New Zealand Government.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5248 is affidavit of Mr. Taua, a civilian. I tender it for identification and marked excerpts in evidence

.....

The deponent says that on the night of the first Allied bombing of Nauru five white prisoners, including Colonel Chalmers were beheaded by the Japanese.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5252 is a statement by LEE CHONG HOI, a Chinese. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

The deponent was house boy to Colonel Chalmers. An American bombing raid took place on 25th March, 1943. Deponent never saw Colonel Chalmers or other European prisoners after this. He noticed that there was blood on the floor of the house where the Europeans had lived.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5246 is a record of interrogation of David Murdoch a Cilbertese. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

Murdoch was on Ocean Island up to July, 1943. There were six Europeans on the island. They were beaten and starved by the Japanese. Two of the Europeans had died by July, 1943. The Japs beheaded three natives for stealing early in 1943. Later the same year the Japanese erected an electric wire around Ooma Point. Three natives were told to race to the wire. As the natives touched the wire they were killed by electrocution.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5245 is record of interrogation of KAEUNALE a native of NIKUNAU ISLAND. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

Kabunare states that all Europeans on Ocean Island died or were killed. There were about 100 natives on the island when the war ended. The Japanese formed them into sections and marched them away. The hands of the natives of KAEUNALE'S section were tied. They were lined up on the edge of a cliff and the Japs opened fire. KAEUNALE recovered consciousness in the sea. There were a lot of dead bodies around him. He hid in a cave. Later the Japanese towed the dead bodies out to sea. KAEUNALE remained hidden until 2nd. December, 1945, when he first learnt that the Allies were in occupation of the island.

.....

Prosecution Document No. 5247 is a record of interrogation of Lieutenant Sakata, Jiro of 67 Garrison Regiment. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

Sakata says that in October, 1944, the natives on the island, about 100, were rounded up and killed by the Japanese.

.....

Evidentiary Document No. 5446.

Page 4.

Prosecution Document No. 5427 is a statement by Chief Petty Officer AIAI, KANUZO. I tender it for identification and the marked excerpts in evidence.

.....

AIAI gives an account of the killing of 8 natives on Ocean Island on 20th August.

.....

That completes the evidence relating to this section of the phase.

概略——ソロソノ解出
及心ノト及エリヌノ至、其ノ
不レニ記シタル。

△

5446

Evidentiary Document #

檢察圖書類本五三三號「香港總捕房」及「民間人」等之書類、口供
書類、檢下之、其印、附、簡所、枚萃、書類、提出致之。

檢察圖書類本五三三號「台灣人」會城福完音談問書字、
此書類、檢下之、枚萃、印、簡所、書類、提出致之。

檢察圖書類本五四三號「本十人海軍航空隊」
「附、簡所、枚萃、下之、書部、上之、提出致之。

此報告書、九四年八月二十三日、於「蘭印軍中」九人下、本之
食物採取故、以「臺灣」等、提出致之。

檢察圖書類本五三三號「香港總捕房」及「民間人」等之書類、口供
書類、檢下之、其印、附、簡所、枚萃、書類、提出致之。

檢察圖書類本五三三號「台灣人」會城福完音談問書字、
此書類、檢下之、枚萃、印、簡所、書類、提出致之。

檢察圖書類本五三三號「台灣人」會城福完音談問書字、
此書類、檢下之、枚萃、印、簡所、書類、提出致之。

檢察圖書類本五三三號「台灣人」會城福完音談問書字、
此書類、檢下之、枚萃、印、簡所、書類、提出致之。

54187C

No. 1

檢察圖書類本五三三號「台灣人」會城福完音談問書字、
此書類、檢下之、枚萃、印、簡所、書類、提出致之。

5446
doc

長尾崎憲彦^上中尉、口供書を下りて又。
之ヲ書證トシテ提出致シマス。

x x x x x x x x

證人、陳述ニ依リマス。一九四三年、暮春、五二七人ノ白人俘虜ガバウシ島ニ輸送サレ、飛行場建設、為、勞働ニ使用サレル事ニツイテ居リマシタ。證人ノ言葉通りニ申シマス。輸送船カウ上陸ニテ来ル、捕虜、状況ヲ見マス。中ニ件々元氣ヲ著モアリマシタガ大部分ハ衰弱ガ甚ク、獨リニ歩行出来ズ、戰友ニ扶ケラレテ、漸ク歩ケルト云フ者ガ相当多クアリマシタ。トノ事アリマス。上陸者夜ニ俘虜ハ脱走ヲ企テテ逮捕サレ直クニ證人ノ指令ニ依リ處刑サレタリマス。俘虜ハ疾患、為、急遽ニ倒シテ行キ、或ル時期、如キ連日ニツイテ死セヨ見タアリマシタ。非常ニ多数ノ俘虜ガ聯合軍ノ爆撃ニ依リ死セ致シマシタ。

x x x x x

同島防禦計畫ガ準備サレマシタ。此、計畫ニ從ヘバ、萬一聯合軍ガ此島ニ上陸ラ決行スレバ俘虜達ニ殺戮サレル事ニツイテ居リマシタ。一九四三年、四月聯合軍ノ艦船ガ近接シ、アルゴトガ報セラレタ。生存シテ居ル俘虜約九十名ハ計畫通り日本人ニ依リ銃劍ヲ刺殺サレタノデアリマス。

x x x x x

No. 2

書證第 九 號トシテ提出サレテ居ル檢察團書類第四。九號ノ Aニ法廷ノ注意ヲ喚起致シマス。

doc 544b

其ノ第六段ニ謂讀又ニ捕提過致シマス。

検察團書類第五二九八号ハ一九四四年十月二夕二ツノヲ
行ハルヲ訊問、記録が合シテ居リマス。此記録ヲ檢證トシ枚
萃、印、附イテ箇所ヲ書證トシテ提出致シマス。

檢屍官ハ一九四三年十月十五日又ハ十五日頃ニ夕二ツノハリオデ
ニ二人停屍が日本人ニ依リ殺戮セラル事案ヲ発見致シ
マス。其期日愛ニ米軍飛行機が日本軍同島上陸艦ヲ爆
撃シタル事アリマス。此爆撃後ニ同在軍人停屍ヲ斬首
シタル事ノ停屍中、十八日ニシテ政府軍海岸監
視員ニ下リマス。

検察團書類第五二四八号ハ民間人夕二ツノ音証
書アリマス。此ヲ檢證シテ又枚萃、印、附イテ箇所
ヲ書證トシテ提出致シマス。

檢證人ノ申シ立テ依リマスト第一回聯合軍が「十
ル」ヲ爆撃シタル夜、キナルマス大佐ヲ合ハ五人ノ白人停
屍が日本人ニ依リ斬首セラル事アリマス。

No. 3

Doc. 5446

檢察書類第五二四五号ハニフナウ島 / NIKUNAU ISLAND /、土人
ナルカブナレ / KABUNARE / ニカル訊問、記録デアリマス。私ハコレヲ
檢證トシ、其標記セル抜萃ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

カブナレ、陳述ニヨリバオーシヨン島ニオツタ西洋人ハ凡テ死亡シ若
クハ殺害サレタ。戦争ヲ終ツタ時ニハ此島ニハ約百名ノ土人が居タ。
日本人ハ是等ヲ幾ツカ、班ニ別ケテ他ニ連行シタ。カブナレ、班、
土人ハ兩午ヲ縛ラシテ居リ。是等ヲ崖、端ニ列バセテ置イテ、日本
人ハ是ヲ射撃シタ。カブナレハ海中ニテ意識ヲ回復シ
シタ。彼、周リニハ死骸ガ一杯アリタ。彼ハツ、洞穴ノ中ニ隠
シタ。其後日本人ハ死骸ヲ海上ニ曳キ去リタ。カブナレ
ハ一九四五年十二月二日ニテ、即チ此島ガ聯合軍ニヨツテ占領サレ
タ事ヲ始メテ知ツタ時迄隠シテ居リタ。

檢察書類第五二四七号ハ第六十七守備隊 坂田次郎中尉
ノサカタ、ジロ音訊 / 訊問記録デアリマス。
私ハコレヲ檢證トシ、其標記セル抜萃ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

(次頁へ続く)

No. 4

No. 5

5446

坂田、言つ処ニヨリハ、一九四四年十月、此、島ニ、土人約百人が
 居リマシタガ、日本人ニヨリテ集メテシテ殺サレマシタ。
 捜索書類第五四三号ハ、兵曹長荒井角藏
 /ARAI. KAKUZO 吾談/ニヨリ陳述デアリマス。私ハ之ヲ
 檢証トシ、其標記セル板葦ヲ證據トシテ提出セシマス。

荒井ハ八月五日、オシヨシ島ニ於ケル八人、土人殺害ニ関
 スル陳述ヲなシ居リマス。

以上ヲ以テ此部面ニ関スル證據ヲ完了セシマス。

5446

檢察書類第五二五三號、中国人リー・ウ・ウ・ウ / LEE CHONG WONG / 陳述を下り、私之ヲ檢證トシ其標記也此拔萃箇所ヲ證據トシテ提出致シマス。

證人、ウ・ウ・ウ・ウ / COL. CHALMERS / ボーイ下り、一九四三年三月二十五日米軍、爆撃を下り、此時以後證人、ウ・ウ・ウ・ウ 他ニ其他、西洋人、傷亡ヲモ見テ事カ下リ、彼、云、所、言、ニ、西洋人、集居、居、テ、都、屋、亦、三、四、振、カ、テ、居、テ、見、テ、。

檢察書類第五四六號、ギバート島 / GIBERT ISLAND / ボーイ下り、
/ DAVID MURDOCK / ニ、對、シ、訊、問、記、録、下、リ、私、之、ヲ、檢、證、ト、シ、其、標、記、也、此、拔、萃、ヲ、證、據、ト、シ、テ、提、出、致、シ、マ、ス。

ボーイ、一九四三年七月、オーストラリア島 / OCEAN ISLAND / 居リ、此島、ニ、多、ク、西、洋、人、が、居、テ、。彼等、日、本、人、を、殺、打、サ、シ、且、饑、エ、カ、セ、テ、。西、洋、人、四、名、一、九、四、三、年、七、月、頃、ニ、死、ニ、。一、九、四、三、年、初、メ、頃、日、本、人、三、名、夫、ヲ、竊、盜、故、以、テ、斬、首、ニ、。其、後、同、年、日、本、人、オ、オ、マ、岬 / OOMA POINT / 周、圍、ニ、電、線、ヲ、架、設、シ、三、人、夫、レ、此、線、ヲ、競、走、セ、テ、。夫、レ、連、レ、此、電、線、ニ、觸、ル、ト、同、時、ニ、感、電、ニ、テ、死、ニ、。

No. 6

Q. #1875

Eyidentary Document No. 5447.

BOUGAINVILLE WAR CRIMES.

EXHIBIT "A"

I, SX10334 Major Douglas John McPAIN of Army Headquarters, Melbourne, make oath and say:

- 1. I am an officer of the Australian Military Forces.
- 2. Annexed hereto and marked Exhibit "A" is a true copy of an Interrogation of Capt. WATANABE KAORU and Major ITO, Taichi on 7 November, 1945, which I have in my custody in the course of my duties.
- 3. The original abovementioned document cannot be made available immediately as it is required for trials of minor war criminals.

Sworn before me at Melbourne)
this 27th day of May, 1946.) (Signed) Douglas McBain
Major.

(Signed) W. Bunsell Capt.
An officer of the Australian
Military Forces.

Capt. WATANABE Kaoru of 17 Army LP Unit and later of 38 Bde MP Unit being questioned with the assistance of Sgt. M. RUGLESS (of RAAF att ATIS) states:

I arrived at RABAUL 22 Mar 43,
EREVENTA 28 Mar 43
then to NEW GORGIA until Sep 43
then to EREVENTA until 27 Oct 43
then to TALENA-PORTON area, arriving 6 Nov 43 departing 27
May 45 then to NUMA NUMA until surrender.

Q. At TARIENA did you have a w/o MORITA with you?
A. Yes - before I arrived there, several small MP units were operating under W/O MORITA Hachisaburo. When I arrived I took over from him and he remained with me.

Q. Where is MORITA now?
A. He died of malaria and another fever about 30 May 45 at NUMA NUMA.

Q. How many white prisoners did you know of while you were at TALENA?
A. Three.

Q. Were they under your control or the control of any of your MPs?

A. The orders concerning them came from MP HQ at 17 Army HQ EREVENTA (Major ITO Taichi - now at FAURO ISLAND)

Q. Were they all together,
A. There was one on his own - the other two were together.

Q. When did you first see them?
A. One was at TARLENA when I arrived.

Q. Did you know about him before you arrived?
A. No.

Q. Who was in charge of the prisoners when you arrived?
A. MOH.ITA, acting direct under orders from MP HQ at 17 Army

Q. What was their nationality and arm?

A. US flyers.
Q. What ranks?

A. Two were 2/Lts. and one a Sgt. They were all airmen - I think they were bomber pilots.

Q. Did you hear when and where they had been captured?

A. One, an officer, was captured at TAILENA about the beginning of Nov. 43. The other two in Dec. 43 at PORTON.

Q. Where were you when the latter two were captured?
A. About 6 kilometres from the coast at PORTON.

Q. Did you hear whether the first one came down at TAHIENA or whether he was brought there from another island?

A. Natives handed him over to the local MPs.

Q. Was his name NORMAN?
A. I cannot recollect it - it may have been.

Q. What happened to him?
A. He went to RABAUL about the end of Nov 43 on a submarine.

Q. Did you see him go aboard the submarine?
A. No. I saw him on his way to it.

Q. Did you hear of him after that?
A. No.

Q. What unit would hold him at KABAUL?

A. No. 6 MP Field Unit.

Q. Were the two captured at PORTON shot down over that place?

A. I didn't see the crash but I heard they came down there.

Q. Crash land or parachutes?

A. Parachutes.

Q. Had there been a raid on PORTON at the time?

A. Yes. There were raids every day in that area.

Q. What type of plane was it?

A. I heard that they were Lightnings escorting the bombers, but I didn't see them.

Q. Did you hear their names?

A. Yes, at the time, but I can't recall them now.

Q. What happened to them?

A. They parachuted into the sea between TAI OF ISLAND and PORTON, and when they reached land they were taken to the MPs. Under Orders from 17 Army they were executed. They had attempted to escape. One of them had a pistol. They were recaptured. They were executed because of that.

Q. Who reported the attempted escape?

A. MORITA reported it to me and I reported it by signal to MP HQ at 17 Army EREVENTA.

Q. How long did it take to get the reply?

A. One week after I sent the wire I received the reply "They must be killed."

Q. Who did you order to carry that out?

A. I gave the order to MORITA who carried it out with two subordinates:

1. S/A AHIKAWA Tatsuo. He later went to KABAUL escorting Japanese soldiers for court-martial. On the way back the submarine was sunk and AHIKAWA drowned.
2. Sgt. SUZUKI Tainiji.

Q. Did MORITA report afterwards having carried out your orders?

A. Yes.

Q. Did you then report that to MP HQ at 17 Army?

A. Yes.

Q. Did MORITA say who had beheaded the prisoners?
A. S/M AIKAWA beheaded one and KITAMURA the other

Q. Who is KITAMURA?
A. A supply officer - he was at the depot at EREVENTA before going to TARLENA.

Q. What had he to do with the matter?
A. The S/M's sword didn't cut too well so he handed over the 2nd. prisoner to KITAMURA.

Q. Why was KITAMURA at the execution?
A. His house was nearby and he must have gone as a spectator.

Q. Are those 3 the only white prisoners you have seen?
A. Yes.

Q. Did you meet Capt. (Then 1/Lt) IKEBA at TAKIENA?
A. Yes.

Q. Were any of these white prisoners taken to IKEBA's hut at any time?
A. No.

Q. Do you speak English?
A. No.

Q. How did you talk to the prisoners?
A. I would use the interpreter OKUSA.

Q. How do you account for IKEBA saying that in Nov 43 he had given a cup of tea to two US airmen prisoners?
A. IKEBA was at the wharf at POHTON and there saw 2 prisoners and invited them to his house for some tea. I forgot until you reminded me.

Q. Are you in the same compound as Major Ito?
A. Yes - No. 1 area.

MAJOR ITO Taichi of 17 Army LP Unit being questioned with the assistance of Agt. M. HUGLESS (of RAAF att ATIS) says:

Q. In Nov-Dec. 43 were you in charge of LP unit at 17 Army at EREVENTA?
A. Yes - from Oct. 43.

Q. Was WATANABE under your command?
A. Yes.

Q. In Dec. 43 did you receive a signal from WATANABE reference two US airmen?

A. Yes.

Q. What was in the signal?

A. This wire explained that they had tried to escape and offered resistance and asking for orders as to treatment of them.

Q. What did you do on receipt of that signal?

A. I took it to Maj (Now L-Col) MIYAKAWA at the office of Chief of staff 17 Army (Maj-Gen AKINAGA).

Q. Did MIYAKAWA tell you what to do?

A. We conferred and I think I wrote the reply, but I've handled so many signals that I do not remember now. As that was 2 years ago I cannot recall it very well.

Q. Whose decision was it?

A. It was not mine - it was the HQ.

Q. What was the reply?

A. That they should be killed.

Q. Did you or MIYAKAWA discuss the matter with anyone else before sending the reply?

A. I don't know. There were other officers at the HQ who may have come in.

This is the document marked Exhibit "A" referred to in the Affidavit of SX10334, Maj. D. J. LxBain, A.H.Q., sworn before me this 27th day of May, 1946, as being produced and shown to him at this time of his swearing his said Affidavit.

(Signed) ..W..BUNSELL...Capt.

Doc 5447

證據書類第五四四七號

「ブーゲンザイル」戦争犯罪

證據書類「A」

余、即チ「メルホルン」陸軍司令部附、S X - O
三三陸軍少佐「ダグラス・ジョン・マクベイン」
ハ宣誓シ左ノ如ク述べマス。

- 一、私ハ遠洲陸軍ノ將校デアリマス。
- 二、此處ニ添付シ、證據書類「A」ト記シテ附セ
ラレタル一九四五年十一月七日ニ於ケル「ワタ
ナベカオル」大尉及ビ「イトウタイテ」少佐ノ
証聞書ハ眞正ナル寫本デアリマス。右ヲ私ハ職
務上保管シアヘマス。
- 三、前記書状ノ原本ハ下級戦争犯罪者ノ裁判ニ必
要トセラルル故ニ、直チニ利用スル事ハ不可能
デアリマス。

陸軍少佐 「ダグラス・マクベイン」 (署名)

一九四六年五月二十七日「メルホルン」ニ於テ余ノ前ニ
於テ宣誓サル。

遠洲陸軍將校

「W・ブンセル」大尉 (署名)

第十七軍憲兵隊附後ニ第三十八放口憲兵隊附トナ
レル「ワタナベカオル」陸軍大尉ハ「M・ラグルス」

1.

Doc 5447

算曹（聯合國加譯通譯部附設演習班）松佐ノ下ニ
訊問セラレ、左ノ如ク答フ。

私ハ一九四三年三月二十二日ニ「ラバウル」ニ、
一九四三年三月二十八日ニ「エレヰエソタ」ニ夫
々到着シマツタ、ソレヨリ一九四三年九月マデハ
「ニエカジョリア」ニ、次デ一九四三年十月二十
七日迄ハ「エレヰエソタ」ニ居リ、次デ一九四三
年十一月六日ニ「タイレブ」・ポイント「地原」ニ到
着シ、一九四五年五月二十七日ニ向地ヲ去リ、降
伏當時マデ「ヌマヌマ」ニ居マツタ。

問、「タイレブ」ニ於テ貴方ハ「モリタ」准尉ト
一編デシタカ、

答、ハイ、私ガ該地ニ着ク前ニ該編ノ憲兵小部隊
ガ「モリタ」ハチサテ「ウロウ」准尉ノ下ニ活動シ
テ居マツタ。私方到着スルト私ハ彼ノ任務ヲ
引継ギ彼ハ我々ト共ニ居マツタ。

問、「モリタ」ハ今何處ニ居マスカ、
答、彼ハ一九四五年五月三十日「ヌマヌマ」ニ
於テマラリア及ビ他ノ熱病デ死亡シマツタ。

問、「タイレブ」ニ居ツタ間ニ貴方ハ幾人ノ白人
僱傭ヲ知リマシタカ
答、三人デス。

Doc 5447

3.

問、彼等ハ貴方ノ管理下ニアリマシタカ、或ハ貴
方ノ下ノ憲兵ノ管理下ニアツタノデスカ、
答、彼等ニ屬スル命令ハ「エレヴェンター」第十七
軍司令部附憲兵隊本部（「イトウタイチ」少佐
目下「フアウロ」島ニ在リ）カラ來マシタ。
問、彼等ハ全部一掃デシタカ
答、一人ハ單獨テ居マシタ。他ノ二人ハ一掃デシ
タ。
問、何時彼等ヲ始メテ見マシタカ、
答、私が到着シタ時一人ハ「ターレナ」ニ居マシ
タ。
問、到着スル前ニ、彼ニツイテ知ツテ居マシタカ
答、イエエ
問、貴方が到着シタ時ニハ誰が俘虜ノ状態ヲシテ
居マシタカ、
答、「モリター」デス、第十七軍附憲兵本部ノ命令
下ニ直接任務ヲ行ツテ居マシタ。
問、彼等ノ團體及び兵器ハ何デシタカ、
答、合衆國飛行士デシタ。
問、階級ハ、
答、二人ハ少尉、一人ハ軍曹デシタ。彼等ハ皆空
軍員デシタ。爆撃機操縦士ダツタト思ヒマス。
問、貴方ハ何時、何處デ彼等ガ俘虜トナツタカ、
問キマシタカ、

Doc 54147

答、一人、一將校一ハ一九四三年十一月ノ初メ頃
ニ「タイレス」ヲ捕ヘラレマシタ。他ノ二人
ハ一九四三年十二月ニ「ボートン」ニ於テデ
ス。

問、「ボートン」ヲ捕ヘラレタ二人ハ其ノ孰ノ上
望ヲ察スサレタノデスカ

答、私ハ墜落ハ見マセンデシタガ彼等ガ其處ニ降
下シタトイフ事ヲ聞キマシタ。

問、墜落デシタカ「バラシウイト」降下デシタカ

答、バラシウイト降下デシタ。

問、當時「ボートン」ニハ望機ガアリマシタカ

答、ハイ、其ノ地方ニハ毎日望機ガアリマシタ。

問、何型ノ飛行機デシタカ

答、艦隊機ヲ裝備スル「ライトニング」機デシタ
ト聞キマシタガ、私ハソレ等ヲ見マセンデシタ。

問、彼等ノ名前ヲ聞キマシタカ

答、ハイ、其ノ當時聞キマシタガ今ハ思ヒ出セマセン。

問、彼等ハ何ウナツタデスカ、

答、彼等ハ「バラシウイト」デ「タイオフ」島ト
「ボートン」ノ奥ノ海中ニ降下シマシタ、陸
地ニ着イタ時、彼等ハ憲兵ノ所ニ遺レテ行カ
レマシタ。第十七章ノ命令ニ依リ彼等ハ死刑
ニ處セラレマシタ。彼等ハ逃亡シヨウトシマ
シタ。一人ハ拳銃ヲ持ツテ居マシタ。彼等ハ
再ビ捕ヘラレマシタ。其ノ爲ニ死刑ニ處セラレタノデス。

44.

Doc 5447

問、逃亡が企てられた事ヲ誰が報告シタノデスカ、

答、「モリタ」が私ニ報告ラシマシタ、ソレテ私ハ
「ユレヴユンタ」第十七軍附憲兵本部ニ信號ヲ
以テ報知シマシタ。

問、答ヲ得ルマデハ、下ノ位カ、リマシタカ、

答、無線ヲ設シテカラ一週同從ニ、私ハ「彼等」ヲ殺
スベシトイフ答ヲ受ケマシタ。

問、ソレヲ誰ニ命ジテ實行サセマシタカ、

答、私ハ「モリタ」ニ命令ヲ下シ、彼ハ左記二人ノ
部下ト夫ニソレヲ實行シマシタ。

「アリカワタツオ」曹長、彼ハ從日、算法官
議ニ付セラレル日本兵ヲ護送シテ「ラバウ」
ニ行キマシタ、歸路、清水澤ガ裏流サレ「ア
リカワ」ハ溺死シマシタ。

「ススキタイニシ」算下。

問、彼テ「モリタ」ハ、長方ノ命令ヲ實行シタコト
ヲ報告シマシタカ、

答、ハイ。

問、ソレカラ貴方ハ其ノ事ヲ第十七軍附憲兵本部ニ
報告シマシタカ、

答、ハイ。

問、「モリタ」ハ誰ガ停房ノ首ヲ切ツタカ、云ヒマシ
タカ、

Doc 5447

答、 「アリカワ」 官長ガ一人ノ首ヲ切り「キタム」
ガ他ノ者ノ首ヲ切りマシタ。

問、 「キタム」トハ誰デスカ、

答、 補給將校デス、 彼ハ「ダイレナ」ニ行ク前「エ
レヴェンタ」ノ兵站ニ居マシタ。

問、 彼ハ何カ此事柄ニ關係ガアツタノデスカ、

答、 官長ノ刀ハアマリ良ク切レナカッタノデ、 彼ハ
二番目ノ俘虜ヲ「キタム」ニ渡シマシタ。

問、 何故「キタム」ハ徒刑ノ場ニ居タノデスカ、

答、 彼ノ家ハ近クニアリマシタノテ見物ニ行ツタモ
ノト思ハレマス。

問、 貴方が見タ白人俘虜ハ此等三人デスカ、

答、 ハイ。

「M. ラグルス」 軍曹 (聯合國翻譯通譯部附屬
洲空軍)ノ補佐ノ下ニ訊問ヲ受ケタル第十七軍
附屬兵隊ノ「イトウタイチ」 陸軍少佐ハ左ノ如
ク述ブ。

問、 一九四三年十一月ト十二月ニ貴方ハ「エレヴェ
ンタ」第十七軍附屬兵隊ノ指揮ヲシテ居マシタ
カ、

答、 ハイ、 一九四三年十月カラデス。

問、 「ワタナベ」ハ貴方ノ指揮下ニアリマシタカ、

答、 ハイ。

Doc 5447

問、一九四三年十二月ニ貴方ハ合衆國飛行士ニ陳
テ「ワタナベ」カラ借號ヲ受ケマシタカ、

答、ハイ。

問、其ノ借號ハ何テシタカ、

答、此ノ借號ハ彼等ガ逃亡ヲ企テ、抵抗ヲ爲シタ事
ヲ説明シ、彼等ノ處置ニツイテノ命令ヲ仰イダ
セノテス。

問、此ノ借號ヲ受ケテ貴方ハ如何ニシマシタカ、

答、私ハソレヲ第十七軍參謀長（「アキナガ」少將）
ノ事務所ニ居ル「ミヤカワ」團長少佐（現在ハ
中佐）ノトコロニ持ツテ行キマシタ。

問、「ミヤカワ」ハ如何ニスベキカラ貴方ニ云ヒマ
シタカ、

答、我々ハ相談ラシマシタ、私ガ答ヲ尋イタト恩ヒ
マスガ、山ノ借號ヲ取扱ツテキマシタノテ今迄
エテキマセン。二年前ノ事テスカラ私ハソノ事
ヲ真ク恩ヒ出ス事ガ出来マセン。

問、誰ガソレヲ決定シタノテスカ、

答、私テハアリマセンデシタ。——本部テシタ。

問、答ハ何テシタカ、

答、彼等ヲ慰スベシトイフノテシタ。

問、答ヲ送ル前ニ、貴方或ハ「ミヤカワ」ハ誰カ外
ノ者ト其ノ事務所ヲ審議シマシタカ、

8.

Doc 5447

巻、知りません。本部ニハ他ノ將校ガ居マシタ、ソ
ノ人達ガ相談ニハ入ツタカモシレマセン。

本巻類ハ陸軍司令部附、S X 一〇三三四、陸軍少佐
「D・J・マクベイン」ノ陳述書ニ引用シアルトロロ
ノ証據書以「A」ト記シテ附シタル文書ニシテ、同
少佐ガ上記陳述書ニ宣誓ラナスニ當リテ彼ニ呈示セ
ラレシモノナル事ヲ、本一九四六年五月二十七日私
ノ函ニ於イテ宣誓サル。

「W・ブンセル」大尉 (署名)

C. # 1876

Evidentiary Document No. 5452.

C E R T I F I C A T E

The undersigned CHARLES JONGENEEL, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., head of the War Crimes Section of NETHERLANDS FORCES INTELLIGENCE SERVICE (NEFIS), being first duly sworn on oath deposes and states that the annexed reports are full, true, complete and accurate copies of the original documents entitled:

"NEFIS Interrogation Reports, Informants Frederik TAMAELE (No. 1976), Mesak SOPLANTILA (No. 1850), Jacob SIAHAJA (No. 1851/2) and Leonard Frans SAIJA (No. 1853), concerning the maltreatment and murder of ten (or nine) Ambonese N.G.O's and Soldiers R.N.I.A. by Japanese, on Bougainville Island, in September, 1944,"

which documents are part of the official records of NEFIS.

SIGNATURE:

Stamp of Intelligence Service
Netherlands Forces.

BATAVIA, June 7th, 1946.

Subscribed and sworn before me K.A. de WEEKD, first Lieutenant R.N.I.A., Higher Official attached to the Office of the Attorney-General N.E.I.

SIGNATURE: K. A. de WEEKD (Sgd).

PELUFESSI, Pte., AMBONESE, was maltreated and killed at TANIBABO, Bougainville, 13 Aug. 1944.

Informant: MESAK SOPLANTILA, Ambonese
Reliability: Intelligent; information considered reliable.
Person responsible: Sgt. MATSUASI, Japanese
Sgt. SUSUKI, Japanese
Cpl. KOEIASI, Japanese
Pte. TJOMORA, Japanese

HEARSAY:

On Sunday, 13 Aug. 1944, nine Ambonese members of the Heiho were shot because they had stolen food from a food godown. This had occurred during the past month. Not until three quarters of the stores were stolen were the thefts discovered by the Japanese. After investigation, which was led by the Japanese Commander IKEBA, the nine Ambonese were named as the perpetrators. During the investigation all Ambonese (82 men) were tied with their hands behind their backs, and they were forced to remain thus for 36 hours, during which time no food and no water was given them. All of them were beaten continuously for two hours by the Japanese attached to the Heiho Company. After 6 hours the perpetrators were found,

and taken from the others by the Japanese Sgt. MATSUASI, Japanese Sgt. SUSUKI, Cpl. KOPIASI, Pte. TJOI'OKA. Matsusi carried an automatic rifle with him. The nine Ambonese were then shot, some one to 2 km from the place where the other Ambonese remained tied up. This was later told by the British Indians, who had to dig the graves for the victims. Names of the victims are:

Sgt. PATI
Cpl. TONI LOHOLIMA
Pte. PELUFESSI
Pte. SJMOKIL
Pte. 1st. cl. ROMOLEUNE
Pte. LATUMAHENA
Cpl. SOJEA,
Cpl. OKELIAL
Fus. TALAHATU

INTER. REPORT NO. 1850.

Further to the above reports:

Informant: SIAHAJA, Jacob, Ambonese.
Reliability: Average intelligence, reliable.
Person responsible: Japanese, names not stated.

HEARSAY:

At Kg. Teninbaubau, Bougainville Isl., April 1944, informant witnessed the tying together of all Ambonese Ichi Personnel (about 58). The Japanese picked out nine men at random, and shot them. The rest were tied up for two days. Informant heard that the reason for this action was because some of them had stolen food from the Japanese and thrown it away into the jungle so that the Japanese would starve. The names of the nine men who were killed (Ambonese NEI Army Personnel) are as follows:-

JOHANNES SOUMOKILL,	Private
WILHELMUS LATUMAHINA,	Private
TALAHATU,	Private
ZETH PATTY	Sergeant
SIMON THUNY	Corporal
SOUSA	Corporal
RUMALAIN	Private
OKILAL	Corporal
C. PELUFESSY	Private

INTER. REPORT NO. 1851/2.

Further to the above reports:

Informant: SAIJA, Leonard Frans, Ambonese.
Reliability: Intelligence above average; his
information is considered reliable.
Person responsible: Japanese, names not stated.

FACTUAL:

At Teninbaubau, Bougainville Isl., Aug. 1944, nine Ambonese Heiho's were shot accused of stealing food from the Japanese. The other 58 Ambonese were tied together for 36 hours and received no food or drink during that time. They were beaten by the Japanese with carbines, shoes and sticks, etc.

INTER. REPORT NO. 1853.

Attached to the above report are the following names of the victims:

PELUPESSY	Private 1st. class
SOUMOKIL	Private
URILAL	Corporal
PATTY	Sergeant
TUNILUHULIMA	Corporal
SUISA	Corporal
HALATU	Private
LATULAHINA	Private
RULALAINY	Private 1st. class.

Further to the above reports:

Informant: TAMAEELA, Frederik, Ambonese, Cpl R.N.I. Army.
Reliability: Average intelligence, information is considered to
be reliable.
Person responsible: Japanese, names not stated.

Hearsay:

The undermentioned N.E.I. Army personnel have been killed by the Japanese in Teninbaubau (Bougainville Island) in Sept., 1944:

PATTY: Ambonese	Sergeant	PELUPESSY: Ambonese	Private
SOISA: "	Corporal	SOUMOKIL: "	"
TUNILUHULIMA "	Corporal	LATULAHINA "	"
URILAL: "	Corporal	TALAHATTU "	"
RUIALOINE "	Private 1st. Class.	SAHETAFIJ "	"

INTER. REPORT NO. 1976.

NOTE: Whereas previous informants stated 9 were killed, this informant states 10 were killed.

Doc 5452

余即チ、南領東印度校警總長事務所附高級職員和
南王領東印度軍中尉、「E. M. D. ウィヤード」
ノ面前ニ於テ掌摺署名サル。

署名 「E. M. D. ウィヤード」 (署名)

× × × × × ×

上記報告續報

報道者、「アンボン」人「サイデヤ・レオナ
ルド・フランス」

調査は、普通以上ノ智識、彼ノ情報ハ信頼シ
得ルト認メラル。

責任者、日本人、氏名ハ記以シ非ラズ。

事實

一九四四年八月ニ、「ブーゲンヴィル」島「テ
ニンバウバウ」ニ於テ九人ノ「アンボン」人ノ
兵備ガ、日本人ノ食物ヲ盗ミタル咎ヲ以テ射殺
サレタ。他ノ五十八名ノ「アンボン」人ハ三十
六時間一掃ニ縛ラレタ、其ノ間何等ノ食物モ飲
物モ與ヘラレナカツタ。彼等ハ日本人ニ管リ時
銃、煙草、棒ナドヲ以テ殴打サレタ。

× × × × × ×

1.

Doc 54, 52

2.

報 告 書 第 一 八 五 三

上記報告書ニハ左記職任者ノ氏名ガ添附サレテ居ル。

「ペラベシイ」	一 等 兵
「ソウモキル」	兵 卒
「ワリラル」	伍 長
「バテイ」	軍 曹
「トクニルハリマ」	伍 長
「スイサ」	伍 長
「ハラトウ」	兵 卒
「ラトウマヒナ」	兵 卒
「ルマライニ」	一 等 兵

× × × × × × ×

Doc 5452 (cont)

證據卷第五四五二

證 明 書

下記署名ノ和蘭軍情報部 (N B F I S) 戦争犯罪部長、和蘭王國東印度軍中尉「チャイルス・ヨングニール」ハ正當ニ宣誓ヲナセル上、添付ノ報告書ハ左ノ表行ヲ爾シタル種類以テノ完全、眞正ニシテ、完應シ且ツ正確ナル寫本タル事ヲ證言陳述ス。

「一九四四年九月「ブーゲンバイル」島ニ於ケル、日本人ニ依ル十名 (又ハ九名) ノ「アンボン」人下士及ビ和蘭王國東印度軍軍人虐待及ビ虐殺ニ關スル、和蘭軍情報部試問報告書、報道者、「フレリック・ダマエラ」 (第一九七六)、「メサック・ソフランドイラ」 (第一八五〇)、「ヂエコブ・シアハジャ」 (第一八五一ノ二) 及ビ「レオナルド・フランス・サアイジャ」 (第一八五三)」。

右書類ハ和蘭軍情報部ノ公文記録ノ一部ナリ。

署名

和蘭軍情報部ノ印

一九四六年六月七日 「バタビア」ニ於テ

C. # 1877

Evidentiary Document No. 5262.

Page 1.
R.S.L. 6.

CHEE CHEE being duly sworn with the assistance of the Interpreter WONG YU of ANGAU gives the following evidence:

I am a Chinese and was residing at HONG KONG and was captured there by the Japanese in December, 1941. I was taken from HONG KONG to CANTON and from there to SAIGON. From there I went to Batavia and then to SOURABAYA. From there I went to SINGAPORE and then to RABAU and then to TULAGI. In November, 1942, I was brought to BUIN area, and remained there until the war finished. I was a member of a labour party attached to the TANAKA battalion. In April or May, 1943, I was engaged in road making. About that time one of the Chinese became sick and was unable to work. I do not know what his name was.

Three or four of the guards took this man tied his thumb together behind his back and pulled him up with a block and tackle attached to his thumbs until he was off the ground. They left him like that for 20 minutes. They then took him down and he died, within a few minutes. I saw all this myself. About ten Chinese witnessed this incident. This took place about one mile from KAHILI, on the road. The guards used to be changed each day and the perpetrators of this incident were guarding us for this day only. The guards were private soldiers. I would not be able to identify them again. They were members of the TANAKA Battalion. Other Chinese took the body away to bury it.

Soon after this event another Chinese whose name I do not know was sick with fever. Allied planes came over BUIN and this Chinese was sick and frightened and made a noise. One of the guards went away and came back with two or three other Japanese. These men were private soldiers of the TANAKA Battalion. I heard them order some Chinese to dig a hole. Some Chinese went away and I heard them digging. When the Chinese came back they told me that the Chinese who was sick and had made a noise had been buried alive. I did not actually witness this. The sick man was quartered in a hut half a mile away and most of what I know of this incident is hearsay.

Some time in 1944 I was employed with other Chinese in felling trees to make a bridge over a small stream in a garden near the Mission Station at KUGUAI. After we had chopped a tree down the bridge was built. We told the guard that the tree was too heavy for two men to carry. The guard wrote the order in Chinese and we replied verbally in Chinese. The guard belonged to a unit the number of which was 4801. They were guarding No. 76 Hospital. Three of the guard struck me in the face with their open hand for about five minutes. They knocked twelve teeth out. They were all good strong teeth. There was only the other Chinese present. They then struck CHANG KOW YE, the other Chinaman in the same way but not so severely.

About April or May, 1943, near KAHILI a Chinese living in the same hut as he had been sick for four or five days and couldn't work. One of the Japanese guards told him that he was all right and was only trying to get out of work. The sick man was lying down and the guard poured a quantity of water down his throat until his stomach was swelled up. After this the guard brought two more Japanese and they place a board across the sick man's stomach while he was lying on the ground and one guard sat on each end of the board. The pressure made the water come back out of the man's mouth. A quantity of water came out of his mouth and a few minutes later he died. I do not know the name of this Chinese. The guards were privates of the TANAKA Battalion I do not know the names of the Japanese but I could recognise the guard who poured water. Four Chinese carried the body away for burial.

In this Field this 3rd. day of October, 1945.

Signature of Witness.

Examined by me with the original affidavit in the Australian Army War Crimes Registry at Melbourne. The original was signed in Chinese Character and certified by the Interpreter.

(sgd) R. B. LAMPE Lt-Col.

I certify that this is a true copy of the original.

(Sgd) R. B. Lamb.

Lt-Col.

17 April, 1946

This is the copy statement marked "R.S.L.6" referred to in the Affidavit of Lt. Col. RICHARD DEVIS LAMBE hereunto annexed, sworn before me this 18th day of April, 1946.

(sgd) E. L. (?).....

Commissioner for Oaths.

R. S. L. 7.

CHUA CHEE on his former oath and with the assistance of the Interpreter LAURIE CHAN of ANGAU give the following evidence:-

In May, 1943, near BUIN I saw a white man dressed in overalls like a Pilot would wear. He was a young man. The Japanese tied his hands behind his back, and made him sit on the ground. They put a drum of boiling water beside him. About nine of them then filed past him and each one emptied a tin of boiling water over

Evidentiary Document No. 5262.

Page 3. *

... The man screamed with pain. I saw him fall flat on the ground and lie still and he stopped screaming. He appeared to me to be dead. The Japanese were soldiers not officers. The white man was tall, of medium build, clean-shaven and fair. The overalls were khaki. I was the only Chinese who witnessed this.

There are Chinese in this Compound who can give evidence of about 300 white men who were either killed by the Japanese or died while they were held as prisoners on Shortlands Islands.

5 Oct. 1945.

Signature of Witness.

Examined by me with the original Affidavit in this War Crimes Registry at Australian Army Headquarters at Melbourne. The original was signed in Chinese Characters and certified by the Interpreter.

I certify that the above is a true copy of the original.

(Sgd) B. B. LAMBE Lt.-Col.
A.Q.G. War Crimes
H.Q. A.L.F.S.E.A.

17th April, 1946.

This is the copy statement marked "R.S.L.7" referred to in the Affidavit of Lt.Col. RICHARD BEVIS LAMBE herewith annexed, sworn before me this 18th day of April, 1946.

(Sgd) E. L. (?)
Commissioner for Oaths.

1. ★

Doc 5262

チャイナイハアソクアルノ翻譯「ウオゾグ
ウー」ノ援助ヲ受ケ正式ニ宣稱シテ次ノ證言ヲス
ル。

「私ハ一中日人アアルガ香港ニ任ソテ居テ一九
四一年（昭和十六年）十二月日人ニヨリ捕ハレ
タ。私ハ香港カラ廣東ニ送レテ行カレ、ソコカラ
更ニ西貢ニ送レテ行カレタ。ソコカラ「バタビヤ
」寒ノ次ハ「スラバ」ニ行キ真鹿カラ「ジョンガホ
」ル「ト」ラバ「ル」ニ行キ更ニ「ツラキ」ニ行
ツタ。一九四二年（昭和十七年）十一月ニ私ハ「
フイソ」地區ニ送レテコラレ此處ニ終戰迄居タ。
私ハ田中大隊ニ屬スル勞働隊ノ一員デアツタ。
一九四三年（昭和十八年）ノ四月カ五月ニハ私
ハ道路建設ニ従事シテ居タ。其ノ頃一人ノ中国人
ガ病氣ニナリ初メコトガ出来ナクナツテシマツタ。
何ト云フ名前デアツタカ私ハ知ラナイ。三、四名
ノ監視兵ガコノ男ノ腕指ト指指トラ背中ヲ縛リ上
ゲコレニ懸揚機ヲ結ビツケ、地面カラ彼ノ身体ガ
離レルトコロ送引キ揚ゲタ。彼等ハ二十分間彼ヲ

Doc 5262

2. 4

ソノ機ニシテ墜イタ。ソレカラ彼等ハ行ラ下ロシ
 タガ孰分、由、怨ハ死ンテ了ツタ。コレハ總テ私
 自身が自墜シマシタ。ソシテ他ノ十人位ノ中、人
 ガコノ事件ヲ目撃シマシタ。コノ事件ハ「カヒリ
 」カラ約一哩離レタ道路上テ起キタ。監視兵ハ毎
 日交代サレテイタノデコノ事件ノ下手人モコノ日
 ダケ吾々ヲ監視シテ居タ。ソノ監視兵等ハ兵卒テ
 アツタガモウ私ハ彼等ヲ再ビ立證スルコトハ出来
 ナイ。彼等ハ田中大隊ノ隊員テアツタ。他ノ中、
 人ガ其ノ死因ヲ探知スルタメニ追ヒ去ツタ。

此事件ノ後聞モナク、其ノ名ハ知ラナイガ、モ
 ウ一人ノ中國人が熱テ病ンテ居タ。聯合軍ノ飛行
 機ガ「ブイシー」ノ上空ニ飛來シタノデ、此中國人
 ハ病氣デハアルシ恐怖シテ墜イタ。監視兵ノ一人
 ハ立ち去ツタガ二三人ノ他ノ日本人ヲ連レテ戻
 テ來タ。是等ノ人々ハ田中大隊ノ兵卒テアツタ。
 私ハ彼等ガ幾人カノ中國人ニ穴掘リヲ命ジテキル
 ノヲ聞イタ。私ハソノ中國人聲ガ出テ行キ穴ヲ掘
 ツテル音ヲ聞イタ。中國人聲ガ戻ツテ來タ時、
 彼等ハ私ニ病氣ヲ墜イタ中國人ハ生埋メニサレタノダ
 ト語ツタ。此事件ハ私が實際目撃シタ譯テハナイ。
 ソノ病人ハ約一哩離レタ小屋ニ埋居シテキタ者テ
 此事件ニ付私ノ知ツテ居ル事ノ大部分ハ人カラノ
 傳聞デアル。

Doc 5262

一九四四年ノ昭和十九年ノノ或ル時私ハ他ノ中
 庭人ト一帯ニ一ムグアイニアル教會ノ附近ノ庭
 ヲ流レテイル小川ニ橋ヲ架ケル爲木ヲ切り倒ホス仕
 事ニ從事シテ居タ。吾々が一本ノ木ヲ切り倒シタ
 後橋が架ツタ。吾々ハ木が重過キテ二人デハ邊ベ
 ナイコトヲ監視兵ニ申出タ。監視兵ハ命令ヲ支那
 語デ發キ、吾々ハ支那語デ口答シタ。監視兵ハ第
 四八〇一部隊ノ一隊ニ歸シテ居タモノデ第七六疾
 院ヲ管轄シテ居タモノデアル。三人ノ監視兵ハ平
 手デ私ノ顔ヲ三分間バカリ打ツタ。彼等ハ齒ヲ十
 二本モ打テ折ツテシマツタ。コレラノ齒ハ皆良イ
 丈夫ナ齒デアツタ。其處ニハモウ一人ノ中國人が
 居タ。ケデアル。監視兵ハコノ中國人一キヤング
 コウ・イレヲ同様ノ方法デ打ツタガ私程酷クハナ
 カツタ。

一九四三年（昭和十八年）ノ四月カ五月頃一
 カヒリ一附近デ私ト同ジ小屋ニ居タ一中國人が患
 、五日ノ間病氣デ病クコトガ出來ナクナツテ居タ。
 一人ノ日本監視兵ハ彼ニ向ツテ何處モ惡クナイノ
 ニ仕事カラ脱ガレヤウトシテキルノダト云ツタ。

3. A

Doc 5262

病人ハ臥テ居タガ監視兵ハ彼ノ咽喉カラ多量ノ水
ヲ注キ胃ガ遂ニ膨レ上ツテ了ツタ。コノ後テ監視
兵ハモウ二人ノ日本人ヲ連れて來テ一枚ノ硝ヲ病
人ノ背ノ上ニ置キ、病人ハ背ノ上ニ臥タマ、ニシテ
其ノ板ノ兩端ニ監視兵ガ一人ズツ腰掛ケタ。スル
トコノ壓力テ病人ノ口カラ水ガ逆流シテ來タ、多
量ノ水ガ病人ノ口カラ出タ後、痙攣ニ倒テ死ンテシマ
ツタ。私ハコノ中ニ人ノ名ヲ知ラナイソレラノ監
視兵邊ハ田中大隊ノ兵卒デアツタ。私ハ日本人ノ
名ハ知ラナイガ、シカシ水ヲ注キ込ンダ監視兵ヲ
立證スルコトハ出來ル。西人ノ中ニ人ハソノ死體
ヲ埋葬スル編越ヒ去ツタ。

一九四五年／昭和二十年／十月三日此地ニ於テ

證人署名

余ハ在ニメルボルンニ濠洲陸軍謀殺犯罪記録所ニ於
ケル口供書原本ト對比檢閲セリ。原本ハ支那文字
ヲ以テ署名シアリ且ツ通譯者ニ依リ證明セラレ
アリ。

／署名／ R. B. ラム中佐

余ハ石口供書ノ原本ノ眞實ナル爲タルコトヲ證明ス。

／署名／ R. B. ラム中佐

一九四六年／昭和二十一年／四月十七日

4. 7

Doc 5262

石ハ控ニ添付ノ「リチャード・ベザイス・ラム」
中佐ノ口供書ニ引用セラレタル「R. S. L. 6
符號ノ陳述書」ニシテ余ノ面前ニ於テ一九四六年
ノ昭和二十一年ノ四月十八日宣誓セラレタリ。


ノ署名ノ R. L. / ? /

宣誓立會人

「リチャード・ベザイス・ラム」ノ宣誓テ「アソガウ」ノ
近隣「ラウリー・チャン」ノ援助ヲ受ケテ次ノ證言
ヲスル。

「一九四三年（昭和十八年）五月私ハ「ブイン
」ノ近クテ飛行士ガ着ルヤウナ外套ヲ着タ一人ノ
白人ヲ見カケタ。彼ハ青年デアツタ。日本人ハ彼
ノ兩手ヲ後テ縛リ地上ニ坐ラセタ。彼等ハ熱湯ヲ
入レタドラム缶ヲ彼ノ側ニ置イタ。ソシテ約九人
ノ日本人ガ順々ニ彼ノ前ヲ通り過キ彼ニ熱湯ヲブ
リキ缶ニ一杯ツ、溢キカケタ。彼ハ苦シサニ泣キ
叫ンダ。私ハ彼ガグタリト地上ニ倒ホレ轉ニ臥ス
ノヲ見タガ、彼ハ泣キ叫ブノヲ止メタ。私ニハ彼

5. ~~A~~

6. 

Doc 5262

ハ死シタモノト思ハレタ。コノ日ズ人等ハ兵士ヲ
射殺シハナカッタ。ソノ白人ハ背ガ高クテ中肉ヲ
縛屬ニ鎖ヲ刺ツテ居リ好男子デアッタ。ガ衣ハ、
カイキ色デアッタ。私ハコレヲ目撃シタ唯一ハ人
中口人デアル。

此ノ構内ニハ日ズ人ニ殺サレタリ或ハ一ジョウ
トランドト島ヲ捕虜ニナツテ居ル間ニ死シタリシ
タ。約三百人ノ白人ノコトヲ證言スルコトガ出来
ル中口人ガ居ル。

一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ十月五日

證人姓名

余ハ在「メルボリン」濃洲陸軍司令部戦争犯罪記録
所ニ於ケル口供証原ズト對比検査セリ。原本ハ支
那文字ヲ以テ署名シテリ且ツ通譯老ニ依リ證明セ
ラレテリ。
余ハ石ハ原ズノ証言ナル寫タルコトヲ證明ス。

ノ署名 / R. B. ラム中佐

南京西區聯合陸軍司令部
戦争犯罪部軍務局長

Doc 5262

へ死ンダモノト思ハレタ。コノ日ズ人等ハ兵士デ
尉校デハナカッタ。ソノ白人ハ背ガ高クテ中肉デ
綺麗ニ髪ヲ剃ツテ居リ好男子デアッタ。小衣ハ
カーキ色デアッタ。私ハコレヲ自覺シタ唯一人
中白人デアル。

此ノ構内ニハ日ズ人ニ殺サレタリ或ハ一シヨウ
トランド一島デ捕虜ニナツテ居ル間ニ死ンダリシ
タ。約三百人ノ白人ノコトヲ證言スルコトガ出來
ル中白人ガ居ル。

一九四五年 / 昭和二十年 / 十月五日


證 人 者 名

余ハ在一メルボルン一濠洲陸軍司令部戰爭犯罪記録
所ニ於ケル口供監取本ト對比檢査セリ。原本ハ文
字ヲ以テ署名シアリ且ツ通譯老ニ依リ證言セ
ラレアリ。

余ハ石ハ本ノ眞實ナル爲タルコトヲ證言ス。

／ 署名 / R. B. ラム中佐

南東亞西亞聯合國陸軍司令部
戦争犯罪部軍務局次長

6. 

7*

Doc 5262

一九四六年／昭和二十一年四月十七日

石ハ茲ニ添付ノ「リキヤード。ベグイス。ラム」

中佐ノ口供書ニ引用セラレタル「R・S・L・7

」符號ノ障害警備ニシテ一九四六年／昭和二十一

年ノ四月十八日余ノ面前ニ於テ宣讀セラレタリ。

／署名／E・L・(?)

宣誓立會人

CV # 1878

DOCUMENT NO. 5263

PAGE 1

INVESTIGATION - BALLALE IS.

Period Nov 42 to Sep 43.

KOREAN - KANESHIRO FUKUKAN

interrogated by NX 70429

Maj. E. C. Millikin.

I was on BALLALE IS from 3 Nov 42 to Aug 43. I was employed in a working gang, but because of my good knowledge of the Japanese language was employed to interpret any orders given by Japanese to my gang. I am NOT sure exactly when the white PW landed at BALLALE, but think it was Dec 42 or early Jan 43. The Japs told me there were about 600 PW. They landed from a large freighter, but I do NOT know the name of it. I was returning from work when I saw the PW marching from the disembarkation point towards their compound.

According to a Jap report current at the time the ship came from SINGAPORE. I have seen the PW at various times. I think they were ENGLISHMEN. Their clothes were light khaki, somewhat similar to clothes worn by Aust troops. Hats were slouchtype, some men wore forage caps and some officers type caps. Boots were of various types. Some of the men had tattoo marks on them. I particularly remember that some were anchors and some were English words. I can-NOT remember details of any other tattoos. The general knowledge at the time was that the PW were Englishmen. That is to say it was mentioned by the Japanese and we overheard it. Witness is shown picture of RA badge - he states that he saw some PW wearing badges and he thinks some might have been the RA badge.

I heard a story from the Japanese that either the night of the landing or the next day a PW was beheaded by OZAKI. I do not know why this was done. I overheard a group of Japs discussing the matter. I have seen the grave, indicates on enlargement of BALLALE IS/1: 63360 (see portion of file War Crimes Investigation 13 Nov 45 23 Bde) reference 5025 0550. The grave was beside the road.

There was a group of army men in charge of the PW - I have no idea of the name of the unit nor of the soldiers names. I do NOT know if the army personnel lived with the PWs I only saw them escorting the PWs to and from work. I do NOT know of any illtreatment of the PW apart from the beheading as above, but I did hear from the Japs that if the PW were slow at their work they were beaten with a pole. I do NOT know of any other beheadings or shootings as individual incidents. (NOTE the matter of the mass killing was referred to at this stage, but not taken down, being kept for its proper sequence)

There was a lot of allied bombing and according to the Japs a lot of PW were killed and wounded, as there was a direct hit on the PW compound. I heard that the dead were buried, but I do NOT know where the grave is. I did NOT hear that PW who died of wounds were dumped at sea in rice sacks. The part of the island where the PW were quartered was out of bounds to all personnel except Japanese on duty.

After the air raids I saw only about 70 to 100 white PW.

I did NOT hear about the Jap kitchen being bombed and as a result the PW were all beaten.

The airstrip was never finished, there was always some work to be done repairing bomb damage etc.

/On

On the night of 30 June 43 the place was shelled from the sea, the Japs were afraid of a landing and killed the PW next day. I am certain the shelling was on 30 June. I do NOT know how many PW remained at this stage, but they were all killed by bayonets or swords. I heard that a large pit was dug, I do NOT know by whom and when the PW were killed they were buried there. I do NOT know where the grave is but I understand that it is in the vicinity of the PW compound. I do NOT know by whose order the PW were killed but OZAKI was the senior officer at that time.

I recall an incident when tobacco was fairly plentiful and I and some other Christians wanted to give some to the PW. As the Japs at all times were very harsh in their treatment of the PW we were afraid to approach them on behalf of the white PW.

I think that KONNO SHIGERU would know something about these things because he worked near the Koreans for a period of about a month and in that month the Koreans heard a fair bit about the PW from Japs who were working with KONNO. At this time KONNO was either a 1st or 2nd class P.O.

NOTE KONNO under persistent and repeated questioning gave very little information -

He admitted he was on BALLALE during the period. He was camped in the jungle area and saw some white PW at odd times, but NONE after about May 43. He had no idea of identity of units, nationality, where from, he heard some were killed in air raids but never heard what happened to the remainder.

With regard to other happenings on BALLALE, I have never heard about the American airman who was alleged to have had boiling water poured over him.

I did NOT at any time see any Chinese, but I heard that some came to the island to work on the air strip. I do NOT know how long they were on BALLALE.

With regard to White PW, I do NOT know of them having to work while they were sick. Nor did I at any time hear about any dying of malnutrition. I did NOT at any time hear that the PW used to take their sick mates to work and hide them in the scrub near the strip and then help them back to the compound after the days work was finished.

There was a lot of sickness amongst the Japs and Koreans, and if they had a fever they could rest, however men with tropical ulcers even if they were limping, had to work.

I do NOT know what were the rules about PW working when sick but in the working parties almost all of them appeared weak. I do NOT know anything about their food situation.

The PW were always in separate parties and at no time was I close enough to observe in order to base any opinion as to good or bad treatment of them by the Japs.

The above evidence was taken at No. 11 Compound, Kokopo and at Witnesses Compound, Rabaul.

/s/ E. C. Millikin, Major
Interrogating Officer

5263-1

EXHIBIT NO 18/84

證人 三三六三

カナシロイ・フクカン

調査一バラル島・時期一九四二年十一月ヨリ一九四三年九月迄朝無人一「カナシロイフクカン」ハN E 七〇四二九五・〇ミリキン少往ニ依リ訊問サル。

私ハ一九四二年十一月三日ヨリ一九四三年八月迄バラル島ニ居リマシタ。私ハ労働者群ニ居ハレマシタ、シカシソレハ私ガ日本語ヲ良ク知ツテ居ル爲、日本人ヨリ出ツレル如何ナル命令ヲモ私ノ仲間ニ通譯スルノニ雇ハレタノテス。

私ハ白人ノ俘虜ガ何時バフルニ上陸シタカハツキリ知リマセンガ、ソレハ一九四二年ノ十二月カ一九四三年一月ノ始チアツタト思ヒマス。日本人ノ語ル處チハ約六百名ノ俘虜ガ居リマシタ。彼等グ大キテ賞物箱ヲ下リマシタガ私ハソノ船ノ名ヲ知リマセン。

私ガ仕カラオテ來時ノ船名ヲ聞カズニ、
リ家等不爲内分向ツテ行進ガ見マシタ。
當時恐爾ア是れ吾一日日本人ノ報告ニ依レバソノ船ハ
シンガポールヨリ來タトノ事ヲシタ。私ハ色々ノ時
俘虜達ヲ見マシタ。彼等ハ英二人達チアツタト思ヒ
マス。

COPY ROOM 367

5263-2

XXXXXXXXXXXX

私ハ成ノ証ヲ日本人カラ得キマシタ、即チ到着シ
タ交カ成ノ日カ一人ノ停務ガ「ホヂキ」(尾崎ニ
似ツテ首ヲ切ラレタト云フ事デス

私ハコノ事ガナゼナサレタノカ知リマセン。私ハ
日本人ノ連中ガコノ事ニツイテ談合ツテ衆ルノヲ立
附シマシタ。私ハバウル島ノ獄屋敷ニ示サレタ處ヲ
見マシタ。

XXXXXXXXXXXX

生誕ノ後私ハタツタ七十空カラ百左程ノ白人停務
シカ見マセンデシタ。

XXXXXXXXXXXX

一九四三年六月三十日ノ夜奈ノ島原ハ海カラ砲撃
サレマシタ。日本人連中上陸ヲ急レテ翌日停務ヲ殺
シマシタ。私ハ砲撃ガ六月三十日デアツタコトヲ確
信シマス。私ハコノ段階ニ於イテ停務ガ何人ヲツテ
キタカ知リマセンガ彼等ハ銃剣ヲ剣テ皆殺サレマシ
タ。私ハ大キナ穴ガ掘ラレタ事ヲ聞マシタ。私ハ誰
ニ依ツテ何時停務ガ殺サレ其處ニ埋メラレタカ知リ
マセン。私ハ其ノ處ガ何處ニアルカ知リマセンガソ
レハ停務ノ海内ノ附近ニアルト信ジマス。

5263-3

私ハ誰ノ命令ヲ管掌ガ悉サレタノカ知リマセンガ、
オザキ（尾崎）ハ當時先任將校デアリマシタ。

EX # 1879

Doc. No. 5425

Page 1

Each page of the attached annexure comprising in all 15 pages was imprinted by OSAKI Toshihiko with his right thumb in my presence at Sugamo Prison, Tokyo, and the contents were sworn to be true before me this eighth day of August one thousand nine hundred and forty-six.

/s/ H. N. Williams, Major

Investigating Officer

2 Aust War Crimes Sec

Statement Concerning the British POW's on BALLALE Island
by Norihiko OZU, former Chief of the 18th Naval Construction
Battalion stationed on the Island. /Fingerprint/

(1) Foreword

As I am about to state my past life on BALLALE Island which was led under pressure and uncertainty by merely relying upon my memory, there may be some inaccuracies as regards the dates, time and figures, but same will probably become clarified by your referring to the corresponding Army or Navy records dealing with that time which are probably in your hands, which please note.

(2) Outline of Developments

(a) After my Battalion had failed twice in advancing to Guadalcanal Island, we immediately (on about 26 or 27 November 1942) left Buin on Bougainville Island, there to move steadily for Ballale Island, on receipt of orders to promptly construct an airfield on the said island.

(b) At that time this island was uninhabited. Although small, a preliminary survey and preparations had been made in outline on the island beforehand in order to reinforce the Buin airfield. My battalion consisted of some 120 petty officers and men as well as about 800 construction workmen and its working efficiency was extremely low.

The order from the 11th Air Fleet to which our battalion belonged stated: "Work under the direction of the Commander of the 26th Air Squadron, finish the construction of an airfield in outline in 45 days (?); the laborers will be reinforced by some 4,000 (?) men.

However, although we waited impatiently, the reinforcement of 4,000 men never arrived, and although workmen despatched by the 4th Construction and Service Department on Truk Island arrived temporarily, they were made to move up to Munda again after only about 2 days' stay (the majority of them being invalids, it was only natural that not much working power could be expected of the men of this unit.

In the circumstances, our battalion proceeded to ask for the military forces on Bougainville Island to aid us in our work and to send paymasters, 2nd lieutenants (Med.) and other necessary /T.N. Battalion/ personnel to the nearby islands such as Bougainville, Shortland and Faure so as to employ natives by propagation in various places and to make use of their working power.

(c) It was perhaps a few days after having proceeded to the island when one evening a fairly large transport cast anchor there suddenly and hundreds of persons who looked like POWs began to land on this island. Before long

the commanding officer, an Army 2nd Lieutenant (according to my memory) came to see me and remarked, "I have brought along 527 (?) Army POW's from Rabaul by order. You may use them in constructing the airfield at your place." However, due to not having received any instructions or orders from any of my command channels such as the Supreme Naval Headquarters or the 26th Air Squadron, at first I declined his proposal.

But the military officer said, "That would put me in an awful fix. As a matter of fact, I have been ordered to depart on another mission as soon as the landing of the POW's is over. As soon as I return to my post, I will have matters duly settled through my seniors. It is the Army's duty to look after all the supervision, directing and controlling of the POW's on the island. The 18 military guards whom I have brought here for that reason will be stationed with the POW's throughout the whole of the period until their duties are over. You had better make use only of their working power at this time of shortage of same, hadn't you?" I replied, "As for our battalion, it would be very good to make use of them for some suitable work, but it would be embarrassing for me too to bear troublesome responsibility as I have not been contacted at all in the matter by my seniors. The only thing is that I feel confident of bearing utmost responsibility only as regards feeding them, apart from which I cannot do anything. Would only that be sufficient?" "Yes. It would be O.K. at that." After the foregoing controversy, I made up my mind to "take care of them for the time being" until instructions should come from my naval immediate superiors. (After all I received neither any instructions nor orders whatsoever to the very last).

(d) By this time, a 12 cm. AA Company commanded by Naval 1st Lieutenant MIYAKE had already been stationed on this island besides our battalion. In addition to the foregoing, a 12 cm. AA Company commanded by Naval 1st Lieutenant KIMBARA, an 8 cm. AA Company commanded by 2nd Lieutenant TAKAHASHI and half a 13 mm. AA H.C. division (maybe one division) were scheduled to advance to this island and engage in guard duties in the near future, but none of them had arrived there at that time except the above-mentioned MIYAKE Company.

Moreover, a force of about 2 battalions strong was scheduled to proceed to the island mainly to assist us in constructing our airfield with the understanding of the military forces at EREBENTA /phonetic/ on Bougainville Island who were waiting for the arrival of equipment from Japan proper.

(e) It was in the aforesaid manner that over 500 POW's were forced upon me, and although I felt greatly obliged for the supply of a considerable amount of working power at a time of shortage thereof, I was placed at my wit's end as I had never for a moment expected such a thing, as well as had never received any orders or instructions as to how to treat them, especially as I had no experience.

Here I shall explain my predicament in full detail. I am originally an engineering officer graduated from the Naval Engineering College, and was

called up to duty from the First Reserve. In the Japanese Navy the Naval Command Observance Regulations /T.N. "Gunrei Shoko Rei/ have hitherto been strictly adhered to, and at places where the so-called Line Officers having graduated from the Naval Academy are stationed, engineering officers are not given the right of command for general military operations. The right given to me was limited to the construction of the airfield and I was authorized to merely command my construction battalion under the command of my immediate superiors. (The title of "Engineering" was abolished from November 15, 1942 and accordingly I, too, was promoted to Lieutenant Commander from Engineer Lieutenant.) Therefore, all military operations on the island excepting for the construction work should be placed under the command of Naval Lieutenant Kirbana (in case of his death 1st Lieutenant Takahashi).

However, being a special duty officer specially promoted from the ranks, Lieutenant Miyaki had no right to command me.

(f) In the circumstances, as regards the question of responsibility in the handling of the POW's for the sake of enabling everything to run smoothly hereafter:

1. The military guards who accompanied the POW's from Rabaul will take charge of all the duties such as supervising and commanding.
2. The foregoing military guards shall be placed under the command of the commanding officer of the two battalions of military troops coming from Erebenta /phonetic/.
3. Our battalion will assume responsibility as regards general maintenance such as food, medical supplies and housing.

That was because our battalion had--although none too much--some quantity of living necessaries to spare, whereas the stocks of both the Naval and Military units were scanty (especially the Military unit had nothing at all).

As for this matter, it had been decided that our battalion would hold itself responsible for supplying the needs of not only the POW's, but also of the Military as well as native units.

4. After a few days, about two battalions of military troops arrived on the island as scheduled, and after a conference with the commander of the military forces, it was decided unanimously to put the above three items into effect.

5. The concrete details regarding the construction work were based on the general instructions received by me from the 26th Air Squadron Command (there was a period when I was temporarily under the command of the 204th Air Commander), on the basis of which our staff and the Military staff discussed the allotment of the details for the work, following which instructions were given to the guards by the Military Commander as to the duties

assigned to the POW's on the previous day or early in the morning of the said day. Thus the POW's performed their work under the direct supervision and direction of the guards.

I therefore believe that not even our staff officers meddled directly as regards the work of the POW's, and that everything was carried on smoothly under the hands of the Military authorities.

6. Some of the leading workers of our battalion who were designated by me supervised and directed the work of the native unit, and accordingly apart from our own men, our battalion took direct charge of only the native unit (which I believe numbered about 500 (?) at the most).

7. The supervising and directing of the POW's outside of their working hours was supposed to be undertaken by the 15 POW guards under the command of the Military Commander (Captain Senda at the outset) but, to the best of my memory, I believe that some of them were, at one time, placed under the command of the Miyako Company in connection with the living quarters as well as due to it being more convenient to utilize the look-out station of the Miyako Company for the sake of their daily work as well as air defence operations.

8. After the lapse of several days the Kimbara and Takahashi companies arrived at the Island, and I was placed under the command of Naval Lieutenant Kimbara as a natural result of the Navy's practice in accordance with the provisions of the Naval Command Observance Regulations /T.N. "Gunrei Shoko-Rei"/. The POW's however were handled as mentioned above without any special changes being made.

(g) Conditions at the time of arrival of the POW's on the Island.

1. On catching the POW's as they were disembarking from the transport, although there were some who were extremely "peppy," the majority of them were so weak that they could not walk by themselves and were only barely able to do so with the help of their comrades. Having observed this scene, I could not help from feeling somewhat apprehensive as regards how much contribution could be expected of them towards the rapid construction of the airfield.

2. As there were about 10 (?) medical personnel including a Captain of the Medical Corps (?) as well as other medical men, a medical examination was held by them in conjunction with our battalion's Medical Officer and his subordinates, a result of which it was said that there were many diphtheria patients as well as patients suffering from asthenia caused by chronic enteritis (have forgotten the number of cases).

Before being called to the colours, our Battalion's Medical Officer had made a special study regarding Diphtheria and was so well experienced as to have his doctorate thesis on the said subject under consideration at the time, so that I received a report later on that, due to the great interest

shown, and strenuous efforts exerted by him, that the Diphtheria epidemic was stamped out without spreading so much.

It was so arranged that medical supplies and appliances were, whenever necessary, handed to the Medical Officer of the POW Unit en bloc (once a week?) whenever requests were received from him, and daily diagnoses and medical treatment were effected independently by the POW unit in view of the shortage of hands. Needless to say, of course, in case of emergency our medical officers went to their aid whenever necessary. Consequently, the daily authorization of absence from work owing to illness of all POWs was left entirely to the free discretion of the Chief Medical Officer of the POW unit.

However, a fairly large number of deaths occurred from sickness (as far as I remember, there were times when there were as many as about three deaths in a day) due to the sudden change in living conditions, increased degree of ashenia or the usual aggravated form of diarrhoea due to drinking too much unboiled water.

3. As there were more than ten men connected with cooking including an Intendance Lieutenant, it was arranged that they would handle the cooking independently by speedily erecting a kitchen. It was also arranged that food-stuffs for a week were to be handed to them once a week all at once so that they could cook their own food in their own manner. I recollect that, as the supply officer told me that they specially preferred wheat flour and canned goods to rice, I tried as much as possible to meet their request and think that they were handed to them fairly plentifully. I was once invited to come over to inspect the place once as they had commenced baking bread with the use of oil-drum and coconut oil. Furthermore, tobacco was also supplied to them in accordance with a suggestion from the supply officer.

4. The general state of health of the POWs was, as mentioned above, and as their physical strength had declined considerably, the work they were engaged in throughout the entire period of the construction works consisted only of gathering pebbles from the reef along the shore facing the sea on the Eastern side of the Island (medium and small in size and used for filling in when levelling the runway and loading same into transport trucks). Besides, I remember that they were engaged a little in cleaning and clearing the airfield and neighboring taxi strips.

I remember also that I did not make them engage at all in labour with pickaxes and shovels, loading and unloading, as well as transportation of heavy goods, because of their weak knees and general declining strength. I think that, after all, the working efficiency throughout the entire period was rather poor in spite of their efforts.

Moreover, some of them volunteered to drive trucks, but this request was never granted as our battalion was amply provided with drivers.

5. Now, although the sharing of the respective responsibilities towards the POWs continued from start to finish as stated above, my battalion conformed to the form of Provisional Enlistment of all the POWs as regards the procedure for supply and accounts as we were providing them with all supplies.

This applies not only to the POWs but also to military units and even to naval personnel under a different jurisdiction. Our Navy makes it their customary practice to adopt such a procedure for supply and accounting reasons in order, for the sake of temporary convenience, to provide food and clothing to those who are not our regular battalion personnel and our battalion also merely followed this practice.

Accordingly, in view of the aforementioned circumstances, the POWs were considered as being a temporary enlisted unit and, in addition to our drawing up the POW muster-roll on the strength of the data submitted by them, any unforeseen occurrences like "Deaths from Sickness" or "Killed in Action" were recorded in my battalion's reports. The object thereof was to satisfy supply and accounting requirements, and I believe that the POW problem will become fully clarified by referring to the said reports.

6. As for the living quarters, being by all means a small island in the first place, there would be no alternative, after constructing a standard air base, than to utilize the remaining space left over. The maximum number of inhabitants on the island exceeded at one time the 6,000 mark so that I was much worried at one time over the selection of the living quarters regarding which the Air Force personnel enjoyed priority selecting rights, but finally this matter was settled by fixing same at a point northwest of the Miyako Company, west of the Military Unit, and southwest of the Takahashi Company, by taking into account the facts that the place was farthest from the airfield and at the same time adjacent to the location of the Military Unit under whose direct command they were. As for the dwelling facilities, inasmuch as the building materials stored by our battalion had been already fairly well used up and as the manner of use of all those on hand had already been decided, there was practically no surplus left over, but finally we succeeded in the speedy construction of a camp sufficient at least to shelter them from rain, by using the materials in store and those procured on the spot.

(h) Important Problems (No. 1)

Several days after the POWs were brought to the Island, approximately two battalions of Army troops which had been under request came from Eleventh /phonetic/ on Bougainville Island. The Commander at that time was Captain Senda.

Although there may have been incidental sins in the Army occupation, I believe that they strived to assist in the Navy's airfield work and receive all rations from the Navy in the meantime, and lighten the burden on the main force, instead of uselessly and aimlessly awaiting the arrival of armament.

As regards the actual problem of construction work, a definite talk between Captain Senda and myself was held and a division of work was established. It was the work which is to be carried out by the Army should be commanded by Captain Senda and that the Naval Construction Battalion should never directly interfere with any work of the Army. It is, moreover, a matter of course that no interference whatsoever should be made directly or indirectly in matters aside from Naval construction work. One day, several days after the occupation by the Army, there was an incident of mistaken firing upon the island by an Army force that was passing by. Directly after this, Captain Senda suggested that we should now make plans for the defense of the island and that studies and trainings were needed. However, since I am originally from the Navy Engineering Department and have some knowledge of engineering matters, but had neither knowledge, experience nor training in this matter /T. N. defense/, besides which I had no power of command. Therefore, I immediately requested Captain Senda to draw up the plans, and it was hurriedly decided in the names of Captain Senda and myself to adopt this plan temporarily until the arrival of Naval Commanding Officer who would direct me. However, several days later, the Kibara Company came to the island, so I submitted to Lieutenant (S.G.) Kibara /T.N. Navy/ the defense plans, and asked him to revise and establish same appropriately in the capacity of the Naval Commanding Officer.

In one part of this defense plan there was an item to the effect that prisoners will be disposed of in case the danger of an enemy landing becomes imminent. I remember that the method was by use of land grenades and that it was up to one company of the Army troops (I do not remember the Company that was designated). A glance at the defense plan of the time in question will reveal this.

After Lieutenant Kibara came to the island, the defense plan of Ballale Island was newly established and promulgated in the name of the Commanding Officer of the Navy Guard Unit. According to this plan, my Construction Battalion was to be a reserve unit, and was to withdraw to the opposite side from where the enemy makes an invasion, and await orders there. I do not remember other details, especially how matters such as

concerted action with the Army were decided. However, my sole duty was to exert my attention and efforts in regard to commanding and guiding my non-combatant subordinates in the form of approximately 800 workers as well as approximately 120 petty officers and men so as to minimize the casualties among these men as far as possible.

I believe it was in the early part of January 1943 that Naval Captain MIKI came to the island as the Supreme Commander, for the purpose of commanding the combined Army - Navy forces on Ballale Island. However, before he was in office for three months, he returned to Japan proper.

Before and after the time Captain MIKI took his office, the Army forces were being repeatedly replaced, and although I do not remember in detail the staff officers and the unit designations, I believe that the Army strength was generally and gradually decreased. I think this was only natural, as far as the Army's duties were concerned. I do not know whether or not the details of the Island's defense plan were changed while Captain MIKI was in office.

(1) Important Problems (No. 2)

In the meantime, the POWs did not readily recover from their asthenic condition which was attributed to diphtheria, chronic inflammation of the intestines, and other diseases from which they were suffering from even before their arrival to the Island, as mentioned in the foregoing. The number of deaths gradually increased. We, especially the medical officer and other persons concerned, did as much as possible, but the enemy's air raids became more and more intense as the days passed, and the casualties continued to increase. Patients suffering from exhaustion due to air raids carried out day and night, and other causes, continued to appear from all the units. At that time, as far as the Navy was concerned, our unit was the only one which had a medical officer, and all the other companies had only non-rated medical men. Being as such, the medical treatment of all the navy officers and men was charged to the medical officer and the medical design of our unit. At one time, even in our unit, about half of the men were ill in bed, and the situation was such that actually the medical staff were so busy as to have no time to spare. Later, I remember that it became absolutely impossible to deal with the situation so that we had a medical Lieutenant (J.G.) from the First Base Headquarters at Buin, and subsequently another medical Lieutenant (J.G.) from Lt. Kimbara's main unit come to our aid, as a result of which we finally succeeded in tidying over the crisis.

The names, dates of death, nature of diseases of the dead prisoners should be listed in my unit's Administrative Bulletin's File, so a glance will reveal them. I, the Chief of the unit that was in charge of medical treatment, feel extremely sorry that there were so many illnesses and deaths. However, on the other hand, at the time, the enemy's attacks became more

severe each day, without a single day's respite from the air raids. The POWs were in a weakened condition even before their arrival at the Island, and medical treatment could not be given them as I wished. Materials and supply situation became more difficult each day on our front line islands, and hands became short. It can also be thought that in view of the prevailing situation the result was truly unavoidable. The construction of the airfield did not progress as anticipated. Although the days passed by being hotly pressed /T.N. to speed up construction work/ and under mental agony and uneasiness, no orders or instructions from anywhere ever came to me until the end in regard to the handling of the POWs. What I feel most at the present time is that, if the POWs were employed for some appropriate work in the rear zone in a quiet and wide area far from Rabaul, it might have been another matter, but, I believe that it might be considered as unreasonable to use the POWs and limited working power by crisscrossing them into concentrated units on a front line island where such ceaseless combat was carried out repeatedly.

Now, regarding the disposition of the corpses, there were opinions that if that small island where many people were passed and engaged in hard work became surrounded by grave-posts, it would influence everyone's morale to a great extent. Therefore, at first practically all of them were buried at sea, but due to the heat of the tropics, decomposition was rapid, so that there were opinions that this was intolerable as well as pitiful for both the dead and the burial parties. However, cremation was given up not so much because of fuel, but from the standpoint of air defense in connection with the rising of smoke. Consequently they were buried in the ground after that.

-(j) Important Problems (No. 3)

It might have been around the middle of March, 1943, that there was a sudden air raid at night. Many bombs were dropped in the Army area, the POW area, and the Takahashi Company area, where there was practically no damage until then. There were three direct hits by large type bombs in the area where the POWs resided, resulting in 280 (this figure is not accurate. Should be recorded in the Battalion's Administrative Bulletin's File) some odd prisoners being blasted or burnt to death. The reason why there were so many casualties was because this spot was away from the approach course to the airfield and had not been bombed before, so it is said that most of the men, feeling confident, did not take any action to shelter themselves from the air raid.

I believe that it might have been at this time that Lt. Takahashi, the Naval Company Commander, too, was killed in action.

(k) Important Problems (No. 4)

I have forgotten whether it was toward the end of March, or the beginning of April, 1943, but anyhow, around evening one day we received

severe each day, without a single day's respite from the air raids. The POWs were in a weakened condition even before their arrival at the Island, and medical treatment could not be given them as I wished. Materials and supply situation became more difficult each day on our front line islands, and hands became short. It can also be thought that in view of the prevailing situation the result was truly unavoidable. The construction of the airfield did not progress as anticipated. Although the days passed by being hotly pressed /T.N. to speed up construction work/ and under mental agony and uneasiness, no orders or instructions from anywhere ever came to me until the end in regard to the handling of the POWs. What I feel most at the present time is that, if the POWs were employed for some appropriate work in the rear zone in a quiet and wide area far from Rabaul, it might have been another matter, but, I believe that it might be considered as unreasonable to use the POWs and limited working power by cramming them into concentrated units on a front line island where such ceaseless combat was carried out repeatedly.

Now, regarding the disposition of the corpses, there were opinions that if that small island where many people were massed and engaged in hard work became surrounded by grave-posts, it would influence everyone's morale to a great extent. Therefore, at first practically all of them were buried at sea, but due to the heat of the tropics, decomposition was rapid, so that there were opinions that this was intolerable as well as pitiful for both the dead and the burial parties. However, cremation was given up not so much because of fuel, but from the standpoint of air defense in connection with the rising of smoke. Consequently they were buried in the ground after that.

(j) Important Problems (No. 3)

It might have been around the middle of March, 1943, that there was a sudden air raid at night. Many bombs were dropped in the Army area, the POW area, and the Takahashi Company area, where there was practically no damage until then. There were three direct hits by large type bombs in the area where the POWs resided, resulting in 280 (this figure is not accurate. Should be recorded in the Battalion's Administrative Bulletin's File) some odd prisoners being blasted or burnt to death. The reason why there were so many casualties was because this spot was away from the approach course to the airfield and had not been bombed before, so it is said that most of the men, feeling confident, did not take any action to shelter themselves from the air raid.

I believe that it might have been at this time that Lt. Takahashi, the Naval Company Commander, too, was killed in action.

(k) Important Problems (No. 4)

I have forgotten whether it was toward the end of March, or the beginning of April, 1943, but anyhow, around evening one day we received

an urgent dispatch order from the headquarters at Buin to the following effect: "Several enemy cruisers and destroyers are cruising off Mono Island, and as a landing is most probable, all the units are to immediately prepare to check the enemy landing." By this time, the actual number of POWs had already dropped considerably to some 90 odd men (less than 100 at any rate). Excepting those connected with the kitchen, I believe most of the men had lost a great deal of their vigour. From the standpoint of the condition of troop equipment at the time, and also from the topography of the island, in the face of a powerful enemy assault, there were only two alternatives, total victory or total annihilation. In fact I believe that the latter seemed to be anticipated more strongly. I do not think that it was an unreasonable reasoning for all the men to resign themselves to death after eliminating "the fear of the tiger at the rear door" /T.N. refers to the POWs/. From such thought, the above-mentioned POWs were all bayoneted to death by an Army company charged with the duty in accordance with the previously established defense plan. (I do not know the unit designation. It is said that hand grenades were not used). All the units made preparations, feverishly working on defense measures against the enemy's surprise assault landing, and waited throughout the night, but the enemy did not attack this island after all.

Actually, I believe that the difficult and unfavorable turn of the battle situation strained our nerves to an extreme, and excited us too much /T.N. resulting in the killing of the POWs/. It can only be said that the Company merely followed the rules of the plan of defense mechanically, but I consider that same was also unavoidable in some respects, especially when placed face to face with such a tense situation.

(1) Important Problems (No. 5)

This matter concerns a certain First Lieutenant (both status and name unknown) who was shot to death on the very day of the landing. I believe a record of this case is set forth at the beginning of the report concerning POWs who were under the charge of my Battalion.

It was when the POW party was landed on this island, as a result of the negotiations which are mentioned in another section, with the Army officer who was in charge of them, it was arranged that the POWs should remain temporarily on this island. When I believed the said commander had returned to his transport vessel, he again appeared before me with a POW who was under arrest and being dragged along by soldiers, and said: "On returning to the ship, I found this POW had been arrested as he had tried secretly to escape by jumping into the water and swimming towards Shortland Island. So the number of POWs I reported to you before was less one. Will you receive him together with the others?" As for me, I did not know what to do. And, moreover, what I could do with such a man as he, who had dared try to escape even in such an environment, especially here, on this solitary island surrounded by water on all sides? Therefore I gave him a

firm refusal. He pressed me to accept him, saying, as before, that he had to attend to other duties at once and begged me to manage in some way or other. Then I questioned him as to what measure would be taken by the Army. He answered that in case of escape in the face of the enemy this would naturally be punished by death. As the matter had to be settled at once and, also, from the standpoint of our naval discipline, I simply believed that escape in the face of the enemy in wartime should as a matter of course call for capital punishment. I thought, also, that it could not be avoided from the viewpoint of making it an example for the strict enforcement of military discipline on this island in the future. Without any further consideration it was decided to execute him in the presence of both of us. And, finally, the Army guards shot him to death with their rifles on the beach near the secluded jungle on the eastern coast of the Island. (Presumably, these soldiers belonged under the aforesaid Army officer and were not the 15 guards attached to the POW unit). At first, I intended to behead him with my Japanese sword. But, at the last moment, I became timid and therefore could not do so. Since this happened, I have pondered over the case and have always felt the pangs of conscience. Not only have I been cautioning myself ever since against repeating such an action in the future, in whatever circumstances, but I also strictly warned my men not to act cruelly in speech or action towards the POWs. I feel my responsibility very acutely, especially in the case of this certain First Lieutenant.

III. Supplementary Remarks

I have found in the newspaper of the morning of 19th January 1946 that my arrest has been ordered as a war crime suspect. As I had been anyhow the central figure of the building work of the airfield on Ballale Island where had occurred the deaths of more than 500 POWs, I had already presumed that I would be the first to be so designated. But taking into consideration that, firstly, the time was extremely early, and secondly, that only I, who had no substantial power of command but only a superficial one, and who had been only a commander of construction work as it were, was so designated and no names of those with whom I had been acquainted were mentioned, I supposed that the investigation on the spot might have been surprisingly incomplete; consequently I was worried that, if I should make my appearance at once, I should be obliged to bring forward the names of too many other persons or would have to state matters which are unnecessary to mention in order to clarify all the facts in detail for the sake of impartial judgment; unless I were resolved to lay down my life, shouldering all the responsibilities by myself, letting everything to be left unsaid (although I have lost such a frame of mind now as I have been informed of the truths of various disclosed facts during nearly one year after the cessation of hostilities). Furthermore, I felt very pained at the idea of being placed under arrest which I had been taught traditionally as being a disgrace and I imprudently tried to escape this as long as possible as the result of various illusions. In the course of time, however,

I became convinced that I would not be able to conceal myself forever and also came to believe that the true facts concerning this matter might have been already investigated in detail and disclosed, then those which I would be obliged to state might probably have been already investigated in full detail and known, consequently the worry which I had as above-mentioned has ceased to exist as being uncalled for and no longer necessary. On or about the 25th of July, through the aid of the advice from a friend of mine, I learned that my flight had given much trouble to my relations, acquaintances and friends; furthermore he told me that such conduct had become an obstacle to Japan's faithful fulfillment of her obligations in connection with her acceptance of the Potsdam Declaration, implying that I was showing direct disloyalty to the state. When I came to think it over I became really shocked.

Ever since I decided to escape I had been thinking that it would be simple enough to kill myself if the worst should come, which amounted to nothing if I considered that I had died in the Solomons, and I should be able to shoulder all responsibilities by committing suicide. Although I made light of such matter, still I found that it could not be carried out so easily when the critical moment arrived. Since the latter part of July, I gave this matter thorough consideration, arranged all my personal matters in order, and after bidding farewell to my close relatives whom I asked to look after my family, on July 30 I gave myself up to a member of the Hoshimoto Police Station, Wakayama Prefecture, and I have remained here ever since. I realize that my responsibility is heavy for having evaded justice for nearly six months.

Now I should like to be subjected to impartial judgment, by stating all the facts most frankly and exposing everything to light. Individual subjects which I have written in this document may be identified and clarified still further by comparing same with the records of that time.

(The End)

This confession of mine represents, in its entirety, a frank description of actual facts, and contains no false statements.

The writer of the above:

Norihiko Ozaki

/fingerprint/

August 8, 1946.

八ヶ岳山嶽に於ける英軍兵塔墓に關し陳述

元八ヶ岳山嶽駐屯隊第六設営隊長

毛崎 憲 孝



ATIS

不多仕慮跡の中に遺つた「八ヶ岳山嶽」過去と現在に記憶をた
頼之記述「二十二年一月日」の時刻が数字に就ては明確
には不明な部分多分入手に遺つた「海軍文書」等。当時「同隊
記録」を参照すれば明白となりし。此の点却諒解を願
ふ所なり。

〔三〕 經過概要

(一) 各部隊は二面に亘り「カタルン」島への進出が失敗に終つた
ら当時待機する居た「ボラヤン」島。「ア」の「問題」は
島上至急飛行場を設営せよとの命令を履行直前に
十七年十月二十六日(現)「八ヶ岳山嶽」に連立する。

(二) 当時同島は無人島であつた。小の島に島の周囲が陸の
「ア」の飛行場補強意味飛行場設営官下調査を許す
可一便にせよ。

各部隊は下三隊共各自に在りし設営用具を自給の如
く二年並召懸に集積せしむ。

当時自隊は第一隊に二機を配置し、第一隊に二機を
配置し、第二隊に二機を配置し、第三隊に二機を配置し、

毛崎 憲 孝

142

第一應完成之任務... (omitted)... 陸軍... 航空...
 陸軍... 航空... 陸軍... 航空...
 陸軍... 航空... 陸軍... 航空...

(4) 同島へ進出... (omitted)... 陸軍... 航空...
 陸軍... 航空... 陸軍... 航空...
 陸軍... 航空... 陸軍... 航空...

以上... (omitted)... 陸軍... 航空...
 陸軍... 航空... 陸軍... 航空...
 陸軍... 航空... 陸軍... 航空...

(Signature)
 Date: 昭和十五年五月...

142

第一應完成之任務... 島第四建設部... 派遺... 人員... 島上... 勞働力の期待...

後方懇請... 及附近の島... 隊員... 労働力を利用...

同島へ進出... 数隻... 輸送... 陸軍... 指揮官... 飛行場...

航空隊... 指揮官... 拒絶...

陸軍... 飛行機... 陸軍... 陸軍...

Handwritten signature and date

海軍駐留中、普くは於て自軍兵力不足、折柄、海軍、
下言、つゝ利用、死言、みこ、は、は、い、か、と、事、て、み、り、海軍
上之、道、あり、佐、軍、三、利、甲、と、言、海、軍、海、軍、は、何、方、上、月、の
子、建、造、の、事、事、政、面、倒、官、員、官、員、。 禄、は、は、私、己、用、に
只、彼、等、所、之、に、給、給、度、。 兵、兵、介、口、及、兵、隊、の、負、担、を、自、信、が、兵、隊、の
任、之、に、一、切、を、負、担、。 此、外、に、兵、隊、の、任、担、。 然、し、兵、隊、に、其、の、
法、律、懲、罰、を、經、て、私、己、に、海、軍、側、の、任、担、を、負、担、。 何、方、
任、担、が、あり、と、云、ふ、一、切、の、任、担、を、負、担、。 云、ふ、一、切、の、任、担、。

(三) 官、校、結、局、最、後、至、て、私、方、は、何、等、指、示、も、余、(余、元、來、主、命、也、)

此、時、に、は、既、に、本、島、に、は、私、隊、外、に、三、管、海、軍、大、隊、の、任、担、
す、十、三、種、高、射、砲、中、隊、一、中、隊、駐、屯、一、居、り、下、。 此、外、に、は、
金、原、海、軍、大、隊、の、任、担、。 十、三、種、高、射、砲、中、隊、高、橋、由、
海、軍、中、隊、の、任、担、。 八、種、高、射、砲、中、隊、各、一、中、隊、及、十、三、種、機、銃、
所、在、小、隊、三、小、隊、が、本、島、に、駐、屯、。 任、担、を、三、小、隊、に、分、配、す、
。 如、果、兵、隊、が、前、記、三、管、中、隊、外、に、駐、屯、。 此、時、に、進、出、す、
。 如、果、兵、隊、が、前、記、三、管、中、隊、外、に、駐、屯、。 此、時、に、進、出、す、

更、に、此、外、に、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、。 三、管、海、軍、大、隊、の、任、担、。 兵、隊、が、
五、待、隊、中、に、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、。 該、隊、の、兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、
。 兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、。 飛、行、機、隊、の、任、担、。 兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、
。 兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、。 飛、行、機、隊、の、任、担、。 兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、

(四) 右、如、く、不、能、に、三、管、海、軍、大、隊、の、任、担、。 兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、
。 兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、。 飛、行、機、隊、の、任、担、。 兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、
。 兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、。 飛、行、機、隊、の、任、担、。 兵、隊、が、一、管、海、軍、大、隊、

Handwritten signature and date: 8 Aug 52

陸軍駐留世の、貴族に於ては其力不足折柄、
下流の、利用に及ばず、其の、
上之、道あり、
（子、
只彼等、
他、
と、
指、

(三) 後、

此、
十三種、
（金、
海、
中、
而、
之、
如、
至、
之、
待、
在、
之、

(亦、

相、
其、
之、
之、

Handwritten signature and date: 昭和十一年

附

一、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部
 二、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部
 三、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部
 四、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部
 五、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部
 六、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部
 七、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部
 八、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部
 九、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部
 十、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部

總之，金保海軍又於（金保不特死，且其高橋海軍中尉）指揮
 陸軍（二）之部（三）

但（三）之海軍不特死，且其高橋海軍中尉（四）指揮
 陸軍（二）之部（三）

一、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部

二、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部

三、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部

四、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部

五、凡在戰區內之各部隊，其指揮官應隨時注意其部
 下之安全，並應隨時注意其部

三、... 此問題... 軍心... 宜... 宜...

(四) 啟者... 陸軍... 陸軍部... 陸軍部... 陸軍部...

(五) 證... 陸軍部... 陸軍部... 陸軍部... 陸軍部... 陸軍部...

(六) 為... 陸軍部... 陸軍部... 陸軍部... 陸軍部...

(七) 在... 陸軍部... 陸軍部... 陸軍部... 陸軍部...

Handwritten signature and date: 8 Aug 21

(15)

此中在... (faint text)
 日... (faint text)
 積... (faint text)
 路... (faint text)
 餉... (faint text)
 請... (faint text)
 活... (faint text)
 如... (faint text)

(五)

每... (faint text)
 計... (faint text)
 二... (faint text)
 則... (faint text)
 公... (faint text)

1912
 11
 11

... 第一...
... 第二...
... 第三...
... 第四...

(六) 所在地... 飛行場... 規定...
... 飛行場... 規定...
... 飛行場... 規定...
... 飛行場... 規定...

(七) 重要問題(其一)

捕獲... 隊... 目的... 飛行場... 規定...
... 隊... 目的... 飛行場... 規定...
... 隊... 目的... 飛行場... 規定...
... 隊... 目的... 飛行場... 規定...

...

一九五〇年十一月二十二日

此項工作之重要，在於能迅速而準確地掌握敵軍之動向，並能及時地予以打擊。為此，特將有關之各項規定，彙編如下，以供參考。

(六) 應在地區居住之敵軍，應由當地政府指定之飛行場，或指定之其他地點，予以收容。除收容外，應由當地政府，派員前往，對其進行教育，並對其進行勞務分配。凡屬此類之敵軍，應由當地政府，派員前往，對其進行教育，並對其進行勞務分配。凡屬此類之敵軍，應由當地政府，派員前往，對其進行教育，並對其進行勞務分配。

(七) 重要問題(續)

捕獲之敵軍，應由當地政府，派員前往，對其進行教育，並對其進行勞務分配。凡屬此類之敵軍，應由當地政府，派員前往，對其進行教育，並對其進行勞務分配。凡屬此類之敵軍，應由當地政府，派員前往，對其進行教育，並對其進行勞務分配。

此項工作之重要，在於能迅速而準確地掌握敵軍之動向，並能及時地予以打擊。為此，特將有關之各項規定，彙編如下，以供參考。

夫之西美佳前保管 淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
作之 餘部 將夫之 淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
(二) 淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多

(1) 淫罪部

斯之淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多

淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多
淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多

淫罪部味 夫之公權之行使中多

この報告は、各隊の活動状況を記述している。まず、各隊の編成と任務について述べている。次に、各隊の活動範囲と経過を詳しく説明している。最後に、各隊の戦果と今後の予定について述べている。

尚、北隊の進軍は、予期通りである。南隊は、予期通りである。東隊は、予期通りである。西隊は、予期通りである。北隊は、予期通りである。南隊は、予期通りである。東隊は、予期通りである。西隊は、予期通りである。

(九) 重要問題 (九の三)

昭和六年三月下旬、北隊が、東隊と合流した。この結果、北隊の勢力は、東隊の勢力と合流した。この結果、北隊の勢力は、東隊の勢力と合流した。この結果、北隊の勢力は、東隊の勢力と合流した。

(十) 重要問題 (十の四)

昭和六年三月下旬、北隊が、東隊と合流した。この結果、北隊の勢力は、東隊の勢力と合流した。この結果、北隊の勢力は、東隊の勢力と合流した。この結果、北隊の勢力は、東隊の勢力と合流した。

日本軍... 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...
 陸軍... 海軍... 航空隊...

(三) 以上

昭和五年一月十日新聞に於て載記



送

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

(完)

私此出白世金部...

...

...

...

...



571079

Doc 5425 (cont)

全十五頁ヨリ成ルニ藤村重雄ノ答書ハ其東京裁判
所ニテ尾崎忠彦ノ OSAKI TOSHIHIKO ノガ奈
ノ二面ニ於テ右証言ヲキツテ書ノ後即チノ終シタ
ルモノニシテ一九四六年ノ西暦二十一年ノ八月ニ
八月九日ノ二面ニ於テソノ内容ノ長實ナルコトヲ宣
明セリ。

東京裁判所戦争犯罪部書記官

H. S. WILLIAMS

少佐 エイチ・エス・ウィリアムスノ署名ノ

C. # 1880

Evidentiary Document No. 5398.

GILBERT AND ELLICE ISLANDS COLONY

High Commissioner's Court for the Western Pacific.

Held at Tarawa, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony, on the sixteenth day of October, 1944, under the Pacific Order in Council, 1893, by me David Curtiss Innes Wernham, Deputy Commissioner for the Western Pacific.

(Sgd) D. C. I. Wernham
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific

DEATH INQUIRY

Whereas there is reason to believe that the deaths of the following twenty two persons -

1. Reginald G. Morgan, Wireless Operator in the service of the Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony at Tarawa.
2. Basil Cleary, Dispenser in the service of the Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony at Tarawa.
3. Isaac R. Handley, retired Master Mariner, residing at Tarawa.
4. A. M. McArthur, retired Trader, of Nonouti, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
5. A. L. Sadd, Missionary, residing at Beru, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
6. A. C. Heenan, Wireless Operator in the service of the New Zealand Government and formerly stationed at Maiana, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
7. J. J. McCarthy, Wireless Operator in the service of the New Zealand Government and formerly stationed at Abemama, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
8. H. R. C. Hearn, Wireless Operator in the service of the New Zealand Government, and formerly stationed at Kuria, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
9. A. E. McKenna, Wireless Operator in the service of the New Zealand Government, and formerly stationed at Nonouti, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
10. A. L. Taylor, Wireless Operator in the service of the New Zealand Government, and formerly stationed at Beru, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.

11. T. C. Murray, Wireless Operator in the service of the New Zealand Government, and formerly stationed at Beru, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
12. C. A. Pearsall, Wireless Operator in the service of the New Zealand Government, and formerly stationed at Tamana, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
13. L. B. Speedy, Private (64653), New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Maiana, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
14. C. J. Owen, Private (64606), New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Maiana, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
15. D. H. Howe, Private (64056), New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Abemana, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
16. R. J. Hitchen, Private (63882), New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Abemana, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
17. R. Jones, Private (64485), New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Kuria, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
18. R. A. Ellis, Private (64382), New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Kuria, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
19. C. A. Kilpin, Private (64057), New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Nonouti, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
20. J. H. Nichol, Private (64062) New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Nonouti, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
21. W. A. R. Parker, Private (64005), New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Tamana, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.
22. R. M. McKenzie, Private (64022), New Zealand Expeditionary Force, formerly stationed at Tamana, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony.

occurred at Tarawa in the Gilbert Islands District and were brought about by violence, it is therefore lawful for me to hold an inquiry, under section two of the Death and Fire Inquiries

Ordinance 1924, into the cause of the deaths of the twenty two persons aforesaid.

(Sgd) D. C. I. Wernham
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific.

List of Witnesses.

1. Tiriata, Clerk and Interpreter, Tarawa.
2. Frank Highland of Tarawa.
3. Mikaere of Tarawa.
4. Leslie Copeland of Tarawa.
5. Ikamawa of Ocean Island.
6. Captain O. J. Drennan, Gilbert and Ellice
Defence Force.

Tiriata, Clerk and Interpreter in the service of the Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony, deposes on oath as follows:-

On September 3rd. 1942, the Japanese landed at Betio and occupied it. There were about six ships. On 17th September, 1942, I heard from Mr. Cleary that the Japanese commander was letting him leave Betio and go to stay at Abackoro. On the same day, Bishop Terrienne, Rudolph Muller and three Europeans and two Gilbertese boys arrived by a big Japanese ship. I understand that they came from Abemama. Nabuti, one of the Gilbertese boys told me that they came from Abemama.

Q. Did you see Bishop Terrienne arrive?

A. I saw him, but I did not talk to him. Both he and Rudolph Muller were guarded by a Japanese soldier with a rifle and bayonet.

On the 23rd. September, 1941, the Japanese who was previously working for N.B.K. at Butaritari and was now in charge of the native labour under the Japanese at Betio, asked me to write a letter to Mr. Cleary at Abackoro to come to Betio. Next day Mr. Cleary arrived and asked me why he had been sent for. I told him that I did not know. After he changed his clothes he went to look for Masibusi. Late on the same day, I heard that Mr. Cleary, Mr. Morgan and Captain Handley were taken by the Japanese to the lunatic enclosure. About 5.30 pm. Masibusi came to my house, wanting myself and Chief Kaubure Teurakai to leave Betio on a Japanese ship, early next morning. Next morning we left Betio on a big Japanese ship, accompanied by a warship

and one ship carrying equipment for listening for submarines. When we approached Beru, the warship first came up to anchorage at full speed and fired two or three shots. The ship on which we were travelling then anchored. Then we went ashore on the launch. The tide was too low to take the launch into the lagoon, so the Japanese soldiers jumped into the water and swam ashore. They could not find the Europeans on the Government station, but only a few natives. The Japanese then went separately to look for the Europeans. Two soldiers returned to the Government station with Mr. Sadd. They took him on board the ship.

Q. Did you see any Roman Catholic priest?

A. I saw Father Pouvreau in the District Officer's house, where the Japanese officer was.

Q. How did the Japanese treat Pouvreau?

A. I did not see. From Beru we left for Tarawa. When the Japanese landed there, they asked the natives where the Europeans were. The natives told them that they were still in their house. On their way down to see the Europeans, I saw three Europeans walking towards them. The Japanese took them to the wireless station. The Europeans packed their clothes and were taken on board the ship.

Q. Do you know their names?

A. No, two were in uniform and the other was wearing a lavalava. I heard that he was a wireless operator. The Japanese took them on board the ship. Then the ship went to Tabituea. The Japanese landed on the Government Station. They asked if any Europeans were there. They found that there were no Europeans except the Roman Catholic missionaries. They wanted to see the priest and the Chinese but only saw one Chinaman. They had no chance to see the others because aeroplane engines were heard and they hurried back to the ship. When we reached the ship we went to Kuria. There Leslie Copeland, myself, Mr. Sadd and the three Europeans were shipped to another ship. Then Leslie and myself went ashore with Japanese soldiers. Other Japanese soldiers had already landed and were looking for one more European. Not long after they found him. They took the three Europeans on board.

Q. Do you know who they were?

A. I do not know their names.

Q. Had you seen them before?

A. No. Two were wearing uniform and the third one was wearing a lavalava. After that we left for Tarawa. When we reached Tarawa, we all went ashore, also these Europeans. We waited beside the Government store and the Europeans were taken away by Japanese soldiers. When the Japanese soldiers arrived, they all marched to the Japanese commander. Masibusu, Leslie Copeland, Fritz Reiher, Tourakai and myself followed the soldiers.

The soldiers lined up in front of the Japanese Commander's house, where I saw all the Europeans whom we had brought. They were handcuffed and tied against coconut trees. Not long after, Masibusu told Leslie and myself to be ready for the next trip. That day was 30th September, 1942. On 1st. October Masibusu called me and we went on board the ship. The ship sailed for Nonouti. When she reached Nonouti, I went ashore with the soldiers. They asked the natives where all the Europeans had run away to on their last visit. They were told that the Europeans were waiting for them on the Government Station. The Japanese found them inside the Native Government Office. They called them and lined them up and questioned them.

Q. How many Europeans were there?

A. Four. I do not know their names except for Mr. MacArthur. While they lined up one Japanese came forward and hit them hard on the head with his hand and they fell down. Three Japanese officers with stripes on their collar were watching. Then they were all taken on board and the ship left for Tarawa.

Q. Did you see any Roman Catholic missionaries on the island?

A. No.

Q. How were these Europeans dressed?

A. All except MacArthur wore uniform. MacArthur wore white shirt and white trousers.

After the ship anchored at Tarawa, we all landed. The Europeans were taken away first. Masibusu and I followed them to the Japanese Commander's house. The four Europeans were handcuffed against other trees. The Europeans, whom had been brought from Beru, Tamana and Kuria, were still there, handcuffed and tied against the trees. I heard that they had been tied up for four days, before being taken to the Lunatic Asylum. A few days after that I left Betio to Bonriki and stayed there for two weeks. One day when I was fishing in the lagoon, an U.S. warship was shooting at Betio from outside. Two U.S. planes dropped bombs. Next day I went to Betio to find out what had happened. I first heard that all the Europeans had been killed, because one of them ran away from the Lunatic enclosure. I heard that the Japanese found him and took him back to the Lunatic Asylum.

Q. After seeing the European prisoners at the Commander's house, did you see them again?

A. Yes. I saw them twice after that. I think that I saw the whole lot except Captain Handley and Mr. MacArthur. They were working, carrying gravel near the Post Office.

Q. Whom did you recognize?

A. I recognized Mr. Sadd, the three Europeans from Tamana and the three Europeans from Kuria and the 3 from Noncuti. I could not recognize the others, except Mr. Morgen and Mr. Cleary.

Q. About how many were there?
A. About twenty.

Q. How did the Japanese behave to the members of the Sacred Heart Mission?
A. Some of the Japanese Officers were kind to them, but most were not.

Q. Can you tell me any instances when they were insulted or badly treated by the Japanese.
A. No, but they took from the missionaries all their food and anything which the Japanese wanted.

Q. Do you know why the Japanese killed Mr. Sadd and most of the Catholic missionaries?
A. I tried to ask Masibusu why the Europeans were killed, but he only shrugged his shoulders.

Signed by me at Tarawa this sixteenth day of October, 1944.

(Signed) P. B. TIRIATA.

Before me

(Signed) D. C. I. WERNHAM
Deputy Commissioner for
the Western Pacific.

Frank Highland, of Tarawa deposes on oath as follows:-

My wife and myself were on Betio for three days, a week or two weeks before Betio was shelled for the first time by a U.S. ship (or sub) on October 15, 1942. I saw Reverent Sadd, one trader, McArthur by name, two New Zealanders in uniform (shorts and drill jackets with buttons) two New Zealanders in civilian clothes. Each one had his hands tied behind his back by several feet of rope, the other end was attached to coconut trees. This was in Burns Philips area. The hands of one soldier were swollen. A Jap went to him and said "Do you want to be untied a little?" The New Zealander said "no, you tied it tight, you can leave it on as it is." The same Jap went to McArthur and asked the same question. McArthur said, "Yes it is too tight". I and my wife saw them feed a tin of food and a handful of rice. Their hands were untied for this, a guard being with each man. My wife and I were about two fathoms away at the time. The same evening it rained. The men slept on the grass under the trees.

The third morning after that we saw them still tied up. My wife and I were not allowed to go near them. Midday that day we saw them locked up in the lunatic asylum. Their hands were not tied. We saw Mr. Cleary, Mr. Morgan and Capt. Handley with them. Mr. Cleary wrote me a letter, tied it to a stone and threw it outside the fence. The letter begged me to help them with sugar if I had any or if not, native molasses so after I read that letter the Jap saw me and rushed at me. He tried to hit me with a big stick. I just walked away I put a match to the letter after that. The same afternoon, I left Betio and came over to Eita. I stayed here for a few days then my wife and I took back to them some sugar the Japs had given my boy and two bottles of molasses. I threw the sugar over the fence. Mr. Morgan made signs to me to send a girl we had with us to go and talk to the guard at the gate of the enclosure. When the guard was busy with the girl I climbed up the fence. Mr. Cleary climbed up inside and I gave him the two bottles of molasses. Reverend Sadd saw this and got a tin of biscuits and threw it over the fence to some young boys with me and told them to keep it. The guard saw this and chased us away. We left Betio then.

Three days after the ship shelled Betio, I heard the news that they the European prisoners had been killed and went down with some native boys. I asked the natives working there where they were killed. They took me two hundred yards back of the west side of the lunatic asylum fence. There were many Japs around so next morning at nine I went with Constable Takaua and saw where the bodies were burned in a Babai pit. Takaua watched and I went in the pit and lifted up coconut branch and corrugated iron. The bodies were all partly burnt. I lifted one body with just an arm burnt and showed it to Takaua. There were no heads on the bodies. I saw another heap in the pit and under the iron were the skulls. When I saw this I dropped the tin. I then kept watch while Takaua looked. That is all I have to say.

Q. When you saw the bodies, did you attempt to count them?

A. No. They were covered with corrugated iron and coconut leaves on top of it.

Signed by me at Tarawa this 18th day of October, 1944.

Before me

(Signed) F. HIGHLAND

(Signed) D. C. I. WERNHAM
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific.

Mikaere of Tarawa, Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony, deposes on oath as follows:-

When the first United States aeroplanes came to Betio, it was at about 2 o'clock in the afternoon. Two United States aeroplanes bombed Japanese ships in the port. All the native labourers ran on to the reef. When the two aeroplanes went away, the natives returned to the place where the British Government station used to be. I was with the Bishop in his house. One of the Japanese went to the natives and told them that one of the Europeans had escaped from the Lunatic Asylum enclosure. All the natives were sent to the building which was the office of the District Officer. After that they were sent back to their camp, because the Japanese said that the European had been caught.

Q. Did you remain with the Bishop or did you go to the office of the District Officer?

A. I went with the other natives to the office of the District Officer.

Q. Did the Japanese say who the European was who had escaped?

A. No. The natives all went to their camp and I went to the Bishop's house. Then one Japanese came to us and showed his sword to us. That sword was covered with blood. He said that he had killed the Europeans with his sword.

Q. Did you know who that Japanese was?

A. I do not know, but perhaps some of the natives might know. He was not a soldier, he used to sit all the time in the office.

Q. When he came to the Bishop's house to show his sword, from what direction did he come?

A. He came from the direction of the old native village. He left us and went to the former British Government Station. Shortly after 5 p.m. I went to cut toddy beside the Lunatic Asylum. I heard a lot of noise and saw a lot of Japanese inside the Lunatic Asylum enclosure. I wanted to see what was happening so I went to the house which was formerly used by the natives looking after the lunatics. When I reached the house I saw the Europeans sitting in a line inside the enclosure. While I lay in that house, the Europeans being already lined up, I saw one of the Europeans, it might have been Captain Handley, pulled out from the house by the Japanese and placed in front of the Europeans.

Q. Was he alive?

A. He was dead. When he was placed in front of the

Europeans, he was lying down, covered with blood. Then one Japanese started to kill the Europeans. He cut off the head of the first European, then the second, then the third, then I did not see any more because I fainted. When I came to, I saw the Japanese carrying the dead bodies to two pits on the West side of the Lunatic enclosure. I could not see how many bodies there were. When I was lying in the house, a Japanese coolie ran past and fell down close beside, with a tin full of European clothes. He put the tin down in the house, and went back to help to carry the corpses. I took the tin of clothes and went back to the Bishop's house. I informed the Bishop about the death of the Europeans. The clothes were taken from me by other natives, except for one pair of shorts and one shirt.

Q. Can you tell the date on which that happened?
A. I do not remember.

Q. About how many Europeans did you see lined up in the Lunatic Asylum Enclosure?
A. I did not count them. There were more than ten.

Q. Did you recognize the Japanese who cut off their heads?
A. He was the same man who came to show his sword to the Bishop.

Q. Were the Japanese who killed the Europeans coolies or soldiers?
A. They were all coolies.

Q. Do you know who was the European who escaped?
A. I do not know, but I heard from natives that it was Mr. Cleary.

Q. Did you recognize any of the Europeans, who were in the Lunatic enclosure, other than Captain Handley?
A. I recognized Mr. Sadd and Mr. McArthur. Before that day I had seen Mr. Cleary and other European prisoners working on the wharf at Betio. After the day on which I saw the Europeans killed, I did not see any Europeans on Betio except the Bishop, Father Viallon and Brother Conrad. About two days afterwards I saw the bodies of the murdered Europeans, but it was difficult to see them among the ashes, for the Japanese had burned them.

Signed by me at Tarawa this 18th day of
October, 1944.

(Signed) Mikaere.

I certify that the above statement was faithfully interpreted by me and re-interpreted to the witness before his signature was appended thereto.

(Signed) Ernest Milne.

Before me

(Signed) D. C. I. Wernham
Deputy Commissioner for
the Western Pacific.

Leslie Copeland of Tarawa deposes on oath as follows:-

The Japanese landed their troops on Betio on 2nd. September, 1942. When they landed Basil Cleary stayed in his house. Then the Japanese took over my house and Captain Handley's house. I stayed in a small house near the beach. Every night I went to see Mr. Cleary after dark. Then he told me that the Japanese were letting him go to stay on Abakoro. The next day I saw Mr. Cleary on the beach ready to leave for Abakoro. That was the last time I saw him. The day after that Tiriata and I went on board the Japanese ship and left for Beru.

Q. Why had you to go on board?

A. The Japanese told Tiriata and myself to go on board the ship. The next day, when we were at sea, Kansaki told us that we were going to Beru. After two days we arrived at Beru before 6 a.m. We left the ship at about 7 a.m. to go ashore in the launch.

Q. Was there only one ship?

A. One destroyer, one like an A.P.C. and one big cargo ship. When we went ashore the tide was falling but they still wanted to go ashore. I tried to get their launch left high and dry in the passage. I did this to give the wireless operator ashore more time. All the soldiers had to wade ashore. When we got ashore the wireless house was on fire. The wireless operator had cleared off. A few natives were on the Government Station, but they told the Japanese that they did not know where the Wireless Operators were. The natives told Kansaki that Mr. Sadd and the Roman Catholic Father were at their homes. Kansaki told me to go ahead to tell the Father and Mr. Sadd that they must wait in their houses. When I got to the Father's house, he was already hiding in the bush. Mr. Sadd was in his house. I told him that the Japanese were on their way. I returned to the Japanese as Kansaki had told me. When I reached the Father's place, the Japanese were there, and the Father was there. When they had finished talking to the Father in his house, we went on to Mr. Sadd's house. When they got there on the road they sent word to Mr. Sadd to come and see

then there. Mr. Sadd did not come till after the third message. The Japanese officer could not speak English and Kansaki was not there. They called Mr. Sadd a Wireless Operator. I succeeded at last in telling them that he was a missionary. Then he sent Mr. Sadd with one soldier guarding him to the Government Station. We continued to the last village in the North and then returned to the Government Station. We left Beru at about 5 p.m. with Mr. Sadd. We left Beru and went to Tamana. We went ashore at Tamana early next morning. The three Europeans stayed in their houses waiting for the Japanese.

Q. Do you know their names?

A. No, because the Japanese would not let us speak to them. We left Tamana at 2 p.m. taking the three Europeans with them.

Q. Who were these three Europeans?

A. Two were soldiers and one was an Wireless Operator. When I reached there, one soldier was in full uniform, the other was wearing a lavalava. The Japanese tied their hands, but in ten minutes time they untied them. The Japanese told them to get ready and they both left in uniform with kit bags. The third European was not in uniform. One of the soldiers was called "Mack" by the natives. He was dark, and very tall and strong. We left Tamana for Tabiteuea. We went ashore at Tabiteuea to look for wireless. A native told the Japanese that there was no Wireless Operator or wireless there. The Japanese did not meet any of the Roman Catholic missionaries there. We left Tabiteuea for Tarawa, but turned aside to call at Kuria. We arrived there in the evening and one Japanese ship was there before us. We went ashore and met Fritz Keiher and Tourakai there. As soon as we got ashore the Japanese from the first ship returned on board with Tourakai and Fritz. Fritz and Tourakai told us that the Japanese had found two of the coast-watchers. In about five minutes time we followed the Japanese officer down the road to the South, and the Wireless operator and some natives came to us. The Japanese took him aboard. He had only a white lavalava.

Q. Do you know his name?

A. No.

Q. Do you remember what he was like?

A. He was thin, and not very tall.

Q. Were the natives bringing this European to the Japanese?

A. I could not say, as I was a little way behind the Japanese officer. About half an hour later we went on board the other ship, where Fritz and Tourakai were. I did not see

them there. Mr. Sadd did not come till after the third message. The Japanese officer could not speak English and Kansaki was not there. They called Mr. Sadd a Wireless Operator. I succeeded at last in telling them that he was a missionary. Then he sent Mr. Sadd with one soldier guarding him to the Government Station. We continued to the last village in the North and then returned to the Government Station. We left Beru at about 5 p.m. with Mr. Sadd. We left Beru and went to Tamana. We went ashore at Tamana early next morning. The three Europeans stayed in their houses waiting for the Japanese.

Q. Do you know their names?

A. No, because the Japanese would not let us speak to them. We left Tamana at 2 p.m. taking the three Europeans with them.

Q. Who were these three Europeans?

A. Two were soldiers and one was an Wireless Operator. When I reached there, one soldier was in full uniform, the other was wearing a lavalava. The Japanese tied their hands, but in ten minutes time they untied them. The Japanese told them to get ready and they both left in uniform with kit bags. The third European was not in uniform. One of the soldiers was called "Mack" by the natives. He was dark, and very tall and strong. We left Tamana for Tabiteuea. We went ashore at Tabiteuea to look for wireless. A native told the Japanese that there was no Wireless Operator or wireless there. The Japanese did not meet any of the Roman Catholic missionaries there. We left Tabiteuea for Tarawa, but turned aside to call at Kuria. We arrived there in the evening and one Japanese ship was there before us. We went ashore and met Fritz Keiher and Tourakai there. As soon as we got ashore the Japanese from the first ship returned on board with Tourakai and Fritz. Fritz and Tourakai told us that the Japanese had found two of the coast-watchers. In about five minutes time we followed the Japanese officer down the road to the South, and the Wireless operator and some natives came to us. The Japanese took him aboard. He had only a white lavalava.

Q. Do you know his name?

A. No.

Q. Do you remember what he was like?

A. He was thin, and not very tall.

Q. Were the natives bringing this European to the Japanese?

A. I could not say, as I was a little way behind the Japanese officer. About half an hour later we went on board the other ship, where Fritz and Tourakai were. I did not see

the Europeans on board.

Q. Were there any Europeans or missionaries on Kuria?

A. I did not see any. Fritz and Tcurakai did not know that we were on board till we reached Betio. Next morning we went ashore at Betio with those Europeans. We were all marched to the house where the Commander of the Japanese was, with those seven Europeans. After we had seen that, Kansaki told us that we could go home and Tiriata and I left. At about 4 p.m. the Japanese sent word that they wanted me again. I went to the Japanese commander's house. I saw those Europeans lying or sitting on the ground with their hands tied behind their backs and fixed to coconut palms.

Q. How many were there?

A. Once before that there were three. The natives said that they were from Abemana. But on that afternoon there were only the seven which had arrived on the same ship as I did. The Japanese told me to be ready to leave again at once. Kansaki took us on board a ship said by the Japanese to be the "Kateri Maru", the same ship on which we went to Beru. Next morning we were off the passage at Abaiang. The ship anchored close to the passage and we went ashore in a landing boat. We slept in Bonriki village. Next morning we went as far as the South end, with Japanese soldiers searching in the bush. We returned to the Government Station by boat and slept there that night. Next day the Japanese marched to the North. We slept at Takarano village. Next morning the Japanese tried to get to kibeno, but when we reached the passage the Japanese officer in command changed his mind. We returned on a landing boat to the Government Station. As far as I can remember we left for the ship on the same day.

Q. Did the Japanese find any European missionaries there?

A. On the first day Kansaki went to see the Sisters at the Catholic seminary with the leader of the Japanese soldiers. I stayed on the road and did not see any of the missionaries. Next morning Kansaki and I cycled back to ask the sisters whether they had any tobacco. When we got there I heard one of the Sisters report to Kansaki that they had had a bad time with Japanese soldiers at night. The Japanese asked for matches and the Sisters threw the matches down to them, but the Japanese wanted the Sisters to come down to them. When we went North, Kansaki and the leader of the Japanese saw the Fathers at Koinawa. I did not see them, but waited with the other Japanese in the main road.

After we left Abaiang we went to Maiana, arriving in the morning. It was low water and we landed at Tebikerai.

The Japanese walked to the Government Station. Before they reached there they had been told that two of the Coast-Watchers were at the Government Station and that one was hiding in the bush. At the village before the Government Station, all the Japanese went to the bush to look for that man. About two hours later they returned from the bush without having found him. Some natives, whom I do not know told Kansaki that Maerere knew where the European was. They questioned the boy who kept on saying that he did not know where the European was. They tied his hand and took him to the Government Station. Between the village and the Government Station one native, whom I do not know, told Kansaki that he knew the part of the island where the coast-watcher was hiding. Kansaki told the Japanese leader and he sent back Kansaki with 6 Japanese the native boy, and myself. Kansaki and two or three soldiers went on the boundary of the piece of land and myself, the native boy and two soldiers were on the other boundary. We went right across the island. When we got there the two Japanese saw a big bush. The two Japanese pointed that they were going to the bush and when we were marching there I walked on some coconut leaves and I stood on top of the lid of the fox-hole without knowing it. The Japanese heard the noise, turned back and lifted the rubbish up and found the man there. The Japanese pushed myself and the native aside, and they all ran together. They took him with them. This happened about six and seven p.m. We reached the Government Station at about 10 p.m. Maerere was still tied up but they let him loose next morning. The two other Europeans had been taken on the Government Station on the evening before. The natives said that the Wireless Operator's name was Arthur, and that the man found in the bush was Leslie and the other man was Charlie. Between 6 a.m. and 10 a.m. the Japanese went to see the Fathers and Sisters. I saw the Fathers and Sisters on the Government Station; I think that the Japanese brought them there. We left Maiana in the afternoon and returned to Tarawa. We reached there in the evening. Next morning Masibusu told me that I could leave Betio. I made up my mind to go and see Captain Handley, Basil Cleary and Mr. Morgan. I tried to approach the lunatic asylum, where they were gaoled, from the back of the village. When I got close, I saw Basil Cleary inside the fence walking between two buildings. I tried to whistle softly because the guard was on the door, but he did not hear. I tried to throw a small stone, but he did not see. I stayed about quarter of an hour, then I returned slowly. I only saw Cleary. The same day I left Betio. That night I slept at Banraeaba. Then I left for Abackoro, slept there two nights and went to Taboric and decided to build my house there. The same day a warship shelled the island. The date was the 15th October, 1942. The same night some natives came by canoe from Betio and told us that all the Europeans had been killed. On the 29th October, 1942, the Japanese ordered me to return to Betio.

Then Masibusu told me that all the Europeans who were in prison had been killed.

Q. How did the Japanese treat the members of the Sacred Heart Mission?

A. When the Japanese were coming from Buariki to Abackoro, they always called at the Mission Station at Taborio. I think the reason was that they wanted to get wine from Father Grandgeorge. Generally the Japanese left the Missionaries alone unless they wished to go through the Father's gear to get clothing or fish-line.

Q. Can you tell me anything about Mr. Morgan?

A. Before I left for Beru, I saw Mr. Morgan in the Japanese Commander's house in the corner of the verandah. He was waving his hand to me. I asked when he was going back to Bairiki. He replied "Kow", I went to the ship, but when I got back he was not in Bairiki and I heard that he was in the lunatic asylum.

Signed by me at Tarawa this 19th day
of October, 1944.

(Signed) L. Copeland.

Before me (Signed) D. C. I. WERNHAM
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific.

Ikarawa of Ocean Island, Native Clerk in the service of the Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony, deposes on oath as follows:-

In 1942 I was at Beru. Japanese troops landed at about 5.30 a.m. on Beru on the 29th of September, 1942. Mr Allan L. Taylor and Mr. Thomas C. Murray were stationed on Beru as Wireless Operators. On that day Mr. Taylor was on watch from 4 a.m. to 8 a.m. When the Japanese arrived Tokarara assisted Mr. Taylor to send the messages. Then the Japanese shelled the island. Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray ran away to the bush at Nuka village, and told Tokarara to burn the station as soon as the Japanese landed.

Q. How do you know that?

A. Mr. Taylor told me, when I saw him afterwards. The Japanese landed at the Government Station. About ten of them went to the Mission Station at Rongorongo. I saw Mr. A. L. Sadd in his house, but I did not speak to him. Then the Japanese came bringing Leslie Copeland with them. I ran to Tabiang. I never saw Mr. Sadd again. The Japanese all returned to their ship in the evening. Next day (Sunday) I saw Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray. They had decided to escape from Beru, using the London Missionary Society launch and the Government whale-boat. They said that they would leave at 5 p.m. that day. They asked for three natives to

Then Masibusu told me that all the Europeans who were in prison had been killed.

Q. How did the Japanese treat the members of the Sacred Heart Mission?

A. When the Japanese were coming from Buariki to Abackoro, they always called at the Mission Station at Taborio. I think the reason was that they wanted to get wine from Father Grandgeorge. Generally the Japanese left the Missionaries alone unless they wished to go through the Father's gear to get clothing or fish-line.

Q. Can you tell me anything about Mr. Morgan?

A. Before I left for Beru, I saw Mr. Morgan in the Japanese Commander's house in the corner of the verandah. He was waving his hand to me. I asked when he was going back to Bairiki. He replied "Now", I went to the ship, but when I got back he was not in Bairiki and I heard that he was in the lunatic asylum.

Signed by me at Tarawa this 19th day
of October, 1944.

(Signed) L. Copeland.

Before me (Signed) D. C. I. WERNHAM
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific.

Ikarawa of Ocean Island, Native Clerk in the service of the Gilbert and Ellice Islands Colony, deposes on oath as follows:-

In 1942 I was at Beru. Japanese troops landed at about 5.30 a.m. on Beru on the 29th of September, 1942. Mr Allan L. Taylor and Mr. Thomas C. Murray were stationed on Beru as Wireless Operators. On that day Mr. Taylor was on watch from 4 a.m. to 8 a.m. When the Japanese arrived Tokarara assisted Mr. Taylor to send the messages. Then the Japanese shelled the island. Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray ran away to the bush at Nuka village, and told Tokarara to burn the station as soon as the Japanese landed.

Q. How do you know that?

A. Mr. Taylor told me, when I saw him afterwards. The Japanese landed at the Government Station. About ten of them went to the Mission Station at Rongerongo. I saw Mr. A. L. Sadd in his house, but I did not speak to him. Then the Japanese came bringing Leslie Copeland with them. I ran to Tabiang. I never saw Mr. Sadd again. The Japanese all returned to their ship in the evening. Next day (Sunday) I saw Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray. They had decided to escape from Beru, using the London Missionary Society launch and the Government whale-boat. They said that they would leave at 5 p.m. that day. They asked for three natives to

go with them and Constable Teikarawa, L.M.S. Teacher Tarieta and Irata were willing to go with them. I went to Tabiang to ask the natives to help to carry the stores to the boats. When I was there, a native arrived on a bicycle to tell me that Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray were not going, and to tell me to go to Rongorongo at about 7 p.m. I went there, and they told me that they were not going because Pastor Iubili would not let them have the London Missionary Society launch, and the Native Government refused the Government whale-boat, because they were frightened of the Japanese. The natives said that, before he left, the Japanese Commander told them that the island would be shelled if the natives allowed the Europeans to leave the island. After that Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray stayed at Rongorongo till the Japanese returned on the 7th of October, 1942. On that day I went to Rongorongo to see Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray. A native boy came from the Government station to say that the Japanese had landed at the Government station and wanted to take Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray. Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray went to meet the Japanese. They told me not to go with them. So I went back, and they went towards the Government station. I never saw them again.

Q. Did you know the names of any of the other New Zealanders who were in the Gilbert Islands in 1942?

A. There were only two New Zealanders at Beru, Mr. Taylor and Mr. Murray. I do not know the names of any of the others.

Signed by me at Tarawa this 20th day of October, 1944.

(Signed) IKAMAWA

Before me

(Signed) D. C. I. WERNHAM
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific.

Oliver John Drennan, Captain in the Gilbert and Ellice Defence Force, and resident at Tarawa, deposes on oath as follows:-

I am an Assistant District Officer in the Gilbert Islands District. According to the records kept in the office of the District Officer, Gilbert Islands District, the following New Zealand personnel were on Coast-Watching duty in the Gilbert Islands, at the time of the Japanese occupation:-

At Little Makin:

Operator - M.P. McQuinn
Soldiers - Pte B. L. Were (64696)
- Pte L. E. H. Muller (65006)

At Butaritari:

Operator - J. M. Jones.
Soldiers - J. M. Menzies (36495)
- M. Menzies.

At Abaiang.

Operator - S. R. Wallace.

At Maiana:

Operator - A. C. Heenan
Soldiers - Pte. L. B. Speedy (64653)
- Pte C. J. Owen (64606)

At Kuria:

Operator - H. R. C. Hearn.
Soldiers - R. Jones (64485)
- R.A. Ellis (64382)

At Abemana

Operator - J. J. McCarthy
Soldiers - Pte. D. H. Howe (64056)
- Pte. R. J. Hitchen (63882)

At Ncnouti:

Operator - A. E. McKenna.
Soldiers - Pte. C. A. Kilpin (64057)
- Pte. J. H. Nichol (64062)

At Beru:

Operators - A. L. Taylor
- T. C. Murray.

At Tanana:

Operator - C. A. Pearsall
Soldiers - Pte W.A.R. Parker (64005)
- Pte R. M. McKenzie (64022).

Signed by me at Tarawa this 20th day of October, 1944.

(Signed) O. J. Drennan.

Before me -

(Signed) D. C. I. Wernham
Deputy Commissioner for the Western Pacific.

FINDING

That it is established beyond doubt that the said twenty two persons, namely -

- | | |
|-----------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Reginald G. Morgan | 12. C. A. Pearsall |
| 2. Basil Cleary | 13. L. B. Speedy |
| 3. Isaac R. Handley | 14. C. J. Owan |
| 4. A. M. McArthur | 15. D. H. Howe |
| 5. A. L. Sadd | 16. R. J. Hitchen |
| 6. A. C. Heenan | 17. R. Jones |
| 7. J. J. McCarthy | 18. R. A. Ellis |
| 8. H. R. C. Hearn | 19. C. A. Kilpin |
| 9. A. E. McKenna | 20. J. H. Nichol |
| 10. A. L. Taylor | 21. W. A. R. Parker |
| 11. T. C. Murray | 22. R. M. McKenzie |

were killed by Japanese at Betio, Tarawa on or about the fifteenth day of October, 1942.

(Signed) D.C.I. Wernham
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific.

20th October, 1944.

I certify that the presents typewritten on this and the fifteen preceeding pages are a true copy of the record of an Inquiry held at Tarawa on the sixteenth, eighteenth, nineteenth and twentieth days of October, 1944, under section two of the Death and Fire Inquiries Ordinance 1924.

At Tarawa, Gilbert and Ellice
Islands Colony, this nineteenth
day of March, 1946.

(Signed) D. C. I. Wernham
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific.

FINDING

That it is established beyond doubt that the said twenty two persons, namely -

- | | |
|-----------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Reginald G. Morgan | 12. C. A. Pearsall |
| 2. Basil Cleary | 13. L. B. Speedy |
| 3. Isaac R. Handley | 14. C. J. Owan |
| 4. A. M. McArthur | 15. D. H. Howe |
| 5. A. L. Sadd | 16. R. J. Hitchen |
| 6. A. C. Heenan | 17. R. Jones |
| 7. J. J. McCarthy | 18. R. A. Ellis |
| 8. H. R. C. Hearn | 19. C. A. Kilpin |
| 9. A. E. McKenna | 20. J. H. Nichol |
| 10. A. L. Taylor | 21. W. A. R. Parker |
| 11. T. C. Murray | 22. R. M. McKenzie |

were killed by Japanese at Betio, Tarawa on or about the fifteenth day of October, 1942.

(Signed) D.C.I. Wernham
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific.

20th October, 1944.

I certify that the presents typewritten on this and the fifteen preceding pages are a true copy of the record of an Inquiry held at Tarawa on the sixteenth, eighteenth, nineteenth and twentieth days of October, 1944, under section two of the Death and Fire Inquiries Ordinance 1924.

At Tarawa, Gilbert and Ellice
Islands Colony, this nineteenth
day of March, 1946.

(Signed) D. C. I. Wernham
Deputy Commissioner for the
Western Pacific.

Doc 5398

證據書類第五卷

「天竺」及「高植氏地」

西部太平洋植民地長官法院

一九四四年十月六日「天竺」及「高植氏地」

一九三九年太平洋報告「據」西部太平洋自治領副長官

余「天竺」及「高植氏地」

西部太平洋自治領副長官「D.C. 50-1-10」(自署)

◎ 此七「閣」不詳問

下「天竺」及「高植氏地」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」勤務主任「天竺」

無線電信技師

「天竺」及「高植氏地」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」勤務主任「天竺」

建築技師

「天竺」及「高植氏地」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」勤務主任「天竺」

「A.M.」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」勤務主任「天竺」

「A.L.」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」勤務主任「天竺」

宣教師

「A.C.」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」勤務主任「天竺」

新西蘭政府勤務無線電信技師

「J.B.」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」勤務主任「天竺」

新西蘭政府勤務無線電信技師

「H.R.O.」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」勤務主任「天竺」

新西蘭政府勤務無線電信技師

「A.E.」

「天竺」及「高植氏地」勤務主任「天竺」

新西蘭政府勤務無線電信技師

27/880

No 1

5398

一「A」

2000

三「C.A」

三「D」

四「J」

五「D.H」

六「R」

七「R」

八「R.A」

九「C.A」

NO2

一「J.H」

二「W.A.R」

三月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

四月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

五月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

六月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

七月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

八月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

九月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

十月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

十一月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

十二月廿九日新加坡政府到署，無線電信技師

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

元天六十一及五之島植民地，六十二三號在元

No3

Doc

5398

三三及M R 三三

右者、死七、北、一、島地獄、夕、夕、三、診、発、生、且、以、之、カ、不、法
 行、爲、三、起、因、之、心、之、上、信、之、入、理、由、が、不、可、行、死、七、心、火、飲、三、関、之、
 訊、問、條、令、第、三、部、三、振、子、松、取、調、行、之、事、合、法、事、事、不、ル、

駐在七心新聖蘭出陣軍兵士(六四〇〇五)

心兵士、及五文島根民地「夕夕」三駐在

七心新聖蘭出陣軍兵士(六四〇〇三)

以下次頁

doc 5398

1937 手紙に「及ニ、島居民地政廳勤務セル書記兼通譯者アリタリ」

ハ正式ニ宣誓ニ在リテ證言シタリ。
一九四二年九月三日ニ日本軍ニテオ、ニ上陸シテ、ソコト領シタ。船ニ六
隻程下テ、一九四二年九月十七日ニ私、ソコテ、試カラ日本軍指揮官
ハ彼ヲテオ、ソコテ、オコロ、ニ行キ、ソコニ滞在スルヤウニテ、ナルト聞
ク、同日ニ、エモ、司、ル、ル、ミ、リ、ト、外三人、西洋人ト三人、モ
ル、ト、人、少年ガ、大キ、日本船ヲ着ケ、私、彼等、ハ、ア、マ、カラ、来、タ、ダ
ト思フ、モ、ル、ト、人、少年、一人、ヲ、テ、ハ、彼等、ハ、ア、マ、カラ、来、タ、ト私
ニ云フ

問、貴方ハ、ソコニ、同、船、ガ、着、ケ、タ、ヲ、見、タ、カ

答、私、ハ、彼、ヲ、見、タ、然、レ、モ、話、ニ、シ、カ、タ、司、故、モ、ル、ル、ミ、リ、ト、二人共、一、人、
日本兵ガ、着、劍、銃、ヲ、護、衛、シ、居、タ

一九四二年(即チ一九四二年カ)九月十三日ニ、⁽¹⁹⁴⁾「NBK」ヲ、働、キ、
居、テ、當時、ニ、オ、テ、日本軍、下、テ、原住民、勞、働、者、監、督、シ、居、テ、日本
人、私、ニ、ア、オ、コ、ロ、ニ、居、ル、ク、リ、ヤ、リ、試、ニ、テ、オ、ニ、来、ル、様、ニ、手、紙、ヲ、書、キ、
テ、送、リ、テ、頼、メ、テ、答、テ、オ、テ、試、ニ、着、ケ、タ、ソ、コ、ニ、私、何、故、呼、ビ、テ、カ、ト、尋、ネ、
タ、私、知、ラ、ヌ、ト、答、テ、オ、テ、彼、ニ、着、物、ヲ、着、換、エ、テ、ミ、テ、シ、テ、投、ニ、行、ク、
其、日、晚、ク、私、ハ、ク、リ、ヤ、リ、試、ニ、モ、ガ、ニ、試、及、ビ、テ、下、リ、船、長、ガ、日本兵、ヨリ
精神、病、者、收、容、所、ニ、連、テ、行、ク、テ、聞、ク、テ、午後、五、時、三、十分、頃、
「ミ、フ」ガ、私、ノ、家、ニ、来、テ、私、ト、會、長、カ、ケ、テ、オ、コ、ロ、ニ、翌、早、朝、日本船
ニ、乗、リ、テ、オ、コ、ロ、ニ、出、発、ス、ル、様、ニ、頼、メ、テ、翌、朝、吾、々、ハ、大、キ、日本船ニ
乗、リ、テ、一隻、軍、艦、ト、潜水、艦、ニ、テ、シ、テ、聴、音、器、ヲ、發、信、シ、タ、他、一、般
ノ、船、ト、来、テ、オ、コ、ロ、ニ、出、発、シ、タ

No 4 (194)

ベル、ト、一、近、附、ク、時、ニ、軍、艦、ガ、最、先、ニ、鎗、也、ニ、全、速、ニ、進、ニ、三

Doc 5-398

彼等、政府、彼等、敬、原住民、見、西洋人、見、
 本船、連、行、

問 貴方、敬、司祭、見、

答 私、日本、特校、居、地、家、見、

問 日本軍、神父、様、取、

答 私、見、日本、一、行、日本、人、
 陸、彼、原住民、西洋、人、
 原住民、彼等、家、居、
 洋人、為、向、方、行、西洋、人、
 方、見、

日本人、彼等、無、局、連、行、西洋、人、
 本船、乗、

問 貴方、彼等、名、前、知、居、

答 否、二人、別、居、一人、
 教師、事、日本軍、彼等、本船、連、行、本船、
 行、日本軍、政府、所在地、上、陸、誰、西洋、人、
 居、上、教、官、教師、行、事、
 彼等、司祭、中国人、會、一人、中国人、會、
 父、子、其、時、飛行機、音、聞、彼等、急、本船、
 歸、洋、人、會、概、令、失、

1105

Doc 5398

兵士等日本船隊會、馬車、馬二行列シテ行クガ、ソレ私達
が邊シト来テ西洋人ニ見テ畏ル。彼等、牛鏡ヲ掛テヨシト
郁子木ニ縛リ、胸ヲヒキテ、面ヲナク、ソレヨリ私ト「
リ」ニ云、旅行、譯語、又ルヤカニ言ク、ソレヨリ、日、一九日、再
船知十七年、九月三十日、テ、十日、日、ニ、私
呼シ、ソレ私達ノ船ニ集ル、船、ソレヨリ、出帆
シ、船、ソレヨリ、着、テ、時、私、兵士、邊、上、陸、シ、
上、前、回、来、テ、時、西洋人、何、處、ニ、遊、ク、カ、兵士、邊、上、陸、シ、
尋、テ、西洋人、邊、上、役、所、ニ、貴、方、邊、上、待、テ、拜、ル、ト、士、人、邊、
答、ク、日本、人、ノ、原、住、民、役、所、ニ、彼、等、ガ、拜、ル、ヲ、見、テ、
日本、人、ノ、西洋、人、ヲ、集、メ、行、列、サ、セ、テ、訊、問、シ、

向、西洋人、何、人、位、ノ、コ、ト、ナ、カ、
答、曰、ク、シ、
「マカーサ」ノ、外、ノ、名、前、ノ、知、リ、セ、シ、彼、等、ガ
行、列、シ、テ、行、ク、時、一、人、ノ、日本、人、ガ、前、ニ、出、テ、来、テ、手、ヲ、被、
等、ノ、頭、ヲ、強、ク、打、ツ、テ、彼、等、ノ、倒、シ、テ、襟、章、ニ、横、條、ノ、
三、人、ノ、日本、士、官、ガ、之、ヲ、眺、メ、テ、見、テ、ソ、レ、カ、ラ、彼、等、ノ、全、部、船
ニ、集、メ、テ、シ、ソ、レ、私、達、ノ、船、ニ、出、帆、シ、

向、島、上、ニ「カトリック」ノ、教、宣、教、所、ガ、拜、ル、ヲ、見、テ、
答、イ、ヤ、見、テ、シ、
向、ソ、レ、西洋、人、ノ、目、ヲ、眼、蓋、シ、テ、行、ク、カ、

NO 7

答、
「マカーサ」以外、ノ、制、服、ヲ、シ、
「マカーサ」ノ、目、ヲ、シ、
ス、ボ、ノ、手、蓋、シ、テ、行、ク、カ、船、ガ、
「マカーサ」ニ、旋、回、シ、テ、私、達、ノ、
同、上、陸、シ、西洋、人、ガ、最、初、ニ、邊、上、行、ク、カ、私、ト、

Doc 5398

兵士連の日本捕縛會、馬車、馬二行列シテ行クガ、ソレ私連が連シテ來タ西洋人ニ見テ見タ。彼等ハ井鏡ヲ掛テヨリテ椰子木ニ縛リ附ケテ井タ面モナク、ソレ私ト「ソレ」ニ云、旅行、準備、又ルサカニ言タ、ソレ日ハ一九日三月昭和十七年一月三十日ヲ下タ、十日ハ「ソレ」ハ私ヲ呼ビタ、ソレ私連ハ船ニ乗シタ、船ハ「ソレ」ニ出帆シタ。船ハ「ソレ」ニ着テ時、私ハ兵士連ト共ニ上陸シタ。前日來タ時、西洋人ハ何處ニ遊シタカト兵士連ハ主人ニ尋ネタ。西洋人連ハ役所ト云フ處ニ遊シテ井ルト主人答ハ答ヘタ。日本人ハ原住民役所ニ彼等ガ井ルヲ見附ケタ。日本人ハ西洋人ヲ集メ、行列サセテ訊問シタ。

問、西洋人ハ何人位ノコニ井タ、トスカ。
 答、四人ヲシタ。「メジャーサ」ノ外ハ名前ハ知りマゼン。彼等ガ行列シテ井タ時、一人ハ日本人ガ前ニ出テ來テ、手ヲ彼等ノ頭ヲ強ク打ツタ、彼等ハ倒シタ。藤澤ニ横條、元三人ハ日本士官ガ之ヲ眺メテ井タ。ソレカニ彼等ハ全部船ニ乗セテシタ。ソレ船ハ「ソレ」ニ出帆シタ。

問、島、上ニ「カトリック」ノ教、宣教師ガ井ルヲ見シタカ。
 答、イヤ、見マゼンシタ。

問、ソレ、西洋人ハソレハ眼鏡ヲシテ井タシタカ。
 答、「メジャーサ」以外ハ眼鏡ヲシタ。「メジャーサ」ハ目ニヤシト目スボリヲ着テ井タ。船ハ「ソレ」ニ旋回シテカニ、私連ハ同上陸シタ。西洋人ガ最初ニ連シテ行カシタ。私ト「ソレ」

NO 7

60.9.0 5398

ト、彼等ニツキテ日本指揮官、官邸ニ行ツク。田人、西洋人ハ午
 錠ヲ附ケテ外、樹木ニ縛リシキリシトナリ。又「セル」タニカ「クリ」
 カラ連シテ来タ西洋人ハ「タ」ソコニ午錠ヲ付シテ木ニ縛リツキ
 シトナリ。又「セル」タニカ「クリ」カラ連シテ来タ西洋人ハ「タ」ソコ
 午錠ヲ付シテ木ニ縛リツキシトナリ。精神病院ニ連シテ行カ
 シルマテ、彼ラハ四日間縛ラシメテナクト申イタ。ソレカラ數日、後
 「タ」オ「タ」オ「タ」オニ行キソコニ二週間滞在シタ。或ル日
 私ハ環礁ニ奥釣ツキシトナリ。時、合衆國、軍艦ガ外面カラ「タ」
 「タ」オヲ砲撃シテナリシタ。合衆國、飛行機ニ台ガ爆弾ヲ
 投下シタ。次、日、私ハ何ニナリトナリ起キタカラ知ルタメ「タ」オ
 ニ行ツタ。凡テ、西洋人ハ殺サシタト最初私ハ申キマシタ。何セ
 ナラ彼等ノ中、一人ガ精神病院内ヲ脱走シタカシテシタ。
 日本人ハ彼ヲ見ツケテ精神病院ニ連シ歸ツタト申キマシタ。
 向、指揮官、官邸ニ西洋人、捕虜ヲ見タ後、再ビ彼ヲ見タ
 スカ。

以下同

NO 8

NO 9

一九四四年/昭和十九年/十月十六日「タラウ」で署名

P. B. チリアタ (署名)

答

私「ミズ」は何で西洋人が殺したかと尋ねたけれど、彼ら肩ヲスタムルタケデシタ。

問

君は何で日本人が「サッド」氏ヲ殺シ「カトリック」教宣教師ヲ大ニ殺サカシタ理由ヲ知ツテ居ラスカ。

答

イヤ、デキマセシカシ、日本人ハ宣教師達カラ食糧其他日本人が入用ノ物ヲ凡テ奪ツタ。

問

日本人ヨリ彼等が侮辱セラレタカ、又ハ虐待セラレタ例ヲ語シテ貰ハマスカ。

答

或ル士官ハ彼ヲ親切テシタカ、大概ノ者ハ花様デアリマセシテシタ。

問

日本人ハ聖心宣教會ノ人々ニ対シテドウ振舞ヒマシタカ

答

千人位
何人位ソコニナシタカ

問

何人位ソコニナシタカ

答

私「サッド」氏、「タマナ」カラノ三人ノ西洋人、「クリエ」カラノ三人ノ西洋人及ビ「ノウチ」カラノ三人ヲ認メマシタ。「モオガニ」氏ト「クリアリー」氏以外、他人々ハ認メルコトが出来マセシテシタ。

問

誰ヲ認メマシタカ。

答

ハ、ソレカラニ度彼ヲ見マシタ。「バドリー」隊長ト「マカサ」氏以外全部ヲ見タト思ヒマス。彼ラハ郵便局ノ近辺ヲ砂利ヲ運シテ働イテナシタ。

Doc 5-398

西部太平洋自治領 副長官

D. C. I. ワーナム (署名)

Doc 5398

「タラワ」の「フランス・ハイランド」の官邸に、上を、如く證言スル。

一九四二年/昭和十七年/十月十五日合衆國の軍艦(或は潜水艦)

カ初メテ「ベチオ」ヲ砲撃シタ。一週間カ二週間前

三日間 私ト私ノ妻ハ「ベチオ」ニキマシタ。

私ハ「サッド」教師、「マツカーサー」ト云フ名ノ商人

一人制服ヲ著タニハ、新西蘭人(しゃつとぼたん

附教練ニ衣) 民服ヲ著タ二人ノ新西蘭人。

各人ハ数呎アル綱ヲ後手ニ縛ラシ、他ノ端ハ椰子木ニ

取リ付ケテアツタ。

こゝハ「バインズ・ブリック」地域デアツタ。二人ノ兵

士、手ハ腫レ上ツテ耳タ。日本人ハ彼ノ所ニ行ツ

テ、「君少シユルメテ世貞ヒタイノカ」ト尋ネタ。此ハ

新西蘭人ハ「イヤ、君ハソレヲ堅ク結ビタ、然レバ

マホツテオイテクレ」ト答ヘタ。

同シ日本人ハ「マツカーサー」ノ所ニ行キ、同一ノ問ヲ

尋ネタ。「マツカーサー」ハ「ハイ、ソレハ余リニキ

ツイト云ツタ。私ト妻トハ彼ヲガ雑誌、食

糧ト飯、少量ヲ食ベテイルノヲ見タ。

ソノタメ彼ヲ、手ヲ解イタガ、各人ニ番兵ヲツケタ。此時、

4010

Doc 5398

私ト妻トハ約ニ尋(十二尺位)位ニ所ニ斗夕。
 ソノ夜ハ雨天デシタ。人々ハ木ノ下ノ草ノ上ニ寝夕。
 ソシカラ三日目ノ朝マタ彼等ガ縛ラレテキル一ヲ
 私達ハ見夕。私ト妻トハ彼等ノ近クニ行クコトヲ
 許サレテオナカッタ。ソノ日ノ正午彼等ガ精神病
 院ノ中ニ閉ジ込メラレテキルヲ見夕。彼等ノ手
 ハ解カレテオナタ。私達ハ「クリアリ」氏ト「ハドリス」
 船長ガ彼等ト一緒デアルヲ見夕。モオガン氏ト
 「クリアリ」氏が私宛ニ手紙ヲ書イテ石ニ結ビ
 ツケテソノ柵ノ外側ニ投ケ出シタ。手紙ニハ若
 シ私ガ砂糖ヲ持ツテオナタニ。彼等ニ砂糖ヲ恵ミ
 テク。若シ砂糖ガ無カツタラ。土産ノ糖蜜ヲモヨ
 イト書イテアツタ。私ガソノ手紙ヲ讀ミ終ルト日
 本人ガ私ヲ見テ突進シテ来夕。彼ハ大キキ棒ヲ
 私ヲ打タントシタガ。私ハハコウ歩キ去ツタ。ソノ力
 ラソノ手紙ニ火ヲ付ケタ。ソノ午後私ハベケオラ
 去リ「エイタ」ニ来夕。私ハココニ数日逗留シソノカラ
 私ト妻トハ日本人ガ私ノ息子ニ與ヘタ砂糖ト糖
 蜜ニ場ヲ彼ラニ持ツテ行ツタ。私ハ柵ヲ越テ砂糖
 糖ヲ投ゲテヤツタ。「モオガン」氏が私達ト一緒ニ居
 タ少女ヲ柵内ノ上ノ門ノ所ニキル番兵ニ話シニ
 ヤリヤウニ私ニ手真似シタ。番兵ガ女中ト話シ
 是中ニ私ハ柵ニ上リ。又「クリアリ」氏が柵ノ内側カ
 ラ上ツタノデ。私ハ彼ニ糖蜜ニ本ヲ與ヘタ。

No. 11

Nov 5398

「サッド」牧師がユシヲ見テ、「ジスケット」ノ罐ヲ私ト
 共ニサウ少年達ニ挿越シニ段々下ソシテ取ツテ
 オウヤウニ云ツタ。着兵ガユシヲ見テ私逃テ道ニヤ
 ツタ。ソレカラ私達ハバクオシヲ去ツタ。
 軍艦ガバクオシヲ砲撃シテカラ三日ノ後、私ハ西
 洋人ノ捕虜ガ殺セシタト云フ報道ヲ聞キ、其ハ
 少年達ト一緒ニ行ツタ。私ハソコニ働キ行ナル共ニ
 何所ヲ彼等ガ殺セシタカラ尋ネタ。彼等ハ私
 ヲ精神病院ノ柵ノ西側ノ重扉ニ百「ヤード」所
 ニ連テ行ツタ。道中ハ日本人ガ澤山居タカラ
 翌朝九時ニ私ハ「タカウア」巡査ト一緒ニ行キ死
 体ガ「バ」坑内ニ焼カレタ所ヲ見タ。
 「タカウア」ハ見張ツキナタガ、私ハ坑ノ内ニ入り、椰子
 ノ枝ト生子鉄板ヲ持テ上ゲタ。死体ハドレモ部令
 的ニシカ焼キテナカッタ。私ハ腕ガ下度一本焼キテナ
 タ死体ヲ一ツ持テ上出テ、「タカウア」ニシテ見セタ。
 死体ニハドレモ頭部ハナカッタ。私ハ坑ノ内ニモツノ
 積ミ上ゲタ塊ヲ見タ。ソレヲソノ生子鉄板ノ下ニ
 ハ頭蓋ガアツタ。コレヲ見タ時、私ハソノブリキヲ取リ
 落シタ。ソレカラ私ハ見張リ、ソレヲ「タカウア」が見タ。
 私ガ云フベキコトハソレヲ知ラズ、

Nov 12

問、死体ヲ見タ時ニソレヲ数言トハシテカッタデ
 スカ。
 答、イヤ、死体ノ上ニ生子鉄板ト椰子ノ葉ヲ覆

No 5398

シニアツタ

一九四四年十月十八日 多摩川 三ヶ所 署名

船程 九割

エフ・ハイランド (署名)

西部太平洋植民地副長官

證人 D.C. I. P. ハタ (署名)

以下次頁

No 13

No 5398

No 13

シニアツタ

一九四四年十月十八日 夕三三三番名

船程(北集)

工ノハイランド (署名)

西部太平洋植民地副長官

證人 D.O.I. D-111 (署名)

以下次頁

証書書類第五三九六号

Doc 5398

「ギルト・エリス」諸島祖地「タラワ」ミカエ「高誓」ヲ行ヒタル上左、如ク証言ス。

最初、米國飛行機が「ギルト」ニ来リ、八年後、二時頃飛リ、二機、米國機ヲ港ニ降キ、日本船ヲ爆撃シマシク。土民等ヲ務者達ニ皆砂洲ノ方ヘ逃ゲマシク。二機ノ飛行機ガ行キアフト、土民達ハ「イソ」モ英國政廳ノ命署、アツク所ヘ歸リテ来マシク。私司教ト彼等ニ来マシク。一名、日本人ガ土民ノ所ニ行キ、一名、歐洲人ガ精神病院園ニカラ逃ゲタト言ヒマシク。原住民ハ皆、地方官事務所ニツキテ建物ニヤシマシク。ソノ故テ土民達ハ基合例、歐洲人ハ捕ツタト言ツクテ宿舎ヘ歸サシマシク。

問 アツク司教ト一編ニ残リテ来マシクカ、ソレトモ地方官事務所ヘ行キマシクカ。

答 松ハ他、土民達ト一編ニ地方官事務所ヘ行キマシク。

問 日本人ハ逃ゲタク歐洲人ハ誰ツタカ言ヒマシクカ。

答 イイエ。土民達ハ皆彼等ノ宿舎ニ行キマシク。私ハ司教ノ家ニ行キマシク。ソノカラ一人、日本人ガヤツテ来テ松達ニ彼ノ刀ヲ示シマシク。ソノ刀ハ血ニ染ヒテ来シク。彼ハ「コ」ノ刀ヲ歐洲人共ヲ殺シタト言ヒマシク。

No 14

No 14

Doc 5398

証書書類中五三九六号

「ギルバート・エリール諸島祖民地」ヲ「ワ」ニカキテ「宣誓」ヲ行ヒタル上左、如ク証言ス。

最初、米國飛行機ガ「ベテ」ニ来リ、八午後二時頃ニ至リ、二機、米國機ガ港ニ至リ日本船ヲ爆撃シマシタ。土民ガ務者達ハ皆砂洲ノ方ヘ逃ゲマシタ。二機ノ飛行機ガ行キアフト、土民達ハ「ソ」モ英國政廳ノ命署、アツク所ヘ歸リテ来マシタ。私司教ト彼等一家ニ至マシタ。一名、日本令ガ土民、所ニ行キ、一名、歐洲人ガ精神病院、圍ヒテ逃ゲタト言ヒマシタ。原住民ハ皆、地方官事務所ニオツキ、建物をヤシマシタ。ソノ後、土民達ハ「果」カ例、歐洲人ハ捕ツク、言ツク、テ宿舍ヘ歸サレマシタ。

問 アツク司教ト一編ニ残リテ至マシタカ、ソトモ地方官事務所ヘ行キマシタカ。

答 他、土民達ト一編ニ地方官事務所ヘ行キマシタ。日本入、逃ゲタ歐洲人ハ誰ツクカ言ヒマシタカ。

答 イイエ。土民達ハ皆彼等、宿舍ニ行キマシタ。私司教、家ニ行キマシタ。ソノカラ一人、日本入ガヤツキ来テ私達ニ彼、刀ヲ示シマシタ。ソノ刀ハ血ニ染レテ至リマシタ。彼ハ「ソ」ノ刀ヲ歐洲人共ヲ殺シタト言ヒマシタ。

000 53.98

問 了+タハソノ日本人が誰カヲ知ツテキマシタカ。

答 私ハ知リマセン。シリシキ民ノ誰カハ知ツテキルカモシラセシ、ソノ男ハ兵隊ホハアリマセンデシタ。彼ハイツモカ務所ノ中ニ坐ツテキマシタ。

問 彼ハ刀ヲ示シニ司敵ノ家ニ来タ時、トノ方向カヲ来マシタカ。

答 彼ハ旧土民部落ノ方カヲ来マシタ。彼ハ私達ノ所カヲ立去ルト、以前ノ英國政廳命署ノ方ヘ行キマシタ。午後五時ヲ過ギ、私ハ椰子汁ヲ採取ニ精神病院ノ傍ニ行キマシタ。私ハ激シイ喧噪ヲ耳ニシマシタ。ソシテ精神病院ノ圍ヒ中ニ大勢ノ日本人ヲ見マシタ。私ハ何が起ツタノ見交イト思ツタ。デ、以前精神病者見張りノ土民ニ依ツテ使用サレテキタ家屋ノ方ヘ行キマシタ。ソノ家ニ着イタ時、私ノ圍ヒ中ニ一列ニ坐ツテキル歐洲人達ヲ見マシタ。歐洲人達ハ元ワ一列ニ並バサレテキマシタガ、私ハソノ家テ、伏セラシナガウ一名ノ歐洲人ガ、ソレハ「ハンドレイ」ノ船長ダツタカモシラセシガ、家ノ中カウ日本人ニ引き出サレ、歐洲人達ノ前ニ置カレルノヲ見マシタ。

1015

問ハ、男ハ生キテ居ルニシカ。

答死ニテ居ルニシカ。彼ハ歐洲人達、前ニ置カシム時、血塗ニシ

ツ、倒レテキルニシカ。ソレカラ一名、日本人ハ歐洲人ヲ殺シ始

メニシカ。彼ハ第一、歐洲人、首ヲ切リヌルニシカ。ソレヲ第二、第

三ト切ツテ行キルニシカ。ソレカラ後ハ、私ハ氣ヲ失ツテ了ツタリテ

モウ見セシテシタリ。私ハ三氣ニ違ツタ時、日本人ハ死体

ヲ精神病院、西側、ニツ、穴ニ運ビテ行キ、ヲ見セシタリ。

私ニハト、位、死体ハアツタリ、見ルニトハデキセシタリ。私

カ、家ヲ伏セテキル時、一名、日本人ハ夫ハ洋服、一杯

ハイツク罐ヲ持ツテ、走り過キヨラトシテ、家、又ハ傍ヲ轉

ビルニシカ。彼ハ罐ヲ家、中ニ置キ、死体、運搬ヲ手傳

カニシテ、行キルニシカ。私ハ、洋服、罐ヲ持ツテ、司教、家

ニ歸リルニシカ。私ハ歐洲人、死、ニトヲ司教ニ語ルニシカ。ソレ

服ハ、一着、半ツボニト一着、ニツクヲ除キ、ハ、他、立民ニ取リ

ニテラシテ了ヒルニシカ。

問了ナタハ、ソノコト、アツタ年、自ヨリ述ベルコトハ出来ニシカ

答、私ハ覺テキルニシカ。

問了ナタハ何人位、歐洲人ハ精神病院、園ニ、中ニ一列ニ並

バサレテ井ル、ヲ見ヌルニシカ。

答、私ハ數ヘテハミルニシカ。十人、以テ、ハ、井ルニシカ。

Doc 5398

問 アタタハ彼等、皆ニ例ネク日本人ヲ認知シマシタカ。

答 ソレハ司教ニカヲ示シ来タノト同ジガデシタ。

問 歐洲人ヲ殺シタ日本人ハ人夫デシタカ、ソレトモ兵隊デシタカ。

答 皆人夫デシタ。

問 アタタハ逃ゲタ歐洲人ハ誰ガツタカ知ツテキマスカ。

答 知りマセン。シカシ立民達カラ、ソレハクレアリー「サシ」
ト聞キマシタ。

問 アタタハ精神病院「園」ノ中ニキタ歐洲人ノ中デ、

「バンドレイ」船長、他ニモ、誰カ認知シマシタカ。

答 和ハ「サド」サント「マッカーサー」サヲ認メマシタ。ソ、日

ヨリ前、和ハ「クレアリー」サヤ、ソ、他、歐洲人修房ガ

「ベライオ」埠頭デ働イテキルヲ見マシタ。歐洲人が殺

サレルヲ見タ日カラ後、和ハ「ベライオ」司教ト「アロン」

神父ト「コンラッド」修士、他ハ歐洲人ハ誰も見カケマ

ンデシタ。二日ハカリシテ和ハ殺セシタ歐洲人ノ死骸ヲ

見マシタガ、日本人ハソレヲ焼イテキタノデ灰、中カラ、

彼等ヲ見合ケルコトハ困難デシタ。

一九四四年ノ昭和十九年ノ十月十八日「タラワ」ニ於テ
署名ス

「ミカエル」(署名)

no. 17

0005398.

- 六 A.A. C. K. ツー
 - 五 A.A. L. ツー
 - 四 A.A. M. ツー
 - 三 A.A. R. ツー
 - 二 A.A. R. ツー
 - 一 A.A. R. ツー
- 判 定

10/8

+ 八 R.A.H. ヲ
+ 七 R.E. ヲ
+ 六 R.J. ヲ
+ 五 D.H. ヲ
+ 四 C.J. ヲ
+ 三 L.B. ヲ
+ 二 C.A. ヲ
+ 一 T.C. ヲ
+ A.L. ヲ
+ A.E. ヲ
+ A.H. ヲ
+ J.J. ヲ

7019

D. C. 5398.

- 十九 C. A. キルビン
- 二十 J. H. ニコル
- 二十一 W. A. R. パーカー
- 二十二 R. M. マクケンジー

一九四三年十月十五日又、同日頃「タラマ」六号機が
 於日本へ被害を蒙りし事、疑ひなきモノト確認せらる。

西部太平洋植民地副長官

D. C. I. ウーティ (署名)

~~一九四三年十月十五日~~

C. # 1881

Evidentiary Document No. 5248.

SECRET

EXHIBIT B.

NAURU ISLAND WAR CRIMES

I, SX10334 Major Douglas John McBAIN of Army Headquarters, Melbourne, make oath and say:-

1. I am an officer of the Australian Military Forces.
2. Annexed hereto and marked Exhibit "B" is a true copy of a report by Lt. SANTAMARTA USMC and an affidavit by Mr. TAUA on 11th and 7th December, 1945, which I have in my custody in the course of my duties.
3. The original report and affidavit cannot be made available immediately as it is required for trials of minor war criminals.

Sworn before me at Melbourne this)
27th day of May, 1946.)

(Sgd) Douglas McBain
Major

(sgd) W. BUNSELL Capt.
An officer of the
Australian Military Forces.

SECRET.
File No. 1410.

Original report and Affidavit
forwarded to 8 MD on 26 Apr, 1946 -
Vide AHQ 36378 on file ON3.

REPORT OF INVESTIGATION OF ALLEGED
WAR CRIMES.

11 December, 1945.

CASE of the killing of Colonel F.A. Chalmers, Doctor,
B.H.Quinn, Mr. W. Shugg, Mr. Doyle, and Mr. Harner,
Australians.

1. This investigation was conducted in conformity with Cincpac-Cincpoa confidential letter, serial 07205, dated 4 September, 1945, by First Lieutenant Thomas Santamaria, USMC, on December, 2, 1945.
2. These acts seem to be in direct violation of Article 46, Annex to Hague Convention No. IV, of October, 18, 1907, as well as constituting the felony of murder.
3. (A) The testimony of the witness examined in the course of this investigation was secured through the use of an interpreter, after the witness had been sworn by me. The witness was given an opportunity to sign his testimony in my presence after such testimony had been transcribed and read to the witness

Exhibit Document No. 5248.

in his own language by the interpreter. The stenographer, reporter and the interpreter were also sworn.

(B) The transcribed testimony of the witness whose name is below listed is hereto attached as an exhibit, the number of which is indicated immediately following the witness' name.

Mr. Tava Exhibit Number 1.

4. The witness had visual observation of the decapitation by a sword of five Australians on the island of Nauru. He saw a Japanese officer and three Japanese soldiers come up to the house in which the five victims were residing, and he saw the officer have each in turn step forward and bring his sword down upon the neck of each, severing it from the body in each case. The witness was unable to fix the date of this incident by reference to the calendar, but knew that it occurred at about 5.00 am of the morning following the first allied air strike at NAURU after it had been occupied by the Japanese.

5. The victims in this case, Colonel F. K. Chalmers, Doctor B. H. Quinn, Mr. W. Shugg, Mr. Doyle, and Mr. Harnor, are all dead, and their burial place is unknown.

6. The only information the witness could supply as to the Japanese involved in this case was that there was one Army officer and three soldiers. He recalled the name of the Japanese Army commander on Nauru at the time as Takeuchi.

7. It appears from the investigation that the case involves the deliberate murder of five allied nationals, possibly in unlawful reprisal for the first allied air raid against the island of Nauru. From the fact that there was apparently a regularly constituted military detail assigned to execute the five victims, it is possible that the responsible Japanese Army command on Nauru ordered the action. It is recommended that the Japanese Army commander, Takeuchi, be questioned in an effort to fix further responsibility and to elicit the names of the four Japanese actually participating in the incident.

(Sgd) T. SANTAMARIA
1st. Lt. USMCR.,
Legal Officer,
Investigator.

Exhibitory Document No. 5248.

SECRET

File No.
1410.

For the WAR CRIMES OFFICE
Judge Advocate General's Office -
Navy Department.
United States of America.

In the matter of the killing of Colonel F.H. Chalmers, Administrator of the Island of Nauru, Doctor F.H. Quinn, Government Medical Officer, Mr. W. Shugg, Dispenser, Government Hospital, Mr. Doyle and Mr. Harner, Australians. Perpetuation of Testimony of Mr. Taue, civilian on Tol Island, Truk and Central Carolines.

Taken at: Fouba Village, Tol Island, Truk.

Date: December 2, 1945.

In the Presence of: Thomas Santararia, first lieutenant, 032989, U.S.M.C.A., Base Headquarters Company, (Provisional) Island Command, Truk.
Oliver E. Penson, lieutenant (jg) 292201, U.S.N.R., Military Government, Island Command, Truk.

Reporter: George C. Lishka, Corporal, 879071, U.S.M.C.A., Base Headquarters, Company, (Provisional) Island Command, Truk.

Interpreter: Mr. Phillip W. Harris, Fouba Village, Tol Island, Truk.

Questioners by: Thomas Santararia, first Lieutenant, 032989, U.S.M.C.A.

Q. State your name, permanent home address and occupation.
A. Mr. Taue, Onotea Island, Gilbert. June 1941 employed and transferred by British to Island of Nauru to work on mining phosphate. In July, 1943, transported with Nauruans by Japanese to the Island of Tol, Truk. Worked for Japanese in the construction of an air field.

Q. What is your war time status?
A. I am a displaced civilian.

Q. In what localities were you on duty?

A. I was working on the construction of an air field at Param.

Q. Are you familiar with the circumstances in the killing of Colonel F. R. Chalmers, Doctor P. H. Quinn, Mr. W. Shugg, Mr. Doyle and Mr. Harner on the Island of Nauru?

A. Yes.

Q. State what you know of your own knowledge about the incident.

A. On the evening of the first allied bombing of Nauru I was in the Nauruan village with two Nauruan boys. The planes began bombing late in the evening. I ran to the hospital at the Chinese location to locate my two friends who were transferred with me from the Gilbert Islands and were burnt in the unloading of Japanese gasoline to see whether they had been removed to a place of safety. When I arrived there was only one of my friends behind. I asked him if I could help escort him to a safe place and thereafter remained with him for the rest of the night. After the planes left we returned to the hospital. At daybreak a motor truck came alongside the hospital and I saw four Japanese soldiers, one carrying a sword and three with rifles, enter a house close to the hospital. I was standing in the doorway of the hospital facing the house where the Japanese had stopped. One Japanese soldier opened the door of the house and called for them to come to the door and line up before him inside the house. Three Japanese with rifles stood outside the doorway of the house and the one with the sword was standing in front of them. The Japanese with the sword called for one of them to step close to him. Colonel F. R. Chalmers stepped forward and I saw him stoop over and the Japanese raised his sword with one hand and brought it down on the colonel's neck. His head was severed from the rest of his body. Then Doctor Quinn, Mr. Doyle, Mr. Harner and Mr. Shugg stepped forward one at a time and the Japanese with the sword went through the same motions until all the men mentioned had all been decapitated. After the execution I saw each body being carried to the motor truck and placed in a large box therein. The Japanese with the sword came up to where I was and asked, "Where are the white men", while he was wiping blood off his sword. I answered that I did not know. He then informed me that they were all carried away by American planes during the night. Then the Japanese entered the motor truck and drove off.

Q. How far from the hospital was the house where these five Australians were staying?

A. Approximately fifty feet.

Q. Was there anything between you and the house?

A. No.

- Q. How many stories are there to the hospital?
A. One.
- Q. Was there a fence between the hospital and house?
A. No.
- Q. Did you know whether there were any officers in the group of Japanese at the house?
A. Yes.
- Q. How many?
A. One. The one wearing the sword.
- Q. Can you recognize a Japanese officer when you see one?
A. Yes.
- Q. Can you tell the difference between a Japanese navy and army officer?
A. No.
- Q. Can you recognize Japanese Army officers?
A. Yes.
- Q. Can you tell the difference between a Japanese Army non-commissioned officer and a commissioned officer?
A. Yes.
- Q. Were the three Japanese soldiers with rifles officers or enlisted men?
A. Enlisted men.
- Q. Did you ever see any of these men before that night?
A. Yes, many times.
- Q. Where did you see them?
A. They were sentries doing sentinal duty at different places in Nauru.
- Q. Do you know any of their names?
A. No.
- Q. Can you recognize them if you see them again?
A. Yes.
- Q. Do you know any of the officers who were in charge of Japanese troops on Nauru at that time?
A. Yes.
- Q. Who did you know?
A. The officer in charge of all troops.

Q. What was his name?

A. Takeuchi.

Q. Could you recognize him if you saw him again.

A. Yes.

Q. How many times did you see this man?

A. Once

Q. Where did you see him?

A. At the cemetery.

Q. Who was being buried?

A. A friend of mine.

Q. How did this man die?

A. He was fatally burned while unloading gasoline from Japanese ships.

Q. Was this before or after the air raid?

A. Before.

Q. How many days before?

A. Less than a month.

Q. How did the ship catch fire?

A. I do not know.

Q. What were you doing at the hospital?

A. I went there to help my friends who were patients to seek cover from bombing.

Q. How long did the bombing last?

A. About an hour.

Q. Was the hospital bombed?

A. No.

Q. How long after the bombing did you see this incident take place?

A. About five o'clock the morning following the air raid.

Q. Did you remain awake all night?

A. Yes.

Q. Why?

A. I was too frightened to sleep.

Q. Did you see the five Australians enter the house the night before?

A. No.

Q. Did you know these men?

A. Yes.

Q. Did you see any light in the house before or after the air raid?

A. No.

Q. When did you see these men the first time after the air raid?

A. In the morning when the Japanese came after them.

Q. Could the Japanese see you while they were at the house?

A. I don't know.

Q. Were you hiding?

A. No, I was sitting on a bed close to the doorway in the hospital.

Q. Do you know whether they saw you?

A. No.

Q. Was it possible for the Japanese to see you?

A. Yes.

Q. How long after the incident did the Japanese officer come to you.

A. Immediately thereafter.

Q. Did you notice much blood on the sword?

A. Yes.

Q. What was he wiping his sword with?

A. A piece of cloth.

Q. Did anyone else see what you saw?

A. No.

Q. Was anyone else close to the door with you?

A. No.

Q. Can you speak the Japanese language?

A. No.

Q. Can you understand it?

A. Yes, a little.

(s/c) TAU
Mr. Tau,
Tel Island, Truk.

Tel. Island.
Truk and Central Carolines.

I, Mr. Tau, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my

Evidentiary Document No. 5248.

Page 3.

(interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

(sgd) -TAUA

Mr. Taua.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 7th day of December, 1945.

(sgd) T. SANTAMARIA
1st. Lt., USMCR.

Tol Island.
Truk and Central Carolines.

I, Mr. Phillip W. Harris, of lawful age, being duly sworn upon oath state that I truly translated the questions asked and answers given and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing 5 pages, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence affixed his signature thereto.

(Sgd) PHILLIP W. HARRIS
Mr. Phillip W. Harris.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 7th day of December, 1945.

(sgd) T. SANTAMARIA
T. Santarmaria
1st. Lt. USMCR
Legal Officer.

I, T. Santamaria, first lieutenant, 032989, U.S.M.C.R., certify that on 7th December, 1945, personally appeared before me Mr. Taua, and gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth; that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said Mr. Taua read the same and affixed his signature thereto in my presence.

Place: Touba Village, Tol
Truk & Central Carolines.

T. Santamaria
T. SANTAMARIA

Date: 7 December, 1945.

1st. Lt. USMCR.,
Island Command, Truk.

Fingerprint of Mr. Taua, witness.

Fingerprint of Mr. Phillip
W. Harris, Interpreter.

This is the document marked Exhibit "B" referred to in the Affidavit of SX10334, Maj. D. J. McPain, A.H.Q., sworn before me this 27th day of May, 1946, as being produced and shown to him at this time of his swearing his said Affidavit.

(Sgd) W. RUNSELL Capt.

interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

(sgd) -TAUA

Mr. Taua.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 7th day of December, 1945.

(sgd) T. SANTAMARIA
1st. Lt., USMCR.

Tol Island.
Truk and Central Carolines.

I, Mr. Phillip W. Harris, of lawful age, being duly sworn upon oath state that I truly translated the questions asked and answers given and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing 5 pages, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence affixed his signature thereto.

(Sgd) PHILLIP W. HARRIS
Mr. Phillip W. Harris.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 7th day of December, 1945.

(sgd) T. SANTAMARIA
T. Santarmaria
1st. Lt. USMCR
Legal Officer.

I, T. Santamaria, first lieutenant, 032989, U.S.M.C.R., certify that on 7th December, 1945, personally appeared before me Mr. Taua, and gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth; that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said Mr. Taua read the same and affixed his signature thereto in my presence.

Place: Touba Village, Tol
Truk & Central Carolines.

T. Santamaria
T. SANTAMARIA

Date: 7 December, 1945.

1st. Lt. USMCR.,
Island Command, Truk.

Fingerprint of Mr. Taua, witness.

Fingerprint of Mr. Phillip
W. Harris, Interpreter.

This is the document marked Exhibit "B" referred to in the Affidavit of SX10334, Maj. D. J. McPain, A.H.Q., sworn before me this 27th day of May, 1946, as being produced and shown to him at this time of his swearing his said Affidavit.

(Sgd) W. FURSELL Capt.

5240

1881-4

證據書類 # 5240 月 日 號

問 證人 姓名 原籍 及 職業 等情 。

答 知 二月 廿 二 日 下午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

照 知 廿 二 日 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處 有 一 人 乘 車

二 人 乘 車 一 輛 由 南 往 北 行 駛 在 大 街 口 處

照 知 廿 二 日 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處 有 一 人 乘 車

二 人 乘 車 一 輛 由 南 往 北 行 駛 在 大 街 口 處

行 場 建 議 從 事 二 三 日 。

問 證 人 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

口 口 之 處 乘 車 二 人 下 午 二 時 許 在 大 街 口 處

1881

100

RETURN TO: 10011001

5248

162

私ハ彼ニ安全ナ場所ニテ附添ツテ候カノト尋
 ね莫後彼ト一語ニ其処ヲ視テ明シニシタ、飛行
 機ガ去リ夕後吾々ハ病院ニ入りマシタ、夜明カニ各
 ノ貨物自動車ハ病院ノ傍ヘヤツテ来ニシタ、ソシ
 テ私ハ四人、日本兵士ガ病院ノ近ク、一軒ノ家ニ入
 リヲ見掛ケマシタ、一人ハ劍ヲ弔ツテ居リ三人ハ
 銃ヲ持ツテ居リマシタ、私ハ日本人ガ止ツタコノ家
 ニ面シテ中ニ此病院ノ入口ニ至ツテ居タノデス、
 一人ハ日本兵士ハコノ家ノ扉ヲ開ケテ彼等ニ
 戸口ノトコロニ出テキテ家ノ中ニ彼ノ前ニ整
 列スル様ニト叫ビマシタ。

銃ヲ持ツタ三人ハ兵士ハ家ノ戸口ノ外ニ立ツテ
 居リ、劍ヲ弔ツタ一人ハ他等ノ前ニ立ツテ居
 リマシタ
 劍ヲ弔ツタ日本人ハ彼等ノ一人ニモツト傍ヘ寄
 ル様ニト叫ビマシタ。エフ、アール、キヤール大佐
 前ヘ寄りマシタ、ソノ時私ハ大佐ノ前ニ立ツ
 ツテ中ニ此ヲ見掛ケマシタ、コノ日本人ハ片手ニ
 劍ヲ振上げテ大佐ノ頸ニ打下シマシタ、大佐ノ
 首ハ胸ヨリ離レシマシタ、ソレカラ片手ニ樽ニ
 ドイルルハ、ハマー、ル、キヤツグ、ルガ二度ニ一人ツ
 前ニ進ニマシタ、劍ヲ持ツタ日本人ハ同ニ動作
 ヲ作ツテ遂ニ上記ノ人々ハスズテ首ヲ斬ラシ

5248

丁三乙之日、犯行微私一名、身係
貨物自動車三輛、其ノ中二輛ハ
于十端ノ中二輛、其ノ中一輛ハ自
日、劍ヲ持シテ日暮人ノ私ノ所
ニテ、其ノ劍ニシテ、其ノ所
身ハ何處ニ在リカ、其ノ所
私ハ知ラズ、其ノ所
等ハ、其ノ所
ハ、其ノ所
ハ、其ノ所
ハ、其ノ所

163

Cy # 1882

Evidentiary Document No. 5252.

Exhibit 101

NAU-U ISLAND WAR CRIMES

I, SX 10334 Major Douglas John McPAIN of Army Headquarters, Melbourne, make oath and say:

1. I am an officer of the Australian Military Forces.
2. Annexed hereto and marked Exhibit "A" is a true copy of a statement by Lee Cheng Wong on which I have in my custody in the course of my duties.
3. The original signed statement cannot be made available immediately as it is required for trials of minor war criminals.

Sworn before me at Melbourne this)
27th day of May, 1946.) (Sgd) Douglas McBain (Major)

(Sgd) W. BUNSELL Capt.
An officer of the Australian
Military Forces.

LEE CHONG WONG - Houseboy to Col. CHALMERS states:

The Japanese first put me in the Chinese settlement. I cooked for the five white men and took the food in to them three times per day. I remember the American bombing raid about 8 o'clock on 25 Mar. 43. The bombs fell a long way away from the house where Col CHALMERS was imprisoned and the house was not damaged.

At 7 o'clock the next morning I went to Col. CHALMERS' house and there was a Japanese Guard at each door. They asked me why I had come. I said "Because I am the houseboy". It was told I could come inside. I went inside the house and found all the white men had gone.

All Col CHALMERS' clothes were there there except his pyjamas. I looked in Mr. Harker's drawer and found his razor there. I asked the Japanese guards where the white men were but they would not tell me. At 8 o'clock I went down to draw the rations for the Europeans and they told me "No more."

All the Europeans were in the house the previous night. They were all well except Dr. Quinn who could not walk. All clothing belongings to the other four whites was still in the house when I went the next morning. Prior to this time the Japanese had only one guard on the house.

When I went into the house at 7 o'clock that morning there was a long smear of blood on the floor from the position in which Dr. Quinn usually slept, the length of the room to the lower door as if a body had been dragged along the floor.

Evidentiary Document No. 5252.

Page 2.

I was afraid to ask the Japanese the reason for the blood. I could not recognize any of the guards now. They changed every two hours. The last time I saw Col. Chambers was when I took him his evening meal on the night of 25 March, 1943.

This is the document marked Exhibit "A" referred to in the Affidavit of SX10334, Maj. D. J. McBain, A.H.Q., sworn before me this 27th day of May, 1946, as being produced and shown to him at this time of his swearing his said Affidavit.

(Sgd) W. BUNSELL Capt.

Cy #1883

Evidentiary Document No. 5246.†

Exhibit 'B'

OCEAN ISLAND W/1. CAIIES

I, SX10334 Major Douglas John McBAIN of Army Headquarters, Melbourne, make oath and say:

1. I am an officer of the Australian Military Forces.
2. Annexed hereto and marked Exhibit 'B' is a true copy of 31/51 Aust. Inf. Bn (A.I.F.) Nauru-Ocean Island Force, Investigations relating to fate of Europeans on Ocean Island made on 19 Oct. 1945 which I have in my custody in the course of my duties.
2. The original above mentioned document cannot be made available immediately as it is required for trials of minor war criminals.

Sworn before me at MELBOURNE)
this 27th day of May, 1946.) (sgd) DOUGLAS McBAIN Major.

(Sgd) W. BULLSELL Capt.
An officer of the
Australian Military Forces.

31/51 AUST. INF. BN (AIF)
NAURU OCEAN ISLAND FORCE

SECRET
19 Oct, 45,

Exhibit 'B'

INVESTIGATIONS RELATING TO FATE OF
EUROPEANS ON OCEAN ISLAND.

The following investigation was conducted on NAURU ISLAND at the direction of the Military Commander by questioning natives of OCEAN ISLAND whom had been transferred during Jap occupation of both islands. The natives questioned were DAVID MURDOCK, KATANGITANG and KIATHA, OCEAN ISLANDERS, on 19 Oct. 45.

On 20 Oct. 45 three other witnesses, NANTA, CHARLIE and MOTL, were interrogated.

DAVID MURDOCK, GILPEPTESE, STATES:-

I left OCEAN ISLAND in July, 1943. I found the Japs to be very harsh and cruel.

There were six Europeans on the island:

- Mr. CARTWRIGHT
- Mr. MELCER
- Mr. COLE
- Mr. THIRD
- Father PUJEBET and
- Catholic Brother.

The first four Europeans were imprisoned and were moved about various places of imprisonment.

Father PUJELET and the Brother were not imprisoned.

They were all treated harshly. I often saw Japanese Officers beating Mr. CARTWRIGHT, Mr. MERCER and Mr. COLE, but not Mr. THIRD, with sticks and struck on the face and jaw. They were very thin and unhealthy and suffering from all the indignities and lack of food. Mr. CARTWRIGHT died on Good Friday 1943 as a result of starvation. He was buried in the European Cemetery at OGLIA, one of the natives present was Sjt/Liajor NAPE. The grave was marked with a stone pillar. I know where the grave is.

Mr. MERCER died shortly after Mr. CARTWRIGHT, probably a few months. After Mr. CARTWRIGHT died the Japanese continued their ill treatment of the remaining Europeans. I saw Mr. MERCER a few days before his death, but did not speak to him. Other natives and Japs told us that Mr. MERCER had died. I was told he was buried by the Japs at TAPIWA.

A few months later I left for NAURU ISLAND. Prior to leaving I was questioned by the Japs in the Power House as to the whereabouts of certain spare parts which the BPC had buried. These parts were essential to start the Power House. I refused to give the information to the Jap Commander, DOYAMA, who then called in soldiers, who beat me with an iron pipe, and threatened me with rifle and sword. I was ordered outside. I could not walk, but crawled out. Mr. COLE, who was waiting outside was called in and likewise questioned. I saw them beating Mr. COLE with the same iron pipe, 1 1/2 inches diameter by 7 feet long. Mr. COLE's nose was bleeding. That was the last time that I saw Mr. COLE.

Q. Were the other Europeans alive, when Mr. MERCER died.

A. Yes, besides Mr. COLE, there was Mr. THIRD, who I never saw ill treated and appeared to be in good health. Father PUJELET and the Brother (BRUIPELL) were on the island, but neither were imprisoned. I did not see the Clergy ill treated, although I had heard of indignities against them.

Q. Is there any one else on the island, who knows what happened to the remaining civilians.

A. Yes. KATALGITANG, who is at present on NAURU may know.

Q. Were you ill treated prior to the incident you have mentioned (beating in the Power House)

A. Yes, I was taken prisoner on the first day and then after questioning was released.

Q. Why did they arrest you.

A. Because I was mistaken for a European, (Mr. MURDOCK is half-caste and has pronounced European features).

Q. What questions were you asked.

A. Where was the Australian money, to which I replied I did not know.

A few months later I was questioned again as to the whereabouts of certain BPC machinery. I denied all knowledge and was beaten with a stick. I was ordered not to leave my village at OOMA and was confined there.

Q. Were you continually confined there.

A. Yes, except when under escort for working parties did I leave the village. We were engaged in digging trenches, building emplacements etc.

Q. Do you know of any atrocities perpetrated against other natives, whilst you were there?

A. The Japs first landed in August, 1942. About 6 months after they landed three OCEAN ISLANDERS - TAMOA, TOANIKARAWA and ROBERT were beheaded in the native cemetery for stealing. All the native inhabitants on the island were ordered to witness this execution and were warned that a similar fate awaited those who did not attend. I did not see the first two, but did see ROBERT beheaded. The Jap Commander, DANURA, was present and the executioners were soldiers NOT officers.

Q. Were the natives tried before executions.

A. Yes.

DAVID MURDOCK CONTINUES

About May, 1943, the Japs had completed the construction of an electric wire around OOMA POINT. Three native prisoners, named KAUBAPA, BANGAL and LAUANTANG, all Gilbertese, were taken from the native prison. These three natives were dressed in military uniform and taken to the water's edge, facing the wire, and the winner of the race would gain first prize, which was a trip to KUSAI in the CALCLINES. (At this time food was scarce on OCEAN and prospects at KUSAI was considered very bright). The natives started the race and as they touched the wire they were electrocuted.

Q. Do you know the names of any Japs witnessing this event.

A. No, I will find out.

Q. What did they do to the native bodies.

A. I do not know.

Q. Who was the Jap Commander at this time.

A. DOYAMA

Q. Were there any other atrocities.

A. Not that I know of, there may have been.

Q. Was Mr. CARTWRIGHT and Mr. MERCER dead before this happened.

A. Yes. Not long before.

Q. How did you find conditions on NAURU compared to OCEAN.

A. Much better, although the Japs were cruel on NAURU, it was much worse on OCEAN. Beatings and severity was much more common.

Q. What was the name of the boat you came over in.

A. IKUDA MARU about 7,000 tons. We left OCEAN at 1700 hours one day and arrived NAURU 0400 hours the next morning.

Q. Who were the Jap Commanders whilst you were on the island.

A. (1) DANURA (? TANIURA)
(2) DOYAMA (? TOYAMA)
MATAKE 2 i/c

Q. Did you see MATAKE perpetrate any cruelties.

A. He may have, being second in command.

Questioning of KATANGITANG a native of OCEAN, who was brought over to NAURU by the Japs, approximately Sept. 1943.

This native gave similar answers to the questions above.

Q. Were you ever maltreated on OCEAN ISLAND.

A. Yes, once I went to retrieve a broken husk of pawpaw in front of the No. 1 Jap Doctor's dwelling. He saw me and beat me with a hockey stick. I fell down after about twenty strokes. Three times I fell down, receiving about 60 strokes in all.

Q. When did you leave OCEAN.

A. About one or two months after MURDOCK

Q. Were the remaining four Europeans alive when you left.

A. The Father had died before I left. I do not know whether Mr. COLE or Mr. THIRD were alive or not. The Brother was alive.

Q. How did the Father die.

A. I heard from the Brother that Father PUJELET who was quite well and not sick had been taken to the hospital and operated

on in the stomach. He was not seen again. The Brother told us that the Japs had killed the Father.

Q. Do you know where Father PUJEBET is buried.

A. No.

Q. Can you remember exact date when the Father died.

A. No, a few weeks before I left.

Q. Did any further OCEAN ISLANDERS come over after you left.

A. No, our ship was the last, about forty of us. It was a big ship.

Q. And who were the remaining Europeans.

A. Mr. COLE and the Brother I saw. I did not see Mr. THIRD.

Q. When was the last time you saw Mr. THIRD.

A. About three months before I left.

Q. Did you ever see Mr. THIRD ill treated.

A. No.

Q. Did you see the other Europeans being ill treated.

A. I saw Mr. COLE, being beaten and the others forced to do hard labour.

Q. Do you know the names of any Japs, who committed any cruelties.

A. No, I don't know their names, they were all cruel. The name of the officer, who took the Father away was KOTSUA.

Q. When was the last time you spoke to the Father.

A. About a week before he was taken away. He told me that this officer KOTSUA was continually pestering him, calling in at his house, searching through the trunks and rooms and often spitting in his face.

Q. What actually did the Brother tell you.

A. He said that the Father had died, and he thought that he had been murdered.

Q. What did KOTSUA do.

A. I do not know. He wore two stars.

Q. How many natives remained on the island after you left.

A. About 50 to 60 married, 160 single. We were told that the 50 married families were to go to the CAROLINES, whilst the 160 single were to remain. We were told they were going away for a week after we left.

Document No. 5246.

This is the document marked Exhibit 'B' referred to in the affidavit of SX10334, Maj. D. J. McBain, AHQ, sworn before me this 27th day of May, 1946, as being produced and shown to him at this time of his swearing his said affidavit.

(signed) W. BUNSELL, Capt.

Evidentiary Document # 5244

此據實為一九四五年一月...

才也子之...

一、一九四五年一月...

才也子之...

二、余、濱洲軍...

才也子之...

才也子之...

才也子之...

才也子之...

才也子之...

一九四五年一月...

一九四五年一月...

濱洲軍...

濱洲軍...

一九四五年一月...

一九四五年一月...

證據...

才也子之...

一九四五年一月...

一九四五年一月...

一九四五年一月...

一九四五年一月...

一九四五年一月...

一九四五年一月...

一九四五年一月...

1883

Handwritten marks

Doc 5246

第五三四六号

ギルバト島を侵す。グッドマードック陸軍。私一九四三年
七月オーストラリア島を去り。私ハ日本軍が非常ニ乱暴ヲ残
デアルヲ知リ。島ニハ六人ノヨーロッパ人が居り。

- カーtright 氏
- マーサー 氏
- コール 氏
- サード 氏

ブーシゴト神父トカソリック教徒

初、四人ハ監禁サレ種々ノ監禁場所ニ移サレ。ブーシゴト
神父及教徒ハ監禁サレ去リ。彼等ハ凡テ乱暴ヲ扱
受ケル。

私ハ日本軍ノ士官ガカーtright氏、マーサー氏、コール氏ヲ捕
テナリ。顔ヲ見テ足ヲナグリテ尻ルヲ交々見ル。併シ
サード氏ハナグラレナカシ。彼等ハ非常ニヤレ不健康ニ
ナリ。又、アヲニル侮辱、食糧不足ニ苦シメ居ル。

カーtright氏ハ餓ノ結果、一九四三年 聖金曜日ニ死
ス。彼ハオーストラリア人墓地ニ埋葬サレ。

埋葬ニ列席シテ現地人ノ申入ハ、ネーグ特務曹長ヲナシ。

又、墓ハ石極デカクトラシテ居ル。私ハ墓ノ場所ヲ知リ居ル。
マーサー氏ハカーtright氏ノ死後、マモナリシテ、多分數月
後死ニシ。カーtright氏ノ死ニシ後モ、日本軍ハ残り、
ヨーロッパ人ヲヒドク取り扱ヒ續ケル。私ハマーサー氏ニ死スル

Doe 5246

教員等ニ達シテ其ノ語ハ三十ノ外
 他ノ現地人ト日本人ノ我々ニ下サシタル既ニ死ニ行ク事ナリ
 三ノ語ニシテ私ハ彼等ノ以テ日本軍ニ以テ其ノ語ヲ下シテ下
 聞ケル
 数々月後私ハナリシ高ニ向テ其ノ語ヲ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ
 以テ私ハ其ノ語ニシテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ
 三ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ
 四ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ
 私ハ日本軍指揮官トシテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ
 彼ハ教員トシテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ
 彼等ハ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ
 私ハ外ニ出テ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ
 外ニ出テ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ其ノ語ニ下シテ

no. 3.

No. 4

一トハ切切監罪ヲ土地、原空地ニ於テ首ヲ斬ラレタ。島、
全任兵ハ此、執行ヲ見ル様命令サシメテナイモ、同様ノ
運命ヲ付ワテ居ルト云々共サレタ。私ハ三取初ニ入ル見テ
カウガ三トト首ヲ切ラシメテハ見タ。日本軍ノ指揮官
勿タラシ一訳註「田村？」カ之ニ列席シ、執行者ハ教名
ノ云々ニアワテ士官ヲハナカツタ。

同此ノ原住民連ハ刑ノ執行前ニ裁判ニ附サレタカ。
カ合ソウニス。

カウイット・マードックハ更ニ續ハル。

524 B

私ハ捕等が経一町半ニ居サレテ同ノ家言テソル氏アリ
ソレ居ルヲ見タ。コトル氏ノ自サカラハ血が去テ居ル。
ソレが私がコトル氏ヲ見タ最後デアリタ。

問 マーサー氏がホニーア時他ノ歐洲人ハ何ニテホニマシカ。

答 ハイニール氏ノ他ニサート氏が居リ彼ハ虐待サレタコトヲ見タ
カナクイニル大ニ健康ニヤラシメ。ブーニバト神文トカノ
教徒 アランメルハ島ニ居リマシタガ二人トホニマシ入ラレセ
シメタ。私ハ教師が毎辰サレタコトハ聞きマシク虐待サレ
トハ見タコトヲマシ。

* * *

向 貴下ガソコニ居タ同ニ他ノ原住民ニ対シテナサレノ日旅行ヲ知
ソテ居レマス。

答 日本ニ軍ハ一九〇二年八月ニ初メ上陸シタ彼等が上陸後

六月月経ヲ頭ニ入ノオリヤレ島人ノマアトウニカラワ。口ハ

一九四三年頃、日本人ニ依リナウル島ニ運シテ来リシモノナ
リシニ島原住民カタクニギタニニ対スル質問

* * * * *

5246

Doc.

問 貴方ハオランダニ島ヲ居待ラ受ケテコトアリヌカ

答 ハ、私ハ一度、日本人医師第一号住宅、前ニアルバウバウ
コトシタモ取リニ行キマシタ。彼ハ私ヲ見ルトホッケーノ棍
棒ヲ私ヲ打テマシタ。二十回位打タレタ後、私ハ倒レマシタ。
皆テ六十回、殴打ヲ受ケテ私ハ三回倒レマシタ。

問 何時貴方ハオランダニ島ヲ発テマシタカ

答 マドックノ去後約一ニ三月デシタ。

問 貴方ガ出テテ時、残ツタ四人、歐洲人ハ生キテマシタカ

答 神父ハ、私ノ発ッ前ニ亡クナツテマシタ。コル氏トサト
氏が生キテマシタカドウカハ私ハ知りマセン。カソリック教會
員ハ生キテマシタ。

問 神父ハドウシテ、死ニマシタカ

答 私ハ教會員カラ日頃頗ル健康ヲ病氣、ナカッタ。不
ジイ神父ガ入院ニテ胃ノ手術ヲウケタト聞キマシタ
カ、以後不目ニカリマセンデシタ。教會員、語テハ
神父ハ日本人ニ殺サシタニグトイフコトデシタ。

* * * * *

6

No.

Doc. 5246

問. サトウ氏が虐待せられたと見えたか

答. イエ

問. 他自身も虐待せられたと見えたか

答. 私自身は虐待せられた。他人達は無理に働かされた。見えた。

----- * ----- * ----- *

問. 最後貴方が神父と話した、何時に

答. 彼が連行された約一週間前です。彼が将校の室(書庫)

に絶えず、家の中に入りやうと、とうとう部屋を捜し、母を

彼に面会した。彼が悔い乞うた。

問. 実際、処罰委員貴方と何と話したか

答. 彼が、神父の死を、と思つて彼を殺したと、上申した。

* * * * *

己に S X 一。三三四。陸軍司令部附少佐 D 丁。及び三白旗

書中三於に言及せられた。證據 B、に記された書類三丁

本日一九四六年六月二十七日 余、面前に於て彼が前述、宣誓

した時、彼提言を記した。

W. 三三三 大尉 (署名)

No. 7

Q. # 1884

Evidentiary Document No. 5245.

Page 1.

OCEAN ISLAND WAR CRIMES

Exhibit "A"

I, SX 10334 Major Douglas John McBain of Army Headquarters, Melbourne, make oath and say:

1. I am an officer of the Australian Military Forces.
2. Annexed hereto and marked Exhibit ' ' is a true copy of The Interrogation of KABUNARE on which I have in my custody in the course of my duties.
3. The original above mentioned document cannot be made available immediately as it is required for trials of minor war criminals.

Sworn before me at Melbourne)
this 27th day of May, 1946) Signed Douglas McBain, Major

(signed) W. Bursell Capt.
An Officer of the
Australian Military Forces.

EXHIBIT 'A'

INTERROGATION OF KABUNARE

My name is KABUNARE and I am a native of NIKUNAI ISLAND. I am 28 years of age and single. I signed on with the British Phosphate Commissioners during the "TRIESTA" recruit at OMOTOA ISLAND about 18 months before the Japanese came to OCEAN IS.

2. My work on OCEAN IS before the Japanese came was on the cableway.
3. During the Japanese occupation I was employed as a fisherman and lived at TABWEWA Village. We fished from early in the morning until about 3 pm. Usually two men per canoe. The Japanese collected all the fish, but only occasionally gave us a little for our own use. Sometimes the Japanese came down to the shore to meet us coming in but usually we took the fish up to them. The Japanese to whom I took the fish was ("OCHISAN" - phoenetic spelling). If we did not catch any fish we were slapped on the face.
4. I knew NABETARI who was also a fisherman. I did not hear that he was planning to escape, but I heard after he had gone. I heard that three canoes had got away and thought that the Japanese would catch them.
5. There were no Europeans alive when NABETARI left OCEAN IS.
6. The Europeans I remember on the Island were Mr. CARTWRIGHT who died of malnutrition, Mr. COLE, Mr. THIRD, Mr. MEKCEK, Father PUJEEET and the Brother. I do not know where Mr. CARTWRIGHT was buried.

7. I once saw Mr. COLE outside his house at TABEWA working in the garden. He was weeding around the "Boi" plant. We were not allowed to speak to the Europeans.

8. I heard from TEIERU who had escaped with NABETARI that Mr. COLE was killed by stabbing with a knife while he was asleep in his house at TABEWA. TEIERU also told me that Mr. MERCER died of sickness and that Father PUJEBET went into hospital for an abdominal operation. He also told me that Mr. THIRD and the Brother were injected by the number two doctor (AKAHESHO).

9. About five months before the end of the war our section of fishermen at TABEWA was transferred to UMA village. We were not told why we were transferred to UMA village. There were only three of us at TABEWA - myself ERIU and ABERAM.

10. At UMA we joined the fishing section there. The names of the boys there were - ERIU, MITIRE, TUWEWI, TEBOITABU, BAITAU, BUARAKI, URIAM, TETEKKA, ANGKAM, ABA, BANEI and MAORI. We all lived in one European house up behind the Billiard Room. We fished from early in the morning, sometimes as early as 3 am until afternoon.

11. One evening "OSAKISO" (phoenetic) the Japanese who was in charge of the fishermen came into our house and told us that next morning we were to come back early from fishing, about nine or ten o'clock.

12. MAORI and I came back from fishing about 7 am the next morning. The rest came back about nine o'clock. We came back early because we had a lot of fish, then we all went to our quarters.

13. Somewhere after nine o'clock "OSAKISO" shouted out from the Billiard Room for all us fishermen to come down. We all came down and gathered beside the road at the Billiard Room. When we got there we found all the other boys on the Island already gathered there. There would be over a hundred.

14. We were all paraded in about five lines along the road. Some of the Japanese were gathered there when we arrived. There would be about 6. "SUKAISO" (Phoenetic) the No. 3 Commander spoke to us through OSAKISO the interpreter. He stood upon the verandah with the other five Japanese. He told us that the war is over but that we must still work for a while, and then the Japanese would be going away and leaving us here. Then we were told to go back to our houses.

15. We were too scared to show our happiness, so just bowed our heads and went to our house. Then we laughed and talked of the good news in our house.

16. We stayed in our house all the rest of the day and prepared our fishing gear for the next day. We were not allowed to go out and OSAKISO was angry if anyone asked permission to go out.

17. Next morning MAOKI and I and everyone else went out fishing as usual while it was still dark. MAOKI and I came back very early about eight o'clock because we had a lot of fish. The others came back about nine o'clock, they were earlier than usual too, because they had caught a lot of fish.

18. When we arrived back all the natives and a lot of the Japanese soldiers were gathered in the same place as we were gathered the previous day. The native soldiers were told to hand in their uniforms and arms. They handed them all in to the Billiard Room. The native soldiers had marched in, in their respective groups under their Japanese Leader.

19. Then OSAKISO called us from our house to come down to the road by the Billiard Room again. We came down and joined in the parade. SUKAIISO spoke to us all again. He told us we were going to change over the sections again now. OSAKISO then divided us up into our new sections as instructed by SUKAIISO. Our section was the last to be divided up.

20. The first section of about fifteen men was for BUKINTERIKE. One soldier went with them and they marched away. The second section of about fifteen men was for TABWEWA. One soldier went with them and they marched away. I would know the faces of each of the soldiers who went with these two groups. The third group was a bigger group, about 30 or 40 and was for TABIANG. One soldier marched away with them too. The fourth group was also about 30 or 40 and was for the Chinese Location. One soldier went with them. This last is the Toddy Cutter's group.

21. I was in the fifth group of eight men. We were to go to ETAN BANABA and marched away with one soldier in charge. I do not know the name of this soldier, but would recognise him. There were still some natives left when we marched away.

22. We marched through below the Chinese quarters and above the Pastor's House and then through to the Police lines. The soldier in front with us behind.

23. When we arrived at the Police lines we saw a lot of Japanese soldiers in their quarters. They were all inside their houses. The Japanese soldier in charge of us told us to sit down in a line and then told us to face towards the East. Then he took out a little book from his pocket and asked us in turn how old we were. As each man told him how old he was the soldier wrote in his book. That was all we were asked.

24. When the soldier had almost finished writing down the ages, a (SHOTAIISO) came up with another soldier from behind us and walked

out in front of us. The (SHOTAISO) drew his sword and revolver, and the soldier drew a revolver and both pointed them at us. They did not speak to us, but called out for some more soldiers to come out. Each soldier stood in front of one man with the bayonet pointing at his stomach about six inches away.

25. Without anything being said, the soldier who had lead us up tied each man's hands in order with some string he had in his pocket. It was twine that is used for making rope. My hands were tied very tight. There was a length of rope left over loose after tying each man's hands.

26. Then the (SHOTAISO) spoke to the soldier who had tied our hands and the soldier told us to stand up. Then the soldier gathered up all the long ends of rope so we could not run away.

27. Then the (SHOTAISO) walked beside our group as we started walking down towards TABIANG Village. The soldier holding the ropes behind us and the other eight soldiers behind him. The one who had had the pistol with the (SHOTAISO) stayed in the Police lines. All still had their bayonets ready as they filed down the track behind us.

28. We stoped by the engine room for about three minutes while the (SHOTAISO) spoke to the men in the Power House. I do not know what they were talking about.

29. Then we walked on down the track across the road and on down to the cliffs below TABIANG Village.

30. When we got to the cliff the soldier released the strings and told us to line up on the edge of the cliff and squat down close together. Then our eyes were tied up with cloth. The same man who had tied our hands tied the blindfold on us. Then I could hear movements behind and felt as though the soldiers were behind us. I was the second man to have my eyes tied up.

31. FALAILIVA was the first man to be tied and was on my left. He said to me "Are you ready?" and I replied "Yes I am ready to die". Then FALAILIVA asked "You remember God?" and I replied "Yes I remember."

32. Then everything was quiet for a moment, then I fell over the cliff. I did not try to, but just fell. Almost at the same time I heard a scream and someone fell on top of me. I think it was FALAILIVA. I heard others fall, but no more screams. Then I heard a lot of shots fired. FALAILIVA was still on top of me and some of the bullets I could hear were close to me.

33. This was about three or four o'clock in the afternoon. The water kept breaking over us, but I could breathe as the water receded each time. I could see a little bit out of my left eye past

the blindfold, but I did not look up. I stayed there without moving until I thought the Japanese had gone. Then I bit FALAILIVA'S shoulder to see if he was still alive. He was still lying partly on top of me. FALAILIVA did not cry out so I knew he was dead.

34. I stayed about an hour in the water until I thought the Japanese would be gone, then I got up and went over to a sharp piece of the cliff where I cut the binding from my wrists. Then I removed the blindfold. Then I went round all the other bodies to see if any were alive. They were all dead and I looked at each man's face. There was a lot of blood about. I cannot say how all were killed, but I remember FALAILIVA had a wound in his left side, and blood was coming from it. UEANTEITI had a bullet hole in his head.

34. I stayed about on

35. After I found they were all dead, I looked for a place to hide and found a cave where I hid myself. I stayed in this cave all night.

36. The next morning I saw some of the bodies floating outside the cave. They were all swelled up bodies then. Two of the bodies washed into the entrance of the cave. I did not touch them and stayed inside the cave and only peeped outside.

37. About the middle of the day I heard the roar of a plane flying very low; I could hear the plane flying round for about half an hour or an hour. I did not see the plane and stayed in the cave.

38. After the plane left I could hear footsteps over the top of the cave and I could hear voices through one of the holes leading in behind the cave. Then I saw some Japanese soldiers walking along the reef. The tide was right out, just starting to come in. Some of the soldiers came by my cave. Two of them dragged one body out to the reef, then came back and dragged another body out to where there was deep water. I could not see them all the time from my cave and think they made other trips for the other bodies.

39. I did see these two soldiers make two trips. I saw two canoes each with two Japanese in them come in to pick up the bodies, from the soldiers who dragged them out to the reef. There was a launch too. Both the canoes and the launch came from the direction of TABWEWA. The canoes being paddled close inshore and the launch moving slowly further out. The canoes towed the bodies out to the launch.

40. Then the canoes paddled back towards TABWEWA and the launch went further out to sea.

41. I do not remember anything else that day.

42. I stayed in the cave this night.

43. Next day, I do not remember anything except hearing the flatcar moving along the rails.

44. That evening about seven or eight o'clock I left the cave to search for young coconuts and to find a new hiding place inland. While I was up the tree two Japanese came along poling a flat car towards TABWEWA and I stayed hidden up in the tree until they had gone.

45. Then I went to look for a hiding place and found a good bangabanga above the Police lines and I hid there. By then it would be early the next morning.

46. I stayed in hiding in this bangabanga until the day I met the two Gilbertese (2nd. Dec. 1945).

47. I used to go out at night and gather food, young coconuts and old coconuts and water.

48. Sometimes I came out and climbed a tall teitai tree to look round and see if any ships were about. I did not see the warship come but I saw some other ships. I thought they were more Japanese ships.

49. I saw the Union Jack flying from the staff in the Police lines but thought it was another Japanese trick, so did not go near.

50. I heard the bugler every day too, but I thought it was a Japanese too, because the Japanese had a lot of bugles.

51. One day while I was up the teitai tree I saw a motor car different from the Japanese kind and the people in it did not look like Japanese so I came down from the tree and hid by the road to wait for the motor car to come back.

52. I waited two or three hours, but the motor car did not come back. Then I heard the tinkle of bottles and saw two men. One I thought a native Gilbertese, but the other I thought Japanese, because he was wearing Japanese clothing and shoes. The one wearing the sulu and carrying the toddy bottles I knew was Gilbertese and I thought he spoke in Gilbertese.

53. After they had passed by I made up my mind for sure they were Gilbertese so followed them silently. When I got up close behind them I was sure they were Gilbertese, so I greeted them "Kam na mauri" (Greeting.) They seemed frightened of me for a minute and asked me where I had come from. I told them I had been here all

the time and was the remaining man of the killing. I asked "Where are the Japanese"? They told me the Japanese had all gone and that they had come on the second labour recruit.

54. They asked where I had hidden all the time and I showed them. When I changed from my napkins into my sulu which I had hidden in the hole.

55. I thanked the hole for saving my life and then came down to the Police lines and TEAUOKI took me to the District Commissioner.

I swear the above to be true correct statement of the facts.

(SGD) KABUNAKE

Witnesses R. W. WAKEFIELD - OCEAN ISLAND
TEAUOKI - OCEAN ISLAND

This is the document marked Exhibit 'A' referred to in the Affidavit of SX10334, Maj. D.J. McBain, A.H.Q. sworn before me this 27th day of May, 1946, as being produced and shown to him at this time of his swearing his said Affidavit.

(Sgd) W. BUNSELL Capt.

おふべし、訊問書

Doc. 5245

5174

私、名を「おふべし」ナリ。而して、私ハ、一ノ、十六ノ日
ノ、生民言ニシ。私ハ、十八ノ日、独身ナリ。然レ、日本軍が
ナリ、二島ニ到ルニ、心約、六箇月前、二島ニ来
ル、二島ニ到ル期間、二島ニ到ル、二島ニ到ル、二島ニ到ル
署名ナリ。

二、日本軍ノ到ル以前、私ノ住居、二島ニ在リ。
二、聞ク、二島ニ在リ。

三、日本軍ノ到ル期間、私ハ、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ
ノ村落ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。
一、復シ、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。

日本軍ノ到ル、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。
二、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。
私ハ、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。

私ハ、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。
二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。

私ハ、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。
二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。

私ハ、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。
二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。

私ハ、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。
二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。

私ハ、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。
二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。

私ハ、二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。
二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。二島ニ在リ。

Doc 5245

歸ツタ。ソノ時、吾々八家ヲ喚喚、曰ク、汝等ハ何ニシテ此ニ就テ語り合ツタ。

十六、吾々八其日ハソレカラズツト家ニ居キ次、曰ク、漢陽兵ノ進備ヲ整ヘタ。吾々ハ外出スル事ヲ許サズ、汝等ハ誰カハ外出許可ヲ願フト「オサキソ」ハ立腹シタ。

十七、次、朝「マオリ」ト私ト外ノ者ハ皆暗ク同カラ常、如ク集取リニ行ツタ。「マオリ」ト私ハ集カ多量ニ取リ、テ「價」大變昂ク歸ツテ來タ。他ノ者ハ九時頃歸ツテ來タ。彼等モ集カ多量ニ取リ、テ平常ヨリ早ク歸ツテ來タ。

十八、吾々が歸ツテ來テ見ルト、總ベテノ住民、日本兵ハ前日我々が集合シタト同場所ニ集テ居タ。主善兵ハ彼等ヲ制服ト、武器ヲ差出ス可ク告ゲラシタ。彼等ハ總ベテ玉突室ニ集ルシタ。主善兵ハ彼等ノ日本人ノ班長ノ下ニ各自ノ組ヲ作ツテ中ニ行進ヲ行ツタ。

十九、ソノ時「オサキソ」ハ再ビ「玉突室」ノ側ノ道路ニ下リテ來ルマウニ我々ノ宿舎カラ呼シタ。

吾々ハ下リテ行列ニ參加シタ。「オサキソ」ハ爾レ吾々全部ヲ語ラシタ。彼ハ今再ビ、組命ヲ変更スル旨ヲ告ケ「オサキソ」ガ其毎「オサキソ」ノ命令ヲ新ニ組命ヲナシ我々ノ組、最後ニ組命サレタ。

二十、約十五名ヨリナル第一組ハ「アギンテリク」ニ向ケテ行ツタ。一名ノ兵ガ引率シテ彼等ト一緒ニ行進シテ行ツタ。約十五名ノ第二組ハ「アウア」ニ向ツタ。又ノ兵ガ彼等ト同行ニ行進シテ行ツタ。

私ハ此ノ二組、「グループ」ト同行シタ兵士ノ顔ヲ知ツテ居ルツモリダ。第三、「グループ」ハ三。名乃至四。名ヨリナル比較的、天キナ「グループ」デアツタ。而シテ「タヒア」ニ向ケテ進發シタ。而シテ又一名ノ兵ガ彼等ト同行シタ。第四組ハ又約三。名乃至四。名ヨリナリ、「アサ」ニ向ケテ行ツタ。一名ノ兵ガ同行シタ。最後ノ組ハ「トテ」オツタ」組ナリ。

二十一、私ハ八名ヨリナル第五組ニ居タ。吾々ハ「エタニ」ニ向ケテ入ノ兵ノ監督ノ下ニ行ク事ニシタ。私ハ三。兵ノ名

★ No. 3

Doc 5245

二歸ツタ、ソノテ、吾々八家ヲ哄笑ニヨリ、其情ニ三、又ニ就テ語り合ツタ。

十六、吾々六其日ハソレカラズツト家ニ居テ次、日ノ澳陽具ノ準備ヲ敷テ。吾々六外公スル事ヲ語リ、又若シ誰カノ外出許可ヲ願フト「オサキソ」ハ立腹シタ。

十六次、朝「マオリ」ト私ト外ノ者ハ皆暗イ内カラ常、如ク魚取リニ行ツタ。「マオリ」ト私ハ奥ガ多量ニ取レタ、テ「贖」大變巨ク歸ツテ來タ。他ノ者ハ九時頃歸ツテ來タ。彼等モ奥ガ多量ニ取レタ、テ平常ヨリ早ク歸ツテ來タ。

十八、吾々が歸ツテ來テ見ルト總ベテ、住民ト日本兵ノ前日我々が集合シタト同場所ニ集ツテ居タ。其番兵ハ彼等ヲ制服ト、武器ヲ差出ス可ク告ゲラシタ。彼等ハ總ベテ玉突室ニ差出シタ。其番兵ハ彼等ノ日本人ノ班長ノ下ニ各自ノ組ヲ作ツテ中ニ行進ヲ行ツタ。

十九、ソノ時「オサキソ」ハ再ビ「玉突室」ノ側ノ道路ニ下リテ來ルヤウニ我々ノ宿舍カラ呼ビタ。

吾々ハ下リテ行列ニ參加シタ。「オサキソ」ハ前ニ吾々全部語ヲシタ。彼ハ今再ビ、組命ヲ可變更スル旨ヲ告ケ「オサキソ」ガ其毎「オサキソ」ノ命令ヲ新ニ組命ヲシ我々ノ組最後ニ組命サレタ。

二十、約十五名ヨリナル第一組ハ「アキニテリク」ニ向テ行ツタ。一名ノ兵ガ引率シテ彼等ト一緒ニ行進シテ行ツタ。約十五名ノ第二組ハ「アウア」ニ向ツタ。又ノ兵ガ彼等ト同行ニ行進シテ行ツタ。

私ハ此ニ組「グループ」ト同行シタ兵士ノ願ヲ知ツテ居ルツモリタ。第三「グループ」ハ三名乃至四名ヨリナル比較的天キ「グループ」デアツタ。而シテ「タビニク」向テ出發シタ。而シテ又一名ノ兵ガ彼等ト同行シタ。第四組ハ又約三名乃至四名ヨリナリ、オサキニテリクニ向テ出發シタ。一名ノ兵ガ同行シ此最後ノ組ハ「オサキソ」組デアリ。

二十一、私ハ八名ヨリナル第五組ニ屬シ、其日「オサキソ」ニ向テ入ノ兵監督ノ下ニ行ク事ニ決メタ。私ハ八名ノ兵ノ名

NO. 3

Doc. 5245

前ハ知ラナイガ判別スル事ハ出来ル。吾々が去ツタ時若干ノ住
氏が未ダ残ツテ居タ。

二十二、吾々ハ半國人區域、下ヲ通り牧師館ノ上ヲ通り而テ
敬言察線ヲ通ツテ行ツタ。兵が先ニ立テ吾々ハ、ソノ後カラツイ
テ行ツタ。

二十三、吾々が敬言察線ニ到着シタ時、吾々ハ日本ノ兵隊ガ多数
彼等ノ居住区域ニ居ルヲ見タ。彼ハ皆室内ニ居タ。吾々ノ班
長デアル日本兵ハ列ニテ腰ヲ下スコトヲ命ジ且東方ニ向フコ
トヲ命ジタ。ソウシテ彼ハポケットカラ一冊ノ小冊子手帳ヲ取リ
出シ順々ニ我々が何オデアルカラ尋ネタ。各人ハ何オデアルカラ
彼ニ告ゲ共ニ彼ノ手帳ニソノヲ書イタ。ソレガ吾々ノ尋ネラレ
タ總テデアツタ。

二十四、兵が殆ド年令ヲ書キ終ツタ時一人、(ニョータイソ)ノ
ガ他ノ兵ト共ニ我々ノ後部カラヤツテ來テ吾々ノ前面ニ歩ミ出
タ。(ニョータイソ)ハ劔ヲ抜き連発拳銃ヲ出シタ。兵ニ連
発拳銃ヲ出シ拳銃ヲ吾々ノ方ニ向ケタ。彼等ハ我々ニ対シ何モ
言ハカッタ。シカニ更ニモット兵隊達ニ出テ來ルヤウニ呼ビタ。

各兵約六イニ許リ離レテ一人一人ノ腹ニ銃劔ヲ擬シテ立ツタ。
二十五、何モ言ハズ吾々ヲ引率シテ來タ兵ハ彼ノポケットニ所持
シ居タ繩ヲ順々ニ各人ノ手ヲ縛ツタ。ソレハ太繩ヲ造ル時
ニ用ヒラレル撚リ繩デアツタ。私ノ両手ハツカリト縛ラレタ。各
人ノ両手ヲ縛ツテカラ或長サノ繩ガ弛ク残サレタ。

二十六、其ノ時(ニョータイソ)ハ吾々ノ手ヲ縛ツタ兵隊ニ対
シ話ヲシタ。其兵隊ハ吾々ニ起立ヲ命ジタ。ソレカラ兵隊達
ハ長シ繩ノ端ヲ全部集メテ持ツタテ吾々ハ逃亡スル事ハ出来
ナカッタ。

二十七、ソノカラ(ニョータイソ)ハ吾々が「タビニング」村落ニ向
ツテ歩イテ行ツタ時、吾々ノ「グループ」ノ側面ヲ歩イテ居タ。兵
ガ「グループ」ヲ持ツテ吾々ノ後部ニ居リ又ソノ後部ニ八名ノ兵ガ
續イタ。

(ニョータイソ)ト共ニ拳銃ヲ持ツタ兵隊ハ敬言察線ニ止マシタ。
總テノ兵隊ハ尚吾々ノ背後カラ細道ニ列ヲテ銃劔ヲ擬シテ

☆
No. 4

Doc 5245

居タ。

千八、吾々(三ヨ一タソ)が發電所、中、人達ニ話ヲスル間三分間程機關室ノ側ニ立チ止ツテ其タカ彼等が何、話ヲシテ其タカ私ハ知ラナイ。

千九、吾々ハ道路ヲ横切リドンドン細道ヲ下リテ「タビヤング」村落ノ下ニ位スル断崖ニ向ケ下リテ行ツタ。

千下、吾々が崖ニ到達シタ時兵捕繩然スシタ。而シテ崖ノ端ニ列ヲ作ツテ端坐スルヤウニ命ジタ。ソレカラ吾々、眼カ布ヲ縛ラシタ。吾々、手ヲ縛シタ同ジ人間ガ吾々ニ眼隠シラシタ。其ノ時背後ニ何カ動靜ノアルヲ聞ク事ガ出来タ。而シテ兵隊達ガ背後ニ居ル事ヲ感シタ。私ハ第一番目ニ眼ヲ縛ラシタ。

(次頁ニ續ク)

Vo. 5 *

Doc 5245

三十一「アライリグ」の最初二目隠ニラサレタ男デ私
 / 左側ニ居タ。彼ハ私ニ覺悟ハ出来タト聞イタ、
 デ然^死又覺悟ハ出来タト答ヘタ。ソノ時
 コアライリグハ神ヲ想起ニ居ルヤト聞イタ、
 デ然リ私ハ想起ニ居ルト答ヘタ。
 三十二ソレカラアユルモハ一瞬ニトミテ居タ。ソ
 ノカラ私ハ墮カウ落チタ。私ハ自分デ落チ傍トミ
 タノテハナイガ唯落チタ、ダタ。殆ドソレト同時
 ニ私ハ叫ビ声ヲ聞イタ。ソウシテ誰カが私ノ上ニ落チ
 タ。私ハ其ハ「アライリグ」デタト想フ。
 私他ノ者が落チルノヲ聞イタ。併ニモウ叫ビ声ヲ
 聞カナカッタ。其ノ時多數ノ鏡声ヲ聞イタ。ア
 イリグハ尚私ノ上ニアツタ。ソウシテ私ノ聞イタ
 出来タ鏡声ノ彈ハ私ノ近クニアツタ。
 三十三「ト」下段千俣ノ三時カ四時頃デアツタ。海水
 が吾々ノ上ニ碎ケツツケタ。私ハ海水が退ク毎
 呼吸スル事が出来タ。私ハ眼隠ニテ遊ビテ在眼
 「テ」少シバカリ見ニ事が出来タ。デモ私ハ上ヲ見ル事
 アニナカッタ。私ハ日本人ガ居ナクナルマデ働キ
 イテ其處ニ居タ。ソレカラ彼ガ生キテナルカ至カラ
 確カナル迄ニ私コアライリグニ用ヲ盡シタ。彼尚幾少

No 6 ☆

Doc 5245

上三横ハツチ居タ。別ニ叫ビモシテハ、私ハ彼ガ死
ニ居ルノヲ知リ。

三十四、私ハ日本人ガ去ラズトテ、下ノ水ニ
一時間許リ居テ、上ノ穴ニ入リ、上ノ穴ニ登
ツテ行ツテ、ソノ窓角ニ私ノ手箱トシテ捕縄ヲ切リ、
ソレカラ私ハ眼隠シテハ、

ソレカラ私ハ地ノ全体、ウチニ居テ、中ノ者ガ死ニ居
ルヲ確カシメ、見テ、私ハ彼ガ死ニ居ルヲ

私ハ人ノ様ヲ見テ、其ノ時ニハ、少量ノ血ガ、
私ハ如何ニシテ皆ガ殺シテ、言フ事ハ、私ハ

私ハアツテ、ソノ彼ノ死體ニ傷、アツテ、記
憶スル所ニ、血ガ其處カラ流シ、上ノ穴ニ

テ、上ノ穴ニ、彼ノ頭部ヲ鏡ニテ、取テ、カキ、穴ニ
ニテ居タ。

三十五、私ハ全部ガ死ニテ、確カシテ、陰陽ヲ
探シ、洞穴ノ思ハ、私ハ終ニ其處ニ留リ。

三十六、次ノ朝、私ハ其ノ洞穴ノ外部ニ、浮キ居
ル死體ヲ見テ、思フ、ソノ時ノ死體ノ其ノ時ニ、

アツテ、死體ノウチニ、洞穴ノ入口ニ、波ヲ進
シ、私ハソノ死體ニ觸ル、洞穴ノ中ニ留リ、
唯外部ヲ觀テ、思フ。

三十七、其ノ時、私ハ、飛行機ガ、超空ニ飛テ、居ル
音ヲ聞キ、私ハ、飛行機ガ、半時間ヲ、時前ニ、洞ニ、居

NO 7

Doc 5245

ヲ南クコトが出来タ 秘、飛行機ヲ見テテ洞穴、
中ニ居タ。
三十八、飛行機が去ツテ後、洞穴ノ上ニ是音ヲ
聞ク。ソレカラ其ノ洞穴ノ背後ニ通シテ是處敷
個ノ洞穴ノツラツ話ニ声ヲ聞イタ。ソレカラ若キノ日本兵が暗
ニ進ミテ歩イテ居ルヲ見タ。朝ハ金ヲ退キテ下陸
又這入リテ来テヤサトシテ居タ。其ノ其キハ私ノ居ル
洞穴ノ側ニ来タ。

彼等ノ二人ハ其ノ暗黒カラ筒ノ死体ヲ引キズリ出シ
ソレカラ帰ツテ来テ、水ノ深イ場所ニ他ノ死体
ヲ引キズリ出シテ行ツタ。私ハ洞穴カラ(部始終ヲ
見ル事ハ出来ナカッタ。ソレカラ彼等ニ他ノ死体ノ
始末ニ通ツテ行ツタ。

三十九、私ハ此ノ二人ノ兵が二度程死体ヲ處理シテ
居ルヲコノ目ヲ見タ。私ハ日本人ガ二人宛來シ
ニ復シカヌ山ガ他ノ兵隊達ガ暗黒カラ引キ出シ
タ死体ヲソノ兵隊達カラ拾ヒ揚ゲル迄ニ至ツテ
来ルヲ見タ。其處ニハ又小蒸汽ガアツタ。

「カヌ山」ト小蒸汽トハ「タガツエリ」ノ方カラ来タ。
「カヌ山」海岸近キヲ潜ガレ小蒸汽ハ緩ク力ニ遠
ク動キツツアツタ。

「カヌ山」ノ死体ヲ小蒸汽ノ方ニ曳キテ行ツタ。
四〇、ソレカラ「カヌ山」ハ「タガツエリ」ノ方ニ向テ歸ツテ行キ
小蒸汽ハ沖方ヘ出テ行ツタ。

No 8

SAKATA, Jiro.

SAKATA, Jiro, Naval Lt. of 67th Garrison Regt. states:-

.....

Q. When you arrived at Ocean Island were there any Europeans there?
A. No.

.....

Q. Who was in command of the island when you arrived?
A. Lt.-Commander SUSUKI who is now in No. 1 Compound.

Q. What happened to the natives who were on the island?
A. There were about 100 natives on the island and when the food situation became critical they started to steal food and arms and they would not listen to reason. In Sept. or Oct. 44 at the command of Lt.-Commander SUSUKI they were attacked and killed. There were also cases of natives stealing arms and then leaving the island.

Q. Did not the Japanese in fact arm the natives?
A. In the beginning we armed some of the natives but when the situation became critical we took the arms off them. We disarmed some of the natives and with regard to the others we did not give them any ammunition for the rifles.

Q. When were they disarmed?
A. May or June 44.

Q. Were the natives all killed on the one day?
A. On the same day.

Q. Did you take any part in the action or did you see it?
A. They were all killed at different places around the shore of the island at the instruction of Lt.-Commander SUSUKI.

Q. Did you see any of this?
A. I saw one lot killed but did not use a weapon myself or give the order to fire.

Q. Where were the natives you saw?
A. They were killed in this area. (He points to a place on the shore about half way between SOLCHONS POINT AND LILLEN POINT.)

Q. How many were killed there?
A. There were about 20 killed there.

Q. Were they shot?
A. Yes, they were shot.

Q. Were they shot all at once or one at a time?
A. They were all shot at once.

/s. were

Q. Were they lined up?
 A. They were lined up on the shore and shot at the one time. Bayonets or other arms were not used only rifles.

Q. Who gave the order to fire for this particular group?
 A. Ensign YAJI who was in charge of a Pl. Ensign YAJI actually gave the order to fire. I had been ordered by Lt.-Commander SUSUKI to have those natives shot and I gave the order to YAJI.

Q. Did this only apply to this area?
 A. Yes. Other officers were sent to other areas by SUSUKI.

Q. Did you disarm the natives before shooting them?
 A. Yes.

Q. How long before shooting them did you disarm them?
 A. They did not have any arms when they were caught.

.....

Q. Were all the natives on the island killed?
 A. They were all males and were all killed.

.....

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

ノルウェーの国

△

5247

20

☆ No. 1

5247

問 貴方が実行した参加者から見たら、

答 彼等が、海軍の佐、命、島、海岸附近、河、河、全部殺した。

問 貴方、其中、何、力、見、た、か、

答 一、群、者、殺、せ、ら、れ、た、見、え、ら、れ、た、私、自、身、武、器、一、探、り、た、と、い、う、命、令、下、さ、ら、れ、た、

問 貴方、死、た、ら、ば、上、民、何、邊、に、居、た、か、

答 彼等、此、邊、に、殺、さ、れ、た、(彼、ら、は、岬、ト、リ、リ、ト、岬、略、中、間、海、軍、地、を、指、摘、し、た、)

問 其所、何、人、殺、さ、れ、た、か、

答 其所、殺、せ、ら、れ、た、約、三、十、名、許、り、し、た、

問 彼等、射、殺、さ、れ、た、か、

答 然、り、し、た、射、殺、さ、れ、た、

問 彼等、全部、一、度、射、殺、さ、れ、た、か、上、民、何、射、た、か、

答 彼等、全部、一、度、射、殺、さ、れ、た、

問 彼等、何、を、使、用、し、た、か、

答 彼等、海岸、側、に、一、度、射、た、と、い、う、銃、劍、其、他、武、器、使、用、し、た、

問 一、群、對、誰、發、射、命、令、下、さ、ら、れ、た、か、

答 或、は、隊、指、揮、し、た、者、と、い、う、海、軍、少、尉、と、い、う、少、尉、の、一、度、發、射、命、令、下、さ、ら、れ、た、私、ら、は、海、軍、少、尉、に、此、等、上、民、射、殺、さ、れ、た、命、令、下、さ、ら、れ、た、事、を、聞、く、

問 此、處、所、に、事、は、何、か、

答 然、り、し、た、將、校、等、に、ス、キ、他、場、所、に、

No. 2

★ 問 答

No. 3 ☆

Doc.

5247

問 貴方、意ヲ射殺ス前ニ武装ヲ解除シタルカ。
 答 否ナリ。
 問 射殺スト、位前ニ彼等、武装ヲ解除シタルカ。
 答 彼等ヲ捕ラシテ折ニ武器、何ヲ持テ居タルコトヲ

問 島、土民、全部殺サレタルカ。
 答 彼等、全部男子ヲシテ、ソノヲ全部殺サレタルカ。

1944 本紙及ニ海軍大尉、坂田、及ニ海軍大尉、坂田、
 一記號タル別紙記載、且、余及ニ「アフリ」軍
 曹、依リテ署名タル陳述、九百零年十月九日、トナリ、
 二於テ、余等、之會、下ニ通譯者聯合翻譯週譯
 部、D、之ニ、軍曹、通シテ書キ取ラレタル。

(AIF) 濠洲軍第四濠洲基地司令部 自署

少佐、トナリ、アフリ

(AIF) 濠洲軍第四濠洲基地司令部 自署

大、アフリ、軍曹

Ex. # 1886

Evidentiary Document 5427.

Page 1.

Chief Petty Officer A.M.I, KAKUZO states:-

I am attached to 67 Naval Garrison Unit. I was on Ocean Island from Aug. 42 until the cessation of the war. My Section Leader was Ensign Shinozawa YOSHIKAZU (then W.O.). At that time my rank was the same one as Sgt. in the Army.

About 20 Aug. (I do not remember the date exactly) I was ordered by the Section Leader to go to the Administrative Office and bring natives who were to be transferred to my section that day. I received 8 natives from Lt. NAKA to bring them to the front of the billet and handed them to the Section Leader.

I had been standing behind the natives when they were bound by the sailors, but I had had no weapon with me. And then I went to the shooting place by the sea without bringing any weapon with me.

I blindfolded the natives according to the order of W/O SHINOZAWA, Section Leader. Standing behind the sailors I was watching when they were shot to death. After finishing shooting I saluted them and expressed my deepest sorrow at their death and returned to our billet.

(Signed) (Japanese characters)
Chief P.O. A.M.I.

I hereby certify that the above translation is true and correct.

(Signed) TSURUHARA SHIGERO.

Certified true copy.

(Signed) T. MORRANE.
Lt.Col.

證據書類第五四二七號

兵 賞 長 アライ カクゾウ 陳 述

/ARAI KAKUNO/

Doc 5427

私ハ海軍少尉六七守備隊ニ屬シテ居タ。

私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）八月カラ戦争終了迄大洋島ニ居ッタ。

私ノ隊長ハ海軍少尉シノザワヨシハル（當時准尉）

デアッタ、當時私ノ階級ハ陸軍ニ於ケル軍曹ト同シデアッタ。

八月二十日頃（私ハ日ヲ正確ニ記憶シテ居ナイ）

私ノ隊長カラ行政隊ニ行キ其日私ノ隊ニ引渡サルベキ若干ノ土民ヲ連れて來ルコトヲ命ゼラレタ。

私ハ「ナラ」大尉カラ八名ノ土民ヲ受取り宿舎ノ

前面ニ連れて行キ之ヲ隊長ニ渡ッタ。

土民等ガ水兵ニ縛ラレタ時自分ハ此土民等ノ後ニ立ツテ居タ、然シ自分ハ武器ヲ持ツテ居ナカッタ。

ソレカラ自分ハ武器ヲ持タズニ海嶺ノ射撃場ニ行

ッタ。私ハ隊長シノザワ准尉ノ命令ニヨリ土民等

ニ目隠シラッタ。自分ハ彼等ガ射撃サレタ時水兵

連ノ後ニ立ツテ其ヲ見テ居タ。射撃ガ終ツタ後彼

等ニ敬意シ彼等ノ死ニ深い哀悼ノ意ヲ表シ我々ノ

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 331

Dec 5427

箱舎ニシツテ來タ。

(署名) (日本文字ニア)

兵曹長 ア ラ イ / 署名 /

余ハ右ノ証書ガ眞實且誤ナキコトヲ證明ス。

(署名) ツカハラ シゲロウ
/ TSUKAHARA SHIGERO /

眞正ナル寫デアルコトヲ證明スル

(署名) 田中 佐

ナ・モ・ネ・ン / F. MORNANE /

2.

宿舎ニ歸ツテ來タ。

(署名) (日本文字ニア)

兵曹長 ア ラ イ / 署名 /

余ハ右ノ証言ガ眞實且誤ナキコトヲ證明ス。

(署名) ツカハラ シゲロウ
/ TSUKAHARA SHIGERO /

眞正ナル寫デアルコトヲ證明スル

(署名) 豊原中佐

デー・モーネー / F. MORNANE /

Dec 5427

2.

C. # 1887

SYNOPSIS OF EVIDENCE

CHINA

1. Prosecution Document No. 8178, the affidavit of Ernest P. Higgs, sworn to 4 March 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit relates to the killing of a civilian internee by the Japanese military police in Shanghai in August, 1943. Inspector William Hutton was taken from Haiphong Road Camp to the Headquarters of the Japanese Gendarmerie for questioning and was returned to the camp in an unconscious condition. The marks on his body showed that he had been tortured by innumerable small cuts with a razor blade. He died several days later. The affidavit states on page 1:

"With reference to Inspector William Hutton. I saw a man named Watson arrested by one of the guards and taken to the camp office for questioning. I found out later that he was accused of trying to get a message out of the camp. The Japanese authorities looked for a man who was stated to have been sitting next to Watson at the time. A guard identified a certain man as being the one. Actually however this was not so, and the next morning Inspector Hutton went to the authorities and told them that they had made a mistake, and that he was the man who had been sitting next to Watson. Both men were taken out of the camp, I understand to Jessfield Road, Headquarters of the Japanese Gendarmerie. When they were brought back again several days later the man Watson could walk with assistance, and after a week or so in the camp hospital seemed to be quite fit. The man Hutton however was lying in the bottom of the car, naked except for a small pair of pants about his middle. He was unconscious and was placed on a stretcher and taken to the doctor in the clinic. A few minutes later I saw him on the stretcher being carried into the camp hospital. There were marks on his wrists which suggested that he had been strapped down and that both his legs from ankles to hips were criss-crossed with small cuts which had the appearance of having been done with an instrument such as a sharp razor blade. I did not see the remainder of his body, although the man sleeping next to me in the camp told me that he had seen Hutton's chest and that this also was similarly disfigured with cuts. It was common knowledge amongst the internees at the camp that other injuries had been sustained by Hutton during the time that he was out of the camp including damage to his kidneys and private parts, and that the torture that he had undergone had snapped his brain. After three or four days in the camp hospital he was placed in an ambulance and sent to a mental hospital run by a Russian doctor, but he died that night."

2. Prosecution Document No. 8180, the affidavit of Ernest Solomon, sworn to 18 May 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. This affidavit confirms the killing of Inspector Hutton described in the previous document No. 8178.

3. Prosecution Document No. 8137, the affidavit of Pvt. James H. Cole, sworn to 6 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. The affidavit describes the shooting of an American civilian by a Japanese guard at Shanghai Prisoner of War Camp in March 1942. The civilian was standing near the prison fence when the guard without provocation shot and killed him.

Deponent was forced to work polishing anti-aircraft shell cases. If the prisoners did not complete sixteen cases per day they were beaten with clubs and rifle butts. For minor offences such as failure to salute or failure to bow upon meeting Japanese, the prisoners were stripped of all clothing and forced to stand at attention for three to four hours during winter months when the temperature was below freezing. Several men developed pneumonia due to this punishment.

4. Prosecution Document No. 2662, Part 12, being the report of the Central Investigation Committee relating to prisoners of war, dated 4 November 1945, is offered in evidence. Prosecution Document No. 2662, signed by Lt. Col. Richard E. Rudisill, Chief, Investigation Division, Legal Section, SCAP, being the certificate of source and authenticity covering this investigation report as well as other similar reports to be introduced in evidence later, is offered in evidence. Prosecution Document No. 2662, Part 12, describes the killing of three American airmen in Hankow, China, in December 1944. Preliminary reports indicate that the three captured airmen with their hands tied behind their backs were marched through the streets of Hankow, severely beaten and then covered with gasoline and burned to death. This document includes (page 6) a report by Maj. Gen. Kaburagi, Chief of Staff of the Japanese 34th Army at the time of the incident, which disclaims knowledge of the details of the atrocity, but admits that permission to march the fliers through the city was granted by the Commanding General of the 34th Army. The report states on page 6:

"4 November 1945

Major-General KABURAGI

"I. Circumstances of the incident.

1. Since around autumn of last year, the indiscriminate shooting and bombing of the city of Hankow caused considerable damage to the homes of the citizens. Not only that, but the casualties inflicted upon the people, chiefly upon the Chinese forces, was great, and the indignation of the citizens gradually increased.
2. The Hankow Youth Organization (?) forced the American fliers who participated in attacks against Hankow, to march through the city, as a reprisal for the above-mentioned indiscriminate bombing and shooting. The citizens carried out beatings and violence against these fliers.

"I do not have a detailed knowledge of the methods, means, and degree of the atrocity.

3. Before the above-mentioned incident was carried out, application for permission to do so was made to the 34th Army Headquarters by the Hankow Youth Organization (?). However, the Commander of the Army (Lieutenant-General IMAI) would not give permission at first, because the ill treatment of prisoners of war is not only a violation of International Law, but would also have a bad influence upon the treatment of Japanese nationals interned in the United States. However, the Youth Organization repeatedly requested the permission for carrying it out, saying that the plan was a reprisal for the indiscriminate shooting and bombings and that it would be carried out under the responsibility of the Chinese people and that they will absolutely refrain from troubling the Japanese Forces. Consequently, the permission for the aforementioned was granted.

5. Prosecution Document No. 8172, the affidavit of Capt. Edward E. Williamson, sworn to 6 June 1946, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts therefrom are now offered in evidence. Prosecution Document No. 8175, the affidavit of William S. Bungay, sworn to 21 February 1946, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence.

These affidavits describe the methods of torture used during interrogation of civilian internees by the Japanese Gendarmerie at Bridge House in Shanghai. Document No. 8172 states on page 2:

"At various dates following the occupation of the Settlements in Shanghai the Japanese Gendarmerie acting on information and from years of inquiries proceeded to arrest prominent Allied Nationals, e.g., heads of business firms and leading members of National Societies. These persons were then taken to an apartment house known as 'Bridge House' which had been the headquarters of the Japanese Gendarmerie since 1937 the date of the outbreak of the Sino-Japanese hostilities. When these Allied Nationals were taken to Bridge House they were thrown into a filthy verminous cell which was already overcrowded with persons of various nationality both male and female, numbering between fifteen and twenty persons. For the toilet a bucket in the corner of the cell was the only facility provided serving both male and female occupants. The food provided was mainly rice in porridge form with weak tea in quantities not sufficient to sustain life. Sleep was impossible in these cells as all could not lie down at once. They, the prisoners, were only supplied with one blanket which was also verminous.

"I do not have a detailed knowledge of the methods, means, and details of the atrocity.

3. Before the above-mentioned incident was carried out, application for permission to do so was made to the 34th Army Headquarters by the Hankow Youth Organization (?). However, the Commander of the Army (Lieutenant-General 1230) would not give permission at first, because the ill treatment of prisoners of war is not only a violation of International Law, but would also have a bad influence upon the treatment of Japanese nationals interned in the United States. However, the Youth Organization repeatedly requested the permission for carrying it out, saying that the plan was a reprisal for the indiscriminate shooting and bombings and that it would be carried out under the responsibility of the Chinese people and that they will absolutely refrain from troubling the Japanese Forces. Consequently, the permission for the aforementioned was granted.

5. Prosecution Document No. 8172, the affidavit of Capt. Edward E. Williamson, sworn to 6 June 1946, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts therefrom are now offered in evidence. Prosecution Document No. 8175, the affidavit of William S. Bungoy, sworn to 21 February 1946, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence.

These affidavits describe the methods of torture used during interrogation of civilian internees by the Japanese Gendarmerie at Bridge House in Shanghai. Document No. 8172 states on page 2:

"At various dates following the occupation of the Settlements in Shanghai the Japanese Gendarmerie acting on information and from years of inquiries proceeded to arrest prominent Allied nationals, e.g., heads of business firms and leading members of National Societies. These persons were then taken to an apartment house known as 'Bridge House' which had been the headquarters of the Japanese Gendarmerie since 1937 the date of the outbreak of the Sino-Japanese hostilities. When these Allied Nationals were taken to Bridge House they were thrown into a filthy verminous cell which was already overcrowded with persons of various nationality both male and female, numbering between fifteen and twenty persons. For the toilet a bucket in the corner of the cell was the only facility provided serving both male and female occupants. The food provided was mainly rice in porridge form with weak tea in quantities not sufficient to sustain life. Sleep was impossible in these cells as all could not lie down at once. They, the prisoners, were only supplied with one blanket which was also verminous.

"On the days previous to interrogations these prisoners were placed in a cell usually next door to a torture chamber where they could hear the yells and cries of persons being beaten and tortured hearing noises as if the person beaten were actually dying. This treatment of arrested civilians, viz, locked in a filthy cell, little or no food, made to listen to the tortures and beating of other prisoners such as, Chinese, Indian and Russians, was an organized, premeditated and inhuman way of breaking down the resistance and morale of these prisoners, so as to put them in mental and bodily fear of torture when their turn for 'interrogation' came.

TORTURE

Various tortures were administered during interrogation, the main ones being "Water Torture" which is done by laying a person flat on a bench with his head overhanging one end. A funnel is then placed in the mouth and water forced into the abdomen and lungs. The torturer then jumps on the stomach of his victim producing a drowning sensation.

Electric Treatment. This is done by tying the victim to a 'painters ladder' in the shape of a crucifix and applying a hand manipulated shocking coil to the body. The parts chosen usually were around the private members or near the nose. Before this treatment is given the body is sprayed with cold water.

Beatings. These came into various categories such as: - (1) Beating across the back and buttocks with a stick or hose. (2) Slapping of the face. (3) Kicking of the shins and various other sadistic methods such as kicking the private parts.

Other. In one case they removed both toe nails from the big toes of a victim without an anesthetic. The rack torture was also administered and many others too numerous to mention."

At all civil internment camps food and living conditions were bad and beatings were frequent. Many of the camps were located in military areas and the internees were exposed to air raids.

6. Prosecution Document No. 8127, the testimony of Pvt. James S. Browning, sworn to 4 January 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. Deponent describes the torture of approximately fifty American prisoners of war at the Shanghai Prisoner of War Camp in February, 1944. The prisoners were punished for trading their personal effects to the Chinese to obtain money. They were stripped, taken out in the snow and given the water cure by having water forced into their stomachs and then were jumped on by the Japanese. When the prisoners became unconscious they were revived by tying them to a post in the snow and pouring ice water over them. They were also beaten with a riding crop loaded with lead.

7. Prosecution Document No. 8033, the deposition of Sgt. Robert McCulloch Brown sworn to 15 February 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. This deposition confirms the previous document and states that prisoners of war at Shanghai Camp were given the water torture for trading with the Chinese. This affidavit states on page 2:-

"...The men were first severely beaten by ISHIMARU and MIYAZAKI. Some of these beatings consisted of being struck with a riding crop frequently used by ISHIMARU to inflict discipline upon the prisoners. After they had been mauled in this manner, each prisoner was held on the floor and was forced to open his mouth. Then, with a Japanese holding the prisoner's nose, water was poured into the prisoner's open mouth until he became unconscious. The Japanese then slapped the prisoner's face and threw cold water on his body in order to revive him. This incident took place in January 1944 and the weather was very cold. It is therefore apparent that the use of cold water on prisoners under such circumstances imposed a severe shock upon their systems. These five men were subjected to this treatment for twelve days, until the Japanese finally decided that additional mistreatment would cause their deaths. The men were then hospitalized and later returned to duty."

8. Prosecution Document No. 8007-A, the testimony of John F. Ryan, sworn to 15 February 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. The deponent states that he was one of about one hundred prisoners at Woosung Camp in September 1942 who suffered mass punishment for the escape of four Marines. The prisoners were confined for six days in a single room without heat or bed clothing at a time when the temperature was very cold and with inadequate rations. The commanding officer of the camp was responsible for this punishment.

9. Prosecution Document No. 8130, the affidavit of Pvt. Carl E. Stegmaier, sworn to 7 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are not offered in evidence. Deponent was one of five prisoners of war at Kiang Wan Camp in January, 1945, who were bayoneted by a Japanese guard during an air raid by U. S. planes. The only provocation was that some of the prisoners had cheered during the air raid.

10. Prosecution Document No. 8072-A, the affidavit of Corporal Morris Littman, sworn to 15 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. Deponent states that three American prisoners who were recaptured after escaping from the Mukden Camp in April, 1943, were brutally beaten and then beheaded. The affidavit states on page 1:-

"Along about the middle of April 1943 three of the Americans at Camp Hudson escaped from the camp and were not missed by the Japanese guards until roll call the following morning. Each of the three men were from separate barracks. I don't recall their names. The three men were absent from camp for about three days before they were caught by the Japanese and returned to camp. I saw the men when they were returned to the camp. They were walking one behind the other with a guard along the side of them holding them up; I don't think they were able to walk by themselves; one of them had a rag wrapped around his head which was blood soaked; all three of them had their clothing on their backs ripped up and was very bloody; their ankles were chained together and could only take small steps; the chain extended up their back and their heads were chained together. We went on to work in the factory that day and later on in the day the guards brought them out to camp and tried to make them pick out the Americans who had helped them to escape, also the Japanese who had aided in the escape. They refused to give any information and were removed from camp. Two days later the Japanese officials had the wood shop to make three crosses with their names on the cross. The Japanese guards took a detail of three or more men to the cemetery where there were three freshly covered graves and the detail set up the crosses over these three graves which they had prepared in the wood shop of the camp. The Japanese guards in the camp said that they were beheaded with samurai swords. The day following the date on which the three men were caught the Japanese didn't let us go to work; they came in and called attention and showed us a position that they wanted us to sit in and placed a guard over us to see that we stayed in that position and kept us this way for two weeks in the daytime. They made us sit at attention with our legs crossed above the knee, our hands resting on our leg with palm up. We sat on the edge of our beds. We were not allowed to speak and could move our hands only when we ate. Each of the three men that had escaped were from each of three barracks so the Japanese made the barracks, three in number, all sit like this for two weeks."

11. Prosecution Document No. 8209, the testimony of Capt. Winfield S. Turningham, USN, sworn to 26 November 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. Dependent escaped from Hoosung Camp in March, 1942, and after being recaptured and confined in Bridge House for a month was tried by court martial under the provisions of Japanese military law as a deserter from the Japanese Army. Dependent pointed out that under the national law the maximum punishment for escape that could be imposed was thirty days solitary confinement. The Japanese court contended that they were not bound by the Geneva Convention and sentenced dependent to ten years confinement. Dependent escaped from Ward Road Jail in October, 1944, and after being recaptured was sentenced to life imprisonment.

Deponent states (page 9) that from the evidence it appears that the prisoners of war were deliberately under-fed to keep them in a low physical state.

12. Prosecution Document No. 8279, the sworn affidavit of Grdn. C. D. Smith, dated 26 February 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. Deponent escaped from Woosung prisoner of war camp and was recaptured. After thirty days at Bridge House he was taken to Kiang Wan Camp, and after fifty-three days in solitary confinement was given a general court martial on a charge of "desertion from the Japanese Army in time of war." The trial resulted in a sentence of ten years imprisonment to be served in a criminal jail with loss of all military rights. Deponent states on page 4:

"At Bridge House I was confined in a cell with 18 others--Chinese, Japanese, and foreigners. The conditions in this place were appalling. I was lying next to a man with leprosy and was forced to sleep in close contact with him as the place was so crowded. We were kept here for 30 days undergoing what the Japanese called an investigation. The food consisted of congee in the morning and four ounces of bread a day. One small cup of tea was given us twice a day, no other liquids being procurable.

The moral degradation here was of considerably more importance than the actual physical discomfort, which in itself was sufficient punishment for anyone. This was during the month of March, and it was very cold. We were given one blanket each, which was completely insufficient when one is sleeping on the bare floor. During the day we were forced to sit in formation, cross legged on the floor, without any support or rest for the back or arms. At times an unusually cruel guard would make the rounds of the cells, forcing everyone to kneel on the wooden floor. This would sometimes be kept up for six or eight hours."

Deponent gives a further description of torture at Bridge House on pages 6 and 7:

"I saw a number of tortures to a minor degree in Bridge House while passing through the ear doors on my many trips up to the office. I saw men being given the water treatment, being burned with cigarettes, being given shocks with an electrical machine of some kind, and almost innumerable beatings with clubs and with the backs of swords. Violent kicking with heavy army boots on the prisoners' shins was so common as to be almost unnoticed. Several Chinese suffered broken legs from this while I was in Bridge House.

The water treatment consists of lashing a man down face up across the desk top. A bath towel is then so rolled as to form a circle around his nose and mouth, and a five-gallon can of water, which was generally mixed with the vilest of human refuse and other filth, such as kerosene,

"was then put handy. The man was then questioned, and if he did not respond, the water was poured into the space made by the bath towel, forcing the prisoner either to swallow and inhale the vile concoction or to strangle himself. This is kept up, questioning between doses, until the man is at a point of unconsciousness. Shortly before unconsciousness is reached, the man is frequently beaten across the belly with a small iron rod. After consciousness has left, he is usually suspended by the heels from a tackle directly overhead and the water allowed to drain out of him. When he has sufficiently recuperated, the treatment is resumed."

"...After the war I can produce the names and addresses of more than 30 white men who were seriously tortured in Bridge House if they are still alive. Only one of these was an American--Healy.

I do not know what the Japs were trying to learn by these tortures. The men who were tortured seldom had any idea as to what was required of them. For some reason they frequently picked on men who knew nothing and who had done nothing. The principal question was "Are you mixed up with underground activities to aid the enemy or against Japan?" and senseless questions like this were asked for hours and hours. The harshness of treatment depended on the particular sergeant and interpreter who were questioning. Each handled the prisoner according to his own ideas. One man might be tortured once or possibly a dozen times. One could never guess. The sergeants were given a completely free hand apparently. Several Chinese were so severely beaten that they died in their cells. I gathered the impression that the officers did not give explicit directions for questioning, but merely ordered so and so out for interrogation. It seemed to be generally understood among all Japanese personnel that punishment would be inflicted as and when required. It is certain that all officers attached to the gendarmerie knew practically every detail of what was going on because the cries, moans, and sounds of blows could be heard over the whole building at most any time.

13. Prosecution Document No. 8194, the affidavit of Sgt. Harold J. Hogan, sworn to 12 December 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. The affidavit relates to the mistreatment of captured air force personnel at Yochow, China. Upon refusing to give any information, deponent was beaten with fists and a large bamboo bat. Thereafter he was strapped to a ladder, given the water treatment and beaten. Next day he was handcuffed and paraded through the village for public ridicule.

14. Prosecution Document No. 8193, the affidavit of 1st Lt. Harold J. Klota, sworn to 5 December 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. Deponent bailed out of his plane over China and was captured by the Japanese. His right leg which was injured was amputated several inches above the ankle by a Japanese civilian using a crude knife and without anesthesia. A few days thereafter, deponent, for not answering questions, was beaten into unconsciousness, while he lay in bed, on three occasions by a Japanese officer who used an encased saber.

15. Prosecution Document No. 8224, the testimony of John R. deLara, sworn to 18 February 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This deposition relates to conditions at Pootung Internment Camp. Deponent states that during the winters of 1944 and 1945 the internees had no heat whatever although the temperature was as low as 20° F. and although the Japanese guards had heating facilities. Internees received no clothing from the Japanese. The food ration was gradually reduced until at the end they were getting one fourth the amount of meat originally issued. Internees were exposed to air attacks and were not permitted to mark the buildings until a week before the end of the war.

16. Prosecution Document No. 8211-A, the testimony of Sgt. Elmer A. Morse, sworn to 2 November 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. Prosecution Document No. 8220, the affidavit of Cpl. Herman E. Fayal, sworn to 10 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence.

These affidavits describe the conditions under which prisoners lived at Hoten Camp near Mukden. Over two hundred prisoners died as a result of malnutrition, lack of medical care, and lack of fuel. The buildings were inadequately heated, although plenty of coal was available for issue. During the first month and a half the prisoners received maize and Chinese cabbage soup and two sour buns a day. The food was frequently so contaminated that the prisoners could not eat it. All requests for additional food, fuel and medical supplies were refused by the Japanese.

17. Prosecution Document No. 8129, the affidavit of John B. L. Anderson, sworn to 23 January 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. This affidavit states that at Kiang Wan Camp the food was poor and the work very hard. Deponent lost almost forty pounds while at this camp. The prisoners were forced to work in constructing a rifle range for the Japanese Army and also in polishing shells and repairing tanks and trucks. At Feng Tai Camp the prisoners slept on the floor and received a cup of rice or flour and a cup of watery soup three times a day.

18. Prosecution Document No. 8063, the affidavit of John M. Bronner, sworn to 20 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit states that at Pootung Camp the food ration of the internees was cut thirty-five per cent during the year 1944.

19. Prosecution Document No. 8004, the affidavit of Sgt. Roger P. Bamford, sworn to 5 March 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. Prosecution Document No. 8450, a certificate by Capt. C. W. Willoughby, Assistant Chief of Criminal Registry Division, Legal Section, GHQ, SCAP, sworn to 27 December 1946, is offered in evidence. This certificate covers the source and authenticity of Prosecution Document No. 8004 as well as a number of other documents which will be offered in evidence shortly. Prosecution Document No. 8004-B, the affidavit of Sgt. Roger D. Bamford, sworn to 5 March, 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. Prosecution Documents No. 8004 and No. 8004-B relate to conditions at Kiang Wan and Woosung Camps. Deponent states that at both camps the prisoners received a small teacup full of rice three times a day, and a small amount of watery soup twice a day. Prisoners slept in barns on the earth floor with no stoves and no fuel for fires. The Japanese made no attempt to provide medical care. The only medical attention was received from a medical officer among the prisoners. Four or five prisoners at Kiang Wan Camp and approximately thirty or forty prisoners at Woosung Camp died due to malnutrition, beriberi and dysentery.

20. Prosecution Document No. 8215, the testimony of Pvt. James A. Gilbert sworn to 14 November 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. Deponent states that during the first few months he was at Mukden Camp about 250 American prisoners died either from starvation or dysentery. No medical supplies were available. The food consisted of maize and soy beans.

The prisoners worked in nearby factories making steel helmets for the Japanese Army, airplane parts and gears for large caliber guns. Deponent worked in a steel mill sixteen hours a day. During his stay in Mukden Camp as a result of the hard work and poor food, he lost over sixty pounds in weight.

21. Prosecution Document No. 8206, the testimony of Cpl. Herman Hall sworn to 5 October 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts are offered in evidence. Deponent was confined at Camp Hoton, Mukden. The camp was about six hundred yards from a large Japanese ammunition factory. There was no designation on the prisoner-of-war camp. During a B-29 air raid nineteen prisoners were killed and about thirty were injured.

22. Prosecution Document No. 8312, the testimony of Cpl. Floyd H. Comfort sworn to 17 December 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. Deponent states that at Woo Sung Camp and Kiang Wan Camp the prisoners were used in working at a repair depot for all kinds of military vehicles and equipment and also in polishing artillery shell cases.

19. Prosecution Document No. 8004, the affidavit of Sgt. Roger F. Bamford, sworn to 5 March 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are offered in evidence. Prosecution Document No. 8450, a certificate by Capt. C. W. Willoughby, Assistant Chief of Criminal Registry Division, Legal Section, GHQ, SCAP, sworn to 27 December 1946, is offered in evidence. This certificate covers the source and authenticity of Prosecution Document No. 8004 as well as a number of other documents which will be offered in evidence shortly. Prosecution Document No. 8004-B, the affidavit of Sgt. Roger D. Bamford, sworn to 5 March, 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. Prosecution Documents No. 8004 and No. 8004-B relate to conditions at Kiang Wan and Woosung Camps. Deponent states that at both camps the prisoners received a small teacup full of rice three times a day, and a small amount of watery soup twice a day. Prisoners slept in barns on the earth floor with no stoves and no fuel for fires. The Japanese made no attempt to provide medical care. The only medical attention was received from a medical officer among the prisoners. Four or five prisoners at Kiang Wan Camp and approximately thirty or forty prisoners at Woosung Camp died due to malnutrition, beriberi and dysentery.

20. Prosecution Document No. 8215, the testimony of Pvt. James A. Gilbert sworn to 14 November 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. Deponent states that during the first few months he was at Mukden Camp about 250 American prisoners died either from starvation or dysentery. No medical supplies were available. The food consisted of maize and soy beans.

The prisoners worked in nearby factories making steel helmets for the Japanese Army, airplane parts and gears for large caliber guns. Deponent worked in a steel mill sixteen hours a day. During his stay in Mukden Camp as a result of the hard work and poor food, he lost over sixty pounds in weight.

21. Prosecution Document No. 8206, the testimony of Cpl. Herman Hall sworn to 5 October 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts are offered in evidence. Deponent was confined at Camp Koton, Mukden. The camp was about six hundred yards from a large Japanese ammunition factory. There was no designation on the prisoner-of-war camp. During a B-29 air raid nineteen prisoners were killed and about thirty were injured.

22. Prosecution Document No. 8312, the testimony of Cpl. Floyd H. Comfort sworn to 17 December 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. Deponent states that at Woo Sung Camp and Kiang Wan Camp the prisoners were used in working at a repair depot for all kinds of military vehicles and equipment and also in polishing artillery shell cases.

Document No. 8392

(Corrected)
Page 11

23. Prosecution Document No. 3136, the affidavit of Pvt. Stephen M. Zivko, sworn to 6 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit confirms the fact that prisoners at Kiang Wan Camp helped to construct a rifle range and repaired Japanese Army motor equipment. The affidavit also states that at Kiang Wan Camp the prisoner working parties were not permitted to take cover during air raids until the planes were directly overhead. No sleeping facilities were provided other than a straw mat upon the brick floor.

EXHIBIT 1887
No. 1

Evidentiary Document #

8392

Corrected

警察官鑑別第三九三號
真跡要
又部

1 檢察官鑑別第二七〇號 一九四六年音音
Ernest P HIGGS / 白晝警供述書
檢證、為提出其標記七枚、按筆ヲ證據、為提出シテ
此供述書、一九四三年八月申上海ニ於テ日本憲兵ヨリ行ハレ一般抑
留者、殺害ニ付認シ居ラズ 調査官、イノベト、Inspector
William HUTTON / 〆イノベ路收容所ヨリ、訊問、為日本憲兵司
令部ニ遵行セラシ、米神ノ状態ニ收容所ニ歸サレタリ
彼ノ身体ニ於テ傷痕、彼ヲ以テ無数ノ切創ヲ加ヘ所、指問ヲ
受ケテ事ヲ示スニシテ、彼數日後ニ死亡セタリ。其ノ供述書、
第一頁ニ於テ、イノベ路ニ於テ、
x x x x x x

ワイルサム。ハットニ警視ニ関シ。私ハ「ワイルサム」ト云フものが衛
兵ニ捕ヘラレ、訊問、タニ收容所事務所ニ連テ行カレシヲ見
タリ。私ハ後テ「ワイルサム」ノ收容所、外ニ信者ヲ送ルニテ、
云フ廉テ訊テラタリト云フコトヲ知リタリ。日本、當時者、
ノ際「ワイルサム」ノ隣ニ腰掛ケテキタリト云ヒ、人物ヲ捜シタリ。
衛兵ニ、某人ヲシテ人物ヲ認定シタリ。併ニ實際、ソノガキ
テ、翌朝「ハット」ニ警視、ノ當事者、所ニ行キ、下タガ認定
タ人物同違イテ、私コソ「ワイルサム」ノ隣ニ腰掛ケテキタ
男ニシテ申シマシ。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 300

8392 *

「...」
本、復員部隊本部...
ト云フ由ニ人ニ...
所、病院ニ居ル内ニ...
ト云フト云フ方、男ニ...
居リ、擔架ニ乗セ...
ニ。數介像知...
院ニ運ビタルヲ見...

手首ニ槍ヲ縛リ...
カ、腰尻、部介...
様ニ十字ニ切...
部介見セザ...
ガ申スニ、ハ...
サレテ此間...
度ヲ受ケ、...
子、收容所ニ...
内、病院ニ三...
テ、或ハ口...
ハ迷ラシメ...
死ガシメ...

No. 2

8392 ☆

2. 検察書類第八〇號 一九四六年五月十八日
「アーネストソロニン」/ERNEST SOLOVIN/ニヨル宣誓供述書ヲ
檢證ノ爲提出シ其標記モ檢査シテ證據トシテ
提出シマス。此供述書ハ別項書類第八七八號ニ記述
セラタル調査員ハソニンノ殺害ヲ確認スルニテアリマス。

3. 検察書類第八一三七號 一九四五年十月六日
兵士エドワード・H・ニール / P. H. COLE / ニヨル宣誓供述書ヲ
檢証シ其標記モ檢査シテ證據トシテ提出シマス。
此供述書ハ一九四三年三月上海停屠收容所ニ於テ日本
人監視員ニヨリテ一英國人が射殺セララルルヲ記述シテ
居マス。此英國人ハ收容所ノ垣ノ近クニ立テ居タル所ヲ
監視員ハ犯行ニテヲ射殺シタリデアリマス。該犯者ハ
高角砲砲彈ノ藥味ヲ磨キ任事ヲサセラシマシタ。
若シ停屠所ハ一日十六時ヲ磨キカキタ場合ハ棒又ハ小
銃ハ砲ヲ以テ殴打サレシタ。又日本人ニ遭遇シタ時ニ
敬禮シテトカオ碎儀ヲ積ツトカノ些細ト過失ニ對
シテモ停屠連ハ怒下何カト言フ各ノサカニ衣服ヲ制
ギ取レシタ。二三時間モ公衆ヲ附ケテ安當デ直立シタ
ケルハナリマス。ソノ時ニ肺炎ニ罹ツタ停屠モ數名
出タ程デシタ。

No. 3 4. 検察文書第二六六号 第十部 一九四五年十月四日附
停屠ニ関スル中央詢問委員會ノ報告書ヲ證據トシテ
提出致シマス。
検察文書第二六六号 即チ此ノ詢問報告書ハ

☆
8392

謄抄トシテ、後ニ提出サレル他ノ同様、報告書ヲ含メ、其字、
本源及ビ確實性ヲ証明シテキルSCAP法律部調査課
長リケヤード・E.ラドシル、四盾名附ノ書類ヲ証拠トシテ、提出
致シマ。檢察文書第三六六二號、第十三部、一九四四年十二月
十六日、中國、漢口ニ於テ、三名ノ米人飛行士ガ殺害セラルヲ
記述シテ居マス。豫備報告書ハ、其ノ三名ノ墜落飛行士ガ
後手ニ縛ラレ、漢口、街中ヲ歩カセラル。列ニク殴打セラルト、
「ガソリン」ヲカケラレテ焼殺セラルヲ記述シテ居リマス。此文
書ハ、此ノ事件ノ當時、日本第三四陸軍參謀長、鍋本少將
ノ報告書モ含メテ居リマス
「報告書」ハ、此ノ殘虐行為、詳細ヲ知ラカッタト主張シテ
居ラマスガ飛行士ヲ街中歩カセラルニ就テハ指揮官タル
將官カラ許可ガ出テキタルヲ認メテ居ラマス。リ「報告」
第六頁ニハ次ノ如クアリマス。

No. 4

8392

一、事件の内容
1、昨年、秋、豫以系漢口市街二村に無差別銃爆撃
2、依り市民住宅相当に被害あり、之に於て死者氏就
甲中國軍、死傷者多数あり、此の市民、憤激次第に
激化せり

2、漢口市青年團(?)に無差別銃爆撃、報復手
段として漢口市街、攻撃せし、米軍飛行士
市中行進せし、之に對し市民、毆打暴行あり、
其の實施、方法手段程度等、爾して、詳知せし、

3、右事件、實行前漢口市青年團(?)より第三軍
司令部に對し實施許可方申出たり、此の元軍司令官
(佐野中將)に當り、初、侮辱、虐待、國際法違反とし、
之に對し米國に抑留せし、此の本人、取扱、悪影響
あり、之を以て許容せし、此の青年團、右、無
差別銃爆撃、對し、報復手段、之、且中國民衆、
責任に於て、實行、日本軍、に、絶對迷惑、を、科す、
之、何是非實施、を、許可せし、度、且、再、懲罰、を、求む、
以て、右實施、を、許可せし、たり

4、檢察文書第八七二号、一九四六年六月六日、エドワード、イ、
ウィリアム、大尉、に、宣誓口述書、を、檢證、を、為、
出致し、其、中、印、の、附、いた、箇所、を、採、筆、を、為、
ト、之、を、提出、致、し、

檢察文書第八七五号、一九四六年三月二十日、ウィリアム、イ、
に、宣誓口述書、を、檢證、を、為、提出、致、し、其、中、印、の、附、いた、
證據、ト、之、を、提出、致、し、

之、等、の、宣誓口述書、は、海、ブリッジ、ハウス、(Bridge House)に、於て、日本軍、
に、ヨリ、民間、抑留者、に、對し、用、ひ、た、り、た、り、た、り、た、り、た、り、
米、八七二号、書類、を、三、頁、に、八、次、に、如、く、あり、

No. 5

8392A

一、事件の内容

1. 昨年、秋頃以来漢口市街二村に無差別銃撃
2. 依り市民住宅相当に被害あり、二十三日市民就
中中国軍、死傷者多数あり、市民憤激次第
激化せり

2. 漢口市青年團(？)に無差別銃撃、報復手
段として漢口市街に攻撃を加へ、米軍飛行士を
市中行進せしむるに對し市民の殴打暴行を加へ、
其の實施方法や殺傷程度等二關於は詳知せざらん

3. 右事件の實行前漢口市青年團(？)より第三軍
司令部に對し實施許可方申出あり、元軍司令部
(佐野中將)は当初停虜、虐待、國際法違反たる
ミナラ米國に抑留せしめしる日本人、取扱惡影響
あり、以て許容せしめしる元青年團、右無
差別銃撃に對し報復手段として且中國民衆の
責任に於て實行の日本軍に絕對迷惑ヲ掛ケザル
ニ付是非實施ヲ許可せし度旨再三懇願せり、以
て右實施ヲ許可せしたり

4. 檢察文書オハ七三三、一九四六年六月六日、ワリコ、エドワード、イ、
ワリアムソン大尉、トシタ宣誓口述書を檢證、為ニ提
出致シマス、其中、印ノ附イタ箇所、採萃ニ於テ證據

トシタ提出致シマス。
檢察文書オハ七三五、一九四六年五月二十日、ワリコ、エドワード、
トシタ宣誓口述書を檢證、為ニ提出致シマス、其中、印ノ附イタ採萃

ノ宣誓口供書ハ上海ノブリッジ・ハウス / Bridge House / に於テ日本憲兵隊
ニヨル民間抑留者、詰問中ニ用ヒラレタ拷問ノ方法ヲ述ベテ居リス。
オハ七三三ノ書類オハ二頁ニハ次ノ如クアリマス。

70.5

8392

No. 6

上海共同租界、占領後屢々日本憲兵隊の情報を数日
 亘り調査を基に、著名な聯合國の例（バ會社社長や自國團
 体、主要役員等、逮捕を取り捕りたる。此等、人々の心
 日華事変勸告、一九三七年以來日本憲兵隊の本部より
 アムステルダム、フランスに知らしめたるアバットを連行せし
 したる。之等聯合國の「アムステルダム」に連行せしるや、彼
 等汚い蚤虱が甚し、一言を投ずれば、室内既に十五
 人から二十人、各人男女を混雜しきまつ。便所にして其
 の室、隅二個、バケツが男女共前を置かれ、アル文アリ
 上ニシテ食事の主は粥と薄イ茶、量は生きたバクは不充
 分ナモアリシ。皆が同時に横ニナルコトが出来ず、テ睡眠
 の取ルコトが出来ず。抑留者達ハ僅カニ一枚の布ヲ身
 上ニ具其、先布ニモ蚤が居りし。

訊問、アル数日前ニハ修繕室ハ通常拷問室、隣リ、室
 ニ移せし。彼等ハ其、室ヲ叩カシ拷問サシテイル人々、叫
 声ヲ泣キ声ヲ聞ク事が出来又叩カシ人々が今ウ死ニカ
 ンテイル様ヲ呻キ声ヲ耳ニスルコト。逮捕サシテ一般
 人ニ対スル此待
 過即汚い室ニ閉ぢ込メテ置クトカ、食事ハ少量又、皆無
 中国人、印度人、ロシア人等、抑留者、拷問ヤ殴打ヲ聞
 たりタト云フ事ハ彼等、訊問、後カマル時彼等ヲ心身共
 拷問ニ対シ恐怖セル爲彼等、抵抗ト志氣ヲ挫クトシテ、一ツ組織
 的計畫的且非人道的ナ方法デアリシ。

☆

拷問

8392

訊問中の各種、拷問が加エラシク其、三十一モ、ハ水責
デニハ人ヲズニテ、トニドタツト仰向ケニサセ頭ヲ其、ズニテ、端
カラ下ケサシテ行ワレルモ、デアリマス。ソレカラ一ツ、漏斗が口
入ラシ水が腹ヤ肺ニ無理矢理ニ入レコレル、デス拷問者、ソ
レカラ犠牲者、腹ニ跳ビリ溺死スル時、氣持ヲ起サセルデ
アリマス。

電気拷問

ニハ、形デ、ソキ屋、梯子ニ犠牲者ヲ
縛リツケテ、扱ハレル電撃「コイル」ヲ身体ニ当テルヤリテ行
ハラス。ソレヲ当テル身体ノ部分ハ通常局部、周囲トカ鼻、
近クナドデシタ。此、仕打が行ワレル亦ニ身体ニ冷水が吹き掛
ケラレマス。

殴打。之ハ次、如キ色々種類ニ分ケラレテイマス。即チ

(一) 棒ヤホースヲ背中ヤ尻部ヲ叩クコト。

(二) 顔面殴打。

(三) 同脛ヲ蹴ルコトヤ其他局部ヲ蹴ル如キ好虐的方法

其他。一ハ日本人ハ麻酔剤ナクシテ一犠牲者、兩足、親指

カラ爪ヲ剥取りマシタ。拷問台ヨル拷問モ又加エテ其他述

ベシイ多數ノ拷問が加エラシマシタ。スベテ、民間人抑留

所ニ於テハ、食事ニ並ニ生活状態が悪ク而モ殴打ノ類

繁ク行ハレマシタ。

No. 7

8392

多し、収容所、軍手自裁ニ設キニ居リ、御免奉遊、空襲、除
ニ危険ニ暴サレタ、ニオカシ...

6 検察文書第六三三三号 一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 一月四日ニ官警...

兵平... James S. Browning / 口供書ニ檢証
身提出致シテ、シ中... 印、ツイ...

致シテ、予官警... 一九四四年 / 二月上海... 停屠...
所於ル約三人、本國... 停屠ニ...

停屠運、金... 復行、裸ニサシ...

理ニ目、中... 停屠カ...

生カレ...

7 検察文書第六三三三号 一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 二月十五日
附軍書ロバート・ニコロブ...

官警供... 檢証、為ニ提出...

認シ上海... 停屠運、...

彼等、...

石原...

由...

8

9

同... 起...

ハ停屠、...

8392

多、收受許、軍事器械ニ設キテ居リ、御達者達、空襲ニ際
ニ危険ニ曝サレタル、ニカクニシタ

6 検察文書第六三三号一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 一月四日ニ官証書ノ
兵卒ニ付テハ、S. Browning / James S. Browning / 口供書ヲ檢証
身証出致シマス。ソノ中ヨリ印、ソノ手圖所、被華ヲ証據トシテ提出
致シマス。官証書ニ述書ハ一九四四年和十九年 / 三月ニ上海停屠收容
所ニ於テハ、約二十人、米國人停屠ニ對シテ拷問ヲ施シテ居リマス。
停屠運ハ金ヲ得ル為ニ被華、個人的所物品ヲ支那人ト賣買ス
ル事ニ討ニ懲罰制ヲ受ケマス。被華ハ裸ニサレ空、中ニ出テ木ヲ無
理ニ取リ、中ハ人ハ木責ヲ加ヘ、ソノカウ日本人ハ跳ニ來ルハ、ソノ
ク、停屠ハ意識ヲ失フ事、中ニ在ニ絶トシテ、米水ヲ浴ビテ、蘇
生セリトシマス。被華ハ鉛ヲ詰メ、乘車、用報、被ヲ改打サレマス。

7 検察文書第六三三号一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 二月十五日
附軍曹ロバート・ニコローブニ付 / Sgt Robert McCulloch Brown
官証書供述書ヲ檢証、為ニ提出シ、且、印ヲ付テ、此ニ文書、被華
ヲ証據書類トシテ提出致シマス。該被華書ハ前出ニ文書ヲ確
認シ、上海收容所ニ於テ、停屠運ハ支那人ト交易スルハ、木責、刑罰
ヲ受ケタリト陳述シテ居リマス。口供書ハ才ニ頁ニハ、次ノ如クナリマス。
被華ハ、此ノ第三七条ト官場ニシテ、撲ラレマス。カウニ、撲ラレマス中ハ
石系ガ、此ニ、近ニ停屠ヲ懲戒スル時、屢々用キ、乘車、報、撲ラレマス。
アリマス。被華ヲカウニ、改ニカウ各停屠ヲ床ニ上ニ仰、ハ、無理ニ
寫測サレマス。ソノカウ人、

8

自由口カ、水ヲ注ギニマス。日本人ハ、カウ停屠ヲ、願フ事ヲ、撲リ意識ヲ
回復セシムル為ニ、彼ノ身体ニ冷水ヲ投ガリマス。コノ事件ハ一九四四年一月
ニ起ケタリトテ、大東憲ハ、復讐ヲシマス。ソノ故コトナリ、場合ニ、停屠

8392

多々收容所、軍亭、獄、等、に在り、刑罰者、之、に、處、す、
之、危、險、暴、サ、ル、マ、ニ、カ、ラ、ズ、

6. 検察文書第六三三号一九四六年/昭和二十一年/一月四日=官証三ノ
兵亭三ノ三、S. Browning / James S. Browning / 口供書ニ檢証
ノ、身、提、出、致、ス、。、中、日、印、ノ、以、テ、圖、所、被、擧、言、証、據、ト、シ、提、出
致、之、。、官、証、書、ニ、述、書、一、九、四、四、年、一、月、二、日、海、防、局、收、容
所、於、テ、ル、約、子、人、米、國、人、侍、屬、ニ、對、シ、テ、傍、同、語、述、入、下、リ、ス、。
侍、屬、運、入、金、ヲ、得、ル、如、ニ、彼、等、個、人、的、所、持、品、ヲ、支、取、人、ト、賣、買、ス、
ル、事、ニ、對、シ、懲、罰、ヲ、受、ケ、リ、ス、。、彼、等、ノ、裸、ニ、サ、レ、空、中、ニ、出、テ、米、ヲ、無
理、ニ、取、中、入、ル、水、責、が、加、ヘ、リ、カ、ラ、日、本、人、が、跳、込、乘、ル、ト、シ、テ、
侍、屬、が、意、識、ヲ、失、ト、シ、雪、中、ヲ、往、ニ、結、ビ、リ、米、水、ヲ、吞、ム、事、ヲ、
生、サ、セ、リ、ト、シ、タ、。、彼、等、ノ、金、ヲ、話、シ、テ、乘、取、用、難、ノ、報、ヲ、改、打、サ、レ、リ、タ、。

7. 検察文書第六三三号一九四六年/昭和二十一年/二月十五日
附軍曹ロバート・マコーブ / Sgt Robert McCalloch Brown /
官証書供述書、檢証、為、ニ、提、出、ス、。、且、印、ヲ、以、テ、此、ノ、文、書、被、擧
ノ、証、據、書、類、ト、シ、提、出、致、之、ス、。、該、供、述、書、前、出、之、文、書、ヲ、確
認、シ、海、防、局、所、於、テ、侍、屬、運、入、支、取、人、ト、交、易、ス、ル、水、責、ノ、刑、罰
ヲ、受、ケ、リ、ト、陳、述、シ、テ、居、リ、ス、。、口、供、書、一、才、三、頁、ニ、ハ、次、ノ、如、ク、ナ、リ、タ、。
彼、等、ノ、以、テ、第、三、石、本、ト、宮、崎、ニ、シ、テ、撲、ク、リ、シ、タ、カ、ラ、シ、テ、撲、ク、リ、中、ノ、
石、本、が、一、九、四、三、年、侍、屬、ヲ、懲、罰、ス、ル、時、屢、々、用、キ、テ、乘、取、難、ノ、報、ヲ、撲、ク、リ、シ、タ、。
ア、リ、タ、。、彼、等、ノ、カ、ラ、シ、テ、改、メ、カ、ラ、各、侍、屬、ヲ、床、上、ニ、仰、伏、シ、テ、無、理、ニ
打、倒、シ、テ、シ、タ、。、ソ、レ、カ、ラ、人、ノ、侍、屬、ノ、身、ヲ、シ、テ、先、絶、定、侍、屬

8

自由、自、由、カ、ラ、米、ヲ、注、ギ、コ、シ、タ、。、日、本、人、ハ、カ、ラ、侍、屬、ノ、頭、ヲ、手、ヲ、撲、キ、意、識、ヲ
同、價、ト、シ、テ、自、身、ノ、身、体、ニ、冷、水、ヲ、投、付、シ、タ、。、コ、ノ、事、件、一、九、四、四、年、一、月
ニ、起、リ、タ、。、コ、ノ、大、變、遷、ノ、氣、候、ニ、シ、タ、。、ソ、レ、故、コ、ノ、事、件、場、合、ニ、侍、屬

10.9

20P 8392#

三 冷木ヨカケル下ノ被褥ノ身体ニドイ衝戴ヨ子ノ名ト明言ナ
三 子ノ五人ハ十二日間ノ様ト取扱テ後ニ想ニ日本人ヨ以テ是得
ルト被褥等ヲ殺スニトニナルト折矣スルニ五ノ三々。云々被褥ノ合
セヨリノ後前ノ仕事ニ歸カレマシタ。

8. 検察文書第八〇七一A号、一九四六年/昭和十五年/
一言子附三三三三三三三三三三/Doc No. 1234 / 証言ノ檢証
為ニ提出ニ印ヲシタ、此ノ文書ノ被褥ノ言証トシテ提出致シ、
該供述布、一九四三年/昭和十七年/九月、岩波(一)ニ収容所
ニ於テ、四名ノ海兵加脱走ニシテ為ニ約百名ノ俘虏ト共ニ強刑
罰、災厄ニ遭ク事ヲ被褥ニテ証シタ。即チ俘虏同六日間
焼房兼量ニ夜僅六トテ一室ニ閉ケテマシ、僅十食糧配給ニ力
子ニシカケタリマシタ。收容所長ハ當然、斯ル不當ノ刑罰ヲ責
任ヲ負フベキモノナリマシタ。

Doc 8392

9. 檢察官... 一九四五年... 十月...
 宣稱... Carl E. Stegman
 宣稱... 檢証... 一九四五年...
 宣稱... Kiang Wan
 在於合眾國... 宣稱... 日本...
 原因... 宣稱...
 中... 宣稱...

10. 檢察官... 一九四五年... 十月...
 宣稱... 檢証... 一九四五年...
 中... 宣稱...

宣稱... 一九四五年... 十月...
 宣稱... 檢証... 一九四五年...
 中... 宣稱...
 宣稱... 一九四五年... 十月...
 宣稱... 檢証... 一九四五年...
 中... 宣稱...

No 10

Doc 8392

ノ監禁ヲ宣告シタリ又、彼一九四四年/昭和十九年
十月一日、東京/ト監禁/Ward Road Jail /ト宣告
シタリ、今、この終身懲罰ノ宣告ヲ受ケテ、
該供は、信屬ノ体力ヲ低弱トシ、又、目的ノ明
カニ減食ヲセテ居リ、其ノ證據書書類(其ノ其
中ニ陳述シテ居リマス

12、檢察官書第陸三九九号、一九四五年/昭和二十年
二月二十六日附シ、D・S・ミス / 元佐 / 海軍中佐
ノ宣告ニ、連書ヲ檢証、又、提出致シマス、
中ヨリ、印シ、又、因所ノ摘華ノ證據トシ、提
出致シマス

宣告者ハ、Wassung / 信屬物容所カニ
脱走シ、再々捕ヘラレタリ、又、下ノ年、ハ、三三三日間
中、後、彼ハ、キアノ、マニ、收容所ニ連行セシ、孤之、又
監禁場ニ、五十三日間、全ク、後、戦時中、日本陸軍
カニ、脱走シ、又、罪ヲ軍法會議ニ、カケラレタリ、又、裁判
ノ結果、スベテ、軍人ノ權利ヲ剝奪セシ、監禁内
十年間、懲役ノ宣告トナリマス、又、宣告者ハ、才
四頁ニ、其ノ述ベテ居リマス

「ソノ年、ハ、ウズニ、於テ、ハ、他ノ、中国人、日本人、及
外國人ト、共ニ、監禁ニ、拘禁セシマス、又、此所
ノ、状態ハ、ハ、ト、ス、程、ナリ、又、

No 13

私ハ、癡病ノ、由、隣リニ、寝テ、マシタ、カ、場所ガ、非
常ニ、混ニ、テ、居リマス、又、テ、己、ケ、得、ズ、彼、ト、極ク

Doc 8392

ノ監禁ヲ宣言シタニテ、彼ハ一九四四年、昭和十九年、
十月、東京、刑部省監獄、Ward Road Jail、ヲ以テ
シテ捕ヘラレテ、今、四ノ終身懲役ヲ宣告シテ、
該供述者、信屬ハ体力ヲ低弱トシ、又、目的ヲ明
カニ減食セシメ、テ居リ、其ノ證據書類、(其ノ九頁
中ニ陳述シテ居リマス)

12、檢察官書第、三七九号、一九四五年、昭和二十年、
二月二十六日附シ、D.スミス、(其ノ一)海軍中佐
ノ宣述ニ、述書ヲ檢証、ク、大提出致シマス、
中ヨリ印、シ、ク、又、國所、據、テ、證據トシ、提
出致シマス

宣述者、ハ、Wassung、(信屬收容所)カ、
脱走シ、再々捕ヘラレ、マ、アリ、年、ハ、ス、三、三、十、日、間、
中、後、彼、ハ、キ、ア、ニ、ク、ニ、收容所ニ、連行セシ、孤、之、
監禁場、ニ、五、十三、日、間、企、テ、脱走シ、戰時、中、日、本、陸、軍、
カ、脱走シ、タ、事、ヲ、軍、法、會議、ニ、カ、テ、シ、マ、シ、テ、裁、判、
ノ、結果、ス、ベ、テ、軍、人、ノ、權利、ヲ、剝、奪、セ、シ、監、獄、内、
十、年、間、懲、役、ノ、宣、告、ト、ナ、リ、マ、シ、タ、宣、述、者、ハ、才、
四、頁、三、次、ノ、如、ク、述、ベ、テ、居、リ、マ、ス

「アリ、年、ハ、ス、三、三、十、日、間、
外國人十八名ト共ニ監禁ニ拘禁セシメ、此所
ノ状態ハ、ソ、ト、ス、ル、程、ナ、シ、タ、
私ハ癡病、由、リ、隣、リ、ニ、寝、テ、マ、シ、タ、カ、場所、ガ、非、
常、ニ、此、ニ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ、テ、己、ノ、得、不、得、ト、極、ク、

No 13

NO 392

接近ニテ寝トケシバナリニセニテシタ、其ノ此所ニ
日本人、所謂審査ナルモノヲ受ケテガニ二十日間抑
留サレマシタ

食事ハ朝、午、日四オニス、パンテアリマシタ、茶ガ
小サイ茶碗ニ一杯ツ、日二回与ヘラレシ、以外、
飲料、得ニシセニテシタ

此所ノ道德的頹廢、何人ニ対シテモ充分ニ懲罰
デアラフ、實際ノ肉体的不快ヨリ遙カニ重大ナ
アリマシタ、コレハ三月中テアリ非常ニ寒ク御座
イマシタ、吾々ハ各自一枚宛、毛布ヲ与ヘラレマシタ
ガソレノ粗糸ヲ床ノ上テ寝ル時ニハ、全く不充分ナ
アリマシタ、日中、我々ハ整列シテ坐ラサレマシタガ
背中ヲ腕ヲ支ヘタリ休メタリスルモ、何モナク床
ノ上ニ胡坐ヲカイタゲテス、時々、外ニ残酷ト衛
兵ガ監房ヲ見廻リ廻テ、者ヲ木床ニ跪カセ
マシタ、コレハ時ニハ六時間乃至八時間モ續クコト
モアリマシタ

宣誓者ハ更ニオ六頁オ七頁ニワタリブリッヂ、ハ
ニオケル拷問ノ次、棟ニホビテ居リマス

私ハブリッヂ、ハ、ニ於テ事務所ニ屢々行ク
途中廊下ヲ通過スル際ニ、輕ク拷問ノ度々見マ
シタ、私ハ信佛達ガ水攻メヲ受ケテ居ル、ヤ煙
草ヲ燒カシテ居ル、ヤ或種ノ電氣機械ヲ電撃
ヲ受ケテ居ルヲ見マシタガ又棒ヤ刀ノ背テ叩カシ

NO 14

Doc 8392

居ル、ハ殆ド数へまし又程見ましタ
重イ軍隊靴ヲ穿テ、向テヒビク蹴ル事ナド、
茶飲士等ヲ殆ド氣が付カテ、程テ下リマシタ
初ガ「アハハ」ハハハニ居ル間ニ数人ノ支那人ハ

「タメニ脚ヲ折ツテ惱ミマシタ
水攻メハ顔ヲ俯向ケニシテ、柳ノ上ニ紐ヲ縛リツケマス
ソレカニ浴用手拭が彼ノ鼻ト口ト、思リニ月々ト
様ニ巻クル大瓶人間、排泄物、一番汚イ所ヤ、他ノ
不潔物、倒ヘン際油ノ如キモノヲ混セタ五ガロニ罐、
水が平許ニ置カレマス

ソレカニ浴用手拭ハ、訊問ガ、甚シモ彼が答ヘテ、水ハ
浴用手拭ヲ作ニシタ際間ニ注ギ込マシ、停滯ヲシ
テ、口ニテ汚イ混合液ヲ吸セ込ムカ、或ハ咽ビ
ナケバ、ナラヌヤウニマシタ。

此レハ、念間、念因ニ訊問シテ、ガ、本人ガ、人事不省
ノ状態ニナル迄、續ケラレマス。

人事不省ノ状態ニナル少シ

前ニガ、人ハ、小サナ鉄ノ棒ヲ屢々ノ腹部ヲ打ツシ
マス。

No 15

意識ガ無クナツタ上ニ、彼ハ通帯、彼ハ直ク頭ノ上ニ
アール巻揚機ヲ踵ノ所カラ吊シ上げ、水ヲ吐キ出ス
ヤウニスルノデス。

彼ガ、人ハ、恢復スルト、水攻メハ又始メラレマス。

8392

戦年協和の事、ハリスニ於テ携同^{（携同）}ナシタ三十
 名以上、白人、名前ト住所トヲ、元シ彼等が尚ホ生
 キテ居ルナラザル事が出来マス
 此、人々、中ノ米國人一人丈ケアルニテス「ローリト
 云フ」トテス
 此、白人が此等、携同ニ依リ何ヲ知ロウトシタカ解
 リマセン。
 稀ニ携同ナシタ人達ハ自分等ニ一体何が要求サレ
 ルカニ関シテ、全く知リマセン。何カノ理由ニ彼
 等ハ屢々何モ知ラズ又何モシカツタ人達ヲ携同
 シマシタ。主ニ訊問ハ「オ前ノ敵ヲ助ケ或ハ日本
 ニ反抗スル爲、秘密活動ト関係ガアツタカ」ト云ウテ
 アリニシテ馬鹿クク訊問ガ何時間モ何時間モ行
 ヒタノテス。

No. 16

取扱ノ嚴シカ減、訊問ニ居ル特別軍曹、通譯者、志
 士等ナリマシタ、何モ自分自身、若シ從^{（從）}シテ傷ヲ取扱フ居
 シタ一人、若カ一回携同ナリトモ、又屢々携同ナリト
 モ、此ノ誰モ予測スル事、出来ナシテス 軍曹達ハ完全
 自由置テ許シ居様ナシ、教名、友那人、酷ク改メシタシ監房
 ノ内ニ死シタ。將校達ハ訊問ニ對シ、何等明確ニ指示ラズ、單ニ誰
 ヲ訊問スル命ニ居様ニ和感シマシタ凡ソ日本人間テ、懲罰
 ノ必要ナ時、何時ニモ課セラルト般ニ了解サシ居様ナシ
 ドニナ時ニモ叫ビ声ヤ、或ハ音、建物中ニ聞エタリマス
 如何ナ事ガ行ハシ居ルカニ付テ、實際切詳細ヲ臺兵隊附、全
 將校ガ承知シ居タニト、確カテス

No. 17

備有之の電報の送付ニ関シテハ
所定ノ送金額ハ日付毎ニ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付シテ送付スルベシ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付スル送金額ハ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付スル送金額ハ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付スル送金額ハ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付スル送金額ハ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付スル送金額ハ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付スル送金額ハ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付スル送金額ハ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付スル送金額ハ
送金員ノ手紙ニ添付スル送金額ハ

Doc 8392 B

Harold J. Hoque

Doc 8392

日本側カニ衣類、給與多量ナルニテ、食糧配給(漸次削減)サ、終り頃ニ最初配給サメ肉類、四分一ニテマシ、被收容者ニ立糞、危険ニ曝ル、終戦週間後ニ其、建物ニ抑留シ、標識ヲ附スルコトヲ許サレタリ。

16. 検察書類ハ、ニ二一A号、一九四五年十月二日宣誓シ、エルニ一A、モリス軍曹、証言ニ、ニ、ニ檢証タメ提出サレタ。当書類中標セル振杵が証據ニ供セル。檢察書類ハ、ニ三〇号、一九四五年十月十日宣誓セルニ、E、アイヤル任長、宣誓口供書、檢証タメ提出サレタ。ソノ中標セル振杵、証據トシテ供セラレタ。ソノ宣誓書全文ニ近イ奉天收容所ニ於テ停虜、退シタ情况ヲ描イテ申ス。二百名以上、停虜ガ栄養不良、医療、不備燃料、不足、結果トシテ死亡シタ。充分石炭ガ支給出来タニ、建物、暖房、隨ニ不足シタ。最初、一ヶ月半、間一日ニ玉蜀黍ト、又那キヤブ、汁トニテ、酸イハ

17. 検察書類ニ、ニ三三号、一九四六年一月二二日ニ宣誓シ、エルニ一B、シ、ア、アイヤル、口供書ヲ檢証、爲ニ提出シタ。此、書類カラ、印ヲ附ケ、振杵ヲ書証トシテ提出シタ。此、口供書類ニ依リ、ニ、ニ停虜收容所ニ、食物、甚タニ、少量ニテ、マシタ。口供者、此、收容所生活中ニ体重ガ四十ポンド減少致シタ。停虜、日本軍用ヲイフル銃射的場建設、砲彈磨キ、戦車トシテ、修繕ニ強制的ニ使役サレタ。エ、ニ、ニ停虜收容所ニ、床、上ニ眠リ、枕、米、ス、小、及、枕、水、ボイ、不、ア、日、三、回、給、與

No. 18

申し之文。

Doc. 8392

18. 檢察圖書類第八。六五号、一九四五年十月二十日ニ
宣誓申したるコト下、ブルノ口供書ニ依ルベシトシ
收容所内、一九四四年中、被收容者へ、食物配給ハ
三五パーセント削減サシ居リマシム。

19. 檢察圖書類第八。四号、一九四六年三月五日ニ
宣誓申したるコトヤ、D. バンフォード軍曹ノ口供書ヲ
検査シ、爲ニ提出致シマス。此、書目類カウノ印ヲ附ケタ
校章ヲ書目證トシテ提出致シマス。

檢察文書第八。四五号、一九四六年/昭和二十一年十二月
二十七日附、聯合軍最高司令部、法務部、
犯罪登記課副課長 C. W. ウィーバー陸軍大尉
ノ證明書ヲ茲ニ證據トシテ提出致シマス。此、證明書ハ檢察
文書第八。四号並ニ近ク提出セルベキ多數文書ノ出所ト確
実性トヲ證明スルモノアリマス。檢察文書第八。四号、B
一九四六年三月五日ニ宣誓申したるコトヤ、D. バンフォード軍曹、
口供書ヲ検査シ、爲ニ提出致シマス。此、書目類カウノ印ヲ
附ケタ校章ヲ書目證トシテ提出致シマス。
此、二ツノ口供書ハ、キヤノクノ及ビハスニ停虜收容所、
状態ニ關聯スルモノアリマス。

No. 19

口供者ハ此、兩收容所共ニ停虜ハ、小サナ一個ノ茶碗

二米。滿山。... 一日。... 中。... 日本。... 唯一。... 收。... 不良。... 檢。... 宣。... (James A Gilbert) ... 致。... 上。... 彼。... 約。... 多。... 信。... 日。... 一。... 多。... 減

no. 20

減少

Doc. 8392.

ニニニ。

21. 検察部書類第〇〇〇〇号 大正十一年十月五日宣誓セシムルニ
ミ・ホール (Herman Hall) 伍長、口供書ヲ檢證、又提出致シ
マス、中標示サシムル技藝カ證據書類トシテ提出サシテ居リ
マス。證人ハ奉天牧畜所ニ駐在サシテ居リマス。ソノ牧畜所ハ日
本ノ大正十一年前ニ工場ヨリ約六百ヤード、距離ニテリ存屬牧畜所ニ
シテ示ス向方、標識モナクシテ居ルベシトス。

22. 或ル時、B9ニヨリ暴撃ニ際シ十九名、存屬死シ、約三十名負傷スルニ
十機師書類第〇〇〇〇号ニ於テ、大正十一年十月五日宣誓セシムル
ロイド・H・カンフォード (Lloyd H. Comford) 口
供書ヲ檢證、又提出致シマス。ソノ中標示サシムル技藝カ證據書類
トシテ提出サシテ居リマス。證人、申立テヨリハ奉天牧畜所及ビ工機
畜所ニ於テ此存屬ハ、工機、農用車及ビ機置、修理工場ニ於
テ労働セシムル大砲、藥莖ヲ磨ク、ニ使役サシテ居リマス。

23. 検察部書類第〇〇〇〇号 大正十一年十月六日宣誓セシムルニ、M・ニコ
ニコ (Stephen M. Nivko) 宣誓口供書ヲ檢證、又提出
致シマス。ソノ中標示サシムル技藝カ證據書類トシテ提出サシテ居リ
マス。宣誓口供書ハ、工機畜畜所、存屬連カ小銃射撃場、及ビ及ビ
日本團、自衛隊機備品、修繕ヲナシ又コトヲ確認セルモ、トアリマス。
口供書ハ、工機畜畜所、存屬連、作業隊、空襲、場合飛行
機カ頭上ニテ避難スルコトヲ請フカシタコトヲ申シテ居
リマス。

No 21

Ex. # 1888

C O P Y

AD/JAG/FS/JC/6
EHS/ART

IN THE MATTER OF THE KILLING OF
WILLIAM HUTTON, INSPECTOR OF THE
SHANGHAI MUNICIPAL POLICE, AT
HAIPHONG ROAD CAMP, SHANGHAI, IN
AUGUST 1943, AND IN THE MATTER OF
THE ILL-TREATMENT OF CIVILIAN
INTERNEES AT
HAIPHONG ROAD CAMP, SHANGHAI.

A F F I D A V I T

I, Ernest Philip HIGGS with permanent address at 11 Upland Park Road, Oxford, make Oath and say as follows:-

1. I was arrested by the Japanese on 5 November 1942 and taken to Haiphong road Camp. I remained in this camp until January 1944, during which period the two chief complaints regarding conditions in the camp were lack of adequate food, and insufficient heating during the winter months. The prisoner of war camps in Shanghai, with which Haiphong road Camp was included for the reason that we were regarded as political prisoners, were under the command of a Colonel Hodera, the resident officer being Lt. Honda.

2. The majority had no idea why they had been interned as political prisoners.

3. With reference to Inspector William Hutton. I saw a man named Watson arrested by one of the guards and taken to the camp office for questioning. I found out later that he was accused of trying to get a message out of the camp. The Japanese authorities looked for a man who was stated to have been sitting next to Watson at the time. A guard identified a certain man as being the one. Actually however this was not so, and the next morning Inspector Hutton went to the authorities and told them that they had made a mistake, and that he was the man who had been sitting next to Watson. Both men were taken out of the camp, I understand to Jessfield Road, Headquarters of the Japanese Gendarmerie. When they were brought back again several days later the man Watson could walk with assistance, and after a week or so in the camp hospital seemed to be quite fit. The man Hutton however was lying in the bottom of the car, naked except for a small pair of pants about his middle. He was unconscious and was placed on a stretcher and taken to the doctor in the clinic. A few minutes later I saw him on the stretcher being carried into the camp hospital. There were marks on his wrists which suggested that he had been strapped down and that both his legs from ankles to hips were criss-crossed with small cuts which had the appearance of having been done with an instrument such as a sharp razor blade. I did not see the remainder of his body, although the man sleeping next to me in the camp told me that he had seen Hutton's chest and that this

also was severely disfigured with cuts. It was common knowledge amongst the internees at the camp that other injuries had been sustained by Hutton during the time that he was out of the camp including damage to his kidneys and internal organs, and that the torture that he had undergone had snapped his brain. After three or four days in the camp hospital he was placed in an ambulance and sent to a mental hospital run by a Russian doctor, but he died that night.

SWORN by the said Ernest Philip HIGGS)
at 6 Spring Gardens, in the City of)
Westminster this fourth day of)
March 1946.)

(Sgd) E.P. HIGGS

BEFORE ME (sgd) J. Boston, Capt.,
Legal Staff,
Military Department
Office of the Judge Advocate General,
ICMHOI S. I. 1.

Examined by me with the original
Affidavit and certified to be a true copy.

/s/ R. P. Linsbe, Lt. Colonel
Major Crimes
ICMHOI S. I. 1

18th April 1946

Doc 2178

2.

及男テアルト申シマシタ。 「ワットスン」ト「ハ
 ット」ト「ハ」再ビ救答所ノ外ヘ進レテ行カレマシタ
 ガ、自ラノ兵隊兵士ガアル「ジエスファイールド」
 兵ヘ進レテ行カレタソウテス。 兩人ガ数日後ニ再
 ビ進レテ行カレタ時、 「ワットスン」ト云フ男ハ、
 人ニスガツテ歩クコトが出來マシタガ、 網一連同
 様結所ノ病院ニ居ル内ニ、 スツカリ其クナツタヨ
 ウデシタ。 シカシ乍ラ「ハット」ト云フ方ノ男
 ハ、 自ラノ尿ノ上ニ横タワリ、 尿ノ周リニ短イ
 パンツヲ着シテキタ外ハ裸デシタ。 彼ハ奇談ヲ失
 ツテ胎リ、 諸藥ニ染セラレテ浴室ノ醫者ノ所ヘ
 進レテ行カレマシタ。 彼分彼私ハ、 「ハット」ト
 ガ染ニ染セラレテ尿管所病院ニ進ビ返マレルノ
 ヲ見マシタ。 手首ニハ指モ縛リツケラレテ出來タ
 様ナ指ガアリ、 兩脚ハ指首カラ尿管ノ部分ニハ、
 丁度似イナイ刀ノ刃ノ如キ細兵デ管ケタ様ナ、 十字
 ニ切ツタ小サナ指ガアリマシタ。 「ハット」トノ
 身体ノ外ノ部分ハ見マセンデシタガ、 尿管所テ私
 ノ脚リニ着テキタ男ガ申スニハ、 「ハット」トノ
 指ヲ見タガ、 指モ同様切指テ指イ有様ニナツテキ
 タト云フコトデス。 「ハット」トガ尿管所カラ他
 所ヘ進レ出サレテキル間ニ、 以上ノ外尿管ヤ陰部
 ノ指ヲ含ミ其々ノ指ヲ受ケ、 ソノ指ツタ指同ノ

Doc 5178

タ男テアルト尊シマシタ。 「ワットスン」ト「ハ
 ット」トハ再ビ救答所ノ外ヘ進レテ行カレマシタ
 ガ、日六ノ兵は本部ガアル「ジエスワイ」ルド
 へ進レテ行カレタソウデス。 兩人ガ数日後ニ再
 ビ進レテ行カレタ時、 「ワットスン」ト云フ男ハ、
 人ニスガツテ歩クコトガ出来マシタガ、 網一連間
 検給所ノ病院ニ居ル内ニ、 スツカリ真クナツタヨ
 ウデシタ。 シカシ乍ラ「ハットン」ト云フ方ノ男
 ハ、 目鼻ノ際ノ上ニ横タワリ、 顔ノ周リニ短イ
 パンツヲ着シテキタ外ハ裸デシタ。 彼ハ奇異ヲ
 ツテ居リ、 橋梁ニ架セラレテ在望ノ醫者ノ所ヘ
 進レテ行カレマシタ。 彼分彼私ハ、 「ハットン」
 ガ橋梁ニ架セラレテ検給所病院ニ進ビ逃マレルノ
 ヲ見マシタ。 手首ニハ指モ縛リツケラレテ出来タ
 様ナ物ガアリ、 兩脚ハ脚首カラ最近ノ部分ニハ、
 丁度短イ短刀ノ刃ノ如キ器具ヲ付ケタ様ナ、 十字
 ニ切ツタ小サナ物ガアリマシタ。 「ハットン」ノ
 身体ノ外ノ部分ハ見マセシタガ、 救答所テ私
 ノ隣リニ居テキタ男ガ申スニハ、 「ハットン」ノ
 此ヲ見タガ、 此モ同様切短イ有様ニナツテキ
 タト云フコトデス。 「ハットン」ガ救答所カラ他
 所ヘ進レ出サレテキル間ニ、 以上ノ外唇ニヤ陰部
 ノ傷ヲ含ミ数々ノ傷ヲ受ケ、 ソノ数ツタ傷同ノ

3. Da 8178 半

タメニ、彼ハ眞ガ變ニナツタト云フコトハ、收容
所ニ於ケル抑留者達ノ周知ノコトデシタ。收容所
内ノ病民ニ三ノ同日扨テカラ、一ハツトシムハ寮
人運搬車ニ乗セラレテ、或ル「ロシア」人信筒ガ
監督シテキル密閉病 民へ送ラレマシタガ、ソノ
以死ンテシマヒマシタ。

Ex. # 1889

S E A L

AN OATH BY ERNEST SOLOMON.

I, Ernest Solomon, residing at 810/72 East Seward Road, Shanghai, make oath and say as follows:-

I was taken into custody by the Japanese Gendarmerie on the 19th. July 1943, and imprisoned at 76 Jessfield Road the quarters of the Japanese Gendarmerie.

At about the beginning of August 1943 and on a date I cannot exactly remember, Mr. Hutton was brought into the cell opposite mine at about 5 o'clock p.m. He was questioned by Colonel B. Yoshida a Gendarmerie Colonel - I learned this from Mr. Hutton to whom I spoke after the first questioning - he was questioned about three times, he told me after each questioning. He was once questioned when he was brought in. Once two days afterwards and again the next day.

Whenever he came back to his cell after questioning, he had marks on his face, arms and on his leg - I cannot remember on which leg but only one. His index fingers on both hands were swollen. He told me that Yoshida and his assistants had hit him with the butt of a rifle, and with an iron bar and that the swollen fingers were due to an electric motor.

After the third questioning, Mr. Hutton came back to the cells and protested to the Warder, whose name I do not know, against the treatment and said he wanted to be released because the repatriation ship, Conte Verde, was due to sail and he wanted to see the Swiss Consul.

As the warder took no notice, Hutton started to bang the wooden bars in part of his cell. The warder then called Yoshida who arrived with three men who all (including Yoshida) carried rifles - Yoshida asked Hutton in English what the trouble was about and after hearing his protest - which was the same as the protest made to the warder - Yoshida opened the door and shouted "You have nothing to complain of but we will give you another treatment". He dispatched one of his men to whom he gave what appeared to be instructions in the Japanese language, and started to beat Hutton with the butt of the rifle. Hutton defended himself but two Japanese Gendarmes who had remained with Yoshida joined in beating him with their rifles, and Hutton fell down upon the floor. Yoshida and his two assistants stamped on him with their heavy boots.

By that time the man who had left Yoshida, returned with a long thick rope.

They tied up Hutton with the rope. They wound the rope tightly round his body leaving only his head sticking out.

After that they laughed, and Yoshida - speaking Chinese - told the Chinese inmates of the cell (there were four or five Chinese confined with Hutton in the same cell) "whoever helps or gives food to this man will be executed right away".

I heard Hutton moaning and he started shouting for "the Bishop" and "send my wife"; and he shouted for someone else but I cannot now remember the name.

He appeared to fall unconscious again and at the time food was brought into the cells (which was usually between eleven and one) I asked the Chinese inmates of his cell to feed him. They did so but Hutton could not hold the food. He vomited it all up after a few seconds. The food was one bowl of rice.

I slept until 3 or 4 p.m. when the Chinese in my cell woke me up and told me that "the opposite man" wanted to speak to me. My first idea was that Hutton wanted to speak to me but when I went to the door, I was told that Hutton had died. He was still in the cell. The warden called Yoshida and Yoshida arrived some two hours later, accompanied by one assistant. He opened the door of Hutton's cell lifted him up and threw him into the gangway between the cells. The assistants dragged him along the floor out of the building in which the cells were. I believe Mr. Watson helped to carry Hutton out.

I was kept in the same cell from the 18th July 1943 until the 19th August 1943. I was not allowed any exercise out of doors, I was not given any water for washing purposes. I was given hot tea and cold rice that was always sour. Hutton was given the same food and treatment.

SWORN by the above named ERNEST SOLOMAN in His Britannic Majesty's Consulate-General at Shanghai in the Republic of China this 18th day of May, 1946.

/s/ Ernest Solomon

Before me:

/s/ J. W. H. Gadsby

BRITISH CONSULATE-GENERAL

BRITISH PRO CONSUL at Shanghai

(SEAL)

SHANGHAI

After that they laughed, and Yoshida - speaking Chinese - told the Chinese inmates of the cell (there were four or five Chinese confined with Hutton in the same cell) "whoever helps or gives food to this man will be executed right away".

I heard Hutton moaning and he started shouting for "the Bishop" and "send my wife": and he shouted for someone else but I cannot now remember the name.

He appeared to fall unconscious again and at the time food was brought into the cell (which was usually between eleven and one) I asked the Chinese inmates of his cell to feed him. They did so but Hutton could not hold the food. He vomited it all up after a few seconds. The food was one bowl of rice.

I slept until 3 or 4 p.m. when the Chinese in my cell woke me up and told me that "the opposite man" wanted to speak to me. My first idea was that Hutton wanted to speak to me but when I went to the door, I was told that Hutton had died. He was still in the cell. The warden called Yoshida and Yoshida arrived some two hours later, accompanied by one assistant. He opened the door of Hutton's cell lifted him up and threw him into the gangway between the cells. The assistants dragged him along the floor out of the building in which the cells were. I believe Mr. Watson helped to carry Hutton out.

I was kept in the same cell from the 18th July 1943 until the 19th August 1943. I was not allowed any exercise out of doors, I was not given any water for washing purposes. I was given hot tea and cold rice that was always sour. Hutton was given the same food and treatment.

SWORN by the above named ERNEST)
 SOLOMAN in His Britannic Majesty's)
 Consulate-General at Shanghai in) /s/ Ernest Solomon
 the Republic of China this 18th)
 day of July, 1946.)

Before me:

/s/ J. W. H. Gadsby

BRITISH CONSULATE-GENERAL

BRITISH PRO CONSUL
 at Shanghai

(SEAL)

SHANGHAI

After that they laughed, and Yoshida - speaking Chinese - told the Chinese inmates of the cell (there were four or five Chinese confined with Hutton in the same cell) "whoever helps or gives food to this man will be executed right away".

I heard Hutton moaning and he started shouting for "the Bishop" and "send my wife": and he shouted for someone else but I cannot now remember the name.

He appeared to fall unconscious again and at the time food was brought into the cells (which was usually between eleven and one) I asked the Chinese inmates of his cell to feed him. They did so but Hutton could not hold the food. He vomited it all up after a few seconds. The food was one bowl of rice.

I slept until 3 or 4 p.m. when the Chinese in my cell woke me up and told me that "the opposite man" wanted to speak to me. My first idea was that Hutton wanted to speak to me but when I went to the door, I was told that Hutton had died. He was still in the cell. The warden called Yoshida and Yoshida arrived some two hours later, accompanied by one assistant. He opened the door of Hutton's cell lifted him up and threw him into the gangway between the cells. The assistants dragged him along the floor out of the building in which the cells were. I believe a Mr. Watson helped to carry Hutton out.

I was kept in the same cell from the 18th July 1943 until the 19th August 1943. I was not allowed any exercise out of doors, I was not given any water for washing purposes. I was given hot tea and cold rice that was always sour. Hutton was given the same food and treatment.

SWORN by the above named ERNEST)
SOLOMAN in His Britannic Majesty's)
Consulate-General at Shanghai in) /s/ Ernest Solomon
the Republic of China this 13th)
day of July, 1946.)

Before me:

/s/ J. W. H. Gadsby

BRITISH CONSULATE-GENERAL

BRITISH PRO CONSUL
at Shanghai

(SEAL)

SHANGHAI

Dec 8/80

私書第八一八〇

私、上海東シワード路八一〇ノ七二ニ住ンテキ
ルアノスト、ソロモンハ集ヲナシ次ノ如ク語
ル。

私ハ一九〇三年七月十日、日本軍兵隊ニ依ッ
テ捕出サレ、ジエスフィールド島七六番地ノ日本
知兵隊本部ニ収容サレマシタ。

一九〇三年八月ノ上旬、私ハソノ日國ヲ正徳
ニ記憶シテキマセンガ、ハットン氏ガ午後五時頃
私ノ兵隊同ヒノ監房ニ入レラレマシタ。彼ハ知兵大
佐 B。吉田大佐ニ候ツテ訊問サレマシタ。彼ハ
三國談問サレ、私ハコノ録ヲ第一回ノ談問後ハツ
トン氏カラ聞キマシタ。毎談問後私ハ私ニ語リマ
シタ。彼ハ監房ニ入レラレタ時ニ一處談問サレマ
シタ。二日彼ニ一處、ソノ翌日ニモウ一處。

彼ガ訊問後、彼ノ監房ニシツテ茶ルト、何時テ
モ私ノ食、茶、酒ヤシドツチノいダカ記憶シテキ
ナイガトニカク一方ノいニ打振ガアリマシタ。
吾手ノ食器ガ腹レテキマシタ。彼ハ私ニ、吉田ト
彼ノ部下ガ銃ノ床尾ヤシ樽デ彼ヲ撲ツタ事、指ガ
ハレタノハ電氣モーターノタメダト語リマシタ。

第三回ノ談問後、ハットン氏ハ監房ニ兵ツテ茶
テ、彼兵ト私ハソノ名高ヲ知リマセントニ取扱ノ

1.

志ヲ抗議シテ、徳兵船コソテ。ザエルテが出帆
 スル筈デカラ釋放シテ貰ヒタイ、且ツスウイス頓
 事ニ已仁シタイト言イマシタ。

亂兵ガ一向福寺ニシナイノデ、ハツトソ氏ハ復
 ノ盧房ノ一部ノ木ノ柱ヲボンボン打ち給メマシタ。

ソコテ福兵ハ吉田ヲ時ビニ行キ、吉田ハ登員一吉
 田ヲ答ム(銃ヲ持ツタ三人ノ部下ト一箱ニヤツテ
 來テ、吉田ハハツトソ氏ニ英語ヲドカシタギト載ネ、
 復ノ抗議ヲ爲イタ上テソノ抗議ハ福兵ニナシタ
 ノト同一テシタ。一吉田ハ屏ヲ開キ一貫様ナソカ何
 モ又句言フコトハナイシタ。他ノ取扱ヲシテヤル
 ソルト叫ビマシタ。後ハ自分ノ部下ノ一人ニ日本
 語ヲ指令ラシク愚ハレルモノヲ具ヘテ、ソノ部下
 ヲ何處カヘツカハシ、銃ノ床尾ヲハツトソ氏ヲ獲
 リ給メマシタ。ハツトソ氏ハ防キマシタガ、吉田
 ト一箱ニ銃ツタ二人ノ日本短兵ヲ銃ヲ撰ルコ
 トニ加ハリ、ハツトソ氏ハ床ノ上ニ倒レマシタ。

吉田ト復ノ部下ハ彼ヲ喜イ鞭ヲ打ミツケマシタ。

ソノ時迄ニ、先ニ吉田ノ所ヲ出テ行ツタ男ガ、
 長イ太イ箱ヲ持ツテ歸ツテ來マシタ。

復等ハハツトソ氏ヲ縛テ縛リ上ゲマシタ。復等

ハ、ハツトソ氏ノ頸ヲ出シタダケテ、復ノ身体
 ニガルタルトシツカリ縛ヲ懸キマシタ。

ソノ後テ復等ハ笑イマシタ。ソシテ吉田ハ一丈

2.

Doc 8180 *

那話ヲ語シナガラ1虚房ノ其婦人同室者ニ言イマ
 シタ。(ソノ同ジ虚房ニハツトシ氏ト一箱ニ四、
 五人ノ中華民國人ガ虚察サレテキマシタ)「コノ
 身ヲ助ケタリ食物ヲヤル規ハスダニ處罰スルゾト。
 私ハ、ハツトシ氏ガ呻イテキルノヲ聞キマシタ。
 ソシテ彼ハ「僧正」トヤ一襲ヲ送レテ來テ呉レト
 カ叫ビ婦メマシタ。私ハ外ノ語カノ右ヲ叫ビマシ
 タガ、私ハ今ソノ右前ヲ思イ出セマセン。
 再ビ食料ガ虚房ニ送バシマシタ(ソレハ通符
 十一時ト一時ノ間デシタ)彼ハ再ビ氣絶シタ様ニ
 思ハレマシタ。私ハ彼ノ虚房ノ中華民國人同室者
 ニ、彼ニ食ベサセテヤル様ニ思ヒマシタ。彼等ハ
 ソウシマシタガ、ハツトシ氏ハ食物ヲ入レテオク
 事ガ出來マセンデシタ。彼ハ二、三秒後ニ全部ソ
 レヲ吐イテシマイマシタ。ソノ食料ハオ焼一杯ノ
 米デシタ。
 私ハ午後三時カ四時迄眠リマシタ。スルト私ノ
 同房ノ中華民國人ガ私ヲ起シテ「眞向イノ男」ガ
 私ニ何か言イタイト言ツテキルト語リマシタ。私
 ガ先ヅ尋エタ事ハ、ハツトシガ私ニ何か言イタ
 ノダト思イマシタガ、私ガ扉ノ所ニ行ツタ時、私
 ハ、ハツトシガ死シタト聞カサレマシタ。彼ハ亲
 タ虚房ノ中ニ居マシタ。衛兵ハ吉田ヲ呼ビ、吉田
 ハ約二時間後ニ一人ノ部下ヲ送レテソコニ到着シ

Doc 8180



那話ヲ讀シナガラ1虚房ノ支那人同靈者ニ言イマ
 シタ。(ソノ同ジ虚房ニハツトシ氏ト一箱三四、
 五人ノ中華民國人ガ虚察サレテキマシタ)「コノ
 身ヲ助ケタリ食物ヲヤル奴ハスダニ處罰スルゾト。
 私ハ、ハツトシ氏ガ睥イテキルノヲ聞キマシタ。
 ソシテ彼ハ僧正トシヤ一妻ヲ送レテ來テ吳レト
 カ叫ビ婦メマツタ。私ハ外ノ語カノ右ヲ叫ビマシ
 タガ、私ハ今ソノ右前ヲ思イ出セマセン。
 再ビ食言ガ虚房ニ送バレマシタ頃(ソレハ通符
 十一時ト一時ノ間デシタ)彼ハ再ビ氣絶シタ様ニ
 思ハレマシタ。私ハ彼ノ虚房ノ中華民國人同靈者
 ニ、彼ニ貧ベサセテヤル様ニ思イマシタ。彼等ハ
 ソウシマシタガ、ハツトシ氏ハ食物ヲ入レテオク
 事ガ出來マセンデシタ。彼ハ二、三秒後ニ全部ソ
 レヲ吐イテシマイマシタ。ソノ食器ハお椀一杯ノ
 米デシタ。
 私ハ午後三時カ四時迄眠リマシタ。スルト私ノ
 同房ノ中華民國人ガ私ヲ超シテ眞向イノ身トガ
 私ニ何か言イタイト言ツテキルト語リマシタ。私
 ガ先ヅ考エタ事ハ、ハツトシガ私ニ何か言イタ
 ノダト思イマシタガ、私ガ屏ノ所ニ行ツタ時、私
 ハ、ハツトシガ死ンダト聞カサレマシタ。彼ハ赤
 々虚房ノ中ニ居マシタ。衛兵ハ吉田ヲ呼ビ、吉田
 ハ約二時間後ニ一人ノ部下ヲ送レテソコニ到着シ

Doe 8180 *

Doc 8180

4.

マシタ。彼ハ、ハットンノ監房ノ扉ヲ開キ、彼ヲ
持ち上げ、監房ト監房ノ間ノ天井ニ彼ヲ抛り投ゲ
マシタ。浴下ガ床ノ上ヲ引キツツテ監房ノアツタ
建物ノ外ニ出シマシタ。私ハワットソン氏がハツ
トンヲ追ヒ出スノヲ手知ツタト信ジテキマス。
私ハ向ジ監房ニ一九四三年七月十八日カラ、一
九四三年八月十九日迄監禁サレマシタ。私ハ何時
戶外運動ヲ許サレマセンテシタ。私ハ洗フ目的ノ
タメノ何時ノ水モ取ヘラレマセンテシタ。私ハ熱
イ茶ト何時モ山ツバクナツタ米飯ヲ與ヘラレマシ
タ。ハットンモ同ジ食料ト同ジ待遇ガ與ヘラレテ
キマシタ。

Ex # 1840

Q. Please state your full name, rank or rating, branch of service, serial number and permanent home address.

A. My name is James Hector COLE, Private First Class, United States Marine Corps, Serial Number 260867. My permanent home address is Base Line, San Bernardino, California.

Q. State the date you entered the U. S. Marine Corps, the date you were sent overseas and the date you returned from overseas.

A. I enlisted in the U. S. Marine Corps on 8 January 1940, was sent overseas on 27 March 1940, and returned to this country on 5 October 1945.

Q. State the organization with which you were serving at the time of your capture, and where and by whom you were made a prisoner of war.

A. At the time of my capture I was serving with the American Embassy Guard at Peking, China. I was captured by the Japanese Jung Army (Japanese military police).

Q. What were your major places of imprisonment and your major movements while you were a prisoner of war?

A. I was made a prisoner of war on 8 December 1941. From that time until February 1942 I was at the Shanghai War Prison Camp; then at Kiangwan War Prison Camp until December 1942; at Fongtai War Prison Camp until May 1944; and at Hokaate Camp #3 until August 1945.

Q. Can you name or identify any of the enemy officers or persons in authority at your places of imprisonment?

A. Yes. Colonel ODERA was the commanding officer of the Shanghai War Prison Camp.

Q. Do you have direct personal knowledge of any incident occurring while you were a prisoner which improperly subjected any American national to harm or the possibility of harm because of the act or omission of any enemy national?

A. Yes.

Q. Please describe this incident in detail, with particular reference to the circumstances under which it occurred and the manner in which it happened.

A. At the Shanghai War Prison Camp where I was a prisoner of war from 1 February 1942 until 9 March 1945 I saw a Japanese guard shoot and kill an American civilian by the name of REYNOLDS on about 10 March 1942. REYNOLDS was captured on Wake Island. The circumstances surrounding this fatal shooting were as follows: REYNOLDS was standing approximately

Ex # 1890

Document No. 8137*

Page 1

Q. Please state your full name, rank or rating, branch of service, serial number and permanent home address.

A. My name is James Hector COLE, Private First Class, United States Marine Corps, Serial Number 260867. My permanent home address is Base Line, San Bernardino, California.

Q. State the date you entered the U. S. Marine Corps, the date you were sent overseas and the date you returned from overseas.

A. I enlisted in the U. S. Marine Corps on 8 January 1940, was sent overseas on 27 March 1940, and returned to this country on 5 October 1945.

Q. State the organization with which you were serving at the time of your capture, and where and by whom you were made a prisoner of war.

A. At the time of my capture I was serving with the American Embassy Guard at Peking, China. I was captured by the Japanese Jung Army (Japanese military police).

Q. What were your major places of imprisonment and your major movements while you were a prisoner of war?

A. I was made a prisoner of war on 8 December 1941. From that time until February 1942 I was at the Shanghai War Prison Camp; then at Kiangwan War Prison Camp until December 1942; at Fengtai War Prison Camp until May 1944; and at Hokajate Camp #3 until August 1945.

Q. Can you name or identify any of the enemy officers or persons in authority at your places of imprisonment?

A. Yes. Colonel ODERA was the commanding officer of the Shanghai War Prison Camp.

Q. Do you have direct personal knowledge of any incident occurring while you were a prisoner which improperly subjected any American national to harm or the possibility of harm because of the act or omission of any enemy national?

A. Yes.

Q. Please describe this incident in detail, with particular reference to the circumstances under which it occurred and the manner in which it happened.

A. At the Shanghai War Prison Camp where I was a prisoner of war from 1 February 1942 until 9 March 1945 I saw a Japanese guard shoot and kill an American civilian by the name of REYNOLDS on about 10 March 1942. REYNOLDS was captured on Wake Island. The circumstances surrounding this fatal shooting were as follows: REYNOLDS was standing approximately

nine feet away from the fence which surrounds the prison camp when a Japanese guard, whose name I do not know, asked him a question. REYNOLDS replied by pointing to himself. At this instant the Japanese guard raised his rifle and fired.

From September 1943 until February 1944, I worked as a polisher on three-inch anti-aircraft shell cases. We were ordered to finish sixteen cases per day. When we failed to finish this required number, Japanese guards have made me and others stand at attention then they would hit us over the body and head with clubs, rifle butts or any other object they would be carrying at the time.

I was forced to stand at attention in front of the guard house at Shanghai War Prison Camp with other prisoners stripped of all clothing for periods covering three to four hours. This was during the winter months when the temperature was below freezing. Myself and others, while stripped of our clothing and still at attention, were hit with clubs and other objects and severely beaten. Several men developed pneumonia due to this punishment.

Q. Was any reason for, or explanation or justification of this incident ever given to you by an enemy national?

A. The reason they stated was for failure to have the right attitude as a prisoner of war, failure to salute, or failure to bow upon meeting any Japanese.

Q. Does the testimony you have given cover all the pertinent details of this incident which you are now able to remember?

A. Yes.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
: SS
County of Alameda :

I, James Hector COLE of lawful age, being duly sworn, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of one page and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ James H. Cole

Subscribed and sworn to before me this sixth day of October, 1945, at Oakland, California.

/s/ James G. Gullett
(Rank) Lieutenant, U.S.N.R.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
: SS
County of Alameda :

Document No. 8137*

Page 3

I, Lieut. James G. GULLETT, U.S.N.R., certify that
(Name) James Hector COLE, (Rank) 1fc, U.S.N.C., (ASN) 280867, personally
appeared before me on the sixth day of October, 1945, and testified
concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription
of the answers given by (him) (her) to the several questions set forth.

Place: Oakland, California

Date : 6 October 1945

/s/ James G. Gullett

Page 2 of 2 pages.

EXTENDED 1890# Doc 8137*

登録八二三七號

米國陸戰隊、一等兵

ジェームス・ヘクレー・コール

答、私が停戦トナツタ時私ハ在中華民國北京、米國

大使館ノ衛兵トシテ勤務シテ居マツタ。

私ハ日本「ジエング」軍（日本軍憲兵隊）ノ手

ヲ捕ハレマツタ。

答、私ハ一九四一年十二月八日停戦トナリマツタ。

其時カラ一九四二年二月迄私ハ上海停戦收容所

ニ居リ、ソレカラ一九四二年十二月迄、江灣停

戦收容所、一九四四年五月迄鳳台停戦收容所、

而シテ一九四五年八月迄「ホーカジャテ」第三

收容所ニ居マツタ。

答、私ガ一九四二年二月一日カラ一九四五年三月九

日迄上海停戦收容所ヲ停戦テマツタ。私ハ一人

ノ日本軍衛兵ガ一九四二年三月十日頃「レイ

ルヅ」ト言フ一米國非戦闘員ヲ射撃シタ

マツタ。「レイノルヅ」ハ「オエ」トテ

ハレマツタ。此致死ノ結果同ル事ハ次

テアリマツタ。「レイノルヅ」ハ收容所アリ

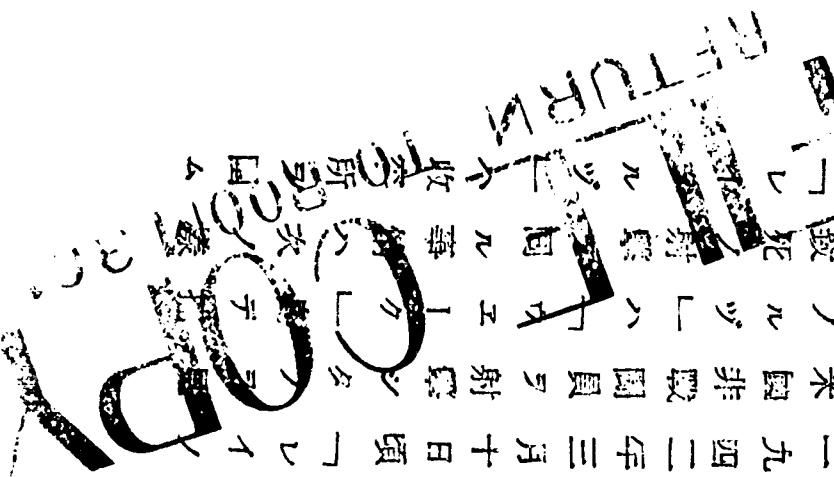


EXHIBIT 1890# Doc 8137*

種類八一三七號

米國陸戰隊、一等兵

ジェームス・ヘクレー・コール

答、私ガ停駐トナツタ時私ハ在中華民國北京、米國

大使館ノ衛兵トシテ勤務シテ居マシタ。

私ハ日本「ジユング」軍（日本軍憲兵隊）ノ手

答、私ハ一九四一年十二月八日停駐トナリマシタ。

其時カラ一九四二年二月迄私ハ上海停駐收容所

ニ居リ、ソレカラ一九四二年十二月迄、江灣停

駐收容所、一九四四年五月迄鳳台停駐收容所、

而シテ一九四五年八月迄「ホーカジヤテ」第三

答、私ガ一九四二年二月一日カラ一九四五年三月九

日迄上海停駐收容所ヲ停駐テマシタ。私ハ一八

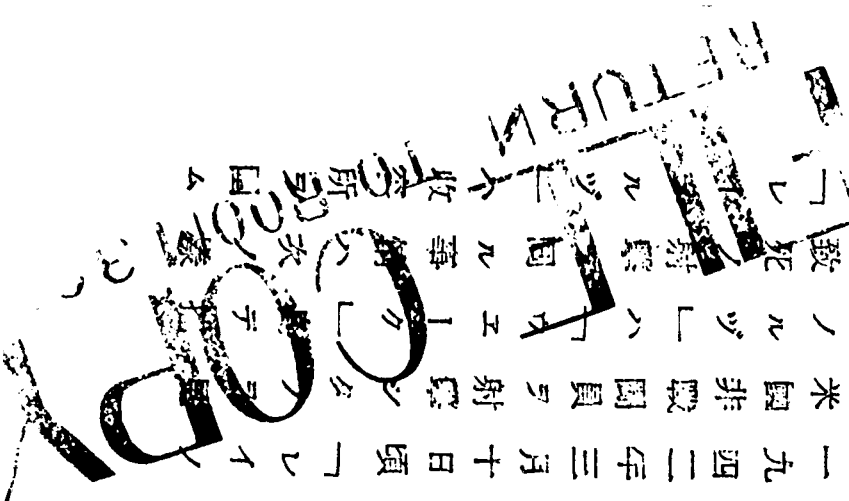
ノ日本軍衛兵ガ一九四二年三月十日頃「レイ

ルヅ」ト言フ一米國非戦闘員ヲ射殺シタ

マシタ。「レイノルヅ」ハ「クオエ」トシテ

ハレマシタ。此致死ノ新報同ル事柄ハ次

テアリマシタ。「レイノルヅ」ハ收容所ヨリ



1981

Doc 8137*

掃カラ九尺位離レテ立ツテ居マシタ處其時其名
前ヲ私ハ知リマセンガ一人ノ日本軍衛兵ガ彼ニ
質問シマシタ。一レイノルツ一ハ彼自身ヲ指シ
テ答ヘマシタ。此際問ニ日本軍衛兵ハ銃ヲ構ヘ
テ發砲シマシタ。

一九四三年九月カラ一九四四年二月迄私ハ三
時高射砲彈藥筒貯手トシテ切キマシタ。我々ハ
一日ニ十六個ノ藥筒ヲ仕上ル様命ゼラレマシ
タ。我々が此要求サレタ致ヲ仕上ゲナカツタ場
合日本軍衛兵ハ私ト他ノ者連ヲ不動ノ姿勢テ立
タセ、其ノカラ棍棒ヤ銃床ヤ或ハ彼等ガ其時持
合セタ其他ノ物テ我々ノ身体ヤ頭部ヲ打ツノガ
常デアリマシタ。

私ハ上海俘虜收容所テ衛舎ノ前ニ他ノ俘虜ト一
所ニ三、四時間ノ間着物ヲ脱カサレ且不動ノ姿
勢テ居ル間モ棍棒ヤ他ノ物テ打タレ而シテ烈シ
ク毆ラレマシタ。數名ノ人々ハ此所罰ニヨリ肺
炎ヲ誘發シマシタ。

問、敵國人ハ貴國ニ此事件ニ對スル理由、説明又ハ
辨明ヲシタコトガアリマシタ。

答、彼等ガ述べタ理由ハ俘虜トシテノ正當ナ態度ヲ
取ラナカツタコト、敬禮ヲシナカツタコト又ハ

2.

2.

Doc 8137*

探カラ九呎位ニテ立ツテ居マツタ處其時其名
 前ヲ私ハ知リマセンガ一人ノ日本軍衛兵ガ彼ニ
 質問シマツタ。一レイノルヅニハ彼自身ヲ指シ
 テ答ヘマツタ。此際問ニ日本軍衛兵ハ銃ヲ構へ
 テ發射シマツタ。

一九四三年九月カラ一九四四年二月迄私ハ三
 時高射砲彈藥筒場手トシテ働キマツタ。我々ハ
 一日ニ十六個ノ藥筒ヲ仕上ル様命ゼラレマツ
 タ。我々ガ此環求サレタ致ラ仕上ゲナカツタ場
 合日本軍衛兵ハ私ト他ノ者違ラ不動ノ姿勢ヲ立
 タセ、其ソカラ棍棒ヤ銃床ヤ取ハ彼等ガ其時持
 合セタ其他ノ如キ我々ノ身体ヤ頭部ヲ打ツノガ
 常チアリマツタ。

私ハ上海俘虜收容所ヲ衛舎ノ前ニ他ノ俘虜ト一
 所ニ三、四時間ノ間着物ヲ脱キテカサレテ
 不動ノ姿勢ヲ立ツコトヲ強請サレマツタ。

是ハ氣温ガ氷點下ヲアツタ冬ノ間チアリマツタ
 私自身ト他ノ者違ハ着物ヲ脱ガサレ且不動ノ姿
 勢ヲ居ル間モ棍棒ヤ他ノ物ヲ打タレ而シテ烈シ
 ク殴ラレマツタ。數名ノ人々ハ此所罰ニヨリ階
 段ヲ發シマツタ。

問、敵國人ハ貴國ニ此事件ニ對スル理由、説明又ハ
 辯明ラシタコトガアリマツタ。

答、彼等ガ違ヘタ理由ハ俘虜トシテノ正當ナ態度ヲ
 取ラナカツタコト、敬禮ヲシナカツタコト又ハ

Doc 8137*

3.

日本人ハ何人ヲ問ハズ出合ツタ場合摺換ラシナ
カツタト言フノデアリマシタ。

Doc 8137*

3.

日本人ハ何人ヲ問ハズ出合ツタ場合摺換ラシナ
カツタト言フノデアリマシタ。

Ex. # 1891

MATTER CONCERNING THE MURDER CASE IN HANKOW OF THE THREE
AMERICAN PRISONERS OF WAR

Military Affairs Section

4 November 1945

Urgent Telegram

23 October 1945

To: The Vice Minister

From: The Chief of Staff of the Commander in Chief of the Expeditionary
Force in China

Sosan 2 Wire No. 682

For the purpose of investigating the murder case of three American prisoners of war who were killed at the end of last year in Hankow, a request was made on the 22nd for the arrest of eleven men, including General OKABE. Staff Officer MATSUURA (witness), and FUKUMOTO, M.P. Colonel, have been already taken into custody, and it seems that they are to be sent under guard in the near future to Shanghai. However, at the present time, General OKABE is ill in bed and we wish his arrest will be held up until his recovery. (It is estimated that several days will be required). In the said area, the surrender has not yet been completed. Furthermore, General OKABE is now ill, and the Area Army Headquarters was stationed at Nanyo at the time, and knew nothing about this incident until September of this year when American officers made inquiries. Therefore, even if General OKABE is arrested, the situation is such that there are no investigation materials with which to question him. Because of these aforementioned facts which have been requested in a previous wire, the Chief of Staff for the Commander in Chief today made the following earnest requests to the Ho Ying-Chin Headquarters:

"Make further investigations of Major-General KABURAGI, the Chief of Staff of the 34th Army at the time, and of 1st Lieutenant IZUMI and other required Army Group Headquarters personnel. If as a result, it is found necessary to arrest the Commander of the 6th Area Army as the responsible party, then arrest him formally; Or, if an immediate questioning is absolutely necessary, please handle the situation amicably, so as not to hinder the execution of his present work."

Ex # 1891

MATTER CONCERNING THE MURDER CASE IN HANKOW OF THE THREE
AMERICAN PRISONERS OF WAR

military Affairs Section

4 November 1945

Urgent Telegram

23 October 1945

To: The Vice Minister

From: The Chief of Staff of the Commander in Chief of the Expeditionary
Force in China

Sosan 2 Wire No. 682

For the purpose of investigating the murder case of three American prisoners of war who were killed at the end of last year in Hankow, a request was made on the 22nd for the arrest of eleven men, including General OKABE. Staff Officer MATSUURA (witness), and FUKUMOTO, M.P. Colonel, have been already taken into custody, and it seems that they are to be sent under guard in the near future to Shanghai. However, at the present time, General OKABE is ill in bed and we wish his arrest will be held up until his recovery. (It is estimated that several days will be required). In the said area, the surrender has not yet been completed. Furthermore, General OKABE is now ill, and the Area Army Headquarters was stationed at Nanyo at the time, and knew nothing about this incident until September of this year when American officers made inquiries. Therefore, even if General OKABE is arrested, the situation is such that there are no investigation materials with which to question him. Because of these aforementioned facts which have been requested in a previous wire, the Chief of Staff for the Commander in Chief today made the following earnest requests to the Ho Ying-Chin Headquarters:

"Make further investigations of Major-General KABURAGI, the Chief of Staff of the 34th Army at the time, and of 1st Lieutenant IZUMI and other required Army Group Headquarters personnel. If as a result, it is found necessary to arrest the Commander of the 6th Area Army as the responsible party, then arrest him formally; Or, if an immediate questioning is absolutely necessary, please handle the situation amicably, so as not to hinder the execution of his present work."

Military Affairs Dispatch No. 226

Matters Concerning the Application for the Postponement of General OKABE's Arrest

To: The Chairman of the Tokyo Liaison Committee of the Army and Navy

From: The Director of the Military Affairs Bureau of the War Ministry.

24 October 1945

1. In regard to the matter mentioned in the title, I received information from the Expeditionary force in China as indicated in the separate telegram. Please ascertain whether or not it is a request from the Americans.
2. If it is a request from the Americans, explain the actual situation of the place to the Headquarters of the Allied Forces and request the temporary suspension of General OKABE's arrest, or at least the postponement of his arrest until he recovers from his illness.

Moreover, as in this case, when work is being carried out to clear up the termination of the war, the arrest of the highest responsible persons in various areas will have little substantial effect on the disposition of the incident. In fact, it will be disadvantageous because it will delay the business of terminating the war. Therefore, together with the aforementioned circumstances, make a request for the postponement of the arrest until the work is completed, and also request them to contact this Ministry beforehand.

Matters Concerning the Investigation of the American POW Case in Hankow

To: the Chief of Staff of the Shikoku Military District

From: the Vice-Minister

Riku Fu Wire No. 474

25 October 1945

There are investigation items concerning the American POW case which occurred at the end of 1944 in Hankow.

We want Major-General KABURAGI sent up to Tokyo, bringing along with him data of the time (data su... items of memory, and names of officers who were connected with the duties and who are at present in Japan Proper).

Document No. 2662 - Page 13

3

Matters Concerning Sosan 2 Wire No. 682

To: The Chief of Staff of the Commander in Chief of the Expeditionary Force in China

From: The Vice-Minister

Riku Fu Wire No. 476

25 October 1945

In regard to Sosan 2 Wire No. 682, we must investigate the situation of that time, by promptly assembling the responsible parties who are now residing in Japan Proper. Therefore, we wish you to immediately inform us the names of officers who are presumed to have already returned home.

Urgent Telegram

26 October 1945

To: The Vice-Minister

From: The Chief of Staff of the Commander in Chief of the Expeditionary Force in China

Sosan 2 Wire No. 685

Riku Fu Wire No. 476 Return.

Major-General KABURAGI, MASATAKA, (Chief of Staff of the 55th Army)
Captain KOIKE, NAOTO (T.N. May be read NAOMI) (Military Affairs Bureau)

Although the following two officers are not at present in Japan Proper, please consider them in the investigation of responsible parties. Especially 1st Lieutenant IZUMI seems to be the most responsible person involved in the case. Since this investigation is thought to clarify the actual condition of this case, we submit for your reference the names of:

Major HINATA, YUKIO (Staff Officer of the 34th Army)
1st Lieutenant IZUMI, KIICHI (Attached to Headquarters of the 34th Army)

Military Affairs Dispatch No. 750

27 October 1945

Matters Concerning the Staff Officer Acting for General OKABE.

From: The Director of Military Affairs Bureau of the War Ministry

To: The Chairman of the Tokyo Liaison Committee of the Army and Navy.

In regard to the above-mentioned Staff Officer, the Headquarters of the Allied Forces requested that the name of the said person be reported

Document No. 2662 - Page 1a

Page 3

Matters Concerning Sosan 2 Wire No. 682

To: The Chief of Staff of the Commander in Chief of the Expeditionary Force in China

From: The Vice-Minister

Riku Fu Wire No. 476

25 October 1945

In regard to Sosan 2 Wire No. 682, we must investigate the situation of that time, by promptly assembling the responsible parties who are now residing in Japan Proper. Therefore, we wish you to immediately inform us the names of officers who are presumed to have already returned home.

Urgent Telegram

26 October 1945

To: The Vice-Minister

From: The Chief of Staff of the Commander in Chief of the Expeditionary Force in China

Sosan 2 Wire No. 685

Riku Fu Wire No. 476 Return.

Major-General KABURAGI, MASATAKA, (Chief of Staff of the 55th Army)
Captain KOIKE, NAOTO (T.N. May be read MAOUDO) (Military Affairs Bureau)

Although the following two officers are not at present in Japan Proper, please consider them in the investigation of responsible parties. Especially 1st Lieutenant IZUMI seems to be the most responsible person involved in the case. Since this investigation is thought to clarify the actual condition of this case, we submit for your reference the names of:

Major HINATA, YUKIO (Staff Officer of the 34th Army)
1st Lieutenant IZUMI, KIICHI (Attached to Headquarters of the 34th Army)

Military Affairs Dispatch No. 750

27 October 1945

Matters Concerning the Staff Officer Acting for General OKABE.

From: The Director of Military Affairs Bureau of the War Ministry

To: The Chairman of the Tokyo Liaison Committee of the Army and Navy.

In regard to the above-mentioned Staff Officer, the Headquarters of the Allied Forces requested that the name of the said person be reported

Document No. 2662 - Part 1a

3

Matters Concerning Sosan 2 Wire No. 682

To: The Chief of Staff of the Commander in Chief of the Expeditionary Force in China

From: The Vice-Minister

Riku Fu Wire No. 476

25 October 1945

In regard to Sosan 2 Wire No. 682, we must investigate the situation of that time, by promptly assembling the responsible parties who are now residing in Japan Proper. Therefore, we wish you to immediately inform us the names of officers who are presumed to have already returned home.

- - - - -

Urgent Telegram

26 October 1945

To: The Vice-Minister

From: The Chief of Staff of the Commander in Chief of the Expeditionary Force in China

Sosan 2 Wire No. 685

Riku Fu Wire No. 476 Return.

Major-General KABURAGI, MASATAKA, (Chief of Staff of the 55th Army)
Captain KCIKE, NAOTO (T.N. May be read NAOTDO) (Military Affairs Bureau)

Although the following two officers are not at present in Japan Proper, please consider them in the investigation of responsible parties. Especially 1st Lieutenant IZUMI seems to be the most responsible person involved in the case. Since this investigation is thought to clarify the actual condition of this case, we submit for your reference the names of:

Major HINATA, YUKIO (Staff Officer of the 34th Army)
1st Lieutenant IZUMI, KIICHI (Attached to Headquarters of the 34th Army)

- - - - -

Military Affairs Dispatch No. 750

27 October 1945

Matters Concerning the Staff Officer Acting for General OKABE.

From: The Director of Military Affairs Bureau of the War Ministry

To: The Chairman of the Tokyo Liaison Committee of the Army and Navy.

In regard to the above-mentioned Staff Officer, the Headquarters of the Allied Forces requested that the name of the said person be reported

On this date, the 27th [unclear] [unclear] a report and an underreporting
be submitted, based upon the following reports:

1. It is difficult to make an investigation because the 34th Army, the unit concerned in this case, was transferred to the eastern part of Northern Korea just before the termination of the war and is now in the occupation zone of Soviet Russia.
2. Although at present it is difficult to find a staff officer who knows the detailed circumstances in the Expeditionary Force in China because of the above reason, since the situation is such, the present Staff Officer of General OKABE shall act in his place. The name of the Staff will be reported after receiving the report from the Expeditionary Force in China.
3. In regard to the present residents of Japan Proper who are regarded as being concerned with the 34th Army at the time, their names will be promptly reported after the investigation is completed.

- - - - -

Urgent Telegram

28 October 1945

To: The Adjutant

From: The Chief of Staff of the Shikoku Military District

Shi Gun San Wire No. 241

Major-General KABURAGI is expected to arrive around the 1st, after collecting investigation data.

- - - - -

Emergency Telegram

28 October 1945

To: The Vice-Minister

From: The Chief of Staff of the Commander in Chief of the Expeditionary Force in China

So San 1 Wire No. 698

Riku Fu Wire No. 493 Return

Acting Staff - 6th Area Army Staff Officer - Lt. Colonel MATSUURA, Satoru.

This person has already been taken into custody by the American Military Police on 22 October, in Hankow, and should now be in Shanghai.

Document No. 2662 - Page 10

Military Affairs Dispatch No. 723

29 October 1945

Matters Concerning the Name of the Acting Staff Officer of General OKABE

To: The Chairman of the Tokyo Liaison Committee of the Army and Navy

From: The Director of the Military Affairs Bureau of the War Ministry.

In regard to the case mentioned in the title, which was previously reported to the Headquarters of the Allied Forces, I have received the following report from the Expeditionary Force in China. Therefore, make a report to the Headquarters of the Allied Forces:

1. Office, Post and Name - Lt. Colonel MATSUURA, Satoru, Staff Officer of the 6th Area Army.
2. This staff officer has already been taken into custody by American Military Police on 22 October, in Hankow, and should now be in Shanghai.

Urgent Telegram

1 November 1945

To: The Vice-Minister

From: The Chief of Staff of Shikoku Military District.

Shi Gun San Wire No. 249

Major-General KABURAGI and one other officer will arrive at Tachikawa in the afternoon of the 2nd.

MATTERS CONCERNING THE ARREST OF RESPONSIBLE PARTIES IN
THE MASSACRE OF AMERICAN AIRMEN IN HANKOW

HANKOW "DEATH MARCH"

(from the Mainichi Shimbun, 4 November 1945)

According to the Chung Yang Sho wire, dispatched on the 30th from Chungking, the Allied War Crimes Commission has arrested one staff officer of the Japanese Army, eight Japanese M.P.'s and one Japanese civilian, a total of ten men. They are being held as the war criminals who killed three airmen of the U.S. Air Force in Hankow, after forcing them to make a "Death March." Furthermore, General OKABE, Naosaburo, the Commander of the Central China Area Army (the 6th Area Army) is already being questioned about his responsibility in the case.

5

Military Affairs Dispatch No. 723

29 October 1945

Matters Concerning the Name of the Acting Staff Officer of General OKABE

To: The Chairman of the Tokyo Liaison Committee of the Army and Navy

From: The Director of the Military Affairs Bureau of the War Ministry.

In regard to the case mentioned in the title, which was previously reported to the Headquarters of the Allied Forces, I have received the following report from the Expeditionary Force in China. Therefore, make a report to the Headquarters of the Allied Forces:

1. Office, Post and Name - Lt. Colonel MATSUURA, Satoru, Staff Officer of the 6th Area Army.
2. This staff officer has already been taken into custody by American Military Police on 22 October, in Hankow, and should now be in Shanghai.

- - - -

Urgent Telegram

1 November 1945

To: The Vice-Minister

From: The Chief of Staff of Shikoku Military District.

Shi Gun San Wire No. 249

Major-General KABURAGI and one other officer will arrive at Tachikawa in the afternoon of the 2nd.

- - - -

MATTERS CONCERNING THE ARREST OF RESPONSIBLE PARTIES IN
THE MASSACRE OF AMERICAN AIRMEN IN HANKOW

FOLLOW "DEATH MARCH"

(from the Mainichi Shimbun, 4 November 1945)

According to the Chung Yang Sho wire, dispatched on the 30th from Chungking, the Allied War Crimes Commission has arrested one staff officer of the Japanese Army, eight Japanese M.P.'s and one Japanese civilian, a total of ten men. They are being held as the war criminals who killed three airmen of the U.S. Air Force in Hankow, after forcing them to make a "Death March." Furthermore, General OKABE, Naosaburo, the Commander of the Central China Area Army (the 6th Area Army) is already being questioned about his responsibility in the case.

5

Military Affairs Dispatch No. 723

29 October 1945

Matters Concerning the Name of the Acting Staff Officer of General OKABE

To: The Chairman of the Tokyo Liaison Committee of the Army and Navy

From: The Director of the Military Affairs Bureau of the War Ministry.

In regard to the case mentioned in the title, which was previously reported to the Headquarters of the Allied Forces, I have received the following report from the Expeditionary Force in China. Therefore, make a report to the Headquarters of the Allied Forces:

1. Office, Post and Name - Lt. Colonel MATSUURA, Satoru, Staff Officer of the 6th Area Army.
2. This staff officer has already been taken into custody by American Military Police on 22 October, in Hankow, and should now be in Shanghai.

- - - - -

Urgent Telegram

1 November 1945

To: The Vice-Minister

From: The Chief of Staff of Shikoku Military District.

Shi Gun San Wire No. 249

Major-General KABURAGI and one other officer will arrive at Tachikawa in the afternoon of the 2nd.

- - - - -

MATTERS CONCERNING THE ARREST OF RESPONSIBLE PARTIES IN
THE MASSACRE OF AMERICAN AIRMEN IN HANKOW

ENCLOSURE "DEATH MARCH"

(from the Mainichi Shimbun, 4 November 1945)

According to the Chung Yang Sho wire, dispatched on the 30th from Chungking, the Allied War Crimes Commission has arrested one staff officer of the Japanese Army, eight Japanese M.P.'s and one Japanese civilian, a total of ten men. They are being held as the war criminals who killed three airmen of the U.S. Air Force in Hankow, after forcing them to make a "Death March." Furthermore, General OKABE, Naosaburo, the Commander of the Central China Area Army (the 6th Area Army) is already being questioned about his responsibility in the case.

For the support of the U. S. Operation of approaching the continental shore, the U. S. Air Force began in May of last year to fiercely attack Hankow, the strategic continental railroad center. As a result, our air force strength was consumed and the Chinese public began to lose confidence in the Japanese Forces. Because of this political crisis, the Central China Army and the Military Police planned this "Death March." Three American fighter plane personnel who parachuted to earth when their plane was hit during aerial combat, were dragged out on 16 December of last year, and with their heads tied behind their backs, they were forced to march around the main streets of Hankow, accompanied by bands, and streamers which read "Hankow bombing Devils," as if they were considered to be the ones who bombed Hankow. The Chinese people formed lines, and committed violence such as stepping, kicking and beating, until they were in a dying condition. After this, they poured gasoline on the men and burned them to death.

Two days after this incident, for about three hours commencing at noon of the 18th, Hankow suffered a severe air raid by over 100 odd fighter planes and bombers including B-29's. Practically the whole city was reduced to ashes. The Chinese people who were fearfully shaken by this, continuously evacuated Wuhan and Sanchen, and Hankow became uninhabited. In other words, the "Death March" had an opposite effect.

- - - - -

THE ATROCITIES AGAINST AMERICAN FLIERS IN HANKOW

4 November 1945

Major-General KABURAGI

I. Circumstances of the incident.

1. Since around autumn of last year, the indiscriminate shooting and bombing of the city of Hankow caused considerable damage to the homes of the citizens. Not only that, but the casualties inflicted upon the people, chiefly upon the Chinese forces, was great, and the indignation of the citizens gradually increased.
2. The Hankow Youth Organization (?) forced the American fliers who participated in attacks against Hankow, to march through the city, as a reprisal for the above-mentioned indiscriminate bombing and shooting. The citizens carried out beatings and violence against these fliers.

I do not have a detailed knowledge of the methods, means, and degree of the atrocity.

3. Before the above-mentioned incident was carried out, application for permission to do so was made to the 34th Army Headquarters by the Hankow Youth Organization (?). However, the Commander of the Army (Lieutenant-General SANCO) would not give permission at first, because the ill treatment of prisoners of war is not only a violation of International Law, but would also have a bad influence upon the treatment of Japanese nationals interned in the United States. However, the Youth Organization repeatedly requested the permission for carrying it out, saying that the plan was a reprisal for the indiscriminate shooting and bombings and that it would be carried out under the responsibility of the Chinese people and that they will absolutely refrain from troubling the Japanese Forces. Consequently, the permission for the aforementioned was granted.
4. The Headquarters of the 6th Army was at the time of this case stationed at Nanyo. They were in command of the operation in the Southern Area, and not only did they have no information about this case, but they were also in no condition to actually direct this incident.
5. In regard to the detailed circumstances, aside from the aforementioned, these are not clear because the Headquarters of the 34th Army has been transferred to Kankou in Northern Korea.

Doc 2662, Part 12

昨年米漢口ニ於ケル米軍停戦三名被害事件取調ノ爲
二十二日岡部大將以下一名（松浦參謀（醫人）福
本憲兵大佐既ニ拘引セラレ近ク上海ニ送送セララル
モノノ如ク）拘留ノ申出アリタルモ岡部大將ハ目下
病隊中ニテ恢復（數日ヲ要スト判断セラル）迄引致
ラ保留セラレ辰該方面ハ未ダ投降モ完了シテラス且
岡部大將病中ニテモアリ尙又方面軍司令部ハ事件當
時留岳ニテリ本年九月米軍將校ヨリ本事件ニ關シ追
索セララルル迄全ク知ラザリシコトヲ岡部大將ヲ抑
留スルモ調査ニ答フベキ資料全クナキ狀勢ニツキ前
電ヲ以テ依頼セル如ク當時第三十四軍參謀長鏑木少
將、泉中尉兵ノ他所要兵團司令部職員ヲ更ニ調査シ
其ノ結果責任者トシテ第六方面軍司令部ヲ拘留ノ必
要ヲ必真トスル場合ハ現職ノ執行ニ支障ナカラシム
ル如ク好意的ニ善處テリ度旨何處軍司令部ニ本日總

總參二種第六八二號

宛 次官 緊急電報 昭三〇、一〇、二三
支那派遣軍總參謀長

漢口ニ於ケル米軍停戦三名被害事件ニ關シ不事件
昭三〇、一一、四
真務課

RETURN TO ROOM 361

2

Doc 2662, Part 12

參謀長ヨリ事情ヲ具シ懇望シ置ケリ

(終)

電符發第七三六號

岡部大將ノ拘留延期方申入レニ關スル件

昭和二十年十月二十四日

陸軍省電務局

陸海軍東京連絡委員長殿

一 首尾ノ件ニ關シ別電ノ如ク支那派遺軍ヨリ連絡了

リタルモ米側ノ要求ナルヤ否ヤヲ確メラレ度

ニ若シ米側ノ要求ナラバ現地ノ實情諒トセララルニ

付事情ヲ述ベ岡部大將ノ拘留ヲ一時中止スルカ少

クモ其ノ病氣恢復迄拘留ヲ延期セラレ廣旨聯合草

司令部ノ諒解取付セラレ度

尙本件ノ如ク目下終戰處理途上ニ於テ各方面共現

地最高責任者トシテ事件處理ニ具體的救抄キ點モ

了リ終戰業務ヲ停滯セシムルノ不利ヲ來スベキニ

付拘留ヲ要スル場合ニ於テモ其ノ業務完了迄之ヲ

延期セラレ且豫メ本省ニ連絡セラレ廣旨セラテ申入

レ相成度

漢口ニ於ケル米軍側ノ事件調査ニ關スル件

宛 四國軍管區參謀長

次官

通電第四七四號 (昭二〇、一〇、二五)

Doc 2662, list 12

昭和十九年末漢口米軍停泊事件ニ關シ暫空警項アリ
當時ノ資料（記憶事項及業務關係將校ニシテ現在内地ニ歸還セル將校名等）拂行ノ上鈴木少將上京願シ
展

總參二電第六八二號ノ件

宛 支那派遣軍總參謀長 次官

陸普電第四七六號（昭二〇、一〇、二五）

總參二電第六八二號ニ關聯シ當方ニテモ至急當時ノ
責任者ニシテ現在内地在住者ヲ集メ當時ノ情況調査
ヲ實施致スベキニ付内地ニ歸還シアルモノト推定セ
ラルル將校等ノ人名至急通知相成展

緊 急 電 報 昭二〇、一〇、二六

宛 次官 支那派遣軍總參謀長

總參二電第六八五號

陸普電第四七六號返

陸軍少將 鈴木正隆（第五十五軍參謀長）

陸軍大尉 小池直人（軍務局）

尙内地在住者ニアラザルモ左記二名モ當時ノ責任者
トシテ調査方配慮相成展特ニ泉中尉最モ關係深キ責
任者ナルが如キヲ以テ營人ノ調査ハ本事件ノ實態ヲ
明白ナラシムル根本ナリトモ恩料セララルニ付念ノ

3.

4.

Doc 2662, Part 12

爲

陸軍少佐 日何幸夫 (第三十四軍參謀)

陸軍中尉 泉 毅一 (第三十四軍司令部附)

軍務發第 七五〇 號

岡部大將ノ代理タル幕僚ニ關スル件

昭和二十年十月二十七日

陸軍省軍務局長

陸海軍東京連絡委員長殿

聯合軍司令部ヨリ本二十七日甲ニ氏名ノ報告要求ス

リタル首魁幕僚ノ件ニ關シテハ左記趣旨ニ準據シ報

告諒解ヲ求メラレ度

記

一 本件關係軍タル第三十四軍ハ終戦直前東部北條ニ

轉用セラレソム一環占領下ニ在リ調査至難ナリ

ニ右ニ依リ現在支那派遣軍内ニ於テハ事情ヲ詳知セ

ル幕僚ヲ求メ難カルベキモ然ル場合ハ岡部大將ノ

現在ノ幕僚ヲ以テ代理セシム

本幕僚ノ氏名ハ支那派遣軍ノ報告ヲ俟テ報告ス

兵尙當時ノ第三十四軍關係者ト思惟セララル者ノ中

現在内地在任者ニ付テハ速カニ調査ノ上報告ス

案

電

報

昭三〇、一〇、二八

宛 副官

四軍管區參謀長

Doc 2662, Part 12

四年參電第二四一號

鈴木少將ハ調査資料ヲ收集シ一日頃到着ノ豫定ナリ

(終)

管 急 電 報

昭二〇、一〇、二八

宛 次官 支那派遣軍總參謀長

總參一覽第六九八號

陸發電第四九二號返

代理森係 第六方面軍參謀團長中佐 松浦 覺

ニシテ同參謀ハ既ニ十月二十二日漢口ニ於テ米軍憲

兵ニ拘引セラレ目下上海ニ在ル旨

直發第七二三號

岡部大將代理森係官氏名報告ノ件

昭和二十年十月二十九日

陸軍省直務局長

陸海軍東京連絡委員長殿

邊ニ聯合軍司令部ニ申入レタル首魁ノ件ニ關シ左記

ノ通り支那派遣軍ヨリ連絡アリタルニ付聯合軍司令

部ニ報告相成候

記

5.

一 職官氏名 第六方面軍參謀

陸軍中佐 松浦 覺

ニ同參謀ハ既ニ十月二十二日漢口ニ於テ米軍憲兵

Doc 2662, Part 12

6.

ニ拘引セラレ目下上海ニ在ル管

至急電報 昭二〇、一一、一

宛次官 四國軍管區參謀長

四軍參電第二四九號

鈴木少將外一名二日午後立川着

(終)

漢口ニ於ケル米飛行士虐殺事件責任者

ヲ米軍逮捕ニ關スル件

漢口「死ノ行進」(昭二〇、一一、四 毎日新聞所載)

重慶三十日發ノ中央社電ニヨルト聯合國醫會犯罪人
委員會ハ漢口ニ於テ米空軍飛行士三名ニ「死ノ行進」
ヲサセタ上之ヲ虐殺シタ日本軍參謀一名、憲兵八名
一數邦人一名計十名ガ戰爭犯罪人トシテ逮捕サレ、
既ニ中支那方面軍(第六方面軍)司令官關部直三郎
大將ガ責任ヲ問ハレテキル

コノ「死ノ行進」事件ハ昨年五月米軍ノ大陸接岸
作戦ヲ牽制スル爲開始サレタ大陸沿河鐵道打通ノ
作戦並ニ漢口ニ對スル熾烈ナ米空軍ノ攻撃ニ我が
航空兵力ハ消耗シ中國民衆ノ日本軍ニ對スル信頼
ハ薄ラギコノ重大ナル政治的危機突破ノ爲中文軍
及憲兵隊ヲ計整シタモノデソレニハ空中戦ヲ探監

Doc 2662, Part 12

サレ落下傘降下シタ米兵團機落業者三名ヲ引出シ
 昨年十二月十六日後手ニ縛リコレガ漢口ヲ爆撃シ
 タト言フコトニシテ「漢口ヲ炸鬼トイフ兵艦ヲ
 押シ立テ乗艦入りテ漢口ヨリ街ヲ掠リテツタガ中
 國民衆ハ長蛇ノ列ヲ作ツテ三名ノ米人飛行士ヲ打
 ツ歟ル段ルノ暴行ヲ加ヘ以テ死ノ状態ニ墜ラセタ、
 コノ暴行「ガソリン」ヲ振りカケ焼キ殺シタトイ
 フモノデアル
 コノ事件カラ二日後ノ十八日正午カラ約三時間ニワ
 タリB 29ヲ含む機隊連合百數十機ノ漢口大空襲ガア
 リ市街ハ殆ンド灰燼ニ償シタ
 コレニ惹レタ中 國民衆ハ武漢三鎮カラ續々逃避
 シ漢口ハガラ空キトナリ「死ノ行進」ハ終極果ヲ招
 イタノデアツタ

漢口ニ於ケル米軍飛行士ニ對スル暴行事件 附二〇二四
 鈴木少尉

一 事件ノ内容

- 1 昨年秋頃以來漢口市街ニ對スル無差別銃爆撃ニ
 依リ市民住宅ニ相當ノ被害アリシノミナラズ市
 民院中 國軍ノ死傷者多ク出シ市民ノ憤激次
 第ニ激化セリ
- 2 漢口市青年團（？）ハ石無差別銃爆撃ノ報復手
 段トシテ漢口市街ノ攻撃ニ參加セル米軍飛行士

Doc 2662, Part 12

ラ市申行通セシメ之ニ對シ市民ハ殴打暴行ヲ加ヘタリ

其ノ實施ノ方法手續程長等ニ關シテハ詳細シラス

3 石事件ハ實行前漢口市青年團（？）ヨリ第三十四軍司令部ニ對シ實施許可方申出アリタルモ軍司令官（佐野中將）ハ當初停滯ノ處往ハ國際法違反ナルノミナラス米國ニ抑留セラレアル日本人ノ取扱ニ惡影響アルヘキヲ以テ許容セラレザリシモ青年團ハ石ハ無差別焼撃ニ對スル報復手段ニシテ且甲團長兼ノ責任ニ於テハ實行シ日本軍ニハ絶對迷惑ヲ與ケサルニ付是非實施ヲ許可セラレ辰留再三懇願シ來リシヲ以テ右實施ヲ許可セラレタリ

ニ 第六方面軍司令部ハ當時高岳ニ在リテ南方ノ作戰指揮中ニシテ本事件ニ何等關知シアラザルノミナラス又豫言指導シ得ザル状態ニアリケリ

8

三 前記以外ノ詳細ナル内容ハ第三十四軍司令部ガ北盤庚具ニ移送シアルヲ以テ不詳ナリ

C. #1892

From 1 December 1945
to-----

The Investigation Report of the Central Investigation Committee of POWs.
by POW Investigation Division

I N D E X

- Part 1. Report concerning treatment of American and Philippine after Bataan Operation finished.
- Part 2. Report concerning treatment of American POWs in Philippine.
- Part 3. Investigation report of mistreatment of POWs in Philippine.
- Part 4. Investigation report of the men who were related with the case which occurred in Palawan Island.
- Part 5. Investigation report of decapitation of the American fliers in Aitape, New Guinea Island.
- Part 6. Report of protest from the American Government concerning the treatment of American fliers in New Guinea and Aitape, New Guinea Island.
- Part 7. Name list of Japanese Army personnel in the Central China theater.
- Part 8. Investigation Report of the Malayan Massacre. (Singapore)
- Part 9. Investigation report of POWs in Burma.
- Part 10. Investigation report of mistreatment of POWs in Rangoon.
- Part 11. Investigation report of mistreatment of POWs in Burma.
- Part 12. Report of three American fliers murdered in Hankow, China.
- Part 13. Report of condition of POWs who were transported to Brazil-maru from Philippine Island. (Jap. transport).
- Part 14. The materials concerning disaster of Rakuyo-maru. (Jap. transport)
- Part 15. The materials concerning disaster of Lisbon-maru. (Jap. transport)
- Part 16. Case concerning the crimes of stealing, rape, etc. which were disposed by the Court-Martial during the Far Eastern War.
- Part 17. Investigation Report of treatment of POWs in POWs camp in Mainland.

C. *1892

From 1 December 1945
to-----

The Investigation Report of the Central Investigation Committee of POWs.
by POW Investigation Division

I N D E X

- Part 1. Report concerning treatment of American and Philippine after Bataan Operation finished.
- Part 2. Report concerning treatment of American POWs in Philippine.
- Part 3. Investigation report of mistreatment of POWs in Philippine.
- Part 4. Investigation report of the men who were related with the case which occurred in Palawan Island.
- Part 5. Investigation report of decapitation of the American fliers in Aitape, New Guinea Island.
- Part 6. Report of protest from the American Government concerning the treatment of American fliers in New Guinea and Aitape, New Guinea Island.
- Part 7. Name list of Japanese Army personnel in the Central China theater.
- Part 8. Investigation Report of the Malayan Massacre. (Singapore)
- Part 9. Investigation report of POWs in Burma.
- Part 10. Investigation report of mistreatment of POWs in Rangoon.
- Part 11. Investigation report of mistreatment of POWs in Burma.
- Part 12. Report of three American fliers murdered in Hankow, China.
- Part 13. Report of condition of POWs who were transported to Brazil-maru from Philippine Island. (Jap. transport).
- Part 14. The materials concerning disaster of Rekuyo-maru. (Jap. transport)
- Part 15. The materials concerning disaster of Lisbon-maru. (Jap. transport)
- Part 16. Case concerning the crimes of stealing, rape, etc. which were disposed by the Court-Martial during the Far Eastern War.
- Part 17. Investigation Report of treatment of POWs in POWs camp in Mainland.

- Part 18. Investigation report of POWs in Burma theater.
- Part 19. The materials of Brazil-maru. (Jap. transport)
- Part 20. The materials of treatment of POWs were transported by Japanese ships which were sunk in Philippine sea area.
- Part 21. Investigation report of treatment of American POWs in Philippine Island.
- Part 22. Investigation report concerning the use of POWs on the construction of the railroad between Burma and Thailand.
- Part 23. Investigation report concerning the treatment of Allied fliers in the eastern district of Japan.
- Part 24. Investigation report concerning the treatment of Allied fliers in the central district. (Part One)
- Part 25. Investigation report concerning the treatment of Allied fliers in the western district of Japan.
- Part 26. The second investigation report concerning the treatment of POWs in mainland.
- Part 27. Investigation report concerning the treatment of Allied fliers in the central district of Japan. (Part Two)

C E R T I F I C A T E

I hereby certify that the above investigation documents (in Japanese language) consisting of twenty-seven parts, were removed from the files of the First Demobilization Bureau, Tokyo, on 9 September 1946 and placed in my hands pursuant to demand AG 300.6 dated 9 September 1946. Thereafter on 17 September 1946 the above described documents were placed with the International Prosecution Section for translation.

/s/ Richard E. Rudisill
Lt. Col. QMC
Chief, Investigation Division
Legal Section, SCAP

DOC 2662

EX 1892

自一九四五年(昭和二十年)十一月一日至.....

停虜調查部作成ニ関スル停虜中英調查委員會調查報告

目録

- 一編 /BATAN/
 - 一編 バタニ作戦終了後ニ於ケル匪米利加人及比律賓人取扱ニ関スル報告
 - 二編 比律賓ニ於ケル匪米利加人停虜取扱ニ関スル報告
 - 三編 比律賓ニ於ケル停虜産生待ニ関スル調査報告
- 四編 /PALAWAN/
 - 一編 「パラワン」島事件関係者調査報告
- 五編 /NEW GUINEA/ /AITAPE/
 - 一編 ニギニア島「アイタペ」ニ於ケル匪米利加人飛行士斬首ニ関スル調査報告
- 六編 /NEW GUINEA/ /AITAPE/
 - 一編 ニギニア島「ニギニア」及「アイタペ」ニ於ケル匪米利加人飛行士取扱ニ関スル匪米利加政府抗議ニ関スル報告
- 七編 /CENTRAL CHINA THEATER/
 - 一編 中部支那方面ニ於ケル日本軍職員人名表
- 八編 /SINGAPORE/
 - 一編 馬來人産殺ニ関スル調査報告(シンガポール)
- 九編 /BIRMA/
 - 一編 「ビルマ」ニ於ケル停虜ニ関スル調査報告
- 十編 /RANGOON/
 - 一編 「ラングーン」ニ於ケル停虜産生待ニ関スル調査報告
- 十一編 /BIRMA/
 - 一編 「ビルマ」ニ於ケル停虜産生待ニ関スル調査報告

DOC 2662

EX 1892

自一九四五年(昭和二十年)十一月一日至.....

俘虜調查部作成ニ於テ之ニ係ル中英調査委員會調査報告
目録

- 一編 /BATAN/ 夕、作戦終了後ニ於テ之ニ係ル米利加人及比律賓人取扱ニ関スル報告
- 二編 比律賓ニ於テ之ニ係ル米利加人俘虜取扱ニ関スル報告
- 三編 比律賓ニ於テ之ニ係ル俘虜虐待ニ関スル調査報告
- 四編 /PALAWAN/ 「パワワン」島事件関係者調査報告
- 五編 /NEW GUINEA/ /AITAPE/ ニ「ギニア」島「アイタペ」ニ於テ之ニ係ル米利加人飛行士斬首ニ関スル調査報告
- 六編 /NEW GUINEA/ /AITAPE/ ニ「ギニア」島「アイタペ」及「アイタペ」ニ於テ之ニ係ル米利加人飛行士取扱ニ関スル米利加政府抗議ニ関スル報告
- 七編 /CENTRAL CHINA THEATER/ 中部支那方面ニ於テ之ニ係ル日本軍職員人名表
- 八編 馬來人虐殺ニ関スル調査報告 (SINGAPORE)
- 九編 /BURMA/ 「ビルマ」ニ於テ之ニ係ル俘虜ニ関スル調査報告
- 十編 /RANGOON/ 「ラングーン」ニ於テ之ニ係ル虐待ニ関スル調査報告
- 十一編 /BURMA/ 「ビルマ」ニ於テ之ニ係ル虐待ニ関スル調査報告

DOC 2662

又

- 一三編 ^{/HANKOW/} 支那漢口ニ於ケル亞米利加人飛行士三名殺害ニ関スル報告
- 一三編 比島ヨリ「ブラジル」丸ニテ輸送サレタル俘虜ノ状態ニ関スル報告 (日本輸送船)
- 一四編 ^{/RAKUYO-MARU/} 「ラクヨウ」丸遭難ニ関スル資料 (日本輸送船)
- 一五編 ^{/LISBON-MARU/} 「リスボン」丸遭難ニ関スル資料 (日本輸送船)
- 一六編 極東戦役中軍法會議處刑切實、強姦其他犯罪事例ニ関スル件
- 一七編 本州ニ於ケル俘虜收容所内俘虜取扱ニ関スル調査報告
- 一八編 ビルマ方面ニ於ケル俘虜ニ関スル調査報告
- 一九編 「ブラジル」丸ニ関スル資料 (日本輸送船)
- 二〇編 比律賓海域ニ於テ撃沈セル日本船舶ニヨリ輸送セラレタル俘虜ノ取扱ニ関スル資料
- 二一編 比島ニ於ケル亞米利加人俘虜取扱ニ関スル調査報告
- 二二編 ビルマ及泰國間鐵道敷設ニ際シテ俘虜使役ニ関スル調査報告
- 二三編 日本國東部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱ニ関スル調査報告
- 二四編 中部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱ニ関スル調査報告 (第一部)

DOC 2662

- 二七編 日本國中部調查報告
- 二七編 日本國中部調查報告
- 二六編 本州ニ於ケル倭裔取扱ニ關スル第二次調査
- 二六編 本州ニ於ケル倭裔取扱ニ關スル第二次調査
- 二五編 日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱
- 二五編 日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

報一聞スル調查報告

日本國中部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

報告

本州ニ於ケル倭裔取扱ニ關スル第二次調査

本州ニ於ケル倭裔取扱ニ關スル第二次調査

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

日本國西部地區ニ於ケル聯合國飛行士取扱

Doc 2662

證明書

予ハ茲ニ在、如ク證明ス。

二七編ヨリ成ル上記調査書(日本文)ハ一九四六年(昭和二十一年)九月九日東京ニ於テ第一復員局ノ公文書類中ヨリ移出シ、一九四六年(昭和二十一年)九月九日附法務局命令三〇六ニ依リ予ノ手中ニ收メタリ。

一九四六年(昭和二十一年)九月十七日以後上記書類ハ翻譯、必要上國際檢察部ニ保管セラルシタリ。

皇取高司令部法律局調査部長

補給部陸軍中佐

/S/ RICHARD F. RUDISILL
 リチャード F. ルディシル 署名

DOC 2662

證明書

予ハ茲ニ左ノ如ク證明ス。

ニ七編ヨリ成ル上記調査書(日本文)ハ一九四六年(昭和二十一年)九月九日東京ニ於テ第一復員局ノ公文書類中ヨリ移出シ、一九四六年(昭和二十一年)九月九日附法務局命令ニ依リ予ノ手中ニ收メタリ。

一九四六年(昭和二十一年)九月十七日以後上記書類ハ翻譯ノ必要上國際檢察部ニ保管セラルタリ。

/S/ RICHARD E. RUDISILL
 リチャード イルバースイル 署名
 補給部陸軍中佐

最高司令部法律局調査部長

Ex # 1843

Document No. 8172*

Page 1

(SEAL)

AFFIDAVIT BY EDWARD ERIC WILLIAMSON.

I, Edward Eric Williamson, Captain, now serving in Shanghai as an officer in the War Crimes Commission Team No. 9. make oath and say as follows:-

- (I) From 5th. June 1924 to 20th. July 1942 I was, apart from short periods of leave, serving in the Shanghai Municipal Police and latterly in charge of a Police district in Shanghai as a Chief Inspector.
- (II) I was in Shanghai on the 8th. December 1941 and continued to serve in the Shanghai Municipal Police until the 31st. July 1942, when I was relieved of my position by the Japanese. I was interned in Yu Yuen Civil Assembly Center on the 9th. February 1943. I remained there until April 1945 when I with the remainder of the camp was transferred to the Eastern Area Civil Assembly Center, at 41, Ningkuo Road, Shanghai.
- (III) The attached report from "Military Staff Office" dated the 2nd. May 1946 to "The International Military Tribunal Far East" and Sh.1/46 Appendix "B" which are attached to this my affidavit and signed by me respectively as exhibits "A" and "B" are true to the best of my knowledge, information, and belief.

SWORN at His Britannic Majesty's)
 Consulate-General at Shanghai in) /s/ Edward Williamson
 the Republic of China this 6th)
 day of June, 1946.)

Before me:

/s/ J. W. H. CADBY

BRITISH PRO CONSUL
at Shanghai.

British-Consulate-General
(SEAL)
Shanghai

"A"

FROM: Military Staff Office.
DATE: 2nd May, 1946.
TO : The International Military Tribunal Far East.

GENERAL TREATMENT OF ALLIED NATIONALS BY THE JAPANESE

8.12.41. TO THE TERMINATION OF HOSTILITIES.

Herewith a general statement of the treatment of Allied Nationals by the Japanese authorities in the Shanghai Area between 8th December 1941 to the termination of hostilities.

On the early morning (about 4 a.m.) on the 8th December, 1941 the Japanese made it known to the Shanghai public that a state of war existed by shelling the H.M.S. "Petrel" and capturing the U.S.S. "Wake" both vessels were then in the Whangpoo River. Thereafter at 10 a.m. on the same day the Japanese Military entered the International Settlement with light tanks etc. On completion of this operation the Japanese proceeded to take over all Allied business houses.

At various dates following the occupation of the Settlements in Shanghai the Japanese Gendarmerie acting on information and from years of inquiries proceeded to arrest prominent Allied Nationals e.g., heads of business firms and leading members of National Societies. These persons were then taken to an apartment house known as "Bridge House" which had been the headquarters of the Japanese Gendarmerie since 1937 the date of the outbreak of the Sino-Japanese hostilities. When these Allied Nationals were taken to Bridge House they were thrown into a filthy verminous cell which was already overcrowded with persons of various nationality both male and female, numbering between fifteen and twenty persons. For the toilet a bucket in the corner of the cell was the only facility provided serving both male and female occupants. The food provided was mainly rice in porridge form with weak tea in quantities not sufficient to sustain life. Sleep was impossible in these cells as all could not lie down at once. They, the prisoners, were only supplied with one blanket which was also verminous.

On the days previous to interrogations these prisoners were placed in a cell usually next door to a torture chamber where they could hear the yells and cries of persons being beaten and tortured hearing moans as if the person beaten were actually dying. This treatment of arrested civilians viz, locked in a filthy cell, little or no food, made to listen to the tortures and beating of

other prisoners such as, Chinese, Indian and Russians, was an organized, premeditated and inhuman way of breaking down the resistance and morale of these prisoners, so as to put them in mental and bodily fear of torture when their turn for "interrogation" came.

TORTURE.

Various tortures were administered during interrogation the main ones being "Water Torture" which is done by laying a person flat on his back on a bench with his head overhanging one end. A funnel is then placed in the mouth and water forced into the abdomen and lungs. The torturer then jumps on the stomach of his victim producing a drowning sensation.

Electric Treatment. This is done by tying the victim to a "printers ladder" in the shape of a crucifix and applying a hand manipulated shocking coil to the body. The parts chosen usually were around the private members or near the nose. Before this treatment is given the body is sprayed with cold water.

Beatings. These come into various categories such as :-
 (1) Beating across the back and buttocks with a stick or hose. (2) Slapping of the face. (3) Kicking of the shins and various other sadistic methods such as kicking the private parts.

Other. In one case they removed both toe nails from the big toes of a victim without an anaesthetic. The rock torture was also administered and many others too numerous to mention.

Bridge House was a name which was broadcast in Shanghai during the occupation and was feared and dreaded by all nationalities and was effectively used by the Japanese on merchants as a lever for extortion.

HAIPHONG ROAD.

At approximately 4 a.m. on the 5th November 1942, many squads of Japanese Gendarmie assisted by Japanese members of the Shanghai Municipal Police, armed with Japanese Military Warrants arrested between three and four hundred Allied Nationals which included a few persons who were neither British or American. They were taken through the streets in open trucks and confined in an Ex U.S. Marine camp in Haiphong Road without cooking arrangements, rations, or toilet facilities. In this camp beatings

other prisoners such as, Chinese, Indian and Russians, was an organized, premeditated and inhuman way of breaking down the resistance and morale of these prisoners, so as to put them in mental and bodily fear of torture when their turn for "interrogation" came.

TORTURE.

Various tortures were administered during interrogation the main ones being "Water Torture" which is done by laying a person flat on his back on a bench with his head overhanging one end. A funnel is then placed in the mouth and water forced into the abdomen and lungs. The torturer then jumps on the stomach of his victim producing a drowning sensation.

Electric Treatment. This is done by tying the victim to a "painters ladder" in the shape of a crucifix and applying a hand manipulated shocking coil to the body. The parts chosen usually were around the private members or near the nose. Before this treatment is given the body is sprayed with cold water.

Beatings. These came into various categories such as :-
 (1) Beating across the back and buttocks with a stick or hose. (2) Slapping of the face. (3) Kicking of the shins and various other sadistic methods such as kicking the private parts.

Other. In one case they removed both toe nails from the big toes of a victim without an anaesthetic. The rock torture was also administered and many others too numerous to mention.

Bridge House was a name which was broadcast in Shanghai during the occupation and was feared and dreaded by all nationalities and was effectively used by the Japanese on merchants as a lever for extortion.

HAIPHONG ROAD.

At approximately 4 a.m. on the 5th November 1942, many squads of Japanese Gendarmie assisted by Japanese members of the Shanghai Municipal Police, armed with Japanese Military Warrants arrested between three and four hundred Allied Nationals which included a few persons who were neither British or American. They were taken through the streets in open trucks and confined in an Ex U.S. Marine camp in Haiphong Road without cooking arrangements, rations, or toilet facilities. In this camp beatings

... frequent and general conditions bad. From this camp various prisoners were removed to the Union Jack Club, Bridge House, or 76 Jessfield Road where beatings took place while under interrogation. It was in this camp that William Hutton was imprisoned, taken out and tortured to death.

This camp was dissolved in the summer of 1945 when the whole camp was taken to Fengtien near Peking North China by rail. This rail journey lasted four days and four nights with the occupants of the train only being allowed out for exercise twice and only given water on two occasions. The way this journey was arranged was a brutal and an inhuman way of transporting humans. Crowded coaches, no sanitary arrangements or food. On arrival at Fengtien the whole camp was for the most part suffering from some sort of ailment, and was made to march for three miles through a Chinese town to bare warehouses, where most of the men collapsed from lack of sleep, food or water.

CIVIL INTERNMENT CAMPS.

On the 9th February 1942, the Japanese Consul General (Mr. Yano) started to intern Allied men, women and children. The first camp to be formed was in the Shanghai Municipal Schools in Yu Yuan Road. Thereafter camps were formed at Great Western Road (Ash Camp), Lung Ha (near the airfield), Chong-i (an old amusement resort) at the Columbia Country Club Great Western Road, and the last one at Yangchow (near Hanking). At all these camps food and living conditions were bad, beatings were frequent, and discipline strict. Furthermore the consequences would have been much worse had it not been for the support of the International Red Cross and the Swiss Consulate. The Red Cross saw to it that friends could send into the camps at least one food parcel per month, and the Swiss Consulate donated bulk food supplies.

Japan treated the civil internees in Shanghai a degree better than any other part, because Shanghai was a sort of an "International Stage" the internees the actors and the International population of Shanghai the audience.

EXTERMINATION CAMP NINGKUO ROAD.

This camp deserves special mention. In the month of April 1945 the Camps at Yu Yuan Road School and the Columbia Country Club were joined and sent to an Ex-Royal Catholic Hospital (Sacred Heart) in Ningkuo Road. This hospital was taken over by the Japanese Military in 1937 as a venereal and dysentery hospital, and was used as such until they changed places with the internees in Yu Yuan Road.

When the first planes took over this hospital as a Camp it was full of rats, lice, vermin, fleas and mosquitoes. Most of the grounds were entrenched and full of water, all sanitary arrangements were out of order, and the only toilet available was a dry latrine. Water lay two feet deep under each building, the roofs leaked and the general conditions were abominable. The food supplied was usually first ring salt pork which was condemned. One of the worst features of this camp was that the Japanese placed approximately one thousand one hundred Allied Nationals in the very middle of a Military area. These internees were not all fit persons. There were children of a few weeks old, men and women of over seventy all concentrated in an area surrounded by anti-aircraft batteries of all descriptions. This was made very plain when U. S. Planes raided the vicinity and the noise of the anti-aircraft guns made it impossible to carry on conversations or give orders to internees for safety.

In the last few days of the war and on three consecutive days about 600 U.S. aircraft raided Shanghai, and about 50 dive bombers attacked targets on the river. These fifty planes circled above this Eastern Area Camp and peeled off towards their objective. Anti-aircraft guns were firing all around and in the camp women were fainting. The Japanese knew they were putting their internees in the middle of a Military objective and subjecting them to the hazards of war;

YANCHOW.

In the spring of 1943 the Japanese organized three internment camps at Yanchow near Nanking and were classified A, B, C, camps. Several months later A and B camps were sent back to Shanghai and distributed between the other internment camps in the Shanghai area. "C" camp remained in Yanchow until end of war. At this camp discipline was strict but beatings took place of a minor nature. However, the worst feature of the organization of these camps was that all men and women old and young were transported to camp under severe circumstances. They were packed aboard a small steamer in Shanghai and taken to a point on the Yangtze near Yanchow, where they were transferred to a barge, taken up a creek, and then had to walk about three miles across country to the camp. In these camps food was short and medical supplies almost non-existent.

In conclusion the Japanese authorities both Civil Military and Naval did their best to lower the prestige of the white man in the eyes of all in East Asia. They, the Japanese lost no opportunity in parading Allied Nationals through the main streets of Shanghai, whether on foot or in lorries. This report would not be complete, however, without mentioning this final fact.

When the Japanese made all Allied Nationals wear red arm bands with the letter "A" for American, "B" for British etc, with a number appended, the Japanese openly admitted that it did not have the desired effect, as other nationals then knew who their friends were and took the red arm band as a sign of friendship.

Later and after the internment of Allied Nationals, the Japanese again openly admitted that it did not have the effect desired. They admitted that the Chinese and other nationals sympathy was with the internees.

Finally the last step came when the Japanese removed old and helpless persons from their homes and institutions, and interned them. These old people had been in China thirty, forty, and fifty years, and had a host of good class Chinese friends. The result was that a goodly amount of indignation was caused and the anti-Japanese feeling intensified. This was so much so, that the Japanese English language and Chinese language newspapers gave prominence to an article, which made excuses for the action in interning these old people whose interest in any state secret etc, had long since been annulled by the will to live on in the Country of their adoption.

/s/ Edward Williamson
Capt
No 9 W.C. II Shanghai

"2"

THIS is the document marked "A" referred to in the Affidavit of EDWARD ERIC WILLIAMSON sworn before me at H.B.M. Consulate-General at Shanghai in the Republic of China, this 6th day of June, 1946.

/s/ J. W. G. DSBY

BRITISH PRO CONSUL
at Shanghai

British Consulate-
General
(SEAL)
Shanghai

Sh. 1/46. Appendix B.

THE POOTUNG INTERNMENT CAMP.

In the first report regarding the treatment of Prisoners of War in the Shanghai area, the Pootung Internment Camp was by error omitted.

The Pootung Internment Camp was formed for bachelors and men whose wives were not in China, however there were also some men interned in this camp whose wives were still in Shanghai, but owing to the fact that these men were married after the outbreak of war, the Japanese authorities did not regard this marriage ceremony as legal. The result being that many of the wives who were not interned were left with little or no support and suffered accordingly.

On or about the 23-1-43 the above men were summoned by the Japanese Consul General in Shanghai, and after being assembled in Shanghai, they were marched down to the river front, and transported to some empty British American Tobacco Company warehouses in Pootung on the opposite side of the river.

During their internment they were given at times unwholesome fish, meat, rice, and native vegetables to eat.

The sanitary and toilet arrangements were unsatisfactory and primitive. The roofs leaked, bugs and vermin abounded, and it was only by the concerted efforts of the internees themselves that the camp was made more or less sanitary.

At a later date this camp was used by the Japanese to intern

men and young people, who were allowed to mix with the men who had been interned about a year. This camp was unsuitable for women and girls.

The camp was also in a Military zone thereby exposing the internees to the hazards of war.

/s/ Edward Williamson Capt.
No. 9 W. C. I.T.
Shanghai

"B"

THIS is the document marked "B" referred to in the Affidavit of EDWARD ERIC WILLIAMSON sworn before me at H.B.M. Consulate-General at Shanghai in the Republic of China, this 6th day of June, 1946.

/s/ J. M. GADSBY

BRITISH PRO CONSUL

at Shanghai

British Consulate-General
(SEAL)
Shanghai

RETURN TO SENDER
COPY FILE

「エドワード・エリック・ウィリアムソン」ノ陳述書

Doc 8172 *

2x 500

私、即チ目下上海ニ於テ第九戦争犯罪委員会ノ
一將校トシテ勤務中ノ陸軍大尉エドワード・エリ
ック・ウィリアムソンハ宣誓ノ上次ノ如ク申シ述
ベマス。

(一) 一九二四年六月五日ヨリ一九四二年七月三十日
迄、短期間ノ休暇ヲ除キ、私ハ上海市警察局ニ
勤務シ終リ頃ハ署長トシテ上海ノ一警察區ヲ擔
任シテ居リマシタ。

(二) 私ハ一九四一年十二月八日ニハ上海ニ居リ一九
四二年七月三十一日迄上海市警察局ニ引續キ勤
務シ、同日日本人ニヨリ同職ヲ免ゼラレマシタ。
私ハ一九四三年二月九日ニ「ユーイエン」一般
人收容所ニ收容サレマシタ。私ハ一九四五年四
月迄其處ニ居リ、同月ソノ收容所ノ他ノ抑留者
達ト一緒ニ上海、^{HEIKO}「キングクォー」街四一番地ノ
東郡一般人收容所ニ移サレマシタ。

× × × × × × ×

上海共同租界ノ占領後屢々日本憲兵隊ハ情報ト
改年ニ亙ル調査ニ基キ、著名ナ聯合口人例ヘバ會
社社長ヤ自國団体ノ主要役員等ノ逮捕ニ取り掛リ
マシタ。此等ノ人々ハソレカラ日華協働勃發ノ一
九三七年以來日本憲兵隊ノ本部トナツテイタ「ブ
リツヂ・ハウス」トシテ知らレテキル、アバ

Doc 8172 #

トニ進レテ行カレマシタ。之等 退合團人ハ一ツ
リツヂ・ハクスーニ進行サレルヤ、彼等ハ汚イ貧
乏ダラケシ一室ニ投ゲ込マレマシタ。其ノ室ハ既
ニ十五人カラ二十人ノ各國人男女ヲ混雜シテキマ
シタ。便所トシテハ其ノ室ノ中ニ一價ノバケツガ
男女共用ニ置カレテアル丈デシタ。與エラレタ食
料ハ主ニ粥ト薄イ茶デ、其ハ生キテ行クニハ不充
分ナモノデアリマシタ。管方同時ニ糞ニナルコト
ガ出來ナイヲ諷諭ハ取ルコトガ出來マセンデシ
タ。抑留者達ハ僅カニ一枚ノ毛布ヲ與エラレ且其
ノ毛布ニモ蚤ガ居マシタ。

訊問ノアル數日前ニハ俘虜達ハ通常拷問室ノ隣
リノ室ニ移サレマシタ。彼等ハ其ノ室ヲ叩カレ汚
濁サレテイル人々ノ叫ビ聲ヤ泣キ聲ヲ聞ク事ガ出
來又叩カレタ人が全ク死ニカ、ツテイル様ヲ呻キ
聲ヲ耳ニスルデアシタ。逮捕サレタ一般人ニ對ス
ル此ノ待遇即チ汚イ室ニ閉デ込メテ置クトカ、食
料ハ少量又ハ皆無テ、中國人、印度人、ロシア人
等他ノ抑留者ノ拷問ヤ毆打ヲ聞カセラレタト云フ
事ハ彼等ノ「訊問」ノ音が來ル時彼等ヲ心身共ニ
拷問ニ對シ恐怖サセル爲彼等ノ抵抗ト志氣トヲ挫
クト云フ一ツノ組織的計畫的且非人道的ナ方法デ
アリマシタ。

拷問

「フリップ・ハカス」ハ占領中上海ニ於テ廣ク

カ加エラシマシタ。

持問モ又加エラシ其ノ他逃ハ切レナイ多敷ノ持問
兩足ノ親カ指カラ爪ヲ取リマシタ。持問ニヨル
其他ノ親カ指カラ爪ヲ取リマシタ。持問ニヨル
其他。一度日本人ハ麻痺ナクシテ一様性者ノ

亂ル如キ磨的方法。

(一) 實面打。ス「背ヤ尻部ヲ叩クコト」
(二) 實面打。ス「其他局ヲ」

(三) 實面打。ス「其他局ヲ」

ツク。即チ

打。之ハ次ノ如キ色々ナ種類ニ分ケラシテ

Doc 8172

人ノ口ニ上ツタ名デ、凡ユル國民ニヨリ恐レ且怖
ガラレタモノデアリマシタ。ソシテ日本人ニヨツ
テ商品強奪ノタメノ虞シトシテ效果的ニ用ヒラレ
マシタ。

HAIPHONG ROAD

ハイフオング街

一九四二年十一月五日午前四時頃、上海市警察
局附日本人ノ援助ヲ受ケ日本憲兵ノ多數ノ部隊ガ、
日本軍ノ送捕狀ヲ持ツテ、三百乃至四百人ノ聯合
國民ヲ逮捕シマシタ。ソノ中ニハ若干ノ英米人デ
ナイ若キ居マシタ。彼等ハ無盡ノトラツクテ市中
ヲ通り、調理設備モ食料モ便所設備モナイ「ハイ
フオング」街ノ前米國海兵隊兵舎ニ拘留サレマシ
タ。此ノ收容所デハ殴打ハ屢々デ、一般ノ状態ハ
ヒドイモノデシタ。此ノ收容所ヨリ多クノ俘虜ガ
「ユニオン、ジャック、クラブ」、「ブリツヂ、
ハウスム」及「ゼスフィールド」第七十六番地ニ移サ
レマシタガ、其處デハ訊問中ニ殴打が行ハレタノ
デアリマス。「ウイリアム・ハットン」ガ拘留サ
レ、引出サレテ、死ニ至ル迄拷問サレタノハ此ノ
收容所デアリマシタ。

此ノ收容所ハ其レガ一九四五年ノ夏全員ガ鐵道
デ北支北京ノ近クニアル「フエンテイエン」ニ移
サレタ時保散サレマシタ。此ノ鐵道旅行ハ四晝夜

44

Doc 8172 *

カ、リマシタガ、汽車ニ乗ツテイル者ハ僅カニ回
程運動ノ爲ニ外出ヲ許サレ又僅カ、二度水ヲ與ヘ
ラレタノミデアリマシタ。此ノ旅行ガナサレタ方
法ハ人間ヲ搬送スルノニ野蠻的且非人道的方法デ
アリマシタ。車中ハ混雑シテ衛生設備モ食料モア
リマセンデシタ。「フエンテイエン」ニ到着スル
ト全收容員ハ大部分或種ノ病氣ニ患ツテ居リマシ
タ、ソシテ彼等ハガラントシタ倉庫迄支那ノ町ヲ
通り三哩行進サセラレマシタ。其處デハ大概ノ人
ガ睡眠食物及水ノ不足ニヨリ倒レマシタ。

一般收容所

一九四三年二月九日日本總領事 ^{IR. KAEH} (ヤノ氏) ガ通
合國ノ男子、女子、及子供ヲ收容シ始メマシタ。
最初設ケラレタ收容所ハ「ユーイエン」街ニアル
上海市立學校デアリマシタ。其ノ後收容所ハ「グ
レイト・ウエスタイン」街、(アツシユ收容所)、
ルンホワ(飛行場ノ近ク)、「グレイト・ウエス
タイン」街「コロンビア・カンツリー・クラブ」
ニアル「テヤベイ」遊樂場、及モウーツハ揚州
(南京附近)ニ設ケラレマシタ。此等全テノ收容
所ニ於テハ食料及生活状態ハ悪ク、毆打ハ屢々デ
且規則ハ嚴格デシタ。更ニ國際赤十字及瑞西領事

Doc 8172 *

ノ支給がナカツタナラバ、其ノ結果ハ賈ニ悪カツ
タデアリマセウ。赤十字社ハ友人ガ一ヶ月ニ少ク
トモ一信ノ食料小包ヲ收容所ニ送り得ル様ニシマ
シタ、ソシテ、瑞西領事ハ大量ノ食料供給品ヲ寄
附シマシタ。

日本ハ上海ニ於ケル一般ノ被拘者ヲ他ノ場所ヨ
リハ少々良ク待遇シマシタ。何トナレバ上海ハ一
種ノ「國際舞台」デ、抑留者ハ彼者デアリ上海ノ
各國民ハ観衆デアツタカラデス。

(以下次頁ニ續ク)

ニングオ街 / HEBKCC RCAL / 東部收容所

Doc 8172

此ノ收容所ハ特等ニ價イシマス。一九四五年四月ニ「ユ一・ユエン」學校並ニ「コロンビア・カンツリ、クラブ」ニ在ツタ收容所ガ合併シテ「ニングオ」街ノ前ローマ・カトリック病院（聖心）ニ移サレマシタ。此ノ病院ハ一九三七年ニ日本軍隊ニヨリ性病及赤痢病院トシテ接收サレ、「ユ一・ユエン」街ノ押留者ト場所ヲ交代スル迄其ノ儘使用サレマシタ。押留者達ガ收容所トシテ此ノ病院ヲ入手シタ時ニハソレハ、ドブ鼠、ハツカ鼠、虱、虫、蚤及蚊テ充滿シテイマシタ。地面ノ大部ハ壁隈ガ掘ラレ水テ一杯テ全テノ衛生設備ハ故障シテオリ唯一ノ使用可能ナ便所ハ水漬ノナイ便所デアリマシタ。水ガ各建物ノ下ニ、二呎迄上ツテ來テ居リ屋根ハ漏リ且一般ノ状態ハ話ニナラス程デアリマシタ。支給サレタ食物ハ通常食ベラレモシナイ腐敗シタ鹽ツケノ豚肉デシタ。本收容所ノ最も悪イ特點ハ日本人ガ約一一〇〇人ノ適合國人ヲ尊重地獄ノ真中ニ置イタコトデアリマシタ。此等押留者ハ全部ガ健全テハアリマセンデシタ。彼等ノ中デ生後破産間ノ子供ヤ七十才以上ノ男子、女子ガ皆アラユル種類ノ高射砲陣ニヨリ囚マレタ場所ニ集中サレテイマシタ。米國機ガ其ノ附近ヲ空襲シテ高射砲ノ音ガ押留者達ニ話スコトモ避難ノタメノ命令ヲ傳エルコトモ不可能ニシタトキニコノコ

7.

Doc 8172 *

トガ非常ニ明カニナリマシタ。

戦争最后ノ数日、三日間續ケテ米國機約六百が上海ヲ空襲シ急降下爆撃機約五十が河沿ノ目標ニ對シテ攻撃シマシタ。コレラノ五十機ハコノ東部地域收容所上空ヲ旋回シ彼等ノ目標ニ急降下シマシタ。高射砲ガアタリ一面テ射撃シ收容所テハ婦女子童ガ失神シマシタ。日本人ハ彼等ガ軍專目標ノ中央ニ抑留者送ヲ入レテソレヲ戦争ノ危険ニ晒シテイルコトヲ知ツテイマシタ。

楊州

一九四三年春日本人ハ南京ノ近ク楊州ニ三ツノ抑留者收容所ヲ設ケテ「A」、「B」、「C」收容所トシマシタ。數ヶ月后「A」、「B」兩收容所ハ上海ニ戻サレ上海地區ノ他ノ抑留者收容所ニ配分サレマシタ。「C」收容所ハ終戰迄楊州ニ残りマシタ。コノ收容所テハ規律ハ降格デシタガ其處テ行ハレタ殴打ノ程度ハ輕イモノデシタ。然シナガラコレラノ收容所ノ最モ惡イ點ハ全老若男女ガ酷イ狀況ノ下ニ收容所ニ移サレタトイフコトデス。彼等ハ上海テ一隻ノ小汽船ニ詰メ込マレ楊州附近ノ楊子江上ノ某地點ニ運バレ其處テ一隻ノ舢艫ニ移サレ、小川ヲ溯リソレカラ收容所迄三哩ノ野原ヲ横ギツテ歩カサレマシタ。コレラノ收容所テハ食物ハ不足シ醫療品ハ殆ンドアリ

Doc 8172

マセンドシタ。

終りに申シマスガ日本當局ハ文官タルト陸海軍タルト同ワズ東亞ニ於ケル總テノ人ノ目ノ前テ白人ノ威信ヲ墜スコトニ全力ヲ盡シマシタ。彼等日本人ハ徒歩ダロウガ草上ダロウガ機會サヘアレバ必ズ連合國民ニ上陸ノ大進ヲ行進サセマシタ。所テ最后ニ次ノ筆柄ヲ述べナケレバ此ノ報告ハ完全ナモノトハナラナイテセウ。即チ日本人ハ米國人ニハ「A」英國人ニハ「B」等連合國民ニ番號ヲツケタ赤腕章ヲ附ケサセタケレドモ日本人ハ其時ニソレハ所期ノ效果ヲ齎サナイト公然ト認メマシタ。何トナレバ其他ノ諸國民ハ其ノ當時誰ガ自分連ノ友人デアルカラ知リソノ赤腕章ヲ友情ノ印ト考エテイタカラデス。

其後、連合國民ノ抑留后セ日本人ハ再ビ公然トソノ筆ガ所期ノ效果ヲ齎ラサナイトイフコトヲ認メマシタ。彼等ハ中國人其他ノ諸國民ガ抑留者ニ同情シテイタコトヲ認メマシタ。

最后ニ日本人ガ老人ヤカヨワイ人達ヲ彼等ノ家ヤ讀施設カラ移シテ抑留シタトイフ最后ノ處置ガ取ラレマシタ。コレラ老人達ハ中國ニ三、四十年カラ五十年モ居リ上流中國人ノ友人ヲ多量持ツテイマシタ。ソノ結果相當憤激ヲ買イ反日感情ガ強メラレマシタ。コレガ余リ甚シカツタノテ日本人發行ノ英字紙及中國語新聞ハコレラノ老人達ガ彼等ガ選ンダ國中國ニ

Doc 8172

マセシテシタ。

終りに申シマスガ日本当局ハ支官タルト陸海軍タルト同ワス東亞ニ於ケル總テノ人ノ目ノ前テ白人ノ威信ヲ監スコトニ全力ヲ盡シマシタ。彼等日本人ハ徒歩ダロウガ真上ダロウガ機會サヘアレバ必ズ進合國民ニ上流ノ大通ヲ行進サセマシタ。斯テ最後ニ次ノ事柄ヲ述べナケレバ此ノ報告ハ完全ナモノトハナラナイテセウ。即チ日本人ハ米國人ニハ「A」英國人ニハ「B」等進合國民ニ番號ヲツケタ赤腕章ヲ附ケサセタケレドモ日本人ハ其時ニソレハ所期ノ效果ヲ齎サナイト公然ト認メマシタ。何トナレバ其他ノ諸國民ハ其ノ當時誰ガ自分進ノ友人デアルカラ知リソノ赤腕章ヲ友情ノ印ト考エテイタカラテス。

其後、進合國民ノ抑留后モ日本人ハ再ヒ公然トソノ事ガ所期ノ效果ヲ齎ラサナイトイフコトヲ認メマシタ。彼等ハ中國人其他ノ諸國民ガ抑留者ニ同情シテイタコトヲ認メマシタ。

最后ニ日本人ガ老人ヤカヨウイ人達ヲ彼等ノ家ヤ諸施設カラ移シテ抑留シタトイフ最后ノ處置が取ラレマシタ。コレラ老人達ハ中國ニ三、四十年カラ五十年モ居リ上流中國人ノ友人ヲ多寡持ツテイマシタ。ソノ結果相當憤激ヲ買イ反日感情ガ強メラレマシタ。コレガ余リ甚シカツタノテ日本人發行ノ英字紙及中國語新聞ハコレラノ老人達ガ彼等ガ選ンダ國中國ニ

Doc 8172

マセシテシタ。

終りに申シマスガ日本當局ハ支官タルト陸海軍タルトヲ問フス東亞ニ於ケル總テノ人ノ目ノ前テ白人ノ慶信ヲ監スコトニ全力ヲ盡シマシタ。彼等日本人ハ徒歩ダロウガ車上ダロウガ機會サヘアレバ必ズ適合國民ニ上陸ノ大通ヲ行進サセマシタ。斯テ最后ニ次ノ事柄ヲ述べナケレバ此ノ報告ハ完全ナモノトハナラナイテセウ。即チ日本人ハ米國人ニハ「A」英國人ニハ「B」等ニ適合國民ニ番號ヲツケタ赤腕章ヲ附ケサセタケレドモ日本人ハ其時ニソレハ所期ノ效果ヲ齎サナイト公然ト認メマシタ。何トナレバ其他ノ諸國民ハ其ノ當時誰ガ自分達ノ友人デアルカラ知リソノ赤腕章ヲ友情ノ印ト考エテイタカラテス。

其後、適合國民ノ抑留后モ日本人ハ再ヒ公然トソノ事ガ所期ノ效果ヲ齎ラサナイトイフコトヲ認メマシタ。彼等ハ中國人其他ノ諸國民ガ抑留者ニ同情シテイタコトヲ認メマシタ。

最后ニ日本人ガ老人ヤカヨワイ人達ヲ彼等ノ家ヤ諸施設カラ移シテ抑留シタトイフ最后ノ處置が取ラレマシタ。コレラ老人達ハ中國ニ三、四十年カラ五十年モ居リ上流中國人ノ友人ヲ多量持ツテイマシタ。ソノ結果相當憤激ヲ買イ反日感情が強メラレマシタ。コレガ余リ甚シカツタノテ日本人發行ノ英字紙及中國語新聞ハコレラノ老人達ガ彼等ガ選ンダ國中國ニ

Doc 8172

10.

后任セントスル誌悉ノタメニ既ニ如何ナル國家機密
等ニモ必ラ失ツテシマツテイルノニ拘ラス彼等ヲ
抑留シタトイフ行動ニ對シテ色々辯明シタ論說ヲ特
筆大書シマシタ。

× × × × ×

浦東抑留者收容所

× × × × ×

彼等ハ抑留中時々健康ニ有害サ魚、肉、米、及土
地ヲ出來々身ヲ食ベサセラレマシタ。

衛生並ニ便所ノ設備ハ不適當且原始的デシタ。屋
根ハ滲リ南京蟲ヤ毒蟲ガ多クテ抑留者自身ノ共同勞
力ニヨツテ始メテ收容所ハ多少衛生的ニナリ得タノ
デアツタ。

往日日本人ハコノ收容所ヲ婦人ト子供達ヲ抑留ス
ルノニ利用シマシタ。彼等ハ約一ケ年前カラ抑留サ
レタイタ身起ト一語ニ住マサレマシタ。コノ收容所
ハ婦人ヤ少女達ニハ不適當アシタ。

コノ收容所モ軍事地帯ニアリ其レ故抑留者ハ戰等
ノ危険ニ晒サレタノデシタ。

× × × × ×

IN THE MATTER OF THE FALSE IMPRISONMENT, INHUMAN TREATMENT AND TORTURE, OF WILLIAM SLADE BUDGEY, A. V. T. DEAN, AND THE REVEREND W. H. HUDSPETH, CIVILIAN PRISONERS OF WAR IN SHANGHAI FROM 28th OCTOBER 1942 to 28th JANUARY 1943 and SUBSEQUENTLY AT HAIPHONG ROAD CAMP AND FENGTAI CAMP Near PEIPING FROM 28th JANUARY 1943 to 19th AUGUST 1945.

A F F I D A V I T

I, WILLIAM SLADE BUDGEY, Director of the Yee Tsong Tobacco Distributors Limited, Shanghai, China, temporarily resident at Forest Gate, Barrswood Road, New Milton, Hants. MAKE OATH and say as follows:-

1. On 8th December 1941 when war broke out between Japan and Great Britain, I was a member of the Board of Directors of the Yee Tsong Tobacco Distributors Limited in Shanghai.
2. When His Majesty's Ambassador, Sir Archibald Clark Kerr was at the Embassy in Shanghai, he established a number of Committees consisting of unofficial members of the Shanghai community, for his assistance. Among such Committees was one known as "The Ambassador's Publicity Committee" which consisted, amongst others, of A. V. T. Dean, Manager in China of Messrs. Butterfield & Swire, the Reverend W. H. Hudspeth, representative of the British & Foreign Bible Society, and myself.
3. In consequence of the work undertaken by us at the request of H. M. Ambassador we were marked men, and I was confidentially informed that members of that Committee not on the Diplomatic List would be arrested as soon as the "KAMUKURA MARU" carrying Diplomatic and other officials, merchants, etc., had left Shanghai on 17th August 1942. Unfortunately representation made by me to His Majesty's Charge d'Affaires did not result in accommodation being made available for the above mentioned members of the Committee on the said steamer, with the result that we were left in Shanghai.
4. At 6.50 a.m. on 28th October 1942 I was arrested, and for three months was detained at Bridge House, the Headquarters in Shanghai of the Kempeitai, or Japanese Gendarmerie, as that body of military police was ordinarily referred to. The paper writing marked "V. S. B. 1." and now produced and shown to me, is my report "A" of the conditions under which I was confined at Bridge House aforesaid, examinations, generally inhuman treatment, and specific tortures, to which I was subjected.
5. On 28 January 1943 I was transferred from Bridge House to the Haiphong Road Prisoner of War Camp in Shanghai. Subsequently I was transferred with others from Haiphong Road Prisoner of War Camp to a Prisoner of War Camp at Fengtai, a few miles south-east of Peking. The paper writing now produced and shown to me, marked "V. S. B. 2." is a copy of my report "B" describing my experiences in those two Camps.
6. Subsequent to our release from Bridge House, the said A. V. T. Dean and W. H. Hudspeth and myself had opportunities of exchanging information as regards our experiences in Bridge House, from which it appeared that we had been confined under similar conditions, examined, ill-treated, and tortured, in much the same manner and to a greater or lesser degree.

SWORN by the said WILLIAM SLADE BUDGEY)
 at 1 The Sanctuary in the City of) Sgd. W. SLADE BUDGEY
 Westminster this 21st day of February)
 1946. Before me,
 Sgd. Henry L. Bolton
 a Commissioner for oaths.

IN THE MATTER OF THE FALSE IMPRISONMENT, INHUMANE TREATMENT AND TORTURE, OF WILLIAM SLADE BUDGEY, A. V. T. DEAN, AND THE REVEREND W. H. HUDSPETH, CIVILIAN PRISONERS OF WAR IN SHANGHAI FROM 28th OCTOBER 1942 to 28th JANUARY 1943 and SUBSEQUENTLY AT HAIPHONG ROAD CAMP AND FENGTAI CAMP Near PEKING FROM 28th JANUARY 1943 to 19th AUGUST 1945.

A F F I D A V I T

I, WILLIAM SLADE BUDGEY, Director of the Yee Tsoong Tobacco Distributors Limited, Shanghai, China, temporarily resident at Forest Gate, Barrswood Road, New Milton, Hants. MAKE OATH and say as follows:-

1. On 8th December 1941 when war broke out between Japan and Great Britain, I was a member of the Board of Directors of the Yee Tsoong Tobacco Distributors Limited in Shanghai.
2. When His Majesty's Ambassador, Sir Archibald Clark Kerr was at the Embassy in Shanghai, he established a number of Committees consisting of unofficial members of the Shanghai community, for his assistance. Among such Committees was one known as "The Ambassador's Publicity Committee" which consisted, amongst others, of A. V. T. Dean, Manager in China of Messrs. Butterfield & Swire, the Reverend W. H. Hudspeth, representative of the British & Foreign Bible Society, and myself.
3. In consequence of the work undertaken by us at the request of H. M. Ambassador we were marked men, and I was confidentially informed that members of that Committee not on the Diplomatic List would be arrested as soon as the "KAMUKURA MARU" carrying Diplomatic and other officials, merchants, etc., had left Shanghai on 17th August 1942. Unfortunately representation made by me to His Majesty's Charge d'Affaires did not result in accomodation being made available for the above mentioned members of the Committee on the said steamer, with the result that we were left in Shanghai.
4. At 6.30 a.m. on 28th October 1942 I was arrested, and for three months was detained at Bridge House, the Headquarters in Shanghai of the Kempeitai, or Japanese Gendarmerie, as that body of military police was ordinarily referred to. The paper writing marked "V. S. B. 1." and now produced and shown to me, is my report "A" of the conditions under which I was confined at Bridge House aforesaid, examinations, generally inhuman treatment, and specific tortures, to which I was subjected.
5. On 28 January 1943 I was transferred from Bridge House to the Haiphong Road Prisoner of War Camp in Shanghai. Subsequently I was transferred with others from Haiphong Road Prisoner of War Camp to a Prisoner of War Camp at Fengtai, a few miles south-east of Peking. The paper writing now produced and shown to me, marked "V. S. B. 2." is a copy of my report "B" describing my experiences in those two Camps.
6. Subsequent to our release from Bridge House, the said A. V. T. Dean and W. H. Hudspeth and myself had opportunities of exchanging information as regards our experiences in Bridge House, from which it appeared that we had been confined under similar conditions, examined, ill-treated, and tortured, in much the same manner and to a greater or lesser degree.

SWORN by the said WILLIAM SLADE BUDGEY)
 at 1 The Sanctuary in the City of) Sgd. W. SLADE BUDGEY
 Westminster this 21st day of February)
 1946. Before me,
 Sgd. Henry L. Bolton
 a Commissioner for oaths.

This is the Exhibit marked "W. S.B. 1."
referred to in the Affidavit of
WILLIAM SLADE HUNTER Sworn before me,
this 21st day of February, 1946

Sgt. Henry L. Bolton

Comm. for Oaths.

Compared with the Original and Certified as being a true copy

R. I. M. HENDERSON, Lieut. Col.

Tolgo, 11 June 1946

Private & Confidential

REPORT A.

Brief resume of the treatment of William Slade Bungey (British) age 59. at Bridge House, Shanghai, from October 28th, 1942, to Jan. 28th 1943.

- Arrest At my Flat, No. 602 Grosvenor House, 319 Route Cardinal Mercier, Shanghai, by six gendarmes, accompanied by a Russian detective of the French Police, with two large motor cars and one closed army lorry, at 6.30 a. m. October 28th, 1942.
- Search They searched my Flat and took away sundry papers, photographs of my family, etc., and later took my dead box containing family jewels, foreign money, passport, and certain family documents. They seemed very angry, as they believed I had a lot of the British Press Attache's literature in my Flat - hence the lorry.
- Bridge House I was placed in a motor car with a gendarme in plain clothes each side of me who covered me with revolvers; also one with the Chauffeur. I was not allowed to take anything with me, and upon arrival at Bridge House was searched and all things taken away from my person and a receipt given for them (later returned after leaving Bridge House.) My collar, tie, handkerchiefs, studs, links, belt, braces and shoes were removed and for three months were not returned except shoes for wearing between cell and torture chamber; each time the shoes had to be returned to the cell guards.
- Cell I was thrown into a filthy, overcrowded cell, opposite the door leading to the compound, with the guards' office immediately in front of the cell bars. The size of the cell was approximately fifteen feet by ten and we had as many as 23 prisoners in it, the average being 18, and we were made to sit in a space not exceeding three feet square.
- In the corner of the cell was a hole out through the flooring which served as a W. C. The stench was awful and ever with us.
- The prisoners were made up of Chinese, Soviet Russians, Koreans, Duchy of Luxembourg, Japanese (occasional), English (myself only). They were all filthy and covered with lice, open sores and other wounds, the result of 3rd degree methods and long incarcerations. A thin, filthy, sore despoiled blanket was handed out each night and this was my only covering for the first month. They refused to allow anything to reach me until the end of November, and I was without a towel, face flannel, soap, toothbrush, etc., The latter three items I never received from my outside friends although I know they were sent immediately I was arrested. Washing facilities outside the cell were only granted to Koreans and Japanese, and two buckets of water were given us daily for washing the face and body, averaging 8 men to the bucket; after washing we used the water to clean the cell floor. As the prisoners were diseased the prospect of even a quick rub of the face and hands were horrible.
- During the whole three months we were not permitted a shave, haircut, or to cut our finger or toe nails. We tried breaking nails off and rubbing the broken finger nail on the concrete wall, but they festored badly and resulted in infected fingers for which the Japanese doctor would do nothing, and we made bread poultices from our food and bound up the fingers with a piece of shirt tail.
- After nearly two months I was moved to a cell in an isolated building where the snow came through the window on to the floor. We were practically barefooted all the time as our socks soon wore through. No heat was permitted, even in the coldest snowy weather. The torture chambers were immediately overhead and we could hear the cries of the victims day and night, also the groans of the prisoners in adjoining cells. All prisoners going out for questioning had to pass in front of our cell and oft times it was an unpleasant sight when they returned.

Food

During the whole three months the Japanese only supplied us daily with a thin, watery chinese cup of rice congee for breakfast, and for dinner and supper one slice of bread each meal about 1-1/2" thick.

My friends sent me parcels, but they did not reach me for the first five weeks, and thereafter I was supposed to get a weekly parcel, but only three parcels of foodstuffs actually reached me in three months, as we were given 10 minutes to eat the parcel which time was totally inadequate. At first I handed two-thirds of the parcel to my guards and requested that I be allowed to eat the balance at dinner time. They took it, but that was the last I saw of it. We had to eat the food outside the cell in the presence of the guards and what I couldn't eat in 10 minutes I throw through the bars of the cell to the other prisoners. I was caught at it and was beaten over the head and body with a thin iron bar and made to kneel on the concrete floor for 1 1/2 hours until the guard was changed.

For liquid we shared a chinese rice bowl containing warm water or weak tea twice daily between 5 men.

Exercise

We were never allowed to leave the cell for the first two months and the only exercise I got was at night when they took us out to the next room for questioning - a distance of 10 yards. We never saw the sun in 2 months, or the heavens in daylight. The last month when I was removed to the other building, conditions were slightly better. We exercised every other day for 10 minutes in the courtyard, if it wasn't snowing or raining, and when the water taps weren't frozen we could go out at 7 o'clock in the morning and wash under the taps. As we were so bitterly cold we could not take our clothes off. The guards made a tub of hot water about six times in that month and all the prisoners washed in it (10 cells) and then throw cold water over the body. That was heaven compared with our previous lot.

Questioning

For the first 13 days after I was pushed into cell No. 1 in the building adjoining the gendarmerie main office, no Japanese official came near me. I made many requests to the guards and interpreters (who came to the cells to bring out prisoners for questioning) to be taken before an officer and charged, but they only laughed at me and refused my request. Then, on the 13th day of my incarceration, they came at 9.15 p. m. (bedtime 8.30 p. m.) and ordered me to get up and go with them. I was hustled through the gendarmerie head office up the stairs, and pushed into a cubicle with 1 chair and a table. There, three gendarmes in uniform were waiting for me and a Japanese interpreter named Yokomizo (nicknamed Jimmy).

Jimmy started in at once by saying that these gendarmes had the power of life and death over me and I must agree to the information they had about me, otherwise I should never see my wife and children again. They then charged me with conducting propaganda against the Japanese, and said they had clear evidence of my activities against Japan when I was a member of the British Ambassador's Publicity Committee prior to the 8th December 1941, and that I had used the Yee Tsong Tobacco Co. Ltd. (Branch of the British-American Tobacco Co. Ltd.,) advertising organisation throughout China - both before and after December 8th 1941 - to stir up the Chinese against Japan. I denied it point blank and gave very full reasons which could quickly be substantiated - if given the opportunity, to prove the utter falseness of those charges. They worked on me for three months to make me sign a statement to that effect, but I refused and was made to sign a statement in Japanese which I was told was a true report of the questions put to me and the answers I had given. Not knowing the language I don't know what I signed - only that when I first demurred and asked for a translation I was beaten up and forced to sign. This is a digression: I must tell what happened the first night.

I said I would tell the truth and nothing but the truth and they could kill me if they liked, but I would make no false statement to suit

their requirements. They then laboured me over the head, neck, shoulders and arms with sticks, and a leather strap three thicknesses, each slightly narrower than the other. I fell several times and then the three of them struck me and I crashed over the table which collapsed; hours later I found myself all doubled up amongst the debris, and as I was coming to, a gendarme came in and stomped on my shins with his nailed boots. Later they propped me up and made me write a farewell letter to my wife and children, which I did and gave to them. Then they took me to another chamber and took off my coat and strapped me to a low tressle table with a half circle cut out of one end for the head to fit in. They then brought several large cans of water and poured without stopping on to my mouth and nose, asking all the time if I would confess. All I could do was wag my head - meaning "no". If I wanted to say "yes", I should lift my head forward in a nodding motion. Ropes were across neck, chest, thighs and ankles. I took in a great deal of water and became unconscious. When I came to, a gendarme in uniform with top boots was riding my stomach astride and bumping up and down - getting the water out of my stomach. I was retching, and awful bile and stuff came up with the water, covering my eyes, ears, face and hair. I still refused and was then half lifted and dragged down the stairs and made to sit at the back of the gendarmerie office until I was fit to be taken to the cell. That was 5 a. m. and I had been on the go since 9.15 a. m. - I was taken back about 6 a. m. I was told that worse would befall me if I did not confess within 48 hours.

Two nights later they repeated the water torture and this time put a dirty piece of towelling cloth over my nose and mouth. This was awful but I refused to subscribe to lies and became unconscious for a longer time because it was morning when I was able to get my bearings and return to the cell - about 5.45 a. m.

A few nights later I was again beaten so badly that for three weeks I could not put my head to a pillow nor think clearly in any way; they tried to get information from me on other matters concerning my Company, but I was beyond thinking - my memory wasn't functioning.

During these periods the torturers were inquisitor-gendarmes named Yokohata, Makatani and Suzuki. I have only found out the names since comparing notes in camp with others who were there with me. Yokomizo I am sure of; I can identify the others when confronted with them.

Later, when I went to the cell in the other building I was called out twice for all night sessions and my entire history from birth was required in detail. The interpreter was named Miyabe. He did not behave unreasonably and I have no kick with his treatment except for the long all night sessions. Afterwards he interrogated me during afternoon sessions when he took down exactly what activities took place at the British Press Attache's office as regards propaganda covering the European war up to December 8th 1941. There was nothing of a secret nature in this as it was not against Japan, and when my memory failed Miyabe himself supplied the details, showing he was fully conversant with our activities.

I also had several other beatings, etc. etc., but the foregoing is sufficient to go on with.

On the morning of January 28th, 1943, the head of the gendarmerie office addressed us and said that by the graciousness of the Generals we would not be court-martialed, but would be sent to Haiphong Road camp, and he was sure the Commandant would allow us to see our Shanghai friends - if we could not visit them, then they could visit us. Both were disallowed, and in 34 months I have not had a visitor.

My stay in Bridge House resulted in my arriving at Haiphong Road camp suffering from:-

1. Beri-beri.
2. Acute discharges from both ears and from the nose, caused by

infection contracted during the water torture.

3. Deafness. My hearing is at least 50% worse.
4. Hernia. I need an operation to sew up the stomach due to the water torture.
5. Lumbago.
6. I also suffer from "black-outs" and occasional complete loss of memory of a temporary nature, due to beatings over the head, eyes, and on the cheeks.

There is a very valuable man we should contact who was a prisoner in my cell for nearly a year. He is a Korean, a fine linguist and loyal ally and was employed by Jardine Matheson & Co., for which he was put into Bridge House. His name is Shur, and his two sisters from the Telephone Co., were also in Bridge House. He is familiar with all that went on, as the guards conversed with him all the time, and he knows the lay-out of the place thoroughly.

I have confined this memorandum to what effected me, but I can give much more of what I saw and heard concerning others - too horrible for words.

Signed by W. Slade Bungey

Director.
Yee Tsoong Tobacco Distributors Ltd.,
175 Szechow Road,
Shanghai, China.

Peking
28th Aug., 1945

Branch of British-American Tobacco Co. Ltd.,
London (England)

& Richmond (Virginia) U. S. A.,

Note: This report was compiled at request of Major Nicholls, U. S. Army Investigator and handed him on August 28th 1945. Later a full Army (U. S. A.) Commission was flown to Peking, China, in Sept. 1945 and complete forms on treatment during the 3 years imprisonment, by the Japanese Military and Gendarmerie, made out by all in Haiphong Road and Fentai Camps.

To these Forms I also attached copy of this Report.

Signed W. Slade Bungey.

Compared with the original and
certified as being a true copy

R. I. H. HENDERSON, Lieut. Col.

Tokyo, 11 June 1946

This is the Exhibit marked "W. S. B. 2."
referred to in the Affidavit of
WILLIAM SLADE BURGAY Sworn before me
this 21st day of February 1946.

Sgd. Henry L. Bolton

Commr for Oaths

Compared with the original
and certified as being a
true copy

R. I. M. HENDERSON, Lieut. Col.

Tokyo, 11 June 1946

REPORT B.

WILLIAM SLADY BUNGY - REPORT B on Imprisonment by Japanese in Shanghai, Haiphong Road Camp and Fengtai Camp near Peking from January 28th, 1943 to August 19th, 1945. British - age 58½

To complete the story of my Imprisonment by the Japanese, I would state that on January 28th, 1943, I was taken to Haiphong Road Camp, Shanghai.

Approximately 370 men were in this camp under Commandant Orders. By order of the Japanese Government, we were classified as Prisoners of War and all given the rank of Sergeant and designated as "Dangerous Political Prisoners".

The average age in the camp at that time was 46½ and later when Americans were repatriated in September 1943, the average was higher.

The Japanese did not provide any beds, bedding, or equipment, of any kind excepting one metal rice bowl and a cup, both of which were used discards by the Japanese army and were chipped and rusty in places.

The food was totally insufficient for minimum subsistence and when we protested, the Commandant said "we received Half Prisoners of War rations because we did not do any heavy work". We pointed out the average age of our men, but were told never to bring up this food matter again or we would be severely disciplined under military law. In fact, we were threatened several times with "Bridge House". To commence with I was able to get an outside contact to send in parcels of food, using the proceeds of sales of some of my private effects, which had been placed with a Swiss Storage Firm, but as the amount realized was small, it soon became exhausted. For a time we used the small sums provided through the Swiss Consulate by the British Government for comforts and to augment our food - by buying essentials such as potatoes, Lima and Soya Beans, Cracked Wheat, Red Beans, Hard Peas and Lard. Later, owing to difficulty with exchange rates, the British Government discontinued sending "Comfort Money". The last few payments were so delayed that when paid by the Japanese authorities, the Chinese Central Bank Notes had so depreciated that they were next to worthless and would only buy one or two items of little food value. It became necessary to raise loans outside to buy cracked wheat, beans soya and red, lard, egg flakes and potatoes to augment the small amount supplied by the Japanese. This food was only used for bare subsistence to keep up our minimum calory needs. Many men were developing Beri-Beri and other serious ailments due to malnutrition.

Eight to twenty five men were packed closely in rooms according to size.

Our armed guards comprised Japanese Regular Soldiers, Japanese Gendarmes, Japanese Police from the Shanghai Municipality, and Indian Sikh Police from the former International Municipal Settlement. The four branches were on duty all the time.

The first winter, rooms were heated. The second winter, one small stove was provided in the main hall, which proved so unsatisfactory that all heating was discontinued and the temperature was often below freezing point in all rooms and went below 20 degrees Fahrenheit in the courtyards which were enclosed.

During the whole of 1944 and up to the close of the war September 1945, the Red Cross Letters, which we wrote half yearly - July and December - were not sent by the Japanese, they destroyed them.

Early in August 1943, the Japanese arrested two of our men and they were returned after ten days of torture in a shocking condition. One, a British Member of the Shanghai Municipal Police named Hutton, was brought back to the Camp by the Gendarmerie on August 13th 1943 in a private car, was lying huddled on the floor of the car in a dying condition, his body

REPORT B.

WILLIAM SLADE HUGHTON - REPORT B on Imprisonment by Japanese in Shanghai, Haiphong Road Camp and Fengtai Camp near Peking from January 28th, 1943 to August 19th, 1945. British - age 58 $\frac{1}{2}$

To complete the story of my Imprisonment by the Japanese, I would state that on January 28th, 1943, I was taken to Haiphong Road Camp, Shanghai.

Approximately 370 men were in this camp under Commandant Orders. By order of the Japanese Government, we were classified as Prisoners of War and all given the rank of Sergeant and designated as "Dangerous Political Prisoners".

The average age in the camp at that time was 46 $\frac{1}{2}$ and later when Americans were repatriated in September 1947, the average was higher.

The Japanese did not provide any beds, bedding, or equipment, of any kind excepting one metal rice bowl and a cup, both of which were used discarded by the Japanese army and were chipped and rusty in places.

The food was totally insufficient for minimum subsistence and when we protested, the Commandant said "we received Half Prisoners of War rations because we did not do any heavy work". We pointed out the average age of our men, but were told never to bring up this food matter again or we would be severely disciplined under military law. In fact, we were threatened several times with "Bridge House". To commence with I was able to get an outside contact to send in parcels of food, using the proceeds of sales of some of my private effects, which had been placed with a Swiss Storage Firm, but as the amount realized was small, it soon became exhausted. For a time we used the small sums provided through the Swiss Consulate by the British Government for comforts and to augment our food - by buying essentials such as potatoes, Lima and Soya Beans, Cracked Wheat, Red Beans, Hard Peas and Lard. Later, owing to difficult with exchange rates, the British Government discontinued sending "Comfort Money". The last few payments were so delayed that when paid by the Japanese authorities, the Chinese Central Bank Notes had so depreciated that they were next to worthless and would only buy one or two items of little food value. It became necessary to raise loans outside to buy cracked wheat, beans soya and red, lard, oat flakes and potatoes to augment the small amount supplied by the Japanese. This food was only used for bare subsistence to keep up our minimum calory needs. Many men were developing Beri-Beri and other serious ailments due to malnutrition.

Eight to twenty five men were packed closely in rooms according to size.

Our armed guards comprised Japanese Regular Soldiers, Japanese Gendarmes, Japanese Police from the Shanghai Municipality, and Indian Sikh Police from the former International Municipal Settlement. The four branches were on duty all the time.

The first winter, rooms were heated. The second winter, one small stove was provided in the main hall, which proved so unsatisfactory that all heating was discontinued and the temperature was often below freezing point in all rooms and went below 20 degrees Fahrenheit in the courtyards which were enclosed.

During the whole of 1944 and up to the close of the war September 1945, the Red Cross Letters, which we wrote half yearly - July and December - were not sent by the Japanese, they destroyed them.

Early in August 1943, the Japanese arrested two of our men and they were returned after ten days of torture in a shocking condition. One, a British Member of the Shanghai Municipal Police named Hutton, when brought back to the Camp by the Gendarmerie on August 13th 1943 in a private car, was lying huddled on the floor of the car in a dying condition, his body

was incinerated, and had been dehydrated. He was semi-conscious and died two days later, 15th August 1943.

The Japanese Guards under Lieutenant Honda and others, did everything they could to make life unbearable, using every mean device possible to deprive us of any comforts which we by our own efforts could contrive. One example - a few of us were able to purchase (new after the War) a Diathermy machine which was badly needed in the Clinic. The Colonel approved and a few weeks after it arrived they refused us electric current for it.

On July 8th, we were ordered to pack up and were told the camp would be transferred north. We went by army trucks to the Shanghai Station and there were packed (like sardines) into 3rd Class Cars - hard seats - and notwithstanding the terrific heat, we had to stay packed for four days and nights in this train and were only allowed to move when going to the lavatory at the end of the car. Barbed wire was strung along the windows etc. and during the whole time were only permitted to leave the car twice for ten minutes walk on the Platform at Pukow and Tsinanfu. Our legs and ankles swelled up so badly that we had to take off our shoes. For food we were given hard biscuits of the dog variety and water once a day.

A strong guard of soldiers armed with Tommy and Machine Guns, hand Grenades etc., were on duty all the time.

On the fourth night at 11 p. m. we arrived at Fengtai Station - junction of the Peking - Mukden, Peking-Tientsin and Peking - Hankow Railways, which was an important military strategic centre for the Japs. We were made to walk over a mile, carrying luggage, etc., in the dark over a rough track. We were then dumped into a section of a Railway Godown. Over 200 men were placed in a section which was unhealthily overcrowded.

All communications with the outside were disallowed. No papers, mail, or facilities for buying food. The Swiss Consul in Peking was prohibited from contacting the Camp. High Tension Power Barbed Wires, five rows deep, were strung around the camp and were less than a foot from our open field latrines. A further lot of wires were placed about 300 yards from our camp.

We should have starved had we not brought with us some of the Iron Rations purchased by means of the loan previously mentioned.

Again, no provision was made for our coming. Fortunately, we packed our cooking and medical equipment on the train, so were able in part to keep the Clinic and cookhouse going.

We were told that this camp was only temporary and have since learned that we were intended for Japan, to be placed at a strategic centre (presumably as B.29 targets). Anyway, conditions became so difficult in Japan that our destination was changed to Manchuria, and it was only the Atomic Bomb which saved us from being sent there.

On August 17th, 1945, Major Nicholls, U. S. Army, with six others dropped by parachutes near our camp and were taken to Jap North China High Command Headquarters in Peking (six miles from Fengtai Camp). Due to the strenuous efforts made by Major Nicholls, we were taken to Peking on August 19th at 11 p. m. and lodged in two empty Japanese Brothel-Restaurants, and remained there until finally released and taken to the Wagon-Lits Hotel, Peking, on September 6th, 1945. There we awaited transportation to Shanghai. We left Peking on October 5th and boarded the U. S. A. Attack Personnel Auxiliary Vessel LaVaca and arrived at Shanghai via Tsingtau on October 11th, 1945. After seeing the chaotic condition Shanghai was in, I decided to carry on in the same ship to San Francisco, via Okinawa and Honolulu. I left the U. S. A. on the "Queen Elizabeth" and arrived in England on November 27, 1945.

In conclusion, I should like to place on record the admirable work done in the Camps by Dr. Sturton, in charge of the Clinic and Camp's Health; Messrs. E. Collar and W. Wright - the Camp's representatives - and Webber, in charge of the Kitchen. All are British, though the prisoners were of several nationalities, British, American, Dutch, Greeks, Belgians, Italians and Russian. These four men worked very hard and handled the difficult situations which constantly arose in admirable fashion.

Signed W. Slade Bungay

<u>English Address</u>)	
c/o British American Tobacco Co., Ltd.,)	
Rusham House,	)	at present
Egham,	)	on leave
Surrey	)	in England

CHINA Address

Director
Yee Tsoong Tobacco Distributors Ltd.,
175 Soochow Road,
Shanghai,
China.

Compared with the original and
certified as being a true copy

R. I. M. HENDERSON, Lieut. Col.

Tokyo, 11 June 1946

EXHIBIT 894A EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT # 8/75

No. 1

一九四三年十一月八日 上海 公共租界
「上海警備司令部」に於て「W.S.B.」に於て「上海」に於て
「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て
一九四三年十一月八日 上海 公共租界
「上海警備司令部」に於て「W.S.B.」に於て「上海」に於て

x x x x x

四 一九四三年十月二十日 上海 公共租界
「上海警備司令部」に於て「W.S.B.」に於て「上海」に於て
「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て
「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て
「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て
「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て

五 一九四三年一月十八日 上海 公共租界
「上海警備司令部」に於て「W.S.B.」に於て「上海」に於て
「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て
「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て
「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て
「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て「上海」に於て

x x x x x

RETURN TO ROOM 361

COPY

者達ト一語
W.S.B. 記
経験ヲ述ク

Doc. 8175

報告

x x x x x

逮捕

一九四三年十月二十八日午前六時三十分、上海「ルト・カーテ」に於て一九四三年「クリフ」の第六〇二号、私、部屋に於てフランス警察、ロシヤ探偵ヲ伴ツテ六人、憲兵ニ依ルニ我等ハ二台、大型自動車ト一台、箱型トラックヲ持ツテ来タ。

搜索

彼等、私、部屋ヲ搜索シテ、私、種々、書類、家族、寫眞其他ヲ取リテ其後、私、家、寶石類、外國、金、旅券、及各家関スル或ル書類、ハイツに居ル証書函ヲ取リテ来タ。彼等、私が英國大使館附報道官、印刷物ヲ多數私、部屋ニ持ツテ居ルト信じて居タデ大層怒ツテ称テアツタ——ソレヲ箱型トラックヲ持ツテ来タデアル。

フリツゲハウス

私ハ自動車ニ乗セラシ、私、兩側ニハ私服、憲兵ガ坐ツテ、拳銃ヲツキケテ居タ。運轉手、ソバモ一人居タ。私ハ何物ヲモ持ツテ行ク事ヲ許サレカッタ。フリツゲハウスニ着クトスガニ、身体検査ヲサレ、總べて、物ハ身体ヨリ取リ去ラシ、ソ、品々、受取り証ガ与ヘラシタ（後日フリツゲハウスヲ去ツテ後ニ返サレタ）

カラシ、ネクタイ、ハンケチ、飾、ボタン、カフスボタン、ベルト、ズボン等、靴ハ取リ去ラシ、監房ト拷問室、間ヲ往復スルニ為ニ穿ク靴ヲ除イテハ、三月、間返ヘサレカッタ。靴ハソノ毎ニ

Doc. 8/175

☆

監房、衛兵ニ送サテハハナシキ

監房

松不潔ヲ人、込ニテセル監房ニ投ガ込ニシハ構内ニ西シク
入口ノ反対側ニアリ。監房、格子ノスクヤニハ衛兵室ガアツタ。監房
大キハ約十五呎ニ十呎テ、十八名ガ普通ナルガ。其ノ中ニ我々ニ
三名ニ居タ。三呎四方ヲ越ニテ場勢ニ坐ラサシタ。
監房、隅ニ床ヲ切ツテ穴ガアケラシテ、ソレガ便所、便ラシク。悪
臭ニ基タシク、イツモ我々ニ浸ルニテ居タ。

囚人ハ中國人、ソコエト人、朝鮮人「ルクセンブルグ」公國人、日本
人(時々)ト英國人(稀一人、之)テアツタ。彼等ハ皆不潔ヲ残
酷ニ訊問ヲ受トテ期間、監禁ノ結果、亂化膿シテ腫物甚
シ。他ノ傷ヲ復ルニテ居タ。薄イ不潔大膿ヲ汚シテ一枚ノ全布
ガ每晚渡サレ。是ガ最初、一月ノ間、私、唯一ノ掛ケルモノテ下ツタ。
十月、末迄彼等ハ何物ヲモ私、許ニ居ケサセテカツタ。ソレヲ私
タセル洗面用、フコニセル石鹼、齒磨揚子等、他ヲ持テカ
ツタ。終リ、三日、私ガ逮捕サレルトスガニ送ラシタ。ソレヲ私知ツ
テ居ルガ外部、友人ヨリ私ハ全然受テ取ラナカツタ。監房外
ノ水洗、便ハ朝鮮人ト日本人ノミニ許サレ。我々ニハ毎日顔
ト身体ヲ洗フ為ニ、二杯ノバケツ、水亦与ヘラシタ。平均バケツ
一個ニ八人テアツタ。洗ツタ後ニ我々ハソノ水ヲ監房ノ床ヲ掃
除スルノニ用タタ。俘虜達ハ病ガ凡テアツタカス。一寸顔ヤ手ヲ
擦ルコトヲ考ヘル文テモ恐シカツタ。

No. 3

丸三月ノ間、我ハ顔ヲ剃ルコトヲ許サレ。指ヤ足ノ爪ヲ切
ルコトヲ許サレカツタ。我々ハ爪ヲ折ララトシ、折ラタ爪ヲコソリシ

Doc. 817

壁を操るヲ試み侍ら皆ニ此ノ化膿ノ指ニ繼因ガ入ル活
果ニテモ日本、臣等ノシテ請ニテ亦ニヨリトイテ我々
我々食物ヲパン、巴布コツク、シヤツ、襪、切子指、繻帶等
殆ド一月、後一新離シテ違物、監房ニ移サレモ、其処ノ窓
ラ雪カスツテ来ニ来ニ違ハス。靴下ハスガ、使用ニ堪(十)ク
ツクス我々ハ、其ニ始終既足テアツタ。極寒、降雪、時
モ、暖ハ与(三)シカス。携同室ハスガ、頭上ニツツテ、我々、夜
トク章トク様控者ノ時ビ声、隣リ、監房、俘虜、呻キ声ヲ聞ク事
ガ出来タ。訊問ニ由テ行ク俘虜ハ皆、我々、監房、前ヲ通ラ
ナレバナラカス。ソレテ、彼等ガ戻ツテ来ニ時、屢々不快
有様デアツタ。

食物

三月、向中ノスト日本人、我々ニ毎日朝食トシテ、茶碗一杯、薄
イ水、ヤウナ強ク、晝食ト夕食ニ、夫々一町半位、厚サ、パント切ラ
与(二)ク文デアツタ。

私、又運ハ小包ヲ送(テ)タガ始メ、五週間、間、其等、私、所ニ届(ケ)タカ
其、後私、毎週一、夜、小包ヲ受取ルコトニツツキタガ、實際ニ、三月
ノ間ニ食物、小包ガ多ク三、個、私、許ニ届(イ)タガ文デアツタ。又、食
モノヲ食ビ、ニ時間ヲ十分、間、与(二)シ、ソレハ、金、十、分、デアツタ。
最初、内、私、ハ、小包、三、分、ニテ、衛兵ニ渡(シ)テ、残(リ)タガ夕飯、時ニ
食(ベ)サレテクレニ様ニ頼(ミ)タガ。彼等ハ、ソレヲ取(ツ)タガソレツキリ私

ハ、ソレヲ見(カ)ケタカス。我々ハ食物ヲ、監房、外、テ、衛兵、面、赤(ク)食(ビ)
ナレバナラカス。ソレヲ十分、間ニ我(ガ)食(ビ)ラシカス。モ、ハ、監房、
椅子カラ他、俘虜ニ投(ゲ)テ与(ル)タ。私ハ、ソレヲ見(付)ケラシテ、頭ヤ身

Doc. 8/75. 女

体弱、鉄棒三打、衛兵が長蛇の足、一時間、守

り、床の上三跪き也。

飲物として、我々の飯茶碗に入らば湯或は薄茶一日一回

五人分ケアツ。

運動

始々、二月間、決意、監房ヲ離る心ヲ許さず。私を得、

唯一、運動ハ夜間ニ於て下り、彼等が誤問、為隣室ニ各々

連行時デアツ。距離ハ十ヤトデアツ。我々の二月間

決意、太陽ヲ見、又晝間ニ空ニ見、事モナカ。私ハ他、建

物ニ移、夕最後、月ニハ状態、少シヨカ。我々の雪雨が降、

ナイ時、半度、一日オキ、十時間運動。水道、栓が凍、居

ナイ時、朝、六時ニ出、行キ栓、下、改メ事、出来。我々非常

ニ寒、カツ、手着物ヲ脱、事、出来、カツ。衛兵、其、自

月、六度、桶一杯、不陽ヲ湯ニキ、全部、信房が、三、入浴

シ、監房ハ、下、後、冷水ヲア、ソ、我々、以、運命ニ

比、ハ、天国デア。

訊問

憲兵隊本部、隣リ、建物、中、監房ニ私ヲ押、込、メ、シ、力、最

初、十三日間、日本、役人、誰モ私ニ直付、力、ナカ。私、監房ニ

来、訊問、為、信房ヲ連、出、シ、衛兵十通訳、將校、前ニ

連、行、ツ、訴、追、ス、ル、ヤ、ウ、ニ、度々、頼、メ、テ、彼等ハ、私ヲ嘲笑、ス

ノ、デ、私、要求ヲ拒絶、シ、ソ、カ、私ハ、監禁、サ、キ、カ、ス、十三、日、間

ニ、彼等ハ、午後九時十五分ニ来、テ、(就寝時間、午後八時半)私

No. 5

Doc 8175-7

起キテ彼等、一處ニ行キテ... 隊本部ニ與テ... 伊ニ込メ... 講ト云ニ名... 「心」ト云ニ... 「心」ハズトニ始メ... 生殺、權ヲ有シテ居リ... 同意トケレバ... 不ト、ソレカラ彼等ハ日本人ニ不利ト宣傳ニ行ヒタリ... 和ヲ答テ、彼等ハ和ハ一九四一年十二月八日以前ニ英國大使、宣傳委員會、一員ヲアツタ時、和、反目行爲、明シカテ證據ヲ持ツ居リ... 煙草有限公司、中國金條ニ渡ル石炭機關ヲ利用シテ... 年十二月八日以前ニ以後ニ中國人ヲ及目的ニ煽動シタリ云々... 證據立テル事ヲ一モモ機會ヲ与ヘラレ、速ヤク立証シ得ル命令ヲ理得テ譽ラヌ... 彼等ハコノヤウニ趣旨、陳述ヲシ、和ヲ署名セバヤトシテ三月間和ニ働キカケタガ和ハ拒絕シ、和ニ向テナシク質問ト和ナシク答、眞、報告テアルト云ルニ夕日本語、陳述書ニ署名セバ... 最初ニ躊躇シテ、離談ヲニテクシト頼ニタ時、和ハ殴打シテ、無理ニ署名セバニシタ。是ハ支那、話テアル、和ハ最初、晩ニ起リタ事ヲ述ベナシバナラナイ。

No. 6

Doc 8185

Handwritten text in vertical columns, likely a historical document or manuscript. The characters are dense and difficult to decipher due to the image quality.

167

Doc. 8. 175

切手覆書 是公三ノヨリノ事 亦在當時有名之書也 但此書之書 亦
周意 感之 是公ノ事 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之
六朝ノ事 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之

發後夜 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之
又及之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之
事不 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之
私ノ 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之

私ノ 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之
タテアル

一 脚氣
二 水責ノ 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之
三 耳ノ 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之
四 心ノ 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之

五 腰痛
六 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之
又ノ 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之
又ノ 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之 亦不氣ノ 雖之

146

Doc 8176

報 告 B

私日本監禁所、結核等一九四三年一月三日、上海、八月
 丁上、停食收容所、連行、
 約三百七十名、人達、小豆或長、下、此、停食收容所、居、且、其、政府、
 命、依、我、之、戰、事、停食、上、令、散、下、監、軍、中、階、級、其、言、之、危、險、政
 治、因、人、上、言、之、名、稱、可、何、也、
 其、時、收、容、所、於、平、均、年、齡、四、六、歲、半、上、之、後、米、分
 一九四三年九月、中、德、國、上、之、時、平、均、年、齡、六、十、高、力、也、
 日本、何、等、後、之、後、其、與、今、其、又、一、個、金、屬、米、鉢、上、
 除、上、何、等、備、品、上、加、上、其、之、也、上、其、天、等、備、品、上、其、其、日、本、軍、隊
 使、上、之、之、元、子、所、之、破、損、之、銷、か、上、其、居、之、之、食、料、最、少、限、生、活
 之、身、之、金、然、不、元、金、上、
 御、上、上、之、上、之、上、之、上、
 停食、上、平、均、年、齡、指、摘、之、之、分、決、上、
 上、上、之、上、之、上、
 數、回、上、上、上、上、上、
 置、上、上、上、上、上、
 送、上、上、上、上、上、
 上、上、上、上、上、
 食、物、上、上、上、上、上、
 金、上、上、上、上、上、
 上、上、上、上、上、

109

Doc 8176

報 告 B

私日本合監禁者、多語、結、為一九四三年一月、自上海、八百
 以下、住居收容所、連行、以下、陳、之、也。
 約三百七十名、入、此、小、等、或、長、之、三、此、住居收容所、之、也、日本政府、
 命、依、此、戰、時、住居、令、第、七、條、軍、事、階、級、之、與、之、危、險、之、故、
 治、因、人、下、言、之、名、稱、之、何、也、之、也、
 其、時、收、容、所、於、此、年、均、年、齡、四、十、六、歲、半、之、三、後、之、者、各、
 元、四、年、九、月、中、德、國、十、七、之、時、年、均、年、齡、之、三、十、高、力、之、三、也、
 日、本、人、何、等、之、後、之、後、其、之、與、之、又、一、個、金、屬、袋、米、餅、之、也、
 除、之、何、等、之、備、品、之、也、之、也、之、也、之、也、之、也、之、也、日本軍隊、
 使、之、之、之、之、所、之、破、損、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、
 之、
 御、之、
 席、之、
 之、
 數、回、之、
 置、之、
 送、之、
 之、
 食、物、之、補、之、
 金、之、使、之、
 及、之、

No 9

Doc 8. 17. 5

非常ニ遲延ニシテ... 中央銀行紙... 穀類... 燃料... 衛生... 病氣... 應許諸室内

最初、冬ニ諸室ノ暖房ナシニシテ... 一九四四年、全期間中及一九四五年九月、終戦ニ至ルニ終

一九四三年八月初旬、日本人、我々一行中、二名ヲ逮捕ニシテ、拷問後、復
野ノ懐然タル状態ヲ歸ルニシテ、ハットニト言ニ上海市警察部、一安
人部員、一九四三年八月十三日憲兵隊ニ依リ、個人自動車ヲ以テ各所ニ連シ
來サシテ、野瀕死、状態ニ事、床、ニテ、三十分ニ横臥ニシ居ニテ、復、身体、
要傷ヲ負テ、水糞ヲ失テ、居ルニシテ、復、六十分、人事不省ニシテ、三日、後、

一九四三年八月十三日死亡ニシテ、 本田中尉 其、他、指揮下ニ在ル日本
衛兵、我々が自ニ、努力ニ依リ、若シテ、如何ナル慰安娛樂ヲモ無ニテ、凡
元身、為テ、手殺テ、再ニ、生テ、耐、難キ、事、ニ、シテ、復、野、出、來、ル、事、何、モ

No 10

Doc 8175*

ヤリミタ。一例ヲ申セ、我々中、數名、若シ電氣盜難者(戰後支那)
購出ト出末トが夫シ、此際空ニ非常ト受取ルベシ。大佐ノ買出ニ
ト承認シミタが夫シ、到着ニ數週間、後復身、我々が夫シ、竟
流ヲ通ズルニト拒否シミタ。

X X X X X

9611

Ex. # 1895

Doc. No. 8127 *

Page 1

C O N F I D E N T I A L

For The War Crimes Office

Judge Advocate General's Department -- War Department

United States of America

In the matter of the torture	*	Perpetuation of Testimony
of approximately 50 American	*	of James Scott Browning,
prisoners of war at Shanghai	*	Pfc., U.S. Marine Corps
Prisoner of War Camp by a	*	
Japanese civilian named	*	
Ishihari	*	

Taken at: Reform, Ala.

Date: 29 December 1945

In the presence of: James R. Farrell, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps, Security and Intelligence Division, Headquarters Fourth Service Command.

Reporter: Ethel I. Eubanks, Dist. 6, 4th Service Command, 240 Graymont Avenue, Birmingham, Alabama.

Questioned by: James R. Farrell, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps

Question: State your name, rank, permanent home address and any other pertinent information about yourself.

Answer: My name is James Scott Browning. I am a Private First Class in the United States Marine Corps. I was born 24 April 1920 at Booth, Ala. I have had three years college at Mississippi State, Starkville, Miss. I enlisted in the U. S. Marine Corps on 14 June 1941. After taking basic training I was sent to Pearl Harbor on 30 August 1941 then went to Wake Island where I was stationed with the Marine garrison. I was captured on 23 December 1941 while on Wake Island. I am presently on furlough from the U. S. Naval Hospital, Millington, Tenn., and return to the hospital on 8 January 1946. I will be discharged from the service shortly thereafter. I am single. My home address is Box 207, Reform, Ala.

/s/ J.S.B.

CONFIDENTIAL

Q Give a description of the civilian named Ishihari who was responsible for the torture of approximately 50 American prisoners of war at Shanghai Prisoner of War Camp in February 1944.

A Ishihari, (first name not known), was a civilian interpreter at the Shanghai Prisoner of War Camp from the Summer of 1942 until March 1945. Ishihari was about 45 years of age; was about 5'8" tall; he was very slender and wore a small mustache. He wore glasses. Ishihari was married and lived in Shanghai with his wife. He had been a taxi driver in Honolulu before the war. His picture appears on page 2 of Volume 1, No. 6 issue of "Prisoner of War Bulletin" published in Washington, D. C., by the American Red Cross and this is the November 1943 issue. Ishihari is the Japanese escort wearing glasses and is standing with his right side and back to the camera. He left the Shanghai Prisoner of War Camp in March 1945 and it is my understanding that he was taken into the Japanese army as a Three-star Private and was a driver for some Japanese General in the Shanghai area.

Q State what you know concerning the torture of approximately 50 American prisoners of war by Ishihari in February 1944.

A At the Shanghai Prisoner of War Camp it was possible for the American prisoners to buy some merchandise if they had the necessary money. At the Shanghai Prisoner of War Camp there were Chinese civilians who were working on the construction of the rifle range project. It became the custom of the American Prisoners of War to turn over to these few Chinese civilians their rings, watches, and other valuables. These Chinese would, in turn, take the valuables into Shanghai, sell them and return the money to the American Prisoners of War. This had been going on for some time. In some way civilian interpreter, Ishihari, found out about this and managed to get the names of most of the American prisoners of war who had been dealing with the Chinese. Ishihari got the approximately 50 prisoners of war together and, although he knew that they were guilty and apparently had all the facts, he tortured these men with the water cure. Ishihari, himself, was directly responsible for this torture, although he had two other Japanese, names not known, assisting him.

Q What method did Ishihari use to torture these Americans?

CONFIDENTIAL

Q He stripped the American prisoners of war, took them outside in the snow and gave them the water cure by forcing water into their stomach and then jumping on their stomach and forcing the water out. When the American prisoners of war would pass out he would take them to a post out in the snow and revive them by pouring ice water over them. He then would repeat the water cure process. During this time Ishihari beat the prisoners of war with a riding crop about two feet long which had been loaded with lead.

Q Do you know the names of any American prisoners of war who were subjected to this torture?

A Yes; I know a United States Army Staff Sergeant Minnick whose home is in Pennsylvania, Marine Staff Sergeant Joe Stowe whose home is in Georgia, a Doctor Foley, (Naval doctor), Lt. (jg), and a Marine Technical Sergeant Stowers whose home is in Alabama who were subjected to this torture. All these men actually had to take the water cure.

Q Did you, personally, see all of this torture?

A Yes; I saw all of the part that took place on the outside; some of the preliminary phases of this water cure took place on the inside of the building which I did not see, but I actually saw all of it which took place on the outside.

/s/ James Scott Browning
JAMES SCOTT BROWNING
Private First Class

S E A L
STATE OF ALABAMA)
 : SS
COUNTY OF PICKENS)

I, James Scott Browning, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ James Scott Browning
JAMES SCOTT BROWNING
Private First Class

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 4th day of January 1946.

My commission expires 5/8/47 /s/ O. U. Cook

CONFIDENTIAL

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, James R. Farrell, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps, certify that on 29 December, personally appeared before me James Scott Browning, Private First Class, United States Marine Corps, and gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth; and that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said James Scott Browning read the same and affixed his signature thereto in my presence.

PLACE: _____

DATE: _____

JAMES R. FARRELL
Special Agent
Security & Intelligence
Corps

答、私ノ名ハ「ヂエイムス、スコット、ブライ」ニ

問、一九四四年二月「イシハラ」ニヨル米國捕虜

凡ソ五十名ノ機關ニ屬シ知ルトコロヲ辨ベク

サヤ。

答、

上海捕虜收容所ナハ米國捕虜ハ必要ナ合ガテ

レバ西島ヲ買フコトガ出来タ。上海捕虜收

所ニハ射撃場建設工等ニ切イテキタ支那人ノ

非歐民族ヲ起シキタ。米國捕虜起ハ是等賞名ノ

支那人非歐民族ニ彼等ノ指圖、時許、其ノ

他賞品ヲ渡スノガ慣例トナツタ。其代リニ

是等ノ支那人起ハ其ノ貴重品ヲ上場へ持ツテ

行キソレ等ヲ賣ツテ米國ノ捕虜起ニ金ヲ返ス

ノテアツタ。此ノ事ハ捕虜ラクノ間接イテキタ。

日本人通稱「イシハラ」ガドウツタモノカ此

ノ事ヲ發見シ、支那人ト取引ラシキタ大カ

ノ米國捕虜ノ在ラ何トカツテ知リ得タ。「イ

シハラ」ハ約五十名ノ捕虜ラ一箱ニ集メタ。

ソツテ彼等ガ有罪ナラコトヲ知ツテ居リ、

然モ實際上ソノ事實ヲ知ツテモタニモ拘ラズ、

彼ハ是等ノ人々ヲ水治療ヲ持同シタ。他三名

Doc 8127

EX 1885

Q

1.

Doc 8127A

2.

前不詳ノ二名ノ日本人ガ「イシハリ」ヲ防ケ
タガ此ノ為同ニ闘シテ「イシハリ」自身直
接責任ガアツタ。

問、「イシハリ」ハ是等ノ米國人進ヲ禁閉スル爲

如何ナル方法ヲ用ヒタカ。

答、彼ハ米國捕虜進ヲ禁ニシ、外ノ害ノ中へ進出

シ、水治療ダトイツテ無理ニ彼等ノ陣ノ中ニ

水ヲ入レ、ソレカラ彼等ノ腹ノ上デ跳ンデ水

ヲ出サセタ。

米國捕虜ガ通過スルト等ノ中ノ弱ル柱ノ所へ

進レ出シ、彼等ノ上カラ水ヲ注イデ坐氣ツ

カセルノデアツタ。ソレカラ彼ハ又水治療ヲ

繰返スノデアツタ。此ノ尙中「イシハリ」ハ

鉛ノ入ツタ長サ二尺位ノ乘馬船ノ頂デ捕虜ヲ

打ツタ。

問、此ノ捕虜ニカケラレタ米國捕虜ノ誰カノ名ヲ

知ツテキルカ。

答、ハイ。捕虜ニカケラレタ「ベンシルバニア」

州出身ノ米國陸軍本部附軍曹「ミニツク」、

「デヨ」デヤ州出身ノ海兵隊本部附軍曹「

ヨ」・ストウ」、「アホレイ」トイフ監者(海

軍軍医)中尉、及ビ「アラバマ州」出身ノ海

兵隊技師軍曹「ストワーズ」等ヲ知ツテキル。

3.

0

Doc 081274

是等ノ人々ハ皆實際ニ水治療ヲ受ケキケレバ
 ナラシカツタ。
 同、
 アナタハ此ノ疑問ヲ自分ヲ見タノカ
 答、
 ハイ。戶外ヲ起ツタ部分ハミテ見タ。此ノ水
 治療ノ豫備的ナ分ノ中ニハ庭場内ヲ行ハレタ
 モノモアツテ私ハ見ナカツタガ、戶外ヲ起ツ
 タモノハ全部實際ニ見タノデアル。

Cx. # 1846

RESTRICTED

For the WAR CRIMES OFFICE
Judge Advocate General's Department - War Department
United States of America

- - - -

In the matter of the mistreatment of * Perpetuation of Testimony
American Prisoners of War held by the * of Robert McCulloch Brown,
Japanese at the Shanghai War Prisoners * Sergeant, USMC,
Camp in January 1944 * MC-273-688

Taken at: Philadelphia Naval Hospital, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.

Date: 7 February 1946

In the Presence of: Bernard J. McGrory, Special Agent, Security
Intelligence Corps, Third Service Command

Reporter: Doris Wadsworth, Stenographer, Philadelphia Field Office,
Security Intelligence Corps, Third Service Command

Questions by: Bernard J. McGrory

Q. State your name, rank, serial number, and permanent home address?

A. My name is Robert McCulloch Brown. I am a Sergeant in the United States
Marine Corps and my Serial Number is MC-273-688. My permanent home address
is located at 74 Elm Street, Westfield, New Jersey.

Q. Describe your educational background.

A. I have completed approximately a year and a half at New York University
taking various courses in Accountancy. During some of my service in the
Marine Corps, I have been assigned to Public Relations work and have had
some experience as a newspaper correspondent.

Q. Have you recently been returned to the United States from overseas?

A. Yes. I arrived in the United States at the Port of Oakland, California,
on 6 October 1945.

Q. Were you a Prisoner of War?

A. Yes.

Q. At what places were you held and state the approximate dates.

A. I was captured by the Japanese on Wake Island on 23 December 1941. We were
held there until 12 January 1942 when we embarked on the vessel "Nitta
Maru" for Shanghai. We arrived at Shanghai on 24 January 1942 and were held
at the Shanghai War Prisoners Camp from that date until 4 May 1945. We were
then taken to Fengtai, near Peking, China, where we remained until 19 June
1945. From that date until 7 July 1945, we were travelling, finally

RESTRICTED

arriving at Branch #3, Hakodate War Prisoners Camp, Utashinai, Hokkaido, Japan. The Prisoners of War held at this Camp assumed charge of the Camp on 24 August 1945, but our official liberation did not occur until 16 September 1945, at an airport near Yokohama.

Q. Were there any specific incidents of mistreatment of American Prisoners of War which you can recall?

A. Yes. [The incident which I am about to describe occurred at the Shanghai War Prisoners Camp during several days in January 1944. The Japanese discovered that some of the Prisoners of War had managed to retain some American money, and by means of pro-American Chinese employees at the camp, were exchanging this American money for Chinese dollars in Shanghai. By torturing some of the Chinese who carried on these transactions, the Japanese were able to identify some of the Americans involved in the matter. These Americans included the following persons:

Lt. W. T. Foley, U. S. Navy, a physician.
Supply Sgt. H. B. Stowers, U. S. Marine Corps.
Platoon Sgt. Joe M. Stowe, U. S. Marine Corps.
S/Sgt. John C. Minnick, U. S. Army Air Corps.
Ambrose Lum, a United States citizen of Chinese derivation, who had been employed on Wake Island.

These men were seized by the Japanese, headed by one ISHIMURA, a civilian, and one Lt. MYAZAKI, a camp officer. They were taken to the administration shack and were subjected to severe physical mistreatment by the Japanese, who were trying to make them identify the personnel who had the money.

Q. Can you describe the physical mistreatment which these men suffered?

A. I was not present when these men were subjected to this ordeal, but learned of it later directly from them. The men were first severely beaten by ISHIMURA and MYAZAKI. Some of these beatings consisted of being struck with a riding crop frequently used by ISHIMURA to inflict discipline upon the prisoners. After they had been mauled in this manner, each prisoner was held on the floor and was forced to open his mouth. Then, with a Japanese holding the prisoner's nose, water was poured into the prisoner's open mouth until he became unconscious. The Japanese then slapped the prisoner's face and threw cold water on his body in order to revive him. This incident took place in January 1944 and the weather was very cold. It is therefore apparent that the use of cold water on prisoners under such circumstances imposed a severe shock upon their systems. These five men were subjected to this treatment for twelve days, until the Japanese finally decided that additional mistreatment would cause their deaths. The men were then hospitalized and later returned to duty.]

RESTRICTED

Q. In your opinion, who was responsible for this mistreatment?

A. Unquestionably, ISHIMURA and IMAZAKI were responsible. ISHIMURA was a civilian work supervisor at the camp and was in charge of a work project, which consisted of building a rifle range for the Japanese. He was employed by the Japanese Civil Service or similar organization. He was definitely sadistic and hated the American Prisoners of War, mistreating them at every opportunity. He was nicknamed "The Beast of the East." He was about sixty-eight inches tall, was very slight, wore horn-rimmed glasses, and sometimes wore a mustache. He was able to speak good English and was particularly familiar with American slang. It was rumored that ISHIMURA had formerly been a taxicab driver in Honolulu and had become proficient in the English language in this manner.

IMAZAKI, when we arrived at the camp, was an enlisted man and was a Sergeant Major. However, he was later commissioned and became one of the camp officers. He was in charge of the guards and also held some administrative position over the work detail. He was also very slight in stature and build, and was nicknamed "Tiny Tim," because of his appearance. I cannot adequately describe him, but recall that he had a "baby face" and was obviously very young, possibly in his early twenties.

Q. Do you know the locations of any of the five men who were subjected to this mistreatment?

A. I do not definitely know the addresses of any of these people, other than Ambrose Lum, who resides at 942 - 7th Avenue, Honolulu, Hawaii. All of these men can furnish more definite details concerning this incident.

/s/ ROBERT McCULLOCH BROWN
Robert McCulloch Brown, Sgt., USMC

State of Pennsylvania)
) SS
County of Philadelphia)

I, Robert McCulloch Brown, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ ROBERT McCULLOCH BROWN
Robert McCulloch Brown, Sgt., USMC

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 15th day of February 1946.

/s/ ESTHER LEVENS
NOTARY PUBLIC

My commission expires at the
end of the next session of the
Senate.

(S E A L)

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Bernard J. McGrory, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps, Third Service Command, certify that on 7 February 1946, personally appeared before me Robert McCulloch Brown, Sergeant, United States Marine Corps, and gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth; that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said Robert McCulloch Brown read the same and affixed his signature thereto in my presence.

Place: Philadelphia, Pennsylvania

/s/ BERNARD J. McGRORY
Bernard J. McGrory, Special Agent
Security Intelligence Corps, III S.C.

Date: 15 February 1946

No. 1 6033
Evidentiary Doc. 8033

答、私、姓名ハロバート・マカロ・アラウント申之ヌ。私ハ米國海
兵隊ノ軍醫ナリ。認識番号ハMC-233-66ナリ。

問、貴方ハ俘虜トナリマシタカ。

答、私ハ一九四二年十二月二十三日ハイク島デ日本人ノ捕虜
トナリマシタ。私達ハソコニ一九四二年一月十二日迄抑留
サレソノ後、新田丸デ上海ニ向セマシタ。私達ハ上海ニ一九
四二年一月二十四日ニ到着。ソノ日カラ一九四五年五月四日迄ハ
海俘虜收容所ニ收容サレテ居リマシタ。

此カラ私ガ申之述ベヤトスル事件ハ上海俘虜收容
所ニ一九四四年一月中ノ数日間ニ起ツタコトナリ
マス。日本人ノ一部ノ俘虜ガアメリカ貨幣若干ヲ如
何ニカニテ持ツテ本テ、收容所ノ親米ノ中國人從
業員ノ手ヲ通ジテアメリカ貨幣ヲ上海
デ中國幣ト交換シテ本ルコトヲ發見シマシ
タ。コノ取引ヲ実行シタ中國人ノ或者ヲ拷
問シタ結果日本人ハコノ事件ニ關係アル一
部ノ米人ヲ識別スルコトガ出来マシタ。コノ米人、
中ニハ、如キ人が包ミマシタ。

米國海軍軍医大尉 W. H. ...
米國海兵隊經理部 軍醫 H. B. ...

TURK 12 22 361

Document 8033

米國海兵隊小隊軍曹のヨシ、ストウエ
米國陸軍航空隊軍曹のヨシ、ミツウ
アグロウエル、中國系アメリカ市民デウエイ、島平衛
行井夕者。

コウイ夕者が日本人に捕まりミツウが日本人を指揮スル
人、石原軍属デアリ又ハ收容所主任官高崎中尉デア
リシタ。彼等ハ管理所ニ運行サレ、日本人カウヒドイ
肉体的虐待ヲ受ケシタ。コト日本人達ハ彼等ヲシテソ
貨幣ヲ持ツキ夕者ガ誰デアルカ識別サセヨウトシタ。

問、貴方ハ夕者ガ如何イノ様ニ肉体的虐待ヲ受ケタカ述ズル
トガ出来ヌカ。

答、私ハ彼等ガ拷問ヲ受ケテキル時ニ屋合セテシタ。後直接
接ニ彼等カラソノツキ聞キシタ。彼等ハ少尉ニ石原ト高崎ニ
ヒドク撲ラシタ。カウヒドイ中ニ石原ガコトモ虐待ヲ
懲戒スル時ニ屢々用キタ采馬鞭ヲ撲ツタコトモアリシタ。
彼等ヲカウヒドイノカニ虐待シテカモ虐待ヲ床ノ上ニ抑シテ無理ニ
開ケサセシタ。ソカラ又ハ日本人ハ虐待ノ鼻ヲツキテ氣絶
スル迄虐待ノ間イタロカラ水ヲ注ギシタ。日本ハソカラ
虐待ノ類ヲ平手ヲ撲リ意識ヲ回復サセル為メニ彼ノ身体ニ
冷水ヲ投ケカケシタ。コト事件ハ九四四年月三起シタ事デ大寒
ノ氣候デシタ。ソレ故ニ極ニ場合ニ虐待ニ冷水ヲカケルコトハ彼等ノ
身体ニヒドイ衝戟ヲ與ヘタコトハ明白デアリヌ。コト五月十二日
間ニ極ニ取扱ヲ受ケテ三日ノ間ハ己以上虐待スルト彼等ヲ殺ス
ト決テ断定スル事シタ。ソレニ彼等ハ院サレ以後前住者歸サ
シタ。

No. 2

Ex. # 1897

Doc. No. 8007-A*

Page 1

For the WAR CRIMES OFFICE
Judge Advocate General's Department - War Department
United States of America

In the matter of the mass
punishment of American
Prisoners of War at the
Prisoner of War camp at
Weosung, China, during or
about September 1942.

Perpetration of testimony
of John Francis Ryan, Ph/M 2C,
Navy Serial Number 223-57-11.

Taken at: Philadelphia Naval Hospital, Philadelphia, Pa.
Date: 12 February 1946
In the Presence of: Russell E. Gardner, Special Agent,
Security Intelligence Corps, Third
Service Command
Questions by: Russell E. Gardner

Q. State your name, rank, serial number and permanent home address.

A. I am John Francis Ryan, Ph/M 2C, Navy Serial Number 223-57-11 and I live at 4820 Summerdale Avenue, Philadelphia, Pa.

Q. State your date and place of birth, marital status, civilian occupation and education.

A. I was born 9 June 1919 at Tottenville, Stanton Island, New York, New York; I am married; I was a hospital orderly; and I am a graduate from high school.

Q. Have you recently been returned to the United States from overseas?

A. Yes. I arrived in the United States at the port of San Francisco on or about 14 October 1945.

Q. Were you a prisoner of war?

A. Yes.

Q. At what places were you held and state the approximate dates.

A. I was captured 8 December 1941 at Tientsin, China and was kept there until about 28 January 1942. From about 28 January 1942 to about 2 February 1942, I was taken by train from Tientsin to the Shanghai Prisoner of War Camp, Japanese Field Post Office #106, Woosung, China, where I remained from about 2 February 1942 until about 12 December 1942. I was then transferred by truck to the Shanghai Prisoner of War Camp at Kiangwin, China, where I was kept from about 12 December 1942 to about 4 May 1945. I was then taken by train to the Prisoner of War Camp at Feng Tai, Hopeh District, where I was kept from about the middle of May 1945 to about 19 June 1945. I was then taken by train and boat to Sendai #11, Aomori, Honshu, Japan, where I arrived 4 July 1945. I was liberated on or about 14 September 1945.

Q. (State what you know of your own knowledge about the mass punishment of American Prisoners of War at Woosung, China, during or about September 1942.

A. During or about September 1942, four United States Marines escaped from the Prisoner of War Camp at Woosung, Japan. They were: Conrad Battles, Corporal; J. Stewart, Corporal; (FNU) Story; and (FNU) Brenner.

I was one of about one hundred American Prisoners of War who were confined in a single room as mass punishment for the escape of the four Marines. The room was from forty-five to fifty feet long, about twelve feet wide and about nine feet high and was a frame structure. There was no heat in the room, although the weather was cold with the temperature above freezing. It rained most of the time I was confined and the room was very damp. I received an inadequate ration of rice in a tea cup and about five hundred cc's of water each day. We were not supplied with any bed clothing. I was confined for a period of about six days.

Q. State what was told you of this incident and who told you?

A. Later, others who had been confined with me, but whose identities I cannot remember, told me that they had been confined in the room for periods ranging from six to twenty or more days. They told me that the treatment that they received after I was released was similar to the treatment that I received while I was confined there.

Q. Who was responsible for this incident?

A. The Commanding Officer of the camp and members of the camp administration were responsible. I do not know their identities.

- Q. Name others who would have knowledge of this incident.
- A. Gunnery Sergeant Ellis, USMC, address unknown; Pvt. C.C. Ludlow, USMC, address unknown (Ludlow had a sister who was a Lieutenant in the Army Nurse Corps, who had been captured on Corregidor by the Japanese); Ph/M Funt, USN, who came from New York State.

/s/ John Francis Ryan
 John Francis Ryan, Ph/M 2C, U.S.Navy

State of: Pennsylvania)
) SS
 County of: Philadelphia)

I, John Francis Ryan, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ John Francis Ryan
 John Francis Ryan, Ph/M 2C, U.S.Navy

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 15th day of February 1946.

SM:L

/s/ Esther Levens
 Notary Public
 My Commission Expires at the
 End of the next Session of the
 Senate

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Russell E. Gardner, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps, Third Service Command, certify that on 12 February 1946, personally appeared before me John Francis Ryan, Ph/M 2C, Navy Serial Number 223-57-11, and gave the foregoing answers to the several questions set forth; that after his testimony had been transcribed, the said John Francis Ryan read the same and affixed his signature thereto in my presence.

Place: Philadelphia, Pa.
 Date: 15 Feb 46

/s/ Russell E. Gardner
 RUSSELL E. GARDNER
 Special Agent
 Security Intelligence Corps
 Third Service Command

Exhibit
Evidence # 8007 A
Document #

No. 1

同 一九四二年九月三日... 航空認識票 三
五十二号

同 一九四二年九月三日... 航空認識票 三
五十二号

答 一九四二年九月三日... 航空認識票 三
五十二号

同 此... 航空認識票 三
五十二号

答 係... 航空認識票 三
五十二号

Doc. 8007 A

私に苦い監禁に付、入道公假等が六日乃至十日間又公卷
 二期間内其部在二監禁に付私に語り三之矣。假等六私に
 事し其後、假等が受て之を取扱、私に其試二監禁に付居
 又同二私に受て之を取扱上同様、下以て私に語り三之矣。
 同此五事、事三對三、誰が責任、夏之可キ事トシテ、
 答信信受收定終、指揮官上同收容所、管理員が責任付
 夏之可キ事トシテ、私に假等が誰事トシテ知リ三之矣。

Ex. # 1848

Doc. No. 8130 *

CONFIDENTIAL

Q. State your name, rank, serial number, permanent home address, and any other pertinent information concerning yourself.

A. My name is Carl Edward STEGMAYER, Jr. I am a Private First Class in the United States Marine Corps, and my serial number is 286478. My permanent home address is 1612 Stewart, Kansas City, Kansas.

Q. Were you the victim of any beatings or torture by the Japanese.

A. Yes. [While I was an inmate of Kiang Nan Prison Camp, China, on 20 January 1945, I, together with one Marshal E. FIELDS and three other men whose names I do not recall, was bayoneted by a Japanese guard during an air raid by American air forces.] FIELDS was a member of the United States Marine Corps and was captured while serving with an anti-aircraft battalion on Wake Island.

The raid was made by a group of United States fighter planes which had succeeded in shooting down two Japanese bombers that were above the camp. [During the raid all prisoners had been confined to their barracks by order of the Japanese. The success of the raid elicited cheers from some of those prisoners within the barracks.

I was seated in the Barracks #1 drinking coffee when one of the Japanese entered. He asked the identity of those who had cheered but received no answer. He thereupon lunged with his bayonet at me and bayoneted me in the left hip. The blade penetrated to the bone.

The guard then crossed to where one Robert Leroy FREY (a member of the United States Marine Corps captured on Wake Island while serving with a machine gun unit) and pounded FREY about the head with his rifle butt until FREY was almost unconscious.

The guard continued his questioning as to the identity of those who cheered but without any reply. He next lunged with his bayonet at the above named FIELDS and bayoneted him on the inside of the left thigh just below the genitals.

The guard thereupon left Barracks #1 and crossed to Barracks #2. There he found a prisoner who had been sent in from outside the compound endeavoring to enter his barracks. This prisoner was one HARRISON, a member of the United States Marine Corps captured with the legation guard, Peking, China. The Japanese guard summarily bayoneted HARRISON, wounding him in one leg.

The Japanese guard proceeded from Barracks #2 to Barracks #3 and #4. He bayoneted a civilian named ALTERS who had been captured on Wake Island wounding him in the leg also and as I recall, this was down in Barracks #3. While at Barracks #3 he fired several rounds at the United States planes passing overhead. Proceeding to Barracks #4 from Barracks #3, the Japanese guard bayoneted one CHRISTENSEN who was also a civilian captured upon Wake Island. CHRISTENSEN had been sent to the compound from his work outside and was endeavoring to enter his barracks.

I did not personally witness the bayonetings of HARRISON, ALTERS, and CHRISTENSEN, but I heard the above information from them personally while we were hospitalized in the camp after the bayoneting.

I do not know the full identity of the Japanese guard in question but his nickname within the camp was "Sugar." The camp at the time was under the command of a Japanese Colonel named OKERA.

Those prisoners who had been bayoneted had been questioned that evening by the Japanese through the camp interpreter, one MURUSAIU, and a Japanese First Lieutenant named MIYAKI. Two days later the guard was transferred to another post unknown to me and the Japanese gave out the information that he had been beaten for the bayoneting.

I can recall nothing further concerning these incidents which would be of value to the War Crimes Office and I do not have any other information favorable or unfavorable which I consider of sufficient importance to report.

(S) Carl E. Stasmaier, Jr.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
 : SS
County of Alameda :

CONFIDENTIAL

I, Carl Edward Stegmayer, Jr. of lawful age, being duly sworn, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of two pages, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

(S) Carl E. Stegmayer, Jr.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 18th day of October, 1945,
at Oakland, California.

(S) Thomas T. Guerin
(Rank) _____
Lt. USAR

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
 : SS
County of Alameda :

I, Lieutenant T. Guerin, U.S.N.R., certify that (name) Carl Edward STEGMAYER, Jr., (Rank) Pfc. USMC (ASN) 286476, personally appeared before me on the 8th day of October, 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

Place: Oakland, California
Date: 8 October 1945

(S) T. Guerin
(S) Thomas T. Guerin

Page three of three pages.

A TRUE COPY:
(S) Harryman Dorsey
Captain, JAGD

證據管私第八一三〇號

★
Dec 8/30

私ノ名前ハ小カール・エドワード・ステグマ
イヤーデス / CARL EDWARD STEGMAIER, JR

私ハ合衆國海兵隊 / THE UNITED STATES MARINE CORPS

ノ一等水兵ヲ私ノ番號ハ二八六四七八號デス。 . . .

私ガ甲山ノ江灣俘虜收容所 / KIANG WAN PRISON

CAMP CHINA / ニ容レラレテキタ時一九四五年一

月二十日ニ私ハマーシャル・イー・フィールド /

MAIHAL E FIELDS / ト云フガト其ノ名前ヲ想ヒ出セ

ナイ他ノ三人ノ男ト一緒ニアメリカ空軍ニ依ル一空

襲ノ間ニ一日本衛兵ニヨツテ銃剣ヲ刺サレマシタ。 . . .

其ノ空襲ノ間スベテノ俘虜達ハ日本人ノ命令

テ自分達ノ兵營ニ監察サレテキマシタ。其ノ空襲ノ

成功ガ其ノ兵營ノ中ノ何名カノ俘虜達ニ喝采ヲサセ

マシタ。

私ハ一號兵營ノ中テ座ツテコーヒーラ飲ンデキマ

シタ、ソノ時一日本兵入ツテ來マシタ。彼ハ喝采ヲ

シタノハ語カト訊ネマシタ。シカシ何ノ返事モアリ

マセンデシタ。彼ハ其處テ彼ノ銃剣ヲ私ニツキサシ

私ノ左臂ヲサシマシタ。劍身ハ骨迄徹リマシタ。

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 304

Doc 8130-4

兵ノ衛兵ハソレカラロバート・レロイ・フレイ /
 ROBERT LEROY FREY / (合衆國海兵隊ノ一員) ^テ
 WAKE ISLAND
 予等艦銃隊ヲ勦滅中ウエーキ島ヲ捕ヘラレタノ所
 ニ行キフレイノ賊ヲ小銃ノ壘尻ヲ殆ドフレイガ意識
 不明ニナルマデ打チマシタ。衛兵ハ囑乗シタノハ誰
 カラ難メルタメ質問シテ訊クマシタ。件シ何ノ返事
 モアリマセンテシタ。彼ハ次ニ副連ノフィールドヲ ^テ
 銃剣ヲ衝キ正成ノ内備丁成生垣器ノ下ノ所ヲ刺シマ
 シタ。

衛兵ハソコデ一號兵營ヲ去リ二號兵營ニ行キマ
 シタ。ソコデ彼ハ僻外カラ送リコマレテ自分ノ兵營
 ニ入ラウトシテキル一俘虜ヲ發見シマシタ。此ノ俘
 虜ハ、^{HARPER'S} ハーピソント云フ男デ、合衆國海兵隊ノ一員
 デ中國、北京公使館 ^{PEKING CONSUL} 警備員ト共ニ捕ヘラレタ者デス
 日本衛兵ハ立所ニハーピソンヲ銃剣ヲ刺シ一万ノ脚
 ニ負傷サセマシタ。

日本衛兵ハ二號兵營カラ三號兵營四號兵營ヘト進ンテ行キ
 マシタ。彼ハウエーキ島 / ^{WAKE} / テ捕ヘラレタ
 ウオルターズ / ^{WALTERS} / ト云フ一人ノ民間人ヲ
 銃剣ヲ刺シ又脚ニ負傷サセマシタ、ソシテ私ノ記憶
 テハ是ハ三號兵營テ行ハレマシタ。一万三號兵營テ

2.

可

Doc 8/30

彼ハ頭上ヲ廻ギル合家國飛行機ニ同ヒ、數年ノ間丸
ヲ發射シマシタ三號兵營カラ四號兵營ニ進ンデ日本
衛兵ハウエーキ島ヲ捕ヘラレタ、ヤハリ民間人ノク
リステンソン / CHRISTENSEN / ト云フ男ヲ銃彈ヲ
刺シマシタ。クリステンソンハ海外ノ仕事カラ精肉
ニ滑ツテ來ラレ自分ノ兵ニ入ラウトシテキマシタ。

STATE OF WASHINGTON)
) SS:
 COUNTY OF PIERCE)

Morris Littman, of lawful age, being duly sworn and under oath, states:

My name is [Morris Littman], my rank is [Corporal], my serial number is 6995757, my permanent address is 236 Bainbridge Street, Philadelphia, Pa. I am a graduate of high school and am 24 years of age. I entered the military service of the United States on 9 October 1939 and was shipped overseas on 8 June 1940 and was returned to the United States on 12 October 1945.

I was held in custody as a prisoner of war by the Imperial Government of Japan from 6 May 1942 until September 1945. At the time of my capture I was in B Company, attached to the 4th Marines on Corregidor. [I was captured on 6 May 1942 on Corregidor by the Japanese Army.]

While prisoner of war [I] was held at Cabanatuan from May until October 1942 and then taken to Mukden, Manchuria where I was held from November 1942 until May 1944 thence to Kamoika, Japan where I was held from June to September 1945, at which time I was liberated.

Colonel Matsuda was the camp commander of the camp at Mukden, Manchuria. He wore a small goatee mustache, about 5'2" in height, weight 125 pounds, about 55 years of age. He had a real high pitched voice.

Cpl. NODA, a Japanese regular army guard, was born and raised at Berkeley, California and attended the University of California at Berkeley, was about 5'8" in height, weight about 155 pounds, about 28 years of age.

Lt. HICKI, regular Japanese Army Officer, was about 5'9 $\frac{1}{2}$ " in height, weight about 150, about 33 years of age.

[A]long about the middle of April 1943 three of the Americans at Camp Mukden escaped from the camp and were not missed by the Japanese guards until roll call the following morning. Each of the three men were from separate barracks. I don't recall their names. The three men were absent from camp for about three days before they were caught by the Japanese and returned to camp. I saw the men when they were returned to the camp. They were walking one behind the other with a guard along the side of them holding them up; I don't think they were able to walk by themselves; one of them had a rag wrapped around his head which was blood soaked; all three of them had their clothing on their backs ripped up and was very bloody; their ankles were chained together and could only take small steps; the chain extended up their back and their hands were chained together. We went on to work in the factory that day and later on in the day the guards brought them out to camp and tried to make them pick out the Americans who had helped them to escape, also the Japanese

who had aided in the escape. They refused to give any information and were removed from camp. Two days later the Japanese officials had the wood shop to make three crosses with their names on the cross. The Japanese guards took a detail of three or more men to the cemetery where there were three freshly covered graves and the detail set up the crosses over these three graves which they had prepared in the wood shop of the camp. The Japanese guards in the camp said that they were beheaded with samari swords. The day following the date on which the three men were caught the Japanese didn't let us go to work; they came in and called attention and showed us a position that they wanted us to sit in and placed a guard over us to see that we stayed in that position and kept us this way for two weeks in the daytime. They made us sit at attention with our legs crossed above the knee, our hands resting on our leg with palm up. We sat on the edge of our beds. We were not allowed to speak and could move our hands only when we ate. Each of the three men that had escaped were from each of three barracks so the Japanese made the barracks, three in number, all sit like this for two weeks.]

Pvt. Robert Miller, USMC from California out of the 4th Marines, Corporal Johnson also from the 4th Marines were both eye witnesses to this incident.

This is all the pertinent details of this incident that I am able to remember.

/s/ MORRIS LITTMAN, Cpl.
Morris Littman, 6995757

Witness:

/s/ G. D. HINSON, Jr.
G. D. Hinson, Jr.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this
15 day of October, 1945, at
Fort Lewis, Washington.

/s/ Arthur G. Bouley
ARTHUR G. BOULEY
C/O, U S A
Asst Adjutant General
ASFC Fort Lewis, Wash.

CONFIDENTIAL

Sub 1895 - 2

Doc. No. 107416

CONFIDENTIAL

Page 1

STATE OF WASHINGTON)
(SS:
COUNTY OF PINNAC)

Morris Littman, of lawful age, being duly sworn and under oath, states:

My name is [Morris Littman], my rank is [Corporal], my serial number is 6995757, my permanent address is 236 Bainbridge Street, Philadelphia, Pa. I am a graduate of high school and am 24 years of age. I entered the military service of the United States on 9 October 1939 and was shipped overseas on 8 June 1940 and was returned to the United States on 12 October 1945.

I was held in custody as a prisoner of war by the Imperial Government of Japan from 6 May 1942 until September 1945. At the time of my capture I was in B Company, attached to the 4th Marines on Corregidor. [I was captured on 6 May 1942 on Corregidor by the Japanese Army.]

While prisoner of war [I] was held at Cabanatuan from May until October 1942 and then taken to Mukden, Manchuria where I was held from November 1942 until May 1944 thence to Kamoika, Japan where I was held from June to September 1945, at which time I was liberated.

Colonel Hatakeyama was the camp commander of the camp at Mukden, Manchuria. He wore a small mustache, about 12" in height, weight 120 pounds, about 55 years of age. He had a real high pitched voice.

Cpl. NODA, a Japanese regular army guard, was born and raised at Berkeley, California and attended the University of California at Berkeley, was about 5'8" in height, weight about 155 pounds, about 20 years of age.

Lt. NICKI, regular Japanese Army Officer, was about 5'9 1/2" in height, weight about 150, about 33 years of age.

Along about the middle of April 1943 three of the Americans at Camp Mukden escaped from the camp and were not missed by the Japanese guards until roll call the following morning. Each of the three men were from separate barracks. I don't recall their names. The three men were absent from camp for about three days before they were caught by the Japanese and returned to camp. I saw the men when they were returned to the camp. They were walking one behind the other with a guard along the side of them holding them up; I don't think they were able to walk by themselves; one of them had a rag wrapped around his head which was blood soaked; all three of them had their clothing on their backs ripped up and was very bloody; their ankles were chained together and could only take small steps; the chain extended up their back and their hands were chained together. We went on to work in the factory that day and later on in the day the guards brought them out to camp and tried to make them pick out the Americans who had helped them to escape, also the Japanese

CONFIDENTIAL

who had aided in the escape. They refused to give any information and were removed from camp. Two days later the Japanese officials had the wood shop to make three crosses with their names on the cross. The Japanese guards took a detail of three or more men to the cemetery where there were three freshly covered graves and the detail set up the crosses over these three graves which they had prepared in the wood shop of the camp. The Japanese guards in the camp said that they were beheaded with samuri swords. The day following the date on which the three men were caught the Japanese didn't let us go to work; they came in and called attention and showed us a position that they wanted us to sit in and placed a guard over us to see that we stayed in that position and kept us this way for two weeks in the daytime. They made us sit at attention with our legs crossed above the knee, our hands resting on our leg with palm up. We sat on the edge of our beds. We were not allowed to speak and could move our hands only when we ate. Each of the three men that had escaped were from each of three barracks so the Japanese made the barracks, three in number all sit like this for two weeks.]

Pvt. Robert Miller, USMC from California out of the 4th Marines, Corporal Johnson also from the 4th Marines were both eye witnesses to this incident.

This is all the pertinent details of this incident that I am able to remember.

/s/ MORRIS LITTMAN, Col.
Morris Littman, 6995757

Witness:

/s/ G. D. HINSON, Jr.
G. D. Hinson, Jr.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this
15 day of October, 1945, at
Fort Lewis, Washington.

/s/ Arthur G. Bouley
ARTHUR G. BOULEY
CWO, U S A
Asst Adjutant General
ASSTC Fort Lewis, Wash.

CONFIDENTIAL

C. # 1900

Doc. No. 8209*

Page 1.

THE WAR CRIMES OFFICE

Judge Advocate General's Department — War Department

United States of America

In the matter of treatment and conditions existing at Weesung Camp, Bridge House Jail, Kiang Wan Military Prison, Yand Road Jail, Nanking Military Prison, and Peking Military Prison, from 23 December 1941 until 24 August 1945	* Perpetration of Testimony of Winfield Scott Cunningham, Captain, U.S.N., Ser. No. 056074.
---	---

Taken at: U. S. Naval Academy, Annapolis, Maryland.

Date: 14 November 1945.

In the Presence of: W. H. Abrams, Captain, USMCR (Ret'd.), War Crimes Office, Washington, 25, D. C.

Reporter: Martha L. Winblad, Y1/c, USNR, War Crimes Office, Washington 25, D. C.

Questions by: W. H. Abrams, Captain, USMCR (Ret'd.).

- Q. What is your name, rank, serial number, and permanent home address?
- A. My name is Winfield Scott Cunningham, Captain, U.S.N., serial No. 056074. My permanent home address is Cedar Park, R.F.D. #2, Annapolis, Maryland.
- Q. Have you recently been returned to the United States?
- A. Yes, from China on 7 September 1945.
- Q. Were you a prisoner of war?
- A. Yes, from 23 December 1941, until 24 August 1945.
- Q. Will you give us chronologically the places at which you were interned.
- A. I was kept on Wake Island for twenty days until the 12th of January 1942, and with about 1200 other prisoners left Wake Island for Shanghai. We departed for Yokohama on 17 January 1942 and we were interviewed there by Japanese Intelligence of the Navy Department and by the Tokyo Press. I was allowed to make a radio broadcast saying

A. (Con'd.)

that I was well and was being treated well. We arrived at Shanghai on 23 January and went to Woosung on the 26th, disembarked there and marched five miles to a prison camp, known as the Shanghai War Prisoners camp, and from there on 9 February was taken to Shanghai for questioning by the Japanese Intelligence, and was returned to Woosung on 26 February. I escaped from there on 11 March, and was recaptured the next day with four others. Their names are, Commander Woolley, Royal Navy, Lt. Commander C. P. Smith, USNR, Mr. N. D. Teters from Seattle, Washington, and a Chinese boy whose name was Lu.

We got out of the prison camp by digging under the electrified fence and went on foot to the junction of the Yangtze and Whangpoo Rivers, where we planned to cross to Pootung. We were unable to get a boat to cross the river. The morning came and we went to a Chinese farmer's barn near the village of Powashan. During the course of the day, the word got around that we were there, and the Chinese farmer reported us to the local Chinese puppet troop authorities, who captured us and turned us over to the Japanese. We spent two days in the Woosung military police jail and were taken back handcuffed and led around the prison camp to show them how we escaped. We were then moved to Bridge House. We were kept there a month under investigation and were confined in cells in the Bridge House, one of us in each cell; however, in these cells were 12-15 Chinese prisoners and 4-5 American prisoners (civilians). The treatment was fairly good compared to the treatment of the other prisoners because the Japanese lieutenant, Kawai, was apparently trying to make an impression on us by giving us especially good treatment. We were allowed to buy clothing in the city and also extra food because the Japanese food was very poor. While we were there under questioning, we received no ill treatment other than that our cells were infested with lice, and that we were required not to talk, and were required to sit in the same position all day long. Those of us who did talk, on some occasions, including myself, were hit over the head with a club by the Japanese guards, which was done more or less as a matter of routine.

On the 14th of April, we were taken to the Military prison at Kiang Wan where we were kept for two months while awaiting trial. We had a trial on 14 April, the day we arrived, but it apparently did not suit the Japs, so they gave us another one on 2 June. The conditions of our confinement were bad only from the point of view that we were actually confined in solitary confinement for 23-3/4 hours a day as an average. The food wasn't bad, and we were able to keep fairly clean. We exercised every other day for about thirty minutes. The trials were not really trials in the ordinary sense of the word, but were merely hearings because we had had nothing to conceal. The Japs did not try to get information by forceful means. The trial was presided over by a Jap General with one Colonel and one Major as the other members, and a prosecutor with the rank of Captain. We brought attention to the various international conventions and pointed out that under these agreements, the maximum

punishment for escape was 50 days of solitary confinement. We already had undergone two months of solitary and a month of other confinement. The Japanese court contended that they were not signatories of the convention and were not bound by the provisions of the Geneva Convention agreements. They tried us under provisions of Japanese military law as deserters from the Japanese Army. The three military members of the escape party were sentenced to ten years confinement, Mr. Teters, to two years, and the Chinese boy, to one year confinement. On the 8th of June, we were moved to Shanghai Municipal Jail, locally known as the Ward Road Jail, to serve out our sentences. We remained there for two years and four months. Mr. Teters was released at the expiration of his sentence on 2 June 1944. On the 8th of October 1944, we escaped from the Ward Road Jail. Eight escaped this time. They were Commander Woolley, Lt. Comdr. Smith, Marine Cpl. J. G. Storey, Cpl. C. W. Brimmer, Marine Sgt. R. F. Coulson, Marine Pvt. 1/c C. A. Stewart, and PBM2/c A. T. Brewer. The enlisted Marines had escaped later than we did the first time. Three of the prisoners, Woolley, Smith, and Storey, completed the escape and reached Free China and eventually the United States. The other five were captured in Shanghai by Chinese police supervised by Japanese, and were returned to the Bridge House on the 7th of October.

We remained there until 3 November, and were moved back to Kiang Nan Military prison. We were tried again on 11 December. Brimmer and I were sentenced to life imprisonment, Stewart to ten years confinement, and Coulson and Brewer to eight years confinement. At the same trial they were trying three civilians who assisted in the escape. These three civilians were Peterson, Olafson, and Halverson. They were sentenced to 10, 8, and 6 years, respectively. The three civilians were moved to Ward Road Jail on 23 December 1944. The other five were kept in the military prison. On 19 January 1945, we were moved to Nanking Military Prison. When we got there, we found another Marine Corporal by the name of Battles, and also a civilian from Wake Island named Herndon, who was serving a two-year sentence for fighting in a prison. There were also present in the Nanking Prison the four surviving Beclittle fliers. We did not actually see them, but we knew they were there.

On 1 August, we were taken to Peking (the five of us who escaped the second time and Battles). On 18 August we were taken from the military prison and moved to Fengtai, the civilian internecamp outside of Peking together with a civilian named Raymond Rutledge who had been sentenced to one year in July for attempted escape. That made a total of seven who were moved to the internecamp. The next day we moved back to Peking and were kept under guard by the Japs until 24 August. On the 20th of August we were contacted by the Army rescue mission which had dropped in by parachute on 17 August. On 24 August, the Army brought in two B-24's to Peking and took out twenty-seven prisoners of war and took us to Sien, China, and then to Kunming. I was kept there for eight days undergoing a medical check over and then flown back, with other prisoners from Mukden, leaving Kunming on 2 September and arriving in the States by way of India and North Africa on 7 September.

- Q. How was the treatment on the Nitta Maru between Wake and Shanghai?
- A. The officers were all confined in the mail room of the ship; thirty in a small room. We were not allowed to talk. The food was very light. They evidently wanted to keep the prisoners from being in good physical condition and wanted also to keep our spirits down if possible. We were fed twice a day; the food consisted of thin rice gruel and a small bit of fish or pickle for the afternoon meal. The sanitary facilities were altogether lacking; there were none for washing or shaving. The plumbing was in the nature of five-gallon tins.
- Q. Were any of the officers sick at this time?
- A. I do not believe anyone was sick except from digestive troubles.
- Q. Did the Japs make any attempt to furnish any medical treatment.
- A. Very little treatment was given to us. Capt. E. Frueler had been wounded in aerial combat on 22 December. He had two bullet wounds in his shoulder and had great difficulty in getting attention. He occasionally was given a little treatment.
- Q. On this trip did you witness any beating of the officers and men?
- A. Yes. One officer, Capt. W. M. Platt, USMC, was beaten with a club for talking. I didn't witness any other beatings, but many took place among the enlisted prisoners and civilians elsewhere on the ship.
- Q. Did you see the conditions of the enlisted men's and civilians' quarters?
- A. They were similar to ours, but were colder. We were over the engine room. I could look down the passage-way and get a glimpse of them, but could not inspect them in any way.
- Q. Was your money and other valuable collected?
- A. They confiscated all our possessions and forced us to leave them on the deck. They also took all the extra clothing we had. They issued each of us a small wool and cotton undershirt to add to our wardrobes. The officers had sufficient blankets but I don't believe the rest of the people did.
- Q. Would you have anything of note to report of your stay in Yokahama?
- A. They took several of us from the compartments to be interviewed by the press and Naval intelligence, and in several cases, made recordings for our dependents in the States, saying that we were well, and in order to get these announcements through on the radio, we said we were well treated.

- Q. Did they take all your money?
- A. Yes, all of our money except for some which a few of the men managed to conceal was taken either at Wako or on board the ship. They also took all our jewelry, watches, fountain pens and anything else which had any value.
- Q. While you were in this first prisoner of war camp near Shanghai, did you suffer any beatings?
- A. No, I did not.
- Q. Did you witness any beatings administered to any of the prisoners.
- A. I saw several officers and men beaten by Japanese sentrys and supervisory officers for failure to salute, or for other trivial reasons.
- Q. Can you give us the name of the commanding officer of the Nitta Maru?
- A. No.
- Q. Did you know the names of any officers on board the ship?
- A. Lieut. Saito was in charge of the prisoners.
- Q. Do you know the name of the commanding officer of the first prison camp?
- A. Yes. Col. Yuse was the commanding officer. Lia No. 1, was Captain Endo who was assisted by Lieut. Akiyama and Dr. Shindo.
- Q. Do you know the names of the interpreters?
- A. They had several interpreters, one was a Korean - a civilian - I do not know his name. There were two Japanese non-commissioned officers who knew some English.
- Q. Is it a fact that in most instances the beatings were executed upon the orders of the interpreters?
- A. The interpreters were very arrogant and overbearing and took it upon themselves to slap the prisoners.
- Q. Did you at any time see prisoners abused in the presence of Captain Endo?
- A. I do not recall that I did.
- Q. Or in the presence of the Commanding Officer of the camp?
- A. No. They were aware of the beatings.

Q. Did you report to the top-side that the men were being abused and beaten by the sentrys and the inferior in command?

A. Yes, on many occasions.

Q. In this jail, Bridge House, will you tell us what treatment was received and anything you know concerning the running of that place in the nature of atrocities?

A. The only atrocities I witnessed was beating of Chinese prisoners by the guards. They were severely beaten at times for smoking or stealing food. I heard them beating and torturing other prisoners in other rooms of the Bridge House, while we were in the offices of the Bridge House, though I could not see what was going on.

Q. At Ward Road, did they administer any corporal punishment to you?

A. None of the prisoners of war were punished by corporal punishment. Some were confined on bread and water for smoking violations. Nobody was struck.

The Japanese officer in charge of the prisoners of war was a member of the gaol staff called Mori, in charge of the foreign section in which we were confined along with a group of other prisoners convicted of espionage and sabotage. These prisoners were nationals from all over Europe including fifteen political prisoners who had been convicted of espionage. Five of them were Soviet citizens who were sentenced for espionage activities in Shanghai. We found there also seven other political prisoners - 6 British and one Russian - who had been convicted of organizing a sabotage ring. Mr. Gande, a British citizen, who was a Shanghai merchant, was the leader of this ring and sentenced to four years confinement. Another, Mr. Elias, was a Shanghai broker.

Q. These people you just mentioned were civilians who were convicted of offenses against the Japanese regime?

A. Yes. There were also upwards of 100 assorted consular prisoners and white prisoners of no nationality (mostly White Russian) serving time for ordinary crimes.

Q. These civil criminals were confined in the same place as the prisoners of war, weren't they?

A. Yes.

Q. Did you make any complaint to the person in charge of the war prisoners that this situation was contrary to the rules of land warfare?

A. Yes, we made several written complaints to the superior Japanese Army officer in that area protesting against being confined with criminals and about the fact that we were allowed no tobacco and no writing

materials and also requesting that we be allowed to supplement our food supply from outside. These requests were ignored. From about the middle of June for about six months, however, we were allowed extra food on advice of the doctor.

Q. At Nanking, did you suffer any abuses?

A. This second trip to Bridge House, we were in a cell with a large number of Chinese and conditions were very bad because of lice. The food was poor consisting solely of rice and resulted in my case in malnutrition, indigestion, and beri-beri. At Kiang Wan the Japs who dished out the food saw to it that the Americans got the thinnest soup and the smallest portions of rice. We had no medical attention. Some of the prisoners were suffering from bad skin infections; I had a couple of infections on my leg as a result of the escape, that lasted quite a while. We suffered quite a bit from cold. They gave us no clothing other than what we had escaped in, in early October, and the four or five blankets they gave us were thin and had very little warmth. We were in solitary confinement and averaged fifteen minutes of exercise two or three times a week.

In August 1943, while in Ward Road Gaol, the Swiss Consul commenced to furnish assistance in the way of small amounts of food sent in, and also small allowances of money and a certain amount of clothing and soap and things of that nature. The Jap in charge, Mori, took about 40% of everything and used or sold it to others. At first, the governor was a Jap, but he was retired in July 1943, and replaced by a Chinaman. The Chinese took no action but left everything to Mori who stole the goods and food sent into us, and also the money we used to supplement the food. We were supposed to be able to write to our relatives at home but because of Captain Mori, occasionally they failed to supply us with writing materials. We received mail which had been censored by the Japanese military police. I got some three dozen or more letters during my imprisonment. Some of the prisoners got as few as two letters during the whole time of confinement. This was probably because the Japs took no pains to censor and issue it to them.

Q. Did they allow Red Cross packages to be sent to you?

A. The prisoners in the prisoner of war camp received them but we did not. The help we got from the Swiss was not from the Red Cross.

Q. Do you have any complaints to make relative to the treatment you received at Nanking?

A. The treatment here was a little better, with better food. We received a small amount of medical attention. We were not allowed any reading matter, and were punished for talking. They usually handcuffed us so we could not move our hands at all. In the Spring and Summer, we were with a shortage of water. At one time we were confined four in

a cell with no room to lie down, but most of the time we had enough space. For the most you could say we received fairly moderate treatment. This was true except for one time we were severely punished for a violation of the prison regulations. They tried to keep us from talking, and the guards tried to control the situation by adopting measures of their own. On the 25th of June 1945 in Nanking, we were seven in a cell which was pretty crowded and we had been warned to stop talking. This we failed to do so the guard closed the windows of the cell and it was very hot. The plumbing consisted of a bucket in the corner. One of the prisoners broke a window to let in some air. Everyone from the Commanding Officer down, came down to investigate and took out five of us who were in good health and put us in leather strait jackets. They were then taken out in the yard and water was thrown on them, so that when the leather dried, it would draw up. Coulson had been very ill. I had recovered from my illness but had dropped in weight down to 115 pounds. We were given extra consideration by not being put into strait jackets. We were put into heavy leather belts to which were clamped hand cuffs, for fifteen days.

Q. What were the conditions at Peking?

A. It was run much more tautly. They pushed us around considerably, but there were no beatings. The food was very poor. From 6 October 1944, until we were released, we were not allowed to have any contact with outsiders such as the Swiss Consul, nor receive any outside aid. We were not allowed to write letters. We received several letters during the first few months, but during the last six months we did not. We were not allowed any tobacco. When we were in Kiang Wen and Nanking, both places were bombed several times by U. S. Army bombers.

Q. Were your places of confinement close to military action?

A. Yes, right in the midst of it. We could hear the Japs drilling in our vicinity.

Q. Were there any anti-aircraft guns in your vicinity?

A. Yes, there were many guns in both places and we could hear them firing at the bombers as they flew over the area. On some occasions we could see the American P-51's and P-29's.

Q. Did any bombs fall within the prison?

A. The prison at Kiang Wen was a very small building and no bombs landed actually in the enclosure, but they shook the building. The Jap guards wore steel helmets and unlocked all the cell doors with the idea of moving Jap prisoners out, but we were not taken to shelters. The sanitary facilities here were very bad. The prisoners who were sick got very little medical treatment, and nobody was allowed any dental treatment.

Q. Did they work you?

A. Some of the enlisted men prisoners worked in the garden at Ward Road Gaol, but it was voluntary. It gave them a leeway to prepare for the escape. No one worked at any other place.

Q. From your observation, in your opinion, was the lack of food due to the lack of the food supplies of the Japanese, or was it a planned system of starvation?

A. I think there was plenty of food in China and the Japs could and did get it. Our rations in the prisons were supposed to be the same as for the other prisoners, and they were except for the fact that the Japs in charge of the food would often times steal it.

Q. Would those in charge of the prisoner of war camps deliberately under-feed the prisoners?

A. Yes. In the prisoner of war camp it was true. I know that from the evidence that they were kept in very low physical state because of holding out on the food.

NOTE: When we left the military prison at Peking I know that there was confined therein four of the Doolittle fliers: Lieutenant Neilson, Hite, and Barr, and Sgt. Deshazer. They were confined in that prison for two days after our release and until I made contact with the rescue mission and told them of their whereabouts. I did not see these men at Nanking, but did see them in the cells in the Peking military prison as I was going to and from the wash-room; however, I did not get to hold any conversation with them until after our release.

/s/ Winfield S. Cunningham
 WINFIELD S. CUNNINGHAM, Capt.
 U.S.N.

State of Maryland)
) SS
 County of Anne Arundel)

I, Winfield S. Cunningham of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Winfield S. Cunningham
 WINFIELD S. CUNNINGHAM, Capt.
 U.S.N.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 23th day of November 1945.

/s/ A. Evelyn Wayson
 My Commission expires
 May 5, 1948 (SEAL)

Doc 8209

No. 1

答同

姓名: WINFIELD SCOTT CUNNINGHAM
籍貫: CEDAR PARK, R.F.D. #2, ANNAPOLIS, MARYLAND

答同

姓名: ...
籍貫: ...

答同

姓名: ...
籍貫: ...

答同

姓名: ...
籍貫: WAKE ISLAND

答同

姓名: ...
籍貫: WAKE ISLAND

答同

姓名: ...
籍貫: ...

答同

姓名: ...
籍貫: ...

答同

姓名: ...
籍貫: ...

答同

姓名: ...
籍貫: ...

答同

姓名: ...
籍貫: SHANGHAI

Doc 8209

No. 2

之ヲソノチ二月二十六日^{WOSUNG}ニ吳淞ニ歸^ルルニシテ三月
 十日ニ船^ノ其處^ニ力^ヲ脱走^スニシテガソノ翌日他^ノ四
 人^ト者^ト一^緒ニ捕^ハル^ニシ^テ之^ノ其^ノ人^々多^ク英國海軍
 中佐^ノハ^ノミ^ハ海軍予備役^ノニ^シテ^ハ又^ニ又^ニ
 少佐^トハ^ノワシントン州^ノヤ^シ市^ノ出身^トシテ^ハ又^ニ又^ニ
 氏^トリ^ト言^フ中国^ノ人^ト少年^トト^シテ^ハ又^ニ又^ニ
 我^レ々^ノ電^報流^ル通^シマ^ルル^ニ因^リテ^ハ下^ヲ掘^リテ^ハ浮^上層^ノ
 收^入所^ノ外^ニ出^テ徒^歩ヲ^揚子^江ト^黃浦^江ト^ノ
 會^流地^ノ矣^ト行^キ其^ノ處^ニ浦^東^{POOTUNG}ノ^渡ヲ^ト計^畫
 之^ニシ^テ我^レ々^ノ舟^ヲ争^ヒテ^ハ出^来ナ^カツ^テ河^ヲ横^断
 出^来ニ^シテ^ハ朝^ニシ^テ我^レ々^ノ北^華山^ノ村^ノ近^ク中国^ノ
 農^家ノ^物置^ニ行^キシ^テ之^ノ其^ノ日^中時^ガ經^リテ^ハ後^ヲ我^レ々^ノ
 其^ノ處^ニ住^ムル^ノ話^ガ廣^クリ^シ其^ノ中国^ノ農^夫ハ^中國^ノ地^方
 方^德僱^軍者^ト爲^リ我^レ々^ノ報^告之^ニ因^リテ^ハ我^レ々^ノ捕^ハ日^本
 軍^ニ引^渡ス^ルニ^シテ^ハ我^レ々^ノ吳^淞ノ^憲兵^刑務^所ニ^二日^間過^シ
 之^ノ手^錠ヲ^掛ケ^テ送^リ戻^サレ^ドト^ノ風^ニシ^テ脱^走シ^テ過^シ
 カ^テ系^スタ^スメ^ニ收^容所^内ヲ^引キ^廻シ^テ之^ノソ^ノカ^ラ我^レ々^ノ
 ハ^アリ^ツギ^ノハ^ウス^ニ移^サシ^テ之^ノ我^レ々^ノ取^調ヘ^テ受^ケテ^ハ
 一^月其^ノ處^ニ抑^留サ^レア^リツ^ギノ^ハウ^スノ^監房^ニ夫^レ
 々^ノ人^宛別^々ノ^監房^ニ入^リシ^テ之^ノ然^レニ^テハ^ハ是^等
 監^房ニ^ハ三^分至^五分^ノ中国^ノ人^ノ囚^人ト^モ多^ク人^ノ囚^人
 (民間^ノ人)ガ^居リ^シ之^ノ……
 ……四月十四日ニ我^レ々^ノ江^灣^{KIANG WAN}ノ^軍事^刑務^所
 ニ^伴シ^テ行^キ其^ノ處^ニ裁^判ヲ^待ツ^間一^月抑^留サ^レ
 シ^テ之^ノ我^レ々^ノ到^着シ^テ四月十四日ニ裁^判ヲ^受ケ^テ
 之^ノガ^ソノ^裁判^ニ當^ツテ^ハ日^本人^ニ明^クカ^ニ氣^ニ入^ラ
 ナ^カツ^テ我^レ々^ノソ^ノ六月三日ニ裁^判ヲ^受ケ^テ我^レ々^ノ監^禁サ^レシ^テ

Doc 8209 ☆

状態の事其上一日平均二十三時間四十五分独房ニ監禁示ワ

リットイフ見地カラノミ言ハハ悪イモノデシタ。食物ハ悪クハア

リマセシレカナリ清潔ニシテサルトコトガ出来マシタ。我々ハ隔

日ニ約ニ十分運動ヲシマシタ。其ノ裁判ハ裁判トイフ通念

カラ見テ本堂ノ裁判トイ言ハマセンデシタ。我々ハ何モ意

スコトガ無イノテ單ニ聽取スルトイフコトガテ

シタ。係リノ日本人ハ強制手段ニヨツテ情報ヲ

得ヨウトハシマセニデシタ。裁判ハ一名ノ日本人將官ガ

裁判長ニテリ也ノ係員トシテノ陸軍大佐一名陸軍

少佐一名ガ居リ檢察官ハ良ハ陸軍大尉ノ階級ヲ

持ツ人デシタ。我々ハ各種ノ國際條約ヲ擧ゲテ是等

協定ノ下ニ在テハ脱走ニ對スル最高刑ハ三十日ノ独房

監禁アルコトヲ指摘シマシタ。我々ハ既ニ三月ノ独

房監禁アル別ニ三月ノ監禁アルコト居リマシタ。此ノ日

本法廷ハ其ノ協定ノ署名國テハ十ク從ツテ壽府協

約條款ニハ拘束サレテイト主張シマシタ。彼等ハ我々ヲ日

本陸軍刑法ノ條項ニ依ツテ日本軍中カラノ脱營者トシテ

裁判シマシタ。脱走シタ我々三人ノ軍籍者ハ十軍中ノ

鋼、テッター氏、TEFFERSニテ其ノソレテ中國人カキテ

禁錮ヲ言ハ渡サシマシタ。三月八日ニ我々ハソノ刑ヲ受ケ

ンテ通リ刑務所其地カテ呼ビテ居ル上海市立刑務

所ニ移サシマシタ。我々ハ二年四月其ノ處ニ居リマシタ。テ

ター氏、TEFFERSハ刑期ヲ満シテ一九四三年六月二日放免

サレシタ。一九四四年十一月五日ニ我々ハソノ刑ヲ受ケ

No 3

WARD ROAD

WARD ROAD

WOLLEY
WESTERN
AMERICAN
KID
CASTENART
A. BREWER
WOLLEY
STORY
SHANGHAI
BRIDGE HOUSE

BRIMMER
STEWART
COUSON
BREWER
PETERSON
OLAFSON
HALVERSON

Doc 8207

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

答：(一) 關於... (二) 關於... (三) 關於...

No. 6

No 7

★
acc of 209

問 貸付金収支所ヲ管理する人等が故意ニ金種ヲ減らす事アリ

ト云フ

答 夫レ了夏ノ

答 不淨屬收支所アリテ本當ニテ食物ヲ減らしククニ飲

等ノ作廢運ノ健康状態が非常ニ悪カクテ了證據カ

ヲ私ニ知ラテ居ルニ

C. #1901

Document No. 8279*

Page 1.

SECRET

26 February 1947

City of Washington)
) SS:
District of Columbia)

Statement of Comdr. C. D. Smith, 56415, 701 Blackstone Hotel,
2732 Navy Department, Ext. 2203. Commanding Officer of USS Wake,
liaison officer, Office of American Consulate.

GENERAL INFORMATION

I was captured in Shanghai at noon on 8 December 1941 with about 14 enlisted men from the USS Wake. I was taken to the old Chinese Mint and kept there until the 9th of December, when I was taken to the Japanese naval prison in Kiangwan Road. I was kept there until 23 January 1942, when I was moved to the Woosung prisoner of war camp. It was on this date that the Wake Island prisoners were brought to the camp. I remained at Woosung prisoner of war camp until the 12th or 13th of March, 1942, at which time I, with three others, escaped. I was recaptured about 24 hours later and taken to the Woosung gendarmerie headquarters and interrogated for two days. We were then transferred to Bridge House, after paying the prisoner of war camp at Woosung a short visit, during which we were shackled and led around the camp at the end of dog leashes for the edification of the other prisoners. After being detained 30 days in Bridge House, we were shifted to the Japanese army prison at Kiangwan for a general court martial. We were kept here 53 days in solitary confinement. The court consisted of one general, three colonels, one major, and two warrant officers. At the expiration of this time, I received a sentence of ten years imprisonment to be served in a criminal jail with loss of all military rights. The charge for which we were tried was "desertion from the Japanese Army in time of war." We were told at the time sentence was passed that we deserved the death penalty, but owing to the fact that we were "poor, ignorant foreigners," justice would be tempered with mercy. On June 8, 1942, we were transferred to Ward Road Jail and began serving our sentence. Here we remained for two years, four months, escape finally being effected on October 6, 1944.

THE OLD CHINESE MINT, December 8 and 9, 1941

The Old Chinese Mint was a partially abandoned building in which I was kept in a large room filled with furniture. No heat, no washing facilities, no toilet.

SECRET

SECRET

JAPANESE NAVAL PRISON, KIANGWAN ROAD, CHINA
Dec. 9 to Jan. 23, 1942

This building was an old Chinese schoolhouse on the grounds of the Japanese naval observatory. Officers were given separate rooms, which were fairly clean and passable in all respects. Enlisted men were put six in a room. All conditions were fairly good.

WOOSUNG PRISONER OF WAR CAMP
Jan. 23, 1942, to March 12, 1942

Conditions at Woosung camp were deplorable, the sanitary conditions particularly being beyond all hope of betterment. Food conditions likewise. For 1500 to 1600 men, mostly prisoners from Wake Island, between 50 and 65 pounds of meat and a small amount of rice were issued in three equal lots daily. From the first day written protests were filed by senior officers, both medical and line. The Japanese commanding officer, Col. Yusei, finally became crazy and eventually died. Capt. Undo is the name of the executive officer. The Wake Island prisoners had been kept two days without food after capture on Wake Island and were then brought in the steamship Nitta Maru, which took 17 days to arrive in Shanghai, via Tokio. During this period aboard ship each man was given a cup of congee twice a day, this being the sole food allowance. There were no toilet facilities or lavatories furnished at any time for the 17 days. When these men boarded off the Nitta Maru at Woosung, they were clothed in tennis shoes and khaki pants and shirts as they had just come from the tropics. The weather at this time was cold in Shanghai and immediate protests were made to the Japanese authorities over the lack of clothing. Many of these men were struck and beaten as they came down the gangway by Japanese guards. I do not know the names of any of the victims as I had not met any of them up to that time.

The camp consisted of seven barracks subdivided into divisions holding thirty-six men sleeping on raised platforms on bare boards with four Japanese cotton blankets each, which was insufficient. The water supply was inadequate and for periods of a day at a time no water could be obtained. No arrangements whatsoever were made for drinking water, the whole water supply coming from a surface well about 30 feet deep. It would be fatal to drink water of this type in China without first boiling it. The only potable liquids furnished were cups of tea at mealtime. The toilet facilities were abominable, the toilets all draining into ditches which surrounded their respective barracks. No unnecessary cruelty came under my observation at this time except occasionally a sentry would strike a man for disobedience of orders which were

SECRET

r explained to us. Protests were made time and again over this fact because we never knew when we were breaking rules. Every sentry makes his own orders. Except for the above, there were few cases of personal abuse.

Lt. Robinson, USN, was rather severely beaten by two Japanese for requesting to grant a truck on one occasion. Robinson was in naval uniform at the time. This occurred about the 1st of February, 1942. Several other officers were slapped and kicked by the guards during this period. There was no heat and no warm clothing was supplied until about the first of March, when discarded Japanese army uniforms were furnished the thinly-clad men. To my knowledge no heat was supplied at any time for any prisoners held by the Japanese. This includes all prisons and camps of which I have knowledge.

During April and May, 1942, the Red Cross, through the Swiss consulate, succeeded in sending down weekly issues of coal for cooking and bathing water purposes. The Japanese regularly took about half of this coal for their own officers' quarters. The cooking arrangements consisted of a number of large iron cauldrons set in brickwork. You ate soup or you didn't eat.

Another atrocity which was committed here comes to mind. A prisoner of war whose name escapes me was shot through the neck by a sentry. 15 or 20 people witnessed the incident. I did not see it personally. He was standing talking to the sentry, being about 10 to 15 feet away from him, when the sentry suddenly raised his rifle and shot him. The American senior officer violently protested to the camp authorities, and a Japanese inquiry was presumably held as the next day a statement was issued by the Japanese commandant that the affair was accidental, and the sentry was returned to duty at the same post.

Still another atrocity comes to mind. This man's name was Mark Staten, an American civilian from Wake Island, who died in March, 1942, of malnutrition and starvation. The death certificate was signed by three American naval medical officers as being attributable to the above causes. Before his death numerous overtures were made to the Japanese for a special diet, as this man was not in good condition when he arrived at the camp, but it was impossible to secure anything in the way of extra food for him. The doctors who signed the death certificate are Dr. Tyson, Captain, USN, Dr. Foley, Lt. Comdr., USN, and another doctor whose name escapes me.

The Red Cross is not recognized or allowed to function, but in a few cases they do manage to get in stuff to people through the Swiss consulate. They are still doing this at Woosung prisoner

War camp. Once a week at Woosung (now changed to Kiangwan Camp), they are allowing the Red Cross to send down pork and beans on Friday. They cook the pork and beans together, having beans for Friday night dinner and pork for Saturday night, but on these two meals the Japanese ration is cancelled.

WOOSUNG GENDARMERIE
March 13 and 14, 1942

At this place we were confined in a small, extremely filthy hole in the concrete wall. The food consisted of congee three times a day. This was delivered by a small coolie, who would bring a bucket full of rice, dip both hands into it and make a ball about the size of his doubled fist. This was then rolled through the bars across the filthy cell floor to the person to whom it was going. No water or tea--nothing drinkable--was furnished.

BRIDGE HOUSE
March 14, 1942, to April 13, 1942

At Bridge House I was confined in a cell with 18 others--Chinese, Japanese, and foreigners. The conditions in this place were appalling. I was lying next to a man with leprosy and was forced to sleep in close contact with him as the place was so crowded. We were kept here for 30 days undergoing what the Japanese called an investigation. The food consisted of congee in the morning and four ounces of bread a day. One small cup of tea was given us twice a day, no other liquids being procurable.

The moral degradation here was of considerably more importance than the actual physical discomfort, which in itself was sufficient punishment for anyone. This was during the month of March, and it was very cold. We were given one blanket each, which was completely insufficient when one is sleeping on the bare floor. During the day we were forced to sit in formation, cross legged on the floor, without any support or rest for the back or arms. At times an unusually cruel guard would make the rounds of the cells, forcing everyone to kneel on the wooden floor. This would sometimes be kept up for six or eight hours.

About two minutes a day were allowed for washing, which was carried out at a tap in the open courtyard, cold water only being furnished. No exercise period was allowed, although in a few occasions the prisoners in one cell would be allowed in the courtyard to scrub down the gutters and deck. All of the prisons

SECRET

in which I was confined were infested with vermin, but this was undoubtedly the worst. Lice were swarming everywhere. A few favorite prisoners were allowed to have a small amount of food sent in from outside, but we did not succeed in getting permission for this.

I saw a lot of torturing in this place. Reference is particularly made to R. Reed, retired chief storekeeper, and Sgt. Jackson (now a lieutenant), USMC. Both Reed and Jackson were detained here for 90 days and were severely mistreated. Reed had been out of service for some ten years, but the Japanese insisted that he must have valuable information, which was their excuse for torturing him. Jackson had been acting as clerk for Major Williams, who was an ONI representative in Shanghai before the war, and the Japanese were most insistent on extracting information from him for this reason.

I remember Sgt. Yamamoto quite well. I consider him a bad egg. There was one Kato there, an interpreter, who was very vicious. One of the worst of all was a Japanese interpreter who designated himself as being No. 56, he being very careful to keep us from learning his name. No. 56 was this man's official number as an interpreter. I have his name and something of his personal history safely secured in Shanghai and full information can be obtained about him after the war. This man had spent at least half of each year in the states for a long period as he was in the export business from Japan. Although being a Japanese subject, he was married to an American Japanese and had several children. Two of his daughters at that time were attending the University of Southern California. All of his family except himself were American citizens. He was one of the vilest, most vicious men in the whole place. This man was cautious in handling us military prisoners and evinced strong wishes to remain incognito.

The Japanese sergeant who was known as "the big, bad wolf," but whose name I forget, was one of the most sadistic of the lot. He had a habit of always roaring at the prisoners and also beating people without provocation, which I think will cause him to be remembered by many people who were confined at Bridge House.

Lt. Kawai was in charge of all foreigners at Bridge House. I have never seen him torture people himself, but he is undoubtedly the man who issued orders for this to be done. In one questioning while in his office he called me a liar, whereupon I got up and tried to hit him, but he got out of the room before I could attack him. He came back in a few minutes and apologized. Ishihara was an interpreter and a bad man.

There were only one or two good people in the whole place, a Mrs. Nogami being excellent. She was also an interpreter. It is

SECRET

SECRET

possible that she can be persuaded to testify about atrocities after the war as she is a woman of fine character. Her husband was educated in the states and she was educated at an American mission school in Japan. She spoke excellent English and had been sent to Shanghai from Japan especially as an interpreter. She was strongly adverse to torture and raised a real row with the torturers whenever possible, but, of course, she was unable to accomplish much.

I saw a number of tortures to a minor degree in Bridge House while passing through the bar doors on my many trips up to the office. I saw men being given the water treatment, being burned with cigarettes, being given shocks with an electrical machine of some kind, and almost innumerable beatings with clubs and with the backs of swords. Violent kicking with heavy army boots on the prisoners' shins was so common as to be almost unnoticed. Several Chinese suffered broken legs from this while I was in Bridge House.

The water treatment consists of lashing a man down face up across the desk top. A bath towel is then so rolled as to form a circle around his nose and mouth, and a five-gallon can of water, which was generally mixed with the vilest of human refuse and other filth, such as kerosene, was then put handy. The man was then questioned, and if he did not respond, the water was poured into the space made by the bath towel, forcing the prisoner either to swallow and inhale the vile concoction or to strangle himself. This is kept up, questioning between doses, until the man is at a point of unconsciousness. Shortly before unconsciousness is reached, the man is frequently beaten across the belly with a small iron rod. After consciousness has left, he is usually suspended by the heels from a tackle directly overhead and the water allowed to drain out of him. When he has sufficiently recuperated, the treatment is resumed. I saw parts of this torture given to different individuals, but never saw the complete treatment given to any one person. I never saw an American being given this treatment, but Leroy Healy of Shanghai told me that he had undergone the punishment.

Before beginning torture or questioning, the Japanese almost invariably stripped the prisoner stark naked. This is a tremendous psychological disadvantage as when a man loses his dignity, he usually loses his firmness. The ordinary procedure for questioning was to force the prisoner to kneel on a metal plate alongside of a desk with his hands at his sides and he was then questioned by two or three Japanese. This position becomes acutely painful after a few minutes, but if the prisoner wavers or attempts to relieve himself by using his hands, he is beaten. Most Japanese are chain smokers and while the questioning is going on, as they finish their cigarettes, the lighted butts are usually pressed gently against any part of the man's bare anatomy and thus extinguished. I have personally seen more than thirty foreigners who had somewhere between 300 and 500 cigarette burns on all parts of their bodies. Including in this lot was one American, Leroy Healy, a news commentator from the American radio station, Shanghai.

SECRET

SECRET

Many indecencies were witnessed in this place, one being the case of Mrs. Ellis Hyam, who was kept in a cell for 27 days with about 25 men of all races. The toilet facilities in all cells consisted of a rather large wooden tub in the front of the cell, which Mrs. Hyam was forced to use in full view of everyone.

In the next cell to this lady was a foreign woman whom I did not know. At one time the Japanese found a small scrap of paper in her cell on which was scribbled some writing. This incensed them greatly, and they marched all the occupants out into the open courtyard, forcing them to completely disrobe in the cell before going out. This woman was in a very advanced stage of pregnancy and she and about 25 men were forced to stand in the courtyard, where it was bitterly cold and in full view of dozens of others for at least 30 minutes while the cell and clothing were examined for the offending pencil.

I have seen the electrical treatment being given, but don't know just exactly what it is or how severe the results are. It does not appear to be very efficacious.

After the war I can produce the names and addresses of more than 30 white men who were seriously tortured in Bridge House if the are still alive. Only one of these was an American--Healy.

I do not know what the Japs were trying to learn by these tortures. The men who were tortured seldom had any idea as to what was required of them. For some reason they frequently picked on men who knew nothing and who had done nothing. The principal question was "Are you mixed up with underground activities to aid the enemy or against Japan?", and senseless questions like this were asked for hours and hours. The harshness of treatment depended on the particular sergeant and interpreter who were questioning. Each handled the prisoner according to his own ideas. One man might be tortured once or possibly a dozen times. One could never guess. The sergeants were given a completely free hand apparently. Several Chinese were so severely beaten that they died in their cells. I gathered the impression that the officers did not give explicit directions for questioning, but merely ordered so and so out for interrogation. It seemed to be generally understood among all Japanese personnel that punishment would be inflicted as and when required. It is certain that all officers attached to the gendarmerie knew practically every detail of what was going on because the cries, moans, and sounds of blows could be heard over the whole building at most any time.

I was not tortured at Bridge House because if a man recognizes the fact that the Japanese is markedly inferior and the Japanese subconsciously realizes the fact that the man knows this, and above all if one doesn't lose his temper, Japanese can be handled remarkably well. I have had them say to me "Put your hands out."; "What for?"

SECRET

SECRET

Many indecencies were witnessed in this place, one being the case of Mrs. Ellis Hyam, who was kept in a cell for 27 days with about 25 men of all races. The toilet facilities in all cells consisted of a rather large wooden tub in the front of the cell, which Mrs. Hyam was forced to use in full view of everyone.

In the next cell to this lady was a foreign woman whom I did not know. At one time the Japanese found a small scrap of paper in her cell on which was scribbled some writing. This incensed them greatly, and they marched all the occupants out into the open courtyard, forcing them to completely disrobe in the cell before going out. This woman was in a very advanced stage of pregnancy and she and about 25 men were forced to stand in the courtyard, where it was bitterly cold and in full view of dozens of others for at least 30 minutes while the cell and clothing were examined for the offending pencil.

I have seen the electrical treatment being given, but don't know just exactly what it is or how severe the results are. It does not appear to be very efficacious.

After the war I can produce the names and addresses of more than 30 white men who were seriously tortured in Bridge House if they are still alive. Only one of these was an American--Healy.

I do not know what the Japs were trying to learn by these tortures. The men who were tortured seldom had any idea as to what was required of them. For some reason they frequently picked on men who knew nothing and who had done nothing. The principal question was "Are you mixed up with underground activities to aid the enemy or against Japan?", and senseless questions like this were asked for hours and hours. The harshness of treatment depended on the particular sergeant and interpreter who were questioning. Each handled the prisoner according to his own ideas. One man might be tortured once or possibly a dozen times. One could never guess. The sergeants were given a completely free hand apparently. Several Chinese were so severely beaten that they died in their cells. I gathered the impression that the officers did not give explicit directions for questioning, but merely ordered so and so out for interrogation. It seemed to be generally understood among all Japanese personnel that punishment would be inflicted as and when required. It is certain that all officers attached to the gendarmerie knew practically every detail of what was going on because the cries, moans, and sounds of blows could be heard over the whole building at most any time.

I was not tortured at Bridge House because if a man recognizes the fact that the Japanese is markedly inferior and the Japanese subconsciously realizes the fact that the man knows this, and above all if one doesn't lose his temper, Japanese can be handled remarkably well. I have had them say to me "Put your hands out."; "What for?"

SECRET

"I am going to handcuff you."; "What for?"; "I am going to punish you."; "Oh, no. I won't have it. I can't stand for that sort of thing." In such cases I have never seen the time when the Jap in question didn't back down. It would be way better for everyone if the Japanese Navy had charge of prisoners. The Japanese naval officer approximates a gentleman compared with the army officer. Most all naval officers speak some English; this is rare in the army. It is notable that in order to become an officer in the army it is necessary that a man serve two years as a private first.

You would be surprised how many Japanese try to be friendly, especially during the last six months of my imprisonment. I have casually suggested to a few officials that torturing was inhuman, but they seem to be mildly surprised that I should assume such an attitude. I am sure that many of them are against torture in principle, but they dare not criticize their superiors. In Bridge House there were two persons, Mrs. Nogami and a sergeant, who were openly against all forms of torture, but neither of them could apply sufficient pressure to mitigate the punishment. I have seen this sergeant just mentioned with tears in his eyes when he would see and hear extreme torture being applied. Mrs. Nogami frequently became so angry with the torturers that she would ask them what the hell they were doing and tell them not to be beasts. She may have been of some assistance in certain specific cases, but she was treading on dangerous ground and she seemed to recognize the fact and modify her actions accordingly. It seems to me that torturing was not against regulations, but was at least tacitly understood, if not worse.

JAPANESE ARMY PRISON, KIANGWAN
April 13 to June 8, 1942.

At Kiangwan the cells were of concrete with wooden flooring and measured four feet by nine feet. The toilet facilities consisted of a benjo underneath the flooring, which was reached by means of a trapdoor. The trapdoor was loose fitting and the receptacles under the flooring were rarely cleaned. The stench in these cells was abominable. To make matters worse the only ventilation was through a peephole in the door measuring $3/8$ of an inch by 6 inches.

Here we were in solitary confinement and the Japanese tried to force us to kneel facing the wall on the bare floor all day except during mealtimes. We were not allowed to sit on the blankets. At 7:00 A.M. we were led to the yard and allowed five minutes for toilet. This included the time from opening the door until time of closing the door, which probably gave less than two minutes for completing our ablutions. Exercise was allowed us for 20 minutes two or three times a week. This was one of the few places where we were allowed sufficient bedding to keep warm.

Here we were fed on Japanese army rations, which were excellent and all of us would have been delighted to have spent the whole war on such food. One of the worst features in this jail, as in others, was the lack of potable liquids, we being given a small cup of tea three times a day. Overhead in each cell was a 100 watt light which burned all night long, making sleep very hard to one unaccustomed to it.

We were in this prison 53 days. Immediately after we left here the rations were changed to the allowance previously given Chinese prisoners only. This consisted of rice twice a day and a piece of puz once a day. Puz is steamed bread as nearly inedible as any food I have ever seen. We were later to receive this article as a part of a standard diet at Ward Road Jail. By no means could the shortage of food be attributed to a shortage of supplies. Most of us, especially Comdr. Woolley, Royal Navy, and myself, had access to practically unlimited funds from outside sources and could have secured ample foodstuffs. This was a deliberate policy of mistreatment intended in some cases to cause death, as death was really wanted in some cases such as that of Col. Bishop, of whom mention will be made later.

The courtmartial at Kiangwan was conducted fairly decently except that we were given an interpreter who didn't speak English. A defense counsel was assigned us who couldn't speak English either. It was really very amusing because I could understand nearly everything said in Japanese. They would comment to each other such as "It is a very serious offense. We should give them the limit." The defense counsel would speak up and say "I think we should really give them the limit." The court sentence which was finally received at the end of 53 days was only 10 years penal servitude because we were "poor, ignorant foreigners who didn't know any better." The death sentence was mentioned in the conversation carried on by the court authorities at numerous times. I believe that the court was in favor of execution because they spoke of Tokio being soft, "What's matter? Why didn't they execute these fellows?"; that is what they were expecting, which leads me to believe that the sentence was ordered from Tokio direct. In conversations such as the above Japanese rarely believe that anyone understand their language, and consequently they are remarkably frank at times. After pleading guilty to the charge of having escaped and having described the whole process they took eight hours questioning to prove to them in their own minds that we were guilty. They even produced such evidence as part of the electrical fence and the shovel with which we had dug a trench. The whole affair was such a farce that we had difficulty keeping our faces straight.

Here we were fed on Japanese army rations, which were excellent and all of us would have been delighted to have spent the whole war on such food. One of the worst features in this jail, as in others, was the lack of potable liquids, we being given a small cup of tea three times a day. Overhead in each cell was a 100 watt light which burned all night long, making sleep very hard to one unaccustomed to it.

We were in this prison 53 days. Immediately after we left here the rations were changed to the allowance previously given Chinese prisoners only. This consisted of rice twice a day and a piece of pung once a day. Pung is steamed bread as nearly inedible as any food I have ever seen. We were later to receive this article as a part of a standard diet at Ward Road Jail. By no means could the shortage of food be attributed to a shortage of supplies. Most of us, especially Comdr. Woolley, Royal Navy, and myself, had access to practically unlimited funds from outside sources and could have secured ample foodstuffs. This was a deliberate policy of mistreatment intended in some cases to cause death, as death was really wanted in some cases such as that of Col. Bishop, of whom mention will be made later.

The courtmartial at Kiangwan was conducted fairly decently except that we were given an interpreter who didn't speak English. A defense counsel was assigned us who couldn't speak English either. It was really very amusing because I could understand nearly everything said in Japanese. They would comment to each other such as "It is a very serious offense. We should give them the limit." The defense counsel would speak up and say "I think we should really give them the limit." The court sentence which was finally received at the end of 53 days was only 10 years penal servitude because we were "poor, ignorant foreigners who didn't know any better." The death sentence was mentioned in the conversation carried on by the court authorities at numerous times. I believe that the court was in favor of execution because they spoke of Tokio being soft, "What's matter? Why didn't they execute these fellows?"; that is what they were expecting, which leads me to believe that the sentence was ordered from Tokio direct. In conversations such as the above Japanese rarely believe that anyone understands their language, and consequently they are remarkably frank at times. After pleading guilty to the charge of having escaped and having described the whole process they took eight hours questioning to prove to them in their own minds that we were guilty. They even produced such evidence as part of the electrical fence and the shovel with which we had dug a trench. The whole affair was such a farce that we had difficulty keeping our faces straight.

SECRET

WARD ROAD JAIL
June 8 to October 6, 1944

On arrival at Ward Road Jail we were taken over by the jailors of this civilian prison. Most of the warders and officials were British with a few Americans, Russians, etc. Practically all of the British were ex-service men. The No. 1 jailor at this time was a Mr. Chadderton, ex-Royal Navy, who apologized profusely for guarding people of his own kind, but stated that he had cleared his conscience by having all Allied guards and warders sign a round robin note to Japanese authorities relieving themselves of all responsibility for our safety. This amazing condition lasted for nearly a year at which time all civilian Allies were rounded up and put in concentration camps in the Shanghai area. Up to this time we had had a few Japanese especially detailed to watch over us, but after the Allied guards were sent to concentration camps all warders were Japanese, including the head of the prison. Chinese and Sikhs remained as guards in this prison throughout the whole time, but were forbidden to talk to us.

At this prison we were confined in separate cells and the physical conditions of the jail were quite good as this is a fine, modern institution. At the time we were imprisoned here there were 9300 prisoners in the institution, making this the world's largest jail. At no time did we have more than 40 or 50 military and political prisoners here, all the rest being criminals. The food, which was never good, gradually deteriorated in quantity and quality until during the last year of our imprisonment our ration consisted of a cup of boiled barley without salt or sugar in the morning, no lunch, and a thin watery soup for dinner. 16 ounces of passable bread was furnished per man per day. This generous portion of bread was what kept us alive. Fortunately there was plenty of drinking water and ample quantities of hot tea twice a day. In theory we were allowed exercise for a period of two hours a day, but in practice this worked out somewhat over half of that.

We were not allowed any games or diversions of any kind except books. The jail had a fairly decent library of its own. When we had run through this, we were allowed to amplify our supply by having friends from the outside send in books. This was the most priceless boon of the whole war. When Shanghai was seized the Japanese threw the libraries of the various clubs into the streets. These were picked up by indigent Chinese and sold as waste paper. We had Chinese friends outside who bought these books by the gross and sent large numbers of them in to us.

We were never treated inhumanely in this place but managed to stay on fairly good terms, chiefly through the efforts of the head jailor, a Mr. P. Mori, whose mother was an American, father Japanese. The bedding here was insufficient, but we were allowed

SECRET

SECRET

to receive sufficient covering from the Swiss consulate upon making a request.

The nearest to an atrocity occurring at this place was the case of George Bruce, an American newspaperman of Shanghai. He and six others were sent down from Pootung Camp for having a concealed radio set. Due to insufficient food Bruce suffered two heart attacks in this prison and died the next day after being returned to Pootung Camp after completing his sentence.

MISCELLANEOUS

Father Roque, an American priest, was stationed near Shasi, Hupeh Province. When the Japanese took this area, they finally rounded him up, he making no effort to escape. He had kept a log book in which day to day information was noted. Injudiciously he had shortened the word "Japanese" to "Jap" in these personal notes and as a consequence was slapped around quite extensively when the Japanese came to read his notes. After Father Roque was arrested, he was transferred to several prisons in central China, but finally wound up in Ward Road Jail, Shanghai, sometime in 1944. Father Roque told me that he was not allowed to take a bath for I believe 17 months and for one period of 9 months could not even wash his face and hands or brush his teeth. This occurred in prisons in central China. I doubt if any evidence can be obtained from Father Roque about his treatment as the Catholic priests have orders not to talk. I believe additional information regarding this particular case could be obtained from Healy, however, as Healy was his cell-mate in Ward Road jail. Father Roque was eventually tried in Hankow I believe and was given a sentence of several years to be served in a criminal jail.

An American army colonel named Bishop, I believe, was at Bridge House during 1942. I think that he was shot down in French Indo China. Three other Americans were with him. He was treated very badly indeed, so I am told by others who saw and talked to him. He was kept in Bridge House for one solid year. Long before the expiration of this time he had contracted beri beri, dysentery, and probably other diseases. It appeared that the Japanese were trying to kill him, but he refused to die. The Swiss consulate went to work and somehow they managed to have him transferred to the prisoner of war camp at Kiangwan (ex Woosung). At the prisoner of war camp Navy doctors did everything they could for him, and I understand that he has regained his health. For months he had been unable to stand and could hardly crawl toward the latter part of his confinement at Bridge House.

SECRET

SECRET

Four of Doolittle's men were executed in Shanghai right near where I was according to the local Japanese newspapers. I believe this to be true. The newspapers announced that a public decapitation had been carried out. I could not possibly guess the approximate date. Shortly before this event local newspapers under Toki date line stated that the Diet had promulgated an order whereby any foreign aviator bombing Japan would be summarily beheaded when caught. After some time newspapers came out stating that these four Americans had been tried and dealt with in accordance with this order. A notice was also served at the same time that in the future all cases of this kind would be handled in the same manner.

The Japanese refused to recognize the Geneva Conference in any shape or form, contending that the Japanese were a law unto themselves. If the question of the conference were pushed, they would almost go into hysterics.

I know a great deal about the Black Dragon Society as I have run across a few Japanese who are connected with it and occasionally let slip a few remarks. They are, of course, all extremists. I have been told by several of them that even if Japan lost the war, all United States prisoners would be executed. They were of the opinion that all prisoners should be killed regardless of the outcome of the war, which probably explains a great deal of the torturing. I cannot remember the names of any of the Japanese connected with this Society.

Paul Chandler, Warrant Officer, USMC (now Lt. Col.), was stationed in Shanghai with the 4th Marines. When the marines were sent to the Philippines, Chandler with four sergeants assisting him remained in Shanghai to clear up business affairs. For some reason the Japanese allowed him to stay free for about a week after war was declared. He was then rounded up and brought to Bridge House. He was kept there for about two days I believe, and was then sent down to the Japanese naval prison, where he joined me. Chandler and his four sergeants were repatriated in the Gripsholm on her first trip to the east.

The Japanese navy did not take any of my belongings. They did take the belongings of the crew, but they took absolutely nothing of mine. When the army took us over, they took everything I do not know if the Japanese notified the United States Government of our capture, but we made several transcripts for broadcasts. As we almost invariably made derogatory remarks about the Japanese in these transcripts, it is doubtful if they ever went through. We were not allowed to write to our families until some time after July, 1942. The prisoner of war camp at Woosung was camouflaged. Prisoners of war were forced to wear Japanese uniforms. The camp was adjacent to a radio station. The Japanese appeared to be

SECRET

optimistic over the attack on Pearl Harbor, considering its glorious success. Subsequent to this we were frequently told "We are about to land on the Pacific Coast. All civilians along the coast have been evacuated by the Americans."

I suspect that a lot of mistreatment and negligence that the Japs showed was the result of ignorance as much as anything else. None were very intelligent and they just didn't know what to do. Officers exercised very little supervision. The remarkable diversity of orders was a constant source of friction in all camps. At Woosung prisoner of war camp we made determined efforts to have Col. Yusei formulate a set of rules of conduct and we told him that we would abide by all sets that were legal, but he admitted that it would be impossible for him to do so, because to a great extent the Japanese soldier issues his own rules as needed. In this line they seem to leave a great deal up to the individual. I have been on board Japanese cruisers and destroyers in action. It is one of the most amazing experiences I have ever had. How they run anything, I don't know. The quartermaster would be shouting at the captain and the captain in turn would be shouting at someone else, nearly all of them running around screaming. It was one of the most unusual things that happen aboard ship I have ever seen. It is amazing to me that they have done as well as they have against us, particularly at sea.

We were told that all prison guards are especially trained. A large number of these men are ex-service men, chiefly petty officers who have been wounded in action or who have done meritorious service. I believe they get about two weeks' training under supervision of the War Prisoner Bureau at Tokio. They do not seem to use the usual regimental unit designation, but appear to be classified as companies and the prisoner of war corps.

The Japanese guards were fed excellent food everywhere from what I could see. It was impossible to ascertain what rations were issued to enlisted personnel other than in the prisons to which I was confined.

The Columbia Country Club has been made into a concentration camp where they have about 250 prisoners, largely American women and children. Japanese army officers are using the Shanghai Club and the American Club as their living quarters.

Curfew at Shanghai when I left was at 10:00 P.M., all lights except a few street lights being doused at this time. An attempt had been made to blacken out completely, but robberies increased to such an enormous extent that certain lights had to be left burning. In civilian homes the largest light allowed was 5 watts.

SECRET

On several occasions I was able to discuss the theory of prisoners of war with Japanese officers. They, to my amazement, always insisted that to have taken up arms against Japan was criminal and that the prisoners must pay whatever penalty they saw fit to impose. I had the distinct impression that nearly all officers thought that the death penalty should be exacted for our temerity.

/s/ C. D. Smith:

C. D. SMITH, Comdr.

Subscribed and sworn to before me on this 5th day of March 1945,
at Washington, D. C.

/s/ Philip L. Smith

1st Lt., JAGD

26 February 1945

Statement by Comdr. C. D. Smith, 56415, regarding naval action between British and Japanese forces at Shanghai at the outbreak of war, December 8, 1941.

At 0420 on December 8, 1941, a Japanese captain went on board HMS Peterel and delivered a formal declaration of war to the commanding officer with a demand for the surrender of the vessel. The commanding officer had had previous notice of the outbreak of war and had his crew at battle stations.

The Japanese captain was told that surrender would not be made, whereupon the launch carrying the Japanese captain pulled out from the ship 700 feet and fired a Veri pistol into the air. On this signal shore batteries of 75 mm field guns stationed on the French Bund and on Pootung Point opened fire on the Peterel simultaneously with a Japanese destroyer which was moored alongside the Bund opposite to Hongkong and Shanghai Bank Building and a Japanese gun boat which was moored to the customs jetty. The Peterel was swamped with concentrated gunfire and was unable to reply with a single shot.

The Peterel's commanding officer seeing that the situation was hopeless, told the remaining members of his crew to get into the motorboat and try to get ashore. It was about this time that I became an eye witness to the following incident.

SECRET

SECRET

The boat had pulled away from the ship about 100 yards when machine guns from the naval vessels and from shore opened a concentrated fire on her. The boat almost immediately burst into flame and capsized. Those members of the crew who were still alive then attempted to escape to the shore by swimming, whereupon the Japanese concentrated their fire on these survivors, killing several.

I would classify this as murder pure and simple as the Bund was lined with Japanese soldiers and it was perfectly easy to place these men under arrest as they reached the shore.

/s/ C. D. Smith
C. D. SMITH, Comdr.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 5 day of March 1945, at Washington, D. C.

/s/ Philip L. Smith
1st Lt., JAGD

SECRET

82792
EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT #
1907
No 1

C. D. 又ニ海軍中佐、陳述書

於一九四二年十二月八日正午十二時、於米國軍艦中、カヲ、約十四名、兵員ト共ニ逮捕セラル。私ハ全船、造幣所ニ連テ行カシ其所ニ於テ、江灣路ニ皇海軍俘虜收容所ニ連テ行カシ之ヲ拘留セラル。

私ハ此一九四二年一月三日ニ吳淞俘虜收容所ニ移ルニ拘留セラル。ソノ時、島ノ俘虜所ノ收容所ニ連テ来ラセラル。此ノ日、私ハ吳淞俘虜收容所ニ於テ、三月十三日カ十三日迄留リタルカ、時ニ私ハ三人ト共ニ脱走セラル。私ハ約十四日間後、再ニ逮捕セラル。吳淞軍艦隊本部ニ連行セリ、二日間留リタル。

吾々ハソノ時、吳淞俘虜收容所ニ暫時立寄リ、後アリゾ、公及ニ移ラセラルガ立寄リタル間、吾々ハ他俘虜達ニ見カセラル爲メ、草紙、端ヲキチカケラシ收容所ノ周圍ヲ引テ、廻リタル。

アリゾ、公及ニ三十三日間拘留セラル後、我々ハ一般軍法會議ニ廻リ、公及ハ江灣、日本陸軍俘虜收容所ニ移ラセラル。我々ハ此所ニ五十三日間留リタル。

軍法會議ハ、少佐一人、大佐一人、少佐一人、准士官一人、構成セラル。此ノ裁判ヲ終ル時、私軍人トシテ權利ヲ奪ハレ、刑奪セリ、犯罪人監獄ニ收メ、可キ十年桎梏ノ判決受ケラル。吾々ハ裁判セラル罪責ハ、戰時ニ於テ日本軍ヨリ脱走セラル。判決下ル時、吾々ハ死刑ニ償フモノトシテ、春ニ無罪外國ニ

民國二十九年十月一日

自即日起，凡我同胞，如有發現...

之舉，定予重賞。此布。

中華民國二十九年十月一日

國民政府主席 蔣中正

國民政府 行政院

國民政府 財政部

國民政府 經濟部

國民政府 教育委員會

國民政府 社會部

國民政府 衛生部

國民政府 交通委員會

中華民國二十九年十月一日

Doc 8279

No 3

★ 丁父要殘酷行為內折歩哨が吾々に決して説明せしむる、
ナイ命令ニ従ハズニミツテ誰ヤヲ打ツ以外此頃ニ格別殺ノ目ニ
シキニセズニ各々何時規則ヲ破ツテモナクナシ全無解リ
アテニシテモナク此等實ニ対シテ何回トナク抗議ヲ志シテ之
各歩哨、勝手ニ命令ヲ出スヘシ。

上記以外ニ個人的虐待ノ例ニ殆ドナシヤナシ。
米國海軍大尉「ロビソ」ノ一時期トシテ始動
セルヲ托ボタシテ二人、日本人ニ依ツカセリ酷ク殺シ之
ノ一、時「ロビソ」ノ海軍、軍艦ヲ差留テ平シタ。

此一九四二年二月一日頃起リシタ。他數名、將校
此ノ期間中衛兵ニ事ヲ行ハシメテ之ヲ殺シ之ヲ殺スルヤ
ニ供給セルモノナリヤテ之ヲ知ル、知ツテ年々限出八日
本人ニ抑留セルヲ何レノ待遇ニ對シテ如何ニ時ニテ煖
房裝束ニ供セルセシメテ之ヲ此ノ私、知ツテ年々殺シ、盜
獄及以收容所ナリトナリシ。

一九四二年四月及五月中ニ赤十字ハスヘシ領事館
ヲ通ジテ料理及風呂用トシテ毎週給與、石炭運
"込"ルニ成功シシタ。日本人、常例的ニ此、石炭、
約半斤ヲ徵收、自身ノ將校宿舎用ニ取りテ之ヲ煉瓦
爐ニ取リテ之ヲ多數、火釜ヲ料理用具ニ食フニ
ハスヘシ他者ニシタ。此所ヲ行ハシテ之ヲ殘虐行
爲ヲ思ヒ出シテ之ヲ。名前ニ忘レシタテ一俣處方歩哨ノ

☆
DOC 8279

下必要残酷行為時斯步哨が吾々に決して説明せしむる、
 一命全に從ふと云つて誰か打つ以外此頃格別私目
 につきては三々吾々何時規則を破つてや、か全然解り
 はずと云ふは、此等度三対一を何回トツテ抗議をしたか、
 各歩哨、勝手命令を出さず。
 上記以外、個人的虐待、例に始り下りやらず。
 米國海軍大尉「ロビン」の試問するに始り
 せしむる拒否する二人、日本人に依りたり酷く懲らしめ
 らし、一対一、海軍、軍隊を差置り平らした。
 こゝに一九四二年二月一日頃起りたる、他、数名、學校
 職員、船中、衛兵、三等兵、下打りしり、既に三々之の報復あり、
 二供給せしむる、今、下りやらず、知、知、五年、陸軍、八百
 本人、御座り、何れ、懲罰、三対一、如何、何時、三、後
 房、結果、是、供、せし、之、之、此、私、知、し、本、之、後、三、監
 獄、及、以、收、容、所、と、同、様、と、下、り、せ、し、り。
 一九四二年四月及五月中、赤十字、ハ、ス、イ、ス、領、事、館
 へ、通、じ、り、料、理、及、心、風、器、用、と、三、毎、週、給、與、し、石、炭、三、送
 へ、送、る、に、成、功、せ、し、り、日、本、人、に、常、例、的、に、此、石、炭、
 約、半、分、を、徹、性、自、身、將、校、宿、舎、用、に、取、り、之、を、煉、瓦
 爐、に、取、り、け、し、り、多、數、火、釜、が、料、理、用、具、食、之、
 へ、不、一、他、甚、多、此、所、で、行、は、れ、る、一、つ、殘、虐、行
 爲、を、記、し、出、さ、す、名、前、之、を、一、條、處、分、步、哨、の

No 3

☆

Doc 8279

ノ頭ヲ射殺スル之九十五名乃至千名、人々此ノ事ヲ
 目撃シテ之ヲ見ル。然レ自ニシテ目撃スル者ノ一。彼
 少頃ト約ト乃至二十五人トハ、此ノ時ニ於テハ、
 又ト突然歩哨ハ銃ヲ打テ彼等期ヲ至ル。上級
 將校ハ收容所並ニ同僚軍士等ハ、此ノ時ニ於テハ、
 本人指揮官ニ依リテ此ノ事ヲハ、假令打テカサシ、
 分必ナクシテ、本方ノ日本人、其間ハ、多分死心ナク、
 事ナシ歩哨ノ同場所、任務ニ従事セリ。
 尚ホモ、残存者ハ、幾トシテ也。此ノ時、船頭ハ事
 ナク、又モ、之ト申シ、之ヲ、事ナク、事ナク、事ナク、事ナク、
 ナリ。其ガ一九四二年三月、栄養不良ト、餓死シ
 死。死亡証明書ニ記原因ハ、死因トシテ、三名、ナリ。海
 軍軍士將校ニ依リテ署名カレシ也。此ノ時、收容所、到着
 ナリ。健康状態ハ、良シナリ。死前、特別食ヲ
 給與シ、其後、日本人、建言シ、之ヲ、又分給シ、死前特別食
 ナリ。之ヲ、如モ、何等得ルモノトシ、出カサシ。死亡証
 明書ニ署名スルハ、医師ハ、海軍軍士、西大佐、名ノ一、
 海軍軍士、佐ノ一、名ノ一、後、船頭、名ノ一、名
 一、医師、アリ。

×× ×× ×× ×× ××

No 4

★

8279
DOC

ブリッジ、ハウスニ於テハ私ハ他、中国人、日本人、及外国人十八名ト共ニ監房ニ拘禁ナシマシタ。此所、状態ハソツトスル程デシタ。私ハ癩病ノ男、隣リニ寝テマシタガ場所ガ非常ニ混ソテ居リマシタ。予己分得ズ彼ト極ク接近シテ寝テケバナリマセデシタ。我々此所デ日本人ノ所謂審査トモノ受テケラ三十日間抑留サレシタ。食ヲハ朝、粥ト一日四オス、パンデアリマシタ。茶ガ小サイ茶椀デ一杯ツ、一日二回子ヘラレソル以外、飲料ハ得ラシセデシタ。此所、道德的觀察ハ何人ニ對シテモ充分ニ懲罰デアツタ。實際ノ肉体的不快リ違カニ重大デアリマシタ。元ハ三月中デアリ非常ニ寒ク御座イマシタ。吾々ハ各自被褥、毛布ヲ子ヘラシマシタガソレハ粗末ナ床ノ上ニ寝ル時ニハ金ク不充足デアリマシタ。日中我々ハ整列シテ坐ラセマシタガ背中ヲ腕ヲ支ヘタリ休タリスルモ、ハ何モナク床上ニ胡坐ヲカイタデス。時々法外ニ残酷ナ衛兵ガ監房ヲ見廻ハリ總テノ者ヲ木床ニ跪カセマシタ。コレハ時ニ六時間乃至八時間モ續クツトモデアリマシタ。一日ニ約二分ハ洗濯ニ許サレシタガソレハ戶外ノ中庭ニアル蛇口デ行ハル、冷イ水ガ供サレシニ過ギマセデシタ。運動時間ハ子ヘラシマセデシタガ稀ニハ監房ノ俘虜ガ中庭ヲ溝ト石罌ヲ洗ヒ落ス事ヲ許サレシマシタ。私ガ監禁サレテ居タ諸收容所ニハ皆害虫ガ居マシタガ之ガ疑ナク最悪ノモノデシタ。虱ハ至ル所ニ充滿シテ居リマシタ。少數ノ寵愛サレシ俘虜ハ少量ノ食物ヲ外部カク差入ルル事ヲ許サレテ居マシタガ吾々ハ差入ルル許可ヲ得ルコトニ成功シマセデシタ。

No 5

私ハ此所下多クノ拷問ヲ見シタ。特ニ退職セシ倉庫管理

☆

DOC 8279

主任「R・リード」及び米國海兵隊「ジャックソン」軍曹
 (今中尉)ニツイテ申上げマス。「リード」モ「ジャックソン」
 モ此所ニ九十日間拘禁サレ酷ク虐待サレマシタ。「リード」
 ハ約十年間モ職務カラ離シテ居タノデスが日本人ハ
 彼ガ重要ナル情報ヲ知ツテキルニ違ヒテイト主張シ
 之ガ彼ヲ拷問スル日本人ノ口実ナアリマシタ。「ジャックソン」
 ハ戰前上海ニ於ケルONI代表者デアッタ。「ウィリアムス」
 少佐ノ書記ヲ勤メテ居リマシタノデ日本人ハ此ノ理由ヲ
 彼カラ情報ヲ引キ出サウト最モ執拗デシタ。

x x x x x

私ハ「ブリックハウス」ニ於テ事務所ニ屢々行ク途中廊下ヲ
 通過スル際ニ輕リ拷問ハ度々見マシタ。私ハ倍虜達
 ガ水攻メヲ受ケテ居ルノヤ煙草ヲ燒カシテ居ルノヤ或種
 ノ電気機械ヲ電撃ヲ受ケテ居ルヲ見マシタガ又棒ヲ
 刀ノ背ヲ叩カシテ居ルノハ殆ド數ヘキシ又程見マシタ。
 重イ軍隊靴ヲ倍虜ノ向脛ヲヒドク蹴ル事ナドハ茶飯
 事ナド殆ド気が付カナイ程デアリマシタ。私ガ「ブリック
 ハウス」ニ居ル間ニ數人ノ支那人ハコト々ニ脚ヲ折ツテ惱
 ミマシタ。

No 6

水攻メハ顔ヲ俯向ケニシテ机ノ上ニ紐ヲ縛リツケヌ。

☆

8279

ソレカラ浴用台拭ヲ彼ノ島岸ト口ト、廻リ二回ヲナシ、樽ニ卷キ
 大抵人肉、排泄物、一事ヲナシ、他ノ不潔物、例ハ
 燈油ノ如キモノヲ混ゼテ五ガロノ罐、水ガ香計ニ固テシメテ、
 ソレカラ翌日ハ訊問ガリ、若シモ彼ガ答人ナラトモ、浴用台拭
 ナ作ラレタ、隙間ニ泥ギ込メテ、停置スルニ、下ノ水ニ汚
 混合液ヲ取ルニ、食ニ思ハケルニ、又少シニシテ、
 此ハ合同、合同ニ訊問シテ、要人ガ人子不省、状態
 手返、續キテ、人子不省、状態ニシテ、
 当人ハ小才、膝ヲ履キ、腹ヲ打テ、
 意識ガ無ク、彼ハ通常、彼ノ真ノ頭、
 巻揚機ヲ廻シ、力ヲ用テ、水ヲ吐テ、出テ、
 彼ガスツカリ、機復スル上、水攻メ、及始メ、
 携向ガ造ラ、人子ノ行、
 何レカ一人、若シ、
 ハアリマシ。私ハ、
 子ガアリマシガ、
 子ガアリマシ、

No. 7

携向若クハ、
 停置メ、
 威嚴ヲ失フ、
 アカラ、
 普遍、
 机、
 人が訊問スル、



8279

ソレカラ活用法試ヲ彼ノ身ナト口ト、廻リニ同クナリテニ感
 大抵人内、排他物、一事ヲ行フヤ、他ノ不廉物、樹ハハ
 燈油ノ如キモノヲ流セルニテ、水ガ多ク計ニ流シテ又
 ソレカラ此ノ人ノ誤解ガ、若シモ彼ガ彼人ナリト、水ノ活用法
 ナ作ラシク、際同ニ注ギテ、此ノ停滯ニテ、下ノ水ノ汚ノ
 混合液ヲ取ルニテ、或ハ此ノ水ガ又少クシテ、
 此ハ合同、合同ニ誤解ナリト、世人ガ、人ノ不廉、然
 事進、續キテ、人ノ不廉、然能ニルモノナリ
 世人ハ、小ナク、襟ヲ履キ、腹ヲ打テ、
 意識ガ、多ク、此ノ水ガ、彼ノ通常、彼ノ真ノ頭、
 巻揚機ヲ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 彼ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 携同ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 何レカ、人ノ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 ハ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、

No. 7

携同者ノ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 停滯多ク、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 威嚴ヲ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 スカラ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 普遍、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、
 此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、此ノ水ガ、

★

8279

No. 1

ニリコトモ 若シモ此等が 動カレテ 或ハ自命ヲ 投ケテ
 自命ヲ 投ケテ 試ミテ 飯ハ 守リカシメ 大體 日本
 人ハ 其等ノ 愛國心ヲ 示シテ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 シ 嘆息 無クシテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 カル 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 知ル 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 能ク 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 此等 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 アリ 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞

No. 8

多ク 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 約 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 入リ 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 不 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 稱 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 ヲ 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 此 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 婦 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 何 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 コ 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 外 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 ニ 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 シ 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 ガ 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞
 ソ 精神ニ 對シテ 其等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞シ 彼等ノ 精神ヲ 鼓舞

☆ Doc. 8279

私ハ要氣致カ行ハキヤ心ヲ見ル。然レシガトニテハナク
 又、結果ガトニテ離ルカ知リテモ、ソレ大キ利目ガ不^レ得ニ
 思ヒ也云
 戦後秘^スリ^シ分、少クハ云テ、諸^ノ病^ヲ問^フキ^テ三^十五^日ノ^間、^又
 身^前ト^信州^ト、云^フ信^守ガ^尚ホ^生キ^テ居^ル事^ヲ、^亦未^ダ、^又
 此^ノ人^々中、米^國人^ト云^フハ^二云^フ、[「]三^リ[」]ト^云フ^人、^又
 私^自本^人分^此事^ヲ、病^問ニ^依リ^テ何^レ知^ルト^シテ^ハ解^リ也云
 稀ニ病^問ス^ル人、漢^自身^者三^休制^ニ要^スル^事ト^シテ、^三問^ニ、^今
 知^リ也云^フ、何^レ理^由ヲ^後者^ノ説^ヲ、何^レ知^ル又^何レ^ノ方
 以^テ人^達ヲ^病問^ス也云^フ、主^ニ病^問ハ[「]才^前[」]、^敵助^ニ、^或、^自本^人
 二^反抗^心ヲ^為、^秘密^語ト^關係^カ、[「]云^フ[」]ト^云フ^人、^三馬^鹿
 ゲ^ト病^問ス^ル時^間、^何時^間、^何時^間、^二行^ク也云^フ、
 取^扱ノ^嚴シ^ク加^減、^病問^スル^時、^何時^間、^何時^間、^二心^次
 第^ニ行^ク也云^フ、何^レ自^身自^身、^何レ^ノ後^者ヲ^取扱^スル^居
 也、^不有^ク、^何時^間、^何時^間、^二行^ク也云^フ、^三、
 誰^レヲ^測ス^ル事^ハ、^亦未^ダ、^何時^間、^何時^間、^二心^次
 第^ニ行^ク也云^フ、^何レ^ノ後^者ヲ^取扱^スル^居也云^フ、
 將^校違^ハ、^病問^スル^時、^何時^間、^何時^間、^二心^次
 第^ニ行^ク也云^フ、^凡、^何レ^ノ後^者ヲ^取扱^スル^居也云^フ、
 何^レ時^間、^何時^間、^二心^次
 第^ニ行^ク也云^フ、^何レ^ノ後^者ヲ^取扱^スル^居也云^フ、
 何^レ事^ハ、^何レ^ノ後^者ヲ^取扱^スル^居也云^フ、
 何^レ事^ハ、^何レ^ノ後^者ヲ^取扱^スル^居也云^フ、
 何^レ事^ハ、^何レ^ノ後^者ヲ^取扱^スル^居也云^フ、

1/0.9

No. 10

Doc

Jo 107

如其、様々態度ヲ取ルニ若干箇ヲ示シ其様子ヲ下リノリ。
然レテ其、様々態度ヲ取ルニ若干箇ヲ示シ其様子ヲ下リノリ。
下リノリノ内ニ有テ元氣散ル様相ニ似テ、其様子ヲ下リノリ。
上ノ様相ニ似テ、其様子ヲ下リノリ。其様子ヲ下リノリ。
其様子ヲ下リノリ。其様子ヲ下リノリ。

(下ノリノリ)

江戸ニ於ケル學法會議ノ英語ニニヤラメニ遊説一名ヲ主ヘシテ

以外ニハ一方成ノ公事ノ行ハレシトク一ノル辯護人カ各々附リテ

コレヲカ彼モ亦英語ノ語セニシテシタ。此ハ日本語ヲ語ルルヲ殆

トト坐テノ事ヲ理解シ来ルノヲ全ク受ニ二百ノアリシニテ、彼等ハ

コレニ對シテハ何令他人ノ犯罪デアル。吾人ハ彼等ニ極刑ニ主シテ

ナド論ジテモ可カシ。辯護人カ主トシテ言ク、曩ニ奴等ニ極刑ヲ主

ハルニキマナリ。日令ノ考ハ此トシテモシカシ。二十三日、遂ニ下テ

判決ス。吾人カ何ヲ知ラナイ哀ヲ無知トシ外國人「ル」カ以テ傳テナ

シ懲役トシテラケアリマシタ。法ニ側トシ、當局ニテリナサシク會議ニ

應ケ死刑ガコニシトシタ。此ハ法廷カ死刑ヲ主シテ一トシテ

シタ、何トナレハ法廷側カ東京ノ中六部ヲ扶助カシテ稱シ、河

シタカ、彼等カ死刑ニ死シテ一処アリテ、其トシテ

ナリテ、ソノ事然カシ、斯行トシテ、人ノ心ニテ、其刑減カ

シタル事カ、其捕令ノカ、其心カ、以テ、人ノ心ニ

No 11

Doc. 8279*

此の今迄の如く此の運命が極端に挽回が行ハレテ其の境が如何なる
 レヲ時 限ニ決コクノテ其の如何なるコトカアリマス。此の夫人の及
 び同ニ対シテ怒リテ彼等ノ計ニ一任セヨシテ其の如何なる事
 二番ノ様ニシテ其の如何なる事ニ成ルベシカ。此の夫人の如何なる事
 添ニナリテ其の如何なる事ニ成ルベシカ。此の夫人の如何なる事
 女も其の如何なる事ニ成ルベシカ。此の夫人の如何なる事
 勤ラ加減スル様ニテ其の如何なる事ニ成ルベシカ。此の夫人の如何
 其の如何なる事ニ成ルベシカ。此の夫人の如何なる事ニ成ルベシカ。

1947

1. 關於本會之成立，係由本會發起，經全體會員大會通過，並由全體會員大會推選出全體代表，由全體代表推選出全體執行委員，由全體執行委員推選出全體監察委員，由全體監察委員推選出全體理事，由全體理事推選出全體幹事。

雜 記

本會成立以來，承蒙各界人士之愛護與支持，業務蒸蒸日上。茲將本會成立以來之主要工作，分述如下：

Doc. 8279★

同時に在るが在る情事ニ於て是亦種々作、同標ノ方ニ
テ処理サルベト事ナシク。

日本側ハ彼等自身ヲ独立の法律ヲ有スル上主張
ス「ビネガ」シ條約ヲ如何ナル形ニ取テ承認
シヨクトシマセニテ之ヲ。在條約ノ問題ガ提セサレシ
ラハ彼等ハ殆トトシテナリニテ之ヲ云フセシ。

私思龍會ニ關係アル若干ノ日本人ト由會シテ事
ガアリ時々彼等ノ言ヲ聞ク、于其ノ會ニ國ニテ相者知
シテナラス。彼等ハ勿論皆極端論者ナリマス。私ハ
彼等ノ數人ヨリ假令日本ハ戰爭ニ負ケテモ、英國人
俘虜ハ全テ殺サレテアラウト同カトシマス。彼等ハ然
ルノ結果ニ拘ラズ俘虜ハ殺サレキテ下上云フ意見
デ、之ニ依リ例ハ數多ク校門ガ思ニク衆附セシキナ
ス。此ノ會ニ關係アル日本人ノ姓名ハ誰ノモ記憶シテナ
シ。

.....

吾々ハ看テ全テ特別ノ訓練ヲ受ケテ下上ヨリ同
カシマス。彼等ノ多數ハ兵役終了者ナシニ外等テ
負傷シテ勤功アツク下上官デアリマス。彼等ハ東
京ニテ俘虜局ノ管轄、下テ約二週間ノ訓練ヲ受ケル
カト私ハ思ヒマス。彼等ハ普通ノ聯隊ヲ單位トスル組織
ヲ用ヒル様ナク、中隊及俘虜隊トシテ區別セシキ
ル風ナシ。

No 15

Doc 8279 ★

私、觀察を得多限り日本看身ハ何所ヲモ立派ナ食料ヲ給與セリト申之。私ハ收容所トシテ食料以外、所ナシ一般者ニ付シ何ナ食料ガ與ヘラシメテハ、確カ九事カモホラセテ之ヲ。

.....
義兵ニ立リ私、日本情状ト條約ニ因リ又ハ理端ニ就テ義兵ニ之ヲ奮入キコトハ、徑音ニ寄リ日本ニ就テ武器ヲ取リテ之ヲ犯四罪トシテ條約ハ日本ハ人ガ適言トモシテ如何ナル刑罰ニモ之ニ服セズトシテ又ト主張シテ之ヲ強テ全テ、條約ガ死刑ガ無ク、無餘砲ニ好シ裸セリトシテ相應ニ行トモシテ之ヲナクシ、時時ナ印象ヲ私、得己

.....
一九四二年十二月八日、外争勃發後上海ニ於テ英國並ニ日本西國同、海軍行動ニ因リ海軍中佐ヨリ、又ニ入、海軍番付ノ五六四一五、係陳述。

一九四二年十二月八日午前四時十分、日本海軍大佐ガ英國軍艦「ペー」ニ於テ三乗船ニ乗リ艦長ニ正式宣稱命各文ヲ午交シテ同船、係艦ヲ要求シマシ。艦長、外争勃發ノ事ニ知リ在リ部下ノ艦長ヲ對面配是ニワセテ居リマシ。其ノ日日本大佐ハ降艦ハナシトノ通告ヲ受ケ

No 16

Doc 8279A

私、觀察を得、限り自若看安、何所不立、敵十食料
ヲ給與せし事之ヲ。私ガ收容せし事ヲ容儀以外、所
ハ一般者ニ付、何十食事、カ與へし事ヲ力、確力大
事、カ其外ニセシ事之ヲ。

.....
數カニ立リ、然、日本、學校、上、保、原、二、國、又、此、理、論、三、就、漢
海、之、二、多、舊、入、事、コ、ト、二、經、昔、ノ、事、ト、日本、ニ、此、之、武器、ヲ
取、シ、コ、ト、ハ、犯罪、ヲ、保、原、ハ、日本、人、カ、適、吉、ト、考、へ、多、如何
ハ、刑、罰、ニ、モ、二、服、セ、不、ハ、ト、又、ト、至、張、之、又、ハ、強、シ、ト、全
テ、格、格、カ、死刑、カ、其、カ、無、餘、死、ニ、此、ノ、課、セ、シ、ハ、自
ラ、應、シ、ト、考、へ、ト、事、ヲ、ト、照、照、ト、印、家、ヲ、私、得、之、
ヲ。

.....
一九四一年十二月八日、外争、初、發、時、上海、花、之、
英國、並、日、并、西、國、同、海、軍、行、動、ニ、因、之、海、軍
中、佐、〇、〇、又、三、又、恩、濟、番、子、立、六、四、一、五、ニ、係、陳
述。

一九四一年十二月八日午前四時二十分、日本海軍
大佐、英國、軍、艦、ヲ、ベ、シ、ト、此、日、子、ニ、乘、船、ニ、乘、リ、艦、長
ニ、正、式、宣、辭、命、令、文、ヲ、手、交、シ、同、船、ノ、降、艦、ヲ、要、求
シ、タ、シ、ト。艦、長、ハ、外、争、初、發、ト、是、ニ、知、リ、在、リ、部、下
ノ、艦、長、ヲ、降、艦、ノ、要、求、ニ、コ、シ、テ、降、艦、シ、タ、シ、ト。
其、日、日本、大、佐、ハ、降、艦、ハ、十、廿、二、日、ト、通、信、ヲ、受、タ、シ、

No 16

Doc. 8299

此中、同大佐、乗リ下子ハ「ラニ」カ艦カラセ。不
ト、新遠眺シタ時ニ彼ハ「ウエ」ピストルヲ空中ニ發
射シタ。此ノ信号ニ應ジ陣組界迄奔上リテ
上ニ「甲」ニ「ア」ク「七」五「ニ」リ野砲ノ陣地ガ「ア」レ
号ニ「一」有ニ發砲シ、其ト同時ニ香港上海銀行
建築物ノ対岸ノ河岸ニ砲撃シテ「丹」夕（日本砲
艦及砲台突堤ニ砲撃中ノ日本砲艦モ發
砲シタ。ト「ベ」テ「ル」号ハ其岸中砲火ヲ沈没セ
タラシ「一」有モ反撃セ「本」方「ニ」テ「ア」リ「タ」。

「ベ」テ「ル」号ノ艦長ハ状態ガ絶望ト見テ「丹」夕ノ
艦長ニ「モ」ーター「ボ」ートニ乗リ「後」リ「河」岸（着岸係
告ケタ。此ノ時「ア」リ「タ」。

「ボ」ートノ艦長「一」。「ヤ」ート「離」レ「タ」カ「其」ノ「時」
海軍艦艇及河岸カラ「操」縦「鏡」ガ「同」「ボ」ートニ
岸中砲火ヲ發射シ「タ」。「ボ」ートノ「船」下「直」中
ニ「火」ヲ「發」シ「頓」「而」「沈」「没」シ「タ」。「其」ノ「時」「タ」ノ「生」
存「者」
「丹」夕「乘」「取」ノ「泳」イ「テ」岸「迄」逃「奔」シ「タ」。
ソノ「時」日「本」側「此」等「生」存「者」ノ「上」ニ「銃」火「ヲ」注
ギ「射」ス「ル」。

NO 17

岸ニ「日」本「兵」ガ「集」ビ「此」等「人」々ガ「岸」着「イ」タ
「時」押「縛」ス「ル」ト「全」ク「容」易「ニ」下「リ」テ「下」ル「カ」ラ「私」
「共」行「為」ヲ「沈」没「ス」ル「且」全「ク」ノ「殺」人「行」動「ナ」リ「ト」断「ル」。

E. # 1902

Doc. No. 8194*

C O N F I D E N T I A L

Page 1

STATE OF ARKANSAS :
: ss:
County of Jefferson :

[HAROLD FRANK HOGUE, S/Sgt, US Army, ASN 12136447, R.F.D. #7, Box 70 Pine Bluff, Ark. being first duly sworn, deposes and says:

[While an American soldier, I was detained by the Japanese as a prisoner of war at a Jap garrison at Yochoo, China, 12 November 1943, for a few days after capture for interrogation.

Our B25 G, Model plane No. 757 of the 11th, Bombardment Squadron of the 14th, Air Force, was shot up by flak and we crash-landed and were captured a few minutes later by Jap soldiers from a nearby camp. All six members of the crew [Pilot 1st Lt. R. P. Rouse; Co-Pilot 2nd Lt. A. L. Townsend; Navigator 2nd Lt. G. W. Walsh; Engineer, Sgt. D. J. O'Brien; Gunner, S/Sgt. C. S. Penka, and myself, radioman, were taken prisoners. On the night of 14 November 1943 we were questioned, and when we refused to give any information we were given similar beatings and tortured individually. For about ten minutes I was beaten with a large bamboo bat, beaten with fists and had my hair pulled. Then I was taken outside strapped to a ladder and was given the water treatment for fifteen minutes; then I was released and was again kicked and beaten up. The next day we were handcuffed and paraded through the village of Yochoo for public ridicule.]

This is all the information I can now remember about this incident.

/s/ HAROLD F. HOGUE
HAROLD F. HOGUE, S/Sgt.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 12th day of Dec. 1945.

/s/ E. H. ZESOLD
Notary Public
My com. exp. Oct. 22nd 1946.

Interviewed by: Dale E. Gray, Agent, SIC

C O N F I D E N T I A L

Doc 8194 A

米國陸軍官ノハロルドノフランクノホーグノ
私ハアメリカ軍人ヲアツタ當時、一九四三年（昭
和十八年）十一月十二日茨城州在ノ日本守備
兵ニヨリ俘虜トナリ、其ノ後獄中ノ爲長處
ニ留置サレタ。
如十四日獄中ノB二十五G型飛行
機七五七號ハ高射砲弾片ノ爲不時着シ、其分後、
附近ノキャンプカラ來タ日本ノ兵ニ捕ヘラレタ、
塔乗員全員六人ハ俘虜トナツタ。一九四三年十一
月十四日、夜番々ハ訊問サレ、情報ヲ具ヘルコト
ヲ拒絶シタラ、向獄中ノ獄吏又一人一人訊問
ニカケラレタ。約十分間獄中ノ大キナ行年ヲ陳ラレ、
拳骨ヲ陳ラレ、ソシテ、髪ノ毛ヲ引抜ラレタ。
ソレカラ外ヘ出サレ、心子ヘ縛リツケラレテ、十
五分間水浴メヲ加ヘラレタ。ソレカラ繩ヲホドカ
レテ再び懸ラレタリ、陳ラレタリシタ。翌日我々
ハ手錠ヲハメラレテ、不承ノ兵ヒトシテ、岳州
ノ村中ヲ引キツリ廻ハサレタ。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

EX # 1903

Doc. No. 8193*

C O N F I D E N T I A L

STATE OF CALIFORNIA

City and County of San Francisco

SS:

[HAROLD JACOB KLOTA, 1st Lt., ASN O-753616, 8476 Carbondal St., Detroit, Michigan, being first duly sworn, deposes and says:

[On 2 April 1945 I was taken prisoner by the Japanese after bailing out of my plane over Chin Katan, China.] I was put under custody by a Japanese Military Railroad Protection Unit under the command of Captain Goto Michinidi. [at the time of my capture I was brought to a civilian first aid station where a Japanese civilian employed by the Japanese army amputated my right leg several inches above the ankle. Whether or not this amputation was necessary I do not know, I did suffer a leg injury. However, I was able to move the toes on that leg. The amputation was accomplished by this Japanese civilian with a crude knife and without benefit of anesthesia. I was held down by 6 or 7 Japanese and my pleas for someone to knock me unconscious was met only with jeering laughter.

The second day after my capture more of my right leg was removed by a Japanese medical officer assigned at Chin Katan. Immediately following this operation the Japanese initiated their interrogation. This lasted for three days and usually was conducted for a 10-hour interval without recess. During the questioning I was usually slapped across the face with an open hand. Finally the questioning ceased altogether and I was told that I was being punished for not answering their questions. The punishment was administered by one Japanese officer who beat me with an encased saber on the head and body while I lay in bed. This beating produced unconsciousness on at least three occasions. When I could no longer survive the beatings administered with the saber they were then administered with a wet towel with which I was struck across the face.]

I am unable to identify either by name or description Japanese personnel assigned to the Railroad Protection Unit other than the commanding officer whose name I have already cited.

/s/ HAROLD J. KLOTA
HAROLD J. KLOTA, 1st Lt.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 5th day of December, 1945.

/s/ RICHARD G. McLELLAN, Jr.

Interviewed by Edward C. Scharetz, Agent, SIC.

C O N F I D E N T I A L

Doc 8193 4

HAROLD JACOB KLOTA 陸軍中尉

一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ四月二日私ハ中華民國ノ
清島上空テ飛行機ヨリ飛び下リテ後、日本側ノ俘
虜トナツタ。

捕虜ニナツタ當時私ハ民間救護所ヘ連れて行カレ
日本軍ニ使ハレタ。日本ノ民間人ニヨツテ右胸ノ隙
カラ敵射上部ノ處ヲ切斷サレマシタ。此ノ切斷ガ必
要デアツタカ否カハ私ハ解リマセン。私ハ確カニ足
ヲ怪我致シマシタ。然シ私ハソノ足ノ指ヲ動かス事
ハ出来マシタ。切斷ハ粗末ナ「ナイフ」ヲ用ヒ麻酔
モカケズニ、コノ日本ノ民間人ニヨツテ爲サレタ。
私ハ六、七人ノ日本人ニ押ヘツケラレ、何卒私ヲ氣
絶サセテ呉レト言フ願ヒモ只嘲弄ノ笑聲テ受ケ流サ
レマシタ。

捕虜トナツタ第二日目、清島登ニ到着セラレタ日
本ノ軍醫ニヨツテ私ノ右胸ハモット上カラ切斷サレ
マシタ。此ノ手術ガ終ルト直チニ日本人ハ訊問ヲ始
メマシタ。コレハ三日間續キ大抵休ミナシニ十時間
ブツ通シニ行ハレマシタ。訊問ノ間私ハ大抵平手ニ
顔ヲ殴ラレマシタ。遂ニ訊問ハ全ク終リ私ハ彼等ノ
質問ニ答ヘナカツタ。テ殴ラノタノダト言ハレマシ
タ。懲罰ハ一人ノ日本軍將校ニヨツテ行ハレ私
ガ「ベット」ノ中ニ横ニナツテ居タ間鞘ニ入ツタ「サ
ーベル」テ顔ヤ体ヲ打テマシタ。此ノ時打ハ少クト

Doc 8193 4

HAROLD JACOB KLOTA 陸軍中尉

一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ四月二日私ハ中華民國ノ
清島上空テ飛行機ヨリ飛び下リテ後、日本側ノ俘
虜トナツタ。

捕虜ニナツタ當時私ハ民間救護所ヘ連れて行カレ
日本軍ニ使ハレタ。日本ノ民間人ニヨツテ右胸ノ踝
カラ致付上部ノ處ヲ切斷サレマシタ。此ノ切斷ガ必
要デアツタカ否カハ私ハ解リマセン。私ハ確カニ足
ヲ怪我致シマシタ。然シ私ハソノ足ノ指ヲ動かス事
ハ出来マシタ。切斷ハ粗末ナ「ナイフ」ヲ用ヒ麻酔
モカケズニ、コノ日本ノ民間人ニヨツテ爲サレタ。
私ハ六、七人ノ日本人ニ押ヘツケラレ、何卒私ヲ氣
絶サセテ呉レト言フ願ヒモ只嘲弄ノ笑聲ヲ受ケ流サ
レマシタ。

捕虜トナツタ第二日目、清島登ニ到着テラレタ日
本ノ軍醫ニヨツテ私ノ右胸ハモット上カラ切斷サレ
マシタ。此ノ手術ガ終ルト直チニ日本人ハ訊問ヲ始
メマシタ。コレハ三日間續キ大抵休ミナシニ十時間
ブツ通シニ行ハレマシタ。訊問ノ間私ハ大抵平手ニ
顔ヲ殴ラレマシタ。遂ニ訊問ハ全ク終リ私ハ彼等ノ
質問ニ答ヘナカツタ。テ殴ラノタノダト言ハレマシ
タ。懲罰ハ一人ノ日本軍將校ニヨツテ行ハレ彼ハ私
ガ「ベスト」ノ中ニ横ニナツテ居タ間鞘ニ入ツタ「サ
ーベル」ヲ顔ヤ体ヲ打テマシタ。此ノ殴打ハ少クト

Dec 8/9.3

モ三度私ヲ人事不省ニ陥ラシメマシタ。私ガ「サー
ベル」ニヨル毆打ニ堪ヘラレナクナルト彼等ハ滿レ
「シオル」テ私ノ顔ヲ打テ始メマシタ。

h.

Doc 819.3

2.

モ三度私ヲ人事不省ニ陥ラシメマシタ。私ガ「サー
ベル」ニヨル毆打ニ堪ヘラレナクナルト彼等ハ滿レ
「クオール」テ私ノ顔ヲ打テ始メマシタ。

WAR CRIMES OFFICE

Judge Advocate General's Department - War Department

United States of America

In the matter of the imprisonment, : Perpetration of the testi-
under improper conditions, of civ- : mony of John Robert de Laré,
ilium internees by the Japanese at : Civilian
the Footung Internment Camp, Shanghai, :
China, between February 15, 1943 and :
August 1945 :

Taken at: 1270 Avenue of the Americas, (Room 803A),
New York 20, N.Y.

Date: 15 February 1946

In the presence of: Arthur F. Vedder, Special Agent, 1251
S.C.U., F.P.I. Sec., Intel. Br., Sec.
and Intel. Div., H2. 2nd S.C., 1270
Avenue of the Americas, New York 20, N.Y.

Reporter: Arthur F. Vedder, Special Agent.

Questions by: Arthur F. Vedder, Special Agent.

Q Please state your name, occupation, and permanent home address.

A John Robert de Laré. Prior to my internment by the Japanese I was Assistant Manager in Shanghai, China, for the American Foreign Insurance Association. I am now with the Standard Oil Company and expect to be assigned to the Netherlands West Indies. My permanent home address is - 2346 North El Molino Avenue, Altadena, California.

Q When and where were you born and what is your marital status?

A I was born in Mexico City, 8 January 1907. I am a United States citizen, and I am unmarried.

Q What formal schooling have you had?

A I received a B.S. in Business Administration at the University of Southern California in 1933, and an M.A. at the University of Southern California in 1936, and an M.B.A. at Harvard University in 1936.

Q Did you recently return to the United States from overseas?

A I arrived at San Francisco, California, in the first part of November 1945 approximately, on the U.S.S. "Lavea".

Q Were you a civilian internee of the Japanese?

A Yes. I was taken in custody by the Japanese on 15 February 1943, and was incarcerated in what the Japanese called "Footung Civil Assembly Center", at Footung, China, across the river from Shanghai. I was held there until liberated at the end of the war in August 1945.

Q What did you do prior to February 15, 1943 and since the beginning of the war between Japan and America?

A We were all free to go and come in Shanghai, under various restrictions, excepting those against whom the Japanese had special grievances.

Q What quarters were furnished you at the Postung Internment Camp?

A For living quarters we were assigned to what had formerly been tobacco warehouses, owned by the British-American Tobacco Company. These buildings had formerly been condemned by this company as inadequate and unsafe for the storage of tobacco. They were very old buildings.

Q Were the buildings outfitted by the Japanese for living quarters?

A No, they were empty buildings when we moved in, and anything that we had there in the line of bedding and furniture was all brought in by us. We often had to bring the chairs in.

Q What were the sanitary facilities at this camp?

A We were not too badly off in that regard. For two rooms, in which were assigned about two hundred people, we had three toilets. This made a difficult situation as a great many people were ill from food poisoning and were afflicted with various forms of digestive disturbances.

Q What bathing facilities were furnished?

A We had seven showers for approximately one thousand one hundred (1,100) internees and many times two or three of them would be out of condition.

Q Were the heating facilities adequate?

A For the winters of 1944 and 1945 we had no heat whatsoever. The temperature went as low as 20° F. in our camp. During our incarceration Shanghai had one of the hardest winters in fifty or sixty years. A reservoir within the compound froze solid. During the first weeks of our imprisonment, in the winter of 1943, we did have a stove.

Q Were complaints made to the Japanese authorities regarding this situation?

A Yes. Our camp representatives made efforts to obtain heating facilities, but the Japanese commandant informed them that they were not available.

Q Did the Japanese guards have heating facilities?

A Yes, they had coal stoves in their guard houses.

Q Were the internees furnished with adequate clothing?

A The Japanese provided no clothing. All we had was what we brought to the camp with us and what the American Red Cross sent in on two shipments. Many people could not afford clothing, because of the exorbitant prices, and did not have it when they went into the camp. There was a particular need for proper shoes and warm socks.

Q Will you describe the food rations furnished the internees?

A At first they furnished enough food to maintain the health of the internees, but they kept reducing the rations until at last we were getting one-fourth of meat of what we were receiving at the beginning of our internment. They would run out of rice, which was the mainstay of our diet and all they would furnish us from time to time would be flour, from which we made biscuits.

Q Do you know whether the Japanese were able to obtain sufficient food for the internees?

A The Japanese Army provided the food and they had it for themselves; they were able to commandeer it.

Q Will you describe what the ration was during the last year of your internment?

A About a year before the war ended the ration was reduced below the standard necessary to maintain health. We received no breakfast. The other meals were inadequate and we were always hungry. I was fortunate in that I had a friend on the outside who sent me ten-pound food packages once a month, but that would last me only four or five days.

Q Did you lose any weight as a result of this diet?

A I lost about ten or fifteen pounds from a normal weight of about 158 pounds. I did not lose as much weight as many of the internees, as I have always been thin. I am 6' tall. However, losing those ten or fifteen pounds put me in such condition that I was too weak to exercise. Some of the internees lost as much as sixty pounds.

Q Will you describe a typical meal at the camp?

A In the last year for lunch we would receive about a coffee cupful of rice. This rice was not the clean white rice that we are accustomed to in this country, but apparently consisted of the sweepings and the rice contained much foreign material, such as dirt and grit, which it was impossible to separate from the edible portions. They would also give us bread which our doctors in the camp analyzed and found to be made from a soybean residue, which contained practically no food value. It would crumble as we tried to cut it and other times it would be sticky and of such glue-like consistency that we would be unable to eat it. Along with this they would give us a watery stew which could easily be contained on an ordinary dinner plate. An internee would be fortunate if there was a piece of water buffalo meat in that stew as big as the end of a man's thumb. In the evening, for dinner, we would receive exactly the same menu, - it never varied, unless they ran out of one of the ingredients I have mentioned, for almost a year they gave us no beverage at all. They doled out a month's supply of sugar, each month, which amounted to about two and one-half tablespoonsful.

Q Did you have any way to supplement your diet, other than personal contributions from friends?

A At first we had a canteen in the camp which was pretty good, and we were allowed \$8.00 United States money to purchase food at this canteen. As time went on the Japanese so manipulated the various currency exchange values involved, so that finally our \$8.00 got us practically nothing at the canteen and, during the last year, we had no canteen.

Q Were the medical treatment and facilities furnished the internees adequate?

A We were fortunate in that we had four or five doctors of our own, but it was difficult for them to get medicines and equipment. All they had was what the American Red Cross had sent in. The Japanese furnished no medicine or supplies. After the first six months the only dentists we had in the camp were repatriated. After that occurred the Japanese dentist came to the camp once a week, but there were so many waiting for appointments that one would have to wait nine months to see this dentist. Finally this dentist stopped coming and the only one we had to take care of the teeth was an oil engineer, who gained his knowledge solely from observing the Japanese dentist's work.

.. There was a hospital across river from camp but I have been informed that it was operated under very unsatisfactory conditions. I understand they had no nurses at the hospital and the patients were obliged to care for one another.

Q Who were your camp representatives?

.. At first our American representative was Bill Ryan of the Chase National Bank. He was repatriated in 1943 and we were then represented by a Mr. Milton Bates, who was employed by the National City Bank. He was our representative until near the end of the imprisonment. The last representative was George Laddock, who had been acting treasurer of St. John's University in Shanghai.

Q Who was the Japanese commandant of the camp?

.. His name was Tsuchiya. He was a representative of the Japanese Consulate and had been assigned to the branch of that office in Shanghai. He was in charge of that camp for about three-fourths of the time. I don't think he was responsible for conditions in the camp. I don't recall the name of the Japanese commandant who succeeded him.

Q Is there any other item of mistreatment of the internees that you care to comment on?

A Yes. We were exposed to possible air attack due to the fact that there were legitimate military objectives adjacent to the camp. They had troops quartered in a building next to us which I observed. About fifty feet down the road there was an entrance to a building, through which I observed Japanese carrying ammunition for storage.

There were several anti-aircraft guns close to the camp and they could be seen from the camp.

They also constructed concrete pillboxes and machine gun emplacements, designed to impede a possible invasion. One of these machine gun emplacements was not over ten feet from one of the internment camp buildings.

On the other side of the compound they had cavalrymen and their horses stationed.

The Japanese would not permit us to mark internment camp buildings, so that we would not be subject to raids until a week before the end of the war, when they permitted us to mark them with white crosses. They stated that such marks on the buildings would serve as a guide to the American airmen.

Q Is there anything else pertinent to this inquiry which you care to state?

A No.

/s/ John Robert de Lara
John Robert de Lara, Civilian

State of New York)
) SS
County of New York)

I, John Robert de Lara, of lawful age, being duly sworn in oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ John Robert de Lara
John Robert de Lara, Civilian

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 18th day of February 1946.

/s/ James E. Leising
James E. Leising, 2nd Lt. CMP
Summary Court

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Arthur F. Vedder, Special Agent, SIC, 1251st SCU, FPI, SID, certify that John Robert de Lara, Civilian, personally appeared before me on 15 February 1946, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

Place: New York City

Date: 18 February 1946

/s/ Arthur F. Vedder

Arthur F. Vedder, Special Agent, SIC
1251st SCU, Foreign Positive Intelli-
gence Section, Security & Intelligence
Division, Headquarters, Second Service
Command, 1270 Avenue of the Americas,
New York 20, N. Y.

Doc 8024

0

Ex. 1904

1.

民間人ジョーン・ロバーツ・デ・ラーラノ証言カラノ抜萃

ニューヨーク州ニューヨーク市二十區マデイス・ストリートアメリカ二七〇番地

昭和二十一年（一九四六年）二月十五日

問、貴方ノ姓名、職業、原籍ヲ言ツテ下サイ。

答、ジョーン・ロバーツ・デ・ラーラ、日本人ニ抑留サレル前ハ支那上海ノ「アメリカ」外國保險協會ノ副支配人デシタ、現在ハ「スタンダード」石油會社ニ勤務、「領領西印度」支店ニ廻サレル管デス。原籍ハ「カリフォルニア」州「アルタデナ」市北「エル・モリノ」街二三四六番地デス。

問、貴方ハ日本ノ民間抑留者ダツタノデスカ？

答、サウデス、一九四三年ノ二月十五日、日本人ニ拘引サレ上海ノ河向ヒノ支那ノ「ブリータンダ」ニアル日本人たちノ所謂「ブリータンダ」市民集會地ニ監禁サレマシタ、昭和二十年（一九四五）年八月終戦トナツテ釋放サレル迄ソコニキマシタ。

問、「ブリータンダ」抑留所デハドンナ宿所ヲアテガハレマシタカ？

答、宿所トシテ私たちニハ「英米煙草會社」ノ所在シテキタ以前煙草ノ倉庫ダツタ所ガ制當テラレマシタ、コノ建物ハ前ニコノ會社ガ煙草ノ貯藏



Doc 8024

0

2.

ニハ不適當デモアリ、安全デナイトケテラツケ
タ所デス。非常ニ古イ建築物デス。

問、日本人ハソノ建物ヲ宿所向キニ諸式ラツケテク
レマツタカ。

答、イヤ、私タチガソコヘ移ツタ時ニハ空ツボノ建
物デシタ。寢具トカ家具トカニ關スル持物ハミ

ナ私タチデ持チ込シタノデス。

問、コノ宿所ニフソナ衛生設備ガアリマシタカ？

答、ソノ點ハソレ程事情ハ悪クハアリマセンデシタ
二室ニ約二百人程割當テラレテキタガ、二室ニ
ツキ三ツノ便所ガアリマシタ。澤山ノ人々が食

中毒ヲオコソタリ、色シナ消化不良ニ悩マサレ

タ時ハコレデハ大變困ツタ情況ヲ呈シマシタ。
問、入浴ノ設備ハ出來テキマシタカ？

答、ホボ一〇〇名ノ抑留者ニ對シテ「シャワ」
ガ七ツ、感タンノ中ノ二ツヤ三ツハ故障ヲオコシ
タノデス。

問、暖房設備ハ充分ダツタデスカ？

答、昭和十九年（一九四四年）ト昭和二十年（一九
四五年）ノ冬ハ暖房設備ハ何モアリマセンデシ
タ。寒暖計ハ私達ノ宿所デハ華氏二〇度ニサハ

モ下リマシタ。私達ガ監禁サレテキタ間、上海

ハ五六十年來ツイソナカツタ嚴冬デ機内ノ貯水
槽ガ固ク凍リマシタ。昭和十八年（一九四三年）

Doc 8024

0

3.

ノ冬監禁サレタ最初ノ救廻問ハ「ストーヴ」ガ
アリマシタ。

問、コワイフ事情ニツキ日本官憲ニ苦情ヲ言ヒマシ
タカ。

答、エエ、私タチノ宿所ノ代表ガ暖房装置ヲツケテ
モラハウト努力シタノデスガ日本ノ司令官ハ手
ニ入ラヌト申シ渡シマシタ。

問、日本ノ哨兵等ニハ暖房設備ガアツタカ？

答、エエ、歩哨詰所ニ石炭「ストーヴ」ガアリマシ
タ。

問、抑留者ハ衣服ヲ十分貰ヒマシタカ？

答、日本人ハ衣服ハ何モクレマセンデシタ。私タチ
ガ持ツテキタ物ハ自分デ宿所ニ持テ込ンダモノ
ト、「アメリカ」赤十字ガ船ニ隻分送リ込ンデ
クレタモノダケデス。法外ナ値段ナノデ着物ヲ
買フコトガ出来ズ又宿所へ入ツタ時、着物ヲ持
ツテキナカツタ人が澤山キマシタ。チヤントシ
タ靴ト温カイ靴下ハ特ニホシイモノデシタ。

問、抑留者ニ支給セラレタ一日ノ食糧ノコトヲ話シ
テ下サイ。

答、最初ハ抑留者ノ健康ヲ保ツダケノ食糧ヲ宛テガ
ハレタガ段々食物ノ量ヲ減ジテ行ツテ終ヒニハ
私タチハ抑留ノ始メニ受ケ取ツタ食專ノ四分ノ
一ダケヲ貰ツテキタ。

Dec 802 4

彼等ハ私達ノ主要食品デアツタ米ライツモ打
シテ中テ時々私達ニ宛テガツテクレルモノハ、
小袋粉ダケデアリ、ソレヲ私達ハ「ビスケット」
ヲ作りマシタ。

問、日本人ガ採留者ノタメニ十分ナ食糧ヲ手ニ入レ
ルコトガ出来タカドウカ知ツテキマスカ？

答、日本軍隊ガ食糧ヲ補給シ自分達用ニソレヲ持ツ
テキマシタ。彼等ハソレヲ徴發スルコトガ出来
タノデス。

問、採留ノ最後ノ年ハ一日ノ食糧ハドレダケデアツ
タカ話シテ下サイ。

答、終戦前一年程ハ食糧ハ健康ヲ維持スルニ必要ナ
標準以下ニ減ツテキマシタ。私達ハ朝飯ヲ貰へ
マセデシタシ、他ノ食事モ不十分デイツモ、
ヒモジイ思ヒラシテキマシタ。私ハ幸セニ外ニ
一人友達ガキテ彼ガ一月ニ一回ツツ十「ポンド」
ノ食糧ノ包ミヲ送ツテクレマシタガソレモ、ホ
ンノ四日カ五日シカ續キマセデシタ。

問、コノ食物ノタメニ体重ガ減リマシタカ？

答、普段ハ約一五八「ポンド」アル所十「ポンド」
カラ十五「ポンド」減リマシタ。私ハ多クノ抑
留者達程体重ガ減ラナカツタノデスガ之ハ私ガ
イツモヤセテキマスノデ、背ハ六呎デスガコノ
様ニ十「ポンド」カラ十五「ポンド」モ減ルト

Dec 8024

5.

答、

スツカリ弱ツテ運動が出来ナクナルト言フ状態
 ニナリマシタ。採留者ノ中ニハ六十「ポンド」
 モ減ツタモノガアリマス。
 宿所デノ代表的ナ食事ノコトヲ話シテ下サイ、
 最後ノ年ハ晝飯ニハ約珈琲ノ「コップ」ニ一杯
 ノ米飯ヲ食ヒマシタガコノ米ハコノ國デ食ベ價
 レテキル精白米デハナクテ掃キアツメノ屑米
 ラックソノ米ハ泥ヤ砂利ノヤウナ異物ガ澤山混
 ツテ居リ、ソノ異物ト食ベラレル部分ラエリ分
 ケルコトハ出来ルモノデハアリマセンデシタ。
 彼等ハ又ヨク、パンラクレマシタガソレヲ宿所
 ノ醫師ガ分析シテミルト、大豆粕カラ出来テキ
 テソレハ實際上何ノ食品價値モ持ツテキナイモ
 ノデシタ。「パン」ヲ切ラウトスルト、ボロボ
 ロ崩レルツ時ニハ粘々シテマルデ糊ノヤウニ、
 ネットリシテキルノデ到底食ベラレソウモナイ
 事モアリマシタ。コレト共ニ彼等ハヨク普通タ
 食ノ皿ニ入ツテケル、水ツボイ「スチユール」ヲ
 クレマシタ。モシ採留者デソノ「スチユール」ノ
 中ニ親指ノ先位ノ水牛ノ肉ガ一切レ入ツテキレ
 バソノ人ハ選ガ好イワケデシタ。夕方ニハ夕食
 トシテイツモ定リ切ツタ獻立ヲ受ケ取リマシタ
 私ガ前ニ述べタ主要食品ノ一ツガ缺乏シナケレ
 バ決シテソノ獻立ハ變ツタ事ガアリマセンデシ
 タ。

Doc 8024

6.

殆ど一年間彼等ハ飲物ヲクレタ事ハ全然アリマ
センデシタ。彼等ハ毎月一月分ノ砂糖ヲケチケ
テト支給シテクレマシタガソノ分量ハ食匙ニ二
杯半デシタ。

問、アナタハ個人的ニ友達カラ融通シテモラフ外ニ

何ノ食事ノ補給ヲスル方法ガアリマシタカ?

答、最初、宿所ニハ可成リイイ酒保ガアリマシテ、
コノ酒保デ「アメリカ」賞デ八〇〇弗ダケ食物
ヲ買フコトガ出来マシタ。時ガ經ツニツレ、日
本人ハソレニ關聯シタ様々ノ通貨爲替相場ヲ操
縦シタノデ終ニハ我々ノ八〇〇弗モ酒保チハ殆
ンド何モ買ヘナクナツテ了ヒ最後ノ一年ハ酒保
ハアリマセンデシタ。

問、醫療ヤ醫療設備ハ抑留者ニハ十分宛テガハレマ
シタカ?

答、私達ノ中ニハ四五人ノ醫師ガキタノデ運ガ好カ
ツタノデスガ彼等ガ藥品ヤ醫療器具ヲ手ニ入レ
ルコトハ困難デシタ。彼等ノ持ツテキタ物ハ、
「アメリカ」ノ赤十字ガ送ツテクレタモノダケ
デシタ。日本人ハ藥モクレズ何ノ支給品モクレ
マセンデシタ。初メノ半年タツト宿所ニ齒醫者
シカキナカツタガソレガ歸國サセラレテ、コノ
後ハ日本人ノ齒醫者ガ一週ニ一回宿所ヘ來マシ
タガ、先約シテ待ツテキル人が餘リ澤山キルノ

Doc 8024

デコノ齒科醫ニ會フ迄ニハ九ヶ月待タネベナラ
ストイフ始末デシタ。トウトウコノ醫者ハ來ナ
クナリ、ソノアトヲ齒ノ始末ヲサセラレテキタ
ノハ一人ノ石油技師ダケデコノ人ハ日本ノ齒科
醫ノ仕事ヲ見テキルダケデ覺エタノデス。

宿所カラ河一ツ越ヘタ所ニ病院ガアリマシタガ
ソコハ極メテ香バシカラヌ状態デ經營サレテキ
ルトキカサレテキマシタ。私ハソノ病院ニハ看
護婦モ居ラズ患者ハ止ムヲ得ズオ互ヒニ世話ヲ
シ合ハネバナラナイノダトノコトデシタ。

問、ソノ外ニ押留者ノ待遇ノ點デ貴方ノ説明シタイ
様ナ點ガアリマスカ？

答、エエ、私タチハ宿所ノ近クニ正親ノ軍事目標ガ
アツタノデ空襲ノ危険ニ曝サレテキマシタ。
私達ノ隣ノ建物ニ彼等ノ軍隊ノ宿舍ガアルノヲ
私ハ認メマシタ。路ニ沿ヒ約五十呎ハナレタ所
ニ建物ノ入口ガアリマシタガ私ハソノ入口カラ
日本兵等ノ彈藥ヲ運ンデ貯藏スルノヲ見マシタ
宿舍ノスグ近クニ幾台カノ高射砲ガ備ヘツケラ
レ、宿舍カラソレヲ見ル事ガ出來マシタ。彼等
ハ又「コンクリート」ノ掩蔽部ト高射機銃ノ
銃床ヲ建造シマシタガ之ハ攻路ノオコルカモ知
レヌノヲ防イダタメニ設ケラレタモノデアリマ
ス。

○

8.

Doc 8024

コノ機関銃ノ銃床ノ一ツハ抑留者ノ宿舎ノ一ツ
カラ十呎以上ハヘダツテキナイ所ニアリマシタ
コノ構内ノ反対側ニハ騎兵トソノ馬ガ配置サレ
テ居マシタ。

日本人ハ戦争ノ終ル一週間前マデ私達ノ攻撃ニ
遭ハナイヤウニ宿舎ニ標ヲツケルコトヲ許シマ
セシマシタガソノ時ヤット白十字ノ標ヲツケル
事ヲ許シテクレマシタ。彼等ハコンナ標ヲ建物
ニツケルノハ「アメリカ」ノ飛行士ノ道標ニナ
ル許リダト言フノデス。

Ex # 1905

For The WAR CRIMES OFFICE
Judge Advocate General's Department -- War Department
United States of America

In the matter of inadequacies at
Mukden War Prisoners Camp, Mukden,
Manchuria, November 1942 to July
1943.

*
*
*
*

Perpetuation of Testimony of
Elmer A. Morse, 16003848, Sgt.

Taken at: Biltmore Regional Convalescent Hospital, Miami, Florida.

Date: 1 October 1945.

In the Presence of: Moyer Sugarman, Special Agent, Security Intelligence
Corps, Fourth Service Command.

Reporter: Elizabeth B. Roth, Clerk-Steno, Miami Beach Service
Base, Miami Beach, Florida.

Questions by: Moyer Sugarman, Special Agent, Security Intelligence
Corps, Fourth Service Command.

- Q. State your name, rank, serial number and permanent home address.
- A. [Elmer Alfred Morse, Sgt.,] 16003848; and I can always be reached through
404 Walnut Street, Washington, Illinois, though I may not be living
there.
- Q. Will you state your civilian background before entering the Army.
- A. I was born 11 December 1915 at Peoria, Illinois. I worked as a laborer
on various jobs in Illinois before entering the Army.
- Q. If you were recently returned to the United States after being a Prisoner
of War, state the date of your return.
- A. 25 September 1945.
- Q. State the date of your capture, where you were held and when, and date
of liberation.
- A. [I was captured 6 May 1942 on Corregidor,] I was held as a prisoner there
until 10 September 1942 when I was transferred to Cabanatuan, No. 1,
Philippine Islands where I was held until 6 October 1942. [I was then
transferred to Mukden War Prisoners Camp at Mukden, Manchuria, where I
was held from 11 November 1942 until 29 July 1943. I was then trans-
ferred to Hoten Prisoners Camp at Mukden, Manchuria, where I was held
from 29 July 1943 until 20 August 1945] on which date we were liberated
by Russian soldiers. The above dates are approximate.

Ex # 1905

For The WAR CRIMES OFFICE
Judge Advocate General's Department -- War Department
United States of America

* * * * *

In the matter of inadequacies at * Perpetuation of Testimony of
Mulden War Prisoners Camp, Mulden, * Elmer A. Morse, 16003848, Sgt.
Manchuria, November 1942 to July *
1943. *

* * * * *

Taken at: Biltmore Regional Convalescent Hospital, Miami, Florida.

Date: 1 October 1945.

In the Presence of: Meyer Sugarman, Special Agent, Security Intelligence
Corps, Fourth Service Command.

Reporter: Elizabeth B. Roth, Clerk-Steno, Miami Beach Service
Base, Miami Beach, Florida.

Questions by: Meyer Sugarman, Special Agent, Security Intelligence
Corps, Fourth Service Command.

- Q. State your name, rank, serial number and permanent home address.
- A. [Elmer Alfred Morse, Sgt.,] 16003848; and I can always be reached through
404 Walnut Street, Washington, Illinois, though I may not be living
there.
- Q. Will you state your civilian background before entering the Army.
- A. I was born 11 December 1915 at Peoria, Illinois. I worked as a laborer
on various jobs in Illinois before entering the Army.
- Q. If you were recently returned to the United States after being a Prisoner
of War, state the date of your return.
- A. 25 September 1945.
- Q. State the date of your capture, where you were held and when, and date
of liberation.
- A. [I was captured 6 May 1942 on Corregidor.] I was held as a prisoner there
until 10 September 1942 when I was transferred to Cabanatuan, No. 1,
Philippine Islands where I was held until 6 October 1942. [I was then
transferred to Mulden War Prisoners Camp at Mulden, Manchuria, where I
was held from 11 November 1942 until 29 July 1943. I was then trans-
ferred to Hoten Prisoners Camp at Mulden, Manchuria, where I was held
from 29 July 1943 until 20 August 1945] on which date we were liberated
by Russian soldiers. The above dates are approximate.

Ex. # 1905

For The WAR CRIMES OFFICE
Judge Advocate General's Department -- War Department
United States of America

* * * * *

In the matter of inadequacies at Mukden War Prisoners Camp, Mukden, Manchuria, November 1942 to July 1943. Perpetuation of Testimony of Elmer A. Morse, 16003848, Sgt.

* * * * *

Taken at: Biltmore Regional Convalescent Hospital, Miami, Florida.

Date: 1 October 1945.

In the Presence of: Meyer Sugarman, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps, Fourth Service Command.

Reporter: Elizabeth B. Roth, Clerk-Steno, Miami Beach Service Base, Miami Beach, Florida.

Questions by: Meyer Sugarman, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps, Fourth Service Command.

Q. State your name, rank, serial number and permanent home address.

A. [Elmer Alfred Morse, Sgt.,] 16003848; and I can always be reached through 404 Walnut Street, Washington, Illinois, though I may not be living there.

Q. Will you state your civilian background before entering the Army.

A. I was born 11 December 1915 at Peoria, Illinois. I worked as a laborer on various jobs in Illinois before entering the Army.

Q. If you were recently returned to the United States after being a Prisoner of War, state the date of your return.

A. 25 September 1945.

Q. State the date of your capture, where you were held and when, and date of liberation.

A. [I was captured 6 May 1942 on Corregidor.] I was held as a prisoner there until 10 September 1942 when I was transferred to Cabanatuan, No. 1, Philippine Islands where I was held until 6 October 1942. [I was then transferred to Mukden War Prisoners Camp at Mukden, Manchuria, where I was held from 11 November 1942 until 29 July 1943. I was then transferred to Hoten Prisoners Camp at Mukden, Manchuria, where I was held from 29 July 1943 until 20 August 1945] on which date we were liberated by Russian soldiers. The above dates are approximate.

Q. Will you describe your quarters at Lu'den.

A. [The buildings were particularly cold during the severe Manchurian winters and the Japanese only allowed us one shuttle of coal per stove per day. With this inadequate amount of coal, we often could only get the stove half-way warm, let alone the building. The buildings were old frame structures, half under and half above the ground, and the wind blew through them. In Manchuria, the wind blows continuously in the winter. They were never warm enough so that we could be comfortable without overcoats.

Q. What about medical supplies?

A. These were only available in extreme cases and then all that we received was a matter of charity because they were purchased by a Japanese, Dr. OKI, out of his own pocket and were not furnished by the Japanese Government.

Q. What about the food?

A. When we first arrived there, the food was very poor and at this time men were in their worst condition. We received a maize and pechi soup and two sour buns per day. Pechi is a Chinese cabbage. This was during the first month and a half that we were there and in that time approximately 200 men died from malnutrition. Later food conditions improved, but even then we were frequently given contaminated foods. Often, the fish and meat were so decomposed and contaminated that our mess crew would have to bury it. Often in borderline cases, food was cooked rather than buried and many times it was so bad that we couldn't eat it. Our mess sergeant during this period was Sgt. Andy Pervuznik who was from the 31st Inf. Division, and was formerly a mess sergeant. He would have information as to what type of food we received and on what days.

Q. What Japanese officers are responsible for this condition?

A. Col. K. MITSUDA was in charge of the camp. His staff consisted of Capt. ISHIKAWA, Lt. MURATA, Lt. FUKUZU and Lt. MISAGO who all bear some responsibility along with him.

Q. What American officers would have further information?

A. Major Hankins, Capt. Grow and the American doctor, Capt. Herbst, would have both information and records.

/s/ ELNER A. NORSE
Elner A. Norse, Sgt., CAC

State of Illinois)
County of Knox) SS

I, Elmer A. Morse, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ ELMER A. MORSE
Elmer A. Morse, Sgt., CAC

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 2 day of November 1945.

/s/ FLORENCE JOHNSON

(S E A L)

.....

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Meyer Sugerman, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps, Fourth Service Command, certify that Elmer A. Morse, 16003248, Sgt., personally appeared before me on 1 October 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by (him) to the several questions set forth.

Place: Miami Beach, Florida

Date: 6 October 1945

/s/ MEYER SUGERMAN
(Signature) Meyer Sugerman

(Organization) Special Agent,
Security Intelligence Corps,
Fourth Service Command

No. 1 Ex 1905 EVIDENTIARY DOC# 8211A ☆

答

医薬品は如何にシタカ。
医薬品は極々重症の場合に得られたり。而も我々が受
けた一切は、公認善事米に引換にシタ。トイフハ
日本人オキ博士ヨリ、博士自身、私對於其ハシタモシ

答

建物ハ酷クハ満洲ノ冬ノ間特別ニ寒ク而も日本軍ハ
ストーヴニ付一日石炭入シテ、石炭ヲ支給シタリシタ。
此ハ否適量ノ石炭ヲ我々ノ建物ヲ暖ムル事論外ナ
ストーヴヲ半ハ暖ム得ルニ過キナカツタコトガ屢ニシタ。
建物ハ古キ木骨造リナ半余地下ニ半余地上ニナリシタ。
ソレニ風ハ建物ヲ吹き抜ケタリ。満洲デハ冬ハ絶えず
吹きス。外套ナシテ心地ヨク居ル程建物が暖ムルコ
トハ決ニシタ無カッタ。

答

私ハ一九四三年五月六日「コレトール」ヲ捕合シタリ
ニ移サレ、其処ニ一九四三年十一月十日カラ一九四三年
七月二十九日迄收容サシマシタ。
私ハソレカラ満洲奉天ノ「ホーテ」ニ收容所ニ移サ
レ、一九四三年七月二十九日カラ一九四五年八月二十日迄其
処ニ收容サシマシタ。

エルマー、マルフレッド、モリス、軍曹

書類第八二一A号*

* * * * *

No. 2

DOC. 8211A ☆

答 内

日本政府ヨリ供給セリモテハ多クワリ。
食物ハ如何デシカ

我々が最初其処へ着イタ時、食物ハ甚ク悪ク、当時人々
ハ最悪ノ状態ニアリマシタ。我々ハ一日ニ玉蜀黍ト、
一杯及酸イ饅頭ニテヲ食ヘラシマシタ。ベチトハ支那ノ甘蔗デ
ス。元ハ我々が其処ニ居ル最初ノ一月半ノコトデ、其ノ期間
ニ約二百名ノ人が栄養不良デ死ニマシタ。

其ノ後食物ノ状態ハ良クナリマシタガ、然シテモ我々ハ度々
汚レタ食物ヲ食ヘラシマシタ。屢々魚ノ肉ハ酷ク腐敗シ、
汚レテキタテ、我々ノ食事ハ高層ハソレヲ煙トナシ、
テラナイ、状態デシタ。又屢々腐敗シカケル、状態、時食物
ハ埋メナイテ料理サシ、余リヒドクテ、我々ノ食ニラヌコトモ
度、アリマシタ。

米 米 米 米 米

CONFIDENTIAL

STATE OF WASHINGTON)
 COUNTY OF PIERCE) ss.

I, Herman M. Fayal, of lawful age, being duly sworn, on oath depose and say:

I am [Corporal Herman M. Fayal, USMC 19053638.] My permanent home address is 261 Chelsea Avenue, Napa, California. [I was captured by Japanese infantry on Corregidor in a general surrender on 6 May 1942.] At that time I was in the 60th Coast Artillery, Anti Aircraft. After being confined in the Philippines for five months, [I was taken to Manchuria and confined in Hoten Prison Camp near Mukden from 11 November 1942 to July 1944.]

The prisoners of war were not provided with proper medical care, food and quarters in this camp while I was there.

Over 200 prisoners died as a result of lack of food, medical care and lack of fuel to keep warm in the winter when the temperature fell as low as 40 below zero, Fahrenheit. There were big piles of coal right in the camp, but we were not allowed to burn it. It was common for prisoners to have their ears, noses and feet frozen. The prisoners were issued one uniform which was made of a sort of canvas material, but this was not sufficient for warmth. The prisoners were forced to do construction work outside where they were exposed to the elements. There was one big warehouse full of food and the Japanese had enough to eat themselves, but would not issue enough food for the prisoners. I, myself, lost 30 pounds during this period. All requests for food, fuel and medical supplies were refused by the Japanese.

Col. Matsuda was the Japanese Commandant. He and the interpreter, Cpl. Noda (who was born in California, but called us all "white bastards") refused our requests. Col. Matsuda was about 5'4", plump in build, wore thick lensed glasses, had short clipped hair, a ruddy complexion, a military posture, and a brisk manner. He wore so many clothes that I cannot describe him further. I cannot remember how Cpl. Noda looked except that he was about 5'7" in height, spoke English very well, including slang and profane expressions, had clipped hair, and erect posture.

Our own Commanding Officer was Major Hankens, who was confined with me all during this period, and who can corroborate my statements. I do not know whether he kept records or names of the Japanese responsible for our treatment. I can give no further description of the persons responsible for conditions which I have described, and I can state no further details concerning the matters described in this affidavit.

/s/ Cpl Herman M. Fayal 19053638

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 10th day of October 1945, at Fort Lewis, Washington.

/s/ Arthur G. Bouley

Arthur G. Bouley

C.O., USA

Asst Adjutant General

ASFTC Fort Lewis, Wash.

Witness:

/s/ Robert R. Hepperle
 Agent, SIC 9 SC

A TRUE COPY:

/s/ Harryman Dorsey
 HARRYMAN DORSEY
 Capt., J.G.D.

CONFIDENTIAL

EXHIBIT

1906A

Doc 8220

伍長「ハノマン・E・フエイアル」軍連續番號一
 九〇五三六三八。此ハ一九四二年五月六日ノ全面的
 降伏ノ際「コレヒドール」デ日本軍歩兵ニ捕ハレタ。
 私ハ滿洲ニ送レテ行カレ奉天近傍ノ奉天俘虜收容所
 ニ、一九四二年十一月十一日カラ一九四四年七月迄
 監禁サレタ。
 私カ其處ニ居ル間コノ收容所ラハ俘虜ハ適當ナ食
 料モ食物モ宿舎モ具ヘラレナカツタ。
 食糧・木材ノ不足並ニ冬季溫度カ華民ノ零下四〇
 度迄下ツタノニ勝ラ休ツ爲ノ燃料カ不足ノ爲、二百
 人以上ノ俘虜カ死亡シタ。收容所ニハ正ニ大キナ石
 炭ノ山カアツタニモ拘ハラズ、我々ハソレラ燃ヤス
 ニトテ許サレナカツタ。耳ヤ鼻ヤ足ニ凍傷ヲ起ス事
 常ハ俘虜ニトツテ普通ノコトデアツタ。俘虜ハ帆布
 材料ノ板ナモノテ出来タ制服ヲ配給サレタガ是ハ休
 温ニ不十分デアツタ。俘虜ハ屋外テ風雨ニ曝サレテ
 建設工事ニ働クコトヲ強ヒラレタ。食糧ガ一杯入ツ
 テキル食糧カ一ツアリ日本人ハ自分達ハ十分ナ食
 料ヲ得ラシメラシメ、我々ニ對テ谷十斤ノ食糧ヲ配給シヨ
 ウトハシカカツタ。私自身モ同期間ニ、二〇封度体
 重カ減ツタ。食糧・燃料及日用品ノ請求ハ總テ日
 本人ニヨリ拒否セラレタ。

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
: ss 95C-TC-2784
City and County of San Francisco :

[JOHN BROWN LESLIE ANDERSON, Radioman 3/c, United States Navy,] Serial No. 375-97-33, being duly sworn, deposes and says:

My permanent address through which I can best be reached is Route 1, Box 1003, Beaverton, Oregon. I am 33 years of age and had two years of high school education.

[I was taken prisoner of war by the Japanese on Wake Island on December 23, 1941.] We remained on the island and had good treatment there until January 12, 1942 when we were moved to Shanghai via Yokohama. All of the prisoners on Wake Island, which consisted of approximately 500 civilians and 400 service personnel, were shipped on the Nita Maru, a large Japanese passenger liner. The prisoner passengers were placed in various holds of the ship. I happened to be placed in hold #3. We had sleeping accommodations and toilet facilities were available. The trip was very uncomfortable and the food and water was very poor. Various beatings were administered by the Japanese guards to the prisoners for very little or no reason. These beatings consisted of hitting a prisoner with rifle butts, clubs or billies or whatever else might be available. However, insofar as I know, these beatings did not result in permanent injury to anyone.

Upon our arrival at Shanghai we were moved to Woosung, China, which is about seven or eight miles from Shanghai. The camp we were placed in at Woosung had formerly been a Chinese camp and we were housed in the old Chinese wooden barracks. These barracks were very crude. We slept on the floor with some of us having straw mattresses. The water was quite polluted and it was necessary for us to boil all our water before drinking it. There was a very primitive galley in which we could boil our water and do some cooking. The toilet facilities were practically non-existent, consisting merely of a hole in the floor. The commander at this camp was a Colonel YUSEI who died just before we were moved from the camp. The guards were mostly Formosan with some Japanese. We received some rough treatment from the guards but insofar as I know, I saw nor heard of no torturings, extreme beatings resulting in permanent injury, or deaths.

[On December 5, 1942 we were moved to Kiang Wang, China. The commanding officer there was a Colonel OTERA. At this camp the treatment was poor. The food was also very poor and the work very hard. All of the prisoners suffered great losses in weight. I, personally, lost about 40 pounds while at this camp and most of the prisoners lost much more than that. In fact, several of the prisoners died because of malnutrition. One of the reasons we were short on food was that a Japanese guard named NAKAGAMI, the mess steward of the camp, stole a great deal of food from our mess. However, we were powerless to do anything about it. Also, the Japanese refused to give us the International Red Cross boxes which were sent to us. They were held up by the Japanese until just before we left the camp and the only reason we got them then was because the American officer who was in charge of receiving them refused to sign for them until they were actually delivered to us for our use. While at this camp we were forced to work on the building of a large rifle range. This range was located a few miles out of Shanghai and took approximately a year and a half to build. It was being built for the Japanese army to use in rifle practice. Also, we were given work shining and polishing shells and burying gasoline drums. We were also made to work in a garage repairing tanks and trucks.]

[In May 1945 we were moved to Fong Tai, China, awaiting transportation to Japan. Our commanding officer, Colonel OFFER, went along with us. While at Fong Tai we were housed in large warehouses there. It was necessary for us to sleep on the floor and we got very little food. The food consisted merely of a cup of rice or flour and a cup of watery soup three times a day. Our work consisted of digging foxholes for the Japanese.

From Fong Tai we were loaded into boxcars. There were about 50 of us in each boxcar and the boxcars are much smaller than American cars. It was so crowded that only about half of us could lie down. We had buckets which were used for toilet facilities. The train made a 12-day trip northward through China and down the peninsula of Korea to the port of Fusan. The food on the trip was not bad. At Fusan we were placed aboard a small Japanese passenger ship. About 400 of us were put in a small hold. We were jammed in so solidly that it was necessary for all of us to stand. The trip lasted twelve hours. We were given no water but did have our own food which consisted of a hardtack which we had previously baked and taken along with us. After the ship arrived in Japan we were held aboard for one day and during all this time got no water. All together, we were on the ship from the time we left Fusan, Korea, until we arrived in the port in Hokkaido, a period of two days.

We were taken to Hokkaido camp #3 on July 5, 1945. The barracks we were placed in were wooden barracks of fairly good construction. However, it was necessary for us to sleep on the floor. It was quite cold and we were sleeping with from two to four blankets each. While there we received the smallest ration that we had had in any of the camps. We were given one teacup of rice three times a day, and also one teacup three times a day of soup. This soup was usually made of fuki grass or seaweed and had practically no nourishment. Because of the diet a large number of the prisoners at all times were suffering from diarrhea, beriberi, ulcers and other dietary deficiency diseases.

On September 12, 1945 we were liberated. I do not know the name of the commanding officer at this camp or the names of any of the guards. The treatment was rough, but again, as in the previous camps, I do not know of any instances in which the Japanese administered beatings which resulted in permanent injury to or death of any of the prisoners.

This information covers all the pertinent details of these incidents which I am now able to remember.

/s/ JOHN BROWN LESLIE ANDERSON
JOHN BROWN LESLIE ANDERSON
Radioman 3/c, U.S.N.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 23rd day of January 1946
at San Francisco, California.

/s/ ALBERT T. COOK
ALBERT T. COOK
Lt. Comdr, USNR

Interviewed by: Lt. Comdr. Albert T. Cook, USNR

C O N F I D E N T I A L

EXHIBIT NO. 197A Identifying Doc

Handwritten text, likely a document or report, appearing as bleed-through from the reverse side of the page. The text is mostly illegible due to the quality of the scan and the nature of the bleed-through.

ALL COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Document # 8/23

一、本會對於此次戰爭之影響，深感其嚴重。本會之宗旨，在於救濟貧苦，維護社會正義。此次戰爭，不僅造成大量人員傷亡，更使無數家庭破產，流離失所。本會深感痛心，並決定採取緊急措施，以救濟受難同胞。

二、本會已與政府及各機關商洽，請求撥款救濟。同時，本會亦發起募捐，以資救濟。本會之救濟工作，將以救濟貧苦，維護社會正義為宗旨。本會將竭盡全力，以救濟受難同胞。

三、本會之救濟工作，將以救濟貧苦，維護社會正義為宗旨。本會將竭盡全力，以救濟受難同胞。本會之救濟工作，將以救濟貧苦，維護社會正義為宗旨。本會將竭盡全力，以救濟受難同胞。

四、本會之救濟工作，將以救濟貧苦，維護社會正義為宗旨。本會將竭盡全力，以救濟受難同胞。本會之救濟工作，將以救濟貧苦，維護社會正義為宗旨。本會將竭盡全力，以救濟受難同胞。

五、本會之救濟工作，將以救濟貧苦，維護社會正義為宗旨。本會將竭盡全力，以救濟受難同胞。本會之救濟工作，將以救濟貧苦，維護社會正義為宗旨。本會將竭盡全力，以救濟受難同胞。

No. 2

No. 3

8123 ☆

我々の豊島には有蓋貨車二輛ありしなり。各貨車は、
 五名少く載せりし。該貨車は、米國製にして、より無しの製
 りたり。我々の倉には多量、又倉が通室は押込あり
 たり。約半量ありし。倉の入り口は橋は二十か所ありしなり。
 我々の用便用上は二箇、六丁の入りありしなり。汽船
 の支那本土より北土の朝鮮半島より下津釜山港は三日
 かりし到着ありしなり。

C. # 1908

DOCUMENT NO. 8063*

(COPY)

Page 1

ABOARD USN HOSPITAL SHIP "SANTOYO"
ON ROUTE FROM HONOLULU TO SAN FRANCISCO, CALIFORNIA)ss

[JOHN F. BRONNER,] 2914 (J.F.B.) Leavenworth Street, San Francisco, California, deposes and says:

While interned at Footung Civil Assembly Center, Shanghai, China, after my apprehension by the Japanese as a member of the crew of the SS President Harrison, I was placed in the position of camp meat inspector and butcher. This assignment began on 31 Jan-(J.F.B.)uary 1943 and continued until liberation of the camp was effected on 16 August 1945. My qualifications for the work were the result of experience as second butcher on the SS President Harrison.

From 31 January 1943 to February of 1944, internees at Footung were allowed 220 kilos of meat or fish per day for the entire group of internees consisting of approximately 1090 persons. In addition to the meat mentioned above the camp was allowed 420 (J.F.B.) kilos of vegetables per day and from 160 to 65 kilos of rice. These (J.F.B.) figures do not indicate the actual amount of food made available to the internees, however, because the meat, which was always water buffalo or a poor grade of pork, had a loss from trim which ran approximately 40 percent. Similarly, the vegetables, which were third or fourth grade, were of a type which had a loss in preparation of about 40 percent.

In February of 1944 the meat and vegetable rations (J.F.B.) described above were cut by 10 percent and the quality did not improve. In April of the same year there was another cut of 10 percent and in August of 1944 there was a final cut of 15 percent. It is thus apparent that our initial ration of meat and vegetables was cut by 35 percent in less than a year and a half. This reduction in rations was made even more serious by reason of the fact that from January of 1945 to April 1945 we received no rice from the Japanese and very little assistance from the Red Cross.

I do not know who was responsible for the above described reductions in food rations at Footung Civil Assembly Center and have no further information which should be included in this statement.

_____/s/ John Frederick Bronner_____
John F. Bronner

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 20th day of October 1945.

_____/s/ Victor M. Fresk_____
VICTOR M. FRESK
Major, Inf.
Summary Court Officer

Interviewed by: John J. L. Fianza, Jr., SIC

.. THE COPY:

_____/s/ [Signature]_____
[Signature]
Captain, Signal Corps

EXHIBIT

1908A

Evidentiary

Document #

8063

☆

書類第 八〇六三号 *

「ジョシ・エフ・ア字上」

汽船「九」号乗組員、(員ト下日泰字
ニヨル逮捕後中国、上海浦東一般人集中營三柳留中
私、收容所、肉、監督及之場大、地位ニ就カセラセタ
コ、任命、一九四三年一月三十一日ヲ始リ同收容所ガ
一九四五年八月十六日ニ解放セル迄續ク。其仕事ニ
対スル私資格汽船「九」号、(員ト下日泰字)
トシテ、経験、結果ヲアツタ。

一九四三年一月三十一日カラ一九四四年、二月三、浦東收容者
ハ約一千九百名、全員ニ対シ一日一付十肉又、魚三百丁宛
午ヘラセタ。前記肉、外ニ、收容所ハ一日野菜四百丁惣
米百六十乃至六十五丁ヘラセタ。然シカレモ、
数字ハ收容者、利用シ得ル實際、食物量ヲ未至
ハケイシト云ラハ、肉ハ、毛水牛又、下等、豚、
カラ、約四割ニ及ブ層ガ出タカラケス。同層ニ、
級、天字、調理中ニ約四割、層、出ル程

一九四四年二月ニ前記、肉ト野菜、割
エ、ソノ所費元良クナラナカッタ。同年四月
一九四四年八月ニ最後ニ割五分
最初、肉ト野菜、割高カ一年半
減シタエト分明カラアル。コ、食料割高減、一九四五年
一月カラ一九四五年四月ニ、銭々、本庫、
取ラヌ又赤十字社、之殆ド、
ニ依ツテ更ニ一層重大ナ

FILED
RETURN TO ROOM 361

E. # 1909

Doc. No. 8004*

Page 1 *

RESTRICTED

FOR THE WAR CRIMES OFFICE

Judge Advocate General's Department - War Department

United States of America

- - -

In the matter of the failure of the Japanese to furnish proper food, quarters, and medical care to American prisoners of war at Kangwan, China, between March 1943 and June 1945

Perpetuation of testimony of Sgt. Roger Dick Bamford, 1622 Avenue B, Kearney, Nebraska, Serial No. 306927

- - -

Taken at: Kearney, Nebraska
Date: 15 February 1946
In the presence of: Charles H. Phares, S/Agt, SIC, 7 SC, Omaha, Nebr.
Reporter: Charles H. Phares, S/Agt, SIC, 7 SC, Omaha, Nebr.
Questions by: Charles H. Phares, S/Agt, SIC, 7 SC, Omaha, Nebr.

- - -

Q State your name, rank, Marine Corps Serial Number and permanent home address.
A I am Roger Dick Bamford, Sgt. Serial No. 306927. My home address is 1622 Avenue B, Kearney, Nebraska.
Q State your citizenship and the date and place of your birth.
A I am a citizen of the United States and was born at Elm Creek, Nebraska, on November 6, 1922.
Q What education have you had?
A I was graduated from highschool at Kearney, Nebraska.

RESTRICTED

Q Did you have a civilian occupation?

A No. I went from highschool to the Marine Corps.

Q Where were you stationed and what were your military duties?

A I was attached to an anti-aircraft Unit stationed on Wake Island when the war between Japan and the United States broke out on 7 December 1941.

Q Were you a prisoner of war?

A Yes. I was captured at Wake Island on 23 December 1941. I was transferred soon to Moosung Prison Camp at Moosung, China where I was held until March 1943. I was then transferred to a prison camp at Kangwan, China where I was held from March 1943 until June 1945. We were then transferred to a prison camp at Fengtia, China, where we were held from 1 June to 1 July 1945. The last prison camp I was in was located at Hokodate, Fokaido, Japan where I was held from 1 July 1945 to about 15 August 1945 when I was released by American Forces. I was returned to the United States soon after being released.

Q Do you recall what food was issued to American prisoners of war at Kangwan China Prison Camp between March 1943 and 1945 (June)?

A Yes, I do.

Q State what you recalled concerning the food issued.

A Our diet consisted of three meals a day made up of a small teacupful of rice and a small amount of watery soup ordinarily twice a day. Approximately twenty to twenty-five loaves of bread were furnished daily also. We received no other food from the outside but we did get one Red Cross package a year while we were there.

Q What kind of quarters did you have there?

A We slept in barns on the earth floor. We had no stoves and no fuel for fire. Our latrine facilities were inadequate as was the water supply. The Japanese did issue some clothing. Some men did receive a shirt and others a pair of pants but none got both at once as I recall. Some Japanese shoes were issued. They were poorly made and without arches. Many of the men got flat feet as a result of wearing them.

- Q Did the Japanese furnish medical care?
- A The Japanese made no attempt to provide medical care for the prisoners. The only care we got came from the medical officer, a Commander Thison, who was also a prisoner. Our medical supplies came from the Red Cross packages which we received.
- Q Did any prisoners die while you were at this camp?
- A Yes, four or five men died as a result of malnutrition, beri-beri or dysentery. I do not recall their names.
- Q Who was the Japanese Commander?
- A He was Captain Indo who had been our Commander at Moosung Prison Camp.
- Q Who was the ranking American officer?
- A Colonel Ashurst, USMC.
- Q Do you recall the names of any American prisoners who were there with you?
- A Sgt. Marion L. Wyne, 4475 Saratoga Aven, San Diego, California and Sgt. Fred Beese, Iodale, Iowa.
- Q Do you have anything further to add to the above?
- A No.
- Q Do you have any knowledge of other mistreatment of American prisoners of war by the Japanese?
- A Only what I have given you in sworn statement today.

s/ ROGER DICK BALFORD

t/ ROGER DICK BALFORD, Sgt. USMC

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

STATE OF NEBRASKA)
 SS
COUNTY OF BUFFALO)

I, Roger Dick Bamford, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

(S E A L)

s/ ROGER DICK BALFORD
t/ ROGER DICK BALFORD, Sgt. USMC

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 5th day of March 1946.

s/ IRENE LAWSON
Co.Clerk, Buffalo Co.

CERTIFICATE

I, Charles H. Phares, Special Agent, SIC, 7 SC, certify that Roger Dick Bamford personally appeared before me on 15 February 1946 and testified concerning War Crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

s/ CHAS. H. PHARES, S/Agt.
SIC, 7 SC
t/ CHAS. H. PHARES S/Agt.
SIC, 7 SC

Omaha, Nebraska
Mar 5, 1946

RESTRICTED

CERTIFIED A TRUE COPY

/s/ Lindsay Williamson
LINDSAY WILLIAMSON
CAPT. JAGD

C E R T I F I C A T E

Mar 1, 1946

I HEREBY CERTIFY that the attached document is a true copy of an affidavit purporting to be sworn and subscribed to by ROGER DICK BARNFORD, Sgt., S.N. 306927 at Buffalo County, Nebraska on the 5th day of March 1946.

I FURTHER CERTIFY that it was copied from an original in my custody as Chief, Criminal Registry Division, Legal Section, GHQ, SCAP, Tokyo, Japan.

/s/ CHARLES A. REINHARD
CHARLES A. REINHARD
Lt Col., F. A.
Chief of Criminal Registry
Division, Legal Section

GA 1909

2004-1

文書第八の四号

問 君、姓名、階級、陸軍隊認識番号及
原籍地ヲ述ベテサイ。

答 秘ハローダー、ドイツクバニアニ、思言、
認識番号、三〇六^七アリス、原籍地ハ
ネブラスカ州、カトネイ市、B街、一八三番地デ
アリス。

x x x x x x x x

問 君ハ俘虜ニナッタリ。

答 ハイ、秘ハ、一九四一年(昭和十六年)二月
ニ三日、ウエーク島ヲ捕ヘテミタ。間モリ
中國、吳淞、吳淞俘虜收容所へ移テ
ソコニ一九四三年(昭和十八年)三月迄、收容
サレテ居ミタ。ソレカラ、中國 Kanyuan、
俘虜收容所ニ移カレ、ソコニ、一九四五年
(昭和十八年)三月カラ、一九四五年(昭和二十年)

大分道 林邊子千屋の古式

× × × × × × × ×

2008-12

問 Kanjima 一平國傳集 寂庵所著 仁治三年
(明本十一年)三月より一和正五年(明本二十年)
天皇迄、同、本國定傳 爲子之、一、爲子給與
十、分、爲、三、可、也、

答、我々、復乎、小文、紅茶茶論一冊、故、普通
日三二度ノ水書、其、茶、又、一、六、分、リ、三、分、
任、此、以、二、三、五、五、塊、ノ、以、之、給、與、可、也、
我々、カ、二、三、居、同、ノ、外、部、五、也、何、モ、食、物、
食、テ、カ、多、カ、毎、二、度、亦、十、字、處、同、三、一、箇
午、二、人、ノ、也、

百三三度

問 ココに何の種類の暗室に居たか

答、我々、六、級、屋、三、二、同、上、ニ、寝、ニ、タ、以、テ、變、タ、三、
スト、ト、ガ、石、新、三、ア、リ、モ、テ、多、便、所、設、備、ハ、給、水
ト、同、様、不、十、分、テ、ア、リ、ニ、タ、日、本、學、ハ、衣、類、ヲ、着、
給、變、ニ、テ、果、シ、テ、タ、ニ、ア、リ、一、枚、貫、テ、着、セ、ル、ニ、
試、シ、居、ル、亦、三、一、不、貫、テ、着、セ、ル、ニ、タ、ガ、私、覺

★

4004-17

三平、腹中、兩天一夜、食、多、痛、不、有、
三平、之、苦、氣、之、發、之、結、之、之、之、
之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、
之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、之、

問、赤痢、醫、療、之、方、也、

答、赤痢、之、症、赤、痢、之、症、赤、痢、之、症、
赤、痢、之、症、赤、痢、之、症、赤、痢、之、症、
赤、痢、之、症、赤、痢、之、症、赤、痢、之、症、
赤、痢、之、症、赤、痢、之、症、赤、痢、之、症、

問、君、之、收、容、所、之、屋、間、死、之、之、之、之、

答、公、之、收、容、所、之、屋、間、死、之、之、之、之、
公、之、收、容、所、之、屋、間、死、之、之、之、之、
公、之、收、容、所、之、屋、間、死、之、之、之、之、

以上

C. # 1910

Document No. 8450

C E R T I F I C A T E

27 December, 1946

I HEREBY CERTIFY that the below-listed International Prosecution Section evidentiary documents are true and correct copies of original documents now in my custody as Assistant Chief, Criminal Registry Division, Legal Section, GHQ, SCAP, Tokyo, Japan:

<u>Evidentiary Document No.</u>	<u>Name</u>	<u>Date</u>	<u>Place Sworn</u>
7004	Sgt. Roger D. Bamford	5 March 1945	Omaha, Nebr.
8006	Maj. Thomas H. Hewlett	2 Oct. 1945	Luzon, P. I.
8022	1st Lt. John F. Allen	30 Dec. 1945	St. Paul, Minn.
8223	Yorio Ogizawa	8 Feb. 1946	Osaka, Japan
8285	Sgt. Marshall G. Shellhart	7 Oct. 1945	Ft. Lewis, Wash.
8071	Cpl. John E. Shepard	2 Oct. 1945	Oakland, Calif.
8263	Cmr. John B. Mullins	3 Nov. 1945	Morotai
8284	Pvt. Owen R. Robert	16 Sept. 1945	Luzon, P. I.
8051	Cpl. Alvin L. Coons	1 Nov. 1945	San Francisco, Calif.
8077	Capt. A. E. Maher	27 Nov. 1945	Arlington, Va.
8043	William R. Leibold	26 Oct. 1945	Los Angeles, Calif.
8289	Pvt. Geo. (n) McRae	9 Oct. 1945	Oakland, Calif.
8234	Chief Philip E. Sanders	21 Sept. 1945	Washington, D. C.
8074	Sgt. William R. Linderfelt	4 Oct. 1945	Oakland, Calif.
8291	Sgt. Frank E. Pick	3 Oct. 1945	Oakland, Calif.
8073	Sgt. William Mahoney	1 March 1946	Boston, Mass.
8095	Sgt. Matthew D. Monk	3 Oct. 1945	Oakland, Calif.
8171	Cpl. Alexis J. Mott	13 Oct. 1945	Ft. Lewis, Wash.
8118	Lt. Col. R. R. Petrie	29 Jan. 1946	Westminster
8082	John H. Marshall	8 Sept. 1945	
8065	Cpl. Charles E. Maurer	6 Oct. 1945	Oakland, Calif.
8107	Sgt. Michael J. Robertson	19 Oct. 1945	San Francisco, Calif.
8163	Sgt. Harry Slater, Jr.	12 Oct. 1945	San Francisco, Calif.

The originals of the above listed documents cannot be made available immediately as they are required for the trial of minor war criminals.

/s/ C. W. WILLOUGHBY

C. W. Willoughby
Capt. Inf.
Assistant Chief of Criminal
Registry Division, Legal Section

Sworn to before me
this 27th day of December, 1946
at Tokyo, Japan

/s/ WILLIAM R. GILL
Captain, Inf., O-513017
Investigating Officer

No. 1 VN/910

8450

Evidentiary Document

証 明 書

一九四六年十月二十七日

左記國際檢察部證據書類、日本東京聯合國

最高指揮官總司令部法務局犯罪記錄課 / Criminal

Registry Division / 次長より余が目下保管する文書

原本、眞実且つ正確ナル複本ナルコトヲ余、茲ニ証明ス。

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Evidentiary Document # 8450

No. 2

番号	氏名	階級	備考
1000	/Sgt. Roger D. BAMFORD/	一等兵	...
1001	/Maj. Thomas H. HEIVLELL/	中尉	...
1011	/1st Lt. John H. ALLEN/	少尉	...
1013	/Genio OGIYA/	兵	日本大阪
1015	/Sgt. Marshall S. SHELLHART/	一等兵	...
1017	/Cpl John B. LIPPARD/	中士	...
1018	/Cnr. John B. MULLINS/	中士	...
1019	/Pvt. Owen R. KOBERT/	兵	...
1021	/Cpl. Alvin L. OWENS/	中士	...
1022	/Capt. A. L. MAHER/	中尉	...
1023	/William R. LEIBOLD/	兵	...

Doc. 8450

證據種類 番号	氏名	月日	宣誓、場所
<三六九>	兵卒ジョージ(2)マラー /Pvt. Geo. (W) MCRAE/	一九四五年 十月九日	カリフォルニア州オークランド
<三三四>	海軍中佐ウィリアム・エドワード・サンダース /Chief Philip E. SANDERS/	一九四五年 九月三十日	ワシントン州シアトル
<〇六四>	海軍中佐ウィリアム・ロビンソン・リンデルフェルト /Sgt. William R. Lindorfelt LINDERFELT/	一九四五年 十月四日	カリフォルニア州オークランド
<二九一>	海軍中佐フランク・E・ピック /Sgt. Frank E. PICK/	一九四五年 十月八日	カリフォルニア州オークランド
<〇六六>	海軍中佐ウィリアム・マホニー /Sgt William MAHONEY/	一九四六年 三月一日	ワシントン州シアトル
<〇九五>	海軍中佐マシュー・D・モンキー /Sgt Matthew D. MONKY/	一九四五年 十月三日	カリフォルニア州オークランド
<一四一>	中尉アレクシス・J・モット /Cpl. Alexis J. MOTT/	一九四五年 十月十三日	ワシントン州シアトル
<一一一>	少佐ロバート・R・ペトリー /Lt. Col. R. R. PETRIE/	一九四六年 三月十九日	ワシントン州シアトル
<〇六二>	海軍中佐ジョン・H・マーシャル /John H. MARSHALL/	一九四五年 九月八日	
<〇六五>	中尉チャールズ・E・マウラー /Cpl. Charles E. MAURER/	一九四五年 十月六日	カリフォルニア州オークランド
<一〇六>	海軍中佐マイケル・J・ロバートソン /Sgt. Michael J. ROBERTSON/	一九四五年 十月十九日	カリフォルニア州オークランド

No. 3

Doc. 8450

証書類 番号	氏名	月日	宣誓場所
二六三	軍曹ハ、スリター、三三三 /Sgt. Harry, Jr. SLAERY/	一九四五年 十月十日	カリフォルニア州サンフランシスコ

証書類、原本以下級戦争犯罪人裁判、為要スルガ故ニ直ニ利用スルヲ得ズ

署名 / J. W. WILLIAMS /

/C. W. WILLOUGHBY/

法務局犯罪記録課次長歩兵大尉 J. W. WILLIAMS
日本東京ニ於テ一九四六年十二月二十七日 余、面前ニ於テ宣誓セリ

联合国最高指揮官總司令部法務局調査官

〇一五二三〇一七 歩兵大尉

署名 / WILLIAM R. GILL /

/WILLIAM R. GILL/

終

No. 4

Doc. 8450

証書類 番号	氏名	月日	宣誓場所
二六三	軍曹ハ、スライ、エドワーズ /Sgt. Harry, Jr. SLAERY/	一九四五年 十月十日	カリフォルニア州サンフランシスコ

証書類、原本は下級戦争犯罪人裁判、為要スルガ故ニ直ニ利用スルヲ得ズ

署名 / J. グラント・ウィルビー
/C. W. WILLOUGHBY/

法務局犯罪記録課次長歩兵大尉 J. グラント・ウィルビー
日本東京ニ於テ一九四六年十二月二十七日 余、面前ニ於テ
宣誓セリ。

联合国最高指揮官總司令部法務局調査官

〇一五二三〇一七 歩兵大尉

署名 ウィリアム・R・ギル
/WILLIAM. R. GILL/

終

N. 4

CONFIDENTIAL

FOR THE WAR CRIMES OFFICE

Judge Advocate General's Department -- War Department

United States of America

In the matter of the failure of the Japanese to furnish proper food, quarters, and medical care to American prisoners of war at Woosung, China, between 1 February 1942 and March 1943.

Perpetuation of testimony of Sgt. Roger Dick Bamford, 1622 Avenue B, Kearney, Nebraska, Serial No. 306927.

Taken at: Kearney, Nebraska
 Date: 15 February 1946
 In the presence of: Charles H. Phares, S/Agt, SIC. 7SC, Omaha, Nebr
 Reporter: Charles H. Phares, S/Agt, SIC. 7SC, Omaha, Nebr
 Questions by: Charles H. Phares, S/Agt, SIC. 7SC, Omaha, Nebr

Q: State your name, rank, Marine Corps Serial Number and permanent home address.

A: I am Roger Dick Bamford, Sgt, Serial No. 306927. My home address is 1622 Avenue B, Kearney, Nebraska.

Q: State your citizenship and the date and place of your birth.

A: I am a citizen of the United States and was born at Elm Creek, Nebraska, on November 6, 1922.

Q: What education have you had?

A: I was graduated from highschool at Kearney, Nebraska.

Q: Did you have a civilian occupation?

A: No. I went from highschool to the Marine Corps.

Q: Where were you stationed? What were your military duties?

A: I was attached to an anti-aircraft unit stationed on Wake Island when the war between Japan and the United States broke out on 7 December 1941.

Q: Were you a prisoner of war?

A: Yes. I was captured at Wake Island on 23 December 1941. I was transferred soon to Woosung Prison Camp at Woosung, China where I was held until March 1943. I was then transferred to a prison camp at Kangwan, China where I was held from March 1943 until June 1945. We were then transferred to a prison camp at Iengtia, China, where we were held from 1 June to 1 July 1945. The last prison camp I was in was located at Hokodate, Hokaido, Japan where I was held from 1 July 1945 to about 15 August 1945 when I was released by American Forces. I was returned to the United States soon after being released.

CONFIDENTIAL

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

- Q: Do you recall the food issued by the Japanese to the American prisoners of war at Moosung Prison Camp between 1 February 1942 and March 1943?
- A: Yes, I do.
- Q: State what you recall concerning the food issued to the American prisoners of war.
- A: We were issued a small tencup full of cooked rice three times a day. Ordinarily we received a little watery turnip soup twice a day or some soup of a similar nature. We were never issued meat and we could get no other food. We received no Red Cross parcels at that camp.
- Q: Do you recall the quarters in which prisoners were kept?
- A: I do.
- Q: State what you recall concerning the quarters.
- A: We were sheltered in barns and slept on the ground. There were cracks in the walls of the barn through which cold air passed freely.
- Q: Did you have stoves and fuel furnished in these quarters?
- A: No, we did not.
- Q: What sort of weather prevailed in this area during the winter months?
- A: Temperatures got as low as fifteen and twenty degrees above zero and we had snowfalls. The weather was ordinarily damp. We were never able to be really warm. Two blankets were issued to each man as bedding.
- Q: Were clothes issued to you?
- A: The Japanese issued no clothing and some of the prisoners had no clothing at all when they arrived at Moosung because the Japanese had made them strip when they left Wake Island. Some had a pair of pants; others a shirt, but that clothing lasted only about three months.
- Q: Did you have any facilities for bathing?
- A: We washed ourselves in buckets but for the first three months I was at Moosung I did not have a bath. The Japanese furnished no soap. We never did wash our clothes because we felt they would fall apart if they were washed.
- Q: Did the Japanese furnish medical care for the American prisoners?
- A: The Japanese furnished no medical care and while we were at that camp approximately thirty or forty prisoners died due to malnutrition, beri-beri, and dysentery.
- Q: Did you have a Doctor among the American prisoners?
- A: Lt (j.g.) Kahn, USN, Ft Worth, Texas, was in this camp and did what he could for us.
- Q: What sort of latrine facilities did you have?

RESTRICTED

RESTRICTED

- A: We had one latrine built to accommodate four men but there were approximately fifteen hundred men at the camp so that latrine was very inadequate for our needs. The Japanese furnished no disinfectants for keeping the latrine clean.
- Q: Who was the Japanese Commander at Moosung Prison Camp?
- A: The first Commanding Officer was a Col. Use but he died while we were there and was replaced by a Captain Indo.
- Q: Who was the ranking American officer?
- A: He was Colonel Ashurst, USMC. Other officers present were Major Brown, who had been stationed at Peping; Major Deveraux, who had been stationed at Wake Island and Commander Thison, a Doctor.
- Q: Were protests lodged with the Japanese commander regarding conditions which you have described?
- A: Yes, but the protests did no good.
- Q: Do you remember the names of any of the Enlisted Men who were at this camp with you?
- A: A Sergeant Marion L. Wynn of 4475 Saratoga Avenue, San Diego, California, and Sgt. Fred Beese, Modale, Iowa were in this camp with me.
- Q: Do you have anything further to add to the above?
- A: No.
- Q: Do you have any knowledge of other mistreatment of American prisoners of war by the Japanese?
- A: Only what I have given you in sworn statement above.

/s/ Roger Dick Bamford, Sgt.
USMC

ROGER DICK BAMFORD, Sgt, USMC

STATE OF NEBRASKA)
(SS
COUNTY OF BUFFALO)

I, Roger Dick Bamford, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Roger Dick Bamford, Sgt. USMC
ROGER DICK BAMFORD, Sgt. USMC

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 5th day of March 1946.

/s/ Irene Tauson
Co. Clerk, Buffalo Co.

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Charles H. Phares, Special Agent, SIC, 75C, certify that Roger Dick Bamford personally appeared before me on 15 February 1946 and testified concerning War Crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

Omaha, Nebraska
Mar. 5, 1946

/s/ Chas. H. Phares
CHAS. H. PHARES, S/Agt, SIC, 75C.

RESTRICTED

Doc 8004 B

周世宗... 卷八... 一六二番然

問... 了... 戰事...

卷八... 九四... 卷八...

問

平... 卷八... 卷八... 卷八...

問... 卷八... 卷八... 卷八...

卷一... 卷一... 卷一... 卷一...

問... 卷八... 卷八... 卷八...

答... 卷八... 卷八... 卷八...

~~No. 2004~~

日本より送られたる服装品目録
同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

答、日本より送られたる服装品目録
同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

答、日本より送られたる服装品目録
同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

答、日本より送られたる服装品目録
同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

答、日本より送られたる服装品目録
同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

同、日本より送られたる服装品目録
同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

答、日本より送られたる服装品目録
同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

No. 2004
答、日本より送られたる服装品目録
同、日本より送られたる服装品目録

※

8004 問 米国人俘虜ニ対シテ医療設備ハ了ラシカ
答 医療設備ハ全然了ラズ云フ。我々が此ノ收容

所ニ居間ニ約三四人ノ俘虜ガ栄養失調脚
氣、赤痢ト云フ事云フ

問 米国人俘虜ノ中ニ医者が居ラカ

答 予々判 断ト云フノ事カニ毎單少尉此收容

所ニ居テ我々ノ屬ト出来ル文々ノコトヲ云フ事云フ。

問 便所ノ設備ハ了ラシカ

答 四人用ノ便所ヲ一ツアツキテ、ソノ收容所ニ約四五

百人ニ居ラマシカラ、便所ハ然々ノ需要ニ対シ非常
ニ不足ナシタ。日本人ノ便所ヲ清潔ニスルタメノ有田初
便ト云フ事云フ。

問 了ラズト云ベクノ様ナ状態ニ対シテ俘虜收容所長

ニ抗議ヲ申込マシカカ

答 ハイ抗議ニシテが効果ハ了ラズ云フ事云フ

110.3

Ex. # 1912

Doc. No. 8218*

Page 1

C O N F I D E N T I A L

WAR CRIMES OFFICE
Judge Advocate General's Department --- War Department
United States of America

* * * * *

In the matter of the deaths of * Perpetuation of the testimony of
American prisoners of war at * James Alexander Gilbert, Pfc,
Mukden, Manchuria, from c/a 11 * 6983531.
November 1942 to c/a 30 August *
1945.

* * * * *

Taken at: Rhoads General Hospital, Utica,
New York.

Date: 9 November 1945.

In the Presence of: Norman W. Harris, Agent, 1251st SCU,
Foreign Positive Intelligence Section,
Security & Intelligence Division, Head-
quarters, Second Service Command, 1270
Sixth Avenue, New York, New York.

Reporter: Norman W. Harris, Agent.

Questions by: Norman W. Harris, Agent.

Q State your name, grade, serial number, and permanent home
address.

A My name is James Alexander Gilbert. I am a Pfc; my serial
number is 6983531. My permanent home address is RFD #1,
Ellicott Road, Alban, New York.

Q State the date and place of your birth, and your civilian
occupation.

A I was born on 4 July 1920 at Alban, New York. I was a
student before entering the Army.

Q What formal education have you had?

A I have completed two years and two months of pre-medical
school at the University of Buffalo, Buffalo, New York.

Q Have you recently returned to the United States from overseas?

A Yes; I returned to the United States on 1 October 1945 by
plane. I landed at Mitchel Field, Long Island.

Q Were you a prisoner of war?

A Yes.

C O N F I D E N T I A L

Q At what places were you held, and state the approximate dates.

A I was captured at Fort Hughes, P.I., on 6 May 1942. I was taken to Cabanatuan prison camp, where I was held until 5 October 1942. I was then taken to a prison camp at Mukden, Manchuria, where I was held from 11 November 1942 until my liberation by Russian forces on 30 August 1945.

Q Are you familiar with the circumstances surrounding the deaths of American prisoners of war at Mukden, Manchuria, from on or about 11 November 1942 to on or about 30 August 1945?

A Yes.

Q Describe what you know of your own knowledge concerning these conditions.

A I arrived, with a group of approximately 2000 Americans, at Mukden, Manchuria, on or about 11 November 1942. We were a labor force and were employed in factories in Mukden. We were barracked in brick buildings, forty-eight men to a room which measured approximately twenty by thirty feet. We slept on double-deck wood bunks. Although we had an American doctor, no medical supplies were available for men who suffered from pneumonia or other diseases, and we got so little food that many men died of starvation. Our diet for the entire time I was there consisted of maize and soy beans. I recall that about 250 American prisoners of war died during the first two months I was at Mukden. These men died either from starvation or dysentery. We were unable to do anything to save their lives. I remember the names of three men who died of dysentery; James Francis, G Btry, 59th Coast Artillery; Kenneth Carlson, Hq, 3rd Bn, 59th Coast Artillery; and Verrone D. Yancey, formerly of the G Btry, 59th Coast Artillery. During the time I was at this camp many men died of dysentery, malnutrition, or pneumonia, but I do not recall any of the names, and I do not know the total number of deaths.

Q Who was the Japanese officer in charge of this camp?

A Colonel Matsudo. He was about five feet, five inches tall, and heavy-set. The skin of his face was very wrinkled. He was lame in the right leg and wore horn-rimmed glasses.

Q Who was the senior American officer at this camp?

A Major Hankins, USA, formerly with the 59th Coast Artillery.

C O N F I D E N T I A L

- Q What sort of work did you do at this camp?
- A We worked in nearby factories. There was a machine factory, a steel mill, a tannery, a lumber mill, and a textile factory. I worked in the machine factory for a while, and later I worked in the steel mill. While I was working in the steel mill, I worked sixteen hours a day rolling steel. Because of this heavy work and the poor food, I lost over sixty pounds in weight during the time I was held at Mukden.
- Q What articles were manufactured at Mukden?
- A We made steel helmets for the Japanese Army, concrete reinforcing strips, railroad car wheels, airplane parts, and gears for large caliber guns.
- Q Who were some other American prisoners of war who were with you at Mukden?
- A There was Major Hankins; a medical officer, Captain Herbert Herbst, who was formerly with the 57th Philippine Scout Regiment, and there was S/Sgt Paul Lukas, formerly with the 17th Tank Ordnance Corps, now at Rhoads General Hospital. Then there was Sharkey Brown, formerly a Chief Water Tender in the Navy.

/s/ James Alexander Gilbert, 6983531
James Alexander Gilbert, Pfc, 6983531

State of New York)
) SS
County of Oneida)

I, James Alexander Gilbert, Pfc, 6983531, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ James Alexander Gilbert, 6983531
James Alexander Gilbert, Pfc, 6983531

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 14th day of November 1945.

/s/ Albert E. Parker
ALBERT E. PARKER, 2d Lt, MAC
Summary Court

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Norman W. Harris, Agent, 1251st SCU, FPI, SID, certify that James Alexander Gilbert, Pfc, ASN 6983531, personally appeared before me on 9 November 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

Place: 1270 Sixth Avenue,
New York, New York

Date: 20 November 1945

A TRUE COPY:

/s/ Harryman Dorsey
HARRYMAN DORSEY, Capt., JAGD

/s/ Norman W. Harris
Agent, 1251st SCU, Foreign Positive
Intelligence Section, Security &
Intelligence Division, Headquarters
Second Service Command, 1270 Sixth
Avenue, New York, New York

8'2/2

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT #

EX 1912

答 私 名前「近江守」と云ふ事「近江守」と云ふ事「近江守」と云ふ事。私、近江守と云ふ
 之を認識。栗番野（宗大丸、三三三）等アリマス。私、本籍（三三三）
 州、アル州、エリコト街、R.D.一號アリマス。

答 私一九四三年五月六日三比律賓諸島「オート」に「手捕」
 之。私、オート之「停虜」收容所「連」へ行カシ其前一九四三年十月二
 日「抑留」セシマシ。私、夫「抑留」所「連」に於テ「停虜」收容所「連」
 へ行カシ其前一九四三年十月十一日「一九四三年」月三十日「露西」軍兵
 之ヲ解放セシルマ「抑留」セシマシ。

答 私一九四三年十月十一日カ「我」之「某」頃「滿洲」奉天「約」二千人「米」人團
 体ト共ニ到着セシマシ。我々「一種」ノ「常」役隊アリマス。奉天ニ於
 テ「工場」ヲ使ハシマシ。我々「煉」瓦造「建物」ニ「収」容セシ幅「約」二六
 呎「奥行」約「三」呎、廣サ「三」四「尺」ノ「割」合「ヲ」入「レ」シマシ。我々「三」
 載「台」木製「寢」床「上」ニ「睡」眠「ヲ」取「リ」マシ。我々「二」人「米」人「医」師「ガ」
 多ク「ア」ガ「肺」炎「又」ハ「其」他「ノ」疾「患」ニ「依」リ「他」ノ「居」ル「人」達「ノ」
 用品「ノ」利用「ス」コト「ガ」お「ま」せ「テ」マシ。而「シ」テ「我」々「ノ」非「常」ニ「少」量「ノ」
 食物「ヲ」與「フ」コト「カ」ラ「ズ」シ「テ」多ク「ノ」人「達」ハ「餓」死「シ」マシ。
 我々「ガ」其「所」ニ「抑」留「セ」ラ「レ」タ「全」期間「中」ノ「食」事「ハ」玉「蜀」黍「ト」大豆「ガ」
 僅「ク」ニ「シ」マシ。私「ガ」奉「天」ニ「居」リ「マ」シ「最」初「ニ」五「月」間「約」二百「五」人「米」人
 前「依」リ「死」亡「シ」マシ。我々「彼」等「ノ」命「ヲ」救「フ」コト「ハ」何「ク」
 也「ト」思「フ」コト「ナ」ラ「ズ」。

答 我々「六」附近「ノ」諸「工」場「ニ」於「テ」働「ク」マシ。其「所」ハ「機」械「工」場、製鋼「工」場、製鉄「工」場、製木「工」場、及「ビ」織「物」
 工「場」ガ「有」リ「マ」シ。私「暫」ク「間」機「械」工「場」
 工「場」後「テ」製「鉄」工「場」ニ「働」クマシ。製「鉄」工「場」私「働」ク「居」リ「マ」シ「間」
 私「鋼」材「ヲ」運「搬」セ「ル」日「十」六「時」間「働」クマシ。此「ノ」過「激」
 弱「ナル」食物「ノ」為「メ」私「奉」天「ニ」抑留「セ」ラ「レ」タ「間」ニ「大」
 失「ヒ」マシ。如何「ナル」物品「ガ」奉「天」ニ「於」テ「製」成「セ」ラ「レ」タ「カ」。
 及「ビ」大「口」徑「砲」用「、」出「車」ヲ「送」リ「マ」シ。

答 我々「日」本「軍」用「鉄」砲「ニ」補強「用」鉄「線」鉄「道」車「輛」、飛「行」機「部」
 及「ビ」大「口」徑「砲」用「、」出「車」ヲ「送」リ「マ」シ。

E # 1913

Doc. No. 8206*

C O N F I D E N T I A L

Page 1

WAR DEPARTMENT

Judge Advocate General's Department

United States of America

IN THE MATTER OF THE DEATH OF NINETEEN)
AMERICAN PRISONERS OF WAR IN THE BOMBING)
OF AN AMMUNITION FACTORY AT MUKDEN,)
MANCHURIA.)

Deposition by
HERMAN HALL
Corporal ASN 13035003

Taken at : Letterman General Hospital
San Francisco, California
Date : 2 October 1945
In the Presence of : Edward D. Sykes
Agent, SIC, CG, MSC
Questions by : Edward D. Sykes
Agent, SIC, CG, MSC

Page One (1) of 4 pages

C O N F I D E N T I A L

- Q. What is your name, age, rank, serial number and permanent address?
- A. My name is Herman Hall, age 26, Corporal, ASI 13035003 and my permanent address is Democrat, Kentucky.
- Q. On what dates were you inducted, sent overseas, and returned from overseas?
- A. I enlisted 18 June 1941, went overseas 4 October 1941, returned 29 September 1945.
- Q. Were you ever a prisoner of war of any of the Axis powers?
- A. Yes.
- Q. State the organization with which you were serving at the time of your capture, and when, where and by whom you were taken into custody, or otherwise made a prisoner of war.
- A. Headquarters Squadron, 19th Bombardment Group, U.S. Army Air Force. I was captured 6 May 1942 by the Japanese at Corregidor.
- Q. Where were you kept and what were your movements while you were in such custody?
- A. Cabanatuan #3 from 6 June 1942 to October 1942, Hoten Camp, Mukden, Manchuria, November 1942 to August 1945.
- Q. Were you an eye-witness to any illegal conduct, either by way of omission or commission, the part of Axis nationals or soldiers which resulted in the death or serious injury of any American national?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Describe in detail the conduct which you believe to be illegal, giving particulars as to the nature thereof, the name and identification of the victim and of the accused.
- A. While I was stationed at Camp Hoten, Mukden, Manchuria, I, together with a large number of other Allied prisoners, was quartered in three barracks inside the prison compound. This prison compound and our barracks were located a distance about five hundred to six hundred yards from a large Japanese ammunition factory. The ammunition factory and our barracks were both camouflaged in the same manner and from the air would appear to be one large factory. There was no designation whatever on our prisoner of war camp distinguishing it from the factory or giving notice that it was a prisoner of war camp. On about the 7th of December, about

mid-day, a group of American B-29s came over and began to bomb the ammunition factory. At the time this bombing began I, together with the other prisoners, was in the barracks in the prison compound. The Japanese refused to allow us to come out of the barracks and take cover. However, they took cover in the fox-holes surrounding the prison compound. In a very short time one of the American bombers scored a direct hit on the ammunition factory and the whole factory "went up." After this happened the Japanese allowed us to come out of our barracks and lie flat on the parade ground in the prison compound. A moment after we had come out of the barracks a bomb from the American planes hit in the parade ground and caused the death of 19 men and seriously injured about 30 more men. Some of these injured men later lost arms and legs as a result of the bombing. One of the men who was killed was Alex Sable of the U.S. Air Force. The others names are unknown to me. After the bombing was over the injured men were taken to the dispensary and a Japanese came into the dispensary and requested the injured Americans to write letters to the commanding officer of the U.S. Air Force and request that the camp not be bombed again. I understand that several of the men wrote letters but that in the letters they requested that the commanding officer of the U.S. Air Force send over more planes and more often. I am quite positive that these letters were never posted by the Japanese.

- Q. Do you have, or know the location of, any physical evidence, such as photographs, relating to this incident?
- A. No.
- Q. Do you know the name of or can you identify any other eye-witnesses to this incident?
- A. Sgt. Billy D. Templeton, U.S. Army Air Force, 19th Group.
- Q. Does the testimony you have given herein cover all the pertinent details of this incident which you are able to remember?
- A. Yes.

/s/ HERMAN HALL
 HERMAN HALL
 Corporal ASI 13035003

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
 : SS
City and County of San Francisco :

I, HERMAN HALL, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of 4 pages, including this and the title page, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ HERMAN HALL
Herman Hall

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 5th day of October, 1945, at San Francisco, California.

/s/ HARRYMAN DORSEY
Harryman Dorsey
1st Lt, JAGD
Summary Court

STATE OF :
 : SS
County of :

I, _____, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions asked and answers given and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing _____ pages, including this and the title page, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence initialed each page of the deposition and affixed his signature thereto.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this _____ day of _____, 19____, at _____.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
 : SS
City and County of San Francisco :

I, EDWARD D. SYKES, certify that (name) HERMAN HALL, (Rank) Corporal, (4510 13025003), personally appeared before me on the 2 day of October, 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by (him) to the several questions set forth.

Place: San Francisco, California

/s/ EDWARD D. SYKES
Edward D. Sykes
Agent, SIC, CD, NSC

Date: 2 October 1945

Page 4 of 4 pages.

EXHIBIT

1913A

Doc 8206

田 田 氏 氏 A 氏 田 A 氏 氏 伍 長

私ハ一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ五月六日コレヒ
ドールヲ日本人ニ捕ヘラレマシタ。

一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ十一月カラ一九四五
年ノ昭和二十年ノ八月マデ滿洲國奉天收容所ニ居
リマシタ。

私ガ滿洲國奉天ノ奉天收容所ニ收容サレテキ
タ同私ハ他ノ多數ノ聯合囚側伴ト共ニ俘虜收容
所構内ノ三ツノ兵舎ノ中ニ收容サレマシタ。此ノ
俘虜收容所構内ト私達ノ居タ兵舎トハナル日本ノ
大塚薬工場カラ五百ヤード乃至六百ヤード位隣レ
テ居リマシタ。ソノ大塚薬工場モ私達ノ居タ兵舎モ
同シ様ナヤリ方テ擬裝サレテキマシタ。ノテ空カ
ラハ~~見~~ノ六工場ノ様ヲ見テ九ヤツタ。私達ノ
~~所~~ニ工場ト區別ナ~~ル~~十~~ハ~~俘虜
~~モ~~テ~~テ~~知~~ラ~~ヤ~~ル~~様ナ~~何~~ナル標
頃アメリカノ~~B 29~~ノ一編隊ガヤツテ來テ其ノ大塚薬工
場ヲ~~知~~シ始メマシタ此ノ煉製ガ始マツタ時私ハ

EXHIBIT

1913A

Doc 8206

田中 伍長

私ハ一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ五月六日コレヒ
ドール*デ日本人ニ捕ヘラレマシタ。

一九四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ十一月カラ一九四五
年ノ昭和二十年ノ八月マデ滿洲國奉天收容所ニ居
リマシタ。

私ガ滿洲國奉天*ノ奉天收容所ニ收容サレテキ
タ間私ハ他ノ多数ノ聯合國側俘虜ト共ニ俘虜收容
所構内ノ三ツノ兵舎ノ中ニ收容サレマシタ。此ノ
俘虜收容所構内ト私達ノ居タ兵舎トハセル日本ノ
大彈藥工場カラ五百ヤード乃至六百ヤード位離レ
テ居リマシタ。ソノ彈藥工場モ私達ノ居タ兵舎モ
同ジ様ナヤリ方テ擬裝サレテキマシタ。ノテ空カ
ラヘ~~テ~~ノ六工場ノ様ヲ見キル~~コト~~シタ。私達ノ
收容所~~内~~ニ工場ト區別~~ナ~~シタ。私達
知~~ラ~~ヤ~~ル~~様ナ~~ニ~~如何ナル標
識~~モ~~アリマ~~ゼ~~テ~~シ~~タ。私達ノ
頃アメリカノ~~B29~~ノ一編隊ガヤツテ來テ其ノ彈藥工
場ヲ知~~ル~~シ始メマシタ此ノ爆撃ガ始マツタ時私ハ

Doc

私達ガ兵舎カラ出ルヤイナヤ、アメリカノ飛行機
カラノ爆弾ノ一ツガ練兵所ニ命中シ十九人が死亡
シ三十數人が重傷ヲ受ケマシタ。爆弾ノ餌ニコレ等
ノ負傷シタ人々ノ中、知人カハ後ニナツテ手足ヲ失ヒ
ヒマシタ。

PLEASE RETURN TO ROOM 361

2.

8206

他ノ俘虜達ト共ニ俘虜收容所樞内ノ兵舎ノ中ニ居
リマシタ日本人ハ我々が兵舎カラ出テ避難スル事
ヲ許シマセンデシタ。然モ日本人ハ收容所樞内ノ
周囲ニアル塹壘ノ中ニ避難シマシタ。マモナクア
メリカノ爆撃機ハソノ引薬工場ニ直撃ヲ命中サ
セソシテ全工場ヲ爆破セシメマシタ。
此ノ爆撃ノ後日本人ハ私達ガ兵舎カラ出テ俘虜收
容所樞内ノ練兵所ノ上ニフセル事ヲ許シマシタ。

Cx # 1914

RESTRICTED
FOR THE WAR CRIMES OFFICE
Judge Advocate General's Department - War Department
United States of America

In the matter of the use of * Perpetuation of Testimony
American prisoners of war on * of Floyd Herman Comfort,
enemy military works and * Corporal, United States
operations by the Japanese at * Marine Corps, Serial No.
Shanghai, China between 1942 * 276883
and 1945. *

Taken at: Security Intelligence Corps Field Area
Office, Jackson, Mississippi

Date: 14 December 1945

In the Presence of: Jennings, Walter K., Special Agent,
Security Intelligence Corps.

Reporter: Jennings, Walter K.

Questions by: Jennings, Walter K.

Q State your name, rank, branch of service, serial number
and permanent home address.

A Floyd Herman Comfort, Corporal, United States Marine
Corps, Serial No. 276883, 204 Dewitt Street, Jackson, Miss.

Q State briefly your personal history.

A I was born 3 October 1921 at Clinton, Miss. and was
reared in Jackson, Miss. I completed the 10th grade
of school and then went to work, working at various
jobs for two or three years. In November 1939 I joined
the Marine Corps and in October 1941 I was sent with
the 1st Defense Battalion to Wake Island.

Q Have you recently been returned to the United States
from overseas?

A Yes, I returned to the United States from Japan in
October 1945.

Q Were you a prisoner of war?

A Yes.

Q At what places were you held and state the approximate dates?

A I was taken prisoner by the Japanese on 23 December 1941 on Wake Island. From Wake we were taken to near Shanghai, China to Woo Sung, a small village. I remained there until 5 or 6 December 1942, when I was moved to Kang Jon, which was just a little nearer Shanghai, and remained there until May 1945. Then we were taken to Pieng Tai near Peking, China and stayed there about a month. From there we were taken through Korea to Japan, to Hokodate Prison #3 on the island of Hokkaido, where on 16 September 1945 we were liberated by American forces.

Q Do you have any knowledge of the use of any American prisoners of war by the Japanese enemy military works or installations?

A Yes. All during the time I was at Woo Sung and Kang Jon working parties of our men were used constantly in work at a place called the Shanghai Garage, which was a sort of repair depot for all kinds of military vehicles and equipment. I worked there for over a year in the welding shop, where trucks etc were repaired. I was also, along with others, used in the polishing and shining of used artillery shell cases. In addition, I was also made to work digging air raid shelters.

Q Was this the exception or the rule at your prison camp?

A It was the rule.

Q Who was responsible for this use of prisoners of war doing military work?

A The Jap Commandant of the prison, I suppose. His name was Col. Otero.

Q Do you have any more information to give on this subject?

A No.

/s/ Floyd Herman Comfort
Floyd Herman Comfort, Corporal
United States Marine Corps

State of : Mississippi

County of : Hinds

I, Floyd Herman Comfort, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Floyd Herman Comfort
Floyd Herman Comfort, Corporal
United States Marine Corps

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 17th day of December 1945.

/s/ Robert L. Calhoun
ROBERT L. CALHOUN, 1st Lt., Inf.
O-1320504, Assistant Adjutant
Dist. 7, ASF, 4th SVC

C E R T I F I C A T E

"I, Walter K. Jennings, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps, Fourth Service Command, certify that Floyd Herman Comfort, Corporal, United States Marine Corps, Serial No. 276883, personally appeared before me on 14 December 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth."

Place: Jackson, Mississippi /s/ Walter K. Jennings
Walter K. Jennings
Special Agent, Security Intelligence
Date : 14 December 1945 Corps, Fourth Service Command

RESTRICTED

Doc 8312

FILE COPY RETURN TO ROOM 301

答、 「ミシシッピ」洲「ジャクソン」市「デウ
イト」通二〇四番地認識番號第二七六八八
三號、米國陸戰隊伍長「フロイド・ハイマン
・カムフォート」

XXXXXXXXXX

答、 私ハ一九四一年十二月二十三日「ウエイキ」
島デ日本人ニ依ツテ俘虜ニサレマシタ。「ウ
エイキ」カラ我々ハ中國ノ上海附近ノ一小村
吳淞ニツレラレテ行カレマシタ。私ハ一九四
二年十二月三日カ六日マデ其處ニ居リソレカ
ラ江灣ニ移サレマシタ。ソコハ上海ニ少シバ
カリ近イ所デアリ、ソコニ一九四五年五月マ
デ居リマシタ。

XXXXXXXXXX

問、 貴下ハ敵ノ軍事作業ヤ施設ニ日本人ガ米國人
俘虜ヲ使ツタコトニ付キ何カ知ツテ居ルコト
ガアリマスカ。

答、 ハイ、私ガ吳淞ト江灣ニ居タ全期間ヲ通ジテ
我々ノ作業場ハ上海「ガラード」ト云フ所デ

1.

Dec 8, 1932

絶エズ作業ニ使ハレマシタ。ソコハアラユル
車ノ軍用車軍用器具ノ一種ノ修理ヲデシタ。
私ハ貨物自動車ガ修理サレテキタ鑿持作業場
デ一ケ年尚以上用キマシタ。私ハ又他ノ人達
ト共ニ使用シタ他車ノ渠矣ラ感イタリ光ラセ
タリスルノニ使ハレマシタ。ソレニ加エテ私
ハ又防空操縦リモサセラレマシタ。

問、ソレハ貴下ノ居タ停務收容所ニ於ケル例外ノ
コトデアツタカ又ハ規則ダツタノデスカ、

答、規則ダツタノデス。

問、軍事作業ヲナス件島ノコノ使用ニ對シテハ誰
ガ責任者デシタカ、

答、日本人停務收容所長ダト思ヒマス。彼ノ名前
ハ「オデロ」大佐デシタ。

2.

Q. State your name, rank, serial number, permanent home address, and any other pertinent information concerning yourself.

A. [My name is Stephen Martin ZIVKO, Private First Class, U.S.M.C., Serial Number 275724.] I am a high school graduate and have served in the Marine Corps since October 1939. My permanent home address is 1952 South 59th Street, West Allis, Wisconsin.

Q. Were you ever imprisoned under improper conditions?

A. [At Fengti Prison Camp the barracks consisted of a large warehouse, subdivided into three sections containing approximately 350 men per section. No sleeping facilities were provided other than a straw mat upon the brick floor. No toilets nor washing facilities were available. For the approximate population of 1,000 men of the camp the only water supply was that provided by a single two-inch spigot. All bathing, washing of clothes, etc., depended upon this one spigot, which likewise provided all the water for the galley for the washing of dishes, etc. Latrines consisted of trenches.]

At Camp Hokadate #3 the barracks were vermin infested and extremely dirty. Conditions in the barracks were extremely crowded. The Japanese refused to issue any blankets and the men were required to sleep on the floor, the only protection being the one Red Cross blanket per man that they had brought with them.

Q. Did you see any prisoners of war being used on enemy military works or operations?

A. Yes. [At Kaingwan Prison Camp in China the men were required to assist in the construction of the Japanese rifle range, to handle gasoline and oil supplies of the Japanese Army, and to assist in the repair and maintenance of Japanese Army motor equipment. Further, they were required to build barricades around Japanese military go-downs.]

Q. Did you see any prisoners exposed to danger of gunfire, bombing, or other hazards of war?

A. [While Kaingwan Prison Camp was under the command of Colonel ODAHA of the Japanese Army, the prisoner working parties were not permitted to take cover during air raids until the raiding planes were directly overhead.]

Q. Did you witness the transportation of prisoners of war under improper conditions?

A. When the prisoners were moved by rail in China, as from Kaingwan to Fengti and from Fengti on through Korea enroute to Japan, they were loaded into the small Chinese box cars. These box cars were cut in half by barbed wire barricades, thus creating two sections in the car. The men were crowded in 25 to a section, in addition to their personal baggage, eating tubs, etc., and in addition to the latrine facilities located in each end of the car. Transportation from Shinono Soki, Japan, to Prison Camp Hokadate No. 3 was in regular Japanese passenger cars, into which the men were crowded approximately 125 per car.

I can recall nothing further concerning these incidents which would be of value to the War Crimes Office and I do not have any other information, favorable or unfavorable, which I consider of sufficient importance to report.

/s/ STEPHEN M. ZIVKO

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
: SS
County of Alameda :

I, Stephen Martin ZIVKO of lawful age,
being duly sworn, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of
my interrogation, consisting of one pages, and that all answers con-
tained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ STEPHEN M. ZIVKO

Subscribed and sworn to before me this Sixth day of
October, 1945, at Oakland, California.

/s/ THOMAS P. GUERIN
(Rank) Lt. USNR

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
: SS.
County of Alameda :

I, Thomas P. GUERIN certify that
(Name) Stephen Martin ZIVKO, (Rank) Pfc. U.S.N.C. (no) 275724,
personally appeared before me on the Sixth day of October, 1945,
and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate
transcription of the answers given by (him)(her) to the several questions
set forth.

Place: Oakland, California

Date: 6 October 1945

/s/ THOMAS P. GUERIN

Page 2 of 2 pages.

Doc 8136

証ノ名ハ「ステアフェン・マーティン・スイザコウ」ト云ヒ「アメリカ」海兵隊一等兵ヲ認觀標巻號ハ二七五七二四テアリマス。

× × × × × ×

「フェンテイ」停泊收容所ニ於テハ一軒ノ大キナ倉庫ガ收容所トナツテオリ、ソレソレ凡ソ三百五十人ヲ收容スル三箇所ニ分タレテオリマシタ。煉瓦ノ床ノ上ニ敷カレタ一枚ノ長布目以外ニハ、寝具トイツテハ荷モ支給サレテキマセンテシタ。便所モ洗面所モアリマセンテシタ。約一千人ノソノ收容所ノ人数ニ對シテラツカニ供給サレル水ハ、唯一ツノは二時程ノ程カラ出ル水ガアツタダケテシタ。水浴ヤ衣服ノ洗ヒ等ハ絶テコノ一箇ノ程ニ類リ、亦ソノ宿舎ニ食器洗ヒ用水モ、ソコカラ出ルノガ一切合切テシタ。便所ハ基場ガ使ハレマシタ。

× × × × × ×

中ニ於ケル「カイングアン」停泊收容所テハ、停泊日日本領ノ小銃制薬場ヲ手傳ヒ、日本軍ノガソリンヤ石油ノ補給作業ヲ行ヒ、又日本軍ノ自動車修裝場ノ修理保全ニ力ヲ供スヤウ要求サレ

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 8136

2.

マシタ。其ニ倍々進ハ日本ノ専用倉庫ノ周圍ニ新
建ヲ施ルルヲニ合セニシマシタ。

× × × × × ×

「カインダア」第一號倉庫ガ日本國軍ノ「カタ
ラ」大正ノ指針下ニアル同倉庫管理員ノ組織ニ依
リテモ、來日艦方頭ノ長上ヘテアルマテノ管理スル
コトヲ許サレマセンゾシタ。

× × × × × ×

Ex. # 1916

SYNOPSIS OF EVIDENCE

JAPAN

1. Prosecution Document No. 8006, the affidavit of Major Thomas H. Hewlett, sworn to 2 October 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts from this affidavit are now offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the brutal treatment of prisoners of war in Camp No. 17, Fukuoka, at which Major Hewlett was senior medical officer during his internment, and gives the following instances: -

- (A) Marine Corporal James G. Pavlokos was confined in the guardhouse in December, 1943, on a charge of theft, without food for a period of approximately 35 days, at the end of which period he died of starvation. Deponent examined the body and estimates that the weight of deceased had gone down from 170 pounds to 55 pounds at the time of death.
- (B) Private Noah C. Heard was executed in May, 1944, by bayonetting for the repeated offense of theft of food.
- (C) Corporal Walter Johnson was confined in the guardhouse in April, 1945, for talking to a Japanese civilian miner. He was permitted no food and was subjected to severe beatings day and night as a result of which he died. Deponent examined the body after death and saw many signs of severe beatings.
- (D) Private William H. Knight was confined in the guardhouse in May, 1945, for stealing a bun in the mess hall. He was subjected to repeated beatings and torture, and died after about fifteen days. Deponent was not permitted to examine the body but is of the opinion that the man died of starvation, possibly complicated by pneumonia.
- (E) Private Worldly was placed in the guardhouse in the spring of 1945 for having a small piece of zinc in his possession. After death, an examination of his body by deponent indicated that death was the result of beating. Men in the guardhouse were beaten with a 2" x 4" about the length of a baseball bat.
- (F) In March, 1944, two prisoners of war were placed in the guardhouse and forced to kneel for long periods of time on bamboo as a result of which they developed gangrene. It was necessary to amputate both feet of one prisoner, and three toes of the other.
- (G) Deponent was confined to the guardhouse for six days in October, 1944, for submitting a written complaint to the Japanese doctor concerning sick men who were forced to work in the mine.

(H) During two years in this camp the medical department was issued only sufficient Red Cross medicines to care for five hundred men for three months, although the camp reached the total population of 1730. Deponent performed 135 major operations without gloves and with inadequate instruments.

2. Prosecution Document No. 8022, the affidavit of 1st Lt. John H. Allen sworn to 30 December 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts therefrom are now offered in evidence. This affidavit is an eye-witness account of the execution by bayonetting of Pvt. Noah C. Heard, previously referred to in Prosecution Document No. 8006. Deponent witnessed the execution, which took place without trial, from the window of a nearby building. The Japanese guards formed a semi-circle around the prisoner who was dazed from repeated beatings, and bayoneted him as he sat on the ground.

3. Prosecution Document No. 8117, the affidavit of Fusilier William Johnson, sworn to 4 February 1946, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts from this document are now offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the brutal treatment of a prisoner of war at Sendai Camp No. 1B on 4 February 1945. The prisoner was in a very weak condition resulting from beriberi and malnutrition and asked to see the medical officer. Whereupon he was knocked down by a Japanese military guard and kicked in the stomach while lying on the ground. He died that evening.

4. Prosecution Document No. 8026, the sworn affidavit of Ian Douglas Norlands, dated 12 April 1946, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts therefrom are now offered in evidence. This affidavit describes conditions in prisoner of war camps at Moji and at Hakodate No. 1. At the Moji Hospital there were 130 prisoners and during the two months that deponent was a patient about fifty of these died, chiefly from lack of medical attention. At Hakodate Camp No. 1 deponent saw the killing of a Dutch prisoner who had been accused by the Japanese guards of theft. The Dutch prisoner was confined in the guardroom without food and every few hours he was taken from the cell and beaten by the guards with fists, sticks and belts. After a few days the prisoner died.

The deponent was severely beaten by the Japanese guards for refusing to order prisoners to perform work for which they were unfit.

The prisoners at this camp were employed in the Maroran Steel Works which produced steel for making gun barrels. Collective punishments were imposed on the prisoners for minor offenses by forcing the entire camp to stand on parade all night and then go to work the next morning.

5. Prosecution Document No. 2662, Part 23, the Report of the Japanese Central Investigation Committee relating to Prisoners of War, dated 9 January 1946, is offered in evidence. This report relates to the treatment of captured Allied airmen in the Eastern Military District of Japan. From this document which was written by the Japanese authorities themselves, it appears that Allied airmen were treated with great brutality. The report states at the bottom of page 2, as follows: -

- a. "The treatment of the airmen of the Allied Forces captured in the Eastern Region were divided into two categories. First, if they were suspected of violating military regulations, they were disposed of by courts-martial. Second, if they were acquitted, they were interned in the POW camps and treated as ordinary POW. However, before these steps were taken they at first were detained in the guardhouse of the Eastern Military Police Unit Headquarters as suspected violators of military regulations ... During the period of detention there were 17 deaths."

Additional incidents showing the brutal treatment of Allied airmen are set forth on pages 1 and 2 of the report, as follows: -

- a. On the night of May 25, 1945, 62 Allied airmen who were interned in the detention house of the Tokyo Army Prison as suspected violators of the military regulations were burned to death in the air raids.
- b. A seriously injured pilot of a B-29 which fell in Hiroshi Village in Chiba Prefecture received Kaishaku, that is, he was beheaded on May 26, 1945, on the orders of the Japanese captain of the patrol. The report adds that there is an indication that bayonetting of the body took place after death.

On page 27 of this document is set forth an additional report by the Japanese Investigation Committee dated 26 December 1945, relating to the treatment of captured Allied airmen in the Tokai or Eastern Sea Region. This report states (paragraph II, page 27):-

"From February 11, 1945, when the Tokai (T.H. Eastern Sea) Military District was established until the time of truce, the number of surviving airmen of Allied planes who descended within the District was 44. Of these, six men at the beginning were interned as prisoners of war since it was clear that they had attacked military objects; and the eleven men who later descended on May 14th were sent to courts-martial because they had conducted indiscriminate bombings and were deeply suspected of being major war criminals; 27 men who later descended after the latter part of May, were disposed of by military regulations without formal procedures of the courts martial due to the situation at that time. It was decided that these men were clearly guilty of inhuman and indiscriminate bombings."

6. Prosecution Document No. 2662, Part 24, the report of the Japanese Investigation Committee relating to Prisoners of War, dated 26 December 1945, is offered in evidence. This report relates to the treatment of Allied Air Force personnel in the Central Military District of Japan. The report states (paragraph 2, page 1): -

"Total number of the Allied Air Force Flight Personnel who were captured within the Central Military District by the Japanese Army was about forty-nine, of whom three were sent to Tokyo; about six died from injuries and sickness; two were put to death after trial by court-martial; and the rest, of about thirty-eight, were put to death without being court-martialed."

The report states (page 4) that the thirty-eight airmen were executed without trial due to the fact that the Japanese army personnel were too busy preparing defence operations against the intensified air raids and anticipated an invasion by U. S. forces and that the Judicial Department was too busy with cases of violation of military discipline.

7. Prosecution Document No. 2662, Part 27, the report of the Japanese Investigation Committee relating to Prisoners of War dated 27 March, 1946, is offered in evidence. This report confirms the statement in Prosecution Document No. 2662, Part 24, that of the forty-nine captured airmen two were executed by order of a court-martial and six died of injuries and illnesses, but indicates (page 5, annexed sheet No. 1) that the number of airmen who were otherwise executed was actually forty-one instead of thirty-eight. The report also states (paragraph 0, 1, 2 and 3, pages 27 and 28) that Lt. General Okida, Sanji, the Military Police Commandant, in June, 1945, issued a message to each Military District Police Headquarters advising them that if captured airmen could not be disposed of immediately by courts-martial perhaps other methods might unavoidably be used.

8. Prosecution Document No. 2662, Part 25, the report of the Japanese Investigation Committee dated 23 January 1946, relating to treatment of Allied Air Force Personnel in the Western District of Japan, is offered in evidence. This report states (paragraph 2, page 1):

"Of the Allied Air Force Flight Personnel captured by the Japanese Army within the Western Military District, about eight were put to death on the 20th of June, 1945 (Group I), another, approximately eight men, on the 12th of August in the same year (Group II), and another, approximately fifteen men, on the 15th of the same month in the same year (Group III), by personnel of the said Military District Headquarters."

9. Prosecution Document No. 8223, the affidavit of Yorio Ogiya, sworn to 8 February 1946, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts from this document are now offered in evidence. This affidavit relates to the execution of two United States airmen at Osaka on 18 July 1945. These are the same two airmen referred to in Evidentiary Document No. 2662, Part 24. The affidavit states that deponent acted as Witness Public Prosecutor at the court-martial of the two airmen and asked for the death penalty. In answer to the question as to what questions were asked of the airmen at the trial, the deponent stated (at the top of page 4):

"Q. What were the questions asked and what answers were given?

"A. The questions asked were as follows: -

1. What unit they belonged and duties, name, rank, age, schooling, profession.

2. Places they bombed:

March 9, 1945, Tokyo - Incendiary bomb from Saipan.

March 14, 1945, bombed Osaka.

March 17, 1945, bombed Kobe.

3. Radar explanation. Nelson was asked to explain American radar system. Nelson stated that he admitted the fact that he bombed Japan, but he only obeyed his higher officers' orders.

"Q. What was the verdict of the Military Discipline Conference?

"A. Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus were found guilty and sentenced to die by the firing squad."

10. Prosecution Document No. 8285, the affidavit of Staff Sgt. Marshall S. Shellhart, sworn to 7 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts from this document are now offered in evidence. This affidavit states that at Camp 5D, Kawasaki, the Japanese guards would beat the prisoners with sticks, clubs and steel rods until they were unconscious in many cases, and would then throw water on them to revive them and beat them into unconsciousness again. In many instances the prisoners were burned with small pieces of burning punk under the guise of giving medical care. The prisoners were also required to hold a bucket of water or a sack filled with beans with their arms outstretched until they dropped unconscious from fatigue.

11. Prosecution Document No. 8071, the affidavit of Spl. John B. Lippard, sworn to 2 October 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts from this document are now offered in evidence. This affidavit relates to conditions at Karioka Camp and confirms the fact that a common form of punishment involved placing pieces of smoldering punk upon the wrist, stomach, or

neck of the prisoners. A guard would stand over the prisoner and beat him if he flinched or collapsed. Deponent was burned in this manner and then beaten.

12. Prosecution Document No. 8263, the affidavit of Gunner John B. Mullins, sworn to 3 November 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpt therefrom is now offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the torture of two prisoners of war at Yamani Camp, Shikoku, in March 1945. The affidavit states, on page 5:

"At Yamani Camp on the Jap Island of Shikoku, about March 1945, Gunner Basil Jones and Gunner Allan Orr, both of the 2/15 Fd. Regt., were accused of stealing sugar.

"They were taken away under the orders of the Jap WO known as 'Happy Jack' for questioning. They denied having stolen the sugar, and told the truth, that they had obtained it from their Jap guards in exchange for cigarettes from their Red Cross parcel.

"'Happy Jack' refused to believe this and in an effort to extract a confession of theft from them he spiked their hands to tables, using an ordinary type of office spike file. The spike was driven right through the hand several times near the knuckle joints. He then prised and lifted forcibly the finger nails of the men, using a paper knife as a lever."

The affidavit states that working conditions at this camp were very bad. The prisoners had to live on a small quantity of rice and barley and use their few cents a day work pay to buy any food they could. They were so starved they ate the entrails of dogs and when they could get it horse flesh. The work in the copper mine was twelve hours a day, with one day off each month.

13. Prosecution Document No. 8284, the affidavit of Pvt. Owen R. Kobert, sworn to 16 September 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the maltreatment of the prisoners at Camp No. 17, Omuta. Deponent was forced to kneel on bamboo poles in the guardhouse for five hours and was beaten with a club about six inches wide, 1½ inches thick and about as long as a baseball bat. An Australian had to have both legs amputated above the ankle because his feet froze when he was forced to kneel on bamboo poles.

Deponent saw prisoners beaten with steel rods about ½ inch thick and three or four feet long. Some of the prisoners were made to stand in a puddle of water and then were shocked unconscious by a 110 volt electric wire. Some prisoners caught pneumonia by having cold water thrown on them in the winter just as they started out for work.

14. Prosecution Document No. 8051, the affidavit of Cpl. A. L. Owens, sworn to 1 November 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the torture of a U. S. Marine Private at Camp No. 8, Hitashi in June, 1945. All the Japanese guards, numbering about ten, beat the prisoner with sticks, fists, and clubs off and on for about five hours. They throw water on him to revive him, and then beat him again. He was beaten so badly that the United States Army doctors at first did not expect him to live.

15. Prosecution Document No. 8142, the affidavit of Warrant Officer James Gatley, sworn to 18 May 1946, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit states that in December, 1944, at Kobe a prisoner was accused of selling a raincoat to a Japanese workman and was beaten by a Japanese lieutenant and twelve Japanese guards with fists, rifle butts, and wooden swords. Thereafter he was put in the guardroom with no clothing whatever and only one blanket. The average temperature at this time was 20 degrees below zero. The prisoner was beaten for half an hour every day for 19 days and eventually went mad and died.

16. Prosecution Document No. 8016, the affidavit of Lieutenant-C. E. Bucke, sworn to 24 January 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit relates to the maltreatment of prisoners of war at the mining camp of Miyuta. Officers as well as enlisted prisoners were compelled to work 13 hours a day in the fields, unloading sacks of rice and coal and emptying latrines. Officers were allowed 350 grams of rice and 190 grams of flour a day. During the first two weeks at the camp the officers lost an average of about six pounds in weight. All Japanese, military and civilian, were allowed to administer corporal punishment for any offense real or fancied. All Japanese, including boys of sixteen, had to be saluted at all times, even in the dark.

Medical arrangements were very bad. Deponent was of the opinion that the Japanese could have made things very much better if they had wanted to. The Japanese non-commissioned officers who had no knowledge of medicine could overrule the Dutch medical officers who were looking after the prisoners.

On 7 August 1945, about ninety to a hundred British officers were beaten with bamboo poles and sticks because the senior officer had attempted to see the camp commandant to make a complaint about a ten per cent reduction in the rice ration.

17. Prosecution Document No. 8077, affidavit of Captain A. L. Maher, sworn to 27 November 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit relates to the mistreatment of prisoners of war at Ofuna Camp. Deponent states (page 3): -

"We were compelled to line up in the courtyard and the Japanese guards would take turns beating us with wooden clubs about four feet long and one and one half inches square, which they held in both hands. These were not clubs selected at random, but were regular issue to the Japanese guards. While many of the beatings were due to the sadism of the Japanese guards, others were meted out by the camp commandant as well as his superior officer in the Japanese Navy *** Under the guise of physical reconditioning, Japanese meted out severe punishment and beating. We were forced to run for long periods of time and any prisoner lagging behind or dropping from the line from exhaustion was beaten with the two-handed wood clubs. We were forced to do 'push ups' and other violent exercises for long periods of time. Failure to complete these 'exercises' in a manner satisfactory to the Japanese guards would result in a beating."

18. Prosecution Document No. 8043, the affidavit of William R. Feibold, sworn to 26 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit confirms the mistreatment of prisoner of war at Ofuna Camp and gives several instances of mistreatment of captured airmen resulting in death.

19. Prosecution Document No. 8289, the affidavit of George J. McRae, sworn to 9 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit states that at Headquarters Camp, Osaka, following a B-29 air raid in April, 1945, evening roll call was called for the 500 or 600 prisoners and every man answering to the number "29" was taken out, beaten severely with bamboo sticks and forced to kneel on rock piles for about 1½ hours.

20. Prosecution Document No. 8234, the affidavit of Chief Boatsman's Mate Philip E. Sanders, USN, sworn to 21 September 1945, is offered for identification. Excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit describes conditions existing at the Osaka Main Camp at Honcho, and confirms the previous affidavit as to the B-29 beatings.

The prisoners at this camp were compelled to work in various Osaka steel plants making parts for tanks, trucks and ships, and also as stevedores they loaded and unloaded ammunition, tank parts, plane parts, rifles and other military equipment. The camp was within a few blocks of warehouses, ferries and piers at which men of war frequently were tied up. The camp was not marked and was wiped out with the surrounding area in a B-29 raid in June 1945.

The affidavit states that beatings were a very common procedure. Deponent was severely beaten at least twenty-five times during his stay at this camp. Over 95 per cent of the prisoners received a severe beating at one time or another. About twenty-five or thirty prisoners had their ear drums broken by blows on the head.

The affidavit states (pages 6, 7 and 8): -

- a. "Other favorite punishments used by the Japanese were restrictions on the amount of food a man could have, including completely cutting off his food for one or two days, cutting out the food of the whole barracks for the offense of one man, forcing a man to stand with a bucket of sand over his head with his arms stiff, forcing a man to kneel on the cobblestones, which were very sharp, for a period of two or three hours, or putting a man in a water tank, which served the camp with fire water, for the night. The tank was about five feet deep and this punishment was administered even in cold weather. At least two or three men in the camp were hit daily with swords in scabbards, rifles, sticks or any other weapon handy at that time. ***

The average number of men in our camp was between 650 and 700 men. Of these, about 120 or more men died in the 2½ years we were interned at Honcho. *** Most of the deaths occurred from pneumonia, beriberi or dysentery.

About 15 of the deaths in the camp were due, I believe, to forcing the men to work while sick and while giving them no medical attention."

- b. "The Japanese provided us with practically no medicine or medical or surgical facilities while we were in camp. Although we had experienced men to treat our sick and wounded, we had no facilities they could use. In March 1943 we received 40 cases of medicine and medical supplies from the Red Cross. These were supposed to serve the 22 camps in the Osaka area. However, the Japanese refused to allow anything more than a small trickle of these supplies to be delivered to the other Osaka camps. At the time the camp was wiped out on 1 June 1945, we still had about 90 per cent of these medical supplies on hand, although they could have been used very well to save the lives of men and prevent their suffering in the other Osaka camps."

21. Prosecution Document No. 8197, the affidavit of Pvt. H. H. Pauley, sworn to 6 October 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts therefrom are now offered in evidence. This affidavit states that at Kobe Camp No. 3 there were about sixty deaths the first winter, most of which were due to lack of medical care and malnutrition.

22. Prosecution Document No. 8074, the affidavit of Sgt. W. R. Linderfelt, sworn to 4 October 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts therefrom are now offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the excessive and illegal punishment inflicted for minor infractions of the rules upon prisoners of war at Yokkaichi Camp. Deponent states (page 1):-

"At three separate times I witnessed prisoners (five in all) who were strung upon ladders, hands tied to upper rungs so that their feet could not touch the ground. They were made to remain in that position from three to four hours at a time for several days. Sometimes weights were placed on their feet. When in that position they were beaten with sticks, belts and fists. Generally these beatings produced open cuts on their bodies into which guards threw salt. During this treatment the prisoners were given no food. Three of this group of five men were given this punishment for having stolen food and the other two for trying to get out of the barracks building during air raids. This punishment was so severe that the men begged the Japanese guards to kill them."

23. Prosecution Document No. 8291, the affidavit of Sgt. Frank E. Rick sworn to 8 October 1945, is offered for identification. The marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit describes a case of mass punishment at Hirohata Camp in May, 1945. Affiant states that as a result of the theft of a quantity of food all the prisoners were compelled to remain kneeling for approximately six hours. At the end of that time nine prisoners confessed to the theft and were thereupon beaten by the camp staff with baseball bats, clubs, rope and fire hose for about four and one-half hours. When one of the prisoners became unconscious he would be revived and then beaten again.

In another case described in the affidavit a prisoner who inadvertently failed to salute a Japanese guard was given the water cure for about an hour and then beaten into unconsciousness.

24. Prosecution Document No. 8078, the affidavit of Staff Sergeant William Hehenly, sworn to 12 March 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit states that at Camp No. 3, Fukuoka, one prisoner stole three fish and as a result all the prisoners in the camp were denied food during two meals. Not only the culprit, but all the other men on his detail were severely beaten.

Another prisoner stole a Japanese shirt, and as a punishment all the prisoners in his barracks were required to stand up all night and were then denied breakfast. Six other prisoners in the same barracks were severely beaten for not turning the culprit in. Such collective punishments were sanctioned by the commanding officer of the camp who was always present at the time. Protests were made about these collective punishments, but nothing was ever done.

25. Prosecution Document No. 8095, the affidavit of Sgt. Matthew D. Monk, sworn to the third day of October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit describes an instance of excessive and illegal punishment which occurred at Norima Camp near Nagoya. A prisoner named Wagner was driven by hunger to steal food from the camp galley on several occasions. After the first theft Wagner was

unable to return to his barracks in time to avoid discovery, and in order to escape punishment he attempted suicide. While in a weakened condition from loss of blood, Wagner suffered the following tortures at the hands of the Japanese camp personnel:

- a. The Japanese commanding officer, the camp NCO and the interpreter each kicked Wagner in the head four or five times as he lay on the ground.
- b. Wagner was tied hand and foot and seated in front of the guardhouse for a period of 72 hours, during which time he was permitted no food or water, and the Japanese camp personnel beat him with clubs.
- c. Thereafter Wagner was placed in the guardhouse on reduced rations. He was to receive a GI spoonful of rice and one half cup of tea three times a day for thirty days.
- d. When this period had almost elapsed, the Japanese announced that Wagner was dead. No examination of the body was permitted, but it was the opinion of the prisoners who saw Wagner placed in the casket that he was still alive and breathing at that time.

26. Prosecution Document No. 8171, the affidavit of Corporal Alexis J. Nott, sworn to 13 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit states that at Camp DL, Yokohama, prisoners were forced to work in shipyards building different types of vessels, including naval cruisers, aircraft carriers and tenders, and preparing many types of Japanese naval vessels. No bomb shelters other than open ditches were provided for the prisoners.

27. Prosecution Document No. 8118, affidavit of Lt. Col. Robin R. Petric, sworn to the 29th day of January 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit states that at Motoyama Camp the prisoners were compelled to work in a coal mine an average of twelve hours daily. Safety conditions were wholly inadequate and this led to a number of unnecessary injuries. The floor of the mine was often covered with water up to one foot in depth.

In the spring of 1943, deponent complained to the Red Cross representative about the long working hours under unsatisfactory conditions and the fact that the men had been given no day off during the entire month preceding. Shortly after this, deponent was beaten by the senior Japanese NCO on the pretext that he was responsible for a breach of some minor camp regulation. A month later when the Red Cross representative made another inspection, deponent was placed in solitary confinement for five days upon the same pretext in order that he should not be able to repeat his complaint to the Red Cross representative.

28. Prosecution Document No. 8266, the affidavit of Oliver E. G. Roberts, sworn to 30 August 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the illegal conditions of work in the camp at Orio.

The affidavit states that the prisoners were put to work in a coal mine where conditions were very bad. There was a lot of water in the mine and the roof was dangerous. On one occasion the roof fell in and caused two or three deaths. The men were forced to work ten hours a day and on one occasion went for twenty-one days without rest.

Affiant states (page 1):-

- a. "In the wintertime the cold was intense and we were given very thin blankets which did not keep us warm. In consequence, there were a number of cases of pneumonia and five or six Australians died from pneumonia.

American Red Cross parcels were sent to the camp but most of the contents were stolen by Japanese guards.

Throughout the whole of the time that we were in this camp medical supplies were very short and because of this a number of deaths took place.

One Japanese at this camp with a name like 'Degus' used to pick the lice off the men's clothes and make the men eat them."

29. Prosecution Document No. 8029, the affidavit of Capt. James F. Lawrence, sworn to 29 January 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the working conditions at Hosakura Camp. The prisoners arrived at the camp from Singapore wearing tropical clothes. No clothing was issued by the Japanese although the Japanese laborers were supplied with warm clothing. The prisoners performed hard manual labor in a mine. The rations were so inadequate that all prisoners suffered from malnutrition. In February, 1945, two prisoners a week died of pneumonia. About sixty prisoners in all died as a result of starvation and the inhuman treatment of the Japanese.

30. Prosecution Document No. 8082, the statement of John H. Marshall, dated 8 September 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the maltreatment of prisoners of war at Umeda Bunsho Camp, Osaka. Deponent states (page 1):-

- a. "At these work stations we were beaten, kicked, and generally mistreated by the civilian and army men that were in charge. This treatment and the lack of any medical supplies started the deaths of these men. Approximately four months after our arrival in Osaka, about 25 per cent of our men had died. This, in my opinion, was caused from starvation, exposure and diseases resulting from malnutrition and the brutal beatings that we suffered."

31. Prosecution Document No. 3065, the affidavit of Corporal Charles E. Maurer, sworn to 6 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit confirms the inhuman conditions at Umeda Bunsho camp, Osaka. Deponent states (page 1):-

"At Osaka there were originally 455 men; 120 died in the first four months from poor food and exposure. Our food was 570 grams of rice per man per day, which was inadequate for men working. If you did not work, this ration was reduced and in the hospital toward the end, patients were given only 300 grams of food per day. The Japanese gave us very little in the way of clothing."

32. Prosecution Document No. 3104, the affidavit of Alexander Meredith, sworn to 5 September 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit states that at Camp DL, Yokohama, in January, 1943, more than fifty per cent of the prisoners were ill with dysentery and malaria. Deponent states (paragraph 3, page 1):-

"We were employed in the Yokohama Mitsubishi yards as maintenance fitters. We left for work at 6:30 a.m., and got back to camp about 5:00 p.m. each day. Sick men were forced to work and in the first three months forty-five men died from pneumonia and malnutrition. With adequate medical supplies, proper food and clothing and medical treatment these men would not have died.

Food was at all times inadequate and in the summer of 1943 the meager rations were reduced by about one half. The result was that beriberi became prevalent and practically everyone suffered from malnutrition."

33. Prosecution Document No. 3203, affidavit of Lance Sergeant Arnold F. Caddy, sworn to 25 January 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit relates to conditions at Sandayu. The affidavit states that the Japanese medical officer persistently refused to allow the Allied doctor to give any medical attention to sick men. This resulted in the death of at least one prisoner.

Affiant states (page 3):-

"From the treatment noted out at all the camps, it was clear that the Japanese policy as carried out by various Camp Commanders and their subordinates was to keep POWs in a low state of health and morale by keeping them short of food and by severe treatment and humiliation."

34. Prosecution Document No. 3119, affidavit of Major Francis J. Murray, sworn to 23 January 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit relates to prisoner of war Branch Camp No. 1 at Hakodate. Affiant was a medical officer and was placed in charge of the camp hospital. In December 1943, one of the

prisoners complained of a pain in his left knee. Deponent diagnosed the illness as acute osteo-myelitis which required an immediate operation, and at once asked the camp commandant for permission to take the patient to a local factory hospital near the camp where full operating facilities were available. Such permission was refused. Deponent thereupon requested to have the necessary surgical instruments brought into camp so he could perform the operation himself, but this was also refused. As a result, the patient died a few days later. At this camp the Japanese medical personnel compelled several prisoners to sign hundreds of chits for medicines which had not been issued, and which the Japanese apparently sold or gave to their friends.

35. Prosecution Document No. 8116, the affidavit of Captain Allen Berkeley, sworn to 31 January 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit relates to conditions at Camp No. 4, Fukuoka. Affiant was the medical officer at this camp and states that there were plenty of medical supplies in the camp but the prisoners were never allowed sufficient for their needs. At least one death resulted.

36. Prosecution Document No. 8161, affidavit of John W. Vinny, sworn to 25 January 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit relates to the prison camp at Kawasaki. Affiant states (pages 2 and 3).-

- a. "Although there were ample American Red Cross supplies in the store, the medical sergeant Osama refused to supply any, although he was repeatedly requested so to do by our doctor. This applied also to surgical instruments, and the doctor was forced to get (from) the blacksmith whatever instruments he could."
- b. "Osama consistently refused medical treatment to sick men. About thirteen deaths occurred in three years, partly through his neglect, and but for the fact that the POWs were able to steal fruit and other food, many more have died from beriberi."

37. Prosecution Document No. 8107, the affidavit of Staff Sergeant Michael J. Robertson, sworn to 19 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit describes the maltreatment of airmen and refusal of medical aid. Affiant sailed out of a B-29 over metropolitan Tokyo, and after being beaten by a mob of Japanese men and women, was taken to the Kempeitai Headquarters in Tokyo for interrogation where he was beaten with a bamboo stick. At this time he was suffering from a broken leg and severe shrapnel wounds in both legs. No medical attention was given to him.

Affiant saw another U. S. pilot who was brought to the same cell in a semi-delirious condition and with marks of torture on his hands. No medical attention was given this pilot, and he died the same night.

38. Prosecution Document No. 8163, the affidavit of Sgt. Harry Slater, sworn to 12 October 1945, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. This affidavit confirms the refusal of medical aid to captured Allied airmen.

39. Prosecution Document No. 8349, the affidavit of Philip E. Sanders, CBM, USN, sworn to 12 April, 1946, is offered for identification. Marked excerpts therefrom are offered in evidence. Deponent states that in April and May, 1945, there were persistent rumors that in event America won the war the prisoners would all be killed. Deponent was told by a Japanese interpreter that if there were naval landings on Japan the prisoners would never see home. Prisoners were given rougher treatment every time there was an American air-raid.

No 1 / 96 Confidential Document # 8391

證據概要

一頁

目録

檢察文書第六。大正五年船和三年十月三日ニトシテ五斗
ト一トト Thomas H. Hewlett 陸軍少佐ノトシテ皇軍口述
書ヲ檢証スルニ提致ス之ニ其中ノ旨、所イテ適所、採存ニ証
據トシテ茲ニ提致ス之ニ此、皇軍口述書ハ福岡、才七号收存
所ノ傍屋ニ於テ残存ノ待廻ニ就キ陳述ニテ居リマス其收存所ニ於
テト一トト少佐ハ彼ガ監禁所トシテ井ノ上級軍醫將校アリシ
テ左記ノ實例ヲ示シテ居リマス

(A) 海兵伍長トシテハスガール・パヴロフ James G Pavlovsk / 一九四三
年船和八年五月ニ捕縛罪、嫌疑ヲ拘留所ニ監禁サレシヨ三五
日、期間中食物ヲ与ヘザリシヨ、期間終リニ飢餓
×死亡致シタ、証人ハ、身体ヲ檢査シ死亡者ノ体重ガ死
シ時ニ七〇ポンドカニ五五ポンドニ減衰ニテ居タト概算致シタ

(B) 兵卒、ア・ニ・ハド Noah C. Heard / 一九四四年船和九年
五月ニ食物捕縛罪、度重ナル罪科、又銃剣ニ死罪ヲ執行サレシタ

(C) ウォルター・ジョンソン Walter Johnson / 陸軍ハ日本民間人殺坑
採掘者ニシテ一九四三年船和三年四月ニ拘留所ニ監禁
サレシタ、彼ハ食事ヲトコトモ許サズ日夜其ノ酷ク殴打ヲ受ケ
シ結果死致シタ、証人ハ死後、身体ヲ檢査シ烈ク殴打
ノ澤山ノ痕ヲ見タガアリマス

(D) 兵卒、ウィリアム・ニ・クニグット William N. Knight / 八倉倉庫ニ甘ハ
シタ一九四五年船和三年五月ニ拘留所ニ監禁サレシタ、
彼ハ暴徒ニ殴打ヲ受ケ、約十五日ニ死亡致シタ

Doc 8391

証人ハソノ身作ヲ調ヒ此等ヲ証シテ之ヲ示シテ之ガハ信據トシテ之ハ
肺炎ヲ伴フタリ飢餓ニ死シタリト言フ證人アリタリ

(三) 兵卒ノ一ガリー / Worldly / 兵船、小片ヲ所有シテ其ガ身元
五年船中ニ在リ春ニ捕留所ニ入リテ之ガ死後證人ハ
身作ヲ検査シテ彼ノ死後打ノ結果アリト言フ事ガ判リ之ガ
捕留所内ニ後遺書ハ三行又四行幅ノ大ナルモノト長短
モ打撃打テ居タリタリタリ

(四) 兵船船中ニ在リ三月ニ在リ後遺書ハ捕留所ニ監禁中ニ在リ上ニ
長ク同無理ニ被テ之ガ結果ハ命令ガ壞損ニ罹リ之ガ
之ガ人後遺書ハ兩行ニ在リ後遺書ニ在リ打テ切斷セザレバ
モモ

(五) 証人ハ日本人医者ニ鎌山ヲ強制的ニ常備中ニ在リ之ガ報告ニ
其言書ヲ提出シタリ之ガ四年船中十九年ノ月ニ在リ捕留所
ニ監禁中ニ在リ

(六) 此收容所ニ在リ三個月間ニ醫務部ハ赤十字隊員ニ在リ之ガ
三月間配給シタリ之ガ不潔ノ收容所員ハ一千七百餘人ノ
意ニテ証人ハ手袋ヲ用テ之ガ不潔ノ器具ニ使用シテ百
五面大手術ニ行テ

(七) 檢察書目録本ノ二二号一九四年十一月十日血証書ニ在リ之ガ
中尉 / 佐佐木 John H. ALLEN / (供述書) 檢証人ガ提出シタリ
今後ニ證據トシ標記シタルノ枚数を提出スル此(供述書)兵
卒ノ一ノ(一) / NOAH C. HEARD / 之ガ鏡筒ノ以テ之ガ
刑(自撃者)供述ニ在リ是ニ檢察書目録本ノ二二号ニ在リ之ガ
此所モ在リ

102

Doc 8391

NO4

五、檢査之書目第一六六三部、第三三部、一九四六年、昭和二十年一月九日附、停機二關之日本中央諒問委員會報告書目、證據上之提出致之云。

二、報告書目、日本、東部軍區ニ於テ、聯合軍飛行機搭乗員停機、取扱二關之至、下リ之云。日本官憲自体ニ依リテ書カシク、文書目、聯合軍搭乗員等が非常中ニ殊急ニテ以テ取扱ハテ事ガ明白トシテ居リ之云。報告書目、二頁、下段ニテ、如ク述ベテ居リ之云。

(A) 東部地區内ニ於テ捕獲セラルル聯合軍飛行機搭乗員ハ軍律違反、疑ハル上キ、軍法會議ニ依リ處分セラルル力又ハ不起訴トシテ停機收容所ニ收容シ一般停機場トシテ取扱ヲ受ケルカ、二途ニ區分セラルル上ト云。且其以前ニ於テ先少軍律違反及容疑者トシテ東部軍區兵隊司令部、留置場ニ留置セラルリタリ……留置期間ニ於テ死七五名ヲ出セリ。

聯合軍停機ニ對シテ殊急ニ取扱ヲ示テ附加的事件ハ、報告書目、一三頁ニテ、如ク說明セテ居リ之云。

(A) 東京陸軍刑務所内、監禁場ニ於テ一九四五年、昭和二十年五月二十五日夜、空襲ニ依リ收容中軍律違反容疑者十二名、焼死シタル件。

(B) 一九四五年、昭和二十年五月二十六日千葉県日立村ニ墜落セルB29、搭乗員重傷者一名ヲ巡回中、日本大佐、命ニ依リ介錯即チ斬首シタル件。尚報告書目ニ於テ其ノ屍體ニ對シテ銃劍ニテ刺突セル形跡ノ事ヲ附

doc 837/

NO 5

加三居り。

此文書、二三頁八日奉、東海軍區ニ於テ、聯合軍飛行機搭乗員停虜、取扱ニ関スル一九四五年、昭和二十年十二月二十六日附、日本諮問委員会、報告ガ記載セリ、長ク又、二報出書目、(二七頁第三節ニ於テ)次、如ク述ベテ居リマス。

昭和二十年二月十一日東海軍區司令部開設以來終戦迄三管区内ニ降下セル聯合軍飛行機搭乗員生存者、六十四名ニシテ、内初期、六名、軍李目標ヲ攻撃セルト明白ナルヲ以テ停虜トシテ收容シ、次、五月十四日降下セル十一名、無差別爆撃ヲシ、戦時重罪犯人タル疑ハ濃厚ナリシヲ以テ軍法會議ニ付、五月下旬以降、降下セル二十七名、非人道的無差別爆撃、事實明瞭ナリトシ、當時、状況下軍法會議、正式手續ヲ省略シ、軍律ニ據リテ之ヲ處断セリ。

本檔案圖書類二六六二部第二十四部、即チ一九四五年十二月二十六日停虜ニ関スル日本人調査委員会、記録下ル、之ヲ證據トシテ提出スル、記録、日本軍中部地區ニ於テ、連合軍航空隊員、取扱ニ関スル下ル、記録、次、如ク述下。(二頁第三節)

日本軍ニ依リ、中部軍管区内ニ於テ、日本陸軍ニ捕令シ、連合軍航空隊員ノ總數ハ約四十九名アリ、之、中三名ハ東京ニ護送サレ、約六名ハ外傷及病氣ガ元トナリテ死セリ、二名ハ軍法會議ニ判決、後死

一ツビノ下葉^シカ^シ餘^シ言^シ一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ
 一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ
 一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ

ノリカ

No 8

一ツビノ下葉^シカ^シ餘^シ言^シ一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ
 一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ
 一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ

一ツビノ下葉^シカ^シ餘^シ言^シ一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ
 一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ
 一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ

8391

一ツビノ下葉^シカ^シ餘^シ言^シ一^ツ會^ノ所^ニ本^ノ時^ノ隨^テ入^リ本^ノ日^ノ得^ル日^ノ三^ノ十^ノ日^ノ

Doc 8391

No 17

提出廿七人。此記錄在左，如久遠之王木儿（一頁第二節）
 西部軍官團二於于日本軍三捕（二）九連合團
 空軍飛行士、中子約八名、一九四五年六月二十日死
 二至二〇〇〇〇（第一組）、他、約八名、同年八月十二
 日（第二組）、八〇三他、約十五名、同年四月、十五日
 （第三組）、前空軍官團司令部職員三條、死
 二至二〇〇〇〇。

以下亦見

Doc 8391

208

九. 檢察圖書類第八二三三号、一九四五年二月八日宣讀された
 「ヨリオオギア」口供者ヲ檢査、爲ニ提訴、訊之ニ。此ノ答
 類カラ印ヲ附ケテ國勢ノ振幸ヲ只今オモテ「ニテ提訴
 被シタ。此ノ口供者ハ一九四五年七月十日大阪ニ於ケルニ、
 合衆國飛行兵ノ処刑ニ関スルモノナリ。彼等ハ
 書証第三六六号第三四部ニ言及サレテ居ルニ人ト同
 シ飛行兵デナリ。此ノ口供者ニ依リテ口供者自身ガ
 此ノ人ノ飛行兵ノ軍法會議ニ於テ、護人役ヲ務メ、
 死刑ヲ求刑シタノデアリヌ。裁判ノ際、如何ナル訊問ヲ
 此ノ人ノ飛行兵ニシタカト、同ニ科シ、口供者ハ次ノ如ク
 答ヘタシ。 (口供者七頁参照)

同、如何ナル問ガ發セラレ、又如何ナル答ガ与ヘラレタカ。
 答、發セラレタ質問ハ次ノ如シ。

1. 如何ナル部隊ニ彼等ハ所属シテ居タカ。又、彼等
 姓名、階級、年齢、學業、職業。
2. 彼等、爆撃セル場所
 一九四五年三月九日 サイパンヨリ東京焼夷彈爆撃
 一九四五年三月十四日 大阪爆撃
 一九四五年三月十七日 神戸爆撃
3. レイダーノ説明。「ネルソン」ハアメリカノ「レーダー」
 装置ヲ説明スルコトヲ求メラレタカ。ネルソンハ、彼ガ
 日本ヲ爆撃シタト云フ事實ヲ認メル。但、單ニ
 彼ノ上官、命令ニ服シタニ思ヒ、ト云フ事ヲ云ツタ。

Doc 8391

No 9

向、軍律會議、判決ハドウデアツカ。

答、ネルソン少尉 及びアウガナス軍曹ハ有罪ナル事ガ以ト
ナリ有射ニシテ銃殺ヲ宣告サレタ。

一、検査圖書類第八八五号、一九四五年十月七日ニ宣整サレタ
サレタ本部附軍曹、マーシャル、シエルハート、口供者ヲ檢
査、爲ニ提出シマス。此、書類カラ印ヲ附ケテ箇所
ノ振替ヲ只今書類トシテ提出シマス此、口供者ニ
依レ、川崎ニ於ケル修磨收容所五Dデハ、日下人衛兵
ハ修磨ヲ意識不明ニ陥ル迄、棒切シヤ棍棒ヲ鐵棒ヲ
殴打シ、ソレヲ又水ヲ掛ケテ其數ニセ、再ビ意識不明ニナル
迄、殴打スル程トコトガ頻數ニ行ハレタ。又屢々修磨ハ
医療台座ヲ加ヘルト嘔ヲツイテ、火ヲ附ケタ小サナホクヲ
焼カシマシタ。修磨ハ又水一杯入ツクバケツヤ、豆ヲ一杯入
タ代ヲ腹擦シ切ツテ意識不明ニナル迄腕ヲ伸ビテ持
ツテ居ルコトヲ要ホサシマシタ。

十、検査圖書類第八〇三号、一九四五年十月二日ニ宣整サレタ
ジョズ B. リバード伍長、口供者ヲ檢査、爲ニ提出シマス。
此、口供者カラ印ヲ附ケテ箇所ノ振替ヲ只今書類トシテ
提出シマス。

此、口供者ハ上^{カミ}部^{カミ}ノ^{カミ}書^{カミ}記^{カミ}ノ修磨收容所、状態ニ關係ス
ルモノ、常ニ行フ刑罰、一ツハ修磨ノ各^{カミ}部^{カミ}ノ^{カミ}腹^{カミ}部^{カミ}ノ^{カミ}部^{カミ}
ニ^{カミ}煙^{カミ}ル^{カミ}ホ^{カミ}ク^{カミ}ヲ^{カミ}シ^{カミ}テ^{カミ}ル^{カミ}ヲ^{カミ}ア^{カミ}ツ^{カミ}ト^{カミ}亦^{カミ}ク^{カミ}受^{カミ}ク^{カミ}確^{カミ}認^{カミ}ス^{カミ}ル^{カミ}ノ
デアリマス。一衛兵ハ常ニ修磨、作^{カミ}ル^{カミ}ニ^{カミ}乘^{カミ}リ、若^{カミ}シ^{カミ}彼^{カミ}ガ^{カミ}身^{カミ}
ヲ^{カミ}倒^{カミ}レ^{カミ}タ^{カミ}ルト^{カミ}殴^{カミ}打^{カミ}ス^{カミ}ル^{カミ}ガ^{カミ}ア^{カミ}リ^{カミ}マ^{カミ}シ^{カミ}タ。口^{カミ}供^{カミ}者^{カミ}ハ^{カミ}此^{カミ}ノ

Doc 8391

方河子、火傷ヲ受テ、此後、殴打サレタリ。

十二 檢察官書類第八二六三号、一九四五年十一月三日、東京府十
少砲兵、ジョージ・B・マリクス、に使者ヲ檢護、爲ニ提出シ
タス。此、口供者、一九四五、三月、四國、ヤマニ修養所ニ於テ
ニ於ケル三人、修養所同ニ就テ、陳述シテ居リタス。此、口
供者、一、亦五回ニ及リ、如ク述ベテ居リタス。

一九四五年三月頃、日本四國島、ヤマニ收容所ニ於テ、
野戰部隊砲手バズイル・ジョーンズ同シク砲手アラノオ、
兩名ハ砂糖ヲ盗ミ、ガトテ、咎メラシク。

彼等ハハビ・ジャック、テ通ツルキル日本人准士官「オ」
ノ命令ヲ訊問、爲ニ運シ去ラシク。彼等ハ砂糖ヲ盗ミ、
多ク盗定シク。ソシテ彼等、花十字カヲ束々小包中、
煙草ト交換ニ日本人守衛カヲ手ニ入シタモ、ガトテ受テ
語ツク。

ハビ・ジャックハコレヲ信ジ、オトモセズ、トウシテモ彼等が盗ミ
ヲシタト白状セヨウトシテ、普通ノ事務用、釘、紐、
(領收證トドテ、実キ花十字)ヲ使ツテ、彼等、手ヲ厚子ニ打テ
ツケタ。釘ハ數回ニ亘リ、指肉部近ク、砂ヲ手ヲ打テ板イタ。
ソレカラ彼等、切テ手ヲ握、代リニテ、指、爪ヲコテ、爪ヲ
手握ニハカシク。

No 10

以上、如ク述ベテ居リタス。亦、此、口供者ニ依リ、此、修養
收容所ニ於ケル労働條件ハ、非常ニ悪カク、テ下リタス。

Doc 8391

俵屋ハ三ツ少量ノ米ト大煮ヲ慕テ不ハ三ツ文一。鉄力ニ
過ギテ自害便ヲ、何カ食物ヲ買フニ使ハズナリト云フ。
彼等ハ命リニ飢ニテモ、大ノ肉臓ヲ食ヘテ入ル。
馬肉ヲモ食フナリマシク。銅山ニテ労働ハ一日十三時
ヲ毎月一日一休ニガアツタガシク。

十三 検察官手続第八二八四号、一九四五年九月十六日受審

サレバ才三ノ尺、ニトト兵卒、口供者ヲ検査、爲ニ
提出羽シマス。又ニルシマツタテ被共等ヲ証據トシテ提
出シマス。此ノ口供者ハ大田田音助、第十七俵屋
收容所ノ虐待ヲ陳述スルモノアリマス。口供者ハ衛
兵所ニ立付居ル竹柵、ニ坐ル身ヲ浴要セシ、幅約
六吋、厚十一吋半、長六脚、球用バット位、棍棒ヲ殴
サレタシク、一オーストラリア人ハ竹柵、ニ坐ル身ヲ強要セシ
ク、脚ニ傷ヲ受ケタガ爲、両脚共蹠、上テ切斷
セバハラカツタガアリマス。

口供者ハ俵屋ガ直径約四合、吋長廿約三呎カ四呎、
鉄棒ヲ殴打サレタ目撃シマス。或ハ俵屋ニ達、如キハ
水溜、中ニ立タセラシク後、一。ボルトニ電流ヲ通シテ
意識ヲ失ハセラシマス。又或ハ俵屋ニ達、如キハ冬作
ニ出発セトスル時ニ冷水ヲ浴セラシク、肺炎ニ罹リタ
ガアリマス。

No 11

Doc 839/

NO 12

十四 檢察團員數第六。五二五。一九五五。十月一日。宣稱。
 夕 A. L. オウエニ又任長、口依書ヲ檢護、爲一提出
 致之。リ、申之印ヲ附テ、檢護ヲ奉告シテ提出
 致之。此、口依書ハ一九五五、六月二七日(五立)
 第八條條收容隊下十廿一、合衆國海兵二等兵、
 橋岡、陳述、及之字下リ又、約十人、日本人衛兵全部、棒打
 下、拳棍棒ヲ以テ此、條條ヲ問獄的ニ約五時間ニ亘リ、
 殴打、致之。彼、氷ヲ掛ケテ、蘇生、又殴打、下リ、
 下リマシタ。余リニ下リ、殴打、下リ、合衆國軍連、
 最初彼、生存、意、末、七、下、思、下リ、不。

8391

十五 検査圖書類 第一 四卷 九四六年十月一日 宮田音筑 著
中尉、口供書ヲ検査シ、爲提書致之。其、中、印、附、夕、抜、辛、ヲ
書、函、ト、提、書、致、之、此、口供書、依、一、九、四、四、年、十、月、神、戸、下、住、房
ノ、日、本、人、職、三、一、一、ノ、一、ト、上、賞、ノ、事、然、左、ノ、一、日、本、人、中、尉、上
二、人、日、本、人、衛、兵、依、一、拳、ノ、鏡、台、鏡、及、木、劍、ヲ、改、打、セ、リ、
以、来、彼、一、枚、毛、布、以、一、編、之、纏、ル、衛、兵、所、以、拘、留、セ、リ、其、時、手、均
温、度、零、下、二、十、度、下、リ、之、九、日、間、此、住、房、ノ、毎、日、半、時、間、以、
改、打、セ、リ、其、結、果、精、神、呈、狀、ヲ、示、ス、死、之、致、セ、リ、

十六 検査圖書類 第二 卷 九四六年十月一日 宮田音筑 著
中尉、口供書ヲ検査シ、爲提書致之。其、中、印、附、夕、抜、辛、ヲ
書、函、ト、提、書、致、之、此、口供書、宮田音筑 著
住、房、收、容、所、於、此、住、房、住、持、ト、聯、名、シ、テ、一、日、三、時、間、將、枚
下、士、兵、ノ、間、以、毎、日、十、三、時、間、米、袋、石、炭、袋、荷、部、以、糞、尿、取、
リ、等、野、外、勞、働、ヲ、強、制、セ、リ、之、以、將、枚、達、二、日、三、六、日、ト、米、ト
九、〇、〇、〇、ト、糞、ヲ、受、テ、之、以、此、收、容、所、ノ、所、以、ノ、最、初
一、週、間、中、將、枚、達、ノ、平均、約、五、五、ト、体、重、減、少、ヲ、見、テ、
下、リ、之、軍、人、民、間、人、ノ、間、以、日、本、人、の、家、族、ヲ、部、ノ、死、セ、リ、
之、或、一、單、に、疑、之、住、房、ニ、体、刑、ヲ、加、セ、事、ヲ、許、可、セ、リ、
之、以、十、六、日、十、七、日、ノ、合、合、日、本、人、對、テ、如何、ニ、時、ノ、暗、闇、
中、於、テ、廿、八、日、敬、禮、セ、レ、リ、ト、カ、リ、テ、行、キ、ス

No 13

医療設備、甚然トイフ、之、口、供、者、日、本、人、の、一、意、志
其、の、是、在、リ、状、態、ヲ、改、良、ス、事、ヲ、求、ム、其、ノ、上、意、見、ヲ、有、リ、

以上之結果如下。

Doc. # 839/

八、檢査文書第二三三號。九四五年昭和二十一年十月十六日、少佐、下村、大佐、
William R. Leibold 十、宣誓口頭書、檢査、宣誓書、
其中、印、附、自、所、被、査、了、証、據、之、提、出、致、之、此、宣誓口頭書、
大阪收容所、於、此、停、房、在、行、確、認、之、上、層、飛、行、機、等、在、行、不、
至、之、多、數、件、之、記、述、手、序、に、ス。

九、檢査文書第二三九號。九四五年昭和二十一年十月、George N. McRae /
十、宣誓口頭書、檢査、自、提、出、致、之。其中、印、附、自、所、被、
査、了、証、據、之、提、出、致、之、此、宣誓口頭書、此、如、述、之、所、に、
大阪收容所本部、於、九四五年昭和二十一年、B-29 空襲後、之、
名、停、房、之、點、呼、取、り、元、番、號、之、各、々、有、之、皆、傳、書、之、竹、抄、
列、之、改、打、之、凡、一、時、間、半、六、間、種、重、ネ、り、出、石、上、ニ、世、理、ニ、
行、り、ス。

十、檢査文書第二四三號。九四五年昭和二十一年十月、米國海軍空軍
帆、兵、曹、長、の、Pvt. Philip E. Sadowski 十、宣誓
口頭書、檢査、自、提、出、致、之。其中、印、附、自、所、被、
査、了、証、據、之、提、出、致、之、此、宣誓口頭書、大阪本所、大阪
收容本部、於、此、狀、況、之、記、述、B-29 改、打、事、件、に、
對、し、宣誓口頭書、確、認、手、序、に、ス。

No 15

此收容所、在、房、之、方、方、大阪鐵工場、戰、車、貨、物、自、郵、車、船、部、
各、品、製、造、強、制、的、運、轉、せ、ら、れ、り、之、り、仲、仕、之、彈、藥、戰、車、部、
品、飛、行、機、部、品、火、銃、及、其、他、軍、需、品、種、々、荷、付、之、致、之、り、

Handwritten text at the top of the page, possibly a title or header.

No 16

Main body of handwritten text, consisting of several lines of dense script.

Handwritten numbers and characters at the bottom of the page, including '8391' and '8052'.

Doc 8391

收谷行... 谷... 計... 程... 谷... 凡... 計... 三... 國

日... 本... 之... 政... 收... 行... 匯... 票... 及... 其... 他... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之... 凡... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之...

五... 三... 三... 日... 教... 育... 部... 之... 令... 由... 該... 部... 呈... 請... 本... 行... 代理... 之... 凡... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之...

收... 入... 之... 總... 計... 表... 及... 其... 他... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之... 凡... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之...

二... 檢... 查... 及... 其... 他... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之... 凡... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之...

致... 之... 其... 中... 之... 一... 部... 分... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之... 凡... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之...

二... 檢... 查... 及... 其... 他... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之... 凡... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之...

其... 中... 之... 一... 部... 分... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之... 凡... 有... 關... 之... 事... 務... 均... 由... 本... 行... 統... 一... 經... 理... 之...

No 17

839/

24. 検察文書第八号、一九四六年/昭和二十一年/三月十三日、
 ウリアン公ホニ一少一級軍曹/William Mahoney/宣誓
 口供書を檢証、為提呈之其、印ヲ附ケタル箇所、抜萃ヲ書
 證トシテ提出致之又、宣誓口供書、福岡、ホニ收容所ニ
 於テ一人、俘虜ガ三、食ヲ遣ニタカドニ依リ收容所全体、俘
 虜ガ三回分、食ヲ與ラシマシキ。犯人ガテテテ、彼語
 ツテ詳細ノ中ニ含ニシテ、他ノ俘虜全部ガヒトテ殴打サレ
 シ。

他ノ俘虜、一、日本、ニシテ、擧、ノ罰トシテ、收容所内
 俘虜全部ガ(晩中)立タサシ、ソノ朝、與ラシマシキ。
 同ノ收容所内、他、六人、俘虜、犯人ヲ渡サシ、カキ、ヒト
 殴打サレシ。コノヤ、テ、軍団懲罰、收容所長ガ是
 認ム、ソノ時、彼、何時モ参加シ居シ。之等、軍団懲
 罰ニ就テ、田長ノ申立、シ、シ、何モサシ、テ、サ
 下リセシ。

25. 検察文書第九号、一九四五年/昭和二十年/
 十月三日ニ宣誓シ、マニ、Dモ、Matthew D.
 Monk/軍曹、宣誓口供書ヲ檢証、為提呈致シ、
 シ、中ヨリ、印、ツテ、箇所、抜萃ヲ、証據トシテ提出致シ、
 ス、宣誓口供書、名古屋附近、ノ、收容所ニ起
 ツテ、極端、非合法的懲罰、例ヲ述ベ、居リ、ス、フ、

No. 19

Wagner/ト、一人、俘虜ガ空腹ニ耐、兼、テ、五、度、收容
 所、炊、室、カ、食物ヲ、遣、シ、テ、才、一、回、過、後、
 フ、テ、一、登、見、サ、ル、ヲ、避、ケ、ル、為、收容所、町、田、迄、ニ、歸

24. 檢察文書第八七八号、一九四六年、昭和二十一年、三月十二日、

ウィリアム・マクモニー / 一級軍曹 / William Mackemony / 宣誓

口供書ヲ檢証、為提出シ其ノ印ヲ附ケタル箇所、抜萃ヲ書
證トシテ提出致シマス。コノ宣誓口供書ハ、福岡、オニ收容所ニ
於テ一人、俘虜ガ三人、負ヲ担シダカドニ依リ收容所全体ノ保
虜ガ二回分ノ食ヲ与ヘラレマシマシタ。犯人ダケデナク、彼ガ語
ツタ詳細ノ中ニ含まレテヤル他ノ俘虜全部ガヒドク殴打サレマ
シタ。

他ノ俘虜ニ枚ノ日本ノシヤツヲ盗ミソノ罰トシテ、收容所内
ノ俘虜全部ガ一晚中立たサレソノ朝食ヲ與ヘラレマシマシタ。
同シ收容所内ノ他ノ六人ノ俘虜ハ、犯人ヲ渡サテカツク為ニヒドク
殴打サレシタ。コノヤウノ集団懲罰ハ、收容所長ガ是
認ムソノ時ニ彼ノ何時モ参加シテ居マシタ。之等ノ集団懲
罰ニ就イテ田長議ガ申シ立テラレシマシタガ、前日テ何モサレタラ
アリマシマシタ。

25. 檢察文書第八九五号、一九四五年、昭和二十年、

十月三日ニ宣誓シタマシユー / D モー / Matthews D

Moyle / 軍曹 / 宣誓 / 口供書ヲ檢証、為提出致シマス。

ソノ中ヨリ印、ツイタ箇所、抜萃ヲ証據トシテ提出致シマ
ス。コノ宣誓口供書ハ、名古屋附近ノ、ノリニ收容所ニ起
ツタ極端ニ非合法的懲罰、一例ヲ述ベテ居リマス。ワグナー

1. Wagner / トイフ / 一人ノ俘虜ガ空腹ニ耐ヘ兼テ五六度收容
所ノ炊事室カラ食物ヲ次取ミマシタ。オノ、竊盜、後デ
ワグナーハ、発見サレハ、避ケル為收容所ヘ町回近ニ帰

8391

23. 本島其七等之... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 A 日本收容所長 收容所... 及... 通... 談... 官...
 ... (自叙)
 B ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 C ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 D ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)

26. 檢察文書第八十一号 (一九四五年 / 昭和二十年)
 十月二十五日... (自叙)
 (Alessis J. Mart) ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)
 ... (自叙)

No. 20

8391

物、與一ラニシテ之ヲ

27

檢察文書第八二六号、一九四六年、昭和二十一年一月
二十九日宣誓書。口ヒニシテ、トリ一申佐 / Robin R.
Petrie / 宣誓書口供書ヲ檢証、為提出致シス。ト申
印、附カニタル國所、抜萃ヲ証據トシ、提出致シス。ト
、宣誓書口供書、モトテ之收容所ニ於テ、労働者ガ安坑
内、一日平均二時間強制労働ヲ行ハラシメコトヲ
述ビ居リマス。

安全裝備、倉ヲ不十倉ニシテ、係リ多數、不必要、負
傷者多シタル事、所、原、後、一、高、三、米、満、カシ
ルコトナリシコトナリ。

一九四三年、昭和十八年、春、宣誓書者、赤十字、代
表者、不十倉、状態、下、長、時間、労働、及、心、身、日
間、全然、休暇、が、與、ラ、シ、カ、ク、テ、事、實、ニ、就、テ、不、平、ヲ、申、シ
テ、シ、タ、コ、ト、後、同、年、十、月、二、日、宣誓書者、或、取、テ、是、等、之、收容
所、規則、違反、及、之、責任、ヲ、負、カ、テ、不、平、ヲ、申、シ、口、實、ヲ、日
本、人、上、級、下、官、ニ、打、テ、シ、タ、コ、ト、後、赤、十字、代、表、者、ガ、モ
ウ、一、度、視、察、ニ、來、タ、時、宣誓書者、彼、ガ、赤、十字、代、表、者、ニ
彼、ノ、不、平、ヲ、繰、返、ス、コ、ト、出、來、ル、事、ヲ、辯、明、シ、同、日、口、實、ヲ、日、本、
人、同、級、立、止、メ、監、禁、場、ニ、入、ラ、シ、タ、コ、ト、ナリ。

No. 21

28

檢察文書八二六六号、一九四六年八月三十日オツテ、
口、實、ヲ、シ、テ、各、ル、宣誓書者、之、檢、証、為、提出
シ、真、實、ノ、事、ト、シ、テ、標、本、ニ、抜、萃、シ、テ、証、據、ト、シ、提、出、ス、ル、該
宣誓書者、所、見、捕、虜、收容、所、内、に、在、リ、不、法、ノ、有、刑

8391

三捕虜之中心

該官預言書、捕虜傳達之願、條件、要、山、灰、玩、任、等、
ニ就、テ、ラ、シ、ク、テ、述、ベ、テ、本、心、抗、道、内、ニ、水、が、器、之、留、り、
屋、根、が、危、剣、下、ア、リ、ク、或、時、屋、根、が、落、キ、テ、二、三、名、死、ヲ、招、
ク、捕、虜、日、三、十、時、間、働、カ、セ、或、時、に、飢、ニ、テ、一、日、働、カ、セ、
口、供、書、に、大、如、ク、述、ブ、(オ、一、頁)

A、冬季、寒、サ、甚、ダ、リ、シ、テ、我、々、到、座、停、留、假、ヲ、テ、カ、又
大、受、捕、囚、ノ、先、存、ヲ、與、ラ、ル、コ、ト、結、果、甚、カ、ク、肝、受、受、者
ヲ、出、シ、五、名、乃、至、六、名、瀕、死、ノ、氣、が、斷、タ、リ、死、亡、シ、タ、

米、國、赤、十、字、小、包、が、收、容、所、ニ、送、ラ、レ、タ、ガ、一、内、容、物、
大、部、分、日、本、軍、衛、兵、ニ、依、テ、取、リ、取、リ、

私、運、送、シ、テ、收、容、所、ニ、テ、全、期、間、ニ、通、シ、テ、一、匹、藥、品、ニ、非、常
ニ、不、足、ト、シ、居、リ、コ、ト、シ、テ、若、干、死、亡、ノ、事、起、リ、

コ、ト、シ、テ、一、日、中、に、死、者、多、ク、此、收、容、所、内、一、名、日、本、人
ハ、洋、人、ノ、衣、服、ヲ、穿、テ、一、日、中、に、食、ハ、ラ、

三、檢、察、文、書、八、三、九、号、一、九、四、六、年、一、月、二、九、日、附、送、シ、タ、

三、口、内、一、次、大、尉、ノ、預、言、書、日、檢、査、為、シ、提、出、シ、且、其、
標、シ、ハ、五、葉、ヲ、添、付、シ、テ、送、出、シ、該、官、預、言、書、ニ、亦、テ、

收、容、所、於、テ、死、者、多、ク、捕、虜、日、三、十、時、間、働、カ、セ、
衣、服、之、ニ、シ、テ、不、一、ニ、カ、リ、且、收、容、所、ニ、到、着、シ、テ、日、本、人、

衛、兵、が、服、ヲ、與、ラ、ル、コ、ト、シ、テ、一、日、中、に、食、ハ、ラ、
ハ、シ、テ、一、日、中、に、捕、虜、日、三、十、時、間、働、カ、セ、一、日、中、に、食、糧、斷、

絶、非、常、ニ、苦、シ、ク、一、日、中、に、一、日、中、に、全、捕、虜、家、養、

NO. 22

8391

及謂之慘死。一九四五年二月三日捕虜一週二死，割合
之押案三死。全部之約二十名捕虜，飢餓，日本人，殘
忍之待遇，結果死矣。

30. 檢察文書八〇三號，一九四五年九月八日附 三三三
H. 二一之八，~~捕虜~~書ヲ檢証，為提出之具，其標七枚
萃ヲ證據トシテ提出スル該宣誓書云、大阪收容所梅田
倉所於其捕虜，虐待ヲ物語リ、凡供述悉次、如ク述
ブ。

「我等、作業地ニ於テ、監視者ニ當リ民間人然シ軍人
ニヨリ、余等、打ヲし蹴ラシ、且全般ニ直リ虐待セリ。且
斯ナル待遇及ビ一陸軍兵ニ及給、欠食、夕々之等、者、中死
セタルモウ空アリ。余等、大阪倉後三月三日約三割五分、死者
ヲ多クシ、余等見ル所云、是等死ニ、飢餓、衣服不足及ビ余等、家
ニ於テ不良ナル營養、殘酷ニ改打、由來ニ疾病ニ多クモナリ」

31. 檢察文書八〇六五號、一九四五年十月八日附、午一七
E. 七一ヲ、伍長、宣誓書ヲ檢証、為提出之具其標
七枚萃ヲ證據トシテ提出ス。該宣誓書云、大阪收容
所梅田倉所於其殘忍ナル状態ヲ確認スルモノアリ。宣
誓書悉次、如ク述ブ。(一頁)

No. 23

Doc. 8391

大隈ニ始メ四八五名が收容サレテ升ク。最初、四月間、食糧
ノ材料ト不足タメニ二〇名が死亡セリ。我々、食糧ハ一日一人ガ
リニセ。瓦下下ニソノ住事ヲスル男子達ニ不充分アテリ。
若シ働カトカクテ此ノ配給減ゼラシ又病疫ニ於テ死ニ至
シ病人ノ日食糧三〇〇瓦ノミヲ給テケル。日本人ノ衣類、
方志ニ於テハ殆ト給テケルニカク。

三二 檢察文書八〇四号 一九四四年九月五日附、アノ在
リ、メヒテリス、宣誓書ヲ檢証、爲ニ且シ其ノ標、アル板葺
ヲ證據トシテ提出スル。該宣誓書ハ、捕房D1收容所ニ於テ
一九四三年一月ニ捕房ノ五〇八七下以上ノ赤痢トアリヤニカ、
シテ升クニテ述ベテ升ル。宣誓書ノ次、抄述テ。

(一頁第三節)

我々、捕房三度造船所ニ設備工トシテ使ヒテ。我々、毎
日午前六時三十分ニ會シテ、午後五時迄收容所ニ降ク
病人ノ無理ニ働カサシ、最初、三四日、中ニ四五人が肺炎
ノ宗養子良クメ死セリ。此等ノ宗養子ニ與テ衣食ト給
テ、カクテ此等ノ有ル死、カクテ升ル。

食物ノ量ニ不充分ニ、一九四三年、夏ニ至リテ配給ガ更
ニ約半命ニ減セサシ。ソノ結果、脚氣ガ流行シテ、殆ト日下
ガ宗養子良クメ死セリ。

三二 檢察文書八〇三六号 一九四四年一月廿五日附、アノ在
リ、我々ノ軍中勤務隊長、宣誓書ヲ給テ檢証、爲
シ且シ其ノ標、アル板葺ヲ證據トシテ提出スル。該宣誓
書ハ、七二ニ於テ此ノ情況ニ言及シテ升ル。該宣誓書ハ、日本

Doc. 8392

8391

Doc.

No. 25

軍医が聯合軍医師、病人ニ対スル治療ヲ拒否之異、爲
一名、捕虜ヲ死亡セシメタリトヲ述ベテナク、

宣誓者、次、如ク述ベテ居ル (三頁)

總ベテ、收容所ニ於テ予ヘシテ待遇カラ判断シテ諸々、收
容所長並ニソノ部下達ニ依ツテ、実施サレタ如キ日本ノ方策、
食糧不足及ビ虐遇、侮辱ニヨリテ俘虜達ヲ悪ク健康狀
態ニシテオキ、ソノ士氣ヲ衰ヘサセテオクニアルト、明瞭ニアリ。
三、四、檢察文書八二九号、一九四六年一月二十三日附アリシ
テ、モリ少佐、宣誓書ヲ檢証、爲ニ提出シ且ツ標ヲツケタ
枚萃ヲ證據トシテ提出スル。該宣誓書、函館收容所第
一支部ニ關スルモノナル。宣誓者ハ軍医ハ收容所内病院
ノ擔任ニ當リテ居タ。一九四三年十二月、捕虜一人ハ彼、左
ノ膝カ痛ムト訴ヘタ。

供述者ハ此病氣ヲ急性骨髓炎ニシテ即刻手術ヲ要スル
ト診斷シ、直ニ收容所長ニ請フテ、此患者ヲ收容所、附近
ニアリタル分ナル手術、設備ヲ有スル地方、工場病院ニ移ス
事、許可ヲ得ニシタ。此許可、拒絶セシタ。公ニ於テ證人
ハ自ラ手術ヲ施行スル爲ニ所要ノ外科器械ハ收容所ニ
取寄セラル、事ヲ請求シタ所、是亦拒絶セシタ。其結果ト
シテ患者ハ数日ナラズニテ死亡シタ。此收容所ニ於テ、日本医
員ハ数多ク、俘虜ニ強要シテ何百枚カ、毒劑、傳票ニ
署名セセタガ、毒劑ハ配与セシメカツクノデアル。此毒劑ヲ日
本人ハ他ニ賣ツタガ、其仲買ニ与ヘタカシタモノト思ハレシ。

三、五、檢察書類八二六號、一九四六年一月三十日、アリ。

Doc. 839 /

ハークー陸軍大尉 / CAPTAIN ALLAN BERKELEY 三記宣誓
供述書ヲ檢證、爲ニ提出ス。又其標記セル抜萃ヲ證據
トシテ提出ス。此供述書ハ福岡第四收容所ニ於ル状態ヲ記
述シテアル。供述者、該收容所、医官デアツタガ其述ブル所
ニヨリ該收容所ニハ多分、医療材料ガアツタ、デアルガ停
房ハ決テ所應クテヲ充テ用テテ事、許サレカッタ。其爲
少クモ一人、死亡ヲ来ラシ。

三。檢察書類オハ一六一號、一九四六年一月二十五日

W. ジーニ / JOHN W. KINNEY 三ヨリ宣誓供述書ヲ檢證、
爲ニ提出シ其標記セル抜萃ヲ證據トシテ提出ス。此供述
書ハ川崎ニ於ル停房收容所ニ関スルモノデアリ。

供述者曰ク。(原文オハ二、三頁)

a. 印倉庫ニアメリカ赤十字法給品ガ十介ニアツタガ衛生
軍曹大澤(音譯) / OSAWA 三我方、医者カラ屢々支
給方ヲ要求サレタニモ拘ハリス。一切給与スル事ヲ拒絶
シタ。三事ハ外科用医療器具ニ同様デアツタ。医者
ハ鍛冶屋カラドリ器具ヲモテニ入ルコト、出来ルモノヲ持ッ
テ来ルヤウ、餘儀ナクサレタ。

b. 印オサワ / OSAWA 三終始病人ニ医療ヲ拒テ、約十三
人、死亡ガ三年、石ニ起ツタガ其、原因ハ部分^{部分}復讐^{復讐}事
デアツタ。而シテ停房ガ果実及其他、食物ヲ盗ム事
ガ出来タト云フ事案ナカリセバ多数ノ者ハ脚氣ヲ死
シテアツタ。

三。檢察書類オハ一〇七號、一九四五年十月十九日本部

No. 26

No. 27

Doc. 8391

付軍曹 マイケル J. ロバートソン / Staff Sergeant Michael J. ROBERTSON / 此供述書供述書ヲ檢證ノ爲ニ提出シ其稜記セル被擧ヲ證據トシ提出スル。此供述書ハ飛行士ニ對シテ虐待並ニ医療ノ拒否ニ付テ記載シテアル。供述者ハ東京部上空ニ於テB29ヲカラ抛リ出サシク者ヲ日本人男女ノ群集カラ擲ケルシク後、東京軍管區司令部ニ訊問ノ爲ニ連レテ行カシ其処テハ竹ノ棒ヲ打タシ。此時ニ彼ハ片脚ハ折レテ居リ且左脚ニ榴散彈ニ見重傷ヲ蒙ラテ居タアルカ彼ニ對テ医療手當ハ加ヘラセカラス。供述者ハ他ニ一人、米軍飛行士カ同ジ監房ニ連レテ来リシタラ見タ、其者ハ半ハ精神錯亂ノ状態ニシテアリ且ツ其ノ両手ニハ拷問ノ痕カアラス。此飛行士ニモ何等医療ノ手當ハナク、彼ハ其夜死亡シタ。

三、檢察書類第八六三號 一九四五年十月十日軍曹ハリー・スレーター / Sgt. Harry SLATER / 此供述書供述書ヲ檢證ノ爲ニ提出シ其稜記セル被擧ヲ證據トシ提出スル。

此供述者ハ捕虜トナリテ聯合國飛行士等ニ對シテ医療手當ヲ拒否シタ事ヲ確認スルモノデアリ

II

NO28.

Doc

8391

元 檢證亦三四九号 五與年四月十日 宣稱言此米油鹽水食長部
 三 廿六了入、道誓言口保證之檢證上之長部之印 日語之及國
 所、按卒之書證上之提以不証人陳述係以五四年四月五日
 中、口之三三以不曉在流布廿二于五、日之真一失國如此獸等、然
 以十三停廢人全部被廿二之三之六之口上
 又日本入通譯人證人三波、櫻三語之六日之起之三日在、浦
 傳、其証上揭念人檢證案大波手家御、其方廿二之六、
 信傳案大波念、承續案大波三語、其廿二、波長、其廿六
 (了也)

E # 1917

RESTRICTED

Will you state all facts in detail pertaining to atrocities, war crimes, violations of Rules of Land Warfare and human decency at Fukuoka No. 17, the dates thereof, the perpetrators, giving (camp or other place) their names, ranks, units and other identifying information.

*A I was a prisoner of war at Fukuoka No. 17 from 10 August 1943 until 15 September 1945. During my internment at this camp I was Senior Medical Officer. On or about December 23, 1943, Cpl James G. Pavlokos of the 4th Marine Regt. who was a prisoner in this camp was turned over to the Japanese by Lt. Senior Grade E. N. LITTLE, USN, for stealing. Cpl Pavlokos was put in the guard house without food or water. He remained alive until 28 Jan 1944, at which time he died of starvation. I saw his dead body after he had died and I would estimate his weight at about 55 lbs. He is normally a man of about 170 lbs.

The second execution of the camp took place 5th month, 31st day, 1944. Pvt. Noah C. Heard, serial No. 20900717 was confined in jail for theft, third offense. During the night of the 30th it was reported by the Japanese guards that this man had escaped. They used other POW's in helping to search for this man and he was located in the latrine of the barracks. This was about midnight. He then returned to the guardhouse. Shortly after his return to the guardhouse the Japanese stated that they had found evidence of this man having broken into a Red Cross warehouse and the office of the Japanese Mess Sergeant. It was stated that he had stolen one parcel of food package. At 5 o'clock in the morning prisoner officers were asked to attend the execution of this man. This execution was witnessed by Lt. John Allan 192d Tank Bn. Pvt. Heard was killed by bayonetting.

The first two executions occurred during the period when Camp No. 17 was commanded by Lt. URI. He was stocky, about 5'8" tall, weight 160 lbs., he conducted himself with a Prussian military air, had many gold teeth, no glasses, no mustache. He was formerly attached to the Fukuoka Headquarters, western military district. That is all I can remember about this man's description.

The next execution occurred on April, 1945, Cpl, Walter Johnson, 20084372, U.S. Army. This man had frequently come to the attention of the Medical department as a mild psychological problem. He had been recognized by the first Japanese Army doctor as such. This Japanese doctor's name is Lt. KURO. Immediately after the surrender Johnson had started an intensive study of the Japanese language. He was apprehended in the mine about the 1st of April for talking to a Japanese civilian miner, presumably charged with espionage and placed in the guardhouse. He was permitted no ration of food and subjected to severe beatings both day and night.

RESTRICTED

He died on the 11th of April. During the time he was in the guardhouse he received no medical attention. The body exhibited many signs of fractures and evidence of severe beatings. Inspection of the body was made without the sanction of the Japanese. They listed this man officially as having died in the hospital with an abscess.

Fourth American execution, Pvt William N. Knight, 6983666, U.S. Army. He was turned over to the Japanese on or about May 5, 1945 by Lt. E. N. LITTLE, Lieutenant Senior Grade. Knight has been guilty of stealing a bun in the mess hall. He was confined in the guardhouse and subjected to repeated beatings and all the forms of torture that could be devised by the guards on duty. This man died on May 20th. Body was in a state of extreme emaciation. Post mortem autopsy was not permitted. It is felt that this man died of starvation with possibly secondary pneumonia.

- A. In the spring of 1945, a British Private, named Fordly, was on quarter status from malaria. He was placed in guardhouse for having a small piece of zinc in his possession. On the evening of the first day this man was in the guardhouse, I was called from the evening roll call formation supposedly to see a patient in the guardhouse. On going there I found this man dead. The guards were most insistent that it was impossible for him to be dead and I was permitted to examine him superficially in a darkened cell. They refused to turn on the lights. From the general attitude of the Japanese and from what little I could determine from the superficial examination and the previously mentioned condition I think this man died as a result of beating. Men in the guardhouse were beaten with a 2 x 4 about the length of a baseball bat.

These last three executions occurred during the reign of Lt. FUKUHARA. He was about 5 ft. tall, approximately 125 lbs., well built, no glasses, no mustache, had sharp pointed ears, had good teeth, neat dresser, I think he has a scar somewhere on his back which he got from Russian artillery fire in China, spoke very little English, was thought to have a wife and two children. That is all I can remember about this man's description. Under Lt. FUKUHARA there were two to eight men in the guardhouse and these men were subjected to such tortures as could be devised by the guards on duty. The following are examples: Kneeling on a bamboo pole while holding a metal at full extent of the arms, touched frequently with electric wires. Push-ups exercise by the hour. One prisoner would be made to hold a bucket of water over another prisoner's head. On numerous occasions prisoners were made to beat each other in the face. Beatings were administered with large belts and the previously mentioned 2 x 4, and saber case. Some men were forced to have their mouth held open for hours with bamboo splinters wedged between teeth.

/s/ T.H.H.

R E S T R I C T E D

I was confined from Oct 12 to 18, 1944 in the guardhouse. I was not tried and was being punished for submitting a written complaint to the Japanese doctor in which I complained of the Camp Commander forcing sick men to work in the mine. I was told briefly before being confined that by making such complaint in writing I was guilty of influencing group opinion and that such might be interpreted as an effort to cause a riot. This same letter was sent by all officers of the prison medical staff. I was released in the night of the 18th of October prior to the visit of an inspection party which was thought to contain Red Cross representatives. I am sure that is the reason I was released. I do not recall the names, nicknames or descriptions of any of the guards, civilians or military who were in the guardhouse.

The Assistant Camp Commander is SATO, an Adjutant. His rank before the surrender was Cadet Officer and after the surrender promoted to 2nd lieutenant. He was about 5'7" tall, weight 150 lbs., wore glasses, understood and spoke English, clean shaven. Before the war he had worked in Mukden where he was interested in exporting. I can recall nothing more about this man's description.

Sometime in March, 1945 the following men were in the guardhouse: David E Runge, Australian private; James Voelker, American private; and Ray Hawfer, Marine private. These men were forced to kneel for long periods of time on bamboo, barefoot on concrete floors. During these months it was extremely cold that all developed gangrene. During this period of punishment the following surgical treatment were made on these men. On March 10, 1945 it was necessary to amputate both feet of Runge. About the same time it was necessary to amputate all toes of Voelker. Hawfer lost 3 toes. These men were punished for the following reasons: Runge for sabotage, because he was overheard to make a statement in the mine to another prisoner that there was no hurry in doing the work. Voelker for being sick and having to lie down shortly after going on duty on the mine. Hawfer for refusing to respond directly to questions asked during the Japanese investigations.

Although international markings for hospital buildings were requested Japanese headquarters denied these requests and during air raids, in the summer of 1945, seriously ill patients had to remain in these buildings. This camp was hit on July 27, 1945. All wood buildings destroyed, fortunately prisoners and medical personnel were able to evacuate all patients from the burning buildings. During the two winters in Camp No. 17 there was no place in camp where workers could get warmth, no method of heating the barracks or hospital building. Irregardless of efforts to promote sanitation in the prisoners' area the Japanese guard detachment permitted uncovered latrines and garbage to exist in their own area making it impossible to control sanitation. Also during the summer epidemic Japanese refused to admit that such conditions existed outside the camp, although one civilian employee in the camp died of acute dysentery. During two years in Camp No. 17 the medical department received only the following Red Cross medicines:

that amount which is issued to be used on 500 men for 3 months. This issue was controlled by Sagagami Haito of the Japanese Army Medical Department. This man was equivalent to a private first class; about 4'½" tall, weight 120 lbs, no glasses, no mustache, had some gold teeth, walked with a duck waddle, had very short arms and legs, and had dwarflike characteristics. That is all I remember about this man's description. This man was not qualified medically and repeatedly refused to issue sufficient amount of these Red Cross medicines for the treatment of seriously ill patients. Our medical supplies in this camp came from both the Army and the Mitsui Mining hospital. Although the camp reached the total population of 1780, medical supplies were always issued on the basis of 509 and in continually decreasing amount. One example of small amounts the Army issued, reached a limit of 6 rolls of gauze for one month. The Mitsui hospital refused during the year 1944-45 to cooperate with the prison hospital by refusing to X-Ray injured patients and to lend us essential instruments which were not in the camp equipments. During this period I performed 135 major operations without gloves and with inadequate instruments. Some 160 fractures were treated during this period and at no time was plaster of paris available. After the Japanese surrender we took over the camp. We found in the mine some 34 cases of Red Cross medical supplies including surgical equipment which had been issued to the Japanese in 1943.

During the period in Camp 17 there were 3 Japanese doctors assigned to the camp. The first, Lt. MUKAI, was most cooperative, and during his period there forced Mitsui Mining Company to build the hospital buildings and furnish us some Japanese medical instruments. This man was relieved because of his cooperation with prisoners in the hospital staff. The second doctor, Cadet officer HOSHIKO, cooperated by obtaining lighter work assignments for men who were suffering from deficiency disease, thereby being instrumental in saving a number of lives. This man was relieved from duty because he refused to sanction the sending of sick men to work by Camp Commander. [The third doctor Lt. TAKAHAMA made no effort to cooperate. At the time of the surrender this officer completely revised the death list by changing causes of death, eliminating executions, deficiency disease, and injury as the cause of death. All deceased being listed as having died of pneumonia or another common disease.

Lt. TAKAHAMA was about 45 years old, about 5'5" tall, weight 135 lbs., wore graying mustache, had gray hair, wore glasses occasionally, had protruding teeth. That is all I can remember about this man's description.

Repeatedly prisoners were punished physically by civilian miners. This punishment was frequently instigated and always encouraged by YAMAOUCHI, rated as a two-stripe over-man in the mine. This man was originally employed as an interpreter, had been educated in California schools and always tried to impress new details with his friendliness,

but when punishing prisoners or turning prisoners over to the Army for punishment he refused to speak English to the prisoners. This man was active during the entire two years and particularly during the last year he was interested in seeing that Americans were punished for every slightest infractions of rules. He continually beat the prisoners to see if any man would deny being an American. This individual was about 25 years old, about 5'6" tall, weight 130 lbs., had no obvious physical defects and it is difficult to understand how he had remained out of the Army, no glasses, no mustache. That is all I can remember about this man's description.

"I have nothing further to relate.

/s/ Thos. H. Hewlett
THOS. H. HEWLETT

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 2 day of October, 1945.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ John D. Schwenker
JOHN D. SCHWENKER, 1st Lt., FA
Investigating Officer
War Crimes Investigating Detachment

/s/ Everett Checket
EVERETT CHECKET
Maj. Inf.

R E S T R I C T E D

R E S T R I C T E D

Hewlett, Thos. H. Maj. ASN 0-386246
 (Name) (Rank)

after being duly sworn at 29 Replacement Depot
 on 1 Oct. 1945, testified as follows:

- Q. How old are you?
 A. 31.
- Q. Were you captured by the Japanese and made a prisoner of war? If so, when and where?
 A. Corregidor 6 May 1942
- Q. At the time of your capture of what unit were you a member?
 A. Fort Mills Station Hosp.
- Q. By what Japanese unit were you captured?
 A. Army
- Q. Do you expect to be repatriated, and if so, to what country?
 A. U.S.A.
- Q. What will your complete address be after your repatriation?
 A. c/o Dr. William H. Garner, 919 East Spring St., New Albany, Ind.
- Q. Will you state the name and locations of the camps at which you were held as a prisoner of war and the dates you were confined at each camp?

<u>Compound or Camp</u>	<u>Location</u>	<u>Dates</u>
A. Camp #9.	Corregidor	6 May '42 - 8 June '43
Billibid	P.I.	8 June '43 - 30 June '43
Cabanatuan	P.I.	30 June '43 - 23 July '43
Fukuoka #17	Japan	10 Aug '43 - 15 Sept '45

- Q. Do you know, or have you reason to believe, that the Imperial Japanese Army failed to treat prisoners of war with humanity or otherwise committed atrocities and war crime against them?
 A. Yes.

R E S T R I C T E D

/s/ T.H.H.

When completed this document
must be classified as RESTRICTED

DATE: Sept. 30 1945

1. YOUR NAME: HEWLETT THO: HILL
Last First Middle
2. RANK: Major SERIAL NO. 0-336246
(if civilian, write in word 'Civilian') (Armed Forces personnel only)
PERMANENT c/o Dr. William H. Garner
3. HOME ADDRESS 918 East Spring St. New Albany Ird.
Street No. City State
4. AT WHAT ENEMY CAMPS AND HOSPITALS WERE YOU CONFINED AND WHEN WERE YOU
AT EACH. (If never a prisoner of war or internee, then state principal
places you have been from time to time while overseas.)
P.I. Camp #9, Corregidor - May 6, 1942 - June, 1943
P.I. Bilibid - June 8, 1943 - June 30, 1943
P.T. Cabantuan - June 30, 1943 - July 23, 1943
Japan - Fukuoka #17 - Aug 10, 1942 - Sept 15, 1945
5. DO YOU HAVE ANY INFORMATION ABOUT ANY ATROCITIES AGAINST, OR MISTREAT-
MENT OF AMERICANS, PRISONERS OF WAR, CIVILIAN INTERNEES, OR THE CIVILIAN
POPULATION FOR WHICH YOU THINK THE PERPETRATORS SHOULD BE PUNISHED,
(Answer by stating YES or NO in the spaces provided below.)
- | | |
|---|--------------------------------|
| (a) Killings or executions ----- | <u>yes</u> |
| (b) Torture, beatings or other cruelties ----- | <u>yes or no</u>
<u>yes</u> |
| (c) Imprisonment under improper conditions ----- | <u>yes or no</u> |
| (d) Massacres, wholesale looting or burning of towns ----- | <u>yes or no</u>
<u>no</u> |
| (e) Use of prisoners of war on enemy military works or
operations ----- | <u>yes</u>
<u>yes or no</u> |
| (f) Exposure of prisoners of war to danger of gunfire,
bombing, torpedoing, or other hazards of war ----- | <u>yes</u>
<u>yes or no</u> |
| (g) Transportation of prisoners of war under improper
conditions ----- | <u>yes</u>
<u>yes or no</u> |
| (h) Public exhibition or exposure to ridicule of prisoners
of war ----- | <u>yes</u>
<u>yes or no</u> |
| (i) Failure to provide prisoners of war with proper
medical care, food or quarters ----- | <u>yes</u>
<u>yes or no</u> |
| (j) Collective punishment of a group for offense of others ----- | <u>yes</u>
<u>yes or no</u> |
| (k) Any other atrocities not specifically mentioned above
for which you think the guilty persons should be
punished ----- | <u>yes or no</u> |

IF ANY QUESTION IS ANSWERED YES, THEN STATE THE FACTS BRIEFLY ON
REVERSE SIDE OF THIS SHEET

Incl #3 (2 pages)

When completed this document
must be classified as RESTRICTED

DATE: Sept. 30 1945

1. YOUR NAME: HEMLETT THOS HILL
Last First Middle

2. RANK: Major SERIAL NO. 0-386246
 (if civilian, write in word "Civilian") (Armed Forces personnel only)
 PERMANENT c/o Dr. William H. Garner
3. HOME ADDRESS 619 East Spring St. New Albany Ind.
Street No. City State

4. AT WHAT ENEMY CAMPS AND HOSPITALS WERE YOU CONFINED AND WHEN WERE YOU AT EACH. (If never a prisoner of war or internee, then state principal places you have been from time to time while overseas.)
P.I. Camp #9, Corregidor - May 6, 1942 - June, 1943
P.I. Bilibid - June 8, 1943 - June 30, 1943
P.I. Cabantuan - June 30, 1943 - July 23, 1943

Japan - Fukuoka #17 - Aug 10, 1942 - Sept 15, 1945

5. DO YOU HAVE ANY INFORMATION ABOUT ANY ATROCITIES AGAINST, OR MISTREATMENT OF AMERICANS, PRISONERS OF WAR, CIVILIAN INTERNEES, OR THE CIVILIAN POPULATION FOR WHICH YOU THINK THE PERPETRATORS SHOULD BE PUNISHED, (Answer by stating YES or NO in the spaces provided below.)

(a) Killings or executions -----	<u>yes</u>
(b) Torture, beatings or other cruelties -----	<u>yes or no</u> <u>yes</u>
(c) Imprisonment under improper conditions -----	<u>yes or no</u>
(d) Massacres, wholesale looting or burning of towns -----	<u>yes or no</u> <u>no</u>
(e) Use of prisoners of war on enemy military works or operations -----	<u>yes or no</u> <u>yes</u>
(f) Exposure of prisoners of war to danger of gunfire, bombing, torpedoing, or other hazards of war -----	<u>yes</u> <u>yes or no</u>
(g) Transportation of prisoners of war under improper conditions -----	<u>yes</u> <u>yes or no</u>
(h) Public exhibition or exposure to ridicule of prisoners of war -----	<u>yes</u> <u>yes or no</u>
(i) Failure to provide prisoners of war with proper medical care, food or quarters -----	<u>yes</u> <u>yes or no</u>
(j) Collective punishment of a group for offense of others -----	<u>yes</u> <u>yes or no</u>
(k) Any other atrocities not specifically mentioned above for which you think the guilty persons should be punished -----	<u>yes or no</u>

IF ANY QUESTION IS ANSWERED YES , THEN STATE THE FACTS BRIEFLY ON REVERSE SIDE OF THIS SHEET

Incl #3 (2 pages)

C V L R

DETAILS OF ATROCITIES

KIND OF CRIME	WHERE IT OCCURRED	WHO WAS THE VICTIM (include name, nationality & whether military personnel or not)	STATE IF YOU SAW IT YOURSELF, IF YOU DID NOT SEE IT, WHO TOLD YOU ABOUT IT.
---------------	-------------------	---	---

1. (A) Executions Camp 17 (1) Heard, Noah C., U.S. Army (1) Bayoneted
(2) Pavlokos, James G. U.S.M.C. All others
(3) Johnson, Walter, U.S. Army by starving
(4) Knight, Wm.N. U.S. Army and beating
bodies view-
ed only.
- (B) Tortures and Beatings routine going on daily in camp jail.
I was confined there and subject to beatings Oct. 12-18, 1944.
2. (E) Prisoners were forced to repair hosery ordnance, Camp #9
Corregidor. This constituted employment of detail for 1 year
following surrender.
(F) En route to Japan. Ship one which I travelled.
(G) Carried manganese ore, contained no markings as prison ship,
Work details of Camps #17, Oruta, would be marched to work
during air activity over the city, on several instances they
were forced to lie on ground in front of Jap headquarters
during air attack. Hospital bldgs, housing seriously ill patients
could not be marked with Red Cross. These patients were unable
to seek cover, 6 wards suffered 2 direct incendiary hit July
27, 1945. Patients were evacuated during fire and attack.
3. (H) Routine exposure of prisoners under punishment in front of
Camp 17 Guard house, were civilians and other prisoners could
see tortures.
(I) During 2 yrs. in Camp 17, Med, Dept only received about
3 mos. Red Cross Medicine for 500 men. Camp Pop. 17-1800
This was issued by Sagami, Heito, in inadequate amounts for
serious cases. Both Army and Mitsui Mine Hospital refused to
obtain certain essential instruments or put our patients be
X-rayed, latter during past 9 months.
4. (J) On one occasion entire Camp 17 made to go 9 hrs. without
food because of a theft. Sept. 1944 Pvt. Benevow was publicly
stripped of his back tied confined because of minor thefts
in camp.

The above occurred under command of Lt. Uri, Lt. Tokohara,
Yamouchi, was civilian responsible for punishment adminis-
tered to men in mine.

Doc. No. 8006*

Page 9*

HAVE YOU PREVIOUSLY BEEN QUESTIONED BY ANY MILITARY OR NAVAL AUTHORITIES
ABOUT ATROCITIES OF MISTREATMENT, _____ IF YES, BY WHOM, WHEN WHERE
yes or no

Not officially

DID YOU MAKE A SIGNED STATEMENT, No
yes or no

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ William H. Brown

WILLIAM H. BROWN

Capt., Inf.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Thos. H. Hewlett

Sign your name here

/s/ Everett Checket

EVERETT CHECKET

Maj. Inf.

C E R T I F I C A T E

May 16, 1946

I HEREBY CERTIFY that the attached document is a true copy of an affidavit purporting to be sworn and subscribed to by _____

Thomas H. Hewlett, Major, O-396246

at 29th Replacement Depot, Iuzon, F.I.

on the 2nd day of October 1945.

I FURTHER CERTIFY that it was copied from an original in my custody as Chief, Criminal Registry Division, Legal Section, GHQ, SCAP, Tokyo, Japan.

/s/ Charles A. Reinhard
CHARLES A. REINHARD
Lt. Col., F.A.
Chief of Criminal Registry
Division, Legal Section

Doc 8006

皇太子御葬儀

答 茲ハ、一九四三年八月十日ヨリ一九四五
 年九月十五日マデ、同第十七管区敬養
 所ノ管区デアツタ、ノ敬養所ニ於ケル
 御遺骸同中ハ、先住ニテアツタ。一
 九四三年十二月廿三日カ、ソノ頃ニ、此
 ノ敬養所ノ管区デアツタ奉天縣長林ノ
 「ジエームズ、母一・バツロコス」區長
 ハ、調整ラツタタメニ、米川縣警「西一
 ・N」リットル「六蔵」ヨリ日本ニ引
 出サレタ。
 「バツロコス」區長ハ、管区ニ入レラレ
 テ、敬養所承定サレナカツタ。彼ハ
 、一九四三年一月廿八日遠征キノビテ井
 田ガ、此ノ、ニ被ハレ死シタノデアル。
 私ハ公ノ死後、ソノ遺骨ヲ見タガ、公ノ
 官舎ハ第五十五街段位デアルト思ツタ。
 彼ハ平高、一七〇番段位ノデアル。
 此ノ遺骸所ノ二堂目ノ為刑ハ、一九四
 四年五月前一日ニ行ハレタ。此ノ番號二
 〇九〇七二ニ長卒「ノ一ア・〇・ハ」
 下「ハ」三辰日ノ日葬儀ヲ具テ管舎ニ送
 葬サレタ。
 昨日ノ便ニ、此ノ方が死亡シタト日本ノ

1.

★ Doc 8006

備長ニヨリ報セラレタ。彼等ハ怪訝ヲ
懐シテ此ノ如クノ捜索ヲ手付ハセタ、カ
クア、ソノ如クハ、候會ノ便所ノ中テ発見
サレタ。是レハ真夜中デアツタ。ソレカ
ラソノ如クハ村ビ管倉ニ戻ツタ。此ガ管倉
ニ戻サレテハモナク、日本兵ハ此ノ身ガ
赤十字會員ト、日本軍隊等官ノ尋ね
ニ忍ビ送ンタ。靈柩ヲ運ンダト述べタ。彼
ガ倉倉ヲ一ツ掘ンデキタトノ事デアツ
タ。午前五時ニ、佐々木將校連ハ此ノ男ノ
屍ヲ立合フヤウ説明サレタ。此ノ屍
ハ第一九二戦隊大隊ノ「ジョン・アラン
」中尉ニヨツテ立會ハレタ。

「ハード」兵卒ハ流刃ヲ刺殺サレタ
× × × × ×

此ノ事件ハ、一九四五年四月ニ行ハレ
タソレハ合衆國陸軍省密二〇一八
四三七二ノ「ウォールター・ジョンソン
」軍長デアツタ。此ノ男ハ、少シ前病狀
ノ事ツタ事トシテ三洲部ノ注意ヲ長々
感イテキタ。彼ハ最初ノ日本軍々官カラ
ソウ云フ事トシテ誤メラレテキタ。此ノ
日本人軍々官ハ、村尾中尉デアル。彼
中尉「ジョンソン」ハ、直チニ熱心ニ日

2.

Doc 8006 *

3.

本誌ノ研究ヲ始メタ。四月一日頃、彼ハ
 炭坑ノ中デ日本人死ニ至シカケタ爲ニ
 、發見サレ志ラクハ、同坑ノ證據ヲ受ケ
 タ爲メデ營倉ニ入レラレタ。彼ハ、日々
 ノ食物ヲ食ク給セラレズ、晝夜烈シイ苦
 打ヲ受ケタ。彼ハ、五月十一日ニ死亡シ
 タ。彼ガ營倉ニキル間中食料ニ乏シクケ
 ナカツタ。ソノ身骨ハ、多クノ挫傷ノ跡
 トトイ打擲ノ證據ヲ示シテ守タ。屍體檢
 査ハ、日本軍ノ認可ヲ受ケズニ行ハレ、
 彼等ハ、此ノ男ヲ、病院デ遺物ノ爲ニ死
 亡シタ如ク公式ニ名簿ニ記入シタ。

第四度目ノ米人原形ハ、合衆國陸軍認
 識番號六九八三六六六兵卒「ウイリアム
 ・N・ナイト」デアツタ。彼ハ、一九四
 五年五月五日カ、ソノ隊ニ、一等「N
 ・リットル」海軍大尉ニヨリ日本軍ニ引
 渡サレタ。「ナイト」ハ、食料ニ於テ肯
 「パン」ヲ食シタ事ガアツタ。彼ハ營倉
 ニ居テサレテ、勤務中ノ精兵ニヨリ得返
 シ打擲ヲ受ケ、遂ヘ至ル總ユル軍兵ノ擄
 問ヲ受ケタ。此ノ後ハ、五月廿日ニ死亡
 シタ。身骨ハ、打傷ニ類セシムツタ。狀驗ヲ呈
 シテキタ。屍體檢査ハ許可サレナカツタ

★ Doc 8006

4.

世ノ男ハ、飢饉ニ恐ラク發症 肺炎ヲオコ
シテ死ンダト思ハレル。
一九四五年ノ春「ワードリイ」ト言フ一英
口兵士ハ「マラリヤ」ノ爲メ外出止メノ立
場ニアツタ。彼ハ、亞鉛ノ小片ヲ一個所有
シテキタ爲ニ營倉ニ入レラレタ。此ノ男ガ
營倉ニ入ツタ最初ノ日ノ夕刻ニ、私ハ、營
倉ニキル病人ヲ調べル爲ニ、日夕點呼ノ列
中カラ呼バレタ。其處ニ行ツタ處、此ノ男
ハ死ンテキタ。衛兵達ハ、彼ガ死ヌ管ハナ
イト強ク言張リ、私ハ、膚クシタ部屋ノ中
テ、ザツト彼ノ身体検査ヲスルコトヲ許サ
レタ。衛兵達ハ、明リヲ點ケル事ヲ拒絶シ
タ。日本兵ノ大体ノ態度カラ、且、私ガ尙
單ナ検査ト前跡ノ容態カラ判定シ得タ僅カ
ノ事カラ判断シテ、私ハ、此ノ男ハ毆打ノ
結果死亡シタモノト思フ。營倉ノ者達ハ、
野球ノバット位ノ長サノ、二吋×四吋ノ棒
デ毆ラレタ。
此ノ最後ノ三ツノ處刑ハ 福原中尉ガ所長
デアルトキニ行ハレタ。彼ハ、身長約五呎
位、凡ソ一二五「ポンド」立派ナ体格テ、
眼鏡ナシ、口髭ナク、鏡ク尖ツタ耳ト、立
派ナ齒ノ持主テ、衣服ノ着附ハキチントシ

テキタ、私ハ彼ノ背中ノ何處カニ、支那ニ於
 テ境國ノ砲弾ヨリ受ケタ傷跡ガアルト思フ、
 亦ボソノ種カ英語ヲ話シ、妾ト二人ノ子供ガ
 アルト思ハレタ。此レダケガ私ノソノ身ノ人
 物ニ似シテ惹ヒ出シ得ル全部デアル。福原中
 尉ノ管理下ニ三人乃至八人ノ者ガ警備ニキタ
 ガ、此ノ人々ハ、勸務中ノ衛兵ニヨリ、考へ
 ラレ得ル様々ナ構同ヲ受ケタノデアル。下記
 ハ、ソノ切デアル。兩腕ヲ縮一赤俵バシテ金
 屬片ヲ持チ乍ラ竹ノ袴ノ上ニ跪キノノ金鼠ニ
 展々電氣ヲ通シセシメタ。一時間ニ亘ル持上
 ギテ運動。或停息ハ水ノ入ツターバケツト他
 ノ停息ノ頭上ニ交ヘセシメラレタ。其度ニ亘
 リ停息ニハ、オ互ヒノ頭ヲ擡リ合ヒサセラレ
 タ。擡行ハ、大キナ草ヤ筋途ノ二時又四時ノ
 袴ヤ佩刀ノ鞘ヲ行ハレタ。或者ハ齒ノ間ニ押
 シ込シタ竹ノ切端ヲ幾時同セ無理矢理口ヲ開
 カセラレタ。

私ハ一九四四年十月十二日ヨリ同月十八日
 延篤翁ニ監察サレタ。私ハ病人ニ炭坑内ヲ働
 ク事ヲ擡ヒル收懲所長ニ苦情ヲ述ベタ抗議文
 シ日本人尊嚴ニ提出シタタメニ暴闘モサレズ
 ニ罰セラレタ。斯カル文書ニヨル抗議ヲナス
 コトニヨツテ私ハ群衆心理ニ影響ヲ及ボス罪
 テリ、且斯ル事ハ暴動ヲ生ゼシメル爲ノ試ミ

5.

Doc 8006 4

6.

Doc 8006 *

トモ 解籍サレルト 監察サレル前、信單ニ告ゲ
 ラレタ。同族ノ手續ヲ收管スル醫務部ノ監將校
 ニヨリ送ラレタ。私ハ赤十字代表ヲ含ムト思
 ハレル視察員ノ來訪ニ先立テ十月十八日ノ夜
 遊覧サレタ。私ガ遊覧サレタノハソレガ理由

××××××××××××××××××××××××××××

一九四五年三月ノ或時、下記ノ人々ガ醫倉

ニ入レラレタキタ。即チ、該軍兵卒「ダビツ

ド・E. ルンデ」、米軍兵卒「ジエイムス、

ヴェルカ「及ビ海兵隊兵卒「レイ、ホリアア」

デアツタ。此等ノ人々ハ「コンクリート」ノ

床ニ裸足ノ笹竹ノ上ニ長時間間強制的隨カセラ

レタ。此ノ塚ケ月間ハ極端ニ寒カツタノチ皆

ガ長痘ヲ生ジタ積チアツタ。此ノ處其中ニ下加

記ノ如キ外科手術ガ、此ノ人々ニ對シテ行ハ

レタ。一九四五年三月十日ニハ殆ド同時ニ「

ヴェルカ」ノ足指全部ヲ截斷セホバナラナカ

ツタ。「ホリアア」ハ足指ニ本ヲ失ツタ。此

等ノ人々ハ「次ノ如キ理由ヲ以テ處罰サレタ。

即チ「ルンデ」ハ畏抗内テ他ノ停處ニ急イテ

杜絶シマスル事ハナイト云フ辭ヲシテ居ル處ヲ

同カレタ爲、妨害行爲ヲ以テ處罰サレ、「ヴ

下加ニ遊歩
 場所ヲ
 ナキ事ヲ
 ト

Doc 8006 #

7.

エルカ「ハ病氣ノ爲、炭坑ノ仕事ニ行ツテ、
暫時休息セホバナフナカツタカフ處罰サレ、
「ホーンア」ハ日本軍ノ制室ノ時ニ尋ネラレ
タ使同ニ直チニ應スル事ヲ拒絕シタ爲ニ處罰
サレタ。

病室ノ建物ニ日際標識ヲツケルコトヲ要求
シタニ付、日本軍司令部ハ此ノ請要求ヲ
無視シテ、一九四五年夏ノ空襲中ハ、重病人
ハ此ノ病院内ニ泊ラホバラナカツタ。此ノ
収容所ハ、一九四五年七月廿七日ニ爆撃サレ
タ。木造家屋ハ解ベテ破壊サレタガ、幸ニモ
停泊ト勤務部員達ハ全患若ヲ燃エル建物カ
フ撤退サセル事ガ出来タ。第十七収容所テ過
シタ二冬ノ間ハ、備ク者ガ居ラトリ得ル場所
ハナク、兵舎ハ崩壊シタムル方法ハナカツタ。
停泊ノナル増城ノ衛生状態ヲ向上セントスル
努力ニモ拘ラズ日本軍ノ衛兵分遣隊ハ、極ヒ
ノナイ使所ヲ強奪シ其ノ儘ニシテ衛生状態
ヲ保ツ事ヲ不可能ナラシメタ。又夏季ノ傳染
病期間、日本軍ハ収容所ノ一層備人が溢烈ナ
赤痢ヲ死亡シタノニモ拘ハラズ新ナル状態ガ
収容所外ニ發生シテギルト云フコトヲ認メヤ
ウトハシナカツタ。第十七収容所テノ二年間

Doc 8006

8.

ニ、醫務部ハ、僅カニ下記ノ赤十字ノ醫藥品
ヲ受領シタニ過キヌ。即チ、五〇〇人ニ對シ
三個月間使用シ得ルダケノ量デアル。此ノ支
給ハ日本陸軍醫務部ノ「サガガミ、ハイト」
ニヨリ取扱ハレタ。此ノ男ハ一等兵ニ相當ス
ル位ノ者デアリ身長四尺半時、体重^{五〇}キ「ボ
ンド」眼鏡ナシ口瘻ナク、金齒ガ致^不アリ
^上ノヤウニ小股ヲ歩キ、非常ニ短イ腕^持チ
小八ノ如キ特徴ガアツタ。以上ハ私ガ此ノ^男様
子ニ就イテ思ヒ出ス事ノスベテデアル。此ノ
男ハ、醫課ニ^出シテハ資格ガナク、重病^人ノ
治療ニ此ノ赤十字ノ藥品シ充分ニ給スルコト
ヲ拒絶シタ。此ノ收容所ニ於テ我々が受ケタ
醫療支給品ハ、陸軍ト三井炭坑病院ノ兩方カ
ラ來タ。コノ收容所ハ總人員一七八〇人ニ達
シタケレドモ、醫療支給品ハ常ニ、三〇九人
シ基準トシテ支給サレシカモ絶エズ量ヲ減少
サレタ。陸軍ガ少量シカ支給シナカツタ一例
ハ、一ヶ月間ニ「ガーゼ」六本トイフ限度ニ
達シタ。三井病院ハ、一九四四年ヨリ一九
四五年ノ間、エツキス光線ヲ病人ノ寫眞ヤ、
收容所ノ設備ニハナイ是非必要ナ器具ヲ我々
ニ貸ス事ヲ拒絶シテ收容所病院ト協力シヤウ

Doc 8006 *

トシナリツタ。此ノ期同中私ハ手袋ヲハメズ
 不道徳ナ婦長ヲ便ツテ百三十五ノ大キナ手術
 ラ行ツタ。一六〇ニ及ブ遠傷ガ其ノ期間中ニ
 治療ヲ受ケタガ一度トシテ、石臼湯ハ交給サ
 レナリツタ。日本軍降服後我々ハ其ノ收容所
 ヲ譲リ受ケタ。我々ハ抵抗内テ、一九四三年
 ニ日本ニ送ラレタ、外科用備品ヲ含ム、三十
 四編ノ赤十字ノ醫療支給ヲ獲見シタ。

第三番目ノ軍醫、高積ノ香調ノ中尉ハ協力
 シヤウトハ勇カシナリツタ。降服ノ時ニ當リ
 此ノ病棟ハ死亡原因ヲ變更スルコトニヨツテ
 死者名簿ヲ完全ニ修正シタ、即チ處刑ヤ懲養
 失調症ヤ、死ノ原因トシテノ加害ヲ抹消シタ。
 凡テノ死者ハ、腐炭カ又ハ他ノ普通ノ病氣ヲ
 死亡シタル如ク名簿ニ記サレタ。

××××××××××××××××××××××××

××××××××××××××××××××××××

Ex # 1918

AFFIDAVIT

STATE OF MINNESOTA)
) SS
COUNTY OF HENNEPIN)

Personally appeared before me, the undersigned authority for administering oaths in cases of this character, JOHN H. ALLEN, 1st Lt, ADC, C-890115, formerly of Provisional Tank Group, Hq, USFIP, who having been read AW 24 and his rights thereunder explained to him and being duly sworn according to law, deposes and says:

I am now a patient at Schick General Hospital at Clinton, Iowa, presently home on convalescent leave at 1640 Dayton Avenue, St. Paul, Minnesota recovering from amoebic dysentery incurred in Bataan prior to capitulation. After completing the march from Bataan to Camp O'Donnell, commonly known as the "death march", I was shuttled along with other prisoners to various Japanese prison camps and ultimately arrived at Camp No. 17, Amata Kyushu, Japan.

At all the times hereinafter mentioned, I was a 2nd Lieutenant with the Provisional Tank Group, Hq, USFIP. My promotion to 1st Lieutenant came in August 1945.

While at Camp No. 17, Amata Kyushu, in August of 1943, I became acquainted with Private Noah C. Heard. At the time of my first association with Pvt Heard, he complained to me of dizzy spells. He told me his head hurt and he would wake up at night and find himself walking around toward the gate and he didn't know how he had gotten there. He told me he was afraid he would get in trouble with the guards. He also complained of being very despondent and at times I have seen him cry like a baby. I tried to help him by talking to him and by being friendly with him.

In about April 1944, Pvt Heard was put in the Japanese Guardhouse, Camp 17, accused of theft. I would say he was in the guardhouse for about seven to ten days and then released. He, with others, was brought before the personnel of the camp, both Americans and Japanese; and at that time, he and the others were knocked down by the Japanese. The following American officers witnessed Pvt Heard's being knocked down on this occasion: Major John R. Manrou, Captain Achilles C. Tisdell, Navy Lt. Edward N. Little, 2nd Lt Owen W. Rompage, 2nd Lt Paul T. Christie and 2nd Lt Robert M. Perkins. The following Japanese were present: Camp Commander, 2nd Lt Ken Yuri; Interpreter, Oyi; Sgt Major Morataki, non-commissioned officer named Fukuda; Japanese Doctor Murao; a mine interpreter who said he was formerly of Riverside, California, whose name was Yamochi; a medical corpsman named Tsuji or Chugi. There were other

Affidavit - Lt Allen - Cont'd

Japanese guards present whose names I do not know. Lt Ken Yuri ordered the medical corpsman named Tsuji or Chugi to knock the Americans down and the corpsman named Tsuji or Chugi proceeded to knock them down with his fists as they stood at attention. I recall that one of the others, besides Pvt. Heard, who was knocked down on that occasion was Private Lonnie Patman. I also recall seeing Lt Ken Yuri himself personally strike another one of our prisoners whose name I do not know.

Afterwards, Oyi, the Japanese interpreter, made a statement to these men, which, as I remember it, was "Will you now promise not to break any more of the camp regulations?" The men then all agreed not to; whereupon, they were released to return to their camp duties.

About 31 May 1944, Heard was again placed in the guardhouse and accused of breaking into the canteen which was set up for the Americans at one end of the barracks building. On or about the night of 31 May 1944, I was awakened as were the following officers in Barracks #1, in which we were housed: Major John R. Mamrous, Captain Achilles C. Tisdell, Navy Lt Edward N. Little, 2nd Lt Owen W. Romaine, 2nd Lt Paul T. Christie and 2nd Lt Robert M. Perkins. We were escorted enmasse by the Japanese to a place in front of the camp guardhouse. Shortly afterwards, Captain Thomas Hewlitt and a 1st Lt Proff, American camp doctors, who had been at the hospital in camp, joined us. I would say it was about 11:00 P.M.

Pvt Noah C. Heard was sitting in the doorway of the guardhouse, surrounded by Japanese including 2nd Lt Ken Yuri, Camp Commander; Interpreter, Oyi; and a Japanese non-commissioned officer by the name of Fukuda. Fukuda apparently was in charge of the guards on duty at that time.

About twenty minutes later, the Japanese doctor Murao arrived with other Japanese personnel of the camp whose names I do not know. At this time, another Japanese Sergeant, whose name I do not know, but who was not Fukuda, was consulting a book which had been brought over by Sergeant Major Morataki from Japanese Headquarters, and this Sergeant was pointing out to the Camp Commander, Lt Yuri, certain passages or pages in the book, the contents of which I do not know.

Pvt Noah C. Heard was dressed only in a dirty tee shirt and a pair of shorts. He was barefoot.

After a short conference among themselves, the Japanese interpreter, Oyi, separated himself from the rest of the group conferring, and announced to we officers the following, in effect, "Pvt Heard was in the guardhouse for stealing. He broke out of the guardhouse and now has broken into the Japanese warehouse and also into the Japanese kitchen and stolen these articles you see before you." I saw assorted Red Cross food articles, a Japanese soldier's cap, a pair of glasses and a wrist watch. The interpreter, Oyi, went on saying, "This man had already promised before all of you and the staff of the camp that he would not break any more regulations."

Affidavit - Lt Allen - Cont'd

He has broken out of the prison guardhouse. He has not only stolen from us, but also has stolen the food from your personal packages that you had stored in the canteen. He is no good. We have found this box of food outside the gate, under which gate he could have crawled. The fact that he was in possession of these Japanese articles (cap, glasses, and wrist watch), at the time of his capture in the latrine of one of your barracks, makes it obvious that he had intended to escape, having first pushed the food from under the gate; then apparently becoming frightened, he had returned to the barracks to hide and later accomplish his escape." During this time, Pvt Noah C. Heard never once spoke a word but looked about himself in a dazed bewildered fashion. His body showed signs of having been beaten. He was bruised and swollen about his face.

Then the Camp Commander, Lt Ken Yuri, removed his saber from his scabbard and ran his thumb along the sharp edge as he scrutinized Pvt Heard who appeared to be oblivious to the surroundings. Lt Yuri then returned the saber to the scabbard. Lt Yuri then pushed Pvt Heard's head back with the tip of the scabbard pressing against Heard's forehead apparently in an effort to make Heard look at him; but Heard did not seem to know what was going on around him. Lt Yuri then said something in Japanese and as a result, one of the guards removed a stick of gum from a Red Cross package, removed the wrapping and stuck it in Pvt Heard's mouth. When the gum was thrust in his mouth, Pvt Heard just mechanically chewed on it.

Lt Ken Yuri, Sgt Major Morutaki and Interpreter Oyi and the other non-commissioned officers once more conferred for a short period and then Interpreter Oyi told us that we would have to witness the execution and told us to proceed behind the guardhouse where it would be conducted. At this time a guard assisted Pvt Noah C. Heard to his feet and proceeded to lead him, accompanied by other Japanese, to the rear of the guardhouse. I was able to observe that Pvt Heard staggered as a dazed man would. Upon arriving behind the guardhouse, the guard lead him and through gestures, tried to make Heard kneel. Pvt Heard resisted these attempts and this became obvious to the Camp Commander, Lt Yuri, who then said something in Japanese and the guard allowed Pvt Noah Heard to sit on the ground instead. At that time, Pvt Heard brushed away cinders from in front of him and a Japanese guard seeing him do this, jammed his heel on the back of Heard's hand with such force that I could hear a crunch.

At this time, the Japanese Interpreter Oyi came to where we officers were lined up and said words to this effect, "We've changed our minds. You must go back to your barracks--go now-hurry up". We all started back toward our barracks; but 2nd Lt Paul T. Christie, 2nd Lt Owen W. Romaine and I separated ourselves from the remainder of the

Affidavit - Lt Allen - Cont'd

group and slipped into an empty building from which we could see, through a window, the scene which we had just left. I would say we viewed the scene from a distance not greater than twenty-five feet. There were lights on the fence which very clearly illuminated the scene. The lights were very bright and we could see everything very clearly. I could also hear very clearly what was said even though I could not always understand it.

From the window, I saw that a semi-circle of guards had formed behind Pvt Heard. At a command from Lt Ken Yuri, one of the guards came forward and bayoneted Heard in approximately the middle of his back. I do not know this guard's name. Pvt Heard grunted and fell forward from the impact of the onrushing guard and began to retch and twitch, making gesticulations similar to those of a brute that has been mortally wounded. These gesticulations caused him to roll on his back with his right side exposed to the semi-circle of guards. Upon the return of the first guard to the semi-circle, on the command of Lt Ken Yuri, a second guard went forward and plunged his bayonet into the exposed right side of Heard's abdomen. I do not know the name of this guard either. The guard withdrew and the Japanese doctor Murao, Lt Ken Yuri, Sgt Major Morataki, Interpreter Oyi and some of the guards went up to examine Heard's body. By this time, Heard's actions were no longer violent; however, a slight spasmodic twitch could be noticed in his hands and feet. A third guard whose name I do not know then turned his rifle butt up and thrust the bayonet vertically into Heard's throat. The guards then proceeded to rake across Heard's abdomen, cutting it to bloody ribbons. These were the same guards who were present throughout the entire proceedings, but their individual names I do not know.

At this point, the Japanese doctor Murao came forward and gave Pvt Heard a final examination and then Heard was covered with straw rice sacks and a Japanese guard was posted over his body and the rest of the Japanese retired.

From the building where we had been hiding while we watched the Japanese putting Pvt Heard to death, we went directly to our barracks. The next morning, all Americans were forbidden to leave their quarters or to look out in the direction of the previous night's execution. I managed to observe activity through a knot hole in the door of our barracks. I observed Japanese medical corpsmen looking around the rice sacks that had covered Heard's body. The body was no longer there. The Japanese were kicking dirt over the spot where the body had been. After they had completed this action, we were allowed to come out of the buildings.

After waiting a considerable time for roll call that morning, so that we could eat our breakfast and go about our duties, I went into the guardhouse to inquire when we could have roll call and was driven out by the

Affidavit - Lt Allen - Cont'd

Japanese guards who were drinking out of a bottle and appeared to me to be drunk, I was told we should go about our work; that there would be no morning roll call.

From then on, officially nothing was ever said about the death of Pvt Noah C. Heard although one guard; whose name I do not know, but whom I would recognize on sight, boasted to me that he was the one that first stuck Pvt Heard with a bayonet on the night in question.

Further deponent sayeth not:

/s/ John H. Allen 1st Lt. A.D.C.
JOHN H. ALLEN, 1st Lt. ADC
C-89C115

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 30th day of December 1945
at Fort Snelling, Minnesota.

/s/ Ronald N. Davies
RONALD N. DAVIES
Major, Inf. 0226763
Post Judge Advocate

A true copy:

/s/ Lindsay Williamson
Lindsay Williamson, Capt., JAGD

Affidavit - Lt Allen - Cont'd

Japanese guards who were drinking out of a bottle and appeared to me to be drunk. I was told we should go about our work; that there would be no morning roll call.

From then on, officially nothing was ever said about the death of Pvt Noah C. Heard although one guard, whose name I do not know, but whom I would recognize on sight, boasted to me that he was the one that first stuck Pvt Heard with a bayonet on the night in question.

Further deponent sayeth not:

/s/ John H. Allen 1st. Lt. A.D.C.
JOHN H. ALLEN, 1st, Lt. ADC
O-890115

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 30th day of December 1945
at Fort Snelling, Minnesota.

/s/ Ronald N. Davies
RONALD N. DAVIES
Major, Inf. 0226763
Post Judge Advocate

A true copy:

/s/ Lindsay Williamson
Lindsay Williamson, Capt., JAGD

C E R T I F I C A T E

May 14 , 1946

I HEREBY CERTIFY that the attached document is
a true copy of an affidavit purporting to be sworn and
subscribed to by John H. Allen, 1st Lt, ADC, O-890115

at St. Paul, Minn.

on the 30th day of December , 1945 .

I FURTHER CERTIFY that it was copied from an
original in my custody as Chief, Criminal Registry Divi-
sion, Legal Section, JHQ, SCAP, Tokyo, Japan.

/s/ Charles A. Reinhard
CHARLES A. REINHARD
Lt. Col., F. A.
Chief of Criminal Registry
Division, Legal Section

EXHIBIT

1918A

Dec 8022

親ハ「アイオワ」兵クリントン市ノ「シツク・
 デユネラル」兵艦ノ一息者デアル。「バスターン」
 兵艦ハ三隻ツク「アミーズ」兵艦ヲ離リカケテ
 居リ且信リ「ミネソタ」兵艦「ホーロ」市「デ
 レイトン」海軍大組〇若夫ノ本艦ヲ体面シテ居
 マス。「バスターン」ヨリ「オドネル」兵艦ヲマテ
 警備「死」軍ヲトシテ知ラレサキル行進ヲ急ム
 テ、私ハ信ノ信トテ我ニ彼方比方ノ日本ノ信ヲ載
 密函ニ封ラレ、我ニ日本ノ九州大宰府ノ第七
 隊管区ニ送イタ。

XXXXXXXXXX

九州大宰府ノ第七隊管区ニ居ル時千九百一十
 一年八月、親ハ「ノイヤ・シ・ハート」兵卒ト知合
 ニツタ。「ハート」兵卒ト知メテ知合ニツタ
 時彼ハ該隊ガスルト訴ヘタ。親ハ真実ガシテヨク
 夜中船キテ、イツノ日ニカ行ノ方ヘアラアラシイ
 テ行キ何處ソコヘ来々カ分ラナイコトガアルト
 シタ。何處ト問フヲ避サズヨイカト心配シテ居
 ツタ、親ハ又赤白ニ憂ヒテ進ラヌト云ヒ、時々赤
 シ坊ノ様ニ泣クノヲ見イタ。親ハ彼ニ語シカケ
 リ、信シクシテ彼ノ方ニツテヤラウト物ヌタ。
 一九四四年四月以「ハート」兵卒ノ第七隊管
 ノ管区ニ密函ノ様ヲ入レラレタ。少分約七日乃

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 8022

十日間待倉ニ入レラレテカラ放免サレムト思ヒマ
 ス。候ハ他ノ者ト共ニ日未双方ノ取替厨員ノ前ニ
 引出サレタ。ソノ時ハ彼ト他ノ者ハ日未人カラ打
 テ倒サレタ。
 其ノ後、日本人通譯大井ガ比ノ人達ニ對シ私ノ記
 憶ヲハ次ノ様ニ云ツタ。「取替厨ノ規則ヲ定カラ
 破ラナイト約束スルカ。ト。ソノ人達ハ破ラナ
 イト約束シタ。ソコデ彼等ハ取替厨ノ住野ヲスル
 タメニ釋放サレタ。
 一九四四年五月三十一日頃「ハイド」ハ又待倉ニ
 入レラレテ兵舎ノ一齋ニ米口人ノ爲設ケラレタ酒
 保ニ忍ビ入ツタト云マレタ。一九四四年三月三
 十一日或ハソノ頃ノ夜中頃私ハ起サレタ。我々ハ取
 替厨ノ待倉前ノ我ル勘厨ハ日未人ニ一口トシテ進
 レテ行カレタ。×××多分午後十一時頃テアツタ
 ラウ。「ノリア・シ・ハイド」兵卒ハ待倉ノ入口
 ニ坐ツテキタ。ソノ廻リニハ取替厨長白利信少尉
 大井通譯、福田ト云フ下士官等ノ日本人ガキタ。福
 田ガソノ時ノ當番衛兵ヲ捜シテキタ様ダ。×
 ××
 ノリア・シ・ハイド兵卒ハ汚イ「E」シヤット半
 ズボンシカ着テ居テカツタシス。彼等ノ間テ一
 寸打合セシテカラ日本人通譯大井ガソノ一口カラ

Dec 8022

3.

無レテ我ハ船長ニ其ノ標ニ接シタ。即チ「ハ
 ード」兵卒ハ船倉ノ管ヲ管倉ニ入ツテキタ。彼ハ
 管倉ヲ破ツテ、今又日本ノ倉庫ニ入り、其ニ盗所
 ニ入ツテ、諸君ガ目ノ前ニアル品夫ヲ盗ンダ。××
 此身ハ諸君ト船倉ノ職員一同ノ前テ、規則ハ決
 シテ破ラヌト前ニ約束シテキル。彼ハ管倉カラ逃
 ゲ出タ。彼ハ我々ノ物ヲ盗ンダバカリテナク、諸
 君ガ酒保ニ酒イテキタ各人ノ銀カラ食物ヲ盗ンダ。
 彼ハ欺目タ。××××燈ガ非常ニ閃ルカツタノテ、
 何テモハツキリ見エタ。意味ハヨク分ラナカツタ
 ガ、言ハレテキルコトハ非信ニハツキリ聞エタ。
 私ハ窓ヲ見ルト船長ガ「ハード」兵卒ノ後
 ニ半圓障ヲ作ルノヲ見タ。由利信少尉ノ命令テ、
 一衛兵ガ進ミ出テ「ハード」ノ管中ノ兵中進リテ
 銃剣ヲ刺シタ。「ハード」兵卒ハ時キ聲ヲ上ゲテ
 衛兵ノ刺突テ倒レタ。ソシテ我々管ヲ受ケタ
 狀ノ様ナ身振リヲシテ、胸ガムカツイタリ体ガビ
 クビク動イタリシテ居タ。モガキ切ツテキ
 ル中ニ仰向ケニ管ガツテ、彼ノ右腹ヲ衛兵ノ半圓
 障ノ方ハ向ケタ。先ノ衛兵ガ元ノ揚所ニ居ルト、
 由利信少尉ノ命令一ノ衛兵ガ進ミ出テ「ハ
 ード」ノ右腹腹目ガケテ銃剣ヲ突キ刺シタ。ソノ
 衛兵ガ引退シテ、日本人醫師村尾、由利信少尉、
 村瀬曹長、大井船長及衛兵二、三ガ「ハード」ノ

Doc 8022

4

身体ヲ檢視ニ出タ。此時ニハ「ハイド」ノモガキ
ハ殆ンド止ンテホガ。然シ、カスカテ意識ガ手ヤ
足ニ起ルノガ認めラレタ。三人目ノ衛兵ガ銃ノ床
尾ヲ道ニ上テテ剣ヲ「ハイド」ノ咽喉ニ長直ニ突
立テタ。ソレカラ衛兵達ガ出テ「ハイド」ノ腹部
ヲ引キサキ直達レニバラバラニシタ。×××

Q. # 1919

Doc. No. 8117*

Page 1 *

IN THE MATTER OF THE ILLTREATMENT OF BRITISH PRISONERS OF WAR AT SENDAI CAMP 1 B, ONAHAMA, HONSHU, JAPAN.

British National Office Charge No.

United Nations War Crimes Commission reference:

A F F I D A V I T

I, Fusilier WILLIAM JOHNSON, make oath and say as follows:-

1. My Number is 4273880 and I am in the Royal Northumberland Fusiliers, with permanent home address at Lilburn House, Main Street, NORHAM-on-TWEED.

2. I was captured at SINGAPORE on 15 February 1942.

3. In February 1945 I was in SENDAI Camp 1 B, Onahama Springs, which was a coal mining camp on Honshu Island. Captain THORNTON, R.A.S.C. was Camp Commandant in charge of British prisoners of war.

4. Corporal JAMES SCOTT, Royal Northumberland Fusiliers was in this camp and had been working on the surface at the mine and was in a very weak condition resulting from Beri-Beri and mal-nutrition. On the evening of 4th February 1945 he came back to camp with the rest of the party and on arrival at the camp was paraded with the other men when KOJUU 'SUDA asked whether any man in the party was sick. Corporal SCOTT said he wanted to see the Medical Officer whereupon KOJUU 'SUDA struck him with his fist and knocked him down and then started kicking him in the stomach when he was lying on the ground. Corporal SCOTT was unable to get up at the end of this ill-treatment and was carried by a number of the prisoners to the M.I. Room and from there to the hospital. I was not present on this occasion when Corporal SCOTT was struck and kicked but heard from Sergeant HUIE, R.A.O.C. and Driver SCREEW, R.A.S.C. what had happened to Corporal SCOTT. As soon as I heard I collected Corporal SCOTT's blankets, took them round to the hospital and stayed with him until a few minutes before he died. He never regained consciousness whilst I was with him. At about a quarter to six I went along for my meal and had just sat down at the table when Sergeant FARRELL, R.A.S.C. came in and told me that Corporal SCOTT had died. Between my leaving Corporal SCOTT and hearing from Sergeant FARRELL the news of his death would be about ten minutes. Subsequently Corporal SCOTT's body was cremated.

5. The best description that I can give of KOJU PSUDA is as follows: he was about 6 feet 1 inch in height, very broad-shouldered, high cheek bones. He had a very short neck and ape-like movement of the head. His nickname was "The Frog". The last time we saw him was on 16 August 1945. It was 17 August 1945 when we heard that the war was finished and we tried to get hold of KOJU PSUDA but we were not able to find him. He wore the three stars of a first-class private and was a Military guard and not a Civic guard. He would be about 35 years of age.

6. KOJU PSUDA used to kick and beat prisoners on numerous occasions and when he was inspecting a rank it was a favourite trick of his to lift his leg and kick people in the shins. I have seen him kick many people including Captain STEWART, Royal Norfolk Regiment some time in 1945 and on that occasion he pulled him out of the mess hall and made him clean the drains.

7. The foregoing facts are to my own knowledge true except where the contrary appears and in such case the facts are true to the best of my information and belief and my means of knowledge is recorded in this my affidavit.

SWORN by the said WILLIAM JOHNSON)
at EDINBURGH this fourth day of) /s/ W. Johnson, Fusilier
February 1946.)

BEFORE ME

/s/ R. E. W. Rinman
Captain, Legal Staff,
An Officer of the staff
of the Judge Advocate General of the Forces.

Doc 8117

書類第八一一七號

一 私、陸軍兵「ワイリヤム・ジョンソン」ハ直轄
 タナシ次ノ如ク原籍ス。
 一 私ノ看號ハ四二七三八八シテ私ハ英門「ノーザ
 ンバーランド」陸歩兵ニ所屬シ居リ永住地ハ「
 ノーハム・オン・トワイード」「メーン・スト
 リート」「リルバーン・ハタス」デアリマス。
 一 私ハ一九四五年二月十五日「ロンドン」ニ
 歸ヘラレマシタ。
 一 一九四五年二月ニハ私ハ司令部「カナハマ」
 温泉「B」ニ居リマシタ。ソレハ本州ノ炭坑敷
 所デシタ。B・A・S・O「ソントン」大尉ガ
 英國侍務ヲ擔任シア居タ侍務ノ指揮官デアツタ。
 一 英國「ノーザンバーランド」陸歩兵所屬ノ「ジ
 エームス・スコット」恆ハコロノ敷寮所ニ居テ
 炭坑ノ外テ働イサ居タガ勇氣ト榮譽不良ノクメ
 ニ非常ニ脆弱ナ状態ニアリマシタ。一九四五年
 二月四日ノ夕方彼ハ仲間ノ若連ト一帯ニ敷寮所
 ニ歸ツテ來テ敷寮所ニ到着スルト他ノ人達ト一
 緒ニ整列サセラレタ。ソノ時「ロジュー・ツダ」
 ハコロノ中ノ者デ病人ハ居ラナイカト尋ネタ。「
 スコット」恆長ハ軍醫ニ告ヒタイト言フト「コ

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 8117

「ジョ・ツダ」ハ給券ヲ欲シテツマシメシ彼が
 所ニ居ル間ニハ彼ハ志願ヲ同復シマセンテシム。
 六時十五分前頃私ハ食卓ニ出カケ卓ニ丁度坐ッ
 タ處R・A・S・Oノ「フアム」軍官ガ進
 入ツテ來テ「スコット」伍長ガ死シタト云フ事
 ヲ私ニ語リマシタ。私ガ「スコット」伍長ノ許
 ラ去リ彼ノ死ノ報知ヲ「フアム」軍官カラ
 聞イタ間ハ約十分位ノモノデセタ。ソノ後「ス
 コット」ノ死體ハ火葬ニサレマシタ。

-----X-----X-----X-----X-----

※「ジョ・ツダ」ハ多クノ場合停務ヲ願フタ

R.

Dec 8/17

3.

リ機ツタリシタモノデシタ。彼ハ森岡點呼ノ時
 ハ足ヲアゲテ人ノ商屋ヲ蹴ルノガ好キナ仕業ノ
 一ツデシタ。一九四五年ノ取ル時彼ガ英國「ノ
 ーホーク」陸隊ノ「ステユワート」大尉ヲ含ム
 多クノ入道ヲ蹴ツアキルノヲ私ハ見マシタ。ソ
 ノ時ハ彼ハ大尉ヲ食堂カウ引キ出シテ糞ノ掃除
 ヲサセマシタ。

| ———— X ———— X ———— X ———— X ———— |

CX # 1920

Document No. 8026*

Page 1

Dunedin
12th April 1946

I, Ian Douglas Newlands, :- do solemnly and sincerely declare

I am a single man, 26 years of age
and I reside with my father The Rev. John Newlands at the Manse
17 Jeffery Street- Andersons Bay-Dunedin.

I joined the Armed Forces for New Zealand on the 1st of December 1940.

I was attached to the Royal New Zealand Air Force, my regimental number
was 404927.

Prior to joining up with the armed forces I was a student at the
Canterbury University--Christchurch.

I sailed from New Zealand on the "S.S. Korangi" for Vancouver on the
26th of April 1941.

I was in Canada for a period of three months service flying training.
I arrived in England on the 18th August 1941. where I was attached to
43 Squadron and after that to 232 Squadron. With the 232 Squadron
I went to Singapore arriving there in January 1942.

From the Singapore Base the Squadron was operating against the Japanese
over the Malaya Peninsula.

I had to evacuate from Singapore on the "Empire Star" on the 11th of
February 1942, and arrived at Batavia-Java on the 15/2/42.

From Batavia we continued operating against the Japanese until the
Capitulation of Java on the 8th March 1942. On the 8/3/42. I was
at Trik Malaya, central Java. Advice was then received by the

remaining members of the Squadron that we were to give ourselves up to the Japanese in command.

I understand that this advice came from the Dutch authorities in command.

After receiving this advice, I made an attempt to escape with the intention of reaching the south coast in the hope of being picked up by some ship.

About a week later I was captured and taken to Garoet in central Java. I was captured by the Japanese. On March the 25th 1942 I was removed by train to Batavia with other Air Force personnel and placed in the Boei Glodok Prison. We remained there for a period of eight months-then we were shipped to Japan. I travelled on the Diancho Maru to Singapore, where we stayed in the Changi Camp for Ten Days, after which I was placed on the Tohoku Maru with other Prisoners of War and taken to Moji in South Japan. At Moji I was placed in a temporary Hospital on account of my being very ill, suffering from Dysentery, and Fever. I was in this Hospital for a period of two months. The conditions in Hospital were not good, the food was bad and not suitable for sick Europeans. There were several Japanese Doctors in the Hospital but all medical attention was left to some American Prisoners who had been attached to Army Medical Corps. There would be about approximately 180 European prisoners in this Hospital and during the two months that I was a patient about 50 died mostly from lack of medical attention. The Hospital accommodation was exceedingly poor, and we had to sleep on wooden floors in small cubicles on loose straw. We were all huddled together and eight of us had to sleep in a small cubicle

about 12 feet by 10 feet. At this time there was about 2 feet of snow on the ground. at
From Hospital, I was drafted to a Prison Camp "Murooran" on the Island of Hokkaido which is in the north of Japan.

The camp was known as "Hakodate No. I."

I remained in this Prison Camp from February 1943 until June 1945.

The Japanese Commanding Officer at "Hakodate No I. Prison Camp" was Lieutenant Hirata. There were between 300 to 600 Prisoners

of War of different Nationalities in the camp. The number kept varying from time to time on account of the men being drafted to other places. Lieutenant Hirata had a staff of about 15 Guards (armed) and about ten Japanese civilians employed in the Office and Administration Buildings.

When I first entered this camp there were only 66 Europeans ~~17~~ and 300 Japanese. The highest rating in our number was Flight Sergeant Crozier of the R.A.F. He was made our Officer.

During the first year in this Camp the conditions were very severe. Food was very short and unsuitable, all of us suffering from Beri-Beri and other forms of Malnutrition. There were no medical supplies, and a Japanese Sergeant Major who was in charge of the Hospital and sick parades was not a medical man. This Sergeant Major, (I can not remember his name) compelled men who were sick and unfit to work in the winter weather on outside heavy work such as shifting Coal, Iron ore and ingots of iron, at the Murooran Steel Works where the prisoners in this camp were employed. We were forced to work

from daylight to dark for thirteen days or more and then we had one day off. It was quite a common practise for prisoners to be beaten by the Prison guards or factory bosses or overseers in the Factory, for practically no reason at all. In some instances the beatings were for not complying with orders which would be given in the Japanese language and which we could not understand.

I have received severe beatings with sticks and was slapped practically every day. On numerous occasions when we were in camp after work-at or about any hour of the night we were awakened, lined up in our rooms and made to march and do Japanese drill. On each of these occasions several men would receive punishment for not satisfying the guards. It was difficult to know the names of the Guards as they were changed about every two or three weeks.

It was well known in the prison Camp that the Commanding Officer-"Hirata" was the instigator of this treatment.

One particular instance of ill treatment occurred on May 7th 1943.

I personally witnessed the happenings:- a Dutch prisoner named "Ballinco" a Soldier, was accused by some of the Japanese Guards-of stealing some articles. He was attached to a group of prisoners in the same compound in which I was. A few days before the 7/5/43 he was not allowed to go to the Steel Factory to work, but was placed in a cell at the rear of the Guard Room. At this time, I was confined to Camp on account of sickness and I saw what was going on. After he was placed in the Guard cell he was not supplied with any food and every few hours he was taken from the Cell and in full view

of myself and other sick prisoners he was beaten by the Guards with Sticks, belts-or hit with their fists. When he received these beatings he was only dressed in thin clothes. This continued until he finally died on the 7/5/43. On the 7/5/43, he was severely beaten on his bare back on which cuts, bruises and other marks could be plainly seen. A Dutch Doctor, (a J. van rose) named Lutter-a fellow prisoner, was not allowed to render any aid to Ballinco. Commander Hirati was present on a number of occasions when Ballinco was beaten and appeared to be trying to make Ballinco make a confession of his guilt. It was a common Camp practise for Prisoners to be placed in the Guard Cells without food and beaten every few hours for slight offences for which in many instances they were quite innocent of.

Owing to my rank as a Sergeant Pilot I was made Orderly Sergeant of the week on different occasions.

On one occasion while I was orderly sergeant, the date was the 9th August 1943. I was told by Head Kitchen Guard "Sikista" to order a number of sick prisoners to do heavy camp work, carrying kitchen stores from motor lorries to the Cook house store.

"Sikista" could understand that-by what I told him that the prisoners were not fit to do any kind of work, and I refused to order them to do the work. "Sikista" then severely beat me with a thick leather belt which he was wearing-and took off. He beat me over the head and I put my hands up to avoid further hits over the head, and he then

beat me on the body. I was wearing thin clothes at the time and received numerous cuts about the arms, back and legs. He finally stopped-after he had been beating me for about five minutes, when the metal studs were torn out of the belt and the metal buckle broke. I was then made to continue on with my work. I have seen "Sijista" beat other prisoners in a similar manner- with anything he could pick up-for any slight provocation which upset him. He was a very bad tempered man. I know from my own personal knowledge that he would take food that was put out for the prisoners, and sell some to Japanese civilians in the neighbourhood. I have seen him passing the food out to the civilians. On account of this, we were deprived of food from the rations which were weighed out for us.

During the time I was employed in the Muroran Steel works, the work was for Military purposes, the steel being made and sent to an armament factory - producing Gun Barrils. The other factory being only a few miles away. The Muroran Steel Works was exposed to Bombing attacks by American Planes. In June 1945 the Muroran Steel Works were completely wiped out in a Bombing Raid and by Navy shellings. The steel works were not bombed during the period I was employed there. The bombing took place about three or four days after I left the Works and went to work in another Prison Camp at "Niri Asibitu, situated in the centre of Hokkaido where I was employed in a Lumber Camp and finally in a Coal mine. I was working in the Coal mine when peace was declared on the 3rd or 4th of September 1945.

When I was transferred from Furukawa Prison Camp to "Nisi 'sibetu" Prison Camp Commandant Hirati was also transferred.

He still continued being abusive to the Prisoners, and appeared to be indifferent as to what happened to the Prisoners.

Collective punishments which all prisoners were subjected to, consisted of making the entire camp go without a meal for some minor offence for which a culprit could not be found.

On these occasions the entire camp would be made to stand or parade during the period allowed for meal and on several occasions, we were made to stand up all night and then made to go to work at daylight the next morning. If any prisoner showed signs of going to sleep he was slapped by one of the Guards.

After peace was declared, Hirati made himself more pleasant and he ordered that all Officers and N.C.O's to attend a Japanese dinner at the Camp at which dinner he presided. I attended the dinner. The dinner was given just before the relieving forces arrived at the Camp.

I left Japan on the 11th of September 1945. and I arrived back in New Zealand about the 23rd of October 1945. I arrived back in New Zealand by the "A.V. Indies".

When I was taken prisoner my rank was "Sergeant Pilot" of the R.N.Z.A.F. When I arrived back in New Zealand I was promoted to Warrant Officer.

/s/ I. D. Neill 12/4/46

I - Ian Douglas Howlands of 17 Jeffery Street-
Anderson Bay-Dunedin, New Zealand- apprentice
carpenter declare that the five page statement was
made by me concerning my treatment while a prisoner
of War in Japan.
And I make this solemn declaration conscientiously
believing same to be true and by virtue of the
Justices of the Peace Act 1927.
Declared at Dunedin this 12th day of April 1946, before
me.

/s/ R. Mills, J. P.
Justice of the Peace.

EXHIBIT 1920A Doc 8026 #

書類第八〇二六號

私「アイアン・ダグラス・ニューランツ」
 ハ嚴肅且誠實ニ申シ立テマス。
 私ハ幼少時ニテ二十六歳「アンダーソン」
 ベイ・ドゥネイーンノ「ジェフアレイ」街
 十七番地ノ牧師住宅ニ父「ジョン・ニューラ
 ンツ」牧師ト共ニ住ンデ居リマス。
 私ハ一八九〇年十二月一日ニ「ニュージ
 ランド」ノ埠除ニ入りマシタ。
 X X X X X X X X X X X X
 約一週間後私ハ捕ヘラレテ中部「ジャバ
 ノ」ガロエトニ連行サレマシタ。私ハ日
 本人ニ捕ヘラレマシタ。一八九二年三月二
 十五日ニ他ノ航空隊員ト共ニ汽車デ「パタビ
 ヤ」ヘ移サレ「ボエイ・グロツク」監獄ニ
 入ラレマシタ。私達ハ八ヶ月ノ間其處ニ
 留マリ、ソレカラ日本ヘ船デ廻バレマシタ。
 私ハデイアンチ丸デ新嘉坡ヘ行キ「チヤン
 キ」監獄ニ十日間滞在ノ後、他ノ俘虜達ト
 共ニ「トウホク」丸ニ乗セラレテ南日本ノ門
 司ニ連レケ行カレマシタ。私ハ赤痢、熱病
 ニ罹リ、
 シタ。

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 8026 *

マシタ。病院ノ状態ハ良好デナク食物ハ悪ク病氣ノ歐洲人ニハ不適當ナモノデアリマシタ。此ノ病院ニハ日本ノ醫者カ數名居リマシタカ、總テノ醫療手續ハ經算々醫部ニ屬シテキタ數名ノ米國ハ淨房ニ任セラレテイマシタ。此ノ病院ニハ大体日八十八位ノ歐洲人淨房カ居タデウガ。私ガ病人トシテ在院中ノ二ヶ月ノ間ニ約五十人死亡シマシタ、其ノ大部分ハ醫療手當ノ不足ノ爲デシタ。ソノ病院ノ設備ハ全ク貧弱デアリ私達ハバニ々々ニ藥ガ致イテアル狹イ寢室ノ板床デ眠ラナクレバナリマホシデシタ。私達ハ皆ソナ無茶苦茶ニ語メ込マレ、約十二限ト十限シカナイ狹イ寢室ニ八人デ寝ナケレバナリマホシデシタ。此ノ時分、地上ニハ約二限ノ積雪ガアリマシタ。病婦カラ私ハ日本ノ北部ニアル北海道室蘭ノ淨房收容所ニテラレマシタ。收容所ハ「函館第一」トシテ知ラレテキマシタ。

XXXXXX
XXXXXX
XXXXXX
XXXXXX
XXXXXX
XXXXXX
XXXXXX

此ノ收容所ニ於ケル最初ノ一年間ノ状態ハ非常ニヒドイモノデアリマシタ。食料ハ甚ダ不足シ且不適當ナモノデ、私達全部ガ脚氣

★ Doc 8026

其他ノ榮養失調ニ罹リマシタ。醫藥品ノ供給
 ハナク、病院ノ管理ト病人報告ヲ擔當シテキ
 タ日本人曹長ハ醫者テハアリマセンバシタ。
 此ノ曹長(名前ヲ私ハ思ヒ出シマセンガ)ハ
 病氣ヲソレニ不適當ナ人々ヲ管時コノ收容所
 ノ俘虜起ル役サレテ居タ室員製鋼所テ屋外
 ノ冬空ノ下テ石炭、鐵、鑄塊ノ運搬ノ如キ
 重労働ニ強制使役シタノデアリマス。私達
 ハ日ノ出カラ夕方ハ暗クナル迄十三日同引續
 イテ働カサレタ後一日ノ休暇ヲ與ヘラレマシ
 タ。殆ド何等ノ理由ナシニ監獄ノ看守、工
 場ノ親方或ハ監督者カラ毆ラレルノハ俘虜ニ
 トツテ全ク普通ノ事デアリマシタ。時トシ
 テハ日本語ヲ以テ命令サレ、ソレヲ私達カ理
 解出来ナイ爲從ハナカツタ事ニ對シテ毆打シ
 タノデアリマス。私ハ棒デミドク叩カレ、
 殆ド毎日ノ様ニ平手デ毆ラレマシタ。仕事
 ガ済ンテ收容所ニ居ル時、度々、夜中全ク時
 ヲカマハズ起サレテ部屋ニ整列シテ番馬ヲカ
 ケサセラレ日本式訓練ヲサセラレマシタ。
 其ノ度毎ニ數人ノ着ガ衛兵ノ不満ヲ買ツテ
 罰セラレルノヲ常トシマシタ。

X X X X X X X X X X X X

Doc 80267

4.

之ハ指揮官「ヒラチ」ガ其ノ張本人デア
 コトハ、コノ收容所デハヨク知ラレテオマシ
 タ。特別ナル虐待ノ例ガ一九四三年五月七
 日ニ起リマシタ。私ハ自ラ此ノ事件ヲ目撃
 シマシタ。ソレハ「バリンコート」云々一人ノ
 和蘭兵俘虜ガ数名ノ日本人看守カラ品物ヲ盗
 ンダト云フ罪ヲキセラレタノデアリマス。
 彼ハ私ノ居タト同ジ轄内ノ俘虜仲間ニ屬シ
 テオマシタ。一九四三年五月七日ノ二、三
 日前デシタ、彼ハ製鋼所へ仕事ニ行ク事ヲ許
 サレズ、看守室後ノ小室ニ入レラレマシタ
 此ノ時私ハ病氣ノ爲收容所ニ引籠ツテオマ
 シタノデドンナ事カ行ハレタカラ見タノデア
 リマス。彼ハ替倉ニ入レラレタ後ハ食事ヲ
 與ヘラレズ、二三時間毎ニ小室カラ引キ出サ
 レテ私及ヒ他ノ俘虜ノ病人カラモ、マル見エ
 ノ場所デ看守カラ棒、帶草デ打タレ、拳骨デ
 毆ラレマシタ。之等ノ毆打ヲ受ケタ時彼ハ
 タ、薄イ着物ヲ着テオルバカリデシタ。
 コレハ一九四三年五月七日遂ニ彼ガ死ヲ迎
 ケラレマシタ。一九四三年五月七日彼ハ裸
 体ノ背中ヲヒドク打タレ、裂傷、打撲傷、其
 他ノ創痕ガハツキ見エマシタ。仲間ノ俘

★
Doc 8026

廚テ「ラタート」ト云フ和蘭人ノ醫者ヘジヤワ
人「ハ」バリン「コ」ヲ私ケル事ヲ許サレマセ
ンデシタ。指揮官「ヒ」ラ「チ」ハ「バ」リン「己」
ガ毆打サ「テ」ホ「時」以「同」現場ニ來テ彼ノ罪ヲ
白狀サセヨツト試「テ」居ル様デシタ。一寸
シタ罪「ソ」モ多クハ全クノ無實ノ罪ノタメ
ニ俘虜ヲ營倉ニ入「レ」食事ヲ與ヘズ二、三時間
毎ニ之ヲ毆打スル事ハ收容所ノ普通ノヤリ方
デアリマシタ。
私ノ階級ガ飛行軍曹デアツタ爲私ハ色々ノ
場合ニ週番軍曹ヲ命ゼラレマシタ。
私ガ週番軍曹ヲシテホタ或日ノ事「ソ」レハ
一カ四三年八月九日デシタガ「私」ハ料理部看
守長ノ「シ」キ「ス」タ「カ」ラ多敷ノ病人ノ俘虜ニ
對シ收容所ノ「賞」賜ヲスル事ヲ命ズル様ニト
言ハレマシタ。ソレハ料理場用ノ貯藏品ヲ
運搬自動車カラ料理小屋ノ倉庫ヘ運ブコトデ
アリマシタ。「シ」キ「ス」タ「ハ」私ガ彼ニ云ツ
タ事カラ「俘」虜ハ如何ナル種類ノ仕事ニモ適
シナイト云フ事ヲ理解出來タ筈デス。ソレ
テ私ハ彼等ニソノ仕事ヲセヨト命ズルコトヲ
斷リマシタ。「シ」キ「ス」タ「ハ」ソ「コ」デ自分ノ
縮メテホタ分厚ノ荷革ヲ取リハツシテ「ソ」レ

5.

Doc 8026

テ私ヲヒドク毆打シマシク。 彼ハ私ノ頭ヲ
毆リマシタ。 仏ハ續イテ頭ヲ打タレヌ様兩
手ヲ舉テマシタ所今度ハ胸體ヲ打テマシタ。
ソノ時私ハ薄イ服ヲ着テキタノデ腕ヤ背中
ヤ脚ニ無數ノ切り傷ヲ受ケマシタ。 彼ハ五
分間バカリ私ヲ毆打シタ後ヤツト止メマシタ
ガ、其時帶車ノ銃ガ飛ンデ、金島ノ縮メ金ガ
コワレマシタ。 ソレカラ私ハ私ノ仕事ヲ續
ケテサセラレマシタ。 私ハ「シキスター」ガ
少シデモ氣に入ラコトガアルト逆上シテ他
ノ浮島達ヲモ同様ニ手當次第ノ物デ毆打スル
ノヲ見マシタ。 彼ハ極メテ不機嫌ナ人間デ
アリマシタ。 私ハ自分デ見テ知ツテキマス
ガ彼ハ浮島ノ分トシテ割當テアル食糧ヲ取ツ
テ近所ノ日本人達ニ賣リマシタ。 私ハ彼ガ
一般人ニ食糧ヲ渡シテキルノヲ見マシタ。
コノタメ私達ハ私達ノ爲ニ日方ヲ秤ツテ分
ケテアル食糧ヲ奪ハレタノデアリマス。
私ガ寮蘭製鋼所テ役サレテキタ當時、仕
事ハ軍ノ仕事デアツテ、造ラレタ鋼鐵ハ銃砲
身製造ノ兵器工場ヘ送ラレマシタ。 ソノ兵
器工場ハ僅カニ、三哩シカ離レテ居リマセン
デシタ。 宜蘭製鋼所ハ米國飛行機ノ爆撃ニ

Doc 8026

7.

曝サレテキマシタ。一九四五年六月空襲製鋼所ハ翌朝ト

海軍ノ砲撃ニ依ツテ全滅シマシタ。製鋼所ハ私ガ

使役サレテキル間ニ爆撃サレマセンデシタ。

爆撃ハ私ガコノ工場ヲシツテ北海道ノ中央部

ニアルクニシ、アシベツノ浮房收容所ニ働キ

ニ行ツタニ、同日後ニ行ハシタノデシタ。

「ニシ、アシベツ」デハ私ハ村木小舎デ働キ

次デ農坑デ働キマシタ。

一九四五年ノ九月三日カ四日ニ和平ガ發表

サレマシタガ、其時私ハ農坑デ働イテ居リマ

シタ。

私ガ空襲收容所カラ「ニシ、アシベツ」收

容所ニ移サレタ時收容所ノ指揮官「ヒラチ」

モ又移サレマシタ。彼ハ尙浮房~~待~~ヲ續ケ

浮房ガドウナラウト無關心ノ様ニ見エマシタ。

浮房全体ガ安ケル集團處罰ハトルニモ足りナ

イ小サナ罪ニシテ、其犯人ガ發見出來ナイ場

合、全收容所ノ者ガ一食抜キニスルコトデシ

タ。此ノ場合全收容所ノ者ハ與ヘラレタ食

事時間中整列シテ立タセラレ、又數回ハ、私

達ハ一晩中立タサレ、ソレカノ翌朝夜明ケト

共ニ仕事ニ行カサレマシタ。若シモ浮房ガ一寸

一寸デモ眠リソウナ様子デモ見セヨウモノナ

Doc 8026 #

ラ看守カウ平手テ殿ラレルノデシタ。

X X X X X X X X X X X X X

8.

ex. # 1922

PROTOCOL CONCERNING TREATMENT OF ALLIED AIR FORCE FLIGHT PERSONNEL
IN THE CENTRAL DISTRICT
(PART I)

The Central Investigation Committee relating to Prisoners of War

December 26, 1945

/written in ink/ two copies duly submitted

I. FOREWORD

This Protocol was drawn up on the basis of a Report from the Chief Officer of Central District Demobilization Office (Ex-Commander of the Central Military District), and as regards the details thereof, same shall be submitted after making further investigations.

II. SUMMARY

Total number of the Allied Air Force Flight Personnel who were captured within the Central Military District by the Japanese Army was about forty-nine, of whom three were sent to Tokyo; about six died from injuries and sickness; two were put to death after trial by court-martial; and the rest of about thirty-eight, were put to death without being court-martialled.

III. THOSE SENT TO TOKYO

A man who was captured in the Tokai District (This District belonged at the time to the Central Military District) early in January of 1945, as well as two men who machine-gunned the air fields and transport facilities within the Military District in daytime during the end of July and on the 7th of August - three persons in all - were sent to Tokyo. The names of the flight personnel, the units that captured them, and the dates when they were sent to Tokyo, have not yet become clarified.

IV. THOSE WHO DIED FROM INJURIES AND SICKNESS AFTER CAPTURE.

1. One of the flight personnel (Hamilton) who made a reconnoitering flight over the Hanshin (Osaka-Kobe) district on the night of May 8th, 1945, died after capture from injuries and sickness.
2. Besides the above, seven persons who made a strafing and bombing attack on Osaka City on the _____ (TH - the character is not clear) of June, 1945, twenty-five persons who made a strafing and bombing attack on Kobe City in daytime of the 5th of the same month; six persons who made a strafing and bombing attack on Osaka City and suburbs thereof in daytime of the 26th of the same month; three persons who made a strafing and bombing attack

on Osaka City and suburbs thereof, and who were captured in Wakayama Prefecture on the 2nd of July; one person who shot non-combatants near Osaka City on the 30th of the same month; and one person who strafed fishing vessels and railways along the coast of Wakayama Prefecture in daytime of the 9th of August of the same year, made in all, forty-three persons, of whom about five persons died from injuries and sickness. Their names, however, cannot be ascertained as the pertaining documents have been destroyed by fire.

V. PERSONS WHO WERE PUT TO DEATH AFTER BEING TRIED BY COURT MARTIAL.

1. Two persons (Nelson and Aukmuth) (T.S. Phonetic) who were captured after they had made incendiary bomb raids on Osaka City on the night of the 14th of March, 1945 and on Kobe City on the night of the 17th of March, were sent to the 15th Area Army's Court Martial by the Central District M.P. Unit in the middle of May. As a result of investigations carried out by Prosecution Officer, Major-General (j.g.) (Legal) Kiyomi OTAWARA, it was ascertained that the two men belonged to the American Air Unit at Saipan (the name of the Unit is not clear as the documents were destroyed by fire). 2nd Lt. Nelson was an air navigator and sergeant Aukmuth (Phonetic), served as a radio operator. They took part several times in bombing raids on Tokyo, Nagoya and Hamamatsu about January and February, 1945 and came over Tokyo again with about 300 other planes on the 8th of March in the same year and dropped oil incendiary bombs on the center of the city. They made similar incendiary bombing raids on the center of Osaka City on the 14th, and the center of Kobe City on the 17th of the same month. Moreover, as a result of these attacks, large unspecified numbers of casualties occurred among non-combatant people and their private properties reduced to ashes.
2. Consequently, concerning the indictment and term of punishment, the 15th Area Army Commander (concurrently the Central Military District Commander) submitted a written report to the Minister of War, together with the opinion of the Prosecution Officer recommending the death penalty for both of them in about the middle of June, and indicted them upon receipt of approval in the latter part of June.
3. On the 18th of July in the same year, at the tribunal of the 15th Area Army Headquarters, the five persons, viz. Judge, Major Tokuo YAMANAKA; Army Judicial, Captain Takeshi ONO; 1st Lieutenant Hideo MATSUMORI; Witnessing Prosecutor, Judicial 1st Lieutenant Yorio OGIYA; and Witnessing Recorder, Judicial Sergeant-Major Yoichi SHIMAZUKA, held a court-martial trial of the said two persons and adjudicated that the two should have the death penalty imposed on them according to Article III, as their acts came under the terms of Martial Law Article II,

Paragraphs 1 and 2, concerning Punishment of Enemy Plane Flight Personnel.

4. Execution of the sentence was carried out at the Army Manoeuvring Area at Yokoyama Village, Izumi Kita District, Osaka Prefecture at 4:00 p.m. on the 18th of July, 1945, when the two men were executed by a firing squad in the presence of the following witnesses: Chief Executor Judicial Army Captain Kanji MAKAMICHI; Execution Director Judicial Army 1st Lt. Yorio OGIYA; Witnessing Medical Officer Army Surgeon 1st Lt. MINAMI; Active Executors Judicial Sergeant-Major Toru MATSUDA; Sergeant-Major Seisaku MITA; Sergeant Yoshitomi MATSUI; and Witnessing Recorder, Judicial Sergeant-Major Yoichi SHIMAZU.
5. The bodies, which were temporarily buried on the same day, were cremated at the same place on the 24th of August and then formally laid to rest at the Army Cemetery at Senadayama on the following day, the 25th.

VI. THOSE WHO WERE SENT TO DEATH WITHOUT UNDERGOING COURT MARTIAL

1. The Flight Personnel coming under this Clause are seven men who made a strafing and bombing raid on Osaka City on the 1st of June, 1945; twenty-five men who made a strafing and bombing raid on Kobe City during the daytime of the 5th of the same month; six men who made a strafing and bombing raid on Osaka City and suburbs thereof during the daytime of the 26th of the same month; three men who were captured in Wakayama Prefecture on the 2nd of July after they made a strafing and bombing raid on Osaka City and suburbs; one man who machine gunned non-combatants near Osaka City on the 30th of the same month; and one man who machine-gunned fishing vessels and railways along the coast of Wakayama Prefecture during the daytime of the 9th of August in the same year, totalling forty-three men in all, of whom about five men died of injuries or sickness, which makes a net total of thirty-eight men, whose names, however, cannot be ascertained due to the pertaining documents having been destroyed by fire.
2. The Central Military District Headquarters, issued orders in about April, 1945 in the name of the Chief of Staff to the effect that all information collected from air flight personnel captured within the Central Military District should be reported en bloc by the Central District M.P. Headquarters to the Commander of the Military District. Moreover, although at that time, the Central District M.P. Commander was subordinated to the M.P. Commander in Tokyo, as regards guard duties, he came under the delegated command of the Central Military District Commander.

3. The intensification of air raids from June, 1945 onwards, brought about a gradual increase also in the number of captured air flight personnel, but although the Central District M.P. Unit, following thorough investigations on the strength of the afore-mentioned orders, secured evidence of violation of martial law in each of these cases, these flight personnel could not be brought before Court-Martial due to the 15th Area Army Headquarters (an operational unit incorporated into one body with the Central Military District Headquarters, and the greater part of whose personnel were holding additional posts with the Military District Headquarters) being too busily occupied in the preparation of defence operations against the intensified air-raids and supposed landing on our mainland by the U. S. forces, and on account of the Judicial Department, too, being kept busy in dealing with cases of violation of military discipline.

At that time, the Central Military District Army opined that the intensification of air-raids since the autumn of the year before - especially the fact that many lives and considerable private property had been destroyed as a result of the indiscriminate incendiary bombings on Tokyo, Nagoya, Osaka and Kobe, etc., since March of this year, had roused the indignation of the nation - especially towards the flight personnel - to an exceedingly high pitch.

4. As, under the afore-mentioned circumstances, the Central District M.P. Unit received no instructions from the Central Military District Headquarters, regarding the measures to be taken against the flight personnel, they contacted the Tokyo M.P. Headquarters, and on the occasion of the first execution in the beginning of July, same was carried out by also contacting the Military District Headquarters.

As stated above, the said total of forty-three persons were executed by shooting in several lots by special personnel at the manoeuver area at Nobutayama, Izumi-Kita Gun, Osaka Prefecture and the firing range at Higashi-ku, Osaka City, from the period between the beginning of July to the middle of August, and their bodies were buried at the same places. However, although some of the bodies seem to have been buried at the Army Cemetery at Sandayama, details are unknown.

VII. FUTURE COUNTER-MEASURES

As the executions in the preceding clause not only contain points violating the laws and regulations prescribed by the Japanese Army, but as there are also points requiring clarification as regards the responsibilities of the parties concerned, we are at present investigating into the matter so as to put same on trial.

PROTOCOL CONCERNING TREATMENT OF ALLIED AIR FORCE FLIGHT PERSONNEL
IN THE CENTRAL DISTRICT
(PART I)

The Central Investigation Committee relating to Prisoners of War

December 26, 1945

/written in ink/ two copies duly submitted

I. FOREWORD

This Protocol was drawn up on the basis of a report from the Chief Officer of Central District Demobilization Office (Ex-Commander of the Central Military District), and as regards the details thereof, same shall be submitted after making further investigations.

II. SUMMARY

Total number of the Allied Air Force Flight Personnel who were captured within the Central Military District by the Japanese Army was about forty-nine, of whom three were sent to Tokyo; about six died from injuries and sickness; two were put to death after trial by court-martial; and the rest of about thirty-eight, were put to death without being court-martialled.

III. THOSE SENT TO TOKYO

A man who was captured in the Tokai District (This District belonged at the time to the Central Military District) early in January of 1945, as well as two men who machine-gunned the air fields and transport facilities within the Military District in daytime during the end of July and on the 7th of August - three persons in all - were sent to Tokyo. The names of the flight personnel, the units that captured them, and the dates when they were sent to Tokyo, have not yet become clarified.

IV. THOSE WHO DIED FROM INJURIES AND SICKNESS AFTER CAPTURE.

1. One of the flight personnel (Hamilton) who made a reconnoitering flight over the Hanshin (Osaka-Kobe) District on the night of Nov. 8th, 1945, died after capture from injuries and sickness.
2. Besides the above, seven persons who made a strafing and bombing attack on Osaka City on the _____ (TW - the character is not clear) of June, 1945, twenty-five persons who made a strafing and bombing attack on Kobe City in daytime of the 5th of the same month; six persons who made a strafing and bombing attack on Osaka City and suburbs thereof in daytime of the 26th of the same month; three persons who made a strafing and bombing attack

on Osaka City and suburbs thereof, and who were captured in Wakayama Prefecture on the 2nd of July; one person who shot non-combatants near Osaka City on the 30th of the same month; and one person who strafed fishing vessels and railways along the coast of Wakayama Prefecture in daytime of the 9th of August of the same year, made in all, forty-three persons, of whom about five persons died from injuries and sickness. Their names, however, cannot be ascertained as the pertaining documents have been destroyed by fire.

V. PERSONS WHO WERE PUT TO DEATH AFTER BEING TRIED BY COURT MARTIAL.

1. Two persons (Nelson and Auknuth) (T.N. Phonetic) who were captured after they had made incendiary bomb raids on Osaka City on the night of the 14th of March, 1945 and on Kobe City on the night of the 17th of March, were sent to the 15th Area Army's Court Martial by the Central District M.P. Unit in the middle of May. As a result of investigations carried out by Prosecution Officer, Major-General (J.G.) (Legal) KIYOMI OTAWARA, it was ascertained that the two men belonged to the American Air Unit at Saipan (the name of the Unit is not clear as the documents were destroyed by fire). 2nd Lt. Nelson was an air navigator and sergeant Auknuth (Phonetic), served as a radio operator. They took part several times in bombing raids on Tokyo, Nagoya and Hamamatsu about January and February, 1945 and came over Tokyo again with about 300 other planes on the 8th of March in the same year and dropped oil incendiary bombs on the center of the city. They made similar incendiary bombing raids on the center of Osaka City on the 14th, and the center of Kobe City on the 17th of the same month. Moreover, as a result of these attacks, large unspecified numbers of casualties occurred among non-combatant people and their private properties reduced to ashes.
2. Consequently, concerning the indictment and term of punishment, the 15th Area Army Commander (concurrently the Central Military District Commander) submitted a written report to the Minister of War, together with the opinion of the Prosecution Officer recommending the death penalty for both of them in about the middle of June, and indicted them upon receipt of approval in the latter part of June.
3. On the 18th of July in the same year, at the tribunal of the 15th Area Army headquarters, the five persons, viz. Judge, Major Tokuo YAMANAKA; Army Judicial, Captain Takeshi ONO; 1st Lieutenant Hideo MATSUMORI; Witnessing Prosecutor, Judicial 1st Lieutenant Yorio OGIYA; and Witnessing Recorder, Judicial Sergeant-Major Yoichi SHIMAMURA, held a court-martial trial of the said two persons and adjudicated that the two should have the death penalty imposed on them according to Article III, as their acts came under the terms of Martial Law Article II,

Paragraphs 1 and 2, concerning Punishment of Enemy Plane Flight Personnel.

4. Execution of the sentence was carried out at the Army Manoeuver Area at Yokoyama Village, Izumi Kita District, Osaka Prefecture at 4:00 p.m. on the 19th of July, 1945, when the two men were executed by a firing squad in the presence of the following witnesses: Chief Executor Judicial Army Captain Kanji NAKAMICHI; Execution Director Judicial Army 1st Lt. Yorio OGIYA; Witnessing Medical Officer Army Surgeon 1st Lt. MINAMI; Active Executors Judicial Sergeant-Major Toru MATSUDA; Sergeant-Major Seisaku MITA; Sergeant Yoshitami MATSUI; and Witnessing Recorder, Judicial Sergeant-Major Koichi SHIMAZURA.
5. The bodies, which were temporarily buried on the same day, were cremated at the same place on the 24th of August and then formally laid to rest at the Army Cemetery at Senadayama on the following day, the 25th.

VI. THOSE WHO WERE PUT TO DEATH WITHOUT UNDERGOING COURTE MARTIAL

1. The Flight Personnel coming under this Clause are seven men who made a strafing and bombing raid on Osaka City on the 1st of June, 1945; twenty-five men who made a strafing and bombing raid on Kobe City during the daytime of the 5th of the same month; six men who made a strafing and bombing raid on Osaka City and suburbs thereof during the daytime of the 26th of the same month; three men who were captured in Wakayama Prefecture on the 2nd of July after they made a strafing and bombing raid on Osaka City and suburbs; one man who machine gunned non-combatants near Osaka City on the 30th of the same month; and one man who machine-gunned fishing vessels and railways along the coast of Wakayama Prefecture during the daytime of the 9th of August in the same year, totalling forty-three men in all, of whom about five men died of injuries or sickness, which makes a net total of thirty-eight men, whose names, however, cannot be ascertained due to the pertaining documents having been destroyed by fire.
2. The Central Military District Headquarters, issued orders in about April, 1945 in the name of the Chief of Staff to the effect that all information collected from air flight personnel captured within the Central Military District should be reported en bloc by the Central District M.P. Headquarters to the Commander of the Military District. Moreover, although at that time, the Central District M.P. Commander was subordinated to the M.P. Commander in Tokyo, as regards guard duties, he came under the delegated command of the Central Military District Commander.

Paragraphs 1 and 2, concerning Punishment of Enemy Plane Flight Personnel.

4. Execution of the sentence was carried out at the Army Manoeuver Area at Yokoyama Village, Izumi Kita District, Osaka Prefecture at 4:00 p.m. on the 19th of July, 1945, when the two men were executed by a firing squad in the presence of the following witnesses: Chief Executor Judicial Army Captain Kanji NAKAMICHI; Execution Director Judicial Army 1st Lt. Yorio OGIYA; Witnessing Medical Officer Army Surgeon 1st Lt. MINAMI; Active Executors Judicial Sergeant-Major Toru MATSUDA; Sergeant-Major Seisaku NITA; Sergeant Yoshitomi MATSUI; and Witnessing Recorder, Judicial Sergeant-Major Koichi SHIMAZURA.
5. The bodies, which were temporarily buried on the same day, were cremated at the same place on the 24th of August and then formally laid to rest at the Army Cemetery at Senadayama on the following day, the 25th.

VI. THOSE WHO WERE PUT TO DEATH WITHOUT UNDERGOING COURT MARTIAL

1. The Flight Personnel coming under this Clause are seven men who made a strafing and bombing raid on Osaka City on the 1st of June, 1945; twenty-five men who made a strafing and bombing raid on Kobe City during the daytime of the 5th of the same month; six men who made a strafing and bombing raid on Osaka City and suburbs thereof during the daytime of the 26th of the same month; three men who were captured in Wakayama Prefecture on the 2nd of July after they made a strafing and bombing raid on Osaka City and suburbs; one man who machine gunned non-combatants near Osaka City on the 30th of the same month; and one man who machine-gunned fishing vessels and railways along the coast of Wakayama Prefecture during the daytime of the 9th of August in the same year, totalling forty-three men in all, of whom about five men died of injuries or sickness, which makes a net total of thirty-eight men, whose names, however, cannot be ascertained due to the pertaining documents having been destroyed by fire.
2. The Central Military District Headquarters, issued orders in about April, 1945 in the name of the Chief of Staff to the effect that all information collected from air flight personnel captured within the Central Military District should be reported en bloc by the Central District M.P. Headquarters to the Commander of the Military District. Moreover, although at that time, the Central District M.P. Commander was subordinated to the M.P. Commander in Tokyo, as regards guard duties, he came under the delegated command of the Central Military District Commander.

3. The intensification of air raids from June, 1945 onwards, brought about a gradual increase also in the number of captured air flight personnel, but although the Central District M.P. Unit, following through investigations on the strength of the afore-mentioned orders, secured evidence of violation of Martial Law in each of these cases, these flight personnel could not be brought before Court-Martial due to the 15th Area Army Headquarters (an operational unit incorporated into one body with the Central Military District Headquarters, and the greater part of whose personnel were holding additional posts with the Military District Headquarters) being too busily occupied in the preparation of defence operations against the intensified air-raids and supposed landing on our mainland by the U. S. forces, and on account of the Judicial Department, too, being kept busy in dealing with cases of violation of military discipline.

At that time, the Central Military District Army opined that the intensification of air-raids since the autumn of the year before - especially the fact that many lives and considerable private property had been destroyed as a result of the indiscriminate incendiary bombings on Tokyo, Nagoya, Osaka and Kobe, etc., since March of this year, had roused the indignation of the nation - especially towards the flight personnel - to an exceedingly high pitch.

4. As, under the afore-mentioned circumstances, the Central District M.P. Unit received no instructions from the Central Military District Headquarters, regarding the measures to be taken against the flight personnel, they contacted the Tokyo M.P. Headquarters, and on the occasion of the first execution in the beginning of July, same was carried out by also contacting the Military District Headquarters.

As stated above, the said total of forty-three persons were executed by shooting in several lots by special personnel at the manoeuvre area at Kobutayama, Izumi-Kita Gun, Osaka Prefecture and the firing range at Higashi-ku, Osaka City, from the period between the beginning of July to the middle of August, and their bodies were buried at the same places. However, although some of the bodies seem to have been buried at the Army Cemetery at Sandayama, details are unknown.

VII. FUTURE COUNTER-MEASURES

As the executions in the preceding clause not only contain points violating the laws and regulations prescribed by the Japanese Army, but as there are also points requiring clarification as regards the responsibilities of the parties concerned, we are at present investigating into the matter so as to put same on trial.

3. The intensification of air raids from June, 1945 onwards, brought about a gradual increase also in the number of captured air flight personnel, but although the Central District M.P. Unit, following through investigations on the strength of the afore-mentioned orders, secured evidence of violation of martial law in each of these cases, these flight personnel could not be brought before Court-Martial due to the 15th Area Army Headquarters (an operational unit incorporated into one body with the Central Military District Headquarters, and the greater part of whose personnel were holding additional posts with the Military District Headquarters) being too busily occupied in the preparation of defence operations against the intensified air-raids and supposed landing on our mainland by the U. S. forces, and on account of the Judicial Department, too, being kept busy in dealing with cases of violation of military discipline.

At that time, the Central Military District Army opined that the intensification of air-raids since the autumn of the year before - especially the fact that many lives and considerable private property had been destroyed as a result of the indiscriminate incendiary bombings on Tokyo, Nagoya, Osaka and Kobe, etc., since March of this year, had roused the indignation of the nation - especially towards the flight personnel - to an exceedingly high pitch.

4. As, under the afore-mentioned circumstances, the Central District M.P. Unit received no instructions from the Central Military District Headquarters, regarding the measures to be taken against the flight personnel, they contacted the Tokyo M.P. Headquarters, and on the occasion of the first execution in the beginning of July, same was carried out by also contacting the Military District Headquarters.

As stated above, the said total of forty-three persons were executed by shooting in several lots by special personnel at the manoeuvre area at Kobutayama, Izumi-Kita Gun, Osaka Prefecture and the firing range at Higashi-ku, Osaka City, from the period between the beginning of July to the middle of August, and their bodies were buried at the same places. However, although some of the bodies seem to have been buried at the Army Cemetery at Sandayama, details are unknown.

VII. FUTURE COUNTER-MEASURES

As the executions in the preceding clause not only contain points violating the laws and regulations prescribed by the Japanese Army, but as there are also points requiring clarification as regards the responsibilities of the parties concerned, we are at present investigating into the matter so as to put same on trial.

E. # 1923

PROTOCOL CONCERNING THE HANDLING OF THE CREWS OF ALLIED PLANES
IN THE CENTRAL DISTRICT
PART II

27 March 1946

Central Investigation Committee
Concerned with POW

I. Foreword

This Protocol is a compiled collection of the reports made by those in command of demobilization in the Central District, and of the statements made by those who have connections with the Military Police, made in regard to "Protocol Concerning the Handling of the Crews of Allied Planes in the Central District, Part I," dated 26 December 1945.

- II. The total number of crew members of Allied planes captured by the Japanese Forces in the Central Military District was about 49. The conditions of treatment of these men are as described in Annexed Sheets Nos. 1, 2 and 3.
- III. The following are the results found through the further investigations of the cases which have been disposed of informally, without the formal proceedings of a court martial.

- A. In regard to the outline of the handling of Allied Airmen in the Central Military District at that time:

Early in April (or late in March) of 1945, the Central Military District dispatched an order in the name of the Chief of Staff to the effect that the collection of information from captured airmen should be summed up at the Military Police Headquarters of the Central District, but the assignment of personnel to this work was not especially directed.

The Military Police Unit of the Central District, took charge of security, protection, billeting, provisions, and sanitation of the captured airmen, based upon the above order, and the basic duties of the Military Police, before, during and after the investigations.

There was an instruction that the Army will fully investigate the captured airmen and those who did not violate any military regulation will be interned in POW Camps, while those who violated any military regulation will be charged before a court martial which will dispose of the cases based upon its decisions. However, the disposition of these captured airmen was delayed because bombings caused disruption of transportation and communications, and preparations for the operations were complicated.

B. In regard to the public feeling against the captured airmen.

After the bombings of the Japanese Mainland were initiated, not only were fearful air raids against important facilities continued, but in various places the losses in lives and properties of non-combatants started to mount. Accompanying this, the hostile feelings of the people began to increase. However, in March when large cities such as Tokyo, Nagoya, Osaka and Kobe began to suffer indiscriminate incendiary bombing raids, and huge losses were suffered, the peoples' feelings suddenly became violent and their hostile feelings increased. The general public opinion against the captured airmen hardened conspicuously. Later on, the indiscriminate bombings by Allied aircraft became increasingly and ceaselessly violent and the peoples' spirit of vengeance reached its limit. The situation came to the point where even Japanese airmen who parachuted down were in danger of harm, because the people did not take time to make distinctions.

C. Relationship between the Central District Military Police Unit Headquarters and the Military Police Headquarters in regard to punishments.

1. Accompanying the sharp increase in air raids against the mainland in the spring and summer of 1945, the number of captured airmen increased considerably. However, for various reasons, every unit was unable to speedily bring these men to courts martial. Because of this, the Military Police Unit in the various areas had difficulties in the internment of these men on account of the poor and crowded internment facilities. Around June of 1945, Lt. General OKIDO, Sanji, the Military Police Commandant, after considering the general state of affairs, issued a personal message using the name of Colonel YAMAMURA, Yoshio, Chief of the External Affairs Section of the Military Police Headquarters. The message was issued to each Military Police Headquarters Commandant in the Northern, North-eastern, Eastern, Tokai, Central, Chugoku, Shikoku, and the Western District in regard to the handling of captured airmen.
2. The gist of the said personal message, according to the memories of those who were then connected with the Military Police Headquarters, is generally as follows:

Courts martial for captured airmen are generally at a standstill. Because of this, it seems that the internal personnel have increased and the various Military Police Units are feeling extreme difficulties in the handling of these men. From the standpoint of the Military Police, they hope for the acceleration of the courts martial. There are probably some men among the prisoners who carried out inhuman and indiscriminate bombings. It is only right that these men be immediately punished severely according to military regulations.

If it is impossible to make immediate dispositions by courts martial, perhaps other methods may unavoidably be used. However, it is up to the Military District Headquarters to decide which of the two methods should be adopted, and it is not a matter to be handled by the Military Police. Therefore, it is best to make contacts with the Chief of Staff of the Military District concerned, according to necessity. Moreover, it seems that he added that this case should first have the independent decision of the Chief of Staff of each Military District.

3. According to Major-General NAGATOMO, Tsuguo, Commandant of the Military Police Unit Headquarters of the Central District, he was trying to find a solution to the difficulties of the internment of the increased number of captured airmen. Since he received the aforementioned personal message at this time, it seems that he interpreted the intention of the message to mean immediate punishment of the captured airmen and he ordered his officers to make preparations accordingly.

D. Relationship between the Military Police Unit Headquarters of the Central District and the Central Military District Headquarters in regard to punishments.

1. Around the end of June (or the beginning of July), Major-General NAGATOMO, Commandant of the Military Police Unit of the Central District who received the said message, paid a visit to Lt. General KUNITAKE, Michio, the Chief of Staff of the Central Military District. NAGATOMO made the following statement: "As a result of investigating captured airmen, we find that their statements are generally all alike. Therefore, hereafter we will not submit every bit of information and we wish to take the appropriate measures for these airmen."

Lt. General KUNITAKE did not think that this negotiation was something in connection with anything as important as the punishment of the airmen, but he thought it was just a simple intelligence report. Therefore, he answered, "I acknowledge it," and turned his attention to extremely pressing problems of operation preparations, and countermeasures against air raids.

According to Lt. General KUNITAKE, it seems that he never even dreamed that the purpose of Major-General NAGATOMO's visit was the contact for the important matter based upon the personal message from the Military Police Unit Headquarters.

2. In the early part of June (the exact date is not known) Major SHINAI, Ikomaro, of the Military Police Unit Headquarters of the Central District visited Colonel OEA, Kojiro, a Staff Officer of the Central Military District and said, "Since we have had contact from the Military Police Headquarters, we will punish the captured airmen who are at present interned at the Military Police Unit of the Central District."

Thereupon, Colonel OEA asked, "Is it proved that all of these captured airmen actually carried out indiscriminate bombings?" It seems that Major SHINAI answered, "Yes,"

It appears that Colonel OEA thought that these punishments were matters concerning captured airmen who were under the administration of the Military Police Unit of the Central District and based upon the plans of the higher Military Police Headquarters to which the unit belonged. Therefore it seems that he answered, "It is inevitable, if they are to be punished by the Military Police Unit," thinking that it was unavoidable, since they were to be punished in the light of military regulations.

3. In regard to the two aforementioned items, Lt. General UCHIYAMA, Eitaro, the Commandant of the Central Military District had no knowledge of them, since he received no report regarding them at the time.

4. Conclusion.

Major-General NAGATOMO, Tsuguo, who is the principal party concerned with this case has been taken into custody by orders of the Allied Forces. Furthermore, the whereabouts of his chief subordinate officers are still unknown.

This protocol is based upon such investigations as are possible under such circumstances. Consequently, if investigations of these parties concerned can be carried out in the future, there may be some revisions and eliminations in this protocol.

Annexed Sheet No. 1

Place of capture	Date of capture	Nationality	Rank	Name	Unit designation and identification No.	Cause of death	Date of death	Place of death	Death certificate	Place of Disposition of corpse	Persons who know the place of burial	Address of person	
OSAKA-SHI YAMA-KU FUTATABI- YAMA	March 17, 1945	American	2nd Lieut- enant. Master- Sergeant	R.W. NELSON AUGNAS	Unknown	Executed by orders of Court Martial	July 18, 1945	OSAKA-FU SENHOKU- GUN YOKO- YAMA-MURA		OSAKA-SHI SANADAYAMA Army Ceme- tery	Crem- ated and buried	MATSUDA, TORU	OSAKA-FU NARAKOCHI-GUN OTO-MURA ISHIKIRI
OSAKA-FU FUSE-SHI TAKAIDA- Vicinity	May 8, 1945	AMERICAN	Captain	HAMILTON	Unknown			OSAKA-SHI HIGASHI-KU OSAZA Military Police HQ.		OSAKA-SHI SANADAYAMA Army Ceme- tery			
x	U N K N O W N	A M E R I C A N S	Captain	OTTO	U N K N O W N		From early in June, 1945 To around Aug. 10th 1945.	OSAKA-FU SENHOKU- GUN		OSAKA-SHI HIGASHI-KU Rifle-range.	buried	FUJIOKA, HIDEO	OSAKA-FU MISHIMA-GUN IBARAGI KACHI SHIMO-CHUJO 273 c/o OKUMURA HIDEO
			1st Lieut- enant.	COPE									
			1st Lieu- tenant	YOUNG									
			1st Lieu- tenant	SCHULTZ		Deaths from injuries and illnesses. (about 6)		SHINODAYAMA Maneuver Grounds.	One was drawn up but was burned	OSAKA-FU SENHOKU-GUN SHINODAYAMA Maneuver Grounds.			
			2nd Lieu- tenant	HIGA PADDLE		or excuted after thorough investigation and Court Martial.							
			Master- Sergeant	STRONG				OSAKA-SHI HIGASHI-KU Rifle-range					
			Master- Sergeant	RED.									
			Sergeant	CANSARA									
			Unknown	KEMBRING									
													(about 37 more)

- References. (1) This chart has been made from the memories of various persons in various areas because the original was burned. Therefore, some details are uncertain and absolute accuracy can not be expected.
- (2) The spellings of the names cannot be expected to be accurate.
- (3) The mark "x" under the column of place of capture shows uncertainty, but the outline of the circumstance of capture is as shown in annexed sheet No.2 "Investigation concerning the capture of airmen".

Investigation concerning the capture of airmen.

Annexed Place	No. 2	Date of capture	Nationality	Rank	Name	Attached (Kind of aircraft)	Identification serial number	Synopsis	
WAKAYAMA-KEN NISHIMUTA-GUN --NARI-MURA-AZA-TANI		Aug. 9, 1945	A	Captain	One unknown person	Unknown (p. 51)		Two of the four who escaped, working around in a woodland, were captured on May 9, at NISHIMUTA-GUN, FUTATSU-MURA KOMATSU-BARA and delivered to the Military Police Unit, Names and ranks unknown.	
WAKAYAMA-KEN HITAKA-GUN KANIYAMAJI-MURA TONO-HARA (In woods)		May 5, 1945	M E	Captain Unknown	MAX BARTON phonetic (Chief engineer) LONKAS PASK phonetic (engineer)	SAIPAN Army Unit 1329 B 29 (?)	U N		
WAKAYAMA-KEN HITAKA-GUN SAMIKAWA-MURA KUSHIMOTO (SEIREI-YAMA)		June 26, 1945	R I C A N	1st Lieutenant 1st Lieutenant 1st Lieutenant 1st Lieutenant Master-sergeant Sergeant	PAUL SFTAN WILLIAN CONTED YUK TYLASE (T.N. phonetic) LEONARD'S. ROBERT PARIUT (T.N. phonetic) CAPP LESLEY	Unknown (B 29)	K N O W N		
WAKAYAMA-KEN HITAKA-GUN MAZUJAZA-MURA KAZALATA (in woods)		July 2, 1945	S	Sergeant sergeant Sergeant	JALL JOHN NICHOLS JANS PAR FRANCES RAYMOND (T.N. phonetic) JILLARD HARJED	Unknown (B 29)			
KYOTO-FU KIUSE-GUN OKUBO-MURA ISETA		June 5, 1945		Unknown	6 men Unknown	Unknown (B. 29)			
KYOTO-FU SORAKU -GUN KUSAUCHI-MURA				Unknown	6 men Unknown	Same as above			
NARA-KEN UDA-GUN SAMBON-MATSU-MURA		June 1, 1945		1st Lieutenant Master-sergeant Corporal	Unknown (about 25 years old) Unknown (about 27 years old) Unknown (about 25 years old)	Same as above			
									Captured in a woodland

Annexed sheet, No. 2

Place of capture	Date of capture	Nationality	Rank	Name	Attached (Kind of aircraft)	Identification serial number	Synopsis
NARA_KEN YOSHINO_KAMIICHI SHIMOICHI	June 1, 1945	A M E R	1st Lieutenant Non-Commissioned Officer . .	FITTE HART STRONG SECRAFT	Unknown (B 29)	U N K N O W N	STRAN must be the same man as M/Sgt. STRONG indicated in annexed sheet No. 2, line 3.
OSAKA_FU HONO_GUN TOYOSHIMA_MURA	July 30, 1945	I		One man unknown	Unknown (P)		
HYOGO_KEN MUKO_GUN YAMATAKE_MURA	June 5, 1945	C A		Two men unknown	Unknown (B 29)		
Near KOBE_SHI	Same as above	N		Six men unknown	Same as above		
HYOGO_KEN AWAJI_SHIMA	Same as above	S		Five men unknown	Same as above		

Note. Because the documents were destroyed by burning, this has been made from memories of persons in various areas. Therefore, there are inaccurate and unknown points.

Investigation On The Transfer of Living Aircraft Crews.

Annexed sheet No. 2

Date of capture	Place of capture	Rank & Name	Identification Serial No.	Time of transfer	Receiver and name of responsible official	Sender and name of responsible official	Evidence, and other reference data
Jan. 3, 1945 (?)	AICHI-KEN, HIGASHI-KAWA-GUN, ASHISUKE-MACHI	Sergeant HAROLD HEADYS ? (T.N. phonetic)	Unknown	The middle or latter part of February	OMORI POW Camp Responsible person unknown	Military Police Headquarters of the Central District. Sgt. MORI, TAKAO and 1 other.	B. 29, Tail Gunner. Received from NAGOYA Military Police Unit by the Army. Sent under order to OMORI POW Camp.
July 25, 1945	SHIGA-KEN GAKO-GUN HIRATA-MURA HANEYA	2nd Lieutenant HARBAR TROW (T.N. phonetic)	Unknown	Aug. 9.	TOKYO Military Police Headquarters. Responsible person unknown.	Military Police Headquarter of the Central District. 2nd Lt. YADA, YASUO /T.N. YADA is juni, a sort of sub-offi- cer, rather like a warrant officer in the British Army./	Crew member of F6F, attached to the aircraft carrier "ENTERPRISE".
Aug. 7, 1945	OSAKA-FU SAKAI-SHI on the sea	2nd Lieutenant Name unknown	Unknown	Same as above	Same as above	Same as above	Crew member of P 51, attached to IWO JIMA 317 ?. Had knowledge of atomic bomb.

Reference. Because the document was burned, there are points that are inaccurate.

1.
27 1923 Dec 266 = 267

中部地區ニ於ケル聯合軍飛行機
搭乗員取扱ニ關スル訓令其ノ二

昭和二十一年三月二十七日
管務局長 中央調査委員會

一 前 言

本訓令ハ昭和二十年十二月二十六日附「中部地區
ニ於ケル聯合軍飛行機搭乗員取扱ニ關スル訓令其
ノ一」ノ事件ニ關シ其ノ後中部偵察員隊ノ報告及懲
兵關係等ノ原由ヲ綜合整理セシモノナリ

二 中部軍管區内ニ於テ日本軍ノ捕獲セシ聯合軍飛行
機搭乗員ハ總數約四十九名ニシテ之ヲ取扱狀況別
紙第一乃至第三ノ如シ

三 軍律會議ノ正式手續ニ依ルコトナク陸式ニ依リ處
断セシ件ニ關シ其ノ後調査ノ結果次ノ如シ

A 當時ニ於ケル中部軍管區内聯合軍飛行機搭乗員
取扱要領ニ就テ

中部軍管區司令部ハ昭和二十年四月上旬（或ハ
三月下旬）頃參謀長ノ台ヲ以テ中部軍管區内ニ
於テ捕獲セシ飛行機搭乗員ヨリノ情報收集ハ中
部懲兵隊司令部ニ於テ一掃實施スル如ク使命通
達セシモノ之カ身柄ノ所屬ニ關シテハ別ニ指示セ
ザリキ

Doc 2662 Part 27

2.

中部憲兵隊ニ於テハ右通隊及憲兵本隊ノ任務ニ
注キ調査及
其ノ前線ニ亙リ捕獲飛行機搭乗員
ノ治療、保護、宿泊、給養、衛生等ヲ擔任實施
セリ

而シテ陸軍ニ於テハ捕獲飛行機搭乗員ハ十分調
査ノ上軍律違反ノ行為ナキモノハ之ヲ停務收容
所ニ收容シ軍律違反ノ行為アルモノハ軍律會議
ニ呈請シテ其ノ判決ニ差キ處置スル如ク指示シ
アリタルモ此等搭乗員ノ處理ハ爆撃ニ依ル交通
通信ノ不円滑、作戦準備ノ繁忙等ノ爲見角停頓
ノ傾向アリタリ

B 捕獲飛行機搭乗員ニ對スル當時國民一層ノ感情
ニ就テ

聯合軍飛行機ノ本土襲撃開始セラレ重兵施設ノ
爆撃夜間ノ擾亂爆撃等引續キ行ハレ各所ニ非難
國民ノ生命財産等ノ損害額出スルニ伴ヒ國民ノ
憤慨心ハ漸次募リツツアリシカ三月ニ入り東京、
名古屋、大阪、神戸等ノ大都市相次イテ焼夷弾
ニ依ル無差別爆撃ヲ蒙リ莫大ナル損害ヲ生スル
ヤ國民ノ感情ハ憤然激化シ憤慨心ハ益々昂揚セ
ラレ捕獲飛行機搭乗員ニ對スル一層ノ笑諭ハ若
シク減化セラレタリ其ノ後聯合軍飛行機ニヨル
無差別爆撃益々激化シテ愈ムコトヲ知ラス國民

Doc 2662, Part 27

ノ復讐心ハ其ノ極ニ達シ墜下拳陣下セル日本軍
飛行機搭乗員ニ對シテスラ其ノ體罰ノ餘裕ヲ失
ヒ動モスレハ之ニ危害ヲ加ヘントスルノ事例ノ
發生ヲ見ルニ至レリ

0 處ニ發動ニ關スル中 陸軍省司令部ト憲兵司令
部トノ關係ニ就テ

(出) 昭和二十年春夏ノ交ニ於テハ本土空襲ノ激化
ニ伴ヒ捕獲飛行機搭乗員ノ數モ亦相當ノ數ニ
上リタルモ各軍ニ於テハ各處ノ自由ニ依リ此
等ヲ逮ニ軍律會議ニ附シ得サリシ爲此等ヲ收
容シアリタル各地ノ憲兵隊ハ其ノ收容施設ノ
不足ト相俟ツテ之カ收容ニ困難ヲ感シアリタ
ルヲ以テ憲兵ノ總元帥タル憲兵司令官陸軍中
將大畑戸三治ハ該般ノ情勢ヲ考察ノ上昭和二
十年六月頃憲兵司令部外務部長陸軍憲兵大佐
山村義雄ノ名ヲ以テ捕獲セシ飛行機搭乗員ノ
取扱ニ關スル私信ヲ北都、東北、京都、東海、
中部、中部、山陽、及西部各憲兵隊司令官宛
發送セシメタリ

(例) 此ノ私信ノ趣旨ハ憲兵司令部關係者ノ記憶ニ
依レハ茲ニ示ス如シ

捕獲飛行機搭乗員ニ對スル軍律會議ハ一様ニ
停頓シアル爲各憲兵隊ハ其ノ收容人員逐次増

Dec 2662, Part 27

加シ之ハ球獄ニ區歸ラシメアルカ類シ此ノ陸
軍兵トシテハ軍管會議ノ促進ヲ切望スルモノ
ナリ而シテ彼等ノ内ニハ非人道的無差別炸彈
ヲ行ヒシモノモアルヘク此等ハ速ニ軍管ニ歸
シ屬區分スルヲ至管トスヘシ

若シ速ニ軍管會議ニ附シ屬區スルコト不可能
ナリトモハ他ニ便法ヲ考ヘ然ルヘキ方法ニ依
リ屬區スルコトモ亦巴ム得サルヘシ

然レトモ此ノ二方法ノ何レヲ採ルヘキヤハ軍
管區司令部ノ管掌事項ニシテ陸軍ノ專行スヘ
キモノニアラサルヲ以テ所長ニ屬シ關係軍管
區少隊長ニ連絡スルヲ可トスヘシ

尙本管ハ各軍管區少隊長ノ自主的範圍ニ依ツ
ヘキモノナリト附言セルモノノ如シ

(5) 前項ノ私信ヲ受領セシ中 陸軍司令部官 陸軍
少將長衣次男ノ言ニ依レハ同少將ハ當時参加
セル無機飛行機搭乗員ノ長若ニ區歸ラシメ何
等ノ行動ノ要ヲ滿シツツアリタル時ナリシ
ヲ以テ此ノ私信ノ無効ハ此等搭乗員ノ急遽ナ
ル處ニ在リト氣取シ陸下將校ニ命シ之カ兵
區ノ準備ヲ爲サシメタルモノノ如シ

D 陸軍管區ニ關スル中 陸軍司令部ト中部軍管
區司令部トノ關係ニ就テ

A.

Doc 2662, Part 27

(1) 前述ノ私信ヲ受信セシ中部憲兵隊司令官長友少將ハ六月末頃（或ハ七月始頃）中部軍管區參謀長陸軍中將國武三千雄ヲ訪問シ「捕獲飛行機搭乗員ノ調査ハ、實況ノ結果ニ徴スルニ其ノ陳述スルトコロ何レモ同様ノモノ多キヲ以テ、今後ハ一々情報ヲ呈出セサルコトアルヘク及此等搭乗員ハ適當ニ處置シ度」旨申出タルヲ以テ國武中將ハ此ノ提言カ搭乗員處斷ノ如キ重大ナル交渉ナリトハ思惟セス單ナル情報通告ナリト判斷シ「承知セル」旨ヲ答へ奉ラ當時繁忙ヲ極メタル作戦準備及空襲對策ニ専念セリ

尙國武中將ノ言ニ依レハ長友少將ノ來訪ノ目的カ憲兵司令部ヨリノ私信ニ甚ク重大事項ノ連絡ナリトハ夢想タニセザリシモノノ如シ

(2) 七月上旬頃（月日不正確）中部憲兵隊司令部陸軍憲兵少佐志内裕虎磨ハ中部軍管區參謀長陸軍大佐大庭小二郎ヲ訪問シ「憲兵司令部ヨリ連絡モアリタルヲ以テ目下中部憲兵隊ニ收容中ノ捕獲飛行機搭乗員ヲ處刑スル」旨申出テタルニ依リ大庭大佐ハ「處刑スヘキ搭乗員ハ確實ニ無差別處刑ヲ行ヒタリトノ證據アルモノノミナリヤ」ト兵ホタルニ志内少佐ハ「然

Doc 2662, Part 17

ル一旨答へタルモノノ如シ
茲ニ於テ同大佐ハ、此ノ處斷ノ中部憲兵隊ニ
於テ管理シアル捕獲飛行機搭乗員ニ關スル事
項ニシテ又憲兵ノ總局系統ノ上級官衙タル憲
兵司令部ヨリノ意圖ニ甚クモノナリト判明シ
タル爲軍律ノ精詳ニ照シ處刑スルモノナルニ
於テハ已ムヲ得サルヘシト考ヘ「憲兵隊ニ於
テ處刑スルナラハ已ムヲ得サルヘシト答へ
タルモノノ如シ

⑤ 中部軍管區司令官陸軍中將内山英太郎ハ前二
項ニ關シ當時何等報告ニ供シアラザリシヲ以
テ周知シアラス

四 結 言

本調査ハ本事件ノ主關係者タル陸軍少將長次男
ハ聯合軍ノ指令ニ基キ拘引セラレ又同少將ノ主要
ナル部下將校ノ行方依然不明ナル現狀ニ於テ爲シ
得ル可能ノ範圍ニ於テ調査シタルモノナリ
従ツテ本調査ノ内容ハ將來此等關係者ノ調査ヲ實
施スルヲ得ハ若干ノ修正加添ヲ要スル事アルヘシ

Doc 2662 part 27

別紙 其二 捕獲後死亡の搭客員調査

備考	X			大阪府 美濃郡 五月八日	大阪府 美濃郡 昭和二十一年 五月八日	大阪府 美濃郡 昭和二十一年 五月八日	大阪府 美濃郡 昭和二十一年 五月八日	大阪府 美濃郡 昭和二十一年 五月八日	大阪府 美濃郡 昭和二十一年 五月八日	大阪府 美濃郡 昭和二十一年 五月八日	大阪府 美濃郡 昭和二十一年 五月八日	大阪府 美濃郡 昭和二十一年 五月八日
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉
	不	米	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉	尉

一 本表の「備考」欄に「死」とあるのは、搭客員捕獲後死亡の搭客員を調査し、その死因、死場所、埋葬場所、所在を調査し、その結果を「備考」欄に記載する。但し、死亡の時期が不明なるものは、「備考」欄に「不明」と記載する。又、死亡の時期が不明なるものは、「備考」欄に「不明」と記載する。又、死亡の時期が不明なるものは、「備考」欄に「不明」と記載する。

聯合軍飛行機塔乘員生存者移動状況調査

捕獲年月日	捕獲場所	階級氏名	認識票	移動日時	受取先及責任者職官氏名	送付責任者職官氏名	證據物件其ノ他参考資料
昭和二十一年一月三日?	愛知縣東加茂郡足助町附近	軍曹 ハロルド ヘデイス?	不明	二月中旬 又ハ下旬	大森俘虜收容所 責任者不明	中部憲兵司令部 森孝雄 外一名	B27 尾部射撃、一月中旬左右屋憲兵隊ヨリ軍曹ヲ受領シ約一月後防總ノ指示ヲ仰グ大森收容所ニ送ル
昭和二十一年七月十五日	滋賀縣蒲生郡平田村 羽田トロ	少尉 ハーパー	不明	八月九日	東京憲兵司令部 責任者不明	中部憲兵司令部 和田安人	航空エンジン「フライス」所屬 F6F 塔乘員
昭和二十一年八月七日	大阪府堺市海上	少尉 氏名不明	不明	同右	同右	同右	P51 塔乘員在硫黄島三二七? 中隨所屬原子爆弾ノ情報ヲ知得ニアリ

備考 書類焼却シアル為正確ノ期ニ難ク點アリ

Doc 2662 part 27

Q. # 1924

Document No. 266 - Part 25

Page 1

MEMORANDUM CONCERNING TREATMENT OF ALLIED AIR FORCE FLIGHT PERSONNEL
IN THE WESTERN DISTRICT
(Part 1)

The Central Investigation Committee relating to Prisoners of War

January 23, 1946

(written in ink) two copies duly submitted

I. FOREWORD

This Protocol was drawn up on the basis of a Report from the Chief Officer of the Western District Demobilization Office (Ex-Commander of the Western Military District), and, as regards details thereof, same shall be submitted after making further investigations.

It has become ascertained that the report duly made by the Western District Demobilization Office to the local U.S. Army Authorities to the effect that thirty-one Allied Air Force Flight Personnel were sent to Tokyo on the 18th of August, 1945, was a mistake.

II. SUMMARY

Of the Allied Air Force Flight Personnel captured by the Japanese Army within the Western Military District, about eight were put to death on the 20th of June, 1945 (Group I), another, approximately eight men, on the 18th of August in the same year (Group II) and another, approximately fifteen men, on the 15th of the same month in the same year (Group III), by personnel of the said Military District Headquarters.

III. EXECUTION OF GROUP I

As a result of various cities in the mainland having suffered one after another from incendiary bombing by the Allied Forces ever since the end of 1944, the hostile feeling of the military and government authorities, as well as the people, became steadily aggravated, especially upon Fukuoka City, the seat of the Military District Headquarters, being air-raided on the 19th of June, 1945, which resulted in the principal parts of the City being reduced to ashes, and presenting the tragic sight of large numbers of the general populace being made victims, whereupon the hostile feeling appears to have become still further intensified.

It was under the circumstances as per the foregoing paragraph that about eight of the captured Flight Personnel were executed by Personnel of the Military District Headquarters within its compound on the 20th of June.

IV. THE EXECUTION OF GROUP II

On entering into August, successive atomic bomb raids were made by the U. S. Army on the Cities of Hiroshima, and Nagasaki, victimizing the majority of the citizens of both cities, and upon it becoming known that the miserable plight of the said victims was absolutely beyond words, the general feeling of animosity appears to have soared up to its zenith again.

It was under the circumstances as per the foregoing paragraph that about eight captured Flight Personnel were executed by Personnel of the Military District Headquarters in a hill near the Aburayama Crematorium in the southwest part of Fukuoka City, on the 12th of August.

V. THE EXECUTION OF GROUP III

Upon the war coming to an end on August 15th, various wild rumors became circulated throughout Kyushu District, and Fukuoka District especially was thrown into an indescribable state of confusion due to the weaker sex fleeing to places of refuge, etc., due to the fabricated report that a part of the Allied Forces had already landed, etc., and these factors appear to have aroused a sense of intense enmity among a section of the officers of the Military District Headquarters.

It was under the circumstances as per the foregoing paragraph that about fifteen captured Flight Personnel were executed by Personnel of the Military District Headquarters in a hill near the Aburayama Crematorium in the southwestern part of Fukuoka City, on the 15th of August.

VI. FUTURE COUNTER-MEASURES

As all these cases occurred at a time of extreme pressure in operational duties and when the public were extremely restless in their minds, as well as due to the pertaining documents having been destroyed by fire, there are still not a few inaccurate points as regards the number, names and disposal of the bodies of the executed Flight Personnel, status of their belongings, as well as in regard to the names of the Headquarters Personnel participating in the executions, detailed circumstances regarding the actual executions as well as the consequential responsibilities, etc., it is therefore being planned to make thorough investigations by strengthening the Investigation Staff; and at the same time, as the matter contains points that are considered as violating the laws and regulations prescribed by the Japanese Army, same are being investigated at present so as to put same on trial.

2662 Part 25

1924

701

西部地邑ニ於テ聯合軍飛行機搭乗員
取扱ニ関スル調査書其ノ一

停務関係中央調査委員会
昭和二十一年一月二十三日

一 前言

本調査ハ西部復員監(舊西部軍管区司令部)ノ報告ニ據
リ取リ敢テ又記述セシモノニテ其ノ詳細ニ関テ更ニ調査ノ上
提出ス。

曩ニ西部復員監部ヨリ現地米軍ニ対シ聯合軍飛行機
搭乗員三十一名ヲ昭和二十年八月十日東京ニ送致セシ旨報告
セハ誤謬ナリト判明セリ

二 要旨

西部軍管区内ニ於テ日本軍ニ捕獲セラタル聯合軍飛行機搭
乗員ノ内約八名ハ昭和二十年六月二十日(第一次)又別、約八名同
年八月十日(第二次)又別、約十五名同年同月十五日(第三次)
夫天同軍管区司令部職員等ニ依リ殺害セラリ

三 第一次ノ處断ニ就テ

昭和十九年末以來聯合軍ニ依リ内地ノ各都市相次テ燒
燬撃ヲ蒙ルニ至ル軍官民全般ノ敵愾心ハ漸次強化セラレ就中
軍管区司令部所在地名福岡市ヲ昭和二十年二月十九日空襲
ヲ受ケ市街ノ要部燒土ト化シ一般民衆ノ多數罹災スル慘
状ヲ呈スル中敵愾心ハ更ニ著ク激化セラレタリトモノ如シ

前項ノ如キ狀況ニ於テ約八名ノ捕獲飛行機搭乗員ハ
同年二月日軍管区司令部構内ニ於テ軍管区司令部職員等ニ
依リ處断セラリ

2662 Part 25

四、三次、處斷ニ就テ

八月二日、米軍、廣島市及長崎市ニ対シテ原子爆弾攻撃相次クテ、兩都市民衆、大部罹災シテ、慘狀洵ニ言語ニ盡シ難キモノニ至ル一般、敵懐心ハ再ビ極度ニ激化セタルモ、如シ。

前項、如キ狀況ニ於テ約八名、捕獲飛行機搭乗員八月十三日福岡市西南方油山火葬場附近、山中ニ於テ軍管區司令部職員等ニ依リ處斷セラル。

五、三次、處斷ニ就テ

八月十五日終戦トシテ、九州地方ニ於テ、各種、流言蜚語、紛々ト飛ビ特ニ聯合軍、一部既ニ上陸セリ等、世言生シ婦女子、野難等福岡地方ハ知状スカラザル混亂ニ陥リ軍管區司令部ハ一將校等ニ於テ、激烈ニ敵懐心ヲ生スニ至リテ、如シ。

前項、如キ狀況ニ於テ約十五名、捕獲飛行機搭乗員八月十五日福岡市西南方油山火葬場附近、山中ニ於テ軍管區司令部職員ニ依リ處斷セラル。

六、今後、対策

本件ハ何レモ作戰業務、繁忙、人心極度ニ動搖、際行ハタルト関係書類焼失、為處斷セラル搭乗員、人數、代知、死骸、處理遺留品、狀況並ニ處斷、干支モ司令部職員、代知、處斷發動、経緯及責任、歸結等ニ関シテハ尙不正確、點數トカラザルヲ以テ調査簿、容ヲ強化シ調査、徹底ヲ圖ルト共ニ事件、内容、日本軍所定、法規ニ違及スモノ、ナリト思考セラル以テ裁判ニ附ス如ク取調中ナリ

以上

202

RESTRICTED

Yorio OGIYA, after having been duly sworn, testified at the Investigation Division, Legal Section, GHQ, SCAP, Osaka Branch Office, Yasuda Building, Osaka, Japan, on the 8th day of February, 1946 as follows:-

- Q. Please state your full name, age, address and nationality?
 A. My name is [Yorio OGIYA.] I am 27 years of age and reside at Yamagami, Heijo-ura, Ikoma-gun, Nara Prefecture. I am of Japanese nationality.] (Japanese seal)
- Q. What is your occupation?
 A. [I am now working for the Sumi Law Office, Asahi Bldg, Osaka City as a Law Clerk.]
- Q. Do you intend to remain at your present address, and if not, how can your whereabouts in the future be ascertained?
 A. I intend to remain at my present address.
- Q. Were you a member of the Japanese Army? If so, when did you become a member, the position you held and what branch of service you were assigned to?
 A. [I became a member of the Japanese Army, 1st November 1943 and was discharged on 30th November, 1945. I was assigned to the Judicial Branch. I was a first lieutenant until August 20th, 1945 and was then promoted to a Captain.
- Q. When were you assigned to the Central Army Area Headquarters?
 A. December 26th, 1944.
- Q. What were your duties in the Judicial Branch of the Central Army?
 A. My duties were to investigate military cases to find out whether the party is guilty or not guilty either before the case is tried or after the case is tried. All military Judicial Officers do the work of both Judge and Public Procurator.
- Q. What are the duties of the Judge?
 A. The judge looks over the case appealed by the Public Procurator to see whether the military personnel is guilty or not at the Military Court, and gives judgment accordingly.
- Q. Could the Military Judicial Officer act both as Public Procurator and Judge the same case?
 A. In General they don't in order to give proper judgment. In war-time for example out in the front when either the Judge or the Procurator is killed or wounded then the Procurator or the Judge has to act as both Procurator and Judge.

- Q. Do you recall the names of captured American B-29 Fliers by the names of Lt. Robert W. Nelson and Sgt. Alvey Stanley Auganus?
- A. Yes, I remember.
- Q. When did you first hear his name and under what circumstances?
- A. I heard about Lt. Nelson and Sgt Auganus in the middle of May 1945 in the Judicial Department. I don't remember from whom I heard it, but everyone in the Judiciary Department was talking about these two fliers.
- Q. Were you ever appointed as a member of the Military Discipline Conference of the Japanese Central Area Army?
- A. Yes.
- Q. What was your duties on the Military Discipline Conference and what position did you hold?
- A. I was appointed as Witness Public Procurator and my job was to read an opinion at the Military Discipline Conference and request a death penalty.
- Q. Who were the defendants at the time you were appointed to the Military Discipline Conference?
- A. 2nd Lt. Robert W. Nelson and S/Sgt Alvey Stanley Auganus both of the United States Army.
- Q. Were Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus the only two American Aviators or soldiers whose matters were brought before the Military Discipline Conference?
- A. Yes.
- Q. When were you appointed as Witness Public Procurator in the Nelson and Auganus matter and by whom?
- A. I was appointed on the 14th or 15th of July 1945 to act as Witness Public Procurator in the Nelson and Auganus matter, by Major General Kiyotomi OTAHARA head of the Judicial Department of the Central and 15th Area Army Headquarters.
- Q. Who investigated the Nelson and Auganus matter?
- A. Major General Kiyotomi Otahara investigated the Nelson and Auganus matter.
- Q. Did you ever investigate the Nelson and Auganus matter?
- A. No.
(Japanese Seal)
- Q. Then how did you come to act as Witness Public Procurator if you never investigated the Nelson and Auganus matter?

- Q. Major-General Kiyotomi OTAHARA was supposed to be the real Witness Public Procurator in the Nelson and Auganus matter, but he was transferred to the head of the Judicial Branch of the Second General Army in Hiroshima and I was ordered to take his place.
- Q. When did the Nelson and Auganus matter appear before the Military Discipline Conference?
- A. July 18th, 1945 in the Court room of the 15th Area Army Headquarters in the Osaka Castle Grounds.
- Q. Were all the people that were present at the time you presented the Nelson and Auganus matter to the Military Discipline Conference?
- A. The following were present:- Chief Judge Mario YAMAMAKA (Major); 1st Lt. Hideo MATSUOIKE (Judge); Capt. Buichi ONO (Judge); W.O. or Sgt/Major Yasukazu SHIMAZURA (Witness Clerk); both Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus and an interpreter whose name I don't know, but his rank is that of Sgt. or Sgt/Major.
- Q. Who instructed you to ask for the death penalty of Nelson and Auganus?
- A. After Maj. Gen. Otahara completed his investigation, he wrote an opinion based on his investigation and forwarded this opinion to Lt. Gen. Eitaro UCHIYAMA Commander of the Central Army Headquarters to get an approval of the death sentence. Then after obtaining (obtaining) the approval of Gen. UCHIYAMA, Maj. Gen. OTAHARA took his opinion to General HITA who was in command of the Second General Army and also got his approval of the death penalty. Lastly Maj. Gen. OTAHARA took the opinion to the War Ministry in Tokyo and the death penalty was also approved. Then on the 18th day of July, 1945, I presented this opinion with the approvals of Gen. UCHIYAMA, Gen. HITA and the War Ministry, to the Military Discipline Conference and demanded the death penalty by reading the opinion and the approvals to the Judges of the Military Discipline Conference.
- Q. Was Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus permitted to say anything in their own defense at the Military Discipline Conference?
- A. I remember Nelson saying that he was only obeying the orders of his higher officers that he bomb Japan. I don't remember Sgt. Auganus saying anything. That was his defense.
- Q. Who asked Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus questions at the Military Discipline Conference?
- A. Capt. Buichi ONO.

- Q. What were the questions asked and what answers were given?
- A. The questions asked were as follows:-
1. What unit they belonged and duties, name, rank, age, schooling, profession.
 2. Places they bombed:- March 9th, 1945 Tokyo-incendiary bomb from Saipan
March 14, 1945, bombed Osaka.
March 17, 1945, bombed Kobe.
 3. Radar-explanation. Nelson was asked to explain American Radar system.

Nelson said that he admitted the fact that he bombed Japan, but he only obeyed his higher officer's orders.

- Q. What was the verdict of the Military Discipline Conference?
- A. Lt. Nelson and Sgt Auganus was found guilty and sentenced to die by the firing squad.

- Q. When was Lt. Nelson and Sgt Auganus shot to death and where?
- A. Both were shot to death on July 18th 1945 the same day the decision was rendered by the Military Discipline Conference, at about 4:00 PM in the Yokoyama Military Parade Grounds, Senboku-gun, Osaka Prefecture.

- Q. Who was present at the execution of Lt. Nelson and Sgt Auganus?
- A. Capt. Kenji NAKAMICHI head of the Osaka Military Prison in Ishikiri; 1st Lt. Jisai Minami who was medical officer and witness; I was present and Judicial Officer and director of the execution; Sgt/Maj. Yasuichi SAKEMURA who was Judicial Officer non-com witness clerk; the firing squad consisted of three non-coms whose last names are MATSUDA, MATSHI and SANTA; also present was a Japanese Buddhist Priest whose name I do not remember; and about two others from the Osaka Military Prison whose names I also do not remember.

- Q. Where and when were the bodies of Lt. Nelson and Sgt Auganus buried after they were executed and who was present?
- A. The remains of Sgt Auganus and Lt. Nelson were buried the same day on the hills of Yokoyama Military Parade Ground, Senboku-gun, Osaka Prefecture. The same people that witnessed the execution were present.

- Q. Describe the execution?
- A. Lt. Nelson and Sgt Auganus were blindfolded and placed in graves already dug on the side of a hill so that the both fliers were in an inclined position with their heads uphill. The firing squad got into a prone position about two meters away from the graves in which the fliers were placed and two of the firing squad shot at Nelson and Auganus simultaneously one round each. Both Nelson and Auganus were hit in the head

but Nelson was still alive. So a third member of the firing squad shot another round into Nelson's head thus completing the execution. A board was placed on the bodies of each of the fliers and their bodies including the boards were covered up with earth right then and there.

(Japanese Seal)

- Q. Were the remains of Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus ever unearthed again? If so, state what was done with the bodies?
- A. On August 24th, 1945 by order of Major General Seiji YAMAGUCHI, head of the Judicial Branch of the Central Army Area Hqrs, I was instructed to unearth the remains of Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus and cremate the bodies and bury them at the Sanadayama Military Cemetery in Osaka. So I got a hold of Sgt. Major Yasuichi SHIMAMURA, MATSUDA, MATSUI, SANTA and two or three other from the Osaka Military Prison whose names I do not remember and cremated the remains of Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus at the Yokoyama Military Parade Grounds, Senboku-ku Osaka Prefecture, and buried the ashes the next day in Sanadayama Cemetery in Osaka. (Japanese seal)
- (Japanese Seal)
- Q. Describe how you cremated the bodies of Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus specifically naming the materials used to cremate them?
- A. I got there a little later, but when I got there Matsuda, Matsui, Santa and others from Osaka Prison got there first and cremated the bodies of Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus with wood and 18 liters of gasoline. The bodies were placed on a piece of iron that straddled Nelson's grave and we all spent a night there because it took from twelve to thirteen hours to burn the bodies.
- Q. In a previous affidavit you made under oath on the 11th Day of December, 1945, you stated that Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus were killed by a bomb at the Osaka Castle and you stated that they were cremated at the Sanadayama Military Cemetery. Is that true?
- A. Yes I did say it, but the facts are not true. I told a falsehood. (Japanese Seal)
- Q. Who instructed you to tell a falsehood that Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus was killed by a bomb?
- A. Major General Seiji YAMAGUCHI and Capt. Buichi Ono told me to tell a lie that Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus was killed by a bomb. (Japanese Seal)

- Q. When did they tell you to say this?
A. I don't remember the day, but it was in October, 1945 at the Osaka Military Prison in Inakiri on the 2nd floor of the prison office which was at that time the Judicial Section of the Central Army Area Hqs and 15th Army Area Hqs that I was told by the General and the Capt. to tell these falsehoods about Nelson and Auganus. (Japanese Seal)
- Q. When you buried the remains of Lt. Nelson and Sgt Auganus in the Sanadayama Military Cemetery, why did you not put a marker at their graves with the names of the fliers on the marker?
A. A marker was not placed on the graves.
- Q. What happened to the dog-tags and personal effects of Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus?
A. I do not know what happened to the dog tags, but we cremated Nelson and Auganus with their clothes on.
- Q. Did Lt. Nelson and Sgt. Auganus have any shoes on when they were executed and/or cremated?
A. They had their shoes on when they were executed, but I don't remember them having their shoes on when they were buried or cremated. (Japanese Seal)
- Q. Was the death of the fliers Lt. Nelson and Sgt Auganus reported to any authorities such as the International Red Cross?
A. I do not know.
- Q. Do you have anything further to add to your statement?
A. I have nothing further to add.

ALLIED OCCUPATION FORCES) /s/ Yorio Ogiya (Japanese
: SS.: Seal)
CITY OF OSAKA)

I, Yorio OGIYA, being duly sworn on oath, state that I had read to me and understood the translation of the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein, consisting of four pages, are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

Suscribed and sworn to before
me this 8th day of February, 1946
/s/ Murray Gray
MURRAY GRAY, 1st Lt. Ord Dept.
Investigating Officer, Legal Sec.
GHQ, SCAP

ALLIED OCCUPATION FORCES)
: SS.:
CITY OF OSAKA)

I, Tanaki KAWASHIMA, residing at #45 Nara City, Nara Prefecture, being duly sworn on oath, state that I truly translated the questions and answers given from English to Japanese and from Japanese to English respectively, and that after being transcribed, I truly translated the foregoing deposition containing four pages, to the witness; that the witness thereupon in my presence affixed his signature.

/s/ Tanaki Kawashima

Subscribed and sworn to before
me this 8th day of February,
1946

/s/ Murray Gray
MURRAY GRAY, 1st Lt. Ord Dept
Investigating Officer, Legal Sec.
GHQ, SCAP

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

Everett Checket (signed)
EVERETT CHECKET
Major, Infantry

SA 1925 Doc 8223

答

「ヨリオ オギト (Yorio OGITA)」
「奈良縣生駒郡 (Ikoma-gun)」
平城村 (Heigi-mura) 私ハ日本國
籍ヲ有シテキル。(日本ノ捺印)

答

「私ハ現在法務省記トシテ大阪市朝日
ビルノ⁽⁵⁾法律事務所ニ勤務シテキル
私ハ一九四三年十一月一日ニ日本軍
籍ニ入り、一九四五年十一月三十日除
隊ニナツタ。私ハ法務局ニ配屬サレタ。
私ハ一九四五年八月二十日返中尉アリ
レカラ大尉ニ進級シタ。

問

何時君ハ中央軍司令部ニ配屬サレタカ。
一九四四年十二月二十六日。

答

中央軍法務局ニ於ケル君ノ仕事ハ何デ
アツタカ。
私ノ仕事ハ事件ノ審理前タルト審理後
タルトナ同ハズ、ソノ意味ヲ有難カ又
ハ無罪カヲ發見スルタマニ是等事件ヲ
調査スルコトアリ、單邊ノ法務將
校ハ皆法務官ト是等ノ職方ノ仕事ナシ
テキル。

問

裁判官ノ仕事ハドウ云フモノカ。
裁判官ハ及チニヨツテ告訴サレタ事件

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

EX 1925

Doc 8223

★

答 「ヨリオ オギヤ (Yorio OGIYA)」
 「奈良森生駒郡 (Ikoma-gun)
 平城村 (Heigi-mura) 私ハ日本國
 籍ヲ有シテキル。(日本ノ捺印)」

答 「私ハ現在法律書記トシテ大阪市朝日
 ビルノ^(Suisen)法律事務所ニ勤務シテキル

答 私ハ一九四三年十一月一日ニ日本軍
 籍ニ入り、一九四五年十一月三十日除
 隊ニナツタ。私ハ法務局ニ配屬サレタ。
 私ハ一九四五年八月二十日延中尉デソ
 レカラ大尉ニ進級シタ。

問 何時君ハ中央軍司令部へ配屬サレタカ。
 答 一九四四年十二月二十六日。

問 中央軍法務局ニ於ケル君ノ仕事ハ何デ
 アツタカ。

答 私ノ仕事ハ事件ノ審理前タルト審理後
 タルトナ同ハズ、ソノ部隊ガ有罪カ又
 ハ無罪カヲ発見スルタメニ是等事件ヲ
 調査スルコトデアツタ。軍隊ノ法務將
 校ハ管轄判官ト偵察ノ部方ノ仕事ナシ
 テキル。

問 裁判官ノ仕事ハドウ云フモノカ。
 答 裁判官ハ民事ニヨツテ管轄サレタ事件

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 8223

2.

答 軍法會議ニ於テ審理シ、ソノ軍人ガ有
罪カ無罪ヲ明カニシ、而シテソレニ從ツ
テ判決ヲ與ヘルノデアアル。

問 軍隊ノ法務將校ハ同ジ事件ニ對シテ以テ
ト裁判官ヲ兼ヘルコトガ出來ルカ。

答 一成ニハ正當ナル判決ヲ下スタメニ兼務
シテイコトニナツテキル。戰陣中判ハバ
前線ニ於テ裁判官若クハ偵察ノ一方カガ
戰死シ若クハ負傷シタル場合ニハ偵察若
クハ裁判官ハ偵察ト裁判官ノ兩方ヲ勤メ
ヲケレバテラナイ。

問 君ハ俘虜トナツタアメリカノ ^{B29} 搭乗者
デロバート・W・ネルソン / Robert W. Nelson /
少尉トアルヴィ・スタンレイ・アウガナ
ス / Alvey Stanley ALIGANUS / 軍曹ト
云フ名前ヲ憶エテキルカ。

答 然リ、憶エテキル。
問 何時又如何ナル状況ノ下ニ於テ君ハ被虜
ニ被ル名前ヲ聞イタカ。

答 一八九四年五月ノ中旬法務局ニ於テ
ネルソン / Nelson / 少尉トアウガナス
/ Auganus / 軍曹ニ元テ聞イタ。誰カラ聞イ
タカ憶エテサナイガ、然シ法務局ノ君ハ

4
Dec 8 223

3.

同 誰デモコノ二人ノ飛行士ノコトヲ語シテ
サタ。

同 君ハ今迄ニ皇家ノ中部地方軍ノ軍律會議
ノ一員トシテ任命サレタコトガアルカ。

答 然リ。

同 軍律會議ニ於ケル話ノ職務ハ何デアツタ
カ、又如何ナル地位ヲ居ルヲ占メテサタカ。

答 私人偵察トシテ任命サレ、ソシテ私
ノ仕事ハ軍律會議ニ於テ意見ヲ陳述シソ

シテ死刑ヲ求ルコトデアツタ。

同 君ガ軍律會議ニ任命サレタ時ノ被害者ハ
誰デアツタカ。

答 ロバート・W・ネルソン / Robert W. NELSON /

少尉トアルガイ・スタンレイ・アウガナ

ス / Alvey Stanley AUGANUS / 本部軍

曹 S/Sgt トテ爾等兵隊團連軍所トデア
ツタ。

同 ネルソン / NELSON / 少尉トアウガナス / AUGANUS /

軍曹トハ軍律會議ニ事件ノマハサレタ

事二人ノ米軍飛行士或ハ兵デアツタカ。

答 然リ

同 何時話ハネルソン / NELSON / アウガナス / AUGA-

NUS / 事件ニ於ケル私人偵察トシテ任命

Doc 8223

4.

答
 私ハ一九四五年七月十四日或ハ十五日ニ、
 中部及ビ第十在地隊司令部法務局長
 軍少將オタハラ、キヨトミ / OAHARA
 KIYOTOMIニ依ツテ、ネルソン / NELSON /
 及ビアウガナス / AUGANUS / 事件ノ證人候
 尋トシテ勸クマウニ任命サレタ。
 同
 ネルソン / NELSON / 及ビアウガナス / AUGANUS /
 事件ノ調査ハ誰ガシタカ。
 答
 オタハラ、キヨトミ / OAHARA KIYOTOMI /
 少將ガネルソン / NELSON / アウガナス / AUGANUS /
 事件ヲ調査シタ。
 同
 君ハネルソン / NELSON / 及ビアウガナス
 / AUGANUS / 事件ヲ調査シタコトガアルカ。
 答
 否。(日本語文字ノ捺印)
 同
 ソレゾ君ガネルソン / NELSON / アウガナ
 ス / AUGANUS / 事件ヲ調査シタコトガナイ
 ナラ、ドウシテ證人候尋トシテ勸クコト
 ニナツタノカ。
 答
 オタハラ、キヨトミ / OAHARA KIYOTOMI /
 少將ハ、ネルソン / NELSON / アウガナス
 / AUGANUS / 事件ノ本質ノ證人候尋トシテ
 レテキタ、然シ彼ハ廣域ニ於ケル第二

8223

5.

草ノ法務局長ニ再任シ私が彼ノ地位ヲ長
フコトニナツタ。

同 ネルソン/NELSON/アウガナス/AUGANUS/
事件ハ何時ノ法律會議ニ出タカ。

答 一九四五年七月十八日ノ大阪裁判ノ第六
五地區審問會庭ノ法廷ニ於テデアル。

同 諸君法律會議ニネルソン/NELSON/アウガ
ナス/AUGANUS/事件ヲ提出シタ時ニ出席シ
テキタハタノ名前ヲ感ベテ喜ゲヨ。

答 下記ノ人々ガ出席シテヤタ。即チ、判士
長トマナカ、モリオ/YAMANAKA MORIO/

(少佐)、マツモシ、ヒデオ/MATSUMORE

HIDEO/ 中尉(判士)オノ、ブイチ

/ONO BUICHI/大尉、シマムラ、ヤスカズ

/SHIMAMURA YASUKAZU/ 檢察官長野全蔵(證

人書記)、ネルソン/NELSON/少尉及びア

ウガナス/AUGANUS/等四ノ兩人及び私ハ名

前ヲ知ラナイガ、草野成ハ會長ノ階級ノ

題詳一ハデアツタ。

同 ネルソン/NELSON/及びアウガナス/AUGANUS/

ノ死刑ヲ求用スルヤウニ誰ガ若ニ指示

ヲ與ヘタカ。

答 オタハラ/OTAHARA/少尉ハ彼ノ利益ヲ死

Doc 8223 #

シタ後、彼ハ彼ノ利益ニ懸ツク意見ヲ言
キ、死刑ノ宣告ノ認可ヲ受ケタルタメニ
之ノ意見ヲ中部軍司令部司令官ウチヤマ
エイタロー / UCHIYAMA HEIFARO / 中尉ノ許ニ送
ツタ。ソレカラウチヤマ / UCHIYAMA / 中尉
ノ承認ヲ受ケタ後、オタハラ / OTAHARA /
少尉ハ第二連隊ノ指揮ニ任ジテセタハタ
/ HATA / 大尉ノ許ニ彼ノ意見ヲ具申シ、
又同大尉ノ死刑ニ對スル決裁ヲ受ケタ。
最後ニオタハラ / OTAHARA / 少尉ハ東京ノ陸
軍省ニ意見ヲ送り、死刑ハ亦認可サレタ。
ソノ後一九四五年七月十八日、仏ハコノ
意見ヲウチヤマ / UCHIYAMA / 中尉及ビハタ
/ HATA / 大尉ノ認可ト共ニ軍律會議ニ提
出シ、軍律會議ノ裁判官ニ對シテ、ソノ
意見ヲ胡亂スルコトニ成ツテ死刑ノ承認
ヲ要求シタ。

問 ネルソン / NELSON / 少尉トアウヂマス
/ AUGANUS / 中尉ハ軍律會議ニ於テ自ラノ辯
護ニタメニ發言ヲ許サレタカ。

答 ネルソン / NELSON / ガ、彼ガ日本ヲ降参シ
タノハ軍ニ彼ノ上官ノ命令ニ従ツタマフコトデア
ルト成ツテ中尉ノ私ハ認エラサ。私ハアウヂマス
/ AUGANUS / 中尉ガカガガガガガガガガ

6.

Doc 8223

7.

同 答 問 答

テイナ中、之が彼ノ辯護ニアタ。

事律員長ニ於テ誰ガネルソン / NELSON /

少尉及ピアウガナス / AUGANUS / 軍醫ニ問テ

發シタカ。

オノ、ブイチ / ONO BUICHI / 大尉。

如何ナル問ガ發セラレ、又如何ナル答ガ

與ヘラレタカ。

發セラレタ質問ハ次ノ如シ、

1 如何ナル部隊ニ彼等ハ所屬シテキタリ、

カ、又仕務、姓名、階級、年齢、學

業、職業。

2 彼等ノ爆發セル場所

一九四五年三月九日 サイパン / SAIPAN /

ヨリ東京船場。

爆發處

一九四五年三月十日 大阪船場

一九四五年三月十七日 神戸船場

3 レーダー / RADAR / ノ説明

ネルソン / NELSON / ハアメリカノレーダ

ダー / RADAR / 装置ヲ説明セルコト、示

テ求メラレタ。

ネルソン / NELSON / ハ、彼ガ日本ヲ

爆發シタト云フ事實ヲ認メル、但單

Doc 8223.4

8.

ニ彼ノ上官ノ命令ニ服シタニ過ギテ
イト云フ事ヲ云ツタ。

同 事律會議ノ判決ハドウデアツタカ。

答 ネルソン / NELSON / 少尉反ビアウガナス

/ AUGANUS / 上官ハ有罪ナルコトガ明トナリ

齊尉ニヨル銃殺ヲ宣告セラレタ。

同 何時、ネルソン / NELSON / 少尉トアウガナ

ス / AUGANUS / 上官ハ銃殺セラレタカ。又何

處デ。

答 兩人トモ一九四五平七月十八日、事律會

議ニ依ツテ判決ガ下セラレタ同日ニ、大

阪府セシベク / SEZBEKU / 部、ヨコヤマ / YOKOYAMA /

練兵場ニ於テ午後四時頃銃殺ニ處

セラレタ。

同 ネルソン / NELSON / 少尉トアウガナス

/ AUGANUS / 上官ノ處刑ニハ誰ガ立言ツタカ

答 石切 / ISHIKIRI / ノ大阪府警務所所長

ナカミチ、カンジ / NAKAMICHI KANJI /

大尉、事律會及ビ証人タリシ、ミナミ

ジサイ / MINAMI JISAI / 少尉、私ハ

法務官反ビ處刑ノ指揮官トシテ立言ツタ

証人トシテ法務下士官シマムラ、ヤスイチ

/ SHIMAMURAYASUICHI / 曹長、是ヲマツタ

Doc 8223 *

／MATSUDA／ マトシ／MITSUHI／及びサント
／SANTA／ ト云フ三八ノ下士官ニヨリ射
撃隊員、名ハ忘レタガ一人ノ日本ノ師
政ノ信侶ガ立置ツタ、ソレカラ他ニ二人
程、名ハ覺エテキナイガ大阪ノ皇軍刑務所
所ノ人がキタ。

問

皇朝及何處デ又何時、ネルソン／NELSON／
少尉トアウガナス／AUGANUS／草薙ノ

答

身体ハ埋葬サレタカ、又誰ガ立置ツタカ。

アウガナス／AUGANUS／草薙トネルソン

／NELSON／ 少尉ノ遺骨ノ同日、大阪府、ソ

ンボク／SONBECKU／ 郡横山／YOKOYAMA／

隊兵場ノ丘ニ埋葬サレタ。皇朝ニ立置ツ

タト同ジ人々ガ出席シタ。

問

皇朝ノ皇族ヲ述べヨ。

答

ネルソン／NELSON／少尉トアウガナス

／AUGANUS／草薙ハ皇族ヲサレテ丘ノ側ニ跪

ニ廻ラレタ墓ニ立タサレタ、ソレ故、二

人ノ飛行士ハ被等ノ頭ヲ丘ニ向ツテ頭ケ

タ姿勢ニテツテキタ。射撃隊ハ飛行士ガ

立ツテキタ處カラ約二米離レテ下向きニ

立置シ、射撃隊ノ二人ハ同時ニ一同死セ

ルソン／NELSON／ 及びアウガナス／AUGANUS／

4
Dec 8223

10.

ニ同ツテ射撃シタ、ネルソン
NELSON/ モアウガナス/AUGANUS/ ニ共
ニ以ニ命中シタガ、ネルソン/NELSON/
ハ獲生キテキタ。ソコデ射撃隊ノ三番目
ノ着ガ今一渡ネルソン/NELSON/ノ頭ヲ
射テ、斬クシテ遠刑ハ終ツタノデアツタ。
一収ノ飯ガ二人ノ飛行士ノ身体ノ上ニ置
カレ、彼等ノ身体ハソノ飯ト共ニ直グ其
ノ時、共働デ土ヲ以テ覆ハレタノデアツ
タ。

1926

~~XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX~~

RESTRICTED

Classification changed from
"CONFIDENTIAL" to
"RESTRICTED" by order of
the Secretary of War
By /s/ E. Checket, Major, Ia.

State of Washington)
) ss.
County of Pierce)

I, Marshall Sidney Shellhart, of lawful age being duly sworn, on oath depose and say:

I am Marshall Sidney Shellhart, S/Sgt. ASN 6954401. My permanent home address is Allison Addition, Cheyenne, Wyoming. I was captured by Jap troops at Mindinao, P.I. on 10 May 1942, when I was attached to the 19th Bomb. Group of the U.S. AAF. After a period of imprisonment in the Philippines, I was taken to Japan on 11 Nov. 1942, and was placed in camp 5D, Kawasaki until June 1945 when I was taken to Niigata where I was a prisoner until 5 Sept. 1945, when I was liberated.

I observed many beatings of American and other Prisoners of War at camp 5 D, Kawasaki. Most of the beating was without just cause, and the Japanese guards would slap the American prisoners, hit them with sticks, clubs, and steel rods. There were very many instances when the Japanese would beat the prisoners until they were unconscious, and I observed many instances, at least 15, where the Japanese would beat the American prisoners to a state of unconsciousness, and then they would throw water on them, reviving them, and beat them into unconsciousness again. There were many cases of where the American prisoners were burned with punk, the Japanese pretending that they were giving medical care. It was the intent of the Japs to make the men who were really ill get up and work rather than suffer this so-called medical care by burning various parts of their body. A majority of the American prisoners are scarred all over their body by this burning. There were innumerable cases where American prisoners were required to hold their arms straight out and then an object such as a bucket of water or sack filled with beans was placed in their hands, and the prisoner was required to hold this object in this position until he dropped unconscious from fatigue. Many times, when the prisoners dropped the article held, he would be severely beaten with clubs and sticks. Several of the men I recall who were severely mistreated by the Japanese were PFC Litz, of the Marine Corps, from Penn., Pvt. Rubia, USA, reg army, who had about 15 years service.

Some of the Japanese guards who were not attached, to the Japanese Army, but who were probably retired

Jap soldiers were Kobayashi, Kendo, Yamido, and other who had nicknames such as Speedo, Slick pants, and Peter Rabbit.

[There were at least three or four cases of collective punishment in this camp while I was there. An American prisoner had written V for Victory on the wall, and 250 prisoners of his group were required to stand at attention all of one night, until 4 a.m. the next night, and until 2 a.m. the third night. During the intervening day, we were required to do our usual heavy manual labor. We missed out on six meals during the three days. During this episode, many men because of their weakened condition, would drop to the ground unconscious from their fatigue or sickness, and the Japanese would throw water on them, and revive them and require them to continue to stand at attention with the rest.]

/s/ Marshall Sidney Shellhart
S/Sgt. 6954401

Witnesses:

/s/ Elmore F. Biles

Subscribed and sworn to before me
this 7th day of October 1945, at
Fort Lewis, Washington.

/s/ Arthur G. Bouley
ARTHUR G. BOULEY
CWO, U S A
Asst Adjutant General
ASFTC Fort Lewis, Wash.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Everett Checket
EVERETT CHECKET
Major Infantry

RESTRICTED

/s/ E.C.

Ex 1926

書類第八二八五號

陸軍部 陸軍省 第六九五四四〇一號 二等軍曹

マーシャル・ツドニー・シニルハート・...

× × × ×

Dec 8285

私ハ川崎ノ五^〇D 坂容所ニ於テアメリカ人及ビ他
ノ俘虜ガ殴打サレルノヲ多ク見タ。殴打ノ大體分
ハ正當ノ理由ナク日本ノ衛兵ガアメリカ俘虜ヲ平
手打ニシタリ、杖、紐、鐵棒、鐵棒デ打ツタリスルノ
ダツタ。日本人ガ俘虜ヲ意氣ノ無クナル迄殴打シ
タ例ハ非常ニ多クツタ。ソシテ私モ多クノ例、少
クモ十五回日本人ガアメリカノ俘虜ヲ意氣ヲ失ツ
テ了テ殴打シテ次ニ水ヲ浴ビセテ息ヲ吹キ返ラ
セ、母ビ意氣ノ無クナル迄殴打スルノヲ見タ。
日本人ハ慰養ヲスル様ナフリラシテガラ、アメリ
カノ俘虜ヲホクチテ機イタ例ガ稀山アル。日本人
ノ志願ハ本營ノ病人ガ身体ノ色シテ部分ヲ焼ク此
ノ所謂醫病テ苦シムヨリモ寧ロ起キテ働ク様ニス
ルコトダツタ。アメリカノ俘虜ノ多敷ハコウシテ
焼カレタノテ身体中傷痕ダラケニオツタ。アメリ
カノ俘虜ガ腕ヲ真直グ前ニ伸バスコトヲ命ゼラレ、
次イテ水ノ入ツタバケツト刀豆ヲ一杯入レタ袋ト
カ云フヤウナ品物ヲ手ニ載セラレ、疲勞カラ氣ガ
遠クナルマデ、コノ品物ヲソノママ持ツテ居ルヨ

1.

2.

Doc 8285*

ウ命令サレタ列ハ欺ヘラレテオイテ頼テル。是々停息
ガ持ツテキル品制ヲ落シタ時ニハ彼ハ根柢ヤ欲テ
撃ク打タレルノダツタ。日本人カラ詰不慮ヲ受
ケタ人々ノ中私ガ想ヒ出ヌ其ノ人ハ「ペンシル
バニア州」出身ノ海兵隊ノ一等兵「リッツ」、約
十五年切腹シテキル米國正親軍兵卒「ルビア」デ
アル。

此ノ收管所ヲ私ガ店ル間ニ少クモ三回カ四回ノ口
條的懲罰ガアツタ。竟ル「メリカ」ノ停息ガ「リ
ズ」ナリ「A MCHILDERY」ト云ニ替ヘタノデ、
二五〇人ノ彼ノ班ノ停息ハ一晩中翌晚ハ午前四時
迄、ソノ翌晚ハ午前二時迄不切ノ疲勞ヲ立タサレ
タ。ソノ間其々ハ日中ハイツモノ通りノ疲勞働ラ
命ゼラレタ。ソノ三日間ニ我々ハ六回食糞ニアリ
ツケナカツタ。此ノ幕後ノ間ニ多クノ人ハ衰弱ノ
爲疲勞或ハ病氣カラ失ツテ地ニ倒レタガ日本
人ハ彼等ニ水ヲ浴ビセテ息ヲ吹キ返ラセ仲ノ若ト
一掃ニ不切ノ疲勞ヲ續ケルコトヲ命ズルノダツタ。

E. # 1727

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED

Classification changed from "CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED" by order of the Secretary of War
By /s/ E. Checket,
Major, Inf.

Q State your name, rate, serial number, permanent home address, and any other pertinent information concerning yourself.

A My name is John Bryan LIPPARD, Corporal, U. S. Marine Corps, serial number 273486. My permanent home address is Littlefield, Texas. I have a high school education.

Q At what enemy camps were you confined and at what dates?

A I was imprisoned in Cabanatuan No. 3, Philippine Islands, from 28 May 1942 to 5 October 1942. I was then transferred to the Hoten Camp at Mukdon, Lanchukuo, where I remained from November 1942 to May 1944. I was then transferred to Kamioka Camp in Japan, where I remained from May 1944 until liberated by American forces.

Q Will you describe briefly your experiences with regard to torture and unusual treatment while imprisoned at the Kamioka Camp in Japan?

A A common form of punishment at Kamioka involved placing pieces of smoldering punk approximately as large as an American nickel upon the wrists, stomach or neck of the individual prisoner of war. When the punk was placed on the neck of the prisoner, he would be required to assume the "push-up" position and the punk would then be placed on his neck. A guard would stand over him and beat the prisoner if he flinched or collapsed. This type of torture was inflicted at the whim of one Sergeant Major MCNTANI, who acted as the executive officer at Kamioka.

It was reported at the camp that prisoners had been trading with Koreans in the area, and in an effort to ascertain which prisoners of war had been involved in such trading all able-bodied members of my group

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

of fifteen men were tortured in the manner described above. I had a piece of punk placed on my neck and still bear the scar as a result of the burning received. Following this torture we were also beaten with clubs, shoes and belts. Sergeant Major MONTANI apparently took great pleasure in ordering and participating in severe beatings of the prisoners of war.

I have no further information, either favorable or unfavorable pertaining to the incidents related above.

* * * *

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
 : SS
County of Alameda :

I, John Bryan LIPPARD, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of two pages, including this and the title page, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ John B. Lippard

Subscribed and sworn to before me this second day of October 1945, at Oakland, California.

/s/ Walter J. Stoessel, Jr.
Ens. USNR

I, W. J. STOESSEL, Ensign, USNR, certify that John Bryan LIPPARD, Corporal, U. S. Marine Corps, serial number 273486, personally appeared before me on the second day of October 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

/s/ Walter J. Stoessel, Jr.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ EC

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

of fifteen men were tortured in the manner described above. I had a piece of punk placed on my neck and still bear the scar as a result of the burning received. Following this torture we were also beaten with clubs, shoes and belts. Sergeant Major MONTANI apparently took great pleasure in ordering and participating in severe beatings of the prisoners of war.

I have no further information, either favorable or unfavorable pertaining to the incidents related above.

* * * *

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
 : SS
County of Alameda :

I, John Bryan LIPPAID, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of two pages, including this and the title page, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ John B. Lippard

Subscribed and sworn to before me this second day of October 1945, at Oakland, California.

/s/ Walter J. Stoessel, Jr.
Ens. USNR

I, W. J. STOESSEL, Ensign, USNR, certify that John Bryan LIPPAID, Corporal, U. S. Marine Corps, serial number 273486, personally appeared before me on the second day of October 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

/s/ Walter J. Stoessel, Jr.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ EC

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ EC

Doc. No. 8071*

Page 3 *

Place: Oakland, California

Date: 2 October 1945

Page 3 of 3 pages

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

/s/ Edwin F. Svare
EDWIN F. SVARE
1st Lt., Inf.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

92192

Doc 8071

*

私ノ名前ハジョン・ブリン・リッパードデ、合衆
 國マリオン伍長、軍籍番號二七三四八六號デス。本
 籍地ハテキサス州ルツトルフィールドデス。
 私ハ一九四二年五月二十八日ヨリ同年十月五日迄フ
 イリツピン島ノカバナチュアン第三號ニ投獄サレマ
 シタ。其レカラ南洲國奉天ノ奉天收容所ニ移サレマ
 シタガ、ソコニ一九四二年十一月ヨリ一九四四年
 五月迄居リマシタ。其ノ後日本ノ神岡收容所ニ移サ
 レ、其處ニ一九四四年五月ヨリアメリカ軍ニ救濟
 サレル迄居リマシタ。
 神岡デノ刑罪ノ普通ノ形式ニハアメリカノ五仙白銅
 位モアル大キサノ燃エクスブツテキル朽木ノ木片ヲ
 夫々ノ俘虜ノ腕首、腹父ハ首ノ上ニ置クト云フ奴ガ
 アリマシタ。
 ソノ朽木ガ俘虜ノ首ノ上ニ置カレルト、彼ハ抑シ上
 ゲル感勞ヲ取ル様ニ命ゼラレ、ソシテソシテソノ朽
 木ハコノ首ノ上ニ置カレルノデシタ。監視人カ彼ノ
 傍ニ立ツテ若シモ避ケヨウトシタリ。体ニ崩シタリス
 ルナラバソノ俘虜ヲ打ツノデシタ。
 コノ種ノ拷問ハ神岡ノ執行官トシテ勤メタ、モンタ
 ニ(原名不詳)尊貴ノ氣マグレデヤラレタノデシタ。
 俘虜ガソノ地域ノ朝鮮人ト取引ラシテ居タトイフ事
 カ收容所ニ知ラサレマシタ。ソシテドノ俘虜カコノ

Doc 8071 *

2.

様ナ取引ニ参加シテ居タカトイフ事ヲ確メル爲ニ私
ノ組ノ十五人ノ全ク完全ナ体ノ者違カ上ニ述べマシ
タ方法ヲ拷問サレマシタ。私ハ首ノ上ニ朽木ノ片ヲ
乗セラレ、ソシテソノ時受ケタ火傷ノタメ現在尙痕
跡ガ残ツテ居リマス。コノ拷問ニ續イテ我々ハ又棍
棒ヤ靴ヤ帯ヲ打タレマシタ。

Qy 1428A

When COMPLETED this document must be classified as SECRET.

[AUSTRALIAN] WAR CRIMES COMMISSION

QUESTIONNAIRE

Notes:--

- (a) This questionnaire should be completed by:--
 - (i) All repatriated Australian prisoners of war (A.I.F., R.A.A.F. and R.A.N.)
 - (ii) All repatriated Australian civil internees.
 - (iii) All repatriated British civil internees in the Pacific Area (excluding Malaya and China)
 - (iv) All members and ex-members of the Allied forces who have actual knowledge of war crimes committed by the enemy.
- (b) It will be completed in the presence of an officer who will countersign the signature of the person making the statement.
- (c) It is important that a full statement on page 3 (carried on to page 4 if necessary) be furnished as well as the answer to 8 (f).

- 1. Army number 4737 2. Rank [Gunner (A/Bdr)]
- 3. Full name (in BLOCK letters) [MULLINS John Boud]
- 4. Unit at time of capture and/or place of capture
2/15 Field Regt. MALAYA
(State her unit in which soldier was serving at time of capture, e.g. 2/1 F or H.Q. 6 Aust. Div., &c)
- 5. Home address 19 Central Avenue, LANLY, NSW
- 6. At what enemy camps and hospitals were you confined and when were you at each? Jan-Oct. 42., CHANGI Oct 42-Mar 43, THAILAND. Mar 43-June 4, SHIKOKU, Japan from July until 13 Sept 45.

7. Do you have any information about any atrocities against, or mistreatment of, armed soldiers, prisoners of war, civilian internees or the civilian population for which you think the perpetrator should be punished? (Answer by stating YES or NO in the spaces provided below)--

- | | |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| (a) Killings or executions | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |
| (b) Rape, torture, beatings and other cruelties | <u>yes</u>
YES or NO |
| (c) Imprisonment under improper conditions | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (d) Massacres, wholesale looting, pillage, or burning of towns, villages | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |
| (e) Use of prisoners of war or civilians on enemy military works or operations | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (f) Exposure of prisoners of war to danger of gunfire, bombing, torpedoing, or other hazards of war | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (g) Transportation of prisoners of war under improper conditions or deportation of civilians | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (h) Public exhibition or exposure to ridicule of prisoners of war | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |
| (i) Failure to provide prisoners of war or internees with proper medical care, food or quarters. | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (j) Collective punishment of a group for offence of others | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |
| (k) Breaches of rules relating to the Red Cross | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |

- (l) Cannibalism no
YES or NO
- (m) Mutilation of the dead no
YES or NO
- *(n) Any other war crimes not specifically mentioned above for which you think the guilty persons should be punished no
YES or NO

If any question is answered YES then state the facts in 6(f) on pages 3 and

8. Details of Atrocities.----

- (a) Kind of crime Many of these were general but 2 cases of TORTURE
- (b) When and where it happened Starvation of prisoners occurred generally but particularly in JAPAN where 2 men were tortured.
- (c) Who was the victim? (Give complete description including name and whether military or civilian personnel) Gunners BASIL JONES and ALLAN ORR of 2/15 Fd Regt, both from NSW
- (d) Who was the perpetrator? (Give as complete description and as much information as possible). Jap Warrant Officer known as "HAPPY JACK", real name would be known to Lt. WITHEYCOMBE of 2/15 Fd Regt, and Lt. SANDERSON of 2/19 Inf. Bn. both of whom were in the same camp at SHIKOKU
- (e) State if you saw it yourself. If you did not see it, who told you about it? (Gives names and addresses of other witnesses) I saw the wounds the day after torture, and was told the details by the victims.

(f) Give brief stor. of crime. Full statement required on pages 3 and 4. Victims had their hands

"SPIKED" to tables with spike files and then

their fingernails lifted with a paper knife.

To the best of my belief the above particulars are correct.

/s/ Not Legible
(Signature of Interrogating Officer)

/s/ J. Mullins
Signature

3 Nov 45

(Date)

2/9 Aust General Hospital
(Place and/or Unit at which interrogation was made.)

* * * * *

Comment by Interrogation Officer This recovered soldier was in very bad condition when recovered from JAPANESE hands, and would have died in a matter of days from MALNUTRITION AND BERRI BERRI. He has now been cleared from the D.I. List, after 6 weeks hospitalization, but is still on the seriously ill list.

- * Other war crimes not specifically mentioned include:--
- (i) Usurpation of sovereignty during military occupation.
 - (ii) Compulsory enlistment of soldiers among the inhabitants of occupied territory.
 - (iii) Attempts to denationalize the inhabitants of occupied territory.
 - (iv) Confiscation of property.
 - (v) Exaction of illegitimate or of exorbitant contributions and requisitions.
 - (vi) Debasement of the currency and issue of spurious currency.
 - (vii) Deliberate bombardment of undefended places.
 - (viii) Wanton destruction of religious, charitable, educational and historic buildings and monuments.
 - (ix) Use of explosive or expanding bullets and other inhuman appliances.
 - (x) Directions to give no quarter and refusal of quarter.
 - (xi) Misuse of flags of truce.

FULL STATEMENT OF ATROCITY OR CRIME.

This MUST be signed by the person making the statement and counter-signed by the interrogating officer at the end of the statement.

WITNESS BEING DULY SWORN STATES:-

At YAMAMI Camp on the JAP island of SHIKOKU, about March 1945, Gnr Basil JONES and Gnr Allan ORR, both of 2/15 Fd Regt were accused of stealing sugar.

They were taken away under the orders of the Jap WO known as "HAPPY JACK" for questioning. They denied having stolen the sugar and told the truth, that they had obtained it from their Jap guards in exchange for cigarettes from their Red Cross parcel.

"HAPPY JACK" refused to believe this, and in an effort to extract a confession of theft from them, HE SPINED THEIR HANDS TO TABLES USING AN ORDINARY TYPE OF OFFICE SPIKE FILE. THE SPIKE WAS DRIVEN RIGHT THROUGH THE HAND SEVERAL TIMES NEAR THE KNUCKLE JOINTS. HE THEN PRESSED AND LIFTED FORCEFULLY THE FINGER NAILS OF THE LEFT HAND USING A PAPER KNIFE AS A LEVER. /s/ JR

I saw both JONES and ORR the following day, and their hands were in a shocking condition. They both told me what had occurred. I also know that on the day of the torture, "HAPPY JACK" gave Lt. WITTHYCOMBE an unmerciful beating Both JONES AND ORR had very bad hands for a long time, as a result of their tortures.

The Jap WO "HAPPY JACK" was responsible for frequently severely beating up the PW, his favorite weapon being a heavy wooden sword. He seemed to loath all whites, and indulged his cruel tendencies on every possible occasion.

The food conditions in this camp at SHIKOKU were very bad. We had to live on a very small quantity of rice and barley, and we used our few cents a day work pay to buy any food we could. We were so starved that we bought and ate the entrails of dogs, and when we could get it, horseflesh.

Our work was in the copper mine, the shifts being each 12 hours a day with one day off each month. (On this day they gave us less food still, on the grounds that we needed less because of no work). The mines had previously been closed because of the dangerous condition of working, but they opened the dangerous shafts for us to work. There were some deaths through accident.

Confirmation of all this evidence can be obtained from the officers named herein.

SWORN BEFORE ME AT LOROKAI, THIS THIRD DAY OF NOVEMBER
1945.

/s/ Not Legible MAJOR
INTERROGATING OFFICER
3 PW Contact & Enquiry Unit

/s/ J. Mullins

signature of Witness

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/S/ Everett Checket
EVERETT CHECKET
Major Infantry

EXHIBIT NO. 1928A

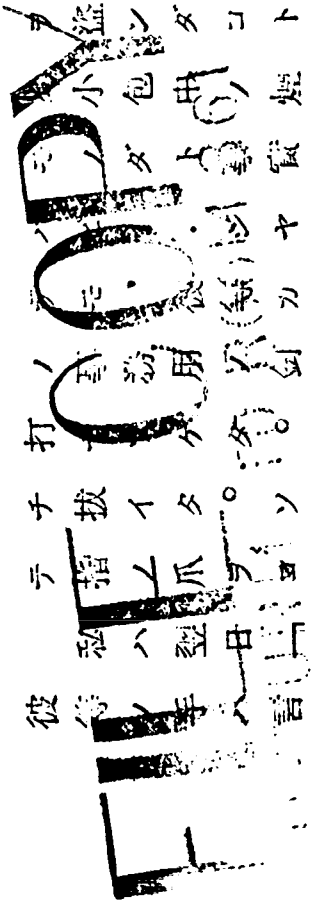
Doc 8263

★

砲 兵 (副 砲 手)

ジョーン・バウド・マリンス

一九四五年三月頃、日本四國島ノ「ヤマニ」收容所
 デ2/15 野戦部隊砲手「バズイル・ジョーンズ」同
 ジク砲手「アラン・オー」兩名ハ砂糖ヲ盗ンダカド
 デ咎メラレタ。
 彼等ハ「ハピー・ジャツク」ヲ通ツテキル日本人準
 士官ノ命令ヲ諷問ノタメ送レ去ラレタ。彼等ハ砂糖
 盗ンダコトヲ否認シタソシテ彼等ノ赤十字カラ來
 小包中ノ煙草ト交換ニ日本人守衛カラ手ニ入レタ
 事ヲ實ラ語ツタ。
 ヤツクハコレヲ信ジャウトセズ、ドウシ
 カ盗ミラシタト白狀サセヨウトシテ普通
 ノ級デ込ミラ使ツテ彼等ノ手ヲ卓子ニ
 打テ分タ。釘ハ攪回ニ亘リ指關節近ク、所テ手ヲブ
 ナ抜イタ。ソレカラ彼ハ紙切ナイフヲ挺ノ代リニシ
 テ指ノ爪ヲ開ケ爪ヲ無理ニハカシタ。
 私ハ翌日ジョーンズ「オー」ノ兩人ニ會ツタガ
 彼等ノ手ヲ書語道斷ノ状態デアツタ。彼等ノ二人ハ



Doc 8263

2.

私ニ事ノ次第ヲ語ツタ。私ハ又ソノ拷問ノ日ニ彼カ
 「ウイズイカウム」少尉ヲ無慈悲ニモ際打シタ事ヲ
 シツテギタ。――「ジヨーンズ」モ「オー」
 モ長イコト拷問ノ結果トシテ目モアテラレヌ手ヲシ
 テギタ。

日本人準士官ハビ―・ジャックハ屢々慘酷ニ拷問
 ラ打ツタソノ責任カアル。彼ノオ得意ノ武器ハ重イ
 木剣デアツタ。彼ハ白人トイフ白人ヲ嫌ツテギルラ
 シク出來ル限リノ機會ニ彼ノ残忍性ヲ發揮シタ。

四國ニ於ケル當所ノ食糧事情ハ頗ル悪カツタ。我
 々ハ全く小量ノ米ト大麥ヲ暮サネバナラナカツタ。

我々ハ一日幾錢カデアアル仕事賃ヲ何カ食物ヲ買フノ
 ニ使ツタ。我々ハ餘リニ飢エテギタカラ犬ノ内臟ヲ
 買ツテ食ヒ手ニ入レラレタ時ハ馬肉ヲモ食ツタ。

我ノ仕事ハ銅山テ交替労働時間ハ一日十二時間テ
 毎月一日ノ休ミガアツタ。ヘコノ休ミノ日ハ働カナ
 イカラ少ナイ食糧ヲ問ニ合フトイフ理屈テ不斷ヨリ
 モツト小量シカ食糧ヲ與ヘラレナカツタ。

ソノ銅山ハ以前作業ニ危険ナ状態デアルタメ閉鎖
 セラレテギタモノデアルカ彼等ハ我々カ働クタメニ
 ソノ危険ナ堅坑ヲ開イタ。災害ノタメ死ヌ人モ幾人
 カアツタ。

Ex. # 1929

DOC. NO. 3284*

Page 1

O V E R

WAR CRIMES OFFICE

When completed this document must be classified as RESTRICTED

DATE: Sept., 15, 1945

1. YOUR NAME: Robert Robert R
Last First Middle

2. RANK: P.F.C. 2nd cl. spec. SERIAL NO. 6580532
(if civilian, write in word "Civilian" (Armed Forces personnel only)

PERMANENT
3. HOME ADDRESS: 1125 Dunn Ave Richmond Calif
Street No. City State

4. AT WHAT ENEMY CAMPS AND HOUSING UNITS WERE YOU CONFINED AND WHEN WERE YOU AT EACH? (If never a prisoner of war or internee, then state principal places you have been from time to time while overseas).

O'Donnell, P.I., May 10, 1942 to June 6, 1942 Camps June 6 to July 28, 1942 Oshinetsu July 28, 1942 to July 29, 1943 Camp #17 Orita, Japan Aug 10, 1943 to Sept. 10, 1945

5. DO YOU HAVE ANY INFORMATION ABOUT ANY ATROCITIES AGAINST OR MISTREATMENT OF AMERICANS PRISONER OF WAR CIVILIAN INTERNEES OR THE CIVILIAN POPULATION FOR WHICH YOU THINK THE PERPETRATORS SHOULD BE PUNISHED? (Answer by stating YES or NO in the spaces provided below.

(a) Killings or executions----- YES
yes or no

(b) Torture, beatings or other cruelties----- YES
yes or no

(c) Imprisonment under improper conditions----- YES
yes or no

(d) Massacres, wholesale looting or burning of towns NO
yes or no

RESTRICTED

- (e) Use of prisoners of war on enemy military works or operations YES
yes or no
- (f) Exposure of prisoners of war to danger of gunfire bombing, torpedoing, or other hazards of war YES
yes or no
- (g) Transportation of prisoners of war under improper conditions YES
yes or no
- (h) Public exhibition or exposure to ridicule of prisoners of war YES
yes or no
- (i) Failure to provide prisoners of war with proper medical care, food or quarters YES
yes or no
- (j) Collective punishment of a group for offenses of others YES
yes or no
- (k) Any other atrocities not specifically mentioned above for which you think the guilty persons should be punished. YES
yes or no

IF ANY QUESTION IS ANSWERED YES, THEN STATE THE FACTS BRIEFLY ON REVERSE SIDE OF THIS SHEET.

Incl #3 (2 pages)

O V E R

DETAILS OF ATROCITIES

<u>KIND OF CRIME</u>	<u>WHERE IT HAPPENED</u>	<u>WHO WAS THE VICTIM</u> (include name, nationality & whether military personnel or not)	<u>STATE IF YOU SAW IT YOURSELF, IF YOU DID NOT SEE IT, WHO TOLD YOU ABOUT IT?</u>
----------------------	--------------------------	--	--

1. (a) Bayonet . Camp #17 . Hard #460 Our officers
 beat and starved to death # 17 Knight #233 mys lf
 beat and starved to death # 17 Johnson Mys lf
 beat and starved to death #17 Nickname Greek # 120 Mys lf
 (b) beating and kneeling on bamboo # 17 Mys lf and many others
2. (c) Improper clothing little food no heat in winter
 thin rubber shoes very little medicine
 (e) Rebuilding of bridge, Capas, P.I. Work in Coal Mine
 in camp # 17 Oruta, Japan
 (f) From Pataan Surrender to Corregidor surrender
3. (g) By boat from Phil. to Japan approx. 17 days
 sweatbox of hold of ship #454
 (h) Continually 24 hrs. a day at Camp # 17 Oruta, Japan
 (i) Camp # 17
 (j) everywhere, its the custom in Japan
4. (k) Using 110 volts of electricity on men, cold water
 thrown on you in the winter, beatings with steel rods.

5. _____
 HAVE YOU PREVIOUSLY BEEN QUESTIONED BY ANY MILITARY OR NAVAL
 AUTHORITIES ABOUT ATROCITIES OR MISTREATMENT NO . IF YES, BY
 WHOM, WHERE, WHEN _____ Yes or no

DID YOU MAKE A SIGNED STATEMENT _____

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY: Yes or no

s/ William H. Brown
 William H. Brown
 Capt. Inf.

s/ Owen R. Kobert
 Sign your name here
 A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:
 s/ Everett Checkett
 EVERETT CHECKETT
 Major, Inf.

DETAILS OF ATROCITIES

<u>KIND OF CRIME</u>	<u>WHERE IT HAPPENED</u>	<u>WHO WAS THE VICTIM</u> (include name, nationality & whether military personnel or not)	<u>STATE IF YOU SAW IT YOURSELF, IF YOU DID NOT SEE IT, WHO TOLD YOU ABOUT IT?</u>
1. (a)	Bayonet	Camp #17 Hard #460	Our officers
	beat and starved to death #	17 Knight #233	myself
	beat and starved to death #	17 Johnson	Myself
	beat and starved to death #	17 Nickname Greek #	120 Myself
	(b) beating and kneeling on bamboo #	17	Myself and many others
2. (c)	Improper clothing little food no heat in winter		
	thin rubber shoes very little medicine		
	(e) Rebuilding of bridge, Capas, P.I.	Work in Coal Mine	
	in camp #	17 Oruta, Japan	
	(f) From Pataan Surrender to Corregidor surrender		
3. (g)	By boat from Phil. to Japan approx.	17 days	
	sweatbox of hold of ship #	454	
	(h) Continually 24 hrs. a day at Camp #	17 Oruta, Japan	
	(i) Camp #	17	
	(j) everywhere, its the custom in Japan		
4. (k)	Using 110 volts of electricity on men, cold water		
	thrown on you in the winter, beatings with steel rods.		

5. _____
 HAVE YOU PREVIOUSLY BEEN QUESTIONED BY ANY MILITARY OR NAVAL
 AUTHORITIES ABOUT ATROCITIES OR MISTREATMENT NO. IF YES, BY
 WHOM, WHERE, WHEN _____ Yes or no

DID YOU MAKE A SIGNED STATEMENT _____

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY: _____

Yes or no

s/ William H. Brown

William H. Brown

Capt. Inf.

s/ Owen R. Kobert

Sign your name here

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

s/ Everett Chicket

EVERETT CHCKETT

Major, Inf.

RESTRICTED

KOBERT, OWEN R. Pfc 2/c ASN 6580582
(Rank)

after being duly sworn at 20th Replacement Depot, Luzon, P.I.
on 16 September 1945, testified as follows:

Q How old are you?

A 24

Q Were you interned by the Japanese or made a prisoner of war, and if so, when and where?

A 9 April 1942, Bataan.

Q What was your unit at the time of your capture?

A 21st Pursuit Squadron, 35th Pursuit Group.

Q By what Japanese unit were you captured?

A Unknown.

Q Do you expect to be repatriated, and if so, to what country?

A Yes. United States.

Q What will your complete address be after your repatriation?

A 1125 Dunn Ave., Richmond, Calif.

Q Will you state the names and locations of the camps at which you were held as a prisoner of war and the dates you were confined at each camp?

<u>Compound or Camp</u>	<u>Location</u>	<u>Dates</u>
A O'Donnell Work Camp	Luzon, P.I.	10 May 42 - 6 June 42
Cabanatuan	Capas, Luzon, P.I.	6 Jun 42 - 28 Jul 42
En route to Japan	Luzon, P.I.	28 Jul 42 - 23 Jul 43
Camp # 17	At sea	23 Jul 43 - 10 Aug 43
	Omota, Kyushu, Japan	10 Aug 43 - 10 Sep 45

Q Do you know or have you reason to believe that the Imperial Japanese Forces failed to treat prisoners of war with humanity or otherwise committed atrocities or war crimes against them?

A. Yes.

- Q Will you state all facts in detail pertaining to atrocities, war crimes, violations of Rules of Land Warfare and human decency at Camp # 17, Omuta, the dates thereof, the perpetrators, giving their names, ranks, units and other identifying information.
- A When I first arrived at Camp # 17 Omuta, we were not bothered much for the first week or so. Then nearly every day there would be three or four prisoners taken to the guardhouse and subjected to torture and beatings. The Japanese would claim we had not "goose stemmed" enough or had failed to salute a call "curi" (a verbal salute). In the guardhouse the prisoners would be forced to kneel on bamboo poles about two inches thick and remain in that position for hours. I myself had to do that once for five hours, and the poles made dents along my shins and at my knees. It was several days before I could walk straight after that. One Australian had to have both legs amputated above the ankle because his feet froze when he was forced to kneel in that manner during last winter. Also I was beaten with a club about six inches wide and an inch and a half thick and about as long as a baseball bat. This occurred while I was in the guardhouse about August or September 1944. I saw many others received the same treatment nearly every day. The commander of the camp when I first got there was 1st Lt. Urui but I do not remember his successor's name who took over about a year later. The camp interpreter's name was Oui. Another civilian called Yamamuchi was the interpreter at the coal mine where we worked. He would torment those prisoners, who were injured or sick and forced to go to the mine for light work, by forcing them to use their injured arm or strained back for work they could not do. He was an average Jap with no peculiar marks. Spoke English.
- Also when a prisoner was to be beaten the guards would force the rest of us to watch and would ridicule and laugh at a prisoner if he "hollered".
- During the last three or four months I was told by some of the prisoners that they were made to stand in a puddle of water and then shocked unconscious by a 110 volt electric wire. We heard these men scream when this happened and talked to one Dutchman and one American soldier who had this done to them.
- Sometimes I saw men get beaten with steel rods about a quarter inch thick and three or four feet long. One American named Gousith (phonetic) was beaten in this manner.

His prison number was 500. This happened two or three months before the Japs surrendered. A lot of men caught pneumonia from having cold water thrown on them in the winter just as they started out for work.

Capt. Thomas Hewbitt, M.C. has complete medical records of treatment given the prisoners and records of those killed from beatings or died for want of proper medical care.

(S) O'EN R. KOBERT

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 16th day of September, 1945.

CERTIFIED A TRUE COPY:

s/ Charles E. Sullivan

(S) LOVICK P. MILES, JR
1st Lt. JAGD

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

s/ Everett Checket
EVERETT CHECKET
Maj. Inf.

RESTRICTED

Cx. # 1929

Doc. No. 8263*

Page 1 *

When COMPLETED this document must be classified as SECRET.

[AUSTRALIAN] WAR CRIMES COMMISSION

QUESTIONNAIRE

Notes:--

- (a) This questionnaire should be completed by:--
 - (i) All repatriated Australian prisoners of war (A.I.F., R.A.A.F. and R.A.N.)
 - (ii) All repatriated Australian civil internees.
 - (iii) All repatriated British civil internees in the Pacific Area (excluding Malaya and China)
 - (iv) All members and ex-members of the Allied forces who have actual knowledge of war crimes committed by the enemy.
- (b) It will be completed in the presence of an officer who will countersign the signature of the person making the statement.
- (c) It is important that a full statement on page 3 (carried on to page 4 if necessary) be furnished as well as the answer to 8 (f).

- 1. Army number 4737 2. Rank [Gunner (A/Bdr)]
- 3. Full name (in BLOCK letters) [MULLINS John Boud]
- 4. Unit at time of capture and/or place of capture 2/15 Field Regt. MALAYA
(State her unit in which soldier was serving at time of capture, e.g. 2/1 F or H.Q. 6 Aust. Div., &c)
- 5. Home address 19 Central Avenue, MANLY, NSW
- 6. At what enemy camps and hospitals were you confined and when were you at each? Jan-Oct, 42, CHANGI Oct 42-Mar 43, THAILAND. Mar 43-June 4, SHIKOKU, Japan from July until 13 Sept 45.

7. Do you have any information about any atrocities against, or mistreatment of, Allied soldiers, prisoners of war, civilian internees or the civilian population for which you think the perpetrator should be punished? (Answer by stating YES or NO in the spaces provided below)--

- | | |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| (a) Killings or executions | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |
| (b) Rape, torture, beatings and other cruelties | <u>yes</u>
YES or NO |
| (c) Imprisonment under improper conditions | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (d) Massacres, wholesale looting, pillage, or burning of towns, villages | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |
| (e) Use of prisoners of war or civilians on enemy military works or operations | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (f) Exposure of prisoners of war to danger of gunfire, bombing, torpedoing, or other hazards of war | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (g) Transportation of prisoners of war under improper conditions or deportation of civilians | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (h) Public exhibition or exposure to ridicule of prisoners of war | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |
| (i) Failure to provide prisoners of war or internees with proper medical care, food or quarters. | <u>yes - general</u>
YES or NO |
| (j) Collective punishment of a group for offence of others | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |
| (k) Breaches of rules relating to the Red Cross | <u>no</u>
YES or NO |

- (l) Cannibalism no
YES or NO
- (m) Mutilation of the dead no
YES or NO
- *(n) Any other war crimes not specifically mentioned above for which you think the guilty persons should be punished no
YES or NO

If any question is answered YES then state the facts in 6(f) on pages 3 and

8. Details of Atrocities.----

- (a) Kind of crime many of these were general but 2 cases of TORTURE
- (b) When and where it happened Starvation of prisoners occurred generally but particularly in JAPAN where 2 men were tortured.
- (c) Who was the victim? (Give complete description including name and whether military or civilian personnel) Gunners BASIL JONES and ALLAN ORR of 2/15 Fd Regt, both from NSW
- (d) Who was the perpetrator? (Give as complete description and as much information as possible). Jap Warrant Officer known as "HAPPY JACK", real name would be known to Lt. WITENCOLE of 2/15 Fd Regt, and Lt. SANDERSON of 2/19 Inf. Bn, both of whom were in the same camp at SHIKOKU
- (e) State if you saw it yourself. If you did not see it, who told you about it? (Give names and addresses of other witnesses) I saw the wounds the day after torture, and was told the details by the victims.

(f) Give brief story of crime. Full statement required on pages 3 and 4. Victims had their hands

"SPIKE" to tables with spike files and then their fingernails lifted with a paper knife.

To the best of my belief the above particulars are correct.

/s/ Not Legible
(Signature of Interrogating Officer)

/s/ J. Mullins
Signature

3 Nov 45

(Date)

2/9 Aust General Hospital
(Place and/or Unit at which interrogation was made.)

* * * * *

Comment by Interrogation Officer This recovered soldier was in very bad condition when recovered from JAPANESE hands, and would have died in a matter of days from MALNUTRITION AND BERT BERT. He has now been cleared from the D.I. List, after 6 weeks hospitalization, but is still on the seriously ill list.

- * Other war crimes not specifically mentioned include:---
- (i) Usurpation of sovereignty during military occupation.
 - (ii) Compulsory enlistment of soldiers among the inhabitants of occupied territory.
 - (iii) Attempts to denationalize the inhabitants of occupied territory.
 - (iv) Confiscation of property.
 - (v) Exaction of illegitimate or of exorbitant contributions and requisitions.
 - (vi) Debasement of the currency and issue of spurious currency.
 - (vii) Deliberate bombardment of undefended places.
 - (viii) Wanton destruction of religious, charitable, educational and historic buildings and monuments.
 - (ix) Use of explosive or expanding bullets and other inhuman appliances.
 - (x) Directions to give no quarter and refusal of quarter.
 - (xi) Misuse of flags of truce.

FULL STATEMENT OF ATROCITY OR CRIME.

This MUST be signed by the person making the statement and countersigned by the interrogating officer at the end of the statement.

WITNESS BEING DULY SWORN STATES:-

At YAMANI Camp on the JAP island of SHIKOKU, about March 1945, Gnr Basil JONES and Gnr Allan ORR, both of 2/15 Fd Regt were accused of stealing sugar.

They were taken away under the orders of the Jap WO known as "HAPPY JACK" for questioning. They denied having stolen the sugar and told the truth, that they had obtained it from their Jap guards in exchange for cigarettes from their Red Cross parcel.

"HAPPY JACK" refused to believe this, and in an effort to extract a confession of theft from them, HE SPIKED THEIR HANDS TO TABLES USING AN ORDINARY TYPE OF OFFICE SPIKE FILE. THE SPIKE WAS DRIVEN RIGHT THROUGH THE HAND SEVERAL TIMES NEAR THE KNUCKLE JOINTS. HE THEN PRESSED AND LIFTED FORCIBLY THE FINGER NAILS OF THE LEFT HAND USING A PAPER KNIFE AS A LEVER. /s/ JR

I saw both JONES and ORR the following day, and their hands were in a shocking condition. They both told me what had occurred. I also know that on the day of the torture, "HAPPY JACK" gave Lt. WITHEYCOMBE an unmerciful beating; Both JONES AND ORR had very bad hands for a long time, as a result of their tortures.

The Jap WO "HAPPY JACK" was responsible for frequently severely beating up the PW, his favorite weapon being a heavy wooden sword. He seemed to loath all whites, and indulged his cruel tendencies on every possible occasion.

The food conditions in this camp at SHIKOKU were very bad. We had to live on a very small quantity of rice and barley, and we used our POW coats a day work pay to buy any food we could. We were so starved that we bought and ate the entrails of dogs, and when we could get it, horseflesh.

Our work was in the copper mine, the shifts being each 12 hours a day with one day off each month. (On this day they gave us less food still, on the grounds that we needed less because of no work). The mines had previously been closed because of the dangerous condition of working, but they opened the dangerous shafts for us to work. There were some deaths through accident.

Confirmation of all this evidence can be obtained from the officers named herein.

SWORN BEFORE ME AT MOROTAI, THIS THIRD DAY OF NOVEMBER
1945.

/s/ Not Legible MAJOR
INTERROGATING OFFICER
3 PW Contact & Enquiry Unit

/s/ J. Mullins

signature of Witness

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Everett Checket
EVERETT CHECKET
Major Infantry

Our work was in the copper mine, the shifts being each 12 hours a day with one day off each month. (On this day they gave us less food still, on the grounds that we needed less because of no work). The mines had previously been closed because of the dangerous condition of working, but they opened the dangerous shafts for us to work. There were some deaths through accident.

Confirmation of all this evidence can be obtained from the officers named herein.

SWORN BEFORE ME AT NOROTAI, THIS THIRD DAY OF NOVEMBER
1945.

/s/ Not Legible MAJOR
INTERROGATING OFFICER
3 PW Contact & Enquiry Unit

/s/ J. Mullins

signature of Witness

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Everett Checket
EVERETT CHECKET
Major Infantry

EX 1929 Doc 8284

答、私ガ初メテ大卒田第十七收容所ニ到着セシ候
 取初ノ一通問許リハ吾々ハ大シテ迷惑モ受ケ
 マセンデシタ、其後始ント毎日ノ様ニ三人又
 ハ四人ノ俘虜ガ監視所ニ連行サレテ拷問及ビ
 殴打ヲ受ケマシタ。日本人ハ吾々ガ充分ニ調
 歩訓練ヲ爲サズ且ツ「敬禮」ト云フ號令ニ應
 ジテ禮ヲ爲スコトヲ怠ツタト主張シテ居リマ
 シタ。監視所ニ於テ俘虜ハ約二時ノ太サノ竹
 棒ノ上ニ座ラシメテ坐ルコトヲ強要サレ何時
 間モ其ノ儘ニ置カレマシタ。私自身モ一度五
 時間ニ亘ツテ同様ノ目ニ過ヒ竹ノ棒ハ私ノ皮
 膚及ビ座ニ陰ヒ込ミテ凹痕ヲ爲シ眞直ニ歩行
 出来ル様ニナツタノハ獄日後ノ事デアリマシ
 タ。一深洲人ハ前ノ冬其様ナ姿勢ヲ墮カサレ
 タガ爲メニ彼ノ足ハ凍傷ニ罹リ「黒」ノ上カ
 ラ両足共切断スルノ余儀ナキニ至リマシタ。
 猶、私ハ約六時ノ幅、一時半ノ厚サノ野球ノ
 打球棒程ノ長サノ棍棒ヲ毆打サレマシタ。
 是ハ千九百四十四年八月又ハ九月頃私ガ監視
 所ニ居リシ時起ツタ事デアリマス。私ハ多ク
 ノ他ノ人々ガ始ント毎日同様ナ目ニ處セラレ
 タノヲ見マシタ。私ガ其庭ニ初メテ行ツタ時
 ノ收容所ノ所長ハ瓜生中尉^{ロロH}デアリマシタガ

EX 1929 Doc 8284

A

答、私ガ初メテ大卒田第十七收容所ニ到着セシ際
 最初ノ一週間許リハ吾々ハ大シテ迷惑モ受ケ
 マセンデシタ、真從殆ンド毎日ノ様ニ三人又
 ハ四人ノ伴郎ガ監視所ニ進行サレテ操縦及ビ
 毆打ヲ受ケマシタ。日本人ハ吾々が充分ニ為
 歩訓練ヲ爲サズ且ツ「敬禮」ト云フ號令ニ應
 ジテ禮ヲ爲スコトヲ怠ツタト主張シテ居リマ
 シタ。監視所ニ於テ伴郎ハ約二時ノ太サノ竹
 棒ノ上ニ座ラ齒ゲテ坐ルコトヲ強要サレ何時
 間モ其ノ儘ニ置カレマシタ。私自身モ一度五
 時間ニ亘ツテ同様ノ目ニ過ヒ竹ノ棒ハ私ノ皮
 膚及ビ膝ニ喰ヒ込ミテ凹痕ヲ殘シ眞直ニ歩行
 出來ル様ニオツタノハ獄日後ノ事デアリマシ
 タ。一澳洲人ハ前ノ冬其様ヲ委勞テ腕カサレ
 タガ爲メニ彼ノ足ハ凍傷ニ罹リ「裸」ノ上カ
 ラ兩足共切断スルノ余儀ヲキニ至リマシタ。
 猶、私ハ約六時ノ幅、一時半ノ厚サノ野球ノ
 打球棒程ノ長サノ棍棒ヲ毆打サレマシタ。
 是ハ千九百四十四年八月又ハ九月頃私ガ監視
 所ニ居リシ時起ツタ事デアリマス。私ハ多ク
 ノ他ノ人々が殆ンド毎日同様ノ目ニ處セラレ
 タノヲ見マシタ。私ガ其處ニ初メテ行ツタ時
 ノ收容所ノ所長ハ瓜生中尉^{ロズビ}デアリマシタガ

Doc 8284 7

一年後ニ交代セシ後編着ノ氏名ハ記憶致シマ
 セン。收容所ノ通譯ノ名ハ大井[○]デアリマシ
 タ。山道ト云フ他ノ算[○]ハ吾々ガ勘[○]シテ非
 タ炭[○]ノ通譯デアリマシタ、彼ハ負[○]作セル或
 ハ病メル停[○]房ヲ無理ニ簡單ナ仕[○]幕ヲサセル爲
 ニ炭[○]ニ行カセ彼等ガ爲シ待ザル様ナ仕[○]幕ニ
 従[○]事セシメ負傷セル腕ト刀筋[○]速ヒセル習[○]ヲ無
 理ニ使用[○]サス幕ニ由ツテ彼等ヲ苦シメル事[○]ヲ
 常ト致シマシタ。彼ハ特徴ノナキ普通ノ日本
 人デアリ英語ヲ話シマシタ。
 猶停[○]房ガ毆打サレル場[○]食[○]益[○]福[○]進[○]ハ吾々[○]預[○]リ
 ノ者ニ之ヲ無理ニ見サセ、若シ彼ガ苦[○]痛ノ爲
 ニ悲[○]鳴[○]シ學[○]グ[○]ルナラバ彼等ハ嘲[○]笑スルノヲ常
 ト致シマシタ。
 私ノ此[○]ル停[○]房等[○]カラ聞イタ所ニ依[○]レバ景[○]從[○]ノ
 三[○]ケ[○]ル[○]カ[○]四[○]ケ[○]月ノ期間[○]彼等ハ[○]獄[○]ル[○]亦[○]灣[○]リニ立
 タサレ百[○]十[○]ボ[○]ルトノ電[○]流[○]線[○]ニ[○]屬[○]レ[○]シ[○]メ[○]テ感[○]電
 氣[○]箱[○]サ[○]セ[○]ラ[○]レ[○]タ[○]サ[○]ウ[○]デ[○]ス、吾々ハ此ノ幕[○]ガ行
 ハレシ際ニハ彼等ノ叫[○]ビ[○]聲[○]ヲ[○]同[○]キ[○]マ[○]シ[○]テ[○]同[○]様
 ナ[○]處[○]置[○]ニ[○]送[○]ヒ[○]シ[○]一[○]和[○]兵[○]ト[○]兼[○]ト[○]ニ[○]語[○]リ[○]マ[○]シ[○]タ。
 時ニハ人々ガ約四分ノ一時ノ太[○]サ[○]三[○]、四[○]尺
 位ノ長[○]サノ[○]筒[○]袋[○]ヲ[○]穿[○]テ[○]穿[○]ラ[○]レ[○]ル[○]ノ[○]ヲ[○]見[○]マ[○]シ[○]タ。

2.

Doc 8284

3.

/ GOSHIMU / 音譯 /
 「グーシム」ト呼バ
 式デ打サレマシタ
 二、三ケ月前ニ起ツタ事デアリマス、多クノ
 人々ハ冬期彼等ガ勞務ニ出掛ケル前冷水ヲ浴
 セレタ爲ニ肺炎ニ罹リマシタ。

彼收谷ハ五。ハ右ノ如キ様
 是ハ日本軍ガ降服シタ

Ex. # 1930

Doc. No. 8051*

Page 1 *

R E S T R I C T E D

Classification changed from
"CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED"
by order of the Secretary of War
By /s/ E. Chevrolet Major, Inf.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA)
City and County of San Francisco) SS

[ALVIN LOUIS OWENS, Cpl., ASN 13C30637,] P. O. Box 1195, Lufkin, Texas,
being first duly sworn, deposes and says:

While an American soldier I was detained by the Japanese as a prisoner of war at Camp #8 at Hitashi, Japan, from about April 1943 to September 1945. At about the end of June 1945 I saw all of the Japanese guards at Camp #8 (about 10 altogether), beat a U. S. Marine Private Gerard with sticks, fists and clubs all over his body. They beat him off and on for about five hours. They knocked him down, kicked him and he passed out while they were beating him. They would throw water on him, bring him to and beat him again. They beat him up in the camp compound. He was unconscious when they carried him off. He was black and blue all over his body, his mouth was bleeding, his eyes were blackened and he was beaten so badly the American army doctors thought that he would die but he managed to pull through and live. The Japanese beat him up like this because when Gerard was working in the copper mine near Hitashi a Korean who was working in the mines began to beat Gerard with sticks. Gerard hit him in self protection. When the Japs took Gerard to the compound and gave him a going over, the civilian corps guards who beat up Gerard were nicknamed "Cyclops", "Blubberrip", "Marblehead" and "Klink Eye". I don't know the nicknames of the regular army guards who were there. "Blubberrip's" real name is Fujinota (phonetic) and "Marblehead's" real name is Nagiyama (phonetic). The following people also witnessed Gerard's beating: Captain Earl R. Short, U. S. Army,arrant Officer Collins, U. S. Navy, and Private Ford, U. S. Army.

/s/ Alvin Louis Owens
ALVIN LOUIS OWENS, Corporal

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 1st day of November, 1945.

/s/ Marvin C. Venable
Capt. U. S. C.
Summary Courts

Interviewed by Wallace G. Schwess,
Sp. Agent, SIC
A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:
/s/ E. CHEVET Major, Infantry

(1)

R E S T R I C T E D /s/ L. C.

書類番號第八〇五一號

テサニ州ルキン、郵便箱番號一一九五番認驗番號一八〇三〇六三七
アビシニル兵士等伍長ハ先ツ正式ニ直署シ證人トナリ申シ遵ヘマス

Doc 8051
1930
1.

「アメリカ」兵テシタ時私ハ一九四三年四月頃カ
ラ一九四五年ノ九月迄日本ニ於ケル日立ノ第八收容
所ニ捕虜トシテ日本軍ニ依ツテ抑留サレマシタ。
一九四五年六月末頃ニ私ハ第八收容所ノ日本人衛兵
全部ガ（全部テ十人位テシタガ）米國「マリニン」兵
卒「ジェラルド」ノ全身ヲ棒ヤ拳骨ヤ棍棒テ毆打ス
ルノヲ見マシタ。約五時間モ彼等ハ彼ヲ止メテハ打
テ止メテハ打テシテキマシタ。
彼等ハ彼ヲ打テノメシ敵リマシタガ彼ハ彼等ガ彼ヲ
毆打シテキル間ニ意識不明ニナリマシタ。彼等ハ彼
ニ水ヲカケテハ正氣ニカヘラセテ再び毆打スルノテ
シタ。彼等ハ彼ヲ抑留所構内テ突然襲ツタノテシタ
彼等ガ彼ヲ運ビ去ツタ時彼ハ人事不省テシタ。彼ハ
身体中脅慄ダラケニナリ、口ハ出血シテラリ、目ハ
黒痣ニナツテラリマシタ。ソシテ彼ハソシテニモ甚
ク毆打サレタノテ米國ノ軍醫ハ彼ガ死ヌテアラウト
考ヘタ位テシタガ彼ハドウヤラ切リヌケ生キテキマ
シタ。 「ジェラルド」ガ日立附近ノ銅山テ働イテキ
タ時ニ一人ノ朝鮮人ガ「ジェラルド」ヲ棒テ打テハ
ジメタノテ日本人ガコノ様ニ不意打ヲクラハセタノ
テス。 「ジェラルド」ハ自己防衛ノ爲ニソノ朝鮮人

2.

Doc 8051A

ヲ打ツタノテス、スルト日本人疑ガ「ジエラド」
ヲ帯内ニツレコミヤツツケタノテツダシ

ND/JAG/FS/JC/257 (3E)
DNE/JUG

IN THE MATTER OF JAPANESE WAR CRIMES AND IN
THE MATTER OF THE ILL-TREATMENT OF BRITISH
PRISONERS OF WAR AT KOBU, OSAKA GROUP, JAPAN
A F F I D A V I T

I, 3850599 [Warrant Officer Class II, James Gatley, The Loyal Regiment,] with permanent home address at 18 Linnis Street, Preston, Lancs., make oath and say as follows:

1. [I was taken prisoner on 15 February 1942 at SINGAPORE. After six months at Singapore I was sent to KOREA and eventually to KOBU on 21 July 1943 where I remained until 15 July 1945.] I was then moved to MOCHIZUKA and released by American forces on 13 September 1945.
2. The Japanese Commandant at Kobi Sub-Camp was a Lieutenant MORIMOTO. He was a large man for a Japanese; about 5 ft 9 in in height, weight 14 stone, broad, dark, no glasses, shifty eyes, good teeth and wore a perpetual smirk. A rough estimate of his age is about 40. He was later moved to OSAKA. H. Q. as 2nd in command to Colonel MURATA.
3. At Kobi I remember a West Indian merchant seaman named WOOSTERMAN, whom we nicknamed "Black Sam". On 1 December 1944 Woosterman lost his raincoat and was accused of selling it to a Japanese workman. I saw him brought in front of the guard-room, where he was stripped naked, and Lieutenant Morimoto and twelve Japanese guards gave him a severe beating with their hands and rifle butts and wooden swords. I cannot identify any of the guards concerned as they were stationed outside the camp and we did not know their names. After this beating Woosterman was put in the guard-room. He had no clothing whatsoever, but was given one blanket. The average temperature at this time was 20 degrees below zero. He was brought out daily at 10 a. m. when the Japanese guards were changed. He was beaten for half-an-hour by both the incoming and outgoing guards every day for 19 days. I personally witnessed a number of those beatings. Woosterman eventually went mad and on 22 December 1944 he died.
4. Also at Kobi Sub-Camp was a Japanese Quartermaster by name NISHIKAWA. He was a very good-looking man; average size, height 5 ft 3 in or 4 in, dark. Owing to an old wound in his right arm he could not raise it to even shoulder height and always saluted with his left hand. He was in charge of the stores. He beat everyone on the least provocation including, on more than one occasion, myself. One particular incident I remember happened towards the end of 1943 when he severely beat a Private LEATHER (Loyal Regiment, now transferred to RASC) for some very minor offence. Leather was beaten for at least three-quarters of an hour across the face with a rubber soled boot. His face is marked from this beating.
5. There was also at Kobi a Camp Sergeant Major nicknamed both "Big Bill" and "Black Bill". This man was always looking for an opportunity to beat one of the prisoners. He was one of the biggest Japanese I have seen; 5 ft 10 in in height, broad, dark, weight 13 stone, had a moustache, no peculiarities. The worst incident I remember in which he was concerned was when he beat up an Australian Company Sergeant Major named MOLKAY in June 1944. Molkay was beaten by "Big Bill" with his fists and his jaw was broken in two places. "Big Bill" refused medical treatment and made him continue work.

6. A Japanese named NISHINECKER, nicknamed "The Sloop", was the Camp Interpreter. He was responsible for nearly all the misunderstandings that occurred and was always against the prisoners. He suffered from "escape mania" and turned many very minor incidents into "escape attempts". On one occasion he caught Private MILES (Loyal Regiment) making a fire in the camp to cook some food. Murinota, the Camp Commandant, was present and both he and Nishinecker began severely beating Miles with their wooden swords. After some time had elapsed I saw what was happening and appealed to both of them to stop beating him. Apparently they were beating him in order to make him confess to another offence of a similar nature, but in spite of my appeal they continued to hit him until he did in fact confess to this second offence. Nishinecker was a small man about 5 ft 2 in in height, small and wiry, weight $8\frac{1}{2}$ stone, had very black, evil-looking, protruding teeth. He was a civilian employed by the KAWASAKI INDUSTRIES, at whose steel works the prisoners were employed.

SWORN by the said JAMES G. TLEY, at)
 6 Spring Gardens in the City of Westminster) (Signed) J. Getley
 this eighteenth day of May 1946.)

BEFORE ME,

(Signed) Rethercedan,
 Major Legal Staff,
 Mil. Dept. Office of the Judge Advocate General

(Handwritten endorsement)

Compared with original and certified to
 be a true copy

/s/ Thomas F. Mornane Lt. Col.
 Australian Military Forces.

EVIDENTIARY DOCUMENT. #8 / 42

A

書類第八四二条三号

「ロヤ北聯隊」二等艦隊「シキム不、ガトシ」……

(一) 秘一九四三年三月十五日「シキム不」ヲ修廢ニシテ「シキム不」ニ六ヶ月ヲテカラ、秘朝鮮ニ送ラシ、其後、一九四三年七月二十日、神戸ニ送ラシテ、其処、一九四五年七月十五日迄ナシ。

(二) 神戸ニハ我々ガ「クラウク」サムト、緋名ヲツケル「ウーヌターマ」ト謂フ名存、西印向、高船々負、コトヲ、私ハ記憶ニナシ。

一九四四年十二月一日「ウーヌターマ」ハ、彼、雨ヲ被テ失ラシ。

シラ日本人、彼等ニ賞シテ謂フ罪ヲ負ハナシ。私ハ彼ガ「倉倉」ニ連シテ来ラシテ、其処、裸ニサレ、森本善訳(中尉)ヤ、十人、日本人衛兵ガ、各ヤ銃、床尾ヤ木剣ニドク彼ヲ殴打スルヲ目撃シタ。之ニ關係シテ衛兵連ハ收容所、外ニ種ニシテ中々シ、我々ハ彼等ノ名ヲ知ラカク、私ハ彼等ノ誰ヲモ検認スルニハ出来ナシ。此、殴打ガツタ後「ウーヌターマ」ハ「倉倉」ニ入ラシ。

彼ハ衣類トテ、何モ着セラズ、唯一枚、毛布ヲ着シ。此、當時、平均気温ハ零下二十度ナシ。

彼ハ毎日、日本人衛兵ガ交代スル毎十時ニ外ハ引き出サシ。

彼ハ上水及ビ、下水、双方、衛兵ニ十九日留ニ置ツテ、毎日、三分留殴打サシ。私自身此等、殴打ヲ數回目撃シタガ。

「ウーヌターマ」ハ結局葬儀ニテ、一九四四年十二月二十日死ニシ。

(四) 神戸、收容所ニハ、又、西川(善訳)ト謂フ日本人、補給掛ガ名、彼ハ心ニ「吾」男子ト、中背、身長五呎三吋乃至四吋、髪長ナシ。右腕、左腕、爲「彼」リ、腕ヲ用、吾ガ「マ」サ(持々上ゲル)ト出来、掌ニ「丸」ヲ敬礼ニナシ。

Ex. # 1932

Document No. 8016*

Page 1

MD/JAG/FS/JC/97

IN THE MATTER OF JAPANESE WAR CRIMES AND
IN THE MATTER OF ILL-TREATMENT OF PRISONERS OF WAR AT MIYATA CAMP, FUKUOKA
FROM THE 26 JUNE 1945 TILL THE END OF
HOSTILITIES.

A F F I D A V I T

I, No. 113054, Lt. Cyril Edward BUCHE, Royal Corps of Signals, at present attached to Depot Bn, Royal Signals, THIRSK, Yorks, and with permanent home address at "Gayes", Rowberron nr. WINSBORNE, Somerset, make oath and say as follows:

1. I was taken prisoner on December 25, 1941 at HONG KONG and spent nearly a year there in various P.W. camps, until 27 September 1943 when I was shipped to Japan. On arrival there I went to OSAKA and stayed till the middle of 1943 when I was moved to ZENSUJI. There I stayed until 25 June 1945 when I was moved to MIYATA.

2. I was moved to MIYATA camp with 44 other P.Ws, including Wing Commander G. MATTHEWS, R.A.F., who became the Senior British Officer at MIYATA camp. When we arrived at this camp there were already about 800 P.Ws there, mainly Dutch. Some of the P.Ws at MIYATA had come from FUKUOKA No. 1 camp and from TAIWAN. When these two camps had broken up their personnel scattered.

Conditions at MIYATA camp generally were very hard. There was much ill-treatment of P.Ws at the hands of the camp Comdt, Lt. SAKAMOTO, aided and abetted by his 3 i/c SGT. KURIHARA. They instituted in this camp a reign of terror, details of which appear later in this affidavit. Even after hostilities had ceased and SAKAMOTO had received strict instructions to treat the P.Ws well, several cases of beatings took place after August 15, 1945.

3. MIYATA was a mining camp. All the Allied ORs worked down the mine and officers were employed working in the fields, planting rice or sweet potatoes or opening up new ground. So far as officers were concerned, the work started at 5:30 a.m. when we went out to the fields on the mine railway, and we did not get back to camp again until 6:30 p.m. Not only did officers have to work in the fields, but we also had to unload sacks of rice and coal for the camp, move pit-props and empty latrines. Elderly officers (one was as old as 59) were selected for this work. Much of this work was supervised by boys of 16 and upwards who carried sticks and were using them. The work was carried on almost invariably at high pressure. The only English that was spoken by some of the guards was "Hurry up". Work in the water of the paddy fields often caused cuts and sores, which took weeks to heal up.

4. The food which we were given was utterly insufficient to maintain health, let alone do the work which we were compelled to do. Officers were allowed 360 grams of rice and 190 grams of flour per day. During

our first fortnight at MIYATA camp officers lost on the average of about 6 lbs in weight. No extra food could be obtained and there is no doubt that the work we had to do could have been reduced. Several applications to the Japanese interpreters for this to be done were ignored. An example of a day's meals would be rice pap in the morning. We were given a small box with our midday meal in it, which we ate out in the fields. This box usually contained a very limited quantity of rice. We used to pick up on the road side or in the fields some green stuff to go with it and we even used to collect frogs and small snakes which we boiled up and ate. In the evening we came back to either flour pap or some rice. To my knowledge we never had any meat or dried fish at any time we were at MIYATA. I personally had lost 7 stone in weight by the end of hostilities.

5. Our accommodation consisted of lathe and plaster huts, with 14 men to a hut. This was not grossly overcrowded but we only just had room to lie down in reasonable comfort. There were no recreation huts provided except a library hut into which we rarely, if ever, had any time to go, our working hours being from 5:30 in the morning to 6:30 in the evening.

6. Medical arrangements were very bad and very limited. There is no doubt in my mind that the Japanese could have made things very much better for us if they had wanted to. We were looked after by Dutch MOs who used to take the sick parades and give us what medical treatment they were able to. Even so, any Japanese 'medical' NCO who knew next to nothing could override the orders of the qualified Dutch MOs. Consequently, if the MO said that you were not fit to work and the Japanese NCO said that you were, off you had to go.

We used to get a limited quantity of Red Cross supplies, but it was common knowledge to most of us that SGT. KURIHARA stole a good deal of our Red Cross Food supplies. Food for hospital patients and sick, was only 13 oz of rice per day.

7. As regards the general ill-treatment which we received at this camp, the following are the most serious cases, most of which I saw myself. We were informed on arrival by the commandant, Lt. SAKAMOTO, through his interpreter, that, if we failed to obey orders, we would be bayoneted to death. During the first 3 or 4 days in the camp all the officers who had arrived with me were subjected individually to a series of beatings by the guards with rifles, fists, sticks and feet for the most trivial offences or for no offences at all, doubtless on the instructions of SAKAMOTO with the idea of licking the new officers into shape. The guards were drawn from the 195 Regt; some of them were of the lowest type who welcomed a chance of beating the PWs, knowing that they could not retaliate. We never saw any order which set out the rules and regulations of the camp, so that we never knew whether we were offending against them or not.

In spite of protests to the Japanese interpreters, all Japanese, military and civilian, were allowed to administer corporal punishment for any offence, real or fancied. One rule was that all Japanese, including boys of 18 had to be saluted at all times, even in the dark. On one occasion 5 officers received contradicting orders regarding falling in for a work parade. They arrived a few minutes late on parade and Lt. WOODCOCK, Royal Engineers, was attacked by KATSUJI a civilian member of the staff, who struck WOODCOCK so hard that his chin was cut and he had to have two stitches in it. Another man, called COLING was then attacked with a saw and his cheek badly cut. I did not witness these assaults, but I saw the injuries immediately afterwards.

8. On 6 August 1945 SAKAKOTO attended the sick parade of the Japanese doctor and ordered 40 men to be discharged from the hospital. Some of them could hardly stand. They were all called out on work parade in the camp the following day. I saw them on the parade ground.

9. Just prior to 7 August 1945 the camp suffered a reduction of 10% in the rice ration. The Senior Officer prisoner made every effort to see the Camp Commandant to point out that the food was insufficient, but all efforts failed. On roll-call on the evening of 7 August 1945 all British officers, with a few exceptions were ordered to remain behind. Between 90 - 100 officers were involved. We were given a long harangue by Sgt. KURIHARA on the sins of Britain, e.g., slavery in India, China, and were informed that we were all to be beaten because the senior officer had attempted to see the Camp Commandant (SAKAKOTO) to make a complaint. A request was made that the sick and elderly officers (two of 59 years of age) should be allowed to fall out. This was refused. All officers were then ordered to assume the "on the hands down" position and they were beaten on the posterior with bamboo sticks and poles by KURIHARA assisted by some of the guards. The whole affair lasted about 40 mins. It is the general opinion that this was carried out by orders of SAKAKOTO, so that he would not be worried by complaints from the prisoners. One sick officer was struck on the base of the spine and he fainted. He was carried into the bathroom by the guards and they revived him by throwing buckets of water over him. During the talk the officers were made to hold their hands above their heads for a prolonged period during which they were belaboured by the guards if their hands dropped an inch or so. Officers received 3 - 10 strokes each and some received severe bruises on hip-bones, spine and buttocks. I was present during the whole of this incident and received numerous blows myself from the guards and KURIHARA.

10. Numerous other incidents and assaults on officers took place. For example on one occasion I saw Major P. W. WILLIAM-POWLETT, MC, being severely beaten with the flat of the butt and the butt-end of a rifle for failing to salute a guard a day after arriving in the camp. I also saw the same officer being beaten on the head and body with a pick-helve by the guard commander when reporting a number of officers leaving the camp as a working party. His report was perfectly correct, nevertheless, he had his head split open behind his ear and a rib cracked.

11. On 5 July 1945, Capt. J. H. WALSH, while naked in the bathroom was attacked by the same guard commander who had attacked Major WILLIAM-POWELL. Capt. WALSH was struck with a pick-helve 3 times across the head and twice across the mouth. He was badly bruised and lost a good deal of blood as a result of this attack. The only reason given was that this officer had not saluted quickly enough. I witnessed this incident myself. On the same day this same guard commander assaulted Capt. LAMBERT who was sick in his room. The guard kicked him the stomach and inflicted other injuries to him. For a good many days after this occurrence, Capt. LAMBERT was in some pain and it was some time before he recovered. I did not personally witness this assault, but I saw Capt. LAMBERT shortly after it.

12. Lt. SAKAMOTO, whom I regard as personally responsible for all our ill-treatment in this camp, was obviously consumed with hate for the Allies and was therefore the last person to be in authority over PWs. He had, I believe, been promoted from the ranks for bravery in the field and had a reputation for getting things done. He was ill-educated, a boor and completely ruthless. KURIHARA on the otherhand, was better educated, but was a complete hypocrite. He often used high-sounding phrases about protecting PWs from dangers out-side the camp, but he himself made no attempt to control his violent temper which he vented so frequently on the PWs. Though the treatment which these two men inflicted through their staff on the British PWs was bad enough, the Dutch PWs in this camp were, on many occasions treated even worse.

SWORN By the said Cyril Edward BUCKE
at 6, Spring Gardens in the City of /signed/ Cyril Edward BUCKE
Westminster, this 24th day of
January 1946.

BEFORE ME

/signed/ A. M. BELL MACDONALD,
Major,
Legal Staff.

I certify that this is a true copy of the original affidavit.

R. D. L. Kelly, Capt. Legal Staff,
Office of the Judge Advocate General.

1.
271932 Doc 801c A

「一」一、私ハ千九百四十一年十二月二十五
日、海軍ヲ停職トナリ、千九百四十三年 / T N ・ 千
九百四十二條ノ條ナルベシ / 九月二十七、日本
ニ過トテ行カレル途一年間近クヲ ^{HONGKONG} 香港ノ方々ノ停
居候旨ヲ付シタ。

日本ニ到着スルヤ私ハ大阪 / OSAKA / ニ行キ千九百
四十三年甲辰轉道寺 / ZENBUJI / ニ移サレルマテソ
コニ居タ。轉道寺ニハ千九百四十五年六月二十五
日官邸 / MIYATA / ニ移サレルマテ居タ。一

「二」一、官邸 / MIYATA / 敷居所ニ於ケル状態ハ一
條ニトテモ備イセノサアツタ。

所長長本ノ家守ノ少尉ハ第三指撥官栗原ノ家守ノ
其官ニ手傳ハセテシクノ停居旨付ヲ行ツタ。彼等
ハ敷居所内ニ一室ノ掃帚陳列ヲ布イタノサアル由

「三」一、官邸 / MIYATA / 宛亭ノ八領山ニ在
ル邸居所サアツタ。彼等ノ近合軍士士官以外ハ統
自テ宛亭ノ土官ハ困難ヲ結スル旨語ノ總督或ハ新
ツイ土地ノ開拓ニ付カサレタ。一

土官ニ付スル限リテハ往亭カ箱マルノ八年前五時
三十分テ此ノ時間ニ吾々ハ八領山領道テ農務ニ出カ
ケタ方六時半マテハ敷居所ニ歸ラテカツタ。

土官ハ農務ヲ備カキバテラナカツタダケテテク番

Doc 8016

吾ハ又收奪所用ノ米ヤ石炭ノ糞ノ荷下シラツタリ
坑木ヲ運ンダリ便所ノ汲取リラセホバナラナカツ
タ。年ノイツタ士官(一士官ノ取キハ三十九歳
テアツタ。一ガ此ノ仕事ニ遊バレタ。コノ仕事ノ
多クハ十六歳カソコイラ以上ノ少年遊ニヨリ監督
サレ、兵ノ運送ハ特ヲ持テカイナリアリ現シタリ
シタ。仕事ハ殆下何時カモ大草輪ヲ頼ケサセラレ
タ。看守人ノ甲ノ戎着ガ際ツタ唯一ノ英語ト云フ
ノハ「急ゲ」ダケダツタ。田圃ノ水ノ中テノ労働
テハ辰々切斷ヤ其ノ過ノ働ヲ起シ、瘧ルノニ扶道
園モカ、ツタ。

吾、真ヘラレタ食事ハ孤獨サレタ仕事ヲスルノ
ハサテニキ健康ヲ保持スルニハ全く不充分デアツ
タ。士官ハ一日ニ三百六十瓦ノ米ト百九十瓦ノ
粉ヲ食ヘラレタ。 菅田ノ死守ノ／HIYATA／ 收奪

所ニ於ケル最初ノ二週間ノ間ニ士官連ハ平均体重
六ポンドヲ減シタ。餘分ノ食糧ヲ待ルコトガ出来
アカツタ。一・・・・

・・・「六、鼠標ノ手配ハ非常ニ悪ク又限
ル程度サレテ居タ。一・・・・

・・・「吾々ハ制限サレタ量ノ赤十字ノ補給品ヲ
受取ルノガ常デアツタガ吾々ノ赤十字補給食糧ヲ
相堂長栗原軍曹ガ送ンダコトハ天賦ノ若ガ良ク知

2.

Doc 8016

吾ハ又收容所用ノ米ヤ石炭ノ費ノ荷下シラシタリ
坑木ヲ選ンダリ便所ノ汲取リヲモホナラナカツ
タ。 年ノイツタ士官（一士官ノ頭幸ハ三十九歳
デアツタ。）ガ此ノ仕事ニ選バレタ。コノ仕事ノ
多クハ下不意カソコイラ以上ノ少年選ニヨリ監督
サレ、此ノ選中ハ特ヲ待テサイナリアリ現シタリ
シタ。 仕事ハ殆下何時カモ天草輪テ類ケサセラレ
タ。 看守人ノ中ノ我若ガ際ツタ唯一ノ英語ト云フ
ノハ「急ゲ」ダケダツタ。 田口ノ水ノ中テノ労働
テハ長々切斷ヤ其ノ過ノ荷ヲ起シ、燃ルノニ以通
関モカ、ツタ。

吾、異ヘラレタ食糧ハ私備サレタ仕事ヲスルノ
ハサテ上キ管理ヲ保持スルニハ全ク不充分デアツ
タ。 士官ハ一日ニ三百六下瓦ノ米ト百九十瓦ノ
薪ヲ負ヘラレタ。 菅田ノ死字ノ／HYAKA／ 收容
所ニ於ケル最初ノ二週前ノ内ニ士官選ハ平均管理
不ボンドヲ減ジタ。 餘分ノ食糧ハ待ルコトガ出来
テカツタ。
. 「不、食糧ノ手配ハ非常ニ悪ク又限
ル管理モトテ居タ。
. 「吾々ハ備限サレタ量ノ赤十字ノ補給品ヲ
受取ルノガ常デアツタガ吾々ノ赤十字補給食糧ヲ
糧堂長栗原軍曹ガ選ンダコトハ天抵ノ若ガ良ク知

2.

Doc 8016

ツテ居ルコトヲアツタ。精泥ノ傷精兵ヤ病人ノ仁
 愛ハ日ニ僅カク三オソノホテアツタ。一
 〇〇〇〇〇
 分ト一歳ニ到着ツタ士官ハ、宗ヒナク新來ノ士
 官トシテ一人毎ニ仕立ルト云フ思ヒツキノ返本ノ知
 字ノ指山ヲ、立ク盤類ヲ取ヤ、何一ツ惡イコト
 モツフイノニ對シ兵ノタメニ倒ヤ、拳ヤ、棒ヤ足
 ナ一人一人毎クザマニ取ラレタ。一。一。一。一
 〇〇〇〇〇
 公ニツタ命帝ノ機ナモノハ見タコトガナカツタ。
 ソレテ我々が一體ソレニ對イテイルノカサワテナ
 イノカモ信テアツタ。
 日本人通譯ニ對シテ抗辯ツタニモ拘ラヌ、
 軍人モ其ノ意ヲノ言テ人ハソレヲ辯言ニセヨ、
 憲兵上ノモノニセヨ、トシテ對シテモ條刑ヲ
 課スルコトガ許サレテ居ル。
 一ツノ規則ヲアザレバ十六才ノ少年モ合メテ總テ
 ノ日本人ニハ、何許ナモ、階級ノ中ヲサヘモ、敬
 禮シテクテハナラナイト云フノテアツタ。一。一。
 〇〇〇〇〇
 字ノハ日本人言論ノ同誌ニ附添ツテ來テ臣下六人

Doc 8016

ニ退院ヲ命ジタ。彼等ノ申ニハ殆ド立ツ事サヘ出
來ナイ者モ居タ。彼等ハ翌日收容所ノ作業着點
心ニ同ビ出サレタ。私ハ彼等ガ練兵場ニ居ルノヲ
見タ。

元、千九百四十五年八月七日少シ前カラ收容所ノ
米ノ配給カ一割減トナツタ。

俘虜ノ先任將校ハ食物ガ不充分デアルコトヲ指
スルタメ收容所長ニ會フタメアラユル勞力ヲシタ

ガ總テハ無駄デアツタ。千九百四十五年八月七日
ノ夕方ノ監時テ二、三ノ例外ヲ除イテ總テノ英
士官ハ後ニ殲ルヤウニ命ゼラレタ。九十人カラ百

人ノ士官ガ卷添ヲ食ツタ。吾々ハ英日ノ罪惡ノ例
ヘバ印度、又那テノ獄獄ニ歸スル栗原ノ宛字ノ

軍官ノ長イ大仰ナ眞説ヲ聞カサレ、又先任將校ガ
不平ヲ訴ヘルタメ所長ニ(叔本ノ宛字ノ)會ハヤ

トシタカラト云ツテ吾々益部ヲ毆打スル旨言ヒ渡
サレタ。病人ト年輩ノ士官(五十九才ノ人二人)

ハ列ヲ去ルコトヲ許シテ貰ヒタイト要求シタガ、
是ハ拒絶サレタ。

總テノ士官ハソレカラ「四ツン道ヒ」ノ義務ヲス
ルコトヲ命ゼラレタ。ソシテ栗原ノ宛字ノハ幾人

カノ看守人ノ手ヲ借り竹ノ棒ヤ等テ士官ノ尻ヲ毆
打シタノデアツタ。此ノ事件ハ前後四十分間行イ

タ。

4.



★
Doc 8016

皆ノ意見テハ此ノ事ハ坂本ノ宛字ノガ件序違ノ泣
言ニ個マサレヌ様ニスルタメ坂本ノ宛字ノノ命令
ニ依リ行ハレタモノダト云フ。
病氣テアツタ一人ノ士官ハ背柱ノ基部ヲ殴打サレ
テ氣絶シタ。看守人ハ彼ヲ浴室ニ連れて行キ、バ
ケツニ何杯モ水ヲカケテ正氣ヲ取り戻サセタ。
話シ中士官ハ長イ間手ヲ頭上ニ上ゲサセラレ、一
時位テモ手が下ルト看守人ニ叩カレルノツアツタ。
士官ハ着々三回カラ十回位殴打セラレ、或ル者ハ
坐骨、背骨及ヒ尻ニ詰イ打痕傷ヲ受ケタ。私ハ此
ノ出来事ノ間中其ノ場ニ居リ、自身モ看守人ト栗
原ノ宛字ノカラ何回トナク殴打サレタ。
十、士官ノ身ニハ此ノ外ニモ津山ノ出来事カ起リ
暴行ガ加ヘラレタ。一ツノ賓例トシテ私ハ十字章
佩用者ビ・ダブルユ・ワイリアム・ポレット
P.W. WILLIAM POWLETT 少佐ガ此ノ収容所ニ來タ
次ノ日看守人ニ敬禮ラシナカツタ廉ニヨリ銃ノ蓋
尻ノ平ラナ部分ヤ其ノ端テ詰ク殴打サレテ居ルノ
ヲ目撃シタ。私ハ又此ノ同シ士官ガ作業班トシ
テ収容所ヲ出テ行ク士官ノ人員報告中鶴嘴ノ柄テ
頭ヤヒヲ看守長ニ殴打サレテ居ルノヲ目撃シタ。
彼ノ報告ハ益ク正シカツタニモ拘ラス彼ハ耳ノ近
クノ後頭部ニ裂傷ヲ負ヒ、一本ノ肋骨ニハヒビガ
入ル様ナ目ニアハサレタ。

5.



Doc 8016

6.

十一、千九百四十五年七月五日ジエイ・エム・ウォ
 ルツ / J. M. WALSH 大尉が浴室で標ニテ居ルト
 コロヘ、曾テウイリアム・ボートレット / WILLIAM BOW
 ン / W. BOWEN 少佐ニ暴行ヲ加ヘタ例ノ看守長ガ打ツテカ
 カツテ來タ。
 ウォルツ / WALSH 大尉ハ傷嘴ノ柄テ頭ヲ三回、口
 ヲ二回毆打サレタ。
 彼ハ此ノタメ臨イ打撲傷ヲ須ヒ多量ノ出血ラツタ。
 其全理由ハ此ノ士官ノ敬禮ノ任方ガ違カツタノダ
 ト言フニ違ギナカツタ。私ハ自分ノ眼テ此ノ出來
 事ヲ見タノデアル。同ジ日ニ此ノ同ジ看守長ハ
 病氣ノタメ自分ノ部屋ニ居タラムバート / LAMBERT /
 大尉ニ暴行シタ。
 此ノ看守長ハ彼ノ腹ヲ蹴ツテ更ニ別ノ怪我ヲ須ヘ
 シタ。此ノタメ其ノ後久シイ間ラムバート / LAMBERT /
 大尉ハ可ナリ苦シミ回復マテニ可ナリノ期間ガカ
 カツタ。私自ラ此ノ暴行ヲ目撃シタノテハナイガ、
 ソノ直後ニラムバート / LAMBERT / 大尉ニ會ツタノ
 デアル。

RESTRICTED Classification changed from "CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED" by order of the Secretary of War, by /s/E.Svare, 1st Lt., Inf.

For The WAR CRIMES OFFICE

Judge Advocate General's Department -- War Department

United States of America

In the matter of mistreatment of American prisoners of war at the prison camps at Ohuna, Japan, between the dates of 6 May 1942 and 3 December 1943. Perpetuation of Testimony of Arthur Laurence Maher, Captain, USN #58105

Taken at: Navy Building, Bureau of Personnel, Room 4040, Arlington, Virginia

Date: 20 November 1945

Reporter: Norval R. Strang, Agent, SIC. ID.

Questions by: Lloyd E. Gluck, Special Agent, SIC, ID7.

- Q. State your name, rank, serial number and permanent home address.
A. Arthur Laurence Maher, Captain, #58105, USN, and my permanent home address is 2237 Devonshire Road, N. W., Washington, D. C.
Q. Have you recently been returned to the United States from overseas?
A. Yes, on the 9th or 10th of September, 1945, disembarking at Oakland, California.
Q. Were you a prisoner of war?
A. Yes.
Q. At what places were you held, and state the approximate dates.
A. I was gunnery officer aboard the U.S.S. Houston which was sunk during a night battle in Sunda Strait, off the coast of Java, on 28 February 1942. About three hundred and fifty members of the ship's crew managed to reach shore at a point about one hundred miles from Batavia. Over half of this number was immediately taken prisoner by the Japanese Army, the rest of us managing to make our escape into the mountains. On 2 March 1942, I was captured in the mountains of Java by the Japanese Army Military Police and taken by motor truck to Serang, Java, where I was imprisoned until 6 April 1942, at which time I and thirteen other officers were taken to Batavia and placed aboard the Atsuta Maru, a Japanese ship bound for Shimoneseki, Japan. We arrived on 4 May 1942. We were moved by train from Shimoneseki to Ohuna, Japan, arriving there 5 May 1942. I was imprisoned at Ohuna from 5 May 1942 to 3 December 1943, at which time I was moved by train to Omori, the headquarters camp of the Tokyo area, arriving there on 3 December 1943. I remained a prisoner at Omori until 29 August 1945, at which time I was liberated by U. S. Navy personnel under the command of Commodore Simpson.

RESTRICTED /s/ J.S.

- Q. Did you witness any mistreatment of American prisoners of war at Ohuna?
- A. On or about 10 May 1942, I was beaten with clubs for talking with another prisoner. We were not allowed to talk to each other. Another time I received a similar beating for failure to remove my shoes while in the concrete structure used as a washroom.

On or about 15 June 1942, Lt. Harlan G. Kirkpatrick, USN, of the U.S.S. Houston, was beaten severely with clubs across the buttocks and kidney region of the back, jumped on and kicked in the groin while on the ground. The Japanese version of why Lt. Kirkpatrick was beaten was that he had spilled a small amount of rice in serving the other prisoners.

On or about 15 July 1942, Lt. Walter G. Winslow, USNR, of the U.S.S. Houston, received a similar beating for drinking from a cup in the toilet area. The Japanese guards insisted that it was unsanitary to drink from a cup in that area.

On or about 1 November 1942, Lt. Carlton H. Clark, a Navy aviator, was beaten severely with clubs because he refused to give what the Japanese considered a satisfactory answer to their questions. Lt. Clark received another beating on or about 1 June 1943, under the accusation of the Japanese that he was not doing his work. Lt. Clark was suffering from physical exhaustion at the time of the second beating.

Lt. Commander John A. Fitzgerald, USN, of the U.S.S. Grenadier, was beaten severely on 1 June 1943 for talking to another prisoner.

Ensign Albert E. Mead, USNR, was beaten on 1 November 1942 for not giving what the Japanese considered true answers during his interrogation.

About the middle of August 1942, Ensign _____ Hunt, USNR, an aviator flying with an air squadron out of Dutch Harbor, Alaska, was beaten for talking to another prisoner.

On 1 November 1942, Lt. Commander David A. Hurt, U.S.S. Perch, was beaten for what the Japanese called "general conduct".

Lt. Commander Welford C. Blinn, USN, U.S.S. Pope, was beaten for talking with another prisoner. This beating took place on 1 November 1942.

Murray Glasser, AMM3/c, USNR, was beaten on 1 November 1942, for absolutely no reason. His compatriots had failed to answer questions in a manner to please the Japanese and Glasser, who had not been questioned, was punished.

Ensign _____ Rhodes, USN, Thomas C. Nelson, ARM 1/c, USNR, and S/Sgt. Theos (?) Lutz, from a B-24 shot down over Rabeul, all received severe beatings on 1 November 1942 for failure to satisfy their Japanese questioners.

- Q. Describe the methods used by the Japanese guards in administering the beatings to these prisoners.

-2-

RESTRICTED /s/ E.S.

RESTRICTED /s/ E.S.

- Q. We were compelled to line up in the courtyard, and the Japanese guards would take turns beating us with wood clubs about four feet long and one and one half inches square, which they held in both hands. These were not clubs selected at random, but were regular issue to the Japanese guards. While many of the beatings were due to the sadism of the Japanese guards, others were meted out by the Camp Commandant, as well as his superior officers in the Japanese Navy.
- Q. Were there other forms of mistreatment?
- A. Under the guise of physical reconditioning the Japanese meted out severe punishment and beatings. We were forced to run for long periods of time, and any prisoner lagging behind or dropping from the line from exhaustion was beaten with the two-handed wood clubs. We were forced to do "push-ups" and other violent exercise for long periods of time. Failure to complete these "exercises" in a manner satisfactory to the Japanese guards would result in a beating.
- Q. Can you give the name of any American personnel concerned in these incidents?
- A. All the men listed in the foregoing received this punishment and can offer additional information. I was the senior prisoner at this camp and was interpreter, as the Japanese guards could not speak English. Therefore, I was informed of the ostensible reasons given for the beating of these men. The reasons have been listed above.
- Q. Can you identify the Japanese personnel at this camp?
- A. The commanding officer of the camp from the time of my arrival until about 1 October 1942 was Warrant Officer _____ Ouchi, Japanese Navy. W/O _____ Iida, Japanese Navy, replaced Ouchi as Commanding Officer. Commander C. Misaki, Japanese Navy, was interrogation officer, and came to the camp only when prisoners were to be questioned. A civilian interpreter, _____ Sasaki, accompanied Commander Misaki on his visits to the camp. Commander Misaki spoke excellent English and bragged about taking a post-graduate course at Princeton. The guards at Ohuna were all seamen first class of the Japanese Navy, and their last names are listed as follows: Yanagizawa, Udo, Matsuhor, Kawashima, Hatawa, Shimada, Yamada, Hamada, Tsukhiye, Nishi, and Kobayashi. Ohuna was not a regular prisoner of war camp, but was the Japanese Navy Interrogation Center, and we were given to understand that we were not considered as prisoners of war, but as rescued persons who could be dropped back into the sea at any time.

/s/ Arthur Laurence Laher
 ARTHUR LAURENCE LAHER, Capt., USN

- 3 -

RESTRICTED /s/ E.S.

Doc. No. 8077

RESTRICTED /s/ E.S.

DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA)
City of Washington) SS

I, Arthur Laurence Maher, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Arthur Laurence Maher
Arthur Laurence Maher, Capt., USN

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 27th day of November 1945.

/s/ Y. E. Aornham, 1st Lt. CIP
Summary Court, 2527 SCU.

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Lloyd E. Gluck, Special Agent, SIC, IDW, certify that Arthur Laurence Maher, Captain, USN #58105, personally appeared before me on the 20th day of November 1945 and testified concerning War Crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

/s/ Lloyd E. Gluck

Place: Washington, D. C.

Date: 27th day of November 1945.

RESTRICTED /s/ E.S.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

/s/ EDWIN F. SVARE
EDWIN F. SVARE
1st Lt., Inf.

Doc. No. 8077

RESTRICTED /s/ E.S.

DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA)
City of Washington) SS

I, Arthur Laurence Maher, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Arthur Laurence Maher
Arthur Laurence Maher, Capt., USN

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 27th day of November, 1945.

/s/ F. E. Cornham, 1st Lt. C/P
Summary Court, 2527 SCU.

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Lloyd E. Gluck, Special Agent, SIC, IDW, certify that Arthur Laurence Maher, Captain, USN #58105, personally appeared before me on the 20th day of November 1945 and testified concerning War Crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

/s/ Lloyd E. Gluck

Place: Washington, D. C.

Date: 27th day of November 1945.

RESTRICTED /s/ E.S.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

/s/ EDWIN F. SVARE
EDWIN F. SVARE
1st Lt., Inf.

EXHIBIT NO. 19339
1. Incidental Army Agreement # 8079

考環五ノ七號

問 夢下、但石階、兵籍會號及本籍、述之十十

答 (ARTHUR LAURENCE HASK) 合衆國海軍大佐第五八。五號、私、本館
2227 DEVENSHIRE ROAD NE WASHINGTON D.C.
行政地、西ワシントン市北西アオノ子街二三七番地ニス。

私一九四二年二月二十八日、^(HONOLULU)ハワイ沖ノ^(PEARL AND HERMES)夜戦ヲ沈メ、^(HONOLULU)米艦
^(HONOLULU)艦、^(HONOLULU)ストニ號、砲術長トシテ乗艦シ居リ、^(HONOLULU)米組員、^(HONOLULU)約三十
^(HONOLULU)五名、^(HONOLULU)アヲ^(HONOLULU)約百哩、^(HONOLULU)地点、^(HONOLULU)海岸ニ^(HONOLULU)ク^(HONOLULU)ク^(HONOLULU)出^(HONOLULU)来^(HONOLULU)ス。
^(HONOLULU)太平洋、^(HONOLULU)直ニ^(HONOLULU)日本陸軍、^(HONOLULU)ヨリ^(HONOLULU)俘虜ニ^(HONOLULU)シテ^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)リ、^(HONOLULU)昔、^(HONOLULU)ト^(HONOLULU)ウ^(HONOLULU)ラ^(HONOLULU)山^(HONOLULU)中^(HONOLULU)ニ
^(HONOLULU)逃^(HONOLULU)ケ^(HONOLULU)オ^(HONOLULU)ル^(HONOLULU)マ^(HONOLULU)タ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)一九四二年三月一日、^(HONOLULU)私、^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)山^(HONOLULU)中^(HONOLULU)ヲ^(HONOLULU)日本、^(HONOLULU)憲兵^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)捕^(HONOLULU)メ
^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)ト^(HONOLULU)ラ^(HONOLULU)ク^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)運^(HONOLULU)ビ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)其^(HONOLULU)後^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)同年四月六日、^(HONOLULU)近^(HONOLULU)収^(HONOLULU)容^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)ト^(HONOLULU)シ
^(HONOLULU)日、^(HONOLULU)私、^(HONOLULU)他^(HONOLULU)十三名、^(HONOLULU)土^(HONOLULU)留^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)ア^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)運^(HONOLULU)ビ^(HONOLULU)行^(HONOLULU)キ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)日本、^(HONOLULU)下^(HONOLULU)關^(HONOLULU)行^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)日^(HONOLULU)一^(HONOLULU)船
^(HONOLULU)ア^(HONOLULU)ツ^(HONOLULU)丸^(HONOLULU) / ^(HONOLULU)ATSUTU HARU / ^(HONOLULU)東^(HONOLULU)船^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)シ^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)昔^(HONOLULU)々^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)一九四二年一月四日、^(HONOLULU)到^(HONOLULU)着
^(HONOLULU)シ^(HONOLULU)マ^(HONOLULU)タ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)汽^(HONOLULU)車^(HONOLULU)ヲ^(HONOLULU)下^(HONOLULU)關^(HONOLULU)ヲ^(HONOLULU)大^(HONOLULU)船^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)運^(HONOLULU)ビ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)一九四二年五月九日、^(HONOLULU)同^(HONOLULU)地^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)着^(HONOLULU)キ^(HONOLULU)マ^(HONOLULU)タ^(HONOLULU)。
^(HONOLULU)私、^(HONOLULU)大^(HONOLULU)船^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)一九四二年五月五日、^(HONOLULU)一九四三年十二月三日、^(HONOLULU)近^(HONOLULU)収^(HONOLULU)容^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)ト^(HONOLULU)シ、^(HONOLULU)同^(HONOLULU)日、^(HONOLULU)汽^(HONOLULU)車^(HONOLULU)ヲ^(HONOLULU)大^(HONOLULU)森^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)東^(HONOLULU)京^(HONOLULU)地^(HONOLULU)區^(HONOLULU)俘^(HONOLULU)虜^(HONOLULU)収^(HONOLULU)容^(HONOLULU)所^(HONOLULU)本^(HONOLULU)部^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)運^(HONOLULU)ビ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)一九四二年十二
^(HONOLULU)月三日、^(HONOLULU)同^(HONOLULU)地^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)到^(HONOLULU)着^(HONOLULU)シ^(HONOLULU)マ^(HONOLULU)タ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)私、^(HONOLULU)大^(HONOLULU)森^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)一九四五年八月二十九日、^(HONOLULU)近^(HONOLULU)行
^(HONOLULU)場^(HONOLULU)ト^(HONOLULU)シ^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)留^(HONOLULU)リ、^(HONOLULU)同^(HONOLULU)日、^(HONOLULU)海^(HONOLULU)軍^(HONOLULU)代^(HONOLULU)將^(HONOLULU)座^(HONOLULU)下^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)合^(HONOLULU)衆^(HONOLULU)國^(HONOLULU)部^(HONOLULU)隊^(HONOLULU)員^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)釋^(HONOLULU)放^(HONOLULU)シ^(HONOLULU)マ^(HONOLULU)タ^(HONOLULU)。
海軍

問 貴軍大船ニ於テ何ヲ米國俘虜ニ登待リ自撃シマシカ

答 一九四二年六月十五日、前次、私、他、俘虜トシテ、^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)釋^(HONOLULU)放^(HONOLULU)シ^(HONOLULU)マ^(HONOLULU)タ^(HONOLULU)。

許^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)居^(HONOLULU)ル^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)私、^(HONOLULU)沈^(HONOLULU)没^(HONOLULU)シ^(HONOLULU)マ^(HONOLULU)タ^(HONOLULU)。
物^(HONOLULU)ニ^(HONOLULU)テ^(HONOLULU)、^(HONOLULU)脱^(HONOLULU)カ^(HONOLULU)シ^(HONOLULU)マ^(HONOLULU)タ^(HONOLULU)。

RETURN TO ROOM 201

NO2

Doc 809/1

今同様ヲ改行ラ受クニシテ

一九四三年六月十五日前後ニ米艦 ^(HOUSTON) 號東組海軍大尉 ^(KIRKPATRICK)

カーキパトリックハ視察ヲ聲部カラモ、賈職ハトコロニド改ニ地上

倒トタトコロニテ鼠蹊部ヲ蹴ラシテ、^(KIRKPATRICK) 大尉改ニ

理由ハ日本人説明ヨシ大尉ハ他ノ停倉選ニ給仕ヲニテキルトキ小量

叙ラコホシクカラフトイコトナシ

一九四三年七月十五日前後ニ米艦 ^(HOUSTON) 號東組海軍隊師大

尉 ^(SALT) ^(ENSLON) 於テコノ水ヲ飲ヌトイフノ様

改行ラ受ケタニス日本看守達ニ其處テコノカラ飲ケルハ非衛生的ナ

ルト主張ニテナラズ

一九四三年十月一日前後ニ海軍飛行士 ^(CARLTON H. CLARK) 大尉

ハ日本人等ノ質問ニ對シ満足ニル様ニ返答ヲスルトヲ拒絶

シクテ理由ヲ根柢ナトク談ラシマシク、^(CARLTON H. CLARK) 大尉ハ一九四三年

六月一日前後ニ彼ガ仕事ヲシテ居タリシト日本人ノ甲

立テル理由ニ依リ又改ニシマシク、^(CLARK) 大尉ハ

ハ一度自ニ改ニシタトキニ、^(CLARK) 大尉ハ衰弱シテ、

...

ALLAC 8077

米艦 (GRENADIER) 二十号 兼組 海軍少佐 (JOHN A. FITZGERALD)
一九三三年六月 (日) 他字房 語 (カ) 多 爲 (ビ) 行 (タ) 敵 (ト) 打 (ツ)
合衆國海軍少尉 (ALBERT E. MEAD) 一九三三年十一月 (日) 敵 (ト) 打 (ツ)
詢問 際 (ニ) 日 本 人 (ノ) 真 意 (ト) 思 (フ) 様 (ノ) 答 辭 (ヲ) 以 (テ) 行 (フ) 爲 (ス)
一九三三年八月 中 頃 海 軍 少 尉 (ALASKA) (DUTCH HARBOR)
飛行 中 隊 兵 三 名 飛 行 中 止 其 (ニ) 他 字 房 語 (カ) 多 爲 (ビ) 行 (タ) 敵 (ト) 打 (ツ)

一九三三年十一月 日 米 艦 (DAVID A. HUR)
日 本 人 (ノ) 普 通 (ノ) 行 爲 (General Conduct) 稱 (ト) 爲 (ス)
米 艦 (WELFORD C. BLINN)
他 字 房 語 (カ) 多 爲 (ビ) 行 (タ) 敵 (ト) 打 (ツ) 一九三三年十一月 (日) 起 (ル) 事 (ト) 爲 (ス)
合 衆 國 海 軍 少 尉 (MURRAY GLASSER) 一九三三年十一月 (日)

全 何 (ノ) 理 由 (ヲ) 改 (メ) 之 (ル) 彼 (ノ) 同 僚 (ガ) 日 本 人 (ノ) 氣 (ノ) 操 (ヲ) 仕 事 (ヲ)
質 問 (ニ) 答 (フ) 事 (ト) 爲 (ス) 同 (ノ) 心 (ト) 爲 (ス) 質 問 (ニ) 答 (フ) 事 (ト) 爲 (ス)
合 衆 國 海 軍 少 尉 (RHODES) 合 衆 國 海 軍 少 尉 (ARM/C)
及 (テ) 日 本 人 (ノ) 氣 (ノ) 操 (ヲ) 仕 事 (ヲ) 質 問 (ニ) 答 (フ) 事 (ト) 爲 (ス) (GLASSER)
及 (テ) 日 本 人 (ノ) 氣 (ノ) 操 (ヲ) 仕 事 (ヲ) 質 問 (ニ) 答 (フ) 事 (ト) 爲 (ス) (THEOS(?))
及 (テ) 日 本 人 (ノ) 氣 (ノ) 操 (ヲ) 仕 事 (ヲ) 質 問 (ニ) 答 (フ) 事 (ト) 爲 (ス) (ROBEHL)
及 (テ) 日 本 人 (ノ) 氣 (ノ) 操 (ヲ) 仕 事 (ヲ) 質 問 (ニ) 答 (フ) 事 (ト) 爲 (ス) (NUTZ)
皆 一 九 三 三 年 十 月 日 本 人 (ノ) 質 問 (者) 満 足 (セ) 之 (ル) 事 (ト) 爲 (ス)

爲 (ス) 以 (テ) 敵 (ト) 打 (ツ) 敵 (ト) 打 (ツ)
同 日 本 人 (ノ) 看 守 (ガ) 之 等 (ノ) 字 房 二 村 (ニ) 行 (ク) 敵 (ト) 打 (ツ)
方 法 (ヲ) 述 (ベ) 之 (ル) 事 (ト) 爲 (ス)

NO3 1731

倉 吾 (ノ) 中 支 (ニ) 整 列 (シ) 強 制 (セ) 之 (ル) 日 本 人 (ノ) 爲 事 (ト) 爲 (ス)
長 (シ) 約 (四) 呎 一 吋 半 角 木 棍 棒 (ヲ) 兩 手 (ニ) 持 (ツ) 吾 (ノ) 手 (ヲ)

Doc 807

代ル代ル殴リツクマシク。コノ棍棒ハ出雲目ニ選ビテモ、
 夫ナリ日本人看守ニ正規ニ支給サレテ居テモイデス。
 コノ殴打ノ多クハ日本人看守等、暗害性ニヨルモテ
 中ニ收容所長及ソレヨリ上級、日本海軍
 将校ヲツテ課サレテモイマシク。
 尙其他、種類ノ虐待行為ガアリマシク。
 倉身体ヲ鍛エ直ストイン口実、下ニ日本人ノヒトイ
 利裁々殴打ヲ課シマシク。吾々、長イ間筋足
 ヲサレテ停虜ノ中ニ疲勞、タメ後オラ選ビテソ
 テ来タリ、落伍ニテ列ヲ離レタリヌル者ガアルト
 両手ヲ持ツタ本、棍棒ヲ殴ラレマシク。吾々、腕
 立テ休息ニ「push-ups」ヤ其他、過激ノ運動
 ヲ長時間ニ直ツテ強制サレマシク。此等、所
 謂「運動」ヲ日本人看守ノ満足スル様ニ仕テ
 テヤリ遂ニタイトキハ何時モ殴打サレルトイフ
 結果ニナルノデシク。

No. 1

千九百四十五年 / 昭和廿年 / 十一月二十七日余面前ニ於テ
署名官宣折言セルモノナリ

即決裁判所 SCU=五三七

ダブリューイーアロシム 中尉
CMP

Evidentiary Doc. # 8077 ★
Cert.

書類番第 六〇七七

制限 S/E/S

コロンビア地区ワシントン市 S.S.

成はり者タル余アサーローレンスマーハ正式ニ宣誓シ上余が
余ノ訊問ノ實ヲ讀ミ且ツ同訊問中ノ總テノ答ハ余ノ確信
スニ限リ正確ナルコトヲ陳述ス。

米國海軍大佐

アサーローレンスマー

署名

No. 2

Doc. # 8077*

證明書

余 SICMDW 特別代理人として、一九四五年一月五日、昭和廿年十一月五日、米國海軍大佐為階五八〇五が個人的に余の面前に出頭し、戦争犯罪問への証言を行はしめられた事及び上記の事柄と合するもの質問に対し、彼が為したる答辯は正確なるものなりと証明す

ロイド・イー・クラフ

署名

場所 ワシントン D.C.

日附 一九四五年一月七日

制限 S.E.S.

証明せられたる正確なる

陸軍大佐中尉

エドワード・エフ・スカー

署名

Q # 1934

RESTRICTED Classification changed from
"CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED"
by order of the Secretary of War
By /s/ E. Cheek, Major, Inf.

AFFIDAVIT OF WILLIAM RUDOLPH LIMEOLD
Chief Boatswain's Mate
U. S. Navy
Serial No. 382 32 14

State of California)
County of Los Angeles) ss:
County of Los Angeles)

WILLIAM RUDOLPH LIMEOLD, first being duly sworn on his oath,
deposes and says:

1. I am twenty-three (23) years old and my permanent home
address is 11442 Cumpston Street, North Hollywood, Calif. I am and
at all times hereinafter mentioned was a member of the armed forces
of the United States and I now am a Chief Boatswain's Mate, United
States Navy, Serial No. 382-32-14.

2. I was a prisoner of war of Japan at the following times
and places:

- (a) Aboard Jap Destroyer DE-34 -- Formosa Straits
- (b) Taichow, Formosa (in a warehouse)
- (c) Jap Army Camp -- Northern Formosa (no mistreatment
reported)
- (d) Ofuna Naval Prison
- (e) Omara Prisoner of War Camp

3. I was first taken prisoner as a survivor of the U. S.
submarine TANG on 25 October 1944 in the Formosa Straits by the
Japanese destroyer DE-34 with nine other survivors from the U.S.S.
TANG. I was held on board the DE-34 for three days until I was landed
at Taichow, Formosa, where I was held over night, then transported
by railroad to Kieran, Formosa where I was held in a Japanese Army
Camp for three days. I was then transported to Ofuna where I was
held in a special Japanese Naval Prison about twenty miles south of
Tokyo, arriving there on 3 November 1944 where I was held until 5 April
1945. On 5 April 1945 I was sent to Onari, Japan near Tokyo, a regular
prisoner of war camp. I was released from there on 29 August 1945.

I personally witnessed many atrocities and mistreatment of
American citizens while I was held prisoner by the Japanese.
These instances are as follows:

4. OFUNA NAVAL PRISON

From the Japanese Army Camp in northern Formosa I was taken to Ofuna Naval Prison. I arrived at Ofuna Naval Prison, which is about twenty miles south of Tokyo, on 7 November 1944. We were marched about two and one-half miles from the train to Ofuna Naval Prison. During this march we were barefooted and had no clothing except a shirt and pants which had been given us at the Japanese Army Camp on Formosa. We were also made to carry the baggage of the guards who accompanied us. I do not recall the names of any of these guards. When we got to Ofuna Naval Prison we were given tennis shoes which were mostly worn out, a tooth brush, tooth powder, a small piece of soap, a canvas jumper, and trousers.

We were told that we were to bow to the Japanese guards when they passed near us, and when a Japanese warrant officer or naval officer came near us we were to come to attention and then bow. We were also told that we were to say good morning and good evening to the guards as we bowed. We were also required to fill out a personal history statement which had the above rules printed on it. We were also instructed that we were not to speak to each other except when given special permission.

Ofuna-Naval Prison had about sixty four prisoners of war at this time. There were several one-story buildings with a compound. The building to which I was confined had a corridor about two hundred feet long which opened in the middle. The cells were on both sides of this corridor. I and the other eight prisoners from the submarine TANG were confined separately at Ofuna and were not allowed to mix with the other prisoners until some time in January 1945. While at Ofuna Naval Prison we were given a cup of rice and cup of water at each meal and were given no other food at any time except when we were allowed to have Red Cross packages. I was told by one of the guards (HERSAY) that other food such as fish and meat was sent to the prison for the prisoners but that the guards appropriated this for their own use or sold it in the black market.

The person in charge of Ofuna Naval Prison was a warrant officer of the Japanese Navy who was known as "The Mummy". He was about five feet four inches tall and weighed one hundred and twenty pounds. He had three other petty officers as assistants whose names I never knew. (E.M. CAVEPLY, RT1c had their names written down at one time; he may still have this or remember their names. Major BOYINGTON, USMC, also knew their names. A Japanese known as "Congo CHO", who was a Chief Pharmacist's Mate in the Japanese Imperial Navy and formerly a scenario writer, was the prison doctor. There were about ten to twelve Japanese

scamen guards. The scamen guards whom I can recall were: NISHI who was head of the scamen group and was about five feet two inches tall, had very bad eyes, and weighed about one hundred and twenty pounds; Walliston OBARA who was about five feet five inches tall, weighed about one hundred and fifty pounds, had a very rosy complexion and was known as "Rosy"; SEGATA who was five feet two inches tall and weighed about one hundred and twenty pounds and looked a lot like NISHI; "Silver Tooth" a guard with a lot of silver teeth in the front of his mouth (I never know his name); and Suburo HERSAY. I do not remember the names of any of the other guards. NISHI and SEGATA were the leaders of the scamen guards and caused most of the trouble. Suburo HERSAY never beat any of the prisoners to my knowledge and did all he could to help us.

When we first arrived at Ofuna they began to question us. This questioning was done by three officers who were the Board of Inquiry for Ofuna from Yokosuka Naval Station. They were over the warrant officer in charge and we were supposed to make any complaints or requests of them. After we had been questioned the officers would leave instructions for us to be beaten by the guards if our questioning had not pleased them.

During the whole time that we were at Ofuna we were required to scrub the corridor between the cells in our building. This scrubbing was done with a knot of line which we dipped in the water and then were made to line up two at a time at the entrance of the corridor. We were made to bend over in a stooping position with our feet on the floor and our hands on the mop. At a signal we were told to start and run all the way to the end of the corridor and back again. If we did not run fast enough to suit the guards the guard behind us would strike us. If we slipped and fell down or fell for any other reason the guard would beat us until we arose and started on. During the winter it was so cold that the water would freeze on the deck before we were through and we would slip on the ice. After about four trips we would be so tired that we would fall down many times in the round trip but the guards never stopped at this and always made us make about two more round trips.

All of the guards at the prison except HERSAY participated in this "rat race" with the exception of the warrant officer and chief petty officers. The warrant officer and chief petty officers and Congo CHO, the camp doctor, all knew this was going on and often came to watch it.

In the other side of our building were confined American pilots who had been shot down at various times and taken captive. These pilots were made to mop the other side of the corridor, in front of their cells in the same manner that we were required to mop our side, although the guards never waited until they fell down to start beating them but always began beating them at the beginning and beat them all the way down the corridor and all the way back. Among these pilots was a P4F pilot by the name of EMO (FNU) who was shot down over Formosa in October 1944 and who had arrived at Orina before I did. EMO had no physical defects to my knowledge.

One morning in late December or early January of 1945 while EMO was being beaten by SEGATA and "Silver Tooth" in the "rat race", one of the blows fell upon his spine, paralyzing him from the hips down. He immediately fell to the floor and could go no farther, whereupon SEGATA and "Silver Tooth" beat him for about twenty minutes with clubs which were about the size of baseball bats. At the end of this beating EMO, who was unconscious, was picked up and thrown in his cell. I was standing near the entrance to the building at the time and saw most of this beating. I heard from other prisoners, whose names I can not recall now, that the guards went into his cell and beat him after this but I don't know how many times or how severe the beatings were. About a week after the first beating Congo CFO told me that EMO was going to die that night, which he did. Commander O'KANE and F.M. CAVELLY, one of the pilots, either saw or heard these subsequent beatings and may know which guards did the beating. Others who may have witnessed the above beatings of EMO were: Staff Sergeant Gene BIRDWELL, USAF, Lieutenant DAVIDSON (FNU), USS WASP, and Frank O'CARA, reporter from the "Philadelphia Inquirer".

The first beating that I recall occurred on 26 November 1944. On this occasion we were told that we had not been bowing deep enough to the guards and had not been

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.
AFFIDAVIT OF WILLIAM RUDOLPH LEIBOLD

showing them proper respect which had been noticed by the Board of Inquiry. All of the prisoners were then marched into the compound and twenty-seven of them were lined up, with the rest of the prisoners watching from their position. I was not one of the twenty-seven and I cannot now recall the names of the twenty-seven who were beaten. All of the guards and Congo CHO participated in the mass beating. The warrant officer and petty officers watched it. The guard HERSAY was the only guard who did not participate. These twenty-seven prisoners were struck thirty times each by various guards with clubs about the size of baseball bats and Congo CHO used a piece of two-by-four about three feet long. During this beating Lieutenant William HARRIS, USMC, was suffering from beri beri and was in a very weakened condition; he lost consciousness on the third blow and Congo CHO had the guards pick him up and hold him for the rest of the beating. Commander FITZGERALD, who was struck on the spine, collapsed and the warrant officer in charge ordered the guards not to beat him any more.

While I was at Ofuna there was an Ensign FLINN who was imprisoned with the aviators and who had been shot down over Formosa in October. He contracted dysentery and couldn't eat his food. The guards took his regular food away from him for about ten days and fed him on a dry rice mixture. During this time he was beaten by the guards in his cell because he couldn't leave his cell and because he wasn't able to get up. I was told by Commander O'KANE that FLINN died after I left Ofuna. FLINN was in solitary confinement across from my cell part of the time and I was able to see some of the beatings. I recall seeing NISHI beat him once and OBERA beat him once. I do not know whether any of the other prisoners saw these beatings but I believe they did. I know that some of the prisoners who were in solitary confinement near him heard the guards beat him.

Shortly after I arrived at Ofuna Congo CHO asked me to make him a model airplane, which I did. Congo CHO was pleased with this model airplane and made me his assistant in January, which position I held until I left Ofuna in April. My duties were to keep Congo CHO's quarters clean, shine his shoes, put out the medicine for him and wash bandages. There were other odd jobs which I do not recall at this time.

Some time in January Lieutenant (jg) Richard HUNT, who was formerly attached to the U.S.S. HANCOCK, had been shot down over Hong Kong and was brought to Ofuna Naval Prison. I saw him for a few moments when they first brought him in. I was about fifty

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.
AFFIDAVIT OF WILLIAM RUDOLPH LEIBOLD

fast away. His right arm was bandaged at the time and he had bloody bandages from his hips down. The next day Richard HUNT was made to walk from his cell to Congo CHO's office which was about two hundred yards away. At this time Richard HUNT was in such a condition that he staggered most of the way to Congo CHO's office. His wounds were poorly bandaged and blood was running out of the bandages on his legs. Congo CHO kept HUNT in his office for about half an hour and I believe that he may have changed HUNT's bandages at the time but I don't recall having to wash the old bandages afterwards. A few days later Congo CHO sent me and Charles ROGERS, Chief Telegrapher, British Royal Navy, who was also a prisoner, to HUNT's cell to bring him to Congo CHO's office. We placed HUNT on a stretcher and carried him to Congo CHO's office. When we arrived there Congo CHO had us hold the stretcher beside a bench in Congo CHO's office while Congo CHO rolled HUNT off the stretcher onto the bench right on HUNT's right arm which was broken and had not been set. I could see it had not been set even though it was bandaged by the angle of his arm. HUNT told me once that they had never set it and that it was a compound fracture. I never saw the arm unbandaged. We were made to leave the office and wait outside the door for about forty-five minutes when Congo CHO called us back in to take HUNT back to his cell. HUNT's bandages had been changed by Congo CHO but HUNT told us on the way back to the cell that Congo CHO had hurt him very badly and asked us never to take him back to Congo CHO's office.

HUNT stayed in his cell for about another week before Congo CHO had ROGERS and me bring him to his office again. During this week HUNT was in such a state that he was not able to feed himself and Congo CHO would not allow any of the prisoners to go into his cell to help him eat nor did any of the guards help HUNT eat. The guards would take HUNT's food to him and come back later and take it away when they found he had not eaten it. The second time we carried HUNT to Congo CHO's office Congo CHO made us lay the stretcher with HUNT on it on the wooden bench and then made us leave. Congo CHO called us back about half an hour later to get HUNT. When we got HUNT out of his office HUNT said that Congo CHO had hurt him very badly but did not describe how and it was obvious that Congo CHO had not changed any of his bandages and I knew that I did not wash any dirty bandages after this and none of the clean bandages in Congo CHO's office had been used. I don't know whether Congo CHO ever beat HUNT or struck him as I was not present at Congo CHO's office while he had HUNT there and I never saw Congo CHO or any of the guards beat him at any other time.

On one of the occasions when we carried HUNT to Congo CHO's office a Jap doctor from the Yoskoska Naval Station was there and

saw HUNT's condition. About one week after the last time we carried HUNT to Congo CHO's office HUNT died in the night, which was either 16 or 17 February. The next day I, ROGERS, and some of the other prisoners buried HUNT's body. HUNT was in Ofuna Naval Prison for about one month before he died. The only times that Congo CHO saw him, to my knowledge, were on the three occasions mentioned. I do not believe that Congo CHO ever went to HUNT's cell because the stench there was terrible as Congo CHO only allowed me to clean the cell twice. Some of the other prisoners and I sneaked into HUNT's cell several times when the guards were not looking to cover him and try to make him comfortable, as it was very cold and HUNT was unable to keep covers on himself.

During the winter of 1944 and 1945 there was no heat in our prison. The cracks through the walls were large enough for snow to sift in on the decks of the cells and it was very hard for us to keep warm. There were many other beatings which I witnessed at Ofuna but I cannot recall them now. However, I was not beaten after I became Congo CHO's assistant except on the day before I left Ofuna Naval Prison when I and all the other prisoners were lined up by the guards and made to bend over in a stooping position. The guards then asked us to sign written statements that we had stolen Red Cross packages from the room in which they were kept. We refused to do this and the guards beat us for about twenty minutes. The reason the guards did this was because we were not given all of the Red Cross packages which were sent to Ofuna Naval Prison. As far as I can remember I got one Red Cross package on Christmas and one some time in January. The guard HERSAY and other prisoners told me that the other guards had carried some of the Red Cross packages to their homes and that when the Inquiry Board found out that there were some Red Cross packages missing, the guards tried to get us to make written confessions so that they could tell the Inquiry Board that we had stolen the Red Cross packages.

26 Oct 1945

(Date)

/s/ William Rudolph Leibold

(Signature)

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 26 day of October 1945.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

Edwin F. Svare (signed)

EDWIN F. SVARE

1st. Lt., Inf.

/s/ NW Neukom

N. W. NEUKOM

Lieut., USNR

EXHIBENTIAL DOCUMENT # 81-2407

bx 1934

「...」...
 * * * * *
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...

* * * * *
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...

...
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...
 ...

樹
子
4
8
9
D

念を得ルコトニナツテモ、私達ニ対スル諷刺が終ツキカ、此
將校達、若シ私達ノ諷刺が彼等ヲ満足スルナカバ、
衛兵ヲシテ私達ヲ打擲セシメル指示が残セラルベシナリ
私達が大船ニ乗リ全期間中私達ハ私達ノ運物、小房、間
廊下ヲ洗滌除クシテケレバナラナカバ、此ノ洗滌除ハ麻布
ヲ結テ之ヲ水ニ浸シ、廊下ノ入口ニ一度ニ三名宛
並ニシテテリマシタ。私達ハ兩脚ヲ床ニ兩手ヲ雑巾ニ
置キテ前屈ノ姿勢ニ居テハトナリマセシメ、一ツノ信号ヲ
シテ、仕事ニ掛カリ廊下ノ末端迄走り、折返リ走り
戻ルヤウニ出テケレシメタ。若シ私達が衛兵ノ意ニ叶ハ
ズ、走ラサスト私達ノ後ニキテ、衛兵ハ私達ヲ打ツ、テ下
リ、若シ私達が滑リ、轉ル、若シハ他ノ何カ、理由ニ對シ
テハ、衛兵ハ私達カ近キニ仕事ニ掛カシテ打ツ、テ下
リ、間ハ非常ニ急、私達ノ滑リ、テ下リ、廊
下ノ水ハ、非常ニ急、私達ノ滑リ、テ下リ、滑リ、
テ下リ、入体四回、私達ノ余リニ、一、二、復
テ、履キ、轉ア、シテ、衛兵ハ、打ツ、テ、
下リ、テ、下リ、テ、下リ、テ、下リ、テ、下リ、

14

8043

此、監獄、重刑、一七、除、外、の、心、此、「鼠、籠、中」
 参、加、し、り、在、官、上、等、十、官、等、の、倒、外、ア、リ、マ、シ、ク、
 准、官、上、一、等、十、官、上、收、念、所、医、師、ノ、コ、ト、ナ、リ、
 等、の、此、事、が、行、ハ、レ、タ、リ、ヲ、知、リ、居、タ、ル、又、屢、々、シ、テ、見、物、シ、
 来、リ、タ、。私、達、学、舎、重、創、シ、タ、場、合、ニ、於、テ、警、隊、ヲ、
 シ、テ、捕、虜、シ、タ、リ、タ、リ、カ、飛、行、が、監、禁、セ、ラ、レ、タ、リ、タ、リ、
 此、等、飛、行、十、連、は、彼、等、十、連、前、面、御、下、ヲ、下、な、私、達、が
 私、達、側、ヲ、洗、掃、除、ス、ル、ニ、テ、強、ヒ、ラ、レ、タ、リ、同、法、ヲ、洗、掃、除
 ス、コ、ト、ヲ、サ、セ、シ、メ、タ、リ、タ、。此、モ、衛、兵、十、連、は、彼、等、が、轉、下、シ、テ、彼、等、ヲ、打
 十、始、ル、コ、ト、ヲ、待、ツ、ヤ、ウ、コ、ト、ナ、リ、常、ニ、最、初、カ、ラ、彼、等、ヲ、打、十、始
 又、廊、下、ヲ、徑、テ、復、へ、打、十、統、テ、タ、リ、タ、リ、タ、リ、
 此、等、飛、行、十、連、一、九、四、四、年、十、月、の、湾、上、空、ヲ、輕、手、隊、セ、リ、
 ソ、シ、テ、私、ヲ、リ、テ、先、ニ、大、船、ニ、到、リ、居、タ、リ、者、ヲ、「工、毛、(F.N.U.)」ト、イ、フ、名、前
 一、人、ト、シ、テ、下、飛、行、が、居、リ、タ、リ、タ、リ、工、毛、私、知、リ、居、ル、限、リ、何、等
 身、体、的、欠、陥、ヲ、持、ツ、テ、居、リ、タ、リ、タ、リ、

No. 3

十二月、末、頃、若、ク、一、九、四、五、年、一、月、初、頃、或、ル、朝、「工、毛」が、此、日、際、
 争、ニ、於、テ、工、毛、(工、毛、譯) + 銀、莖、ト、打、テ、シ、テ、十、回、ニ、打、撃、
 一、ツ、が、彼、等、有、林、上、ニ、降、リ、テ、来、リ、彼、等、腰、ヲ、下、テ、麻、痺、セ、シ、タ、リ、
 彼、等、即、座、ニ、沐、シ、上、ニ、倒、シ、ソ、ラ、ソ、レ、以、上、進、ム、コ、ト、が、出、来、ラ、ズ、
 其、處、ヲ、セ、ガ、ク、銀、莖、ト、が、約、ニ、十、分、向、大、作、野、球、ノ、上、ニ、大、キ
 サ、根、棒、ヲ、以、テ、打、テ、シ、タ、リ、此、打、擲、ノ、終、リ、ニ、失、神、状、態、ニ、ア、リ、
 工、毛、の、抱、キ、止、ム、コ、ト、ヲ、彼、等、小、房、へ、投、下、シ、タ、リ、私、此、時、建、物
 之、入、口、近、ク、立、ツ、テ、居、リ、此、打、擲、ノ、大、部、分、ヲ、自、撃、シ、タ、リ、私、他
 人、等、建、物、ノ、内、ヲ、入、リ、行、ク、が、其、名、今、相、忘、ル、コ、ト、ハ、出、来、ナ、ク、

8043

ク徳兵三連、彼中座へ入る。其時、後方より打撃あり。我々
・打擲何國より来り又何處離るるか知りませぬ。
是れ、打擲が下りたる約(通)間後「ゴ」ナリ。私共、
其一夜死すべしと云ふが果なき彼公死す。

* * * * *

私、猶も又最前、大重打擲、一九四四年十月三十一日、想ふに
此場合私達、衛兵一團、其各半身は傷み、計りたし、
ト直家園ニヨリテ注意せらるる時、通泰ノ敬意ヲ彼等ニ示シ
テ平たむとイフコトヲ苦ガラシマシ。全部、停務ハソレモ、常
庭中へ行進せし、ソレ、彼等、中、二十名、整理せし。其
其他、停務ハ自分達、位置カ、被シテ申ス。

私、此、二十名、一人ヲハクソシテ打擲せし。此、二十七名、氏名ヲ
今想起スルニト、出来ませぬ。衛兵、全部ト云フ、ナリ。此、
大重打擲ニ参加せる名、准尉一、等士官ハソレ、見物、衛兵
ハ「セ」ハ参加シテカ、唯一、衛兵ト云フ。此、等士二十七名、
停務ハ大體野球、ハト、大、根棒ヲ持ツ。各衛兵ニヨリ、三、面
打擲せし。又「ゴ」ナリ。楯、時、縦、四、時、長、約、三、呎、棒ヲ使
用シタ。此、打擲中、東、團、海、兵、隊、ウ、イ、ア、ム、ハ、リ、区、大、尉、脚
氣、症ヲ患シ、ナ、リ、極、チ、衰、弱シ、タ、能、力、ニ、在、リ、マ、シ、。彼、等、三
團、日、打擲ヲ急識ク失ヒ、ソレ「ゴ」ナリ。残リ、打擲、加
ヘ、ミ、テ、衛兵ニ彼ヲ抱キ上げ、又ハサセマシ。其、有、極、ヲ、打、ツ、タ
「イ、ン、テ、ラ、ド」中、依、ル、者、ヲ、テ、シ、マ、シ、。ソ、レ、ヲ、担、任、シ、准、士、官、ハ、衛
兵、連、ニ、彼、等、ソ、レ、以、上、ハ、打、ツ、イ、ヤ、ウ、ニ、命、令、シ、タ、。

No. 4

前 一 節 爲 兵 隊 之 行 動 所 關 切 也 故 於 此 節 中 詳 述 其 行 動 之 概 況 以 示 其 變 遷 之 趨 向 其 行 動 之 概 況 可 分 爲 三 期 以 述 之 一 期 爲 行 動 之 起 點 二 期 爲 行 動 之 發 展 三 期 爲 行 動 之 結 束 茲 將 其 行 動 之 概 況 分 述 於 下 一 期 爲 行 動 之 起 點 二 期 爲 行 動 之 發 展 三 期 爲 行 動 之 結 束 茲 將 其 行 動 之 概 況 分 述 於 下

170
 ☆

鐵道部は、行方不明の貨物列車を捜索中である。

銀行は、この騒ぎに慎重であり、貸付金を凍結している。

政府は、この事態を深刻に受け止め、調査を進めている。

被害者の方々は、早く捜索の結果を知りたいと願っている。

現場には、捜査員と関係者が集まり、状況を把握している。

鉄道当局は、安全確保のため、周辺の線路を閉鎖している。

この事件は、日本の鉄道安全に大きな影響を及ぼしている。

関係者は、徹底的な調査を行うと約束している。

捜査員は、現場に残り、証拠を収集している。

この騒ぎは、地方のニュースでも大きく取り上げられている。

関係者は、被害者の方々に謝罪の意を示している。

捜査員は、この事件の真相を明らかにすることを目指している。

鉄道当局は、この事件を教訓とし、安全対策を強化している。

被害者の方々は、捜査員に感謝の意を表している。

この事件は、日本の鉄道史上に残る一大事案として記憶される。

☆

Jo 43

第廿二序り、與繡帶より出づ彼前所ニ汎々申す事
 「三ツ一、ナヨリ」ハ、今事務室ニ「三ツ一」約三十余、向待名ニ
 多分、此時彼「三ツ一」繡帶ヲ替へ、又「三ツ一」然レ其後章
 繡帶ヲ洗ハ、ナヨリト謂フコト、私想起シセ。 数日後「三ツ一」
 ナヨリ「三ツ一」英國海軍、電信兵、長子同様、傍屬ナリ、又「三ツ一」
 「三ツ一」ハ、彼「三ツ一」ナヨリ、事務室へ連テ、本「三ツ一」違ハ出
 シセ。 秋違ハ「三ツ一」担架ニ載テ、彼「三ツ一」ナヨリ、事
 務室へ連テセ。 私違ハ其處へ着ク時「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」
 「三ツ一」ナヨリ、事務室内、ハ「三ツ一」側テ其担架ヲ支
 セ、同時「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」此「三ツ一」上へ轉シ、格ニ心
 折リ、ナヨリ、拵骨ニナカシ「三ツ一」右腕ガ「三ツ一」度下駄ニナ
 リ、此「三ツ一」脈、所テ繡帶ヲ下テ、分米ガ拵骨カ「三ツ一」ナヨリ、
 ナヨリ、私知「三ツ一」ガ出来セ。 「三ツ一」當テ私彼等「三ツ一」拵骨ニ
 ナカシト謂フコト、此「三ツ一」創傷拵骨ニ「三ツ一」謂フコトヲ告セシ。
 私「三ツ一」其腕、繡帶ヲ下テ、見テ「三ツ一」ナヨリセ。
 私違ハ其事務室ヲ出テ、外テ約半、五余、向待「三ツ一」ナヨリ、
 「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」其「三ツ一」小房「三ツ一」連テ、帰「三ツ一」私違
 ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」
 替へシセ。 然レ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」
 彼「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」
 事務室へ連テ、此「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」ナヨリ「三ツ一」
 知違ハ、銀殿ニシテ。

6

8040 ☆

「ハント」ハ「コンゴ」キヨウリ「ガ」ハ「ヤズ」ト私ニ彼ヲ其ノ事
 務室ハ再ビ運ハセル迄更ニ約一週向彼ノ小房ニ留マ
 シタ。此ノ一週向「ハント」ノ状態ハ自今テ食事ヲスルト
 ノ出来テ程デアリマシタ。ソレテ「コンゴ」キヨウリハ傍
 ノ誰ニモ彼ノ小房へ入ツキ行ツテ彼ニ食事ノキ傳テスルト
 モ亦衛兵ノ誰ニモ「ハント」ニ食事ノキ傳テスルトヲ許シマシ
 テレタ。衛兵達ハ「ハント」所へ其ノ食事ヲ運ンデソレカラ
 後刻戻ツテ来テ彼ガソレヲ食ベテオカシタノヲ知ルトモヲ
 持ケタルガ常デアリマシタ。二度目ニ私達ガ「ハント」
 「コンゴ」キヨウリノ事務室へ運ビマシタ時「コンゴ」キヨウリハ
 私達ヲレテ「ハント」ヲ載セテ担架ヲ不製ノ「ベンチ」上ニ置
 カセソレテ私達ヲ退去セシメマシタ。「コンゴ」キヨウリハ約半時間ノ
 後「ハント」ヲ受取ルル為メ私達ヲ呼ビ戻シマシタ。私達が
 「ハント」ヲ彼ノ事務室カラ出シタ時「ハント」ハ「コンゴ」キヨウリカ
 甚レク彼ヲ害シタコトヲ申述ベマシタ。然レソノ方法ハ述ベ
 マセンデレタ。「コンゴ」キヨウリ「ガ」彼ノ繻帶「ド」ヲ替ヘテ
 コトハ明白デアリマシタ。ソレテ私ハ此ノ事ノ後テ如何ニシ
 繻帶ヲモ私ハ洗ハナカッタコト又「コンゴ」キヨウリノ事務室
 ノ清潔ヲ繻帶「ド」レモガ使用セラレナカッタコトヲ私ハ
 知ツテ居リマス。「コンゴ」キヨウリ「ガ」「ハント」ヲ自今事務
 室ニ置イテオク間私甚處ニ居合ハセナカッタコト
 「コンゴ」キヨウリ「ガ」「ハント」ヲ打ツタノヤヲ又改ワタノヤヲ
 私ハ知リマセン又私ハ「コンゴ」キヨウリヤ若クハ衛兵ノ誰
 カガ他ノ時ニ彼ヲ打ツノヲ見タコトハアリマセンデレタ。

57

★ Doc 8043

私達が「ハント」ヲ「コング」・「チヨウ」ノ事務室へ運之ガ或
 場合、横須賀海軍鎮守府カラノ日本医師ガ其処ニ居リ
 「ハント」ノ状態ヲ見マシタ。私達が最後ニ「ハント」ヲ「コング」
 「チヨウ」ノ事務室へ運之ガ約一週間後ノ夜「ハント」ハ死セシマシタ。
 之ハ二月ノ十六日カ若クハ十七日デアリマシタ。其ノ翌日私トロト
 マシト他ノ数人ノ傍房トガ「ハント」ノ屍体ヲ埋メシタ。「ハント」ハ
 死ス迄大船海軍監獄ニ約一ヶ月居リマシタ。「コング」・「チヨウ」ガ
 彼ヲ見タハ私ノ知ル所トハ前述ノ三回ノ場合ニ於テノミデア
 リマシタ。私「コング」・「チヨウ」ガ「ハント」ノ小房へ一度テモ
 出掛ケテ行ツタモノトハ信ジマセン。ソレハ其処ノ臭氣ガ甚
 シクテ「コング」・「チヨウ」ハ單ニ私ガ其ノ小房ヲ一回掃除スル
 フトヲ許シタダケデアルカラデアリマス。他ノ傍房、或ハ者ト私
 トハ衛兵ノ見テキタイ折ニ時々「ハント」ノ小房へ秘密ニ潜
 リ込メテ行ツテ彼ニ寝具ヲ掛ケタリ又彼ヲ氣持ヲ良ク
 サセルヤウニ努力シマシタ。非常ニ冷寒デアツテ「ハント」
 ハ自分ノ体ニ寝具ヲ掛ケテ置クコトが出来ナカッタカラ
 テアリマス。

8043★

一九四四年、一九四五年、冬間私達監獄中ニ煤油灯
 二ツあり、壁隙ニ雲小房、床板、上漏シ煤油程ニ多クテ
 私達ガリテ居ルニ至難ナリシヲ。又船於テ私達目撃シテ
 打擲外ニ沢山ノモノガ私達今ニ等想起スルニ出スルニ
 然レテ私達コトニ、今ヨウ、即チ、テリテカラ私打タレ
 セリシヲ。只私達大船海軍監獄ヲ去ル前日私他、俘虜
 全員ガ衛兵ニテ整列セラル平身低頭サレシ時
 ナリシ。衛兵達其處ニ私達ニ私達ガ赤十字荷物
 其ノ保管サレテ中々室ヲ盗取ラト謂フコト、書面陳述
 書署名ヲスルコト要請シシ。私達ガコトヲ拒否シシ
 ナリ。衛兵達私達約二十介向打テシ。衛兵達ガコト
 理由私達大船海軍監獄送ラレ赤十字荷物、全
 部ガ與ヘラレタカガアリシ。私、想起スルニ出スル範圍
 ナリ。私、コトニテ、一個、赤十字、包ニテ受ケ、ソシテ一個、自
 或時受取リシ。衛兵、ハ、ヤ、上、他、俘虜、達、私、他
 衛兵達ガ若干、赤十字荷物ヲ自宅（持リテ）ナリ
 在直察団其長ニ赤十字荷物、紛失ヲ發見ラトテ衛兵
 達、在直察団ニ對シ私達ガ赤十字荷物、盗取ラト謂
 フコトヲ告ゲルコト、出スルナリ。私達、書面、自白書ヲ作
 ルコトヲ試シ、一、ガト謂フコトヲ告ゲシ。

6

Ex # 1935

RESTRICTED

Classification changed from "CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED" by order of the Secretary of War By s/E. Checket, Major, Inf

My name is George (n) McRAE. My permanent home address is 13 Cozzens Avenue, Riverside, Rhode Island. I am a high school graduate and enlisted in the Marine Corps in October 1938. I became Private, First Class, and my serial number is 268634.

At the surrender of Corregidor I was seized by the Japanese and placed in Cabanatuan Camp #3, staying there from May 1942 until October 1942. In November 1942 I was transferred to Umeda Camp in Osaka, where I remained until May 1945. At that time I was transferred to what was known as the Headquarters Prison Camp (Chico), also at Osaka, and again in June 1945 I was transferred to Nagoya Camp #10, where I remained until the end of the war. I have already filled out a questionnaire (this was a statement sworn to and signed by me and also witnessed by a Naval Intelligence Officer), submitted to me by a Naval Intelligence Officer aboard the U.S.S. Rescue while enroute during the month of September from Yokohama to San Francisco. In addition to the information I gave at that time, there are the following facts which I should also like to have made a matter of record.

While at the Headquarters Camp at Osaka I witnessed Japanese refusal to distribute Red Cross supplies of clothing and the results of previous refusals to do that over a period of several years. All Red Cross supplies for the Osaka area came to the Headquarters Camp first and the prisoners at that camp were fully provided for from these supplies. However, instead of sending the balance of these supplies to the other prison camps in the area, of which there were four or more, these supplies were simply kept stored at the Headquarters Camp. The result was that the prisoners in the Umeda Camp, where I was previously stationed, were dependent almost entirely upon tropical clothing they wore when they were seized in the Philippines, for 1942-1943. A small amount of Japanese army clothing was distributed subsequently, but, except for one issue of gloves and an army hat, not a single item of Red Cross clothing was given to the prisoners at the Umeda Camp from the supplies received in the Headquarters Camp. In addition to having the opportunity to see what was distributed at the Headquarters Camp as compared to what had been passed

on to us at the Umeda Camp, I also saw stocks of shoes and underwear, furnished by the Red Cross, which remained unused.

The Headquarters Camp was managed when I was there in 1945 by a Japanese Lieutenant called by the prisoners "you know", who was slender, about 5'8" tall and wore glasses. At that same Headquarters Camp was also stationed a Japanese Army Colonel by the name of MaRada TAISHA, who was the Osaka G.M. area commander for prisoner of war camps. There were four or more such camps in this area under his command, including Umeda.

Just before I arrived at the Headquarters Camp, an incident occurred which was related to me by A. Krudsen, a Merchant G.M. Marine Officer who was formerly Chief Mate on the S.S. Stanvac Calcutta, and was also confined to the Headquarters Camp. This incident happened in April 1945 following B-29 raids in the area. An evening roll call was taken of all the prisoners of the camp, of which there were 500 or 600, and every man answering to the number "29" was taken down into the prison yard. These prisoners were then beaten severely with bamboo sticks and then forced to kneel on rock piles for about 1½ hours, during which time they were additionally beaten with these same bamboo sticks.

This information to the best of my knowledge represents true facts in each instance, and I have no information favorable or unfavorable to add.

s/ George McRae

RESTRICTED s/E.C.

RESTRICTED s/E.C.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
: SS
County of Alameda :

I, George (n) McRae of lawful age, being duly sworn, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of two pages, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

s/ George McRae

Subscribed and sworn to before me this ninth day of October 1945 at Oakland, California.

s/ K. H. Brown
(Rank) Lieut Comdr. U.S.N.R.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA:
: SS
County of Alameda :

I, K. H. Brown, Lieut. Comdr., U.S.N.R. certify that (name) George (n) McRAE (Rank) Pvt. 1st class (ASN) 268634, personally appeared before me on the ninth day of October 1945, and testified concerning war crimes, and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by (him) (her) to the several questions set forth.

Place: Oakland, California

Date: 9 October 1945 s/ K. H. Brown

Page two of two pages

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

s/ Edwin F. Svare
EDWIN F. SVARE
1st Lt. Infantry

RESTRICTED s/ E.C.

RESTRICTED s/E.C.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
: SS
County of Alameda :

I, George (n) McRae of lawful age, being duly sworn, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of two pages, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

s/ George McRae

Subscribed and sworn to before me this ninth day of October 1945 at Oakland, California.

s/ K. H. Brown
(Rank) Lieut Comdr. U.S.N.R.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA:
: SS
County of Alameda :

I, K. H. Brown, Lieut. Comdr., U.S.N.R. certify that (name) George (n) McRAE (Rank) Pvt. 1st class (ASN) 268634, personally appeared before me on the ninth day of October 1945, and testified concerning war crimes, and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by (him) (her) to the several questions set forth.

Place: Oakland, California

Date: 9 October 1945 s/ K. H. Brown

Page two of two pages

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

s/ Edwin F. Svare
EDWIN F. SVARE
1st Lt. Infantry

RESTRICTED s/ E.C.

Ex 1935 Doc 8289

私ノ姓名ハシヨ一ツ (三又) マツクテイ
デアリマス。私ノオノセハロードアイラ
ド州リバ！サイド市マシタ。年ヲ十三
歳デアリマス。私ハ中島村ノ卒業生テ一
九三八年十月海兵隊ノ兵隊ニ入りマシタ
私ハ一等水兵トサリマシタ。ソシテ私ノ
部隊番号ハ二六八六三四デアリマス。

マレヒドール島陥伏ノ際ハ日本人ニ捕
ハラレカバオツアシ收容所ニ別ニ奉レラ
レ。ソノコトハ一九四二年五月カラ一九四二
年十月迄居マシタ。一九四二年十一月私
ハ大井ノ輪田收容所ニ移サレソノコトハ一九
四五年五月迄イマシタ。ソノ時私ハ矢張
リ大阪ニアル收容所本部 (錦港) トシテ
知ラレテイタ所ニ移サレマシタ。ソレカ
ラ再ビ一九四五年六月ニ名醫屋收容所十
號ニ移サレ。其處ニ留戦ヲ居マシタ。

大阪ノ收容所ニイタ時私ハ日本人カ赤十
字ノ衣服救恤品ノ分配ヲ拒否シタ事及ビ
毎毎ノ時ニ食ツテ既ニ分配スルノヲ拒否
シテイタ事ノ結果トオ目撃シマシタ。大

Doc 8289

2.

陸奥區ニ對スル赤十字ノ救恤品ハ全部先
 ヲ收容所本部ニ來マシタ、ソシテソノ收
 容所ノ庫内ハ之等救恤品カラ十分ニ供給
 サレマシタ。然シ乍ラソノ地區ニ於ケル
 他ノ收容所、ソレハ四ツ或ヒハソレ以上
 アリマシタガ、ニ對シテ之等救恤品ノ全
 部ヲ送ルコトヲシテイテ之等救恤品ハ唯
 收容所本部ニ貯蔵サレテ置カレマシタ。
 ソノ結果私カ以前ニ容レラレテイタ村田
 收容所ノ行方ハ殆ド一九四二年カラ一
 九四三年ノ間律令ニ比照テ行ハラレタ時
 期ニイタ款項販賣許リ券ヲサナケレバナリ
 マセ。テシタ。ソノ後日本ノ電匯カ儘カ
 許リ支給サレマシタガ赤十字ノ衣服ハ手
 袋ト電匯ノ一回ノ支給以外ニハ收容所本
 部ヲ採取ラレタ救恤品カラ村田收容所ノ
 行方ニ一點ノ支給モアリマセ。テシタ。
 此收容所本部ヲ支給サレタ物ヲ村田收容所
 テ送サレテイタ物ト比照シテ見ル機會ガ
 アツタ外ニ私ハ赤十字ニ目ツテ支給サレ
 タ集ヤ下差ヲ使用サレズニ貯蔵サレテア
 ルノヲ見マシタ。

Doc 8289

3.

利ハシコニイタ一九五五年ハ東京所
 部ハ、夏中々五限八時位ノ書交テは候ヲ
 ナク、行方カラ一紙ノ如ト同ハレテイ
 タ目ホノ中尉ニヨツテ座置サレテイマシ
 タ。同シ監察所本部ニ、村田大佐ノ原文
 ハ「マラダタリシヤ」トイフ前ノ日
 オノ電大佐モ私マシタ、ソノ長ハ候其
 收録所ノ大阪北區司令官テアリマシタ。
 然レ以下ニハ、内ヲ示レテ四ツカ武ヒハ
 シレ以上ノヨク私サ此察所マアリマシタ
 私ハ此察所カ部ニ到着スル直前其ル事件
 起リマシタ。ソレハ元々タバツクカ
 ルカツタ私ノ一全運兵士チ余張リ收録所
 ニ監禁サレテイタ。タマツ云、密監兵士
 官カテ既キマシタ。此ノ事件ハ一九四五年
 年四月、奈良縣ニ於ケルB三十九ノ爆撃
 ニ際イテ起ツタ。テマ。夕方、監所カソ
 ノ收録所ノ五百人カ六百人ノ停兵全数ニ
 行ハレマシタ、ソレテ「三十九」トイフ
 利ハシ近身ヲシタニハ私テモ此察所ノ長
 ニ近レテ行カレマシタ。ソレカラ之今停
 兵ハ竹ノ森ヲ渡シタ打タレ約一時間半ノ

Doc 8259 *

4.

既 有 ノ 山 ノ 上 ニ 坐 ラ セ ラ レ マ シ タ 、 シ ノ
 門 徒 全 ハ 眞 ニ 忍 コ ノ 屈 ヲ 竹 ノ 杖 ヲ 隨 打 サ
 レ マ シ タ 〃
 X X X 〃

DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA)
) SS:
 CITY OF WASHINGTON)

I, Philip E. Sanders, Chief Bosuns Mate, United States Navy, 3801732, being duly sworn do depose and say:

I was on Guam at the time of its surrender on 10 December 1941.

I went into the hills to destroy some equipment and returned on 20 December 1941 and surrendered myself to the Japanese. I was suffering from dysentary at the time and was put in the hospital where I remained until 5 January 1942. At that time I was taken from the hospital and placed in the concentration area where all of the navy and white civilian personnel had been put at the time of surrender. This was in the Catholic church next door to the hospital. About six hundred people were interned in this church. When I arrived there on 5 January 1942, I found that most of the people had lost considerable weight. We were fed one potato and one small piece of meat twice a day. We were very crowded in the church. Our only sanitary facility was a slit trench outside of the church which served as a toilet for all six hundred people. Our only water came from one tap which had to serve all of us for both drinking and washing. I was told that at the time of the surrender, about sixty to seventy per cent of those who surrendered were stripped naked and put into this internment area where they remained without clothing until the Japanese clothed them from the supplies on hand in the Navy Small Stores. At the time I arrived there all of them were fully clothed.

On 10 January 1942, all of the interned prisoners were placed aboard the Argentina Maru where they were quartered in the holds. We were taken to Zentsuji prisoner of war camp on Chikoku where we arrived on 15 January 1942. Zentsuji was a former cavalry and infantry training station, it was a "show camp" established for propaganda purposes. We were not mistreated here in any way, as the Japanese frequently brought high ranking members of the Army and Navy and of the civilian population out to see the prisoners of war. We were not permitted to send any mail out, although each of us was permitted to send a radiogram to our families. The radiogram that I sent was received in the United States by my sister 22 Feb. 1942.

I remained at Zentsuji until 5 June where I was taken to Osaka in charge of the detail of 150 men. We were quartered in the grand stand of the stadium at Ichioka and remained here until 20 October. This was not a camp until we arrived

at which time we set up a prison camp there. Later, after we left, Ichioka was converted into a prisoner of war hospital for all the Kobe and Osaka camps, still later it was closed and the hospital was moved into Kobe.

I remained at Ichioka until 20 October with the detail of 150 men setting the place up as a prisoner of war camp. Our treatment was fair and in view of what happened to us later, we do not consider that we were mistreated in any way worthy of note.

NAILS TAKEN /s/ Not legible

I do remember that one Private Hernandez, a marine in Guan, was severely beaten with a bamboo stick by a three star private, Japanese, whose name I do not know, for stealing beer.

[On 20 October 1942, I and my detail of 150 men were taken to the Osaka main camp at Honcho, and we remained here until 1 June 1945.] There are twenty-two camps in the Osaka group. The following is a list of those twenty-two camps together with an estimate of the number of prisoners in each to the best of my knowledge:

1. Main Camp at Honcho	182 Americans
2. Sakurajima	300 Americans
3. Ichioka	PW Hospital
4. Umeda (Osaka Central Market)	300 Americans
5. Anagasaki	British (18 Americans)
6. Kobe Main Camp (This was the main camp of twelve camps in the Kobe area)	20 Americans
7. Kawasaki	350 British, Dutch and Australians
8. Kirichata	800 Americans
9. Tsunocuri	1000 Americans
10. Wakayama	British
11. Tanagawa	1100 Americans
12. Tsurumi	400 Americans
13. Narumi	400 Americans
14. Tobugun (Ueno is part of this camp)	600 Americans
15. Saki Military Prison	?
16. Tennoji	small
17. Futatabi	131 Americans
18. Funatsu	300 Americans
19. Yekiichi	300 Americans
20. Harima	Dutch
21. Hineji	500
22. Yodagawa	300 or more

Honcho was the main headquarters for Jap prisoner of war camps in the Osaka and Kobe areas. The following personnel were in charge of the camp:

Colonel Mureta, Commandant of all prisoner of war camps in the Kobe and Osaka areas
 Lt. Hatsuuro, Assistant to Colonel Mureta.
 Lt. Nosu, Chief Doctor
 Lt. Haruo, Doctor
 Captain Miyatake, Doctor
 Dr. Anaba
 Lt. Kajiyama, supply officer.
 Lt. Fukanaga, supply officer for the Osaka District.
 Sgt. Haj. Tanaka
 Sgt. Sawamura
 Pvt. Kondo, Medical private.

At Honcho we had an average of 650 to 700 prisoners, including about 180 Americans. All of the Americans who had been with me at Ichioka were at Honcho. I was in charge of the prisoners of war at Honcho. We received 700 grams of food daily, usually rice and soup. The men lost weight and their health deteriorated because they didn't have enough of the proper kind of food.

All of the men in the camp, unless they were sick in the hospital or in the camp sick ward, were required to work daily from six thirty in the morning to five thirty in the evening, we had a half hour out for lunch and one ten minute rest period both in the morning and in the afternoon. Our work was very hard. The following details worked outside the camp daily over the 2-1/2 years we were in Honcho:

1. A forty to eighty man detail worked in the Osaka Saiko Steel Plant making parts for tanks, trucks, motors, anchors, ship parts, etc.
2. A forty man detail worked in the Osaka Teko Steel Mill doing the same type of work.
3. Another detail of twenty to twenty-five men worked in the Nakayama Seiko Steel Mill doing the same type of work.
4. Another detail of forty to fifty men worked in the Sumitomo Company as stevedores, loading ammunition, tank parts, plane parts, rifles and trucks.
5. Another forty man detail worked in the Maeda Company as stevedores loading and unloading military equipment.
6. Another forty man detail worked in the Osaka Ko

Plant as stevedores unloading ore, bauxite, copper, bronze, brass, steel and coal.

7. Another one hundred man detail worked in the Army Stevedoring Companies at Kitaura, Haiki, and Takashima, loading and unloading weapons, military equipment, and the like. A good deal of the time was spent unloading airplane wrecks, most of which were Japanese planes.

During all the time that these details worked outside the camp, we continually complained to the Japanese that the work was illegal for prisoners of war. Our protests were ignored and we continued to work making weapons of war and loading and unloading them for the Japanese. The worst part of these details were the continual beatings of the men by the Japanese. In most cases they were working side by side with Japanese soldiers who continually took advantage of them and administered many severe beatings to them. In no case do we know the names of these Japanese soldiers as a new group usually worked with the men every week. The only beating about which I have definite information is as follows:

Harvey Goodrich, who had been first engineer on a British boat sunk in the South Atlantic by a German raider, was the work leader at the Sumutono. About forty of the men working in this detail stole about four hundred pounds of candy and hid it in the storage room. The Japs found some of the candy on the men and realized that it had been stolen from the warehouse which contained only navy stores. The Japanese took Goodrich down to the office and tried to get him to tell where the men had hidden the candy. Of course, they had found out by this time that over four hundred pounds were missing. Goodrich evidently did not know where the candy was hidden. The Japs sent for me as I was the camp commander and when I arrived there I could see Goodrich standing in the room holding a bucket of sand stiff arm over his head while the Japs beat him over the stomach with a stick. I understand that this had gone on for almost twenty minutes before I arrived there. Sgt. Major Ichida Tanaka was in charge of this beating. The Japs then took a fire bucket filled with five gallons of water and started to pump the water into Goodrich's eyes, nose, mouth and ears. They then lay Goodrich out on the table jammed the nozzle of the fire hose into his rectum and pumped all the rest of the water out of the bucket. I finally got them to stop because I was afraid they might kill him, and I persuaded the men to tell where they had hidden the candy, the Japs then released all of the men including Goodrich and we returned to our barracks. This is the only beating which occurred while the men were out on detail which I

which I believe is worthy of particular notice, however, never a day went by when I did not receive many stories about beatings given them by the Japs while on work details.

In the camp, beating of the men was an even more common procedure. The chief offenders were Sgt. Sawamura and Sgt. Maj. Tanaka, who was not the same Sgt. Maj. as was implicated in the above beating of Goodrich. I estimate that I was beaten severely by either Sawamura or Tanaka at least twenty-five times during the two and one-half years that I was in Camp Honcho. In some cases they used their belt or bamboo poles to hit me. I would also estimate that over ninety-five per cent of the men in the camp at one time or another received a severe beating from either of the two men, and when I refer to beatings I do not mean the ordinary type of face slapping which was so common in the camp that we considered it as part of our daily routine. We were all slapped without exception hundreds of times while we were confined in Honcho.

I remember at one time seeing Sawamura and Tanaka beat water tender first-class Scott, USN, insensible. They claimed this was because Scott was disrespectful to them and failed to salute.

For the first three months that we were in Honcho we had six officers confined with us, Lt. Comdr. F. V. Callahan, Lt. R. C. Silbray, U. S. Army Engineers; Captain A. E. Strong, U.S. Army Quartermaster; Lt. D. W. Thompson, U.S. Army; Ensign L. L. Anderson, USN, Lt. Fochman; U.S. Army Medical Corps. They remained with us for about three months until they were removed from the camp and taken to Zentsuji. During the time that they were with us, they were beaten, humiliated, and pestered by Tanaka and Sawamura constantly. Neither of the two Japs ever gave them a chance to relax. They were beaten, slapped, humiliated everyday, some of the beatings were quite severe.

Sawamura and Tanaka were also responsible for what we classify as the B-29 beatings. Every time the B-29's came over, two Japanese Sergeants would call out every man whose number was 29 at evening muster, as we had thirteen separate groups in the camp there were thirteen men every night whose number was number 29. Sawamura and Tanaka would take these thirteen men and force them to kneel for an hour on sharp steel rails which served as a slide for the fire door, they would then force them to take off their pants and bend over and they would give them fifty or sixty lashes with a bamboo pole over their bare backs and buttocks; the men would then be returned to the barracks. Usually they returned with their backs a mass of blood and bleeding welts. Harvey Goodrich, the Chief Engineer on a British

tanker, got about eight of these beatings. I was a Coxswain, USN and Knutzen, First Officer on a Standard Oil tanker each got it about four times. All in all there were about twelve or fourteen of these B-29 episodes. Although Sawamura and Tomie equally administered all of these beatings, Captain Miyatake, Lt. Kejiyama, and Lt. Hatsuuro stood by and watched the beatings administered. I often complained to Colonel Murata about this, but the beatings continued in spite of Colonel Murata's promise to put a stop to it.

Captain Miyatake was the duty officer about every fifth or sixth night, as duty officer he made an inspection of the men in quarters after evening muster, I had to accompany him on each of these inspections, and the men really dreaded the nights when Miyatake was on duty. It was routine for him to severely beat at least one man in every barracks. I remember one night in August 1944 that he went berserk in one of the British barracks, room 4, about sixty-five men in that group were severely beaten. He hit them with his sword in his scabbard, kicked them, punched them, and in general did everything he could to hurt them. At least twenty were knocked off their feet, about eight were knocked unconscious. Seaby, a warrant officer first class in the Royal Navy was unconscious for about eight hours. About eight of the men had to go down to our sick bay to have stitches taken in their wounds.

On 6 July 1943, Ordoyne, a Marine Private from Guam received a very severe beating. He was part of a group which stole seven cases of beer. He was caught because the Japanese noticed that he was a bit tight. He took the blame for the group and refused to implicate anyone. Then the Japanese went to work on him in an attempt to find out who else was in on the beer theft. They beat him, hit him, kicked him, and finally put a hose up his rectum and pumped water up until he was unconscious. I did not see this beating, but Ordoyne told me about it when he got back to the camp. Sawamura and two guards, whose names I do not know, administered this beating. Ordoyne was in the sick bay for about three weeks until he was able to get out again.

Another common beating administered by the Japanese, was to hit the men on the side of the face with a slipper, usually the end of the slipper just hit over the man's ears, and about twenty-five or thirty of the men had their ear drums broken due to these blows with a slipper.

Other favorite punishments used by the Japanese were restrictions on the amount of food a man could have, including completely cutting off his food for one or two days,

cutting out the food of the whole barracks for the offense of one man, forcing a man to stand with a bucket of sand over his head with his arms stiff, forcing a man to kneel on the cobblestones, which were very sharp, for a period of two or three hours, or putting a man in a water tank, which served the camp with fire water for the night. The tank was about five feet deep and this punishment was administered even in cold weather. At least two or three men in the camp were hit daily with swords in scabbards, rifles, sticks or any other weapon handy at that time. I have pointed out the above beatings merely to show the type of beatings the Japanese administered.

The average number of men in our camp was between 650 and 700 men. Of these about 120 or more men died in the two and a half years we were interned at Hencho. Of these 48 were Americans. I had a list of the Americans who died at Hencho but I turned it over to a Naval captain from the District Naval Intelligence in Pearl Harbor. I also had a list of the British and foreigners who died in the camp and these I turned over to a British Sergeant Major at the time of our liberation. (Most of the deaths occurred from pneumonia, beri beri, or dysentery.

About fifteen of the deaths in the camp were due, I believe, to forcing the men to work while sick and while giving them no medical attention. Below I shall list four examples which I believe are representative of the fifteen deaths due to labor while sick.] As all of these men were sick at the time they were forced to work, I consider that Captain Miyatake, Lt. Nesu, Lt. Naruo, Dr. Ancho, and Pvt. Kondo are responsible. All of the fifteen deaths occurred in somewhat the same manner as the four I shall describe below.

[Knudsen, former Third Officer on a Standard Oil tanker, either the Seony Vacuum or the Tidewater, developed pneumonia in November 1943 and was running a fever of about 104 degrees. After repeated demands to the Japanese, Captain Miyatake finally came over to see Knudsen. He forced Knudsen to climb out of his upper-tier bunk and stand at attention. He then knocked Knudsen to the floor with his fist for not saluting properly. I tried to stop him from hitting Knudsen because Knudsen was a very sick man but Miyatake unhuckled his sword and hit me across the stomach with it. After a while, he had Knudsen put in the back of a truck and he was driven to the hospital in the stadium at Ichicka. It was very cold outside and Dr. Jackson, Lieutenant Surgeon, Royal Navy, told me that Knudsen died about three hours later in Ichicka.

Anthony Sarafin was an Italian National. He was a civilian who had been taken prisoner by a German raider, either Raider No. 9 or No. 18 in the South Atlantic. These two raiders operated out of Yokohama and at one time they returned 136 prisoners to Yokohama who had been captured from merchant vessels sunk by the raiders. Sarafin was one of these 136 prisoners. In June 1944 he complained continually for about ten days that he was suffering from beri beri. He went on sick call but was forced to work anyhow. One day he went out on the stevedoring job at the Maeda Company's military warehouse, but he collapsed on the job, was taken back to camp and put in his bunk, and about five a.m. the next day I was notified that he was dead. I went over and found out that he must have died some time between three and five in the morning in his bed.

Bosun Mate First Class Hess from the USS Quail was suffering from beri beri, jaundice, skin ulcers, dysentery, and pains in the stomach. Although he repeatedly complained and tried to be classified as sick he was forced to work over a period of about six weeks when he was ill. Finally one day Pvt. Kondo decided that he was too ill to work and ordered us to prepare a litter party to take Hess to Ichicka. This was in June 1944. Hess died on the litter about one hundred feet outside the camp.

In the winter of 1943 D. W. Smith, Radioman First Class, USN, was ill with the flu. We tried to get him put in the sick bay. The Japanese forced him to work. He died twenty-four hours later due to exposure.

Our camp was located in the industrial area of Osaka. We were within two-hundred yards of the largest warehouse in Osaka, Sumitomo Company. This was a six story building, about one hundred yards long and was surrounded by about one hundred fifty redowns. It was used as a navy warehouse. Within a few blocks of us were warehouses, ferrics, dry docks, and piers at which men-of-war frequently were tied up. There were military targets all around us. The camp, as well as the whole surrounding area, was wiped out 1 June 1945 in a B-29 raid. None of my men were killed but 25 received severe burns. The camp was not marked and no effort was made to communicate our position to the Americans or to remove our camp from the area so full of military targets.

The Japanese provided us with practically no medicine or medical or surgical facilities while we were in camp. Although we had experienced men to treat our sick and wounded we had no facilities they could use. In March 1943

we received forty cases of medicine and medical supplies from the Red Cross. These were supposed to serve the twenty-two camps in the Osaka area. However, the Japanese refused to allow anything more than a small trickle of these supplies to be delivered to the other Osaka camps. At the time the camp was wiped out on 1 June we still had about ninety percent of these medical supplies on hand, although they could have been used very well to save the lives of men and prevent their suffering in the other Osaka camps. In March 1944 we received another forty cases of medicine and in November 1944 we received 120 cases of medicine. These were both sent to us by the Red Cross. A short while after they arrived, the Japanese made us repackage these two shipments of 160 cases and told us they were being taken to a camp at Ikuno. I had never heard of this camp and neither had anyone I met in the area. I do not know what the Japanese did with these 160 cases although Vance, a Chief Radioman, USN, who was a patient in the Jap military hospital in Osaka, told me he saw plasma from this Red Cross shipment stored in the hospital. Evidently the Japanese took the Red Cross supplies and used it for their own battle casualties.]

On 1 June 1945 we and all our guards were taken to Camp Tsurori. This had been one of the old Osaka camps but had been closed when the men in it were taken to a camp in Nagoya. We remained here until 19 June and were not mistreated or harmed in any way. We were then taken to Camp No. 10 at Nagoya, a new camp about one-half mile from Nonschi. We remained here until 18 August when we took over the camp from the Jap guards. The guards who had been with us at Fonsbo did not accompany us after we left Tsurori for No. 10 Camp at Nagoya.

/s/ Philip E. Sanders
 PHILIP E. SANDERS
 Chief Bosun Mate, 3801732

Sworn to before me and subscribed in my presence this 21
 day of September 1945.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Everett Cockett
 EVERETT COCKETT
 Major, Infantry

/s/ Edward J. Connolly
 EDWARD J. CONNOLLY,
 Captain, JAGD

No. 1

Evidentiary Doc 8234

☆ 1

G-1936-A

原文二頁

秘米國海軍一等掌帆兵曹 / CHIEF BOSUN'S
MATE / 三ノ一七三番
PHILIP E. SANDERS / 親通直擧上申上
和一九四一年十二月十日 / 公
「GUAM」ニ居リマシタリ...

原文二頁

一九四一年十月二十日 = 私ト兵五名、私班本
町 / HONCHO / 在ニ大阪收容所 / THE OSAKA
MAIN CAMP / 連テ行カ。此處ニ一九四一年六月
日ニ居リマシタリ...

原文三頁

本町 / HONCHO / 米國人約六十名
及カ名カ名程ノ停所ガ居リマシタリ
「CHIOKA」ニ私ト緒ガツタ米國人
「HONCHO」ニ居リマシタリ。
糧ニテ居リマシタリ。私達ハ日々
「」ニテ居リマシタリ。是ハ大概米トス
「」人々ニ適種適量ノ食物
「」目方ニ減シ、健康衰
收容所ニ居ル者ニ具令
收容所ノ病室ニ居ル
限
院
全員毎日

改

Doc 823A

朝六時半迄夕五時半迄働、二班、夜食、
食、夕三十分、午、前、午後二食十分、外、朝時
間がゴトイダ。仕事、隨食等、イモ、イ、次ニ
記ス各班、本町ニ居、夕、二箇、半年以上、同、毎日
收、客、所、外、ニ、働、キ、マ、タ、。

一、甲、名、多、八、十、名、一、班、ハ、夕、三、時、迄、カ、マ、ル、
製、鋼、所、船、部、部、ヲ、造、ル、大、阪、テ、コ、ノ、
SAIKO、
THE OSAKA SAIKO STEEL PLANT、
テ、働、キ、マ、タ、。

二、甲、名、一、班、ハ、大、阪、テ、コ、ノ、
OSAKA TEKO
STEEL MILL、テ、同、ニ、操、ル、種、類、ノ、仕、事、ヲ、
シ、マ、ス、。

三、二十、名、ハ、二、十、五、名、他、一、班、ハ、夕、三、時、迄、カ、マ、ル、
一、製、鋼、所、
YAKAYAMA、SEIKO STEEL MILL、
テ、同、ニ、操、ル、種、類、ノ、仕、事、ヲ、
シ、マ、ス、。

四、甲、名、カ、ラ、五、十、名、一、班、ハ、住、良、會、社、
SUMUTOMO COMPANY、テ、仲、仕、ト、シ、テ、
彈、藥、
ノ、部、品、船、行、機、部、品、小、銃、及、上、等、ノ、積、
込、ヲ、シ、マ、ス、。

五、他、甲、名、一、班、ハ、前、田、鉄、工、所、
KAEDA
COMPANY、テ、仲、仕、ト、シ、テ、
算、器、品、
積、込、及、荷、
卸、ヲ、シ、マ、ス、。

No 2

☆

Doc 823A

六、更四十名、一班、大阪工場 / OSAKA KO
 PLANT / 仲仕トシ 鑛石、ボーキサイト、銅、
 青銅、真鍮、鋼鉄及石炭荷却ニヲ致シタ。
 六、他、百名、一班、キタムラ、イキ及タカシマ /
 KITAMURA, HEIKI, TAKASHIMA / 陸軍荷役
 會社 / ARMY STEVEDORING COMPANIES /
 武器、軍需品及此、種類、物、積込及荷
 却ニヲ致シタ。飛行機、残骸、大部分、
 日本、飛行機ヲシテ、此、荷却ニ相当、時間
 ガ費サレタ。

是等、班員達ガ收容所、屋外テ働イタ時
 我々、始終、日本人ニ其、仕事、停虜ニ造
 ラス、不法テフル、苦情ヲ申シ入レマシタ。我々、
 抗議、同キ捨テニセラレタ。我々、日本軍ノタメニ
 戦争用、武器ヲ作り又其、荷積ニ及、荷却ニ
 仕事ヲ續ケマシタ。班員達、一番辛カッタ、日
 本人ニ絶エズ打テラレタ。班員達、多ク
 場合日本兵ト並ニテ働イタ。是等
 日本兵、班員達ヲ絶ニ利用シ、又班員達ニ
 幾度カ毆テ打擲ヲ加ヘマシタ。普通、週間
 毎ニ新ニイ、一團ガ班員達ト働イタ、テ之等

No. 3



Doc P23A

日本兵等、名、判、字、居、リ、マ、セ、ニ、私、心、キ、リ、知、ッ、テ、
 居、唯、一、思、改、打、書、件、次、通、リ、テ、ゴ、ザ、イ、マ、ス。
 獨、逸、奇、艦、=、南、太、西、洋、ヲ、駛、テ、沈、マ、セ、テ、
 英、國、船、一、等、機、関、士、ダ、リ、ハ、ゴ、ド、リ、ツ、チ、
 十、
 HARVEY GOOD RICH / 一、住、友、SUMITOMO
 一、作、業、班、長、ヲ、シ、テ、居、リ、マ、セ、テ、
 班、ヲ、働、カ、シ、テ、居、タ、四、十、名、程、一、者、カ、四、百、封、度、程、
 一、砂、糖、菓、子、ヲ、次、並、ニ、貯、藏、室、一、隱、シ、マ、セ、テ、
 一、人、々、カ、砂、糖、菓、子、ヲ、持、ッ、テ、キ、ル、ヲ、日、本、兵
 一、ソ、ル、ガ、海、軍、ノ、貯、藏、物、ノ、ミ、ヨ、ク、
 一、倉、庫、ヲ、盜、ニ、出、シ、タ、リ、ト、確、メ、マ、セ、テ、日、本
 一、GOOD RICH / 一、事、務、室、連、
 一、班、ノ、人、々、カ、砂、糖、菓、子、ヲ、何、處、一、隠、シ、
 一、ト、迫、リ、テ、勿、論、日、本、人、ハ、此、時、迄、
 一、四、百、封、度、以、上、ノ、物、ガ、足、リ、ク、タ、リ、居、ル、コ、ト、ヲ、發、見
 一、ゴ、ド、リ、ツ、チ、
 一、砂、糖、菓、子、ガ、隱、カ、テ、居、タ、場、所、ヲ、知、ラ
 一、私、ガ、收、容、所、ノ、班、長、ヲ、シ、テ、居、タ、
 一、私、ヲ、呼、ビ、寄、越、シ、マ、セ、テ、私、ガ、其、處
 一、GOOD RICH / 一、腕、ヲ、ヒ、
 一、砂、ノ、上、ニ、張、ッ、テ、頭、上、ニ、差、上、リ、居、ル、ト、日、本

No 4

Doc. 8237

☆ 今春、彼腹一上ヲ打リ、是レ上ヨリテ之ヲ、私ハ私ガ
 此處ニ来ルニ余程前カニ、事ガ始メテ居タリト思
 ヒ、田中ノ中ノ、CHIDA TANAKA 曹長ガ打タレテ居タ
 リト云。日本人等ハソレカラ五ガ、水ガ入テ居タ防火用
 ノ水ヲ取リ、是ヲグッドリツク(GOODRICH)、目、鼻口及
 耳ノ水ヲ、差込ニ始メタリ。彼等ハ次ニグッドリツク
 (GOODRICH)ヲ、様子ニ、上ニ種々ノ消火ホース、筒先ヲ彼、
 直腸ニ差込ニテ、水ヲ、残テ居ル水ヲ全部注ぎ込メ
 タリ。私ハ、彼等ガ彼ヲ殺スカモ知ラナイト氣遣フナ
 イト、アトヲ止メサセタリ。ソノ時、班ノ人々ニ、砂糖菓子
 ヲ隠シ、場所ヲ白化スルヤリニ、説キ聞カセタリ。
 日本人等ハ、ソノ人々トグッドリツク(GOODRICH)ヲ救ヒ、我々
 ノ宿舎ニ戻リタリ。コノ時、我々が屋外ヲ作業班トシテ働イ
 テ居タ時ニ、起ツタモ、^精報告スル價値ガ下ル、信ズル唯一
 ノ殴打事件ニアリタリ、ソレトモ、作業班トシテ働イテ、本レト
 キ日本人ニ、ソノ加ヘラシク打擲ニ就テ種々ノ話ヲ聞カ
 セ、ソノ日トキハ、日モアリマセタリ。
 收容所ノ中カ、人々ヲ打擲スルコトハ、屬類繁ク、珍シ
 イコトナリマセタリ。其ノ加害者ハ、澤村(SAWAMURA)
 軍曹ト田中(TANAKA)曹長ナリ。此曹長ハ前述ノ
 グッドリツク(GOODRICH)ヲ打擲シタリ、曹長ト同人ナ
 リマセタリ。私ハ、本處、收容所ニ居タ二箇年半
 間、或澤村ニヨリ、亦ハ田中ニヨリ、少クモ二十五回、ソノ

No. 5

Dec 22 1944

Handwritten notes in Chinese characters, likely a list or record of names and titles.

Handwritten notes in Chinese characters, continuing the list or record.

No 6

Handwritten notes in Chinese characters, including names like HMAN and ZENTSUI.

8234

No. 8

宮武宛字 / 三三三三 / 大尉の五郎の六郎母三吉春將校ナリニ入。彼六高春
將校トシテ又三三三三後居室ニ居ル人々ノ検査ヲ行ヒマシク。

私ハ三検査ニハ彼ニ随ヒテ迎フナリトハナリマセニテシタガ人々ニ宮
武宛字ノ者齊シク。夜ヲニドク心シテ居マシク。宿舎毎ニ十
ノ一人ヲ嚴シク打ツガ彼ノ者キマリナシク。私ハ一九四四年八月
或ル夜ヲ思ヒ出シマス。彼ハ英國人宿舎ニ或ル一四号室ナ
ル人様ニ暴シ親シ其ノ一團ニ六十名程ノ人々ガセリテ撲ラシマシ
ク。彼ハ鞘ニ入ツテ居ル刀ヲ打テ。足ヲ蹴リ拳固ヲ喰ハス等
アリカク寢屋ニシテグケイコトヲニテイラメケマシク。

少クモ二十人程ノ人々ハ足ヲ蹴トバシ約八名ハ蹴ラシテ氣ヲ
失ヒマシク。英國海軍ノ一等兵曹長ニヒル / 名 / 約
八時間程ノ氣絶ニテ居リマシク。約八名ノ人々ハ傷ヲ縫フナリ
貫クタメニ病室ニ行カケルハナリマシク。

一九四三年七月六日。ガム / GUAN / カラ来テ海兵オドノ / OR
/ 名 / ハヒドク打テマシク。彼ハヒルヲ七名相違ニテ一團ノ
仲間デシ。彼ハ少シ酔ツテ居ルヲ日本人ニ見付カテ抑
マシク。彼ハ皆一タメニ処ラ一身ニ受ケテ他人ニ累ア及ボスニト
致シマシク。

ソレテ日本人ハヒル盗ニハ他ニ誰ガ仲間カツカ見付キ様
トシテ彼ヲ責メマシク。彼等ハ彼ヲ打ツナリ張ツナリ蹴ツ
クシタ後テ道場ニホースヲ入シテ水ヲ注イテシテ彼ハ遂ニ
氣ヲ失ツテ仕舞ヒマシク。

Doc f234

私ハ打撃ヲ受ルニ至リテモ有テシテ / ORDOYNE / 收容
所ニ居ルニ私ニ其ノ事ヲ語ラセテ云フ。

洋村ト云ハ存シテモ他ニ二人、衛兵ガ此、打撃ニシテ
シテオドシテ / ORDOYNE / 約三週間病室ニ居テヤリト云
「事ガ甚シク様ニナリシタ、

日本人ガヨリヤリ、他、打撃ノ上履ヲ人々類ニ打ノ事言
ク、普通上履、端ガ人々下履耳ニ當ルニシテ、ソノ上
履ヲ履クニ、約二十五人カ三人程、人々鼓腹ヲ破ラシメ、

且下人、ガテ用テ、他、懲罰ノ主人、貫テ食物、量ヲ制
限スル事ヲ云フ時、六カ二日、間全然食物ヲ要シカシ、一人、餅、

多ニ收容所ニ食料ヲ給テ、二十三日、又砂、六カ八カ、
ベテノ頭、上ニ筒子ヲ張テ、支テ、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、

二時間、其ノ支、其ノ支、收容所ニ彼間、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、
樽、水ニ漬ケテ、其ノ支、此、水樽、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、

「寒ク氣候、時、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、
少クモ收容所、人々三人、三人、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、

又人、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、
私ハ僅日、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、
前述、打撃ヲ有シテ、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、
其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、
私運、收容所ニ入リ、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、
其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、

No. 9

是等、人々、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、
其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、其ノ支、

Doc 8234

艦撃沈... 船ヲ捕... 廿三... UZARAIN...
百三十六人捕虜... 一九四四年六月... 約十日程
間始終脚部ヲ辛クトテ... 彼ノ病苦ノ申出
... 無理ニ働カシメ... 前田會社 / MAEDA
COMPANY / 軍需品倉庫 (何役仕事ニ答ルニ... 仕事半
倒テ收容所運... 寝棚... 朝三時
頃彼ノ死... 検査... 彼ノ寢
床... 朝三時... 問... 死... 運... 今...

未鑑... QUAIL / 海軍一等兵曹長 / HESS /
ノ脚部... 皮膚潰瘍... 腹痛... 起...
... 屢々病人... 訴... 病
中... 約三週間以上無理働... 頸...
ノ / KONDO / 兵卒... 彼ノ病苦... 決定擔
隊ヲ組織... 彼ヲ平岡 / ICHIOKA / (連... 命...
一九四四年六月... HESS / 收容所... 百果
... 担架... 死...

原文直

九四三年、冬、米國海軍一等電氣兵曹...
又... D. W. SMITH / 流行性感官... 我
ノ彼ノ病室... 日本ノ無理働... 我
彼ノ病室... 四時... 死...
我ノ收容所... 工業... 大阪

Doc A234☆

三番六次會原住友會社之五百以下以内，所社之字及
 是約百以下，長十六階建築物約百工程，倉庫等
 因變遷之計畫，其計畫之海軍倉庫之字用之計，其計畫
 我之計畫，其計畫之倉庫，渡船場，乾船渠及屢
 軍艦之繫留等之計畫，其計畫之橋，其計畫之計，其計畫
 軍事目標之計畫，我之收容所，其計畫之國境區域，九四
 年六月首，B三九，空襲之掃蕩，其計畫之仁舞，其計畫
 同僚之及之者，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫
 大傷之受之者，收容所，其計畫之識，其計畫之計，其計畫
 軍之未軍，其計畫之計，其計畫之軍事目標，其計畫之計，其計畫
 地域，我之收容所，其計畫之計，其計畫之計畫，其計畫之計，其計畫
 乃及拂之計，其計畫

日本之我之收容所，其計畫之間，其計畫之內科及外科，其計畫
 療，便宜之全，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫
 我之仲間，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫
 其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫
 一九四三年三月，我之計畫，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫
 供給之受之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫
 收容所之使用，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫
 配之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫
 收容所，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫
 有知，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫之計，其計畫

No. 12

doc f 234 *

No 13

遺言、多、其、地、三、是、等、送、遺、品、一、箱、九、十、八、十、二、八、等、分
 二、手、許、二、十、二、三、五、九、四、五、三、百、三、又、軍、箱、一、箱、品、ヲ、
 三、同、年、十、月、三、日、箱、一、箱、寄、付、給、付、之、是、等、八、兩、方、共
 共、計、之、數、等、二、十、三、送、之、分、十、二、三、五、九、四、五、三、百、三、等、品、物、之、看、
 上、間、之、目、本、人、百、二、十、箱、之、比、二、同、一、箱、何、子、何、邊、仕、
 直、井、之、是、等、品、物、之、生、野、ノ、KINO、ノ、收、寄、所、之、行、
 外、上、等、之、品、物、又、此、地、之、品、物、之、人、誰、之、以、之、收、
 寄、所、之、目、本、人、百、二、十、箱、之、比、二、同、一、箱、何、子、何、邊、仕、
 物、之、目、本、人、百、二、十、箱、之、比、二、同、一、箱、何、子、何、邊、仕、
 KINO、ノ、一、此、之、大阪、二、在、日本、陸、軍、主、隊、之、患、者、
 之、目、本、人、百、二、十、箱、之、比、二、同、一、箱、何、子、何、邊、仕、
 病、院、之、患、者、之、目、本、人、百、二、十、箱、之、比、二、同、一、箱、何、子、何、邊、仕、
 其、字、之、目、本、人、百、二、十、箱、之、比、二、同、一、箱、何、子、何、邊、仕、

Ex. # 1937

Document No. 8197*

Page 1.

Evidence taken at Manila on 6 October 1945.

Private Henry Horace PAWLEY being duly sworn gives the following evidence:

My Army number is NX5700; full name Henry Horace Pawley; Private; unit 2/19 Bn] Home address: Cullingrad Street, Terriwa, New South Wales.]

[I was captured in Singapore;] this was [in February,] and until April [1942] I was imprisoned at Changi camp. I was taken to Lornie Road camp on 5 May. In Changi the food was light; men were hungry. We were under our own administration there. I was at Lornie Road and the other two minor camps about the golf links until 29 November 1942. Conditions generally were fair. Food was not so bad. We worked on the shrine. Then later we did some road work.

In November 1942, we left for Japan in the Karakura Maru. We were badly overcrowded. The voyage occupied ten days. We were all on the top deck. Food was pretty light. We had two meals a day - breakfast at about 7 a.m. and the other meal at about 3 p.m. Men lost weight - I myself lost 10 kilos on the way. Some men contracted dysentery but there were no deaths, so far as I know.

[We were] taken to Nagasaki, then sent to Kobe on 10 December 1942. I went to No. 3 camp and I was there until June 45. The living quarters were fair. We did shipyard work at the Kawasaki Coy's yards. The hours of work were from 7 a.m. to about half past five. There was a lot of sickness in the first winter. If I remember rightly, out of 500 men 157 were at one time down sick. Sick men mostly were forced to work and it was a common thing for men to collapse on the job. While I was there we had about 60 deaths. In the first winter we had about 35 deaths from pneumonia and malnutrition; they were starved and worked down to a frazzle. The 60 deaths included Australians, Dutch and English. The medical supplies were very poor. The only thing we did have most of the time was a little pill - we used to call it the Brown Bomber -- we got it for everything, from the Japs. Dysentery or a mine injury - we got it just the same. Our works guard there was Michikawa. There were many beatings there. I got some myself. This chap was always giving us bashings. The sgt/major in charge of the camp we called Big Bill gave us some severe bashings. There was also a two-star medical orderly whom we called Sleepy - he used to beat the sick and force them to work. Diarrhoea or dysentery was nothing at all to the Japs - it was not a reason for not working. Anything at all wrong with the stomach was no excuse

or reason for staying away from the work. Once they know you had any of these things, you either got bashed or went to work. They were terribly severe on these sicknesses. A man would have pretty bad diarrhoea and have to go to the lavatory 14 or 15 times a day and the Dutch doctor might decide to put him in hospital, and this Sleepy or some other Jap orderly would countermand the order. They would do anything to keep you from food. There is a Sig in this camp - Bob McIlwraith (I am not sure of the spelling) who had dysentery quite often there. He had it pretty well right through. He was told one lunch time not to have anything to eat; but he managed to eat something when the Japs were not looking. I was in hospital at the time, and McIlwraith was there also. When the Japs found he was eating he was pulled out of his bunk by this Sleepy, who took him out and did him over properly. I don't think there was a man in the camp who at one time or another was not beaten by Sleepy.

One chap we called Black Sam, a Dutchman, got 28 days for selling two Jap raincoats, and he was kept in the guard house during the middle of the winter. They took his clothes away from him every night. He got fed three rice-balls a day and was beaten day and night. After only 23 days there he died.

On one occasion the entire camp was paraded for two successive nights because some writing in English was discovered on the lavatory walls. Sheriff and a man named Donald Lynch put themselves in to try to get the rest of us out of it. Lynch later was punch-drunk from the beltings they gave him; he ended up, shortly afterwards, by falling out of his two-tiered bunk and injuring his spine or his neck and he died about two days later. He was never quite the same after that terrible beating.

We never had sufficient medical supplies. Half the time there was nothing at all. If the men had had proper care and proper food the great majority of the deaths would have been avoided. One chap named Russett was in hospital and was down for light duties; he had diarrhoea badly. He got worse every day. He was a big fellow and came down to about 43 kilos. He got very weak in the hospital. Two days before he died this Sleepy got him out and beat him and was going to make him go to work. At the time this chap was too weak to feed himself.

After this I went to Ita camp, in June 1945. This was camp No. 27. Mostly the men were on mine work. I had had bronchitis quite a lot and I was not permitted by the Jap doctor to go underground any more. [I was on road work for a while and then was put in

charge of a garden party, and also what was called a snake party. The snake parties lasted about eight weeks. We used to go out and catch snakes for the kitchen, to eat. At first it was an everyday job; later it was done each second day. I think the L/Cpl who used to be in charge of our party had a connection outside with a woman for selling Australian cigarettes; he used to take a parcel of stuff with him - once, I think, I had to carry it for him.

Beatings there were pretty common. This was the worst camp I was ever in for discipline severity. Food was off and on. The quarters were pretty terrible. Mosquitoes, bugs and lice would just about carry you off the bunks. Men could not sleep. There was a lot of sickness there. The Japs there used to force the sick men to work - only a few men there were actually in hospital.]

Three-star Pte. "The Black Angel" was one of the worst Jap guards at the camp.

Once at camp No. 27 the Japs put on an exhibition beating. There were two Americans - one had been caught with half a pumpkin and the other was caught picking up a green persimmon. One of them was called The Wop; the other American was Chief Petty Officer Daniells. Back from work the men were first of all put into the guardhouse; then it was announced that there was to be a camp parade at 7 o'clock. The parade was called, and the Japs lined the men up. They placed two tables out in front of us, one in front of the other. There also was a Dutchman with the two Americans, over something in regard to food. The three men were brought out; there was an interpreter there also. The camp commander came and stood on one of the tables. The men one by one were called over to him. They were stood on the other table in front of the camp commander. He turned each one round to face us. The interpreter said what the charge was. The camp commander told him that the punishment was something, and this was repeated to us by the interpreter. I saw The Wop get three days on half rations in the guardhouse. He was also beaten. The camp commander unbuckled his swordbelt, rolled his sleeves up, and preened himself. Then Daniells was beaten. When each man could not stand any longer, two guards were called and held each one up. The camp commander then kicked each man off the table. Daniells got about five or seven days in the guardhouse. This happened only a few days before the war finished; if the war had gone on much longer a lot more men would have died after their terrible beatings. The men came out of the guardhouse each morning at about halfpast six and then taken back again; they were not even allowed to wash. It was nothing for the guards each night to go

in and beat them to stop them going to sleep. _____

I certify that the above evidence is correct.

/s/ H. H. Pawley

Taken and sworn before me at Manila)

on this 6th day of October 1945)

/s/ A. J. Mansfield
Commissioner

No. 1

Ex 1537 Evidentiary Doc. 8197

★

四行目 〆リ、ホー、ボ、ー、ー / HENRY HORACE PAWLEY /

五行目 兵卒、部隊 大隊

六行目 三、ホ、ク、ワ、ー、ー / NEW SOUTH WALES /

七行目 松一九四二年二月、シホ、一、一、珍、捕、〆、リ、マ、シ、

三行目 我一九四三年十月十日神戸ニ送、リ、マ、シ、。松、南、三、修、養、所
行、ク、一、九、四、五、年、六、月、迄、其、他、三、居、マ、シ、。宿、舎、六、長、十、ク、マ、シ、。
我、〆、リ、川、上、重、工、業、會、社、ヲ、造、船、所、ト、シ、テ、生、業、ヲ、シ、マ、シ、。勤、勞、時、間
一、日、前、七、時、カ、ラ、夕、方、五、時、半、頃、迄、テ、シ、マ、シ、。冬、ノ、時、節、随、分、病
氣、ノ、力、ハ、此、ノ、為、ニ、多、ク、シ、タ、。松、ノ、記、憶、ニ、開、達、ガ、ナ、ク、一、六、確、刀、五、百、个
中、武、士、時、六、百、年、七、人、ガ、罹、病、シ、テ、死、ニ、マ、シ、。

病、氣、者、モ、大、抵、無、理、ニ、衝、カ、レ、テ、作、業、中、ニ、倒、レ、テ、〆、リ、。普、通、ノ、事
シ、マ、シ、。松、ノ、其、他、三、居、ノ、間、ニ、約、六、十、人、死、ニ、マ、シ、タ、。最、初、ノ、冬、肺
炎、ノ、疾、病、ヲ、調、テ、約、三、十、五、人、ガ、死、ニ、マ、シ、タ、。彼、等、〆、リ、テ、居、リ、倒、レ、
テ、死、ス、ル、ヲ、シ、マ、シ、タ、。死、亡、者、中、〆、リ、。遠、州、人、和、蘭、人、及、〆、リ、。美、國
人、ガ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ、。近、時、ノ、病、品、〆、リ、。非、常、ニ、貧、弱、ナ、リ、タ、。大、体、ト、シ、テ、秘、傳
ノ、藥、ヲ、服、シ、テ、〆、リ、。モ、〆、リ、。小、石、ノ、藥、ヲ、服、シ、テ、〆、リ、。一、ノ、名、〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。

ボ、ー、〆、リ、 / BROWN BOMBER / 上、呼、ビ、テ、居、リ、マ、シ、タ、。一、我、々、〆、リ、。病
氣、ノ、時、ヲ、モ、日、本、人、〆、リ、。ノ、藥、ヲ、服、シ、タ、。赤、痢、ノ、時、ヲ、モ、〆、リ、。
小、石、ノ、藥、ノ、時、ヲ、モ、〆、リ、。全、ク、同、シ、キ、〆、リ、。莫、ク、〆、リ、。又、〆、リ、。作、業、中、親
〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。

〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。

〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。

〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。〆、リ、。

△

Doc. 8197

病室が彼ら病入の即ち無理解の働かたなり。下痢や赤痢、日本人としては何ぞやと云ふは、一六働かたの長と理由、
そのほか、腹、病氣、下痢、赤痢、
引込の理由、
知事、
病室、
一日二十四時間、
宿、
SLEEPY、
食事、
二、
BOB MCILWRAITH、
赤痢、

P. 36
彼ら食卓、
日本人、
SLEEPY、
二、

和蘭人、
BLACK SAM、
間監視所、
赤痢、

No. 2

No. 3

日本兵 / 敵軍の捕虜 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活

捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活

捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活

捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活

捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活

捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活

捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活 / 捕虜生活

Doc. 8197 74

、... 此所、隊、... 初、...

、... 此所、日本、...

何所、... 此所、...

No. 4

Doc. 8197

No. 5

可也。 / WOP / 法戒食を監視所ニ三日間入之。此上云之常事
 秘聞多ク。彼亦即カレシク。收容所長、創傷ノ外ニ袖ヲ
 ヲリテ同窓ヲ整ヘヨシク。 / DANIELLS / カレ
 シク。三人ガ名ヲ立テ上ニナリボク時ニ、衛兵ガ呼ビテ一人
 宛支ヘ起シテ。又此收容所長、コト三人ノ食卓カウ蹴落シ
 シ。 / DANIELLS / 五日間カ七日間カ監視所ニ入
 シ居ル。之ニ終戦前ホ、二三日前、出来事ナシ。在戦時
 カ名ト長ク続キテ、毛ト沢山、人ガ日本人、想ヒテ殴打ヲ受テ
 死ニテ也。三人連、毎朝六時半頃監視所カウ出シ、再ニ押
 戻ル。後、額 傷ヲコトナシ、七ナシ。衛兵ニテ
 毎晩中三人ノ便所ヲ取リテ、様々修身ヲ受ケ、コトナシ、三ナシ。

RESTRICTED

Classification changed from
"CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED"
by order of the Secretary of War.
By /s/ E. Checket, Major, Inf.

Q. State your name, rank, serial number, permanent home address, and any other pertinent information concerning yourself.

A. My name is William Robert LINDERFELT. I am a Sergeant, U.S.M.C., serial number 300955. My permanent home address is 4677 Garfield Street, La Mesa, California. I have a high school education.

Q. Will you state the name of the outfit and where you were taken prisoner and how long you remained a prisoner.

A. I was with the Fourth Regiment of the United States Marine Corps with headquarters at Corregidor. I was taken prisoner by the Japanese on the fall of Bataan on 9 April 1942 and remained a prisoner of the Japanese until approximately 15 August 1945.

Q. During your imprisonment were you ever held at the Yokkatie prison camp.

A. Yes. This camp was approximately 200 miles south of Tokyo.

Q. Will you relate the treatment at that camp with particular attention to beatings and cruelty.

A. I was at this camp from September 1944 until I was liberated. At three separate times I witnessed prisoners (five in all) who were strung upon ladders, hands tied to upper rungs so that their feet could not touch the ground. They were made to remain in that position from three to four hours at a time for several days. Sometimes weights were placed on their feet. When in that position they were beaten with sticks, belts and fists. Generally these beatings produced open cuts on their bodies into which guards threw salt. During this treatment the prisoners were given no food. Three of this group of five men were given this punishment for having stolen food and the other two for trying to get out of the barracks building, during air raids. This punishment was so severe that the men begged the Japanese guards to kill them.

An interpreter at the camp named KILO was principally responsible for this and similar treatment at the camp. He had a regular crew of henchmen to beat up prisoners. Among these henchmen was "Three Fingered Pete," "The Skull," and "Peg Leg Jack."

A Captain THOMSON of the 31st Infantry, United States Army, has, I believe, the complete list of the Japanese who participated in this treatment. Also an Army Colonel by the name of STUBBS has some information.

I was beaten across my face by one of these henchmen by the name of CINCHO (nicknamed "All Men"), causing deep gashes in my forehead and on the top of my head. I am quite deaf and if I didn't respond quick enough I was beaten.

The interpreter KILO in order to determine whether the prisoners had taken any food and eaten, forcibly made prisoners vomit.

I can recall nothing further concerning these incidents which would be of value to the War Crimes Office, and I do not have any other information, favorable or unfavorable, which I consider of sufficient importance to report.

/s/ William R. Linderfelt

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
: SS
County of Alameda :

/s/ R.L.

I, William Robert Linderfelt of lawful age, being duly sworn, state that I have had read to me the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of two pages, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ William R. Linderfelt

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 4th day of October, 1945, at Oakland, California.

/s/ James W. Reynold
(Rank)

STATE OF CALIFORNIA :
: SS
County of Alameda :

I, James W. REYNOLDS, Lieut. USNR, certify that (Name) William Robert LINDERFELT (Rank) Sergeant (ASN) 300955, personally appeared before me on the 4th day of October, 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by (him (her)) to the several questions set forth.

Place: Oakland, California

Date: 3 October 1945

/s/ James W. Reynold

Page 3 of 3 pages.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Edwin F. Svare
EDWIN F. SVARE
1st LT., INF.

CONFIDENTIAL
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

2x 1938

Dec 9074

私、名前、
私、米國海兵隊、軍曹、
五番、

向、
東京、南約三百哩、
取、
打、

答、
一九四四年、九月、
所、
人、
ソ、
多、
市、
為、
ミ、
ラ、
夕、
ク、
ス、
ミ、

断、
通、
本、
緯、
私、

Doc 8291
1939
1.

書類第八二九一號

X X X X X X X X X X X X X

答 私ノ姓名ハ「フランク・エドワード・ピ
ツクル」デ、合衆國海兵隊一等兵曹、認識番
號三三九〇二一、住所ハ「ネブラスカ」州
「フリモント」市、北「キーン」街一三二
五番地デス。

問 貴下ハ何等カノ控問、毆打、若シクハ其
ノ他ノ殘虐行爲ヲ貴下自身デ目撃シタカ又
ハ當ノ犠牲者ニナツタカ。

答 ハイ。日本ノ廣畑俘虜收容所デ、私ハソ
ノ毆リ方デハ一生ヲ、少クトモソノ犠牲者
ガ抑留サレテキル間ハ、不具ニサレテシマ
イソウナ酷イ毆打ヲ目撃シタ。
此等ノ毆打ハソノ收容所デハ普通ノ事デシ
タ。

一九四五年五月十五日若シクハソノ前後
ニ九名ノ俘虜ノ一團ガ彼等ガ荷揚げシテオ
タ日本船ノ倉庫ニ侵入シテ若干ノ食糧ヲ盜
ンダ。ソノ夕方四時半頃、收容所ノ俘虜ガ
總員ソノ日ノ作業カラ歸ツタ時ニ、收容所
ノ俘虜ハ全員對天下ニ座ルコトヲ強ヒラレ

Doc 8291

2.

ソノ借同日午後十時半頃マデ置カレタ。ソ
 ノ時ニ日本人達ハ若シ竊盜ノ責任者ガ判明
 スレバ、残余ノ俘虜ノ此レ以上ノ處罰ハ之
 デ打切ルト言ヒ渡シタ。ソノ九名ノ者ハソ
 コデ自分達ガソウデアルト日本人達ニ自首
 シタ。此ノ人達ノ中ニハ「コレヒドリル」
 憲兵分遣隊所屬、合衆國陸軍兵卒「ジエロ
 ーム・P・グレイデイ」
 戦車隊、兵卒「ハロー」某、所屬不明合
 衆國陸軍兵卒「ダネル」某、前「グアム」
 島陸軍海兵隊員「オール」某等ガヤタ。
 九名ヲ除ク俘虜全員ハ夕飯ヲ食ベニ行ク
 コトヲ許サレタガ、九名ノ者ハ營庭ニ集メ
 ラレタ。凡ソ十二名ノ日本人ノ全收容所員
 ガ、衛生兵カラ曹長ニ至ル迄加ハツテ、ソ
 コデ野球ノバット、竹棒、ロップ及消防用
 ホースノ切レ端ソノ他見付ケ得タ器具ヲ取
 リ上ゲテ九名ノ者ヲ、凡ソ四時間半ニ亘ツ
 テ毆打シタ。
 ソノ中ノ一人ガ氣ヲ失ヘバ、ソレヲ確生サ
 セテ再ビ毆打シタ。
 九名ノ者ハ凡ソ午前一時半頃、半バ氣ヲ
 失ヒ、ヒステリリ及無我夢中ノ状態デ自分
 達ノ敵舎ヘ運ビ込マレタ。翌朝收容所ニ歸

九名ヲ除ク倅處全員ハ夕飯ヲ食ベニ行ク
コトヲ許サレタガ、九名ノ者ハ營庭ニ集メ
ラレタ。凡ソ十二名ノ日本人ノ全收容所員
ガ、衛生兵カラ首長ニ至ル迄加ハツテ、ソ
コデ野球ノバツト、竹棒、ロープ及消防用
ホースノ切レ端ソノ他見付ケ得タ道具ヲ取
リ上ゲテ九名ノ者ヲ、凡ソ四時間半ニ亘ツ
テ毟打シタ。

ソノ中ノ一人ガ氣ヲ失ヘバ、ソレヲ倅生サ
セテ再ビ毟打シタ。

九名ノ者ハ凡ソ午前一時半頃、半バ氣ヲ
失ヒ、ヒステリー及無我夢中ノ狀態デ自分
達ノ廠舎へ運ビ込マレタ。翌朝收容所ニ點

Doc 8291 *

ソノ儘同日午後十時半頃マデ置カレタ。ソ
ノ時ニ日本人達ハ若シ竊盜ノ責任者が判明
スレバ、殘余ノ作廢ノ此レ以上ノ處罰ハ之
デ打切ルト言ヒ渡シタ。ソノ九名ノ者ハソ
コデ自分達ガソウデアルト日本人達ニ自首
シタ。此ノ人達ノ中ニハ「コレヒドール」
憲兵分遣隊所屬、合衆國陸軍兵卒「ジェロ
ーム・P・グレイデイ」「バタイン」陸軍
戰車隊、兵卒「ハーロー」某、所屬不明合
衆國陸軍兵卒「ダーネル」某、前「グアム」
島駐屯海兵隊員「オール」某等ガキタ。

Doc 8291

呼ガアツク時ニ門打ノ場所ニハ地面ニ蹟ガ
刻ツク穴ヤ血痕其他犠牲者ノ肉体ヲ詞ンダ
證據ガ顯レテオタ。

一人ヲ殘シテ、アトノ犠牲者ハ全部翌朝
作業ニ行クコトヲ囑ヒラレ、隊伍ヲ組ンデ
行軍シテオル間、彼等ガ列ニ追イテ行ケナ
イト雷フ理由デ門ラレタリ平手打ヲ喰ツタ
リシタ。

X X X X X X X X X X X X X

一九四四年八月ノ末頃、私ハ午後六時半
頃ニ、一群ノ人達ト收容所ノ營庭ニ立ツテ
オタガ、前ニ「コレヒドール」ニオタ合衆
國陸軍三等軍曹 / *Staff Sergeant* / 「トーマ
ス・H・メロデイ」トカ言フ人が近クニ立
ツテオタ。前ニ名前ヲ擧ゲタ草長勤務軍曹
「イチダ」ガ近ヅイテ來タガ「メロデイ」
ハ彼ガ近ヅイテ來ルノヲ見ナカツタノデ、
彼ニ挨拶シタ。「イチダ」ハソコデ「メロ
デイ」ニ氣ヲ付ケノ號令ヲカケ營庭デ「メ
ロデイ」ヲ門リ倒シタ。「メロデイ」ガ起
上ツタ時ニ「イチダ」ハ補充兵ヲ三名（其
ノ日ノ勤務兵）呼ンデ張番ヲスルヤウニ立

3.

Doc 8291 4

タセテオキ、凡ソ直徑二吋長サ八吋ノ竹ノ
 棒ヲ取ツテ來テ「メロデイ」ヲ約四十回乃
 至五十回打シタ。ソレカラ彼ハ「メロデ
 イ」ヲ營庭ニ運レテ行キ、彼ニ着物ヲ脱ガ
 セテカラ、直徑約一吋ノホースヲ彼ノ口中
 ニ挿シ込ミ、槍ヲ一パイニ挿イタ。此ノ取
 扱ハ次ニ「メロデイ」ノ鼻孔ニ向ケラレタ
 此ノ「水療法」ハ一時間位經イテ、又其ノ
 直徑ニ「イチダ」ガモウ一本ノ棒ヲ取ツテ
 「メロデイ」ガ意識ヲ失フ迄打シタ。
 「メロデイ」ハ翌日腰イ苦痛ニ苦シミ肉
 体的ニ如何ナル勞働モ爲シ得ナカツタニ拘
 ハズ無理ニ作業ヲサセラレタ。
 水療法ノ結果、「メロデイ」ハ重病ニ罹
 ツテ仕舞ヒ、彼ノ視力ハ數日間ヒドク弱リ
 ソシテ俘虜ノ醫者ノ診立テデハ、彼ハ一生
 癩重症ノ癩炎ニトリツカレルデアラウトノ
 コトデアツタ。私ハ直接ニ「メロデイ」ノ
 眼打及ビ彼ガ「水療法」ヲ受ケテキルノチ
 目撃シタ。
 間 費下ハ俘虜ヲ敵ノ軍事作業又ハ作戦ニ使
 用スルノチ目撃シタカ。
 卷 ハイ。廣州收容所ノ俘虜ハ日本ノ廣州ノ
 製鐵所デ船カラノ鑽石ノ陸揚ニ使用サレタ

4.

Doc 8291

5.

此ノ鑽石ハ砲塔建造用鋼材ニ用ヒラレタ。
 問 貴下ハ俘虜ガ砲火、擧艦、電撃若シクハ
 其ノ他ノ戦争ノ危険ヘ晒サレタノヲ目撃シ
 タカ。

答 ハイ。ソノ收容所ノ俘虜ハ全員、日本兵
 ガ廢品ニシタ日本陸軍々服ヲ着用スルコト
 ヲ要求サレタ。

ソノ結果米軍機ガ機銃掃射ヲシテ行ツタリ
 スル時ニ俘虜ヲ日本陸軍ノ兵員カラ見分ケ
 ルコトハ不可能ダツタデセウ。

製鐵所ハ、船渠ニ入ツテ居タリ若シクハ
 近クニ碇泊シテ居ル船ト共ニ、數回ニ亙リ
 米軍空襲ノ目標デアツタ。近クニアツタ船
 ハ、時ニハ作業時間中ニ爆彈ヲ撃沈サレタ
 ソノヤウナ空襲ノ間如何ナル陸モ俘虜ガソ
 ノ地味カラ他ヘ移サレルトカ、若シクハ退
 避所ヲ探ス機會ヲ與ヘラレタコトハナカツ
 タ。

問 貴下ハ俘虜ヲ公衆ノ見世物ニシタリ、
 スル爲ニ晒シ物ニシタノヲ目撃シタカ。

答 ハイ。俘虜ヲ公衆ノ見世物ニシタリ、
 笑スル爲ニ晒シモノニスルコトハ華兵ノ尊
 デ事竇衛兵及ビ收容所員ハ全部ソノヤウナ
 コトデハ有罪デシタ。俘虜ガ集マツテ收容

Doc 8291

所外テ作業ヲシテキルト、衛兵達ハアラユ
 ル權會ヲ拒ヘテ他ノ日本人達ニ此ノ人達ハ
 米國軍俘虜デアルコトヲ指摘シ、ドンナ風
 ニ米國軍俘虜達ガ降參シタカ、ドンナ風ニ
 兩手ヲ舉ゲタデアラウカ等示シタリシテ、
 俘虜達ノ窮狀ヲ物笑ヒノ種ニシタ。
 「コレヒドール」陥落後比律賓ニ於テ發
 セラレタ米軍ノ最高階級ノ將校ト雖モ最下
 位ノ日本民間人ヨリモ下位ナリトスル命令
 ニ表レテキル日本ノ態度ニ明ラカニ從フ爲
 ニ、俘虜達ハ控ヘ目ニスルヤウ、日本人ノ
 苦力階級ノ人達ノ前ニ於テモ如何ナル時デ
 モ出來ルダケ面目ヲ失フ様ニ強制サレタ。
 一例トシテ、俘虜ガ近クニキル苦力ガ使ツ
 テキル圓匙ヨリモ具合ノヨイ圓匙ヲ使ツテ
 キルト、ソノ俘虜ハソノ圓匙ヲ苦力ニ譲リ
 ソノ苦力ノ前ニ立ツテ頭ヲ下ゲ且、其ノ外
 ニ身ヲ低クシテ丁寧ニヨイ圓匙ヲ持ツテキ
 タコトヲ詫ルコトヲ強制サレタ。日本人
 ノ收容所員達ハアラユル權會ヲ拒ヘテハソ
 ノ様ニ方針ヲ押し通シタノデアアル。

X X X X X X X X X X X X X

6.

CX # 1139

Doc. No. 8291*

Page 1

C O N F I D E N T I A L

Q. State your name, rating, serial number, and permanent home address.

A. My name is Frank Edward PICO, First Sergeant, U.S.M.C., Serial No. 239021 and my home address is 1325 W. Keeno Avenue, Fremont, Nebraska.

Q. Did you personally witness, or were you the victim of, any torture, beatings and other cruelties?

A. Yes, At Hirokata prison camp, Japan, I witnessed beatings so severe in nature as to result in physical disability, permanent, at least for the duration of the victim's imprisonment. These beatings were commonplace in the camp.

On or about 15 May 1945 a group of nine prisoners broke into a storeroom on the Japanese vessel which they were unloading and stole some food supplies. That evening at approximately 1630 when all the prisoners of the camp returned from their day's labor, the entire prison population was forced to kneel in the open and to remain kneeling until approximately 2230 of the same day. At that time the Japanese announced that if the men responsible for the theft were identified the remainder of the prisoners would go without further punishment. The nine men then identified themselves to the Japanese. Among these men were Jerome E. RADY, Private, U. S. Army, attached to a Military Police Detachment at Corregidor; one PICO, Private, Army tank unit on Bataan; one DARELL, Private, U. S. Army, unit unknown; and one ORR, a Marine formerly stationed at Guam.

All prisoners, except the nine, were permitted to go to evening chow but the nine men were mustered in the courtyard. The entire camp staff from the medical corpsmen to and including the sergeant major, numbering some twelve Japanese, there upon picked up baseball bats, bamboo clubs, lengths of rope and fire hose and such other instruments as they could find, and beat the nine men for approximately four and one-half hours. As one of the individuals would become unconscious he was resuscitated and then beaten again.

The nine men were carried into their barracks at approximately 0130 in a semi-conscious, hysterical and delirious condition. The next morning when the camp was mustered the scene of the beating displayed heel gouges in the ground, blood spots and other evidences of the physical contortions of the victims.

All of the victims, except one, were forced to go to work the next morning and were beaten and cuffed while marching in ranks because of their inability to keep up with the formation.

The Japanese primarily responsible was one ITOHIDA, a gunzo (approximately equivalent to a U. S. First Sergeant), who was acting sergeant major and quartermaster of the camp. Also involved was a medical corpsman, one TSUJIKI, and one MURIKO, a reserve soldier, serving in Officer of the Day capacity. The others involved I cannot presently identify. The majority of the nine men suffered infection of their wounds and remained infected for the most part until liberation.

Approximately about the 1 of August 1944, I was standing with a group in the prison courtyard at about 1230 and one Thomas H. MELODY, Staff Sergeant, U. S. Army Ordnance, formerly of Corregidor, was standing nearby. The acting sergeant major, the above-named ITOHIDA, approached and MELODY, who did not see him approaching, failed to salute him. ITOHIDA thereupon called MELODY to attention, then knocked MELODY down with a blow from his fist. When MELODY arose, ITOHIDA called three of the reserve soldiers (Officers of the Day) to stand guard and taking up a bamboo club approximately two inches in diameter and eight feet long, beat MELODY with approximately forty or fifty lashes. He then took MELODY to the courtyard, forced him to strip and then forced a hose of approximately one inch diameter into MELODY's mouth and turned the pressure on full. This treatment was then directed into MELODY's nostrils. This "water cure" continued for approximately one hour and immediately after ITOHIDA seized another club and beat MELODY into unconsciousness.

MELODY was forced to work the next day even though he was suffering intense pain and was physically unable to perform any labor.

The result of the water treatment was that MELODY was rendered violently ill, his sight was seriously impaired for a period of several days, and, in the opinion of the prisoner doctor, he will be afflicted throughout his life with serious sinus trouble. I personally witnessed the beating of MELODY and his subjection to the "water cure."

Q. Did you witness the use of prisoners of war on enemy military works or operations?

A. Yes. Prisoners in Hirokata Camp were employed in the unloading of ore from vessels at Seto-ku Steel Mills at Hirokata, Japan. This ore was used in the construction of turret steel.

Q. Did you witness the exposure of prisoners of war to danger of gunfire, bombing, torpedoing, or other hazards of war?

A. Yes. All the prisoners in the camp were required to wear Japanese Army type clothing which had been discarded by the Japanese soldiers. As a result it would have been impossible for U. S. planes to distinguish the prisoners from Japanese Army personnel during strafing runs, etc.

The steel mills, as well as the vessels lying at the locks or anchored nearby, were the target upon several occasions of U. S. air attacks. Nearby vessels were, upon occasion, sunk by bombs during the working hours. At no time during such raids were the prisoners removed from the area or given an opportunity to seek shelter.

Q. Did you witness public exhibition or exposure to ridicule of prisoners of war?

A. Yes. The public exhibition and exposure to ridicule of prisoners of war was commonplace and practically all of the guards and the camp staff were guilty of such incidents. When groups of prisoners would be working outside the camp every opportunity was taken by the guards to point out to other Japanese that the group was composed of American prisoners and the guards would demonstrate how the American prisoners had surrendered, how they would hold up their hands, and their predicament was made the object of ridicule.

Apparently pursuant to the Japanese attitude as expressed in the order issued in the Philippines after the fall of Corregidor to the effect that the highest ranking U. S. officer was lower than the lowest Japanese civilian, the prisoners were forced to give way and humiliate themselves as frequently as possible before individuals of the Japanese coolie class. As an example, in instances where a prisoner would be using a shovel that was in better condition than one used by a coolie worker nearby, the prisoner would be forced to relinquish his shovel to the coolie and to stand before the coolie and bow and otherwise elaborately debase himself in apology for having possessed a better shovel. All of the Japanese camp personnel seized every opportunity to force such a policy.

Q. Did you witness the collective punishment of a group for offenses of others?

A. Yes. The details were provided in the reply to the second question of this deposition.

Q. Does the testimony you have given cover all the pertinent details of this incident which you are now able to remember?

A. Yes.

(S) FRANK . FICK

The steel mills, as well as the vessels lying at the locks or anchored nearby, were the target upon several occasions of U. S. air attacks. Nearby vessels were, upon occasion, sunk by bombs during the working hours. At no time during such raids were the prisoners removed from the area or given an opportunity to seek shelter.

Q. Did you witness public exhibition or exposure to ridicule of prisoners of war?

A. Yes. The public exhibition and exposure to ridicule of prisoners of war was commonplace and practically all of the guards and the camp staff were guilty of such incidents. When groups of prisoners would be working outside the camp every opportunity was taken by the guards to point out to other Japanese that the group was composed of American prisoners and the guards would demonstrate how the American prisoners had surrendered, how they would hold up their hands, and their predicament was made the object of ridicule.

Apparently pursuant to the Japanese attitude as expressed in the order issued in the Philippines after the fall of Corregidor to the effect that the highest ranking U. S. officer was lower than the lowest Japanese civilian, the prisoners were forced to give way and humiliate themselves as frequently as possible before individuals of the Japanese coolie class. As an example, in instances where a prisoner would be using a shovel that was in better condition than one used by a coolie worker nearby, the prisoner would be forced to relinquish his shovel to the coolie and to stand before the coolie and bow and otherwise elaborately debase himself in apology for having possessed a better shovel. All of the Japanese camp personnel seized every opportunity to force such a policy.

Q. Did you witness the collective punishment of a group for offenses of others?

A. Yes. The details were provided in the reply to the second question of this deposition.

Q. Does the testimony you have given cover all the pertinent details of this incident which you are now able to remember?

A. Yes.

(S) FRANK . PICK

C O N F I D E N T I A L

STATE OF California :

County of Alameda :

I, Frank Edward FICK, First Sgt., USMC of lawful age, being duly sworn, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of 3 pages, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

(S) Frank E. Fick.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 8th day of October, 1945, at Oakland, California.

(S) Thomas F. Guerin
(Rank) Lt USNR

STATE OF California :

County of Alameda :

I, Thomas F. Guerin, Lieutenant, USNR, certify that (Name) Frank Edward Fick, (Rank) First Sgt., USMC (ASN) Ser. 239021, personally appeared before me on the 8th day of October, 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

Place: Oakland, California.

Date: 8 October 1945

(S) Thomas F. Guerin
Lieut USNR

Page 3 of 3 pages.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

(S) Everett Chickett
EVERETT CHICKETT
Maj. Inf.

C O N F I D E N T I A L

EX # 1940

Doc, No. 8078*

Page 1 *

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED

Classified from "CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED" by order of the Secretary of War--By /s/ E. Checket, Major, Inf.

For the WAR CRIMES OFFICE

Judge Advocate General's Department -- War Department
United States of America

In the matter of collective * Perpetuation of Testimony of
punishments of Allied prison- * William Mahoney, Staff
ers of war at Camp No. 3, * Sergeant, 6137525
Fukuoka, Japan, between July *
1944 and September 1945. *

Taken at: Headquarters First Service Command
Army Service Forces
808 Commonwealth Avenue
Boston 15, Massachusetts

Date: 1 March 1946

In the Presence of: Edward T. Howard, Special Agent
Security Intelligence Corps
Headquarters First Service Command

Reporter: Vince A. Creeden, Civilian Employee
Intelligence Division
Headquarters First Service Command

Questions by: Edward T. Howard, Special Agent
Security Intelligence Corps

The witness was duly sworn.

Q State your name, rank, serial number and permanent home address.

A [William Mahoney, Staff Sergeant, ASN 6137525, 33 Chestnut Street, Peabody, Massachusetts.]

WAR CRIMES OFFICE
Washington 25, D. C.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

RESTRICTED /s/ E. C.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

- Q When and where were you born?
- A I was born March 5, 1915 in Peabody, Massachusetts.
- Q What does your education consist of?
- A Two years of high school.
- Q What was your occupation before entering the service?
- A Leather worker.
- Q Have you recently returned from overseas?
- A Yes, I returned to the United States 1 November 1945.
- Q Were you a prisoner of war?
- A Yes, I was a prisoner of war of the Japanese.
- Q At what places were you held and state the approximate dates?
- A I was captured in Bataan 9 April 1942. I arrived at Camp O'Donnell 28 April 1942 and I arrived at Cabanatuan 30 November 1942. I was at Nichols Field from January 1943 to March 1943. I then returned to Cabanatuan in March of 1943 and remained there until 1944. From Cabanatuan I went to Camp No. 3, Fukuoka, Japan, and remained there from July 1944 until liberated about 15 September 1945.
- Q Are you familiar with instances of collective punishment of Allied prisoners of war at Camp No. 3, Fukuoka, Japan, between July 1944 and September 1945?
- A Yes.
- Q Will you state what you know of your own knowledge concerning such incidents?
- A Whenever there was an air raid, the prisoners were forced to go to an air raid shelter which consisted of a bamboo lean-to backed up against a bank. After

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

the air raid was over, because one or two prisoners had made some noise, all of the prisoners who were in that air raid shelter were forced to stand at attention for two or three hours and were denied breakfast the following morning. If any of the prisoners were caught smoking during an air raid, they were marched around the camp a couple of times -- the men were all barefooted--and then were made to stand up all night at attention.

Q Were there any beatings of these men?

A If the Japanese caught the man who was smoking, thirty men around him would get it for not making him put it out and for not reporting it to the guard.

Q Who did the beating?

A The Japanese guards; no individual one; they were all out during an air raid.

Q Do you recall any other instances of collective punishment?

A [About July of 1944, Private Lawrence Hill was caught stealing three fish. The morning and noon meal of all prisoners in the camp were taken away. Hill was severely beaten and the men on his detail were also severely beaten.

Q Who did the beating?

A The Japanese guards who brought us in the camp. We had so many guards on a detail that I do not recall which ones did the beating. I was not on Hill's detail but we were all called out to watch while Hill was beaten by a guard whose name I do not know. The Japanese also took away our holiday for punishment. I heard from Hill that he was imprisoned in the guardhouse for two weeks for stealing the fish, during which time he was also beaten three times.

-2-

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

the air raid was over, because one or two prisoners had made some noise, all of the prisoners who were in that air raid shelter were forced to stand at attention for two or three hours and were denied breakfast the following morning. If any of the prisoners were caught smoking during an air raid, they were marched around the camp a couple of times -- the men were all barefooted--and then were made to stand up all night at attention.

Q Were there any beatings of these men?

A If the Japanese caught the man who was smoking, thirty men around him would get it for not making him put it out and for not reporting it to the guard.

Q Who did the beating?

A The Japanese guards; no individual one; they were all out during an air raid.

Q Do you recall any other instances of collective punishment?

A About July of 1944, Private Lawrence Hill was caught stealing three fish. The morning and noon meal of all prisoners in the camp were taken away. Hill was severely beaten and the men on his detail were also severely beaten.

Q Who did the beating?

A The Japanese guards who brought us in the camp. We had so many guards on a detail that I do not recall which ones did the beating. I was not on Hill's detail but we were all called out to watch while Hill was beaten by a guard whose name I do not know. The Japanese also took away our holiday for punishment. I heard from Hill that he was imprisoned in the guardhouse for two weeks for stealing the fish, during which time he was also beaten three times.

-2-

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

Q Did he tell you who beat him?

A The supply corporal whose nickname was "The Mad Corporal".

Q Do you recall any other instances of collective punishment?

A An American prisoner of War, Marron (phonetic), nicknamed "Blimp" stole a Japanese shirt. All the prisoners in the barracks that he was in were required to stand up all night and the next morning and then had to go on work detail without breakfast. That night "Blimp" admitted the theft. "Blimp" was then severely beaten by the supply corporal nicknamed "The Mad Corporal". At the same time six other prisoners who were in the barracks close to "Blimp" were also severely beaten for not turning "Blimp" in. "Blimp" was also put in the guardhouse for three weeks, during which time he received just rice and salt and one glass of water a day.

Q What was "Blimp"'s condition as the result of this treatment?

A He got very thin due to malnutrition.

Q Was he beaten during this time?

A Yes, but I do not know how many times.

Q How much of "Blimp's" beatings did you witness and what part did you hear from somebody else?

A Just the one beating I saw. The rest of the time while he was in the guardhouse was hearsay from fellow prisoners who were in the guardhouse with him.

Q Do you recall any other instances of collective punishment?

A No, not offhand.

Q Who was the commanding officer of Camp No. 3, Fukuoka?

A Major Rikotaki (phonetic).

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

Q Will you describe or otherwise identify Major Rikotaki (phonetic)?

A Major Rikotaki (phonetic), nicknamed by the prisoners of war "The Nut", was 55 to 60 years old; had very close-cropped black hair; about 5'5" tall; weighed about 160 pounds; stocky build; he strutted when he walked; he wore no glasses.

Q Did he witness or know about these collective punishments?

A Yes. He sanctioned them. He was always present at the collective punishments. I saw him there. It was the individual punishments that I don't know whether he sanctioned or not.

Q Was any protest made as the result of these collective punishments?

A Sometimes they were and sometimes they weren't. On the fish incident they couldn't protest. There was no reason to protest particularly. In the other cases, Mr. Hussey, Chief Pharmacist Mate, our camp interpreter, made the protests.

Q What was the result of the protests?

A Nothing was ever done about them.

Q Do you have anything else you wish to state about these collective punishments?

A No.

/s/ William S. Mahoney
William Mahoney, S Sgt, USA

Commonwealth of Massachusetts)
County of Suffolk) SS

I, William Mahoney, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation and all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ William C. Mahoney
William Mahoney, S Sgt, USA.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 12 day of March 1946.

/s/ John P. McIlhara
(Notary-Public)
Summary Court
JOHN P. McILHARA
Major, C.F.P.

My commission expires:

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Edward T. Howard, Special Agent, Security Intelligence Corps, certify that William Mahoney, Staff Sergeant, ASN 6137525, personally appeared before me on 1 March 1946 and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

Place: Boston, Mass.

/s/ Edward T. Howard

Special Agent, SIC

Date: 12 March 1946

First Service Command

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

/s/ Edwin F. Svara
EDWIN F. SVARA
1st Lt., Inf.

Doc. 8078 *

No. 2

着 船 乗 員 等 運 送 承 担 者 等 打 撃 受 け 等

問 誰 が 殺 っ た の か
答 收容所 = 秘 選 子 連 々 来 夕 日 本 海 兵 連 隊 長

問 貴 方 の 其 の 以 前 之 同 懲 罰 へ 倒 り 思 っ て 出 っ て 来 ぬ
答 「 予 等 」 小 型 飛 行 船 へ 入 っ て 船 中 へ 兵 隊 等 居 っ たり
(音 声) が 見 奉 へ 上 っ たり 一 般 へ 過 ぎ っ たり 彼 等 居 っ たり
船 中 へ 兵 隊 等 居 っ たり 夜 中 及 び 翌 朝 直 立 上 っ たり
居 っ たり 兵 隊 等 居 っ たり 朝 食 抜 け ず 作 業 隊
へ 仕 事 三 分 掛 け 不 快 三 分 掛 け 其 夜 中

型 飛 行 船 へ 物 盗 っ たり 自 白 せ っ たり 小 型 飛 行 船
に 予 等 氣 運 三 分 掛 け 船 中 へ 兵 隊 等 居 っ たり 給 食 掛 け 長
々 打 撃 受 け せ っ たり 小 型 飛 行 船 へ 引 込 け っ たり
ナ ン だ 云 っ たり 理 由 兵 隊 等 小 型 飛 行 船 へ 近 接
せ っ たり 他 人 等 居 っ たり 同 時 三 分 掛 け
ナ ン だ 云 っ たり 小 型 飛 行 船 へ 其 夜 中 三 週 同 懲 罰
三 分 掛 け 三 分 掛 け 其 夜 中 兵 隊 等 居 っ たり 三 分
掛 け 一 般 へ 水 中 へ 入 っ たり 過 ぎ っ たり 三 分

問 予 等 取 扱 へ 結 果 小 型 飛 行 船 へ 状 態 へ 如 何
な っ たり

答 彼 等 深 害 意 不 良 へ 非 常 へ 憂 鬱 せ っ たり
問 福 岡 へ 三 分 掛 け 收容所 所 長 へ 誰 が 殺 っ たり
答 予 等 (音 声) 殺 っ たり

No. 3

Doc 8078 *

問 前長人之罪、其處懲罰、其日數、乃至如何之處之
事。

答 公・彼ハソレヲ承認ニ居ル事。彼ハ尊王共同
懲罰、現場ニ出席スル事。
私ハソレヲ彼ヲ見ス事。

問 相議、結果ハ如何トシカ。

答 ソレヲ以テハ未ダ決テ、何ヲ處置スルコトナシカ。
且

Ex. # 1941

Doc. No. 8095*

1

XXXXXXXXXX Classification changed
R E S T R I C T E D from "CONFIDENTIAL"
to "RESTRICTED" by
order of the Secretary
of War -- By /s/ E.
Checket, Major, Inf.

Q. State your name, rate, serial number, permanent home address, and any other pertinent information concerning yourself.

A. My name is Matthew David ONK. I am a Sergeant, U.S. Marine Corps. My serial number is 273489. My permanent home address is Quinlan, Texas. I completed the eighth grade in school and have been in the Marine Corps for six years.

Q. Did you witness any killings, executions, torture, beatings or other cruelties during the time you were a prisoner of war?

A. Yes, I did. This took place at Morina Prison Camp near Nagoya, Japan, about 20 July 1945. One WAGNER, an Aviation Ordnanceman, U.S. Navy, who had been captured at Corregidor, was killed. WAGNER's death occurred as a result of punishment for a second offense in attempting to procure additional food from the galley after the galley had been secured for the night. WAGNER's first offense occurred in March 1945. At that time he attempted to break into the galley at night and was caught in the attempt. His punishment at that time was a beating by approximately four Japanese guards, who struck him with rifle butts and clubs generally about the body, and beat him in the face with shoes, the beatings extending for a period of approximately fifteen minutes. After the beatings WAGNER was required to stand in front of the guard house for a period of seventy-two hours, during which time all passing Japanese would further beat him at their discretion with clubs. During this period he was beaten by approximately fifteen to twenty Japanese with clubs, each of whom would strike him at least four or five times. As a result of these beatings WAGNER was in a serious condition, although there were no broken bones. Upon release from this punishment WAGNER was warned against a second attempt at breaking into the galley. The Japanese considered WAGNER's offense as an attempt to escape and warned him that a second attempt would be punishable by his own death as well as further punishment for the entire camp.

During the ensuing months the food decreased drastically in quality and quantity, and on or about 18 June 1945 WAGNER, as a result of his hunger, was driven to a second attempt to

XXXXXXXXXX
R E S T R I C T E D /s/ E. C.

Doc. No. 8095*

break into the galley after dark. He left his locked barracks via the expedient of picking the lock. Entering the galley, he procured some food and as return to the barracks was apparently impossible at the moment, he hid himself on some mats that had been placed across some rafters in the galley structure. His absence from the barracks was discovered by the Japanese next morning and a search was instituted. The search continued for two days. The evening of the second day the cooks on duty in the galley noticed a pool of blood on the floor beneath the mats. Inasmuch as the entire camp had been confined to barracks during the search, the cooks had no alternative but to report the blood to the Japanese. A search by the Japanese apprehended WAGNER in his hiding place. The blood resulted from a neck wound self-inflicted by WAGNER in an attempt at suicide. The camp doctor, Dr. SCHULTZ, U.S. Army, was notified, and he bandaged WAGNER's neck and, at the insistence of the Japanese, enlisted the aid of another prisoner, one Benny VALENCIA, a U.S. Army sergeant of Mexican descent, and myself in removing WAGNER from his hiding place. The Japanese insisted that WAGNER remain on the floor of the galley and refused permission for his transfer to the sick bay for the purpose of treatment of his wounds. WAGNER at this time was conscious but quite weak from loss of blood.

The Japanese insisted that WAGNER remain upon the galley floor pending decision as to disposition of his case. This decision was in the hands of the Japanese officers of the camp, which group included the commanding officer of the camp, the camp interpreter, and the camp NCO. The camp NCO at this time was a two-star sergeant in the Japanese Army, and he was the only man with that rate among the Japanese officials of the camp. The interpreter was a Japanese who had resided for some time in Honolulu. While WAGNER's fate was being considered, the Japanese commanding officer, the camp NCO, and the interpreter walked over to him and kicked him about the head, with each of them kicking him about four or five times, but with the interpreter being the most vicious. A short time later the interpreter returned and found WAGNER with his eyes open and looking around. The interpreter thereupon kicked him twice more in the head, then told him that he (WAGNER) was not fooling the Japanese. During this time a Japanese guard had been stationed to prevent any of the Americans from conversing with WAGNER.

XXXXXXXXXX
R E S T R I C T E D /s/ E. C.

WAGNER had been discovered at approximately 0200 on 20 June 1945. At approximately 0400, Dr. SCHULTZ, VALENCIA and I were sent back to the barracks. The next morning at muster WAGNER was seen by the assembled members of the group seated in front of the guard house on the ground with his knees tied together with rice-straw rope, and his hands secured with the same material behind his back. WAGNER was conscious at this time. After breakfast the camp was lined up for the morning march to work in the nearby factories and at that time the Japanese guards who had been searching the area for WAGNER had begun to return to camp. Each one of these guards was permitted to beat WAGNER with a club, and before the prisoners were marched to work I saw between fifteen and twenty Japanese guards beat WAGNER with the club and also kick him. The beatings averaged approximately five or six blows per man. The last I saw of WAGNER before leaving for work, he appeared to be badly beaten, with one side of his face bleeding heavily and the blood flowing down his neck.

WAGNER was allowed to remain in his position before the guard house for 72 hours, during which time the Japanese personnel of the camp beat him continuously at the individuals discretion. A board approximately four inches wide, four feet long, and one-half inch thick was kept handy at the guard house, and when any Japanese would feel so inclined he would seize this board and beat WAGNER as long as he desired. During this period of 72 hours WAGNER was permitted no food and no water. After approximately eighteen hours the weather turned cold with a heavy rain. Meanwhile, WAGNER's hands and feet had become swollen as a result of the bindings, from which he was permitted no release. In an attempt to obtain some shelter from the rain he had worked his way to a nearby barracks. This barracks, however, was flea-ridden and the effect of the fleas, from which he had absolutely no protection in his bound condition, drove him hysterical. He began swearing and cursing the Japanese for the treatment he received. Each time he would speak a Japanese would beat him again.

XXXXXXXXXX
RESTRICTED /s/ E. C.

After the 72 hours, WAGNER's bonds were released and he was permitted to walk to the shower room, take a shower and don clean clothes. He was then taken by the Japanese to a small room in the guard house where he could not be seen by any of the other prisoners in the camp. The Japanese announced that his punishment would be reduced rations for thirty days, and the amount he was to receive was equal to a GI spoon full of rice and one-half cup of tea three times a day. WAGNER's incarceration continued for some seventeen days, when two of the men, one WHITE, a Carpenter's Mate First Class, U.S. Navy, and one OWENS, a civilian, were incarcerated with him after a severe beating they had received, and which resulted in a broken hand for OWENS. They found WAGNER lying on the floor unconscious, but screaming, "Quit beating me," and asking for water. On 20 July 1945, when the cooks took WAGNER's morning chow to him they were informed by the Japanese that WAGNER had died. No doctor's examination was permitted and no Americans were permitted to see WAGNER, and the Japanese placed him in his casket themselves. It was the opinion of many of the men engaged in camp work, such as the cooks, who had seen WAGNER placed in the casket, that he was still alive and breathing at that time.

I do not know the names of the Japanese involved. The camp NCO referred to above was known by the nickname of "Violet Eyes." A toothless guard was known as "Snag," and the interpreter's name may have been YOKOMOTO.

Prisoners in this camp were utilized in nearby factories manufacturing airplane parts, bombs, etc. Public beatings of prisoners in the nude before the guard house with the further punishment that they were required to remain standing in front of the guard house the next day, the whole time without food, were a commonplace in the camp. These beatings were severe and were accomplished with rifle butts, clubs and belts.

I have no further information, either favorable or unfavorable, pertinent to the incidents related above.

XXXXXXXXXX
R E S T R I C T E D /s/ E. C.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA:
 : SS
County of Alameda :

I, Matthew David MONK, of lawful age, being duly sworn on oath, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of four pages, including this and the title page, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Matthew D. Monk

Subscribed and sworn to before me this third day of October 1945, at Oakland, California.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA: /s/ Thomas P. Guerin
 : SS
County of Alameda :

I, Thomas P. GUERIN, Lieutenant, USNR, certify that Matthew David MONK, Sergeant, U.S.M.C., serial number 273489, personally appeared before me on the third day of October 1945, and testified concerning war crimes; and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by him to the several questions set forth.

Place: Oakland, California

Date : 3 October 1945 /s/ Thomas P. Guerin

Page 4 of 4 pages

X X X X X X X X X X X X X X X X
R E S T R I C T E D /s/ E.C.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ EVERETT CHECKET
EVERETT CHECKET
Major Inf.

1.
Sp 1941
Doc 8095

證據書類第八〇九五號

XXXXXX

答 自分ノ名ハ「マシュー・デイビッド・モ
 ンクル」米國海兵隊、軍曹、認門番端ハ
 二七三四八九番。本籍ハテッキサス州ク
 インラン、學校デハ第八學年ヲ終了シ現
 在マデ六年間海兵隊ニ居ツタ。

問 貴方ガ俘虜デアツタ期間中、貴方ハ殺人、
 死刑執行、拷問、毆打、或ハ其ノ他ノ慘
 虐行爲ヲ目撃シタカ。

答 然リ。私ハ目撃シタ。一九四五年七月二
 十日頃、日本ノ名古屋附近「ノリマ」俘
 虜收容所デ起ツタコトデアルガ「コレヒ
 ドール」テ捕ハレタ米海軍航空兵隊員「
 ワグナール」ナル者ガ殺サレタ。「ワグナ
 ール」ノ死ハ夜間閉鎖ノ廢室ニ入り給與
 以外ノ食物ヲ手ニ入レヨウトノ二時目ノ
 灣犯ニ對スル懲罰ノ結果デアツタ。

「ワグナール」ノ最初ノ遺犯ハ一九四五年
 三月ノ事デアツタ。彼ハソノ時夜間廢室
 ニ侵入シヨウトシテ未遂ニシテ捕ヘラレ
 タ。ソノ時ノ彼ノ歸ハ約四人ノ日本人看
 守ニヨル毆打デアツタ。彼等ハ「ワグナ

Doc 8095 #

2.

一ノ全身ヲ半床ヤ棍棒ヲ打テ墮テ彼ノ
 顔ヲカキ、ソノ時打ハ殆ド十五分間モ
 止ケラレタ。時打ノ後「ワグナール」ハ七
 十二時開署守部署ノ前ニ立タヒラレ、其
 ノ間酒リカカル凡ベテノ日本人ハ棍棒ヲ
 思ヒ思ヒニ彼ヲ打ツタ。其ノ間彼ハ十五
 人カラ二十人近クノ日本人ニ棍棒ヲナグ
 ラレ、彼等ハ夫々少クトモ四回乃至五回
 ハナグツタ。コノ時打ノ結果、骨折トテ
 ハナカツタガ「ワグナール」ノ状態ハヒド
 イモノデアツタ。コノ懲罰カラ釋放サレ
 ルニ方ツテ「ワグナール」ハ二層ト時室ニ
 入ルコトナキヤウニ警告サレタ。日本人
 ハ「ワグナール」ノ遺體ヲ逃亡ノ企圖ト考
 ヘ再ビカカル事ヲ試ミルニ於テハ其ノ懲
 罰ハ彼ノ死並ニ收容所全體ニ對スル懲罰
 トイフコトニナラウト彼ニ警告シタ。
 罰金ノ數ケ月ニ食物ハ質甚共ニ所貯ニ低
 下シ一九四五年六月十八日頃デアツタガ
 「ワグナール」ハ架台ニ耐ヘカネテ日ヲ暮
 レテカラ再ビカノ所室ニ入シヨウトシ
 カ。彼ハ壁前ヲコシアケテ、兵舎ヲ捲ケ
 出シ、時室ニ入り食物ヲ手ニ入レカガ、

Doc 8095 *

其ノ侍兵舎ニ歸ルコトハ如何ニモ出來サ
 ウモナカツカノデ、其ノ侍室ノ雑物ノ箱
 ノ上ニ渡シテアツカ散放ノ處ノ上ニ置レ
 々。彼ガ兵舎カラ居ナクテツカト云フ意
 ハ、純調日本人ニヨツテ發見サレ、櫻葉ガ門
 始サレタ。其ノ櫻葉ハ二日間ニワカツテ
 置ケラレタ。二日目ノ夕刻。侍室ノ料理
 人達ガ例ノ段ノ下ノ床ノ上ニ血ダマリテ
 見附ケタ。ソノ櫻葉ノ同敷容所ノ者ハ、全
 部兵舎ニ監禁サレテ居タノデ料理人達ハ
 ソノ血ニツイテ日本人ニ報告スル外ニ手
 ガナカツカ。櫻葉ノ末、日本人ハ、櫻
 ノ「ワグナ」ヲ銷々ヘタ。其ノ血ハ「
 ワグナ」ガ自殺ヲ試ミタ時自ラ落ケタ
 首ノ筋カラ出タモノデアツカ。所々所ノ
 際者タル米田陸軍ノ「シユルツ」博士ニ
 此ノ事ガ告ゲラレ、彼ハ「ワグナ」ノ
 首ニ帶チシテヤリ、且ツ日本人ノ主
 張ニ由テ、彼ノ姓名、即チ「ベニイ。ウ
 アレンシア」トイフ時（ヌキシコ系米岡
 陸軍軍曹）ト自分ノ手ヲ續リテ「ワグナ
 」ヲ其ノ目レ標カラ移シタ。日本人ハ
 「ワグナ」ヲ侍室ノ床ノ上ニ置ス事ヲ

Doc 8095-4

4.

主張シ、彼ノ傷ノ手術ノカメニ病室へ彼ヲ
 ワグナールノ許シテ置ンダ。ワグナールハ此
 ノ時意識ハアツカガ、出血ノ爲、全ク弱ツ
 テキタ。

日本人ハ本事件處理ノ決定ニ至ル迄「ワ
 グナール」ヲ病室ノ床ノ上ニ安置スル事ヲ主
 張シタ。コノ決定時ハ其ノ收容所ノ日本人
 職員ノ手中ニアリ、其ノ一員ニハ其ノ收容
 所ノ警備官、收容所附通譯及ビ同下士官ガ
 舎マレテ居タ。コノ時ノ收容所附下士官ハ
 日本陸軍、草野デアツテ、其ノ收容所ニ於
 ケル日本人職員中コノ階級ノ者ハ彼一人デ
 アツタ。通譯ハ以前ニシバラク、「ホノル
 ル」ニ住ンデ居タ事ガアル日本人デアツタ。

「ワグナール」ノ運命ニツイテ考ヘラレツツ
 アル一方、日本人タル收容所警備官、同下
 士官及ビ通譯ハ「ワグナール」ノ所へ歩ミ寄
 リ、彼ノ頭部ヲ各々廻回乃至五回咄ツタガ
 時中、通譯ノソレガ背線デアツタ。シバラ
 クシテ、通譯ハ腹ツテ來テ、「ワグナール」
 ガ腹ヲ開ケテ腹内ヲ見テ居ルヲ目ツケタ。

通譯ハソコデ彼ノ頭ヲ更ニ二階睨リ、「ワ
 グナール」ニ「日本人ヲ辱罵ニスルナ」ト言

Doc 8095 #

ツカ。コノ朝、アメリカ人が「ワグナー」
 ト口ヲキクノヲ防グ爲ニ一人ノ日本人
 看守ヲ配シテ居タ。此ノ朝、
 「ワグナー」が發見サレタノハ一九四
 五年六月二十日午前二時頃デアリ、「シ
 ムルツ」博士「ダレンチア」及び自分ガ
 兵舎ニ入り出サレタノハ午前四時頃デア
 ツカ。朝開時ノ時流過テ雨降ヲ纏ラレ、
 固シク両手ヲ背中ニ結バレテ、看守部
 ノ前ノ地面ニ坐ラサレテ居ル「ワグナー」
 ノ姿ガ、集合シカ一同ニヨツテ眺メラレ
 タ。此ノ時、意圖ガアツカ。朝
 食後、収容所ノ一門ハ附近ノ工場ニ向
 ク爲ニ開ノ行進ヲスベク整列シカガソノ
 時「ワグナー」ノ居所ヲ捜シテ居タ日本
 人看守員ハ収容所ニ戻リ始メテ居タ。夫
 日ノ看守ハ何レモ煩雜テ「ワグナー」ヲ
 尋ル事ヲ許サレテ居リ、ソシテ所ニガ働
 キニ行ク行進ヲ阻ス前ニ自分ハ十五人乃
 至二十人ノ兵隊ガ現テ「ワグナー」ヲ
 捜リ又尋ルノヲ思タ。殺行ハ一人約五乃
 至六打ガ平均デアツカ。止撃ニ料クニ先
 立ツテ自分が「ワグナー」ヲ居タ時、彼

! 5.

Doc 8095 *

6.

ハヒドク嘸ラレテ居タヤウデ、顔面ノ片
方カラハゲシク出血シ、血ガ首ニ流レテ
居タ。
「ワグナール」ハ看守部隊ノ前ニ七十二
時間ソノママノ位置ニ置カレテキタガソ
ノ内、其ノ收容所ノ日本人ハ各々隊手ニ
彼ヲ嘸リ續ケタ。幅約四インチ、長サ四
フィート、厚サ一、五インチノ板ガ看守
部隊ノ手近ニ置カレテアリ。日本人ハ誰
デモサウシカイト思フト此ノ板ヲトツテ、
思フ存分「ワグナール」ヲ嘸リツケタノデ
アツタ。此ノ七十二時間、「ワグナール」
ハ飲食一切ヲ許サレナカッタ。約十八時
間ノ後、天候ガ變リ。烈シイ雨ト共ニ、
寒クナツテ來タ。其ノ内ニ「ワグナール」
ノ手足ハ紅ラレテアツタ爲ニフクレ上ツ
タガ、之ヲ嘸クコトハ許サレナカッタ。
雨ヲ嘸ケルベク努力ノ末彼ハ近クノ兵舎
ハ務働シタ。然シコノ兵舎ハ蚤ノ件守テ
アツタノデ、嘸ラレテ居ル彼ニトツテハ
蚤ノ攻撃ヲ却ケル方法ガ全クナク、彼ハ
ヒステリックニナツタ。彼ハ日本人ノ仕
打ヲ嘸ヒ且嘸リ始メタ。彼ガ口ヲ閉ク

Doc 8095 *

何ニ、日本人ガ又彼ヲ殺ツタ。
 其ノ七十二時固ノ後、「ワグナー」ハ
 獄ニサレ、浴室ニ行キ水ヲ浴ビ清潔ヲ着
 物ヲ着ル事ヲ許サレタ。彼ハソレカラ其
 ノ收容所ノ他ノ監獄ニハ見ルコトノ出
 來ナイ看守部ノ中ノ小サナ一室ニ遣レ
 込マレタ。日本人ハ彼ノ罰トシテ三十日
 間ノ食糧ヲ減ラスト公表シタガ、彼ノ受
 ケル食糧ハ兵卒用スブーン一杯ノ價トコ
 ヅブ半分ノ茶ヲ一日三度ト云フ事デアツ
 タ。「ワグナー」ノ禁錮ハ約十七日間續
 イタガ、其ノ時二人ノ男「ワイト」(米
 田浪算一等船醫手)及ビ「オウエン」(
 算屋)ガ手ヒドイ毆打ノ後「ワグナー」
 ト共ニ禁錮サレテキタ。「オウエン」ハ
 毆打ノ傷ニ手ヲ骨折シテキタ。彼禁ハ「
 ワグナー」ガ等ニナツテ意識不明ニ陥リ
 乍ラ「オウ」ノハ止メテ果レト血ビ且ツ
 水ヲ求メテキルノヲ見タ。一九四五年七
 月二十日、料理人ガ「ワグナー」ノ朝食
 ヲ持ツテ行カウトシタ時、日本人カラ「
 ワグナー」ガ死シタ事ヲ聞カサレタ。刑
 所ノ於屍ハ許サレズ且ツ一人ノアメリカ

Doc 8095

人モ「ワグナ」ヲ見ル等ハ許サレズ、
日本入自來ノ手ヲ渡ル等ハ實ニ收メラレタ。
此ニ收メラレタ「ワグナ」ヲ見タ其ノ
収容所ノ多量ノ雇員人、例ヘバ料理人ノ
如キ其ノ等ニ換ルト、其ノ時「ワグナ」
ハマダ座キテ是ヲ呼吸シテ居タト云フ事
デアツタ。

XXXXXX

此ノ収容所ノ俘虜達ハ近クノ航空機部
分品及兵器等ノ製造工場ニ於テ利用サレ
タ。看守部員ノ前テ操縦ノ俘虜ヲ公ケニ
毆打シ、更ニ其ノ類日中絶食ノ上看守部
員ノ前ニ立テ罰ケサセラレルトイフノハ
此ノ収容所デアリマヘノ懸念デアツタ。
コレ等ノ毆打ハ苛烈デアリ、管床ヤ繩梯、
草蓆ヲ以テ送行サレタ。

XXXXXX

8.

Doc. No. 8171*

RESTRICTED

Classification changed from "CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED" by order of the Secretary of War
By /s/ E. Checket, Major, Inf.

STATE OF WASHINGTON)
(SS.
COUNTY OF PIERCE)

I, Alexis J. Mott of lawful age, being duly sworn, on oath depose and say:

I am [Corporal Alexis J. Mott, ASN 15061728.] My permanent home address is 1517 Union Street, Lafayette, Indiana. I am 22 years of age and I finished high school. I enlisted in the U. S. Army in February 1941 and I was sent overseas in April 1941 and was returned from overseas on 10 October 1945. I was captured at Corregidor on May 6, 1942 and was taken to Camp I Cabanatuan and was moved to Camp D I, Yokohama, Japan arriving there in November of 1942 and remaining until May 15, 1945, and was then transferred to Kosaka where I remained until liberated in Camp No. 8.

While at Camp D I, Yokohama I and other American prisoners of war were forced to work in the shipyards. We worked on all different types of vessels that were being built at this shipyard and among the vessels built there were naval cruisers and aircraft carriers and aircraft tenders. We also repaired all kinds of Japanese naval vessels except battleships. During the time I was at this camp we were subjected to bombing on several occasions. The only shelter provided for us was open ditches which were in the shipyards but about 1/4 miles from where most of us were working. However, the Japs never let us quit work and go to the shelters when the air raid alarm was sounded but made us wait until the planes were overhead and of course we were by that time in danger of being hit by bombs. If the raid lasted for several minutes we would eventually get to the ditches provided for shelter. No American prisoners of war were injured or killed while I was at Camp D I, Yokohama.

Lt. Vanbuskirk, United States Navy Officer was the highest ranking American officer in the camp and he has full knowledge of the conditions here.

A Jap civilian interpreter named Okomoto seemed to run the camp although he was not camp commander. I believe he was partly responsible for conditions at the camp.

The above statement contains all the information I have in regard to the above incidents.

/s/ James R. Owen
Witness

/s/ Cpl. Alexis J. Mott, 15061728

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 13th day of October 1945, at Fort Lewis, Washington.

/s/ Arthur G. Bouley
CWO, USA
Asst Adjutant General
ASFTC Fort Lewis, Wash.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ EVERETT CHECKET

EVERETT CHECKET,
Major, Infantry.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED .. /s/ E.C.

Ex 1942

陸軍伍長「アレクシス・ジエー・モット」

A S N 第一五〇六一七二八番

Ex 1942 Dec 8/71

私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）五月六日「コレヒ
 ドール」テ囚ヘラレ「カバナツアン」ノ一號收容所
 へ送レテ行カレタガ其ノ後一九四二年（昭和十七年）
 十一月、日本横濱ノD一號收容所ニ移サレソコニ、
 一九四五年（昭和二十年）五月十五日迄厄リマシタ
 横濱ノD一號收容所ニキタ時私及モウ一人ノ「ア
 メリカ」人俘虜ハ造船所テ働ク事ヲ強制サレタ。吾
 々ハ此ノ造船所テ建造中ノ色ンナ型ノ船テ働イタガ
 其ノ中ニハ海軍ノ巡洋艦、航空母艦、航空母艦附屬
 船ガアツタ。吾々ハ又戦艦以外ノ全テノ日本海軍艦
 艇ヲ修繕シタ。私ガ此ノ收容所ニキタ間空襲ヲ
 受ケタ。吾々ニ避難所トシテ與ヘラレタモノハ造船
 所内ニアル掩蓋ノナイ椽テ吾々ノ大部分ガ働イテキ
 タ所カラ四分ノ一程モ離レテキタ。
 空襲警報ガ鳴ツテモ日本人ハ決シテ吾々が仕専場ヲ
 離レテ避難所ヘ行ク事ヲ許サズ飛行機ガ頭上ニ來ル
 迄待タセタ。勿論吾々ハ其ノ時ニハモウ爆撃サレル
 危険ニ曝サレテキタ。若シモ空襲ガ数分間モ續ケバ
 吾々ハ場合ニ依ツテハヤット避難所ノ椽ヘ行クノテ
 アツタ。

Ex 1942

陸軍伍長「アレクシス・ジエー・モット」

A S N 第一五〇六一七二八番

8171
Dec
with
y
u
r

私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）五月六日「コレヒ
 ドール」テ囚ヘラレ「カバナツアン」ノ一號收容所
 へ連れて行カレタガ其ノ後一九四二年（昭和十七年）
 十一月、日本横濱ノD一號收容所ニ移サレソコニ、
 一九四五年（昭和二十年）五月十五日迄居リマシタ
 横濱ノD一號收容所ニキタ時私及モウ一人ノ「ア
 メリカ」人俘虜ハ造船所テ働ク事ヲ強制サレタ。吾
 タハ此ノ造船所テ建造中ノ色ンナ型ノ船テ働イタガ
 其ノ中ニハ海軍ノ巡洋艦、航空母艦、航空母艦附屬
 船ガアツタ。吾々ハ又戦艦以外ノ全テノ日本海軍艦
 艇ヲ修繕シタ。私ガ此ノ收容所ニキタ間空襲ヲ
 受ケタ。吾々ニ避難所トシテ與ヘラレタモノハ造船
 所内ニアル掩蓋ノナイ椽テ吾々ノ大部分ガ働イテキ
 タ所カラ四分ノ一程モ離レテキタ。
 空襲警報ガ鳴ツテモ日本人ハ決シテ吾々が仕専場ヲ
 離レテ避難所ヘ行ク事ヲ許サズ飛行機ガ頭上ニ來ル
 迄待タセタ。勿論吾々ハ其ノ時ニハモウ爆撃サレル
 危険ニ曝サレテキタ。若シモ空襲ガ数分間モ續ケバ
 吾々ハ場合ニ依ツテハヤット避難所ノ椽ヘ行クノテ
 アツタ。

Ex 1942

陸軍伍長「アレクシス・ジエー・モット」

A S N 第一五〇六一七二八番

Handwritten notes: 8/17/42, Dec, and a signature.

私ハ一九四二年（昭和十七年）五月六日「コレヒ
 ドール」ヲ因ヘラレ「カバナツアン」ノ一號收容所
 へ連れて行カレタガ其ノ後一九四二年（昭和十七年）
 十一月、日本横濱ノD一號收容所ニ移サレソコニ、
 一九四五年（昭和二十年）五月十五日迄厄リマシタ
 横濱ノD一號收容所ニキタ時私及モウ一人ノ「ア
 メリカ」人俘虜ハ造船所テ働ク事ヲ強制サレタ。吾
 々ハ此ノ造船所テ建造中ノ色ンナ型ノ船テ働イタガ
 其ノ中ニハ海軍ノ巡洋艦、航空母艦、航空母艦附屬
 船ガアツタ。吾々ハ又戦艦以外ノ全テノ日本海軍艦
 艇ヲ修繕シタ。私ガ此ノ收容所ニキタ間空襲ヲ
 受ケタ。吾々ニ避難所トシテ與ヘラレタモノハ造船
 所内ニアル掩蓋ノナイ壕テ吾々ノ大部分ガ働イテキ
 タ所カラ四分ノ一程モ離レテキタ。
 空襲警報ガ鳴ツテモ日本人ハ決シテ吾々が仕専場ヲ
 離レテ避難所ヘ行ク事ヲ許サズ飛行機ガ頭上ニ來ル
 迄待タセタ。勿論吾々ハ其ノ時ニハモウ緊張サレル
 危険ニ曝サレテキタ。若シモ空襲ガ數分間モ續ケバ
 吾々ハ場合ニ依ツテハヤット避難所ノ壕ヘ行クノテ
 アツタ。

EX # 1943

MD/JAC/FS/JC/131(2E)
SOO/JW

IN THE MATTER OF THE ILL-TREATMENT OF BRITISH
PRISONERS OF WAR AT MOTOYAMA, HIROSHIMA

A F F I D A V I T

I, Robin Robertson PETTIE, Lieutenant-Colonel in the Royal Army Service Corps. with Service No. 148780, and with permanent home address at Kintyrie, Abingavie, near Glasgow, make oath and say as follows:-

1. I was taken prisoner of war by the Japanese on or about 19 April 1942 in West Java. After passing through various camps I arrived on 30 November 1942 at MOTOYAMA in the Hiroshima area. I was senior British officer at this camp until 30 July 1943 when I was transferred to another camp. The Commandant at this camp was Lieutenant OS.KA and he was assisted by a senior NCO named KIKIYAMA. The British prisoners were employed in a coal mine at MOTOYAMA owned by the Ube Coal Mining Company under the supervision of a personnel manager called ONO.
2. At first the officers were made to attend at the mine in order to supervise the work of the prisoners and for this reason I was able to obtain first hand knowledge of the working conditions.
3. The safety precautions were wholly inadequate and this led to a number of unnecessary injuries. The timbering was inadequate and bad props were used. This resulted in the roof at the coal face falling quite often leading to a number of injuries to those working there. The men had to walk 1½ miles underground from the pit entrance through the main drift to the coal face. The ceiling of the main drift was so low that one was forced to stoop and the floor was often covered with water up to one foot in depth.
4. Soon after our arrival the hours of work became far too long for the men to endure without serious detriment to their health. The ordinary working day consisted of 12 hours in the mine. I made a number of protests to the Commandant and to ONO about this but Lieutenant OS.KA took no interest in the matter and did not concern himself about the length of the working day. He was entirely prepared to turn out the men at such times and for such periods as ONO demanded. Sometime during April 1943 the question of the working hours was discussed at considerable length in the board room of the mining company in the presence of OS.KA and the mining manager whose name I do not know, and ONO. It was clear to me from this meeting that ONO was the man whose influence decided the question of the hours. The mining manager was present but took no active part in the discussions and allowed ONO to reply to all the arguments put forward by me on behalf of the men. No satisfactory whatsoever was obtained as a result of this meeting in April.

EX 41943

MD/JAG/FS/JC/131(2E)
SOO/JW

IN THE MATTER OF THE ILL-TREATMENT OF BRITISH
PRISONERS OF WAR AT MOTOMAMA, HIROSHIMA

A F F I D A V I T

I, Robin Robertson PETRIE, Lieutenant-Colonel in the Royal Army Service Corps. with Service No. 148780, and with permanent home address at Kintyrie, Milngavie, near Glasgow, make oath and say as follows:-

1. I was taken prisoner of war by the Japanese on or about 19 April 1942 in West Java. After passing through various camps I arrived on 30 November 1942 at MOTOMAMA in the Hiroshima area. I was senior British officer at this camp until 30 July 1943 when I was transferred to another camp. The Commandant at this camp was Lieutenant OSUKA and he was assisted by a senior NCO named MORIYAMA. The British prisoners were employed in a coal mine at MOTOMAMA owned by the Ube Coal Mining Company under the supervision of a personnel manager called ONO.
2. At first the officers were made to attend at the mine in order to supervise the work of the prisoners and for this reason I was able to obtain first hand knowledge of the working conditions.
3. The safety precautions were wholly inadequate and this led to a number of unnecessary injuries. The timbering was inadequate and bad props were used. This resulted in the roof at the coal face falling quite often leading to a number of injuries to those working there. The men had to walk 1½ miles underground from the pit entrance through the main drift to the coal face. The ceiling of the main drift was so low that one was forced to stoop and the floor was often covered with water up to one foot in depth.
4. Soon after our arrival the hours of work became far too long for the men to endure without serious detriment to their health. The ordinary working day consisted of 12 hours in the mine. I made a number of protests to the Commandant and to ONO about this but Lieutenant OSUKA took no interest in the matter and did not concern himself about the length of the working day. He was entirely prepared to turn out the men at such times and for such periods as ONO demanded. Sometime during April 1943 the question of the working hours was discussed at considerable length in the board room of the mining company in the presence of OSUKA and the mining manager whose name I do not know, and ONO. It was clear to me from this meeting that ONO was the man whose influence decided the question of the hours. The mining manager was present but took no active part in the discussions and allowed ONO to reply to all the arguments put forward by me on behalf of the men. No satisfaction whatsoever was obtained as a result of this meeting in April.

5. I therefore raised this matter later in the Spring of 1943 with Doctor PARAVICINI when he visited the camp in his capacity as Red Cross Representative in Japan. I pointed out to him that British service personnel were required to work on an average 12 hours daily at very arduous work under unsatisfactory conditions. I also pointed out that these men had been given no day off during the whole of the month immediately prior to his visit. Doctor PARAVICINI said that he would make a report to Geneva but I had the impression that he was powerless to intervene. There was no improvement after his visit. At this time the rate of sickness owing to the arduous work and bad conditions was increasing daily.

6. 2 days after the visit of PARAVICINI I went to the Japanese camp office to discuss a point about some fires that had been made contrary to the camp regulations. I was then set upon and beaten by Sergeant MORIYAMA on the grounds that I was responsible for this breach of discipline. I was then made to kneel for 5 hours in front of a Japanese guard. In spite of the pretext given for this punishment I was satisfied that it was in fact inflicted as retribution for having made complaints to the Red Cross Representative. This was confirmed a month later when Mr. KENGELBACHER, the representative of the Protecting Power paid a visit to the camp. The evening before his arrival I was suddenly informed by Lieutenant OSUKA through Flying Officer THILLWOOD, who acted as my adjutant, that I would have to receive further punishment for my misconduct weeks previously, namely the incident of the prohibited fires. I was to spend the following 5 days in solitary confinement to which I was immediately removed. In consequence I was unable to speak to Mr. KENGELBACHER. I later heard from Flying Officer THILLWOOD, who attended in my place, that Mr. KENGELBACHER had asked to see me and had pressed the matter strongly. He had expressed his dissatisfaction with the explanations given by the Japanese for my absence and eventually he was told that I was being punished because I was guilty of disseminating anti-Japanese sentiments among the men. I had not heard anything of this charge up to that time. Flying Officer THILLWOOD made the same complaints to Mr. KENGELBACHER as I had made to Doctor PARAVICINI a month previously.

7. There were a number of cases of severe physical punishment both in the camp and in the mine. I remember particularly an occasion in which Gunner METTERS of the 6th Hill Regiment, R.A. was confined in the cells by order of one of the guards with the knowledge of Lieutenant OSUKA for having broken a shovel. He was given practically no food and after he had been sufficiently weakened and could be treated by the guards without resistance, he was taken out of his cell every day and made to lift pails of water on a shovel, holding the shovel above his head until his strength failed him. If he could not get through with it he was beaten by the guards. I made many representations to Lieutenant OSUKA asking for his release. He refused to consider my applications and eventually METTERS broke down completely and one day he ran out of the main gate of the camp into the village street. I was very concerned about this since it might be considered an attempt to

escape and I made strong representations to OSAKI pointing out that this incident demonstrated that he was being driven out of his mind by the treatment to which he was being subjected. To my surprise Lieutenant OSAKI shortly afterwards ordered his release.

8. I remember another occasion about Whitsun 1943 in which Gunner O'NEILL, also of the 6th H.A. Regiment, R.A. was suddenly removed from his bed at midnight and made to stand in front of the guard room while 4 sentries beat him with sticks and rifle butts. He was knocked down several times and kicked, and finally taken to the cells. He was alleged to have said something to the guards in English which they did not understand, but which had been construed as disrespectful.

9. There were many similar instances when men were severely beaten and maltreated for minor offences. For instance, on one occasion Private SMITH, R.A.S.C. was beaten for whistling. I cannot remember the names of any individual guards responsible for these acts.

SWORN by the above named Robin Robertson FETTER,)
at 6, Spring Gardens, in the city of Westminster,) (Signed) R. R. FETTER
this twenty ninth day of January, 1946.)

BEFORE ME (Signed) G. Barratt,
Lieutenant-Colonel Legal Staff,
Mil. Dept. Office of the Judge Advocate General.

I certify that this is a true copy of the original affidavit.

(Signed) G. Barratt, Lt. Col., Legal Staff,
Office of the Judge Advocate General.

供 述 書

余、英國陸軍、陸軍中佐ロビン・ロバートソン・ペ
トリー / ROBIN ROBERTSON PETRIE / 服役番號第
一四八七八〇、本國本籍地、グラスゴウ / GLASGOW /
附近、ミルンガザイ / MILNGAVIE / キンタイリー
/ KINFAIRIE / ハ宣誓シ次ノ如ク述ブ。

一 余ハ一九四二年四月十九日或ハソノ前後ニ於イテ
西部ジャバ / WEST JAVA / デ日本軍ニヨツテ俘虜ト
ナツタ。種々ナル收容所ヲ經タル後余ハ一九四二
年十一月三十日、廣島地區モトヤマ / MOTAYAMA /
ニ到着シタ。一九四三年七月三十日ニ余ガ他ノ收
容所ニ移サレル迄余ハ此ノ收容所ノ高級英國將校
デアツタ。

之ノ收容所ノ司令官ハ、オ一サカ / OSAKA / 少尉
デ彼ハ上級下士官モリヤマ / MORIYAMA / ニ手傳ハ
セテキタ。英國ノ俘虜達ハモトヤマ / MOTAYAMA /
ニ於ケル、カベ炭坑會社所有ノ炭坑デ、オノ / ONO /
ト言フ人事課長ノ監督ノ下ニ使役サレタノデアツ
タ。

ニ 最初、將校達ハ俘虜ノ仕事ヲ監督スルタメニ炭坑
ニ行カサレタ、ソシテ其爲余ハソノ勞働状態ニ就
テ第一ニ知ルコトガ出來タノデアツタ。

三 安全設備ハ全ク不適當デコノタメニ多クノ不必要

Doc 8118
Ex 1963
A

1.

Doc 8118 *

ナ傷害ヲ出スニ到ツタ。木材ノ使ヒ方ハ不適當デ
アリ、悪イ支柱ガ使用サレテキタ。コノタメニ石
炭ノ表面ノ屋根ガ屢々落下シテソコニ働イテキル
人々ニ對シテ多クノ負傷ヲ負ハセル結果トナツタ
坑道ノ入口カラ石炭ノ表面迄行クニハ主要導坑ヲ
通ツテ地下ヲ一哩半歩カナケレバナラナカツタ。
主要導坑ノ天井ハ愈メテ低ク、シヤガンデ歩クコ
トヲ余儀ナクサレ又ソノ床ハ屢々一呎ノ深サデ水
ニ覆ハレテキタ。

四 我々が到着シテ間モナク勤務時間が非常ニ長クナ
ツテ健康ヲヒドク損ハズニハ耐ヘラレヌ程ニナツ
タ。普通一日ノ作業時間ハ坑内勤務ガ十二時間デ
アツタ。余ハ何度モ司令官及ビ、オノ／＼／ニ
對シテ之ニ關シテ抗議ヲ申込ンダガ、オーサカ、
／＼／ニハ之ノコトニ就イテ興味ヲ
有タズ勤務時間ノ長サニ關シテ注意シナカツタ。
彼ハ、オノ／＼／ガ要求シタ時及ビ期間人々ヲ
働カスヤウニシク覺悟ヲ極メテキタ。一九四三年
四月ノ或時オーサカ／＼／及ビ名前ハ知ラス
ガ其炭坑ノ支配人及ビオノ／＼／ノ前デ炭坑會
社ノ會議室ニ於イテ勤務時間ノ問題ガ相當長時間
論議サレタ。之ノ會合デオノ／＼／ガ勤務時間
ノ問題ニ就テ決定權ヲ持ツ人間デアルト言フコト
ガ私ニ明ニナツタ。

2.

★
Doc 8118

炭坑支配人ハ出席シテハキタガソノ論議ニハ積極
的ニハ加ハラズ、オノノ[○]／[○]ニ兵隊達ノ爲ニ余
ガ提出シタル總ベテノ議論ニ返答サセタ。此ノ四
月ノ會合ノ結果トシテ何等ノ満足ヲモ得ラレナカ
ツタ。

五 ソレ故、余ハ之ノ問題ヲ其後、一九四三年ノ春赤
十字ノ在日代表ト言フ資格デ、バラヴィシニイ、
／ PARAVICHENH / 博士ガコノ收容所ヲ訪レタ時ニ博
士ニモテカケタ。

余ハ英國ノ兵隊ガ日々平均シテ十二時間非常ナ重
労働ヲ不適當ナ狀況ノ下ニ要求セラレテラルコト
ヲ指摘シタ。

余ハ亦彼ノ訪問直前ノ丸一ヶ月間之等ノ兵隊ハ休
日ヲ與ヘラレテキナイコトヲ指摘シタ。バラヴィ
シニイ / PARAVICHENH / 博士ハ彼ガ、ジエネバ / 國
ノ男[○]ノヘ報告ヲ出サウト言ツタガ余ハ彼ガ調停ス
ル力ガナイト言フ印象ヲ受ケタ。彼ノ訪問後何等
改善ハ無カツタ。此ノ頃重労働ト惡條件ノタメニ
罹病率ハ日々増加シテキタ。

六 バラヴィシニイ / PARAVICHENH / 博士ノ訪問二日後
余ハ收容所ノ規則ニ違反シテ燃ヤサレタ火ノ問題
ヲ論ズルタメニ日本側ノ收容所事務所ニ行ツタ。
ソノ時余ハ立タサレ余ガ此ノ規律違反ニ責任ガア
ルト言フ理由デ、モリヤマ / MORIKAWA / 軍曹ニ撲

ラレタ。ソレカラ余ハ日本人監視ノ前テ五時間
 カサレタ。此ノ所割ニ號ヲ與ヘラレタ口實ニカ
 クラズ、ソレハ事實ニ於イテハ余ガ赤十字社ノ代
 表ニ不平ヲ訴ヘタ復得トシテ加ヘラレタコトニ余
 ハ得心シタ。之ノ事ハ一月後ケンゲルバツヘル、
 / 氏ガ保該受託國ノ代表トシテ收
 容所ヲ訪シタ時ニ確認サレタ。彼ガ到着スル前ノ
 晩余ハ余ノ副官トシテ働イテキタ空軍將校トリル
 ウツド / FRITHWOLD / ヲ通ジテ徹夜間前ノ余ノ失
 態即チ禁止サレテキル火ノ事件ニ對シテ更ニ罰ヲ
 受ケナケレバナラナイデアヲ言フコトヲ、オ
 ーサカ / の少尉ニ依ツテ然知ラサレタ。
 次ノ五日間余ハ獨房ニ於イテ暮スコトニナリ其處
 ニ余ハ直チニ移サレタ。ソノ結果トシテ余ハ、ケ
 ンゲルバツヘル / 氏ニ話スコトガ
 出來ナカッタ。其後余ハ余ノ代リニ出席シタ空軍
 將校トリルウツド / FRITHWOLD / カラ、ケンゲ
 ルバツヘル / 氏ハ余ニ面會スルコ
 トヲ望ミ、ソノ事ヲ督促シタト言フコトヲ聞イタ
 彼ハ余ノ出席シナイコトニ就テ日本側ガ與ヘタ理
 由ニ不満ノ意ヲ表明シタ。而シテ結局余ガ兵隊運
 ノ間ニ反目的感情ヲ普及サセテキル罪ヲ罰セラレ
 テキルト彼ハ聞カサレタ。余ハソノ時迄此ノ所割
 ノ理由ニツイテハ何も聞カナカッタ。空軍將校、

4.

Dec 26/18

5.
Dec 8/18 *

トリルウッド / TRILLWOOD / 余ガ一月前セラダ
イシニイ / PARAVICINI / 博士ニ訴へタト同シ不平
ラ、ケンゲルバツクル / KENGELBACHER / 氏ニ訴へ
タ。

5.
Dec 8/18 *

トリルウッド / TRILLWOOD / 余が一月前ペラザ
イシニイ / PARAVICINI / 博士ニ訴へ多ト同ジ不平
ラ、ケンゲルバツクル / KENGELBACHER / 氏ニ訴へ
多。

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL FOR THE FAR EAST.

No. 1

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AND OTHERS.

-against-

NAKIL SADIO AND OTHERS.

I, OLIVER EDWIN GEORGE ROBERTS of RUNCORN, BRISBANE in the STATE of QUEENSLAND, make oath and say as follows:-

I was QK.9252 GVE. OLIVER EDWIN ROBERTS of the 2/10 FIELD REGIMENT, 9 INFANTRY DIVISION, when I was taken prisoner by the Japanese at Singapore in February, 1942.

2. In May, 1943 I went to JAPAN by ship, we landed at KOBE and marched to Orio. There were about 300 or 400 British and 50 Australians in this party. Most of the men were suffering from dysentery and beri beri when they reached Orio.
3. The food which we were given there was mainly rice with occasional pieces of dog meat, octopus, whale blubber and shark. Occasionally we were given vegetables, but the amount was not sufficient for the men and diseases due to malnutrition increased.
4. Before we started work at Orio we were taken out into a village and made to double around the square in front of the Japanese people, several men collapsed and were beaten by the Japanese guards in front of the people.
5. We were put to work in a coal mine, where the conditions were very bad. There was a lot of water and the roof was dangerous, on one occasion it fell in and caused two or three deaths including one Australian named TPOWEE.
6. On another occasion an English Soldier named HORNE was killed when he was crushed between two coal trucks. The hours of work were ten hours per day and on one occasion we went for twenty-one days without rest.
7. On a number of occasions men who were sick were forced to work in the mine.
8. There were a number of beatings given to the prisoners by the Japanese Guards. I, myself was hit on the head with a rifle butt, and there is still a dint in my skull from it.
9. We were put in mud huts which were verminous.
10. In the wintertime the cold was intense, and we were given very thin blankets which did not keep us warm, in consequence there were a number of cases of pneumonia and five or six Australians died from pneumonia.
11. American Red Cross Parcels were sent to the camp, but most of the contents were stolen by Japanese Guards.
12. Throughout the whole of the time that we were in this camp medical supplies were very short and because of this a number of deaths took place.
13. One Japanese at this camp with a name like "DEGUS" used to pick the lice off the men's clothes and make the men eat them.

14. Gnr. ERWIN escaped from the camp one night and was re-captured about forty miles away. His body was brought back to the camp in a box. I saw the body lying in the box, but I could not see his head. I was informed by some civilian Japanese that Erwin was first of all shot and then his head was severed.

O. E. G. Roberts (signed)

SHOWN BEFORE ME AT
BRISBANE, ON THE 30 DAY
OF AUGUST, 1946.

A. J. Mansfield (signed)

JUDGE OF THE SUPREME COURT OF QUEENSLAND.

Ex 1916
Dec 8266

管領八二六六號

- 一、一九四三年二月、「シンカポール」ニ於テ日本軍ニ依リ停岸トセラレタ時、私ハ第八遠洲師團、三〇野戦擧隊ノ砲手デ、認識番號〇X第九二五三番「オリヴァ・エドウィン・ローバツ」デアリマシタ。
- 二、一九四三年五月、私ハ船デ日本ニ行ツタ。ソシテ神戸ニ上陸シ、「折尾」ノ管轄ノニ行軍シタ。此ノ一行ノ中ニ約三百名乃至四百名ノ英國人及五十名ノ遠洲人カ居ツタ。彼等カ「折尾」ニ到着シタ時、其ノ八達ノ大部分ハ赤痢及脚氣ニ罹ツテ居ツタ。
- 三、其處デ私等ニ與ヘラレタ食物ハ主ニ米飯デアツテ、時折ハ犬ノ肉、蝸、鯨ノ脂肪及鯨ノ鱗片カ附イタ。時折野菜ヲ與ヘラレタカ其ノ分量ハ停岸邊ニハ充分デハナク栄養不良ニ惹因スル病氣カ増加シタ。
- 四、折尾ノ管轄ノデ私等カ仕事ヲ開始スル前ニ、私等ハ一ツノ部落ニ遊レ出サレ、日本人ノ面前デ長場ノ廻リヲ遊足デ行進サセラレタ。數人ノ八達カ倒レ日本人ノ面前デ日本軍衛兵ニ依リ毆打サレタ。
- 五、私等ハ石炭ノ鑛山デ働カサレタカ其處ノ狀況ハ非常ニ悪カツタ。水カ多ク、土根ハ危険デアツタ。

Doc 8266A

2

- 或ル時ニハ其レガ落下シ來ツテ、「トロツター」ト云フ一名ノ歐洲人ヲ含ミ二、三名ノ死者ヲ惹起シタ。
- 六、又或ル場合ニハ「ホーシント」云フ英國兵士ガ武器ノ石炭貨物自動車ノ間テ壓シ潰サレテ死シタ。労働時間ハ一日十時間デアリ、或ル場合ニハ私等ハ休日ナシニ三十一日間働カサレタ。
- 七、數多ノ場合ニ於テ、病氣中ノ人々ガ嶺山テ無理ニ働カサレタ。
- 八、數多ノ殴打カ日本軍衛兵ニ依リ俘虜ノ上ニ加ハラレタ。私モ亦、小銃ノ壘尻テ頭部ヲ殴打セツレ、其ノ打痕ガ尙私ノ頭蓋ニ刻ツテキル。
- 九、私等ハ虫ノ糞イタ汚イ小屋ニ入ラレタ。
- 十、冬期ニハ寒氣ガ激甚デアリ私等ハ非常ニ薄イ毛布ヲ與ヘラレタカ其レハ我々ニ暖ヲ與ヘナカツタ、其ノ結果若干ノ肺炎患者ヲ出シ、五名乃至六名ノ歐洲人カ肺炎、爲メ死亡シタ。
- 十一、米國赤十字ノ小包ガ收容所ニ送ラレタカ其ノ内容物ノ大部分ハ日本軍衛兵ニ依ツテ濫取サレタ。
- 十二、私等ガ此ノ收容所ニ居タ全期間ラ通シテ醫藥品ハ非常ニ不足シテ居リ、此ノ爲メ若干ノ死亡ガ惹起サレタ。
- 十三、「デグース」ト云フヤウナ姓名テ此ノ收容所内ノ一名、日本人ハ他々人々ノ衣服カラ虱ヲ取ツテ、其等ノ人々ニ喰ハシタ。

E. 1945

MD/JAG/F6/JC/201
EB/ART

IN THE MATTER OF THE ILL-TREATMENT
OF PRISONERS OF WAR AT HOSAKURA
CAMPS, JAPAN, FROM JANUARY TO
SEPTEMBER 1945

A F F I D A V I T

I, No. 153398 [Captain James Forbes LAWRENCE, 2nd Battalion Gordon Highlanders] with permanent home address at Arngask, Old Manse, Glenfarg, Perthshire, Scotland, Make Oath and Say as follows:-

1. [I was taken prisoner of war with my Battalion in Singapore on 15 February 1942. On 29 January 1945 I arrived at Hosakura in Japan, in the Sendai area, some 250 kilometres north of Tokio amongst a draft of 280 prisoners of war; fifty of us were British and the remaining 230 were Americans. The entire draft were suffering from previous ill-treatment at the hands of the Japanese and we were informed at Moji that we were bound for a hospital at Tokio, but instead we were despatched to Hosakura in order to work in a lead and zinc mine there.
2. Hosakura was some 2,000 to 3,000 feet above sea level and [the temperature] was well below zero from January until about April 1945. [We were accommodated in three wooden huts with about 100 men in each and we slept in double tier bunks but were extremely overcrowded. [No heating was provided except during one period of ten days when Japanese braziers were put in the huts. On arrival we were clothed in tropical kit which was by this time in tatters and rags. We had no footwear and had to make-shift for ourselves in using anything we could find. No warm or other clothing was issued to us by the Japanese despite repeated protests and the fact that the Japanese store in the camp contained thick clothing and footwear from the American Red Cross. The Japanese coolies working in the mine were supplied with warm clothing. On arrival I interceded with the Japanese Camp Commandant by name Lieutenant Izizawa, who required us to go to work immediately, and I managed to obtain a week's rest for the draft before we were put to work. I was severely beaten by the interpreter Corporal Koiewa for the part I played. Subsequently whenever I approached the Japanese staff as Senior British Officer I was beaten up without justification as a matter of course. Corporal Koiewa on one occasion knocked five of my teeth out.
3. We were forced to work from 0600 hours until 1800 hours daily, and had to perform the heaviest manual labour possible consisting of drilling, blasting, clearing rocks, filling tubs and running these out from the mine by hand, timbering work and all other coolie work in and around the camp. We had to march daily a distance of some two or three miles up a steep incline from the camp to the mine, and we also had to carry food in sacks or equipment for the Japanese to and from the mine. We were issued with a small quantity of millet or grain three times a day which was totally inadequate for our needs. We made a watery soup out of potato peelings or shreds of leeks and raddishes given to us by the Japanese as scraps. The millet was eaten cold by the men at the mine. As a consequence all

prisoners suffered from malnutrition and all forms of skin diseases. Beri beri, pellagra, blood disorders, and dysentery were prevalent amongst us. In February 1945 two prisoners of war died per week of pneumonia. All men were forced to work despite sickness and no prisoner was permitted to remain in bed. I was beaten on many occasions for attempting to prevent sick prisoners from being put to work.

4. There were two American medical officers in the draft, Lieutenant Colonel R. O. Gaskill and Captain W. E. Wilson, who did what they were able to but we had no medicines or medical equipment, nor was any dental treatment provided. The Japanese took no notice of our repeated requests for medical assistance or other help. The two American M. D's who were put to work around the camp, were prevented from coming to the assistance of prisoners who were injured in the mine until we all returned to camp each night. There were no medical facilities in the mine itself and the conditions in the mine were dangerous. Many men suffered from crushed fingers, hands or feet. An American by the name of Cox, a first class machinist's mate, had his foot or leg badly crushed which turned gangrenous. Lieutenant Colonel Gaskill, who was a surgeon, asked for permission from the Japanese to operate on this man but this was refused, and the Japanese mine doctor, whose name I do not know, operated upon Cox without an anaesthetic and removed the leg. Lieutenant Colonel Gaskill witnessed this operation and he was so outraged that we had great difficulty in interrogating him as to what happened. He described the operation as "butchery".

5. About 60 prisoners of war died during the period we were in Hosakura and the majority of these died between January and April during the coldest spell. All prisoners who died were cremated in the Japanese crematorium. Deaths were solely due to starvation and the inhuman treatment of the Japanese.

6. Any prisoner making complaints as to ill-treatment was taken to the Japanese guard room where he was forced to take his trousers off and to stand to attention holding his shirt above his head. If prisoners refused to stand to attention for as long as the Japanese guards required they were thereupon beaten. Three prisoners actually died as a result of such treatment and beatings in front of the guard room.

7. The mine "handcho" or foreman was Mutu.

8. [When we were recovered in September 1945 and took over the camp from the Japanese we found ample supplies of food and other necessaries.]

SWORN by the said James Forbes LAWRENCE)
 at 6 Spring Gardens in the City of)
 Westminster this twenty-ninth day of)
 January 1946) (Signed) J. F. LAWRENCE

BEFORE ME
 (Signed) Rathcreedan,
 Captain, Legal Staff,
 Military Department,
 Judge Advocate General's Office.

I certify that this is a true
 copy of the original affidavit.
 /s/ E. Seaton, Capt.
 Legal Staff, Office of the Judge
 Advocate General

Ex 1965 Doc 8029 #

書類第八〇二九號

ゴードン、ハイランダース第二大隊「ジ
 エイムス、フォーズ、ローレンス」大
 尉

私ハ一九四二年三月十五日シンガポール
 デ私ノ大隊ト共ニ俘虜ニナリマシタ。一
 九四五年一月二十九日、私ハ二百八十名
 ノ俘虜、分遣隊ニ加ハツテ東京カラ約二
 五〇軒北、仙臺地區ニアル日本ノ「ホサ
 クラ」ニ到着シマシタ。我々ノ内五十名
 ハ英國人デ殘餘ノ二百三十名ハ米國ハデ
 シタ。分遣隊、全員ガ日本兵ノ手デ加ヘ
 ラレタ是迄、虐待デ苦シンデ居リマシタ。
 門司デ我々ハ東京ノ病院ニ送ラレル事ニ
 ナツテキル間カサレマシタガ、其ノ代リ
 ニ鉛ト亞鉛ノ鑛山デ働ク爲ニ「ホサクラ」
 へ派遣サレタノデシタ。

x x x x x x
 一九四五年ノ一月カラ四月頃迄ハ氣温ハ
 氷點以下ニ随分下リマシタ。

x x x x x x
 暖房裝置ハ口本ノ火鉢ガ十日間小屋ノ中
 ニ置カレタ以外ニハ裝備サレマセンデシ

Doc 8029

2.

タ。到着シタ當時我々ハ防暑服装ヲシテ
 居リマシタガ、ソレハ此ノ時最早ボロボ
 ロニナツテ居リマシタ。我々ハ履物ガト
 カツタノデ自分デ何デモ見附カツタ物デ
 間ニ合ハセテ行カネバトリマセンデシタ。
 屢々抗議ヲ爲シ又收容所ノ日本軍ノ倉庫
 ニハ米田赤十字社カラ、厚イ衣服ト履物
 ガ入ツテキタ事賞ニモ不拘、暖イ衣服モ
 其ノ他ノ衣服モ全ク我々ニハ支給サレマセンデシタ。
 鑛山デ働イテキル日本人労働者ニハ暖イ衣
 服ガ支給サレテ居マシタ。到着シタ當時
 私ハ直チニ作業ヲ始メル様ニ要求シタ石
 澤中尉／音譯／ト呼ブ日本ノ收容所長ニ
 執リ成シテ、作業ヲ始メル前ニ分遣隊員
 ニ一週間ノ休息ヲ漸ク貰ヒマシタ。私ハ
 此ノ役ヲ演ジタ爲通譯ノ小岩伍長／音譯
 ／ニヒドク殴ラレマシタ。其後、私が英
 軍ノ前任將校トシテ日本人幹部ニ近ヅク
 度毎ニ私ハ理由モトク當然ノ事トシテ殴
 リ付ケラレマシタ。小岩伍長／音譯／ハ
 或時私ノ首ヲ五本モ殴ツテ折リマシタ。
 三我々ハ毎日午前六時カラ午後六時迄強
 的ニ働カサレ、空岩、爆破、岩石ノ取り
 片

Doc 8029

3.

片附ケ、岩石ヲ桶ニ入レ手ヲ鑛内カラ運
ビ出スコト、木材作業及ビ收容所内外
、其他、凡ユルハ夫、仕事等、出來ル限
、辛イ筋肉勞働ヲ行ハネバトリマセシ
シタ。我々ハ毎日收容所カラ鑛山迄急ト
斜面ヲ二、三哩程登ツテ行進セネバトリ
マセシタ。又我々ハ袋ヤ容器ニ入レ
タ食料ヲ日本人、爲ニ鑛山ヘ運シテ行
タリ運シテ來タリセネバトリマセシ
タ。我々ハ一日二三度少量、糶方穀物ヲ
支給サレマシタガ之ハ我々、必要ヲ滿タ
スニハ全ク不充分デシタ。我々ハ日本ハ
カラ殘物トシテ與ヘラレタ馬鈴薯、剥皮
ヤ、葱ヤ大根、切端デ水ツボイ汁ヲ作り
マシタ。糶ハ冷タイ饅デ鑛山ニ働イテキ
ル兵士ガ食ベマシタ。ソ、結果停息全部
ハ營養失調ト凡ユル種類、皮膚病ニ罹リ
マシタ。脚氣、イタリア瘰癧病、血行不順
赤痢ガ我々、間ニ蔓延シマシタ。一九四五年
二月ニハ糶適ニ人々糶肝炎ヲ死ニマシタ。病氣ヲ
テテ糶慣ガ糶ヲ糶サレ、糶ハ糶ニ糶
テ糶ヲ糶サレマシタ。私ハ病氣、糶ガ
業糶ヲ糶サレマシタ。

Doc 8029

4.

四日、分遣隊ニハ R、O、ガスキル中佐ト
 W 氏 ウイルソン大尉ノ二人、米軍軍醫ガ
 居リ、彼等ハ出來ル丈、救ヲシマシタガ
 我々ニハ藥モ醫療設備モ無ク齒科治療設
 備モ全クアリマセシタ。日本兵ハ治
 療其他、助力ヲ繰返シ懇請シテモ全然之
 ナ所願シマセシタ。收容所、周遊テ
 働カサレテモ二人、米軍軍醫ハ鎖内テ負
 傷シタ。醫務ヲ看護スル事ヲ毎晩我々全
 部ガ收容所ニ歸ル迄阻止サレマシタ。
 嶺山自体、中ニモ醫療設備ハ無ク鎖内、
 状態ハ危険デシタ。多ク、着ガ指ヤ手ヤ
 足ヲ潰サレテ苦シマシタ。一流ノ機械工デ
 工デアアル「コックス」トイフ米軍兵ハ足
 ダカ脚ダカニヒドク潰サレ之ガ痕痕ニト
 リマシタ。外科醫デアアル「ガスキル」中
 佐ハ此、兵ヲ手荷スル許可テ日本兵ニ索
 メマシタガ拒絶サレ、私ハソノ名ハ知リ
 マセンガ日本人、嶺山、醫師ガ麻痺ヲ押カズ
 ケズニ「コックス」ニ手荷ヲ施シソノ脚ニ
 ナ切付シマシタ。「ガスキル」中佐ハ此
 ノ手荷ヲ目撃シ、非常ニ憤慨シタ、我
 々ハ何カガ起キタ、カ訊ク、ガ大イニ因

Doc 8029 #

5.

難デアツタ位デシタ。彼ハコノ手術ヲ
屠殺行爲ダト評シマシタ。

五 一ホサクラニ居ル囚約六十名ノ俘虜ガ
死亡シ、ソノ大部分ハ一月カラ四月迄
ノ酷寒期ニ死亡シマシタ。死亡シタ俘
虜ハ皆日本ノ火葬場デ火葬サレマシタ。
死亡ハ全ク飢餓ト日本ハ、非ハ道的取
扱ニ因ルモノデアリマシタ。

六 誰デモ虐待ニ關シ不平ヲ云フ俘虜ハ日
本軍ノ營倉ニ連レテ行カレ、其所デ無
理矢理ニズボンヲ脱ガサレ、シャツヲ
肩ノ上ニ持ツタ儘不動姿勢ヲ執ラサレ
マシタ。若シモ俘虜ガ日本軍ノ衛兵ノ
要求シタ丈ノ時間、不動ノ姿勢デ立ツ
テ居ル事ヲ拒絕シタ場合即座ニ毆ラレ
マシタ。實際ニ三名ノ俘虜ガ營倉ノ前
デ斯カル取扱ヒト毆打ヲ受ケタ爲死亡
シマシタ。

x x x x x x

一九四五年九月我々が取戻サレテ日本
軍カラ收容所ヲ引續イダ時、我々八十
分ト食糧ト其他ノ必需品ヲ見出シマシ
タ。

x x x x x x

Affidavit of John H. Marshall, U.S. Navy

Treatment received while a prisoner in Japan - Umeda BUNSHO Camp, Osaka, Japan-

- Colonel Murada - P.O.W. Commander Osaka area-
- Lieutenant Yamada - (1) Camp C.O. Umeda Bunsho Camp
- 1st Sergeant Mineri - (2) Camp C.O. Umeda Bunsho Camp
- Lieutenant Numba - (3) Camp C.O. Umeda Bunsho Camp-

The above named commanders were aware of the brutal treatment received by prisoners from the Japanese staff and work bosses that were under them- specific cases of brutality aren't mentioned as they happened daily and are too numerous to mention-

Arrived in Japan November 1942-sent to Umeda Bunsho with some 400 officers and men- the majority of us were more dead than alive on arrival. Our American clothes were immediately taken away from us and we were issued one light suit that wasn't suitable for underwear- and nothing more-

My opinion is that none of these men were fit to be sent to work, but we were all sent out to do the hardest work that there was to do- we were working as stevedores in railroad yards in several Osaka stations. Many of these men were suffering from malnutrition, pneumonia, and in general were in a weakened condition-

At these work stations we were beaten, kicked and generally mistreated by the civilian and army men that were in charge. This treatment and the lack of any medical supplies started the deaths of these men- approximately 4 months after our arrival in Osaka about 25% of our men had died-this in my opinion was caused from starvation, exposure, and diseases resulting from malnutrition and the brutal beatings that we suffered.

I was in the Umeda Bunsho for app. two and one half year and during that time I received about 5 individual Red Cross Boxes, 1 pair shoes, 1 suit of clothes, and a few toilet articles.

(54)

There was much Red Cross gear came into our camp and was stolen by the Army men and the commanders of our camp.

The treatment we received became more brutal during the last months of the war- their brutality and treatment was a thermometer to us as it steadily rose with each new landing and the different losses they suffered-

- in Tsuruga, Japan -

We were working on military objectives and subject to bombings until the close of the war- we were ordered to keep working when American bombers were overhead by the Japanese Army personnel and civilians took cover. The commanders of this camp seemed to be trying to move us into the places that were likely to be bombed- they did a fair job of this as they bombed us out of two places and just across the road from the third place during the last two months of the war.

Affidavit of John H. Marshall, U.S. Navy

Treatment received while a prisoner in Japan - Umeda BUNSHO Camp, Osaka, Japan-

Colonel Murada - P.O.W. Commander Osaka area-
Lieutenant Yamada - (1) Camp C.O. Umeda Bunsho Camp
1st Sergeant Mineri - (2) Camp C.O. Umeda Bunsho Camp
Lieutenant Kumba - (3) Camp C.O. Umeda Bunsho Camp-

The above named commanders were aware of the brutal treatment received by prisoners from the Japanese staff and work bosses that were under them- specific cases of brutality aren't mentioned as they happened daily and are too numerous to mention-

Arrived in Japan November 1942-sent to Umeda Bunsho with some 400 officers and men- the majority of us were more dead than alive on arrival. Our American clothes were immediately taken away from us and we were issued one light suit that wasn't suitable for underwear- and nothing more-

My opinion is that none of these men were fit to be sent to work, but we were all sent out to do the hardest work that there was to do- we were working as stevedores in railroad yards in several Osaka stations. Many of these men were suffering from malnutrition, pneumonia, and in general were in a weakened condition-

At these work stations we were beaten, kicked and generally mistreated by the civilian and army men that were in charge. This treatment and the lack of any medical supplies started the deaths of these men- approximately 4 months after our arrival in Osaka about 25% of our men had died-this in my opinion was caused from starvation, exposure, and diseases resulting from malnutrition and the brutal beatings that we suffered.

I was in the Umeda Bunsho for app. two and one half year and during that time I received about 5 individual Red Cross Boxes, 1 pair shoes, 1 suit of clothes, and a few toilet articles.

(54)

There was much Red Cross gear came into our camp and was stolen by the Army men and the commanders of our camp.

The treatment we received became more brutal during the last months of the war- their brutality and treatment was a thermometer to us as it steadily rose with each new landing and the different losses they suffered-
- in Tsuruga, Japan -

We were working on military objectives and subject to bombings until the close of the war- we were ordered to keep working when American bombers were overhead by the Japanese Army personnel and civilians took cover. The commanders of this camp seemed to be trying to move us into the places that were likely to be bombed- they did a fair job of this as they bombed us out of two places and just across the road from the third place during the last two months of the war.

I failed to mention the 5 months that I spent as a P.O.W. in the Philippines but I feel that this has been covered by men more capable than I. It is my hope that every man, from the highest to the lowest, that had charge of us while in Japan is punished to the fullest extent-

The Japanese are a disgrace to humanity and they have spent over 3 years proving it to me.

I swear the above is correct and hope that it will play some part in bringing about the punishment of these scoundrels that have been over us-

/s/ John H. Marshall, U.S. Navy
287-22-75
Kuttawa, Kentucky
U.S.A.

Sept. 8, 1945

(60)

(55)

.. CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Edwin F. Svare
EDWIN F. SVARE
1st Lt., Inf.

Doc 80824

一九四五年／昭和二十年／九月八日、クックツキ
州、クックハアメリカ海軍、ジョン・H・マー
シャル侯進言候事

日本ニ於テ、待遇タリシ間受ケタル待遇一日本、大
阪收容所、海田分所、

ムラダ／村田／大佐一大阪地獄俘虜（收容所所長）

ヤマダ／山田／少／中／尉一（1）海田分所所長

キナリ／FIRST SERGEANT 一（2）海田分所所長

ナンバ／中波／／HUMBA 一少／中／尉一（3）海田分所
所長

上記所長ハ俘虜ガ日本人職員及ピソノ配下ノ作業
監督者ヨリ受ケタル非道ナル待遇ニ目シ知悉シアリ
タリ。一非道行爲ハ、毎日生起シ且ツアマリニキ多
敷ナリシタメ、個々ノ例ハ一々此處ニ擧ゲズ一

一九四二年／昭和十七年／十一月日本ニ到着一約
四〇〇名ノ士官及兵ト共ニ海田分所ニ送ラル一余等
ノ中、大少数ハ到着セル際殆ド瀕死ノ状態ナリキ。
余等ノアメリカ製ノ着衣ハ直ニ剥ぎ取ラレ輕衣一組
ヲ支給セラレタルモ之ハ下着ニモ不道當ナルモノナ
リキ一ソレ以外ハ何等支給ナシ一

余ノ考フル處デハ、余等ノ中一名タリトモ作業ラ
課セラル、三道セザリシモ、全員、實施シ必要トセ

Doc 8082

ル最モ過激ナル作業ニ送ラレタリ。一余等ハ若干ノ
大阪市内ノ停車場構内ニテ仰仕トシテ労働セリ。之
等ノ中栄養不良、肺炎ヲ患ヒキタルモノ少カラズ、
且ツ一般ニ衰弱状態ニアリタリ。一

之等ノ作業地ニ於テハ監督ニ當レル民間人及ビ軍
人ニヨリ、余等ハ打タレ、蹴ラレ、且ツ全般ニ亘リ
虐待セラレタリ。斯カル待遇及ビ醫藥品支給ノ欠除
ノタメ之等ノ者ノ中死亡スル者ヲ生ジタリ。一余等
ノ大阪到着後四ヶ月ニシテ約二割五分ノ死亡者ヲ出
セリ一余ノ見ル所ニモレバ、之等死亡ハ、飢饉、衣
服ノ不備及ビ余等ノ察リケル不良ナル栄養、残酷ナ
ル殴打ニ由來スル疾病ニ悉クモノナリ。

余ハ樺田分所ニアルコト約二年半ニシテ、兵ノ間
約五ヶノ個人的赤十字救恤品、靴一足、衣服一着及
ビ若干ノ洗面用品ヲ受取リタリ。多量ノ赤十字物品
カ余等ノ收容所ニ届ケラレタルモ、陸軍ノ兵士及ビ
所長等ニ奪取セラレタリ。

余等ノ受ケタル待遇ハ戦争末期ノ數ヶ月ニ於テ益
々非道トナレリ。一彼等ノ残酷性ト待遇トハ我々ニ
トツテ寒暖計ノ如キモノナリキ。新上陸及ビ彼等ノ
蒙リタル各種ノ損害ノ度徳ニ確實ニ上昇シ行キタリ一
日本、敦賀ニ於テ一

余等ハ戦争ノ終了迄算學目標ニテ労働シ且ツ娯樂

Dec 8082. 4

3.

ニ轟聲キシメラレタリ。米爆撃機ノ頭上ニ來リ、日
本軍職員及ビ民間人カ待避セル時モ、余等ハ作業ノ
繼續ヲ命ゼラレタリ。本收容所ノ所長ハ爆撃ヲ受ク
ルト恩ハル、如キ地點ヘ余等ヲ移サント努メタル如
ク考ヘラル。一終戦ニ到ルニケ月間ニ余等ハニケ所
ニ於テ爆撃ヲ蒙リ、第三ノ地點ニ於テハ偵カニ道路
一ツヲ隔テテ爆撃セラレタルニ見テモ、彼等ハカナ
リ巧妙ニ取避ビタリト云フベシ。

EX. # 1747

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
RESTRICTED

Classification changed from
"CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED"
by order of the Secretary of War
by /s/ E. Checket, Major, Inf.

Q. State your name, rank, serial number, permanent home address, and any other pertinent information concerning yourself.

A. My name is [Corporal Charles Eugene LAURER, U.S.M.C., Serial Number 289960. My permanent home address is Coleman, Alberta, Canada. I had a high school education, followed by vocational training in Chicago, and have served in the Marine Corps for a little over five years. I was captured by the Japanese at Fort Hughes, Philippine Islands, on 6 May 1942. I was imprisoned at Cebu atuan from 28 June 1942 until 6 November 1942, when I was sent to Japan and imprisoned at the Umeda Camp at Osaka from 27 November 1942 until 20 May 1945. I was then sent to the prisoner of war camp at Tsuruga, Japan, where I remained until 2 August 1945. I arrived in the United States on 5 October 1945.

Q. Did you witness any torture, beatings, or any other cruelties while imprisoned by the Japanese?

A. I observed many beatings administered by Japanese guards while I was at Umeda Camp in Osaka and also later when at Tsuruga. At Osaka there were originally 450 men. 120 died in the first four months from poor food and exposure. Our food was 570 grams of rice per man per day, which was inadequate for men working. If you did not work, this ration was reduced, and in the hospital toward the end patients were given only 300 grams of food per day. The Japanese gave us very little in the way of clothing. During my imprisonment the only clothing I got of any warmth or quality was one suit of American Red Cross greens and hats and gloves. We were also given some Japanese army clothing, but it was of poor quality and was second-hand. At Osaka we prisoners were put to work in the railroad yards unloading freight, some of it for Japanese civilians but much of it for the Japanese Army, and at Tsuruga we were put to work on the docks unloading Japanese Army gear sent to Japan from Manchuria. I mention the above to explain why it was necessary for us to steal food and clothing whenever it was possible, and there were frequently opportunities at Osaka. However, when we were caught the guards would beat us and I was beaten on more than one occasion. Two guards in particular at Osaka administered beatings and I can remember their names or nicknames. The first was a guard named MARIYAMA, who was a reserve army man and was later sent to active duty, at which time his rank was first sergeant. MARIYAMA was about thirty years old, rather slender build, and of average height for a Jap, - I should estimate 5'2" to 5'4". He was a rather good looking Jap. He compelled the prisoners to stand at attention or take some uncomfortable position such as kneeling and if they moved would slap them. He at times also used a stick possibly two feet long and an inch to an inch and a half in diameter. He frequently beat the prisoners until their faces were swollen and their eyes blackened. The second guard was nicknamed "Lou Gehri" because he always beat prisoners with a club. He seemed to select them with care so

that they would not break. "Lou Gehrig" was about 35 years old, heavy set, 5' to 5½' in height. He was a regular army man and was a two star sergeant. He was transferred to Tokyo about February of 1945.

At Tsuruga the most vicious guard was a man named KIMURA, who was nicknamed "The Sadist." He was about 35 years old, approximately 5' tall, and was very slight in build. He was a reserve army sergeant. There was something wrong with his right arm. He could beat a man with his hand for fifteen to twenty minutes and would apparently feel no pain in his arm whatever. He used it like a flail. The camp commander at both Osaka and Tsuruga was a Lieutenant NUMBA of the Japanese Army, who ordered some of the beatings and was present at others.

Q. As a prisoner in Japan, were you ever exposed to danger of bombing or other hazards of war?

A. I was. As stated above, we were worked in the railroad yards at Osaka, which were a target for incendiary raids. The bombs fell within two blocks of us at Osaka on 13 March 1945. We were told in May that we were being moved to Tsuruga because it was safer, but knew as soon as we saw the docks there and the ships that we were in for further bombing. This occurred as expected. Our barracks were burned out on 12 July 1945 as a result of an air raid. We were then moved into a warehouse right on the docks and we were sleeping there. The dock area was made a target for an air raid on 31 July and we were bombed. After being bombed out on the 31st, we were moved to quarters on the other side of town. Our new quarters were next to a cotton mill, which was bombed on 8 August 1945.

Q. As a prisoner were you transported by the Japanese under improper conditions?

A. When we were moved from the Philippine Islands to Japan about 1800 to 2000 prisoners were loaded onto the MIIGATA MARU, which had three holds. In our hold there were 600 men. There was insufficient space for all of us to sit down, let alone lie down. The trip to Japan lasted twenty days. We left the Philippine Islands on 6 November 1942 and arrived at Moji on 26 November 1942. Sanitary conditions were inadequate and poor.

I can recall nothing further concerning these incidents which would be of value to the War Crimes Office and I do not have any other information, favorable or unfavorable, which I consider of sufficient importance to report.

/s/ Charles E. Maurer

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

RESTRICTED

/s/ E.C.

~~RESTRICTED~~

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA)
) SS.
 County of Alameda)

I, Charles Eugene MAURER of lawful age, being duly sworn, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of two pages, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Charles E. Maurer

Subscribed and sworn to before me this Sixth day of October, 1945, at Oakland, California.

/s/ F. M. Robinson
 (Rank) Lieutenant, U.S.M.R.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA)
) SS.
 County of Alameda)

I, Lieut. F.M. ROBINSON, U.S.M.R. certify that (Name) Charles Eugene Maurer, (Rank) Corporal, USMC 289960, personally appeared before me on the Sixth day of October, 1945, and testified concerning war crimes, and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by (him: xxx) to the several questions set forth.

Place: Oakland, California

Date: 6 October 1945

F. M. Robinson

Pages 2 of 3 pages.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

/s/ Edwin F. Svare
EDWIN F. SVARE
 1st Lt., Inf.

~~RESTRICTED~~

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

~~RESTRICTED~~

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA)
) SS.
County of Alameda)

I, Charles Eugene MAURER of lawful age, being duly sworn, state that I have read the foregoing transcription of my interrogation, consisting of two pages, and that all answers contained therein are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

/s/ Charles E. Maurer

Subscribed and sworn to before me this Sixth day of October, 1945, at Oakland, California.

/s/ F. M. Robinson
(Rank) Lieutenant, U.S.N.R.

STATE OF CALIFORNIA)
) SS.
County of Alameda)

I, Lieut. F.M. ROBINSON, U.S.N.R. certify that (Name) Charles Eugene Maurer, (Rank) Corporal, USMC 239960, personally appeared before me on the Sixth day of October, 1945, and testified concerning war crimes, and that the foregoing is an accurate transcription of the answers given by (him: xxx) to the several questions set forth.

Place: Oakland, California

Date: 6 October 1945 F. M. Robinson

Pages 2 of 3 pages.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

/s/ Edwin F. Svaro
EDWIN F. SVARO
1st Lt., Inf.

~~RESTRICTED~~

RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

文書番號 八〇六五

／チャールズ／ユーゲン／モーラー／伍長／
ユ／エス／エム／シー／

／CHARLES／EUGENE／HAUSER／J／S／M／C／

連續番號二八九九六〇デアリマス。私ハ一九四二年
五月六日、比島／フオート・ヒューズ／ニ於テ日
本軍ニヨリ逮捕サレマシタ。FOUR EUGENES／

私ハ一九四二年六月廿八日カラ同年十一月六日迄
カバネトワン／ニ収容サレテ居リマシタ。ソレ
／CABANAFUAN／カラ、日本ニ送ラレ一九四二年十一月廿七日カラ

一九四五年五月廿日迄、大阪ノ梅田俘虜收容所ニ送ラ
收容サレテ居マシタ。ソレカラ私ハ日本ノ敦賀俘虜收容所ニ送ラ

レ其處デ一九四五年八月迄拘留留致シマシタ。私ハ一九四五年十月五
日米國ニ到着致シマシタ。日米國ニ到着致シマシタ。私ハ一九四五年十月五
日米國ニ到着致シマシタ。私ハ一九四五年十月五
日米國ニ到着致シマシタ。私ハ一九四五年十月五

問。貴方ハ日本人ニヨリ收容サレテ居タ期間中、
拷問、殴打、又ハ何カ其ノ他ノ虐待行爲ヲ目
撃シマシタカ。

答。私ハ大阪ノ梅田俘虜收容所及ビ後ニ敦賀ニ居
タ期間ニモ日本人ノ監視ニ依ツテ行ハレタ幾
多ノ殴打ヲ目撃致シマシタ。大阪ニハ、殆メ
四五八名ガ收容サレテ居マシタ。最初ノ四箇
月間ニ、粗末ナ食糧ト毎天露シトノ爲ニ一二
〇名ガ死亡致シマシタ。私共ノ食糧ハ一日、
一人當リ五七〇瓦デアツテ、ソレハ仕事ヲス
ル男子達ニハ適量ダトハ云ヘマセンデシタ。

EX 1967

Doc 8065 *

1.

EX 1967

Doc 8065 *

文管番號 八〇六五

／チャールズ／ユージェン／モーラー／伍長／

ユ／エス／エム／シー／

／CHARLES／EUGENE／MAURER／U.S.M.C.／

連戦番號二八九九六〇デアリマス。私ハ一九四二年

五月六日、比島／フオート、ヒューズ／ニ於テ日

本軍ニヨリ逮捕サレマシタ。HOGH HUGHES

私ハ一九四二年六月廿八日カラ同年十一月六日迄

カバアトリン／ニ収容サレテ居リマシタ。ソレ

カラ、日本ニ送ラレ一九四二年十一月廿七日カラ

一九四五年五月廿日迄、大阪ノ海軍府収容所ニ

收容サレテ居マシタ。ソレカラ私ハ日本ノ教養所収容所ニ送ラ

レ其處デ一九四五年八月迄留置シマシタ。私ハ一九四五年十月五

日米國ニ到着シマシタ。

問。貴方ハ日本人ニヨリ收容サレテ居タ期間中、
拷問、殴打、又ハ何か其ノ他ノ虐行爲ヲ目
撃シマシタカ。

答。私ハ大阪ノ海軍府収容所及ヒ後ニ教養ニ居

タ期間ニモ日本人ノ監視ニ依ツテ行ハレタ幾

多ノ殴打ヲ目撃シマシタ。大阪ニハ、殆メ

四五八名が收容サレテ居マシタ。最初ノ四箇

月間ニ、糧米ヲ食糧ト見天候シトノ爲ニ一二

〇名が死亡致シマシタ。私共ノ食糧ハ一日、

一人當リ五七〇瓦デアツテ、ソレハ仕事ヲス

ル男子達ニハ適量トハ云ヘマセンデシタ。

1.

Doc 8065

2.

若シ、貴方が働カテカツタラ、此ノ配給ハ減
ゼラレ、又、病院ニ於テハ、終リ頃ニハ病人
ハ一日食料三〇〇瓦ノミヲ給與サレマシタ。
日本人ハ衣服ノ方面ニ於テハ殆ド給與ヲ蒙シ
マセンナシタ。私ガ敗寇サレテ居タ間、私ガ
保温又ハ其ノ様ナ性質ノ意味ヲ待ル事ノ出来
タ唯一ノ衣服ハ米俵赤十字用ノ緑色仕立服一
着及若干ノ帽子ト手袋デアリマシタ。私共ハ
又若干ノ日本軍用被褥ヲ給與サレマシタガ、
ソレハ粗末ナモノデア、中首品デアリマシタ。
大阪ニ於テ吾々等ガ付草物等内ニ於テ荷物
ヲ降ロス仕事ヲサセフレ、其ノ荷物ノ若干ハ
日本民間人ニ贈ルモノデアリマシタガ、其
ノ大部分ハ日本陸軍用ノモノデアリマシタ。
ソシテ被褥ハ私共ハ、蒲団カラ日本へ送ラ
レタ日本陸軍用被褥ノ荷降シノ爲淡止揚ニ
於テ就役セシメサレマシタ。上述ノ等柄ハ、
何故、益ム事ガ出来ル機会ノアル毎ニ食糧並
ニ衣服ヲ益ム必要カツタカラ既因スル爲ニ
申シ述べマス。マタ大阪ニ於テハウイフ機
會ガ屢々アリマシタ。然ルニ私共ガ捕ヘラレ
ルト、監視ハ私共ヲ限リマシタ。私ハ一屢以
上扱サレマシタ。大阪アハ特ニ、二名ノ監視

Doc 8065 ★

2.

若シ、貴方が備カアカツタラ、此ノ配給ハ減
セラレ、又、病院ニ於テハ、終リ頃ニハ病人
ハ一日食糧三〇〇瓦ノミヲ給與ツレマシタ。
日本人ハ衣服ノ方面ニ於テハ殆下給與ヲ欲シ
マセンナシタ。私ガ救急ツレテ居タ間、私ガ
保温又ハ其ノ様ナ性質ノ意味ヲ得ル事ノ出来
タ唯一ノ衣類ハ米野赤十字会ノ緑色仕立服一
着及若干ノ帽子ト手袋デアリマシタ。私共ハ
又若干ノ日本軍用衣服ヲ給與ツレマシタガ、
ソレハ粗末ナモノデ、中古品デアリマシタ。
大阪ニ於テ軍々等處ハ付草物等内ニ於テ荷物
ヲ解ロス仕事ヲサセラレ、其ノ荷物ノ若干ハ
日本民間人ニ贈ルモノデアリマシタガ、其
ノ大部分ハ日本軍用ノモノデアリマシタ。
ソシテ救急テハ私共ハ、精刻カラ日本へ送ラ
レタ日本軍用被褥類ノ荷解シノ爲波止場ニ
於テ就役セシメラレマシタ。上述ノ等柄ハ、
何故、益ム事ガ出来ル機会ノアル毎ニ食糧並
ニ衣服ヲ益ム必要カアツタカラ説明スル爲ニ
申シ述べマス。マタ大阪ニ於テハウイフ松
會ガ屢々デアリマシタ。然ルニ私共ガ捕ヘラレ
ルト、監視ハ私共ヲ以リマシタ。私ハ一度以
上捕ラレマシタ。大阪アハ特ニ、二名ノ監視

Doc 8065 *

3.

が毘打シマシタ。私ハ彼等ノ名前モ姓名モ想
 ヒ出スコトが出来マス。其ノ一人ノ監視ハ
 マリヤマ / MARIYAMA / ト云フ者デ、豫備役デ
 後ニ現役トナツタ時ハ曹長アアリマシタ。
 マリヤマ / MARIYAMA / ハ約三〇才デ、等口
 細腰ノ方デ、日本人トシテハ中背丈デシタ。
 私ノ想像デハ五呎二吋カラ五呎四吋位ダト思
 ヒマス。彼ハドチラカト書ヘバ好男子型ノ白
 本人デシタ。彼ハ、俘虜ラシテ氣ヲ附ネシテ
 直立セシメタリ、膝ヲ折ラスト云フ様ナ、ア
 ル不愉快ア發カシテ波ラセ若シ幼カウモノナラ
 俘虜ソ平手テツグマシタ。彼ハ、時トシ
 テハ又、志ラケ、長サ二呎、且徑一時カラ一
 時半ハアツタト思ハレル様ヲ用ヒマシタ。
 彼ハ、長々俘虜ノ顔ガ黒レ、兩眼ガ黒腫スル
 程、毘リマシタ。モリ一名ノ監視ハ / ロー /
 ゲリツグ / GERRITZ / ト姓名デシタ。常ニ
 俘虜ヲ監視ア際ツテキタカラデス。彼ハ俘虜
 ガマイツテシマハアイ様ニ注意シテ、俘虜ヲ
 選ンテ居タ様ニ想ヘマシタ。 / ロー / ゲリツ
 グ / GERRITZ / ハ約三五才位デ、太ツテ居
 テ、背丈ハ五呎カラ五呎半時位デアリマシタ
 彼ハ正規ノ陸軍軍人デ身背デアリマシタ。

Doc 8065 #

彼ハ一九四五年二月頃東京ニ轉任サセラレマシタ。

彼ニ於テハ、最も意地ノ志イ監獄ハ、木村（宛字）/HEICHA/ト云フ男ア「サデスト」/SADIST/不傳名サレテ居マシタ。彼ハ、三五才位ノ男ア、約、五與徑ノ背丈ア、大癩癩身ノ体ツキマシタ。彼ハ緑偏屈草曹マシタ。彼ノ右ノ手ハ世ノ常ノ手アハアリマセンデシタ。彼ハ、手ヲ以テ十五分カラ二〇分間人ヲ殴ル事ガ出来、而モ處ニハ何ノ加ミモ感シナイト云ツタ風マシタ。彼ハ處ヲマルテ、進福ノ旅ニ使ヒマシタ。大匠並ニ以實ニ於ケル停勝收養所長ハ日本皇軍中尉、姓ハ（宛字）/HEIBA/デアリ、英ノ君ハアル場合ニハ然打スル事ヲ命ジ、又、英ノ他ノ以打ノ時ニモ居合セテキマシタ。

問。日本ニ於ケル際トシテ貴方ハ實テ爆撃ノ危険並ニ其他戦争ノ危険ニ歸ツタ事ガアリマシタカ。

答。アリマシタ。前邊ノ通り私共ハ英攻撃ノ目標アツタ大匠ノ領地内ニ被撃サセラレテ居リマシタ。一九四五年三月十三日、數個ノ爆撃が大匠ヲ私共ノ居ル二ツノ町内ニ落テ

4.

Doc 8065*

5.

マシタ。私共ハ、五月中、ヨリ安全ダカラト
イフノテ敷賃ニ移サレルト云ハレマシタガ、
私共ガ、兵艦ノ決止切及ビ端知シ見タラ、私
共ハ夏ニ燦燦園内ニアルコトヲ知リマシタ。此
ノ事ハ勘待シテ盾ヲ通り使至減シマシタ。
一九四五年七月十二日翌朝私共ノ居タ
兵舎ハ焼キ拂ハレマシタ。ソコヲ私共ハ、決
止場ノ裏上ノ倉庫ニ移サレ兵艦ヲ震撃ト致シ
マシタ。決止場地區ハ七月三十一日爆撃ノ目
標トナリ、私共モ焼撃サレマシタ。七月三十
一日ノ夜ニ後、私共ハ其ノ町ノ他ノ町ノ地區
ニ移サレマシタ。私共ノ居タ所ノ地區ハ一
九四五年八月八日焼撃サレタ初級工場ノ隣リ
ナリマシタ。

C. # 1148

Doc. No. 8104*

Page 1 *

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL FOR THE FAR EAST

No. 1

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, and ocs.

- AGAINST -

ARAKI, SADAQ, and ocs.

I, ALEXANDER MEREDITH, of Sydney in the State of New South Wales, make oath and say as follows:-

1. I was an engineer officer on H.V. Hauraki which was captured by the Japanese in the Indian Ocean on 12 July 1942.
2. I arrived at Camp D1 Yokohama in January 1943. There were approximately 500 prisoners there. Conditions were very bad; more than 50 per cent were sick mostly with dysentery and malaria. Later beri beri developed.
3. We were employed in the Yokohama Mitsubishi Shipyards as maintenance fitters. We left for work at 6.30 a.m. and got back to camp about 5 p.m. each day. Sick men were forced to work and in the first 3 or 4 months 45 men died from pneumonia and malnutrition. With adequate medical supplies, proper food and clothing and medical treatment these men would not have died.
4. Food was at all times inadequate and in the summer of 1943 the meagre rations were reduced by about one half. The result was that beri beri became prevalent and practically everyone suffered from malnutrition.
5. Bashings were frequent and on many occasions we were made to stand up after work for periods of one hour to four hours. Sick men were beaten; on some occasions they were dragged from their bunks and beaten with fists and rifle butts. One American who was ill and had been beaten by the Japanese guards died about 2 days later.

Sworn before me at Sydney
on the fifth day of September 1946.

/s/ A. Meredith

/s/ A.J. Hansfield
Judge of Supreme Court of Queensland.

EXHIBIT NO. 1948A

Doc 8104

三頁八二〇番

報、「ニユー・サウス・ウエルズ」「ソドニー」
市、「アレグザンダー・ヌルチス」ハ左列ノ次
ノ期ク取進ス。

一私ハ一九四二年七月十二日即ち洋上テ日本ニ
ヨリ拿捕サレタM. V. 「ハルマキ」ノ機中
行時被テアツタ。

二私ハ一九四三年一月念三日即ち機中ニ閉禁シタ。
其時ニハ機中ノ船ノ在時ガキタ。機中ノ禁
制ニ懸カツタ。且〇パーセント以上ガ主トシ
テ赤十字「マラリヤ」トニ罹ツタキタ。此ニ
ナツテカラ即ち被テアツタ。

三私進ハ機中三機進船中ニ閉禁被テ工トシテ被
ハレタ。私進ハ機中毎日午間六時三十分在時ニ行
キ午後五時即ち機中ニ被ツタ。是時キ無罪ニ
被カサレテ、最初ノ三、四ヶ月ノ間ニ、四十
五人ガ肺炎ト染病不具ノ為死シタ。進船六日
淋病ヤ進船ア食食ト酒禁ガアツタナラ此等ノ
者ハ死ナ、カツタテアラシ。

三九三
FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

2.

Doc 8104 A

カツカ 艦船ヲ 艦半舟ニ 割ラサレタ。ソノ 結果
 風氣ガ 流行シタリ、 殆ソド 凡テガ 乗員不貞ニ
 罹ツテ 屠タ。

兵 隊ヲ 入庭スアツタ。ソシテ 沙シクノ 場合 秘道ハ
 社等ノ 後ヲ一 時間カ テ 通過 時間モ 五タサレタ。

病人ハ 以テ 打サレタ。 残ル 時ハ 彼等ハ 病床カラ
 ヒキテ 出サレテ 學ヤ 病床ヲ 以ラレタ。 残ル
 病氣ノ アメリカ人ハ 日云ノ 病兵ニ 限打サレテ

約三日 経ツテ 死亡シタ。

WESTERN FRONT OFFICES.BOARD OF ENQUIRY.BEFORE HIS HONOURABLE JUSTICE PHELPS.

VV. 60320, L/Sgt. FREDERICK GADBY, 3th Div. Intelligence
Section, Private address "Chandona" Tylden,
Victoria.

Sworn and Examined:-

I was captured after the fall of Singapore and taken to Chengri Camp. On 14th. May, 1942 I went with A Force into Burma. I travelled on the Toyohashi Maru, on which conditions were bad.

At Tavoy we were marched 28 miles to an aerodrome. Several deaths resulted from this march among men who had dysentery, which had become prevalent during the voyage.

At the aerodrome at Tavoy 8 men escaped and were recaptured three days later. Two of these men were named Quittenden (a Warrant Officer of the 4th Anti Tank Regiment) and Danagher (who I think was in the Anti Tank Regiment). Despite Brig. Varley's intervention all the eight men were executed. I know of this from Brig. Varley and from members of the burial party. The officer responsible was Lieut. Chinn.

18 KILO.
(HLEPAUK)

I later went to Thanbyuzayat, and later again to 18 Kilo (Hlepauk). At this camp Sgt. Ronald McDonald 2/20th Field Regiment, was fatally shot by a guard known to us as Dillinger.

Dillinger's story was that he had shot McDonald while McDonald was escaping. I know from members of McDonald's working party that McDonald had no intention of escaping. At the time he was shot the only clothing he had on was a pair of shorts. He had no footwear. He was carrying nothing but a parang. He had other clothing, including boots and a pack, in the camp, and if he had intended to escape he no doubt would have been more properly equipped than he was.

Dillinger seemed to be subnormal, even for a Japanese.

Our Medical Officer, Capt. Richards was not allowed to examine McDonald's body. The Regimental Aid Post Sergeant, Armstrong, who prepared the body for burial found in it one bullet wound from which bleeding had occurred and two bullet wounds from which there was no bleeding. Apparently these two latter bullet wounds were made after death in order to support Dillinger's story that McDonald had endeavoured to escape.

GIB/CP/1-

1.

L/Sgt. A.F. CADDY.
 25/1/46.

The Japanese Commander was Corporal, later Sergeant, Panama. I later went to Camp 35 Kilo, 60 Kilo and 70 Kilo. From 60 Kilo on, the tasks upon which we were employed, line building, were increased and we were forced to work 24 hour shifts; that is to say, twenty four hours on and twenty four hours off, and as the camp was a good distance from the line, these men in 48 hour work periods had only about 18 hours in camp.

Although our Doctors reported men sick, the Japanese over-rode this and forced men to work.

I later went to 131 Kilo. At this camp Sergeant J.P. Lynch, 2/15th. Field Regiment was beaten to insensibility by a Korean Guard, Aria. I heard him being beaten. He was punished for not being on guard duty. In fact, he had gone to wake up his relief, when Aria arrived. Colonel Anderson and Captain Drower protested against this beating and they themselves were also beaten up by Aria. The matter was reported by Colonel Anderson and Colonel Shomso. The complaint was forwarded to the Lieut. Col in charge of No. 3 Thai Prisoner of War Camp. Aria was returned to the base camp allegedly to be disciplined but on his return from the base camp his behaviour continued as before. This man was responsible for I should say, one half of the beatings which occurred and was the worst Japanese with whom I came into contact.

Sergeant Lynch died a week after this beating and I attribute his death partly to it.

I later went to Kanduri in January 1944 and remained there until June 1944. This camp was placed near a large dump and railway station.

I later went to Rice Valley Road, Singapore, and was there put to work loading military stores including ammunition. One Dutch prisoner of war was killed by a shell, which he was carrying, exploding. My informant is Sapper Hollaman, 2/12th Field Coy R.A.E., New South Wales.

On the 15th December I embarked for Japan on the "Awa Maru". The conditions on board were very bad. The space allowed being only 6 cubic feet per man.

During the voyage two submarine alarms occurred, each of about 2 hour's duration. During both periods of alarm the P.O.'s were locked in.

In Japan (December 1944) we landed at MOJI and were taken thence to Sendeyu. At this camp the Commander was Lieut. Hayashi.

Accommodation: The accommodation consisted of wood and lathe huts. We slept on rice floor mats. We were given plenty of blankets and the space was adequate.

Medical & Hygiene: At this camp there were four Japanese Medical Officers in succession when I was there. The first of these was responsible for the death of certainly one man by refusing to allow Capt. Higgins of the 2/4th. C.C.S. to give him any attention.

The man who died through lack of attention was Lance Corporal Ronald Banks of the Aust. Army Med. Corps. The Japanese Medical Officer was a Staff Sergeant and he persistently refused to allow our doctor to give any medical attention to sick men. I do not know the name of this Staff Sergeant.

Food: The food at first was adequate, the issue of rice being 20 ounces a day, but later it got worse until three weeks before the cessation of hostilities men who were working were allowed only 12 ounces of rice and the sick only 8 ounces of rice. Plus in each case of about 1½ ounces of dried fish and vegetable. The Japanese enforced this division of food between those working and the sick through the cook house, despite our Medical Officers' protests.

Clothing: The clothing issued to us was adequate.

Work: Men were engaged in mining coal.

General: At this camp beatings were frequent but were not severe. Lieut. Hayashi on one occasion confiscated 8 Red Cross parcels from a party of Englishmen for an imaginary cause. I heard from P.O.'s working in the cookhouse that the contents of tins bearing Red Cross markings had been used by the Japanese Guard.

From the treatment meted out at all the camps it was clear that the Japanese policy as carried out by various Camp Commanders and their subordinates was to keep P.O.W.'s in a low state of health and morale by keeping them short of food and by severe treatment and humiliation.

This is the third and last page of the evidence of L/Sgt. Arnold Fraser Caddy taken and sworn before me at Melbourne in the State of Victoria on the 25th Day of January, 1946.

A. Fraser Caddy (sgd)
Deponent

R. Philp (sgd)
Member,
Australian Board of Inquiry
into War Crimes.

GIB/CR/1-

3. L/Sgt. A. F. CADDY,
25/1/46.

Doc. 8203

書類 第六三〇三号

認識番号 V X 六三三〇 軍醫部 陸軍省 陸軍省 陸軍省
「SENDEY」
宣達心 認問セリ

日本ニ於テハ一九四四年十二月 我々ハ門司ニ墜入シ「SENDEY」
テ「SENDEY」ニ連テ行カシ。此ノ收容所テハ所
長ハ林中尉デアツ。

醫 療 と 衛 生

2X 1949

此ノ收容所テハ私等々時ニ引續キ四人、日本人軍医ハ
ナシ。此ノ中、最初、一人ノ傷ヲ對戰豫備病院ニテ
大尉ニ或男、看護ヲセシ事ヲ拒絶シ、カス確カニ一名、
死亡ニ對シ責任ガアツ。

看護ヲ受テラシ又為ニ死ニテ、男ハ豫洲軍兵器部、兵長
「ホルト・ハックス」デアツ。日本人軍医ハ軍曹「Staff」
「Sergeant」デアツ。彼ノ頑固ニ我々、醫者ニ病人ニ對シ医
療ヲ施サセシ事ヲ拒絶シ、私ハ、軍曹「Staff Sergeant」、姓名
ヲ知ラズ。

食 物

☆

No. /

食物ハ最初ハ充分デアリ、米、支給ハ一日ニテ「Staff」ガ
後ニ次第ニ悪クナリ、終戦、三週間亦迄ハ働キナ
者ハ僅カニ十二オニス、米ヲ支給セ、病人ハ僅カニ八オニス

Doc.

8203

米の支給を中止せしむることは如何なる場合にも
不承、干島と野采が支給せしむ。日本軍の軍醫の抗議
を以て炊事場を通過し働ける者、病人、肉、食物、區別
を実施せしむ。

一般事項

此、收容所ニ於テハ殴打ハ屢々行ハレテ酷クハナカシク
林中尉ハ一度架空、理由ヲ以テ英國人ハ一隊ヲシテ赤十字ノ小
包ヲ八個沒收シタ。私ハ赤十字ノ印アル罐詰、宇味ハ
日本軍衛兵ニヨリ使用セシテ其ノ炊事場ニ働イテ其ノ
俘虏達カラ聞イタ。
總ツテ、收容所ニ於テ行ハルコトノ待遇カラ判断シテ諸君、
收容所長、並ニソノ部下達ニヨツテ實施セシメ如キ日本、
亦策ハ食糧不足ニシテ置ク事ト酷イ待遇侮辱トニヨツテ
俘虏達ヲ悪イ健康状態ニシテオキソノ士氣ヲ衰ハセテオ
クニアル事ハ明瞭デアリス。

Doc.

8203

米を支給せしむるに、場合三約一五
不ス、干魚ト野菜を支給せしむ。日本軍、軍醫、抗議
ニ拘ハス、炊事場ヲ通シ、働ク者、病人、肉、食物、區別
ヲ実施シタ。

一般事項

此、收容所ニ於テハ、殴打、辱キ、テアツタ、酷クハナカッタ。
林中尉ハ一度架空、理由ヲ以テ英國人、一隊ヲシ、赤十字ノ小
包ヲ八個沒收シタ。私ハ赤十字、印アル罐詰、芋味が
日本軍衛兵ニヨリ使用サレタ、事ヲ炊事場ニ働イテシタ
俘虜達カラ聞イタ。
總ベテ、收容所ニ於テ行ハルタ待遇カラ判断シテ、諸
收容所長、並ニソノ部下達ニヨツテ、実施サレタ、如キ日本、
才策ハ食糧不足ニシテ置ク事ト酷イ待遇侮辱トニヨツテ
俘虜達ヲ悪イ健康状態ニシテオキソ、士氣ヲ衰ヘサセテオ
クニアル事ハ明瞭デアリス。

I, [Francis J. Murray, Major, Royal Army Medical Corps of 95, Cliftonville Road, Belfast, Northern Ireland,] aged 21 years and upwards make oath and say as follows:-

On 2nd December, 1939, I received my Commission in the R.A.M.C. and went into training at Crookham Camp, Aldershot, where I remained until 9th January, 1940, when I was drafted overseas to India. I served there from 30th January, 1940, until 5th April, 1941, when I was drafted to Malaya. I served with that Command until the fall of Singapore on 15th February, 1942, when I was taken prisoner of war by the Japanese. I remained in Singapore P.O. Camp until 15th May, 1943, when I was sent to Japan.

I arrived at No. 1 Branch Camp, Hakodate, on 16th June, 1943, in company with about four hundred co-prisoners of whom thirty-five were American and the remainder British. Shortly after arrival we were interviewed by the Japanese Camp Commandant, one Lieutenant K. Hirate, accompanied by an interpreter.

There were about five hundred prisoners in the camp during the time I was there, though this number varied at times on account of drafts coming and going. The food at the camp was entirely inadequate, clothing was poor, medical supplies were practically nil and sanitation was bad. There was a camp hospital capable of accommodating thirty patients and I was placed in charge of same. At that time there was only a Dutch doctor named Lieutenant B. Lutter and myself doctors amongst the prisoners.

Amongst the British prisoners in the Camp I knew No. 1873307, Sapper Glover, E., Royal Engineers, Singapore Fortress, aged 37 years, who had also been taken prisoner at Singapore and whom I had treated for diarrhoea.

One evening on or about 30th December, 1943, he returned to the barrack-room from work and complained to me about a pain in his left knee. I examined the knee which was swollen and told him to go to bed. He did so.

There was Roll Call each night at 8 p.m. Sergt. Arake took the parade that night. A certain incident occurred in the barrack-room that night between Sergt. Arake and Sapper Glover which I did not witness but which was witnessed by Private W. P. Byrne, Manchester Regiment, and Sergt. Major Barlowe, Royal Corps of Signals.

I again examined Sapper Glover's knee the following day and diagnosed acute osteo-myelitis which required an immediate operation. I at once saw the Camp Commandant, Lieut. K. Hirate, and Sergt. Arake. I informed them of Sapper Glover's condition and explained that an immediate operation was necessary to save the man's life. I asked them to have Sapper Glover removed to a local factory hospital which was only about four hundred yards away from the camp and which had full operating facilities including a large theatre with surgical instruments and anaesthetics, but they refused to do so. I then asked for permission to have the necessary surgical instruments brought into the camp in order that I might perform the operation myself, but they also declined to agree to this.

Sapper Glover's condition deteriorated and he died on 3rd January, 1944.

I had been directed by the Camp Commandant to make a report in connection with the deaths of all prisoners in the camp embodying a history of the disease, course of illness, treatment,

and finally, the cause of death. I did so in this case and stated the cause of death as "acute osteomyelitis". I handed this report to the Camp Commandant and he made no alterations or comment in my presence.

There were no prisoners died in No. 1 Branch Camp, Hakodate, named Vandarian or Jelliencan during the time I was there and I did not know either of these two men.

At this time there were no medicines in the camp apart from those supplied by the Japanese Quartermaster Department. There was no resident Japanese doctor in the camp, but a Lt. Shiba, who was a qualified doctor, was appointed to act at all the P.O.W. Camps around Hakodate. He lived at the headquarter camp and periodically visited our camp about every three months.

The medicine was distributed as follows:- Every three days a Japanese medical Sergeant held a so-called sick parade. The sick of the camp were paraded one by one before him and if he considered it necessary he issued a chit for a very small quantity of medicine which was then issued from the Japanese Medical Store in the camp. The medicines were issued originally from the Medical Quartermaster Department to the Medical Store in camp. I was not issued personally with any medical supplied by the Japanese and did not receive any until the American Red Cross supplies arrived in November, 1944.

The Japanese medical Sergeant referred to, one Sergeant Arake, and a Private Terebyash, at the end of each month compelled several prisoners to sign hundreds of chits for medicines which had not been issued. I have seen these men take supplies of medicine out of the camp which, no doubt, they sold or gave to their friends and thus accounted for the deficiencies to their authorities.

Save where otherwise appears I make the foregoing of my own personal knowledge.

(sgd.) Francis J. Murray
Deponent

Sworn at 71, Donegall Street, Belfast, in the County of the City of Belfast, this 23rd day of January, 1946, before me a Commissioner to administer Oaths for the Supreme Court of Judicature in Northern Ireland, in and for said County and I know the Deponent.

(sgd.) John J. Magee
Commissioner of Oaths

I certify that this is a true copy of the original affidavit.

E. Beaton Capt. (sgd.)
E. Beaton
Legal Staff,
Office of the Judge Advocate General.

Ex 1950

Doc 8119

種類第八二九號

北愛爾・ベルファスト、クリフトンヴァイル路九五
ノ王國陸軍軍醫少佐フランシス・J・マール

>>>>>>>>XXXXXX

私ハ一九四三年六月十六日ニ米國兵ガ三十五名、
其ノ他ハ英國兵ノ約四百名ノ同ジ俘虜ト共ニ函館
ノ第一俘虜收容支所ニ到着シタ。到着後間モナク日
本人ノ收容所長五平手ノ音譯ノトカ言フ中尉カ通譯
ヲ伴ヒ私ニ面接シタ。

私カキタ間收容所ニハ約五百名ノ俘虜ガキタ、モ
ツトモ此ノ數ニハ選抜隊ガ出入リシタ爲ニ屢々増減
ガアツタ。收容所ニ於ケル食糧ハ全般的ニ不充分テ
衣料ハ乏シク治療品ハ事實上皆無、衛生施設ハ不良
デアツタ。患者三十名ヲ收容出來ル收容所病院ガア
ツテ私ハ同病院ヲ委囑サレタ。其ノ當時俘虜ノ中ニ
患者ハ「B・ルツター」中尉ト言フ名ノ和蘭人ノ齒
者ト私トカキタダケデアツタ。

收容所ニキタ英國人俘虜ノ中テ私ハ「シンカボ」
ル「英皇王國工兵隊工兵、三十七オニナル一八七三
三九七番一サツパー、グロ「ザア」ヲ見識ツタ。

Ex 1950

Doc 8119

書類第八二九號

北愛爾・ベルファスト、クリフトンヅイル陸九五
ノ 王國陸軍軍醫少佐 フランシス・J・マール

>>>>>>>>> X X X X X X X

私ハ一九四三年六月十六日ニ米國兵ガ三十五名、
其ノ他ハ英國兵ノ約四百名ノ同ジ俘虜ト共ニ函館
ノ第一俘虜收容支所ニ到着シタ。到着後間モナク日
本人ノ收容所長ニ平手ノ晉譯ノトカ言フ中尉カ通譯
ヲ件ヒ私ニ面接シタ。

私カキタ間收容所ニハ約五百名ノ俘虜ガキタ、モ
ツトモ此ノ數ニハ選抜隊カ出入リシタ爲ニ屢々増減
カアツタ。收容所ニ於ケル食糧ハ全般的ニ不充分テ
衣料ハ乏シク且藥品ハ事實上皆無、衛生施設ハ不良
デアツタ。患者三十名ヲ收容出來ル收容所病院ガア
ツテ私ハ同病院ヲ委嘱サレタ。其ノ當時俘虜ノ中ニ
患者ハ「B・ルツター」中尉ト言フ名ノ和蘭人ノ醫
者ト私トカキタダケデアツタ。

收容所ニキタ英國人俘虜ノ中テ私ハ「シンガポ
ル」要塞王國工兵隊工兵、三十七オニナル「一八七三
三九七番」サツバ「グロウア」ヲ見識ツタ。

Dec 8/19

彼ハ亦以前ニ「シンガポール」テ停職ニナリ、私ハ
彼ニ下痢ノ治療ヲシテヤツタコトカアツタノデアル。

一九四三年十二月三十日カソノ朝後ノ或ル晩ニ、
作業カラ昼會ニ歸ソテ彼ハ私ニ左膝ノ痛ミヲ訴ヘタ。
私ハソノ膝ヲ診察シ腫レテモタノテ彼ニ驚嘆スルヤ
ウニ言ツタ。彼ハソウシタ。

毎夜午後八時ニ點呼カアツタ。一アラケ「軍曹カ
ソノ夜勤時ヲトツタ。ソノ夜、報告テ一アラケ「軍曹
ト「サツパ・グロ・ヴァー」ノ間ニ或ル事件カ起
リ、ソレヲ私ハ目撃シナカツタカ、一マンチユスタ
「一聯隊ノ「W・P・バーン」一兵卒ト王臣通信隊
ノ「ハーロウ」曹長カ目撃シタ。

私ハ翌日再ビ「サツパ・グロ・ヴァー」ノ膝ヲ
診察シ、患部手術ヲ要スル急性骨炎ト診断シタ。私
ハ直チニ收容所長K・平手ノ音譯ノ中尉ト「一アラケ」
軍曹ニ會ツタ。私ハ彼等ニ「サツパ・グロ・ヴァ
ー」ノ容態ヲ報告シ、人命ヲ救フ爲ニ應急手術カ必
要ナルコトヲ説明シタ。私ハ「サツパ・グロ・ヴァ
ー」ラサル地方工場ノ病院ニ移スコトヲ彼等ニ求
メタ。其ノ病院ハ收容所カラ四百騎位シカ離レテ居
ラズ、其處ニハ外科用具イ麻酔劑ヲ設ヘタ候イ手術
室カアツテ充分ニ手術カ出來ルヤウニサツテモタノ

Dec 8/19

彼ハ亦以前ニ「シンガポール」ヲ管理ニナリ、私ハ
 彼ニ下痢ノ治療ヲシテヤツタコトカアツタノデアアル。
 一九四三年十二月三十日カソノ朝後ノ或ル院ニ、
 作業カラ暇會ニ歸ソテ彼ハ私ニ左膝ノ痛ミヲ訴ヘタ。
 私ハソノ膝ヲ診察シ腫レテキタノテ彼ニ慰養スルヤ
 ウニ言ツタ。彼ハソウシタ。
 毎夜午後八時ニ歸ルカアツタ。一アラケ「軍曹」ガ
 ソノ夜歸時ヲトツタ。ソノ夜「管」テ一アラケ「軍曹」
 ト一「サツパ」・「グローヴ」ア「一」ノ間ニ或ル事件カ起
 リ、ソレヲ私ハ目撃シナカツタカ「一」マンチエスタ
 「一」聯隊ノ「W・P・バーン」一兵卒ト王國通信隊
 ノ「ハーロウ」曹長カ目撃シタ。
 私ハ翌日再ビ「サツパ」・「グローヴ」ア「一」ノ膝ヲ
 診察シ、患患手術ヲ要スル恙性有矣ト診斷シタ。私
 ハ直チニ收容所長K・平手ノ音譯ノ中尉ト一アラケ「
 軍曹」ニ會ツタ。私ハ彼等ニ「サツパ」・「グローヴ」ア
 「一」ノ容態ヲ報告シ、人命ヲ救フ爲ニ應急手術カ必
 要ナルコトヲ説明シタ。私ハ「サツパ」・「グローヴ」
 ア「一」ヲサル地方工場ノ病院ニ私スコトヲ彼等ニ求
 メタ。其ノ病院ハ收容所カラ四百騎位シカ離レテ居
 ラズ、其處ニハ外科用具ヤ麻酔藥ヲ設ヘタ良イ手術
 室カアツテ充分ニ手術カ出來ルヤウニサツテキタノ

2.

Dec 8/19 4

ラアル。シカシ彼等ハソレヲ拒絶シタ。私ハソコテ
私自 島ヲ手術ヲ出来ルヤウニ、必要ナ外科用具ヲ
收容所ニ持ツテ來サセル許可ヲ求メタ。シカシ彼等
ハ之ニモ同意シナカツタ。

「サツパ」・「グロイザ」ノ谷息ハ票化シ、彼
ハ一九四四年一月三日ニ死亡シタ。

XXXXXXXXXXXX

此ノ時ニハ收容所ニハ日本軍總司令部ニヨル支給品
以外ニ付薬ハナカツタ。收容所ニハ任ミ込ミノ日本
人醫者ハキナカツタカ新波ノ音譯ノ中尉トカ言フ有
資格ノ醫者カ函館側ノ各停泊收容所ヲ診ルヤウ任
命サレタ。彼ハ司令部ニ任シテモテ定期的ニ私達ノ
收容所ニ三月目毎位ニ來タノアル。

上薬ハ次ノ様ニシテ支給サレタ。即チ、三日毎ニ
日本軍衛生軍曹カ所請恩老點時ヲヤツタ。收容所ノ
病人ハ一人ヅツ彼ノ前ニ立タサレ、彼カ必要ナリト
認メタ場合ニ彼ハ積ク少量ノ上薬ノ傳票ヲ發行シ、
ソレニヨツテ收容所内ノ日本軍醫務室カラ付薬ガ支
給サレタ。ソノ上薬ハ前以テ衛生軍材補給部カラ收
容所ノ上薬室ニ支給サレテモテアル。私ハ直接

3.

Dec 8/19 4

ニハ衛生資材ハ日本人ニ何一ツ支給シテモラツタコ
トカナク米國赤十字社ノ給與品カ一九四四年十一月
ニ到着スル迄ハ何一ツ手ニ入ラナカツタ。
前ニ述べタ日本軍衛生軍曹「アラケ」軍曹トカ言
フ男ト寺林ノ音譯ノトカ言ソ兵隊ハ毎月月末ニハ支
給モシナイ藥品ノ何百枚モノ傳票ニ數、差ノ傳票違ニ
無差ニ署名サセタ。私ハ此ノ男違カ何支給品ヲ收
容所カラ外ニ持テ出シテキルノヲ見タコトカアルカ
疑モナク彼等ハソレヲ賣却スルトカ自分違ノ友人違
ニヤルトカシタノヲアツテ上官ニ對シテハソシテ風
ニシテ不足分ノ帳尻ヲ合ハシテ報告シテヤタノデア
ル。

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

4.

Doc 8119 4

ニハ衛生資材ハ日本人ニ何一ツ支給シテモラツタコ
トカナク米國赤十字社ノ給與品ガ一九四四年十一月
ニ到着スル迄ハ何一ツ手ニ入ラナカッタ。
前ニ述べタ日本軍衛生軍曹「アラケ」軍曹トカ言
フ男ト寺林ノ管轄ノトカ言ソ兵隊ハ毎月月末ニハ支
給モシナイ藥品ノ何百枚モノ傷票ニ致、全ノ傷員連ニ
無球ニ署名サセタ。私ハ此ノ男連カ皆軍醫給品ヲ收
容所カラ外ニ持ち出シテキルノヲ見タコトカアルカ
疑モナク彼等ハソレヲ賣却スルトカ自分連ノ友人連
ニヤルトカシタノヲアツテ上官ニ對シテハソシテ風
ニシテ不足分ノ帳尻ヲ合ハシテ報告シテモタノデア
ル。

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

MD/JAG/FS/J/26(6)

IN THE MATTER OF JAPANESE MILITARY CRIMES AT
FUKUOKA PRISONER OF WAR CAMP 4 IN JAPAN.

British National Office Charge No:

United Nations War Crimes Commission Reference :

- - - - -
A F F I D A V I T .
- - - - -

I, Captain ALAN BERKELEY, Royal Army Medical Corps attached 95 Battery, 48 Light Anti-Aircraft Regiment, Royal Artillery, with permanent home address at 20, Cathkin Road, Glasgow, S.2, make oath and say as follows :-

1. I was captured on 8 March 1942 in JAVA. From there I was taken to Prisoner of War Camp 4, FUKUOKA in JAPAN, where I arrived in November 1942.

2. The Camp Commandant, from about June 1943, was Captain SITO and the Medical Officer, Captain HIGASHI. I do not remember Captain SITO's predecessor.

3. After Captain SITO's arrival conditions in the Camp grew steadily worse and although I made several complaints to Captain SITO, there were no improvements.

4. HOUSING.

There were three hundred of us housed in the Y.M.C.A. Hall, one hundred and twenty downstairs and one hundred and eighty upstairs. At night the hundred and twenty men sleeping downstairs were on the floor with one man's bed touching the next. Forty per cent contracted scabies and one hundred per cent had lice.

5. FOOD.

Each man was allowed about a pint of rice three times a day and three-quarters of a pint of vegetable soup. We knew that fish and meat were available but it was only provided for us possibly once a week. One Red Cross parcel was given to each man in January 1943 and from that date until August 1945 we only received the equivalent of one parcel each. Frequent complaints were made to the Commandant but with no result.

6. SANITATION.

The latrines were inadequate for three hundred men and on occasions overflowed. The Commandant took no steps to ensure their cleanliness.

7. MEDICAL CARE.

There were plenty of medical supplies in the Camp but we were never allowed sufficient for our requirements. There was M. & B. and Sulphonamide but we were never allowed to have them in sufficient quantities. I was the Medical Officer in charge and on the average had forty men sick. Men with severe dysentery were compelled to go out to work. If they stayed behind in the Camp they were forbidden to have food for two days. During the epidemic of mumps in December 1944 men with swollen glands were compelled to go out and work. Men injured in work requiring blood transfusions were not allowed to have the plasma which was available. Bombardier FOWLER of CHELSEA died as a result of a duodenal ulcer. His death could have been prevented if the

Japanese had allowed him to have a light diet. During the epidemic of pneumonia I asked the Commandant for dried milk which was in the Red Cross parcels but he would not let me have it.

8. SPECTING ASSOCIATES.

A Japanese Medical Orderly by the name of INOUE, a half military-civil guard, would make a man stand to attention for no offence at all and bash him with his fist and when he fell down would kick him in the face or groin. If the man fainted he merely poured cold water on him and would bash him again when he regained consciousness. This was from September 1943 onwards. This man INOUE did this too :-

Gunner CHECK, 95 Battery, 48 L.A.A. Regt. R.A.
 Sergeant BEDE AN, 95 Battery, 48 L.A.A. Regt. R.A.
 C.S.M. McMINNIE, (of FALKIRK), B.O.D. BATAVIA
 Lance-Bombardier LEE, 89 Battery, 35 L.A.A. Regt.
 F.A.

Sergeant WILLIAM E. BRAY (still alive), an American
 Technical Sergeant captured in the Philippines,
 whose home address is R.T. 2, Box 404,
 WATSONVILLE, CALIFORNIA.

Private First Class BAKOS, American Army.
 Myself.

We were all beaten by INOUE on different occasions and no medical attention was allowed to be given to us when we had been beaten up.

9. Captain SITO made no effort whatsoever to correct any of the bad conditions in the Camp.

SWORN BY the said ALAN BERKELEY)
 at EDINBURGH this Thirty-First)
 day of January 1946.)

A. Berkeley (signed)

BEFORE ME

Reo Pinner (signed)

Captain Legal Staff,
 An Officer of the Staff of the Judge Advocate General of
 the Forces.

供 述 書

「余、本籍グラスゴウ / GLASGOW / キヤスキン・ロー
ド / CATHERINE ROAD / 二十番地、英國砲兵、第四十八輕
高射砲隊、第九十五中隊所屬英國軍醫務班アラン・
バークレイ / ALLAN BERKELEY / 大尉ハ軍醫ヲ行ヒ次ノ
如ク述ブ。

一、余ハ一九四二年三月八日ジャバ / JAVA / ニ於イ
テ停島トナツタ。ソコカラ余ハ日本ノ福岡ノ第四
信託收容所ニ送レテ行カレ、其處ニハ一九四二年
十一月ニ到着シタ。

六、衛 生

便所ハ三百人ニ對シテハ不充分デアツタ。而シ
テ度々溢レタ。收容所長ハ便所ノ汚濁ヲ保ツタメ
ノ何等ノ策モ施サナカツタ。

七、醫 療

收容所ニハ多クノ醫療品ガ在ツタガ、我々ノ必
兵ニ對シテハ決して十分ニ與ヘラレナカツタ。エ
ム・ア・ド・ビー / EMBE B / 錠及ビズルフオンアミ
ドガアツタガ幾々ハ決して十分ナ量ヲ有スルコト
ハ許サレナカツタ。余ハ任務ヲ持ツタ軍醫將校デ
アツテ平均四十人ノ病人ヲ受持ツテキタ。赤痢ノ
眞病人達セ強制的ニ伺キニ出サレタ。若シ彼等ガ
收容所ノ中ニキルト、二日ノ間食物ヲ攝ルコトヲ

Doc 8116

EX 1957A

1.

Doc 8116

0

2.

察セラレタ。一九四四年十二月中耳下腺炎ノ流行
 シタ際、腺ノ脹レタ者モ剋制的ニ切キニ出サレタ。
 仕事テ負傷シ輸血ヲ要スル者ニ對シテ、入手可能
 テアツタ血漿ガ與ヘラレナカツタ。サエルムスア
 オード / CHELSEFORD / 出身ノ砲兵下士 / BOMBARDIER /
 アウラー / FOWLER / ハ十二機屬ノ演習ノ結果死
 シタ。若シ日本人ガ彼ニ輕イ食事ヲ振ルコトヲ許
 シタナラバ彼ノ死ハ免レタテアツタラウ。肺炎ノ
 流行セル際余ハ救急所長ニ赤十字ノ荷傷ノ中ニ在
 ツタ乾燥ミルクラ長求シタガ彼ハ余ニソレヲ與ヘ
 ントシナカツタ。

八、特殊ノ凶行爲

半島局半文管監處テ井上ト云フ日本人ノ病院事務
 長ハ何ノ罪モナイノニ人ニ氣ヲ付ケラサセ、自分
 ノ拳固テソノ人ヲ撲リ、ソノ身ガ倒レルト、顔ヤ
 真陰部ヲ足蹴ニスルノヲ常トシタ。ソノ男ガ氣ヲ
 失フト、彼ハ單ニ冷水ヲアヒセ意識ヲ恢復スルホ
 又撲ルノヲ常トシタ。之ハ一九四三年九月以降ノ
 コトデアツタ。之ノ井上ト云フ男ハコノコトヲ次
 ノ叙述ニ對シテモ行ツタ。

砲兵英口第四十八輕高射砲隊、第九十五中隊砲
 手カンナイサツク / GUNNER CHUCK / 同砲兵第四十
 八輕高射砲隊第九十五中隊ベアマン / BEEHMAN / 尊

Doc 8/16

0

3.

曹バタビア/BATAVIA/B、O、D、マツクヱイニ
イFAHNER(ソアルカーク出身)中隊曹長同砲兵第三十五
隊高野砲隊第八十九中隊ランス・ボンバーデイ
アー/LANCE-BOMBARDIER/副砲兵下士?/リー
スXLEES/

ウィリアム・イー・ブレイ/WILLIAM E. BRAY/
軍曹(未だ生着シアリ)、比島ニ於イテ停泊トナ
リタル、アメリカノ技術軍曹ニシテ、故口ノ住所
ハキヤリアオニア/CALIFORNIA/ワトソンヴィ
ル/WATSONVILLE/第四〇四號團R、E、二、米國
陸軍一等兵バロス/BAROS/余自身。

我々ハ皆種々ナル機曾ニ井上ニ撰ラレタガ、滅
茶苦茶ニ撰ラレタ時ニモ何等ノ口業モ我々ニハ興
ヘラレサカツタ。

九、齋藤/音譯/SAHEO/大尉ハ收容所内ノ惡條件
ノ何レモ改メントスル勢方ヲ全クシナカツタ。一

C. # 1952

AUSTRALIAN WAR CRIMES

BOARD OF INQUIRY

BEFORE HIS HONOR, MR. JUSTICE PHILIP

W. 925 A.B. JOHN WILLIAM VINEY, R.A.N.V.R., Sworn and Examined.

I reside 7 Rennie Street, NORTH WILLIAMSTOWN. I was a gunner on the S.S. Nanking and was captured in the Indian Ocean by the German raider "Thor". I was transferred from that ship to the German supply ship "Ragnsburg" and taken to Yokohama in July 1942.

On August 25th 1942, I was sent to the prison camp at Kawasaki. The Camp Commander Lieut. Takahashi under Major Yamada. The medical Sergeant was Sergeant Osawa.

In the middle of 1943 Lieut. Takahashi was succeeded by Lieut. Aneri, a Japanese who had been a wool buyer in Australia. The camp was situated in an industrial area near a Railway and steel works.

Accommodation.

A two storey building in a fenced area about 200 yds. square. We were confined in rooms each 12' x 10', eight men to a room. The rooms were badly bug infested and we slept on mats.

Food.

The food consisted of vegetable tops, barley, and Korean rice. It was inadequate and we depended upon what we could steal. Our total food consisted of a breakfast cupful of whatever was issued three times a day.

Clothing.

We received only one issue of clothing which was British Army clothing from Hong Kong. We received a coat, trousers, and two shirts and in the summer we received one

pair of shorts and a shirt. Meanwhile the American Red Cross stores had an ample supply of clothing. Many of the Japanese were wearing Red Cross clothing and using Red Cross blankets.

Medical Supplies. Although there were ample American Red Cross supplies in the store, the medical Sergeant Gessa refused to supply any although he was repeatedly requested so to do by our Doctor. This applied also to surgical instruments and the Doctor was forced to get (from the blacksmith whatever instruments he could.

Hygiene. The latrines consisted of a row of pits and we had to bale out the excreta and put it on the gardens. We received one hot bath a week.

Work. We worked at the Railway yards unloading goods. We refused successfully to unload ammunition. Later I was put on to welding and cutting old iron. We worked on the Railway from 0730 to 1800 hrs. and the lucky ones received one day off in nineteen.

Pay. We were supposed to receive 20 sen a day for which we signed. We were payed nothing until after the war.

Canteen. Nil. We were able to purchase some tea.

Correspondence. I received 19 letters and wrote about ten.

General. The punishments consisted of bashing, standing at attention for long periods, and holding weights above the head. Such punishments were of daily occurrence. On one occasion a Japanese cook Miasaka, stole some rice. Takahashi blamed the P.O.W.'s for stealing it. He made the whole camp stand at attention from 6 p.m. to 1 a.m. This was in November 1944 and the weather was very cold. Men who had overcoats were forced to take them off and any moving from the position of attention were punished by being beaten.

We were told we would have to stand there until the supposed thieves confessed. At last, two of the P.O.W.'s volunteered to confess and were taken to TAKAHASHI and they then let us go and return to our bunks. The men who volunteered were not punished.

Sergeant Gibson and Corporal Jones, two Englishmen, were tied to a post all night and were beaten by the guards. They were badly bruised for a fortnight. Able Seaman Bourke of the "Warspite" was kicked unconscious by the interpreter Mianoe for not understanding a speech.

I have seen Takahashi, Osawa and Ameri take part in bashings. Ameri was the worst of them all. Osawa consistently refused medical treatment to sick men. About 13 deaths occurred in three years, partly through his neglect and but for the fact that the P.O.W.'s were able to steal fruit and other food, many would have died from beri-beri.

I went to the camp at Dize in July 1944. At this camp we were badly treated by Sergeant Smee. This Japanese was killed in an air raid.

THIS IS THE SECOND AND LAST SHEET OF THE EVIDENCE OF A. B. JOHN WILLIAM VINEY, R.A.N.V.R. TAKEN AND SWORN BEFORE ME AT MELBOURNE IN THE STATE OF VICTORIA THIS 25th. DAY OF JANUARY, 1946.

/s/ J. W. Viney
Deponent.

/s/ R. Philp
Member,
Australian Board of
Inquiry into War Crimes.

TWM/AGW/2.A

A.B. J.W. VINEY, R.A.N.V.R.
25/1/46

No. 1

1952

EVIDENTIARY

Doc.

8/6/52

ジョン・ウィリアム・グレイ・社

JOHN WILLIAM GRAY, R.A.M.C. / NORTH WILMISTOWN, N.S.W.

1 街 / RENFIE STREET / 土庫 2 室 2 区画

私ハ汽船 南宗丸 乘込、脱去テ、印度洋ヲ獨逸

ノ奇艦 船「トール」/ THOR / 三捕ヘラシタ。私ハ

船ヲ獨逸、補給 船「レクスブルグ」/ REGENSBURG

ニ移 サレ 一九四二年七月ニ横濱ニ連テ來ラシタ。

私ハ一九四二年八月二十五日ニ川崎ノ停務所 牧客所

ニ送ラシタ。

ノ、牧客所ハ 鐵道ニ側 鋼所 附近ノ工業地帯

收容設備

端ヲ繞ラシタ約二百ヤード方ノ地帯ニルニ階建

建物 壹棟。我々ハ各十二眠ノ床、室廿半

ニ室三八人宛 監禁サシタ。長算、室ニ八南 京空

ヲヒトク 蔓ツテ申タ。我々ハ 疊ノ上ニ寝タ。

食物

食物ハ 野菜、醬、大麥、及 朝鮮米ヲアツタ。

之等ハ 不十分デアツタ、テ我々ハ 盜ミ得ル 食料ニ頼

ツタ。我々ハ 食料ハ 日ニ三度 何ヲモ 必甘シル

朝食用 大形 椀一パイノモノデアツタ。

衣料

我々ハ 香港カラ 來リ 英國 陸軍用 衣類 唯 壹 圓

Doc. 8/6/★

、給與ヲ受ケルバカリタ。我々ハ外套一着、ズボン及ビシャツニ之ヲ貫ツタ、而シテ夏ニハパンツ一枚、及ビシャツ一枚ヲ貫ツタ。其ノ間幾ツカノ米國赤十字ノ倉庫ニハ、今ナル衣料補給品ガ貯ヘラレテ居タ。日本人ノ多クハ赤十字ノ衣類ヲ着用シ赤十字ノ毛布ヲ使用シテ居タ。

醫 療 品

倉庫ニハアメリカ赤十字供送品ガ十分ニアツタ。衛生學堂ニ澤(音譯) / OSAWA / ハ我方ノ醫者カラ屢次支給シテ要求サレタニモ拘ラズ一切給與スル事ヲ拒絶シタ。コノ亭ハ外科用醫藥器具ニ同様ニアツタ。醫者ハ鍛冶屋カラドニオ器具デモ彼ガ手ニ入ルコトノ出来ルモノヲ入手スルコトヲ餘儀ナクサレタ。

衛 生

便所ハ溝ノ列デアツテ、排泄物ヲ汲ミ出シ畑ニソコヲ置カネバナラナカッタ。一週ニ度風呂ヲ貫ツタ。

一 般

處罰ハ殴打、長時間、氣ヲ附ケ、攻勢デ立ツテ居ルコト、及頭上高ク重イ物ヲ支ヘテ居ルコトデアツタ。コノ様ナ處罰ハ日常ノ事デアツタ。或ル時、日本人料理人宮坂(音譯) / MIYASAKA / 此部分タイプ不鮮明ガ少シ米ヲ盗ンタ、高橋(音譯) / TAKAHASHI / ハ俘虜ガソレヲ盗ンタノダト小言ヲ言ツタ。彼ハ全收容客ヲ午後六時カラ午前一時迄氣ヲ附ケ、攻勢カデ立タシタ。コノハ

No. 2

一九四三年十一月ノ事、非常ニ寒イ時候デアツタ。外套ヲ着テ斗々者ハ無理ニ又ガセテシ氣ヲ附ケ、姿勢カラ少シテモ動イタ者ハ毆打ノ罰ヲ受ケタ。

Doc. f/16

我々ハ空切盗容疑者達ガ自狀スルテ共處ニ立ツテ井ノ様言渡サレタ。遂ニ俘虜ノ中ノ二人ガ自狀スル様自發的ニ申出テ、ソノ二人ハ高橋(音譯) TAKAHASHI、トコロニ遊ニ行カレ、次イテ彼等ハ幾タラ、其場カラ、出テ小屋ニ歸ラシメ果シタ。自發的ニ申出タ者ハ罰セラレナカッタ。

ギブソン軍曹 GIBSON 及 ジョーニ兵長 JONES、二人、乘入ハ夜半柱ニ縛リ附ケラレタ、其ニ發火器ニ毆ラレタ。彼等ハ二週間ノ間、打撲傷ヲヒトク紫斑ヲ生シテ井タ。オースパイナ WARSPIRE、水兵ボウ BOURKE、通譯ニスノエ NISNOE、言葉ガ解ラナイト言ッテ蹴ラレテ氣絶シタ。

高橋(音譯) TAKAHASHI、オサワ OSAWA 及 アメリ AMERI、ガ毆打ニ卷、加シテ井ノヲ私ハ見タ。アメリ AMERI、ガソノ中テ一番悪カッタ。オサワ OSAWA、ハ終始病人ニ醫治療ヲ拒メタ。約十三人、死亡ガ三年ノ間ニアリ、一部分ハ彼ノ怠慢ノ爲デアツタ。而シテ俘虜ガ果實及其他ノ食物ヲ盗ムコトガ出来タトイフ事實ナカリセハ多數ノ者ハ脚氣ヲ死ンタデアラウ。

No. 3

私ハ一九四四年七月ニテイセ DISE、收容所ニ行ッタ。コノ收容所テ我々ハヌメー軍曹 SMEE、カラヒトイ取扱ヲ受ケタ。

Ex. # 1953

CONFIDENTIAL

STATE OF CALIFORNIA)
) SS
City and County of San Francisco)

MICHAEL J. REBERESQUE, s/SGT. ASF 1023657, 1315 Cartwright Street, Beaumont, Texas, being first duly sworn, deposes and says:

On 28 May 1945, I bailed out of our B-29 aircraft over the metropolitan Tokyo area. I lost consciousness during the bail-out and when revived I was being attacked by a mob of Japanese men and women in the Tokyo area. The irate mob were beating me with rocks, sticks and their fists. I was also kicked. The mob was finally dispersed by Japanese military police, and I was taken to the Keigo Military Police headquarters in Tokyo, where I was interrogated. During the interrogation, I was beaten on the buttock and back with a bamboo stick approximately one yard long and two inches in diameter. I was struck approximately 25 times with the only explanation that I was an enemy of the Imperial government. During this beating I was suffering with a broken leg and severe shrapnel wounds in both legs. Following this beating, I was transferred to a cell which was approximately 10 by 12 feet, and in which there were confined 18 prisoners. I remained in this cell from the date of my capture until August 13, 1945. During this time we were not allowed to leave the cell or to talk to our fellow prisoners. Our food consisted of 3 bowls of rice daily and approximately 5 or 6 times during our confinement we were also permitted a very limited supply of beans and grass. No medical attention was given to my broken leg or to the shrapnel wounds. As a result, the wounds in both legs became infected to such an extent that at my release, plasma injections, together with penicillin was administered by our American doctors.

While confined, we were required to sit at attention from 5 AM to 9 PM and if anyone was caught in a reclining position, a beating would be administered by the Japanese guards. Another punishment for the infraction of this rule was to require the offender to sit on his legs in Japanese fashion. Hours of this would result in momentary paralysis. We were allowed one dirty blanket at night. This, however, was removed from the cell during the daytime. The cell was ridden with fleas and lice, and the only toilet fixture available was a small box kept in the corner of each room. This was emptied each morning. However, during the day it provided a foul odor and health hazard. Most of the prisoners confined were suffering with acute dysentery. The only light admitted to the cell was from a window approximately two feet square. This window was permanently closed.

On 7 August 1945 at approximately 11 AM the Japanese guards brought a Theodore Fox, a B-50 pilot from Ohio, to our cell. Fox was running a high temperature and was in a semi-delirious condition. When coherent, he mentioned having been tortured by the Japs and on his hands there were

wounds showing evidence of cigarette burns. From the time of his arrival, until approximately 12:30 that same night Fox passed blood from parts of his intestines. He made strong pleas for medical attention and supplies. However, they were unheeded by the Japanese guards. At 12:30 that night, Fox died. It was generally believed that his death was caused by dysentery.

I am unable to identify either by description or name the Japanese officials in charge at Kempri headquarters, Tokyo. The Japanese guard in charge was called "Boss" by name. He was 5'2" tall, heavy set, spoke excellent English. His only unusual physical characteristic was his Hitler-type mustache and heavy beard. The following Americans imprisoned at Kempri were submitted to the surroundings which I have described, and may be able to further identify responsible Japanese officials:

1st Lt. O'Hara, 6th Bomb. Sq., Tinian; 1st Lt. Newcomb, 678th Sq., 444 Group; 2nd Lt. Miller, c/o General Delivery, Du Pres, S. Dakota; S/Sgt. Glen B. Guiton, 444th Group, 676th Squadron, Sperry, Oklahoma; Sgt. Cooper, Air Corps, Marion, Oregon.

These are all the pertinent details I am able to remember of the above incidents at this time.

/s/ MICHAEL J. ROBERTSON
MICHAEL J. ROBERTSON, S/SGT.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 19th day of October 1945.

/s/ EMMA PAUL STACK
Notary Public - Jefferson Tex

Com: Ex June 1, 1947

Notary Public, County of Jefferson, Texas
(Seal)

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

/s/ EVERETT CHECKET

EVERETT CHECKET

Maj Inf

C O N F I D E N T I A L

Interviewed by Edward C. Scharetz, Agent, SIC

EXHIBIT NO. 1953A Doc 8107

テキサス州、ボウマント、カイトライト街一、
三一五巷地認識番號一八二六三二一號司令部附下
士一マイケル・デエイ・ロバートソン一ハ先ツ正
式宣誓ヲシタ後ニ證言ス。

一九四三年、昭和二十年、五月二十六日、私ハ
東京都地區上空デB・29飛行機カラ落下傘デオリ
タ。落下中私ハ氣ヲ失ヒソシテ氣ガツイタ時ニハ
東京地區ノ日本人男女ノ群集ニ襲ハテキタ。怒ツ
タ群集ハ私ヲ石ヤ棒ヤ拳デ打ツテキタ。私ハ又蹴
ラレモシタ。遂ニ群集ハ日本憲兵ニヨリ追散ラサ
レタ。ソシテ私ハ東京憲兵隊本部ニ連れて行カレ
共處デ尋問サレタ。尋問中、私ハ脛部ヤ背部ヲ大
体長サ一碼直徑二吋位ノ竹棒デ打タレタ。私ハタ
ゞ、私が帝國政府ノ敵デアルトイフ説明ダケテ約二
十三回モ打タレタ。コノ毆打中、私ハ足ノ骨折ト
酷イ兩足ノ橈骨~~橈骨~~ノ傷トテ苦シンデキタノデス。
コノ毆打ノ後デ、私ハ約十呎ト十二呎ノ監房ニ監
房ヘ移サレタガ、其處ニハ十八人ノ捕房ガ監禁サ
レテキタ。私ハコノ監房ニ私ノ痛ヘラレタ日カラ
一九四三年、昭和二十年八月十五日迄居タ。コノ

FILE COPY
ROOM 361

EXHIBIT NO. 1953A Doc 8107

テキサス洲、ボウマント、カイトライト街一、
三一五巻地認識番號一八二六三二一號司令部附下
士一マイケル・デエー・ロバートソン一ハ先ツ正
式宣誓ヲシタ後ニ証言ス。

一九四三年ノ昭和二十年ノ五月二十六日、私ハ
東京都地區上空デB・29飛行機カラ落下傘デオリ
タ、落下中私ハ氣ヲ失ヒソシテ氣ガツイタ時ニハ
東京地區ノ日本人男女ノ群集ニ襲ハテキタ。怒ツ
タ群集ハ怒ヲ石ヤ棒ヤ拳デ打ツテキタ。私ハ又蹴
ラレモシタ。遂ニ群集ハ日本憲兵ニヨリ追散ラサ
レタ、ソシテ私ハ東京憲兵隊本部ニ遵レテ行カレ
共處デ尋問サレタ。尋問中、私ハ臀部ヤ背部ヲ大
体長サ一碼直徑二吋位ノ竹棒デ打タレタ。私ハタ
ゞ、私が帝國政府ノ敵デアルトイフ説明ダケテ約二
十三回モ打タレタ。コノ毆打中、私ハ足ノ骨折ト
酷イ兩足ノ榴霰彈ノ傷トテ言シンデキタノデス。
コノ毆打ノ後デ、私ハ約十呎ト十二呎ノ監房ニ監
房ハ移サレタガ、其處ニハ十八人ノ捕虜ガ監禁サ
レテキタ。私ハコノ監房ニ私ノ指ヘラレタ日カラ
一九四三年ノ昭和二十年八月十五日迄居タ。コノ

FILE COPY

ROOM 361

Dec 8107

3.

毎朝窓ニサレタ。併シ、日中ソレハ悪臭ヲ放チ衛
生上ノ危険ヲモタラシタ。監禁サレタ捕虜ノ大部
分ハ急性ノ赤痢ヲヤツテキタ。監房ニ入レラレル
唯一ノ喚リハ約二呎四方ノ窓ハ常ニ閉サレテキタ。
一九四五年ノ昭和二十年ノ八月七日ノ午前十一
時頃、日本人衛兵ハ、オハイオ州ノP. 50ノ飛行
士、フオックス・トイフ者ヲ我々ノ監
房ニツレテキタ。フオックス・トイフハ高熱ヲ、半バ
精神錯亂状態ダツタ。正氣ニナツタ時、彼ハ日本
人ニヨツテ拷問ニカケラレタトノベ、ソシテ彼ノ
手ニハ煙草ノ火ヲ火傷シタ事ヲ證明スル紙ガアツ
タ。彼ガ到着シタ時カラ、同夜十二時分頃マデ「
フオックス・トイフ」ハ内臓部カラノ血ヲ出シテキタ。
我々ハ強硬ニ醫療ト手當ト供給トヲ頼ンダ。シカ
シ年ラ此ノ頼ミハ日本人衛兵ノ願ミル所トナラナ
カツタ。其ノ夜十二時三十分ニ「フオックス・トイフ」ハ
死亡シタ。彼ノ死亡ハ一般ニ赤痢ガ原因ダト考へ
ラレテキタ。

EX # 1954

Document No. 3163*

Page 1

Classification changed from
"CONFIDENTIAL" to "RESTRICTED"
by order of the Secretary of War
By /s/ E. Checket, Major, Inf.

AFFIDAVIT

STATE OF CALIFORNIA)
)
City and County of San Francisco) SS:

HARRY (MIL) SLATER, JR., Sgt., AUS, AAF, ASN 39286722, Ring Gunner
CFC, Age 21 years, address 1476 Forest Avenue, Pasadena, California, being
first sworn deposes and says:

I have completed the 12th Grade in school. I entered the military
service of the United States on 2 March 1943 at Arlington, California, was
sent overseas 3 May, 1945 and returned from overseas on 8 October 1945.

My plane, a B-29 Superfortress, was shot down in the Tokio area
on 25 May 1945 and I was captured and held in custody as a prisoner of war
by the Imperial Japanese Government at the following places: Kempri Hq.,
Tokio, Japan from 27 May 1945 to 15 August 1945; Omori, Japan from 15 August
1945 to 29 August 1945. I did not hold any special office or position in
any prisoner organization at any of my places of imprisonment. I do not
know the names of any Japanese military or civilian personnel in authority
at any of my places of imprisonment.

A civilian we nicknamed "The Man in the Black Coat" appeared to be
in charge of all interrogation at Kempri Prison. He was approximately
5'6" tall, weighed about 150 lbs., was about 45 or 50 years of age, dark
hair and wore a small black goatee, mustache and glasses. He spoke excel-
lent English and interrogated most of the American prisoners personally.
Fifteen other American prisoners and myself were confined in a small wooden
cell approximately 7' x 10' at Kempri and were never allowed out of the
cell except during interrogation periods. On about the 1st or 2nd of June
1945 I was taken from the cell, blindfolded and handcuffed, and marched to
a small room in the same building for interrogation. I was pushed and
roughed up a bit while going to the interrogation room. On arrival there,
my blindfold and handcuffs were removed and I was forced to kneel in front
of "The Man in the Black Coat", who questioned me for approximately half
an hour regarding how our plane was shot down and where we were from. He
sat before me at a table and continually struck me on the head with a
large bamboo cane while asking questions. When he thought that I was lying
he would strike me with a great deal of force about the head and back.
I would estimate that I was struck with great force over 50 times during
the half-hour period. When the interrogator would tire of beating me, he
would hand the cane to an armed guard, who was the only other person in
the room, and the guard would proceed to beat me. At the end of this
period I was again blindfolded and handcuffed and returned to my cell.
I had many large welts on my back about 4 or 5 inches long which were
very painful. About half the men in the cell were subjected to the same
treatment.

XXXXXXXXXXXXX

RESTRICTED /s/ E. C.

/s/ H S Jr.

X X X X X X X X
 RESTRICTED /s/ E.C.

A cellmate, S/Sgt "Red" McQuade, a B-29 gunner from New Mexico, was in a great deal of pain as the result of severe burns on the back of his legs and rectum caused when his plane was shot down. McQuade was unable to stand or walk and his legs were discolored and the odor of the burned flesh was almost unbearable. We repeatedly requested medical attention for McQuade and on one occasion a Japanese doctor examined his injuries but he was never given any medical attention. On or about 28 June 1945, the Japanese guard told us that they would take McQuade out of the cell for medical treatment. Instead of being taken to a hospital, McQuade was forced to walk into the interrogation room and he later reported to us that he was questioned at some length and was slapped and stuck several times by the interrogators. We learned that two American prisoners in the cell next to ours had compound leg fractures but were never given any medical attention. Our food at Kempri consisted of 3 balls of steamed Korean rice per man per day. The balls of rice were approximately the size of the average fist. On rare occasions we received a small supply of cooked or uncooked vegetable greens and toward the end of our imprisonment we received a little thin soup. Each man received one small cup of water 3 times a day. We were issued 11 thin blankets for 15 men. The Japanese guards took away our shoes and socks and a great many other articles of clothing. We observed through our cell window that the pigs immediately outside the cell were furnished better food than the American prisoners. The latrine facilities in our cell consisted of a small block of cement about 3' x 4' with a hole in the center leading to the outside.

The following men were cellmates of mine in Kempri Prison:

Sgt. James Evans, B-29, CFC Gunner; home address, Box #1, Hanley, West Virginia.

Sgt. John Ryan, B-29, CFC Gunner; home state, Massachusetts.

Capt. Boyington, B-29 Pilot; home address Kalamazoo, Mich.

2nd Lt. William McCall, B-29 Co-pilot; home address, Chicago, Illinois.

I do not now recall the names of any enemy officer or personnel not heretofore mentioned who were immediately involved in this incident.

/s/ Harry Slater Jr.
 HARRY (NHI) SLATER, JR., Sgt
 ASN 39286722

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 12th day of October, 1945.

Interviewed by George G. Barker,
 Special Agent, SIC, 9 Oct. 1945

/s/ Charles E. Taylor
 Capt. JAGP.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

/s/ Everett Checket
 EVERETT CHECKET
 Major, Infantry

X X X X X X X X
 Restricted /s/ E.C.

No. 954 Evidentiary D008163

書類第六三三号

飛行機(州)ノ一、三三三軍曹米國陸軍航空部隊認識番号
三九六七三三飛行機(州)手 (FC)

私、飛行機(州)一、三三三ノ一、上込(東京地区)五四年五月三日
撃墜サレタリ。三三三私(日本)軍曹ニ三三三捕合(左記)場所ニ
捕虜トシテ監禁サレタリ。即チ(一九四五年)五月三日(三)一九四五年
八月十五日(ア)日本(東京)憲兵司令部ニ(一九四五年)八月十五日(イ)
一九四五年八月十九日(ア)日本(東京)憲兵司令部ニ(一九四五年)八月十九日(イ)

黒衣ノ人ト私(連)ガ呼ビテ民間人ガ憲兵監獄ニ入リ訊問
セシメ居ル様ニ見エタリ。

彼ハ之派(英語)ヲ話シテメリカ、捕虜(大)司令(直)軍(訊)問
シタ。他(十)名(ノ)人(ヲ)メリカ(捕虜)ト私(憲)兵(隊)ノ(約)長(サ)十(呎)幅
七(呎)木(造)小(形)監(房)ニ(監)禁(サ)レテ(訊)問(時)間(外)外(出)シ(許)サ
レタリ。九(四)五(年)六(月)八(日)カ(日)頃(目)隠(シ)テ(手)錠(ヲ)附(ケ)テ
シ(監)房(ヲ)三(連)ト(守)リ(訊)問(為)同(建)物(中)小(女)部
屋(三)連(ヲ)行(カ)レタリ。其(ノ)訊(問)部(屋)ニ(行)ク(途)中(幾)ク(カ)
衝(テ)テ(手)錠(ヲ)取(扱)シ(反)テ(タ)リ。其(處)ニ(着)テ(私)ノ(目)隠(シ)テ(手)錠
除(カ)レ(黒)衣(ノ)人(ノ)前(ニ)跪(キ)テ(約)半(時)間(何)様(ニ)裁(定)シ
飛行機(ノ)撃(墜)サ(レ)何(處)カ(ニ)来(タ)カ(ラ)事(ヲ)シ(タ)リ。彼(ノ)私(ノ)前
机(ニ)座(シ)テ(居)テ(絶)エ(テ)訊(問)中(私)ノ(頭)ヲ(大)キ(イ)竹(ノ)杖(ヲ)毆(ツ)
ク。私(ノ)嘔(ヲ)言(フ)事(ト)思(フ)タ(リ)時(彼)ハ(ト)ク(頭)ヲ(背)中

DOC-81634

NO.2

打ッテ多ク。私、兵糧少、五丁以上三半時同、同打ッ
 多、急、又、彼、説、同、志、が、私、ヲ、打ッ、テ、厭、キ、ク、時、其、ノ、部、屋、ニ
 居、テ、他、唯、一、人、ヲ、シ、テ、以、鞋、衣、ヲ、傷、兵、ニ、シ、杖、ヲ、渡、シ、其、ノ、衛
 兵、私、ヲ、打ッ、始、メ、ル、テ、シ、ク、之、が、終、ル、ト、私、又、目、隠、シ、サ、シ
 手、銃、ヲ、附、テ、シ、テ、私、法、房、ニ、歸、テ、シ、ク、私、ハ、管、守、ニ、納、四、時、カ
 奉、位、ノ、ミ、ミ、ツ、ハ、ヲ、澤、山、出、シ、テ、シ、ク、非、常、ニ、痛、シ、ク。
 其、ノ、並、房、ノ、約、半、數、者、が、同、様、ノ、取、扱、ヒ、マ、シ、ク、シ、テ、並、房、ノ、仲
 同、テ、亦、新、附、軍、曹、ト、シ、テ、マ、ツ、ク、立、テ、ト、言、フ、ニ、テ、キ、ニ、出、身
 ノ、脚、等、彼、飛、行、機、が、撃、隊、キ、ク、時、受、ケ、テ、脚、ノ、重、創、中
 道、腸、ノ、酷、シ、ク、火、傷、ノ、結、果、非、常、ニ、重、シ、ク、マ、ツ、ク、立、テ、シ、ク、シ、テ
 口、毛、歩、行、ト、モ、出、テ、シ、テ、彼、脚、ノ、変、色、シ、テ、火、傷、ノ、肉、ハ、殆、ト、下
 堪、シ、ク、又、程、果、カ、シ、ク、私、達、ノ、幾、度、モ、マ、ツ、ク、シ、テ、シ、ク、シ、テ、治、療
 ヲ、シ、テ、又、或、ル、時、ハ、日、本、ノ、医、師、が、彼、ノ、傷、ヲ、看、テ、見、テ、シ、ク、シ、テ、
 何、等、治、療、ヲ、加、シ、テ、果、テ、シ、ク、シ、テ、五、年、不、有、テ、シ、テ、合、力、隊、(其、次
 日、本、衛、兵、が、同、シ、ク、シ、テ、シ、テ、治、療、ヲ、為、シ、テ、并、房、ノ、連、立、出、テ、
 誰、ク、又、病、院、ニ、送、テ、シ、テ、行、ク、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、
 手、行、カ、シ、ク、シ、テ、彼、ノ、時、相、ニ、時、間、訊、向、シ、テ、數、回、及、テ、訊、問、者
 カ、亦、手、ヲ、打、ッ、シ、テ、シ、テ、叩、カ、シ、テ、後、ニ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、
 私、達、ノ、隣、ノ、並、房、ノ、一、人、又、リ、力、押、辱、シ、テ、脚、ニ、複、雜、骨、打、ッ、煩
 シ、ク、シ、テ、決、シ、テ、何、等、ノ、治、療、ヲ、令、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、知、シ、ク、
 萬、兵、隊、ヲ、令、シ、テ、私、達、ノ、食、物、ノ、炊、キ、テ、朝、鮮、米、ノ、握、飯
 ヲ、人、日、命、ニ、テ、三、箇、間、ヲ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、
 奉、位、太、士、ヲ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、シ、テ、

☆

DOC 8/63

柳三少量料理多又八生、野菜を喰ふ。私達、虫獄
 が近々多味私達少量、薄汁ヲ受テ、各人一日三回小
 サイコップニ一杯水ヲ受テ、私達ハ六人ニ對シテ故、薄湯
 イ毛布ガ子ハラシタ。日軍人衛兵ハ私達ノ靴ヲ靴下ヤ衣類
 ヲ持テ去リタ。私達、造房、外近クニ中々豚ハアリカ捕虜ヲ
 良ク食物ヲ與ヘテ、井比ガ造房、窓ヲ通シテ見ラシタ。
 造房内、便所設備トシテ、小サイセキトテ、長サ
 四呎幅ニ限リ、毛手置中ニ穴ガアリテ外部ニ通シテ中々。

X X X X X

N03

Ex. # 1455

Document No. 8349*

Page No. 1

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS
SUPREME COMMANDER FOR THE ALLIED POWERS

City of Tokyo)
) 33
Japan)

I, PHILIP E. SANDERS, CBM, USN (care of Navy Department, Washington, D.C.), being duly sworn, depose and state:

I was in charge of about 700 allied personnel held by the Japanese as prisoners of war in Hoincho Camp, Chikko District (water front) Osaka area, Japan, from 5 June 1942 to 15 August 1945. During April and May 1945 there was a persistent rumor in the working parties on the docks at Sumitomo that if America won the war we would not go home but would be killed. I asked a Chief Engineer in the British merchant service named Goodrich who was a working party leader, to check the story. He confirmed the rumor through some Koreans and a Japanese petty officer. I verified the story with Pfc. Kawabata, who was an official Army interpreter who spoke English well, a messenger and a keeper of documents. He was from Hokkaido. He stated that if there were naval landings we would not see home again. Several guards told the prisoners that we would go home only if Japan won. Similar reports were spread through the sub-camps too.

In 1943 and 1944 Japanese newspapers, especially the Osaka Manichi, reprinted the orders to kill captured American airmen.

Prisoners were given rougher treatment every time there was an American air raid. Antagonistic feeling among the Japanese mounted progressively. Early in 1945 the Japanese armed their guards and gave them ammunition as a preventive measure against any uprisings or disorders among us prisoners.

/s/ Philip E. Sanders
PHILIP E. SANDERS
CBM, USN

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 12th day of April, 1946.

/s/ Harryman Dorsey
HARRYMAN DORSEY
Captain, JAGD

EV-021954 DOCUMENT # 8349

防果トミテ彼等ニ早ニ棄ツルニ入ルニシムル
 一九四五年十月廿五日、米軍が北朝鮮に侵入し、北朝鮮を占領した。米軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮は北朝鮮人民軍によって占領された。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。

北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。

北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。

北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。

北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。

北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。

北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。北朝鮮人民軍は北朝鮮の首都平壤に進軍し、十月廿五日に平壤を占領した。

Q # 1956

Doc. No. 847F

Gairusho,

Tokyo-

20th January, 1942.

M. le Charge d'Affaires.

Following my letter dated 19th of this month, I have the honour to make known to you the attitude of the Imperial Government on the treatment of prisoners of war:-

1. The Imperial Government has not yet ratified the Convention relative to the treatment of prisoners of war of 27th July, 1929. It is, therefore, not bound by the said Convention. However, it will apply *mutatis mutandis* the provisions of the said Convention to English, Canadian, Australian and New Zealand prisoners of war in its hands.
2. As to the provision of food and clothing for prisoners of war, it will consider, on condition of reciprocity, the national and racial customs of the prisoners.

I would be obliged if you would bring the above-mentioned to the knowledge of the Governments of Great Britain, Canada, Australia and New Zealand.

Signed by the Minister.

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____
I.P.S. No. 847-F

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Hayashi Kaoru, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Chief of the Archives Section, Japanese Foreign Office and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 2 pages, dated 29 Jan., 1942, and described as follows: Statement concerning reply of Foreign Minister Togo to Argentine Charge d'Affairs in Tokyo on January 29, 1942.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Foreign Ministry.

Signed at Tokyo on this
7th day of Nov., 1946.

/s/ K. Hayashi
Signature of Official SEAL

Witness: /s/ Nagaharu Odo

Chief, Archives Section
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, Richard H. Larsh, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
12th day of Nov 1946.

/s/ Richard H. Larsh
NAME
Investigator, IPS
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Edward P. Monaghan

EX # 1957

Document No. 1465-B

Page 1

On January 3, 1942 the British Government communicated through the Argentine Chargé d'Affaires in Tokyo the information that the British, Canadian, Australian and New Zealand Governments would declare their observance of the Geneva Prisoner of War Convention of 1929 in respect of Japan and inquired whether the Imperial Government had any intention of making a similar declaration.

There was another communication on January 5th saying that they propose to take the national and racial manners and customs of the prisoners of war into consideration when applying articles 11 and 12 of the said agreement concerning the supply of provisions and clothing to the prisoners of war.

To the above we communicated the following to the various Governments mentioned above, through the Argentine Chargé d'Affaires in Tokyo on January 29th:

1. The Imperial Government has not ratified the agreement in question and therefore refuses to be bound in any way whatever by the agreement, but will apply the provisions of the said agreement to British, Canadian, Australian and New Zealand prisoners of war within Japan's jurisdiction.
2. The Imperial Government will consider the national and racial manners and customs of the prisoners of war on a basis of reciprocity when supplying clothing and provisions to the prisoners of war.

Doc. No. 1465 E

C E R T I F I C A T E

W. D. C. No. _____
I. P. S. No. 1465-B

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, K. Hayashi hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Chief of the Archives Section Foreign Office and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 1 pages, dated 29 January 1942, and described as follows: Statement concerning reply of Japanese Foreign Minister to Argentine Charge d' Affairs in Tokyo on January 29, 1942, one page of Japanese ext.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): The Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

Signed at Tokyo on this
5 day of Sept, 1946

/s/ K. Hayashi
Signature of Official
SFAL
Chief of Archives Section
Official Capacity

Witness: s/Nagaharu Odo

Statement of Official Procurement

I, John Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
5 day of Sept., 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis 2d Lt
NAME

Witness: /s/ R. H. Lersh

Investigator
Official Capacity

(三) 照得日本帝國政府與貴國政府所訂之條約自應照然
一國代權亦使家無二輪

8477

以書翰啓上致候 陳若本月九日附掛信條三普通第號
三國之俘虜，待遇三國之日本帝國政府，見解左，通陳述
致候條可然「キリス」
以下之各政府，御傳運相成度此致御候
申上候

1956

一 日本帝國政府之俘虜，待遇三國之十九百二十年，
國際條約可批准之居不為之何等國條約，拘束可受
「キリス」日本，權內「キリス」人及「キリス」人
「キリス」人及「キリス」人及「キリス」人及「キリス」人
二 同條約，規定可準用之
三 俘虜，被服及食糧，補給三國之相互條約下
四 俘虜，國民的人種的內習可考慮之
本大臣之意三貴下三對之敬意可表之候 敬具

W

昭和十七年一月二十九日

東郷外務大臣

在東京

「キリス」國代理大使

Doc. 8475

證明書

東京三井物産株式會社
國際檢査部 第六七三號
典藤及松公正三閣下證明

余林君公余於下記資格於前日本外務省文書課長
上於日本政府上公的關係在於一九二二年三月三日
至今五年添附之於一九二二年九月十四日昭和十
七年一月二十九日附下於總務部於一九二二年九月
十七日附下於東京三井物産株式會社外務部
同於前及於陳述等之證書任信之於一九二二年三月三日證明
又。

余林君前於記符及於文書課長日本政府文書課長上於
一九二二年九月十四日附下於總務部於一九二二年九月
十七日附下於東京三井物産株式會社外務部同於前及於
陳述等之證書任信之於一九二二年三月三日證明又。

一九二六年/昭和十一年/十月七日

東京三井物産株式會社
國際檢査部 第六七三號
右、看、公的資格
證
人
林君 / Kaoru HAYASHI (Seal) 及署名
廣田君 / Kazuo HIRANO (Seal) 及署名

公式入年三閣下證明

余林君公余於下記資格於前日本外務省文書課長
上於日本政府上公的關係在於一九二二年三月三日
至今五年添附之於一九二二年九月十四日昭和十
七年一月二十九日附下於總務部於一九二二年九月
十七日附下於東京三井物産株式會社外務部
同於前及於陳述等之證書任信之於一九二二年三月三日證明
又。

一九二六年/昭和十一年/十月十二日

東京三井物産株式會社
國際檢査部 第六七三號
右、看、公的資格
證
人
理查德 / Richard H. LASH (Seal) 及署名
愛德華 / Edward P. MORGAN (Seal) 及署名

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

On January 3, 1942 the British Government communicated through the Argentine Charge d'Affaires in Tokyo the information that the British, Canadian, Australian and New Zealand Governments would declare their observance of the Geneva Prisoner of War Convention of 1929 in respect of Japan and inquired whether the Imperial Government had any intention of making a similar declaration.

There was another communication on January 5th saying that they propose to take the national and racial manners and customs of the prisoners of war into consideration when applying articles 11 and 12 of the said agreement concerning the supply of provisions and clothing to the prisoners of war.

To the above we communicated the following to the various Governments mentioned above, through the Argentine Charge d'Affaires in Tokyo on January 29th:

1. The Imperial Government has not ratified the agreement in question and therefore refuses to be bound in any way whatever by the agreement, ~~but will apply the provisions of the said agreement~~ to British, Canadian, Australian and New Zealand prisoners of war within Japan's jurisdiction.
2. The Imperial Government will consider the national and racial manners and customs of the prisoners of war on a basis of reciprocity when supplying clothing and provisions to the prisoners of war.

"however, it will apply mutatis mutandis the provisions of the said convention."

EXHIBIT NO. 1957.

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc. No. 1465 B

C E R T I F I C A T E

W. D. C. No. _____
I. P. S. No. 1465-B

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, K. Hayashi hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Chief of the Archives Section Foreign Office and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 1 pages, dated 29 January 1942, and described as follows: Statement concerning reply of Japanese Foreign Minister to Argentine Charge d' Affairs in Tokyo on January 29, 1942, one page of Japanese ext.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): The Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

Signed at Tokyo on this
5 day of Sept, 1946

/s/ K. Hayashi
Signature of Official
SFAL
Chief of Archives Section
Official Capacity

Witness: s/Nagaharu Odo

Statement of Official Procurement

I, John Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
5 day of Sept., 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis 2d Lt
NAME
Investigator
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ R. H. Larsh

1465B-1

昭和十七年一月三日英國政府ヨリ在京亞國代理大使ヲ通シ英、加、濠洲新西蘭各政府ハ日本ニ對シ一九二九年ノ壽府俘虜待遇條約ノ條項ノ遵守ヲ聲明スル旨及帝國政府ハ同様ノ聲明ヲ行フ意嚮アリヤ照會越セルガ更ニ一月五日俘虜ノ食糧及衣類ノ補給ニ關スル前記條約第十一條及第十二條ノ適用ニ關シ俘虜ノ國民的、民族的習慣ヲ考慮スルコトヲ提案スル旨申越アリタリ

右ニ對シ我方ハ一月二十九日在京亞國代理大使ヲ連記前記各政府ニ對シ

- (一) 帝國政府ハ本件條約ヲ批准シ居ラス從テ何等同等同條約ノ拘束ヲ受ケザル次第ナルモ日本ノ權内ニ在ル英、加、濠及新西蘭人タル俘虜ニ對シテハ同條約ノ規定ヲ準用スベキ事及(二) 俘虜ノ被服及食糧ノ補給ニ關シテハ相互條件ノ下ニ俘虜ノ國民的、人種的風習ヲ考慮スベキ旨通報セリ

FILE COPY
 RETURN TO ROOM 361

1465B-2

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 〇 號
國際 檢察 部 第一四六五 B 號

典 據 及 ビ 公 正 ニ 關 ス ル 證 明

余、ケ・林ハ余ガ下記ノ資各ニ於テ、即チ外務省
文書課長トシテ、日本政府ト公的ニ在ルモノ
ナルコト、竝ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラレ
タル、一頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四十二年ノ昭和十七
年ノ一月二十九日附、下記題名、即チ千九百四十
三年一月二十九日日本外務大臣ヨリアルゼンチン
代理大使ニ對スル回答ニ關スル陳述原本ハ日本文
一頁ヨリ成ルノ文書ノ保管ニ任ジ居ルコトヲ茲ニ
證明ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書
ナルコト、竝ニ右ガ下記名籍ノ省又ハ部局ノ公文
書類及ビ發ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラバ
經補號又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ發ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所
在ノ公式名籍ヲモ特記スベシ) 外 務 省

1465B-3

千九百四十六年／昭和二十一年／九月五日

東京ニ於テ署名

當該官吏署名欄 ケー・林／署名捺印／

右ノ者ノ公的資格 文書課長

證 人 オドウ・ナガハル

公式入手ニ關スル證明

余、*John Curtis* カークスハ、余ガ聯合國最高指揮官
總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、竝ニ上記題名
ノ文書ハ余ガ公務上、日本政府ノ上記署名官吏ヨ
リ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年／昭和二十一年／九月五日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏 名 欄 *チエーエーカークス*
(*E. A. Curtis*)

右ノ者ノ公的資格 證 査 官

證 人 *アール・エイチラーシエ*
(*R. H. Karsh*)

E. # 1958

Document No. 1465-A

Page 1

IMPERIAL JAPANESE GOVERNMENT

Central Liaison Office

TO: Mr. A. F. Mignone, Document Acquisition, IPS

FROM: Mr. Ohta, Central Liaison Office

SUBJECT: Production of Document Requested

18 April 1946

With reference to your check sheet dated 30 March, I wish to submit herewith the required document compiled by the First Demobilization Ministry.

/s/ S. Ohta

SUBJECT: "Record of Conference in War Ministry", May 6, 1942, regarding decision not to apply the Geneva Convention, and orders issued in consequence thereof.

There is no data to confirm whether or not there was held any conference in the War Ministry on May 6, 1942. However, as regards the matter of non-application of the Geneva Convention the following decisions of the War Ministry may be cited:

1. The Vice Minister of Foreign Affairs under date of January 13, and 16, transmitted to the War Ministry the inquiries of American, British and other governments. The Ministry, following several conferences, reached a decision (Annex I) and communicated the same to the Vice Minister for Foreign Affairs on January 23. However, there are no records of the conferences.
2. On January 27, 1943, the Vice Minister for Foreign Affairs sent an inquiry regarding the application of the Prisoner of War Convention to non-combatant internees. As a result of a conference, the Ministry reached a decision (Annex II). The same was communicated by the Vice Minister of War to the Vice Minister of Foreign Affairs under date of February 6, however, there is no record of the conference.
3. The Foreign Office, under date of December 12, 1941, transmitted to the War Ministry the communication of the International Red Cross Committee Chairman, Max Euder, concerning collection and transmission of information regarding prisoners of war. After a conference, the Ministry reached a decision (Annex III), which was communicated to the Foreign Office.
4. The above decisions being entirely in line with the fundamental principles and policy, according to which the War Ministry had always directed the conduct of the affairs relating to prisoners of war, no orders seem to have been issued in consequence of the decisions. (Existing data have been examined, but it cannot be ascertained whether any order was issued or not.)

Reply from Vice Minister of War to Vice Minister for
Foreign Affairs, January 23, 1942
(Translation)

"In answer to your inquiries in clear No. 52 and No. 53, dated January 13 and No. 85, dated January 16, the views of this Ministry are as follows:

I. Concerning No. 53:

1. In view of the fact that the Geneva Convention relating to prisoners of war was not ratified by His Majesty, we can hardly announce our observance of the same. But it would be safe to notify the world that we have no objection to acting in accordance with the Convention in the treatment of prisoners of war.
2. As regards providing prisoners of war with food and clothing, we have no objection to giving due consideration to the national or racial habits and customs of the prisoners.

II. Concerning No. 53 and No. 85, the above views will be applicable."

Application of the Prisoner of War Convention to
Non-Combatant Internees. (Army, Ordinary No. 753,
February 6, 1942) (Translation)

Referring to your communication, No. 149, dated January 27,
1942, on the above subject, the views of this ministry are as follows:

The 1929 Geneva Convention relating to Prisoners of
War has no binding power whatsoever on Japan. But this
ministry has no objection to applying the principles of
the Convention to non-combatant internees within such
limits as it is applicable, provided, however, that no
person be subjected to labor against his will.

Application of the Prisoner of War Convention to
Non-Combatant Internees. (Army, Ordinary No. 753,
February 6, 1942) (Translation)

Referring to your communication, No. 149, dated January 27,
1942, on the above subject, the views of this ministry are as follows:

The 1929 Geneva Convention relating to Prisoners of
War has no binding power whatsoever on Japan. But this
ministry has no objection to applying the principles of
the Convention to non-combatant internees within such
limits as it is applicable, provided, however, that no
person be subjected to labor against his will.

Communication of the International Red Cross Committee
Chairman concerning collection and transmission of in-
formation regarding prisoners of war, dated December 28,
1941 (Army Ordinary 9392) (Translation)

Referring to your communication, No. 4585, dated
December 12, 1941, on the above subject, the views of this Ministry
are as follows:

The Ministry agrees to the proposal.

However,

- a. It is not that we "declare that we are prepared to
apply in practice" the provisions of the Prisoner
of War Convention of 1929, but that we "utilize them
for the convenience of transmission of information."
- b. Information is to be transmitted by telegram and
other means.

Doc. No. 1465 A

C E R T I F I C A T E

W. D. G. No. _____
I. P. S. No. 1465 A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Yoza Miyama hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Chief of the Archives and Document Section and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 5 pages, dated April 18, 1946, and described as follows: Report from Imperial Japanese Government Central Liaison Office Forwarded to IPS by letter dated April 18, 1946, with five pages of Japanese Text attached.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): 1st Demobilization Bureau.

Signed at Tokyo on this
6 day of September, 1946

/s/ Yoza Miyama
Signature of Official

SJAL

Chief of the Archives
and Documents Section
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Keije Hashimoto

Statement of Official Procurement

I, John Curtis, 2d Lt., hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
6 day of September, 1946
Witness: /s/ Eric W. Fleisher

/s/ J. A. Curtis 2d Lt.

NAME

Investigator
Official Capacity

9578

14301
1465A-1

陸軍省議記録提出ノ件

ジエネ一ノ條約ヲ適用セズトシ一九四二年五月六日ノ

一九四二年五月六日省議アリシヤ否ハ資料無く不

明ナルモ別ニ「ジエネ一」條約ノ適用セズトノ

件ニ關シテハ左ノ如ク省議決定ノ地タルモノアリ

一、一九四二年一月十三日及十六日附外務次官ヨ

リ停廢ノ待遇ニ關スル草案等各自以府ノ照會アリ

爾後屢々省議ヲ重キタル結果別紙第一ノ如ク決定

シ一月二十三日之ヲ外務次官ニ報告セリ

但省議記録ナシ

二、一九四二年一月二十七日押尾非職團員ニ對ス

ル停廢條約適用可否ニ關スル外務次官ノ照會ニ接

シ省議ノ結果別紙第二ノ如ク決定二月六日之ヲ隨

軍次官ヨリ外務次官宛回答セリ

但省議記録ナシ

三、一九四二年十二月十二日及十三日ニ關スル情報

集傳達ニ關シテ前幣寺中野委員ニ對シテ照會ヨリノ

申入ニ關スル外務省ヨリノ照會ニ接シ省議ノ結果

別紙第三ノ如ク決定シ之ヲ外務省ニ回答セリ

四、右ノ各項ハ從來陸軍ニ於テ重複シ且之ニ基キ

停廢團無異等ヲ指導シテリシ根本方針ト何等變化

THE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

1465-A-2

無キニ鑑ミ之等決定ニ基ク命令ハ成シアラザルガ
如シ（現存資料ニテハ調査スルモ不明也ス）

別紙第一

陸軍次官ヨリ外務次官宛回書（昭一七、一、三三）
陸軍省一八九

昭和十七年一月十三日附録三普廻官第五二號第五
三號及昭和十七年一月十六日附同第八五號ヲ以テ
照會ニ係ル首題ノ件ニ關スル當方ノ意見左ノ如ク
同答ス

左記

一、第五二號ニ關シ

- 1、壽府俘虜條約ハ御批准アラレラレザリシモ
ノナルニ鑑ミ右條約ノ遵守ヲ解明シ得ザルモ
俘虜待遇上之ニ準シテ措置スルコトニハ異存
ナキ旨通告スルニ止ムルヲ廻答トスベシ
- 2、俘虜ノ食料及衣類ノ補給ニ關シテハ俘虜ノ
國民的民族的習慣ヲ適宜考慮スルコトニ異存
ナシ

二、第五三號及第八五號ニ關シ前項意見ニ準ス

14-65A-3

別紙第二

抑留非戦國員ニ對スル件條約準用可否ニ關スル件

(昭一七、二、六)
陸警七五三

一月二十七日附條三警通合第一四九號ヲ以テ照會ニ係ル首題ノ件ニ關スル意見左記如ニ付御了知相

成度

左記

一九二九年ノ壽府俘虜條約ハ日本ニ對シ何等拘束力ヲ有セザルモ同條約ノ原則ヲ準用シ得ル範圍ニ於テ抑留非戦國員ニモ準用スルコトニ異存ナシ但本人ノ自由意志ニ反シ勞役ニ成セシメザルヲ條件トス

別紙第三

捕虜ニ關スル情報蒐集傳達方ニ關シ四條亦十字委員會

委員長ヨリ申越ノ件

(昭和十六年十二月二十八日)
陸警九三五二

昭和十六年十二月十二日附條三警合第百五八五號ヲ以テ照會相成リタル首題ノ件ニ關スル當方ノ意見別紙ノ通り答ス

1465A-14

別紙

本件申出ニ同意ス

但

- イ、一九二九年ノ借券条約ニ當マルル規定ヲ
「事實上適用スルノ用意アルコトヲ宣言
スル」ニ非スシテ「情報伝送ノ便宜上利
用スル」趣旨トスルコト
- ロ、情報伝送手段ハ電報及共ノ他ノ手段ニヨ
ル事

1465 A-5

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 一 冊
國際檢察部 第一四六五A號

典據及ビ公正ニ關スル説明

余、ヨウゾウ、ミヤマハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、
即チ文藝課長トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係ニ在ル
モノナルコト、竝ニ該官吏トシテ尔ガ茲ニ添附セ
ラレタル、五頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四十六年ノ昭和
二十一年ノ四月十八日附、下記姓名、即チ千九百
四十六年四月十八日附誓圖ニヨル日本政府中央通
信事務局ヨリ國際檢察部宛ノ報告、日本文本文五
頁添附ノモノ、ノ文藝保管ニ任ジ居ルコトヲ茲ニ
證明ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文藝カ日本政府ノ公文藝
ナルコト、竝ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省入ハ警察局ノ公式
誓類及ビ卷ノ一部ナルコトヲ註明ス。(若シアラバ
譯者擬又ハ引用、其ノ他公式誓類又ハ卷ニ於ケル該文藝ノ威觀所
在ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 第一復員局

1465A-6

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 九月六日

東京ニ於テ署名
 當該官吏署名ヨリ シヤマ ヨウゾウ
 右ノ者ノ公的資格 文藝部長ノ署名捺印ノ
 証 人 ハシモト、クイジノ署名捺印ノ

公式入手ニ關スル証明

余、少尉ジョン・カーチス / JOHN CURTIS / 人、余が聯合
 國最高指揮官總司令部ニ係アルモノナルコト、
 並ニ上記姓名ノ文藝ハ余が公認ニ、日本政府ノ上
 記署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證
 明ス。

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 九月六日

東京ニ於テ署名
 氏 全名 ジェイ、エイ、カーチス
 右ノ者ノ公的資格 副 室 官 / J. A. Curtis /
 証 人 エリック・マブリエー、フライシャー
 / Eric H. Fleisher /

Ex. # 1960

Document No. 1547-A

The following is an excerpt from the part, concerning the treatment of prisoners of war, in War Minister TOJO's Instructions Delivered to the Commander of the Zentsuji Division, on his visit of inspection thereto on May 30, 1942:

"To this Division is attached a prisoner of war camp. Prisoners of war must be placed under strict discipline as far as it does not contravene the law of humanity. It is necessary to take care not to be obsessed with a mistaken idea of humanitarianism or swayed by personal feelings towards those prisoners of war which may grow in the long time of their imprisonment. The present situation of affairs in this country does not permit anyone to lie idle doing nothing but eating freely. With that in view, in dealing with the prisoners of war, too, I hope you will see that they may be usefully employed."

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 1547-A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Nakanishi, Sadayoshi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Acting Director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 1 pages, dated 30 May, 1942, and described as follows: Excerpt from the part concerning the treatment of prisoners of war in War Minister TOJO's instructions delivered to the Commander of the Zentsuji Division on his visit of inspection thereto on May 30, 1942. I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Prisoner of War Information Bureau

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of September, 1946.

/s/ Nakanishi Sadayoshi
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Koji Yokoi

Acting Director
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, John Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of Sept., 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis 2nd Lt. MI
NAME

Witness: /s/ Richard H. Jersh

Investigator
Official Capacity

Ex 1930
Doc-1547A-1

第一五四七 A 號

昭和十七年五月三十日 東條陸軍大臣 善通寺師團視
察ノ際 同師團長ニ與ヘラレタル訓示中 停房ニ關ス
ル事項ノ拔萃

昭和十七年五月三十日 東條陸軍大臣 善通寺師團視
察ノ際 同師團長ニ與ヘラレタル訓示中 停房ニ關ス
ル事項ノ拔萃 左ノ如シ

「當師團ニハ 停房收容所カ設置サレテ居リマスガ、
停房ハ 入道ニ反シナイ限ル 嚴重ニ取締リ 苟モ誤レ
ル 入道主義ニ陥リ又ハ 收容久シキニ亙ル 結果情實
ニ陥ルカ如キコトナイ様 注意ヲ要シマス 又我國現
下ノ情勢ハ 一ハトシテ 無爲徒食スルモノアルシ許
サナイノデアリマス、停房モ亦此ノ趣旨ニ 鑑ミ大
ニ之ヲ活用セラルル様 注意ヲ望ミマス」

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

1547 A-2

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 〇 號
國 際 偵 察 部 第 一 五 四 七 〇 號

典 據 及 ビ 公 正 ニ 關 ス ル 證 明

余、中野サズヨシハ余カ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ
俘虜情報局長官代理トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係
ニ在ルモノナルコト、茲ニ該官吏トシテ余カ茲ニ
添附セラルル、一 頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四十
二年ノ昭和十七年ノ五月三十日附、下記題名、即
チ一九四二年ノ昭和十七年五月三十日東條陸軍大
臣普通寺師團視察ノ際同師團長ニ與ヘラルル訓
示中俘虜ニ關スル事項ノ抜萃ノ文書ノ保管ニ任シ
居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。
余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書
ナルコト、茲ニ右カ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式
書類及ビ綴ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シテ該綴
番號ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ綴ニ於テ該文書ノ成規所在ノ
公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 俘虜情報局

1547A-2

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 一 五 四 七 号
國 際 偵 察 部 第 一 五 四 七 号

典 據 及 び 公 正 ニ 關 ス ル 證 明

余、中回サボヨシハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ
侍房情報局長官代理トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係
ニ在ルモノナルコト、茲ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ
添附セザレタル、一 頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四十
二年ノ昭和十七年ノ五月三十日附、下記題名、即
チ一九四二年ノ昭和十七年五月三十日東條陸軍大
臣普通寺師團視察ノ際同師團長ニ與ヘラレタル訓
示中侍房ニ關スル事項ノ抜萃ノ文書ノ保管ニ任シ
居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。
余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書
ナルコト、茲ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式
書類及ビ綴ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シテ該綴
番號又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ綴ニ於テ該文書ノ成規所在ノ
公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 侍房情報局

1547 A-3

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十二年 / 九月四日

東京ニ於テ署名

當該官吏署名欄 中西サダヨシ (捺印)

右ノ者ノ公的資格 停務情報局長官代理

証人 横井コージ (捺印)

公式入手ニ關スル證明

余、ジョン・カーテイ CURTIS カーテイ スハ、余ガ聯合國最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、竝ニ上記題名ノ文書ハ余ガ公務上、日本政府ノ上記署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十二年 / 九月四日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏名欄 シエー・エイ・カーテイ CURTIS 少尉

右ノ者ノ公的資格 調査官 副: I. 軍事情報

証人 リチャード H. ラーシュ RICHARD H. LARSH

Q # 1461

Document No. 1547-B

Notification from the Director of the Prisoner of
War Custody Division of the Ministry of War, to
Army Units Concerned

Subject: Labor Imposed upon Prisoner of War Officers and
Non-Commissioned Officers (POW No. 4-2, June 3, 1942)

Although the imposition of labor upon prisoner of war officers and non-commissioned officers is prohibited under Article 1 of the Prisoner of War Labor Regulations (Army Note No. 139, September 10, 1904), it is the policy of the Central Authorities, in view of the present condition of this country which does not allow anyone to lie idle and eat freely, and also with a view to maintaining the health of prisoners of war, to make such officers and non-commissioned officers volunteer to work in accordance with their respective status, intelligence, physical strength, etc. You are, therefore, desired to take proper steps accordingly. The following, it may be added, will be presumably fit lines of labor for such purposes:

1. Various kinds of work in which one's technical skill, learning, etc. may be employed to advantage.
2. Agricultural work.
3. The raising of domestic animals and fowls.
4. The directing of prisoners of war in general labor.
5. Assistance in the collection and compilation of war history materials.
6. Publicity affairs.
7. Miscellaneous, considered fit for the above-mentioned purposes.

1962

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 1547-3

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Nekenishi, Sedayoshi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Acting Director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 2 pages, dated 3 June, 1942, and described as follows: Notification from the Director of the Prisoners of War Custody Division of the Ministry of War to Army Units concerned, POW No. 4-2, June 3, 1942.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Prisoner of War Information Bureau.

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of September, 1946.

/s/ Nekenishi Sedayoshi
Signature of Official
SEAL

Witness: /s/ Koji Yokoi

Acting Director
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, John Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of September, 1946.

/s/ J. A. Curtis, 2nd Lt. M.I.
NAME

Witness: /s/ Richard H. Larsh

Investigator
Official Capacity

EQ # 1961

Document No. 1547-B

Notification from the Director of the Prisoner of
War Custody Division of the Ministry of War, to
Army Units Concerned

Subject: Labor Imposed upon Prisoner of War Officers and
Non-Commissioned Officers (POW No. 4-2, June 3, 1942)

Although the imposition of labor upon prisoner of war officers and non-commissioned officers is prohibited under Article 1 of the Prisoner of War Labor Regulations (Army Note No. 139, September 10, 1904), it is the policy of the Central Authorities, in view of the present condition of this country which does not allow anyone to lie idle and eat freely, and also with a view to maintaining the health of prisoners of war, to make such officers and non-commissioned officers volunteer to work in accordance with their respective status, intelligence, physical strength, etc. You are, therefore, desired to take proper steps accordingly. The following, it may be added, will be presumably fit lines of labor for such purposes:

1. Various kinds of work in which one's technical skill, learning, etc. may be employed to advantage.
2. Agricultural work.
3. The raising of domestic animals and fowls.
4. The directing of prisoners of war in general labor.
5. Assistance in the collection and compilation of war history materials.
6. Publicity affairs.
7. Miscellaneous, considered fit for the above-mentioned purposes.

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 1547-B

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Nekanishi, Sadayoshi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Acting Director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 2 pages, dated 3 June, 1942, and described as follows: Notification from the Director of the Prisoners of War Custody Division of the Ministry of War to Army Units concerned, POW No. 4-2, June 3, 1942.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Prisoner of War Information Bureau.

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of September, 1946.

/s/ Nekanishi Sadayoshi
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Koji Yokoi

Acting Director
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, John Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of September, 1946.

/s/ J. A. Curtis, 2nd Lt. M.I.
NAME

Investigator
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Richard H. Larsh

E. H. 1962

Document No. 1330-B

War Minister's Address Delivered to the Newly Appointed
Chiefs of Prisoner of War Camps, at the Ministry of War,
on June 25, 1942

It gives me great pleasure that you have been appointed Chiefs of Prisoner of War Camps and are starting for your respective posts soon.

In Japan, we have our own ideology concerning prisoners of war, which should naturally make their treatment more or less different from that in Europe and America. In dealing with them, you should, of course, observe the various regulations concerned, aim at an adequate application of them, and evince the fair and just attitude of the Empire vividly for abroad as well as at home. At the same time, however, you must place the prisoners under strict discipline and not allow them to lie idle doing nothing but eating freely for even a single day. Their labor and technical skill should be fully utilized for the replenishment of production, and contribution rendered toward the prosecution of the Greater East Asiatic War, for which no effort ought to be spared.

You are specially desired to take into consideration the characteristic nature of your places of appointment and make the local populace realize the superior traits of the Japanese nation through the correct treatment of prisoners of war, impressing upon their minds the unique privilege and honor of having been born as Japanese subjects under His Majesty's gracious reign.

Keeping these things in view, you will always be awake to the gravity of your responsibility, tighten your control of subordinates, and make every effort to fill your duty to perfection.

HIDEKI TOJO
Minister of War

June 25, 1942 (Showa 17)

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 1330-B

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Nakanishi Sadayoshi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Acting Director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 2 pages, dated 25 June, 1942, and described as follows: War Minister's Address Delivered to the Newly Appointed Chiefs of Prisoner of War Camps

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Prisoner of War Information Bureau

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of September, 1946.

/s/ Nakanishi Sadayoshi

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Koji Yokoi

Acting Director
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, John A. Curtis, 2nd Lt., hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of September, 1946.

/s/ J. A. Curtis, 2nd Lt. M.I.

Investigator
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Richard E. Larsh

Ex 1962

新任俘虜收容所長ニ對シ 陸軍大臣訓示 (昭和七年六月二十五日 陸軍省)

1630B

諸官此度任テ俘虜收容所長ニ任テ近ク夫ノ現地ニ赴キテ
 之ニ予ノ取モ欣快ナシ
 抑我國ノ俘虜ニ對シ觀念上其取扱ニ於テ是政事各國上自
 相規定ナリ諸官ノ俘虜處理ニ方テ固ヨリ諸條規ニ遵
 由之カ適正ノ期ニ公正ニ帝國ノ態度ヲ如字ニ中外ニ顯揚サ
 ルカカト雖モ他人道ニ反シテ浪リ嚴重ニ之ヲ取締リ且
 一日ト雖モ無為徒食セシトナリ其ノ努力特技ヲ採リ生産擴
 充ニ活用スル等總力ヲ舉ケテ大東亞戰爭遂行ニ資スルヲ
 努力スルニ尙此際諸官ノ任地ニ特性ニ鑑ミ特ニ俘虜ノ通シ
 現地民衆ニ對シ大抵民族優劣性ヲ體得セシトテ其ノ自愛心
 鳴大ニ日本臣民ノ心ト眞ニ無上ノ光榮ナル感銘セシト如
 ク好ムル要諸官宜シク敘上ノ趣旨ニ鑑ミ責務重大ニ
 自覺シ部下監督ヲ嚴正ニ勤骨碎身以テ其任ヲ完
 成スルヲ期ス

昭和七年六月二十五日

陸軍大臣 東條 英機

No. 1

證明書

「三ノ」文書局 第一號

國際檢察部 第六三號 一三

典據及公文之證明

1630B

余中西共知之、余如下記、資格、於、即、停傷情報局長
官代理、日本政府、との關係、在、此、上、之、此、該、官、吏
上、余、が、茲、に、添、附、せ、之、一、頁、を、成、し、千、九、百、四、十、三、年、昭、和
十七年、六月、二十五日、付、下、記、題、名、即、新、任、停、傷、情、報
所、長、與、陸、軍、大、臣、訓、示、の、文、書、保、官、任、居、上、之、格
に、證明、す。

余、更、に、添、附、し、記録、及、公文、の、日本、政府、の、公文、書、上、之、に、
に、右、下、記、名、稱、直、文、部、局、の、公文、書、類、及、綴、の、部、大、に、
證明、す、(若、し、之、が、綴、番、號、又、引、用、其、他、の、公文、書、類、又、
綴、に、於、て、該、文、書、正、規、所、在、の、公文、名、稱、を、特、記、し、之、
千、九、百、四、十、三、年、昭、和、二十一年、九月、四日

東京 二 於、之、署名
當、該、官、吏、署、名、欄、に

在、者、の、資格

中西共知之

停傷情報局長官代理
横井 二ウ之

余、以、公文、證
指、揮、官、總、司令部、
余、が、公務、上、日本、政府、の、上、記、署名、官、吏、を、
九、百、四、十、三、年、昭、和、二十一年、九月、四日

東京 二 於、之、署名

在、者、の、資格

John, A. Curtis 余、が、聯合、國、最高
情報部、陸、軍、少、將
A. A. Curtis 情報部、陸、軍、少、將
Richard, H. Lark

No 2

EX # 1963

Instructions of War Minister
Hideki TOJO to the Newly-Appointed Commanders of the
Prisoner of War Camps

"It is very pleasing to me to hear that you who have been newly-appointed as commanders of prisoner of war camps are going to leave for your respective new posts very soon.

Our country has a different conception of prisoners of war and consequently has different methods of treatment compared with those of American and European nations.

So, in treating the prisoners of war at home and abroad, you must abide by the laws and regulations and apply them fairly and properly so that it will enhance and exhibit the prestige of our Empire. But on the other hand, you must supervise them rigidly insofar as you do not become inhuman, and not let them remain idle even for a single day, so as to utilize most effectively their manpower and technical ability for the expansion of our industries and to contribute to the execution of the great Eastern Asia War.

Moreover, considering the characteristics of the various localities, you must make the local people recognize the superiority of the Japanese people through the treatment of prisoners of war as well as make the local people conceive it as the greatest honor that they are able to collaborate with the Imperial Army in establishing the Greater East Asia Co-Prosperity Sphere.

Considering the importance of the aforementioned points and your great responsibility, you must lead your subordinates strictly and properly and execute your duty to the utmost."

Hideki TOJO
Minister of War

July 7, 1942

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____
 I.P.S. No. 1630 A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Masanori Yotsumoto hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: former member of the War Prisoner Supervising Bureau and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 2 pages, dated 7 July, 1942, and described as follows: ADDRESS OF INSTRUCTIONS GIVEN TO THE NEWLY-APPOINTED HEADS OF ALL CAMPS BY WAR MINISTER. I further certify that the above attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files):
War Ministry

Signed at PW Information Bureau on this
2nd day of July, 1946.

/s/ Masanori Yotsumoto
 Signature of Official

Witness. S. Nakanishi/s/

SEAL

 Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, Richard H. Larsh, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
30 day of Aug, 1946

/s/ Richard H. Larsh

NAME

Witness: /s/ J. A. Curtis
2nd Lt., MI

Investigator, IPS
 Official Capacity

Document No. 1630-C

10/11/46
Page 1

C E R T I F I C A T E

5 September 1946

I hereby certify the attached copies are the
true extracted copies of official documents in the files
of this Bureau.

/s/ S. Nakanishi
Sadayoshi Nakanishi

Acting Director,
POW Information Bureau

No. 1

EXTRACT FROM MONTHLY REPORT NO. 5 ON PRISONERS
OF WAR, POW INFORMATION BUREAU. (Vol. UA-1)

1. General Affairs.

- (3) On 25th and 26th June, necessary directives regarding POW matters (on the basis of the documents distributed at the meeting of the Chiefs of POW Camps held on 25 and 26 June) were given to the Chiefs and staff personnel (appointee Chiefs of the Branch Camps) of Korea and Taiwan POW Camps, at the POW Information Bureau.

EXTRACT FROM MONTHLY REPORT FOR JULY ON PRISONERS
OF WAR, POW INFORMATION BUREAU (Vol. UA-1)

1. Group Instruction regarding the treatment of Prisoners
of War.

(1) On 7th and 8th July, at the POW Information Bureau,
Group Instruction regarding the treatment of prisoners
of war was given to the chiefs and some of the staff
personnel of the Thailand, Malaya, Philippine Islands,
Java and Borneo POW Camps to be established in the
near future.

Ranks and names of the attendants, the curriculum
schedule, the address of instruction of the War
Minister and list of the documents distributed are
shown in attached appendices No. 1 - 4.

Document No. 1630-C

APPENDIX

ATTENDANTS

<u>Name of Camp</u>	<u>Office</u>	<u>Rank</u>	<u>Name</u>
Thailand Prisoner of War Camp	Chief	Major General	SASSA, Wakoto
	Staff	Lt. Colonel	ICHIMURA, Toshiro
	"	Lt. Colonel	YANAGIDA, Seiichi
	"	Lt. Colonel	MAGATOMO, Yoshitada
	"	Lt. Colonel	TOHMA, Setomatsu
Malaya Prisoner of War Camp	Chief	Major General	FUKUE, Shimpie
	Staff	Lt. Colonel	NAKIMURA, Aizo
	"	Lt. Colonel	SAKANO, Hiroaki
	"	Major	MATSUDAIRA, Shoko
Philippine Island Prisoner of War Camp	Chief	Major General	MORIMOTO, Ichiro
	Staff	Major	IWANAKA, Yasuaki
	"	Major	MAEDA, Kazuo
Java Prisoner of War Camp	Chief	Major General	SAITO, Seiei
	Staff	Lt. Colonel	KAWAMURA, Hideo
	"	Lt. Colonel	KAWABE, Tadashi
	"	Major	MATSUNAGA, Masayoshi
	"	Major	EBIKO, Yoshitaro
	"	Major	ANAMI, Misoo
	"	Major	HAYASHI, Hisaichiro
Borneo Prisoner of War Camp	Chief	Major	SUGA, Tatsuji

Curriculum Schedule

<u>Date</u>	<u>Items to be Explained</u>	<u>Explainer</u>
July 7	War Minister's Address of Instruction	Read by the Chief of Prisoner of War Administration Section
	Speech and explanation of Prisoners of War disposition by the Chief of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau and concurrently the Chief of the Prisoner of War Administration Section.	
	General situation regarding prisoners of war; various international regulations regarding prisoner of war; business regulations of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau; Prisoner of War Administration Section and Prisoner of War camp.	Colonel YAMAZAKI
	Prisoner of War labor Prisoner of War punishment	Lt. Colonel YASUDA
	Information regarding prisoners of war Various notices regarding prisoners of war Prisoner of war identification cards Prisoner of war sanitation	Major YAMAUCHI
July 8	Prisoner of War allowance Prisoner of War relief Prisoner of war abandoned and confiscated personal property Military internees	1st Lt. YOTSUMOTO
	Prisoner of war correspondence Information regarding enemy war dead	1st Lt. SAITO
	Round Table Conference	

Document No. 1630-C

Appendix III

War Minister's address of instruction given to the newly appointed chiefs of prisoner of war camps, at the War Ministry on July 7, 1942.

(This speech is known as Document No. 1630-A)

List of Distributed Documents

1. Curriculum schedule for the conference of the newly appointed chiefs of prisoner of war camps.
2. War Minister's address of instruction.
3. Gist of the Chief's speech.
4. Various regulations regarding the treatment of prisoners of war and other documents for reference.
5. Explanation of the principle of the disposition of prisoners of war.
6. Matters to be explained in connection with affairs concerning prisoners of war.
7. Matters regarding prisoners of war labor.
8. Matters regarding prisoners of war punishment.
9. Matters concerning the labor of prisoner of war officers and warrant officers.
10. Essentials regarding the transportation to Japan proper of prisoners of war who have excellent technical knowledge.
11. Regarding information.
12. Regarding notices concerning prisoners of war.
13. Regarding prisoners of war identification cards.
14. Regarding prisoners of war sanitation.
15. Matters pertaining to prisoners of war allowance.
16. Answers to questions regarding prisoners of war allowance and extracted documents for reference.
17. Matters regarding prisoners of war relief.
18. Matters regarding prisoners of war confiscated articles, personal belongings, abandoned property, and wills.
19. Matters regarding military internees.
20. Matters for reference in connection with the treatment of internees in the occupied area.
21. Questions and answers regarding the matters for reference pertaining to the affairs of prisoners of war.
22. Outline of the International Red Cross Commission and Japan Red Cross Prisoner of War Relief Committee.
23. Matters regarding prisoners of war communication.
24. Matters regarding the enemy war dead.
25. Chart showing the division of business in the Prisoner of War Information Bureau and the Prisoner of War Administrative Section.

Documents for reference:

- Prisoner of War Information No. 1 - No. 5.
- Example of Regulations for controlling prisoners of war at POW camps.
- Example of the standing orders of prisoner of war camps.
- Example of the service stipulation of prisoner of war camps.
- Example of regulations covering prisoners of war daily routine.
- Example of the C.Q. stipulations of prisoners of war camps.
- Example of the regulations regarding the guard at prisoner of war camps.

C E R T I F I C A T E

I.P.S. No. 1630-C

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, NAKANISHI, Sadayoshi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Acting Director POW Information Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 7 pages, and described as follows: Extract from Monthly Report for July on Prisoners of War, POW Information Bureau (The 25 documents listed in Appendix IV and reference documents referred to were burned)

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): POW Information Bureau.

Signed at Tokyo on this

18th day of December, 1946.

Witness: K. Yokoi /s/

/s/ S. NAKANISHI
Signature of Official
SEAL

Acting Director
POW Information Bureau
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, Henry Shimojima, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

18th day of December, 1946.

Witness: /s/ R. E. Larsh

/s/ Henry Shimojima
NAM

Investigator IPS
Official Capacity

76 /

EX 1964 月

Doc 1630C

停屍情報局第五號停屍月報 拔萃. UAI.

第一 一般的事項

三. 六月二十五、六日朝鮮、臺灣停屍收容所所長及所員(含所長揀定者)對停屍情報局於停屍業務之所要(六月二十五、六日停屍收容所所長會同席於此配布書類之基)提示可也

本書類當向保管書類正確之拔萃之事、言明不

昭和三十年九月五日

停屍情報局長官代理

中西貞喜 (印)

LIBRARY COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 1630 C

停務情報局七月號停務月報 披萃 UAI

第一停務取扱関心集合教育

七月七八兩日停務情報局於近新設

泰馬來比島爪哇等處「停務收容所」長並

一同所員一部對「停務取扱関心集合教育」

實施

右出席者官氏名行事豫定表大臣訓示及配布

書類目錄別紙第一乃至第四如之

本書類當同保管書類正確披萃七事証明又

昭和三十年九月五日

停務情報局長官代理

中西貞基 (印)

no 2

別紙第一

Doc 1630c

出席者

收容所名	職名	官	氏名
恭作房 收容所	所長	少將	佐々木 誠
	所員	中佐	石井 民恵
	同	同	柳田 正一
	同	同	永友 吾忠
馬来 收容所	所長	少將	知田 外松
	所員	中佐	福榮 眞平
	同	同	牧村 愛三
	同	少佐	坂野 博暉
比島 收容所	所長	少將	松平 紹光
	所員	少佐	森本 伊市郎
	同	同	岩中 保章
	同	同	前田 一男
瓜哇 收容所	所長	少將	齊藤 正銳
	所員	中佐	河村 秀夫
	同	少佐	河邊 正義
	同	同	松永 正
木儿不才 收容所	所長	少佐	蛭子 由太郎
	同	同	阿南 三蘇男
	同	同	林 奇一郎
	同	同	菅 辰次

163

行事豫定表

1630 C

日	説明事項	説明者
七	陸軍大臣訓示(俘虜管理部長代讀)	
	俘虜情報局長官兼俘虜管理部長演說(俘虜處理要領説明)	
	俘虜一般狀況	
	俘虜三國及几國際諸規定	
	俘虜情報局、俘虜管理部	山崎大佐
	俘虜收容所等、事務規程	
	俘虜、勞務	
	俘虜、処罰	保田中佐
	俘虜三國及几情報	
	俘虜三國及几諸通報	
月	俘虜、衛生	山内少佐
	俘虜、給與	
	俘虜、救恤	
	俘虜、遺留品、沒收品、領置品	田元中尉
	軍中留者	
八	俘虜、通信	
	敵軍戰死者三國及几情報	齊藤中尉
	懇談	

七

月

八

1630.C

別紙才三

新任信房收容
所長三興了儿

陸軍大臣訓示 (昭和十七年七月七日
陸軍省)

畧入

5

別紙十四

配印書類目次

1630 C

- 一 新任俘虜收容所長召集行司豫定表
- 一 大臣訓示
- 一 長官口演要旨
- 一 俘虜取扱関係諸法規並參考
- 一 俘虜処理要領說明
- 一 俘虜募集勅令案及說明事項
- 一 俘虜、勞務、團及儿事項
- 一 俘虜、処刑、團及儿事項
- 一 俘虜、儿將校及准士官、勞務、團及儿件
- 一 優秀技術士有儿俘虜、内地等へ輸送要領
- 一 情報三就
- 一 俘虜、肉、儿通報三就
- 一 俘虜、銘、名案三就
- 一 俘虜、衛生三就
- 一 俘虜、給食、團及儿事項
- 一 俘虜、給食、團及儿、質疑、回答及參考文書、抜萃
- 一 俘虜、教育、團及儿事項
- 一 俘虜、没収品、領置、品、遺留品、遺言書、團及儿事項
- 一 軍、柳、留者、團及儿事項
- 一 占領地、於、儿、柳、留者、取扱、團及儿、參考、件
- 一 俘虜、募集、團及儿、參考、對、及、質疑、及、回答
- 一 赤十字國聯委員會及日本赤十字俘虜救恤委員會概要
- 一 俘虜、通信、團及儿事項

6

1630C

一 敵不戰死者二國及儿云云

一 俘虜情報局及俘虜管理部業務分擔表

參考書類

俘虜情報 自第一號 至第五號

俘虜收容所 俘虜取締規則 一例

俘虜收容所 服務規則 一例

俘虜收容所 業務規定 一例

俘虜內務規定 一例

俘虜收容所 直道規定 一例

俘虜收容所 衛兵二國及儿規定 一例

7

Doe 1630 (A. J.)

ワシントン文書局 第 〇 號
國際檢察部 第一六三〇 號 〇

與據及ビ公正ニシスル證明

余、中山サダヨシ / NAKANEISHI SADAYOSHI / ハ余ガ下
記ノ資格ニ於テ自チ件ノ情報局長官代理トシテ、日本
政府ト公的ニ往ルモノナルコト、茲ニ詳述トシ
テ余ガ茲ニ添附セラレタル、七頁ヨリ成ル千九百
〇年 / 昭和 〇年 / 前、下記署名、即チ件
ノ情報局ハ一月七日以前（附録白紙記載ノ二十五
頁ノ文書、参照文書ハ別矣ス）ノ文書ノ保管ニ任ジ居
ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。
余ハ茲ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書ナル
コト、茲ニ石ガ下記名簿ノ信及ハ此局ノ公式登録及ビ
綴リノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。（若シアラハ登録簿及ハ引用
書ノ公式登録又ハ茲ニ於ケル該文書ノ成程所在ノ公式名簿ヲモ特記ス
ベシ）等、情報局

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 十二月十八日

東京ニ於テ署名

官認官吏署名欄 エス・ナカニシ / 署名 /

石ノ者ノ公認署名 件ノ情報局長官代理

證人 ケイ・ヨコイ / K. YOKOI 署名

1. #

Dec 16 30 (over)

公認入手ニ取スル證

HENRY SHIMOJIMA

余、ヘンリーシモジマハ、余ガ聯合國學堂權握官總司令館ニ歸アルモノナルコト、此ニ上記欄名ノ又シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ証明ス。

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ十二月十八日

東京ニ於テ署名

HENRY SHIMOJIMA

氏名ヘンリーシモジマノ署名

石ノ村ノ公的發給 山陰政務廳本官

証人 アール・エツチ・ラーシノ署名

A

Doc 10591

KI/KI

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS
SUPREME COMMANDER FOR THE ALLIED POWERS
MILITARY INTELLIGENCE SECTION, GENERAL STAFF
ALLIED TRANSLATION AND INTERPRETER SECTION

NOTE: Translation requested by Legal Section

LAWS, RULES, AND REGULATIONS
PERTAINING TO PRISONERS OF WAR

CONTENTS

Doc 10591

C O N T E N T S

KI/KI

.....

	Page	Page in Original
Organization of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau	1	1
Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War	2	3
Ordinance on Prisoner of War Camps	2	5
Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War	3	7
Chapter 1 General Provisions	3	7
Chapter 2 Capture and Evacuation of Prisoners of War	4	9
Chapter 3 Imprisonment and Administration of Prisoners of War	6	11
Chapter 4 Miscellaneous provisions	6	12
Detailed Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War	7	14
Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances	12	24
Regulations on the Work of Prisoners of War	14	30
Regulations for the Dispatch of Prisoners of War	22	38
Procedure for Presenting Requests for Authority to Employ and Dispatch Prisoners of War	25	50
Regulations for the Treatment of Dispatched Prisoners of War	27	48
Disciplinary Law for Prisoners of War	29	54
Assignment of Places to which Prisoners of War are	30	57

Chapter 3 Imprisonment and Administration of Prisoners of War	6	11
Chapter 4 Miscellaneous Provisions	6	12
Detailed Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War	7	14
Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances	12	24
Regulations on the Work of Prisoners of War	14	30
Regulations for the Dispatch of Prisoners of War	22	38
Procedure for Presenting Requests for Authority to Employ and Dispatch Prisoners of War	25	50
Regulations for the Treatment of Dispatched Prisoners of War	27	48
Disciplinary Law for Prisoners of War	29	54
The Management of Places to Which Prisoners of War are Dispatched	30	57
Disposition of Prisoners of War	30	58
Transportation of Prisoners of War on the Country's Railroads	31	61
Transportation of Prisoners of War	32	62
Maintenance of Facilities for the Deprisonment of Prisoners of War	32	63
Initial Grant of Allowances for Officer Prisoner of War	32	65
Allowances for Officer Prisoners of War	32	64
Basic Food Allowances for Prisoners of War	33	66
Supply of Clothing for Prisoners of War	34	67
The Handling of Money Paid by Prisoners of War to the National Treasury	35	72
Treatment of Prisoners of War	36	74
Allowances for Enemy Medical Personnel and Chaplains	36	75

Doc 10591

Treatment of the Crew of Enemy Ships

Allowances for the Special Labor Unit

Allowances for Employees of Prisoner of War Camps

Allowances for Employees of Prisoner of War Camps

Allowances for the Disabled Military Personnel Employed
as Prisoner of War Guards and Laborers

Receipts, Disbursements, and Custody of Money

Donations to Prisoners of War

Treatment of Objects Left by Deceased Prisoners of War
and by Battle Casualties

Treatment of Prisoners of War Who are Patients

Regulations on the Treatment of Army Internees

Use of the Prisoner of War Camp Staff for Administering
Army Internment Camp

The Disposal of Enemy Aliens in Distress

Prisoner of War Postal Regulations

Regulations on the Management of Prisoner of War
Postal Matter

Pay for Work Within the Prisoner of War Camp

KI/KI

37 77

37 77

37 78

38 79

39 82

40 85

40 85

40 86

41 88

44 96

44 96

45 99

46 101

47 251

Article 1

The Prisoner of War Information Bureau shall be under the control of the Minister of War and shall manage the matters mentioned below:

1. The investigation of internments, removals, releases on parole, exchanges, escapes, admissions into hospitals, deaths of prisoners of war, and the maintenance of records for each prisoner.
2. The communications, correspondence, and information regarding the conditions of the prisoners of war.
3. The custody and the transmission to families and other persons interested, of objects, articles and wills of the prisoners of war who are released on parole, exchanged, or those who died at hospitals, medical dressing stations, or prisoner of war camps.
4. The forwarding of gifts to prisoners of war, and of money, objects, and articles sent by or to the prisoners of war.
5. Information obtained by the Army or the Navy from those killed or slain in battle, the handling of their objects and wills, and of objects found in the field of battle.
6. Investigations concerning persons who are prisoners of war in enemy countries and the facilitation of communication between those prisoners of war and their families residing in the Empire and any other persons interested.

Article 2

The Prisoner of War Information Bureau shall be situated in Tokyo.

Article 3

There shall be one director and four secretaries in the Prisoner of War Information Bureau. However, the number of secretaries may be increased if necessary.

The director shall be appointed from general grade officers and the secretaries shall be appointed from field grade officers, company grade officers, or corresponding naval officers, or high civil officials.

In addition to the secretaries mentioned in the first paragraph, other secretaries shall be appointed from officials in the ministries concerned upon the recommendation of the Minister of War.

In the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, there shall be a number of clerks, who shall be of Junior or minor rank.

Article 4

The director administers the affairs of the Bureau under the direction and supervision of the Minister of War.

Article 5

In regard to matters falling within his jurisdiction, the director may demand information from any military or naval unit concerned.

Article 6

The secretaries shall manage all affairs assigned to them under the supervision of the director.

Article 7

The clerks shall perform their duties under the supervision of their superior officers.

Additional Provision

This Ordinance shall become effective from the day of its promulgation.

REGULATIONS FOR THE TREATMENT OF PRISONERS OF WAR
(WAR MINISTRY NOTIFICATION NO. 1034,
31 March 1942)

Article 1

All affairs in the Ministry of War relative to the treatment of prisoners of war shall be handled according to these regulations.

Article 2

The Prisoner of War Administration Division shall be established in the Ministry of War for the conduct of all affairs relative to the treatment of prisoners of war, and of civilian internees in the theatre of war.

In the Prisoner of War Administration Division, there shall be the division head, staff members, non-commissioned officers, and civil officials of Junior or minor rank.

Article 3

The Division head, staff members, non-commissioned officers, and civil officials of Junior or minor rank shall be selected from persons who simultaneously hold other official positions. The number of personnel shall be as prescribed below.

Article 4

The Division head shall administer the affairs of the division under the orders of the Minister of War and the staff members shall carry out their duties under the orders of the division head.

Article 5

The non-commissioned officers and the civil officials of Junior or minor rank shall perform their duties under the orders of their superior officers.

Schedule

A list of the prescribed number of personnel of the Prisoner of War Administration Division:

The Division Head	Lieutenant general (or Major General)	1
The Staff Members	Field grade officers or Company grade officers	5
The Non-commissioned officers and Civil officials of Junior or minor rank		5

Remarks.

1. In addition to the number of the personnel prescribed in the Schedule, a number of field grade officers and company grade officers, who already hold an official position, may be appointed to hold positions as staff members.

2. The non-commissioned officers and civil officials of Junior or minor rank may be substituted for junior clerks.

ORDINANCE ON PRISONER OF WAR CAMPS
(Imperial Ordinance No. 1182, 23 December 1941)

Article 1

A prisoner of war camp is any place for the internment of prisoners of war under the jurisdiction of the Ministry of War.

Article 2

Prisoner of war camps shall be established whenever they are necessary. Their location, opening, and closing shall be determined by the Minister of War.

Article 3

Prisoner of war camps shall be administered by a commander of an army or a commander of a garrison under the general supervision of the Minister of War.

Article 4

In the prisoner of war camps shall be the following officers:

The commandant

The staff members

The non-commissioned officers and civil officials of junior or minor rank.

Article 5

The commandant shall be responsible to a commander of an army or to a commander of a garrison and he shall manage all the affairs of the camp.

Article 6

The staff members shall manage the affairs assigned to them by the commandant.

Article 7

The non-commissioned officers and civil officials of junior or minor rank shall perform their duties under the order of their superior officers.

Article 8

A commander of an army or a commander of a garrison may, whenever necessary, delegate his subordinates to assist in the management of a prisoner of war camp.

Persons delegated according to the provisions of the preceding paragraph shall be under the supervision and command of the commandant.

Additional Provisions

This ordinance shall become effective from the day of its promulgation.

REGULATION FOR THE TREATMENT OF PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry Notification, No. 22, 14 December 1904, as amended by the War Ministry Notification No. 167, 1904, No. 7, 1905, No. 31, 1914 War Ministry Notification, Nos. 30 and 57, 1943)

Chapter I General Provisions

Article 1

A prisoner of war, as defined in these regulations, is any enemy combatant who has fallen into the power of the Empire or any other person who is to be accorded the treatment of a prisoner of war by virtue of international treaties and customs.

Article 2

A prisoner of war shall be humanely treated and in no case shall any insult or maltreatment be inflicted upon him.

Article 3

A prisoner of war shall be given appropriate treatment, according to his status or rank. However, this shall not apply to any persons who do not answer truthfully to interrogations regarding his name and rank or to any person who is guilty of other offences.

Article 4

A prisoner of war shall be controlled according to the regulations of the Imperial Army and he shall not otherwise be arbitrarily restrained.

Article 5

A prisoner of war shall enjoy freedom of religion and may participate in the religious ceremonies of his own denomination, in so far as military discipline and public morals are not prejudiced thereby.

Article 6

In case a prisoner of war is guilty of an act of insubordination, he shall be subject to imprisonment or arrest; and any other measures deemed necessary for the purposes of discipline may be added.

Troops may be used to halt an attempt at escape by prisoners of war and in case of necessity, may inflict injury or death upon them.

Article 7

A prisoner of war, not on parole, who is captured before he succeeds in escaping shall be subject to disciplinary punishment.

Said prisoner of war who initially succeeds in escaping and is again captured shall not be liable to any punishment for his previous escape.

Article 8

In addition to the disciplinary methods prescribed in the preceding Article the criminal offences of prisoners of war shall be tried by army court martial according to the Army Disciplinary Punishment Ordinance.

Chapter II

Capture and Evacuation of Prisoners of War

Article 9

Whenever persons who are to be prisoners of war are taken into custody, an immediate inspection shall be made of their personal belongings. Arms, ammunition, and other objects of military use shall be confiscated. All other articles shall be either left in the possession of the prisoners or received for deposit.

Article 10

Commissioned officers among the prisoners of war mentioned in the preceding Article upon whom it is deemed necessary to confer special honor may be authorized by the commander of an army or of an independent division to retain swords belonging to them in their possession.

In the case specified in the preceding paragraph the names of the officers together with the reasons for the action shall be reported to the Imperial Headquarters and the latter shall in turn notify the Minister of War of the matter. The swords retained by them shall be received for deposit, when they are taken in a prisoner of war camp.

Article 11

At the close of military engagement, the commander of an army or the commander of an independent division may, by an agreement with the enemy, repatriate or exchange the wounded or sick prisoners of war, and he may, if deemed expedient, set at liberty any prisoner of war; provided that said prisoner of war takes an oath that he will refrain from participating further in any military

engagements during the same war.

In the case mentioned in the preceding paragraph, the rank, the number of prisoners of war, and the reasons for their release shall be reported to the Imperial Headquarters which in turn shall notify the Minister of War.

Article 12

Any unit which has captured prisoners of war shall interrogate each prisoner of war regarding his name, age, rank, place of origin, the unit to which he has been attached in his home country, and the date and the place at which he was wounded; and said unit shall prepare a roster of the prisoners of war, a prisoner of war journal, and a register of articles confiscated or received for deposit as prescribed in Article 9.

When prisoners of war have been repatriated, exchanged, or set at liberty on parole, such facts shall be stated in the roster of the prisoners of war.

Article 13

Prisoners of war shall be segregated into officers and personnel lower than warrant officer, and they shall be evacuated under guard to the nearest communication center or to a transportation and communication authority.

In the above case, objects received for deposit, the roster of prisoners of war, the prisoner of war journal, and the register of objects shall be sent along with the prisoners of war.

Article 14

Any unit, communication center, or transportation and communication authority which has made arrangements with a naval commander for the delivery of prisoners of war will get, along with the prisoners of war, objects kept for deposit, a roster of prisoners of war, a prisoner of war journal, and a register of objects.

Article 15

The commander of an army or the commander of an independent division shall promptly report the number of prisoners of war to be evacuated to the Imperial Headquarters, which shall notify the Ministry of War.

Article 16

When the Ministry of War has received the notice mentioned in the preceding article, it shall report to the Imperial Headquarters the port or other place at which the delivery of the prisoners of war is to be made, and the Imperial Headquarters shall in turn notify the Ministry of War as to the time and date of the arrival of the prisoners of war at the said places.

The same procedure shall apply when the Ministry of War has received Notice regarding the delivery of naval prisoners of war.

Article 17

Any communication center or any transportation and communication authority which has received the delivery of prisoners of war in accordance with either Article 13 or 14 shall evacuate such prisoners under guard to the places mentioned in the preceding Article and then deliver them to the person authorized by the Ministry of War to receive them, together with the objects left for deposit, a roster of prisoners of war, a prisoner of war journal, and a register of objects.

Article 18

The "Imperial Headquarters" shall read the "General Staff," in case no Imperial Headquarters has been established.

Chapter III

Imprisonment and Administration of Prisoner of War

Article 19

repealed

Article 20

Army buildings, temples, and other buildings which are not detrimental to the honor and health of the prisoners of war and which are adequate enough to prevent their escape shall be assigned as prisoner of war camps.

Article 21

The commander of an army or the commander of a garrison who administers a prisoner of war camp (henceforth called the chief administrator of the prisoner of war camp) shall establish the standing orders of the prisoner of war camp and shall make a report thereof to the Minister of War and to the Director of Prisoners of War Information Bureau.

Articles 22-25

repealed

Article 26

Inasmuch as all postal matter sent to or by prisoner of war are exempt from all postal charges by international agreement, the chief administrator of the prisoner of war camp shall provide for adequate postal procedures through arrangements with the post offices in the locality.

Article 27

The regulations for the administration of prisoners of war in prisoner of war camps shall be established by the chief administrator of the prisoner of war camp.

The regulations mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be reported to the Minister of War and to the Director of Prisoners of War Information Bureau.

Chapter IV

Miscellaneous Provisions

Article 28

The enemy wounded and sick who, after having received medical treatment at a hospital or a medical dressing station, are deemed to be unfit for military service shall be repatriated if they make an oath that they shall not bear arms again during the same war. However, this article shall not apply to persons who might play an important part in the war.

Article 29

The personal effects of a prisoner of war which have been deposited with a government office shall be returned to him upon his release.

Article 30

Articles and money left by deceased prisoners of war shall be sent to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau from the unit, government office, hospital, or medical dressing station which has jurisdiction over them. However, in cases where the nature of the article is such that they cannot be preserved, they shall be sold and the proceeds thereof shall be sent.

Article 31

The wills of prisoners of war shall be given the same treatment as that given to the wills of the members of the Imperial Army at any unit, government office, hospital, or medical dressing station which has jurisdiction over them, and they shall be sent to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau.

Article 32

Appended

Article 33

When an application has been made to administer direct relief to a prisoner of war by a relief society which has been duly established with a charitable purpose, permission may be granted therefore, provided that it shall not violate any of the rules for the administration of the prisoners of war.

Additional Provision (War Ministry Notification No. 57, 1943)
This notification shall become effective as of 1 August 1943.

DETAILED REGULATIONS FOR THE TREATMENT OF PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry Notification No. 29, 21 April 1943, as amended by War Ministry Notification No. 58, 1943)

Article 1

These detailed regulations provide for matters relating to the treatment of prisoners of war at prisoner of war camps.

Article 1

The commander of an army or the commander of a garrison who administers prisoner of war camps (henceforth called the chief administrator of the prisoner of war camps) may, whenever necessary, establish temporary detachments of a prisoner of war camp or of a branch thereof.

Article 3

Warrant officers and commissioned officers shall be separated from non-commissioned officers and enlisted men in the housing arrangement for prisoners of war and they shall be further sub-divided according to nationality, rank, and status, unless the imprisonment facilities do not permit such division.

Orderlies may be chosen from prisoners of war who are enlisted men (of non-commissioned officers, whenever necessary) to be attached to prisoners of war who are officers or warrant officers. However, the number of such orderlies shall ordinarily be one to every two or more officers.

The preceding paragraph shall apply to certain modifications to civil officials.

Article 5

As soon as prisoners of war have been imprisoned, they shall be administered an oath forbidding them from making an escape.

Prisoners of war who refuse to take the oath mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be deemed to have intentions of escaping and shall be placed under strict surveillance.

Article 6

The policing of prisoner of war camps shall ordinarily be done by employees attached to such camps. A few members of the guards may be posted when necessary.

Article 7

Extreme care and stringent rules shall be adopted for the purpose of taking all possible precautions against the danger of fire at prisoner of war camps.

Article 8

Prisoners of war shall not be allowed to drink alcoholic liquors or smoke without authorization.

Article 9

A number of qualified persons may be chosen from the prisoners of war according to the total number of prisoners of war, conditions of housing, etc., in order to assist in the transmission of orders, presentation of petitions, prevention of fires, and the administration of the prisoner of war camp.

Article 10

Prisoners of war, whenever necessary, may be allowed to go outside the camp accompanied by a custodian. However, care shall be taken as to the choice of the area and provisions made for their control, particularly in regard to the prevention of their escape and their relationships with the local population.

Article 11

Persons who desire to enter the prisoner of war camps shall obtain permission from the commandant of the camp. However, in the case of foreigners, such permission shall be granted by the Minister of War.

However, relatives of prisoners of war who reside outside of the Empire and who are not included in the preceding provision may obtain permission from the commandant of the camp according to the provisions made by the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps.

Article 12

An inquiry shall be made as to the object, status, occupation, etc., of any person who desires to enter a prisoner of war camp, and extreme care shall be taken for controlling them and for preventing espionage, and not persons shall be allowed to enter unless it is necessary.

Article 13

When an interview with a prisoner of war has been authorized, necessary

restrictions regarding the place, time of interview, and the range within which the conversation may be conducted may be imposed for the purpose of control and a guard shall also be present at this interview.

Article 14

As soon as the prisoners of war have been interned, the commandant of the prisoner of war camp shall divide each nationality group of the prisoners of war into army, navy, air, and civilian personnel. With respect to the armed forces, a further division shall be made as to commissioned officers and enlisted men, including warrant officer, and the commandant shall send a report thereof to the Minister of War and to the Director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau. The same measures shall be taken, when the prisoners of war are released or transferred to another camp.

Article 15

After the internment of prisoners of war, the commandant of the prisoner of war camp shall immediately record the name, nationality, unit, rank or status, and state of health of the prisoners of war on the form shown in the appendix and make a report thereof to the Director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau.

Article 16

After the commandant of the prisoner of war camp has sent the report mentioned in the preceding article, he shall make an inquiry of the name, date of birth, nationality, rank or status, unit, place and date of capture, surnames of parents, place of origin, occupation, etc., and record them on individual record blanks to be supplied by the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, and he shall keep one copy at the prisoner of war camp and send another copy to the Director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau.

Article 17

When a prisoner of war is removed from one prisoner of war camp to another, the individual record for said prisoner kept at the former camp shall be sent to the latter camp together with the prisoner.

In the case of the death of the prisoner of war the individual record for such prisoner shall be kept in safe custody until the prisoner of war camp has been closed. The same shall apply in cases where prisoners of war have been released.

When a war or an incident has terminated and a prisoner of war camp has been closed, all individual records in custody thereat shall be transmitted to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau.

Article 18

At the end of each month the commandant of the prisoner of war camp shall collect all matters concerning internments, removals, releases, deaths, escapes, control, work, pay, correspondence, sanitation, relief, propaganda, crimes, punishments, etc., and prepare a monthly report which shall also include a list of the prisoners of war and he shall report the same to the Minister of War and to the Director of Prisoner of War Information Bureau. However, on urgent matters, this report shall be submitted whenever it is necessary.

Article 19

A journal shall be kept at each prisoner of war camp which shall record the administration, interviews, and other important items about the prisoners of war and which shall serve as material for future investigations.

Said journal shall be transmitted to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau when the prisoner of war camp is closed.

Article 20

An infirmary (including recreation room) shall be established for the examination and treatment of prisoners of war whose conditions do not necessitate hospital treatment.

Article 21

Hospital wards shall be attached to prisoner of war camps, in the event that they are found to be necessary, in which patients requiring admittance shall receive treatment.

Hospital wards shall be furnished with the necessary medical supplies, clothing, bedding, and other miscellaneous articles.

Medical services for the hospital wards mentioned in the preceding articles can be rendered by staff members of the nearest army hospital in addition to their other duties.

However, in cases of necessity, relief squads from the Japanese Red Cross Society may render medical services under the direction and supervision of a medical officer.

Article 22

Members of the enemy medical personnel may assist in the medical treatments to be rendered at the infirmaries and hospital wards mentioned in Articles 21 and 23 whenever necessary.

Article 24

Prisoner of war patients who require special medical treatments and patients having contagious diseases may be admitted to an army hospital after consultation with the commandant of the prisoner of war camp and the director of the nearest army hospital.

Article 25

The Minister of War shall determine when the facilities for the handling of postal matter, postal money orders, and telegrams to be dispatched by the prisoners of war shall be open to them.

Article 26

The commandant of the prisoner of war camp shall be responsible for the censorship of postal matters, postal money orders, and telegrams sent by or to prisoners of war.

Article 27

All postal matters, postal money orders, and telegrams sent by or to prisoners of war shall be strictly censored, and if they are deemed to be prejudicial to the prevention of espionage or to the administration of the prisoners of war, they may be confiscated or prevented from being sent.

Article 28

At some easily visible place on the face of all postal matter and postal money order sent by or to prisoners of war shall be stamped a seal-impression which identifies the censoring officer and designates the prisoner of war camp and which attests to the fact that these items have been duly censored.

Article 29

All postal matter addressed by a prisoner of war to his home government, unit, government office, military school, or warship, and all postal matter addressed by the latter to prisoners of war, and all postal matter sent by or to any important prisoner of war shall, if deemed necessary, be sent to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau for censorship.

Article 30

The number of postal matters to be dispatched by the prisoner of war, the paper to be used, and the instructions as to the contents, shall be determined by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp. Whenever possible, paper bearing the printed designation of the particular prisoner of war camp shall be used.

Article 31

Prisoners of war shall not be allowed to dispatch any postal matter or telegrams falling under the following heads, except those articles which fall under heads 1 and 2 and which have been specially approved by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp.

1. Those which have as their object the communication of matters relative to military, political, financial, and economic affairs.
2. Those addressed to prisoners of war at another prisoner of war camp.
3. Those which employ any code or are suspected of employing any secret formulas.
4. Those which have as their object the communication of any matter prejudicial to the Empire relative to the treatment of prisoners of war, etc.,

Article 32

The commandant of the prisoner of war camp shall prescribe rules and regulations for the handling of postal matters, postal money order, and telegrams sent by or to prisoners of war, and he shall make report thereof to the Minister of War and to the Director of the prisoner of war Information Bureau.

Article 33

The commandant of the prisoner of war camp shall determine the maximum amount of cash which a prisoner of war may retain in his possession, taking into consideration his rank.

The maximum amount of cash mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall not be excessive, and the balance shall be kept for deposit in the custody of the finance officer at the prisoner of war camp.

Article 34

When other persons desire to make contributions of gifts and money to prisoners of war, the commandant of the prisoner of war camp shall inquire as to the contents and the reason for the contribution and if he deems it permissible from the standpoint of the administration of the prisoners of war, he shall grant permission therefor.

The same shall apply in cases where money and articles are sent by the prisoners of war.

Article 34 Part 2

Money given as contributions to prisoners of war and money left by prisoners of war who die during imprisonment shall be treated as cash not to be included in the annual revenues and expenditures.

The same shall apply to the proceeds from articles left by deceased prisoners of war which are sold in accordance with the proviso of Article 30 of the Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War.

Article 35

With approval of the chief administrator of the prisoner of war camps, each prisoner of war camp shall be provided with a canteen.

Article 3.

If a prisoner of war desires to purchase articles of luxury or of daily use at his own expense elsewhere than at the canteen in the prisoner of war camp, the commandant of the prisoner of war camp may allow this if he deems it to be unobjectionable from the standpoint of the administration of the prisoners.

Article 37

When a prisoner of war dies while in internment, a ceremony appropriate to his rank or status shall be conducted.

The corpse shall generally be buried in a proper place. However, it may be cremated after the will, the religion, and the wishes of the deceased's commander have been taken into consideration.

When the corpse has been cremated according to the provisions of the preceding paragraph, the ashes may either be buried in a proper place or be kept in safe custody.

Additional Provision
(War Ministry Notification No. 58, 1943)

This Notification shall come into effect on 1 August 1943.

Appendix

(TN: See attached for appendix)

REGULATIONS FOR PRISONER OF WAR ALLOWANCES

(War Ministry Notification No. 8, 20 February 1942, as amended by War Ministry Notification No. 73, 1943)

Article 1

The allowances for prisoners of war within the jurisdiction of the Army shall be granted according to these regulations.

Article 2

Prisoners of war who are officers shall receive the same salaries as that received by officers of equivalent rank in the Imperial Army. When there are several salaries for the same grade, the lowest salary.

War time allowances shall not be granted.

Article 3

Prisoners of war who are civil officials and military personnel not higher than warrant officers shall not receive salaries.

Article 4

The food for the prisoners of war who are officers shall be provided at their own expense. However, whenever it is necessary, the commandant of the prisoner of war camp (which term shall henceforth apply to any person occupying an equivalent position) shall designate the food ration or supply the articles of food mentioned in Article 5; the expenses to be defrayed by the officer.

Article 5

Rations issued to prisoners of war who are civil officials or military personnel not higher than warrant officer shall be within the limits of the basic food rations prescribed in Schedule No. 7 of the detailed regulations for Army Allowances in the Greater East Asia War (or if a boarding allowance is given, within the amount prescribed for that district); the amount to be determined by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp with due regard to the type of work and the condition of health of the prisoner of war, and the expenses thereof shall be defrayed at cost.

In case that the number of the prisoners of war is so small that the provisions of the preceding paragraph cannot be applied, the actual expenses incurred shall be defrayed within the limits of the prices of food prescribed in Schedule No. 7 of the Detailed Regulations for Army Allowances in the Greater East Asia War.

Article 6

A prisoner of war shall use the clothing formerly worn by him; however the clothing mentioned below may be loaned to him:

1. Bedding (second-hand bedding; in case there is no second-hand bedding, then new bedding).

2. The clothing mentioned in Schedule No. 1, cases where the clothing worn by civil officials or military personnel not higher than warrant officers are unfit for wear or where they do not possess the dress of the season.

The clothing loaned to a prisoner of war may be given to him at the time of his release or death.

3. In cases where the clothing worn by officers has become unfit for wear or in cases where they do not possess the dress of the season, the clothing mentioned in Schedule No. 1 may be sold to him in accordance with the provisions of Article 53 of the Army Accounts Regulations.

Article 7

The expenses for the repairing of clothing worn by prisoners of war who are civil officials or military personnel not higher than warrant officer shall be defrayed at cost within the limits of the rates prescribed in Schedule No. 2.

Article 8

Furniture for the barracks shall be loaned according to necessity.

The furniture mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be supplied from the stock in storage, and the expenses for its maintenance shall be defrayed at cost.

Article 9

The expenses of the fuel used for heating shall be defrayed at cost according to the standard rate set for infantry units (when no infantry units are found in the district, then any other units in the district.)

Article 10

The prisoners of war who are civil officials and officers not higher than warrant officer may be supplied with such articles of daily use as may be necessary within the limits of amount prescribed in Schedule No. 2.

Article 11

When it is necessary to have a prisoner of war make a journey, expenses incurred may be defrayed at cost within the limits of fixed amount prescribed in Schedule No. 4 of the Army Traveling Expenses Regulations. But when he is sent by himself under the escort of a guard, and the expenses cannot be defrayed according to the amounts specified in Schedule No. 4, the expenses incurred may be defrayed at cost within the limits of a fixed amount prescribed in Schedule No. 2 of the Army Travelling Expenses Regulations.

Article 12

The expenses incurred for the burial of prisoners of war shall be defrayed according to the following specifications:

- Officers and persons of equivalent status.....30 yen
- Warrant officers, non-commissioned officers,
enlisted men, and persons of equivalent status.....25 yen

Article 13

The pay to be given to a prisoner of war when he is employed at any government office shall be according to the following rates, however, when he is employed in any work requiring special skills, additional pay not exceeding 35 sen may be granted, taking into consideration his skill, type of work, hours of work, place of work, etc..

Warrant officers.....25 sen per day
 Non-commissioned officers.....15 sen per day
 Enlisted men.....10 sen per day

Article 14

The expenses for the medical treatment of prisoners of war of sickness shall be defrayed according to the actual expenses incurred.

Article 15

In the theatre of war the supreme commander of the locality shall determine the allowances to be granted to prisoners of war, applying the preceding articles with the necessary modification.

This notification shall come into effect on and after Jan. 15, 1942.
(TF: See attached sheet for Schedule Nos. 1 and 2)

REGULATIONS ON THE WORK OF PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry Order No. 22, 20 May 1943 as amended by Military of War Order No. 30, 1943)

Article 1

Prisoners of war (excluding prisoners of war who are officers) may be employed on work according to the provisions of this order; however, these provisions shall not apply in cases where the Prisoner of War Dispatch regulations are applicable.

The work mentioned in the above paragraph shall be determined according to the state of health, skill, status in the home country, etc., of the prisoner of war.

Prisoners of war who are officers may be allowed to be employed on work of their own choosing, in which case these regulations shall apply; however no pay shall be granted.

Article 2

The commandant of the prisoner of war camp can assign prisoners of war to labor details within the camp.

Article 3

The commander of an army or the commander of a garrison (hereinafter called the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps) may order prisoners of war to be employed on work at any military organization outside the prisoner of war camp. In such a case the authorization of the Minister of War must previously be obtained regarding the number of prisoners, place, description, hours of work, and period of work, etc., but no such authorization shall be necessary outside the Empire (which term shall herein after include Japan Proper, Chosen, and Taiwan).

When the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps intends to order prisoners of war to be employed on work at any army organization outside the Empire, he shall immediately submit to the Minister of War a report regarding the number of prisoners, place, description, hours of work, and period of work, etc.

Article 4

The pay in cases where prisoners are to be employed on work in accordance with the provisions of the preceding two Articles shall be defrayed by the prisoner of war camp concerned.

Article 5

Persons who desire to employ prisoners of war outside of army units (except in cases where the Ministry of War has authorized them to do so)

are outside the Empire shall submit an application to the Minister of War for permission to employ them. The same procedure shall apply to persons who desire to make any changes in the contents of the application or in the work permit approved by the Minister of War.

The procedure for submitting the application for permission to employ prisoners of war, as mentioned in the preceding paragraph, shall be in the form shown in the appendix to the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps.

Article 6

When the Minister of War has granted permission for the application referred to in the preceding paragraph, he shall determine the number of prisoners of war, the place of work, type of work, hours, pay, period of work, etc., and shall so notify the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps.

Article 7

When the chief administrator of prisoner of war camp has received the notice mentioned in the preceding paragraph, he shall make adequate provisions for the control of the prisoners of war and then shall proceed to set them at work.

Article 8

Persons who desire to employ prisoners of war outside an army unit after in any place outside the Empire shall submit an application for a work permit after the form shown in the appendix to the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps for his approval and the same procedure shall apply to persons who desire to make any changes in the contents of the application or in the work permit approved by the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps.

Article 9

When the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps has approved the application mentioned in the preceding article, he shall make adequate provisions for the administration of the prisoners of war and shall proceed to set them to work.

Article 10

When the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps has set the prisoners of war to work outside the army units, as mentioned in a preceding Article, he shall submit a report to the Minister of War stating the number of prisoners of war employed, place of work, type of work, pay, hours, period of work, etc.

Article 11

Applications for permission to employ prisoners of war by a public body or corporation shall be submitted by the responsible authority. The application obviously must be submitted to the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps).

Article 12

Persons other than military personnel who have received permission to employ prisoners of war (hereafter called the employer of prisoners of war) shall offer the necessary number of guards to be determined by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp for the purpose of control during the period of employment. Said guards shall be under the direction of the commandant.

Article 13

The employer of prisoners of war shall assume the responsibility of directing the work of the prisoners of war under the supervision of the commandant of the prisoner of war camp. In directing the aforesaid work the employer may rely on use of guards mentioned in the preceding Article.

Article 14

The employer of prisoners of war shall deliver monthly on or before the date fixed by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp, the wages prescribed by the commandant.

Article 15

The employer of prisoners of war may offer donations of money or gifts to the

commandant of the prisoner of war camp to be distributed for purpose of encouraging the prisoners of war in their work or for mitigating their hardships.

When the commandant of the prisoner of war camp deems the contribution mentioned in the preceding paragraph to be unobjectionable from the standpoint of the administration of the prisoners of war, he may allow the contribution and distribute them to the prisoners of war as required.

Article 16

The employer of prisoners of war shall at the end of each month submit a report to the commandant of the prisoner of war camp in conformity to his specifications on the progress of the work of the prisoners of war.

Article 17

When any employer of prisoners of war has violated any of the provisions of the work permit approved either by the Minister of War or by the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps pursuant to Article 5 or 8, or the regulations, specified by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp for the administration of the prisoners of war pursuant to Article 7 or 9; the Minister of War (if outside the Empire, the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps) may cancel the authority to employ prisoners of war.

In addition to the provision of the preceding paragraph, the Minister of War can cancel the authority to employ prisoners of war whenever he deems it necessary.

In the case mentioned in paragraph 1, the employer of prisoners of war may not demand compensation for any damages caused by the revoking of such authorization.

Article 18

The employer of prisoners of war shall not perform any acts affecting the prisoners of war which are not provided for in this order unless special permission has been given by the Minister of War for the acts.

Article 19

The pay delivered by the employer of prisoners of war pursuant to Article 14 shall be kept in safe custody by a finance officer at the prisoner of war camp; however a part thereof shall be paid to the national treasury in the form of a supplement allowances to be granted to prisoners of war. The amount to be paid shall be specified in another article.

The pay which is kept in safe custody by a finance officer at the prisoner of war camp as mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be considered as cash not to be included in the annual revenues and expenditures.

Article 20

The money held in custody by a finance officer at the prisoner of war camp according to the previous Article shall be distributed together with the money mentioned in Article 4 to the prisoners of war concerned in a manner to be determined by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp.

Additional Provision

This Order shall become effective on and after day of its promulgation.

Persons who have been employing prisoners of war outside army units according to the provisions heretofore in effect shall submit an application to the Minister of War for permission to employ prisoners of war in accordance with either Article 5 or 8 within thirty days (sixty days, if outside the Empire) after the date on which this order becomes effective.

Additional Provision

This order shall become effective on and after 1 August 1943.

Doc 10591

-17-

KI/KI

Appendix

(TN;; See attached sheet for appendix)

APPENDIX

No. _____		Prisoner of War Camp _____	
NAME		James Robinson	
NATIONALITY		X U.S.A.	
UNIT		X U.S. Navy (Midway)	
RANK OR POSITION		X Lieutenant	
WEAPONS			

Remarks:-

1. Blank column to be filled in by the Prisoner of War Information Bureau.
2. X to be filled in by prisoner of war.

Appendix

Application for Permission to Employ Prisoners of War

Date.....

To Mr. _____, Minister of War (Commander of _____ Army or
Commander of _____ Garrison)

I hereby respectfully make an application for your permission to employ prisoners of war as follows:

Number of prisoners of war.....

Place at which prisoners of war are to be employed.....

Types of work of prisoners of war.....

Facilities for accommodation of prisoners of war.....

Guards for prisoners of war.....

Direction for the work of prisoners of war.....

Pay to prisoners of war.....

Hours of labor of prisoners of war.....

Length of employment of prisoners of war.....

Application for Permission to Employ Prisoners of War -B-

Address

Occupation

Name and Surname

Seal Impression

Date of birth

Remarks

1. The facilities for accommodation of prisoners of war need not be mentioned if they are outside the Empire.

2. The general rule on the facilities for the accommodation of prisoners of war is for the employer of prisoners of war to make use of existing buildings or to construct new ones.

In the above application a definite plan must be stated and the facilities must be completed immediately after permission has been given.

3. The pay allowed to prisoners of war shall be generally one yen, but the pay for persons having special skills may be increased up to 35 sen over that amount, depending upon the skill, type of work, hours, and the place of work.

Application for Authority to Dispatch Prisoners of War

Form No. 1

Application for Authority to Dispatch Prisoners of War

Date

To Mr. _____, Minister of War (Commander of _____ Army or
Commander of _____ Garrison)

I hereby respectfully make an application for permission for the dispatch of
prisoners of war as follows:

- Number of prisoners of war to be dispatched.....
- Place at which dispatched prisoners of war are to be employed...
- Types of work for dispatched prisoners of war.....
- Facilities for the accommodation of dispatched prisoners of war..
- Guards for dispatched prisoners of war.....
- Direction of the work of dispatched prisoners of war.....
- Allowances for dispatched prisoners of war:
 - Food.....
 - Bedding.....
 - Fuel for Heating.....
 - Travelling Expenses.....
 - Articles of Daily Use.....
 - Other Matters.....
- Pay for dispatched prisoners of war.....
- Canteen for dispatched prisoners of war.....
- Medical Treatment of dispatched prisoners of war.....
- Hours of labor of dispatched prisoners of war.....
- Period of employment of dispatched prisoners of war.....

Remarks:

1. The general rule on the facilities for the accommodation of dispatched
prisoners of war is for the employer of the dispatched prisoners of war to make use
of existing building or to construct new ones.

In the above application a definite plan must be stated and the facilities
must be completed immediately after permission has been given.

2. The pay for dispatched prisoners of war shall be on the basis of the
amounts specified in Article 13 of the Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances
(including 35 sen increase), but if the employer of dispatched prisoners of war
cannot supply any of the allowances to be given to dispatched prisoners of war, an
addition shall be made to the pay mentioned above according to the following basis,
and the total pay shall include these additions.

Application for Permission to Employ Dispatched Prisoners of War

1. Food		
Main articles of diet (rice, barley, bread, etc.)	20 sen	
Subsidiary articles of diet	40 sen	
2. Bedding	5 sen	
3. Fuel for heating	5 sen	
4. Articles of daily use	10 sen	

For all other allowances to be supplied by the employer, the appropriate deductions may be made from the pay, but this shall not apply to travelling expenses.

Date:

Address:

Occupation:

Name:

Seal-Impression:

Date of Birth:

Schedule No. 1,

A list of articles of clothing to be loaned to prisoner of war and their number	
Articles	Number
Khaki Cap	1
Winter Coat and Trousers	1
Summer Coat and Trousers	1
Winter Shirt and Drawers	1
Summer Shirt and Drawers	1
Military Boots	1
Neck-tie	1
Socks	1

Remarks

- Articles of clothing other than those mentioned in the above list may be loaned according to local conditions.
- Articles of clothing to be loaned are to be second-hand articles but if no second-hand articles are available, new ones may be loaned

Schedule No. 2

The amounts fixed for repairs of clothing and monthly allowance for articles of daily use.			
Group	Rank	Monthly expenses of repairs for clothing	Monthly Allowance for articles of daily use
Military Personnel	Warrant officers	2 000	5 000
	Non-commissioned officers	1 500	3 000
	Enlisted men		2 000
Civil Officials	Equivalent to general grade officers		15 000
	Equivalent to field grade officers		10 000
	Equivalent to company grade officers	2 000	7 000
	Equivalent to warrant officers		5 000
	Equivalent to non-commissioned officers	1 500	3 000
	Others		2 000

REGULATION FOR THE DISPATCH OF PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry Order No. 38, 21 October 1942, as amended by War Ministry Order No. 23, 1943)

Article 1

To dispatch a prisoner of war, as used in this order, shall mean to send a prisoner of war to reside outside of the prisoner of war camp for the purpose of being employed. A dispatched prisoner of war shall be a prisoner of war so sent.

Article 2

Persons who ^{do} desire to have prisoners of war dispatched to any place outside of an army unit (except any place outside the Empire--the Empire which henceforth shall mean Japan Proper, Chosen, and Taiwan) shall submit an application of the form shown in the appendix to the Minister of War for permission to dispatch prisoners of war and the same procedure shall apply to persons who desire to make any changes in the contents of the application or in the dispatch permit approved by the Minister of War.

The procedure for submitting the application for permission to dispatch prisoners of war as mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be given in a separate proclamation.

Article 2 Part 2

When the Minister of War has approved the application mentioned in the preceding Article, he shall determine the number of prisoners of war to be dispatched, residence, administration, work (Place, type, hours, length etc.), allowances (pay and canteen service), medical treatment, etc., and shall notify the commander of an army or the commander of a garrison (henceforth to be called the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps) who administers the prisoner of war camp.

Article 2 Part 3

When the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps has received the notice mentioned in the preceding Article, he shall provide the necessary measures in conformance with the control for the administration of the prisoners of war and then he shall dispatch the prisoners of war.

Article 2 Part 4

Persons who desire to dispatch a prisoner of war outside of any army unit outside the Empire shall submit an application of the form shown on a separate sheet to the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps for permission to dispatch prisoners of war and the same procedure shall apply to persons who desire to make any change's in the contents of the applications or in the dispatch permit approved by the chief administrator of prisoner of war camp.

Article 2 Part 5

When the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps has approved the application mentioned in Part 4, he shall provide the necessary measures for the administration of the prisoners of war and then he shall dispatch the prisoners of war.

Article 2 Part 6

When the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps has dispatched the prisoners of war according to the provisions of the preceding Parts, he shall immediately report to the Minister of War concerning the number of prisoners of war dispatched, residences, administration, work (place, type, hours, length, etc.), allowances (pay and canteen service), medical treatment, etc..

Article 3

Applications for permission to dispatch prisoners of war by any public body or corporation shall be submitted by its representatives.

Article 4

Persons who have been authorized to have prisoners of war dispatched (hereinafter called the employer of dispatched prisoners) shall be subject to the direction of the Commandant of the prisoner of war camp who has dispatched the prisoners of war (hereinafter called the commandant of the prisoner of war camp), in relation to the enforcement of any of the provisions of this order or any of the particulars specified in the application for permission for the dispatch of prisoners of war for which permission has been granted by the Minister of War or by the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps in pursuance of the provisions either of Article 2 or of Article 2 Part 4, or any of the provisions made for purposes of control by the chief administrator of prisoners of war camps in pursuance of the provisions either of Article 2 Part 3 or Article 2 Part 5.

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall, in regard to the enforcement mentioned in the preceding paragraph, be subject to inspection and examination by the chief administrator of prisoner of war camp.

Article 5

The employer of the dispatched prisoners of war can make various rules for the execution of the administrative measures determined by the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps pursuant to Part 3 and 5 of Article 2 and for the execution of the contents of the application for the dispatch permit approved by either the Minister of War or the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps pursuant to the provisions of Article 2 and Part 4 of Article 2 respectively of these orders. Such rules and any changes to be made in such rules shall be subject to approval by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp.

Article 6

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall establish and maintain facilities for the housing and administration of the dispatched prisoners of war. Such facilities shall generally be similar to the facilities at the prisoner of war camp.

Article 7

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall supply guards in such numbers as may be necessary for the purpose of controlling the dispatched prisoners of war.

The number of guards shall be under the direction of the supervisors who are in charge of the prisoners of war camps and also those of the prisoner of war.

The number of guards mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall generally be one for every thirty dispatched prisoners.

Article 8

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall be responsible for the direction of the work of prisoners of war.

In directing the aforesaid work the employer may rely on the use of guards mentioned in the preceding Article.

Article 9

The food, bedding, fuel for heating, articles of daily use, travelling expenses (which include the expenses required for the dispatch and return of the prisoners of war) and other allowances shall wholly, or in part, be defrayed by the employer, and such allowances shall generally be similar to those given at the prisoner of war camp.

However, this shall not apply to salaries to be paid to dispatched prisoners of war who are officers or members of the enemy medical personnel or to articles of clothing which are loaned to dispatched prisoners of war whose clothing become unfit for wear.

Article 10

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall deliver monthly on or before the date fixed by the commandant of the prisoners of war camp the prescribed wages to the commandant.

Article 10 Part 2

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall establish a canteen, according to the directions of the commandant of the prisoner of war camp.

Article 11

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall be responsible for the medical treatment to be given to dispatched prisoners of war.

However the medical treatment of those dispatched prisoners of war who require hospitalization shall be given according to the direction of the commandant of the prisoner of war camp.

Article 11 Part 2

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war may offer donations of money or gifts to the commandant of the prisoner of war camp to be distributed for the purpose of encouraging the prisoners of war in their work or for mitigating their hardships.

When the commandant of the prisoner of war camp deems the contribution mentioned in the preceding paragraph to be unobjectionable from the standpoint of the administration of the prisoners of war, he may allow the contributions and distribute them to the prisoners of war as required.

Article 12

When a dispatched prisoner of war dies, proceedings for his return to the prisoner of war camp shall be undertaken from the date of the death.

Article 13

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall keep a journal in which he shall enter all matters relevant to the prisoners of war as may be determined by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp.

Article 14

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall report to the commandant of the prisoners of war camp in the manner specified by the commandant, conditions of the dispatched prisoners of war (the progress of work, health conditions, and other important matters) on the tenth, twentieth, and the end of each month.

Article 15

When an employer of dispatched prisoners of war has violated any regulations or any of the provisions of the dispatch permit approved either by the Minister of War or by the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps pursuant to Article 2 and Part 4 of Article 2, or the regulations specified by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp for the administration of the prisoners of war pursuant to Parts 3 and 5 of Article 2; the Minister of War (if outside the Empire, the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps) may cancel the authority to dispatch prisoners of war.

In addition to the preceding paragraph, the Minister of War may cancel the authority to dispatch prisoners of war whenever he deems it necessary.

All expenses required for the return of dispatched prisoners of war by such cancellation shall be defrayed by the employer of dispatched prisoners of war.

In the case mentioned in paragraph one of this Article, the employer of dispatched prisoners of war may not demand compensation for any damages caused by the cancellation of such authorization.

Article 16

The employer of dispatched prisoners of war shall not perform any acts affecting the prisoners of war which are not provided for in this order unless special permission has been given by the Minister of War for the acts.

Article 17

Repealed

Article 18

The provisions of the preceding Articles shall also apply, with certain modifications, in the case where prisoners of war are dispatched to any army unit outside the prisoner of war camp.

Additional Provision

This order shall become effective from the day of its promulgation.

Additional Provision

(Ministry of War Order No. 23, 1943)

Persons who have had prisoners of war dispatched according to the provisions heretofore in effect shall submit an application to the Minister of War for permission to dispatch prisoners of war in accordance with either Article 2 or Part 4 of Article 2 within thirty days (sixty days, if outside the Empire) the date on which this order becomes effective.

Appendix

(TN: See attached sheet for forms)

PROCEDURE FOR PRESENTING REQUESTS FOR AUTHORITY TO EMPLOY

AND DISPATCH PRISONERS OF WAR

REGULATIONS FOR THE TREATMENT OF DISPATCHED PRISONERS OF WAR

(Home Affairs Ministry Notice #1 to the Army, Navy, and the People,
20 May 1943)

When any person desires to employ or dispatch prisoners of war to the various factories and enterprises in Japan Proper, Chosen, and Taiwan as provided for in the Regulations on the Work of Prisoners of War and in the Regulations for the Dispatch of Prisoners of War, he shall in compliance with the following procedure, submit to the Minister of War requests (henceforth called petitions) for authority to employ and dispatch prisoners of war.

I. Factories and other enterprises managed or supervised by the Army (according to the Law on the Supervision of Military Munitions).

- a. The petition shall be submitted to the government supervisory office. The government supervisory office shall attach its recommendations and forward the petition through channels to the War Ministry. The other offices shall also attach their recommendations to the petition.
- b. A copy of the above petition shall be submitted according to the following procedure:

1. Japan Proper

The petition shall pass through the government office, municipal prefecture, or prefecture having jurisdiction over it and shall then be submitted to the Bureau for the Promotion of People's Welfare. When there are any of the recommendations mentioned above, the Bureau for the Promotion of People's Welfare shall report them to the War Ministry.

2. Chosen or Taiwan

The petition shall pass through the district, province, or office having jurisdiction over it or through the governor-general of Chosen or Taiwan and shall then be submitted to the Ministry of Home Affairs. (When these organizations have any recommendations they may attach them to the petition).

When there are any recommendations as aforesaid, the Ministry of Home Affairs shall report them to the War Ministry.

II. Factories and other enterprises managed or supervised by the Navy (according to the Law on the Supervision of Ship Building and Naval Ordnance).

- a. The petition shall be submitted to the government supervisory office. The government supervisory office shall attach its recommendation and forward the petition through channels to the Navy Ministry.

The other offices shall also attach their recommendations to the petition.

The Navy Ministry shall attach their recommendation and transmit the petition to the War Ministry.

- b. A copy of the above petition shall be submitted in accordance with the following procedure:

1. Japan Proper

The petition shall pass through the government office, municipal prefecture, or prefecture having jurisdiction over it and shall then be submitted to the Bureau for the Promotion of People's Welfare. (When these organizations have any recommendations, they may attach them to the petition.) When there are any of the above recommendations, the Bureau for the Promotion of People's Welfare shall report them to the War Ministry or to the Navy Ministry.

3. Chosen or Taiwan

The petition shall pass through the district, province, or government office having jurisdiction over it, or through the governor-general of Chosen or Taiwan and shall then be submitted to the Ministry of Home Affairs. (When these organizations have any recommendations they may attach them to the petition.)

When there are any of the above recommendations, the Home Affairs Ministry shall report thereof to the War Ministry and to the Navy Ministry.

III. For factories and other enterprises managed or supervised jointly by the army and the navy (According to the Law on the Supervision of Military Munitions or to the Law on the Supervision of Ship Building and Naval Ordnance) the above two procedures will also apply. However, where there is joint supervision, it shall be so indicated at the end of the petition.

IV. Other factories and enterprises not covered in the first three regulations:

a. Japan Proper

The petition shall be submitted to the government office, municipal prefecture, or prefecture which has jurisdiction over it.

These agencies shall attach any recommendations and send the petition to the Bureau for the Promotion of People's Welfare. The bureau for the promotion of people's welfare shall attach its recommendations and send the petition to the War Ministry.

b. Chosen or Taiwan

The petition shall be submitted to the district, province, or government office having jurisdiction over it. These agencies shall attach their recommendations and then send the petition to either the governor-general of Chosen or Taiwan respectively who will transmit it to the Ministry of Home Affairs.

The governor-generals of Chosen or Taiwan shall also attach their recommendations.

The Ministry of Home Affairs shall attach its recommendations and send the petition to the War Ministry.

REGULATIONS FOR THE TREATMENT OF DISPATCHED PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry Notification No. 74, 21 October 1942 as amended by War Ministry Notification No. 41, 1943)

Article 1

The Regulations for the Dispatch of Prisoners of War, the Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War, the Detailed Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War, and other relevant regulations shall apply in the treatment of dispatched prisoners of war.

The provisions of Articles 1, 19, and 20 of the Prisoners of War Work Regulations shall also apply to dispatched prisoners of war.

Article 2

Repealed

Article 3

Unless otherwise provided for in the Regulations for the Dispatch of Prisoners of War and in the present order, the treatment of dispatched prisoners of war shall be determined by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp who dispatches them (henceforth called the commandant of the prisoner of war camp).

Article 4

Before a commandant of a prisoner of war camp dispatches prisoners of war, he shall endeavor to prevent escapes and unexpected disturbances investigating thoroughly the characters, mental attitudes, past histories, as well as the abilities of the prisoners of war, and in addition he shall administer a solemn oath on other matters of importance.

Article 5

In dispatching the prisoners of war, the commandant of the prisoner of war camp shall accompany them with some personnel, who take charge of supervising and watching them.

Article 6

The following shall apply to the administration of the dispatched prisoners of war:

1. The strictest control and precautions against the espionage and the prevention of escapes and disturbances.

2. Dispatched prisoners of war shall not be allowed to go out unless they have a special reason for so doing. In case they are allowed to go out, a guard shall always be assigned over them.

3. All telegrams and postal matters sent by and to dispatched prisoners of war shall be sent to the commandant of the prisoner of war camp for censorship.

4. Interviews with dispatched prisoners of war and inspection of the places to which prisoners of war have been sent shall not be allowed of any persons who have not been authorized by the commandant of the prisoner of war camp.

5. When a dispatched prisoner of war desires to purchase articles of luxury or of daily use at any place other than the canteen furnished by the employer of dispatched prisoner of war, the commandant may grant permission to do so as he sees fit.

6. When any person desires to donate money or gifts to dispatched prisoners of war, the commandant of the prisoner of war camp may grant permission to do this as he sees fit.

Any money or articles sent out by the dispatched prisoner of war shall be sent first to the commandant of the prisoner of war camp for his inspection.

Article 7

The commandant of the prisoner of war camp shall make an inspection and examination of the dispatched prisoners of war whenever necessary.

Article 8

The chief administrator of prisoner of war camps may order an interchange of the dispatched prisoners of war whenever necessary.

DISCIPLINARY LAW FOR PRISONERS OF WAR
(Law No. 41 9 March 1943)

Article 1

This law applies to prisoners of war who have committed criminal offenses.

Article 2

The leader among a group of persons guilty of mob violence or mob intimidation shall be subject either to the death penalty, or to hard labor or imprisonment for life. The other persons involved shall be subject to either hard labor or confinement for life or for a minimum of one year.

Persons who have made preparations or conspired to commit the crimes mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be subject to either hard labor or to confinement for a minimum of one year.

Article 3

Prisoners of war who kill a person supervising, guarding, or escorting them shall be subject to the death penalty.

Persons who have made preparations or conspired to commit the crime mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be subject to either hard labor or to confinement for a minimum of two years.

Article 4

Prisoners of war who inflict injury or commit any acts of violence or intimidation against any person supervising, guarding, and escorting them shall be subject to either the death penalty, or to hard labor or to imprisonment for life or for a minimum of two years.

The leader of a group of persons who have acted together in committing the offenses mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be subject to the death penalty, or to hard labor or to imprisonment for life. The other persons involved shall be subject to either the death penalty or to hard labor or imprisonment for life or for a minimum of three years.

Persons who have caused death in committing the offenses mentioned in the preceding two paragraphs shall be subject to the death penalty.

Article 5

Prisoners of war who defy or disobey the orders of persons supervising, guarding, or escorting them shall be subject to either the death penalty, or to hard labor or imprisonment for life or for a minimum of one year.

The leader of a group of persons who have acted together in committing the offenses mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be subject to either the death penalty or to hard labor or to imprisonment for life. The other persons involved shall be subject to either the death penalty, or to hard labor or to imprisonment for life or for a minimum of two years.

Article 6

Prisoners of war who insult persons supervising, guarding, or escorting them either in their presence or publicly shall be subject to either hard labor or imprisonment for a maximum of five years.

Article 7

The leader of a group of persons who have acted together in effecting an escape shall be subject to either the death penalty, or to hard labor or to imprisonment for life or for a minimum of ten years. The other persons involved shall be subject to either the death penalty, or to hard labor or to imprisonment for life or for a minimum of one year.

Article 8

Any attempts to commit any of the offences mentioned in the first paragraphs of Articles 2, 3, and 4, the second paragraph of Article 4, and the preceding article shall be punishable.

Article 9

Persons on parole who break the parole shall be subject to either the death penalty, or hard labor, or imprisonment for life or for a minimum of seven years.

When the persons mentioned in the preceding paragraph offer armed resistance, they shall be subject to the death penalty.

Article 10

Those persons who have taken an oath not to escape and who violate this oath shall be subject to either hard labor or imprisonment for a minimum of one year. Those persons who violate any other oaths shall be subject to a minimum of ten years.

Article 11

A person who, having the intention of committing a disobedient act, incites other persons shall be deemed as a leader and be subject to hard labor or confinement for a minimum of one year and a maximum of ten years. The other persons involved shall be subject to hard labor or confinement for a minimum of six months and a maximum of five years.

Article 12

The provisions of Article 7 shall not apply to any person, who has been made a prisoner of war for the second time, for any offences committed during his previous status as a prisoner of war.

Additional Provision

This law shall become effective from the day of its promulgation.

THE MANAGEMENT OF PLACES TO WHICH PRISONERS OF WAR ARE DISPATCHED
(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 1042, 15 July 1943)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Units Concerned:

It is hereby ordered that sites authorized as places to which prisoners of war may be dispatched, according to the Regulations for the Dispatch of Prisoners of War, shall be managed in the same manner as branches or detachments of prisoner of war camps, except in matters treated otherwise by the afore-mentioned Regulations or the Regulations on the Treatment of Dispatched Prisoners of War.

DISPOSAL OF PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 1456, 6 May 1942)
(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 1404, 2 May 1942)
(Communication and Transportation Report No. 434, 5 May 1942)

Summary of the Disposal of Prisoners of War

Objective

1. Prisoners of war who are white persons shall be imprisoned in Chosen, Taiwan, Manchuria, and China successively to be employed in the expansion of our production and on work connected with military affairs.

If the above objective cannot be attained at present, these prisoners of war shall be imprisoned immediately in prisoner of war camps to be established in their present localities.

2. Prisoners of war who are not white persons and who do not necessitate imprisonment shall immediately be released on parole and made to work in their present localities.

3. A part of the prisoners of war who are white persons and who are now residing in Shonan shall be imprisoned in Chosen, Taiwan, etc., by the end of August of this year, in such numbers to be determined later.

The prisoners of war who are to be imprisoned in Taiwan, except those who are considered essential in their present localities, shall include highly skilled technicians and high ranking officers (above colonel).

4. The remainder of the prisoners of war are to be immediately interned in prisoner of war camps to be organized and established in their present localities.

5. Special units arranged beforehand comprised of Koreans and Formosans shall be assigned for the purposes of guarding and administering the prisoners of war.

Prisoner of war camps shall be organized under one command for each army so that they can be divided according to any manner that each army deems proper.

TRANSPORTATION OF PRISONERS OF WAR ON THE COUNTRY'S RAILROADS
(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 1185, 31 July 1943)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Units Concerned

It is hereby ordered that the transportation of prisoners of war on railroads (including electric cars and ferry steamers) under the jurisdiction of the Ministry of Railways shall be provided in accordance with the regulations outlined below for the time being from Aug. 2 until further notice.

Summarized Provisions for the Transportation of Prisoners of War on Railroads Under the Jurisdiction of the Ministry of Railways:

1. Allowances for the Transportation Management Section, Expenditures and Disbursement Section, transportation charges, and allowances given in transit shall be determined according to the War Ministry Notification, China, Confidential Report No. 1562, 1937.

Because of the shipment of prisoners of war is a special type of shipment, priority may be given to it depending upon the plans of the army and in compliance with the Law on the Common Use of Railways by the Army.

2. When using military shipping tickets, types A, B, or C, the word "prisoner" shall be written (or stamped) in red in the center of the top margin on both sides of the tickets. The fare shall be paid later at ordinary passenger rates.

3. The preceding provisions shall also apply to trips made on the rails of a private company which join with a railway which is under the jurisdiction of the Ministry of Railways.

Doc. 10591

TRANSPORTATION OF PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 1504, 10 Dec. 1942)
Communication from the Vice Minister of War to the units concerned:

Recently during the transportation of the prisoners of war to Japan many of them have been taken ill (or have died), and quite a few of them have been incapacitated for further work due to the treatment on the way which at times was inadequate.

Your unit is, therefore, instructed to enforce more rigidly the rules regarding the selection of prisoners of war to be sent to Japan proper, medical examinations, distribution of the medical personnel, the medicine necessary during the transit, the preparation of provisions, administration during the transit, facilities to be provided at ports of call, supply of clothing, etc.

REQUIREMENTS OF FACILITIES FOR THE DETENTION
OF PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 5353, 25 December 1942)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Armies in Japan Proper, Chosen, Taiwan, and Kwantung:

Prisoner of war camps which were formerly established and furnished under the supervision of the Army by the prefectures, public bodies, and private individuals for the purpose of employing prisoners of war were, as a general rule, left in charge of those groups which furnished such camps to the Army without compensation. However, it is hereby notified that for the sake of security the continuance and maintenance of such camps shall hereafter be in charge of the Army.

INITIAL GRANT OF ALLOWANCES FOR OFFICER PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 262, 21 April 1942)
Communication from the Adjutant to the units concerned:

It has been decided that the allowances for prisoners of war who are officers, Article 2 of the Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances, War Ministry Communication No. 2 Feb. 1943, shall temporarily be granted from the day on which they are interned in any prisoner of war camp (for prisoners of war who have been interned in a prisoner of war camp established by order of the Ministry of War and who later have been transferred to another camp, the former camp).

ALLOWANCES FOR OFFICER PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 1687, 20 July 1943)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Armies in Japan Proper, Chosen, Taiwan, and Kwantung:

This order hereby gives notice that the allowances for prisoners of war who are officers shall be granted as shown in the Appendix.

This order shall become effective as of the first of August 1943

Communication from the Adjutant to the Southern Army, China, Expeditionary Force, "Watarai" Group, and the Office of the Governor General of the Hongkong Occupied Area.

Whereas provisions for allowances to be granted prisoners of war in Japan Proper, Chosen, and Manchuria, who are officers, have been made as shown in the Appendix, it is ordered that the commander in chief in the zone of operations shall make the corresponding provisions.

It is hereby added that War Ministry Communication No. 73, 1942, shall ipso facto cease to have effect.

Appendix

1. Notwithstanding the provisions of Article 2 of the Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances, the following amounts shall be deducted from the salaries provided for in that article: 35 yen for general grade officers, 30 yen for field grade officers, and 27 yen for company grade officers.

2. Notwithstanding the provisions of Article 4 of the Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances, food for prisoners of war who are officers shall be granted according to the provisions of Article 5 of the same Regulations.

3. All repairs of clothing worn by prisoners of war who are officers (Which includes clothing sold by the government to prisoners of war who are officers pursuant to Article 6, paragraph 3 of the Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances) shall be made at the prisoner of war camp.

4. Articles of daily use shall generally be granted to prisoners of war who are officers on the basis shown below:

General grade officers	15 yen
Field grade officers	10 yen
Company grade officers	7 yen

5. Matters which are not provided for in the preceding Articles shall be governed by the provisions in the Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances and other relevant regulations.

BASIC FOOD ALLOWANCES FOR PRISONERS OF WAR

(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 4190, 29 October 1942)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Armies in Japan Proper, Chosen, Taiwan, and Kwantung.

Whereas, pursuant to the provisions of the Regulations of Prisoner of War Allowances, the commandant of the prisoner of war camp is to determine the food allowances within the limits prescribed in Schedule 9 of the Army Allowance Order with due regard to the type of work and the condition of health of the prisoner of war, in view of the supply and demand of rice and barley in the country, and especially in view of the consumption of rice and barley by workers in heavy industries in Japan engaged in the same type of work as the prisoners of war, you are hereby requested by this Order to grant the allowances as shown below:

Officers and civil officials	420 grams rice 8 barley
Non-commissioned officers and enlisted men	570 grams "

However, an increase of 220 grams per day may be granted, according to the work and condition of health of the prisoners of war. Note: In January, 1944, the allowance for officers not engaged in physical work was reduced to 390 grams, and in January, 1945, it was again revised so that the officers not engaged in physical work were allowed 500 grams.

Fixed amount of main articles revised by Army Confidential Report No. 5511, 19 June 1944

Officers and equivalent	390 grams
Warrant officers, non-commissioned officers, and enlisted men	570 grams

Doc. 10591

SUPPLY OF CLOTHING FOR PRISONERS OF WAR
(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 1497, 15 December 1942)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Armies in Japan Proper, Chosen,
Taiwan, and Iwantung.

Outline for the Supply of Clothing for Prisoners of War

1. The clothing and bed-clothes to be loaned to prisoners of war shall be supplied from the stock of clothing (of inferior quality) held for the non-commissioned officer and enlisted men in each unit.

If the provisions of the preceding paragraph cannot be met, a requisition shall be sent to the Ministry of War stating the reasons for the requisition.

2. Schedule No. 1 shown in the Appendix shall be the basis for the supply and all supply shall be in conformity to this schedule.

3. The clothing issued by each unit for the purpose of such supply shall be replaced by articles of better quality.

The clothing necessary for the replacement mentioned in the previous paragraph may be requisitioned from the Ministry of War, in which case the description, number, and size of clothing shall be clearly stated.

4. At the end of April in each year, each unit shall take an inventory of the supply, and shall report to the Ministry of War the condition of such supply on Form 2 shown in the Appendix.

5. The minimum amount of materials necessary for the repair of clothing shall be supplied out of the stores of each unit, and at the end of each financial year a requisition shall be submitted to the Ministry of War for articles (ready made) which are equivalent in value to the cost of the repairs. Such articles shall be set aside for the replenishment of the stock after they have been delivered from the Ministry of War.

(T.N. See Appendix for Schedules 1 and 2.)

THE HANDLING OF MONEY PAID BY PRISONERS OF WAR TO THE NATIONAL TREASURY
(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 715, 4 June 1943)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Units Concerned.

It is hereby ordered that the following regulations apply to the handling of payments to the National Treasury in Compliance with the regulation set forth in Article 19 of the Regulation on the Work of the Prisoners of War.

It is hereby ordered that War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 272, 1942 (the handling of money given to the National Treasury prescribed in Article 6 of the Regulation on the Work of the Prisoners of War) shall ipso facto cease to be effective.

1. Money received in payment of work done by prisoners of war outside of army units that exceeds the pay (this includes the increase in pay as set forth in Article 13 for those persons doing highly skilled work) as set forth in Articles 13 and 15 of the Regulations for the Prisoner of War Allowances, shall be deposited in the National Treasury.
2. Amount of money deposited in the National Treasury as set forth in the preceding paragraph shall be balanced at the end of each month. The disbursing officer at the prisoner of war camp shall deposit the money into the military expenditure and revenue account by the 15th of the following month.
3. The commander of the prisoner of war camp may increase or decrease the amount of deposit by obtaining permission from the Minister of War through regular channels when cases arise that are not covered by the provisions of the preceding paragraph.

TREATMENT OF PRISONERS OF WAR (T.M. MEDICAL PERSONNEL)
(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 187, 22 January 1942)

Communication from the Adjutant to the Units Concerned:

It is hereby ordered that the following treatment shall be accorded to the members of the enemy medical personnel who have fallen into our power:

1. All persons who do not possess the insignia and the identification papers provided for in Article 21 of the Red Cross Convention, 1927, shall not be regarded as belonging to the enemy medical personnel.
2. If a person wearing the insignia mentioned above commits any hostile act other than those provided for in Article 6 of the Convention mentioned in the preceding paragraph, he shall be made a prisoner of war. However, in such cases a protocol stating the facts involved together with the individuals' records shall be submitted to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau.
3. Persons who cannot be regarded as prisoners of war under the preceding two paragraphs shall be included in the camp and shall be employed in the care of the sick and the wounded. Their treatment shall be the same as that given to prisoners of war.

REGULATIONS FOR ENEMY MEDICAL PERSONNEL AND CHAPLAINS
(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 500, 16 April 1943)

Communication from the Adjutant to the Units Concerned:

It is hereby ordered that allowances for members of the enemy medical personnel and chaplains be granted according to the following provisions.

It is hereby ordered that War Ministry Communication No. 1299, 1941, shall ipso facto cease to be effective.

- 1. This order applies to allowances to be granted to persons described in Articles 9 to 11 inclusive of Treaty No. 1 (The Red Cross Convention) made in the tenth year of Showa (1935), regarding the alleviation of the wounded and sick persons in the armies at the front, who possess the insignia and identification papers mentioned in Article 21 of the same Convention, and who have not committed any hostile acts other than those provided for in Article 6 of the same Convention. (Such persons shall henceforth be referred to as enemy medical personnel and chaplains.)

The Regulations for the Prisoner of War Allowances shall govern in cases where no provisions have been provided for in this order.

2. The allowances to be granted to members of the enemy medical personnel and chaplains who are warrant officers shall be on the same basis as that of the prisoners of war who are officers. However, the salaries to be paid them pursuant to Article 2 of the Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances shall be the same as the salary received by a second lieutenant of the Imperial Army. (War time allowances shall not be granted.)

3. Non-commissioned officers in the enemy medical personnel and chaplains shall, according to their ranks, be paid the peacetime salaries received by non-commissioned officers in the Imperial Army. (If there are different salaries payable in the same rank, the lowest salary shall be paid, and no wartime allowances shall be included.) They shall defray the expenses of articles of daily use; however, the government may furnish these articles upon the payment of fixed sums.

The prices of the articles of daily use mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be determined by the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps, taking into consideration that paid by the prisoners of war who are officers.

4. Members of the enemy medical personnel and chaplains who are civilians, shall be given a rank designation, according to their status, which corresponds to that held by members of the Imperial Army for the purposes of treatment and salaries. Pay to be given them shall be on the basis of Article 2 of the Regulations for Prisoner of War Allowances and the preceding two Articles. Allowances to be given them shall be on the same basis as that given to members of the enemy sanitary personnel and chaplains in respect to their designated ranks.

The ranks for the purposes of treatment mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be determined by the chief administrator of prisoners of war camps, subject to the approval of the Minister of War.

TREATMENT OF THE CREW OF ENEMY SHIPS

(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 999, 9 July 1943)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Units Concerned.

It is hereby ordered that in the treatment of the crew of enemy ships, the ship captain shall ordinarily be given the same treatment as that given to civil officials with the designated rank of field grade officers; the ship officers, the same treatment given to civil officials with the designated rank of company grade officers; and the crew, the same treatment as that given to prisoners of war who are enlisted men. It is hereby called to your attention that an armed merchant ship which has been attached to the enemy fleet and has participated in battle operations shall not be regarded as an enemy ship, and that the higher ranking members of the crew such as mates, engineers, purser, and doctors shall be regarded as officers.

ALLOWANCES FOR THE SPECIAL LABOR UNIT

(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 1438, 2 April 1942)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Southern Army.

It is hereby ordered that the allowances for the special labor unit comprised of Indian troops, aside from the Regulations for the Prisoner of War Allowance, War Ministry Notification No. 8, 1942, may be increased up to 25 yen above the amount prescribed in Article 13 whether or not he is engaged in work. The pay of the personnel in this organization who are engaged in highly skilled work below the rank of warrant officer are excluded from the above.

It is hereby ordered that expenditures necessary for the above labor unit shall be considered as a cost in the operation of prisoner of war camps and shall be paid out of the prisoner of war camp fund (wages of special labor unit shall be defrayed from miscellaneous interment account) from the day the camp is organized.

ALLOWANCES FOR EMPLOYEES OF PRISONER OF WAR CAMPS

(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 495, 20 May 1942)
Communication from the Adjutant to Chosen Army and Taiwan Army.
Allowances for prisoner of war guards are established as follows:

1. They will be billeted in government housing, clothing will be loaned, and provisions will be supplied by the government. Martine pay shall be included in their salary.

Monthly pay for all beginners in Chosen or Taiwan shall be 30 yen, for those persons working in the theater of war, 50 yen.

2. In addition, allowances for the employees in the entire area shall be the same, however surplus food and clothing shall not be distributed.

3. Subsequent increases in pay shall be given in separate regulation.

ALLOWANCES FOR EMPLOYEES OF PRISONER OF WAR CAMPS

(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 725, 4 August 1942 as amended by War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 651, 1945)
Communication from the Adjutant to Units Concerned:

It is hereby ordered that the allowance given to workers who supplement the regular prisoners of war camp employees (henceforth called supplementary workers) according to Schedule 11 and 45 of War Ministry, Army Order A, 1942 shall be as follows:

This regulation shall become effective 1 July 1943. It is further added that the increased allowance authorized by Amendment 1 shall be considered as an increase in wage until otherwise ordered.

1. Wages shall be on a monthly basis, the initial wage being 36 yen.
 2. The respective commanders of the Chosen Army and the Taiwan Army may determine their wage scale on the basis of the record made by the supplementary workers at the end of their military training period and may increase the wage set forth in the preceding Amendment. The increase shall not surpass 5 yen per month and be within the limit of 2 yen average for all the workers.
 3. The commanding officer of the army having jurisdiction over a prisoner of war camp may annually increase the regular monthly wage of an individual up to 2 yen of persons who have been working as supplementary workers at a prisoner of war camp for over a year.
 4. Persons attached to prisoner of war camp who are not included in any of the preceding articles shall be given increases in foreign service allowances, substantial wartime allowances, and family allowances under the Army Regulations on the Payment of Emergency Family Allowances. However, persons who are natives of Chosen and Taiwan attached to prisoner of war camps in those countries shall not receive any increases in foreign service allowances.
 5. The wages of persons attached to prisoner of war camps in Thailand, Malay, Java, and Borneo, excluding the amount which is received in these localities as determined by the respective commanding officers of these districts, may be assigned to persons designated by the wage earner. In this case, the procedure to be followed shall be found in War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 179, 1943 (Payment of Wages to Military Personnel and Civilian Employees by proxy).
- The wages earned by persons attached to prisoner of war camps in Chosen and Taiwan shall be treated in accordance to the preceding regulations and shall be sent to the homes of these persons by an official in charge of accounts.
6. Supplies shall generally be issued by the government. However, employees attached to prisoner of war camps in Chosen and Taiwan must live in barracks or other corresponding quarters and provisions shall be issued by the government. Over time allowance for refreshments shall not be issued.
 7. Clothing which is necessary shall be loaned or issued to non-commissioned officers and enlisted men under the provisions of Schedule No. 3 of the Detained Regulations for the Wartime Army Allowances.
 8. On matters concerning these employees which are not covered by the preceding paragraphs, the regulations concerning employees in general shall be applied.

9. The commanding officer of the army having jurisdiction over a prisoner of war camp may in his discretion settle any of the details concerning the preceding provisions.

ALLOWANCES FOR DISABLED MILITARY PERSONNEL EMPLOYED AS PRISONER OF WAR
CAMP GUARDS AND LABORERS

(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 1518, 23 Sept. 1943)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Armies in Japan Proper and in
Iwantung.

It is hereby ordered that the allowances for disabled military personnel employed as prisoner of war camp guards and laborers shall be as prescribed in the enclosure.

While the provisions governing the allowances of employees in general shall apply when persons other than disabled military personnel are employed, Article 5 in the enclosure shall apply in particular.

(This order shall become effective on 1 October 1943 and War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 1244, 1922 shall ipso facto cease to have effect.) Note; Above statement in parenthesis applies only to Japan Proper.

Enclosure

ALLOWANCES FOR DISABLED MILITARY PERSONNEL EMPLOYER AS PRISONER OF WAR
CAMP GUARDS AND LABORERS

Article 1

The classification of disabled military personnel employed as prisoner of war camp guards and laborers shall be as follows:

Guards	Non-commissioned officers and above
Laborers	Enlisted men

Among the laborers not covered in the preceding classification, persons with more than two years of continuous service and persons with outstanding employment records may become guards.

Article 2

The pay of the guards shall be in accordance with the appendix.

Article 3

For guards who have been given permission to reside outside the prisoner of war camp, a monthly allowance of 25 yen plus lodging will be given for the period of such residence.

Article 4

Food allowance for guards shall be given according to the following points:

1. Food for persons residing within the prisoner of war camp shall be supplied by the government. The amount shall be within the limits of the basic food rations prescribed in Schedule No. 7 of the Detailed Regulations for Army Allowances in the Greater East Asia War (or if a boarding allowance is given, within the amount prescribed for that district).
2. Guards given permission to reside outside of the prisoner of war camp shall pay for their own food.

Those persons mentioned in the preceding paragraph may be given surplus food and clothing in strict accordance to the provisions set forth in Articles 3 and 9 of War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 5779, 1945.

Article 5

Clothing shall be loaned to guards from the stock provided for the prisoner of war camp which the commandant of the prisoner of war camp deems is necessary and which is within the limits prescribed in Schedule No. 6 of the Detailed Regulations for Army Allowances in the Greater East Asia War.

The repair of clothing mentioned in the preceding paragraph shall be defrayed by the government.

Article 6

On matters not covered in any of the preceding articles, the provisions governing the allowances for employees in general shall be applied.

Appendix

<u>Classification</u>	<u>Monthly Salary</u>
Guards	Initial Salary up to 50 Yen
Laborers	Initial Salary up to 40 Yen

RECEIPTS, DISBURSEMENTS, AND CUSTODY OF MONEY DONATIONS TO PRISONERS OF WAR

(Imperial Ordinance No. 619, 27 July 1943)

The Minister of War and the Minister of the Navy may receive, disburse, and keep in custody any money given as a contribution to prisoners of war, any money left by enemy personnel who die in battle or otherwise, and the pay receivable by the prisoners of war (except the pay receivable from the Army).

Additional Provision

This Ordinance shall become effective from the day of its promulgation.

TREATMENT OF OBJECTS LEFT BY DECEASED PRISONERS OF WAR AND BY BATTLE CASUALTIES

(War Ministry, Asia, Ordinary Report No. 7391, 29 July 1904 as amended by Ministry of War, Manchuria, Report No. 4707, 1905)

The following articles in the custody of the government shall be treated according to the provisions of Article 10 of the Regulations of the Army Stores Accounts.

1. Articles left on deposit at either the Prisoner of War Information Bureau or at the prisoner of war camp by prisoners of war who die while in internment.
2. Articles left on deposit at the Prisoner of War Information Bureau by enemy battle casualties.
3. Articles left at prisoner of war camps by prisoners of war.
4. Gifts sent to prisoners of war and articles dispatched by prisoners of war.

TREATMENT OF PRISONERS OF WAR WHO ARE PATIENTS

(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report, No. 4779, 1 December 1942)
Communication from the Adjutant to the Armies in General.

In the treatment of prisoners of war who are patients, the following regulations are to be followed in addition to the provisions of the Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War, Detailed Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War, Regulations on the Prisoner of War Allowances, and the Regulations on the Dispatch of Prisoners of War.

1. The medical treatment of prisoners of war who are patients (henceforth called patients) shall as a general rule be rendered at an infirmary established at the prisoner of war camp (henceforth called the camp).

Those prisoners of war patients requiring special treatment or suffering from contagious diseases may be admitted to an army hospital by an arrangement made between the commandant of the camp and the director of the nearest army hospital.

2. If for any reason the preceding paragraph cannot be complied with, such treatment may be in the care of any civilian physician in the locality.

3. When the patients have been admitted to an army hospital, they shall be separated from the other patients, and the director of the army hospital shall request the commandant of the prisoner of war camp to send the necessary number of guards.

4. The expenses required for the admission and treatment of the patients shall be defrayed according to provisions to be made elsewhere.

5. The supplies required for medical treatment within the camp shall be delivered and distributed according to Article 43 of the Regulations for Handling Medical Supplies and the medical apparatus necessary for the number of prisoners of war interned shall be determined according to Schedule No. 1 of the aforementioned Regulations.

6. Articles of clothing and bedding may be loaned to patients who are admitted to army hospitals.

7. The Regulations on the Internal Administration of the Army and the Regulations on the Internal Discipline of Army Hospitals shall apply in the control of the patients who are admitted to army hospitals.

8. Documents for evidence such as clinical diaries and death certificates shall be prepared in the same manner as that prescribed for the Army and they shall be kept in safe custody.

9. Members of the enemy sanitary personnel may be allowed to assist in the examination, treatment, and the care of patients, according to Army Communication No. 187, 20 January 1943.

REGULATIONS ON THE TREATMENT OF ARMY INTERNEES

(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 7391, 7 November 1943)
Communication by the Minister to the Armies in General:

Article 1

The term "intern," as used in these Regulations, shall mean the detaining of enemy nationals or neutrals at a specified place with the purpose of restricting their activities and of extending protection to them; the term "army internee" shall mean any enemy national or neutral interned; and the term "internment camp" shall mean any such place in which an army internee is interned.

Article 2

When the commander of an army (which term shall herein and hereinafter include persons of the equivalent status as a commander of an army) has interned enemy nationals or neutrals at the front, he shall establish an army internment camp as soon as possible.

The commander of an army that establishes the army internment camp shall administer the same.

Article 3

Army internees shall be treated according to these regulations; however, in the cases which have not been provided for in these regulations, other relevant provisions shall be applied.

In the latter cases mentioned in the previous paragraph, the chief administrator of prisoner of war camps mentioned in the various provisions relevant to the treatment of prisoners of war shall be read as the chief administrator of army internment camps (which term shall herein and hereinafter mean the commander of an army who administers an army internment camp), and the commandant of the prisoner of war camp and the prisoner of war camp shall be read as the commandant of an army internment camp and the army internment camp respectively.

Article 4

The chief administrator of army internment camps may, whenever necessary, establish branches of an army internment camp.

Article 5

Army internees shall be treated with justice, taking into consideration their customs and manners, and no insults or maltreatment shall be imposed upon them.

Article 6

As a general rule, all army internees shall be treated equally without making any distinctions as to their former status.

Article 7

The army internment camp shall be housed in buildings which are adequate enough to prevent the escape or mischief of army internees and which are adequate for the maintenance of their health.

Article 8

The quarters for the army internees shall be separated as much as possible into those for men, and for women and children (which term herein and hereinafter refers to those under 10 years of age). A further separation shall be made according to nationality, age, etc.

Notwithstanding provisions of the preceding paragraph, members of the same family may be allowed to live together.

Article 10

When army internees have been interned, the commandant of the army internment camp shall immediately divide each nationality group into two groups, men, and women and children, and he shall report thereof to the Minister of War and to the director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau. The same procedure shall apply when army internees have been released.

Article 11

After the internment of army internees, the commandant of the army internment camp shall record the name, sex, nationality, and the state of health of the said internees on the form shown in the Appendix and he shall report thereof to the Director of the Prisoners of War Information Bureau.

Article 12

After the commandant of the army internment camp has sent the report mentioned in the preceding Article, he shall make an inquiry of the name, sex, date of birth, nationality, parents' name, country of origin, status, occupation, etc. of each internee and record them on individual record blanks to be supplied by the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, and he shall keep one copy at the army internment camp and send another copy to the director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau. However, this shall not apply to internees, the control of whom have been committed by another army internment camp.

Article 13

When an army internee is transferred from one army internment camp to another, the individual record for said internee kept at the former camp shall be sent to the latter camp together with the internee.

Article 14

Army internees shall be put to practical use as possible by giving them suitable work. However, they shall not be compelled to work except on work connected with administration, internal organization, and the maintenance of the camp. They shall be so guided as to work according to their own suggestion.

Article 15

The provisions of the first paragraph of Article 19 of the Regulations on the work of Prisoners of War shall not apply to the pay received by army internees.

Article 16

As a general rule, the pay of army internees shall be the same as that received by prisoners of war who are non-commissioned officers. However, the chief administrator of army internment camps may, with the approval of the Minister of War, raise the pay higher than that received by prisoners of war who are warrant officers, whenever he deems it necessary.

Article 17

The medical treatment of army internees shall be rendered at the army internment camp and for this purpose adequate medical supplies shall be furnished to the army internment camp. However, if there is a prisoner of war camp or a branch thereof in the vicinity, the medical treatment can be given at the infirmaries of these places.

Article 18

As a general rule, army internee patients who require hospitalization shall be received either in a hospital in the district, a hospital attached to a prisoner of war camp, or a hospital at a branch of a prisoner of war camp.

However, a person who is regarded as requiring watch for espionage activities shall be admitted into an army hospital by an arrangement made with the director of the nearest army hospital.

Notwithstanding the provisions of the above paragraph, the chief administrator of army internment camps may, whenever he deems it necessary, attach hospital wards to army internment camps like the hospital wards mentioned in Article 21 of the Detailed Regulations for the Treatment of Prisoners of War in which he may give treatment to army internee patients who may require hospitalization.

Article 19

Postal matter sent to or by army internees shall be handled in the same manner as postal matter sent to or by prisoners of war.

Article 20

Army internees in an army internment camp shall be subject to Paragraph 3, Item I, Article 1 of the Court Martial law and shall be tried by court martial for committing any crimes.

Article 21

Money or articles of army internees or the proceeds from the sale of articles which cannot be preserved shall be sent to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau

Money or articles left by army internees (when articles cannot be preserved, the proceeds from the sale thereof) shall be sent to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau. However, if the persons entitled to receive the money or the goods left by army internees are in the army internment camp or in the vicinity thereof, these may be delivered to them.

Article 22

Money left by army internees shall be treated as cash not to be included in the annual revenues and expenditures.

The same provision shall apply to proceeds from articles sold pursuant to the preceding Article.

Article 23

Articles left by army internees or articles given as a donation to army internees shall be in the custody of the government and shall be handled according to Article 16 of the Regulations on the Army Stores Accounts.

Article 24

At the end of each month the commandant of an army internment camp shall collect all data relating to the internment, transfer, release, exchange, death, escape, control, work, allowance, correspondence, health, relief, propaganda, crime, punishment, etc. of the army internees and shall prepare a monthly report together with a list of the army internees, and he shall submit them to the Minister of War and the Director of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau. However, all urgent matters shall be reported as soon as the necessity arises. (T.N. See Attached Sheet for Appendix.)

ADDITIONAL USE OF THE PRISONER OF WAR CAMP STAFF FOR ADMINISTERING ARMY INTERNMENT CAMP

(War Ministry, Asia, Confidential Report No. 7853, 24 November 1943)
Communication from the Vice Minister of War to Units Concerned

As for enemy aliens having difficulties in making a living, the communication entitled "The Disposal of Enemy Aliens in Distress" (Home Affairs Ministry, dated 25 March 1943) in the appendix shall be referred to in dealing with the disposal of such persons.

Appendix

THE DISPOSAL OF ENEMY ALIENS IN DISTRESS

To assist enemy aliens who are having difficulties in making a living, the government shall take the following measures:

1. In regard to enemy aliens who seek assistance from the government, the district heads shall give assistance only to the persons whom they deem to be entitled thereto. The amount of the expenses for assistance shall be limited to that required for the minimum living expenses and for medical expenses.

2. The money required for the assistance mentioned in the preceding provision shall be transmitted from the Yokohama Specie Bank's special property holdings to the Japanese Red Cross Society's Prisoner of War Relief Committee which will distribute the money to the enemy aliens concerned through the office of the district heads.

3. The details for the report of the investigation to be made by the district heads and the assistance to be granted by the Japanese Red Cross Society's Prisoner of War Relief Committee shall be determined at a special conference.

4. Enemy aliens, in addition to each of the preceding paragraphs, shall be helped to do private work in order to support themselves and not to expend their money too much; not expect any great assistance from the government.

5. In cases of necessity, distressed persons shall be subject to be interned and guarded as a group in a designated place.

6. In regard to people in distress among the populace, private assistance from relatives, employer-employees, and friends may be given providing that it does not infringe upon any of the existing regulations on this matter.

7. Donations of money and articles for the relief of enemy aliens in the populace may be allowed providing they do not infringe upon any of the existing regulations on this matter.

8. Assistance and relief given on one's own accord to persons who will benefit thereby shall be allowed.

PRISONER OF WAR POSTAL REGULATIONS

(Communications Ministry Order No. 13, 3 March 1904)

Article 1

Prisoner of war postal matter, as used in these regulations, shall mean any postal matter pertaining to the affairs of the prisoners of war sent by or to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau or any postal matter sent by or to prisoners of war.

Any postal matter sent out from a prisoner of war camp, although it may pertain to the affairs of the prisoners of war, shall not be treated as prisoner of war postal matter unless it is addressed to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau or to a prisoner of war. (Communications No. 5302, 1914)

Article 2

To all matters pertaining to prisoner of war postal matter not covered by these regulations, the general postal regulations shall apply.

Article 3

The sender of prisoner of war postal matter shall write on the cover of the postal matter the words "furyo yubin" or "Service des Prisonniers de Guerre."

Article 4

All prisoner of war postal matter shall be exempt from postal charges.

However, this provision shall not apply to postal matter marked collect on delivery, to charges for air mail delivery, or to charges for the handling of telegrams. (As amended by Communications Ministry Order No. 15, 1942)

Article 5

Receipts for registered mail, ordinary mail for which the contents have been declared, and parcel post (except ordinary domestic parcel post) sent by or to prisoners of war shall be delivered to or by persons in charge of the government office in which interned or detained the said prisoners of war.

REGULATIONS ON THE MANAGEMENT OF PRISONER OF WAR POSTAL MATTER

(Communications Ministry Public Notification No. 261, 4 March 1904)

Article 1

This Proclamation provides for the manner of handling the postal matters mentioned in the Prisoner of War Postal Regulations. However, in all matters not covered by this proclamation, the general postal regulations shall apply. (As amended by Notification No. 474, 1914)

Inasmuch as the importation of tobacco addressed to prisoners of war in Japan Proper is permitted of a person with a charitable purpose, when such a person sends tobacco by parcel post, the parcel shall be accepted after an inquiry has been made as to the purpose of the sender.

If any ordinary postal matter sent from a foreign country addressed to prisoners of war is found to contain tobacco, it shall be dealt with as follows:

If it is regarded as having been donated with a charitable purpose, it shall be delivered in compliance with the procedure of such delivery to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau or to the prisoner of war camp concerned, otherwise, it shall be sent back to the country from which it was sent, as prescribed by law.

If it is sent back after delivery to the Prisoners of War Information Bureau or to the prisoner of war camp concerned as its importation has not been permitted, it shall be sent back to the country from which it was sent, according to the preced paragraph.

Article 2

Before any prisoner of war postal matter is accepted for delivery, an investigation shall be made as to whether it can be sent as prisoner of war postal matter and as to whether it is exempt from postal charges, and when it does not meet these requirements, it shall be handled in the same manner as ordinary postal matter.

However, postal matters to be sent to foreign countries which cannot be reached shall be returned to the sender. (as amended by Public Proclamation No. 83, 1942)

Article 3

Of the postal matter sent out by prisoners of war, only that which has been collected and certified that it is prisoner of war postal matter by the persons in charge of the government office which interned or detained the said prisoners of war can be accepted. (as amended by No. 474, 1914, and No. 42, 1917)

Receipts for any registered mail, ordinary mail for which the contents have been declared, parcel post (except ordinary domestic parcel post) shall be delivered to the persons mentioned in the preceding paragraph or to their representatives.

10591

Article 4

When the Foreign Post Exchange Office does not find any foreign words on the postal matter received by it, or forwarded to it by the regular post office handling foreign mail, indicating that it is prisoner of war postal matter, the seal-impression shown in Schedule No. 1 of the Appendix shall be stamped upon it.

Article 5

All postal matter addressed to prisoners of war shall be delivered to the persons in charge of the government office which interned or detained said prisoners of war or to their representatives, and the receipts for the registered mail, ordinary mail for which the contents have been declared, and parcel post (except domestic parcel post) shall be given by the said persons or by their representatives. (As amended by No. 474, 1914, and No. 421 1917)

Article 6

When any postal matter addressed to prisoners of war cannot be forwarded due to discrepancies in the address, and inquiry shall be made of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau as to the place to which it can be delivered.

Article 7

Repealed

Article 8

When the Foreign Post Exchange Office is to send registered mail, ordinary mail for which the contents have been declared, or parcel post to any foreign country, a seal-impression as shown in Schedule No. 1 of the Appendix shall be stamped on the appropriate list and on the remarks column of the account book.

In regard to the delivery of parcel post for which cash cannot be collected, it is not necessary to take any steps to calculate the charges. (As amended by Public Notification No. 83, 1942)

Article 9

On any prisoner of war postal matter which has arrived from a foreign country, the Foreign Postal Exchange Office shall stamp the seal-impression as shown in Schedule No. 2 in the Appendix, and any notations that the charges are unpaid or not fully paid shall be erased.

However, this provision shall not apply to postal matter marked collect on delivery or to charges for air mail delivery. (As amended by Public Notification No. 83, 1942)

(T.N. Appendix shown on attached sheet)

PAY FOR WORK WITHIN THE PRISONER OF WAR CAMP

Communication No. 5 or 6 by the Prisoner of War Administration Division (19 March 1943)
Communication from the Division Head of the Prisoner of War Administration Division to the Units Concerned.

Whereas some doubts seem to have arisen in connection with the pay for prisoners of war employed in the prisoner of war camp, it is hereby declared that the work mentioned below shall generally be considered to be equivalent to the work in government offices mentioned in Article 18 of the Regulations for Prisoners of War Allowances and pay shall be granted accordingly.

10591

1. Persons employed in kitchen work
2. Shoemakers
3. Carpenters
4. Other persons of a definite skill who are employed continuously at the above types of work in the camp and who are not employed elsewhere outside of the camp.

No pay is to be given to orderlies who are attached to prisoners of war and who are officers; instead they shall receive tips from such officers in amounts which correspond to the pay for their work.

In case any questions arise as to the pay for work within the camp, it is hereby requested that they shall be referred to our Division.

APPENDIX

Models for Seal Impression.

Schedule No. 1 (size free)

SERVICE DES PRISONNIERS DE GUERRE

Schedule No. 2 (size free)

Schedule No. 1

The Basis for the Supply of Clothing for Prisoners of War

Articles	Unit	Number to replaced per person	Remarks
Khaki cap	piece	1	
Winter coats and trousers	set	1	Either one of the two
Summer coats and trousers	set	1	
Fatigue dress (Coat and trouser)	set	2	One piece only or may be supplied one by one
Overcoat	piece	1	Only one of the four may be supplied
Raincoat	piece	2	
Winter shirt and drawer	set	2	
Summer shirt and drawer	set	2	
Rubber-soled <u>tabi</u>	set	2	Shoes or substitute shoes may be supplied
Mess tin	piece	1	Substitute articles of wooden or earthen ware make on the market, one only may be given for several persons
Canteen	piece	1	
Necktie	piece	2	Its use may not be allowed
Socks	set	2	Only during the winter season
Gloves	set	1	Its use may be allowed only in special types of work
Second-hand or gassed cloth blanket	sheet	5	In localities where winter blankets are supplied, one piece may be added during the winter season
Bed cloth	sheet	2	
Pillow cloth with cover	piece	1	
Mosquito net	four persons	1	

Schedule No. 2

A Survey of the Conditions of the Supply of Articles of Clothing for Prisoners of War

Distinction		Conditions of supply during the current year	
Articles, Grades, and Sub-divisions	Number in stock	Number delivered up by each unit	Number received from the Ministry
Khaki Cap	New		
	3-A and above		
	3-B and below		
	TOTAL		
Article so and so	New		
	3-A and above		
	3-B and below		
	TOTAL		

Remarks

1. The number of prisoners of war interned as of the first of April in each year shall also be stated.
2. Under the heading "number in stock" must be stated the number of articles in stock during the month that the inventory was made.
Under the heading "number delivered up by each unit" must be stated the total number of articles delivered up by the unit for the supply during the current year.
Under the heading "number received from the Ministry" must be stated the number of articles received from the Ministry for the purpose of supplying the difference found in the number of articles replenished and the number of articles delivered up by the unit for the supply.
3. This schedule shall serve as a basis for calculating the total amount of the expenses for the internment of prisoners of war.

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____
 I.P.S. No. 1303

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Okikazu Arai hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Chief of the General Affairs Division, 1st Demobilization Office, and that as such official I have custody of the document, from which the document hereto attached in original Japanese as undermentioned consisting of 106 pages, dated August 22nd, 1946, referred to in the memorandum dated July 30th, 1946, issued by IPS, is excerpted. LAWS, RULES AND REGULATIONS PERTAINING TO PRISONERS OF WAR. I also certify that the English translation of the above-mentioned excerpt hereto attached consisting of 51 pages, dated August 22nd, 1946, prepared by ATIS, their No. 10,591, was examined and corrected in some parts by the Translation Division of the 1st Demobilization Office. It is added that in case doubtful points are found in the English translation, the original Japanese Document shall be construed as just and proper. I further certify that the attached record and document is an excerpt of an official document of the Japanese Government which is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): War Prisoners Information Bureau.

Signed at 1st Demobilization Office on this
 22nd day of August, 1946.

/s/ Okikazu Arai
 Signature of Official

Witness. /s/ Yoshio Kozuki

Chief of the 1st Demobilization
Office
 Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, Richard H. Larsh, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
 26th day of August, 1946.

/s/ Richard H. Larsh
 NAME

Witness: /s/ Eric W. Fleisher
 2d Lt. A.U.S. M.I.

Investigator, IPS
 Official Capacity

Cx # 1966

C E R T I F I C A T E

I.P.S. No. 1576 f/

Statement of Contents and Authentication

I, Takashi, Yamazaki, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Secretariat, House of Representatives, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 1 page, dated Feb. 17, 1943, and described as follows: KIMURA's explanation to Diet of War Prisoner Punishment Act (Reasons for Amendment of Act).

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): House of Representatives.

Signed at Tokyo on this
2nd day of October, 1946.

/s/ Takashi Yamazaki
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ R. Ikawa

Secretariat, House of Representatives
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, Richard H. Larsh, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
2nd day of October, 1946.

/s/ Richard H. Larsh
NAME

Witness: /s/ T/4 Takio Toguchi

Investigator, IPS
Official Capacity

EXTRACT FROM THE IMPERIAL DIET PROCEEDINGS
OF FEBRUARY 17, 1943
CONCERNING THE DRAFT OF REVISION OF A PART OF
MILITARY SERVICE LAW AND THESE OTHER MATTERS.

KENRA, Hyotaro, Government Committee: -

I should like to explain the reason of the proposal of the draft of revised law concerning War Prisoners Punishment Act, being the Act No. 38 of 1905. When a prisoner committed a crime against the criminal law or other laws and ordinances in the Japanese homeland, in the occupied area of the Japanese forces or in the stationed area of the same, the laws and ordinances concerned may be applied to him respectively, so the War Prisoners Punishment Act may be said to be complete from the point of view of maintenance of peace and order in general or preservation of security of military forces; but if we observe this act from the standpoint of the special standing as prisoners and also special necessity of their control and supervision, it leaves much to be desired. During the Russo-Japanese War, some Russian prisoners showed disobedience by resisting the guards, or by escaping together in a large number, or behaving violently or beating the members of the POW camp, and the Government authorities regretted it from the standpoint of control and finally an urgent Imperial Ordinance No. 225 of 1904 was promulgated and in the following year, 1905, War Prisoners Punishment Act was enacted as the Law No. 38 of 1905. This is the law actually in force. This was, however, enacted under the old punishment system before the enactment of the penal law actually in force, and consequently the items of punishment, the name of punishment, the term of imprisonment, and other rules in general are inadequate. On the other hand, since the outbreak of the Greater East Asia War, the number of war prisoners seized by the Japanese has amounted to three hundred thousand and their nationalities and qualities are very different and complicated, and until today a large number of them frequently escaped and showed disobedience. And in the case of supervision of war prisoners, it is of urgent need of controlling so as to be able to intern a large number of war prisoners in safety and tranquility by a small number of members of the camp. Therefore, the Government expects to carry out the supervision and control of the present war prisoners most satisfactorily by adding necessary rules to the War Prisoners Punishment Act actually in force or by rearranging it. I am, herewith, going to explain the contents of the draft article by article.

Article I is the regulation which elucidates that the object of application of the present law is the prisoner of war, by which the explanation in each article was omitted that the subject of offense is the prisoner of war.

Article II is the regulation of punishment of riotous action of the prisoner of war. The mass assembling and riotous action of prisoners of war may be said most disobedient and must be avoided from the standpoint of supervision and control of the prisoner of war; therefore, it is quite necessary to punish the perpetrators with a reasonable penalty and also the provisionary conspiracy in order to nip the evil in the bud.

Articles III and IV are the regulations to control severely the conduct of killing, wounding, violence and threats against the superintendent of prisoners of war, who takes charge of supervision, guards or convoys of prisoners of war. It is needless to say that it is necessary to warn all the prisoners by severely punishing those who will carry out such riotous action against the superintendent of prisoners of war, especially when they venture to resist by conspiring together. And as for the murder of the superintendent of prisoners of war, the provisional plot shall also be punished. Although regulations for violence are enacted in the law actually in force, in this draft it is projected to enlarge the scope of the penalty and to leave the room to take proper steps to deal either leniently or severely with the concrete examples.

Article V is the rearrangement of the regulations actually in force which aims to control those who oppose or disobey the order of the superintendent of the prisoners of war and its gist is the same as explained in Articles III and IV.

Article VI is a regulation to control the conduct of insult for the superintendent of the prisoners of war. Such conduct does not only impair the dignity of the sufferer, but also is the expression of a spirit of insubordination; therefore, we cannot neglect it from the standpoint of control as disobedient conduct. According to the former experience of the internment of prisoners of war, there were some who acted as explained just now, for whom the regulation of insult crime of the penal law is incomplete.

Article VII is a regulation of punishment of those who escape by conspiring together and is nothing other than the rearrangement of the regulation actually in force.

Article VIII is a regulation of punishment of unconsummated crimes of violence and threat of mass assembly, murder, wounding, violence, threat to the superintendent of prisoners of war and the attempted escape by conspiring together.

Article IX and Article X are the regulations for the punishment of the violation of word of honor and is nothing other than the rearrangement of the regulations actually in force. Among various kinds of oaths, the so-called release by oath is strictest in its character, so specially a regulation is enacted for it and heavy penalty is to be imposed; the oath not to escape is next to this. And further as for other oaths, regulations are to be rearranged to punish violation according to the degree of importance respectively.

Article XI is to punish the action of conspiring together. That is to say, to conspire together with the aim of disobedience is a violation of negative resistance and will be a hotbed of riotous and insubordinate action; therefore, its control cannot be neglected. This regulation may be quite essential for preventing riotous action as well as for the maintenance of discipline.

Article XII is a regulation not to apply the penalty regulation of escape by conspiring together violated before to those prisoners who had escaped and reached their own troops or were seized as prisoners of war again after having left the area occupied by the Japanese forces and this is a re-arrangement of the regulation actually in force.

Furthermore, in Article VII of the law actually in force, a regulation is drawn up concerning the trial of the crime of prisoners of war; but in consequence of regulations drawn up with the same gist in both the army court-martial law and the navy court-martial law enacted after the enactment of the law actually in force, it became unnecessary and it has been omitted in this case.

Doc. 1576A

5x1

議事綜覽

第八十一編
第八卷

衆議院委員會議錄 特別下

衆議院

NO. 1

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

兩路、倭虜ニシテ、或ハ衛兵ニ反抗シ、或ハ多數共同ニ逃
 走シ、或ハ俘虜收容所員ニ対シ毆打暴行ヲ働ク等、不従順
 ナル行爲ヲナスモノガアリマシテ、取締上遺憾ヲ感ズルニ至リ
 遂ニ明治三十七年緊急勅令第二百二十五號、發布トナリ、翌
 明治三十八年法律第三十八號トシテ、俘虜處罰ニ関スル法律
 ヲ制定セラルルニ至ツタテアリマス。是レ即チ現行法ガアル
 デアリマス。而シテ同法ハ現行刑法制定前、舊刑罰体系
 ノ下ニ制定セラレタルモノデアリマシテ、其ノ罰目、刑名、刑期
 等、規定ノ全般ニ於キマシテ適當ナラザルモノガアリマス。一方
 大東亞戦争勃発以來、帝國ノ捕獲セル俘虜ハ三十万ノ多キ
 ニ達シ、其ノ國籍ニ於テ素直ニ於テ複雜多岐ナルモノガアリ

第十八回帝國議會
衆議院

兵役法中改正法律案外三件

委員會議錄(筆記) 第二回ヨリ

次ニ明治三十八年法律第三十八號俘虜處罰ニ関スル件改正法律

案ノ提出理由ニ付キマシテ御説明申上ゲマス。俘虜ガ帝國內

帝國軍ノ占領地又ハ其ノ所在ニ於テ刑法又ハ他ノ法令ノ罪ヲ

犯シタルトキハソレノ當該法令ノ適用アルモノデアリマスカラ

俘虜ニ關シ一般治安ノ維持又ハ軍ノ安寧保持ノ上ヨリスル處

罰規定ハ一應備ハツテ居ル譯デアリマスガ、俘虜タルノ特殊

身分及ビ是ガ管理取締上ノ特別ノ必要ヨリ觀察シマスルトキ

ハ尚ホ十全デナイモノガアルデアリマス。即チ日露戰爭當時

Doc. 1576

No. 3.

既ニ多数逃走等ノ類ヲ其ノ他不従順ト行志ヲ察見スル
 比ニ至ツテ居ルテアリマス。而モ信務局ノ管理ニ成ルベク少数
 人員ヲ以テ多数ノ信務ヲ安全且ツ解謄ニ收容出来得ル
 如ク取締ヲスルト緊要ナルヲ痛感致ス次第アリマス。茲
 ヲ以テ現行信務法前ニ關シ法律ニ付キ所ニ規定ニ新
 設又ニ整理シ以テ現下ノ信務ノ管理取締ニ遺憾ナキヲ期
 セトスルモノデアリマス。本案ノ内容ニ各本條ニ付キ即説明
 申上ルニスルハ次通テデアリマス。

第一條、本法適用ノ対象ノ信務ナルコトヲ明カニシ各本
 條ニ於キマス其ノ犯罪主体ガ信務ナルコトヲ一カ掲ケルヲ
 ヲ省ク趣旨ノ規定デアリマス。第二條、信務ノ騷擾的行爲
 ヲ嚴罰セトスルモノデアリマス。信務ニシテ多数集合シ暴動
 的行爲ニ出ヅルハ不従順ノ甚シキモノデアリマス。信務ノ
 管理取締上最モ嫌疑スベキ所デアリマス。茲ヲ以テ其ノ既遂
 ヲ相当ノ刑ヲ以テ罰スルト共ニ其ノ豫備陰謀ヲモ罰シ本然
 萌芽ノ間之ヲ禁圧スルノ要アリト存スル次第デアリマス。第三
 條及ニ本四條、信務ヲ監督シ看守シ又ニ護送スル者以下
 之ヲ信務管理者ト略稱致シマス。是討スル殺傷暴行脅迫
 行爲ヲ嚴重取締ラントスルモノデアリマス。信務管理者ニ對シ斯
 ナ不逞ノ行爲ヲシテ就中ノ黨與トテ敢行スルガ如キ之ヲ嚴重ニ處
 断シテ信務一般ヲ警戒スルノ要アルトハ言ハレテアリマス。

而シテ係屬管理者殺害ニ付テハ其豫備通謀ヲモ四罰スルコトニ
 致サントスルモノデアリマス。尚ホ暴行ニ関シテハ現行法ニ於テ規定セ
 ラレテアリマスガ、本案ニ於キマシテハ其刑ノ範圍ヲ擴大シ、具體的
 事案ニ付キ寛嚴宜シキヲ制シ得ル如クナサントスルモノデアリマス
 第五條ハ係屬管理者ノ命令ニ反抗シ、又ハ之ニ服従セザルモノ
 ヲ取締ラントスルモノデアリマシテ、現行規定ノ整備デアリマス
 其ノ趣旨ハ第三條及ビ第四條ニ付キ述べタル所ト同様デアリマス
 第六條ハ係屬管理者ニ対スル侮辱ノ行為ヲ取締ラントスルモノ
 デアリマス。斯カル行為ハ被害者ノ名譽侵害ノミナラス、之ニ対ス
 ル反抗的心理ノ表現トモ解スベク、不従順ノ行為トシテ取締上
 勿論諸ニ付シ得ザル所デアリマス。從來ノ係屬收容ノ經驗ニ於キ
 マシテモ、斯カル行為ヲナス者ガアリマシテ、刑法侮辱罪ノ規定ヲ
 以テシテハ不備タルヲ感ジテ居タリデアリマス。第七條ハ堂與
 逃走ヲ罰セントスルモノデアリマシテ、現行規定ノ整備ニ止マリマス
 第八條ハ多數聚集合暴行、脅迫、係屬管理者殺害、傷害、
 暴行、脅迫及ビ堂與逃走ノ各罪ノ未遂ヲ四罰スルコトニ致
 サントスルモノデアリマス。第九條及ビ第十條ハ宣誓違背ノ罰
 則デアリマシテ、現行規定ノ整備ニ過ギナイモノデアリマス。而
 シテ各種ノ宣誓ノ中、所謂宣誓解放ハ其ノ性質ノ嚴格ナ
 ルモノデアリマスルカラ、特別ニ之ヲ規定シ、其ノ刑モ亦重カラ
 シメ、逃走セザル宣誓ハ之ニ重クモトシ、更ニ其ノ他ノ宣誓

Doc. 1576

No. 5

二付テ、ソレノ、其ノ程度ニ應ジ、其ノ違背ハ罰則タル規定ヲ整備
 セドスレモ、デアリマス。第十一條、故意ノ行為ヲ罰セドスレモ、
 デアリマス。即チ不故意ノ行為ヲ目的トシテ故意ヲ結ブ如クハ
 頑強的抵抗ヲ犯シテ、暴動的不逞行為ノ濫用トナリ、
 取締上必ズ注意スベカサルモ、デアリマス。不逞行動、未然防止
 ノ規律保持トシテ三種ヲ必要ナル規定、存スレモ、デアリマス。
 第十二條、俘虜ガ逃走シ、自衛軍ニ逐フ。又ハ敵國軍ノ占領
 シタル地域ヲ離レテ後、更ニ再ビ俘虜トナリタルキ、前ニ犯シタ
 ル故意與逃走ノ罰則ハ之ヲ通用セサル旨ノ規定デアリマス。現行
 規定ノ整理ニ止リマス。尚テ現行法ニハ第七條ニ於テ俘虜、
 犯罪審判ニ關スル規定ヲ設ケテアリマスガ、是ハ現行法制定
 後制定セシタル陸軍軍法會議法及自衛軍及自衛隊法
 ニ同趣旨ノ規定ヲ設ケニシ、必要トキニ至リマスヲテ削除
 タデアリマス。

1576A cert. 1

證 明

「ワシントン」文書局 第 第 號 號

余、山崎萬ハ余カ下記ノ資裕ニ於テ、即チ衆議院警

記官トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係ニ在ルモノナルコ

ト並ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラレタル、壹頁

ヨリ成ル、千九百四十三年ノ昭和十八年ノ二月十七

日附、下記題名、即チ木村長太郎政府委員ノ明治三

十八年法律第三十八號停滯處罰ニ關スル件改正法律

案ノ提出理由説明ノ文書ノ保管ニ任シ居ルコトヲ茲

ニ證明ス

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ衆議院ノ公文書ナル

コト、並ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公文書類及

ビ撥ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シテラバ撥番號又ハ引

用、其ノ他公文書類又ハ撥ニ於ケル該文書ノ現所在ノ公文名稱ヲモ

特記ス(シ)衆議院

東京ニ於テ署名

當該官吏署名欄

山

崎

高

右ノ省ノ公的資裕

衆議院書記官

證

人

井

川

寛

一 (内閣事務官)

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ十月二日

1576, 4 cert.

公式入手ニ因スル證明

余、Richard H. Harsh、余が聯合國最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、茲ニ上記題名ノ文藝ハ余が公務上、日本政府ノ上記署名官實ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ十月二日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏名	Richard H. Harsh
右ノ者ノ公的資格	Investigator J.P.S.
證人	T/4 Takeo Toguichi

Q. # 1967

Document No. 978-A

Page 1

War Ministry Receipt File No.

Rikua-Fu Ju No. 6011

Togunshoku No. 41

Date: 2 October, Showa 17 (1942)

From: MATSUMI, Yeichi
Chief of General Staff of the Eastern District Army

To: TOJO, Hideki, Minister of War

In accordance with Article 5 of the Prisoners of War Labor Regulations, we request your sanction of the employment of the war prisoners interned in the Tokyo Prisoner of War Camp for the under-mentioned works:

We wish to include the employment of the war prisoners interned in the Kawasaki Prisoner of War Camp, which has already been applied for and sanctioned, in that of the Tokyo Prisoner of War Camp. Please sanction this also at the same time.

1. Kinds of labor:

- Loading and unloading of cargo at harbour.
- Industrial labor for the expansion of productive power.
- Construction of canals.

2. Place of labor:

- a. Longshoremen's work at Shibaaura area in Tokyo-Yokohama harbor.
- b. Longshoremen's work in the lower stretches of the Sumida River, from the Eitai bridge downward.
- c. Longshoremen's work in Yokohama harbor.
- d. Longshoremen's work along the wharves of Yokohama harbor.
 - 1st working place - Shinko wharf
 - 2nd working place - Omote Takashima-Cho Station
 - 3rd working place - Yamanouchi-Cho Warehouse
 - 4th working place - Senwaka-Cho Warehouse
 - 5th working place - Maruya-Cho Warehouse
 - 6th working place - Ebisu-Cho Warehouse
 - 7th working place - other transportation
 - 8th working place - Munitions factories for expanding production
- e. Construction of a canal between Tokyo and Yokohama
- f. Loading and unloading railway cargo in the premises of Kawasaki Station.

3. Working hours:

Seven hours will be the daily standard working hours, but it may be extended if necessity requires.

On Sundays or on any other day considered necessary by the chief of the Prisoner of War Camp, rest will be given.

4. Wages:

One Yen a day will be the standard wage, but this may be increased or decreased according to their abilities and diligence.

5. Period:

from 1 October of Showa 17 (1942) to 31 March of Showa 18 (1943).

War Ministry Receipt File No. Rikua-Fu-Ju No. 6011

Item: Matter regarding labor to be assigned to prisoners of war

Proposer: The Eastern District Army Headquarters

Date: 2 October Showa 17 (1942)

Draft of the War Minister's Instruction to the Commander of
the Eastern District Army:

Your application, "Togunshoku" No. 41, dated 2 October
Showa 17 (1942), is approved as requested.

Rikua-Fu No. 1160, dated 22 October Showa 17 (1942).

(Translator's Note: At the top of Page 1 of this document there
appears the seal of the Military Affairs Section, and in the right
hand margin of the same page appears a stamp showing receipt of the
War Ministry, Military Affairs Section, October 3, 1942.

At the top of Page 3 of this document appears the following:

Period of Retention: Permanent

Approving Authority: Vice-Minister of War

Disposing Authority: KAWAHARA (Indicated by seal.)

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 978-A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Kaneo Ishibashi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Corresponding Secretary 1st Demobilization, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 5 pages, dated Oct. 2, 1942, and described as follows:

letter from General Yelichi Tatsumi, Chief of General Staff of the Eastern District Army to Minister of War, Hideki Tojo

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): War Ministry

Signed at Tokyo on this

18 day of Sept., 1946.

/s/ Kaneo Ishibashi

Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Koji Yokoi

Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, John A. Curtis, 2nd Lt., M.I., hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

18th day of Sept., 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis, 2nd Lt., M.I.

Investigator
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ William C. Prout

陸軍省
台線領
領 要普受才六〇二号
東軍聯 第四一號

陸軍省
17.10.3
陸軍省
陸軍省

陸軍省
17.10.3
陸軍省
陸軍省

陸軍省
17.10.3
陸軍省
陸軍省

俘虜就勞ニ關スル件

昭和拾七年拾月貳日 東部軍參謀長

辰 巳 榮 一

東部軍
參謀長
之印

陸軍大臣 東條英機 殿

俘虜
俘虜勞役規則第五條ニ基キ東京俘虜收容所ニ收容中
ノ俘虜ヲ左記ニ依リ就勞セシメ度ニ付認可ヤラレ度
追テ義ニ申請シ認可アリタル川崎收容俘虜就勞モ
東京俘虜收容所ニ包含セシメ度ニ付併セテ認可セ
ラレ度

一 勞務種類

- 港灣荷役
- 生産力擴充産業勞務
- 運河建設

二 勞務ノ場所

- 1 京濱港芝浦地區港灣荷役
- 2 永代橋附近ヨリ下流ニ亘ル隅田川筋荷役
- 3 横濱港内沖荷役
- 4 横濱港沿岸荷役

500
7
Dec 978A

1.

Doc 978A

- 第一事業場 新興岸壁
- 第二 " 表高島町驛
- 第三 " 山内町倉庫
- 第四 " 千若町 "
- 第五 " 守屋町 "
- 第六 " 恵比須町 "

第七其他運送業務

第八生産力振充軍需産業勞務工場事業場

5 京濱邊河建設作業

6 川崎驛構内ニ於ケル鐵道貨物積卸作業

三 勞務時間

毎日七時間ヲ標準トスルセ必要ニヨリ之ヲ延長ス

日曜其他停房收容所長ニ於テ必要ト認メタル時ハ

休養セシム

四 賃金

一日一回ヲ標準トシ本人ノ技倆勤怠等ニ依リ増減

ス

五 予定期間

昭和十七年十月一日ヨリ昭和十八年三月三十一日

迄

21

Doc 978H (cont)

4.

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文藝局 第 〇 號
國 際 検 察 部 第 九 七 八 I A 號

典 據 及 ビ 公 正 ニ 關 ス ル 證 明

余、石橋兼雄ハ余カ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ第一復員局文書課々員トシテ、日本政府ト公的門係ニ在ルモノナルコト、茲ニ茲ニ添附セラレタル、五頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四十二年ノ昭和十七年ノ十月二日附、下記題名、即チ東部軍參謀長辰巳榮一ヨリ陸軍大臣東條英機ニ宛テタル文書ハ日本政府ノ公文書ナルコトヲ茲ニ記述ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書カ日本政府ノ公文書ナルコト、茲ニ石カ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式書類及ビ録ノ一部ナルコトヲ記述ス。(幸シアラバ該書類又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ録ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所在ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 陸 軍 省

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ九月十八日

東京ニ於テ石

當該官吏署名 石橋兼雄

石ノ者ノ公的資格 第一復員局文書課々員

證 人 横井孝治

Doc 978A (cont)

正式入手ニ關スル證明

余、John A. Curtis といはれ、余カ聯合國最高指揮官總司令
部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、並ニ上記姓名ノ文卷
ハ余カ公署上、日本政府ノ上記姓名官吏ヨリ入手
シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百三十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 九月十八日

東京ニ於テ此名

氏名

John A. Curtis Lt. M. G.

右ノ者ノ公的資格 Investigator

証

William C. Prout

Document No. 978-B

Confidential. Decoded Telegram

Dispatched: 1600, September 1

Arrived: 1715, September 1

Addressed to: Minister

Sender: Commander of the Taiwan (Formosa) Army

Telegram Number: Taiwan (Formosa) Telegram No. 220.

1. Three Hundred ninety-nine prisoners of war, including Lt. General Percival, 6 Major-Generals, or Rear Admirals, 27 Brigadier-Generals, or Commodores, 25 Colonels, or Captains, 130 officers of the rank of Lt. Colonel, or Commander, or below, and 210 non-commissioned or Petty Officers, together with 6 civil officials, who had been transferred from Tomi Group, were interned, on August 31, in the Third Branch of the Taiwan (Formosa) POW Camp (Heito).
2. At first, Lt. General Percival and the others refused to make an oath, but finally all but 3 (1 Brigadier-General, 1 Navy Captain and 1 Engineering Lieutenant, junior grade) signed their names. After that, they became obedient.

NOTE: The following seals appear on the document:

- SEAL 1. Received by the War Ministry
Doc. No. : Army, Asia, General Document, Received, No. 5124.
- SEAL 2. Received by the Ministerial Secretariat, the War Ministry, in the forenoon, September 2, 1942.
- SEAL 3. Received by the War Affairs Section, the War Ministry, on September 2, 1942.
- SEAL 4. Received by the POW Control Department, the War Ministry, on September 9, 1942.
- SEAL 5. Inspected.
- SEAL 6. UEMURA (or KAMIMURA)
- SEAL 7. War Affairs.

Document No. 978-B

SEAL 8. IIO (?)

SEAL 9. POW Control

SEAL 10. Finished (or 1st character of the name "Yuuki")

SEAL 11. September 19th.

SEAL 12. MAKI.

SEAL 13. Yoshihiro WASU

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 978-1

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Kaneo Ishibashi hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Corresponding Secretary, 1st Demobilization Bureau, and that as such official I had custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 2 pages, dated 1 September, 1942, and described as follows: A telegram from the Commander of Taiwan to the War Minister. I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files) : 1st Demobilization Bureau (War Ministry)

Signed at Tokyo on this

20 day of September, 1946.

/s/ Kaneo Ishibashi

SEAL

Witness: s/Shinaji Kobayashi

Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, John A. Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

20 day of September, 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis, 2nd Lt.

Investigator

Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ T/4 Foguchi

DOC 978-13

陸軍省
受領 陸軍省受才五二三四号

陸軍省
17日 陸軍省
印

陸軍省
陸軍省
陸軍省

送信地

秘電報 九月一日午前午後一六時。〇分宛

大臣宛 送信者 台湾軍司令官 前

台電 第三二〇號

陸軍省
17日 陸軍省
印

陸軍省
17日 陸軍省
印

上村

一、富集團ヨリ移管セラルル者六ノシハル中將以下

三九九名

少將 六 准將 二七 大佐 二五

中佐以下將校 三〇 下士官 三〇 文官 六

八月三十一日台湾 俘虜收容所ヲ三分所(屏東)ニ

收容セリ

二、當初六ノシハル中將以下宣誓ヲ拒否シタルカ

結局三名(進將一 海軍大佐一 海軍機関

中尉一)ヲ除ク他、全員署名シ其ノ後、勤務

温順ナリ

(終)

陸軍省

印

陸軍省

結

九月十九日

1948
988

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

978 B cert /

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 一 號
原 検 察 部 第九七八一 B 號

英 録 及 ビ 公 正 ニ 處 ス ル 證 明

余、石橋兼雄ハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ第一復員局文書課々員トシテ、日本政府ト公的関係ニ在ルモノナルコト、故ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラレタル、二頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四二年ノ昭和十七年ノ九月一日附、下記姓名、即チ台湾軍司令官ヨリ陸軍大臣ニ宛テタル電報ノ文書ノ保管ニ任シ居タルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

余ハ頁ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書ナルコト、故ニ右ガ下記名簿ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式書類及ビ簿ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラバ鑑番號又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ簿ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所在ノ公式名簿ヲモ特記スベシ)

第一復員局 陸軍省

978 cert-2

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 九月二十日

東京ニ於テ署在

當該管吏署名簿 石橋兼雄

右ノ者ノ公的資格 第一復員局文藝課及員

證 人 小林四男治

公式入手ニ關スル證明

余、John A. Curtis ハ、余ガ聯合國最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、就ニ上記署名ノ文藝ハ余ガ公務上、日本政府ノ上記署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 九月二十日

東京ニ於テ署在

氏 名 簿 J.A. Curtis 2d Lt.

石ノ者ノ公的資格 Investigator

證 人 T/4 P. Foguchi

C. # 1469

Doc. No.1571 A

Page 1

E.A.A. Employment No. 47

Report on P.W. Labor Condition

To War Ministry

Oct. 21, Showa 17./1942/

We are reporting to you that we have been notified as per enclosure on the above matter.

Headquarters, Eastern Area Army.

SEAL

* * * * *

17 Employment, No. 1170

To Kotaro NAKAMURA, Esq.,
Eastern Area Army Commander.

Oct. 7, Showa 17 /1942/

Concerning P.W. labor condition, I wish to inform you that I have reported to the ministers of Home Affairs and the Welfare on the above matter as per enclosure.

Kaitaro KONDO,
Governor of KANAGAWA
Prefecture

* * * * *

To Ministers of Welfare
and Home Affairs

Oct. 6, Showa 17 /1942/

Kaitaro KONDO,
Governor of KANAGAWA
Prefecture.

Concerning the P.W. labor condition regarding the above matter, I report that, making necessary arrangements in accordance with instructions from the Ministry of Welfare And the Army and after consultation with the commanders of the P.W. camps, we have started using P.W. labor at KAWASAKI and YOKAHAMA Camps from September 23 and 30, SHOWA 17 /1942/ respectively, in the transportation work at harbors, etc., and are getting good results as follows:

I. Survey of the P.W. labor condition.

(1) Number interned

KAWASAKI Camp	293
YOKOHAMA Camp	326

(2) Present main places of labor and kinds of labor

KAWASAKI Camp:

The KAWASAKI pier of the MITSUI BUSSAN KK./MITSUI Products Co./, the wharf of the NIPPON KOKAN KK./ NIPPON Steel Tube Mfg. Co./, the NICHIMAN Warehouse Co., the KAWASAKI Railway Station, etc. --- unloading of coal, loading and unloading of cargo, lathe-men at factories.

YOKOHAMA Camp:

Unloading at the YOKOHAMA harbor and odd jobs in factories.

(3) No. of laborers

KAWASAKI Camp:

From Sept. 23 to Oct. 6 -- Total number 1,010

YOKOHAMA Camp:

From Sept. 30 to Oct. 6 -- Total number 607

(4) Working efficiency

The working efficiency of PWs as compared with Japanese laborers is approximately 60-80 per cent in special labor such as coal unloading, but nearly the same in loading and unloading cargo at railway stations and warehouses.

As regards skilled laborers in factories, every day ten of them are being tentatively engaged, but a considerable time will be required before they will display an efficiency equal to that of the average skilled Japanese workman, as the height of the machines and other conditions are different.

In general, they are men who have not done any labor for a considerably long time and it is considered that when they get used to the Japanese workmen their efficiency will increase.

II. Effects of P.W. labor upon business proprietors

- (1) As regards transporting labor at harbors there had been a shortage of labor and wages were liable to soar with evil effects on getting laborers and on the smooth operation of transportation of goods. It is generally admitted by all the business proprietors alike that the use of P.W. labor has made the systematic operation of transportation possible for the first time, and has not only produced a great influence in the business circle, but will also contribute greatly to the expansion of production, including munitions of war, and the execution of industry.

III. Effects of P.W. labor on Japanese laborers

- (1) Effects on laborers who have hitherto worked diligently
The laborers who have hitherto worked diligently and had comparatively good working records, are making still better working records, as P.W. labor seems to stimulate them, intensifying their pride as a Japanese and rousing their fighting spirit not to be outdone by PWs.
- (2) Effects on laborers who have hitherto been unsatisfactory
The workmen engaged in transportation labor at harbors, in the past, had been particular about their work. Consequently it was usual for approximately ten per cent of them not to get to work. But since the use of P.W. labor alleviated in some measure the labor shortage, Japanese workmen have been obliged to report to the gathering spot earlier than before in the morning, for if not, they may be unable to get jobs. Thus, they are getting accustomed to gather an hour earlier in the morning and get to work of their own accord. Moreover, those intermediaries, who in the past had wilfully not gathered the number of workmen demanded by the business proprietors, and thus planned to seek higher wages, have recently been prudent and show a tendency to get the laborers to work.

IV. Effect of P.W. labor on the public

In view of the necessity of observing secrecy, the treatment of PWs in Aso is doubly sure by making Assistant guards take a certain oath. Though the public has not been informed of PW labor, those who have guessed about it from seeing them on their way to and from the place of labor and their camps, seem to realize with gratitude the glory of the Imperial Throne, seeing before their eyes English and American PWs at their labor. A considerable influence seems to have been exercised over the people of this prefecture, many of whom had been considerably pro-Anglo-American. They seem to be receiving a fairly strong stimulus seeing before their eyes the position they, too, might be placed in, if they should be defeated in the war. Thus, it can be observed that a satisfactory effect is being exerted on their determinations not to be defeated in war, whatever happens, and furthermore on the promotion of the general spirit of labor.

C E R T I F I C A T E

I.P.S. No. 1571 19

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Kosaburo Shibata, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: 2nd class official in charge of investigation, Police Affairs Section, Police Affairs Bureau, Home Ministry, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 9 pages, dated October 7, 1942, and described as follows: Note from the Governor of Kanagawa Prefecture to the Home Minister pertaining to POW's.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files: Home Ministry.

Signed at Tokyo on this

/s/ Kosaburo Shibata
Signature of Official

2nd day of October, 1946

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Yoshiyuki Kuretani

2nd Class Official in charge of
investigation, Police Affairs Section
Police Affairs Bureau, Home Ministry
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, 2nd Lt. Eric W. Fleisher, O-935000, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher, 2nd Lt. AUS
NAME

2nd day of October, 1946.

Investigation Division IPS
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Henry Shirijima

Ex 1369 Doc 1571A

陸軍省 陸軍省受第六四四六號

東軍職場第七號

停身就身狀況ニ關スル報告

昭和十七年拾月廿壹日 東部軍司令部

陸軍省 御中

首題ノ件ニ關シ別紙ノ通達原アリケルニ付報告

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

十七職第一、一七〇號

昭和十七年十月七日

神奈川縣知事 送 藤 塚 太郎

東部軍司令部

中 村 孝 太 郎 殿

停身就身狀況ニ關スル件

標記ノ件ニ關シ今回内務、厚生兩大臣宛別紙ノ
通報告致置候様御参考迄ニ及御報告候

1.

Doc 1571A

昭和十七年十月六日

神奈川県知事

近藤 操 太郎

厚生大臣
内務大臣

宛

管房就労状況ニ關スル件

標記ノ件ニ關シテハ厚生省並ニ軍ノ指示ニ基キ縣ニ於テ管房收容所長ト協議ノ上請準備ヲ進メ川崎收容所關係ハ昭和十七年九月二十三日、横濱收容所關係ハ同九月三十日何レモ港灣運送勞務其ノ他就労ヲ開始致シ左記ノ通良好ナル成績ヲ收メ居候條此段及報告候

記

一 管房ノ就労状況

(一) 收容人員

川崎收容所	二九三名
横濱收容所	二二六名

(二) 現在主ナル就労場所並ニ勞務ノ種類

川崎收容所關係

三井物産川崎埠頭、日本銅管岸
屋、日浦倉庫、川崎驛等石炭荷
揚貨物積卸勞務、工場旋盤工

2.

Doc 1571A

3.

横濱收容所關係

横濱炭荷揚勞務並ニ工場雜役

(三) 就勞人員

川崎收容所關係

自九月廿三日

至十月六日

延人員一、〇一〇人

横濱收容所關係

自九月三十日

至十月六日

延人員 六〇七人

(四) 作業能率ノ狀況

石炭荷揚等特殊勞務ハ大体内地人勞務者ノ六、
 七割倉庫並ニ鐵道驛貨物積卸ノ如キハ内地人
 勞務者ト大体同様ノ能率ヲ上ゲツツアリ
 工場熟練工ニ付テハ毎日一〇名ノ者ヲ試驗的
 ニ從事シツツアルガ機械ノ高サ其ノ他ノ條件
 ガ異ナリ内地人普通熟練者ト同様ノ能率ヲ上
 ゲル迄ニハ相當ノ日時ヲ要スル状態ナリ
 尙一般ニ相當長期ニ亘リ勞務ニ従事セザル者
 ニシテ内地ノ勞務者ニナレテ來レバ漸次能率
 モ高クナルモノト思料セラル

Doc 1571

三 停職就勞が専業主ニ及ボシタル影響

從來港灣選送勞務者ニ付テハ勞務ノ擔底ニ依リ
勤々モスレバ賃銀ノ昂騰ヲ餘儀ナクサレ勞務者
ノ就勞ニ弊害ヲ生ジ物資ノ運送業務ノ困滞ヲ快
ク状態ニアリタルガ今國營使役ニ依リ給メテ
計量的ニ之ガ選送ヲ阻ムコト可能トナリタルコ
トハ各専業主ノ等シク陳述スル所ニシテ業界ニ
多大ノ好影響ヲ與ヘ延イテハ軍備品ノ包生産力
擴充産業ノ遂行上ニ及ボス影響モ大ナルモノト
恩料セラル

三 停職就勞が内地勞務者ニ及ボシタル影響

(一) 從來眞面目ナル勞務者ニ及ボシタル影響

從來眞面目ニシテ就勞成績比較的良好ナル
勞務者ハ停職就勞ニ刺戟サレ日本人タルノ
精神ヲ深メ停職ニ厭ケテナルモノカト云フ莫
猛心ヲ喚起セルモノノ如ク益々良好ナル就
勞成績ヲ收メツツアリ

(二) 從來不良ナル勞務者ニ及ボシタル影響

港灣選送勞務者ニ付テハ從來之ニ從屬スル勞務
者ガ仕業ヲ擇リ好ミヲ爲シ之ガ爲一程度ハ
不就勞ニ終ルヲ例トセル状態ナリシガ停職就
勞開始ニ依リ多少ナリトモ勞力ノ不足ガ緩和
サレ早出ヲシナクテハ仕業ニアリツケナイコ

4.

Doc 1571A

ト一般ニ朝モ約一時間早ク集合所ニ集合シ進
ンテ就勞スルノ風ヲ馴致シタリ尙中間ニ在リ
テ動々モスレバ故意ニ爭業主ノ要求通り人長
ヲ説メズ賃銀ノ昂騰ヲ策スルガ如キ所爲ヲ爲
シツ、アリタル者ノ如キモ極ク最近ニ於テハ
自重シ一般ニ進ンテ就勞セシムル節向ヲ見受
ケラル

四 俘虜ノ就勞ガ一般ニ及ボシタル影響
俘虜ニ關シテハ防諜上留意シ監視補助員ノ如キ
ハ一定ノ宣誓ヲセシメ取扱ニ萬全ヲ期シツ、ア
リ、勿論就勞ニ關シ一般ニ知ラシメタルモノニ
非ザルモ就勞場所收容所向ノ仕復途中等ニ於テ
俘虜ノ就勞ヲ夫レトナク察知シタル一般人ハ眼
前ニ兵米人ノ俘虜ノ就勞ノ姿ヲ見御被成ノ有難
キコトヲ痛感セルモノノ如ク從來動々モスレバ
兵米依存ノ風比較的強キ者多キ状態ニアリタル
本縣民ニ及ボセル影響在當視天ナルモノアルコ
トヲ認メラル即チ戰爭ニ敗ケレバ斯様ナル立場
ニ置カル、モノナルコトヲ具體的ニ示サレ可成
愈ク刺戟ヲ受ケツ、アルモノノ如ク戰爭ニハ如
何ナルコトアルモ然シテ敗ケラレヌト云フコト
ニ付テ充分ノ效果ガ認メラレ延イテハ一擧動勞
精神昂揚ニ好結果ヲ得シツ、アルコトヲ認メラ
ル

5.

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 〇 號
國 際 檢 察 部 第 一 五 七 一 A 號

1571A cert-1

真 據 及 其 公 正 に 關 ス ル 證 明

余、柴田小三郎ハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ内務省管官保局管務課調査係二級事務官トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係ヲ有スルモノナルコト、竝ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラレタル、宛頁ヨリ成ル千九百四十二年^年昭和十七年ノ十月七日附、下記題名、即チ神奈川縣知事ヨリ内務大臣宛件勞務狀況ニ關スル件ノ文書ノ保管ニ任ジ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書ナルコト、竝ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式書類及ビ綴ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラバ

管務號又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ綴ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所在ノ公式名稱ヲモ登記スベシ) **内務省**

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ十月二日

1571 A 0017-2

東京ニ於テ署名

當該官吏署名欄 柴田 小三郎

右ノ者ノ公的資格 警務省 警保局 警務課 調査係 二級

證 人 警 務 官 行 谷 良 行

公式入手ニ關スル證明

余 Eric W. Fleisher ハ、余ガ聯合國最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、並ニ上記題名ノ文書ハ余ガ公務上、日本政府ノ上記署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ十月二日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏 名 欄 Eric W. Fleisher 2d Lt. AUS

右ノ者ノ公的資格 Investigation Division F.P.S.

證 人 Henry Shimajima

Ex. # 1970

DOC. 680-A

"INQUIRY CONCERNING THE QUESTION OF MAKING AVAILABLE THE MANCHURIAN MACHINE TOOL CO. FOR A RAPID INCREASE IN AIRCRAFT-PRODUCTION"

(THE ABOVE TITLE IS ON THE SAME PAGE AS THE "HAN")

- Kawahara, directed prosecution
- Kimura, Vice-Minister
- Suga
- Kawahara, senior adjutant officer
- Yoshi Zumi (?), chief of "Shun-kyoku"
- Kojima, chief of the Military Affairs Division
- Ito (?), section chief of rifle & gun section (Subc)
- Oga, on behalf of the section chief of the Aviation section (Kohon)
- Maki, adjutant officer in charge, paymaster of the Minister's chamber
- Hachiri (or Yasato), chief of "Shun-ka"
- Semba, staff of the Shun-ka"
- Yawazaki, P.O.W. Control Division
- Tsukamoto, war preparations
- Nakamura, Clerk who wrote the draft

"To the Chief of Staff of the Kwantung Army from the Vice-Minister of War."

For the realization of the urgent organization of the aircraft-production, we want to improve the present capacity of the Manchurian Machine Tool Co. according to the plan of utilization enclosed herewith, and to allot a large part of its improved capacity to the production of machine tools which are necessary for the urgent organization of the production of air ordnance, ammunition and aircrafts in our country, especially to the production of special machine tools for mass production, which are necessary for the expansion of the factory in the "Nissan" Motor-Car Co. Manufacturing Section, a main factory of ammunition for aviator automatic gun.

We ask you to take the trouble in order to realize this plan.

P.S. For caution's sake we add that the War Ministry is now strenuously trying to help obtain the high-precision machine tools, expected to be supplied from Japan, to be used in munition factories in Manchuria, which are difficult to manufacture in Manchukuo because of specially high accuracy. Army Secret ISTA No. 3129.

Date 22 August 1942.

The reason for asking about of the Manchurian Machine & Tool Co. (Manchu Zensha Kikai Kabushiki Kaisha).

1. Concerning aviation armaments, its production and aircraft which now constitutes the bottleneck in the production of army munitions, from the standpoint of making efficient use of labour and materials, we confine the main manufacturing equipment to the special machine tools for mass production (especially to automatic machine tools) and are strenuously trying to enlarge the capacity of the excellent factories, governmental as well as private; on the other hand, however, the producing capacity of machine tools in our country almost cannot afford such production of machine tools (for the total amount of orders given to all factories in the machine tool industry is ¥ 2,600,000,000 but the yearly manufacturing capacity is only ¥ 400,000,000). If this present situation were allowed to persist further, the expected plan of preparing for air armaments and munitions would be frustrated and our army air combat strength would be seriously influenced. But, on the contrary, although the Manchurian Machine Tool Co. is equipped with more than 600 units of metal-working machines yet a large part of them are the imported excellent ones (on scale it is two or three times as large as a first class machine tool factory in Japan) it has not yet been able to develop its full ability by unreasonable reasons, for example, its geographical situation or its business and yet now has a great reserve capacity occupying the last key position in the machine industry in the sphere under the influence of Japan. We ask you to utilize its full potential capacity in order to cooperate with the rapid production of aircraft and air armaments.

2. At present in most machine tool factories in Japan proper, Army and Navy are competing for exclusive possession. Owing to the shortage of labour and materials, the extension of the factory is not at our disposal and on account of the continuous competition with the Navy on using the factory, there are many troubles in the way of keeping control of such factories. On the contrary, however, as regards to the Manchurian Machine Tool Co. it seems possible for the Army to continue the monopolistic utilization thereof by the reason of its geographical situation.

3. On the occasion of re-organization, your plan on the reform of its business prescribes to this company that it should manufacture special machine tools for mass production for the Army, the Manchurian Aircraft Production Co. and the Manchurian Motor Car Co. According to its plan, the company is to carry out the manufacture of these machine tools and, therefore, as far as the kind of manufacture is concerned, your plan will not be amended at all.

4. As KUBOTA Tokujiro, the president of the Manchurian Machine Tool Co. concurrently holds the post of factory manager of the "Nissan" Motor-Car Co. Manufacturing Section and thus the connection between two companies is very tight, so that in the future the technique and experience of the Nissan on mass production of army munitions can be reflected freshly upon the production in the Manchurian Machine Tool Co. It would be very

DOC. 589-A

helpful to the improvement of the technical level of this company.

"The Plan of Utilization of the Manchurian Machine Tool Co. for speedy expansion of Aircraft-Production" (Draft)

1. "Plan on Production".

The scheduled amount of manufacture is 80 machines (Y 3,000,000) for 1942. 400 machines (Y 10,500,000) for 1943 and a greater part of their production capacity will be allotted to the machine tools for mass production which are necessary for the extension of the Kwantung Ordnance Industry Co. (Kwantung Heiki Kogyo Kabushiki Kaisha) (The "Nissan" Motor-Car Co., Manufacturing Section - - the name after independence) and the rest thereof to the production of machine tools, necessary for the extension of the Manchurian Aircraft Production Co., the Manchurian Motor-Car Co., and other ordnance factories.

DOC. 580

YEAR	ALLOCATION FOR SUPPLY	KIND OF MACHINE	NUMBER TO BE SUPPLIED	THE VALUE (Y)
1942. July, 1942 to Mar 1943	For the Kwantung Ordnance Co. (for the extension of the "Nissan" Motor-Car Co. Manufacturing Section)	Automatic machine and other machine tools for mass production	60	2,000,000
	For the Manchurian Aircraft Co., the Manchurian Motor Car Co. and other general ordnance factories		20	1,000,000
The total			80	3,000,000
1943 (April 1943 to March 1944)	For the Kwantung Ordnance Co. (for the extension of the "Nissan" Motor-Car Manufacturing Section)	Automatic machine and other machine tools for mass production	300	7,000,000
	For the Manchurian Aircraft Co., the Manchurian Motor-Car Co. and other general ordnance factories. #		100	3,500,000
			400	10,500,000

REMARKS

At present there is no order from the Manchurian Aircraft Co. and the Manchurian Motor-Car Co. to the Manchurian Machine Tool Co.

The plan of Utilization for and after 1944 will be discussed later

2. "Means of cooperation and support to be carried out by the War Ministry in order to promote the production".

Means to be cooperated and supported by War Ministry in order to achieve this plan are as follows:

(1) "Undertaking the promotion of production and the improvement of technique by giving technical help and guidance."

(a) The first-class machine tool makers in Japan proper shall offer designs, drawings and specifications on the machine tools for Mass. Production and guide the technique of manufacturing.

Concerning this article, the things already under way are as follows:

Coaching Factory	Coaching Matters	Date to be put into operation	Remarks
Joint-Stock Co. TOKYO Machine Manufacturing Factory	Transferring of drafts of automatic turret lathes for mass production and coaching the technicians on manufacturing	Draft was already transferred in July 1942. Coaching of technique will be recently practised.	
The "HITACHI" Precision Machine Production Co.	Making a draft of automatic lathe for mass production	Since July 1942 under way	Sample machines shall be lent from Army Ordnance Dept.

(b) "Undertaking the improvement of technique by re-training major technicians"

In well known excellent machine tool factories and ordnance factories in Japan, major technicians in the Manchurian Machine Tool Co. shall be re-trained.

About this article, in the "HISAN" Motor-Car Co. Manufacturing Section, having the first-class technique on mass production in Japan, a thorough re-training of 9 major technicians are already under way.

(c) "Undertaking the improvement of production technique by making the first-class makers to transfer major technicians and workers".

Of late we have made the Oriental Machine Co. a first class machine tool factory in Japan, to transfer 8 major technicians and 12 workers who form the main body of the re-born Manchurian Machine Tool Co.

About this matter, as the Oriental Machine Co. is the factory affected by the Labour Adjustment Law, we have negotiated with the Welfare

OKC. 180-A

Ministry and the Naval Inspectorate to check and obtain their approval.

(d) "Help to the use of P.W.s as a means of filling up vacancies"

At present the Manchurian Machine Tool Co. is extremely lacking in the number of workers for its capacity and it is most necessary to supply workers immediately.

A prompt supply of Manchurian workers is most desirable cannot be expected, the company is now planning on a large scale to use many prisoners of war as workers in the factory and we shall render every help to the realization of this plan so far as your Army and Manchukuo have no objection to it. In this plan the number of P.W.s wanted is according to the classification of the work as follows:

THE KIND OF WORK	NUMBER	THE KIND OF WORK	NUMBER	THE KIND OF WORK	NUMBER
Machine Examiner	65	Machine Assembling	200	Planer Operator	40
Forging Worker	30	Welding Worker	20	Shaper Operator	20
Heat Treatment Worker	25	Pattern maker	20	Milling Machine Operator	85
Scribing Worker	50	Turret Lathe operator	30	Gear hobbing machine operator	45
Lathe operator	220	Boring Machine operator	20	Wood worker	10
Tool finisher	100	Grinder	110	Electrical machine assembling	30
Finisher	100	Drill press operator	50	Wire man	20
Draftsmen	150	Designer	80	Mechanical engineer	80
Total 1500					

(e) "Help to obtaining of supplies necessary for machine driving".

Concerning supplies necessary for machine driving, we hope as much as possible to be covered by the supplies allotted for expansion of production in Manchukuo, but from our point of view, the War Ministry might supply a large part of the materials required for the machine tools destined for Japan.

(f) "Help of obtaining precise machine tools"

At present the set-up of the equipment of the Manchurian Machine tool Co. does not seem to be well balanced for machine-tool making; a shortage of several kinds of precision machine tools makes a bottleneck in its production and it is necessary to supply the shortage. It is, however, impossible for the Company in the future as well as at present to produce them by itself and a large part of them depend on excellent makers in Japan proper. So we shall render every help to supply these. Further, we will communicate with the military attache to the embassy in Germany so that priority will be given to the above company in obtaining supply of precision machine tools imported from Germany by order of the Company in accordance with the establishment of the government's program on the trade with Germany.

3. "Help in obtaining machine tools, expected from Japan proper by the Manchurian Aircraft Co. and the Manchurian Motor-Car Co."

The Manchurian Aircraft Co. and the Manchurian Motor-Car Co. have not yet given an order to Manchurian Machine Tool Co. and at present have no concrete plan of intent. A large part of machines for equipment (especially precision machine tools of especially high accuracy) are being indented to machine tool factories in Japan proper.

The urgent necessity of great many machine tools for aircraft-production is preferentially carried out compared with the demands from the branch of general ordnance and expansion of producing capacity. To supply demands from the two companies we shall make every effort, in order to alleviate the influences, rising from the decrease of the expected production amount of the two companies for the Manchurian Machine Tool Co.

The machine tools for milling and grinding for which the two have given orders to machine tool factories in Japan, are as follows:

The Manchurian Aircraft Co.	the total 120
The Manchurian Motor Car Co.	the total 260
(114 of them are lent by Army Ordnance Dept)	

As the result of carrying out this plan, we might expect much contribution to supply the future demands from the two companies through the expansion of producing capacity and the improvement of technique in the Manchurian Machine Tool Co.

Document 580 A

*

Army Secret ASI. General Order first of No. 7991

Translation of Telegram

Telegram Kwan-San-Man Don/716

Date: 9 September 1942)

"To the Vice Minister of War from the Chief of Staff of the Kwantung Army".

As the technician shortage in Manchuria makes it essential to use 1500 prisoners of War in the plan for utilizing the Manchurian Machine Tool Co. for rapid increase in aircraft-Production dealt with in No. 3,129-Army Secret ASIA, we intend to open an internment Camp and ask you to inform us as soon as possible the time of their being transferred to Manchuria and the number etc.

Considering the necessity to establish a camp before winter, we wish the transfer of prisoners to Manchuria as soon as possible.

P. S. We expect to inform you of the opening of a camp later on.

Translation of Telegram.

Date: 29 September, 1942.

"To the Chief of the Bureau of Military Affairs from the Chief of Staff of the Kwantung Army".

Kwantung-Staff-Manchurian Telegram No. 746

Bureau of military affairs, Telegram No. 1,010. Answer.

We are ready to intern about 1,500 prisoners of war from the South Sea in empty barracks at MUKDEN (PEITAYING) and intend to make the necessary preparation for a permanent Camp this winter and to complete it next spring.

Taking consideration of such conditions, we expect you to transfer prisoners of war as soon as possible.

P. S. We hope you will indicate to us the intention of the Central Department on the treatment of prisoners.

(Penciled remark) We will send you the detailed indication when the POWs are temporarily accommodated.

Due to the incident at Lisbon, for the present 500 POWs from Phillipine and 100 from Korea are expected. (YASUDA)

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 580-A.

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Kaneo Ishibashi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Corresponding Secretary, 1st Demobilization Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 17 pages, dated 21 August, 1942, and described as follows: Correspondence from KIMURA to Kwantung Army re Illegal Employment of prisoners of war. I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): War Ministry.

Signed at Tokyo on this

/s/ Kaneo Ishibashi
Signature of Official

3rd day of October, 1946.

SFAL

Witness: /s/ Torakichi Nakamura

Corresponding Secretary
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, 2nd Lt. Eric W. Fleisher, C-935000, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher, 2nd Lt. AUS
NAME

3rd day of October, 1946.

Witness: /s/ Henry Shimajima

Investigation Division IPS
Official Capacity

580A

政務室	書記室	秘書室	庶務室	會計室	監事
保衛科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科
水電科	文書科	庶務科	會計科	工務科	工務科



夏〇七

主任
 秘書
 庶務
 會計
 工務

第一科
 第二科
 第三科

第一科
 第二科
 第三科
 第四科
 第五科
 第六科
 第七科
 第八科
 第九科
 第十科

580A

關於... 關於... 關於...

航立... 航立... 航立...
 航立... 航立... 航立...
 航立... 航立... 航立...
 航立... 航立... 航立...
 航立... 航立... 航立...

航立... 航立... 航立...
 航立... 航立... 航立...
 航立... 航立... 航立...
 航立... 航立... 航立...

航立... 航立... 航立...
 航立... 航立... 航立...

(印)
 (印)

580A

滿洲工作機械株式會社部會 / 理由

目下軍實對裝備之要求，陸路之構成，航空用機關
 砲及同強，集並航空機，關於之業務，省新，能率の
 活用，實現，生産設備，主体，多數生産用專
 門工作機械（特，自動工作機械）ト，官民優秀工場
 之，銳意，徹底，實施，之，ツツ，此，一，面，現在，國內
 工作機械，生產力，右，工作機械，生産，應，得，餘，力，殆
 ト，殆，無，之，（工作機械工業會工場，持，受，許，額，總，計
 二十五億圓，之，於，三，年，生産，力，約，四，億，圓）現，狀，儘，推，移，之
 之，時期，航空，武器，彈，藥，整備，訂，造，控，制，之，意，ト，人
 陸軍，航空，戰，力，之，重大，之，影響，ヲ，與，之，ト，ス，此，情，況，ニ，アリ
 然，レ，滿洲，工作機械株式會社，之，設備，機，械，六，〇，〇，台，ヲ
 超，工，然，之，過，半，之，輸入，優秀，工作機械，ヲ，有，又，（規模
 之，於，本，邦，一流，工作機械，工場，之，乃至，三，倍，之，相當，之，レ，也，ヲ
 不，使，其，之，地域，的關係，或，之，營業，上，之，理由，等，ヲ，未，々，全
 能力，ヲ，發揮，之，得，レ，之，ト，又，今，尚，莫，大，之，生産，餘，力，ヲ，有
 之，ト，一，言，之，日本，勢力，圈，機械，工業，之，於，最，最後，據，點，の，地
 步，之，ト，之，今，之，全，能力，ヲ，舉，之，ト，刻，下，最大，急，務

3

580A

将来日産自動車加工部工場に於ける軍需品多数生産に
関する技術経験を満洲工作機械株式会社に於ける生産に
自由反映せしめ得るを以て同社の技術水準向上に益
スルコト甚カラサルコト。

5

580A

航空緊急整備ノ多々滿洲工作機械株式會社利用計畫(案)

一 生産計畫

生産豫定ハ康徳九年度八〇臺(三百萬圓)、康徳十年
度四〇〇臺(千五千萬圓)トシ、能力ノ大部ハ関東

兵器工業株式會社(日産自動車株式會社加工部工場
獨立後ノ名稱)、擴充ニ必要ナル多數生産用工作機械

ニ充テ他ノ一部ハ滿洲飛行機製造株式會社滿洲
自動車株式會社並シ、他兵器^{工場}擴充用工作機械ノ生

6

産ニ充テスルトス

580A

年度	供給區分	機種	供給臺數	金額	
康德九年度 自昭和十二年七月 至二十八年三月	関東兵器用	自動機械及 その他多数 産用工作機械	六〇臺	二,〇〇〇,〇〇〇 圓	
	日産自動車加		満洲飛行機 満洲自動車及 一般兵器工場用	二〇臺	一,〇〇〇,〇〇〇
	工部工場補充			計	八〇臺	三,〇〇〇,〇〇〇
康德十年度 自昭和十八年四月 至二十九年三月	関東兵器用	自動機械及 その他多数 産用工作機械	三〇〇臺	七,〇〇〇,〇〇〇 圓	
	日産自動車加		満洲飛行機 満洲自動車南 及一般兵器工場 用	一〇〇臺	三,五〇〇,〇〇〇 圓
	工部工場補充			計	四〇〇臺	一〇,五〇〇,〇〇〇

備 現在満洲飛行機及満洲自動車より満洲工作機械三對入り
 考 発註入未々皆無ナリ。
 康德十一年以降ニ於テ利用ニ就テハ後拂入

7

580 A

二、生産促進、爲陸軍省ニ於テ、実施セントスル協力援助方法
 本計畫達成、タメ陸軍省ニ於テ、協力援助セントスル事項
 左、如シ。

- (1) 技術指導ニ依リ、生産、促進、技術、向上ヲ圖ルコト
- (2) 内地ニ於テ、一流工作機械業者ヨリ、多数生産用工作
 機械ニ関スル設計圖面、工作圖面ヲ讓渡セシムルト共ニ
 工作技術、指導ヲ爲サシム。

本項ニ関シ、既ニ実施中、モノ、左、如シ

指導工場	指導事項	実施年月	備考
株式会社 東京機械製作	多数生産用自動 タレット旋盤、製 作圖面、讓渡並 工作技術、指導	昭和十七年七月 圖面、讓渡、済 工作技術、指導 ハ、近ク、実施、中	
日立機械株式会社	多数生産用自動 旋盤、設計圖面 、調製	昭和十七年七月 ヨリ、実施、中。	見本機械、 陸軍兵器廠 ヨリ、貸與、ス

(3) 基幹技術者、再訓練ニ依リ、技術、向上ヲ圖ルコト

本邦著名、優秀、工作機械工場並兵器工場ニ於テ

滿洲工作機械、基幹技術者、再訓練ヲ実施ス

8

580A

本局之職責，在於整理及改良本邦之產物及技術，
有關於此者，如有必要，加工部工場，於現在既滿洲工作
機械，其數額計有九名，徹底之訓練，已實施之了。

(一) 以該一處，業已加工之技術，其數額計有九名，其數額已
在該技術人員之圖上。

最近滿洲工作機械，其數額計有九名，其數額已
工場及工廠，機械株式會社，其數額計有九名，
其數額計有九名，其數額已。

本件之圖，其數額計有九名，其數額已
其數額計有九名，其數額已。

(二) 勞務充足，一助之，其數額計有九名，其數額已
現在滿洲工作機械，其數額計有九名，其數額已
僅少之，其數額計有九名，其數額已。

勞務者充足，其數額計有九名，其數額已
其數額計有九名，其數額已。

滿洲國令，其數額計有九名，其數額已

580A

得ん限り援助ス

右同社計画ニ基ク作業別序階使役希望員數左

如シ

區分	員數	區分	員數	區分	員數
機械検査工	六五人	機械組立工	一〇〇人	平削工	四〇人
鍛工	三〇	熔接工	二〇	型削工	二〇
熱處理工	二五	木型工	二〇	フライス工	八五
野面工	五〇	タレット工	三〇	齒切工	四五
旋盤工	二二〇	中割工	二〇	木工	一〇
真仕上工	一〇〇	研磨工	一〇	電気組立工	三〇
仕上工	一〇〇	ボール盤工	五〇	電力電機工	二〇
製圖手	二五〇	企圖手	八〇	機械技術者	八〇
				計	一五〇〇人

(内) 運轉資材ニ関スル援助

運轉資材ニ関シテハ滿洲國生産品古ク用資材ヨリテ

極力配當セシメ度希望スル処ナリモ對日供給用工作機械

運轉資材大部ハ陸軍省ニ於テ配當スルモ支障ナキ

意見ナリ

10

580 A

(2) 精密工作機械、取得斡旋

滿洲工作機械、設備ハ工作機械製造上現在少スニ无鈞
合、採タル構成ヲ為シ非ス若干種類、精密工作機械ニ
於テ隘路ヲ構成シアリ之ヲ補充スル、必要アルニ現在ハ
勿論將來共同社ニ於テ自製スルト不可能ニシテ内地
優秀業者、専門業者ニ依存スル、他トテ元ノ大部ヲ
占ムルヲ以テ之ヲ取得ニ付極力援助ス

尙對獨貿易計畫、成立ニ伴ヒ他逸國ヨリ輸入スルキ
同社登記、精密工作機械、取得ニ関シハ在獨武官宛
連絡、上特ニ優先的ニ実施スル如ク考慮ス

三 滿洲飛行機及滿洲自動車兩社、内地依存工作機械
取得斡旋

滿洲飛行機及滿洲自動車兩社ハ其ニ從來滿洲工作
機械ニ對シタル登記ヲ為シタルコトヲ又現在ニ於テ其
具體的登記計畫ヲ有シ非スルノ設備用機械(特ニ
高度、精度ヲ要スル精密工作機械)ノ大部ハ内地工作
機械工場ニ登記セラルリ

580 A

現在右兩社，因工作機械，因之登記中，切制研
磨用工作機械，在：如之
油州銀行機 有二四臺
油州自動車 計二十六台（因一二四臺，陸軍
官廳，管理機）
但之本社，共計三臺，潮州五社，機，三五四程，造
投術同上，依，于右兩社，今後，需要充足，三復，獻，不
處，區，大，上，已，了，已，了

580A

軍密才七九二号兵一

陸軍省
陸軍部
陸軍省
陸軍部

陸軍省
陸軍部
陸軍省
陸軍部

陸軍省
陸軍部
陸軍省
陸軍部

秘電報 九月九日十八時五分發
三時一分著

次官宛 送信者 關東軍參謀長

關參滿電才七二〇号

陸軍省才三三九号ニ依リ滿洲ニ作機械株式会社ヲ

航空緊急整備ノ爲ニ利用スル件ニ於テ停務一五〇〇名

ノ利用スル滿洲ニ於テ技術員不足ノ折柄最モ緊急要ト

思フニ此ニ付當軍上ニ於テ停務收容所ヲ開設ス

度ニ意向スルヲ以テ之ガ入滿時期人員等ニ関シ至急

連絡願ハシ度

尚且方トシテ冬期前ニ於テ之ガ收容管理ノ施設

ヲ実施スル必要上停務入滿ハ迅速スルコトヲ希望ス

追ッテ停務收容所ノ開設ニ関シテ別途連絡スル

豫定ニ付念ノ爲

終

580A

軍務部

陸軍部 陸軍部

軍務部 陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

秘

軍務部 陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

陸軍部

陸軍部 陸軍部

14

580A cert. 1

	証	明	書	
「ワシントン」文書局	第			第
國際檢察部	第			第
				號

真摯及ヒ公正ニ關スル證明

余、石橋兼雄ハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ第一復員局文書課々員トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係ニ在ルモノナルコト、茲ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラレタル、十七頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四十二年ノ昭和拾七年ノ八月廿貳日附、下記題名、即チ滿洲工作機松株式會社ヲ航空緊急整備ノタメ利用致慶件照會ノ文書ノ保管ニ任シ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書ナルコト、茲ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式書類及ビ添ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラバ綴番號又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ綴ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所在ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 陸軍省

6

580, A cert. 2

千九百四十六年／西曆二十一年／十月三日

東京ニ於テ署名

密議官吏署名機 石 橋 兼 雄 印

右ノ者ノ公印發給 第一復員局長警務次長

證 人 中 村 實 吉 印

公式入手ニ關スル證明

余、2d Lt, Eric W. Fleisher ハ、余等聯合國最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、位ニ上記題名ノ文書ハ余等公認上、日本政府ノ上記署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年／西曆二十一年／十月三日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏 名 職 Eric W. Fleisher 2d Lt. AUS

右ノ者ノ公印發給 Investigator I, P. S.

證 人 Henry Shimajima

FOREIGN AFFAIRS MONTHLY REPORT, SEPTEMBER, 1942

Published by Foreign Section of the Police
Bureau of Home Ministry

Sec
Secret

THE EMPLOYMENT OF WAR PRISONERS

(Page 58)

1. Recent condition of the demand and supply of labor in Japan and the decision on the principles of employing war prisoners.

The labor shortage problem in Japan has become quite acute, becoming more and more serious recently. In order to meet this situation, many people are of the opinion that we had better employ, when necessary, the war prisoners who are now interred at Zentsuji, or at places in the south as a result of our success in the Greater East Asia War.

As a result, the Cabinet Planning Board entrusted by the Army Administrative Department for War Prisoners, held a conference on August 15 regarding the transfer of war prisoners to Japan proper and their employment. At this conference the following principles were discussed and decided to be carried out, in order to transfer war prisoners to Japan and employ them to mitigate the labor shortage and to carry out special important work:

- I. Of the industries in the National Mobilization Plan, war prisoners shall be employed for mining, stevedoring and engineering and construction work for national defense. For the time being, war prisoners shall be employed in stevedoring in important ports.
- II. For the time being, some 3,500 war prisoners shall be sent to Japan. According to results, the number shall be increased later.
- III. The formalities regarding the employment of war prisoners was arranged by Prefectural Governors through the Welfare Ministry.
- IV. In the prefectures, the Prefectural Governor, or the labor management organization appointed by the Governor, may, with the consent of the Army, make plans and take charge of the employment and supervision of war prisoners at the place of labor.
- V. Prisoner of war camps for stevedores to be brought to Japan for the present, following this plan, will be set up as follows:

Tokyo	600 persons	Hirehata	100 persons
Yokohama	600 "	Moji	500 "
Osaka	600 "	Tobata	500 "
Kobe	500 "	Muroran	300 "

2. Employment of war prisoners in the Zentsuji Internment Camp.

Before the above plan was set up, part of the war prisoners interned in the Zentsuji Internment Camp were already employed as laborers. That is, at this Zentsuji Prisoner of War Camp which was opened on January 14, about 450 American prisoners of war, etc. from Guam, had been interned, of which 150 Americans were sent to Osaka on June 9, interned at the City Gymnasium at Yawatayamatsuno-cho, Minato-ku, Osaka, and had been working as stevedores since June 12. The outline of their working condition is as follows: They work eight hours per day, engaged in simple stevedoring work; as for efficiency in handling light loads, they do not show much difference compared with the Japanese laborers, but in handling heavy loads, or in work requiring skill, their efficiency is very low. As for their wages, the Osaka District Harbor Transportation Stevedoring Control Office collects two yen per person per day from the direct employers of the war prisoners. The money is either handed in to the Army, used for the expenses of the prisoners of war recreation equipment, or for national defense offerings and general expenses.

The comparatively cheap wage has called the attention of men in the trade to the advantage of using the prisoners of war, and is helping to increase the demand for their employment. The employment of war prisoners, as stated above, has resulted in controlling the rise of black market wages of longshoremen, improving the efficiency of work, preventing longshoremen in the regular employ from being scattered, etc.

Also, at the Takamatsu branch of the Nippon Transportation Company, located at 21, 4-Chome, Shinminato-cho, about twenty prisoners of war interned in the Zentsuji Prisoner of War Camp were employed daily from August 22 for about a month in the Takamatsu Station for stevedoring to speed up the transportation of materials in war-time, with satisfactory results.

Document No. 668 A

W.D.C. No. _____
I.P.S. No. 668

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, SHIBATA, Kosaburo hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Administrative Officer of the Home Ministry, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 81 pages, dated September, 1942, and described as follows: Foreign Affairs Monthly Report

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Home Ministry.

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of November, 1946.

/s/ Kosaburo SHIBATA
Signature of Official
SEAL

Witness: Seichi OKADA /s/

Second Class Administrative Officer
of the Investigation Bureau of the
Home Ministry
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, J. A. Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
5th day of November, 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis 2nd Lt.
NAME

Witness: /s/ Richard W. Larsh

Investigator, IPS
Official Capacity

Ex. # 1972

Monthly Reports of the Secret Service Police - August,
1942 - page 206

2. A Plan to Use Prisoners of War as a Result of Labor Shortage.

Owing to the good results obtained by 150 American prisoners of war at Zentsuji Prisoner of War Camp who had been sent to Osaka in order to engage in laboring works as a neutralizing measure for labor shortage suffered in the military works and harbor equipment, the enterprising circles who were suffering from the labor shortage at several districts around Tokyo and Hyogo, Fukuoka and Nagasaki Prefectures, applied to the military authorities to allow them to use the prisoners of war as follows:

- (1) Under Hyogo Prefecture, the companies engaging in the stevedore business at Kobe Harbor and Hirohata ports for the works of the Nittetsu and Nippon Steel Works, are applying to the military authorities for the use of 680 prisoners of war.
- (2) Under Fukuoka Prefecture, the companies engaging in loading and unloading coal in the port of Moji desiring to use the prisoners of war for their requirements, asked the Chief of the Moji Police Office in the district concerned for his good offices. Apart from this it was decided to distribute 1,000 prisoners of war in consideration of the acute labor shortage in the stevedore business at the harbors in Northern Kyushu.
- (3) Under the Nagasaki Prefecture it was already decided to distribute respectively 2,000 prisoners of war for the Mitsubishi Dock Yard and 1,000 for the Kayaki-Jima Dock Yard as they had secured permission from the authorities.
- (4) Under the areas in the jurisdiction of the Metropolitan Police Bureau, permission has already been secured to use prisoners of war for unloading freights at Shibaura, and for this purpose it was decided that 400 British prisoners of war be transferred from Malay districts shortly. Although the direct guarding and direction for prisoners of war engaged in work in the country are taken charge of by the military authorities, the responsibility for directing and controlling anti-espionage and other matters in regard to the people living in the districts where the prisoners of war are working, should be taken care of by the police office. Accordingly, in case of the realization of the above mentioned plans, it is necessary for the police officers to direct and control the people properly in cooperation with the authorities concerned.

Document No. 706-A

W.D.C. No. _____
I.S.S. No. 706-A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, SHIBATA, Kosaburo, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Administrative Officer of the Home Ministry, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached dated January-December, 1942, and described as follows: Monthly Report of the Secret Service Police

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Home Ministry

Signed at Tokyo on this

4th day of November, 1946.

/s/ Kosaburo SHIBATA
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Seichi OKADA

Second Class Administrative Officer
of the Investigation Bureau of the
Home Ministry
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, J. A. Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

5th day of November, 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis 2nd Lt.
NAME

Investigator IPS
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Richard H. Larsen

Doc 668A

EXHIBIT NO. 1971A

外報

外事月報 昭和十七年九月

內務省警務局外事課

NO 1

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 364

Doc 668A

一 俘虜使役の状況

(二) 最近に於ける勞務供給事情及俘虜使役要綱の議定
本邦に於ける勞務供給の状況は相當逼迫せる趨勢を示し、殊に最近に於ける勞働力不足は逐次深刻化してある。之に對し今次大東亞戰爭の戦果に依り我方に俘虜となり豫而善通寺及南方諸所に收容中の敵兵人も所費に應じ使役せんとの議各方面に起るに呈れり。

斯く之企畫院に於ては陸軍俘虜管理課の委囑に基き去る八月十五日俘虜の内地移入並勞働使役に關する會議を主催し、其の會議に於て敵兵人俘虜の内地移入を圖り勞務不足の緩和及特殊重要業務の遂行に資せしむべく、概ね左の要綱に付審議を経之を實施する事とすべし。

1. 俘虜は之を國民動員計畫産業中鉱業、巧役業及土木建築業の所要勞務に使役することとし、差違り重要港湾巧役に付実施すること。
2. 差違り三千五百名内外を移入することとし、其の使用の成績に依り漸次之が增加を圖ること。
3. 俘虜使用に關する手續は地元地方長官より厚生省を經由して之を爲すこと。

4. 道府縣内に於ける俘虜使用に關する計画指導その他現場の就勞管理に關する事務に付ては軍の承認を受け地方長官又は其の指定する勞務關係團體に於て之を行ふことと得ること。

140. 2

Doc 668A

5. 本電網に依り、差支り内地に移入するが、役員の
停務收容所は左に依り設置するに。

東京	六〇〇名
横浜	六〇〇名
大横濱	六〇〇名
神戸	一五〇〇名
廣戸	一〇〇〇名
門司	五〇〇名
油	五〇〇名
室蘭	三〇〇名

(三) 善通寺停務收容所、收容停務の使役

前項停務の移入使役の計畫に先だち別に善通寺
停務收容所に收容中の停務の一部は既に労働に就役し
てあり、即ち去る一月十四日開設を見る善通寺停務收
容所に在りては豫而くア公島に於ける米五人停務等約
四百五十餘名を收容し、内米五人百五十名は去る六月九日
大阪に勿違、大阪市港區入備屋松之町市立運動場に
收容され、同月十二日米港灣存役に就務し居れり。

其の就役状況を概観するに一日八時間就働し主として
單調なる一般存役に従ひ、能率的には輕量品の取扱に於て
本邦人に比し格別の差異なき実績を示し居れるも、重量
物件の取扱乃至操術を要する作業に於ては能率極めて
低調なる状況あり。

而して其の賃金は大阪地區港灣運送業会存役統制

NO. 3

Doc 668 A

致に於て各利用業主より一日二円の単價に依り徴収し、金額を軍納へ費、仔養休養施設費、予防金及雜費等に振向けられ比較的低廉なる賃金は業者をして仔養使用の利得を意識せしめ、倍々需要漸増の傾向を助長してあり。

敘上仔養使用の結果は港灣石役業界に対し、港灣仲仕の閑賃金目騰の抑制、作業能率の向上、常備仲仕の散逸防止等の効果を齎した。

又高松市新港町四丁目三日本通運株式会社高松支店に於ては去る六月三日より約一月間に亘り、戦時下物資輸送促進の爲善通寺仔養牧客所中、戦時一仔養一日三十名内外を高松駅構内に於て仔養の敵に、相當の効果を収めたり。

No 4

證明書

「三十一」文書局 半 号
國際檢察部 半六六八号

與據及公正之關係證明

668 A 余、柴田小三郎、余が下記「後綴」於「即」ノ内務事務官トシテ、日本政府ノ公的関係在リ、トシテ、該官吏トシテ、余が「後綴」附テ、シ、心、付、負、リ、成、ル、千九百四十二年（昭和十七年）九月附、下記題名、即「外事月報」、文書、保管ニ在リ、居、ル、トシテ、後綴證明ス。
余、更、添、附、録、及、心、交、言、ガ、日、本、政府、ノ、公、式、書、トシ、テ、心、付、下、記、名、稱、省、又、部、局、ノ、公、式、書、類、及、心、綴、一、部、トシ、テ、後綴證明ス。若、シ、ラ、心、綴、番、号、又、心、付、用、其、他、公、式、書、類、及、心、綴、於、心、該、文、書、ニ、現、在、存、在、公、式、名、稱、ヲ、モ、特、記、ス、（三）
外務省

千九百四十六年（昭和十七年）十一月四日

東京ニ於テ署名

当該官吏署名欄

右者ノ公的資格

證明人

柴田小三郎 (印)

内務省警保局公才課二級
事務官

岡田政一 (印)

公式之關係證明

余、J. A. Curtis、余が「联合国」最高指揮官司令部關係下ニ、
心、付、上、記、題、名、ノ、文、書、ニ、余、が、公、務、上、日、本、政府、ノ、上、記、署、名、官、吏、ト、シ、
心、付、心、綴、番、号、又、心、付、用、其、他、公、式、書、類、及、心、綴、於、心、該、文、書、ニ、現、在、存、在、公、式、名、稱、ヲ、モ、特、記、ス、（三）

千九百四十六年（昭和十七年）十一月五日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏名欄

右者ノ公的資格

證明人

J. A. Curtis Lt.

國際檢察部調査官

Richard H. Larch

證明書

口三十一文書局 才 号
國際檢察部 才六六八A号

典據及公正之關係證明

668A

余柴田小三郎、余が下記後章に於て、即ち内務事務官として、日本政府上の公的関係存在を、上記に該官吏として、余が添附し、(十一)頁より成り、一九四二年(昭和十七年)九月附、下記題名、即ち外事月報、文書、保管に在り、これを添附し、證明す。
余、更添附し、記録及文書が日本政府、公之書として、右下記名稱、省又、部局、公式書類及綴、一部として、證明す。(若し、六綴番号、又、公用、其他公式書類、六綴、於該文書、代現所在、公式名稱、を特記ス、之)

内務省

一九四六年(昭和二十一年)十一月四日

東京に於て署名

当該官吏署名欄

右、右、公的資格

證明人

柴田小三郎

(印)

内務省警保局公才三課二級
事務官

岡田政一

(印)

公式之關係證明

余、J.A. Curtis、余が联合国最高指揮官総司令部關係下、
上記に、上記題名、文書、余が公務上、日本政府、上記署名官吏、
今、三九元、上記として、證明す。

一九四六年(昭和二十一年)十一月五日

東京に於て署名

氏名欄

右、右、公的資格

證明人

J.A. Curtis 2d Lt.

國際檢察部調査官

Richard H. Larsh

證明書

第三十一文書局 才 號
國際檢察部 才六六八A號

典據及公正之圖式證明

668 A 余柴田小三郎、余が下記資格に於て即ち内務事務官として日本政府との關係を有するに於て該官吏として余が茲添附するものは、其の成りたる一九四六年（昭和二十年）九月附下記題名即ち外事月報、文書、保管に在るものとして證明す。

余が更添附の記録及び文書が日本政府の公文書として在る下記名稱の各部局、公式書類及び綴、部として證明す。若し之が綴者も又引用其他公式書類も綴於て該文書、或現所在、公式名稱を特記す（三）
内務省

一九四六年 / 昭和二十年 / 十一月四日

東京に於て署名

当該官吏の署名欄

有る者の資格
證人

柴田小三郎

印

内務省警保局公文二課二級
事務官

岡田政一

印

公式令三圖式證明

余 J. A. Curtis は余が联合国最高指揮官總司令部關係に於て上記題名、文書、余が公務上日本政府、上記署名官吏として一九四六年（昭和二十年）十一月五日

東京に於て署名

氏名欄

有る者の資格
證人

J. A. Curtis 2d Lt.

國際檢察部調査官

Richard H. Larsh

證明書

ワニトノ入書局 才
國際檢察部 才六六八A号

典據及心公正圖元證明

668A

余柴田小三郎ハ余ガ下記諸實據ニ於テ即チ内務事務官トシテ日本政府ト公的関係在リタルコト証該官更トシテ余ガ茲添附セラレタル(付)頁ヨリ成ル一九四六年/昭和十七年/九月附下記題名即チ外事月報、文書、保管ニ任シ居ルコトヲ茲證明ス。
余ハ更添附ノ記録及心文書ガ日本政府ノ公之書言タルコト証ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又部局、公式書類及心綴、一部タルコトヲ證明ス。(若シテハ綴者号又引用、其他公式書類又綴於心該文書、成現所在、公式名稱ヲ特記スベシ)

内務省

一九四六年/昭和十七年/十一月四日

東京ニ於テ署名
当該官吏署名欄
右者ノ公的資格
證人

柴田小三郎 (印)
内務省警保局公才二課二級
事務官
岡田政一 (印)

公式入書圖元證明

余J.A. Curtis ハ余ガ联合国最高指揮官総司令部關係下ニ
タルコト証上記題名、文書、余ガ公務上日本政府ノ上記署名官吏ヨリ
今三月九日、十月二十日ヲ茲證明ス。
一九四六年/昭和十七年/十一月五日

東京ニ於テ署名
此名欄
右者ノ公的資格
證人

J.A. Curtis Lt.
國際檢察部調査官
Richard H. Lush

國際人
與
公正之證明

668A

余柴田小三郎、余分下記者證、其入部ノ内務事務官トシテ、日本
政府ノ關係在、凡コト証ニ該官更トシテ余分綴テ附ヤリタル、(一)
頁三、一九四二年/昭和十七年/九月附下記題名、即ケ外
事月誌ノ文書、保管ニ任スルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。
余分綴テ附ノ記録及、文書分日本政府ノ公文書凡コト証ニ右下記名稱ノ者
又部系ノ公文書類及綴テ部トシテ證明ス。若シテ八級者及八級用、
其他公文書類及綴テ該文書、或現所在ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記ス。(三)

乙巳年六月/昭和十七年/十一月四日

東本三於了署名
主該官更署名欄
右者ノ公的資格
證人

柴田小三郎 (印)
内務省警保局公才三課二級
事務官
岡田政一 (印)

公式令三國凡證明

余 J.A. Curtis 余分联合国最高指揮官司令部關係在
凡コト証上記題名ノ文書、余分公務上日本政府ノ上記署名官更、
今三、一九四二年/昭和十七年/十一月五日
東本三於了署名

氏名欄
右者ノ公的資格
證人

J. A. Curtis 244
國際檢察部調査官
Richard H. Lorsch

FOREIGN AFFAIRS MONTHLY REPORT, SEPTEMBER, 1942Published by Foreign Section of the Police
Bureau of Home Ministry*Secret*THE EMPLOYMENT OF WAR PRISONERS

(Page 58)

1. Recent condition of the demand and supply of labor in Japan and the decision on the principles of employing war prisoners.

The labor shortage problem in Japan has become quite acute, becoming more and more serious recently. In order to meet this situation, many people are of the opinion that we had better employ, when necessary, the war prisoners who are now interned at Zentsuji, or at places in the south as a result of our success in the Greater East Asia War.

As a result, the Cabinet Planning Board entrusted by the Army Administrative Department for War Prisoners, held a conference on August 15 regarding the transfer of war prisoners to Japan proper and their employment. At this conference the following principles were discussed and decided to be carried out, in order to transfer war prisoners to Japan and employ them to mitigate the labor shortage and to carry out special important work:

- I. Of the industries in the National Mobilization Plan, war prisoners shall be employed for mining, stevedoring and engineering and construction work for national defense. For the time being, war prisoners shall be employed in stevedoring in important ports.
- II. For the time being, some 3,500 war prisoners shall be sent to Japan. According to results, the number shall be increased later.
- III. The formalities regarding the employment of war prisoners was arranged by Prefectural Governors through the Welfare Ministry.
- IV. In the prefectures, the Prefectural Governor, or the labor management organization appointed by the Governor, may, with the consent of the Army, make plans and take charge of the employment and supervision of war prisoners at the place of labor.
- V. Prisoner of war camps for stevedores to be brought to Japan for the present, following this plan, will be set up as follows:

Tokyo	600 persons	Hirohata	100 persons
Yokohama	600 "	Moji	500 "
Osaka	600 "	Tobata	800 "
Kobe	500 "	Muroran	300 "

2. Employment of war prisoners in the Zentsuji Internment Camp.

Before the above plan was set up, part of the war prisoners interned in the Zentsuji Internment Camp were already employed as laborers. That is, at this Zentsuji Prisoner of War Camp which was opened on January 14, about 450 American prisoners of war, etc. from Guam, had been interned, of which 150 Americans were sent to Osaka on June 9, interned at the City Gymnasium at Yawotayamatsuno-cho, Minato-ku, Osaka, and had been working as stevedores since June 12. The outline of their working condition is as follows: They work eight hours per day, engaged in simple stevedoring work; as for efficiency in handling light loads, they do not show much difference compared with the Japanese laborers, but in handling heavy loads, or in work requiring skill, their efficiency is very low. As for their wages, the Osaka District Harbor Transportation Stevedoring Control Office collects two yen per person per day from the direct employers of the war prisoners. The money is either handed in to the Army, used for the expenses of the prisoners of war recreation equipment, or for national defense offerings and general expenses.

The comparatively cheap wage has called the attention of men in the trade to the advantage of using the prisoners of war, and is helping to increase the demand for their employment. The employment of war prisoners, as stated above, has resulted in controlling the rise of black market wages of longshoremen, improving the efficiency of work, preventing longshoremen in the regular employ from being scattered, etc.

Also, at the Takamatsu branch of the Nippon Transportation Company, located at 21, 4-Chome, Shinminato-cho, about twenty prisoners of war interned in the Zentsuji Prisoner of War Camp were employed daily from August 22 for about a month in the Takamatsu Station for stevedoring to speed up the transportation of materials in war-time, with satisfactory results.

Document No. 668 A

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 668

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, SHIBATA, Kosaburo hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Administrative Officer of the Home Ministry, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 81 pages, dated September, 1942, and described as follows: Foreign Affairs Monthly Report

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Home Ministry.

Signed at Tokyo on this

4th day of November, 1946.

/s/ Kosaburo SHIBATA
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: Seichi OKADA /s/

Second Class Administrative Officer
of the Investigation Bureau of the
Home Ministry
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, J. A. Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

5th day of November, 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis 2nd Lt.
NAME

Witness: /s/ Richard H. Larsh

Investigator, IPS
Official Capacity

Monthly Reports of the Secret Service Police - August,
1942 - page 206

2. ▲ Plan to Use Prisoners of War as a Result of Labor Shortage.

Owing to the good results obtained by 150 American prisoners of war at Zentsuji Prisoner of War Camp who had been sent to Osaka in order to engage in laboring works as a neutralizing measure for labor shortage suffered in the military works and harbor equipment, the enterprising circles who were suffering from the labor shortage at several districts around Tokyo and Hyogo, Fukuoka and Nagasaki Prefectures, applied to the military authorities to allow them to use the prisoners of war as follows:

- (1) Under Hyogo Prefecture, the companies engaging in the stevedore business at Kobe Harbor and Hirohata ports for the works of the Nittetsu and Nippon Steel Works, are applying to the military authorities for the use of 680 prisoners of war.
- (2) Under Fukuoka Prefecture, the companies engaging in loading and unloading coal in the port of Moji desiring to use the prisoners of war for their requirements, asked the Chief of the Moji Police Office in the district concerned for his good offices. Apart from this it was decided to distribute 1,000 prisoners of war in consideration of the acute labor shortage in the stevedore business at the harbors in Northern Kyushu.
- (3) Under the Nagasaki Prefecture it was already decided to distribute respectively 2,000 prisoners of war for the Mitsubishi Dock Yard and 1,000 for the Kayaki-Jima Dock Yard as they had secured permission from the authorities.
- (4) Under the areas in the jurisdiction of the Metropolitan Police Bureau, permission has already been secured to use prisoners of war for unloading freights at Shibaura, and for this purpose it was decided that 400 British prisoners of war be transferred from Malay districts shortly. Although the direct guarding and direction for prisoners of war engaged in work in the country are taken charge of by the military authorities, the responsibility for directing and controlling anti-espionage and other matters in regard to the people living in the districts where the prisoners of war are working, should be taken care of by the police office. Accordingly, in case of the realization of the above mentioned plans, it is necessary for the police officers to direct and control the people properly in cooperation with the authorities concerned.

Document No. 706-A

W.D.C. No. _____
I.F.S. No. 706-A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, SHIBATA, Kosaburo, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Administrative Officer of the Home Ministry, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached dated January-December, 1942, and described as follows: Monthly Report of the Secret Service Police

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Home Ministry

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of November, 1946.

/s/ Kosaburo SHIBATA
Signature of Official
SEAL

Witness: /s/ Seichi OKADA

Second Class Administrative Officer
of the Investigation Bureau of the
Home Ministry
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, J. A. Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
5th day of November, 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis 2nd Lt.
NAME

Witness: /s/ Richard H. Larsen

Investigator IPS
Official Capacity

Document No. 706-A

W.D.C. No. _____
I.F.S. No. 706-A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, SHIBATA, Kosaburo, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Administrative Officer of the Home Ministry, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached dated January-December, 1942, and described as follows: Monthly Report of the Secret Service Police

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Home Ministry

Signed at Tokyo on this
4th day of November, 1946.

/s/ Kosaburo SHIBATA
Signature of Official
SEAL

Witness: /s/ Seichi OKADA

Second Class Administrative Officer
of the Investigation Bureau of the
Home Ministry
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, J. A. Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
5th day of November, 1946

/s/ J. A. Curtis 2nd Lt.
NME

Witness: /s/ Richard H. Larsen

Investigator IPS
Official Capacity

Doc 668A

EXHIBIT NO. 197A

秘 錄

外事月報

昭和十七年九月分

內務省警務局外事課

NO 1

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 364

Doc 668A

一 俘虜使役の状況

(三) 最近に於ける勞務需給事情及俘虜使役要綱の議定
本邦に於ける勞務需給の状況は相違逼迫せる趨勢を示し、殊に最近に於ける勞働力不足は逐次深刻化しつつある虞、之に對し今次大東亞戰爭の戦果に依り我方に俘虜となり豫而善通寺及南方諸所に收容中の敵兵人を所管に應じ使役せんとし議各方面に起るに在り。

斯くて企畫院に於ては陸軍俘虜管理部の委嘱に基き去る八月十五日俘虜の内地移入並勞働使役に關する會議を主催し其の會議に於て敵兵人俘虜の内地移入も圖り勞務不足の緩和及特殊重要業務の遂行に資せしむべく概ね左の要綱に付審議を経之を實施するに決りたり。

1. 俘虜は之を國民動員計畫産業中鉱業、巧役業及防土木建築業の所要勞務に使役することとし、差違り重要港灣巧役に付實施すること。
2. 差違り三千五百名内外を移入することとし、其の使用の成績に依り漸次之が增加を圖ること。
3. 俘虜使用に關する手續は地元地方長官より厚生省を經由して之を爲すこと。
4. 道府縣内に於ける俘虜使用に關する計画指導其の他現場の就勞管理に關する事務に付ては軍の承認を受け地方長官及び其の指定する勞務関係團體に於て之を行ふことと得ること。

NO. 2

Doc 668A

5. 本要綱に依り、差支り内地に移入する為の
浮揚收容所は左に依り設置するに。

東京	六〇〇名
横浜	六〇〇名
大府	六〇〇名
神戸	一五〇〇名
門司	一〇〇〇名
廣島	五〇〇名
宇野	三〇〇名

(三) 善通寺浮揚收容所収容浮揚の使役

前項浮揚の移入使役の計畫に先だち別に善通寺
浮揚收容所に收容中の浮揚の一部は既に労働に就役し
てあり、即ち去る一月十四日開設を見たる善通寺浮揚收
容所に在りては豫而クア公島に於ける米五人浮揚等約
四百五十餘名を收容し、内米五人百五十名は去る六月九日
大阪に勿遣、大阪市港区入備屋松之町市立運動場に
收容され、同月十二日米港灣行役に就務し居れり。

其の就役状況を概観するに一日八時間就働し主として
單調なる一般行役に従ひ、能率的には輕量品の取扱に於て
本邦人に比し格別の差異なき実績を示し居れり、且重量
物件の取扱乃至操術を要する作業に於ては能率極めて
低調なる状況あり。

而して其の賃金は大阪地區港灣運送業会行役統制

11.3

Doc 668A

5. 本電網に依り、差当り内地に移入する者係、厚の
停務收容所は左に依り設置するに。

東京	六〇〇名
横浜	六〇〇〃
大阪	六〇〇〃
神戸	五〇〇〃
広島	一〇〇〃
門司	五〇〇〃
宇都宮	五〇〇〃
室蘭	三〇〇〃

(三) 普通寺停務收容所收容停務の使役

前項停務の移入使役の計畫に先だち別に普通寺
停務收容所に收容中の停務の一部は既に労働に就役し
てあり、即ち去る一月十四日開設を見る普通寺停務收
容所に在りては豫而クア公島に於ける米玉人停務等約
四百五十餘名を收容し、内米玉人百五十名は去る六月九日
大阪に勿違、大阪市港區入備屋松之所市立運初場に
收容され、同月十二日以米港灣行役に就勞し居れり。

其の就役状況を概観するに一日八時間就働し主として
單調なる一般行役に従ひ能率的には輕量品の取扱に於て
本邦人に比し格別の差異なき実績を示し居れり、重量
物件の取扱乃至操術を要する作業に於ては能率極めて
低調なる状況あり。

而して其の賃金は大阪地區港灣運送業会行役統制

11.3

致に於て各利用業主より一日二円の単價に依り徴収、
 金額を軍納へ費、仔虜休養施設費、予防金及
 雜費等に振向けられ比較的低廉なる賃金は業者
 をして仔虜使用の利得を意識せしめ、倍々需要
 漸増の傾向を助長してあり。

敘上仔虜使用の結果日港灣仔役業界に對し、
 港灣仲仕の閑賃金印騰の抑制、作業能率の
 向上、常備仲仕の散逸防止等の効果を齎したり。

又高松市新港町四丁目三日本通運株式会社高松
 支店に於ては去る八月二十日より約一月間に亘り、戦時
 下物資輸送促進の爲善通寺仔虜牧畜所中の敵兵
 人仔虜一日二十名内外を高松駅構内に於て仔虜に使用
 し相當の効果を收めたり。

證明書

内務省
文書局 申 号
國際檢察部 申六六八号

典據及び公正に關する證明

668A

余、柴田小三郎、余が下記資格に於て、即ち内務事務官として、日本政府に公的関係にあること、証に該官吏として余が添附せしめし、(一)夏より成、十九百四十二年/昭和十七年/九月附、下記題名、即ち外事月報、文書、保管に任じ居ること、添附證明す。
余、更添附、記録及び文書が日本政府、公文書として、証に右下記名稱、省及部局、公式書類及び綴、一部として證明す。(若し、その綴番号又は引用、其他公式書類、綴に於て該文書、成現所在、公式名稱、モ特記スベシ)

内務省

十九百四十六年/昭和二十一年/十一月四日

東京に於て署名

当該官吏署名欄

右者、公的資格

證人

柴田小三郎

(印)

内務省警保局公才二課二級事務官

岡田政一

(印)

公式に關する證明

余、J.A. Curtis、余が聯合國最高指揮官司令部關係に在り、此れを証に上記題名、文書、余が公務上、日本政府、上記署名官吏、(一)今三月に於て、此れを添附證明す。

十九百四十六年/昭和二十一年/十一月四日

東京に於て署名

此署名欄

右者、公的資格

證人

J. A. Curtis Lt.

國際檢察部調査官

Richard H. Lash

706A-1

勞力不足の對策として俘虜を使用せんとする計畫

茲に軍關係作業區及港灣施設勞務者不足の緩和策として、在菩提寺俘虜收容所に收容中の米兵俘虜一五〇名を大阪に分遣勞役に服せしめたる所、兵の成績良好なるものありしに依り、豫てより勞力不足に悩みつゝありし東京、兵庫、福岡、長崎等の各府縣に於ける事業主方面に在りては直に對し俘虜の使用方懇請する所ありたり。即ち

(一) 兵庫縣下に在りては神戸港に於ける荷役業關係者及廣畑港日鐵荷役業關係者に於て俘虜六八〇名の使用方を軍に~~専中~~

(二) 福岡縣下に在りては門司港石炭荷役業關係者に於て俘虜使用の希望を有し、所轄門司警察署長に對し、之が幹施方願出たるが、更に之と別個に北九州に於ける港灣荷役作業の逼迫状況に鑑み、俘虜一、〇〇〇人を配置することに決定せり。

(三) 長崎縣下三菱造船所及香燒島造船所に在りては既に軍の認可を得三菱造船所二、〇〇〇人香燒島造船所一、〇〇〇人の俘虜を夫々配置せらるゝことに決定せり。

706A-2

(四)

警視廳管下に在りても芝浦に於ける貨物の積卸作業に従事せしむる爲既に俘虜使用の認可を爲、近く馬來方面より英兵俘虜四〇〇人が輸送せらるゝことと決定せり。

新しくして國內に於て虜役する之等俘虜に對する直接警戒及指導は總て擔當すると囀も、俘虜の虜役する地域の地方民に對する防禦兵の他に隨する指導取締は警察當然の任務と言ふことを爲べく、従て前記計畫にして實現したる場合に於ては關係方面と連絡の上適切なる指導取締を加ふるの要あり。

Doc 706A

證明書

ワシントン文書局第 號

國際檢察部 第七百六號

典據及公正證明

余柴田ト三郎 余が下記資格於テ即チ内務事務官トシテ日本政府ト公的関係ニ在ルモ、ナルト、茲ニ該官吏トシテ余が茲ニ添附セラレタル千九百四十二年/昭和十七年一月乃至十二月附、下記題名即チ特高日報ノ文書ノ保管ニ任シ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府公文書ナルト、茲ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ニ部局ノ公式書類及ビ綴、一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。
(右ノ下ニ綴番号又ハ引用、其レハ公式書類又ハ綴ニ於ケル該文書ノ正現所在ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 内務省
千九百四十六年/昭和二十一年十一月四日

東京ニ於テ署名

庶該官吏署名欄

此柴田ト三郎

右ノ者ノ公的資格

内務省警保局公安第三課
二級事務官

證

人

岡田政一 (岡田)

公式入手ニ關スル證明

余 J.A. Curtis ハ余ノ聯合國最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係ナルモ、ナルト、茲ニ上記題名ノ文書ハ余ガ公務上、日本政府、上記署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。
千九百四十六年/昭和二十一年十一月五日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏名欄

J.A. Curtis JAC

右ノ者ノ公的資格 國際檢察部調査官

證

人

Richard H. Lamm

Ex # 1973

Doc. No. 980A

page. 1

Riku-a-Mitsu-ju (Army-Asia Secret, Received) No. 1910
Received by the Army Secretariat - p.m., 4 March 1942
Military Affairs Section

1 March 1942, Secret Telegram -2-28
Sent: 1550 hours
Received: 1710 hours.

Cho-san-den (Operations Department - Korean Army) No. 518
Addressed to Vice Minister of War
From the Chief of Staff of the Korean Army

"As it would be very effective in stamping out the respect and admiration of the Korean people for Britain and America, and also in establishing in them a strong faith in victory, and as the Governor-General and the Army are both strongly desirous of it, we wish you would intern 1,000 British and 1,000 American prisoners of war in Korea. We wish you would give us special consideration regarding this matter.

.....Furthermore, the buildings that may be used for internment camps are two theological schools in Seoul and a Foreigner's School and a theological school in Heijo. Details will be concretely reported to you after we are informed of the intentions of the Central Authorities regarding internment of prisoners of war."

Receipt Number: Amitsu 1910
From: Korean Army
Subject: The internment of prisoners of War in Korea
Term of Preservation: Permanent
Approved by: The Minister of War
Executed by: KAWAHARA (Seal)

Draft of Vice-Minister's reply to the Chief of Staff of the Korean Army (Riku-a-Mitsu-den) (Army-Asia-Secret Telegram)

Subject: Internment of Prisoners of War referred to in Cho-San (Korean Army Operations Department) Telegram No. 518

"About 1,000 white men are scheduled to be sent to Fusan. Details will be reported to you later.

Furthermore, are not the buildings scheduled to be allotted for the accommodation of prisoners of war referred to in your telegram, too good for prisoners? Please draw up full plans after investigation and inform us."

Riku-a-Mitsu-den (Army-Asia-Secret-Tel) No. 149 376
5 March 1942.

Cho-San-Mitsu-475-Report regarding plans for the internment of prisoners of war in Korea.

From: Commander in Chief of the Korean Army, Seishiro ITAGAKI
To: Minister of War, Hideki TOJO
Date: 23 March 1942

Regarding the subject matter referred to in Riku-a-Mitsu-den (Army, Asia - Secret Telegram No. 149) dated 5 March 1942, I make report to you as per separate paper.

Plans of the Korean Army for the Internment of Prisoners of War

1. Purpose: It is our purpose by interning American and British prisoners of war in Korea, to make the Koreans realize positively the true might of our Empire as well as to contribute to psychological propoganda work for stamping out any ideas of worship of Europe and America which the greater part of Korea still retains at bottom.
2. The location and the number of men to be interned:
The first internment camp:
Location: Seoul (the former Iwamura Silk Reeling Warehouse will be reconstructed and extended)
Number of men to be interned: About 500.
The Second internment camp:
Location: Jinsen-fu (Military barracks)
Number of men to be interned: About 500.
Plans for equipping these camps will be submitted separately.
3. Supervision: Prisoner of war camps for Korea shall be supervised by the Commander in Chief of the Korean Army. The organs for the care of the internees shall be as provided separately.
4. Term of internment: From the time of the arrival of the prisoners of war up to the termination of the 'Greater East Asia War.

The main points to be put into force:

- (1) Prisoners of war, with the exception of warrant officers and above, will be used in various sorts of work in the principal cities of Korea, especially where psychological conditions are not good in order to achieve the ends mentioned under I.
- (2) The equipment of internment camps will be cut to the minimum necessary for insuring that daily life as a whole may be led without inconvenience.
- (3) Rations for the prisoners of war will be the same as that of the Japanese army, but at times they may be supplied with food which they are used to.
- (4) Internment, supervision and guarding of prisoners should be carried out so as to leave nothing to be desired.

NOTE: If the prisoners of war arrive before the above mentioned camps are completely equipped, they will temporarily be interned in the Fusan Military Barracks.

A-Mitsu (Asia-Secret) No. 1910 -Part II

Received: Army Secretariat-April 23, 1942
Received: War Prisoners Management Department - May 2, 1942 - Receipt No.31.1
Received: Military Affairs Section, War Ministry - April 23, 1942 -
Receipt No. 409
Received: Construction Section, War Ministry - April 27, 1942.

Secret Telegram: Sent: 1255 hours April 22
Received: 1345 hours, April 22

Cho-san-den (Korean Army Operational Section Telegram) No. 100

To: Vice Minister of War
Sender: Chief of Staff, Korean Army

We have received your telegram (ho-kan-den - War Prisoners Management Section Telegram) No. 3 dated April 21, to the effect that about 1,000 white prisoners of war are scheduled to be sent to Korea in the middle of June, and therefore request you to take the trouble of giving us permission immediately regarding that part of our plans for the internment of war prisoners submitted to the War Minister as per telegram (Cho-san-mitsu Korean Army Operations Department, Confidential) No. 485, dated 23 March.

Regarding details, the Chief of our Intendence Department has already filed application dated March 20.

NOTE: This matter has already been disposed of by the Distribution Section April 26.

A-Mitsu (Asia-Secret) No. 1910 -Part II

Received: Army Secretariat-April 23, 1942

Received: War Prisoners Management Department - May 2, 1942 - Receipt No.31.1

Received: Military Affairs Section, War Ministry - April 23, 1942 -
Receipt No. 409

Received: Construction Section, War Ministry - April 27, 1942.

Secret Telegram: Sent: 1255 hours April 22

Received: 1345 hours, April 22

Cho-san-den (Korean Army Operational Section Telegram) No. 100

To: Vice Minister of War

Sender: Chief of Staff, Korean Army

We have received your telegram (ho-kan-den - War Prisoners Management Section Telegram) No. 3 dated April 21, to the effect that about 1,000 white prisoners of war are scheduled to be sent to Korea in the middle of June, and therefore request you to take the trouble of giving us permission immediately regarding that part of our plans for the internment of war prisoners submitted to the War Minister as per telegram (Cho-san-mitsu Korean Army Operations Department, Confidential) No. 485, dated 23 March.

Regarding details, the Chief of our Intendence Department has already filed application dated March 20.

NOTE: This matter has already been disposed of by the Distribution Section April 26.

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 980-A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Kaneo Ishibashi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Corresponding Secretary, 1st Demobilization Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 15 pages, dated 23 March, 1942, and described as follows: Correspondence re sending American and British POW to Korea. I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): War Ministry

Signed at Tokyo on this

/s/ Kaneo Ishibashi
Signature of Official

3rd day of October, 1946

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Torakichi Nakamura

Corresponding Secretary
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, 2nd Lt. Eric W. Fleisher, O-935000, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher, 2nd Lt. AUS
NAME

3rd day of October, 1946.

Witness: /s/ Henry Shimajima

Investigation Division IPS
Official Capacity

No.

980-A

後 日 行 次 局 郵 長	庫 帶 長 (部) 司 整 備			川 原	決 行 指 定	大 臣	決 裁 指 定	永 久	保 各 期 間	政 務 官 兼 記 官
	長 課	長 課	長 課	參 本 田 中	大 臣 (署 名)			件 名	支 領 番 号	同 付 (決 行 前)
長 課	長 課	長 課	軍 務 佐 藤	長 課 務 主 武 藤	官 副 領 事 川 原	官 與 參 書 記 官	朝 鮮 二 保 衛 收 容 一 件			(決 行 後)
長 課	長 課	長 課	交 通 印	長 課 務 主 高 橋	副 官 務 真 木	員 課 務 主 印	起 算 期 (類 名)	審 判 官 審 記 者	審 判 官 審 記 者	陸 軍
長 課	長 課	長 課	大 臣 官 房 了 結 昭 和	大 臣 官 房 昭 和	領 事 官 房 昭 和	領 事 官 房 昭 和	朝 鮮 二 保 衛 收 容 一 件	審 判 官 審 記 者	審 判 官 審 記 者	陸 軍
長 課	長 課	長 課	昭 和 年 大 月 十 五 日	昭 和 年 三 月 四 日	昭 和 年 月 日	昭 和 年 月 日	單 爭 取 第 大 二 号	審 判 官 審 記 者	審 判 官 審 記 者	陸 軍

省 陸 軍 部
 昭 和 年 三 月 九 日
 陸 軍 部 印

980-A

次官ヨリ朝鮮軍參謀長へ回答案

(極重要電)

朝參電第五八號停齋收容、件白約一千
七釜山ニ送附セラルル等 時機其他細部ニ関スル
後報不

尚貴電ニ收容所豫定建物ニ停齋、取
扱上優遇ニ思科ルニテ別ニ研究上案ヲ具シ
報告セラル

印

極重要電四九

376 昭和拾七年癸月五日

印

No. 2

980-A

陸軍省
陸軍部第五九〇號

陸軍省
陸軍部第五九〇號

軍事課
昭 二七三一

秘電報 二六五五
朝參電第五八號

次官宛

朝鮮軍參謀長

半島人、英米崇敬觀念ヲ
確立セシム為頗ル有効ニシテ掃蕩必勝、信念ヲ
以テ付英米俘虜各一千名ヲ朝鮮ニ收容セシメ特
ニ配處スルヲ
且シテ收容所ニ充當スル建物、京城府、神學校ニ取
平壤府外人學校及神學校各一ヲ充當シ得ルニ
詳細、收容ニ關シ中央、意向承シテ上具件、的
申報スルニ

通電先陸參

(終)

No. 13

No. 4

980-A

再傳第九〇其

陸軍省
知照
1932
陸軍省
陸軍省

真

陸軍省
知照
1932
陸軍省
陸軍省

陸軍

極秘

朝鮮密案第七五号

朝鮮停戰收容計畫三関文件報告

昭和十七年三月二十三日

朝鮮軍司令部

板垣征四郎

朝鮮
軍司
令官

陸軍大臣 東條英機殿

昭和十七年三月五日陸軍密案第一九号三條心首題件別紙、直
報告

南方總軍司令部輸送計畫返電右

臨時編成案宛、下

980-A

極秘

一 部 內 務 部

漢

朝鮮軍俘虜收容計畫

一 目的

米英人俘虜之難於收容，朝鮮人對之帝國，果有親愛之認識，必不致於此。然朝鮮人大部，內心抱懷怨狀，崇拜觀念，極其不穩，思想宜備工作資，供之，不致在行。

二 收容人員 京城收容所 仁川收容所 臨時編成要領

三 收容所

位置

京城府

(元岩村製糸倉庫，增設菜園)

收容人員 約五〇〇人

四 收容所

位置

仁川府 (廠舍)

收容人員 約五〇人

五 收容所，地設計畫，分別提出。

No. 5

980-A

三. 管理

朝鮮之收容所(朝鮮軍司令部之管理)
收容所機關(別定之) (附錄)

四. 收容期間

俘虜到着之日(大東亞戰爭完了迄)

五. 實施要領

1. 目的(達成之) 爲(俘虜(准士官以上) 除) 以下
朝鮮主要都市(持) 人(少) 不良地(於) 各種作業(服) 也
2. 收容所(諸施設) 一般(起居(是) 是(十) 最少限(程度) 設備)
3. 給養(日本軍政(是) 是(主) 部(慣) 用(食) 支(給) 以下)
4. 俘虜(收容) 取締(警戒) (或) 三(萬) 遺(憾) 十(年) 期(不)

備考

前記收容所諸施設整備前(俘虜) 到着之日(場合) (一時)
釜山(廠舍) (收容)

No. 6

No. 7

陸軍部

陸軍省

陸軍省

陸軍省

980.A

秘電報 四月二日 三時五五分

秘電報 四月二日 三時五五分
三時四十分

朝鮮參電第(00号)

次官宛 電信者 朝鮮軍參謀長

四月二十日附伊密電本三三三號以白人俘虜約千名
大月中旬朝鮮三輸送、豫定北官入電、以之於三月
二十日附朝鮮參電本四七五号以大臣宛報告、當該
俘虜收容計畫中收容所、按設計畫、肉之至
急認可并配慮之更細部、因於三月二十日附當軍
經理部長三川申請案

本件、建議課、於處理之

2/4 (印)

終

昭和昭
17.4.23
陸軍省
秘電報

真本

那須

陸軍省
秘電報
昭和昭
17.5.2和
和31.1号

陸軍省
17.4.23
40P
留書課

陸軍省
17.4.27
建議課

980A ref-1

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 第 號
國 際 檢 察 部 第 第 號

典據及び公正ニシテ證明

余、石橋兼雄ハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ第一復員局文書課課員トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係ニ在ルモノナルコト、竝ニ該官更トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラレタル、一ツ頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四十二年ノ昭和十七年ノ三月二十三日附、下記屬名即チ朝鮮俘虜收容計畫ニ關スル件報告ノ文書ノ保管ニ任ジ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及び文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書ナルコト、竝ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式書類及び竝ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラバ綴符號又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ竝ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所在ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 陸 軍 省

980A cert. 2

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 十月三日

東京ニ於テ署名

當該官吏署名權 石 橋 兼 雄

右ノ者ノ公的資格 第一復員局文書課課員

證 人 中 村 寅 雄

公式入手ニ關スル證明

余、2d Lt Eric W. Fishers 余方聯合國最高指揮官
總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、即ニ上記題名ノ
文書ハ余ガ公務上、日本政府ノ上記署名官吏ヨリ入
手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 十月三日

ニ於テ署名

氏 名 權 Eric W. Fishers 2d. Lt. AUS

右ノ者ノ公的資格 Investigator IPS

證 人 Henry Shimajima

Ex # 1474

Doc. No. 977A

Page 1

In regard to the delivery of prisoners of war to the Formosan Army and the Korean Army, Receipt No. Rikua Mitsu Uke No. 4502, Originating Section, War Affairs Section (of Military Affairs Bureau) to the Commander in Chief of the Southern Area Army.

Draft of Notice to the Commander in Chief of
the Southern Area Army - Rikua Mitsuden No.
481 - 16 May 1942

Between May and August the white prisoners of war at Singapore should be handed over as follows:

1. About 2,400 prisoners of war should be handed over at Tokyo to the Formosan Army. The following prisoners should be handed over:

High ranking officers whom it is not suitable to keep locally.
Skilled technicians who are not needed locally,
Ordinary troops and some low ranking officers to supervise them.

2. About 1,100 prisoners of war should be handed over at Fusan to the Korean Army. The following prisoners should be handed over:

Ordinary troops and some low ranking officers to supervise them.

With respect to their transportation, consult with the Commander of Shipping Transportation who has been confidentially notified already.

(Translator's Note: - The above bears seal of Vice-Minister of War KIMURA, among others).

Draft of Notice to the Commanders in Chief of
the Formosan Army and the Korean Army, Rikua
Mitsu No. 1631, 16 May 1942

Between May and August you will receive the following white prisoners of war now interned at Singapore.

The organization of the prisoner of war camps will be decreed shortly. We shall, accordingly, give you separate instructions regarding their internment.

Particulars

To the Formosan Army - about 2,400

To the Korean Army - about 1,100

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____
I.P.S. No. 977

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Kento Ishibashi hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Corresponding Secretary 1st Demobilization and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of _____ pages, dated _____, 19____, and described as follows: Miscellaneous documents concerning prisoners of war. I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): 1st Demobilization (Former War Ministry).

Signed at Tokyo on this
23 day of Aug., 1946.

/s/ Kento Ishibashi
Signature of Official
SEAL

Witness: Shinji Kobayashi

Corresponding Secretary
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, Richard F. Larsh, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
23 day of Aug., 1946

/s/ Richard F. Larsh
NAME

Witness: /s/ J. A. Curtis 2d Lt. M.I.

Investigator
Official Capacity

No. 1

Dec

979A

1978

政務處 參與會同付決 以前 後 課程名

本行(送) 閱覽課名

陸軍部 11.5.12 建設司

房店臣大			課局務主	
了話	領受	出提	領受	號番
昭	昭	昭	昭	軍事力第三
和	和	和	和	
三	五	日	日	
日	日	日	日	
房店臣大			課局務主	
了話	領受	出提	領受	號番
昭	昭	昭	昭	軍事力第三
和	和	和	和	
三	五	日	日	
日	日	日	日	

第一頁

次官 主任 主任

局長	主任	高被	書記官
課長	主任	高被	書記官
課長	主任	高被	書記官
課長	主任	高被	書記官

件名 台灣及朝鮮軍二停序引渡件

受領 番號 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部 陸軍部

FILE COPY RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 977A

南方軍總司令部(陸軍部)
 五月及至六月間二於于昭南島(白人俘虜于在)如引
 渡又三
 一約三四〇〇名于高雄二於于台灣軍(本俘虜八現地二
 量及于高七九高級將校現地三於于不魯(及八慢未報
 術道及二般兵及之方取締二任若干(下級將校上文)
 二約二〇〇名于釜山三於于朝鮮軍(本俘虜八般兵
 及之方取締二任若干(下級將校上文)
 輸送間三人船船輸送司令部上協議之(同官二
 內示所

(上)

陸軍部

昭和七年三月六日

(原)

台灣軍 朝鮮軍司令部(陸軍部)
 (陸軍部)

昭南島三於于山白人俘虜于五月及至六月間三於于在
 如引受領又三
 俘虜收容所編成二於于命令七九二行收容三間三
 下人別二示不

左記

台灣 八
 朝鮮 八

約二四〇〇
 約二〇〇〇

陸軍部第一三號 昭和七年五月五日

(原)

No. 2

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文芸局 第 一 號

國 際 文 藝 家 部 第 九 七 七 號

977-1

真 據 及 び 公 正 ニ 關 ス ル 證 明

余、石橋兼雄ハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ第一
 復員局ノ通信書記トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係
 ニ在ルモノナルコト、並ニ該管吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ
 添附セラレタル、下記題名即チ停務ニ關スル雜書
 類ノ文書ノ保管ニ在リ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。
 余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書
 ナルコト、並ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式
 書類及ビ綴ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラハ
 該書類又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ綴ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所
 在ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 第一復員局ノ(省陸軍省)

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ八月廿三日

東京ニ於テ署名

管該管吏署名 石橋兼雄ノ印ノ

右ノ者ノ公的資格 通信書記

證 人 小林品次ノ印ノ

977-2-

公式入手ニシテスル證明

余、リチャード・エイチ・ラーシュ/RICHARD H. LARSH
ハ、余が聯合國最高指揮官司令部ニ關係アルモ
ノナルコト、茲ニ上記題名ノ文書ハ余が公榜上、
日本政府ノ上記署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナル
コトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ八月廿三日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏名 備考
右ノ者ノ公的資格
証人

リチャード・エイチ・ラーシュ
/RICHARD H. LARSH/
副長官
ジニー・エイ・カーティス
/J. A. CURTIS/

REPORT FROM CHIEF OF STAFF, KOREAN ARMY, 1942

Strictly Confidential

Riku-a-Mitsu ju (Army-Asia Confidential, received) No. 10133.

Received: Army Secretariat, a.m., 18 August 1942.

Received: Army Service Section, War Ministry, 20 August 1942, Receipt No. 629.

Received: Military Affairs Section, War Ministry, 19 August 1942, Receipt No. 1042.

Received: Information Department, War Ministry, 22 August 1942, Receipt No. 454.

Received: War Prisoners Supervision Department, 27 August 1942.

Cho-san-Mitsu (Korean Army Operations Department) No. 2029

Subject: Reactions Among the general public following internment of British prisoners of war.

From: Chief of Staff of the Korean Army, IBARA, Junjiro - 13 August 1942.

To: Vice-Minister of War, KIMURA, Hyotaro.

Subject matter submitted as per separate sheets.

Submitted to: Army General Staff Headquarters and the War Ministry (Two copies respectively)

Reactions Among the General Public Following Internment of British Prisoners of War

1. The General View

The arrival of 998 prisoners captured in Malaya had so great an effect upon the people in general, especially upon the Koreans, that about 120,000 Koreans and 57,000 Japanese by-standers lined the roads of Pusan, Seoul and Jinsen to see the prisoners of war being transported.

Many of them sneered at the disgraceful behavior and utter indifference of the British displayed before their very eyes by the prisoners and thought it quite natural that an army so lacking in patriotism should be defeated by the Imperial Army, and realized afresh the victory gained by the Imperial Army. They also expressed their feeling that any ideas of admiration for the British and Americans must be thoroughly swept away. Many of them confessed their happiness of being subjects of the Empire and expressed their resolve to carry through the Greater East Asia War.

Worthy of special mention is the fact that the Koreans clearly recognized the fact that they are directly participating in the Greater East Asia War when they saw the Korean guards. As a whole, it seems that the idea was very successful in driving all admiration for the British and Americans out of their minds and in driving into them an understanding of the situation.

The most conspicuous part of their speech and actions were as follows, and, as the effect of propaganda gradually tells upon them when the prisoners are put to labor, we may expect much greater results which will contribute greatly toward ruling Korea.

NOTE: For the time being reports, etc. concerning the prisoners of war will not be permitted for publication in newspapers in accordance with the policies of the central authorities.

2. Speech and Actions of the By-standers which were most conspicuous:

(1) The Koreans:

- a. "When I saw young Korean soldiers, members of the Imperial Army, guarding the prisoners, I shed tears of joy. -I was so moved by the sight that I almost felt like shouting to those who were not aware of the fact: 'Look! Peninsula Youths are guarding the British prisoners!'"
- b. "Although those who are concerned with Christianity have not been able to drive out completely their admiration for foreign ideas due to the fact that their leaders have been British or Americans, yet when they saw the prisoners they felt pride in being Japanese and were strongly moved by the idea that they must establish a Japanese Christianity"
- c. "We must not be defeated; even if we have to live on water. When I saw the prisoners, I felt happiness and pride in being a Japanese"
- d. "It seems like a dream to see the British and Americans, who used to make light of us and thought us an inferior people, as prisoners. Koreans, too, have felt pride in being Japanese. Their feelings have completely changed."

- e. "It is easy to see that they lack patriotism just by watching them whistling so indifferently. They are absolutely slovenly."
- f. "When we look at their frail and unsteady appearance, it is no wonder that they lost to the Japanese forces."
- g. "When I saw the prisoners right in front of my eyes, I felt that we must win the war. Instead of sneering at them, we should be making more effort ourselves."
- h. "I used hear about and see the victories gained by the Imperial Forces through the newspapers and newsreels, but with some feeling of doubt. When I saw the prisoners I realized that the reports were not false."
- i. "I wish every Korean were given the opportunity to see the prisoners so that can really feel the happiness of being a Japanese"
- j. "The war is being prolonged on their account. They should be worked to death."
- k. "Thanks to our soldiers we are able to lead life so leisurely compared to the wretched state of the prisoners."

(2) The Japanese:

- a. "Their spiritual state is pitiful. They feel no shame in being exposed to public show. Nothing is more pitiful to see than a people with no sense of shame"
- b. "When we observe the disgraceful behavior of the prisoners we feel keenly the happiness of being a Japanese and also that we must win the war. We should not complain of such trifles as shortage of goods."
- c. "We can still find something arrogant in their attitude. We must treat them with the firmness of a victorious nation."
- d. "Some of the Koreans entertained misgivings regarding the true might as well as the victories of our Empire, but they can have no such doubts now after they have seen the defeated prisoners."

- e. "We can never afford to be defeated. We must fight to victory. We shall fight to the last"

(3) The Chinese:

- a. "When I actually saw the true might of Japan, my confidence in her became greater. Thanks to Japan we are able to get along comfortably and engage in our business peacefully."
- b. "The miserable figures of the prisoners themselves symbolize the fall of Britain. We Chinese should place further confidence in Japan and work harder to set up a new East Asia."

(4) The French:

- a. "It makes us feel ashamed to see the prisoners being sent to Korea, for they are westerners, the same as us. Japan's might is truly astonishing:"
- b. "If there are any among them from the British Isles, I believe they must be ashamed of themselves. I feel sorry for them."

(5) The Germans:

- a. "We have been returning inhumanity for British and American inhumanity thus far. We hope you will be cruel to them."

(6) The White Russians:

- a. "They whistle and don't seem to care a bit. It seems that being a prisoner of war is no disgrace to them. The clothes that they wear are ragged and not uniform and their physique is poor. That is why they are losing the war."

3. The Speech and Actions of the Prisoners.

It looks as though they have all resigned themselves to fate. They are as a whole submissive. They observe the rules and regulations well and are grateful for the fair treatment they are receiving in the hands of the Japanese Army. Some of them are astonished at the superiority of the Japanese forces.

Immediately after arrival, we succeeded in making them all take oath. But for all that, we can still see arrogance in their attitude and some of them openly say that final victory remains with Britain. Some of them make a show of themselves by claiming that being a prisoner is an honor which a subject can do to his fatherland. All of them believe that the United States will help them gain final victory. Unaware of the great victories of the Imperial Forces, they blindly believe in the material power of the United States and from the bottom of their hearts they are waiting for the victory of their fatherland.

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 650-A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Kameo Ishibashi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Corresponding Secretary 1st Demobilization Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 8 pages, dated 13 October, 1942, and described as follows: Report from Chief of Staff of the Korean Army - 1942. I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): War Ministry.

Signed at Tokyo on this

/s/ Kameo Ishibashi
Signature of Official

3rd day of October, 1946.

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Torakichi Nakamura

Corresponding Secretary
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, 2nd Lt. Eric W. Fleisher, C-935000, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher, 2nd Lt. AUS
NAME

3rd day of October, 1946.

Witness: /s/ Henry Shimajima

Investigation Division IPS
Official Capacity

（第二卷） 醫學博士 藤田 先 參 藤田 先 參 藤田 先 參

首題ノ付別紙ノ通達出

醫學博士 藤田 先 參 藤田 先 參

昭和十七年七月十三日 藤田 先 參 藤田 先 參

「差入核國政ニ付テハ一審見察ノ體例ヲ」

朝野新聞 第二〇二九號

藤田 先 參

650A-1

英人停屍收葬ニ件ノ一 韓民殺ノ因難

馬 來 半 島

者多ク韓ニ朝鮮人ノ聖觀員ヲ遣シテ直ニ接大東亞國
 臣民々々ハ幸福トナシテ大東亞國ノ運命ヲ完テ遂メテ
 崇拜思慕ヲ一掃テサリテ皇族トシテ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保
 入ルニ當リテ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保
 ヲ嚮テ笑ハシメテ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保
 停尸ヲ運ビテ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保
 朝鮮人約十餘萬ニ及テシテ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保
 ノ道中ニ於テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保
 特ニ朝鮮人及テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保
 馬來半島ニ於テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保テ皇族ノ尊嚴ヲ保

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

650A-2-

學ニ參照シツ、アルコトヲ防礙ニ觀望スルニ至リ
 タルハ特記スヘク一般ニ米英暴行恩惠ノ一掃ト時
 局認識ノ差違ヲ察スル上ニ於テ多大ノ差異ヲ收メ
 タルカ如ク其ノ主ナル言辭左ノ如クニシテ將來停
 止ノ差違ヲ他ヲ通シテ行ハレル宣稱致果ノ逐次
 滲透スルニ從ヒ其ノ結果益々大ナルヲ厚ハシメ朝
 鮮統治ニ利益スル處程メテスナルモノト觀メラル
 註 營分ノ隨中央部ノ方針ニ從ヒ停廢ニ置スル
 新舊發表等ハ行ハス

ニ 主ナル言辭

一 倭人側

- ◎ 半島青年カ暴行ノ一員トシテ停廢ノ監視ヲシ
 テキルノヲ見タトキ涙ガ出ル程難シカツタ、
 之ヲ知ラナイ人々ニ「見ロ、半島ノ青年カ英
 團人停廢ヲ監視シテ居ルテハナイカ」ト大聲
 ヲ擧ケテ知ラシテヤリタイ衝動ニ驅ラレタ
- ◎ 差管機關係者ハ英米人ヨリ指導ヲ受ケタ關係
 上拜外恩惠カ茲ケ切ラナカツタガ停廢ヲ見タ
 時日本人ノ諺ト日本差管機ノ確立ヲセナケレ
 バナラヌト惡ク示威ヲ受ケタ
- ◎ 取學ニハ水ヲ呑ンテモ飲ケテハナラヌ停廢ヲ
 見テ日本人ノ奇難サト諺リタリ自覺シタ
- ◎ 我等ヲ下等人トシテ罵詈ニシテ居タ英米人ヲ

650A-3

俘虜トシテ昇ルノハ夢ノ様ダ半島人モ日本人

トシテノ誇リヲ感シ之テ氣持モ一様シタ

◎口笛ナンカ吹イテ平氣テキルノヲ見テモ國家

觀念ニ乏シイ事ガ分ル、益クダラシガナイモ

ノダ

◎了ノ力ノナイヒヨロヒヨロシタ様子ヲ見レハ

日本軍ニ感レルノハ無理モナイ

◎俘虜ヲ目前ニ見テ戦争ニハ必ス感タネハナラ

スト感シタ彼等ヲ嘲ル前ニ我々ハモツト頭張

ラネハナラス

◎今迄新聞ヤ映畫テ皇軍ノ戰果ヲ見聞シナカラ

多少ノ疑點ヲ抱イタガ俘虜ヲ見テ報道ノ嘘テ

ナイコトカ解ツタ

◎日本人タルノ幸福ヲ痛感セシムル爲朝僱人並

部ニ俘虜ヲ見セテヤリタイ

◎烈等ノ爲ニ戦争カ長ヒクノタカラ死ス程働カ

セテヤレ

◎俘虜ノ憐レナ有様ニ感ヘテ我々が呑氣ニ暮シ

テ行ケルノモ益ク兵隊サンノホ鬱ダ

2 内地人側

◎見世様ニナリ年ヲ平氣テ歩イテ居ル彼等ノ心

情ハ憐レナモノダ恥ヲ知ラナイ國民程慘メナ

モノハナイ

650A-4

◎管見ノ陸軍ヲ見ルト日本國民タルノ存続サト

以學ニハ必ス慮ヲホナラヌト云フ事ガ痛感

セラレ物質不足位ニ不平ヲ云フ事ハ出来ヌ

◎彼等ノ態度ニハ矢張り賠償ナ所ガ算ハレル

我等ハ取勝國民トシテ毅然タル態度ヲ以テ彼

等ニ對セホアラヌ

◎朝鮮人ノ一部ニハ帝國ノ實力ト戦兵ニ疑念ヲ

抱クモノモアツタカ目前ニ悲惨ノ停戦ヲ見テ

ハ信ゼサルヲ得ナイデアロウ

◎敗戦ニハ決シテ屈ケテハナラナイ、何處迄モ

勝算カナケレハナラヌ我後進頑強ルソ

3 中國人

◎日本ノ敗北ナル實力ヲ我等ニ見テ一層信好ノ念

ヲ深メタ、自分等ハ日本ノ御座テ安居樂業ス

ルコトガ出来感誠ニ堪ヘナイ

◎見奪ラシイ停戦ノ姿コソ漫然シツ、アル英團

ノ姿ダ、中國人ハ日本ヲ信好シ一層新東京ノ

建議ニ努力シタイ

4 倭國人

◎停戦ノ來鐘ハ同シ西洋人ノコト、テ恥カシイ

コトダ、日本ノ實力ハ強クノ外ハナイ

◎停戦中ニ英本國兵カ居レハ恥カシイダロウ

氣ノ毒ナコトダ

650A-5

5 獨逸人

◎ 英米ノ非人逮捕リニハ吾々モ非人遣ラ以テ報
ヒテホタ、ウント辱待シテ賞ヒケイ

6 樹系露人

◎ 俘虜ハ口笛ヲ吹イテ香氣オモノダ
不名譽ト思ハヌラシイ、服裝モ匪々テ貧弱ダ
之ダカラ戰爭ニ預ケル

三 俘虜ノ言動

俘虜ハ何レモ誇耀シアルモノノ如ク一殺ニ從順ニ
シテ規律ヲ守リ日本軍ノ公正ナル取扱ニ感謝シ或
ハ皇軍ノ優秀ナルヲ讃嘆シアリテ到着直後ニ行へ
ル宣聲ハ全員之ヲ實施シ得タルモ其ノ反面尙驕慢
ナル態度ヲ窺知セラレ我國ヲ劣等視シテ最後ノ勝
利ハ我等英國ニアリト公言スル者、或ハ俘虜タル
ハ祖國ニ對スル國民ノ名譽ナリト虚勢ヲ張ル者等
アリテ何レモ英艦ハ米國ノ支援ニ依リテ最後ノ勝
利ヲ得ルト爲シ米國ノ斂費力ヲ盲信シ未タ皇軍大
捷ノ事實ヲ知ラズ只吾祖國ノ勝利ニ絶大ノ期待ヲ
接ケアル狀況ナリ

650A cert-1

証 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 號
日 除 總 察 部 第 號

共 據 及 び 公 正 に 由 り 証 明

余、石橋兼雄ハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ第一復員局文書課々員トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係ニ在ルモノナルコト、故ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラレタル、八頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四十二年ノ昭和十七年ノ十月十三日附、下記題名、即チ「英人俘虜收容ニ伴フ一般民衆ノ反響」提出ノ件ノ文書ノ保管ニ任ジ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ又書ガ日本政府ノ公文書ナルコト、故ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ハ郵局ノ公式書類及ビ綴ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラハ綴發號又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ綴ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所在ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ)

陸 軍 省

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ十月三日

東京ニ於テ書名

當該官吏署名 石 橋 兼 雄
右ノ省ノ公的資格 第一復員局文書課 々員
證 人 中 村 實 吉

650A cert-2

公式入手ニ關スル證明

余、2d. LT. ERIC W. FLEISHER ハ、余ガ聯合國
最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、茲
ニ上記題名ノ文書ハ余ガ公務上、日本政府ノ上記
署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明
ス。

千九百四十六年ノ昭和二十一年ノ十月三日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏名 福 ERIC W. FLEISHER 2d. LT. AUS

右ノ者ノ公的發給

INVESTIGATOR I. P. S.

證 人

HENRY SEIJIMA

INVESTIGATOR

EX 1976

Page 1.

Very	Received	Army Asiatic Bureau Confidential Receipt
Secret	By the War Ministry	(RIKUMITSU) Asia Army Confidential No. 8593

War Ministry
Shown
September 9, 1942
a.m.
Secretariat

TADA

War Ministry
September 9, 1942
#896
War Affairs Section

MILITARY Korea General Staff Confidential
No. 1787

MAKI

/illegible/

Report of the Regulations concerning
the prisoner of war internment camps
in Korea.

Control Section
of POW

September 4, 1942

SAITO

Commander of Korean Army ITAGAKI
Seishiro

Commander of
Korea Army

Minister of War

September 14

TOJO, Hideki, Esq.

War Ministry
September 10, 1942
No.
Control Section
of POW

Doc. No. 979A

KOREAN ARMY, GENERAL STAFF OFFICE, SECRET ORDER NO. 1787

Subject: Report of the Provisions in Regards to the Korean POW Internment Camps.

Date : 4 September 1942

From : Seishiro ITAGAKI, Korean Army Commander

To : Hideki TOJO, War Minister

(I) wish to report the following provisions as mentioned above:

Service Regulations of the POW Internment Camps in Korea
Control Regulations of the POW Internment Camps in Korea
Labor Provisions of the POW in Korea

(Secret) Labor Provisions for the Korean POW.

September 1, 1942, Korean Army Headquarters

- Art I. The labor of PWs shall be according to not only the labor regulations for POW, treatment regulations for POW, detailed regulations of the same, and supply regulations for POW, but also the present provisions.
- Art II. Not one POW must be left to time in idleness. Allow appropriate labor according to their skill, age, and physical strength, thereby using them in industrial development and military labor.
- Art III All POW including officers shall work. But guide those above warrant officers according to status, ability, and physical strength to work voluntarily on the following:
1. Labor using engineering and science
 2. Agriculture
 3. Breeding of live-stock and poultry
 4. Supervision of laboring POW
 5. The narration of war history material
 6. Propaganda
 7. Other types of work recognized suitable
- Art IV The types of labor to be allotted to POW are to be decided according to the situation, but the following are recognized as suitable:
- 1 Agriculture

KOREAN ARMY, GENERAL STAFF OFFICE, SECRET ORDER NO. 1787

Subject: Report of the Provisions in Regards to the Korean POW Internment Camps.

Date : 4 September 1942

From : Seishiro ITAGAKI, Korean Army Commander

To : Hideki TOJO, War Minister

(I) wish to report the following provisions as mentioned above:

Service Regulations of the POW Internment Camps in Korea
Control Regulations of the POW Internment Camps in Korea
Labor Provisions of the POW in Korea

(Secret) Labor Provisions for the Korean POW.

September 1, 1942, Korean Army Headquarters

- Art I. The labor of PWs shall be according to not only the labor regulations for POW, treatment regulations for POW, detailed regulations of the same, and supply regulations for POW, but also the present provisions.
- Art II. Not one POW must be left to time in idleness. Allow appropriate labor according to their skill, age, and physical strength, thereby using them in industrial development and military labor.
- Art III All POW including officers shall work. But guide those above warrant officers according to status, ability, and physical strength to work voluntarily on the following:
1. Labor using engineering and science
 2. Agriculture
 3. Breeding of live-stock and poultry
 4. Supervision of laboring POW
 5. The narration of war history material
 6. Propaganda
 7. Other types of work recognized suitable
- Art IV The types of labor to be allotted to POW are to be decided according to the situation, but the following are recognized as suitable:
- 1 Agriculture

2. Engineering (the repair and construction of roads, railroads, harbors, rivers, and labor on air fields).
3. Mining. The development labor of other materials.
4. The collecting of materials (including scrap iron), hauling labor and other communications works.

- Art V POW may be used for guarding and other purposes when the burden of the military is lessened.
- Art VI Together with avoiding secret work for the labor of the POW, it is important to guard against destruction by the POW. If necessary make them give an oath and establish severe penalties.
- Art VII When government offices, public organizations, and companies wish to use the labor of the POW, applications stating type of labor, place, time and wages shall be made to the Army Commander.
- Art VIII The enforcement of labor of POW, except those specially designated, shall be according to the plan of the Army Commander. Labor within the camp shall be enforced according to the discretions of the Camp Commander.
- Art IX When it is necessary to station POW to be used for labor for quite a long time outside the internment camp, a temporary labor branch station shall be established. Its organization shall be designated as circumstances require.
- Art X When transportation is necessary to use prisoners for labor, it shall be according to military transportation.
- Art XI When POW are to work outside the area of the internment camp, the Camp Commander shall notify the Military Police (Kempei-Tai) and police station, if necessary confer with the district administrative offices, and execute necessary measures from control standpoint of the people of the district.
- Art XII In the case of the above the Camp Commander shall decide the direct control and guarding of the POW. When, for control and guarding, personnel other than the members and guards of the camp are found necessary, report to the Army Commander and receive instructions. But as to guarding during transportation and when labor branch stations are established, instructions will be given as circumstances require.
- Art XIII The tools and materials to be used for work shall be prepared by the employers.

/
Art XIV

- Art XIV The Camp Commander shall provide for items in regard to the labor, guarding and controlling, and other necessary details of the PCW upon conferring with the employers and according to the PCW labor plan received from the Army Commander, and also shall enforce this strictly and securely.
- Art XV In the work of the POW organize operation units and appoint an able instructor, and endeavor in all ways in the elevation of efficiency. It is essential that the work does not become a formality. Therefore, necessary tools and work clothes (to spare their everyday clothes) may be made available.
- Art XVI In order to utilize the PCW skill to the advantage, it is necessary that a detailed investigation of their skill be conducted within the camp.
- Art XVII No wages need to be paid for labor in regards to the control, keeping in order, and preserving of the camp.
- Art XVIII The labor of POW of public organizations and companies shall be according to the following.
1. The employer shall receive supervision from the Army Commander only in regards to POW laborers.
 2. The employer shall formulate PCW working regulations and receive the approval of the Army Commander, in the case of revision the same is applicable.
 3. When the Army Commander deems it necessary, he may order the employers to revise the PCW working regulations.
 4. The employer shall work the POW according to working regulations, in this case the guarding of the POW shall be the responsibility of the Camp Commander, the inspection and instruction of the work shall be conducted by the employer.
 5. The employer shall formulate, corresponding to POW supply regulations, (Feb. 20, 1942, Army Notification No. 8) wage regulations and standing regulations for raise in wages, submit them to the Army Commander and receive the approval of the War Minister. In case of revision the above shall be applicable.
 6. In case of necessity the Army Commander may order the employer to change the wage regulations and standing regulations for raise in wages.

7. When Army Commander deems it necessary he may order the employer in regard to the wages and the payment in kind to the POW.
8. Measures shall be taken without any slip in regards to items which require consideration from the espionage standpoint by mutual consent of the employer and camp commander. The items decided upon shall receive the approval of the Army Commander.

Art XIX The receipts, disbursements and safekeeping of the wages and profits obtained from other labors of the POWs shall be according to the "PCW Labor Regulations" and "Korean POW Internment Camp Control Regulations," and shall be handled by the accounting official of the internment camp.

Art XX The cost of treatment in the case POWs are injured or become ill because of work shall be sustained by the employer.

Art XXI When the labor of the POWs is terminated or when the same is of a long length of time, the camp commander shall make a report at the end of each month on the situation of the labor of the POW to the Army Commander.

The items to be reported are approximately the following:

1. The outline of the enforcement of labor.
2. The main points and cause of the same between the plan and enforcement which proved contrary to expectations.
3. The extent of diligence of the POW (the progress of work).
4. The psychological tendency of the POW.
5. The difficulties of control and guarding.
6. The situation of health and hygiene.
7. The influence on the people of the district.
8. Items of liaison between the military police and district authorities.
9. Opinions for the future.

Art XXII The treatment, supply (food) and housing of the POW shall be appropriate to cultivation and maintenance of labor power.

Art XXIII Although the required clothing and quarters of the POW shall be prepared by the Army, according to the circumstances, the employer may have to take suitable measures. In either case the working clothes shall be prepared by the employer.

END

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 9795A

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Kaneo Ishibashi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Corresponding Secretary, 1st Demobilization Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 14 pages, dated 4 September 1942, and described as follows: Korean POW Regulations Reported by ITAGAKI to TOJO. I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): War Ministry.

Signed at Tokyo on this

3rd day of October, 1946.

/s/ Kaneo Ishibashi
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Torakichi Nakamura

Corresponding Secretary
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, 2nd Lt. Eric W. Fleisher, O-933000, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

3rd day of October, 1946.

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher, 2nd Lt. AUS
NAME

Investigation Division, IPS
Official Capacity

Witness: Henry Shimajima

979A

密

極 秘 陸軍省 陸 亞密送(五九三)号

朝鮮密案二七八七号

真木

多田

陸軍省 昭和十七年九月四日 大官 官

朝鮮密案 068 56.41 陸軍省

朝鮮俘虜收容所面入諸規定、件報告

軍事

昭和十七年九月四日 朝鮮軍司令官 板垣 征四郎

印

朝鮮 軍司令官

陸軍

陸軍大臣 東條 英機 殿

密接

首題二面入諸規則左記、(一)列冊、通規定七之三付報告(通報)

六〇一

左記

朝鮮俘虜收容所服務規則

同

取締規則

九月十四日

朝鮮俘虜勞務規定則

陸軍省 昭和十七年九月十日 朝鮮 軍司令官

FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

NO /

979A

極 秘

昭和十七年九月一日
朝鮮軍司令部

多田

印

朝鮮保衛隊役規定

印

NO

979A

朝鮮俘虜勞役規定、作違

朝鮮俘虜勞役規定本冊、通定ム

昭和十七年九月一日

朝鮮軍司令部官板垣征四郎

朝鮮俘虜勞役規定

本條 俘虜、勞役ハ俘虜勞役規則俘虜取扱規則、全細則俘虜給與規則ニ依ル、外本規定ニ依ルモノトス

亦二條 俘虜ハ一人ト雖モ無爲促食セシムベカラズ、其技能年齢体力等ニ応ジ適當ナル勞務ヲ課シテ其力を生盡シ充テ軍事上ノ勞務ニ使用スルモノトス

亦三條 俘虜ハ將校以下全員ヲ勞務ニ就カシムルモノトス但シ准士官上ノ者ニ在リテ其ノ身ハ職務及体力等ニ応ジ自來的ニ在リ如キ勞役ニ服セシムル如ク指導スルモノトス

163

919A

- (イ) 技術、學術等ヲ利用スル諸勞務
- (ロ) 農業
- (ハ) 家畜家禽等ノ飼養
- (ニ) 一般勞務伴屬ノ監督
- (ホ) 戰史資料等ノ記述
- (ヘ) 宣傳業務
- (ト) 其他適當ト認ムル勞務

第四條 伴屬ニ課スベキ勞役ノ種類、實情ニ即チ選定スベキモ一般ニ適當ト認メラル、モノ左ノ如シ

- (イ) 農業
- (ロ) 土木道路、鐵道、港灣、河川ノ新築改修、飛行場等ノ諸作業等
- (ハ) 採鋸、其他資源ノ採掘作業等
- (ニ) 物資(屑鐵等ヲ含ム)、蒐集、荷役等兵站關係ノ勞務

164

第五條 伴屬ヲ警備其ノ他軍ノ負擔輕減ノ爲メ利用シ得ル場合ハ之ヲ使用スルコトヲ得

第六條 伴屬ノ勞役ニ方リテ、機密ニ互ル作業ヲ

避ケルニ其ニ停務ニヨリ破壊ヲ警戒スルコト緊要ナ
リ、之ガ爲メ要スル宣揚ヲナシテ之ヲ嚴重ニ訓則ヲ設

ケルヲ可トス

979A

亦七條 官衙、公共團體及会社等ニ于テ停務ヲ勞
役ニ使用セシムルニ其ノ勞務ノ種類、場所、時間及賃
銀等ヲ具テ軍司令官ニ願出テ之ヲモトス

亦八條 停務ノ勞役實施ハ特ニ定ムル外軍司令官ノ
計畫ニ基キ實施スルコト又所内ノ勞役ニ關シテ
ハ適宜所長ニ於テ實施スルコトヲ得

亦九條 勞役ニ使用スル停務ヲ相當期間停務收容
所以外ノ地ニ駐留セシムルコトヲ要スル場合ニ於テハ該地ニ
臨時勞務分遣所ヲ設ルニ其ノ編成ハ臨時

指示ス

亦十條 停務ヲ勞役ニ使用スル爲メ輸送ヲ必要トスルニ
軍隊輸送ニ準ルニモトス

No 5

亦十一條 停務ヲ于テ停務收容所以外ノ地域ニ於テ勞役
セシムルニ其ノ所長ハ所要憲兵隊及警察署ニ通報
シ要スル地方官廳ト協議シ地方人民ノ取締上必要

999A

、措置ヲ爲スモノトス

才十二條 前條ノ場合ニ於テハ俘虜直接、取締警

戒ニ因テハ所長之ヲ定ム

取締警戒ノ爲收容所職員及同衛兵以外ニ兵力

ヲ要スルキハ軍司令部ニ具申シ指示ヲ受ルモノトス

但シ輸送同班勤務所ヲ設置スルキハ警戒面

ニテハ臨機指示ス

才十三條 勞役ニ要スル工具材料ハ總テ使用者側ニ於テ

準備セラルモノトス

才十四條 所長軍司令部ヨリ受領シタル俘虜勞

務計畫ニ基キ且使用者側ト協議シテ俘虜ノ勞

役使用警戒取締其他必要ナル細部ニ關スル事項

ヲ規定シ之カ實施ヲ至嚴格確實トシタルモノトス

才十五條 俘虜勞役ニ方リテハ作業隊ヲ編成シ有

能ナル指導者ヲ附スル等ニカ能率ノ向上ニ万全

ノ力ヲ致シ苟モ勞役ヲシテ形式ニ流シシキルヲ緊

要トス。之カタハ必要ナル工作器具如シテ作業被

服(常服ヲ愛憎スル等)ヲ整備スルヲ可トス

106

979A

才六條 俘虜、技術ヲ有利ニ活用スルハ、俘虜

收容所ニ於テ、技能調査ヲ綿密ニシテ、必要

才七條 收容所ノ管理整理及保存ニ関スル勞役ニ對シテ

ノ賃銀 支拂フコトナシ

才八條 公團、團體又ハ会社等ノ俘虜、勞役ニ関シテ、

左記 條ニモトス

左記

(1) 事業主、俘虜勞務者ニ限リ、軍司令官ノ監督ヲ受
ルコトナシ

(2) 事業主、俘虜從業規則ヲ作成シ、軍司令官ノ認
可ヲ受ケ、之ヲ変更セシムルトキ亦同シ

(3) 軍司令官必要アリト認ムルハ、事業主ニ對シ、俘
虜^{從業}規則ノ變更ヲ命ズルコトナリ

(4) 事業主、從業規則ニ依リ、俘虜ヲ從業セシムル此場
合ニ於テ、

俘虜、警備ハ、俘虜收容所長ノ責
任トシ、作業ノ指導及検査ハ、事業主ニ於テ行フ

ルコトナシ

167

999A

(5) 事業主の俘虜給與規則(昭和十七年二月陸運策八号) 二準之賃金規則及昇給内規ヲ作成シ軍司令官ニ 提出シ陸軍大臣ノ認可ヲ受ケルノトス之ヲ変更セシト 凡トキ亦同シ

(6) 軍司令官必要アリト認めルキ事業主ニ對シ賃銀 規則及昇給内規ノ変更ヲ命ズルコトヲ得

(7) 軍司令官必要アリト認めルキ俘虜従業者ノ賃金 實物給與等ニ因リ事業主ニ對シ命令ヲ爲スルコトヲ 得

(8) 防謀上顧慮ヲ要スル事項ハ事業主、俘虜收容所 長ト協議シ其対策ヲ講ジ遺漏ナキヲ期スルニ右 協議ノ決定事項軍司令官ノ認可ヲ受ケルモノトス

廿九條 俘虜賃金及其他ノ勞務ニ依リ收益ノ出納

保管ニ因リ「俘虜勞務規則」朝鮮俘虜收容所取

締規則ニ準據シ收容所出納官吏ニ於テ處理ス

モノトス

卅二條 俘虜勞務ノ爲傷害疾病ヲ蒙リタル場合ノ

治療費其他ノ使用者側ノ實費負擔トス

166

979A

才三條 所長 俘虜、勞務終了、及勞務長期間、

以上、每月、俘虜勞務、實情、軍司令官、報告、及、

不

其報告、及、主要、項、概、不、存、如、三

- (1) 勞務實施、要領
- (2) 計畫、及、實施、阻礙、主、因、及、其、原因
- (3) 俘虜、勤、怠、度、(工、事、進、捗、度)
- (4) 俘虜、心、理、動、向
- (5) 取締、警、戒、難、易
- (6) 保、健、衛、生、情、況
- (7) 地、方、民、衆、及、其、影、響
- (8) 憲、兵、隊、及、地、方、官、憲、上、連、絡、事、項
- (9) 將、來、三、因、所、見

才三條 俘虜、取扱、給與、居住施設等、勞働力、

維持培養、適、之、要、不

才三條 俘虜、所、要、被、服、及、收容、不、之、軍、隊、陸

軍、於、予、準備、不、之、場、合、依、事、業、主、於、適、宜

處、置、之、場、合、於、予、作、業、用、被

69

979A

No. 10

服ハ事業主ニ於テ準備スルモノトス

配 賦 分 表			
配 賦 先	部 数	配 賦 先	部 数
陸 軍 省	二	軍 副 官 部	一
参 謀 本 部	一	軍 報 道 部	一
俘 虜 管 理 部	一	軍 軍 醫 部	一
俘 虜 情 報 局	一	軍 經 理 部	三
閑 束 軍	一	軍 法 務 部	一
京 城 師 團	四	朝 俘 收	四
朝 三 六 部 隊	一	朝 鮮 總 督 府	三
京 城 陸 軍 病 院	一	豫 備	九
朝 憲 司	四		
野 鐵 龍 支 部	一		
		計	四〇

979A cert.-1

證 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 〇 號
陸 際 檢 察 部 第 九 〇 九 A 號

典 據 及 ビ 公 正 ニ 關 ス ル 證 明

余、石村余雄ハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ第一復員局文書課課員トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係ニ在ルモノナルコト、竝ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラレタル、十四頁ヨリ成ル、千九百四十二年ノ昭和十七年ノ九月四日附、下記題名、即チ朝鮮俘虜收容所ニ關スル諸規定ノ件報告ノ文書ノ保管ニ任ジ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書ナルコト、竝ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式書類及ビ綴ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラバ綴背號又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ綴ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所在ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 陸 軍 省

979 A cert- 2

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 十月三日

東京ニ於テ署名

當該官吏署名欄 石 橋 糸 雄

右ノ者ノ公的資格 第一偵員局文書課課員

證 人 中 村 寅 吉

公式入手ニ關スル證明

余、Lt. Eric W. Fleisher ハ、余が聯合國軍高指揮官總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、此ニ上記題名ノ文書ハ余ガ公務上、日本政府ノ上記署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 十月三日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏 名 欄 Eric W. Fleisher AUS

右ノ者ノ公的資格 Investigator IPS

證 人 Henry Shimajima

BA-84

Army Report No. 1374

Revision and Adjustment of Cautions on Censorship

20 December 1943

From: Chief of Information Bureau, War Ministry

We wish to inform you that as of 20 December 1943 the above is revised and adjusted as follows:

Instructions on news regarding two-grade promotions for officers and enlisted men is omitted.

Precautionary Matters in Censorship of News of Prisoners of War

Domestic reports concerning POW's should be made mainly to contribute to the raising of the fighting spirit of the people and to increase and bolster production; care should be taken to avoid issuing twisted reports of our fair attitude which might give the enemy food for evil propaganda and bring harm to our interned brothers. For this reason, any reports (including photographs, pictures, etc.) which come under the following categories are prohibited:

1. Anything which gives the impression that POW's are too well treated or are cruelly treated.

Example: Any information giving an impression that POW's receive good food without working, or that labor conditions are extraordinarily good. Any reports which give an impression of cruel treatment, such as prisoners being punished or being made to labor without clothing.

2. Any concrete information concerning facilities, supplies, sanitary conditions, or other matters pertaining to living conditions within POW camps.
3. Any information giving the names of any location of POW's other than the following, or indicating their location:

HAKODATE
TOKYO
OSAKA
ZENTSUJI

FUKUOKA
FORMOSA
KOREA
MURDEN

PHILIPPINES
MALAY
JAVA
BORNEO

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

4. Any report which tells about POW's who are not yet duly processed into POW camps, especially their names, military units and places of birth (captured officers and men of the Chungking Army are excluded). Example: Any news of the POW expressing his feeling about the bravery of the Imperial Army immediately after capture is good, but any information which describes conditions under which POW investigations are made or which state the names, birth places, etc. of POW's and which might tend to adversely affect (?) is not good.
5. Any reports indicating the capture of Orientals and the use of them for labor.
6. Any report indicating utilization of POW's for purposes other than common labor.
7. All statements by or impressions from high ranking POW's (except those specifically authorized by the War Ministry).

(The rest is omitted)

4. Any report which tells about POW's who are not yet duly processed into POW camps, especially their names, military units and places of birth (captured officers and men of the Chungking Army are excluded). Example: Any news of the POW expressing his feeling about the bravery of the Imperial Army immediately after capture is good, but any information which describes conditions under which POW investigations are made or which state the names, birth places, etc. of POW's and which might tend to adversely affect (?) is not good.
5. Any reports indicating the capture of Orientals and the use of them for labor.
6. Any report indicating utilization of POW's for purposes other than common labor.
7. All statements by or impressions from high ranking POW's (except those specifically authorized by the War Ministry).

(The rest is omitted)

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 2733

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Nakanishi Sadayoshi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Acting Director POW Information Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 3 pages, dated 20 December, 1943, and described as follows: Certified copy of instructions on censorship of information re POW's.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): POW Information Bureau BA 84

Signed at Tokyo on this

25th day of October, 1946.

/s/ Nakanishi Sadayoshi
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ K. Yokoi

Acting Director POW
Information Bureau
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, 2nd Lt. Eric W. Fleisher O-935000, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

25th day of October, 1946.

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher, 2nd Lt. AUSMI
NAME

Investigation Division IPS
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Henry T. Omachi
2nd Lt. Inf.

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____
I.P.S. No. 2733

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Nakanishi Sadayoshi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: acting Director POW Information Bureau, and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 3 pages, dated 20 December, 1943, and described as follows: Certified copy of instructions on censorship of information re POW's.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): POW Information Bureau EA 84

Signed at Tokyo on this

25th day of October, 1946.

/s/ Nakanishi Sadayoshi
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ K. Yokoi

Acting Director POW
Information Bureau
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, 2nd Lt. Eric W. Fleisher O-935000, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

25th day of October, 1946.

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher, 2nd Lt. AUSMI
NAME

Investigation Division IPS
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Henry T. Omachi
2nd Lt. Inf.

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc. 2733

BA 84

陸報第三七四號

檢閱注意事項整理改訂件

昭和八年十二月二十日

陸軍省報道部長

首題，件三閱之，昭和八年十二月二十日，以下左記，如，整理改訂之
訂，承知相成度

左記

陸軍將兵二階級進級閱之報道指導件

略

俘虜，報道閱之檢閱注意事項

俘虜閱之國內報道：國民戰意，日印揚，增產強化，資之
主上，守軍，施之，又我，以正之態度，于左曲報道，之敵，要宣
情，好，餌，子，(男，子，折，留，同，胞，) 及，子，之，如，留，意，之，力，為，左
之，者，之，報，道，(寫，真，繪，畫，等，之，含，之，) 禁，止

一 俘虜優遇，之，是，得，印，象，之，子，之，之，

例 如，為，美，食，之，或，勞，働，條，件，優，遇，之，過，之，力，如，印，象
之，子，之，之，俘，虜，長，短，訓，或，裸，体，勞，働，等，是，得，印，象
之，子，之，之，

二 收容所，之，等，之，於，之，設備，給，兵，衛，生，其，他，生，活，狀，態，等
之，之，之，具體，之，事項

三 俘虜，所，在，之，閱，之，左，記，以，外，之，用，之，或，其，位，置，之，明，示，之，

之，
之，館，東，京，大，阪，喜，通，寺，福，岡，台，灣，朝，鮮，奉
天，比，島，馬，三，爪，哇，亦，不，不

No. 1

四、正式俘虜收容所 = 編入至之サハ、俘虜、状況特ニ氏名、
 出生地、所屬部隊ヲ明シセテ、(捕獲重慶軍將兵等)
 例、捕獲直後、俘虜ノ自軍、精強ニ對シ感想ヲ述フ等、
 報章ニ可ニ交基、取調狀況ヲ叙シ、或ハ該俘虜、氏名、
 出生地等ヲ明記スル等、取扱ニ惡影響ヲ及ボス虞
 凡クハ不可トス

五、東洋人俘虜ヲ收容シ勞務ニ以テ事ヲ主スル、

六、勞務以外ニ俘虜ヲ利用セシムル事ヲ主スル、

七、高級俘虜、陳述感想等特ニ陸軍省ニ於テ認可

スルヲ除ク

以下略ス

Doc. 2733

眞実を寫し下す記帳ス

日本捕獲俘虜情報局米國死傷者調査課

歩兵少尉

クリー・レイ・オマケ

(署名)

No. 3

Doc 2733

證明書

アシントニ大書局第 號
國際檢察部 第三三三號

與據及公正ニ關スル證明

余中西貞喜、余が下記資格於て、即ち停廢情報局長官代理トシテ日本政府ト
公的關係ニ在ルモノトシテ、該官吏トシテ、余が茲ニ添附セラルル三頁ヨリ成ル干
九百四十六年、昭和二十年、十月二十五日附下記題名、即ち檢閲注意事項整理改訂
件、文書保管主任ニ居ルトシテ茲ニ證明ス。

余更ニ添附、記録及公文書ヲ日本政府、公文書ニシテ、姓名、省
及部局、公文書類及官職ニ部ナルトシテ證明ス。若シテ、官職番號及引用其
他公文書類、官職ニ於テ、該文書、正規所在、公文名稱、及特記、之ニ停廢
情報局

千九百四十六年、昭和二十年、十月二十五日

停廢情報局ニ於テ署名

當該會文書名欄

中西貞喜 (印)

右、者、公的資格
證人

停廢情報局長官代理
横井孝治

公文ニ關スル證明

余、M. Lt. Eric W. Fleisher、余が聯合國最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係下ルモノトシ
テ、姓名、文書、余が公務上日本政府、上記署名官吏ヨリ入手シタルモノ
トシテ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年、昭和二十年、月 日

ニ於テ署名

姓名欄

Eric W. Fleisher M. Lt. AUSMI

右、者、公的資格

國際檢察部調査官課附

證人

Henry J. Omachi M. Lt. Jpf

No. 4

Ex # 1178

Regarding the outline for the disposal of Prisoners of War according to the change of situation, a notification, Army-Asia-Secret No. 2257, was made on March 17, by the Vice War Minister, as follows:

N O T E

As the war situation has become very critical, I have been ordered to notify you not to make any blunders in the treatment of Prisoners of War based upon the attached "Outline for the Disposal of Prisoners of War According to the Change of Situation," when the havoc of war make themselves felt in our Imperial Homeland and in Manchukuo.

(This sheet is from the Monthly Report on Information of Prisoners of War (UA 4))

Ex. # 1118

Regarding the outline for the disposal of Prisoners of War according to the change of situation, a notification, Army-Asia-Secret No. 2257, was made on March 17, by the Vice War Minister, as follows:

N O T E

As the war situation has become very critical, I have been ordered to notify you not to make any blunders in the treatment of Prisoners of War based upon the attached "Outline for the Disposal of Prisoners of War According to the Change of Situation," when the havoc of war make themselves felt in our Imperial Homeland and in Manchukuo.

(This sheet is from the Monthly Report on Information
of Prisoners of War (UA 4))

OUTLINE FOR THE DISPOSAL OF PRISONERS OF WAR
ACCORDING TO THE CHANGE OF SITUATION

Policy

1. Prisoners of War must be prevented by all possible means from falling into enemy hands. For this reason, the location of Prisoner of War Camps shall be changed.
2. In the event of an enemy attack which leaves no alternative, prisoners of war may be set free.

Outline

1. Strengthening of guards for prisoner of war camps (including branch and detached camps - the same hereinafter). Prisoner of war administrative officers shall do their best to strengthen the powers for guarding prisoner of war camps by expanding and completing their facilities to conform with the defense program for their respective districts, and shall also dispatch guards to, or increase guards in, the branch and detached camps when necessary, or designate reinforcement squads, etc.

The commandants of the camps and their subordinates shall not depend only on external facilities, but shall progressively stimulate the morale of the prisoners, and at the same time acquire a profound grasp of their psychology and an insight into their behavior and supervise them so that nothing untoward will occur in case of emergencies.

2. Transference of Prisoners of War. Judging from conditions such as the intensifying of enemy air-raids on major points, and enemy landings on our Empire, both of which will follow the developments of the war situation, consideration shall be given to the overall location of prisoners of war, who, from the viewpoint of defense, shall be transferred or concentrated at the proper moment.

A. Transfer Programme

1. The camps to be transferred, and the destination, order and time of transference, etc. shall be planned by the central authorities, with due consideration to the opinions of the Army District Commanders.

2. The time for transference shall be notified by the Central Authorities, but in case of a sudden change in the situation, transference may be executed at the discretion of the respective Army District Commanders.

3. As such transference of prisoners of war is likely to excite the general public, great care shall be taken in regard to the time and method of transference.

B. Regarding Transference and the Utilization of Labor.

1. As the call for prisoner of war laborers is increasingly great, even under the present situation, the destination of the transference shall be decided only after due consideration of this fact.

2. Prisoners of war may be employed for maintaining communication lines, so their location at the proper places is also to be considered.

3. Even in districts where the enemy are likely to intensify their air-raids or effect landing operations, the prisoner of war camps will be left till the last if prisoner of war labor is absolutely necessary in that area to maintain our fighting power.

The areas in which the camps will remain to the last will be notified by the central authorities with due consideration to the opinion of the Army District Commanders. Even in such areas, however, if attacked by the enemy, the location of the camps will be changed as much as possible, and we shall not let prisoners of war fall into enemy hands until we have got some results from them.

C. Concentration of Prisoners of War

Prisoners of war who are dispersed at various places for work or working at distant places must be properly brought together to avoid unexpected disaster.

3. In case the situation becomes urgent and there is no time to execute the transference mentioned above, and if it is really unavoidable, prisoners of war may be set free. Even in this extremity, measures shall be taken to transfer all officers and those who are healthy and strong enough to work. However, emergency measures shall be taken without delay against those of antagonistic attitudes, and we shall hope for nothing regrettable by taking proper measures to suit the occasion.

4. Utmost care shall be taken that no harm is inflicted upon the general public by freeing the prisoners of war.

5. In case emergency measures are to be taken to suppress plots, riots, revolts, etc. by the prisoners of war, care shall be taken that they are not utilized for enemy propaganda or give the enemy an excuse for resorting to measures of retaliation.

6. Especially nothing shall be left to be desired in the procurement and supply of food in this plan for disposal of the prisoners of war. Every effort shall be made to maintain the minimum amount of food necessary to sustain the lives of the prisoners of war, even when transportation is cut off.

Document No. 1114-B

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 1114-B

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Sadayoshi Nakanishi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: As per U.S. Prisoner of War Information Bureau Japanese Government Prisoner of War Information Bureau and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 6 pages, dated 11 March, 1945, and described as follows: Order from the War Ministry regarding the movement of prisoners of war.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files):

Signed at Tokyo on this
23rd day of September, 1946.

/s/ S. Nakanishi
Signature of Official

SEAL

Acting Director, Japanese Gov't.
Prisoner of War Information Bureau
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Koji Yokoi

Statement of Official Procurement

I, 2nd Lt. Eric W. Fleisher, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
23rd day of September, 1946

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher, 2nd Lt.
NAME AUSMI

Investigator IPS
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Henry T. Omachi
2nd Lt. Inf.

本条の條に於ては、^(Class 4) 知見を以てして、

知見の條に於ては、知見を以てして、

知見の條に於ては、知見を以てして、

知見の條に於ては、知見を以てして、

附則

第一三三條に於ては、知見を以てして、

知見の條に於ては、知見を以てして、

861x3

1114B-1

等入軍等司各言ノ味見ヲ影見シ中突ニテ計畫
(イ) 移動計畫ノ先ノ移動ノ順序ヲ決定スルニテ計畫

1 移動計畫

先ノ移動

ヲ加入機ニ先シテ防衛ノ見地ヨリ停止ノ順序ヲ決定スルニテ計畫
土上機ノ位置ニ先シテ防衛ノ見地ヨリ停止ノ順序ヲ決定スルニテ計畫
機ノ位置ニ先シテ防衛ノ見地ヨリ停止ノ順序ヲ決定スルニテ計畫
機ノ位置ニ先シテ防衛ノ見地ヨリ停止ノ順序ヲ決定スルニテ計畫
機ノ位置ニ先シテ防衛ノ見地ヨリ停止ノ順序ヲ決定スルニテ計畫
機ノ位置ニ先シテ防衛ノ見地ヨリ停止ノ順序ヲ決定スルニテ計畫

114B-3

2

- (ロ) 移動ノ時期ハ中央ヨリ指示スルモ情況ノ激變ニ慮シテハ各軍管區司令官ニ於テモ獨斷行爲ノ移動ヲ實施スルモノトス
 - (ハ) 本移動ハ一般民心ヲ刺戟シ曷キニ鐘ミ移動ノ時機方法ハ慎重ヲ期スルモノトス
 - (イ) 移動ト勞務ノ活用ニ就テ本情勢ニ於テモ停戦ノ勞務ハ空ニ棄置請大ナルニ鐘ミ停戦勞務ヲ重視シテ移動先ヲ決定スルモノトス
 - (ロ) 交通線確保ノタメ停戦ヲ使用スベキ場合アルハキヲ以テ適地ニ配置スルコトヲモ慮ス
 - (ハ) 敵ノ進襲線化並上陸ヲ預慮セラル、地區ニ於テモ戦力保持ノタメ停戦ノ勞務ヲ絕對必要トスル個所ハ最後迄残置ス
- 淺置スベキ個所ハ軍管區司令官ノ意見ヲ參照シ中央ヨリ指示ス
- 但シ該個所ニ於テモ以ノ攻撃ヲ受クルニ際シテハ極力位置ノ移動ヲ企及シ無爲ニ停戦ヲ敵手ニ委セサルモノトス

1114B-4

3 停戦ノ案納

各府ニ分散遊撃兵ハ諸臣ニ意勢セシメアル際各府ノ停戦ハ適宜案納ヲ圖リ以テ不測ノ災害ヲ防止スルモノトス

三 情勢急迫シ前線ノ移動ヲ管見スルノ余裕ナク兵ニ已ムヲ待サル場合ニ於テハ停戦ヲ解決スルコトヲ得本情況ニ於テモ勢弱ニ違フル諸般者及將機停戦ハ成ルべく移動スル如ク勢ムルモノトス但シ反抗的行動アル者ニ對シテハ機ヲ失セズ非常措置ニ出ル等臨機ノ手段ヲ採リ万端備ナキヲ期スルモノトス

四 停戦解決ニ方リ一般住民ニ危警ヲ及ホササルコトニ關シテハ深甚ノ注意ヲ拂フモノトス

五 停戦ノ謀略、暴動、反抗等ヲ俟望スル爲研兵ノ非常措置ヲ採ル場合ニアリテハ之ヲ敵ノ宣傳ノ具ニ利用セラレ六ハ之ガ報復手段ヲ講ズルノ口實ヲ採アル等ノコトナキ様留意スルモノトス

六 本處理ニ伴フ糧食ノ取持及運給ニ關シテハ停戦ニ關係ナキヲ期シ万一飢饉起セル等ニ於テモ停戦ノ生命ヲ繋グニ長スル最少限ノ食糧ハ之ヲ確保スルコトニ努ムルモノトス

1114B-5

「ワシントン」文書局 第 〇 號
國際情報部 第 〇 號

真摯及び公正ニ關スル證明

余、中山良喜ハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ
停職情報局長官代理トシテ、日本政府ト公約關係ニ在
ルモノナルコト、茲ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラ
レタル、六月ヨリ於ル、千九百四十五年ノ昭和二十年
三月十七日附、下記通告、即チ陸軍省ヨリ發セラレシ
「情勢ノ推移ニ應ズル停職處理具領」ノ文書ノ爲ノ保
管ニ任ジ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。
余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書ナル
コト、茲ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ管下ハ郵局ノ公式書類及ビ
録ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラバ保看職下ハ
引用、其他公式書類又ハ茲ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所在
ノ公式名稱ヲモ特記スベシ) 停職情報局

一九四四年十一月十九日

今ノ公ニシテ、

今ノ公ニシテ、

今ノ公ニシテ、

今ノ公ニシテ、

今ノ公ニシテ、

今ノ公ニシテ、

今ノ公ニシテ、

今ノ公ニシテ、

今ノ公ニシテ、

今ノ公ニシテ、

1114B-6

東京二級下等學堂

出 頭 氏 名 Eric W. Fleisher 2d Lt.

出 頭 人 之 職 務 名 稱 Investigator I.P.S.

出 頭 人 之 階 級 名 稱 Henry T. Smachie
2nd Lt. Inf.

Document No. 2511-B
Docum:

Page 1.

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
14 March 1946

p. 1-2-3

- Q. There is one thing that I am not quite clear about. The Supreme Command, generally speaking, is represented by the Army Chief of Staff and the Navy Chief of Staff. That is not the same as Imperial Headquarters, is it?
- A. Imperial Headquarters [Daihonei] drew its membership from the Army and Navy General Staffs and the Army and Navy Ministries. From the Army General Staff the Chief of Staff the Assistant Chief of Staff, all the bureau heads [buchō] and nearly all the section heads [kachō] and some other members of the Staff, as necessary, attended. From the War Department, the War Minister, the Vice Minister, a majority of the Bureau heads [kyoku cho], and a few other members, as necessary, attended. I suppose that the membership from the Navy side was similar, although I am not sure. As War Minister, I attended in the capacity of a participant [sanka-kusha], although I was not properly a member. In my capacity as participant, I was assisted by the Vice Minister of War and the head of the Personnel Section. The Imperial Headquarters was created to meet the needs of the war and, since one of those needs was for personnel, I attended for that reason, having administrative charge of personnel.

Three things were wrong with Imperial Headquarters. The first was that, although it was intended to be a joint Army-Navy set-up, in practice, it was divided into an Army section and a Navy section, Army General Staff and War Department personnel going into the Army section and Navy Staff and Navy Department personnel going into the Navy section.

The second thing was that there were no government people in the set-up. It was all Army-Navy.

The third thing was that there was no one in a position to hold it together. It was set up on 20 November 1937 in connection with the China Incident. Having been set up during the first year of the China Incident, it had a great deal of influence on the Government at the time preceding

the outbreak of the Greater East Asia War. Since its utterances were not voiced as coming from the Army General Staff or the Navy General Staff but from Imperial Headquarters, the government had to give them a great deal of importance.

- Q. Did the Emperor have anything to do with Imperial Headquarters?
- A. The Emperor was at the head of it. This chart shows the set-up. See reproduction attached. As to the place where Imperial Headquarters met, the Army part of it met in the Army General Staff offices, and the Navy part of it met in the Navy General Staff offices.
- Q. Then, how was the Army part of Imperial Headquarters different from the Army General Staff?
- A. The people in the General Staff were there in the capacity of bureau chief, section chief, or what not, but they also had a capacity as a member of the Army section of Imperial Headquarters. Actually, the two bodies were very much the same in fact, except that the members of the War Department also came under the Chief of Staff when acting in the capacity of members of Imperial Headquarters.
- Q. You mean, then, that after Imperial Headquarters was set up in 1937, the Chief of Staff held more power than he had held previous to that time?
- A. Yes, because he came to have control over members of the War Department as well as control over the members of the General Staff which he had had before.
- Q. How often did Imperial Headquarters meet?
- A. I am not too sure, since it was pretty much run by the Army and Navy Chiefs of Staff. However, I think that it met once or twice a week.
- Q. Was the Emperor present at every meeting?
- A. No. Usually he was not there, only on special occasions.
- Q. When a full meeting of Imperial Headquarters of both Army and Navy sections was held, where was it held?

- A. In the Palace.
- Q. How often were those joint ones held?
- A. As I said before, once or twice a week.
- Q. You mean the joint meetings?
- A. Yes. Of course when there was more business, there were more meetings.
- Q. What was the difference in function between Imperial Headquarters and the Supreme War Council?
- A. They were completely different. Imperial Headquarters was concerned with operations and tactics /sakusen yohei/ in which secrecy was necessary and, therefore they did not consult the Supreme War Council on these matters. The Supreme War Council was concerned with many matters, such as research, inspections, military education, military training, and, in general, with advice on military matters.

* * *

EXHIBIT NO. 1979

Doc. 2511 B

一九四六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 三月十四日

東條英機 質問ヨリ、抜萃

一 一 二 三 頁

(問)

私ニ良ク令ニテ一事務柄ガハアリシ。
大体トシテ総帥部ノ參謀總長ト軍令部長ト
代表カニエガシラ大本營トノ違ハテモナカ。

(答)

大本營ノ人事ノ參謀本部、軍令部及陸海軍
兩省ノ者カラ編成サニキニシテ、參謀本部カラ參
謀總長、參謀次長、部長全部、殆ト全部、
課長及必要ニ應ジテ其他ノ部員ガ出席シニシテ、
陸軍省ケラ、陸軍大臣、次官、殆ト、局長及必要ニ
應ジテ他ノ部員モ少数出席シニシテ、確カテハアリシモ海
軍側モ同様ノ如クト思ヒス。陸軍大臣ケル私ノ本末
ノ員テハアリシモ之ガ參畫者トシテ出席シニシテ、
參畫者、資格テ、私ノ陸軍次官及人事課長、
輔佐ヲ受ケニシテ、大本營ノ戰爭、諸要求ニ應ズル為創
設サタテアリシ、諸要求、一ノ人事ニシテ人事行
政ヲ擔當シテ中ク私ガ理由テ出席シタラス。

大本營ニハ三ノ課長ガシテ、陸海軍
共同ノ機構ニシテ、人事ノ拘束カシカ事サレトナルト
陸軍部ト海軍部ト分シテ參謀本部陸軍省關係
者ハ陸軍部、海軍省關係者ハ海軍部
ニ入ルニトス。

FOR OFFICIAL USE ONLY

#2511B

第二ハ、機構ニ政府側、春分ヲナイテ全部陸海軍ヲ占ムニ
ニキリトス。

第三ハ、シテ統合ニ得ル者が居ナカトテス。大本營ハ支那事變
ニ虞朕トシテ一九三七年/昭和十二年/十一月二十日ニ設ケラレシク。
支那事變、一年目ニ設ケラレテ大東亞戰爭、寧カ発前、時
期ニ政府ニ対シテ非常ニテ勢ヲ持ツテ中ニシク、ソノ發言ハ
參謀本部又ハ軍令部カマトシテス。大本營カマトシテ
ナレバ、政府ハシテ非常ニ重要視シケレバトリス。

(問) 天皇陛下ハ大本營ト關係カ有リテシク。

(答) 陛下ハ、長テスレシク、ソノ機構ハ、固、ヤウナモテシク。

添附、爲參照、大本營會議カ行ハク場所ニツテハ陸
軍部ハ參謀本部テ海軍部ハ軍令部テ會合シシク。

(問) ソレハ大本營、陸軍部ト參謀本部トハドウ違ッテ居
テス。

(答) 參謀本部、人連ハ局長、課長或ハ、他、資格ハ
本營ニ居リシク、彼等又大本營陸軍部、員タル資格
ヲ持ツテ居ル。實際ニハ、ソノ機關ハ事實上殆ト同心モ
テシク、陸軍省、者モ大本營、者トシテ行動ス場合ハ
參謀總長、トス。

2

(問) ソレハ大本營カ一九三七年/昭和十二年/ニ設ケラレテ後ハ參
謀總長ハ從前ニ増シテ權能ヲ持ツト云フ。

(答) サラズ、何トナレバ參謀總長ハ、彼ガ以前參謀本部、者ニ
對シテ持ツテ本々統御權、外ハ陸軍省、者ニ對シテ統御
權ヲ保持スルコトニシテ居ル。

#2511B

(問) 大本營會議ハト、何回催サレシタカ。

(答) ソハ殆ド參謀總長、軍令部長ニヨリ指圖サレキマシタカ。私ハヨク知リモロシカ、一週内ニ、一ニ度ハ回催サレタト思ヒマス。

(問) 陛下ハ各會議ニ御出席ナリシタカ。

(答) イーエ、普通ハ御出席ナリマシタカ。特別ノ場合ニ御出席ナレタカ。

(問) 陸軍部、海軍部、双方参加、大本營全体會議ハ回催サレタ時、ハソレハ何處テ回催サレタカ。

(答) 宮中テ行ヒシタカ。

(問) サウシテ全体會議ハ何度開クシタカ。

(答) 前述シタ通り、一週一度カ二度デス。

(問) 全体會議カテ方。

(答) サウデス。勿論用件ガ多クシテ會議モ多ク開クシタカ。

(問) 大本營ト軍事參議院、機能ハドウ違テ居シタカ。

(答) 兩者ハ全然、異ナリマシタカ。大本營ハ機密保持要ニ作戦用兵ニ關係カク、從ツテコソ、事柄、因テ、軍事參議院ニ諮リモシタカ。軍事參議院ハ研究、檢閲、軍事、教育、軍事訓練、如キ、多ク事項、並ニ一般ニ軍事的事項ニ關スル意見、因陳ニ關係カアリシタカ。

3

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
26 March 1946

p. 1 - 3

A Yesterday there was some interrogation about prisoners and there is something I would like to say about that.

Q I was about to bring that question up and ask if you didn't have something you wanted to say.

A Since the end of the war, I have read about the inhumane acts committed by Japanese army and navy personnel. These were certainly not the intention of those in authority, that is, of the General Staffs, or the War or Navy Departments, or myself. We did not even suspect that such things had happened. The Emperor especially, because of his benevolence, would have had a contrary feeling. Such acts are not permissible in Japan. The character of the Japanese people is such that they believe that neither Heaven nor Earth would permit such things. It will be too bad if people in the world believe that these inhumane acts are the result of Japanese character. /The preceding portion of the answer was read back to the witness who agreed as to its correctness./

The second point with regard to prisoners: The treatment of prisoners is the responsibility of various army commanders, hence I relied upon them to have regard for humane considerations and to follow the terms of international treaties and rules. Of course, since I was the supervisor of military administration, I am completely responsible.

The third point is that Japanese manners and customs are different from those of Europe and America and the standard of living is also different. These things affected the treatment of prisoners. There are some things I want to explain about this.

a) In regard to inhumane acts, these are not permitted under Japanese manners or customs either.

p. 1 - 3 cont'd

b) In regard to the difference in the standard of living, the treaties provide that prisoners are to be given the same rations as the troops of the detaining nation. That was also directed in orders that were issued. Because of the difference in the standard of living, the American and European prisoners thought when they were given the same rations as Japanese troops that the rations were very very unappetizing. Particularly, on the battlefields, this feeling was very strong, I believe. In regard to life in the barracks /sashu/, the barracks, for example, at Omori, which are field barracks /yaeichu/, they would not be thought bad by the Japanese troops, but the European and American prisoners thought they were very poor.

c) The Japanese idea about being taken prisoner is different from that in Europe and America. In Japan, it is regarded as a disgrace. Under Japanese criminal law, anyone who becomes a prisoner while still able to resist has committed a criminal offense, the maximum punishment for which is the death penalty. In Europe and America, it is different. A person who is taken prisoner is honored because he has discharged his duties, but in Japan, it is very different.

d) I want to say something now about the feeling with regard to sleeping on the side of the face. In Japanese families where the educational standard is low, sleeping is used as a means of training. In the Japanese army and navy, although this is forbidden, it continues in fact because of the influence of the customs of the people. This, of course, is a custom that ought to be corrected; it ought to be stopped; but I don't think it is a crime. It is something that comes from custom. That is all I want to say on this.

There is a correction I would like to make regarding yesterday's interrogation. Yesterday, I was asked if I had met Lieutenant General HOMMA. I said that I had not met him, but this year when I was in Omori Prison, I met him. One other point. When an army commander came back to Japan during the war, he would make a situation report to the Emperor. On such occasions, he would be accompanied by the Chief of Staff and the War Minister. I do not well remember, it it may be that I met HOMMA on such an occasion since he was an army commander. That is all I wanted to say.

* * * * *

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
25 March 1946
p. 1

- Q. As Minister of War, from 7 December 1941 on, were you not responsible for the treatment received by American and British prisoners of war?
- A. Yes. I was responsible for their treatment.

EXHIBIT NO. 1980 A

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
25 March 1946
p. 2 - 4

- Q When was the Prisoner of War Bureau set up?
A This was organized immediately after the outbreak of war.
- Q Which war?
A The Greater East Asia War.
- Q Why was it necessary to organize such a bureau?
A This is according to international law.
- Q Why had not such a bureau existed during the China War or Incident?
A It was not necessary during the China Incident.
- Q Was there any bureau at all set up in connection with the China Incident on the treatment of prisoners?
A There was no organization set up to deal with Chinese prisoners.
- Q Who ordered this new bureau to be set up?
A The order for the formation of this bureau was issued by the War Minister.
- Q This was during the time that you were War Minister and Premier?
A Yes.
- Q Were you, from 7 December 1941 on, familiar with the provisions of the Hague and Geneva Conventions with respect to the treatment of prisoners of war?
A I knew of these at the time.
- Q At that time did you, as Premier and War Minister, believe that the provisions of those conventions applied to Japan and should be followed by her in war?
A Naturally.
- Q In addition to the provisions of those conventions, there are also other recognized rules and customs of war followed by civilized nations, are there not?
A As a civilized nation, we would follow the principles of humanism.

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
25 March 1946
p. 2 - 4

Q I suppose by humanism, you mean that prisoners would be treated humanely, as by civilized nations?

A Yes.

Q So that, in general, from 7 December 1941 on, you, as Premier and War Minister, felt that Japan was bound by the Hague and Geneva Conventions with respect to the treatment of prisoners of war and also bound by the rules and customs of civilized nations with respect to treating prisoners of war humanely, did you not?

A Yes.

* * * *

1.

Doc 2514c

第二十四頁

東條英機ノ訓同披露
一九四六年三月二十五日

文管第三五一四號
FILE COPY

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Dr 1980B

問、停泊局ハ何時設置サレマシタカ。
答、ソレハ競争物後直後組織サレマシタ。

問、大東運搬等デス。
答、何故、ソノヤクナ局ヲ組織スル必要ガアリ

問、何故ソノヤクナ局ハ、中四戦線又ハ支那戦
線中ニハ存在シテカツタノデスカ。
答、ソレハ支那戦線中ニハ必要ガナカツタノデ

問、支那戦線ニ關シテ停泊採取ノタメニ設置
サレタ局ガ何カアリマシタカ。
答、中國人停泊ヲ採取フタメニ設置サレタ機關

ハ何等アリマセシマシタ。
問、コノ新シイ局ノ設置ハ誰ガ命ジタノデスカ。
答、該局設置ノ命令ハ陸軍大臣ニ依リテ發セラ

レマシタ。
問、ソレハアナタガ陸相兼首相デマシタ時代ノ

2.

Doc 2514C

答、コトデスカ。

問、一九四一年十二月七日以降、アタタハ停戦

取扱ニ關スル「ヘーグ」條約及ビ「ヂェネ

答、私ハ當時ソレヲ知ツテキマシタ。

問、當時アタタハ、首相兼陸相トシテ、之等ノ

條約ノ規定ハ日本ニ適用サレ、戦争中日本

ニ依ツテ遵守サルベキモノデアルト考ヘマ

シタカ。

答、勿論デス。

問、コレヲノ條約ノ規定ノ外ニモ、文閣團長ニ

依ツテ承認サレテ遵守サレテキル他ノ戦争類

冠ヤ戦争眞習ガアリマス。

答、文閣團長トシテ、我々ハ常ニ人道主義ノ原

則ニ從フベキ努力ノマシ。

問、人道主義トイフアタタハ、文明諸國ニ於

ケルヤウニ、停戦ガ人間則ニ取扱ハレルコ

トラ措シテキルノダト思ヒマスガ。

答、サリデス。

問、ト、スルト、大體カラ言ツテ、一九四一年

十二月七日以降、アタタハ首相兼陸相トシ

テ、日本ハ停戦取扱ニ就イテハ、「ヘーグ」

Doc. 2514C

3.

「デエノーブル」兩條約ニ依ツテ拘束サレ、
 且ツ又停戦ノ人間的ヲ取扱ニ就イテノ文書
 諸國ノ規定ヲ慣習ニ依ツテモ拘束サレテキ
 ルト、考ヘテキタ事デス不。

答、
 サツデス。

× × ×

Extract from
 Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
 25 March 1946
 p. 5 - 6

- Q When did you first learn of the complaints concerning or facts indicating that there had been mistreatment of American and British prisoners of war?
- A The only complaints that ever came to my notice were in connection with food and so forth. Atrocities were not brought to my notice at all. I am astounded at the truth regarding atrocities that is now being revealed in the newspapers. If the Japanese had followed the Emperor's instructions, these atrocities would never have happened.
- Q But you, as Minister of War during the period when those atrocities were committed, are the responsible party for their commission, are you not?
- A Yes.
- Q What explanation can you give for the fact that you did not learn of them when they were so wide-spread and of such a serious nature?
- A I was always under the impression that army commanders in the field who were responsible for the treatment of prisoners understood what was required of them in this connection.
- Q During this entire period from 7 December 1941 on, you were aware of the fact, were you not, that the United States and Great Britain, through friendly nations, had warned the Japanese Government that Japanese officials and the Japanese Government would be held responsible for violations of the Hague and Geneva Conventions and for violations of the rules of war with respect to the treatment of prisoners of war?
- A Yes, and if these atrocities are true, treaties have been violated.
- Q During this same period, were you not aware that the United States and Great Britain, through friendly nations, had made numerous and repeated complaints, giving specific data and charging that there had been, in each instance, violations of the Hague and Geneva Conventions and of the rules of war in connection with the mistreatment of prisoners of war?

p. 5 - 6 cont'd

A I do not remember details, but I think these came through the Prisoner of War Information Bureau.

Q Such complaints would first come to the Foreign Ministry and then be routed to the Minister of War's office, would they not?

A Yes.

Q How many of these complaints were made, that you recall, of your personal knowledge?

A I cannot recall just now how many were received.

Q What, if anything, did you do with respect to those which were received?

A These were passed on to the various army commanders through the Prisoner of War Information Bureau.

Q Were reports then made back by those bureau heads or individuals to you, as Minister of War, relative to these complaints?

A No, no replies or reports were sent back. These complaints were sent to the various people concerned calling the matter to their attention.

* * * *

51. 1980-C

文書第二五一四・D 號

東條英機ノ訊問抜萃

一九四六年三月二十五日

第五一六頁

Doc 2514D

問、アナタガ、米英俘虜ニ對スル虐待ガ行ハレテキ
タトイフコトニ就イテノ抗議ヤソレヲ指摘スル
ヤウナ事實ヲ初ニ知ツタノハ何時デシタカ。

答、私ノ耳ニ入ツタ抗議ハ食糧等ニ關スルモノダケ
デシタ。惨虐行為ノ事ハ私ノ耳ニハ全然入りマ
センデシタ。私ハ今日新聞ニ發表サレテキル惨
虐行為ノ真相ヲ知ツテ驚イテキル次第デス。

若シ日本人ガ天皇ノ御勅諭ニ從ツテキタカ
カ、ル惨虐行為ハ決シテ起ラナカッタデセウ。
問、然シ、アナタハコノヤウナ惨虐行為ガ行ハレテ
キタ當時ノ陸相トシテ、カ、ル行為ノ遂行ニ對
スル責任者デスネ。

答、サウデス。

問、カ、ル行為ガ極メテ廣ク行ハレ、且ツ容易ナラ
ザル性質ヲ持ツテキタニモ拘ラズ、アナタガソ
レヲ知ラナカッタトイフコトニ對シテ、アナタ
ハドウ説明デキマスカ。

答、俘虜ノ取扱ニ對シテ責任ヲ持ツテキタ現地ノ軍

RETURN TO ROOM 361

虐行爲ノ真相ヲ知ツテ驚イテキル次第デス。

若シ日本人ガ天皇ノ御勅諭ニ從ツテキタナラ

カ、ル惨虐行爲ハ決シテ起ラナカツタデセウ。

問、然シ、アナタハコノヤウナ惨虐行爲ガ行ハレテ

キタ當時ノ陸相トシテ、カ、ル行爲ノ遂行ニ對

スル責任者デスネ。

答、サウデス。

問、カ、ル行爲ガ極メテ残酷行ハレ、且ツ容易ナラ

ザル性質ヲ持ツテキタニモ拘ラズ、アナタガソ

レヲ知ラナカツタトイフコトニ對シテ、子ナタ

ハドウ説明デキマスカ。

答、俘虜ノ取扱ニ對シテ責任ヲ持ツテキタ現地ノ軍

RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 2514D

55. 1980-0

文書第二五一四・D號

東條英機ノ訊問抜萃

一九四六年三月二十五日

第五十六頁

問、アナタガ、米英俘虜ニ對スル虐待ガ行ハレテキ
タトイフコトニ就イテノ抗議ヤソレヲ指摘スル
ヤウナ事實ヲ初ニ知ツタノハ何時デシタカ。

答、私ノ耳ニ入ツタ抗議ハ食糧等ニ關スルモノダケ
デシタ。惨虐行爲ノ事ハ私ノ耳ニハ全然入りマ
センデシタ。私ハ今日新聞ニ發表サレテキル惨

Doc 2514D

指揮官達がコノ點ニ關シテ彼等ノ要務ヲ辨ヘテ
キルモノト、私ハ當ニ思ツテキマシタ。

問、一九四一年十二月七日以降ノ全期間ヲ通ジテ、
アナタハ、米英兩國ガ友好諸國ヲ通ジテ日本政
府ニ對シ、日本官吏及ビ日本政府ハ「ヘーグ」
「デエノーブ」兩條約ノ侵犯並ビニ俘虜取扱
ニ關スル戰爭規定ノ侵犯ニ對シテ責任ヲ負フヘキ
モノダトイフ警告ヲ發シタ事實ヲ知ツテキタテ
セウネ。

答、知ツテキマシタ。若シコレヲノ慘虐行爲ガ事實
ダトスレバ、條約ヲ犯シタコトニナリマス。

問、右期間ヲ通ジテアナタハ、米英兩國ガ、友好諸
國ヲ通ジ、明確ナ資料ヲ以テ「ヘーグ」、「デ
エノーブ」兩條約並ビニ俘虜待遇ニ關スル戰爭
規定ノ侵犯が行ハレタトイフコトヲソノ都度
賣メテ數多クノ抗議ヲ繰返シ行ツタコトヲ知リ
マセンデシタカ。

答、私ハ詳シイコトハ記憶シテキマセンガ、俘虜情
報局ヲ通ジテ、ソシテ抗議が入ツテ來タヤウニ
思ヒマス。

問、カ、ル抗議ハ先ヅ外務省ニ來、然ル後陸軍省ニ
送達サレテキタノデアリマセンカ。

2.

Doc 2514D

3.

答、サウデス。

問、アナタノ懲ヒ出ストコロデハ、コレヲノ抗議ノ
ウチデ、アナタ自覚知ツテキルノハ、何件位ア
リマシタカ。

答、何件位受ケ取ツタカ、今スグハ懲ヒ出セマセシ。

問、若シ何等カノ處置ヲシタトスレバアナタハコレ
ヲ受領シタ抗議ニ就イテドウシマシタカ。

答、ソレヲハ停職前線局ヲ通ジテ夫々ノ軍管指挥官ニ
移際サレマシタ。

問、ソノ後コレヲノ抗議ニ就シ、區相タルアナタニ
其ノ局長又ハ個人カラ報告ガアリマシタカ。

答、イ、エ、何等ノ回答モ、報告モ展ツテ來マセシ
テシタ。コレヲノ抗議ハ夫々ノ關係者ニ彼等ノ
注意ヲ喚起スルヤウニト送ラレタノデシタ。

× × ×

Doc. No. 2514 E

Page 1

Extract from:
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
25 March 1946
p. 7

Q Were these complaints, which were made during this period by the United States and Great Britain through friendly nations with respect to the mistreatment of their prisoners by the Japanese Government, taken up at the weekly meetings of the Prisoner Bureau that you have referred to?

A Yes. These matters were taken up at the bi-weekly meetings.

* * * *

Doc 2514-E
EX 19100

文書第二五一四、B 號

東條英機ノ訊問抜萃

一九四六年三月二十五日

第七頁

問、日本政府ニ依ル米英俘虜ノ虐待ニ關シコノ期
間中米英兩國ヨリ、友好諸國ヲ通シテ爲サレ
タコレラノ抗議ハ、アナタカ言及サレタ俘虜
局ノ週例會議ニ持テ出サレマシタカ。

答、ハイ。ソレラノ件ハ、一週二回會議ニ持テ出
サレマシタ。

× × × ×

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 201

Doc. No. 2514 F

Page 1

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
25 March 1946
p. 8 - 14

- Q Did you or anyone for you go to the scene where the mistreatment of the prisoners was alleged to have taken place to make an investigation of any of these complaints?
- A Yes, there are many instances. There was a case of mistreatment of prisoners of war during the building of the Burma-Thai Railway and I ordered a court martial in this connection.
- Q Was there any other personal investigation made of complaints made by the United States and Great Britain after 7 December 1941 with respect to the mistreatment by the Japanese Government of their captured American and British prisoners other than the one that you have just mentioned?
- A I myself heard rumors of mistreatment of prisoners of war at Bataan and when I was in the Philippines, I inquired of the Chief of Staff who informed me that the "march" was due to the lack of transportation and there were no cases of atrocities.
- Q Who was the Chief of Staff at that time?
- A Lieutenant General WACHI.
- Q What was the approximate time that you were in the Philippines and made this inquiry of the Chief of Staff?
- A This was 5 May 1943.
- Q What was the approximate date that the "Bataan March" took place?
- A I do not remember the date, but it was in the early part of 1942.
- Q How long after the "March" was it that you heard of the mistreatment of American troops?
- A These rumors came to my notice late in 1942 or early in 1943.

p.8 - 14 cont'd

Q Through what sources did you hear these rumors of the mistreatment of American troops at Bataan?

A It would be difficult to say from whom I heard these rumors.

Q Where did you hear these rumors?

A I heard these in Tokyo.

Q Regardless of what the sources of these rumors were, from how many sources did you hear them - how many occasions did you hear them?

A It would be difficult to say how many times I have heard these rumors.

Q What was the nature of the rumors that you heard in this connection?

A The rumors were to the effect that prisoners from Corregidor and Bataan had been mistreated.

Q In what respect had they been mistreated, according to the rumors?

A They had been made to walk long distances in the heat. Deaths due to mistreatment were usually referred to as death by sickness.

Q Did not the rumors also state and indicate that many of the troops who were forced to march in the heat were in no physical condition to march at all and should not have been forced to march because of their physical condition?

A No. The rumors mentioned nothing of this.

Q According to the rumors, what was the cause of the death of the American prisoners in this connection?

A All deaths were ascribed to sickness.

Q What kind of sickness caused the death of the men on that march?

A These details did not come to my notice.

p. 8 - 14 cont'd

Q But it did come to your notice from the rumors that deaths occurred as a result of the march, did it not?

A Yes.

Q How many deaths had occurred, according to the rumors?

A This was not mentioned in the rumors.

Q Did not the rumors indicate that the deaths were caused by the physical condition of the troops who had been requested or forced to march?

A The rumors only stated that the prisoners were marched long distances in the heat.

Q How long before you discussed this matter while you were in the Philippines with the Chief of Staff was it that you had heard these rumors?

A Perhaps two or three months before this date, but I do not recall.

Q How much time did you spend discussing this march and this matter with the Chief of Staff while you were in the Philippines?

A This was not the main subject of my meeting with the Chief of Staff. I had many other important matters to discuss with him and this was one subject that was involved.

Q How much time was spent discussing this matter with the Chief of Staff?

A I cannot say definitely how long we discussed this as it was one of many subjects.

Q Have you no idea whatsoever as to the amount of time you spent discussing it with the Chief of Staff?

A I am unable to say definitely how long.

p. 8 - 14 cont'd

- Q Prior to the time that you discussed it with the Chief of Staff, had not the American Government made a written complaint through a friendly nation to the Japanese Government about this very matter, setting forth the details in connection with this march and in connection with the deaths of several hundreds of American troops?
- A I do not remember well but perhaps a complaint was received.
- Q Was that matter discussed at all at any of the bureau meetings that were held weekly or bi-weekly, that you recall?
- A I do not remember, but if a complaint was received, it would be discussed at the meeting of bureau chiefs.
- Q Had this matter of the "Bataan March" and the deaths of American prisoners as the result thereof been taken up with the Chief of Staff prior to the occasion when you discussed it with him in the Philippines, as you state?
- A It was the first time that I took it up with him, but if a complaint was received from the United States, I am sure it must have been sent to the Chief of Staff through the Prisoner of War Information Bureau.
- Q Do you know, of your personal knowledge, that this matter was taken up with the Chief of Staff on any other occasion than when you took it up with him during your visit to the Philippines?
- A I was acting as Prime Minister and War Minister and I was not able to attend to details of this sort. These are left to the discretion of the chiefs of departments concerned.
- Q Do you know, of your personal knowledge, that the matter had ever been taken up with the Chief of Staff other than the time you took it up with him?
- A I have no recollection of this having been transmitted.
- Q Did the Chief of Staff indicate whether it had been taken up with him before when you discussed it with him?
- A No, as I asked him about this.
- Q But just what do you mean by that - it had been taken up with him?
- A The Chief of Staff said nothing about this matter ever being taken up with him before I mentioned it.

p. 8 - 14 cont'd

Q How long prior to the time you discussed this matter with the Chief of Staff in the Philippines was it that HOMMA had returned to Japan?

A I do not remember when he returned to Japan.

Q Were you aware of the fact that HOMMA was in Japan during the period that he came to Japan and remained here?

A Yes.

Q Did HOMMA report to the War Department here in Tokyo during the time he was in Japan after the beginning of the war with the United States?

A Perhaps he did report at the War Office, but I did not meet him.

Q Did you or anyone else discuss with HOMMA while he was here or at any other time, the rumors of the deaths of the American soldiers in the "Bataan March"?

A I did not know of these rumors at the time he returned to Japan and I do not know of anyone else having discussed these matters with him. When he returned to Japan, it was merely said that he had returned after a very successful campaign.

Q Did you or any official of the Japanese Government ever discuss with General HOMMA the matter of the deaths of the American soldiers resulting from the "Bataan March"?

A I do not know if this matter was ever discussed.

* * * *



1980E

東條英機ノ訪問談話

一九四六年三月二十五日

Doc 25/4F

第八十四頁

問、アナタ又ハアナタノ代理者ハ、コレヲノ抗議ノ何
レカヲ初産スルタメ、停虜虐待ノ場所ト申シ立テ
ラレタ現場ヘ行キマシタカ。

答、ハイ。幾多ノ例ガアリマス。泰緬鐵道建設ノ際、
停虜虐待ノコトガアツタノデ、私ハソノ件ニ關シ
テ算法會議ヲ命ジマシタ。

問、アナタガ今述べタ件以外ニ、日本政府ニ依リテ捕
ヘラレタ米英停虜ノ日本政府ニ依ル虐待ニ關シ一
九四一年十二月七日以後米英兩國ニ依ツテ爲サレ
タ抗議ニ對スル個人的調査ガ行ハレタコトガアリマスカ。

答、私自身、「バタイン」ニ於ケル停虜虐待ノ噂ヲ聞
キマシタ。ソシテ「アイリツピン」ニ滯在中、參
謀長ニ訊ネマシタ處、彼ハ「行進」ハ險惡力ノ不
足ニ依ルモノデアリ、慘虐行爲ノ行ハレタ事ハナ
イト言ヒマシタ。

問、當時ノ參謀長ハ誰デシタカ。

答、「和知」中將デシタ。

問、ア九州ガ在リテ行キ參謀長ニコノ質
問ラシタノハ、大体何時頃デシタカ。

COPY

361

Doc 2514F

答、一九四三年五月五日デシタ。

問、「バターン行進軍」が行ハレタ大体ノ月日ハ何時
デシタカ。

答、月日ハ覺エテキマセンガ、ソレハ一九四二年ノ初
期デシタ。

問、アサタガ「アメリカ」軍隊虐待ノコトヲ聞イタノ
ハ、「行進」後下ノ位タツテカラデシタカ。

答、ソノ噂ハ、一九四二年ノ終期カ、一九四三年ノ初
期ニ、私ノ耳ニ入りマシタ。

問、アナタハ如何ナル筋カラ、「バターン」ニ於ケル
「アメリカ」軍隊虐待ニ就イテノコレラノ噂ヲ聞
キマシタカ。

答、ソノ噂ヲ誰カラ聞イタカラ述ベルコトハ困難デス。

問、アナタハ何處デ、ソノ噂ヲ聞キマシタカ。

答、東京デ聞キマシタ。

問、ソノ噂ノ出所ガ何處デアツタカハ別トシテ、幾ツ
ノ出所カラアナタハソレヲ聞キマシタカ。何處位
聞キマシタカ。

答、何處ソノ噂ヲ聞イタカラ述ベルコトハ困難デス。

問、コレニ就シテアナタノ聞イタ噂ハ、ドンナ性質ノ
モノデシタカ。

答、ソノ噂ハ、「コレヒドール」及ビ「バターン」カ
ラノ噂ガ虐待サレタ旨ノモノデシタ。

又

Doc 25, 4 F

問、ソノ時テハ、彼等ハドウイフ處デ虐待サレタノデスカ。

答、彼等ハ暑熱ノ中ヲ長原隴徒歩サセラレマシタ。虐待ニ因ル死亡ハ、普通、病死ト稱サレテキマシタ。

問、時ハ又、暑熱ノ中テ強制的ニ行進サセラレタ兵隊ノ多クハ全く行進シ得ナイヤウナ肉体的状態ニアリ、ソノ彼等ノ肉体的状態カラスレバ行進ヲ強制スベキデハナカツタトイフコトヲ述べタリ、示シタリシテハキマセンデシタカ。

答、イイエ。時ハソノコトヲ言ツテハキマセンデシタ。

問、時テハ、コレニ關シテノ「アメリカ」俘虜ノ死因ハ何デアリマシタカ。

答、死亡ハ總テ疾病ニ因ルモノトサレテキマシタ。

問、ドウイフ病氣ガソノ行進ニ加ツタ者ノ死因トナリマシタカ。

答、ソノ詳シイコトハ、私ノ耳ニハ入りマセンデシタ。

問、然シ、時カラ、「行進」ノ結果トシテ死亡者ガ出タトイフコトガ、アナタノ耳ニ入ツタノデアリマセンカ。

答、サウデス。

問、時テハ、ドノ位ノ死亡者ガ出タノデスカ。

答、時ニハ、ソノ點ハ言ハシテキマセンデシタ。

3.

Doc 2514 F

4.

問、 尊ハ、ニトテ、私ハ、行進ヲ要スアリ又ハ強健ナリ、
タ算除ノ肉体的状態ニ因ルモノデアルトイフニ
ヲ示シテハキマセンデシタカ。

答、 尊ハ單ニ、行進ハ暑熱ノ中ヲ長距離行進サセラ
レタト言ツテキルニ過ギマセンデシタ。

問、 ソノ尊ヲ耳ニシタノハ、アナタガ「アイリツピン」
ニ滞在中、參謀長トコノ件ニ關シテ話合ツタ時カラ
ドノ位前デシタカ。

答、 多分ソノ時カラ二、三ヶ月前デシタ。然シ想ト出
セマセン。

問、 アナタハ、「アイリツピン」滞在中、參謀長トコ
ノ行進及ビコノ件ニ就イテドノ位ノ時間ヲ掛ケテ
話合ヒマシタカ。

答、 ソレハ參謀長トノ會見ノ一番主ナ問題デハアリマ
センデシタ。私ニハ、彼ト話合フベキ他ノ多クノ
重要ナ事柄ガアリ、ソシテ本件ハソノ中ノ一ツデ
アリマシタ。

問、 參謀長トコノ件ニ就イテ話合フノニドノ位ノ時間
ガ掛リマシタカ。

答、 ソレハ多クノ事柄ノ中ノ一ツデシタカラ、ドノ位
ソレニ就イテ話合ツタカ、ハツキリト述べルコト
ハ出来マセン。

問、 アナタハ、參謀長トソレニ關シテ話合ヒスルノニ

Doc 2514F

實シタ時同ニ就イテ、少シモ見當ガツカナイノテ
スカ。

答、私ニハ、ドノ位ダツタカハツキリト違ベルコトハ
デキマセン。

問、アナタガ参謀長トソレニ就イテ断合ヒスル前ニ、
「アメリカ」政府ハ友好國ヲ通シテ日本政府ニ對
シ、コノ「行進」並ビニ數百名ノ「アメリカ」兵
ノ死亡ニ關スル細目ヲ示シテ、本件ニ關スル文書
ニ依ル抗議ヲ提出シマセンデシタカ。

答、ヨクハ覺エテキマセンガ、恐ラクソノ抗議ハ受ケ
取ツタノデセウ。

問、アナタノ記憶デハ、コノ件ハ毎週一回又ハ毎週二
回開カレテキタ局長會議ノ何レカテ少シテモ前議
サレマシタカ。

答、私ハ記憶シテ居リマセンガ、若シ抗議ガ受領サレ
タトスレバ、ソレハ局長會議テ討議サレルコトニ
ナツテキマシタ。

問、「パターン 行進」及ビソノ結果トシテノ「アメ
リカ」停戦ノ死亡トイフ本件ニツキ「フイリツピ
ン」ニ於イテアナタガ参謀長ト断合ツタト言ハレ
ル前ニモ、コノ事ヲ参謀長ニ持テ出シタコトガア
リマスカ。

答、私ガ彼ニソノコトヲ持テ出シタノハ、ソレガ初メ

5.

Doc 2514-F

費シタ時間ニ就イテ、少シモ見當ガツカナイノデ
スカ。

答、私ニハ、ドノ位ダツタカハツキリト違ベルコトハ
デキマセン。

問、アナタガ参謀長トソレニ就イテ割合ヒスル前ニ、
「アメリカ」政府ハ友好國ヲ通ジテ日本政府ニ對
シ、コノ「行進」並ビニ數百名ノ「アメリカ」兵
ノ死亡ニ關スル細目ヲ示シテ、本件ニ關スル文書
ニ依ル抗議ヲ提出シマセンデシタカ。

答、ヨクハ覺エテキマセンガ、悉クソノ抗議ハ受ケ
取ツタノデセウ。

問、アナタノ記憶デハ、コノ件ハ毎週一回又ハ毎週二
回開カレテキタ局長會議ノ何レカデ少シデモ討議
サレマシタカ。

答、私ハ記憶シテ居リマセンガ、若シ抗議ガ受領サレ
タトスレバ、ソレハ局長會議ヲ討議サレルコトニ
ナツテキマシタ。

問、「パターン」行進」及ビソノ結果トシテノ「アメ
リカ」停戦ノ死亡トイフ本件ニツキ「フイリツビ
ン」ニ於イテアナタガ参謀長ト割合ツタト言ハレ
ル前ニモ、コノ事ヲ参謀長ニ持テ出シタコトガア
リマスカ。

答、私ガ彼ニソノコトヲ持テ出シタノハ、ソレガ初メ

5.

Doc 2514A

テデシタガ若シ「アメリカ」カラノ抗議ガ受領サ
レテキタトスレバソレハ必ず停房情報局ヲ通ジテ
参謀長ニ送達サレタニ違ヒアリマセン。

問、アナタガ「フイリツピン」訪問ノ際参謀長トコノ
問題ニ就キ相談ラシタ以外ノ場合ニモコノ問題ガ
参謀長ニ持テ出サレタコトヲ貴方自身知ツテキマ
スカ。

答、私ハ當時首相兼陸相デアツタノテソノヤウナ細イ
事柄ニ注意シテキル譯ニハ行キマセンデシタ。サ
ウイフコトハ、關係局長ノ自由ニ任セテアリマス。

問、アナタハコノ件ガ、アナタガ参謀長ト相談シタ時
以外ニモ参謀長ニ持テ出サレタコトガアルカドウ
カアナタ自身テ知ツテキマスカ。

答、私ニハソレガ移陳サレタトイフ記憶ハアリマセン。

問、参謀長ハ、アナタガ彼ト相談シタ時以前ニモ、本
件ガ参謀長ニ持テ出サレタカドウカ、何か言ヒマ
シタカ。

答、イ、エ、私が彼ニコノ件ニ付イテ訊ネタ譯デスカ
ラ。

問、ダガ、ソレハ一体ドウイフ意味ナノデスカ、ソレ
ハ既に彼ニ持テ出サレテキタト云フコトデスカ。

答、参謀長ハ、私がコノ件ヲ切り出ス前ニ、既にソレ
ガ彼ニ持テ出サレテキタコトニ就イテハ何も言ヒ

6.

Doc 2514F

7.

マセシタ。

問、テハアキタ直前ノ知ル限リ又彼ガアキタニ言ツ
タ限リテハ、ソレガ日本政府ノ旨莫又ハ貯蔵ニ依
ツテ、彼ニ持テ出サレタ最初ダツタトイフ譯テス
ネ。

答、實際ニサウカドウカ私ニハハツキリト通ベルコト
ハデキマセン。

問、彼ハサウテサイト云フコトヲ示スヤウナコトヲ何
カ言ヒマシタカ。

答、私ニハソレニ就イテ確答スルコトハデキマセン、
又参謀長ニ代ツテ御答ヘルコトモデキマセン。

問、アナタハ参謀長ニ對シ、コノ「バターン行進」及
ビ「アメリカ」停務ノ虐待ニ就イテ、ドンナコト
ヲ言ツタノデスカ。

答、私ハソノ種ノ噂ガアルトイフコトヲ述ベテ彼ノ説
明ヲ求メマシタ。

問、参謀長ハドンナ説明ヲシマシタカ。

答、参謀長ハ、輸送機關ノ不足ノタメ停務ハ暑熱ノ中
ヲ送附行進シナケレバナラナカツタ。ソシテ若干
ノ苦難ガアリ、死者が出タト説明シマシタ。

問、参謀長ハアナタトノコノ會談ノ際、停務達ハドノ
位ノ困難ヲ無理ニ行進サセラレタノカ言ヒマシタ
カ。

Doc 25/4 F

答、 「和知」中將ハ「行進」ノ際、ソコニ居合ハセナ
カツタノテ、私ニ許シイコトハ話シマセンデシタ。
彼ハコノ「行進」ニ對シテ責任者デハアリマセン
デシタ。

問、 誰ガコノ行進ニ對シテノ責任者デシタカ。

答、 本岡中將ガ當然責任ヲ負フベキデセウ。

問、 アナタハ「フイリツビン」滯在中本岡中將ニ會ヒ
マシタカ。

答、 イイエ、本岡ハ既ニ日本ニ歸ツテキマシタ。

問、 アナタハ、戦争開始後、ソシテアナタガ「フイリ
ツビン」ニ赴キコノ件ニ就イテ參謀長ト會談スル
以前ニ何時カ日本ヲ本岡中將ト會ツタコトガアリ
マスカ。

答、 イイエ、私ハ彼ガ日本ニ歸ツテ居ル間、會ヒマセ
ンデシタ。

問、 本岡ガ日本へ歸ツタノハ、アナタガ「フイリツビ
ン」テ參謀長トコノ事ニ就イテ話合ツタ時ヨリド
ノ位前ノコトデシタカ。

答、 何時彼ガ日本へ歸ツタカ、私ハ記憶シテキマセン。

問、 アナタハ、本岡ガ日本ニ歸ツテ來テ、ココニ滯在
シテキタ期間中彼ガ日本ニキタ事實ヲ知ツテキマ
シタカ。

答、 知ツテキマシタ。

7

Dec 25/47

問、本閣ハ、對米戰爭開始後、日本ニ居ツタ間、東京ノ陸軍省ニ出頭シマシタカ。

答、恐ラク陸軍省ニハ出頭シタテセウ。然シ私ハ會ヒマセンテシタ。

問、貴下又ハ他ノ誰カハ、本閣ノ當地滞在中又ハ他ノ如何ナル時期ニカ、「バターン行進」ニ於ケル「アメリカ」兵ノ死ノ辱ニ就イテ彼ト會ヒマシタカ。

答、彼ノ日本へ歸ツテキタ當時ハ、私ハコンナ辱ノアツタコトヲ知ラナカツタシ、他ノ誰カガ彼ト、コレラノ件ニ就イテ話シタトイフコトモ聞イテキマセン。彼ガ日本へ歸ツタ時ニハ、只彼ハ頗ル見事ナ戦果ヲ擧ゲテ歸國シタト言ハレタダケテシタ。

問、アナタ又ハ他ノ日本政府ノ官吏又ハ將校ノ誰カハ「バターン行進」ノ結果ニ因ル米兵死亡ノ件ニ就イテ本閣中將ト何時テモ話合ツタコトガアリマスカ。

答、私ハコノ件ニ就イテ話サレタコトガアツタカドウカ知リマセン。

X X X

9.

Q # 1981

Doc. No. 2515 B

Page 1

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
26 March 1946

b. 1 - 3

A Yesterday there was some interrogation about prisoners and there is something I would like to say about that.

Q I was about to bring that question up and ask if you didn't have something you wanted to say.

A Since the end of the war, I have read about the inhumane acts committed by Japanese army and navy personnel. These were certainly not the intention of those in authority, that is, of the General Staffs, or the War or Navy Departments, or myself. We did not even suspect that such things had happened. The Emperor especially, because of his benevolence, would have had a contrary feeling. Such acts are not permissible in Japan. The character of the Japanese people is such that they believe that neither Heaven nor Earth would permit such things. It will be too bad if people in the world believe that these inhumane acts are the result of Japanese character. /The preceding portion of the answer was read back to the witness who agreed as to its correctness./

The second point with regard to prisoners: The treatment of prisoners is the responsibility of various army commanders, hence I relied upon them to have regard for humane considerations and to follow the terms of international treaties and rules. Of course, since I was the supervisor of military administration, I am completely responsible.

The third point is that Japanese manners and customs are different from those of Europe and America and the standard of living is also different. These things affected the treatment of prisoners. There are some things I want to explain about this.

a) In regard to inhumane acts, these are not permitted under Japanese manners or customs either.

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
26 March 1945

p. 1 - 3

A Yesterday there was some interrogation about prisoners and there is something I would like to say about that.

Q I was about to bring that question up and ask if you didn't have something you wanted to say.

A Since the end of the war, I have read about the inhumane acts committed by Japanese army and navy personnel. These were certainly not the intention of those in authority, that is, of the General Staffs, or the War or Navy Departments, or myself. We did not even suspect that such things had happened. The Emperor especially, because of his benevolence, would have had a contrary feeling. Such acts are not permissible in Japan. The character of the Japanese people is such that they believe that neither Heaven nor Earth would permit such things. It will be too bad if people in the world believe that these inhumane acts are the result of Japanese character. [The preceding portion of the answer was read back to the witness who agreed as to its correctness.]

The second point with regard to prisoners: The treatment of prisoners is the responsibility of various army commanders, hence I relied upon them to have regard for humane considerations and to follow the terms of international treaties and rules. Of course, since I was the supervisor of military administration, I am completely responsible.

The third point is that Japanese manners and customs are different from those of Europe and America and the standard of living is also different. These things affected the treatment of prisoners. There are some things I want to explain about this.

a) In regard to inhumane acts, these are not permitted under Japanese manners or customs either.

p. 1 - 3 cont'd

b) In regard to the difference in the standard of living, the treaties provide that prisoners are to be given the same rations as the troops of the detaining nation. That was also directed in orders that were issued. Because of the difference in the standard of living, the American and European prisoners thought when they were given the same rations as Japanese troops that the rations were very very unappetizing. Particularly, on the battlefields, this feeling was very strong, I believe. In regard to life in the barracks *[akuba]*, the barracks, for example, at Omori, which are field barracks *[yocichi]*, they would not be thought had by the Japanese troops, but the European and American prisoners thought they were very poor.

c) The Japanese idea about being taken prisoner is different from that in Europe and America. In Japan, it is regarded as a disgrace. Under Japanese criminal law, anyone who becomes a prisoner while still able to resist has committed a criminal offense, the maximum punishment for which is the death penalty. In Europe and America, it is different. A person who is taken prisoner is honored because he has discharged his duties, but in Japan, it is very different.

d) I want to say something now about the feeling with regard to sleeping on the side of the face. In Japanese families where the educational standard is low, slapping is used as a means of training. In the Japanese army and navy, although this is forbidden, it continues in fact because of the influence of the customs of the people. This, of course, is a custom that ought to be corrected; it ought to be stopped; but I don't think it is a crime. It is something that comes from custom. That is all I want to say on this.

There is a correction I would like to make regarding yesterday's interrogation. Yesterday, I was asked if I had met Lieutenant General HOMMA. I said that I had not met him, but this year when I was in Omori Prison, I met him. One other point. When an army commander came back to Japan during the war, he would make a situation report to the Emperor. On such occasions, he would be accompanied by the Chief of Staff and the War Minister. I do not well remember, it may be that I met HOMMA on such an occasion since he was an army commander. That is all I wanted to say.

* * * * *

Doc. 25750

以上各節之解釋及之字之分別關於行一次會議決議他處
三二二號會議上之文字上推測三二二號
問. 會及會後之行為行進之終下不於會行爲者其行爲之幾處
行爲上非會議的行爲之關之行等會議決議或會中之發言
致三二二號之關之三二二號.

答. 其命令官於會議後取之文字上思之.

問. 何種根據三二二號之文字.

答. 一事件之發生與否之事實之取之事實正之命令¹⁰⁶之通達之文字
上思之.

問. 三二二號之事實之取之文字上之實之推測之文字上思之.

答. 三二二號之命令官實任之文字上之事實之取之文字上思之.
x x x

NO. 2

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
26 March 1946

p. 4 - 5

- Q Do you not recall that the Japanese Government informed the United States, through the Swiss Government on or about 30 January 1941, that Japan would follow, in the war then pending: (1) The various international conventions, including those signed at The Hague and Geneva; (2) International law; (3) The rules and customs of law as to prisoners and civilians?
- A I don't recall it, but I think it is very likely.
- Q You state that you are now aware of the fact that that promise was not kept or carried out. Why was it not complied with or kept? Do you understand the question?
- A I understand it as regards the inhumane acts towards prisoners that we have talked about. It was the Government's intention to follow these conventions, and it was mine. The fact that these things happened is very much to be regretted. The responsibility for them is mine.
- Q You mentioned today that you did not even suspect the occurrence of these atrocities and the inhumane treatment of prisoners. How can you say this when the United States and Great Britain, through the Swiss and other governments, made numerous written and detailed complaints to your Foreign Office about these very matters?
- A The matter of responsibility for humane considerations and the following of treaty provisions was the responsibility of the various army commanders. I believed that they were following them. That is my answer.
- Q So that, although these numerous complaints were made on these matters, you still trusted the commanders in the field and did not believe the complaints. Is that true?
- A As I said before, when a protest would come in, I would forward it to the responsible army commander involved for action which I thought was taken. I could not tell whether the protest was appropriate or not, and I presumed that investigations were made, followed by courts martial or other suitable action.

p. 4 - 5 cont'd

Q Did you hear of any courts martial or suitable action taken in connection with the atrocities and inhumane acts against American prisoners in the "Bataan March" that we spoke about yesterday and today?

A I think that the commanding officer took legal measures.

Q On what do you base that statement?

A The facts of that case would have gone to the commanding officer who had the responsibility for taking appropriate action.

Q Then, it is only your speculation that such action was taken?

A Yes, but I think it was taken because it was his responsibility.

* * * * *

Ac. 25150

此乃為教三解りて之に外敬調公行ハ次ニ奉法會議ニ依テ道

三ニ此靈運ノ事ニ及テハ推測ニナリ

問

昨且及今日語多クハ二行進ニ於テ下カハ行邊ヲ并ニ行ハテ殘屋

行邊ト非テ道的行邊ニ關テ何等カ奉法會議ニ及テ非テ靈運

ノ事トナリトナリ聞キニカ

答 其司會官カ合志靈運ヲ取ルニ上思ヒテ

問 何ノ根據ニナク云フテカ

答 一事件ノ類ニテ靈運ヲ取ルニ責任ヲ司會ニ運進セリトナリ

上思ヒテ

問 一ニニ此カノ靈運ヲ取ルニハ貴方ノ推測ニ依テナリテカ

答 此カノ事ニカミテ司會官ノ責任ヲ取ルニハ貴方ノ上思ヒテ

X X X

Q. # 1981 C

Doc. No. 2515 E

Page 1

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
26 March 1946

p. 6 - 7

Q You state that when complaints were made by the United States and Great Britain about the inhumane treatment of their prisoners of war, the complaints would come to the Foreign Ministry and then to the War Department. Were copies of these complaints sent to the Emperor, or was the Emperor informed in any way of them?

A No, he was not. I handled them on my own responsibility.

Q Why was not the Emperor, as Commander-in-Chief of the Japanese army and navy, advised of these complaints?

A I thought it was all right to handle them on my own responsibility.

Q Since the Emperor had ordered that prisoners of war should not be mistreated, did he not have the right to know of these protests.

A I understood the Emperor's feelings very well. On my own responsibility, I sent these protests to the responsible field commanders for investigation as to the facts. The Emperor was busy and had a great deal of work so I did this on my own. Consequently, the Emperor is not responsible in connection with this matter. I am responsible.

* * * * *

Doc. 2575E

Page 22

一九四六年三月二十六日東京英機訊問摘要

本國國勢自國令停戰對之非合道的+取扱=就=抗議=提
出=場合=抗議=何時=外務省=亦=上=陸軍省=亦=貴下=
述=之=外=抗議=爲=天皇=提=出=又=天皇=之=等=抗議
=無=休=報=出=之=事=ナリ=カ。

問. 天皇=報=告=之=事=ナリ=カ. 私=之=獨=斷=之=處=理=之=事=ナリ=カ.

答. 何故=本=陸=海=軍=大=帥=之=天皇=之=等=抗議=知=れ=之=事=ナリ=カ.

問. 天皇=行=爲=之=是=情=事=ナリ=カ. 又=上=之=事=亦=令=之=事=ナリ=カ. 天皇=之=等=

抗議=知=權利=之=事=ナリ=カ.

答. 天皇=特=命=之=事=ナリ=カ. 私=獨=斷=之=等=抗議=之=事=亦=然=爾

之=事=也=其=後=亦=復=地=司=令=官=送=之=事=ナリ=カ. 天皇=御=忙=之=事=亦=亦

山=生=等=自=培=之=事=ナリ=カ. 私=獨=斷=之=事=亦=亦=然=爾=之=事=天皇=之=

等=爾=之=責任=之=事=ナリ=カ. 私=責任=之=事=ナリ=カ.

2x 19810

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 351

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
27 March 1946

p. 3 - 7

Q What was the purpose of your visit to the Philippines, that you have referred to, when you spoke to the Chief of Staff in connection with the "Bataan March"?

A Let's see, the independence of the Philippines was on 14 October 1943. It was in connection with the independence of the Philippines and conditions in the Philippine Islands. The purpose of it was chiefly in regard to matters related to the independence of the Philippines. I principally wanted to talk to important Filipinos in connection with independence matters.

Q How long were you in the Philippine Islands at this time?

A About three days, I think.

Q During the war, that is, from 7 December 1941 until the end of the war, was that your only visit, or were you there on other occasions?

A No, I went twice during the war.

Q What was the approximate date and purpose of that visit?

A I arrived in Thai on 4 July 1943, I believe, and stayed there, I think, for three days - the 4th, 5th and 6th. That was the principal objective of the visit, but on the way back, I spent two or three days in Malaya, one night in Sumatra, one night in Java, and one night in Manila; then I came back by plane via Formosa to Japan.

Q How many times were you in Formosa and Thai from 7 December 1941 until the end of the war?

A I was only in Thai the one time that I have mentioned. I was in Formosa twice, that is, going and coming, on the trip to the Philippines in May 1943; and again twice going and coming on the trip to Thai in July 1943.

Q What was your purpose in speaking to the Chief of Staff, on your visit in May to the Philippines, about the "Bataan March"?

A There were various matters in connection with the independence of the Philippines. They were the principal

things. I spoke to the Chief of Staff about this other matter, but it was not a principal matter of discussion.

Q Why did you discuss this matter at all with the Chief of Staff?

A As I said before, there were various rumors of the sufferings that prisoners had experienced and I inquired of the Chief of Staff because I wanted to find out the facts about it.

Q Just what did you ask him in this connection?

A I said, "I have heard these rumors about the sufferings of the prisoners. What are the facts?" He replied that it was in the broiling sun, and that means of transport were lacking and so they walked them a long ways, and that it was a fact.

Q What was a fact?

A That it was a fact that they had walked them this long distance.

Q Did you ask him or did you find out how long the distance was that the men were marched?

A I have an impression about the main conversation, but I don't remember the details beyond that.

Q Were you not interested in finding out what distance the men had been marched in the broiling sun?

A It is difficult for me now to recall to just what degree of detail the conversation extended.

Q Do you know how far it is from Bataan to San Fernando?

A I don't remember.

Q Do you recall whether you learned from the Chief of Staff how many men had either fallen out, being unable to finish, or died during the March?

A No, I don't remember details like that, but I got the impression that the responsible commander, who was Lieutenant General HOMMA, did what he could under the circumstances then prevailing.

Q What led to your belief that General HOMMA had done what he could under the circumstances prevailing?

- A It is a problem of responsibility. As Supreme Commander in the Philippines at that time, he had a great responsibility to the Emperor. This responsibility was, on the one hand, to conduct the fighting and, on the other, to establish peace and order; as to prisoners, I think that, as the responsible commander, he did what he could. It is Japanese custom /tatemae/ for a commander of an expeditionary army in the field to be given a mission in the performance of which he is not subject to specific orders from Tokyo, but has considerable autonomy. (This is called the heavy responsibility of an expeditionary force commander /kongai no jūnin/),
(Reference: 3700-1-1)
- Q The protest of the United States Government, which was made to Japan, charged that the prisoners in the "Bataan March" were beaten, bayoneted, and shot. Did you discuss that with the Chief of Staff during your visit?
- A No, I didn't talk to him about those things. I thought that if the responsible army commander knew about those things, he would take proper action. I thought that the responsible army commander would take appropriate measures if things contrary to international law had happened.
- Q Did you inquire on either of your trips to the Philippines to find out if any action whatsoever had been taken in these matters?
- A No. As I said before, since the responsible commander had the authority I relied upon him in this matter. I only asked about the main points. Everyone thought that the Japanese character would not permit acts of an atrocious nature. This little booklet which I have here was issued on 8 January 1941 in connection with the China Incident. The title of it is "Teachings for the Battlefield" /Senjin kun/. It was issued by me as War Minister and at the time of the Greater East Asia War, officers and men had the same instructions. I will quote only briefly. Properly, it is a book on fighting, but if you will translate the pages I have marked in blue pencil, I will appreciate it. I thought that these were being carried out. /The booklet was given to the interpreter with the pages marked which will be translated and inserted in the record. See attached translation of booklet which is being made a part of this interrogation./
- Q During your two visits to the Philippines, that you have referred to, did you visit and inspect either Camp O'Donnell, or any other prison camp?

- A No, I didn't. I had no time for it. The only one I visited was Omori Prison Camp, here in Japan.
- Q While you were in the Philippines on those two occasions, did you visit any camp where civilians were interned?
- A No, I didn't. I am not too sure, but it seems to me I visited one camp for civilians in Malaya, I think it was. I am not sure about it.
- Q During either of those visits to the Philippines, did you look into or inspect the treatment that wounded American soldiers and Filipinos were receiving?
- A I visited a hospital where there were wounded Japanese, but I don't know whether there were wounded Filipinos or Americans in it or not.
- Q And your purpose in going there was to visit the Japanese wounded, was it not?
- A Yes, that was the main thing.
- Q And you did not go to that hospital looking for either Filipinos or American wounded, did you?
- A No, not specially. As I said, I did visit the hospital, but I don't know whether there were any wounded Americans or Filipinos there or not.
- Q During your visits to Thai and Formosa, did you visit any prison camps at which American and British prisoners were interned?
- A No, I didn't. In Formosa, I stopped at Taihoku. I think the prison camp was at Karenko, which was a long distance away. But I went to Taihoku.

* * * * *

Attachment: Partial translation of booklet entitled "Teachings for the Battlefield" [Senjin Kun.]

NOTE: The witness produced a 32-page pamphlet entitled "Teachings for the Battlefield" Senjin Kun issued on 8 January 1941, over his own name, several passages of which were underlined. The underlined passages are translated as follows:

* * * * *

Page 2 and 3. "When within the surroundings of the battlefield, one is apt to be absorbed by what is immediately before one's eyes and stray from principles and occasionally these acts may be contrary to one's duty as a soldier. Much discretion is needed."

Page 5 and 6. "To obey Imperial commands, to be brave as well as just, to be humane as well as brave, and to realize the grand harmony of the world - such is the spirit of the Emperor Jimmu, first Emperor of Japan. Bravery must be stern and charity must be far-reaching. If there is any enemy resisting the Imperial troops, we must destroy him with our tempestuous military power. Even if we succeed in subduing our enemy with our unrelenting power, if we lack the grace of refraining from attacking those who have laid down their arms and of treating kindly those who obey us, we can hardly be called perfect soldiers."

Page 24 and 25. "Care must be taken in the protection of property and materials owned by the enemy. Requisition, confiscation and destruction of materials, etc., must always be effected in accordance with regulations and invariably in conformity with orders by commanding officers. In view of the basic principles of the Imperial Army, we must be magnanimous of heart and treat innocent inhabitants with kindness."

Faint, mostly illegible text, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side of the page. Some words like "question" and "answer" are faintly visible.

No / not used
PC 831 mg
Dec 14/81 B

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

Doc 4/181B

往復ニ立寄リ、更ニ同日、九時手船程等二首奉行ノ旅行、往復ニ立寄リマシタ。

問 貴方、吾等、此等訪問時ニ、タリ、進ニ就キ、参謀長話ニ、目的、何デシタカ。

答 實ニ、種々ノ問題アリマシタ。ソレガ主要ナル用件デシタ。ソレ以外、此ニ就キ、参謀長話ヲシタ。カ、ソレハ、主要ナル話題デ、アリマシタ。

問 一体何故、貴方ハ、此ノ件ヲ、参謀長ト討議シタ、デスカ。

答 前ニ申シ、ト、ケ、キ、嫌ニ、停廢ガ、尾待ヲ、受ケ、タ、ト、言フ、種

々ノ、評判ガ、有リ、マシタ。ソレ、テ、私、ソレ、ニ、就キ、テ、真相ヲ

知リ、タ、ト、思フ、タ、ト、テ、参謀長ニ、質問シ、マシタ。

問 ソ、問題ニ、就テ、ハ、ク、リ、ド、フ、言フ、コトヲ、彼ニ、尋ネ、タ、デ、スカ。

答 私人ノ、停廢ノ、甚シ、ク、ト、イフ、コトニ、就キ、テ、是々ノ、噂

ヲ、聞イ、テ、其ルガ、事實ハ、何、ウ、ナ、カ、ト、申シ、マシタ。彼

ハ、火天下デ、アリ、且、又、輸送機關ガ、不足、テ、

彼等ヲ、長イ、間、歩カ、セ、タ、ト、コトガ、ア、ラ、タ、カ、リ、シ、ガ、

事實ト、イ、フ、ト、合、ヘ、マシタ。

問 事實ト、イ、フ、言フ、事實、ト、コト、デ、スカ。

答 長イ、間、歩カ、セ、タ、ト、イフ、カ、事實、デ、ア、リ、マシタ。

問 其ノ、人達ガ、行進、サ、セ、ル、タ、リ、ハ、何、ノ、位、ノ、距

離、デ、ア、ラ、タ、カ。

No 2

貴方、参謀長三尋之之之方又、自合于合リ之方
 答、私、合謀、要旨、覺王、居リ之方又、大、以、上、前
 上ト、記憶致之セシ。

問、貴方、停屬、遠、矣、天下、ト、程、距離、ヲ、行、進、
 セ、ラ、タ、カ、ヲ、知、ル、上、ト、思、ハ、カ、ラ、シ、キ、事、ナ、リ。

答、何、後、詳、之、ト、述、論、心、合、カ、ラ、シ、キ、事、今、思
 出、ス、ハ、固、難、示、ス、リ、ス。

問、貴方、ハ、「ハ、タ、シ、カ、ニ、廿、六、日、ト、述、何、後、之、カ
 知、リ、居、リ、之、カ、

答、覺、王、ヲ、居、リ、セ、シ。

問、貴方、ハ、其、行、進、中、ト、程、多、ク、者、落、伍、ト、倒、シ、リ、
 又、死、亡、シ、カ、ラ、参、謀、長、ヨリ、問、フ、カ、何、ウ、カ、思、ハ、シ、
 之、カ、

答、至、私、ハ、其、様、ヲ、詳、細、上、ト、ハ、記、憶、致、シ、タ、シ、然、レ、私、責
 任、有、ル、ト、同、令、官、即、チ、本、間、中、將、ハ、當、時、情、勢、下、ニ、
 於、テ、出、来、ル、限、リ、ノ、コ、ト、ヲ、云、フ、事、察、シ、長、ク、之、カ、

問、當、時、情、勢、下、ニ、於、テ、本、間、中、將、ハ、出、来、ル、限、リ、ノ、
 コ、ト、ヲ、云、フ、貴、方、ハ、信、念、ハ、何、處、ヲ、得、タ、ノ、事、ナ、リ、

答、夫、レ、ハ、責、任、ノ、問、題、ナ、リ、マ、ス。當、時、以、自、己、ニ、於、テ、ハ、最、高
 指、揮、官、ト、シ、テ、彼、ノ、陛、下、ニ、對、シ、テ、重、大、ノ、責、任、亦、有、
 リ、タ、シ、此、ノ、責、任、ハ、一、面、ニ、於、テ、戰、闘、ヲ、行、ヒ、他、面、ニ、於、テ、治
 安、ヲ、確、立、ス、ル、コ、ト、ナ、リ、マ、シ、タ、。停、屬、ニ、関、シ、テ、ハ、責、任、同、
 令、官、ト、シ、テ、彼、ハ、出、来、ル、限、リ、ノ、コ、ト、ヲ、行、フ、タ、シ、私、ハ、思、ヒ、
 ス。日、本、ノ、建、前、ハ、現、地、派、遣、軍、司、令、官、ハ、其、様、ノ
 コ、ト、ヲ、任、務、ヲ、遂、行、ス、當、時、ハ、一、々、東、京、カ、ラ、一、命、令、ヲ、仰

Doc 4/18/B

No 3

問 貴方、参謀長二字を以て、以て自任をなさる。然し、参謀長は、参謀官の首長に過ぎず、其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

答 貴方、参謀長は、以て天下の責任を負ふべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

問 何れに於て、以て、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

答 貴方、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

問 貴方、其の、行軍中に、種多ク、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

答 否、其の、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

問 貴方、其の、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

答 是の、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

問 貴方、其の、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

答 是の、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

問 貴方、其の、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

答 是の、参謀長は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。其の責任は、以て、参謀官の責任に委ねらるべきに非ざるや。

Doc 4181B

No 4

クアトク相違ト獨斷權ヲ以テ之ヲ遂行スルコトニテ
テ居ラス。コレハ「榎外ノ重臣」ト稱セラレテ居リマス。

問. 日本ニ對シテ行ハク米國政府ノ抗議ハ「ハタ」ニ行進ニ
於テ停虜ガ打擲セシ銃劍ヲ突カシ且射殺サレタ
事實ヲ責メマシタ。貴方ハ訪問中參謀長ト夫レヲ
誰合トシタカ。

答. 否。私。夫等ノ事ニ就テ誰レニセシテシタ。私ハ責任者タル
軍司令官ガ夫等ノ事ヲ知ツタナズ。適當ナル處置
ヲ取ルコトヲ思ヒマシタ。私ハ責任者タル軍司令官ハ
若シ國際法ニ及スルヤウナ事ガ起ツタトシタナラバ適當
ノ手段ヲ講ジシガスヲ思ヒマシタ。

問. 貴方ハ比島ヘノ何レカノ旅行ニ於テ之等ノ事件ニ就キ何等
カノ處置ガ取ラセタカ何レカヲ知ルガトニ調ベマシタカ。

答. 否。前申シマシタ通り責任者タル司令官ガソノ權限ヲ持
ツテ居タコトデスカラ私ハ此件ニ就テハ彼ヲ信賴シマシタ。
私ハ唯主要ト安ニ付テ之ヲ尋ネタニ過ギマセシテシタ。
日本人ノ性格ハ殘虐性ノ行爲ナド許スモノデハナイト誰デ
モ思ツテ居マシタ。私ガ持ツテ居ル此ノ冊子ハ支那事變
ニ關シテ一九四一年一月八日發行サレマシタ。其ノ名稱ハ戰
陣訓デアリマス。夫レハ陸相タル私ニ依リ發行セシト東
亞戰爭ノ時ニ將卒ノ同シ教訓ヲ受テ居タデアリマス。
私ハ唯一寸タテ引用致シマセウ。本末夫ハ戰鬪ニ關ル書物
デアリマスガ若シ貴方ガ私ノ著鉛筆ヲ印ヲ附ケタ頁ヲ翻譯シテ
下カルヲハ有難ク存ジマス私ノ之等ノコトガ実行サレテ居ルと思ヒマシ
タ。其ノ冊子ノ頁印ヲ附ケテ通譯者ノ讀カタルガ右個所ヲ翻譯セシ
記録ニ綴入セラル可シ。

Doc 4181B

添附ノ小冊子、翻譯文参照右ノ本訊問ニ發命ヲ成スルナリ
問 向貴方が述之タニ因、比島訪問中貴方ハ何トモシテ傳書收
答 所又ハ其他ノ傳書收答所ヲ訪問シテ觀察ニシタリカ
答 否私ニ致シマセシメシタリ、暇が有りマセシメシタリ、私ノ訪問
ニタリ、日本ノ大森收答所ニテシタリ

問 三向三且、貴方が比島ニ居テ民間人が柳田井ノ下居テ何
り、收答所ヲ訪問ニシタリカ

答 否致シマセシメシタリ、餘リ確カテハ、私ハ「ア」ト
シタリ、一般人、收答所ヲ何所訪問ニシタリ、概ニ思ハシメ又然ル
ニシテ致シマセシ

問 貴方何レカ、比島訪問中貴方ハ真偽ニ非ニ米兵隊
比島人が彼等ノ居ニ取扱ヲ受ケタリ、又ハ觀察ニタリシコトガ
アリマスカ

答 否、真偽ニシテ日本人、居テ病院ヲ訪問シタリ、事ガアリマス然レ
シコト、真偽ニシテ比島人、居テ、米人が居テ何レカ知ラセシ
問 貴方、ソコノ行キタリ目的ハ日本人、真偽都ヲ訪問スルタメニ
タリマスカ

答 否、夫レノ事ニ事ナシ
問 貴方、ソコノ病院ニ行キ、比島人又ハ米人、真偽都ヲ

見ヨトシカ、カ、タ、リ、不
答 否、格別ニ左様致シマセシメシタリ、今申シタリ、通リ病院ヲ訪
問シタリ、ソコニ真偽ニシテ米人又ハ比島人が居テ何レカ知ラ
セシ

No 5

問 貴方、泰及ハ比島訪問中米兵隊傳書ガ柳田井ノ下居ニ傳
書收答所ヲ何処ニ訪問ニシタリカ

Doc 4181B

定否私ハ行キモ之ヲ官憲ニ台此ニ治リ之ヲ修憲收迄所
在處ノ離ルル此處迄ニ在リト思ヒマス私ハ台此ニ行リテ
之ヲ

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

添附「戰陣訓」上表題セル小冊子ノ段并ニ翻譯
註「陳述人ハ彼自身ノ名ヲ記サレ九四號ノ台此ニ行リテ
訓」上表題ヲ附シテ之ヲ印サレタル三十二頁ノ小冊子ニ提
印ヲ附シタル段ハ在リ如ク翻譯セル也

第三系「戰陣環境」タル也モスバ眼ノ事多ク提(ラシ
大在リ名地ニ時ニノ行動軍人ノ命令ニ依リ如キ
ナリトモ深ク慎ミガルヤ

第五十六頁「皇軍大御心ヲ奉ル正ニテ武武ニテ仁克ノ世
大和ヲ現スルモ一是神武自本初ノ皇軍ニ對シテ
武ノ嚴シクニ仁ハ通キヲ要ス而モ皇軍ニ抗ス
敵ニハ烈クタル武威ヲ揮ヒ斷乎之ヲ擊碎ス
之假令峻嚴ノ威克ノ敵ヲ屈服セシムモ服スル
擊ヲ先ク公認シテ徳ヲ缺クルハ非シ以テ全
トハ言ヒ難シ

第五十三頁「敵産敵資ノ保護ニ當リテ要ス徵收押收物
資ノ燼滅等ハ總ニ規定ニ從ヒテ指揮官ノ命ニ依
ルニ皇軍ノ本義ニ鑑ミテ之ノ般ノ無辜ノ民
ヲ保護スル也

XXXXXX

NO 6

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
28 March 1946

p. 1 - 4

Q Within a month after the war with America started, was not the Prisoner of War Information Bureau set up?

A Yes, it was. It was set up on a basis of treaties.

Q Within two or three months thereafter, there was set up, was there not, the Prisoner of War Administrative Section? I am not sure if this is the correct Japanese title for it, however.

A All the work dealing with military prisoners was handled by the Prisoner Information Bureau, I think. Was this a public body?

Q Yes, I think it was part of the War Department and very similar to the Prisoner Information Bureau.

A I believe it was handled by the Prisoner Information Bureau. There was a separate body under the Home Ministry, however, to deal with civilians. I don't know what the name of that was.

Q What organizations, in addition to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, were set up by the War Department for dealing with prisoners?

A Besides the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, there were the Prisoner Reception Centers [shuyajo].

Q Were there a number of these?

A Yes.

Q And the number and locations of these were fixed by the Minister of War, were they not?

A Yes, as the number of prisoners increased, the number of centers increased in the same way.

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
28 March 1945

p. 1 - 4

Q Within a month after the war with America started, was not the Prisoner of War Information Bureau set up?

A Yes, it was. It was set up on a basis of treaties.

Q Within two or three months thereafter, there was set up, was there not, the Prisoner of War Administrative Section? I am not sure if this is the correct Japanese title for it, however.

A All the work dealing with military prisoners was handled by the Prisoner Information Bureau, I think. Was this a public body?

Q Yes, I think it was part of the War Department and very similar to the Prisoner Information Bureau.

A I believe it was handled by the Prisoner Information Bureau. There was a separate body under the Home Ministry, however, to deal with civilians. I don't know what the name of that was.

Q What organizations, in addition to the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, were set up by the War Department for dealing with prisoners?

A Besides the Prisoner of War Information Bureau, there were the Prisoner Reception Centers [shuyajo].

Q Were there a number of these?

A Yes.

Q And the number and locations of these were fixed by the Minister of War, were they not?

A. Yes, as the number of prisoners increased, the number of centers increased in the same way.

n. 1 = 4 sept 12

Q And regulations and orders with respect to prisoners of war were either made or approved by the War Minister, were they not?

A Yes, of course.

Q So that certain clerical work with respect to prisoners of war was done here in Tokyo, but the actual handling of prisoners in the field was performed by the heads of the centers under the regulations and orders received from the War Department, was it not?

A Yes, of course. About the orders, there was one other thing. The War Minister issued the orders, but the army commanders could issue further orders on the basis of those issued by the War Minister.

Q Did these orders have to be consistent in principle with the orders issued by the War Minister?

A Yes, of course. They were issued on a basis of the War Minister's orders.

Q And the clerical work, which was done with respect to the prisoners in Tokyo, was directly under the Military Affairs Bureau, was it not?

A It was done by the Military Affairs Bureau. The rules were the result of conferences between the Chief of the Military Affairs Bureau and the General Staff.

Q You mean the Chief of the General Staff?

A No, someone under him.

Q How many members of the General Staff did the Chief of the Military Affairs Board confer with in connection with these matters, and who were they.

A The head of the Military Affairs Bureau was a member of the War Department, of course. Depending on the nature of the problem, he would confer with any one of the four General Staff sections, that is to say, with the first section, Operations; second section, Intelligence; third section, Transport; or with the General Affairs Section.

p. 1 - 4 cont'd

Q Who was head of the Military Affairs Bureau within a short time after the war with America started?

A Akira MUTO. At that time he was a major general.

Q How long did he remain Chief of the Military Affairs Bureau?

A I don't remember well, but I think he remained in that position until August or October of 1942.

Q Who was head of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau at the beginning of the war and after?

A Lieutenant General UEMURA. I don't know his first name.

Q Was it Mikio?

A I think so.

Q Do you remember telling Lieutenant General UEMURA that the prisoners of war must be used to increase Japan's production?

A I permitted their use in factories. This was based on treaties.

Q Do you recall also stating, in early 1942 that in order to show the might of Japan, it would be necessary to establish prisoner of war camps in Korea, Formosa, Manchuria and China and have the prisoners undergo compulsory labor?

A Do you mean that I said that?

Q Didn't you say that in substance if not in the same words?

A No. The location of the camps was determined by transport considerations and labor considerations. One other thing I would like to say. You spoke of forced labor kyosei rodō. It was not that. This was based on international law which enables prisoners of the rank of Petty Officer and below to be employed as workers. Commissioned Officers can be employed at their own request. I think that was specified in the rules which I issued as Minister of War and to which I referred a moment ago.

Q Who succeed MUTO as head of the Military Affairs Bureau?

A Kenryō SATO. At that time he was a major general.

* * * *

EXHIBIT 1983 A

4182 A

文書番号四二八二A 號

一九四三年三月三日

東條英機 質問より、答

一頁、一四頁

問、対米戦争開始後、一月以内、俘虜情報局が設けられたり
したか。

答、左様です。條約に基づき設けられた。

問、其後、二三月に俘虜管理層が設置されたか、
否之が其、正に日本語、如無知、少トウカ合リセカ。

答、軍事俘虜に關する仕事全部、俘虜情報局に取扱
様ニ考ヘ、ソレハ公機關デシタカ。

問、左様、ソレハ陸軍省、一部ヲトモト思ヒ、ソレハ俘虜情報
局ニシテ居リタカ。

答、ソレハ俘虜情報局ニシテ取扱ヒタカト思ヒ、ソレハ内務省、下ニ非戰
關與ヲ扱フ別個機關ガアリタカ。其、名前ヲ何トシタカ承知
シ居ラセ。

問、俘虜情報局、外ニ俘虜取扱、為ニ如何ナル機關ガ陸軍省ニ
シテ設ケラレタカ。

答、俘虜情報局、外ニ俘虜收容所ガアリタカ。

問、ソレハ多数アリシカカ。

答、左様です。

問、ソレハソレハ、場所、陸軍大臣ガ決定シタカ、不
左様、增加ルニシテ、數ニ據リ

答、多シ。決裁シ

問、俘虜ニ關スル規則、命令、TO ROOM 361

REFLECT COPY

4182A

居りて不

答 勿論左様矣

向 是ト、俘虜ニ関スル或種ノ書類ニ就テ、当地、東京ヲ扱ヒタテ
モ、現地ニ於ケル實際、俘虜、取扱ハ收容所長ヨリ陸軍省ヲ
受テ規則命令ニ從ツテ行ハタシテ不

答 勿論左様矣。命令ニ就テ、今、下ガリニテ、陸軍大臣ハ命令
ヲ出シタガ、軍司令部ハ右、陸軍大臣、命令ニ基テ、其、先
命令ガ出タガ矣

向 其、命令ハ原則トシテ、陸軍大臣、發元命令ト一致シテ居ル
ハイタクタガデスカ

答 勿論左様デス。陸軍大臣、命令ニ基テテ發出シタガデス

向 以テ、東京ヲ行ヒタテ、俘虜ニ関スル書類上、事務トシテ、直接
軍務局、管下ニツタフセウカ

答 軍務局ヲ扱ッテ居リタガ、其、規則ハ軍務局長ト參謀本部
ト、協議、結果出キタガデス

向 參謀總長、意味デカ

答 一、參謀總長、部下、有テス

向 本件ニ付テ、軍務局長、參謀本部員幾人ト協議シタガ、
又、參謀本部員ハ誰タガ

262

答 軍務局長ハ勿論陸軍省員デカ、問題、性質上、參謀本部、
四部、何レトモ協議シタガ、四部即チ一部作戦、二部
情報、三部運輸交通及總務部矣

向 対米戦争開始直後、軍務局長ハ誰デカ

答 武藤章矣。其時少將ヲカ

4182A

向、彼ト、位軍務局長、職ニ居タラスカ

答、之ヲ記憶シテ、一九四三年、八月ノ十月迄、其職ニ居タト思ヒス。

向、戦争ノ開始及其後、俘虜情報局長、誰ヲシカ。

答、植村中將ヲ、其ノ名前、知ラズ。

向、軒雄ヲシカ。

答、之ヲト思ヒス。

向、貴方植村中將ニ俘虜八百本、生産増加ニ使用スル外、誰
シカノ寛ヲ居ラスカ。

答、俘虜ヲ工場ニ使用スル外、私ノ許可シテ、之ニ條約ニ基キテ、
居リシカ。

向、一九四三年、初メニ日本、威勢ヲ見セ、爲ニ朝鮮、台湾、滿洲
中国ニ俘虜收容所ヲ設ケ、俘虜ニ強制労働ヲ課スル必要カ
ルト云フ下、誰ヲシカ。

答、之ガシラ、之ヲト仰ルシカ。

向、同じ言葉ヲハクテモ、其ノ意味、二トヲ云ハシセテシカ。

答、一、ニ收容所、位置、輸送ト労働ト、關係ヲ決定セシカ。

今ニ申上ケタイトガアリニ、貴方、強制労働、事ヲ云ハシカ。

之ニ違ヒシカ。下ニ官以下、俘虜ヲ労働者トシテ使ヒ得ルト云フ

國際法ニ基キテ居ラス。將校達ノ本人、希望ガコト使用

ヲイフテ居ラス。此ノ下、今一寸、前ニテ話シ、私ガ陸軍大臣

トシテ出シ規則中ニ明示シテシカト思ヒス。

向、軍務局長トシテ、武蔵、後任ハ誰ヲシカ。

答、佐藤賢ヲシカ。其ノ時少將ヲシカ。

×××××

No 3

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
28 March 1946

p. 7 - 8

Q Had you heard at any time that the treatment received by prisoners of war in the Philippines, Formosa, and Thailand was not only inhumane, but was below the standard given to Japanese prisoners of war?

A I supposed that the treatment being given to prisoners was on the same level as that given to our own troops. However the conditions under which Japanese troops lived were bad and to that extent the treatment given to prisoners was bad too. In regard to Thailand, I do not know that I heard that prisoners had been mistreated by officers in the building of the railroad between Thai and Burma, that prisoners were made to work when they were sick, and, on the basis of this, I ordered a court martial.

Q Other than at Bataan and the building of this railroad that you refer to, did you hear of any other mistreatment of American or British prisoners of war?

A I have told you about the Thai-Burma thing just now. Aside from those two, I haven't heard much of that sort of thing. In connection with China, two or three cases came to my attention. Of course the authorities on the spot conducted courts martial, the results of which were forwarded to me for information as War Minister. On two or three occasions I was not satisfied with the results of the courts martial since the cases had been dropped, and I sent them back for reconsideration.

Q You have stated that you knew complaints came into the Foreign Office and were sent to your office in connection with the mistreatment of prisoners and civilians. Did you or did you not acquaint yourself with the nature and content of these complaints?

A These matters were usually brought up at the meetings of the bureau chiefs of the War Department. These meetings were held twice a week. Either the Chief of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau or the Military Affairs Bureau would bring them up. They were referred by the bureau chief meetings to the commander in the field who had the authority to act. If there was inhumane treatment, he would take measures accordingly, and the report would probably come back to me as War Minister.

* * * *

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
28 March 1946

p. 7 - 8

Q Had you heard at any time that the treatment received by prisoners of war in the Philippines, Formosa, and Thailand was not only inhumane, but was below the standard given to Japanese prisoners of war?

A I supposed that the treatment being given to prisoners was on the same level as that given to our own troops. However the conditions under which Japanese troops lived were bad and to that extent the treatment given to prisoners was bad too. In regard to Thailand, I do not know that I heard that prisoners had been mistreated by officers in the building of the railroad between Thai and Burma, that prisoners were made to work when they were sick, and, on the basis of this, I ordered a court martial.

Q Other than at Bataan and the building of this railroad that you refer to, did you hear of any other mistreatment of American or British prisoners of war?

A I have told you about the Thai-Burma thing just now. Aside from those two, I haven't heard much of that sort of thing. In connection with China, two or three cases came to my attention. Of course the authorities on the spot conducted courts martial, the results of which were forwarded to me for information as War Minister. On two or three occasions I was not satisfied with the results of the courts martial since the cases had been dropped, and I sent them back for reconsideration.

Q You have stated that you knew complaints came into the Foreign Office and were sent to your office in connection with the mistreatment of prisoners and civilians. Did you or did you not acquaint yourself with the nature and content of these complaints?

A These matters were usually brought up at the meetings of the bureau chiefs of the War Department. These meetings were held twice a week. Either the Chief of the Prisoner of War Information Bureau or the Military Affairs Bureau would bring them up. They were referred by the bureau chief meetings to the commander in the field who had the authority to act. If there was inhumane treatment, he would take measures accordingly, and the report would probably come back to me as War Minister.

* * * *

DOC 4182b

文書本四八三〇號
五四年三月二十日東京條英機訊問返答

カゼノ負
尙氏建築台灣及泰國之俘虜、長ク又取扱ノ事ニ非人道的ナト
言フカリテ、又日英人ノ俘虜カ反テ又待遇ノ程度以下ナト云フコト
ヲ申イタコトガアリマスカ

7-1 953 B

答、私ハ俘虜ニ對シテ(ラシク又々待遇)我々軍隊ニ對シテ(ラシク又々待遇)ト
同ノ程度ナト考ヘ居リマス、然レ日本軍ノ生活狀態(思フク)ノ
ノ程度ニ俘虜ノ待遇モ悪カシク、又泰國ノ人々ニ對シテ俘虜
ガ泰ノ緬甸ノ鐵道建設ノタメニ士官ニ酷使サレタコトノ事
病氣中ニ使役サレタ由ヲ申イタ事ヲ承知シテアリマス
其レニ基キ軍法會議ヲ命令シタゲス

尙貴方ガ話ニ答ヘテ、此ノ鐵道建設、件以外ニ米英俘虜
ノ虐待ニ付テハ何カ申カシタコトガアリマスカ

答、私ハ只今泰ノ緬甸事ヲ申上レタコトノ事ニ、事以外ニ此
種ノ事ハアツテ申イテ居リマセン、中國關係テハ二三件事ガ私
年ニ違ヘリマス、勿論現地當局ハ軍法會議ヲ開キ其ノ
結果陸軍大臣トシテ、私(報告サレタ)ニ三ノ場合ニ於
テ事件ハソノマ、放置サレタゲ軍法會議ノ結果ニ不満
足アリマス、又之ヲ用テ會議ヲサセタゲ

尙貴方ハ俘虜及非戰鬥員ノ虐待ニ關スル抗議ガ外務省
ニ來テ、貴方ノ級所ニ送達サレタ事ヲ承知ダト、話ニテ
シテ貴方ハ之等ノ抗議ノ性質及内容ヲ調査シテ解決シタゲマスカ
トモ申イテハカリタゲマスカ

DOC 4182D

7/19/53 B

文書本四八二〇號
五三三三三三自東條英機訊問板本

オ七一頁

問 比連演台湾及泰國之傷虜長々々取扱(軍ニ非人道的ト
言フバカリテ)日軍人ノ傷虜が及ケテ待過ノ程度以下トナツコト
ヲ申イタトガアリマスカ

答 私人ノ傷虜ニ對シテ(ソシテ)待過(我々ノ軍隊ニ對シテ)待過ト
同ノ程度ト考ヘ居リマス。然レ日軍ノ生活狀態(思フク
ノ程度ニ傷虜ノ待過モ無カシ)ニテ(泰國ノ令ニ)待過ノ
が泰ノ緬甸間ノ鐵道建設ノタメニ士官ニ酷使セシメテ
病文中ニ使役セシメ由テ申イタ事ヲ承知シテアリマス
其レニ基キ軍法會議ヲ命令シタガス

問 貴方が話シタ事トシテ此ノ鐵道建設ノ件以外ニ米英人傷
虜ノ虐待ニ付テハ何カ申イタトガアリマスカ

答 私人ノ泰ノ緬甸事ヲ申イタ事トシテ(事以外)此
種ノ事ハ(ソシテ)申イテ居リマス。中國關係ハ(三件ノ事)が私
身ニ對シテ(ソシテ)勿論現地當局ノ軍法會議ヲ開キ其ノ
結果(陸軍大臣トシテ)私(報告)シタ事トシテ(三ノ場合)ニ於
テ事件ハ(ソシテ)交還シタ事トシテ軍法會議ノ結果ニ(不滿
足)アリマス。カフ送リ及シテ(再審議)ヲサセタガ

問 貴方ノ傷虜及非戰鬥員ノ虐待ニ關スル抗議が外務省
ニ來テ 貴方ノ級所ニ送達シタ事ヲ御承知ガト、話シテ
シタ貴方ノ之等ノ抗議ノ性質及内容ヲ調査テ(解決)シタカ
シトモ申イタトガアリマスカ

2

Doc 4182D

答之等ノ事項ハ通例陸軍省ノ局長會議ニ附議サレタ、
此ノ會議ハ週ニ一回開催サレタ、修學情報局長又ハ
軍務局長ガ右ノ事項ヲ提出スルコトニツテ居マシタ、右ノ事
項ハ局長會議カラ実行權ヲ握ツテ在ル現地司令官ニ送達
サレタ、テス若シ非人道的ナ待遇ガアレバ現地司令官ハソレニ
從ツテ手段ヲ講ジタ、テスソレノ報告ハ陸軍大臣タル私
ニ廻リテ来ルヤ、

x

x

x

Ex. 1184 A

Doc. No. 4183 A

Page 1

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
29 March 1946

p. 1 - 4

- Q Were you not responsible for the rules, the orders and the action taken which led to the sentences of execution or imprisonment of American fliers since 7 December 1941?
- A Of course I am responsible for army orders and regulations.
- Q You mean for such orders and regulations?
- A Well, I am not just sure what ones you refer to. I don't remember any regulations particularly directed against fliers before 18 October 1942 when Japan was raided by American fliers. There may have been some before that, but I don't remember clearly. I do remember that there were some after that.
- Q For what actions taken at that time or afterwards in this connection were you responsible?
- A The raid on 18 October 1942 was contrary to international law. It was not against troops but against non-combatants, primary school students, and so forth. We knew this and, since this was not permitted by international law, it was homicide (satsu-jin). Japan acted on this concept and I ordered (kaketa) courts martial (gunritsu kaigi), or at least they were just about like courts martial. You probably won't be able to understand this unless you understand something about Japanese feelings at this time. This was the first time Japan had been bombed, and it was a great shock. Public feeling ran very high. Now, of course, since the indiscriminate bombing of medium and small cities which were undefended and the use of the atom bomb, all things which are not permitted under international law, the tragic spectacle of this country today makes this first raid look like a very small thing, but it was a great shock to the people at the time.
- Q And the extreme punishments meted out to these first fliers were mainly given as a deterrent to prevent future raids, were they not?
- A Yes, they were for that reason. There was a demand from Imperial Headquarters. The Army Chief of Staff came to me directly and demanded severe punishment for the fliers.
- Q Who was the Army Chief of Staff?
- A SIGIYAMA.

p.1 - 4 cont'd

- Q What did you say in reply, and what did you do as a result of this request?
- A I issued this order. It was an order for military administration. As to the form, I am not positive whether the order was issued over my name or by Imperial Headquarters, but no matter who issued it, I am responsible for it.
- Q Who else from Imperial Headquarters was the Chief of Staff speaking for when he made the request that he did of you for this punishment?
- A He came on his own responsibility, not representing anyone else. I remember this because the Chief of Staff didn't often come to me directly about things.
- Q Did you receive any order from the Emperor in this connection, or discuss the matter with him or report to him before taking the action that you did?
- A The Emperor is not related at all to this problem. When the report of the court martial came from China to the Chief of Staff and to myself, the verdict, as I recall it, was that all eight men were to be executed. The Chief of Staff came to me and demanded that the findings of the court be carried out. I knew, however, of the Emperor's benevolence and, with that in mind, and because of his feelings, wished to have only the minimum number of men executed. Therefore, it was decided that only the three who had killed primary school students would receive the death penalty. This was discussed with the Emperor, since the Emperor in Japan is the only one who can commute a sentence, and it was decided that way. That one point was the Emperor's only relation to the thing.
- Q So the Emperor reviewed all eight cases and commuted the death penalties from eight to three?
- A No, he didn't review them. In Japan, courts martial have only one hearing. That is because of their military character. Ordinary trials have three hearings.
- Q On what basis did the Emperor take this action? Did you propose it?
- A Yes, I did. It was on my responsibility as adviser to the Throne, but the commutation was the Emperor's because of the fact that the Emperor is invariably benevolent.

p. 1 - 4 cont'd

Q Was not this order, which was issued by you for the trial and punishment of these fliers, an ex post facto law?

A Yes, it was.

Q Then the order of occurrences was as follows: the raid, the capture of the fliers, the order which you issued, the trial, and the executions?

A Yes.

Q And the order that you issued provided for the trial and punishment?

A Yes, it was the basis. However, the order, in turn, was based on the fact of the raid. Of course the order was not an order to execute eight men, it was an order whereby trials could be held based on the fact of the raid.

Q So that, as the result of the raid, this order or law was promulgated by you and made retroactive to the date of the raid?

A Yes.

* * * *

p. 1 - 4 cont'd

Q Was not this order, which was issued by you for the trial and punishment of these fliers, an ex post facto law?

A Yes, it was.

Q Then the order of occurrences was as follows: the raid, the capture of the fliers, the order which you issued, the trial, and the executions?

A Yes.

Q And the order that you issued provided for the trial and punishment?

A Yes, it was the basis. However, the order, in turn, was based on the fact of the raid. Of course the order was not an order to execute eight men, it was an order whereby trials could be held based on the fact of the raid.

Q So that, as the result of the raid, this order or law was promulgated by you and made retroactive to the date of the raid?

A Yes.

* * * *

27/28/31 Dec 4/183A

文書部 四一八三A号

一九四三年三月二十九日東條英機部内閣答

第一一四頁

問、一九四二年十二月七日、日本國軍飛行士、死刑處刑に付、投獄、判決等之類ニテ、規則、命令及ビ措置ニ付貴方、責任者トナリニセニテ之カ。

答、勿論、私、陸軍、命令、規則、責任者トナリニセ。

問、又、命令、規則、意味トナリニセ。

答、オド、分、仰有、テ、キ、ル、カ、ハ、キ、リ、ニ、セ、私、ハ、呂、本、が、米、國、飛、行、隊、ニ、リ、爆、撃、ヲ、受、ケ、タ、九、四、三、年、十、月、十、日、ハ、米、國、ニ、行、ク、飛、行、士、ニ、行、ク、規、則、ト、云、フ、ノ、記、憶、ニ、テ、居、リ、ニ、セ、ソ、ノ、決、断、ニ、テ、キ、カ、ア、ツ、カ、モ、知、レ、ニ、セ、ニ、ミ、カ、ハ、キ、リ、覺、テ、居、リ、ニ、セ、其、ノ、後、ニ、若、キ、ア、ツ、タ、ハ、覺、エ、テ、居、リ、ニ、セ。

問、本件ニ行テ、其ノ時、或ハ其ノ後ニ執ラレ、如何ナル處置ニ付、貴方ハ責任カナルデスカ。

答、一九四三年十月十日、空襲ハ國際法違反デスカ。ソノ、軍、隊、ニ、行、ク、モ、ノ、テ、キ、ノ、非、敵、國、民、小、學、子、生、等、ニ、行、ク、モ、デ、スカ。私、共、ハ、其、ノ、事、象、ヲ、承、知、ス、ル、ニ、テ、キ、ソ、ノ、事、ハ、國際法ヲハ、許、サ、レ、テ、居、ル、カ、ツ、タ、モ、ト、テ、救、命、デ、スカ。日本、ハ、此、ノ、觀、念、ヲ、行、動、ス、ル、ニ、テ、私、ハ、軍、律、會、議、(陸、上、軍、法、會、議、ト、云、フ、ベ、キ、モ、)ニ、掛、ケ、タ、カ、ス。

NO 1

貴方ハ當時、日本人、ハ、心、持、ヲ、少、ク、シ、テ、即、承、知、デ、テ、ハ、其、ノ、事、ヲ、方、ハ、解、シ、テ、居、リ、ニ、セ、之、ハ、日本、ガ、初、メ、爆、撃、ヲ、受、ケ、タ、時、ニ、大、キ、テ、衝、動、デ、ア、ツ、タ、カ、ス。一般、感情、ハ、非、常、ニ、興奮、ニ、シ、テ、勿、論、會、兵、兵、備、中、小、都、市、ノ、無、差、別、爆、撃、ヲ、

Doc 4183A

原子爆弾、使用等(スベテ)國際法ヲ許ヤレナイ事實ノ下ニ於テ
今日、此ノ國、非特慘シク光榮ハ有、最初ノ空襲ヲ(此等ニ
運ギナレト)、如何ニシテ之ヲガ當時、國民ニ取リ誠ニ大
キ衝動ヲ与フナラシム。

問 此、最初、飛行士ニ課セシメテ極刑ハ三トシテ將來ノ爆
撃ヲ防ガシ威嚇ノ意味ガスツクナラシム。

答 左様デス、其ノ意味ノモトデシテ、大本營カラ受ル命令
ニテ、今謀總長ガ直接、私ノ處ニ來テ飛行士ニ村ニ懲罰
ヲ受ホシムナラシム。

問 今謀總長ハ誰デス。

答 杉山デス。

問 貴方ハ何ト返事ヲシタカ、ソレニ此、受ル結果貴方ト
シテ負責ニシタカ。

答 私ハ貴ノ命令ヲ受シタカ、ソレハ軍政ニ付スル命令ナリシテ、形式
上、命令ガ私、名ヲ出タカ大本營ニ依テ出タカ、以テ責任ヲ居リ己
ガ誰ガホシタカセヨ、私ガ責任者デス。

問 今謀總長ガ此ノ刑ニ付テ貴方ニ受ホシム、大本營内也、誰ノ
代表者ニシテヤツクナラシム。

答 總長ハ強斷ヲヤツテ來シタカ、誰モ外人ノ代表ヲ取ラズ、六六三ニ
總長直接來ルニ付テ、裁多シカク此ノ事ヲ覺エテ居ラス。

問 貴方ハ指直ヲ取ルニ付テ此ノ事ヲ天皇カニ何カ命令ヲ受テ、
トカ天皇ニ相談ヲシ、或ハ天皇ニ報告ヲシタコトナリ
シタカ。

No 2

答 天皇ハ全然此ノ問題ニ関與セラレシ。

中国カラ軍律會

Doc 4/83A

議、報告が参謀總長と私とに届き其、判決を要すと一今私に
 思は出さ、之をが一人全部を死刑にスルとの、にあり。總長
 の私、慮を兼て此、念議、判決を執行して殺すこと、要求が有る
 こと。然し私、天皇、に愛降るべしと云ふ承知にて思ひ。一
 其、こと考へ且天皇、御心持考へる最少限、者、死刑を
 希望にて思ひ。此、多し、小學生ヲ殺す三人、女が死刑に
 受てルこと、決定ス。此、こと、天皇と御相談ヲし、之、と云
 へ、日本に、死刑を来ル、天皇御一人に下ルべし。之、こと
 之、決定せし。天皇が本件に關與せらる、此、一、原女は、
 肉、ソラスル、天皇の一人、件總て再審査して死刑の一人は三
 人に減らすこと、をス。

答、一、二、天皇の再審査のたす、たす、をス。日本に、軍律會議
 に審るべし。之、一、軍事に於て来り、之、普通、裁
 判の三審制にて思ひ。

肉、何に基いて天皇の、處置をたす、をス。貴方が提議
 する、をス。

答、左様です。輔弼、責任ある者として殺す。然し、死刑は天
 皇、に下るべし。天皇の御心持に、之、に下るべし。

肉、飛行士、裁判及刑罰に關し、貴方から出る命令、事後法
 律に、あり、をス。

答、左様です。

肉、ソラスル、事件進行、順序、次、通り、之、即ち空襲、
 飛行士、逮捕、貴方、出る命令、裁判、刑、執行トナリ、をス

no 3

No. 4

Doc 4/83A

答 左様です。

由、ソコトを以て、出、命令、裁判、用、罰、の、執行、の、行、ハ、

答 左様です。ソコトが基礎ニシテ行ハル。然、命令、ハ、之、空

識、上、之、事實ニ基、テ、行、ハ、ル。勿論、其、命令、ハ、人、之、用、

ヲ、執行、スル、命令、ハ、行、ハ、ル。其、命令ニ依、テ、空、識、事、實ニ

答 左様です。

向、ソコトスル、空、識、ノ、結果、ト、以、テ、行、ハ、ル。此、命令、又、法律、ヲ、以、

答 左様です。

答 左様です。

Q. # 1984-B

Doc. No. 4183B

page 1

Extract from
Interrogation of Hideki Tojo
29 March 1946

p. 6 - 7

Q Did not the heads of the various prison camps have to make a monthly report to the Military Bureau with respect to the prisoners under their care in connection with food, health, labor, and so forth?

A I think they did on a basis of regulations. This is a routine matter.

Q And those reports were consolidated, were they not, and sent to the War Minister?

A The War Minister received a stack of papers about a foot and a half high each day, and I suppose that was among them.

Q You do know, do you not, that those reports were compiled and forwarded to the War Minister?

A The extracts were probably reported on at the meetings of the bureau chiefs which took place twice weekly.

Q Was the matter of the death rate from malnutrition, and other causes, shown by these reports discussed at these meetings?

A Yes, it was, and I paid particular attention to it. The responsibility for these matters belongs to the army commanders in the field. However, when they couldn't fulfill their responsibilities, they would make requests of the War Ministry. These requests came to the chief of the Military Affairs Bureau and, after consultation between the latter and the commanders in the field, the War Ministry would take action either by sending food, or some other means.

* * * *

一九四六年三月二十九日東條英機詢問拔萃

Doc 4183B

第六十七頁

問. 各俘虜收容所長、其、取扱ニカ、ル俘虜、食事健康汚働等
ニ付軍務局ニ月報ヲ出スコトニツイテ居タ、デ、ナイデスカ

答. 規則ニ基キテヤツテ居タト思ヒマス。之、習例、事デス

問. ソレヲ其、報告、取リテメラレテ陸軍大臣ニ届ケラレタリデスカ

答. 陸軍大臣ハ毎日一尺五寸カラアル高サノ沢山、書類ヲ受テ取ツテ居リ
マス。下、其、中ニアツタト思ヒマス

問. 之等、報告書ハ纏メテ陸軍大臣ニ提出サレタトイフ事ヲシツキマス
カドウデスカ

答. 其、扱萃ハ多分毎週三回開催、局長會議ニ報告サテ居タト思
ヒマス

問. 之等、報告書ニ示サレタ深養不良其、他、原因ニヨル死亡率
ノコト、此、局長會議ヲ論議サレタ、デスカ

答. 左様デス。私、其、事ニ特ニ注意シテ居リマス。此、事項ニ付
テ、責任ハ現地ノ軍司令官ニアリマス。然、シ軍司令官ガ責任ヲ果
シ得ナイ時、陸軍省ニ要求ヲスルコトニツイテ居マス。此、要求ハ
軍務局長、処ニ来テ軍務局長ト現地司令官ト協議、後
陸軍省ハ食糧ヲ送ルトカ其、他、方法ニヨル処置ヲトルコトニツイ
テ居マス

Ex 19844

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 351

EX # 1985

Doc. No. 1632W (95)

Page 1.

Extract from Entry from Marquis KIDO's Diary

13th March 1942

I went to the office at 10.00 a.m.

At 3 o'clock the Imperial Household Minister came to the office and told me about Eden's address in Parliament concerning our soldiers' atrocities at Hong Kong, and we exchanged opinions.

E. #1986

Doc. No. 1632W(96)

Page 1 *

Extract from Entry from Marquis KIDO's Diary

21st May 1942

Chief aide is-camp came to my room and related to me about the manner in which the American POWs taken in the /T.N. Doolittle/ air raid were dealt with.

E. # 1986

Doc. No. 1632W(96)

Page 1 *

Extract from Entry from MARQUIS KIDO's Diary

21st May 1942

Chief aide is-camp came to my room and related to me about the manner in which the American POWs taken in the /T.F. Doolittle/ air raid were dealt with.

E. #1986

Doc. No. 1632W(96)

Page 1 *

Extract from Entry from Marquis KIDO's Diary

21st May 1942

Chief aide is-camp came to my room and related to me about the manner in which the American POWs taken in the /T.M. Doolittle/ air raid were dealt with.

Q. # 1987

Document No. 16327(98)

Page 1 *

"Extract from Entry from Marquid KIDO's
Diary, 3 October 1942"

At 11:30 Premier TOJO came to see me in my room and requested me to inform the Emperor regarding the details of the treatment of American prisoners who participated in the /T.N. Doolittle/ raid last April 18th. From 1:05 to 1:15 I reported to the Emperor as Premier TOJO requested. The Chief of Staff will report on this in the near future.

Ex. 4 1988

Document No. 2732-A

Page 1

BA-98

Military Secret

Telegram Translation

Place of Dispatch: Kanburi

Sent: 12:10 a.m. (p.m.) on September 3, 1943

Arrived: 9:00 a.m. (p.m.) on September 4, 1943

From: POW Camps Commandant in Thailand

To: Chief of POW Information Bureau

Telegram No. Tai-Fu-Shu-Den 715

The gist of the monthly report for August is as follows (?):

1. Prisoners of War - 40,314 (including 7,528 enroute (?) to Japan Proper).
2. Sick prisoners: 15,064 (6 words under inquiry) main diseases are malaria, malnutrition, "kaihi" disease, beri-beri, etc.
3. Thirty-seven have died, thirteen of them from malaria, four from beri-beri, three from pneumonia (?), three from pellagra, and fourteen from other diseases.
4. The number of prisoners who were engaged in indoor (?) work was 12,561 (?), a day on the average.
Work directly collaborating with the railroad - 1,395 men.
Work collaborating with the unit - 4,772 men.
5. Special labor corps (?) - 814 men (patients - 88; average number of laborers per day - 734) no death.
6. POW mail - 90,427 received. No dispatch. Four messages addressed to POW's.
7. No relief money (?) or goods for POW's received.
8. Strict precautions are being made and also, concentration principle was taken to intensify the collaboration between the railroad unit. Five divisions and three detachments were organized.
9. Both POW's and special laborers are quiet.
10. 2,800 POW's waiting at Singapore are scheduled to get on board on the 5th of September.

Telegram sent to: "I"; POW Information Bureau.

Telegram received: POW Information Bureau - 5 September 1943.

SEAL FUJILURA No. 10.

LA-98

Military Secret

Telegram Translation

Place of Dispatch: Kanburi

Sent 2350 (11:50 p.m.) on September 7, 1943

Arrived: 2000 (8:00 p.m.) on September 8, 1943

From: POW Camps Commandant in Thailand

To: Chief of POW Information Bureau

No. 1.

We request you to insert the following in the obscure part of the main sentence in Telegram No. Tai-Fu-Shu-Den 715, distributed on September 5th:

"Ratio to the total number - 37.06%."

NOTE: * The sick POW's are reported to be 15,064 (ratio for the total number is 37.06%), but 37,06% of the total number 40,314 is 14,940. There seems to be some mistake in the calculation of the ratio to the total number. However, this figure has not been calculated by the POW Information Bureau; the figures in the original document from the actual place have been copied as they stand.

* (T.N. Added in ink on original document).

Received POW Information Bureau 11 September 1943.

S...L

FUJIKURA

No. 33

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____
I.P.S. No. 2752

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Nakanishi Sadoyoshi, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Acting Director POW Information Bureau and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 2 pages dated 3 September, 1943, and described as follows: "Outline of August Monthly Report Thailand POW Camp Telegram No. 715 is as follows"

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): POW Information Bureau Vol. PA 98.

Signed at Tokyo on this
25th day of October, 1946.

/s/ Nakanishi Sadoyoshi
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: K. Yokoi /s/

Acting Director POW
Information Bureau
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, 2nd Lt. Eric W. Fleisher, O-92500, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
25th day of October, 1946.

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher
NAME

Witness: /s/ Henry J. Cmachi
2nd Lt. Inf.

Investigation Division IPS
Official Capacity

C. # 1789

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL FOR THE FAR EAST

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, et al.)	
- AGAINST -	)	A F F I D A V I T
ARAKI, SADA0, et al.)	

I, WAKAMATSU, Tadakazu, do swear on my conscience that the following is true:

On December 8, 1941 I was the head of the General Affairs Section of the General Staff. I continued as such until December, 1942, when I was appointed head of the Third Section of the General Staff, the functions of which were transportation and communications, and I served as such until October, 1943. During the summer of 1942 the decision to construct the Burma-Siam Railroad was made by the Imperial General Headquarters in response to a request from the Southern Army. There were three purposes for the construction of this railroad, (1) to have overland communication between Siam and Burma, (2) to provide a necessary supply line for the Japanese armies operating in Burma, and (3) the exploitation of tungsten deposits along the route, which were needed in munitions manufacture.

Submarine and air attacks had made water communication very difficult and there were no other means of communication between Siam and Burma. The decision to use prisoner of war labor on this railroad was made by the Chief of Staff, SUGIYAMA; the Minister of War, TOJO; and the Vice-Minister of War KIMURA, (the last named through his official position, though not basically responsible).

I made one inspection of the Burma-Siam area about the end of July or the beginning of August, 1943. I visited Rangoon, Bangkok, and a portion of the railroad from the Siam end. It was during the rainy season and the work was not progressing satisfactorily. I made this inspection because I had been receiving reports from time to time which showed that progress of the work was not satisfactory. The reports also contained information that the physical condition of the prisoners of war working on the railroad was poor, and that the death rate was very high. I had heard that cholera was epidemic and that caused me considerable worry. I observed the laborers at work on the railroad and saw many cases of dysentery and beri-beri amongst them. I also inspected the feeding of the prisoners of war,

and it was not satisfactory, the quantity and quality being below the required standard. I orally reported the results of my inspection to the Chief of Staff, General SUGIYAMA and the Vice Chief of Staff, Major General HATA, in Tokyo, and recommended a two months' extension of the date for the completion of the railroad. The original plan of the road had called for completion date as of December, 1943, and during March 1943, orders were given by the Chief of Staff to complete the road over a higher grade, doing away with cuts, which would be less useful but which would result in the road being completed by August, 1943. I recommended, after having taken this trip, that a two months' extension to October be granted. Upon my return to Tokyo, I recommended that Major General ISHIDA, Eiguma be placed in charge of the railway construction outfit, as I considered that he knew railway construction, and was thoroughly familiar with the rear echelon function of supply.

Many deaths of prisoners of war resulted from the building of this road. The causes were epidemic diseases and unfavorable weather. The construction outfit did not have a proper commissary service. There were not enough trucks, and the truck road which was built in April parallel to the railroad, suffered bridge wash-outs and could not be used for some time. It was intended to be used during the rainy season, but this proved to be difficult and prisoners and other workers had a very difficult time as a result. Because there were not enough trucks, it was thought necessary to employ more personnel, and because more personnel were employed, the food situation became more difficult. I recommended to the Commander of the Southern Army that more trucks be used and fewer men.

Sworn to and subscribed before me at Tokyo,
Japan this 31st day of October, 1946.

/s/ T. WAKAMATSU
Tadakazu WAKAMATSU

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher 2nd Lt. AUSMI
Investigator IPS

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, Eric W. Fleisher, hereby certify that I am fully conversant with the Japanese and English languages and that I truly and correctly translated from English into Japanese and from Japanese into English the oath administered to WAKAMATSU, Tadakazu, the nature and purpose of which oath was fully understood by the said affiant.

/s/ Eric W. Fleisher
2nd Lt. AUSMI
Investigator IPS

EXHIBIT 1989

Doc 2744

通 泉 陸 軍 参 謀 部 判 所

「アメリカ」合衆國其他諸流不頁次葉ノ為

余 若松兵一口密告ハ良心ニ誓ツテ以下ノ辭ガ事實
テアル事ヲ述ベル

一九四一年（昭和十六年）十二月八日、余ハ参謀
本部参謀部長ヲアツタ。余ハ一九四二年（昭和十七
年）十二月、選任及ビ通信ノ任務ヲ營ルガ事本部如
三務ノ部長ニ任命セラレルマテ其ノ職ニアツタ。余
ハ一九四三年（昭和十八年）十月マテ第三軍ヲ統
メタ。一九四二年（昭和十七年）ノ夏、大本營ハ南
方軍ノ要請ニヨリ「ビルマ」島嶼ニ一陸軍ノ決定ヲ
ナシタ。此ノ決定ノ建設計ニハ三ツノ目的ガアツタ。
即チ（一）、泰國「ビルマ」向ニ進出ヲ作ル事、（二）、
「ビルマ」ニ作戦中ノ日本軍ニ必長ヲ供給シテ其ハ
ル事、（三）、沿線ニアル軍需品生産ニ必工ナ「タンガ
ステシー」ノ鉄床ノ發掘ヲナス事ヲアツタ。
海軍及ビ航路線ニ對ル攻撃ハ水上交通ヲ非常ニ
困難ナラシメ泰國「ビルマ」向ニハソレ以外ニハ交
通ノ方法ガナカツタ。此ノ決定建設計ニ當リテ使役ス
ルト云フ決定ハ杉山參謀總長、東條陸軍大臣、木村
陸軍次官ニヨツテナサレタ。（最後ニアゲタ木村ハ

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM

Doc 2744

2. *

陸軍ノ事務上アアツテ本資財ニハ責任ハナイ。
 余ハ一九四三年（昭和十八年）七月ノ終リカ八月
 ノ始メ頃ニコビルマニ赴任シテ視察シタ。余ハコラ
 シグーシニコバンコックニ及び禁烟ノ為ニカラ鐵道
 ノ一部分ヲ編成シタ。其ノ時ハ雨期デアリ仕事ハ心
 フ様ニ進捗シテ居ナカツタ。余カ此ノ原因ヲ爲シタ
 理由ハ建設事業ガ充足ニ進捗シテ居ナイト云フ報告
 ラ時々受ケタカラテアツタ。之等ノ報告ハ又鐵道ニ
 管イテ居ル方面ノ健康状態ハ極メテ悪ク死亡率ハ非
 常ニ高イト報シテ居タ。余ハコレラーガ流行シテ
 居ルト聞キ大變ニ心配シタ。余ハ鐵道ニ管イテ居ル
 労働者達ヲ見テ赤痢ヤ肺炎患者ヲ其ノ中ニ見出
 シタ。余ハ又停務ノ食料ヲ検査シタガ其レハ量々賞
 キ必要規準ヨリ低イセノテ充足ノ行クセノテハアコ
 ツタ。余ハ口頭ヲ以テ東京ニ居ル參謀總長杉山元將
 ト密謀次長榮中將ニ余ノ視察ノ結果ヲ報告シ鐵道完
 成ノ最終日ヲ二ヶ月延期スル事ヲ決メタ。鐵道計畫
 ノ原案デハ一九四三年（昭和十八年）ノ十二月ニ完
 成スルコトヲ要求サレテキタガ一九四三年（昭和十
 八年）三月ニ參謀總長ヨリ掘削ヲ止メテ高イ地均ノ
 上ニ完成スルマツニト命令カレタ。之ハ多少不便デ
 ハアルガ一九四三年（昭和十八年）ノ八月マデニ完

Doc 2744

願出來ルノデアツタ。余ハ此ノ旅行ヲシテ來テ十月
マテノ二ヶ月ノ延期ヲ與ヘル事ヲ疑メタ。東京ニル
ト余ハ鐵道建設隊ノ指揮官ニ石田少將ヲ推薦シタ。
何故ナラバ余ハ彼ハ鐵道建設、後方補給勤務ニ精通
シテ居ルト考ヘタカラテアル。

此ノ鐵道建設ノ爲多クノ停務ガ死ンダ。其ノ原因
ハ流行病ト悪天候デアツタ。建設隊ハ適當ナ兵站
ヲ持ツテキナカツタ。貨物自動車ガ不足デアリ又
四月ニ鐵道ニ立行シテ建設サレタ自動車等隊ハ構築
ガ押シ流サレタリシテ管ラクノ向使用出來テカツタ。
其レハ雨病ニ使用サレルハツデアツタガ之ハ困難デ
アル事カワカリ其ノ結果停務及他ノ勞務者ハ非常ニ
苦勞シタ。貨物自動車ガ不足デアツタカラヨリ多ク
ノ人員ヲ雇フ事ガ必要ト考ヘラレ、ソツテヨリ多ク
ノ人員カ雇ハレタ食糧事情ハ尙更ニ悪クナツタ。
余ハ南方軍司令官ニヨリ多ク貨物自動車ヲ使用シ人
員ヲ減ラス秘ニス、メタ。

若 松 只 一

一九四六年（昭和二十一年）本十月三十一日日本東
京ニ於テ余ノ面前ニテ宣誓シ署名セリ

3. ★

ERIC W FLEISHER
2D LT. AUSMI
INVESTIGATOR. I. P. S

Doc 2744

證 明 書

余 ERIC W FLEISHER、日本語及び英語ニ精通セルコ
ト、應ニ若松貞一ニ對シテ行ハレタル宣誓ヲ余ガ英
語ヨリ日本語ヘ、又日本語ヨリ英語ヘ眞實且ツ正確
ニ翻譯セル事ヲ茲ニ證明ス。石冢善ノ性善及目的ハ
該口供者ニヨリ完全ニ理解セラレタルモノトス。

ERIC W FLEISHER
2D Lt. AUSMI
INVESTIGATOR. I.P.S

4.

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL FOR THE FAR EAST.

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, et al.)
)
 - AGAINST -) AFFIDAVIT.
)
 RAKI, SADA0, et al.)

I, Eiguna ISHIDA, do swear on my conscience that the following is true:

I reside at KIGOSHIMA-SHI, NAGOYOSHI-CHO, No. 599. MATSUOTO, KATA.

I began my military service in 1912. I graduated from the Army War College in 1926. At the outbreak of World War II, I as Major-General was in command of transportation in INDO-CHINA on the HANOI - SAIGON Railway. After the outbreak of the war I went to BANGKOK and was in command of the 3rd Field Railroad HQ, transporting supplies to the railroad of THAILAND, MALAYA and FRENCH INDO-CHINA. In early August of 1943 I received the order to command the 2nd Railway Department and 4th Special Railway Construction Command from the War Minister in TOKYO. At the time I received the order, I was at KUALA LUMPUR 400 kilometres north of SINGAPORE. I went to the Headquarters of the railroad at a place called KANCHANABURI, about 100 kilometers north of BAMPONG; about the middle of August, 1943, where I remained until the 4th of September 1943 when I went to KONQUITA to personally command the construction. The orders from the War Ministry put me in command of three departments; namely; the 2nd Railway Department; the 4th Special Railway Construction Command for the construction of the BURMA-THAILAND Railway and the 3rd Field Railway HQ. I was told the length of the railroad was 415 kilometers and upon completion it was used for the transportation of supplies to the Japanese troops in BURMA.

The prisoners of war employed were mainly British, Australian and Dutch. In July, 1943, before I became commander of this railway, Lieut-General WAKAMATSU and Colonel KATO visited the construction work while I was in command. Lieut General WAKAMURA, Aketo, who was the commander at BANGKOK, was in command of the Supply Depot for the supply of food etc. provided to the prisoners. The BURMA-THAILAND railroad was constructed principally by the labor of prisoners of war and coolies. The railroad was completed on the 17th of October, 1943. The direct and chief cause for the speedy construction of the BURMA-THAILAND railroad was principally a tactical operation. The fact remains that ther

was a necessity for land transportation between BURMA and THAILAND as no such route existed. The necessity for its constructions at the time and for the haste in its construction was caused by the difficulty of transportation by water due to attacks of Japanese shipping by submarines and from the air. As a result of the fact that Japanese troops in BURMA were starving and the completion of the railroad meant that they would receive supplies from SINGAPORE and BANGKOK.

After the construction was completed I was still in charge of the transportation over the BURMA-THAILAND Railroad and there were still a small number of prisoners of war kept employed for the maintenance of work in connection with transportation. I was continuously at the scene of construction from September 5th until October 17, 1943, and I knew that the sick and death rate amongst the prisoners was very high. When I arrived at KANCHANABURI, the scene of the construction of the railroad, in August, I received reports from various officers under my command and I learned of the fact that prisoners and workers in the railroad were dying as a result of very severe conditions. I worked for the betterment of conditions. On my inspection trip to the hospital, I saw that a number of prisoners were sick. When I was in KUALA LUMPUR in the middle of 1944 I heard that the South Army had received complaints from the British and Dutch Governments concerning the treatment of prisoners of war employed on the BURMA-THAILAND Railroad. The authorization for the employment of prisoners of war on the BURMA-THAILAND Railroad must have come from the General Staff in TOKYO. I remained in charge of the supervision of the BURMA-THAILAND Railway, which was under the command of the 4th Special Railway Construction HQ until May 1945.

Sworn to and subscribed before me
at CHANGI GAOL, SINGAPORE,
this day 9th of November 1946.
/s/ K.S. Kalsi Major

Eiguma ISHIDA.

C E R T I F I C A T E

I, MIZUTA, Shigetoshi, hereby certify that I am fully conversant with the Japanese and English languages and that I truly and correctly translated from English to Japanese and from Japanese into English the oath administered to Eiguma ISHIDA, the nature and purpose of which oath was fully understood by the said affiant.

Mizuta, Shigetoshi (signed)

Evidentiary Document #2950

No. 1

極東國際軍事裁判所

了り力合衆國其、他

対

荒木貞夫其、他

供述書

EXHIBIT 1990

余、ISHIDA EISU MATSUOKA、^{長、其、左記陳述、自、其、心、中、言、明、す。}
 余、^{長、其、左記陳述、自、其、心、中、言、明、す。}鹿兒島市に在りし所、五九九番地、^{一ツモノヲ、居、住、ス、余、}
 一九二二年、大正七年、初、軍務、服、シ、一九二六年、大正五年、
 年、陸軍大学校、卒業、セリ。中、二次世界大戦、勃、發、當時、
 余、陸軍少將トシ、^{HANOI SAIGON}河内西貢、^{鐵道、依、り、印度支那、於、テ、}
 輸送、指揮、シ、タリ。戰爭、勃、發、後、^{船、隻、岩、}赴、キ、^{THAI}泰國、
 馬來、及、ヒ、備、領、印度支那、鐵道、依、り、補、給、物資、輸送、シ、
 ル、ヤ、三野戰鐵道司令部、指揮、ニ、任、ジ、タリ。一九四三年、昭和
 十八年、八月初、頃、東京、陸軍大臣ヨリ、^{中、}鐵道監及、^{中、}
 四特設鐵道隊司令部ヲ、兼任、ス、キ、命、ヲ、受、ケ、タリ。右、命令、ヲ、受
 領、シ、タル、當時、余、^{SINGAPORE}新加坡、北、方、四、〇、科、ノ、ク、ラ、ル、ニ、^{中、}
 一、〇、科、^{KANCHANABURI}カナンナブリ、^{中、}鐵道、依、り、^{中、}泰國、鐵道、建設、司令部、^{中、}赴、
 年、^{中、}昭、和、十八年、八月、中旬、^{中、}赴、^{KONOKITAH}コノキタヒ、^{中、}赴、
 たり。陸軍省ヨリ、命令、依、り、余、^{中、}三部門、指揮、ニ、任、ジ、タリ。
 即、チ、^{中、}泰國、鐵道、建設、ニ、任、ジ、ル、^{中、}鐵道、監、部、^{中、}四特
 設、鐵道、隊、ト、^{中、}三野戰、鐵道、司令部、^{中、}之、^{中、}タリ。余、^{中、}同、
 々、^{中、}泰國、^{中、}鐵道、^{中、}延長、^{中、}四、一、五、科、^{中、}ニ、^{中、}完成、後
 直、チ、^{中、}在、^{中、}緬、甸、本、軍、部隊、^{中、}對、ス、ル、^{中、}補、給、物資、輸送、^{中、}供、^{中、}セ

FILE COPY RETURN TO ROOM

2950

余、一九四三年（昭和十八年）九月五日ヨリ十月十七日ニ至ル間終始
 工事ノ現場ニ在リテ、倭虜ノ間、罹病及死亡率ガ著シク大ナルコ
 トヲ認メタリ。余ガ八月、同鉄道建設工事ノ現場タル カンチャナガ
 リシニ到着セル際、余ノ指揮下ニアル諸多ノ將校ヨリ報告ヲ受ケ、
 同鉄道従事ノ倭虜及ビ労働者ガ極メテ不良ナル悪條件
 下ニ於テ死亡シツアル事実ヲ知リタリ。余ハ状態ノ改善ニ力ヲ
 盡シタリ。余ハ病院ヲ視察セル際、多數倭虜ノ罹病セルヲ認メ
 タリ。余ハ又、泰緬鉄道ニ使用セラレタル倭虜ノ待遇ニ関シ、英
 蘭兩國政府ヨリ南方軍ガ抗議ヲ受ケタル事ヲ十九年中頃クアラ
 ルンブルニ於テ耳ニセリ。泰緬鉄道ニ於ケル倭虜使役ノ權限委
 任ハ東京參謀本部ヨリ登セラレタルニ同意無カルベシ。余ハ一九
 五年（昭和二十年）五月迄引續キ第四師設鉄道隊司令官ヲ
 長トスル泰緬鉄道隊ヲ監督スルノ任ニ當リタリ。

署名名欄 (イニシタエイクマ) 石田 榮熊

余ノ前ニテ宣誓、署名セリ

於テカンチャナガ一刑務所

一九四六年（昭和三十一年）十一月九日

署名欄

No. 3

K.S. Kalsi Major.

9th November 1946.

2950. cert

證明書

余水田重人、茲ニ、余カ日本語及ビ英語ニ充分
精通ス居ルコト、及ビ、イソクエイタクマコト行ハシメタル右
宣誓ヲ余ハ眞実且ツ乙確ニ英語ヨリ日本語ニ又
日本語ヨリ英語ニ翻譯セシムル證ス
本宣誓書、意義、及ビ目的ハ右宣誓者、ヨリ充
分了解セシム所ナリ

署名欄 水田重人

no. 4

Cx # 1991

REGULATIONS FOR PUNISHMENT OF ENEMY AIR CREWS.

(Secret)

Military Ordinance /"Gunrei"/ No. 4 of the Japanese Expeditionary Forces in China.

The military regulations /"Gunritsu"/ for the punishment of enemy flyers are hereby established as follows:

13 August 1942 (Showa 17)
Shunroku HATA,
Supreme Commander of the Japanese Forces in China.

Military Regulations for the Punishment of Enemy Flyers.

Article 1.

These military regulations shall be applicable to enemy flyers who have raided Japanese territories, Manchukuo, or our operational areas and have come within the jurisdiction of the Japanese Expeditionary Forces in China.

Article 2.

Those who have committed the following acts shall be liable to military punishment:

- (1) Bombing, strafing, and other attacks with the object of threatening or killing and injuring ordinary people.
- (2) Bombing, strafing, and other attacks with the object of destroying or damaging private property of a non-military nature.
- (3) Bombing, strafing, and other attacks against objects other than military objectives, except those carried out under unavoidable circumstances.
- (4) Violations of wartime international law.

The same shall be applicable to those who, with the object of carrying out the acts enumerated in the preceding paragraph, have come to raid Japanese territories, Manchukuo, or our operational areas and have come within the jurisdiction of the Japanese Expeditionary Forces in China before accomplishing this object.

Article 3.

Death shall be the military punishment. However, life imprisonment or more than ten years confinement may be substituted for it according to extenuating circumstances.

Article 4.

Death shall be by shooting.

Confinement shall be effected in a detention place and prescribed labor imposed.

Article 5.

Under special circumstances the execution of military punishment shall be remitted.

Article 6.

In respect to confinement, the provisions of the criminal law concerning penal servitude shall be correspondingly applicable, in addition to the provisions of these military regulations.

Supplementary Regulations.

These military regulations shall be enforced from 13 August 1942 (Showa 17).

These military regulations shall be applicable also to the acts committed previous to their enforcement.

Proclamation.

Appendix.

Enemy flyers who have raided Japanese territories, Manchukuo, or our operational areas, come within our jurisdiction, and violated wartime international law shall be tried by court martial and sentenced to either death or heavy punishment as important war criminals.

Doc. No. 626

C E R T I F I C A T E

W. D. C. No. _____
I. P. S. No. 626

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Kaneo Ishibashi hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Corresponding Secretary 1st Demobilization and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of _____ pages, dated _____, 19____, and described as follows: Military regulations for punishment of enemy fliers.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): 1st Demobilization Bureau (former War Ministry)

Signed at Tokyo on this
23 day of Aug., 1946

/s/ Kaneo Ishibashi
Signature of Official

SEAL

Corresponding Secretary
Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ Shinaji Volayashi

Statement of Official Procurement

I, Richard H. Larsh, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
23 day of Aug, 1946

/s/ Richard H. Larsh

NAME

Investigator

Official Capacity

Witness: /s/ J. A. Curtis, 2d Lt. MI

626A

支那派遣軍軍令第四號

109

敵航空機搭乗復處罰ニ関スル軍律左ノ通定ス

昭和十七年八月十三日

支那派遣軍總司令部

No. 1.

FILE COPY
RETURN TO ROOM 361

626A

敵航空機塔集負處罰ニ関スル軍律

第一條 本軍律ハ帝國領ニ滿洲國又ハ我々作戰地域
ヲ空襲シ又ハ那派遣軍、艦隊ニ入リタル敵航空機塔
集負ニ之ヲ適用ス。

第二條 左ニ記載スル行為ヲ為シタル者ハ軍罰ニ處
ス。

一 普通人民ヲ威嚇スル殺傷スルニテ目的トシテ爆
撃、射撃其他攻撃ヲ加フルコト。

二 軍事的性質ヲ有スル私所有財産ヲ破壊スル
毀損スルニテ目的トシテ爆撃、射撃其他
攻撃ヲ加フルコト。

三 己方ヲ得ル場合、外軍事的目標以外、目標
ニ對シテ爆撃、射撃其他攻撃ヲ加フルコト。

四 前三項、外戰時國際法規ニ違反スルコト。

前項、行為ヲ為ス目的ヲ以テ帝國領ニ滿洲國又ハ

No 2

626A

然レ作戦ニ域ニ未ダ襲ム其ノ未ダ之ヲ遂ゲル前、支那
派遣軍ノ權内ニ入リタル者亦同シ。

第三條 軍罰ハ死トス。但シ情狀ニ依リ無期又ハ十年
以上、監禁ヲ以テ之ニ代ルコトヲ得。

第四條 死ハ銃殺ス。

監禁ハ監禁場ニ於テ定役ニ服ス。

第五條 特別ノ事由凡トテ軍罰ノ執行ヲ免除ス。

第六條 監禁ニ於テハ本軍律ニ定ルモノ、外刑法、懲
役ニ關スル規定ヲ準用ス。

附則

本軍律ハ昭和十七年四月十三日ヨリ之ヲ施行ス。

本軍律ハ施行前ノ行爲ニ對シテモ之ヲ通用ス。

No 3

626A

No4

別紙

存告

帝國領土、瀕洲國又ハ我ノ作戰地域ヲ空襲ス
 我ノ權限ニ入ル敵航空機搭乗員ニ對シ戰時國際
 法規ニ違反スル者ハ軍律會議ニ付シ戰時重罰犯
 トシテ死スル重罰ニ處ス。

626A

No 4

別紙

布告

帝國領土、瀛洲國又ハ我ノ作戰地域ノ空艇ハ
我ノ權内ニ入ル敵航空機搭乗員ニ對シ戰時國際
法規ニ遵フル者ハ軍律會議ニ付シ戰時重罰也
トシ死又ハ重罰ニ處ス。

626 cert-1

証 明 書

「ワシントン」文書局 第 一 號
國際檢査部 第六二六號

真摯及ビ公正ニ臨スル証明

余、石橋カネヲハ余ガ下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ第一
復員局登記トシテ、日本政府ト公的關係ニホルモ
ノナルコト、竝ニ該官吏トシテ余ガ茲ニ添附セラ
レタル、 頁ヨリ成ル、千九百 年ノ昭和
年ノ 附、下記題名、即チ

「敵航空機塔乗員處罰ニ關スル軍律」ノ文書ノ
保管ニ任シ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。
余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府ノ公文書
ナルコト、竝ニ右ガ下記名稱ノ省又ハ部局ノ公式
書類及ビ綴ノ一部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(若シアラバ
綴番號又ハ引用、其ノ他公式書類又ハ綴ニ於ケル該文書ノ成規所
在ノ公式名稱ヲモ標記スベシ)

第一復員局 (荷陸軍省)

626 cert-2

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 八月廿三日

東京ニ於テ署名

管徴官更署名欄 石橋カネヲ / 署名 / 印名 /

右ノ者ノ公的資格 審記

証人 小林シナジ / 署名 / 印名 /

公証入手ニ關スル證明

余、リチャード・エツテ・ラーシユハ、余が聯合
軍最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係アルモノナルコト、
竝ニ上記題名ノ文藝ハ余が公務上、日本政府ノ上
記署名管吏ヨリ入手シタルモノナルコトヲ茲ニ證
明ス。

千九百四十六年 / 昭和二十一年 / 八月廿三日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏名欄

Richard H. Harsh
リチャード・エツテ・ラーシユ
署名 /

右ノ者ノ公的資格 審査官

証人

陸軍情報部少尉シ・エ・
シ・エ・エ・エ・カ
署名 /

署名 /

EX. 41492

Document No. 1681

Page 1

Communication (Army Secret No. 2130)

Dispatched from: Vice War Minister KIMURA, Heitaro

To : Each Chief of Staff Stationed in Japan
and Outside Japan.

Re : Treatment of Enemy Air Crew Members

Dated : 23 July 1942

I request you to take note and understand that the following decision was made in regard to the treatment of enemy air crew members who entered our jurisdiction with the object of raiding Japanese territory, Manchukuo and our regions of operation:

1. Those who do not violate the war-time international law shall have to be treated as POW's and those who showed actions of violating the said law shall be treated as war-time capital criminals.
2. Defense Commander-in-Chief of various places (including troops stationed in Japanese territory, outside Japan and the Governor of occupied HONG KONG) shall send for Court Martial such enemy air crew members, who entered the respective jurisdiction and are suspected of deserving treatment as war-time capital criminals. In regard to the above courts martial, the provisions of the Specially Established Court Martial stated in the Army Court Martial Law shall be applied.

C E R T I F I C A T E

W.D.C. No. _____
I.P.S. No. 1681

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, OYAMA, Ayao, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Chief of Legal Research Division of the 1st Demobilization Bureau and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 2 pages, dated 28 July, 1942, and described as follows: Army Secret No. 2190, re Treatment of Enemy Air Crew members

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Legal Affairs Investigation Section, First Demobilization Ministry

Signed at Tokyo on this
18th day of November, 1946.

/s/ OYAMA, Ayao
Signature of Official
SEAL

Witness: /s/ Kinsuke Kaneko

Chief of Legal Research Division
1st Demobilization Bureau
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, J. A. Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above certification was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
19th day of November, 1946.

/s/ J. A. Curtis, 2nd Lt.
NAME

Witness: /s/ Marian A. Linhart

Investigator IPS
Official Capacity

陸密第二九〇号

1681

空襲ノ敵航空機搭乗員取扱ニ関スル件ニ通牒

昭和十七年七月二十八日

陸軍次官木村兵太郎

内(外)地各軍参謀長殿

DOC

帝國領土滿洲又ハ我々作戰地域ヲ空襲シ我々權内ニ入りタル敵航空機搭乗員ハ左記ノ如ク取扱フコトニ定メラルルニ付承知相成度

寫

依命ニ通牒ス

左記

第一復員

省法務部 一 戰時國際法規ニ違反セタル者ハ俘虜トシテ取扱ヒ之ニ違反ノ

查部保管

書類 所為アリタル者ハ戰時重罪犯トシテ処断ス

寫ナリ

二 防衛總司令官内地外地各軍ト香港占領地總督ヲ含ム以下同シハ當該權内ニ入りタル

敵航空機搭乗員ニシテ戰時重罪犯トシテ処断スハ干礙ナル者ハ軍律會議ニ送致ス

前項ノ軍律會議ニ関シハ陸軍軍法會議法甲特設軍法會議ニ関スル規定ヲ準用ス

第一復員省法務部調查部保管書類ノ正当ナル寫ナルトヲ証明ス

信務情報局長官代理 小田島 莖 (小田島)

昭和十七年五月六日

No 1

Handwritten signature or initials

DOC 1681 cert.

證明書

ワシントン文書局 第 号

国際検察部 第一六一号

吳撝及心公正三関スル證明

余大心文雄ハ余が下記ノ資格ニ於テ、即チ第一復員局法務調査部長トシテ、日本政府ト公的関係ニ在ルモノトシ、並ニ該官吏トシテ余が茲ニ添附セラルタル二頁ヨリ成ル千九百四十二年昭和十七年七月二十八日附、下記題名、即チ空襲ノ敵航空機搭乗員ノ取扱ニ関スル件軍密二九〇号ノ文書寫ノ保管ニ任シ居ルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

余ハ更ニ添附ノ記録及心文書ガ日本政府、公文書、爲スルコト、並ニ右ノ下記名稱ノ省文ハ部局、公文書類及録部ナルコトヲ證明ス。(右ノ下ニ綴番号ハ引用其、他公文書類及綴ニ於テ該文書、或規所在、公文名稱ヲ併記スルニ) 第一復員局法務調査部

千九百四十六年昭和二十一年十一月十八日

東京ニ於テ署名

當該官吏署名欄

大心文雄(署名)

右ノ者、公的資格

第一復員局法務調査部長

證人

金子倫介(署名)

公武年三関スル證明

余大心文雄ハ余が聯合國最高指揮官總司令部ニ關係スルモノトシ、並ニ上記題名ノ文書ハ余が公務上、日本政府ト記署名官吏ヨリ手ニ得タルコトヲ茲ニ證明ス。

千九百四十六年昭和二十一年十一月十九日

東京ニ於テ署名

氏名欄

金子文少尉(署名)

右ノ者、公的資格

国際検察部調査員

證人

アリソン・エド・リンハート(署名)

No 2

Doc 1793-A

2x-193

陸密第二九號

空襲敵航空機搭乘員三箇條件
昭和十年七月二十日

陸軍次官 木村兵太郎

殿

帝國領土滿洲國又於作戰域之空襲之權力權
內之先敵航空機搭乘員之左記如取扱之三字
之先付承知相成度依命通牒之

左記

- 一 戰時國境之違反者、得屬之取扱
- 之違反行為之先者、戰時重罪犯之處断
- 二 防衛總司令官、軍司令官、内地外地各軍各港各領
地總督、各以下之同一
- 三 當該理由之先敵航空機搭乘員之戰時重
罪犯之處断不手疑、之者、軍律會議之送致
- 四 前項軍律會議之關於陸軍軍法會議法中特
設軍法會議之規定之準用

No. 1

Doc 1793-A

國際檢察部
文書局

第 一 號

余大文雄，余如下記，證據係在，即第一復員局
該調查部長之日本政府之關係，在九百四十二年
該官吏之金，茲附之，二頁，成心
九百四十二年（昭和十七年）七月廿八日附，下記題名，即
空襲敵，敵航空機搭乘員，國之件，文書
向，保管官，住居，之，證明
余，更，添附，記錄，及，文書，之，日本，政府，公，文，書，
寫，之，下，記，名，稱，有，又，部，局，公，文，書，類，之
他，部，之，證明，若，之，級，番，號，又，引，用，其
公，文，書，類，之，假，之，該，文，書，成，規，所，在，公，文，書
特，記，之

千九百四十六年 昭和二十年 十月六日

東京第一復員局 於署名
高該官吏署名欄署名
右者公的壇格 第一復員局 該調查部長
中村寅吉 (中村)

余，公，文，書，之，證明
上，日本，政府，之，證明，余，之，證明
日本，政府，之，證明，余，之，證明
千九百四十六年 昭和二十年 十月六日 於署名

No. 2

Eric W. Fleisher
國際檢察部調查官
Henry Shimozima

E. * 1994

REPORT ON THE COURT MARTIAL FOR ALLIED AIRCRAFT CREWS
CAPTURED IN THE TOKAI DISTRICT ARMY AREA

I. This report was prepared according to a report made by the Tokai Demobilization Bureau.

II. Substance:

There were eleven men captured in a raid on Nagoya on the 14th of May, 1945 who were executed after trial by court martial.

III. Facts of the Court Martial:

1. The accused:

	<u>Rank</u>	<u>Name</u>	<u>Identification No.</u>
(1)	2nd Lt.	Kvne	Unknown
(2)	2nd Lt.	Carrier	Unknown
(3)	Corporal	Classety	12340110
(4)	Corporal	Shelton	Unknown
(5)	Corporal	Fritchard	23540378
(6)	Lieutenant	Sherman	C-737484
(7)	2nd Lt.	Solomon	C-708948
(8)	Corporal	Howell	Unknown
(9)	Corporal	Ranson	Unknown
(10)	Corporal	Gentry	14071549
(11)	Corporal	Johnson	14135602

2. Date of taking in charge:

Taken in charge from the Kempei Tai H., at Tokai at the end of May, and imprisoned on the same day.

3. Place of imprisonment:

District Army Headquarters.

4. Investigation:

After investigation at the Tokai Kempei Tai H., these men were committed for court martial at the end of May on suspicion of having violated the Articles of War. Investigation by the prosecutor at the court martial produced enough evidence to prove that they had violated the Articles of War.

5. Place and date of judgment:

Court of the Tokai District Army Headquarters, 11 July 1945.

6. Date of Execution:

July 12, 1945.

7. Place of Execution:

At the Obatagahara rifle range (in the suburbs of Nagoya.)

8. Disposal of the corpses:

Originally buried in the Obatagahara rifle range, they were disinterred later and cremated, and the remains have been enshrined at the Koseiji Temple at Yagoto, Showa Ward, Nagoya.

C E R T I F I C A T E

D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 1793-C

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Avao OYAMA, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Chief of the Legal Research Division of the 1st Demobilization Bureau and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 3 pages, and described as follows: The Report of the Military Discipline Council in regard to the Captured Allied Warplane Crews in the Military Controlled Area of Tokai (East Coast of Japan)

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Legal Research Division of the 1st Demobilization Bureau

Signed at Tokyo on this
12th day of Nov., 1946.

/s/ Avao OYAMA
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Keishi Hashimoto

Chief Legal Research Division
1st Demobilization Bureau
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, J. A. Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this
14th day of Nov., 1946.

/s/ J. A. Curtis, 2nd Lt.
NAME

Witness: /s/ R. H. Lish

Investigator IPS
Official Capacity

1793C

東海軍管区内に於ける聯合軍捕獲飛行機
搭乗員に対する軍律會議に関する調査

一 本調査は東海復員監部の報告に基き記述せるものなり

二 要旨

軍律會議に於て審判の上處断せるものは昭和二年五月十四日名古屋
上空墜し捕られたる十一名なり

三 軍律會議の状況

一 被告(階級氏名認識番号)

- (一) 少尉、カイル、不明
- (二) 少尉、キヤリヤ、不明
- (三) 伍長、クラサライ、二三〇二〇
- (四) 伍長、ニルトン、不明
- (五) 伍長、フリタヤード、三三五〇三七八
- (六) 中尉、キーマン、〇一七三七四八四
- (七) 少尉、ソロマン、〇一七〇八九八
- (八) 伍長、ハウズ、不明
- (九) 伍長、マンス、不明
- (十) 伍長、ジエトリ、四〇七一五四九
- (十一) 伍長、ジヤンソン、四三五六〇二

二 受理年月日

五月下旬東海憲兵隊司令部より受理し拘留す

三 拘留場所

軍管区司令部

四 調査

161

17930

東海軍兵隊司令部に於て捜査し其の結果軍律違反の嫌疑ありとして五月下旬之を軍律會議に送致す

軍律會議に於ては檢察官之を調査し其の結果軍律違反の證據十分なり

5 審判場所及年月日

東海軍管區司令部 陸廷

昭和二十年七月十一日

6 死の執行年月日

昭和二十年七月十三日

7 執行場所

小幡ヶ原射場 (名古屋市近郊)

8 死体の處置

小幡ヶ原射場に埋葬しありたるも後之を發掘火葬に附し

遺骨は名古屋市昭和区八事興正寺に安置せり

Evidentiary Rec. # 1793C

ハノ綴記ニ於テハ該文書自書規程所在ハ或ハ稱モテ特ニ記入ス
コトヲ綴明入。若シテハ綴記ノ綴記ヲ用テ其ノ他ノ綴記ノ綴記
ニ右ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記
ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記

綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記
綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記
綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記
綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記

綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記
綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記
綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記ノ綴記

No. 1

證人 田口茂一

名 稱

東京市 芝浦區 有馬町 一丁目

住 所 芝浦區 有馬町 一丁目

大 山 文 雄

名 稱

芝浦區 有馬町 一丁目

千九百二十六年十一月二十一日 東京市芝浦區有馬町一丁目 該

芝浦區 有馬町 一丁目

三三

1793C

Evidentiary Doc. #

No. 1

證明書

「文書」文書局 第 号
國際檢察部 第一七九三〇號

根據及公正之證明

余大山大雄(余が下記、資格ニ於テ即チ本復員省志
務部長トシテ、日本政府ト公的関係ニ在リシコト該
官吏トシテ余が茲ニ添附セリタルニ復ク成ル下記題名即
チ東海(海軍區(日本東海岸)ニ於テ字務トシタル聯合
軍軍用飛行機檢査員ニ関スル學士會議記錄、文書
、保管ニ任シ居ルコト茲ニ證明ス。

余ニ更ニ添附、記録及ビ文書ガ日本政府、公的ニ
ニ右ガ下記名稱、省又ハ部局、公的書類及ビ綴(一部ニ
コトヲ證明ス。若ク下ノ綴為テ又ハ引用其、他公的書類
又ハ綴ニ於ケル該文書、成規所在、公的名稱ヲモ特記ス)

記

本復員省志務部

千九百四十六年十一月十三日、東京ニ於テ署名者該

官吏署名欄 署名 大山大雄

右、者、公的資格
證人

本復員省志務部長

署名 橋本啓四 (音訳)

No. 2

Doc # 17930

公武入井(園)又此證明
 此(園)係了凡王十儿工上登三上記之載、文書(全)
 此(園)係了凡王十儿工上登三上記之載、文書(全)
 此(園)係了凡王十儿工上登三上記之載、文書(全)

全信洋、(年本)一月十日 東京三於()署名
 氏()署名()
 公()署名()
 ()署名()
 ()署名()

E. # 1995-

A REPORT ON THE COURT MARTIAL FOR ALLIED AIRCRAFT CREWS
CAPTURED IN THE CENTRAL JAPAN DISTRICT ARMY AREA

I. This report is based on reports from the Central Japan Demobilization Bureau.

II. Substance:

The men who were executed after trial by court martial were Nelson and Augnus, who were both captured after incendiary raids on Tokyo on the night of March 9th, 1945, Osaka on the night of March 14th, 1945, and Kobe on the night of March 19th, 1945, respectively.

III. Facts of the Court Martial:

1. The Accused:

Second Lieutenant Robert Marson Nelson, U.S.A.
Sergeant Algy Stanley Augnus, U.S.A.

2. Date of taking in charge:

Taken in charge from the Central Japan Kempei Tai HQ the first part of May, 1945, and imprisoned on the same day.

3. Place of imprisonment:

Detention ward of the Kusunoki 12400 Butai (inside Osaka Military Prison).

4. Investigation:

The investigation ended May 31st, after detailed investigation by the prosecutor for two days on the basis of the reports from the Kempei Tai HQ. Under investigation, the accused frankly stated the facts.

5. Place and Date of Judgment:

Court of the Central Japan District Army Headquarters. Sentenced to death on July 18th, 1945.

6. Date of Execution:

4:00 p.m., July 18th, 1945.

7. Place of Execution:

At the Army Maneuver Grounds in Yokoyama-Mura, Senhoku-Gun, Osaka Prefecture.

8. Disposal of Corpses.

Buried on the same day (temporary burial). Cremated at the same place on August 24th. The formal funeral took place at the Sanadayama Army Cemetery on the 25th of the same month.

8. Disposal of Corpses.

Buried on the same day (temporary burial). Cremated at the same place on August 24th. The formal funeral took place at the Sanadayama Army Cemetery on the 25th of the same month.

C E R T I F I C A T E

D.C. No. _____

I.P.S. No. 1793-D

Statement of Source and Authenticity

I, Ayao OYAMA, hereby certify that I am officially connected with the Japanese Government in the following capacity: Chief of the Legal Research Division of the 1st Demobilization Bureau and that as such official I have custody of the document hereto attached consisting of 2 pages, and described as follows: Record of the Military Discipline Council in regard to the crews of the captured Allied aircraft in the Central Military Detention Area.

I further certify that the attached record and document is an official document of the Japanese Government, and that it is part of the official archives and files of the following named ministry or department (specifying also the file number or citation, if any, or any other official designation of the regular location of the document in the archives or files): Legal Research Division of the 1st Demobilization Bureau

Signed at Tokyo on this

14th day of Nov., 1946.

/s/ Ayao OYAMA
Signature of Official

SEAL

Witness: /s/ Keishi Hashimoto

Chief, Legal Research Division
1st Demobilization Bureau
Official Capacity

Statement of Official Procurement

I, J. A. Curtis, hereby certify that I am associated with the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers, and that the above described document was obtained by me from the above signed official of the Japanese Government in the conduct of my official business.

Signed at Tokyo on this

14th day of Nov., 1946.

/s/ J. A. Curtis, 2nd Lt.
NAME

Witness: /s/ R. H. Larsh

Investigator IPS
Official Capacity

1793 D
1997

中部軍管区内に於て聯合軍捕獲飛行機搭
乗員に對する軍律會議議に關する調査

一 本調査は中部復員監部の報告に基きたるものなり

二 要旨

軍律會議に於て審判の上處断せるものは昭和二十年三月
九日夜東京市街三月十四日大阪市街及三月十七日夜
神奈川市街を燒夷彈爆撃後捕獲せられたる「ネルソン」
及「アムステル」の二名なり

三 軍律會議の状況

1. 被告 米國陸軍少尉「ロート・アムステル」

米國陸軍軍曹「アムステル・アムステル」

2. 受理年月日 昭和二十年五月上旬中部憲兵隊司令

部より受理拘留す

3. 拘留場所 南第三四九部隊牧野所(大阪陸軍刑務所)

4. 捜査 檢察官二名に亘り憲兵隊司令部の報

告を基礎とし詳細に捜査し五月三十日

捜査終了 捜査に方り被告は素直

に事實を陳述せり

5. 審判場所及年月日

中部軍管區司令部法廷

6. 執行の年月日 昭和二十年七月十八日 裁判死刑宣告

7. 執行の場所 大阪府泉北郡槻山村所在(軍管區)

同日土葬(假埋葬)

8. 死体の所在 八月二十四日同所に於て火葬

同日二十五日真田山陸軍墓地に土葬す

UNITED NATIONS ARCHIVES		CAMERA OPERATOR'S REPORT AND CERTIFICATE	REEL NO. 147
PRODUCTION DATA		INDEXING DATA	
PERIOD		CODE NO.	
STARTED 25 May, 1989		United Nations War Crimes Commission (UNWCC) Member Governments, other National Authorities and Military Tribunals - PAG-3/2.3.3.: 395-397 Transcripts of Proceedings and Documents of the International Military Tribunal for the Far East (Tokyo Trials). Court Exhibits Court Exhibits of the International Military Tribunal for the Far East (Tokyo Trials), numbered consecutively. These documents, mainly from United States and Japanese sources, are arranged numerically, with some gaps. Nos.: 1749 - 1813 1814 - 1934 1935 - 1995 --- END OF REEL No. 147 ---	
FINISHED 8 June 1989			
TOTAL NUMBER OF IMAGES 2732			
APPROVED:			

CERTIFICATION

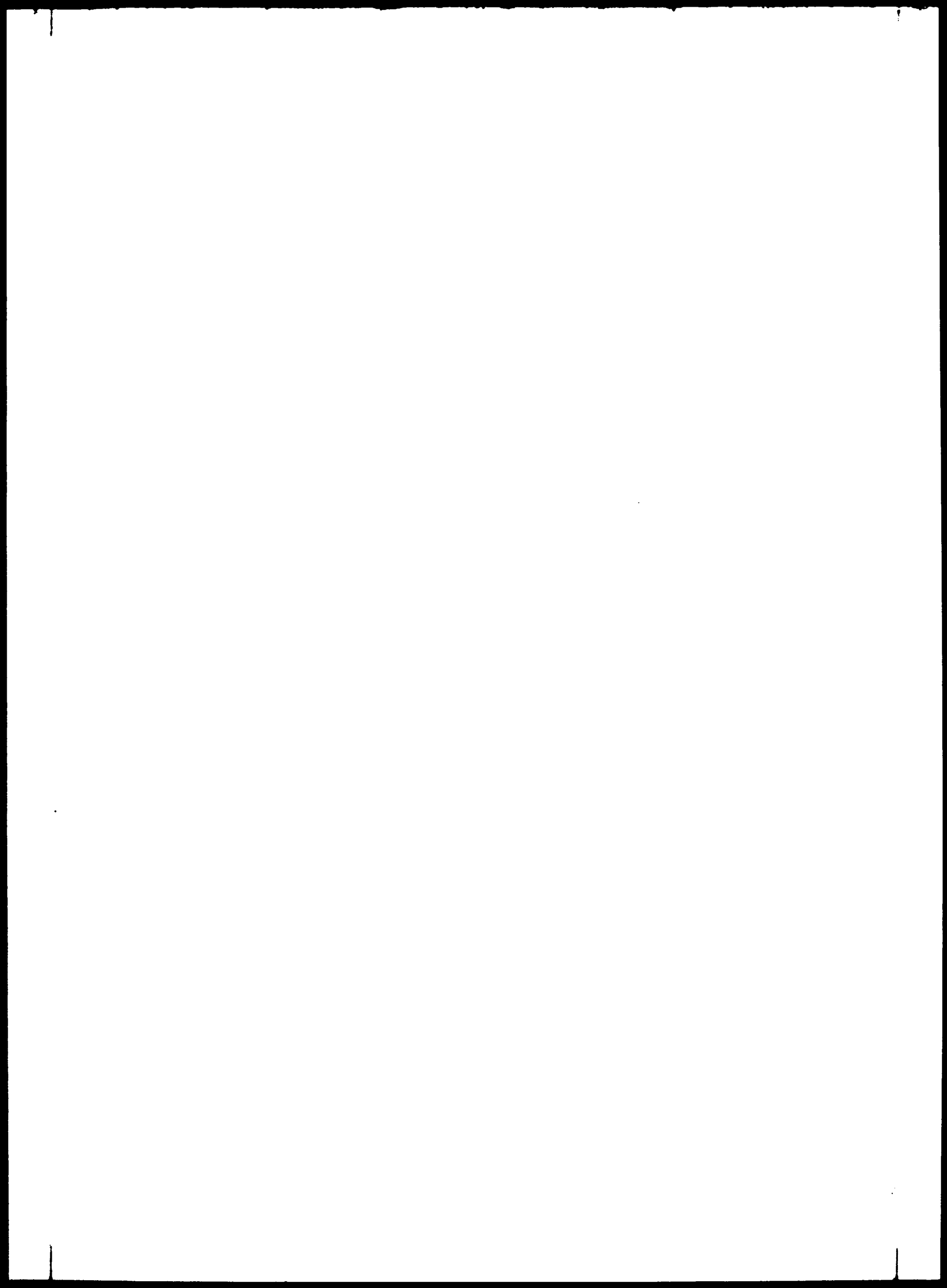
I certify that the micrographs appearing in this reel of film are true copies of the original records described above.

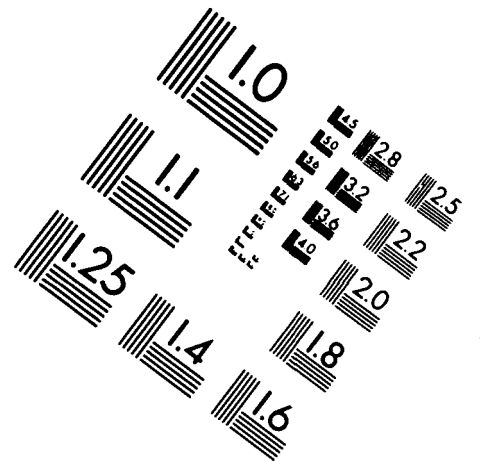
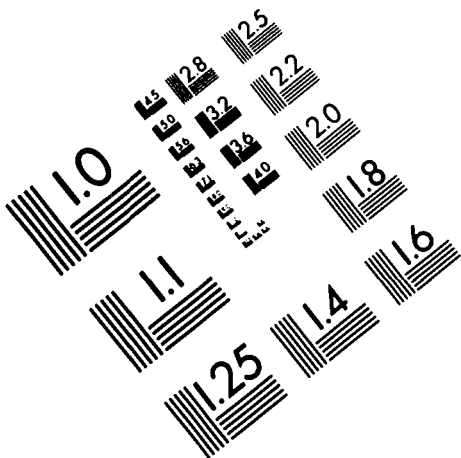
Date: 8 June, 1989

Signature of
Camera Operator: M. R. John-Lewis

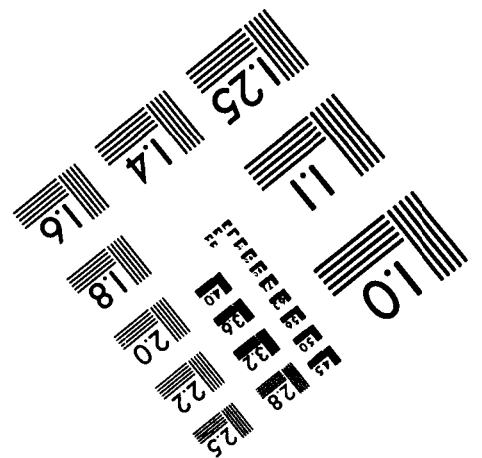
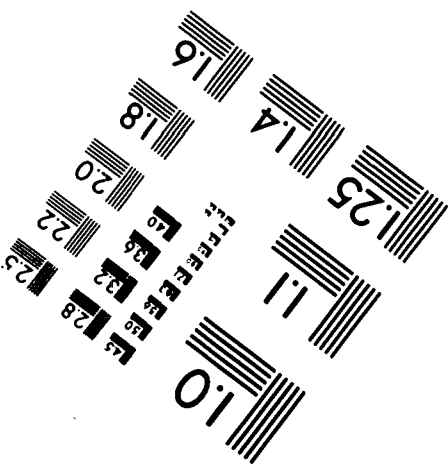
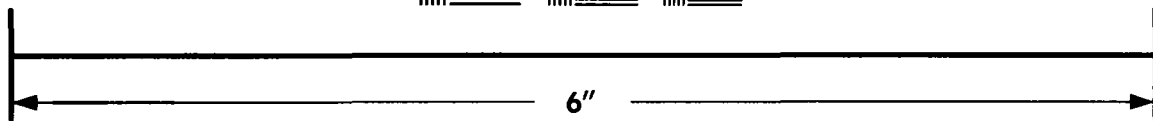
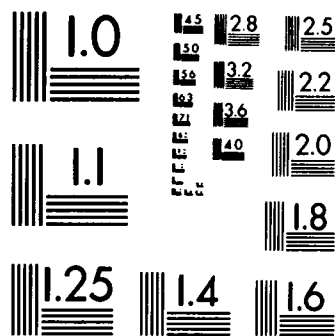
REDUCTION

26x

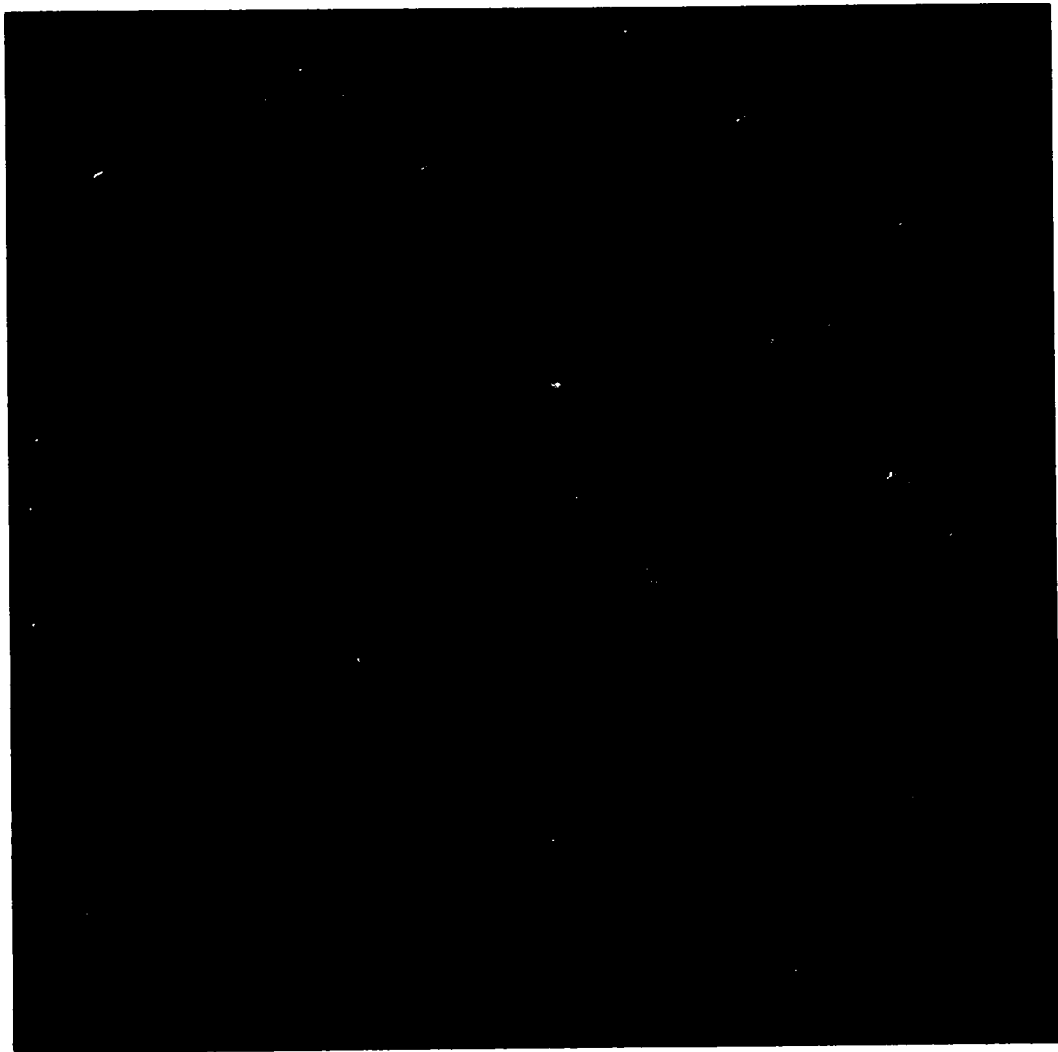




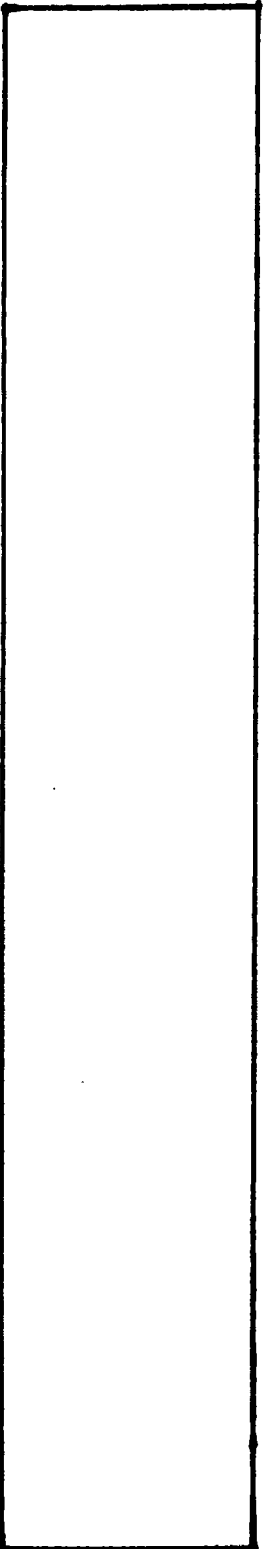
**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



PHOTOGRAPHIC SCIENCES CORPORATION
 770 BASKET ROAD
 P.O. BOX 338
 WEBSTER, NEW YORK 14580
 (716) 265-1600



UNWCC



PAG - 3

REEL

no.

1 4 7

**UNITED NATIONS
ARCHIVES**

**security
microfilm**

PROGRAMME

1989

TH

NS

U